![Cover](data:None;base64,)

# Table of Contents

[Information](#Top_of_0000_Information_xhtml)

[Chapter 1: 001 Lu Wu](#Top_of_0001_Chapter_1_001_Lu_Wu)

[Chapter 2: 002 Summoner](#Top_of_0002_Chapter_2_002_Summon)

[Chapter 3: 003 Plugin Online](#Top_of_0003_Chapter_3_003_Plugin)

[Chapter 4: 004 Goblin (Request for recommendation vote)](#Top_of_0004_Chapter_4_004_Goblin)

[Chapter 5: 005 Training Little Skeleton](#Top_of_0005_Chapter_5_005_Traini)

[Chapter 6: 006 Chicken Soup](#Top_of_0006_Chapter_6_006_Chicke)

[Chapter 7: 007 Summon Beast Cultivator](#Top_of_0007_Chapter_7_007_Summon)

[Chapter 8: 008 Conditional Trigger](#Top_of_0008_Chapter_8_008_Condit)

[Chapter 9: 009 Amendment Plan](#Top_of_0009_Chapter_9_009_Amendm)

[Chapter 10: 010 Little Skeleton Training Manual 2.0](#Top_of_0010_Chapter_10_010_Littl)

[Chapter 11: 011 Daily](#Top_of_0011_Chapter_11_011_Daily)

[Chapter 12: 012 Graduation Ceremony](#Top_of_0012_Chapter_12_012_Gradu)

[Chapter 13: 013 Black Iron Quality Summoned Beast](#Top_of_0013_Chapter_13_013_Black)

[Chapter 14: 014 First Bone Boiling](#Top_of_0014_Chapter_14_014_First)

[Chapter 15: 015 About Summer Vacation Plans](#Top_of_0015_Chapter_15_015_About)

[Chapter 16: 016 Lu Haikong](#Top_of_0016_Chapter_16_016_Lu_Ha)

[Chapter 17: 017 Li Kai Summoned Beast Grocery Store](#Top_of_0017_Chapter_17_017_Li_Ka)

[Chapter 18: 018 Item Attributes Exploration](#Top_of_0018_Chapter_18_018_Item)

[Chapter 19: 019 Collecting Money (Seeking Recommendation Votes)](#Top_of_0019_Chapter_19_019_Colle)

[Chapter 20: 020 Ordinary Father](#Top_of_0020_Chapter_20_020_Ordin)

[Chapter 21: 021 Little Skeleton's Training Manual 3.0](#Top_of_0021_Chapter_21_021_Littl)

[Chapter 22: 022 Major Sucker (Ask for a recommendation ticket)](#Top_of_0022_Chapter_22_022_Major)

[Chapter 23: 023 Monotonous](#Top_of_0023_Chapter_23_023_Monot)

[Chapter 24: 024 Professional Summon Beast Cultivator Assessment](#Top_of_0024_Chapter_24_024_Profe)

[Chapter 25: 025 Quality Enhancement](#Top_of_0025_Chapter_25_025_Quali)

[Chapter 26: 026 Black Iron (Pseudo)](#Top_of_0026_Chapter_26_026_Black)

[Chapter 27: 027 The Pig That Cheats](#Top_of_0027_Chapter_27_027_The_P)

[Chapter 28: 028 The emaciated Dudu](#Top_of_0028_Chapter_28_028_The_e)

[Chapter 29: 029 Test](#Top_of_0029_Chapter_29_029_Test)

[Chapter 30: 030 Goodbye Goblin](#Top_of_0030_Chapter_30_030_Goodb)

[Chapter 31: 031 Training](#Top_of_0031_Chapter_31_031_Train)

[Chapter 32: 032 End of holiday](#Top_of_0032_Chapter_32_032_End_o)

[Chapter 33: 033 Skill Training Plan Optimization](#Top_of_0033_Chapter_33_033_Skill)

[Chapter 34: 034 Little Skeleton the Clever](#Top_of_0034_Chapter_34_034_Littl)

[Chapter 35: 035 School Begins (Please Vote)](#Top_of_0035_Chapter_35_035_Schoo)

[Chapter 36: 036 Scumbag](#Top_of_0036_Chapter_36_036_Scumb)

[Chapter 37: 037 Little Skeleton's First Victory](#Top_of_0037_Chapter_37_037_Littl)

[Chapter 38: 038 How to Stay at the Peak of Your Appearance](#Top_of_0038_Chapter_38_038_How_t)

[Chapter 39: 039 Li Chun's Request](#Top_of_0039_Chapter_39_039_Li_Ch)

[Chapter 40: 040 Confused Li Chun](#Top_of_0040_Chapter_40_040_Confu)

[Chapter 41: 041 New Quality Improvement Plan](#Top_of_0041_Chapter_41_041_New_Q)

[Chapter 42: 042 Little Skeleton's Charging Baseball Bat](#Top_of_0042_Chapter_42_042_Littl)

[Chapter 43: 043 Recruiting Teammates](#Top_of_0043_Chapter_43_043_Recru)

[Chapter 44: 044 money jar](#Top_of_0044_Chapter_44_044_money)

[Chapter 45: 045 Frozen Bird](#Top_of_0045_Chapter_45_045_Froze)

[Chapter 46: 046 Prepare](#Top_of_0046_Chapter_46_046_Prepa)

[Chapter 47: 047 Master Li](#Top_of_0047_Chapter_47_047_Maste)

[Chapter 48: 048 One cut 5,000,000](#Top_of_0048_Chapter_48_048_One_c)

[Chapter 49: 049 Summoning Beast Equipment Research](#Top_of_0049_Chapter_49_049_Summo)

[Chapter 50: 050 One month](#Top_of_0050_Chapter_50_050_One_m)

[Chapter 51: 051 Research Failure](#Top_of_0051_Chapter_51_051_Resea)

[Chapter 52: 052 Quancheng Cup](#Top_of_0052_Chapter_52_052_Quanc)

[Chapter 53: 053 The atmosphere gradually became strange](#Top_of_0053_Chapter_53_053_The_a)

[Chapter 54: 054 First Victory](#Top_of_0054_Chapter_54_054_First)

[Chapter 55: 055 The Troublemaker Lu Wu](#Top_of_0055_Chapter_55_055_The_T)

[Chapter 56: 056 Hotspot](#Top_of_0056_Chapter_56_056_Hotsp)

[Chapter 57: 057 Unfollow](#Top_of_0057_Chapter_57_057_Unfol)

[Chapter 58: 058 The swollen Hao Zhijian](#Top_of_0058_Chapter_58_058_The_s)

[Chapter 59: 059 Crystal Slime](#Top_of_0059_Chapter_59_059_Cryst)

[Chapter 60: 060 Victory](#Top_of_0060_Chapter_60_060_Victo)

[Chapter 61: 061 Unexpected News](#Top_of_0061_Chapter_61_061_Unexp)

[Chapter 62: 062 Fury](#Top_of_0062_Chapter_62_062_Fury)

[Chapter 63: 063 Heading to Fucheng](#Top_of_0063_Chapter_63_063_Headi)

[Chapter 64: 064 Storm Giant Bear](#Top_of_0064_Chapter_64_064_Storm)

[Chapter 65: 065 2-star](#Top_of_0065_Chapter_65_065_2_sta)

[Chapter 66: 066 Professional Center](#Top_of_0066_Chapter_66_066_Profe)

[Chapter 67: 067 Sudden Change](#Top_of_0067_Chapter_67_067_Sudde)

[Chapter 68: 068 Concern](#Top_of_0068_Chapter_68_068_Conce)

[Chapter 69: 069 The Resentful Little Skeleton](#Top_of_0069_Chapter_69_069_The_R)

[Chapter 70: 070 Mr. Lu](#Top_of_0070_Chapter_70_070_Mr_Lu)

[Chapter 71: 071 Assessment](#Top_of_0071_Chapter_71_071_Asses)

[Chapter 72: 072 Growth Welfare Plan](#Top_of_0072_Chapter_72_072_Growt)

[Chapter 73: 073 Class A Support Welfare](#Top_of_0073_Chapter_73_073_Class)

[Chapter 74: 074 Accompanied mobile phone?](#Top_of_0074_Chapter_74_074_Accom)

[Chapter 75: Say a couple of words](#Top_of_0075_Chapter_75_Say_a_cou)

[Chapter 76: 075 exploded](#Top_of_0076_Chapter_76_075_explo)

[Chapter 77: 076 Bronze](#Top_of_0077_Chapter_77_076_Bronz)

[Chapter 78: 077 The New 233 Squad](#Top_of_0078_Chapter_78_077_The_N)

[Chapter 79: 078 Proud Little Skeleton](#Top_of_0079_Chapter_79_078_Proud)

[Chapter 80: 079 Crush](#Top_of_0080_Chapter_80_079_Crush)

[Chapter 81: Humiliation](#Top_of_0081_Chapter_81_Humiliati)

[Chapter 82: 081 Lu Wu enters the stage](#Top_of_0082_Chapter_82_081_Lu_Wu)

[Chapter 83: 082 Victory](#Top_of_0083_Chapter_83_082_Victo)

[Chapter 84: 083 Long Legs Girl](#Top_of_0084_Chapter_84_083_Long)

[Chapter 85: 084 Hao Zhijian's Benefactor](#Top_of_0085_Chapter_85_084_Hao_Z)

[Chapter 86: 085 What should I do if the teacher is a fraud? Waiting online, quite urgent!](#Top_of_0086_Chapter_86_085_What)

[Chapter 87: 086 The Curtain Falls](#Top_of_0087_Chapter_87_086_The_C)

[Chapter 88: 087 Lu Haikong returns](#Top_of_0088_Chapter_88_087_Lu_Ha)

[Chapter 89: 088 Surprise](#Top_of_0089_Chapter_89_088_Surpr)

[Chapter 90: 089 Human-shaped Summoned Beast](#Top_of_0090_Chapter_90_089_Human)

[Chapter 91: 090 Goblin Warrior](#Top_of_0091_Chapter_91_090_Gobli)

[Chapter 92: 091 Divine Origin Fruit](#Top_of_0092_Chapter_92_091_Divin)

[Chapter 93: 092 Intranet](#Top_of_0093_Chapter_93_092_Intra)

[Chapter 94: 093 Diary](#Top_of_0094_Chapter_94_093_Diary)

[Chapter 95: 094 Secret Realm Card](#Top_of_0095_Chapter_95_094_Secre)

[Chapter 96: 095 Underground Cave](#Top_of_0096_Chapter_96_095_Under)

[Chapter 97: 096 Entering the Secret Realm](#Top_of_0097_Chapter_97_096_Enter)

[Chapter 98: 097 Competent Little Skeleton](#Top_of_0098_Chapter_98_097_Compe)

[Chapter 99: 098 Half a month](#Top_of_0099_Chapter_99_098_Half)

[Chapter 100: 099 Rushing the Charts](#Top_of_0100_Chapter_100_099_Rush)

[Chapter 101: 100 fastest recommendations](#Top_of_0101_Chapter_101_100_fast)

[Chapter 102: 101 Monster Spawning](#Top_of_0102_Chapter_102_101_Mons)

[Chapter 103: 102 three stars](#Top_of_0103_Chapter_103_102_thre)

[Chapter 104: 103 Level 3 Boss](#Top_of_0104_Chapter_104_103_Leve)

[Chapter 105: 104 First](#Top_of_0105_Chapter_105_104_Firs)

[Chapter 106: Acting unreasonably](#Top_of_0106_Chapter_106_Acting_u)

[Chapter 107: 106 Tuantuan three stars](#Top_of_0107_Chapter_107_106_Tuan)

[Chapter 108: 107 Summoning Stones](#Top_of_0108_Chapter_108_107_Summ)

[Chapter 109: 108 Summoning Stone Identification](#Top_of_0109_Chapter_109_108_Summ)

[Chapter 110: 109 rotten corpse monster](#Top_of_0110_Chapter_110_109_rott)

[Chapter 111: 110 Go Home](#Top_of_0111_Chapter_111_110_Go_H)

[Chapter 112: 111 Black Fox (Please Subscribe)](#Top_of_0112_Chapter_112_111_Blac)

[Chapter 113: 112 Quality Improvement](#Top_of_0113_Chapter_113_112_Qual)

[Chapter 114: 113 Evolution Scheme](#Top_of_0114_Chapter_114_113_Evol)

[Chapter 115: 114 Eggs (Please Subscribe)](#Top_of_0115_Chapter_115_114_Eggs)

[Chapter 116: 115 Big Cemetery](#Top_of_0116_Chapter_116_115_Big)

[Chapter 117: 116 Advanced Skill (Please Subscribe)](#Top_of_0117_Chapter_117_116_Adva)

[Chapter 118: 117 Evolution (Subscribe Please)](#Top_of_0118_Chapter_118_117_Evol)

[Chapter 119: 118 Little Skeleton Mage](#Top_of_0119_Chapter_119_118_Litt)

[Chapter 120: 119 Tuantuan Evolution](#Top_of_0120_Chapter_120_119_Tuan)

[Chapter 121: 120 Make Money (Please Subscribe)](#Top_of_0121_Chapter_121_120_Make)

[Chapter 122: 121 Fleece (Seeking Subscription)](#Top_of_0122_Chapter_122_121_Flee)

[Chapter 123: 122 Striking (Request for Subscription)](#Top_of_0123_Chapter_123_122_Stri)

[Chapter 124: 123 The second team member](#Top_of_0124_Chapter_124_123_The)

[Chapter 125: 124 Help Mr. Ye reduce teaching pressure](#Top_of_0125_Chapter_125_124_Help)

[Chapter 126: 125 Unrestrained (Subscribe Please)](#Top_of_0126_Chapter_126_125_Unre)

[Chapter 127: 126 stirring up trouble](#Top_of_0127_Chapter_127_126_stir)

[Chapter 128: 127 Mr. Lu's student group](#Top_of_0128_Chapter_128_127_Mr_L)

[Chapter 129: 128 silver](#Top_of_0129_Chapter_129_128_silv)

[Chapter 130: 129 Hatching (Request for Subscription)](#Top_of_0130_Chapter_130_129_Hatc)

[Chapter 131: 130 little goldfish looking for Lu Wu](#Top_of_0131_Chapter_131_130_litt)

[Chapter 132: 131 Arrived at Fucheng](#Top_of_0132_Chapter_132_131_Arri)

[Chapter 133: 132 give goblin an injection](#Top_of_0133_Chapter_133_132_give)

[Chapter 134: Goodbye Hengheng Monster](#Top_of_0134_Chapter_134_Goodbye)

[Chapter 135: Day 1 of the Competition](#Top_of_0135_Chapter_135_Day_1_of)

[Chapter 136: 135 Going into Battle (Request for Subscription)](#Top_of_0136_Chapter_136_135_Goin)

[Chapter 137: 136 Inheritance Skills](#Top_of_0137_Chapter_137_136_Inhe)

[Chapter 138: 137's mind is all dirty when it comes to gaming and nurturing tactics.](#Top_of_0138_Chapter_138_137s_min)

[Chapter 139: 138 I predicted your prediction](#Top_of_0139_Chapter_139_138_I_pr)

[Chapter 140: 139 How lonely it is to be invincible](#Top_of_0140_Chapter_140_139_How)

[Chapter 141: 140 Silver Quality Summoned Beasts](#Top_of_0141_Chapter_141_140_Silv)

[Chapter 142: 141 You have it now](#Top_of_0142_Chapter_142_141_You)

[Chapter 143: 142 Little Skeleton dreaming of riding a pig](#Top_of_0143_Chapter_143_142_Litt)

[Chapter 144: 143 Stew Little Skeleton Again](#Top_of_0144_Chapter_144_143_Stew)

[Chapter 145: 144 Little Skeleton's phone](#Top_of_0145_Chapter_145_144_Litt)

[Chapter 146: 145 Olive Branch](#Top_of_0146_Chapter_146_145_Oliv)

[Chapter 147: 146 Provocation, High Stakes (Seeking Subscriptions)](#Top_of_0147_Chapter_147_146_Prov)

[Chapter 148: 147 Lu Wu's Calculations](#Top_of_0148_Chapter_148_147_Lu_W)

[Chapter 149: 148 Annihilation (Subscribe please)](#Top_of_0149_Chapter_149_148_Anni)

[Chapter 150: 149 preliminary competition is over](#Top_of_0150_Chapter_150_149_prel)

[Chapter 151: 150 White Bone Wild Boars](#Top_of_0151_Chapter_151_150_Whit)

[Chapter 152: 151 The Cost of Tempering](#Top_of_0152_Chapter_152_151_The)

[Chapter 153: 152 Unfathomable Lu Wu](#Top_of_0153_Chapter_153_152_Unfa)

[Chapter 154: 152 Tuantuan two stars](#Top_of_0154_Chapter_154_152_Tuan)

[Chapter 155: 153 Skill Awakening (Please Subscribe)](#Top_of_0155_Chapter_155_153_Skil)

[Chapter 156: 154 Little Skeleton 2 stars](#Top_of_0156_Chapter_156_154_Litt)

[Chapter 157: 155 Ghost Fire Skill (Subscription Request)](#Top_of_0157_Chapter_157_155_Ghos)

[Chapter 158: 156 It's quite normal to have bumps and knocks in a game!](#Top_of_0158_Chapter_158_156_Its)

[Chapter 159: 157 Playoffs Over](#Top_of_0159_Chapter_159_157_Play)

[Chapter 160: 158 Skeleton Knight Research Report](#Top_of_0160_Chapter_160_158_Skel)

[Chapter 161: 159 My nephew Lu Wu has the appearance of a Grandmaster.](#Top_of_0161_Chapter_161_159_My_n)

[Chapter 162: 160 Strong Skeleton](#Top_of_0162_Chapter_162_160_Stro)

[Chapter 163: 161 Greedy for fish](#Top_of_0163_Chapter_163_161_Gree)

[Chapter 164: 162 Silver Quality Little Griffin](#Top_of_0164_Chapter_164_162_Silv)

[Chapter 165: 163 Slap Lu Wu (Subscribe please)](#Top_of_0165_Chapter_165_163_Slap)

[Chapter 166: 164 playboy](#Top_of_0166_Chapter_166_164_play)

[Chapter 167: 165 The little goldfish that loves to dive into the toilet](#Top_of_0167_Chapter_167_165_The)

[Chapter 168: 166 White Bone Wild Boar Evolution](#Top_of_0168_Chapter_168_166_Whit)

[Chapter 169: 167 Top eight competition begins](#Top_of_0169_Chapter_169_167_Top)

[Chapter 170: 168 Lin Jianying and the Goblin (Please Subscribe)](#Top_of_0170_Chapter_170_168_Lin)

[Chapter 171: 169 Semi-finals (Subscription Request)](#Top_of_0171_Chapter_171_169_Semi)

[Chapter 172: 170 Goblin Evolution](#Top_of_0172_Chapter_172_170_Gobl)

[Chapter 173: 171 Blood Sword Dancer (Goblin)](#Top_of_0173_Chapter_173_171_Bloo)

[Chapter 174: 172 Gale Wolf](#Top_of_0174_Chapter_174_172_Gale)

[Chapter 175: 173 Easily Taken Down](#Top_of_0175_Chapter_175_173_Easi)

[Chapter 176: 174 Little Skeleton Hotpot](#Top_of_0176_Chapter_176_174_Litt)

[Chapter 177: 175 Finals (Please Subscribe)](#Top_of_0177_Chapter_177_175_Fina)

[Chapter 178: 176 Vermilion Fruit (seeking subscriptions)](#Top_of_0178_Chapter_178_176_Verm)

[Chapter 179: Tuantuan's Power Surges to 177](#Top_of_0179_Chapter_179_Tuantuan)

[Chapter 180: 178 The Last Battle](#Top_of_0180_Chapter_180_178_The)

[Chapter 181: 179 Little Skeleton three stars](#Top_of_0181_Chapter_181_179_Litt)

[Chapter 182: 180 Victory](#Top_of_0182_Chapter_182_180_Vict)

[Chapter 183: 181 Call Mom](#Top_of_0183_Chapter_183_181_Call)

[Chapter 184: 182 Inheritance Land](#Top_of_0184_Chapter_184_182_Inhe)

[Chapter 185: 183 Selecting Summoning Beast Baby](#Top_of_0185_Chapter_185_183_Sele)

[Chapter 186: 184 Warehouse Garbage (Two-in-One)](#Top_of_0186_Chapter_186_184_Ware)

[Chapter 187: 185 King-level Quality](#Top_of_0187_Chapter_187_185_King)

[Chapter 188: 186 Strongly Debuts](#Top_of_0188_Chapter_188_186_Stro)

[Chapter 189: 187 With a wave of my hand, I can overturn clouds; with the cover of my hand, I can turn rain.](#Top_of_0189_Chapter_189_187_With)

[Chapter 190: 188 Getting stronger by getting beaten](#Top_of_0190_Chapter_190_188_Gett)

[Chapter 191: 189 Summoner Talent](#Top_of_0191_Chapter_191_189_Summ)

[Chapter 192: 190 Weirdo](#Top_of_0192_Chapter_192_190_Weir)

[Chapter 193: 191 Rings (Subscribe)](#Top_of_0193_Chapter_193_191_Ring)

[Chapter 194: 191 enters the instance](#Top_of_0194_Chapter_194_191_ente)

[Chapter 195: 192 Light of Inheritance](#Top_of_0195_Chapter_195_192_Ligh)

[Chapter 196: 193 Trial Tower (Subscription Requested)](#Top_of_0196_Chapter_196_193_Tria)

[Chapter 197: 194 Evolution](#Top_of_0197_Chapter_197_194_Evol)

[Chapter 198: 195 Boss](#Top_of_0198_Chapter_198_195_Boss)

[Chapter 199: 196 Lu Wu's attribute](#Top_of_0199_Chapter_199_196_Lu_W)

[Chapter 200: 197 Little Goldfish Breakthrough](#Top_of_0200_Chapter_200_197_Litt)

[Chapter 201: 198 Unlucky Kong Yi](#Top_of_0201_Chapter_201_198_Unlu)

[Chapter 202: 199 Final Trial](#Top_of_0202_Chapter_202_199_Fina)

[Chapter 203: 200 Inheritance (Subscription Request)](#Top_of_0203_Chapter_203_200_Inhe)

[Chapter 204: 201 Evil Path Summoner (Request for Subscription)](#Top_of_0204_Chapter_204_201_Evil)

[Chapter 205: 202 Frustrating Lu Wu](#Top_of_0205_Chapter_205_202_Frus)

[Chapter 206: 203 Lu Wu's Counterattack](#Top_of_0206_Chapter_206_203_Lu_W)

[Chapter 207: 204 shameless woman](#Top_of_0207_Chapter_207_204_sham)

[Chapter 208: 205 Iron Armor Bull Milk](#Top_of_0208_Chapter_208_205_Iron)

[Chapter 209: 206 Huge Profits](#Top_of_0209_Chapter_209_206_Huge)

[Chapter 210: 207 Unable to Evolve](#Top_of_0210_Chapter_210_207_Unab)

[Chapter 211: 208 Tragic end](#Top_of_0211_Chapter_211_208_Trag)

[Chapter 212: 209 Thanks to Jiangbei Old Tie for sending the beef](#Top_of_0212_Chapter_212_209_Than)

[Chapter 213: 210 Company](#Top_of_0213_Chapter_213_210_Comp)

[Chapter 214: 211 Iron Armor Wild Boar](#Top_of_0214_Chapter_214_211_Iron)

[Chapter 215 215: 212 got rich](#Top_of_0215_Chapter_215_215_212)

[Chapter 216 216: 213 Two Plans](#Top_of_0216_Chapter_216_216_213)

[Chapter 217 217: The 214 plan is unveiled](#Top_of_0217_Chapter_217_217_The)

[Chapter 218 218: 215 Second Evolution](#Top_of_0218_Chapter_218_218_215)

[Chapter 219 219: 216 Steel-armored Wild Boar Skeleton Knight](#Top_of_0219_Chapter_219_219_216)

[Chapter 220 220: 217 Study Abroad Exchange](#Top_of_0220_Chapter_220_220_217)

[Chapter 221 221: 218 Domain](#Top_of_0221_Chapter_221_221_218)

[Chapter 222 222: 219 Lu Wu's Terrifying Combat Power](#Top_of_0222_Chapter_222_222_219)

[Chapter 223 223: 210 Jiangnan University](#Top_of_0223_Chapter_223_223_210)

[Chapter 224 224: 221 Dragon Teeth wrapped in Death Energy](#Top_of_0224_Chapter_224_224_221)

[Chapter 225 225: 222 Master](#Top_of_0225_Chapter_225_225_222)

[Chapter 226 226: 223 Little Skeleton's New Junior Brother](#Top_of_0226_Chapter_226_226_223)

[Chapter 227 227: 224 Beast Soul Burst](#Top_of_0227_Chapter_227_227_224)

[Chapter 228 228: 225 Review](#Top_of_0228_Chapter_228_228_225)

[Chapter 229 229: 226 Light Attribute pig?](#Top_of_0229_Chapter_229_229_226)

[Chapter 230 230: 227 War Soul Tablet (Seeking Subscriptions)](#Top_of_0230_Chapter_230_230_227)

[Chapter 231 231: 228 Evil Entry (Request for Subscription)](#Top_of_0231_Chapter_231_231_228)

[Chapter 232 232: 229 On the Possibility of Little Skeleton Transforming into a Beautiful Girl](#Top_of_0232_Chapter_232_232_229)

[Chapter 233 233: 230 promoted to leader?](#Top_of_0233_Chapter_233_233_230)

[Chapter 234 234: 231 Guzhentian](#Top_of_0234_Chapter_234_234_231)

[Chapter 235 235: 232 Shining Debut](#Top_of_0235_Chapter_235_235_232)

[Chapter 236 236: 233 If you can defeat me, you can become the champion!](#Top_of_0236_Chapter_236_236_233)

[Chapter 237 237: Lu Wu hasn't been born in 234 days](#Top_of_0237_Chapter_237_237_Lu_W)

[Chapter 238 - 238 235 Diced Shrimp with Pigs Heart](#Top_of_0238_Chapter_238___238_23)

[Chapter 239 - 239 236 Why did it take you more than a year to handle](#Top_of_0239_Chapter_239___239_23)

[Chapter 240 - 240 237 Harvest](#Top_of_0240_Chapter_240___240_23)

[Chapter 241 - 241 238 Learn Equipment Prop Making](#Top_of_0241_Chapter_241___241_23)

[Chapter 242 - 242 239 Rules Level Talent Money Sacrifice](#Top_of_0242_Chapter_242___242_23)

[Chapter 243 - 243 240 Little Skeletons phone enhancement](#Top_of_0243_Chapter_243___243_24)

[Chapter 244 - 244 241 Little Skeleton Quality Upgrade](#Top_of_0244_Chapter_244___244_24)

[Chapter 245 - 245 242 Little Skeleton Dragon Bone Controller](#Top_of_0245_Chapter_245___245_24)

[Chapter 246 - 246 243 Lin Jianyings message](#Top_of_0246_Chapter_246___246_24)

[Chapter 247 - 247 244 troublemakers want to harm me](#Top_of_0247_Chapter_247___247_24)

[Chapter 248 - 248 245 Gouzis Memories](#Top_of_0248_Chapter_248___248_24)

[Chapter 249 - 249 246 Skeleton Hellhound](#Top_of_0249_Chapter_249___249_24)

[Chapter 250 - 250 247 Dragon Bone Soup](#Top_of_0250_Chapter_250___250_24)

[Chapter 251 - 251 248 Demon Cave](#Top_of_0251_Chapter_251___251_24)

[Chapter 252 - 252 249 Acts](#Top_of_0252_Chapter_252___252_24)

[Chapter 253 - 253 Breakthrough Leader 250](#Top_of_0253_Chapter_253___253_Br)

[Chapter 254 - 254 251 Skeleton Commander Control Dragon Bone](#Top_of_0254_Chapter_254___254_25)

[Chapter 255 - 255 252 The brutal chaotic scene of Lu Haikong](#Top_of_0255_Chapter_255___255_25)

[Chapter 256 - 256 253 Senior Summoner](#Top_of_0256_Chapter_256___256_25)

[Chapter 257 - 257 254 Lu Wus Prestige](#Top_of_0257_Chapter_257___257_25)

[Chapter 258 - 258 255 takes office](#Top_of_0258_Chapter_258___258_25)

[Chapter 259 - 259 256 Lu Wus Fire](#Top_of_0259_Chapter_259___259_25)

[Chapter 260 - 260 257 Scram](#Top_of_0260_Chapter_260___260_25)

[Chapter 261 - 261 258 You will come](#Top_of_0261_Chapter_261___261_25)

[Chapter 262 - 262 259 Suppression (Subscription Requested)](#Top_of_0262_Chapter_262___262_25)

[Chapter 263 - 263 260 Excellent Worries](#Top_of_0263_Chapter_263___263_26)

[Chapter 264 - 264 261 Credit System](#Top_of_0264_Chapter_264___264_26)

[Chapter 265 - 265 262 Steel Armor Wild Boar Upgrade Package](#Top_of_0265_Chapter_265___265_26)

[Chapter 266 - 266 263 Task System Established](#Top_of_0266_Chapter_266___266_26)

[Chapter 267 - 267 264 three months](#Top_of_0267_Chapter_267___267_26)

[Chapter 268 - 268 265 Ms. Red-haired (Seeking Subscriptions)](#Top_of_0268_Chapter_268___268_26)

[Chapter 269 - 269 266 Mysterious Cave](#Top_of_0269_Chapter_269___269_26)

[Chapter 270 - 270 267 Artificial Secret Realm](#Top_of_0270_Chapter_270___270_26)

[Chapter 271 - 271 268 Crazy Battle](#Top_of_0271_Chapter_271___271_26)

[Chapter 272 - 272 269 Yan Ruxue](#Top_of_0272_Chapter_272___272_26)

[Chapter 273 - 273 270 Devouring Core](#Top_of_0273_Chapter_273___273_27)

[Chapter 274 - 274 271 Rescued (Seeking Subscriptions)](#Top_of_0274_Chapter_274___274_27)

[Chapter 275 - 275 272 Lu Haikong you turtle grandchild](#Top_of_0275_Chapter_275___275_27)

[Chapter 276 - 276 273 Li Ruyus attribute (Seeking Subscriptions)](#Top_of_0276_Chapter_276___276_27)

[Chapter 277 - 277 274 Night Talk (Subscribe please)](#Top_of_0277_Chapter_277___277_27)

[Chapter 278 - 278 275 Moon Shadow](#Top_of_0278_Chapter_278___278_27)

[Chapter 279 - 279 276 Return](#Top_of_0279_Chapter_279___279_27)

[Chapter 280 - 280 277 Untitled](#Top_of_0280_Chapter_280___280_27)

[Chapter 281 - 281 278 Shes your sister](#Top_of_0281_Chapter_281___281_27)

[Chapter 282 - 282 279 Preparing for the College Tournament](#Top_of_0282_Chapter_282___282_27)

[Chapter 283 - 283 280 Dragon Island Bully](#Top_of_0283_Chapter_283___283_28)

[Chapter 284 - 284 281 Bone Dragon Wrapped in Death Energy](#Top_of_0284_Chapter_284___284_28)

[Chapter 285 - 285 282 Transform for your daddy](#Top_of_0285_Chapter_285___285_28)

[Chapter 286 - 286 283 Dragon Tomb (Subscribe please)](#Top_of_0286_Chapter_286___286_28)

[Chapter 287 - 287 284 Departure (Request for Subscription)](#Top_of_0287_Chapter_287___287_28)

[Chapter 288 - 288 285 Yuan Qingqing](#Top_of_0288_Chapter_288___288_28)

[Chapter 289 - 289 286 Dragon Palace Secret Realm](#Top_of_0289_Chapter_289___289_28)

[Chapter 290 - 290 287 Dragon Gate](#Top_of_0290_Chapter_290___290_28)

[Chapter 291 - 291 288 Dragon Transformation](#Top_of_0291_Chapter_291___291_28)

[Chapter 292 - 292 289 Wang Jun Who Doubted Life](#Top_of_0292_Chapter_292___292_28)

[Chapter 293 - 293 290 Little Skeletons phone defying the heavens](#Top_of_0293_Chapter_293___293_29)

[Chapter 294 - 294 291 Everyone present is trash](#Top_of_0294_Chapter_294___294_29)

[Chapter 295 - 295 292 The match starts](#Top_of_0295_Chapter_295___295_29)

[Chapter 296 - 296 293 orchid mantis](#Top_of_0296_Chapter_296___296_29)

[Chapter 297 - 297 294 pushes king Su Lan](#Top_of_0297_Chapter_297___297_29)

[Chapter 298 - 298 295 Skyward Stick](#Top_of_0298_Chapter_298___298_29)

[Chapter 299 - 299 296 He Guzhentian is back](#Top_of_0299_Chapter_299___299_29)

[Chapter 300 - 300 297 Terror as such](#Top_of_0300_Chapter_300___300_29)

[Chapter 301 - 301 298 Mr. Lu is still Mr. Lu](#Top_of_0301_Chapter_301___301_29)

[Chapter 302 - 302 299 advanced Lord Level](#Top_of_0302_Chapter_302___302_29)

[Chapter 303 - 303 300 Master Level (please subscribe)](#Top_of_0303_Chapter_303___303_30)

[Chapter 304 - 304 301 Steel Armor Hero 2nd Generation](#Top_of_0304_Chapter_304___304_30)

[Chapter 305 - 305 302 My son Zhen Tian has the makings of a](#Top_of_0305_Chapter_305___305_30)

[Chapter 306 - 306 303 Four-winged Angel](#Top_of_0306_Chapter_306___306_30)

[Chapter 307 - 307 304 Education Bureau Treasure Trove](#Top_of_0307_Chapter_307___307_30)

[Chapter 308 - 308 305 Spiritual Fruit](#Top_of_0308_Chapter_308___308_30)

[Chapter 309 - 309 306 all of you go at once](#Top_of_0309_Chapter_309___309_30)

[Chapter 310 - 310 307 Maeshima Kaoris Summoned Beast](#Top_of_0310_Chapter_310___310_30)

[Chapter 311 - 311 308 Advanced (Subscription Request)](#Top_of_0311_Chapter_311___311_30)

[Chapter 312 - 312 309 Epic](#Top_of_0312_Chapter_312___312_30)

[Chapter 313 - 313 310 Over-the-top acting](#Top_of_0313_Chapter_313___313_31)

[Chapter 314 - 314 311 Idiot](#Top_of_0314_Chapter_314___314_31)

[Chapter 315 - 315 312 King-level](#Top_of_0315_Chapter_315___315_31)

[Chapter 316 - 316 313 three-time evolution Little Skeleton](#Top_of_0316_Chapter_316___316_31)

[Chapter 317 - 317 314 Zero (Major Section)](#Top_of_0317_Chapter_317___317_31)

[Chapter 318 - 318 315 Feng Xiu](#Top_of_0318_Chapter_318___318_31)

[Chapter 319 - 319 316 Changping Secret Realm](#Top_of_0319_Chapter_319___319_31)

[Chapter 320 - 320 317 Skeleton General](#Top_of_0320_Chapter_320___320_31)

[Chapter 321 - 321 318 Grandmaster Level Skills](#Top_of_0321_Chapter_321___321_31)

[Chapter 322 - 322 319 Undead Transformation](#Top_of_0322_Chapter_322___322_31)

[Chapter 323 - 323 320 Tuantuan advanced](#Top_of_0323_Chapter_323___323_32)

[Chapter 324 - 324 321 Mad Demon Stick Technique](#Top_of_0324_Chapter_324___324_32)

[Chapter 325 - 325 322 Heaven Suppressing Stick](#Top_of_0325_Chapter_325___325_32)

[Chapter 326 - 326 323 Dragon Knight Concept](#Top_of_0326_Chapter_326___326_32)

[Chapter 327 - 327 324 Price](#Top_of_0327_Chapter_327___327_32)

[Chapter 328 - 328 325 High School League](#Top_of_0328_Chapter_328___328_32)

[Chapter 329 - 329 326 Lu Haikong Missing](#Top_of_0329_Chapter_329___329_32)

[Chapter 330 - 330 327 Unbearable](#Top_of_0330_Chapter_330___330_32)

[Chapter 331 - 331 The killer is Feng Xiu](#Top_of_0331_Chapter_331___331_Th)

[Chapter 332 - 332 329 Dark currents surging](#Top_of_0332_Chapter_332___332_32)

[Chapter 333 - 333 330 low-end version Bone Dragon Knight](#Top_of_0333_Chapter_333___333_33)

[Chapter 334 - 334 331 Wind Rises (Subscribe Please)](#Top_of_0334_Chapter_334___334_33)

[Chapter 335 - 335 332 Summoning Beast Army](#Top_of_0335_Chapter_335___335_33)

[Chapter 336 - 336 333 Prey](#Top_of_0336_Chapter_336___336_33)

[Chapter 337 - 337 334 Extreme Burst](#Top_of_0337_Chapter_337___337_33)

[Chapter 338 - 338 335 You all must die](#Top_of_0338_Chapter_338___338_33)

[Chapter 339 - 339 336 Terror Moon Shadow](#Top_of_0339_Chapter_339___339_33)

[Chapter 340 - 340 337 Stay or Leave](#Top_of_0340_Chapter_340___340_33)

[Chapter 341 - 341 338 Gate](#Top_of_0341_Chapter_341___341_33)

[Chapter 342 - 342 339 Awakening](#Top_of_0342_Chapter_342___342_33)

[Chapter 343 - 343 340 Dudu explodes](#Top_of_0343_Chapter_343___343_34)

[Chapter 344 - 344 341 District 11](#Top_of_0344_Chapter_344___344_34)

[Chapter 345 - 345 342 Swordsmanship Genius](#Top_of_0345_Chapter_345___345_34)

[Chapter 346 - 346 343 Divine Blade Tower](#Top_of_0346_Chapter_346___346_34)

[Chapter 347 - 347 344 Princess Cimu](#Top_of_0347_Chapter_347___347_34)

[Chapter 348 - 348 345 Challenge](#Top_of_0348_Chapter_348___348_34)

[Chapter 349 - 349 346 Grandmaster (Subscription Requested)](#Top_of_0349_Chapter_349___349_34)

[Chapter 350 - 350 347 Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword](#Top_of_0350_Chapter_350___350_34)

[Chapter 351 - 351 348 Cimu family](#Top_of_0351_Chapter_351___351_34)

[Chapter 352 - 352 349 Divine Wrath](#Top_of_0352_Chapter_352___352_34)

[Chapter 353 - 353 350 Assassination (Please Subscribe)](#Top_of_0353_Chapter_353___353_35)

[Chapter 354 - 354 351 Domain (Please subscribe)](#Top_of_0354_Chapter_354___354_35)

[Chapter 355 - 355 352 King of Divine Artifacts](#Top_of_0355_Chapter_355___355_35)

[Chapter 356 - 356 353 Sickly Cute](#Top_of_0356_Chapter_356___356_35)

[Chapter 357 - 357 354 Fury](#Top_of_0357_Chapter_357___357_35)

[Chapter 358 - 358 355 utterly destroys the will](#Top_of_0358_Chapter_358___358_35)

[Chapter 359 - 359 356 Imprisoned Lu Wu](#Top_of_0359_Chapter_359___359_35)

[Chapter 360 - 360 Method of breaking through 367](#Top_of_0360_Chapter_360___360_Me)

[Chapter 361 - 361 358 Attack King-level](#Top_of_0361_Chapter_361___361_35)

[Chapter 362: 359 Good Person Ibaraki](#Top_of_0362_Chapter_362_359_Good)

[Chapter 363: 360 King-level](#Top_of_0363_Chapter_363_360_King)

[Chapter 364: 361 Dragon Essence Blood](#Top_of_0364_Chapter_364_361_Drag)

[Chapter 365: 362 Act (Request for Subscription)](#Top_of_0365_Chapter_365_362_Act)

[Chapter 366: 363 Iron-eating Beast](#Top_of_0366_Chapter_366_363_Iron)

[Chapter 367: 364 Slays Old Thief Cimu](#Top_of_0367_Chapter_367_364_Slay)

[Chapter 368: 365 Scraping Treasure Vault](#Top_of_0368_Chapter_368_365_Scra)

[Chapter 369: 366 Settling Down (Seeking Subscriptions)](#Top_of_0369_Chapter_369_366_Sett)

[Chapter 370: 367 67 and 71](#Top_of_0370_Chapter_370_367_67_a)

[Chapter 371: 368 Ninth Apostle](#Top_of_0371_Chapter_371_368_Nint)

[Chapter 372: 369 Fire God Slash](#Top_of_0372_Chapter_372_369_Fire)

[Chapter 373: 370 Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword Advanced](#Top_of_0373_Chapter_373_370_Heav)

[Chapter 374: 371 King-level Feedback](#Top_of_0374_Chapter_374_371_King)

[Chapter 375: 372 silly advanced](#Top_of_0375_Chapter_375_372_sill)

[Chapter 376: 373 Return to District 11](#Top_of_0376_Chapter_376_373_Retu)

[Chapter 377: 374 47 Angel Envoy](#Top_of_0377_Chapter_377_374_47_A)

[Chapter 378: 375 Gate of the Dead](#Top_of_0378_Chapter_378_375_Gate)

[Chapter 379: 376 Breakthrough (Seeking Subscription)](#Top_of_0379_Chapter_379_376_Brea)

[Chapter 380: 377 King Level 2 Star (Seeking Subscriptions)](#Top_of_0380_Chapter_380_377_King)

[Chapter 381: 378 Little Skeleton Breakthrough](#Top_of_0381_Chapter_381_378_Litt)

[Chapter 382: 379 72 Angel Envoy](#Top_of_0382_Chapter_382_379_72_A)

[Chapter 383: 380 Blood Princes](#Top_of_0383_Chapter_383_380_Bloo)

[Chapter 384: 381 Charming Queen](#Top_of_0384_Chapter_384_381_Char)

[Chapter 385: 382 Kusanagi Sword](#Top_of_0385_Chapter_385_382_Kusa)

[Chapter 386: Jiao Long form 383](#Top_of_0386_Chapter_386_Jiao_Lon)

[Chapter 387: 384 Warhammer Form](#Top_of_0387_Chapter_387_384_Warh)

[Chapter 388: 385 Dudu](#Top_of_0388_Chapter_388_385_Dudu)

[Chapter 389: 386 three Epic items](#Top_of_0389_Chapter_389_386_thre)

[Chapter 390: 387 Fallen Holy Light](#Top_of_0390_Chapter_390_387_Fall)

[Chapter 391: 388 Fusion](#Top_of_0391_Chapter_391_388_Fusi)

[Chapter 392: 389 secured](#Top_of_0392_Chapter_392_389_secu)

[Chapter 393: 390 Dark](#Top_of_0393_Chapter_393_390_Dark)

[Chapter 394: 391 Base](#Top_of_0394_Chapter_394_391_Base)

[Chapter 395: 392 Trapped Dragon](#Top_of_0395_Chapter_395_392_Trap)

[Chapter 396: 393 Slaughter of Living Beings](#Top_of_0396_Chapter_396_393_Slau)

[Chapter 397: 394 Fei Yun](#Top_of_0397_Chapter_397_394_Fei)

[Chapter 398: 395 Dudu](#Top_of_0398_Chapter_398_395_Dudu)

[Chapter 399: 396 Dual Personality](#Top_of_0399_Chapter_399_396_Dual)

[Chapter 400: 397 Prisoner Dragon Secret Realm](#Top_of_0400_Chapter_400_397_Pris)

[Chapter 401: 398 Celebration](#Top_of_0401_Chapter_401_398_Cele)

[Chapter 402: 399 causes trouble](#Top_of_0402_Chapter_402_399_caus)

[Chapter 403: 400 They are right](#Top_of_0403_Chapter_403_400_They)

[Chapter 404: 401, kill them all.](#Top_of_0404_Chapter_404_401_kill)

[Chapter 405: 402 Dudu's Terrifying Power](#Top_of_0405_Chapter_405_402_Dudu)

[Chapter 406: 403 Gate Fragments](#Top_of_0406_Chapter_406_403_Gate)

[Chapter 407: 404 powerful](#Top_of_0407_Chapter_407_404_powe)

[Chapter 408: 405 Lin Jianying](#Top_of_0408_Chapter_408_405_Lin)

[Chapter 409: 406 Eye of Truth](#Top_of_0409_Chapter_409_406_Eye)

[Chapter 410: 407 Extreme Cold Hell](#Top_of_0410_Chapter_410_407_Extr)

[Chapter 411: 408 Epic 0 Star](#Top_of_0411_Chapter_411_408_Epic)

[Chapter 412: 409 Sword Saint](#Top_of_0412_Chapter_412_409_Swor)

[Chapter 413: 410 Breakthrough](#Top_of_0413_Chapter_413_410_Brea)

[Chapter 414: Memory 411](#Top_of_0414_Chapter_414_Memory_4)

[Chapter 415: 411 Inheritance](#Top_of_0415_Chapter_415_411_Inhe)

[Chapter 416: 413 Upgraded System](#Top_of_0416_Chapter_416_413_Upgr)

[Chapter 417: 414 Lin Jianying's experience](#Top_of_0417_Chapter_417_414_Lin)

[Chapter 418: 415 Destructive Spear](#Top_of_0418_Chapter_418_415_Dest)

[Chapter 419: 416 Golden Thunder](#Top_of_0419_Chapter_419_416_Gold)

[Chapter 420: 417 Return to Zeroer](#Top_of_0420_Chapter_420_417_Retu)

[Chapter 421: 418 Death Scythe](#Top_of_0421_Chapter_421_418_Deat)

[Chapter \_\_auto\_\_ 422 - \_\_auto\_\_ 422: 419 Strong](#Top_of_0422_Chapter___auto___422)

[Chapter \_\_auto\_\_ 423: 420 Second Envoy\_\_auto\_\_](#Top_of_0423_Chapter___auto___423)

[Chapter 423: 420 Second Envoy](#Top_of_0424_Chapter_423_420_Seco)

[Chapter 424: 421 Fierce Battle](#Top_of_0425_Chapter_424_421_Fier)

[Chapter 425: 422 Slay](#Top_of_0426_Chapter_425_422_Slay)

[Chapter 426: The current situation of elder number 423](#Top_of_0427_Chapter_426_The_curr)

[Chapter 427: 424 Absorb Fragment](#Top_of_0428_Chapter_427_424_Abso)

[Chapter 428: 425 Surprise Attack](#Top_of_0429_Chapter_428_425_Surp)

[Chapter 429: 426 This is just the beginning](#Top_of_0430_Chapter_429_426_This)

[Chapter 430: 427 Create a diversion](#Top_of_0431_Chapter_430_427_Crea)

[Chapter 431: 428 Holy Light Angel](#Top_of_0432_Chapter_431_428_Holy)

[Chapter 432: 429 Demigod](#Top_of_0433_Chapter_432_429_Demi)

[Chapter 433: 430 Is it a clone or the original?](#Top_of_0434_Chapter_433_430_Is_i)

[Chapter 434: Treasury 431](#Top_of_0435_Chapter_434_Treasury)

[Chapter 435: 432 Refinement](#Top_of_0436_Chapter_435_432_Refi)

[Chapter 436: 433 Mu Laogui](#Top_of_0437_Chapter_436_433_Mu_L)

[Chapter 437: 434 All Things](#Top_of_0438_Chapter_437_434_All)

[Chapter 438: 435 Infinite Clones](#Top_of_0439_Chapter_438_435_Infi)

[Chapter 439: 436 Epic 2 Star](#Top_of_0440_Chapter_439_436_Epic)

[Chapter 440: 437 transactions](#Top_of_0441_Chapter_440_437_tran)

[Chapter 441: 438 Resurrection](#Top_of_0442_Chapter_441_438_Resu)

[Chapter 442: 439 Tuantuan](#Top_of_0443_Chapter_442_439_Tuan)

[Chapter 443: 440 Wish Level](#Top_of_0444_Chapter_443_440_Wish)

[Chapter 444: 441 Encirclement Again](#Top_of_0445_Chapter_444_441_Enci)

[Chapter 445: 442 Untitled](#Top_of_0446_Chapter_445_442_Unti)

[Chapter 446: 443 Escape from Death](#Top_of_0447_Chapter_446_443_Esca)

[Chapter 447: 444 Blood-colored Space](#Top_of_0448_Chapter_447_444_Bloo)

[Chapter 448: 445 Kill the donkey when the grinding is done](#Top_of_0449_Chapter_448_445_Kill)

[Chapter 449: 446 Refinement](#Top_of_0450_Chapter_449_446_Refi)

[Chapter 422 422: 419 Strong](#Top_of_0451_Chapter_422_422_419)

[Chapter 450: 447 Sacrifice](#Top_of_0452_Chapter_450_447_Sacr)

[Chapter 451: 448 Lu Wu returns](#Top_of_0453_Chapter_451_448_Lu_W)

[Chapter 452: 449 Altar](#Top_of_0454_Chapter_452_449_Alta)

[Chapter 453: 450 Truth](#Top_of_0455_Chapter_453_450_Trut)

[Chapter 454: 451 Besieging the Zeroer](#Top_of_0456_Chapter_454_451_Besi)

[Chapter 455: The true purpose](#Top_of_0457_Chapter_455_The_true)

[Chapter 456: 453 Grand Finale](#Top_of_0458_Chapter_456_453_Gran)

# Information

Table of Contents URL: https://novelbin.me/novel-book/my-starting-summon-is-a-small-skeleton#tab-chapters-title

Synopsis When Lu Wu opened his eyes, he found that the world had changed completely. The world before him did not have fancy magic, nor ultimate Dou Qi. What it had were summoners that form contracts with summoned beasts. And coincidentally, he was such a summoner, although not a professional one, and his first summoned beast was a piece of crap. But that was fine, because he also had a golden finger!

# Chapter 1: 001 Lu Wu

Quancheng No.3 Middle School, inside the infirmary.

A boy who looked as ordinary as a certain principal lay on the hospital bed, clutching his head.

Next to his bed stood a one-meter-tall Little Skeleton, with a pale skeleton and a somewhat adorable, dumb look amid its eerie appearance.

Yes, this Little Skeleton, which could hardly stand steadily, was one of the major reasons the boy on the bed had a headache now.

"You say I traveled through time, but why couldn't I travel a bit earlier? Not too much, just an hour earlier, just one hour would be enough!

If I could have traveled an hour earlier, with my talent, with my looks, there's no way I would have summoned such a wretched thing."

Lu Wu was particularly frustrated at this moment.

Time travel should be a good thing.

Traveling from his twenties to an 18-year-old high school student was even better.

Even if the world he traveled to seemed to change.

Even if the once harmonious and stable society now had the chaos of monsters and the unscientific existence of secret realms, it was something Lu Wu found worth celebrating.

But Lu Wu couldn't be happy at this moment because his start seemed a bit poor.

Just one hour ago,

the school organized a Summoning Ceremony for their second-year students before the summer vacation began.

For students aspiring to become Professional Summoners, this was both their first summoning and the most important one in their lives.

This summoning would greatly impact their future possibilities of becoming true Professional Summoners, as important as college entrance exams in his past life.

But during this ceremony, Lu Wu, or rather, his former self, summoned this thing beside him as his initial Summoned Beast.

When this Little Skeleton appeared, his former self got so excited that he passed out directly from the shock.

Then he was sent here, and then Lu Wu time-traveled.

After taking in the memories left by his former self, Lu Wu's state of mind was also a bit shattered.

Looking at the Little Skeleton in front of him, he felt that perhaps, maybe, he should choose to pass out too.

"Knock, knock, knock."

Lu Wu was grappling with whether to pass out or not when there were knocks at the door and a particularly crisp voice sounded.

"Lu Wu, are you awake?"

Lu Wu recognized the voice; it was his childhood friend Pang Duddu. Well, the surname seemed wrong, but it was more fitting.

"Yes!"

The moment Lu Wu responded, a particularly large, round body cautiously squeezed in.

This was Pang Duddu, real name Pang Duddu, nickname Fat Duddu.

Eighteen like Lu Wu, less than 1.7 meters tall, but weighing over 200 pounds.

Pang Duddu, holding a newly summoned, fist-sized Mini Pig in her arms, asked with concern, "Lu Wu, are you okay?"

Lu Wu glanced at the pig in Pang Duddu's arms, then at her, and rubbed his head.

"Feeling much better now!"

Indeed, happiness is a matter of comparison.

Comparing with his time-travel accompanying cheap childhood friend, Lu Wu felt he was doing okay.

Although the Little Skeleton was a bit weak, it should be better than her pig, and he outmatched her in looks.

"That's good!"

Completely unaware of Lu Wu's thoughts, Pang Duddu was very happy to hear he was better, her chubby face full of smiles.

When she smiled, Lu Wu got upset.

"Stop smiling, your flesh jiggles when you laugh. How many times have I told you not to eat junk food, to lose weight, but you just won't listen.

Look at other people's childhood friends, all pretty girls, but mine is a chubby one like you."

After saying this, Lu Wu was stunned himself.

He didn't expect to say such words, but Pang Duddu seemed used to it.

Not only was she not angry, but she also particularly obediently stopped smiling when Lu Wu told her not to.

Seeing her like this made Lu Wu feel uncomfortable, because his words were influenced by his former self's memories and weren't his true intentions.

If Pang Duddu retorted, he would feel a bit better, but seeing her like this made his heart uneasy.

"What's the matter with you? When I scold you, why don't you scold me back? Do you just let me bully you?"

Pang Duddu scratched her head, responding with a shy smile.

Seeing her like this made Lu Wu's frustration dissipate. His childhood friend was good at everything, except for being too fat and too soft, plus his former self was a bit of a jerk, almost treating her as an outlet for his frustrations.

Adjusting his mindset, Lu Wu got off the bed and asked about another childhood friend in his memory: "Where's Old Lin? Why hasn't he come?"

It was better if Lu Wu didn't mention Old Lin.

As soon as he did, Pang Duddu's face looked a bit unnatural, and she ducked her head.

Noticing something was wrong, Lu Wu turned to look at Pang Duddu, narrowing his eyes: "I'm asking you a question."

"Um, Old Lin went to the training ground with the class monitor. He said he wasn't going back with us and told us to go back ourselves."

After saying this, Pang Duddu hung her head even lower.

She seemed like she wanted to find a hole to bury her chubby body in.

She knew Lu Wu would surely be angry upon hearing this.

Because Old Lin betrayed them when they had agreed yesterday.

After summoning their beasts, the three of them would team up for the National High School Summoner Tournament. Now, after the ceremony, seeing that their initial summons were a Mini Pig and a Little Skeleton with no potential,

he wouldn't even go home with them, but went off with the class monitor. Clearly, he abandoned them.

Considering Lu Wu's temper, he would surely get furious, so Pang Duddu was a bit scared.

Lu Wu's temper was terrible.

To Pang Duddu's surprise, Lu Wu didn't get angry, only froze for a moment and responded flatly, "Oh, I know," then got up and walked out.

Seeing this, Pang Duddu hurriedly followed with the Mini Pig in her arms.

The Little Skeleton that had been standing by Lu Wu's bed also wobbled along behind him as he left.

However, the little guy walked slowly, its bones rattling and swaying. It hadn't gone far before it fell with a 'thud'.

The Little Skeleton didn't feel pain and didn't cry.

It just got up and continued chasing after Lu Wu, then fell again after a few steps.

Getting up again, chasing again, and falling again.

After several repeats, Pang Duddu felt both distressed and scared.

She didn't dare to touch this undead creature and worried that helping it would anger Lu Wu.

Just when Pang Duddu didn't know what to do, Lu Wu, walking in front, stopped, sighed, then turned back to pull up the Little Skeleton.

As Lu Wu pulled up the Little Skeleton, his expression paused slightly but soon returned to normal. He walked off, carrying the unsteady Little Skeleton.

Watching Lu Wu leave with the Little Skeleton, Pang Duddu was stunned. For some reason, she felt that today, Lu Wu was a bit strange, not like himself...

# Chapter 2: 002 Summoner

```

After leaving the infirmary, he walked on campus, holding Little Skeleton's hand.

Everything he saw made Lu Wu deeply realize once again that he had indeed traveled to a world completely different from his previous life.

On this campus, the students Lu Wu saw from a distance all had Summoned Beasts by their sides.

These Summoned Beasts were of various and bizarre kinds.

Some were Undead Type Summoned Beasts like the silly Little Skeleton beside him.

Some were animal-type Summoned Beasts like the pudgy pig in Pang Duddu's arms.

There were even some students followed by goblin summons, just like those seen in movies and games.

.....

The variety of Summoned Beasts gathered here made the campus feel like a magical world, giving Lu Wu a particularly strong impression.

It made him a bit dazed, wondering if he was dreaming, causing him to pinch his arm.

"Huh, it doesn't hurt, it seems I really am dreaming."

Nonsense, of course it didn't hurt, he wasn't pinching his own arm.

Pang Duddu, whom he pinched, did feel pain but was more concerned about Lu Wu.

To her, summoning Little Skeleton was a big blow to Lu Wu, so big that he still seemed reluctant to accept reality.

This made Pang Duddu feel very uncomfortable, wanting to comfort Lu Wu, but not knowing what to say.

Before she could figure it out, she saw that Lu Wu had already disappeared, and when she looked again, he was up ahead chatting with a girl.

"Hey classmate, your bird is so cute, can I touch it?"

"Oh, okay!"

Lu Wu's way of flirting was very cliché, and originally, the girl didn't want to pay attention to him.

But when she turned her head and saw his plain and simple face, her body honestly handed over the bird.

She shyly took out her phone, preparing to add him as a friend as soon as he spoke.

But after Lu Wu touched her Summoned Beast, he narrowed his eyes, thanked her, and ran off.

The girl was dumbfounded. She even took out her phone, yet he just ran away like that?

Was he really just here to touch her bird?

Looking again, she saw Lu Wu thank her and then head straight to another girl, making the girl feel even worse.

"Pfft, scumbag!"

After touching a few girls' Summoned Beasts in this way, Lu Wu had to stop.

On one hand, he had gathered the information he wanted and confirmed what he needed to confirm.

On the other hand, the girls whose Summoned Beasts he touched were giving him particularly resentful looks, making Lu Wu feel like he was on pins and needles.

He couldn't understand it. He only touched their Summoned Beasts; was it necessary to be this resentful?

Unable to bear those looks, Lu Wu pulled Pang Duddu and ran out of the campus.

Outside the campus, at the bus stop, Lu Wu let go of Pang Duddu's hand and, seeing her chubby, flushed face that unexpectedly looked a bit cute, he frowned: "Why is your face so red? We've only run a few steps and you're already this out of breath? Let me tell you, this won't do, you can't become an excellent Summoner like this, you must lose weight, got it?"

"Mm!"

Pang Duddu still looked like a little wife.

Lu Wu was too lazy to say more, and just then, the bus arrived, and Lu Wu got on directly with his card.

"Beep, Student Card!"

After getting on the bus, Lu Wu found a seat by the window and sat down, his eyes fixed on the scenery outside.

As the bus started moving, this world, both familiar and strange to him, slowly began to unfold before his eyes, and the memories and knowledge of this world started flowing back to him.

This world was highly similar to Lu Wu's previous one.

Of course, this high similarity referred to over a hundred years ago, not the present.

Because over a hundred years ago, this world underwent a tremendous change.

Various monsters that only existed in novels and movies began to appear, one after another, incredible secret realms sprang up like mushrooms after the rain, and the most inconceivable thing was that the once effective hot weapons suddenly became useless due to unknown reasons.

This threw the world into a long period of chaos.

It wasn't until a few decades ago that human society regained stability and peace.

The main reason humans maintained peace in this world overrun by monsters and secret realms was the Summoners!

During that long period of chaos, people discovered that although humanity lost its hot weapons, it gained the ability to tame, summon, contract, and command monsters.

Thus, the profession of Summoner was born.

Humans relied on Summoners to end the chaos, reclaim dominance over the world, and achieve precious peace and stability, rebuilding a world where humans and Summoned Beasts coexisted.

As the enders of chaos.

In this new world, Summoners, or to be precise, Professional Summoners, were the most respected profession.

Almost every boy and girl dreamed of becoming a Professional Summoner, and Lu Wu's predecessor was no exception.

But becoming a Professional Summoner was not an easy task.

In today's society, ordinary people who wanted to become Professional Summoners and obtain a Professional Summoner license had only two pathways.

One was to get into Summoner University and graduate from there.

The other was to pass the Summoner Guild's assessment.

Only through these two ways could one obtain a Professional Summoner license and become a revered Summoner.

And for the current Lu Wu, the first pathway was clearly the most suitable for him and also the most legitimate.

Therefore, as he sorted through these memories, possibly out of respect for Summoners, possibly influenced by his predecessor's memories, he set a small goal for himself immediately.

"I must get into Summoner University and become a Professional Summoner!"

However, when Lu Wu set this small goal, he couldn't help but frown.

Because the memories related to getting into Summoner University flooded his mind.

Those memories made Lu Wu realize that it seemed quite challenging for him to get into Summoner University at present.

Summoner University had two admission requirements, one being scores in cultural subjects, and the other being performance in the national high school league.

Or rather, these two combined formed the complete entrance exam in this world.

And both of these were difficult for the current Lu Wu.

Regarding cultural subjects,

His predecessor was a poor student, and since he had traveled here, he hadn't fully organized his memories yet. If he were to take the cultural subjects exam, he guaranteed he'd score zero in minutes.

Just this was enough to give Lu Wu a headache.

But what gave him an even bigger headache was the national high school Summoner league!

```

# Chapter 3: 003 Plugin Online

National High School Summoners League.

It was an annual competition held nationwide.

The league was divided into individual and team sections.

The results of both sections were counted towards the academic points for college entrance exams, each weighting 25 percent.

The entire league accounted for 70 percent of the academic points for the exams.

This meant that not participating in the high school league or performing poorly in the competition was essentially a pipe dream for anyone hoping to get into Summoner University.

For Lu Wu at this moment, this was a deadly situation.

The reason lay with Little Skeleton.

The legacy Little Skeleton left by Lu Wu's predecessor was recognized as one of the weakest initial summoned beasts.

Lu Wu himself witnessed it, as it couldn't even walk properly.

Using such a summoned beast to compete, wasn't that just giving away a win?

What's worse, even if Lu Wu was willing to give away a win, someone had to be willing to let him do so.

The high school league required combined registration for individuals and teams.

It was not possible to register individually; one had to have a team to register.

A team had to have at least three official members.

In other words, if Lu Wu couldn't gather three people, there was no chance for registration, meaning there was no chance for the league.

It sounded easy to gather three people, just pulling two random people would do it.

But could such a thing be that easy?

This was a matter of the college entrance exam, a matter of the future—who would take it lightly?

No wonder, when Lu Wu summoned Little Skeleton, his close friend who promised to lead them in the league directly ditched them.

If a close friend of over a decade behaved like this, how could anyone else be willing to take him with a Little Skeleton?

Think about it, if Lu Wu were to take Pang Dudu to the league, he couldn't guarantee he'd agree either.

There was no way around it, the high school league was too important for them!

Therefore, Lu Wu's current situation could be said to be quite difficult.

However, unlike his predecessor, he didn't feel desperate to the extent of ending it all. It wasn't that his mental endurance was stronger.

Instead, it was because he had an extra Golden Finger compared to his predecessor.

"Hope this thing can bring me some help!"

Watching the scenery outside the window, Lu Wu whispered softly, an expectant look naturally appearing on his face.

The journey was silent.

Relying on the memory left by his predecessor and constantly absorbed by him, Lu Wu smoothly returned home.

A bit regretfully,

his predecessor didn't unlock the certain orphanage achievement, so Lu Wu lacked a protagonist's trait but had a four-member family instead.

Besides the parents, there was also a three-year-old sister.

There was also a two-tailed cat, which was Lu Wu's mother's summoned beast.

As for his father's summoned beast, Lu Wu had vague memories of it, seemingly it had died. For what reason, Lu Wu didn't know and wasn't interested.

Because of the time travel, although having his predecessor's memory, Lu Wu still felt a bit awkward facing his family.

So, after coming home, having dinner, and pushing away his constantly clinging sister, Lu Wu took Little Skeleton and hid in his room to study the Golden Finger that had accompanied his time travel.

Lu Wu's parents didn't find his reaction strange.

They thought it was because Lu Wu was feeling down after summoning Little Skeleton.

...…

Lu Wu, entering his room, closed the door and placed his hand on Little Skeleton's head.

As his hand touched, a line of information appeared before him, showing Little Skeleton's attribute panel.

…

Name: Little Skeleton

Power: 0 Star (Ordinary)

Quality: Ordinary (Inferior) (Upgrade)

Attribute: Undead

State: Trembling (Be careful, don't touch it too hard, or it might fall apart)

Skill: None

Weakness: Light, Fire, Thunder

Description: Hmm, congratulations, you're very lucky. There's no initial summoned beast worse than this.

…

This was Lu Wu's Golden Finger, awakened alongside his time travel.

As long as he touched a summoned beast, he could see its attributes.

Lu Wu had studied this Golden Finger all the way home but hadn't figured out its use.

Although there was an upgrade button after quality, Lu Wu found that the button was completely greyed out and unusable.

"It seems the quality upgrade of a summoned beast requires fulfilling certain conditions.

But the problem is, what are these conditions?

Killing monsters? Or experience points?"

Lu Wu's head ached.

After messing around for a long time without figuring it out, he felt irritated and impatient instead.

"Damn it, since it's a Golden Finger, can't it be a bit simpler and more straightforward?

Making it so mysterious, do you believe I'll file a complaint?"

Lu Wu didn't notice his emotion control ability had declined significantly after time traveling. He frequently lost his temper, influenced a bit by his predecessor.

This was quite normal, after all, Lu Wu had fully received the others' memories. A dozen years' worth rushing over, it was normal to be influenced somewhat.

Fortunately, Lu Wu could still hold on, remain himself, and manage his emotions fairly well.

Quickly, he dispelled his irritation and tried to stay calm to study the Golden Finger in front of him.

"Since it has an upgrade function, there must be triggering conditions.

If not specified, I'll explore it myself.

Current guesses include killing monsters, gaining experience, charging energy, or something else.

Raging here won't help, better test the approaches I could try first."

Saying this, Lu Wu began pondering and researching the methods he could experiment with now.

Listing all possible methods he could think of.

Firstly, killing monsters had to be ruled out temporarily. Neither he nor Little Skeleton had the ability to kill monsters.

Secondly, the energy charging enhancement method.

Lu Wu looked into this but had to give up.

Given his current financial situation, he could only handle electric energy. Was he supposed to use electricity on Little Skeleton or himself?

Thinking it over, Lu Wu decided against it. It wouldn't be good for either of them, might get them killed accidentally.

If he died, it would be game over. If Little Skeleton died, he'd be finished too.

At least the summoner path would end.

This initial summoned beast was contracted with him.

If Little Skeleton died, he would suffer mental trauma. Without proper medical conditions, this trauma would be enough to end his beginner summoner path.

So electrocution for him and for Little Skeleton was out of the question.

Under such circumstances, Lu Wu squinted: "In that case, I can only try this method first!"

# Chapter 4: 004 Goblin (Request for recommendation vote)

Quan City, An Family District, inside Lu Wu's room.

It was already midnight, and Lu Wu was still busy at his computer.

However, instead of playing games, Lu Wu was busy researching.

Yes, researching!

Of course, not the kind of research you might be thinking of.

Lu Wu was a respectable person, so he was researching respectable materials.

In his previous studies on the Golden Finger, Lu Wu had temporarily dismissed the idea of monster killing and energy charging.

Without the mainstream methods related to the attribute board, such as adding points to cheat, Lu Wu had no choice but to try other approaches.

For example, the knowledge flow!

At this moment, he considered the attribute board he saw as an intuitive manifestation of his own understanding.

In simple terms, he hypothesized that the attributes he saw in Little Skeleton were those understood by him or his predecessor.

For instance, he knew Little Skeleton was called Little Skeleton, so the name on the attribute board was Little Skeleton.

He knew Little Skeleton's attribute was Undead, so Little Skeleton's attribute on the board was Undead.

What he knew appeared on the attribute board.

Of course, there were things he didn't know, such as quality, power, and weaknesses.

Lu Wu temporarily ignored those.

He first assumed that the attribute board only displayed attributes he knew and were real.

Under such a circumstance, because he didn't know how to enhance Little Skeleton's attributes, he couldn't improve Little Skeleton's quality.

To improve Little Skeleton's quality, Lu Wu had to understand how to enhance it.

If he figured out how to enhance Little Skeleton's quality, perhaps the function of quality enhancement could be triggered.

This was Lu Wu's current hypothesis about the attribute board.

Whether this hypothesis was true or not, Lu Wu didn't know.

But with no other options in sight, this was the direction worth trying for Lu Wu.

So, after confirming this direction, Lu Wu began to go through the books left by his predecessor, searching for knowledge on training Little Skeleton or improving its quality.

However, there was no content on this subject in his predecessor's books.

On one hand, because high school hadn't yet taught this, and on the other hand, because his predecessor hated studying and didn't have many books about Summoned Beasts.

Having no choice, Lu Wu turned his hopes to the internet, hoping to find some methods for training or enhancing Little Skeleton's quality online.

However, when Lu Wu began entering queries like "Little Skeleton Training Guide" and "Little Skeleton Quality Enhancement" on the computer,

the search results had nothing to do with Little Skeleton.

There was very little information related to skeletons even.

One reason was that people generally considered Little Skeletons worthless for cultivation, and another reason was that Lu Wu took a long time to figure out.

It turned out that this world valued knowledge immensely.

Especially experienced and knowledgeable insights about Summoned Beasts, these were considered precious treasures.

To obtain this knowledge, one needed to purchase it from specialized websites.

Of course, there were also some free resources, but useful free resources were scarce. Nonetheless, under Lu Wu's efforts, he did manage to dig up a somewhat useful piece of knowledge.

It was a Little Skeleton training guide.

This guide was the result of a Summoner's painstaking research over a few years.

The guide's purpose was merely to allow Little Skeleton to function normally.

It was far from Lu Wu's expectations of training Little Skeleton, improving its quality, or even making it master skills.

But for now, this was the only somewhat useful thing Lu Wu could find.

"Forget it; let's learn this first, and I'll check the school library tomorrow."

With that, Lu Wu started studying the training guide.

Unexpectedly, Lu Wu found that his memory had seemingly improved significantly.

This guide was only one to two thousand words, and he memorized it after just one reading, which pleasantly surprised him: "Photographic memory? Not a bad skill; with this ability, my academic scores will be easy to improve."

Meanwhile, Lu Wu touched Little Skeleton to see if there were any changes in its attributes after he read the training guide.

The result, of course, was none!

Lu Wu wasn't disappointed, knowing he hadn't actually started the work yet.

"First, let's follow this training guide through and see, hoping there can be some attribute changes after training."

"Hmm, the training guide said bones are needed as auxiliary materials for assistance. I don't have materials right now; I'll buy a bone at the market on the way to school tomorrow. It's getting late now, time to sleep!"

Saying this, Lu Wu turned off the computer, took off his clothes, lay down on the bed, and closed his eyes to sleep.

Yet he couldn't fall asleep.

Today's events had hit him hard, and his mind was in a state of excitement.

Moreover, having a skeleton by his bedside, looking particularly menacing in the moonlight, made it difficult for Lu Wu to sleep.

With no other choice, Lu Wu moved Little Skeleton to the corner of the room.

Without Little Skeleton in sight, Lu Wu finally fell asleep after some tossing and turning.

The next morning.

After quickly washing up, Lu Wu packed his bursting schoolbag and took Little Skeleton to school.

Initially, Lu Wu didn't plan on bringing Little Skeleton, but since it couldn't stay far from him, he had no choice but to bring the little tagalong.

As soon as Lu Wu and Little Skeleton stepped out of the door, they bumped into his childhood friend.

This time, it wasn't Pang Duddu; it was the other one, Old Lin, who didn't go home with them yesterday.

Old Lin's full name was Lin Jianying. Although he wasn't as plain-looking as Lu Wu, he was quite a tall and handsome young man, just a bit cold in demeanor.

Standing beside this young man was a goblin about five feet tall, dressed in rags and armed with a machete, his Summoned Beast, which looked imposing compared to Lu Wu's tugging Little Skeleton.

Lin Jianying looked slightly embarrassed.

He hadn't expected to run into Lu Wu. He had intentionally gotten up early to avoid him but still met him.

With no choice, he nodded awkwardly and hurried away. Passing by Lu Wu, he seemed to want to say something but didn't utter a word.

Obviously, Lin Jianying had mixed feelings, while Lu Wu didn't feel as complicated.

He even casually touched Lin Jianying's goblin to check its attributes.

...

Name: Goblin

Power: 0 stars (Ordinary)

Quality: Ordinary (Enhancing) (Gray)

Attribute: Physical

State: Healthy (Having just eaten, it was in a good mood)

Skill: Fierce Strike (Unmastered)

Weakness: Magic

Description: Hmm, though still a weakling, it's much better than your Little Skeleton.

...

...

Since there's no status update yet and I want to polish the outline and plot more, I'll maintain one update per day until the status update, after which there'll be two updates per day.

Additionally, please vote with a recommendation vote, thank you!

# Chapter 5: 005 Training Little Skeleton

Lu Wu had to admit, he felt a pang of envy and jealousy when he saw the attributes of Lin Jianying's goblin.

From the moment he got his Golden Finger yesterday,

Lu Wu, leveraging his unremarkable appearance, chatted up numerous girls, touched many of their Summoned Beasts, and observed many of their attributes. However, so far, Lin Jianying's goblin was the only one with a Skill.

Although it hadn't been mastered yet, just having a Skill already put it miles ahead of other Summoned Beasts.

More importantly,

this goblin wasn't lacking in intelligence either.

When Lu Wu touched it, it immediately became alert, turned its head, and glared at him.

With a look that said, "Don't mess with me."

That reaction, that expression, that demeanor, made Lu Wu once again feel the urge to throw away his own dumb, clumsy Little Skeleton that could barely walk.

"When will you ever be as mighty as that?"

Lu Wu couldn't help but turn to his Little Skeleton and sigh.

The Little Skeleton stared blankly, not responding.

Seeing its silly demeanor, Lu Wu felt a surge of anger and determination: "Damn it, I don't believe this. I'm a transmigrator with cheats and I can't train a little thing like you into shape!

"Come on, let's get started!"

With that, Lu Wu took his Little Skeleton to the market, bought a bone there, and gave it to the Little Skeleton.

Then Lu Wu began trying to use the training manual he saw last night to train his Little Skeleton.

Speaking of that training manual, Lu Wu seriously suspected that it was written by an online writer.

Because the training manual was written in a way that reminded him of web novels, especially one called "Nu Xiao," which was particularly full of fluff.

The 1,000-2,000 word training manual really only had two useful points.

One, the Little Skeleton seemed to be able to strengthen itself by absorbing the nutrients from bones, although the absorption rate was a bit slow.

Another was that training the Little Skeleton while it absorbed bone energy could make its skeleton sturdier and its movements more agile.

Yes, those were the actual bits of useful information in those 1,000-2,000 words.

The rest of the training methods were incredibly common.

Things like squats, push-ups, burpees, and running.

Of course, the simpler it was, the easier it was to execute!

It was easy for Lu Wu to get started.

"Eat, then follow me and run!"

The Little Skeleton couldn't respond, but it seemed to understand Lu Wu's words.

It obediently put the 20-30 cm bone into its mouth and started wobbling after Lu Wu.

This kind of training was long-term and couldn't produce immediate results.

So the Little Skeleton kept falling after a few steps. This time, Lu Wu didn't help it up and just watched from the side. If it fell, it had to get up on its own and continue walking.

They trained all the way with no apparent results.

Eventually, Lu Wu, who prominently woke up early, almost ended up being late.

"No, from now on, we won't be training on the way to school. Wasting time on this isn't worth it. I'd rather arrive earlier and read more books.

"After all, it can train while I'm in class."

Muttering as he rushed into the classroom before the bell rang, Lu Wu went directly to his seat. After sitting down, he squinted at his desk mate.

"Huh, Pang Duddu isn't here yet?"

Just then, the classroom door was pushed open, and a chubby figure stumbled inside; it was Pang Duddu.

Sitting down next to Lu Wu and panting, Pang Duddu was asked by Lu Wu: "Why are you so late?"

"I overslept!"

Pang Duddu didn't dare mention that she had been waiting for Lu Wu, nor complain about why he hadn't informed her of the change in time.

Lu Wu didn't pay much attention, just responded with an "oh" and went back to observing the classroom, or more specifically, its students and their summoned beasts.

Yes, his focus was definitely on the summoned beasts.

Lu Wu originally thought that summoning a Little Skeleton meant he was destined to be a typical underdog.

But now looking around the class, he found that he might not be so terrible after all. Um, or rather, it seemed everyone was just as terrible.

Out of forty students in the class, seven or eight had summoned Little Skeletons.

Besides Little Skeletons, there were other cases like Pang Duddu's Mini Pig, which clearly had no combat power.

Overall, only about a quarter of the class had summoned beasts with decent combat power.

Those students were all beaming with pride. Although they couldn't talk, their expressions showed how pleased they were.

The rest were dejected, occasionally glancing at the few classmates who had summoned capable beasts, their eyes full of envy, like Africans looking at Europeans.

Lu Wu didn't like this atmosphere and soon buried himself in his books.

He didn't have much time.

Shortly after Lu Wu became absorbed in his studying, a middle-aged man in his thirties entered the room.

This middle-aged man, Li Chun, was Lu Wu's homeroom teacher.

When he entered the classroom and stood at the podium, he glanced at the disheartened students but didn't try to give them an inspirational speech.

As an experienced teacher, oh no, seasoned teacher, Li Chun had plenty of experience with these situations.

He knew that motivational speeches wouldn't work, and a few sentences couldn't uplift them. In fact, it might make them feel worse.

For such situations, Li Chun had a special method.

Those looking disheartened were just idle; he simply needed to assign more homework to keep them busy. However, he felt one student needed special attention—yes, the one who fainted after summoning a Little Skeleton, Lu Wu.

Lu Wu's mentality needed guidance. He needed to be talked to before he did something rash.

Thinking about this, Li Chun's gaze naturally fell on Lu Wu.

Upon closer inspection, Li Chun indeed found Lu Wu's situation concerning.

At that moment, Lu Wu was actually training his Little Skeleton. Moreover, Lu Wu, normally a lackluster student, was seriously reading a book.

Clearly, Lu Wu was determined to make an effort.

But the more Lu Wu acted this way, the more Li Chun worried.

After fainting from anger yesterday, he had already started training his Little Skeleton and earnestly reading today, showing how strong Lu Wu's obsession with becoming a Professional Summoner was.

The stronger his obsession, the more likely he'd hit a dead end, and the harder it would be for him to take setbacks.

If Lu Wu's summoned beast wasn't a Little Skeleton, if his academic performance were better, or if his family was wealthier, Li Chun would have been happy to see this.

But unfortunately, Lu Wu's summoned beast was a Little Skeleton, one of the weakest and least promising.

Moreover, Lu Wu was a poor student, and his family wasn't well-off enough to spend heavily on this.

Combining these three factors, Li Chun could almost decisively predict that Lu Wu had no hope of getting into Summoner University.

All of Lu Wu's efforts would be in vain.

And precisely because of this certainty, Li Chun was worried.

He feared that, after hitting a wall, Lu Wu might not be able to handle it.

"Hmm, it seems I need to have a talk with him!"

# Chapter 6: 006 Chicken Soup

```

Lu Wu had no idea he was being noticed.

He didn't have time to pay attention to those things right now. Whether it was due to the influence of his past memories or his own interest in becoming a Professional Summoner,

his mind was now fully occupied with the thought of getting into Summoner University.

It was precisely because his mind was so focused on this that Lu Wu was very aware that time was running out for him.

After the Summoning Ceremony, the summer vacation would begin in a few days.

After summer vacation, he would enter his senior year of high school, the critical year for preparing to get into Summoner University.

Class divisions were also approaching!

Every year after the summer vacation, the school would first conduct a whole-school test that included cultural subjects and evaluations of Summoned Beasts.

The test results determined the class division for the senior year.

By then, the senior year would be divided into key classes and ordinary classes.

The key classes focused entirely on preparing for Summoner University, while students in the ordinary classes were basically given up on getting into Summoner University.

If Lu Wu wanted to get into Summoner University, he had to get into the key class first.

After all, the resources the school devoted to the two classes were completely different. The ordinary class basically had no courses related to Summoners.

In other words, Lu Wu had to improve his cultural subjects and enhance the quality of his Little Skeleton before the end of summer vacation.

Under these circumstances, how could Lu Wu slack off?

He used all of his available time and energy.

For this reason, he brought all his first-year textbooks today and started crazily studying.

As for the classes, he didn't attend them. He knew his own level; it was more efficient for him to self-study than to attend the second-year classes that he couldn't understand.

As it turned out, Lu Wu was right.

With his eidetic memory, Lu Wu's self-study efficiency was exceptionally high.

He could remember things after just one read-through. Moreover, the past-life memories relevant to the knowledge popped up as he studied.

With the help of past-life memories, Lu Wu's study efficiency was impressive.

In one morning, he had gone through a quarter of his first-year textbooks. Although his head hurt from over-using his brain, Lu Wu was still very happy. At this pace, he could catch up in two or three days, which was quite astonishing.

As Lu Wu was feeling pleased, Pang Duddu next to him nudged him.

"Lu Wu, Teacher Li wants you to go to the office."

Lu Wu was taken aback, then realized it must be for some trouble left by his past self. He had no choice but to bite the bullet and take his Little Skeleton to the office.

Outside Li Chun's office.

After knocking on the door twice, Lu Wu poked his head in.

"Teacher, you wanted to see me?"

Li Chun, who was busy with some work, immediately put it down when he saw Lu Wu come in. He smiled and beckoned Lu Wu over: "Yes, come have a seat."

"I have tea, water, coffee, and cola here. What would you like to drink?"

"Tea, please!"

"Tea? I thought you'd choose cola. I'll get it for you in a moment!"

As he spoke, Li Chun was about to get up, but Lu Wu quickly walked to the tea station.

"Teacher, let me do it. What would you like to drink?"

Li Chun was stunned: "Get me a cup of tea too."

"Okay!"

Lu Wu skillfully made two cups of tea and brought them over: "Teacher, here you go!"

"Thank you!"

Li Chun took the tea, but his eyes were on Lu Wu.

In fact, Li Chun was somewhat surprised by Lu Wu's demeanor at this moment, which was unexpected.

The Lu Wu in front of him didn't look like his usual self. He had taught Lu Wu for two years and knew his student quite well.

The original Lu Wu was rash, arrogant, and competitive, like an iron sword, not sharp but still trying to show off. To be honest, if it weren't for his unremarkable face, few would have wanted to associate with him.

But the present Lu Wu was much more stable, gentle, and had a noticeable change in his attitude towards others. This change was evident in their brief interaction, making Li Chun feel very comfortable.

'It seems that summoning the Little Skeleton had a significant impact on him, changing his personality overnight.'

Feeling emotional, Li Chun found himself at a loss for words he had initially prepared for Lu Wu.

Even the same words, directed at the same person, would be inappropriate at different times.

Faced with this different version of Lu Wu, Li Chun naturally had to take a different approach.

He sipped his tea and began with a comment about the Little Skeleton Lu Wu was holding: "You must have learned the 'Little Skeleton Training Manual' online, right?"

"This is the only method I found online."

Lu Wu thought for a moment and added, "It's free!"

Li Chun didn't say anything like 'this method has limited effects' but instead changed the topic: "I just saw you reading a first-year book, right?"

"Yes, my foundation is weak."

After Lu Wu nodded, Li Chun threw a straightforward question.

"You're training the Little Skeleton and also reading books. Are you planning to apply for Summoner University?"

In response to Li Chun's straightforward question, Lu Wu remained calm and gently nodded: "I want to give it a try."

Lu Wu's calm reaction and gentle words made Li Chun hesitate to say words intended to bring Lu Wu back to reality.

Li Chun couldn't help but take a sip of tea and softly said, "It's very difficult."

"I know, there are dozens of high schools in Quan City, but only one hundred to two hundred students can get into Summoner University each year. Our school's highest record is six students getting into Summoner University in one year."

"Knowing that..."

"Knowing is one thing, trying is another.

Getting into Summoner University is my dream, and I want to make an effort. Who knows, maybe a miracle will happen to me?"

Listening to Lu Wu's words, which were calm yet full of hope and expectation, Li Chun couldn't help but shake his head.

Effort? Miracles?

In this world, how many miracles are there?

Especially on the road to becoming a Professional Summoner, effort was often the cheapest thing. Besides, why didn't you make an effort before? What use is it now?

Understanding this, Li Chun decided to give Lu Wu a harsh dose of reality.

"You should know that with your grades, your Summoned Beast, and your financial situation, it's impossible for you to get into Summoner University no matter how hard you try!

Setting such a goal for yourself will only make your next year particularly difficult.

Are you sure that this kind of effort, which is doomed to fail, is what you want?

You should know that life has more than one path, and choosing a different path can also lead to different scenery."

Li Chun stared into Lu Wu's eyes, applying comprehensive pressure to shatter Lu Wu's unrealistic fantasies.

However, faced with this pressure, Lu Wu maintained a smile on his face and said while holding a bowl of chicken soup: "Yes, everyone should have an experience where they throw themselves into something wholeheartedly.

How can you accept failure without giving your best effort?

Don't you think so, Teacher?"

......

Hmm, after thinking it over, two chapters a day seem fine.

One at 8 AM and another at 6 PM

```

# Chapter 7: 007 Summon Beast Cultivator

Li Chun's conversation with Lu Wu had finally ended under the influence of Lu Wu's empowering speech.

At that time, Li Chun was truly moved by Lu Wu's determination and the clarity of his inspiring words. He was deeply touched and ultimately didn't manage to utter the discouraging remarks he had prepared.

This was actually quite normal.

Li Chun had called Lu Wu over because of his performance during the summoning ceremony, worried that Lu Wu would become obsessed over minor details or take setbacks too hard.

His aim was to guide Lu Wu, not to put him down.

After he had listened to Lu Wu's speech, he felt maybe encouraging him to give his all and try his hardest was a better approach than criticizing him.

What he didn't know was.

In fact, the one who really benefited from the speech was himself. As for Lu Wu?

Sorry, even though he was the one who served the speech, he hadn't taken a single sip.

In fact, he was rather disdainful of his own words.

Effort? Miracles?

What a joke—if effort worked, what was the need for a cheat?

The inspiring speech was meant for others to consume; he, on the other hand, feasted on cheats!

Of course, Lu Wu wasn't a man to just lie back and rely on cheats alone.

Although he did wish for that, regrettably, his cheat wasn't powerful enough, so he still needed to put in the effort.

After leaving Li Chun's office, Lu Wu continued with his intense studying.

He didn't stop even when school was over, immediately burying himself in the library the moment classes ended.

For Lu Wu, the real work was just beginning.

Since the Summoner Ceremony could only be performed at the age of eighteen, and one's eligibility to become a summoner would only be known after the ceremony, to prevent disruption to the studies of ordinary students, the school only introduced summoner-related courses in the senior year of high school.

Well, that's the focus classes of senior year, to be precise.

Lu Wu had only two options to access this knowledge: get into the focus class or go to the library.

Indeed, the library had relevant material available for those interested to explore.

That's exactly what Lu Wu was doing.

...

Inside the library.

Lu Wu glanced at Pang Duddu who had followed him inside.

"You can head back first."

Pang Duddu still hung his chubby head low, muttering softly, "I, I want to read for a bit too."

Then read.

Without saying much else, Lu Wu found a spot, sent Little Skeleton to hold the place, and then began roaming the library, rapidly scanning the shelves for books.

"Summoner Enlightenment" "Summoning Beast Basic Encyclopedia" "On the Cultivation of Summoned Beasts"

"A Brief Discussion on Things You Must Know Between Summoner and Summoned Beast"

"On the Possibility of Summoning Cat-Eared Beast Girl"

In no time, Lu Wu had gathered seven or eight books and returned to his spot, pulling Little Skeleton away to resume his reading binge.

Pang Duddu, sitting nearby and watching Lu Wu furiously digest the books for the entire day, had a face full of concern.

Since yesterday, Lu Wu seemed like a changed person.

He, who rarely read books before, was now devouring literature, and his attitude towards her had improved considerably.

All these changes seemed to be positive, but Pang Duddu was still somewhat worried.

She couldn't quite articulate what she was worried about; she just felt uneasy and panicky.

Lu Wu had spent over half an hour finishing a book. Stretching with a yawn, he noticed Pang Duddu staring blankly at him and frowned, "Didn't you say you were going to read? Why are you gawking at me? Stop it, or I'll hit you, believe it or not? Here's the book for you, read it!"

"Oh, oh!"

Pang Duddu's head instantly dropped, hastily taking the book Lu Wu had just finished and pretending to dive into it.

For some reason, being scolded like that by Lu Wu suddenly lifted Pang Duddu's spirits.

Lu Wu, unaware of the girl's mood swing, was now observing Pang Duddu sitting across from him.

Come to think of it, this was the first time he had seriously considered his childhood friend.

Upon closer inspection, Lu Wu realized that although his childhood friend was a bit overweight, she had good foundation.

Her skin was fair, facial features were well-proportioned, and even plump, she was round and adorable.

"Hmm, if she slimmed down, she would definitely be a pretty girl."

Thinking this to himself, Lu Wu casually blurted it out, causing Pang Duddu, who was pretending to read, to freeze. She cautiously lifted her head to confirm if Lu Wu really said that, but upon looking up, she saw him already engrossed back in his pile of books.

Over the course of four hours, Lu Wu stayed in the library and read through all eight books he had brought with him.

After finishing, Lu Wu had gained a general understanding of the Summoner profession.

The core of the Summoner profession centered entirely on the Summoned Beast.

They fought through their Summoned Beasts and improved their power through training them.

As a Summoned Beast's power increased, the Summoner would receive a certain degree of empowerment in return, yes, the improvement of a Summoner's power, and whether they could contract a second or even a third Summoned Beast, all depended on this empowerment.

In short, only when the Summoned Beast became powerful could the Summoner also become powerful.

That's why the initial Summoned Beast was so important.

If the initial Summoned Beast was of better quality, it was relatively easier to cultivate, and the Summoner's power would also increase more rapidly.

On the contrary, if the initial Summoned Beast was of poor quality and difficult to train, then the path for the Summoner was essentially cut off.

Yes, for ordinary people, someone who summons a Little Skeleton has basically no hope of becoming a Professional Summoner.

But Lu Wu was no ordinary person.

He had cheats, so he wasn't concerned about these issues; he was focused on how to cultivate the Summoned Beast.

In this aspect, the several books Lu Wu read had answers. There were actually many ways to cultivate a Summoned Beast, but the two most mainstream methods were:

Training!

Different Summoned Beasts had different training methods, and finding the right one could improve the power of a Summoned Beast.

The other method was whaling!

Yes, whaling!

All things could be whaled upon, including Summoned Beasts. As long as you had enough money, even a Little Skeleton could be whaled into something spectacular.

Of course, whaling didn't mean directly smashing money onto a Summoned Beast.

It meant splashing the cash on Summon Beast Cultivators!

From their title alone, it was clear what they did.

Yes, they specialized in researching and cultivating Summoned Beasts.

They called themselves scientists in the field of Summoned Beasts, and their most common phrase to the Summoners was, "You're just a tool for summoning; you know nothing about Summoned Beasts!"

Of course, they had the credentials to talk like that, because they truly were impressive.

They could improve the power and even the quality of a Summoned Beast by developing training manuals, concocting potions, and other methods.

A good Summon Beast Cultivator held such high status that they far surpassed that of a Professional Summoner.

Upon realizing this, Lu Wu's eyes shone with an irrepressible gleam...

# Chapter 8: 008 Conditional Trigger

When Lu Wu learned about the profession of Summon Beast Cultivator, he immediately took a keen interest in it.

His intuition told him that this thing should match his Golden Finger like chocolate and a rainy day.

So he began preparing to look for books about Summon Beast Cultivator in the library, but before he could take action, his phone rang.

Lu Wu was startled for a moment, looking at the caller ID; he saw it was already past 8 PM and knew his family was urging him to come home.

Sure enough, as soon as Lu Wu answered, a sweet voice came from the other end of the line.

"Gege, why aren't you back yet!

Ni Ni misses Gege!"

Uh-huh, this milky voice came from Lu Wu's three-year-old sister.

Hearing this voice, perhaps influenced by his past self, Lu Wu felt like he was melting and could only respond softly, "Ni Ni, be good. Brother will be back soon."

After coaxing the child and hanging up the phone, Lu Wu had to give up continuing his book search in the library and planned to take a few books home to read.

But since books related to Summoners were not allowed to be borrowed, the Summon Beast Cultivator matter had to be postponed until tomorrow.

On the way home, Lu Wu did not let Little Skeleton continue to wander around.

Letting Little Skeleton wander would take at least an hour or two before they got home.

So Lu Wu walked out holding Little Skeleton's hand.

Pang Duddu, who was next to them, saw Lu Wu naturally holding Little Skeleton's hand and felt a bit envious. She sneaked a glance at Lu Wu, held back her fear, and went over to hold Little Skeleton's other hand.

Suddenly being held, Little Skeleton could only bite its bone, then turned to look at Pang Duddu, once, twice, and kept looking at her.

Not saying anything, with no change on its skull, looking very dazed.

But Pang Duddu felt pressured and, after holding on for a while, couldn't bear it and let go of its hand.

And this scene, just by chance, was not seen by Lu Wu.

Mainly because when he held Little Skeleton's hand earlier, his attention was distracted by something else.

By the time he collected his joy, forcibly suppressed his urge to delve deeper, and brought his focus back, Pang Duddu had already let go, and Lu Wu didn't even know what had happened.

Of course, even if he knew, he wouldn't care. His mind was elsewhere now.

Now, he was eager to get home, pulling Little Skeleton and taking Pang Duddu as they ran all the way.

Upon arriving home, as Lu Wu opened the door, a small figure rushed at him, demanding that Lu Wu kiss, hug, and lift her high.

There was no choice. Lu Wu could only suppress his excitement and urgency, hold the little girl, and play with her for a while.

While Lu Wu was playing with Lu Nini, Li Ruyu went to the kitchen to cook a bowl of noodles for him.

After bringing out the noodles, she came over to help Lu Wu take Nini away so he could eat.

As he handed Nini off, Lu Wu said, "Thank you."

It was a purely subconscious response.

What he didn't notice was that when he said thank you, Li Ruyu was stunned, her eyes turned red.

But she quickly controlled her emotions and said softly, "It's late. Finish eating and go to bed early. I'll put Nini to sleep."

"Okay!"

Lu Wu didn't notice the change in his mother's emotions. He quickly finished the bowl of noodles in just a few bites and then took Little Skeleton to his room.

As soon as he entered the room, Lu Wu placed his hand on Little Skeleton's forehead.

As soon as his hand touched, the Golden Finger activated, and Little Skeleton's attributes once again appeared in front of Lu Wu.

…

Name: Little Skeleton

Power: 0 Star (Ordinary)

Quality: Ordinary (Poor) (Enhance) (One line)

Attribute: Undead

State: Exhausted (It has trained for a whole day. When do you, the heartless summoner, plan to let it rest?)

Skill: None

Weakness: Light, Fire, Thunder

Description: It seems you have found a way to enhance this trash's quality.

…

"That's enough, no more training. We'll continue tomorrow."

After glancing at Little Skeleton's attributes and seeing its state, Lu Wu had it stop.

After all, he wasn't a demon.

Following this, Lu Wu focused on the [Enhance] option.

The originally gray enhancement option now showed a [One Line] option, which was the reason behind Lu Wu's excitement.

Clicking this one line, a sub-page appeared in front of Lu Wu.

…

Quality Enhancement Plan:

Plan One: Little Skeleton Training Manual (Modify) (Once/day)

Plan Effect: It can very slowly enhance Little Skeleton's skeletal strength and train its skeletal coordination abilities.

Time Required for Quality Enhancement: 888 days

…

"What the heck is this?"

Looking at this sub-page, Lu Wu was really taken aback.

The transition from joy to disappointment came so quickly.

He originally thought that Little Skeleton had triggered some kind of [Enhance] condition, like a Dragon Slayer Treasure Sword click and receive. In the end, it only showed him this?

"Are you telling me that the Little Skeleton Training Manual is very effective?

If properly trained for 888 days, Little Skeleton can upgrade?"

Lu Wu looked disgusted.

Forget 888 days; even 88 days would be tough for Lu Wu to accept, wouldn't it?

If he couldn't improve Little Skeleton's quality before the summer break, getting into the special class would be out of the question, and the resistance to getting into the Summoner University would significantly increase. So, no matter what, Lu Wu couldn't accept this plan.

Luckily, Lu Wu didn't overlook the [Modify] option behind Plan One.

This should be the correct way to open the Golden Finger!

With hope, Lu Wu clicked on [Modify], and a prompt popped up simultaneously.

[Do you want to modify Plan One?]

[Yes/No]

Did this even need to be asked?

Of course, it was [Yes]!

Lu Wu made his choice without hesitation, and a system page popped up next.

This time, it wasn't a question but a plan modification page.

…

Original Plan: Little Skeleton Training Manual

Modification Plan:

Submit/Cancel

…

The page was very simple. After some fiddling, Lu Wu quickly figured out how to use it.

"After all this, I'm the one who has to fill in the modification plan?"

Lu Wu thought that by clicking once, the modification plan would automatically appear, but it turned out the system wasn't that helpful, and he needed to do it himself.

Another wave of disgust!

Left with no choice, as the system wasn't helpful, he had to do it himself.

But what could he do?

He didn't understand anything yet, so after fiddling for a long time, he just swapped the original plan's pig, cow, and sheep bones with Bone Powder.

He thought Bone Powder should be more easily absorbed than simple bones?

Another reason was that he found out the modification plan could be changed once a day.

Since he could modify it once a day, he decided to test the waters first...

# Chapter 9: 009 Amendment Plan

```

After a simple edit, Lu Wu submitted the modified new plan.

What he didn't know was whether the quick approval was because he had changed only a few things or if the approval of plans was just inherently quick.

As soon as Lu Wu submitted the plan, it only took less than three seconds for the system to give the approval result.

[Ding, you've successfully modified the plan "Training Manual for Little Skeleton." You have obtained "Training Manual for Little Skeleton 1.0." Would you like to view it?]

Did that even need to be said? Of course, he had to look!

...

Plan: Training Manual for Little Skeleton 1.0

Effect: Other than slightly increasing the bone strengthening speed, it's basically the same as the previous version.

Time needed for quality improvement: 666 days.

Plan modification evaluation: You actually dared to submit such a plan? You call this a modification? Any random three-year-old could have done this. I'll barely give you a pass because it's your first time.

...

Lu Wu never thought one day he would be ridiculed by his own Golden Finger.

However, Lu Wu had a good mentality. He didn't mind these things; what he cared about was how effective the modified plan would be.

"Hmm, not bad, it reduced the time by a quarter."

Lu Wu was quite satisfied with this result.

Of course, it wasn't the number 666 that pleased him. What made him happy was that he had found the proper way to use the Golden Finger.

"This Golden Finger can verify the effectiveness of my training methods and even allow me to modify them once a day,

not to mention anything else, just this feature alone is already quite powerful."

This made Lu Wu even more certain of one thing.

Indeed, this Golden Finger was perfectly suited for a Summon Beast Cultivator, which increased his interest in the profession even more.

Simultaneously, it also made Lu Wu more confident about his future.

He firmly believed that with such a Golden Finger, his future would undoubtedly be promising.

In high spirits, Lu Wu hugged his book and continued studying for another two or three hours until after midnight when his head began to ache severely, forcing him to go to bed, thoroughly satisfied.

Early the next morning.

Lu Wu still got up early, ate the breakfast prepared by Li Ruyu, thanked her, and then went to school with Little Skeleton amidst the complex gaze of Li Ruyu.

As soon as Lu Wu got downstairs, he saw his childhood friend.

Hmm, this time it was not Lin Jianying, but Pang Duddu, who was waiting for him downstairs.

"Were you waiting for me?"

"No, no, I just got here, I'm just reading here!"

Pang Duddu blushed, bowed her head, and whispered in defense.

Lu Wu glanced at the math book in her arms and the food scraps left by the pig at her feet: "You don't have to come so early, I'll message you before heading out tomorrow."

"Mm, mm, mm!"

Pang Duddu nodded her head frantically, totally forgetting what she had just said.

Seeing her like this, Lu Wu finally understood why he used to enjoy teasing her so much; this girl was just too easy to bully.

Luckily, this girl was chubby, so he had just verbally teased her before. If she were slim, with his past character, he would have devoured her whole, skin and bones, given that in Lu Wu's memories, his past self seemed a bit scummy.

But Lu Wu thought if this girl slimmed down, she would be really pretty; so after criticizing his past self, he casually added, "You should lose some weight."

Then he picked up the still-eating pig, preparing for Pang Duddu to clean up the pig's mess at the crime scene.

But as soon as he picked it up, Lu Wu froze, his eyes narrowing involuntarily.

...

Name: Mini Pig

Power: 0 stars

Quality: Ordinary (improving)

Attribute: No Attribute Bias

State: Healthy (It's a bit sleepy and wants to nap after being well-fed and well-hydrated.)

Skill: Awakening (Progress 1%)

Weakness: No obvious weaknesses

Description: Hmm, roasting a pig might taste good.

Ps: Trash, your skeleton is worse than someone else's pig.

...

Lu Wu ignored the system's ridicule; his attention was focused on the skill column of this pig.

He was very sure that the skill column of this pig was empty the day before, so how did it have an awakening skill today?

This made Lu Wu very curious about what happened to this pig within a day.

Curious, Lu Wu naturally asked. Anyway, it was Pang Duddu, who was easily bullied; if he asked, she wouldn't dare not answer.

"How do you raise your pig?"

"How do I raise it?"

Pang Duddu was stunned, not expecting Lu Wu to ask such a question; she didn't know how to answer for a moment and stammered for a while before she finally told Lu Wu everything about her daily life with the pig.

After hearing her, Lu Wu summarized, hmm, this girl had been eating and sleeping with the pig almost like it was family, even bathing together.

As for other things, there seemed to be nothing special.

After listening, Lu Wu was somewhat disappointed and shook his head disdainfully.

He thought Pang Duddu had some special training technique, but it turned out to be nothing.

Pang Duddu wasn't training a summoned beast; she was straight-up raising a pet pig daughter.

It seemed that the pig's skill awakening had nothing to do with the girl's training, no, rather, feeding couldn't have made a difference.

However, just as Lu Wu concluded this, the system slapped him in the face.

After hearing all this and taking another look at the pig, he was stunned to find an additional "Skill Training Plan" next to the "Awakening" skill in its skill column. Lu Wu clicked on it and saw that the core of the entire plan was just a few words: "Intimacy Cultivation."

It turned out that the pig's skill awakening was related to intimacy—the higher the intimacy between Pang Duddu and the pig, the faster the pig's skill awakened.

Seeing this, Lu Wu was stunned; could this work too?

Could intimacy awaken a skill?

Lu Wu felt like a new world was opening up before him. He couldn't help but turn to look at his Little Skeleton, wondering if he should also try eating, sleeping, and bathing together with it.

But just the thought of that scene with himself and Little Skeleton made Lu Wu shudder.

Forget it, forget it, can't play like this.

Besides, raising intimacy doesn't necessarily require that kind of approach.

Moreover, Lu Wu severely doubted that the reason Pang Duddu and the pig's intimacy level could be raised so high was due to their high compatibility.

He was sure that trying to raise intimacy with Little Skeleton in the same way wouldn't work since they weren't visually compatible. He needed to think of other ways to raise intimacy.

However, raising the intimacy with Little Skeleton could wait; Lu Wu thought that for now, he could prioritize raising intimacy with Pang Duddu.

Although Lu Wu was somewhat blindly confident that the Golden Finger would help him get into an elite class, it was better to be safe than sorry.

In case he didn't make it to the elite class and couldn't find a teammate, Lu Wu needed to make preparations in advance.

Hmm, to prevent finding no teammates, he had to raise Pang Duddu as a backup… oh no, as a reserve teammate!

```

# Chapter 10: 010 Little Skeleton Training Manual 2.0

Time flew by quickly.

In the blink of an eye, Lu Wu had been transported for six days.

These six days had been particularly fulfilling for Lu Wu, and the harvest was not small.

In terms of book consumption.

Regarding cultural studies.

He had successfully devoured the textbooks for grade one and grade two.

With his photographic memory, he had memorized the necessary content, and his proficiency had improved accordingly.

Although he might not reach the level of certain academic masters, he should at least be at the upper average level. If he further digested the material, scoring well shouldn't be too difficult.

As for summoning.

In the past five or six days, he had almost stayed in the library until eight or nine in the evening before heading back.

He didn't spend four to five hours each day in vain; in these five or six days, Lu Wu had read dozens of related books.

Among these books, apart from the introductory ones and some miscellaneous books like "On the Possibility of Summoning Cat-Eared Beast Girl," the rest were mostly encyclopedic and general knowledge about summoned beasts.

For example, "Introduction to 100 Common Summoned Beasts," "Introduction to the Advanced Paths of 100 Common Summoned Beasts," "Training Methods of Common Undead Summoned Beasts,"

"Introduction to 200 Summoned Beast Related Materials," "Introduction to Beginner's Secret Realm," and so on...

What Lu Wu had been reading these days were basically these things.

Of course, if he had a choice, Lu Wu wouldn't want to read these.

He wanted to read books related to "Summon Beast Cultivator"; he now knew that this thing was a perfect match with his Golden Finger!

But unfortunately, the high school didn't teach this course, and their library didn't have such books.

There was no way around it, so Lu Wu could only rely on the introduction he found in books and online that "knowledge is the most powerful weapon for a Summon Beast Cultivator."

Starting from these most basic contents, he first enriched his knowledge base before considering other things.

Facts proved that Lu Wu's approach was correct.

The effect of this approach quickly showed up in his Golden Finger.

With the books he had devoured in the past few days, Lu Wu had made several modifications to the quality improvement plan for Little Skeleton. The plan had now been revised to version 2.0.

However, when talking about this plan, Lu Wu became quite angry.

In the past few days, he had been harshly criticized by the system for this plan.

Something like "Look at this plan, thank goodness, your IQ has finally grown. It seems to be at the level of a three-and-a-half-year-old, but unfortunately, your plan isn't much different from the previous version, modification failed."

"Oh, is this all you've got? Can't you show a bit of innovation? Can't you put some effort into absorption?"

"Are you sure this plan wasn't inspired by your childhood friend, the Summoned Pig? It smells of wisdom! With such wisdom, the system sincerely suggests you put more effort into energy absorption."

......

Lu Wu had proposed a total of five modifications, and he was mocked by the system five times, rejected three times, and it took him five days to turn version 1.0 into version 2.0.

Lu Wu's little heart almost exploded because of this damned system.

But Lu Wu had to admit that although the system was quite harsh, it wasn't just harsh.

Besides the sarcasm, it also gave some suggestions for modifying the plan.

It was precisely with the system's suggestions and the books he had devoured in the past few days that Lu Wu managed to perfect version 2.0.

...

Quality Improvement Plan: Little Skeleton's Training Manual 2.0

Specific Steps: 10000 grams of beef bone powder, 20000 grams of cow blood. First, mix the beef bone powder with an appropriate amount of water, heat, and simmer to make a broth. After boiling, turn off the heat, put Little Skeleton and the cow blood into the broth, cover and let it simmer for an hour. After that, perform three to five hours of exercise.

Plan Effect: Each session significantly increases Little Skeleton's bone strength and flexibility, enhances its bone coordination ability, and improves its foundation.

Time Required for Quality Upgrade: 5 sessions (each session interval of 6 to 10 days, estimated total time of 30 to 50 days)

...

Yes, this was Little Skeleton's Training Manual version 2.0.

Once this version came out, all the sarcasm Lu Wu had endured in the past few days, all the blows he had suffered, immediately dissipated with the wind.

Lu Wu's mood couldn't have been better at this moment.

After all, although he had previously had confidence in his future because of the cheats, that kind of confidence could be considered blind, as he hadn't truly seen hope. It wasn't until today that he truly saw hope.

According to this method, he only needed just over a month to achieve a quality boost for Little Skeleton.

Although the quality boost from "Ordinary (Inferior)" would just be to "Ordinary," theoretically only barely catching up to Pang Duddu's pig, but Lu Wu was confident. With such a good start, he would certainly be able to cultivate Little Skeleton well.

To upgrade Little Skeleton's quality to "Black Iron," "Bronze," or even "Silver," "Gold"...

Of course, "Silver," "Gold" were quite far off, and Lu Wu wasn't thinking about that at the moment.

He was just thinking about whether he could upgrade Little Skeleton's quality to "Black Iron," and its power to 2-star or 3-star before the league started.

Lu Wu believed that as long as he could reach this level, getting into Summoner University would be a certainty.

Hmm, the high school league started in the second semester of their senior year, and there were still more than half a year to go. With his powerful cheats, Lu Wu believed it shouldn't be difficult for him to achieve this.

Of course, this was Lu Wu's thought, who hadn't yet been hit by harsh reality.

Soon, the cold reality smacked Lu Wu in the face again.

Lu Wu found that although his 2.0 version plan was great, there was one thing that wasn't so great, which was that this plan didn't seem to say where he was supposed to get the money for the materials.

He calculated that Little Skeleton's advancement required 50000 grams of beef bone powder and 100000 grams of cow blood. Water didn't need to be counted; just the main ingredients.

Lu Wu knew that in this world, beef bone's market price was 35 yuan per pound and cow blood was 15 yuan per pound.

Fifty pounds of beef bone powder plus a hundred pounds of cow blood would cost 3250 yuan. Adding other equipment, advancing Little Skeleton to a higher level would cost at least 4000 yuan.

Although 4000 yuan to upgrade the quality of a summoned beast was quite cheap.

The problem was Lu Wu didn't have the money!

His predecessor left him only a couple of hundred yuan, which meant he was short by more than three thousand yuan.

Of course, he could ask his family for that three thousand yuan, but he couldn't bring himself to ask.

Due to being a time traveler, although he had accepted his predecessor's memories, there was still a thin layer of separation between him and his predecessor's family, making it difficult for Lu Wu to ask his family for the money.

This troubled Lu Wu greatly.

But that wasn't the biggest headache for Lu Wu...

......

Thanks to [Big Snake 886] for the support!

# Chapter 11: 011 Daily

Resolving the money issue was actually quite easy.

Either he asked his family for it, albeit shamefully, or borrowed from Pang Duddu. If worst came to worst, he could get a part-time job and earn a few thousand yuan.

He wasn't a Zhou after all; he could get by with a part-time job!

What worried Lu Wu more than money was the issue with books.

For the past few days, Lu Wu had been devouring books at the library with great enthusiasm.

But his days of joy were soon coming to an end, as after tomorrow's graduation ceremony, they were starting the summer vacation.

Once vacation started, the school would no longer be open to the public, and even though he was a student, Lu Wu couldn't go to the library to read.

This was a heavy blow to Lu Wu; he had never hated vacations so much before!

Why have vacations at all?

As a student, especially one about to prepare for the college entrance exams, shouldn't it be all about studying as much as possible? What was the point of vacations?

Lu Wu was indignant!

He loved studying. Don't make him stop!

But this wasn't something Lu Wu's feelings could change.

No matter how he felt, it didn't change the fact that today was the last day he could freeload books.

So after finishing the last book in his hand, Lu Wu reluctantly got up, ready to return the book to the shelf and leave the library.

Just then, a voice next to him spoke up.

"I'll do it!"

Lu Wu was startled and turned to see Li Chun quickly stand up: "Teacher!"

Li Chun nodded and walked over, taking the books from Lu Wu and Pang Duddu without explanation, then ushering them out: "It's getting late, I'll put these back for you two. Go home early, don't worry your families!"

"Uh, thank you, Teacher!"

With Li Chun's firm attitude, Lu Wu had no choice but to thank him and head out with Pang Duddu.

After seeing them off, Li Chun's gaze fell on a stack of books Lu Wu had been reading.

Looking at titles like "Secret Realm Adventure Record," "On the Benefits of Secret Realm to Summoned Beasts," and "The Most Suitable Secret Realm for Undead," Li Chun couldn't help but show a worried expression.

Li Chun was a very responsible teacher. Ever since Lu Wu's incident during the summoning ceremony that left him in a coma, Li Chun had been especially concerned about him.

Afraid Lu Wu might get stuck in a negative mindset, Li Chun now saw these books and felt his worries weren't unwarranted.

"This kid keeps talking about working hard, and now he's actually planning to do something like this.

Trying to find some fortuitous encounter through the secret realm, isn't that just a wild fantasy?

And the cost of going to a secret realm isn't something he can afford. Plus, with his fragile condition, what if something happens to him there?"

"No, no, I have to find him something to do to keep him from this foolishness."

"Right, didn't my second uncle just get a license to open a Summoner shop and start a new business? I heard he's looking to hire an employee. Maybe I can get him to hire this kid for a couple of months."

My uncle should be okay with it, but I don't know if this kid will agree to it."

With an idea in mind, Li Chun still had a headache thinking about how to convince Lu Wu to give up on seeking fortuitous encounters and obediently go to work.

...…

Back to Lu Wu.

By the time he got home, it was almost ten o'clock.

In recent days, Lu Wu's father, Lu Haikong, had been out gathering materials. Li Ruyu and Lu Ni had gone to bed early and were already asleep, so when Lu Wu returned, he was the only one at home.

However, Li Ruyu had left him some food and had sent a message reminding him to heat it up and eat.

Looking at Li Ruyu's message and the meal she had thoughtfully prepared,

Lu Wu felt deeply conflicted.

He could feel Li Ruyu's concern and was very touched, but he couldn't face it calmly.

After all, although he inherited the previous life's memories, he wasn't that same person.

So he couldn't comfortably accept the care from his parents. The more they cared, the more guilty Lu Wu felt.

There was a vague feeling as though he had killed their son, making him feel especially uncomfortable.

Therefore, in recent days, Lu Wu had been leaving early and coming back late partly to avoid them.

"I can't go on like this. I need to see if I can adjust my mentality. If I can, great; if not, the only option left would be to move out."

Lu Wu thought, sighed deeply, adjusted his attitude, ate the meal Li Ruyu had prepared, washed the dishes, and then sent Li Ruyu a 'Thank you, good night.'

After doing all this, Lu Wu checked the time—it was ten thirty! Most ordinary students would be heading to bed, but Lu Wu's night was just beginning.

However, Lu Wu's nightlife was quite different from everyone else's.

Other people's nightlife was about relaxation and indulgence, but his was about working hard, really hard.

He would first spend some time organizing the knowledge he had crammed into his head throughout the day, trying to digest it thoroughly.

In this respect, Lu Wu had a unique method, which was refining the improvement plan for Little Skeleton.

He would break down all the knowledge he had absorbed and integrate it into Little Skeleton's improvement plan.

He spent one to two hours coming up with several plans.

Then he would use his half-baked knowledge and the information provided by the sharp-tongued system to analyze these plans comprehensively, eventually selecting the most reliable one to submit.

This was his daily routine, spending two to three hours on it every day.

This was why Lu Wu was able to come up with version 2.0 in just a few days.

For Lu Wu, whether or not he had a Golden Finger was one thing, working hard was another.

Though he didn't believe in motivational speeches or hard work,

he firmly believed that cheating combined with hard work would get him further than just cheating alone.

[Ding, would you like to submit the revised plan?]

"Yes!"

As the time turned to twelve thirty, Lu Wu submitted the plan he had spent two hours on. The system quickly responded.

[Would you like to view the revised plan?]

"Yes!"

...

Quality Improvement Plan: Little Skeleton's Training Manual 2.0 Modified Version

Specifics: Added White Bone Grass and Yin Spirit Flower to the original plan.

Plan Effect: Greatly enhances Little Skeleton's bone quality and raises its level to Black Iron.

However, after the upgrade, Little Skeleton will only survive for 3 minutes. After 3 minutes, its bones will shatter, and your spiritual power will suffer severe backlash.

Plan Evaluation: Hmm, a nice plan. You sure have some unique ideas when it comes to killing your summoned beast.

Keep up the good work, and I'm sure you'll come up with even more creative ways.

P.S.: Quality improvement should be gradual, too much can backfire!

...

Clearly, Lu Wu had failed again, but he wasn't discouraged.

Ignoring the system's sarcasm, he focused on reflecting on the key points...

......

Please vote for recommendations!

Also, why does Little Skeleton's rating surpass Lu Wu's? It hasn't even had much screen time!

# Chapter 12: 012 Graduation Ceremony

June 28 was the day before summer vacation, and it was also graduation day for the current year's graduates.

To prepare for this day, the freshman and sophomore students had been mobilized yesterday.

They spent the entire day bustling around, hanging all sorts of banners all over the school. From the school gate to the auditorium, the whole place was extravagantly decorated!

Additionally, the freshman and sophomore students were arranged to be background extras at the school for the day.

They stood in the classroom corridors, and on both sides of the red carpet that stretched from the school gate to the auditorium.

They either held flowers or banners.

And all this arrangement was for the graduation ceremony of the senior students.

Or rather, it was all for the graduation ceremony of the three outstanding senior students who had been admitted to Summoner University.

The graduation ceremony officially began at eight in the morning.

The top-class students, who had not been seen at school for months, arrived at the school gate in a special car right at eight. The car door opened.

A group of three girls and two boys stepped out of the car first.

Welcomed by the school leaders, they stepped onto the red carpet with 55 top-class students and their various summoned beasts. They walked from the school gate to the auditorium amidst the exclamations and admiring gazes of the ordinary students.

At that moment, the three senior students admitted to Summoner University were the absolute focus.

All the attention was on them.

Even the school leaders seemed insignificant in their presence.

As an onlooker, it wasn't until this moment that Lu Wu truly realized what it meant to be admitted to Summoner University.

For the students in this world, being admitted to Summoner University was nearly equivalent to getting into the top two universities in his previous life.

Even more so!

It was also then that he fully understood the nature of the goal he had set for himself.

This realization suddenly made Lu Wu feel a heavy pressure, but it also made him more determined!

It's just Summoner University, right?

I'll do it!

He didn't believe that as a member of the Transcendence Party, a member with enhancements, he couldn't overcome this challenge!

As his emotions surged and his determination soared, Lu Wu kept his eyes on the summoned beasts of the top-class senior students.

Since the top-class seniors had not been at school before, he hadn't had the chance to interact with their summoned beasts, nor did he know their capabilities.

Seeing them now, Lu Wu especially wanted to check them out.

To see the level of the top-class seniors' summoned beasts, and the level of the senior girls who got into Summoner University!

Of course, Lu Wu couldn't just rush up and start examining them.

Doing so would definitely earn him a beating.

So, until the graduation ceremony was over, Lu Wu could only stand by obediently as a background extra, watching the rather tiresome ceremony with boredom.

Lu Wu wondered why those school leaders had so much to say.

They stretched a graduation ceremony into three to four hours!

With constant praise and speeches, it was almost noon when the ceremony finally ended.

After enduring until the ceremony ended, Pang Duddu was about to take out the lunch box she had hidden and prepared all morning, only for Lu Wu to beat her to it.

"Watch this for me!"

Lu Wu placed Little Skeleton next to Pang Duddu and ran towards the senior girls from the top-class.

Yes, the senior girls!

Lu Wu had no intention of talking to the senior boys!

It wasn't Lu Wu's fault—those senior boys were always particularly aloof towards him, glaring at him unfriendly!

In contrast, the senior girls were much warmer.

They were pretty, nice to talk to, and especially gentle.

As soon as Lu Wu approached, he effortlessly mingled with the senior girls, even drawing in the three girls who were admitted to Summoner University.

This scene deeply stung the male students watching from the sidelines, making them wish they could kick Lu Wu away and replace him.

Naturally, many female onlookers felt similarly, though they weren't interested in replacing Lu Wu.

This was the advantage of being plain and ordinary.

The girls didn't care if Lu Wu's summoned beast was a Little Skeleton, whether he had potential or talent, or whether he was decent or not. To them, it only mattered that he was plain and spoke nicely!

Lu Wu had initially intended just to examine the attributes of the senior girls' summoned beasts.

Unexpectedly, the senior girls were so enthusiastic that Lu Wu, with nothing to lose, joined them for lunch.

While examining the attributes of their summoned beasts, he also gathered information about the top-class and high school league from the senior girls.

Thanks to Lu Wu's plain face,

the senior girls answered his questions in detail.

Lu Wu not only got the information he wanted but also obtained the contact details of over a dozen senior girls from the top-class, including those of the three admitted to Summoner University.

Afterward, Lu Wu even borrowed a top-class textbook from one of the senior girls, feeling highly rewarded.

While Lu Wu was thrilled with his gains, Pang Duddu felt very downcast.

She held the lunch box she had spent almost two hours making in one hand and her family's pig in the other. She sat in a remote corner of the school cafeteria with Little Skeleton, fighting back fear and hunger.

Watching Lu Wu surrounded by the senior girls, Pang Duddu felt uncomfortable and resentful.

But she didn't dare say anything or wander off.

Little Skeleton was Lu Wu's summoned beast and couldn't stray too far from him. She feared that if she moved too far, Lu Wu would be upset.

She didn't even dare eat.

Although she saw Lu Wu eating with the senior girls, what if Lu Wu wasn't full and wanted to eat her lunch box when he returned?

Lu Wu had mentioned yesterday that he would try her cooking today.

Even though she knew he probably just said it in passing and had already forgotten,

she was worried that if she ate first, she wouldn't be able to share it with Lu Wu later.

So she could only endure her hunger, squatting by the side and waiting for Lu Wu.

Occasionally, she glanced over, worried that Lu Wu would leave without her, making Little Skeleton too distant from him.

And she waited like this for two hours.

It wasn't until two hours later, when Lu Wu contentedly said goodbye to the senior girls and sat in the cafeteria daydreaming,

that Pang Duddu dared to approach cautiously after repeatedly confirming that Lu Wu was done.

Even then, she didn't dare to disturb the daydreaming Lu Wu, sitting quietly by his side, waiting for him to notice her.

...

Thanks to [Tai Bungui], [True I Lin Feng's Eye], [Book Friend 20191209003743897], [Reborn Lu Bu], [Ming Yunzi] for the reward support!

If I didn't mention it, you'd have likely escalated the votes for Little Skeleton. In that case, I'll get some votes for Dudu and let Lu Wu end up at the bottom!

# Chapter 13: 013 Black Iron Quality Summoned Beast

```

Lu Wu did not notice Pang Duddu.

At this moment, all his attention was focused on the data of the newly seen summoned beasts.

...

Name, Jungle Wolf

Power, 3 Stars (Ordinary)

Quality, Ordinary (Upgraded)

Attribute, Wind

State, Alert (It thinks you are probably not a good person, certainly eyeing its master's body, it even wants to bite you!)

Skill, Wind Blade (Skilled) Gale (Skilled) Bite (Skilled)

Weakness, Thunder, Grass

Description, Considered a somewhat trained rubbish summoned beast, with some combat power, capable of taking on about fifty Little Skeletons.

...

Name, Snowman

Power, 3 Stars (Ordinary)

Quality, Black Iron (Upgraded)

Attribute, Ice and Snow

State, Joyful (As a visual-type summoned beast, it thinks your appearance matches well with it, hmm, you could try to lure it away!)

Skill, Frozen Breath (Mastered) Fog (Skilled) Frozen Fist (Skilled) Ice Shield (Skilled)

Weakness, Fire, Grass

Description, Possesses the combat power equivalent to more than 100 Little Skeletons,

Its potential lies in hoping to advance to the [Boss] level as a Black Iron quality summoned beast, barely considered a miscellaneous fish.

Hmm, try to lure it away!

...

These two summoned beasts' attributes were seen by Lu Wu among the more representative ones from those senior girls.

The former was the average level of the advanced class.

The latter had reached the level to get into Summoner University.

It had to be said, when Lu Wu saw the attributes of these two summoned beasts, his slightly inflated mindset since the release of the [Little Skeleton's Training Manual 2.0] version instantly deflated.

It could be said that, like a frog at the bottom of a well, he just realized what the world truly looked like.

He genuinely understood what level of summoned beast was needed to qualify for the high school league.

Summoned beasts like those above, the first Jungle Wolf was already incredibly powerful to Lu Wu.

But such a summoned beast didn't even make it past the preliminaries in the competition.

Even the strong Snowman.

Although it helped its master secure a spot at Summoner University, its performance in the high school league was not particularly outstanding.

Its final individual ranking was 27th in Quan City, while in the team competition it ranked 16th, not even qualifying to represent Quan City in the provincial competition.

This showed just how terrifying the high school league's level of competition was.

How difficult it was to become a professional summoner!

Knowing this, it wasn't hard for Lu Wu to understand why Li Chun had no confidence in his chances of getting into Summoner University.

How could there be any confidence?

Lu Wu wanted to get into Summoner University.

This meant Lu Wu had to nurture Little Skeleton to the level of Snowman within a year, or even a shorter period.

And this was under the condition that Lu Wu made it into the advanced class and had teammates.

If he couldn't perform well during the class division and didn't make it into the advanced class, or if no one was willing to team up with him even if he did, he would have no choice but to form his own team.

If things went to the worst-case scenario and Lu Wu had to form a reasonable team himself, the difficulty of the league's challenge would instantly rise to Hell Level.

Though it shouldn't be that bad, Lu Wu was still feeling immense pressure.

"No, no, I can't just sit around. While we still have some time this afternoon, let's go see if the library is open!"

Saying this, Lu Wu slammed the table and headed to the library.

His sudden movement left Pang Duddu unprepared.

She was still debating whether to take out the lunchbox, but given the situation, Pang Duddu had to put it away.

Then, despite her hunger, she followed Lu Wu to the library.

Pang Duddu had a bit of bad luck.

Lu Wu, however, was quite lucky.

He was worried the library might be closed today, but surprisingly, it was still open.

Excitedly seizing this last chance, he started picking several books from the shelves and began devouring them.

Watching Lu Wu entering his book-devouring mode again, Pang Duddu's stomach growled with hunger, and she felt a bit resentful.

But she didn't show it, nor did she bother Lu Wu.

Instead, she picked up a book herself and sat opposite Lu Wu, accompanying him in reading.

This continued for several hours, until six or seven in the evening when the library had to close early, and only then did Lu Wu reluctantly stop reading.

"Come on, let's go home, let's head back earlier today!"

Pang Duddu originally wanted to take out the lunchbox, but thinking it had been left all day and must be cold, combined with the weariness of the day, she couldn't muster the courage.

So, in the end, the lunchbox she had prepared early in the morning was not taken out.

Hungry all afternoon, she said nothing.

After returning the books with Lu Wu, she hugged a little pig, carried a backpack holding a lunchbox, and just like usual, followed behind Lu Wu like a little tail.

The only difference was she felt a bit more downcast today.

Normally she should have been used to it by now, given the more resentful situations encountered before Lu Wu's crossing.

Compared to then, this was already an improvement.

But somehow, she felt more resentful and downcast than before.

She couldn't explain why.

Just when Pang Duddu was feeling down, Lu Wu suddenly stopped.

"Wait here for a moment!"

"Okay!"

Slightly puzzled, Pang Duddu obediently nodded and stopped.

At this moment, Lu Wu turned and went into a nearby convenience store. Before long, he came out with a bag.

"Here!"

Lu Wu returned to Pang Duddu's side, handed over a bag containing a bottle of water and a bun, leaving Pang Duddu in a daze.

"I heard your stomach growling, hand me the pig and the backpack, you eat."

Saying this, Lu Wu forcefully placed the bag in Pang Duddu's hands, taking the pig and the backpack from her arms and shoulders.

As he touched the pig, Lu Wu was momentarily stunned.

He saw the pig was in a state of hunger, seemingly having not eaten for almost a day.

That couldn't be right. Pang Duddu was especially fond of her piglet, she wouldn't let it starve, unless she herself hadn't eaten for almost a day.

At that moment, Lu Wu felt the weight of the backpack was off.

It suddenly dawned on him, so he opened the backpack, and sure enough, he found two substantial lunchboxes inside.

At that instant, he understood everything. With a stern face, he flicked the head of the flustered Pang Duddu.

"I've never seen someone as silly as you!"

...

Thanks to [YBJXW] [Zhi Nian A] for your generous support!

Well, let me say a few words, it's a new week.

This week I want to try to climb the New Book Signing List, so I'm begging for more support from all readers.

Asking for recommendation votes,

Shamelessly asking for some tips (as tips are very important for climbing the list)

Kneeling in thanks!

```

# Chapter 14: 014 First Bone Boiling

Thanks to [Too Naughty] for the ten thousand reward support!

.....

At last.

Lu Wu took Pang Duddu to the cafeteria.

After activating the 'Plain and Simple' BUFF, asked the cafeteria lady to heat up the lunchbox, and ate two lunchboxes together with Pang Duddu.

After eating, Lu Wu couldn't help but smack Pang Duddu on the back of the head.

Pang Duddu didn't understand why Lu Wu suddenly got mad and what it meant, but it didn't stop her from being happy.

On the way back, she kept giggling like a silly girl from a landlord's house.

Lu Wu also didn't know what she was happy about.

Anyway, he wasn't particularly happy.

He thought this might have been the most expensive meal of his life.

Because while eating that lunchbox, he secretly made a decision that within his capability, he decided to help this girl as much as possible to get her into the elite class and get her into Summoner University.

It wasn't because Pang Duddu's lunchbox was especially delicious.

The decision Lu Wu made wasn't really because of the lunch; it was just a trigger.

After all, Lu Wu wasn't his former self.

He wasn't scummy and couldn't comfortably accept others' kindness without a qualm.

Although due to the memories from his former self, he got particularly accustomed to Pang Duddu's presence in the past few days, and especially accustomed to her accommodating him.

He didn't even find anything wrong with it until he saw that lunchbox.

Realizing, for just a casual remark he made yesterday, this girl got up early to make the lunch and starved herself all day to eat with him, Lu Wu's feelings got particularly complicated.

Coupled with the burst of his former self's memories about Pang Duddu, it made Lu Wu recall the bullying and exploitation of Pang Duddu by his former self.

Making Lu Wu feel an urge to do something for this girl.

And after thinking it over, the only thing he could think of was to pull this girl along, helping her on the path to becoming a Professional Summoner.

This was one of the two things Lu Wu could do!

Yes, the other way was to repay this girl in another manner!

But Lu Wu looked at the still chubby Pang Duddu. Cute as she was, she wasn't sexy, not Lu Wu's type, so that option was out.

"So now, my task has gotten heavier, huh? Not only do I have to strive for myself, but I also have to help this girl, it's quite challenging!"

Thinking about having to train his Little Skeleton and Pang Duddu's pig to the level of snowmen within a year, Lu Wu's head couldn't help but ache.

But despite the pain, it had to be done.

"Well, some pressure won't hurt. Anyway, I intended to train her as a backup teammate!

Since I decided to train this girl, spending some of her money should be okay, right?

Well, the thing about Summoned Beast training is that the strong leads the weak. If I don't strengthen myself first, how can I lead her?"

Lu Wu calculated and felt that his logic had no flaws.

So immediately, he stopped the still giddily happy Pang Duddu.

"Got any money? Lend me some!"

Asking for money could easily damage relationships and was often met with rejection.

But how could Pang Duddu ever reject Lu Wu?

So in less than a few minutes, Lu Wu's account had an extra 1,000 bucks.

This was Pang Duddu's remaining savings, all transferred to Lu Wu.

This silly girl had no awareness of being scammed and didn't even know why Lu Wu needed the money. When Lu Wu said the money wasn't enough, she wondered if she should sell her collection to get more money for Lu Wu.

Fortunately, Lu Wu still had some conscience, saying the money was barely enough for now, making the girl put that thought aside.

After getting the money from Pang Duddu, Lu Wu went to the market immediately.

He bought 10,000 grams of beef bones and 20,000 grams of cow blood. Buying these, Lu Wu noticed he miscalculated before.

10,000 grams equals 20 pounds, costing 700 yuan, and 20,000 grams equals 40 pounds, costing 600 yuan, meaning the first batch of materials cost 1,300 yuan.

Instantly, it almost used up his recently fattened savings.

This wasn't the worst part. The worst part was that the [Little Skeleton's Training Manual 2.0] costs had doubled, from around 4,000 to now 7,000 - 8,000 yuan.

Making Lu Wu's head buzz in pain.

"Forget it. Cross the bridge when we get to it. Let's go back and test the effect first."

Putting the money issue aside for now, to save on delivery fees, Lu Wu had Pang Duddu helping him haul big bags of stuff home.

Along the way, Lu Wu couldn't help but frequently glare at the Little Skeleton beside him.

His resentment ran deep!

All those big bags were for it, and not only couldn't it carry them, it walked slower than the two of them carrying the bags, making them wait for it.

"This 2.0 version better have some effect or I'll cook you up and feed you to the dogs!"

...

With Pang Duddu's help, Lu Wu struggled for nearly an hour to get the 60 pounds of beef bones and cow blood home.

Li Ruyu opened the door and, seeing the state the two of them were in, quickly helped them unload the stuff.

"What's going on here? What are all these things?"

"Just some materials. You don't need to help, I'll handle it!"

Lu Wu avoided Li Ruyu's help and had Pang Duddu assist in moving the stuff to his room.

Once everything was in, he started shooing people out.

"Just leave the stuff here. You can go now. I'll contact you tomorrow!"

"Oh!"

Pang Duddu was very curious about what Lu Wu was going to do with these things, wanting to stay and watch.

But she didn't dare ask. Since Lu Wu told her to go, she obediently left.

After sending off Pang Duddu, Lu Wu took a while before coming out to find Li Ruyu.

"Mom, do we have any big pots and barrels? Ones that can cook 20 pounds of stuff at once!"

"Yes, yes, yes. Look after Ni Ni, I'll get them for you!"

These past few days, this was the first time Lu Wu called her mom, making Li Ruyu especially excited. Passing Ni Ni to Lu Wu, she quickly brought back a big pot and barrel from outside.

These were newly bought.

"Lu Lu, do you need anything else?"

"Nothing else!"

"Do you need Mom's help?"

It was obvious Li Ruyu really wanted to do something for Lu Wu, but Lu Wu shook his head, "No need. Just look after Ni Ni, I can handle it!"

With that, Lu Wu got busy.

Luckily, the pot Li Ruyu bought was big enough for Lu Wu to put all 20 pounds of beef bone powder in at once. Adding some water, it took nearly an hour to come to a boil.

Then he carried the beef bone soup to his room, poured it into the barrel, added the Little Skeleton and cow blood, and covered it.

"Well, that should do it. Now we just wait a few hours for the results!"

.....

Thanks to [Ou Captain], [CMY Mo Yu'Er], and [My Heaven Card] for the rewards.

Also, thanks to all the readers for the support. It seems we've made it to the top ten in the Urban Category Subscription Rankings.

Thanks!

# Chapter 15: 015 About Summer Vacation Plans

```

Little Skeleton probably would sulk for three or four hours.

With so much time, Lu Wu couldn't just wait around.

He decided it was a good opportunity to plan his summer vacation!

To be honest, after learning about the honors class and the high school competition from his senior, Lu Wu felt a tremendous amount of pressure.

At that moment, he realized his previous confidence had been blind, largely built on ignorance.

The more he understood about the high school competition and summoned beasts, the greater his pressure became.

Given his current situation.

Even if money wasn't an issue and he could complete the "Little Skeleton's Training Manual 2.0" to elevate Little Skeleton's quality to "Ordinary" or maybe even a bit stronger within a month.

It would still be very difficult for him to enter the honors class when school started.

After all, even if Little Skeleton reached "Ordinary," it would merely catch up to everyone else's starting line, and no one would be waiting for Lu Wu at the starting line.

According to his senior who had a Jungle Wolf summoned beast, her beast was "Ordinary" quality right from the start.

On the third day after being summoned, it activated the "Bite" skill.

During the summer vacation, his senior also attended a training class.

After two months of training, by the start of the third year, her Jungle Wolf had already become a one-star summoned beast and had mastered the "Wind Blade" and "Bite" skills.

And such a level was only average in the honors class!

This meant that Lu Wu had to elevate Little Skeleton's quality to "Ordinary," train its power to one star, and make it master two skills within two months.

And even that might not be enough!

Because he learned from his senior that the school had more stringent criteria for admitting students with less promising summoned beasts like Little Skeleton into the honors class.

Little Skeleton needed to perform exceptionally well!

Thinking about this gave Lu Wu a headache.

"What on earth was I thinking, trying to help that girl in such a tough situation for myself?

With my current situation, can I even manage that?"

In that instant, Lu Wu felt an impulse to just abandon helping Pang Duddu and let her fend for herself!

"Forget it, forget it, I should focus on listing my own problems first and then figure out how to solve them!"

Whether due to a remaining sense of conscience or his inability to harm Pang Duddu at the moment, he temporarily put that thought aside.

Then Lu Wu started ticking off the problems he needed to face.

First, improving Little Skeleton's quality.

Training Little Skeleton to reach at least one-star power and master at least two skills.

Simultaneously, he also had to develop a training plan for Pang Duddu and help her family's pig improve its power and master skills.

Combining all these issues together, Lu Wu realized that ultimately, it was still a matter of money!

If he had money, Little Skeleton's advanced materials wouldn't be a problem.

If he had money, he could enroll both himself and Pang Duddu in training classes, ensuring they could learn skills.

But the problem now was, he had no money!

This left Lu Wu feeling very awkward and troubled.

"It seems that in any world, dealing with money is unavoidable."

Lu Wu started brainstorming on how to make money: "Right, didn't the Transcendence Party's first pot of gold often come from being a plagiarist? Should I do that too?

Copy some songs, some novels?

This kind of work is pretty easy and brings fast money.

If I copied to a billion, I could create a whole new world with those gold coins!"

The more Lu Wu thought about it, the more feasible it seemed.

His enthusiasm surged, but when he seriously considered doing it, he realized that being a plagiarist wasn't that easy.

Although he had photographic memory after crossing over, he didn't have that skill before the transmigration. He could hum a few lines or remember some plots from pre-crossing songs and novels, but producing them was beyond his capability.

He couldn't compose music, and his writing skills were poor.

This plan of being a plagiarist was blocked, which made Lu Wu particularly frustrated.

Just when he was feeling down, his phone rang.

Lu Wu picked it up and saw that it was Li Chun.

Lu Wu was a bit puzzled, wondering why Old Li was looking for him during the holidays.

"Hello, teacher, good evening!"

"A part-time job? Umm, four thousand a month?… Okay, got it, I will come over first thing tomorrow morning."

"Not at all, I should be the one thanking you!"

After a few minutes, Lu Wu hung up the call, his expression somewhat complex.

He didn't expect Old Li's call to introduce him to a job.

His uncle had opened a new store and was short of staff, so he wanted Lu Wu to help out for the summer vacation.

Initially hearing this, Lu Wu was a bit hesitant.

Even though he wasn't opposed to the idea, he hadn't actually prepared for it.

But learning there was four thousand a month, working from 8 a.m. to 6 p.m., Lu Wu immediately felt the job suited him and promptly agreed.

After all, it wasn't billions, but eight thousand was still valuable!

"It looks like working is my fate after all, but at least this means the material for training Little Skeleton would be secured!"

With the job settled and the training material for Little Skeleton assured, Lu Wu started thinking about the skills.

Currently, Lu Wu had two options.

One was to wait for his senior to send over the honors class teaching materials. He remembered it contained some basic skill training plans, although the success rate was very low; no matter, he had an advantage.

The other was pursuing Pang Duddu's close bond route.

Treat Little Skeleton well and see if strengthening their bond could awaken any skills in it.

Of course, being pragmatic, Lu Wu didn't have to choose between the two, he could do both, although this brought another issue.

"If that's the case, should I consider sharing the same bed with it?"

Thinking about this, Lu Wu was particularly hesitant.

He had never shared a bed with anyone before. Should his first time really be for this Little Skeleton?

No way!

Lu Wu couldn't accept it.

"Holding it, there's no way I could sleep. Plus, with its silly appearance, even if we ate and slept together, there's no guarantee we'd bond. It wouldn't really feel anything.

Building a bond required something that could touch its heart or shared interests.

Pang Duddu and her family's pig had a deep appreciation for food and sleep, so their bond grew quickly. To improve my bond with this little guy, I had to find something that would touch it and pique its interest."

Yes, to protect his first time, Lu Wu indeed had to put in a lot of effort!

```

# Chapter 16: 016 Lu Haikong

Three hours later.

Little Skeleton's first bone boiling, oh no, soup-making session was over.

Lu Wu gazed at the freshly bathed Little Skeleton.

He couldn't see much of a change.

It still looked the same as before, at most its bones seemed a bit brighter, but Lu Wu couldn't make out anything else.

This made Lu Wu a bit nervous. Could it be that his over a thousand bucks went to waste?

He reached out to touch Little Skeleton, checked its attribute board, and felt relieved.

The money wasn't wasted. There were effects, but they needed time to digest.

Each bone boiling session required six to ten days for Little Skeleton to absorb.

"So, the final effect of this bone boiling session will take six to ten days to verify?"

Realizing this, Lu Wu lost all enthusiasm.

He let Little Skeleton train on its own, while he busied himself with dumping out the beef bone soup, then he went to sleep.

Early the next morning.

The first thing Lu Wu did when he woke up was check on his Little Skeleton.

This little guy trotted in place all night, and Lu Wu came to assess the results.

After making Little Skeleton move a bit, do some simple actions, Lu Wu was pleasantly surprised to find that Little Skeleton's overnight progress was better than the previous days' training.

In the past few days, training only kept it from constantly falling over. Its walking speed was still as slow as a turtle, slower than an old person.

It had improved a lot now, though it still couldn't match Lu Wu's normal walking speed, it wasn't bad anymore.

"At this rate, it shouldn't take long before it can barely keep up with my normal walking speed."

Lu Wu was already quite satisfied with this progress.

Now he had a headache about where to get the money for the next batch of materials in six to ten days.

Just when Lu Wu was fretting over this, his phone rang.

Hmm, it was Old Li!

He was reminding Lu Wu not to forget to go to work.

Old Li was particularly concerned about Lu Wu's job, genuinely worried that Lu Wu might impulsively take money from home during the summer vacation and head into the secret realm.

Doing so would not only cost money but also be dangerous.

Lu Wu didn't know what Old Li was worrying about, but he could feel Old Li's concern for him.

So, Lu Wu didn't delay, after breakfast, he was ready to leave. Li Ruyu saw this and was puzzled: "Lu Lu, isn't it summer vacation for you guys? Where are you going so early?"

"Our class teacher found me a summer job. I'm going to check it out. Oh, and by the way, you don't need to prepare lunch for me today. If I finish early, I'll be back by six or seven; if it's late, I might return after ten."

Lu Wu planned to see if there were any temp jobs after finishing his evening shift.

He aimed to gather enough money for Little Skeleton's next batch of materials within six days by working a temp job at night.

Now he was single-mindedly focused on making money.

He didn't notice Li Ruyu's expression when he said this.

What he didn't know was this.

After seeing him off, Li Ruyu's emotions accumulated over the past few days, finally reaching a critical point and breaking down, she started to cry.

As a woman, as a mother.

Li Ruyu's heart was undoubtedly sensitive, especially regarding Lu Wu's situation.

And Lu Wu happened to be acting out of character these past few days!

Since he transmigrated, he subconsciously distanced himself from his family.

To Lu Wu, it stemmed from a guilt of feeling like an intruding bird in another's nest.

But to Li Ruyu, it didn't seem that way.

Because Lu Wu's change happened right after the Summoning Ceremony when he summoned Little Skeleton.

Li Ruyu knew that Lu Wu wanted to become a Professional Summoner.

Summoning Little Skeleton almost cut off his path to becoming a Professional Summoner, and Li Ruyu was aware of it too.

Therefore, Li Ruyu thought Lu Wu felt hurt because he summoned Little Skeleton.

He blamed her, his mother, for summoning Little Skeleton.

After all, the TV said the initial summoned beast had something to do with heredity.

Maybe there was a reason Lu Wu summoned Little Skeleton related to her.

So, Lu Wu must have distanced himself because he summoned Little Skeleton.

And mothers would often subconsciously take the blame for things that weren't their fault.

She truly felt she had let Lu Wu down, not giving him a better talent.

She couldn't give Lu Wu a good summoned beast, causing his dream of becoming a Professional Summoner to shatter.

But if Lu Wu's dream had truly shattered, and he stopped struggling, Li Ruyu might have felt better.

But the problem was he hadn't. These days, she saw Lu Wu's efforts.

This made Li Ruyu feel she had to do something.

So, after Lu Wu left, she took out her phone and called someone who was "collecting material."

"Hello, honey, why are you calling so early?!"

On the other end, Lu Haikong was awakened by the phone's ringtone, yawning, but quickly became alert as he heard Li Ruyu sobbing.

"What happened? Why are you crying? Who bullied you?"

In that moment, even the air seemed to freeze.

"It's not that, it's Lu Lu..."

As soon as Lu Haikong heard this, he got angrier: "Lu Wu? He made you upset? That little brat dared to bully you while I'm not around, I'm coming back to break his legs!"

Son or not, nothing was more important than his wife.

Li Ruyu sighed: "Can you please let me finish?"

"Okay, go on!"

Lu Haikong's temper immediately took a downturn.

"You know that Lu Lu summoned Little Skeleton, right?"

"Yeah!" Lu Haikong smirked gleefully. "That kid must be heartbroken, right? Did he become dejected? Can't hold his head up? Crying his eyes out every day? Gave up on becoming a Professional Summoner?"

"No, Lu Lu doesn't seem to have given up.

Since summoning Little Skeleton, Lu Lu has been working harder.

According to Dudu, he's been studying at school from morning until night.

Every day he stays at the library till eight or nine, and when he gets home, he doesn't just rest. He reads until one or two before going to bed."

Lu Haikong was stunned, this didn't sound like his son at all.

But he could guess what Li Ruyu wanted to do.

"You want to help him?"

"Yes, I heard there are Summon Beast Cultivators who can improve the quality of summoned beasts. How about we find one for Lu Lu?"

Lu Haikong shook his head: "Do you know how expensive that is? Where would we get that much money for a Summon Beast Cultivator?"

As for this, Li Ruyu already had an idea. Carefully, she said: "We have that money saved for buying a house, don't we?"

Upon hearing this, Lu Haikong's eyes squinted immediately.

Hmm, he thought, it might be time to cut ties with that ungrateful son!

.......

Thanks to [Han Han Tai Er] and [Zui Jiu Qingniu 9527 Micro] for your generous support!

# Chapter 17: 017 Li Kai Summoned Beast Grocery Store

Li Chun didn't initially tell Lu Wu what kind of shop it was, he just gave Lu Wu an address and left a number.

So, when Lu Wu arrived at his destination, he found it a bit unbelievable.

Because the place Li Chun directed him to wasn't an ordinary store, but a shop dealing in Summoned Beast items called "Li Kai's Summoned Beast General Store."

It was important to note that opening a shop related to Summoned Beasts in these times was incredibly difficult, and it was nearly impossible for ordinary people.

This made Lu Wu suspect he might have gone to the wrong place. He had to call his boss, whom he had never met, to confirm that this was indeed the place he was supposed to work at. Only after confirming did he step inside.

As soon as he stepped into the general store, Lu Wu felt as if he had traveled through time and space, like he had entered a shop from a video game.

Upon entering, there was a counter on the right side by the door and a large Summoned Beast deposit area on the left.

Further inside, in the central area, there were four two-meter by two-meter shelves, displaying all sorts of strange items.

There were crystals, bones, herbs, fruits, and even skulls.

Around the sides of the store, four display cabinets showcased various equipment and weapons for human-shaped Summoned Beasts.

The entire store was filled with a magical atmosphere.

While Lu Wu was observing the store, a middle-aged man with dirty clothes, disheveled hair, and dark circles under his eyes that rivaled panda eyes, looking about forty years old, walked out from the depths of the shop.

Only then did Lu Wu notice that there was also a door deep inside the shop.

The middle-aged man scrutinized Lu Wu and then looked at the Little Skeleton beside Lu Wu before asking, "Are you the one Li Chun recommended?"

"Yes, Teacher Li recommended me. My name is Lu Wu. Please take care of me!"

"My name is Li Kai. I am the owner of this shop and also your boss during your summer job.

Come over, let me tell you about your work."

Li Kai got straight to the point and started showing Lu Wu around the small general store.

"Your job is very simple, it's mainly cleaning and looking after the store.

However, lots of items in this store shouldn't be touched randomly, and cleaning requires some attention to detail. I'll explain the key points to you.

Just note these down, and clean and organize the store daily.

Also, take this!"

As he spoke, Li Kai handed a notebook to Lu Wu. When Lu Wu opened it, he found it was an inventory list.

"Most of the items' information is in there, including their effects and prices. Note them down, and when customers come to buy ordinary items, you can assist them. If you can't handle it, call me. I'm usually in the back."

...

Li Kai spent about half an hour explaining Lu Wu's job to him.

"I've told you everything you need to know. Did you get all that?"

Lu Wu nodded, "I got it all!"

Li Kai curled his lips and was quite skeptical about Lu Wu's claim of remembering everything.

He had spoken for half an hour, listing over twenty to thirty key points. Even he couldn't recite everything again without missing something. How could Lu Wu possibly remember it all?

But he didn't say anything further.

There wasn't much more to say. It's normal for a young man to get a bit nervous on his first job and claim to remember everything even if he didn't.

He decided to let Lu Wu start working, and if there were any mistakes or oversights, he would correct them.

However, when Li Kai really let Lu Wu begin working, he was surprised.

He found that Lu Wu, seemingly, hadn't lied. He really did remember everything.

All twenty to thirty key points, Lu Wu paid attention to all of them and managed everything perfectly.

Although Lu Wu's actions were a bit clumsy, possibly because he hadn't done much housework before, he made almost no mistakes.

This was quite impressive for Li Kai, as it meant he could be much more relaxed.

Once Li Kai confirmed that Lu Wu had indeed mastered everything, he left the shop to Lu Wu and went back to his room in the depths of the shop to sleep.

He was exhausted!

He had stayed up all night the previous night experimenting with a new idea.

Now that someone was watching the store for him, he could finally get a good sleep.

As soon as Li Kai left, Lu Wu was the only one left in the shop.

At this moment, Lu Wu allowed his inner joy to show.

Because in this store, he had discovered two things, one of which was an additional function of his Golden Finger ability.

The so-called additional function of the Golden Finger allowed him to see the attributes of items related to Summoned Beasts that he touched.

Lu Wu discovered this ability while cleaning the shop and touching the store's items.

However, it seemed this ability wasn't comprehensive.

Lu Wu found that although he could see the attributes of items in the shop, the attributes were incomplete, with many aspects shrouded in question marks.

For example, the skull in the store.

Since his Summoned Beast was the Little Skeleton, Lu Wu was naturally interested in that item, so he touched it.

As soon as he touched it, the attributes of the skull appeared.

...

Item: Little Skeleton's Head

Value: 500 yuan

Item Description: No special effects, can only be used as a decoration. May have certain medicinal effects, please research further.

...

The system-provided attributes were like this, very vague.

The attributes of other items were similarly vague, with the most common descriptor being "please research further."

And Lu Wu quickly discovered something else.

The attributes he could see on his Golden Finger were things he already knew.

He knew the price, so the attribute panel showed the price. The purpose noted on the shelf appeared in the attribute panel.

In short, whatever he knew, he could see it all.

But if he didn't know, there was no information.

In this respect, item attributes were even more thorough than Summoned Beast attributes.

This realization left Lu Wu quite exasperated, making him despise his Golden Finger.

If he had to know something himself to identify it, what use was this Golden Finger?

Why bother checking the item attributes? Just to record them?

However, Lu Wu quickly adjusted his mindset.

Partly due to having grown accustomed to the system's pitfalls, and partly because he discovered the "Item Effect Validation" function on the attribute panel.

Lu Wu tried it out and found this function could help validate his guesses about the effects of items.

This meant that although the Golden Finger couldn't immediately reveal all the attributes of an item, it could still help him discover and explore them.

In other words, as long as Lu Wu could deduce an item's attributes, he could understand and master the item.

With this function in mind, Lu Wu saw the store's merchandise not just as goods but as sources of knowledge, akin to exam questions.

"Since I don't have books to study now, let me study you all!"

# Chapter 18: 018 Item Attributes Exploration

```

Because he discovered the other [item attributes] function of the Golden Finger,

Lu Wu's job nature and mentality changed.

Originally, Lu Wu worked with the mindset of earning money, but now he changed to doing exercises, earning money!

Lu Wu knew very well that to become a Summoned Beast Cultivator, accumulating knowledge was extremely important.

And acquiring knowledge wasn't just limited to reading books.

Like the 'doing exercises' method in front of him, it was also a way to gain knowledge.

As long as he could fully master the attributes of this shop's items, he could gain an astonishing amount of knowledge.

Dozens of items, hundreds of materials.

Countless combinations, he could mix and match freely, playing however he wanted.

Even if he couldn't see any results in a short time, when he became a Summoner Cultivator in the future, it would surely come in handy when cultivating Summoned Beasts.

With this utilitarian mindset, Lu Wu got to work.

But after really starting, Lu Wu found that doing these exercises was not as easy as he thought.

After all, this wasn't something you could just guess blindly.

Not to mention that each item had limited verifications per day, even if you could use them infinitely, that kind of endless failure was enough to torment a person.

So, doing these exercises required a rigorous attitude.

By integrating existing clues, he could make reasonable and logical deductions about the items' uses.

This added a high level of difficulty.

But fortunately, this world also had the internet and some type of search engine.

Although not everything could be found online, and due to time and technical blockades, detailed information about Summoned Beasts was hard to find on the internet.

But still, it was possible to find a few scattered clues.

Plus, with the books Lu Wu had read in the library before, he had some understanding of items related to Summoned Beasts.

With this foundation, Lu Wu could then infer the use of items more easily to get useful information.

And so, using this method, Lu Wu managed to figure out four or five items on the first day, gaining quite a bit.

Of course, all of this was based on Lu Wu having the Golden Finger.

If he didn't have the Golden Finger, using this method to do exercises and increase his knowledge base would be pure nonsense!

Hmm, Li Kai now thought Lu Wu was just fooling around.

Actually, Li Kai, who went to sleep, woke up at two or three in the afternoon, and after waking up, he didn't come out but checked the store's surveillance to see what the shop and his new employee were doing.

At first glance, he saw Lu Wu doing exercises.

In the beginning, Li Kai didn't know what Lu Wu was doing.

He saw Lu Wu looking at the items in the store, browsing the internet, and writing a bunch of stuff in a notebook, busy to the point where it made him confused.

It wasn't until he heard Lu Wu mumbling and guessing about the store items' uses and attributes that he understood what Lu Wu was doing.

After understanding this, Li Kai immediately shook his head.

"Does this kid think that what he's doing is useful? With this method, even if he tries until he dies, he won't get any results.

Waste of effort!"

Saying that, Li Kai turned off the surveillance.

He didn't plan to persuade Lu Wu nor do anything.

He thought that Lu Wu was just having a short burst of enthusiasm.

Because he was excited to work in the store, thinking he had entered the Professional Summoner's circle, he wanted to make an effort to gain attention.

This kind of situation didn't need care, just let it be.

People's enthusiasm was limited. When the passion burned out without results, in a day or two, at most two or three days, Lu Wu's enthusiasm would surely fade.

If he intervened, it might even have the opposite effect, and he could end up getting entangled by Lu Wu.

Hmm, it must be said, Li Kai's concern wasn't unnecessary.

In fact, Lu Wu brazenly doing exercises was indeed meant to showcase his talent and attract attention.

Lu Wu clearly knew that someone who could open such a store wasn't simple.

This wasn't just about a complex background, but aside from that, Li Kai definitely had exceptional knowledge about Summoned Beasts.

Lu Wu even suspected Li Kai might be a Summoned Beast Cultivator.

With this suspicion, Lu Wu couldn't help but show off.

After all, it was his only way to access a Summoned Beast Cultivator now.

According to the script in Lu Wu's mind,

He would do these exercises, showcase his talent, and Li Kai would be so amazed, crying and begging Lu Wu to accept him as a mentor.

Then, Lu Wu would be comfortable.

Not only could he get in touch with a Summoned Beast Cultivator, but also learn the knowledge, and maybe even get the advanced materials for Little Skeleton, achieving rapid progress!

The reality proved, however, that Lu Wu was daydreaming!

His relentless exercise routine, besides getting Li Kai's brief attention on the first day, didn't get any attention from Li Kai in the days that followed.

Although Li Kai noticed that Lu Wu's enthusiasm in this area seemed overly persistent, not short-lived like he expected.

And in a few days, Lu Wu indeed seemed to come up with something.

But so what?

Li Kai still minded his own business!

Li Kai's character was inherently solitary and aloof, hard to approach, and disliked excessive interaction with people.

Perhaps Lu Wu's days at the store did catch his attention somewhat, but he had no intention of approaching Lu Wu.

He didn't like inviting trouble.

So, in his view, he and Lu Wu should maintain a simple boss-employee relationship.

Li Kai's reaction left Lu Wu very uncomfortable.

He felt he had the wrong script!

He even thought, if there were a universal god writing his story,

That guy must be an idiot!

Wouldn't it be better to directly blind Li Kai with his talent?

Of course, Lu Wu didn't bear a grudge against Li Kai, nor did he think Li Kai was blind.

After all, it was he who placed his expectations on someone else arbitrarily, and the other person wasn't obligated to respond to his expectations.

Moreover, these days Lu Wu adjusted his mentality and figured out one thing.

"Except for that silly girl, no one would be good to others without reason.

So, to get something from someone, you must be able to offer something in return.

Equivalent exchange is the true principle!"

With this understanding, Lu Wu's restless mind calmed down.

No longer hoping to astonish Li Kai with his talent and get a windfall falling into his lap.

Instead, he pulled his mind back, working steadily on what he could do step by step.

```

# Chapter 19: 019 Collecting Money (Seeking Recommendation Votes)

When Lu Wu adjusted his mindset and stopped thinking about the pie that fell from the sky when Li Kai went blind,

Lu Wu started to work on gathering the materials needed for Little Skeleton's second bone boiling.

The little guy needed 1300 yuan for one bone boiling.

Lu Wu really didn't want to ask his family for this money.

To be honest, there were only two people he could confidently ask for money—one was Pang Duddu, and the other was Li Kai.

The second one was asking him for an advance on his salary.

In this regard, Li Kai was pretty agreeable.

He changed Lu Wu's salary from a monthly one to a daily one and even gave Lu Wu a 500-yuan raise, which meant Lu Wu could get 150 yuan a day.

Well, Lu Wu seriously suspected that the reason Li Kai added the 500 wasn't because he was efficient and worked well but simply because it made the daily calculation easier.

Of course, these things weren't important. What was important was that after the daily salary calculation, Lu Wu would have 150 yuan coming in every day.

Six days, 900 yuan, though there was still a gap of a few hundred yuan from the 1300, at least the bulk was settled.

With the main part taken care of, the remaining few hundred yuan was relatively easy to handle.

Every night after getting off work from the grocery store, Lu Wu would look for temporary jobs that paid daily.

Lu Wu wasn't very lucky; he couldn't find a suitable job for several days in a row.

It wasn't until the fifth night that Lu Wu found a job at a barbecue stall, skewering sticks and being paid five cents per stick.

To ensure that Little Skeleton could have the second bone boiling on time, Lu Wu pulled Pang Duddu over to help.

The two of them worked at the barbecue stall for four or five hours, their hands getting pricked countless times, bleeding profusely. At last, they got 500 yuan from the barbecue stall.

As soon as Lu Wu got the wages, Pang Duddu handed the money to him.

The barbecue stall owner and someone in the corner of the stall saw this and held their breath.

When they saw Lu Wu take the money from Pang Duddu's scarred hands without any guilt,

the barbecue stall owner's eyes were filled with contempt, and the other person was already looking for a brick on the ground.

Lu Wu was not self-aware of being seen as a scumbag at all. After taking the money, he even bargained with the owner, selling his cuteness, asking if they could get two chicken drumsticks for their hard work all night.

The owner initially didn't want to give them and even wanted to throw the "scumbag" Lu Wu out.

But looking at the starving Pang Duddu beside him, the owner finally handed two chicken drumsticks to Lu Wu with a scowl.

Lu Wu, without any shame, thanked the owner cheerfully and took the drumsticks, then gave both to Pang Duddu.

"Here!"

"Aren't you eating?"

"No, this barbecue doesn't suit my taste!"

Lu Wu completely ignored the fact that the owner was right beside them, watching.

Pang Duddu reluctantly took his eyes off the drumstick: "Then I won't—"

"Eat when I tell you to eat!"

"Okay!"

"Let's go, it's getting late, eat while we walk home!"

Finally, Lu Wu, with hands covered in injuries too, walked ahead with Little Skeleton.

Behind him was Pang Duddu, hugging the chicken drumsticks like they were treasures, nibbling happily at them, trailing like a little tail.

Under the dim light, Lu Wu's lanky shadow and Pang Duddu's rounded shadow merged together, slowly drifting away into the street.

Watching this scene, the barbecue stall owner and the guy who had found a brick both let out a long sigh.

They exchanged glances.

The owner put away the disdain on his face, and the guy holding the brick shook his head, then threw the brick and walked away.

His back was full of stories, making the owner immerse in thought until the guy disappeared down the street. Then the owner remembered that guy hadn't paid.

The direction the brick-throwing guy was heading was precisely where Lu Wu and the others went.

This guy was following Lu Wu and the others, specifically tracking Lu Wu.

The reason for tracking Lu Wu was to find a chance to beat him up.

Yes, in order to ensure secrecy, he even prepared a sack.

He was quite skilled in this kind of job, had done it several times, never got bad reviews!

As long as he found a suitable place, with one swoop of the sack, he guaranteed Lu Wu wouldn't know it was his own dad who beat him.

Yes, that's right. The guy following Lu Wu was none other than Lu Wu's cheap old man, Lu Haikong.

His "gathering materials" ended today; Lu Haikong came back right after Lu Wu left for work in the morning.

Upon his return, he found the situation on Lu Wu's side more serious than he anticipated.

As soon as Li Ruyu saw Lu Haikong come back, she couldn't control her emotions and burst into tears, making his heart ache.

The woman he cherished most in his life, whom he had pampered for twenty to thirty years without letting her shed a single tear, had cried because of Lu Wu?

How could this be?

Could Lu Haikong endure this? Absolutely not!

Even though Lu Wu was his son, so what? For making his wife sad, he would still beat the son!

So, Lu Haikong coaxed Li Ruyu and went out to find Lu Wu.

He wanted to see what kind of gall his rebellious son had to make his wife unhappy.

Of course, after watching the whole day, he didn't see Lu Wu show any courage. Instead, he saw him genuinely trying to make progress.

It was like his son had turned into a different person.

From being lazy, he had turned into this hardworking guy trying to better himself.

Working hard at his job every day, diligently enhancing the items in the store.

After working hours, he'd go out to find part-time jobs, apparently trying to save money to buy materials to enhance Little Skeleton's quality.

He didn't even want to ask his family for money, intending to be self-reliant.

Admittedly, when Lu Haikong learned about this, he felt his son seemed slightly more acceptable than before.

But for Lu Haikong, these changes weren't important. What mattered was that Lu Wu's changes made Li Ruyu sad.

For this reason alone, Lu Haikong felt he needed to beat Lu Wu.

Moreover, Lu Wu's recent behaviors made Lu Haikong very angry.

He definitely didn't recall ever teaching Lu Wu to become a scumbag!

The Lu Family never had any scumbags; he wasn't one, and Lu Wu couldn't be one either!

Therefore, although Lu Haikong threw away the brick, his determination to beat Lu Wu didn't waver. He was going to wake his rebellious son up that day!

If it wasn't for Pang Duddu being with Lu Wu, he would've already acted.

He waited until Lu Wu and Pang Duddu parted ways, leaving Pang Duddu at her building.

As soon as he saw this, Lu Haikong thought it was his chance.

He saw Lu Wu turn around and go into a snack shop, meticulously ordering Li Ruyu's favorite snack, buying himself only a bottle of water and a piece of bread, and then taking the snacks home.

Seeing this scene, Lu Haikong thought for a moment and finally threw away the sack.

Well, observe first, beat later if necessary!

# Chapter 20: 020 Ordinary Father

From the beginning of his time travel,

Lu Wu kept trying.

Trying to climb towards the direction of becoming a Professional Summoner, trying to adapt to his current living environment, and making changes bit by bit.

However, for Lu Wu, the hardest change was undoubtedly the relationship with his family.

Because of the time travel, he always had a sense of guilt as if he were an intruder taking someone else's place.

This feeling was persistent, making him subconsciously avoid Li Ruyu at the beginning of the time travel, even wanting to distance himself from the family directly.

But as time passed, especially after Lu Wu noticed that his actions seemed to have hurt Li Ruyu, he slowly began to realize that although this behavior was convenient for him, it was extremely irresponsible.

It was a worse act than bullying Pang Duddu.

So Lu Wu started trying to change his mindset, trying not to avoid Li Ruyu, trying to transform that guilt into another emotional force, to care and make up for the former Lu Wu's family.

And the supper he brought back for Li Ruyu was the first step he took to make a change.

Little did Lu Wu expect.

If he hadn't tried to take this step, he might have come home limping tonight.

He only knew that when he got home and handed over the "Heavenly Silkworm Potatoes," which was Li Ruyu's favorite snack according to his memory.

Li Ruyu couldn't hold back her emotions anymore, and for the first time, her eyes turned red in front of Lu Wu.

Seeing this scene, Lu Wu finally understood what a bastard he had been during this time of the time travel.

An indescribable emotion surged in his heart, rendering the usually talkative Lu Wu speechless for a moment. In the end, he could only scratch his head and tell Li Ruyu to eat and then rest early, before hiding in his room as usual.

But this time, Li Ruyu, watching Lu Wu hide in his room, couldn't help but laugh.

Indeed, sometimes women are easy to soothe, especially those most close to you. No matter how much you upset her, as long as you make a slight change, treat her a bit better, she can be happy all day.

Lu Haikong, who had been closely following Lu Wu, couldn't help but smile when he saw his wife's happy smile, feeling equally elated. The thought of breaking Lu Wu's legs faded a little.

But thinking about how Lu Wu made his wife cry, Lu Haikong still felt somewhat displeased.

So, after coaxing his wife to sleep, Lu Haikong knocked on Lu Wu's door around midnight.

"Dad?"

Just about to go to bed, Lu Wu opened the door to see a perplexed Lu Haikong.

"Come on, let's go drink!"

Without giving Lu Wu a chance to refuse, Lu Haikong pulled his bewildered son out the door quietly and found a barbecue stall that was still in business to drink.

"Dad, it's so late. Isn't it inappropriate? I'm still a student. Besides, I have to go to work tomorrow!"

He knew Lu Haikong was back today, but since he didn't know how to face him, he pretended not to know, thinking he could avoid it. Unexpectedly, he was dragged out in the middle of the night.

Moreover, seeing Lu Haikong order a lot and get two cases of beer with a "we're not leaving until we're drunk" vibe, Lu Wu felt a bit panicked.

"What are you scared of? What's wrong with a man staying up all night drinking? I don't remember raising you to be this cowardly! Drink up!"

This old man was as unreliable as Lu Wu's previous memories.

As soon as he sat down, he pushed a bottle of liquor to Lu Wu, beginning to drink directly from the bottle even before the food arrived.

He was clearly intending to get himself drunk. How could Lu Wu dare to get drunk?

One reason was work tomorrow, another was the fear that if he lost consciousness and let anything slip out, it would be a disaster. So Lu Wu tried all kinds of ways to dodge the alcohol, using all the skills he had accumulated over two lifetimes.

No matter how much Lu Haikong urged him to drink or used his fatherly authority, it was of no use.

Enraged, Lu Haikong cursed Lu Wu, calling him a coward and an unfilial son!

At this, Lu Wu, who took tiny sips of his drink, felt speechless. He had never seen a father drag his son out in the middle of the night to drink, then curse him for not being a man when he resisted.

But there was no way around it. Who was Lu Haikong's father? Lu Wu could only endure in silence.

However, just when Lu Wu thought he would be cursed all night, Lu Haikong, after downing a few bottles of beer, seemed a bit drunk. He sat beside Lu Wu, draped an arm over his shoulder, and, with a slurred voice, asked, "Kid, tell me, do you resent your mom and me?"

"No! How could you think that?"

"Don't lie! You can't fool anyone! Your thoughts are written all over your face.

You must be resenting your mom and me, blaming us for being incompetent, dragging you down, making you summon this kind of thing, and yet not able to provide you with much financial support, putting you at a disadvantage in becoming a Summoner!

Lately, you've been studying hard, getting part-time jobs, isn't that because you don't trust us and want to rely on yourself?"

Lu Wu panicked. He really didn't think that way.

He wanted to explain, but Lu Haikong didn't give him a chance.

"You don't need to talk, don't explain.

Take this."

As he spoke, Lu Haikong grabbed Lu Wu's hand and placed two cards in it.

"Here are two cards, one from your mom, one secret stash card from me. The passwords are your and your sister's birthdays.

Together, they have a total of 512,210.8 yuan. This money was originally for buying a house, but it's all yours now!"

Lu Wu was shocked, "I can't take this…"

Slapping the table, Lu Haikong forcefully stated, "When I say take it, you take it. You're my son, it doesn't matter how incapable I am, I can't let you lose at the starting line.

Since you want to become a Professional Summoner, even if I have to sell everything, I will pave a path for you!

But you better know, the useless one is me, your father, not your mother. You can resent me, but if you dare give your mom any attitude, I'll break your legs!"

After saying this, Lu Haikong ignored Lu Wu and continued drinking.

He vividly depicted a father full of life regrets and self-blame.

Seemingly a lightweight, it didn't take long for Lu Haikong to drink himself unconscious, collapsing on the table with a 'thud', leaving Lu Wu utterly bewildered.

In the end, Lu Wu had no choice but to reluctantly pay for the barbecue, carefully bringing Lu Haikong home.

During the journey, Lu Wu was filled with mixed emotions.

This was his first real interaction with his father, and Lu Wu instinctively felt he got to know him.

He thought his father was a somewhat unreliable, disheartened man but extremely loving towards his family and himself; he just didn't know how to express it.

Lu Wu believed that Lu Haikong's fatherly love for him, or rather for his former self, was absolutely genuine and deep!

Yes, under the moonlight, a fairy-like presence thought so too.

# Chapter 21: 021 Little Skeleton's Training Manual 3.0

The relationship between Lu Wu and his family greatly improved after the day Lu Haikong got drunk.

From that day on, Lu Wu formally and genuinely began trying to accept this family, truly seeing himself as a part of it.

However, despite this, Lu Wu did not accept the two cards that Lu Haikong took out that day.

Uh, or rather, he didn't take both of them.

The one worth 500,000 yuan, Lu Wu handed back to Li Ruyu in person.

Even though Lu Wu really wanted that 500,000, he still couldn't get past his inner hurdle.

Besides, Lu Wu also knew it hadn't been easy for his dad. Lu Wu couldn't touch the money that his dad had worked so hard to save up, which was meant for buying a house.

But Lu Wu did accept the more than ten thousand yuan of private money.

There was no choice, after all, Lu Haikong ate more than 500 yuan worth of barbecue at his place. If Lu Wu didn't take this money, Little Skeleton's advanced training rhythm would be disrupted, so he reluctantly took the private money.

Of course, Lu Wu was not the type to take that money without saying anything.

When he returned the 500,000 yuan, he very solemnly explained the situation to Li Ruyu.

When Li Ruyu heard that Lu Wu had taken more than ten thousand yuan of Lu Haikong's private money, her expression was a bit unnatural. Of course, compared to the expression of Lu Haikong, who happened to pass by and hear the matter, Li Ruyu's face seemed quite natural.

At the time, Lu Wu was in a hurry to go to work and didn't notice these things. After explaining and getting Li Ruyu's consent, he went to work.

That night, when he got home from work, he found his keyboard had been replaced with a new one.

He told Li Ruyu then that there was no need to replace it, his old one was still quite good.

For some reason, when Lu Wu said this, his dad's gaze became fiercer, like a hungry wolf.

But after being stepped on by Li Ruyu, he immediately turned into an Er Ha.

Lu Wu especially loved this kind of interaction between his parents; it felt particularly full of love.

It must be said that although Lu Haikong was not very reliable, he seemed to have a special charm.

Since he returned home, the whole house was filled with a warm atmosphere that Lu Wu particularly liked.

Of course, what Lu Wu liked even more, what made him happiest, was his dad's more than ten thousand yuan of private money.

With this private money, Lu Wu's financial situation suddenly improved significantly.

At least, he no longer needed to worry about the materials for "Little Skeleton's Training Manual 2.0," and he didn't need to find part-time jobs anymore.

This way, Lu Wu could use his evening time better.

Coming from an ordinary family, Lu Wu wanted to use the summer to help Little Skeleton catch up with others' paces. He could only rely on his own efforts.

Now, there were not many directions Lu Wu could focus his efforts on.

Although his senior already brought him the key textbooks from the special class.

Lu Wu now had some methods to train Little Skeleton's mastered skills, but due to Little Skeleton's quality, these methods were temporarily unusable for Lu Wu.

No choice, this little guy was too fragile. If Lu Wu trained it according to those methods, it would fall apart in no time.

So, as long as Little Skeleton's quality improved, Lu Wu had two directions to work on.

One was accumulating knowledge about Summoned Beast Cultivation, and the other was enhancing the intimacy with Little Skeleton.

For the former, Lu Wu focused on two aspects, one was doing practice questions in the shop, and the other was reading books at the library.

Yes, going to the library to read!

Although Lu Wu couldn't go to the school library, there was no way Quan City only had one library.

Without having to worry about money, Lu Wu could go to Quan City Library to read books in the evening.

Speaking of which, Lu Wu went with Pang Duddu.

But Lu Wu seriously doubted that after spending half a month going to the library with him, this girl hadn't really read even one book.

She spent her time either secretly watching him or playing with the pigs and sleeping.

Seeing the carefree and unmotivated Pang Duddu, Lu Wu could only shake his head.

Of course, shaking his head was just shaking his head.

Sometimes Lu Wu was especially envious of Pang Duddu's good luck.

Pang Duddu had someone like him as a childhood friend, so even if she was carefree and unmotivated, he could still pull her up.

Lu Wu did not have such good fortune.

Without a miraculous childhood friend and unwilling to rely on his plain looks to get by, he could only work hard to make a breakthrough and then bring that girl along to fly together.

What made Lu Wu most jealous was not Pang Duddu having him as a childhood friend.

What made Lu Wu most envious was how easily Pang Duddu nurtured the intimacy with her pig daughter.

Look at how effortlessly their intimacy grew.

Eating, drinking, and sleeping, their intimacy naturally increased. In almost a month, the skill awakening of Pang Duddu's pig was close to one hundred percent.

In contrast, on Lu Wu's side.

He spent the entire summer month trying every method to nurture intimacy with Little Skeleton.

But it seemed to have no effect.

In desperation, he even tried a method he had been unwilling to try before.

After a whole night, Lu Wu successfully ended up with dark circles under his eyes, while Little Skeleton? It remained its dull and emotionless self.

Lu Wu was so angry!

He nearly dismantled the skeleton on the spot.

However, although Lu Wu hadn't made any progress in nurturing intimacy, his summer month hadn't been wasted.

The current Little Skeleton had successfully undergone four rounds of Bone Boiling.

After four rounds, costing Lu Wu 5200 yuan, Little Skeleton had indeed changed compared to a month ago.

It grew ten centimeters taller, now nearly one meter fifty.

Its overall quality also saw significant improvements. In terms of speed and strength, it was almost catching up to Lu Wu. Now, only one more Bone Boiling was needed for Little Skeleton's quality to make a significant leap.

But for Little Skeleton's fifth Bone Boiling, Lu Wu did not plan to use the "Little Skeleton's Training Manual 2.0" version.

Over the past month, thanks to all the reading and practice questions, Lu Wu's knowledge had greatly increased.

And this improvement directly reflected in the enhancement plan for Little Skeleton.

Now Lu Wu had upgraded the "Little Skeleton's Training Manual 2.0" to a new version, 3.0.

This version was more effective than 2.0 and more suitable for Little Skeleton, which had undergone four rounds of Bone Boiling.

Lu Wu was very confident that as long as he used the 3.0 version for the fifth Bone Boiling, Little Skeleton's quality would definitely reach a new level, perhaps even reaching the Black Iron level.

The only issue was that the 3.0 version was more costly than the 2.0 version, and initial estimates showed Lu Wu would need at least 50,000 yuan for this Bone Boiling.

But no problem, Lu Wu had already found a fool to cover this expense for him.

# Chapter 22: 022 Major Sucker (Ask for a recommendation ticket)

Lu Wu, this so-called sucker could be counted on his fingers.

Only a few people were willing to spend money on Lu Wu.

His dad and mom, and Pang Duddu.

But Lu Wu didn't want to take money from the former. As for the latter, well, even if he sold everything Pang Duddu had, it wouldn't amount to fifty thousand.

So, they weren't the suckers Lu Wu had chosen.

The one Lu Wu picked, was his boss, Li Kai!

Actually, to trace it back, he had chosen this sucker from the first moment he saw him.

Lu Wu once wanted to rely on his dazzling talent to blind Li Kai, and make this sucker willingly come to pay him 'stupid tax' and support him.

But later, Lu Wu woke up.

Just showing off his talent like a peacock spreading its tail was useless. Others wouldn't be interested, so Lu Wu's impetuous heart settled down.

But just because his heart settled didn't mean he wasn't scheming about Li Kai.

After all, he still craved Li Kai—first for his knowledge as a Summon Beast Cultivator, and later for the resources he controlled.

So he never intended to let Li Kai off; he just adjusted his approach and changed his strategy.

He spent a whole month gathering information and preparing, and finally, a month after joining, he was ready to launch his formal attack on Li Kai.

His goal this time wasn't just to make Li Kai a sucker to pay this fee.

Or rather, that wasn't Lu Wu's main objective. He didn't care much about the fifty thousand.

Although he couldn't come up with even ten thousand now, in Lu Wu's eyes, tens of thousands were not a big deal.

What he valued was the circle of Summon Beast Cultivators behind Li Kai. Over the past month, Lu Wu discovered this was a relatively closed circle. If you weren't a Summon Beast Cultivator, you couldn't get in, and it was hard to obtain the core knowledge.

So, Lu Wu decided to gamble, to gain entry into this circle.

If he failed, at worst, he'd just lose this job.

After weighing the pros and cons, Lu Wu decided to take the gamble!

July 29th, Quan City, Li Kai's Summoner's Supplies Shop.

On this day, Lu Wu, as usual, arrived early for work.

As usual, he opened the shop, cleaned, organized the goods, and then started busying himself with some item.

The difference was, usually when Lu Wu started working, he wouldn't stop until it was time to clock out. But today he stopped around ten-thirty.

After a month of working, Lu Wu was quite familiar with his boss's routine and knew he should be up by now.

So Lu Wu put down what he was working on and knocked on the door deep inside the shop.

In no time, the door opened, and Li Kai poked his head out, glanced at the empty shop, and then turned his questioning gaze to Lu Wu.

Lu Wu took a deep breath and began his high-stakes gamble: "There's something I'd like to discuss with you, boss."

Li Kai was taken aback. He sensed something unusual about Lu Wu and had a vague feeling that trouble was coming, but still asked, "What is it?"

At the start of the gamble, Lu Wu was a bit nervous, but after speaking, his mind calmed, and he plainly stated his request.

"I'd like to borrow your studio, and, um, some materials."

Lu Wu's request rendered Li Kai silent.

After a month of working together, Lu Wu had come to know Li Kai somewhat. Similarly, Li Kai also had an understanding of Lu Wu.

He knew Lu Wu was always striving to become a Summon Beast Cultivator and that Lu Wu had set his sights on him long ago.

He also knew that Lu Wu's request now was a signal for a formal attack.

As for Lu Wu, Li Kai somewhat approved of him.

Or rather, he appreciated Lu Wu's diligence, but that didn't mean he would take Lu Wu under his wing and lead him into the Summon Beast Cultivators' circle.

On the one hand, Li Kai knew better than anyone that effort was the cheapest thing on the path of a Summon Beast Cultivator.

On the other hand, Li Kai simply didn't have the time or energy to train and guide Lu Wu. After all, he hadn't even managed to gain entry himself!

So, after a moment of silence, Li Kai made a decision.

"I know what you want to do, give it up. I…"

Li Kai started to refuse but was interrupted by Lu Wu.

"If I'm not mistaken, you've been busy this past month trying to advance that Summoned Beast in your studio, right?

No offense, but you've been going about it the wrong way! Your experiment can't possibly succeed!"

Lu Wu's blunt words were shocking, but Li Kai remained expressionless.

Over the past month.

Lu Wu had to clean the studio daily, so it was no surprise to Li Kai that Lu Wu figured out what he was up to.

Lu Wu knew that alone wouldn't shake Li Kai, so he pressed on.

"The Summoned Beast in your studio is called Rope Firefly Grass, a plant-type Summoned Beast, light 1 star, and ordinary quality.

Over the past month, you've conducted three experiments to try to advance it.

Each time, you used a slightly different main material.

You used 'Ancient Wood Vine Juice,' 'Peach Wood Tree Heart,' and 'stinky monkey essence blood,' but all three experiments failed. Am I right?"

This shook Li Kai.

It wasn't surprising that Lu Wu guessed what he was experimenting with since Lu Wu cleaned the studio daily.

But being able to name the three main materials he used was startling.

By the time Lu Wu was cleaning, those materials were mostly reduced to dregs, making it hard to identify them, especially the main ingredients, unless Lu Wu was secretly watching the experiments.

Thinking this, Li Kai's gaze turned dangerous.

"Don't look at me like that. It was easy to deduce.

You took the materials from the shop each time. I have a list of materials here. Analyzing the primary ingredients with the list wasn't difficult."

Li Kai was stunned by this, having forgotten about the list. If that were the case, Lu Wu's deduction wasn't that impressive… No, wait!

"Each of my lists had a different amount of materials, and the ingredients were numerous. You adjusted the supplementary materials every time you changed the main ingredient, so how did you determine the three primary ingredients?"

Li Kai's question made Lu Wu smile.

Finally, Li Kai had asked the key question, and Lu Wu could flaunt his skill.

Having waited so long for this moment, Lu Wu didn't hesitate and handed a notebook to Li Kai.

...

Thanks to [Book Friend 20170712203851813], [I'm the strongest at staying up late and driving], [living without heart and lungs], [Chang Xiaotu], and [Han Han Tai Er] for the support!

Also, I am, after all, a macho man, so stop saying I'm short all the time (macho man crying)!

# Chapter 23: 023 Monotonous

When Lu Wu handed over the notebook, Li Kai was stunned for a moment. After hesitating for a bit, he still took it and began to read.

As soon as he saw it, Li Kai's eyes narrowed instantly, and he stood up straight.

It was clear that he took it seriously, putting all his heart and soul into the notebook Lu Wu handed over.

Meanwhile, Lu Wu looked at Li Kai, who had quickly become engrossed. On his face was a mix of three parts boredom, three parts loneliness, and ninety-four parts helplessness.

To be honest, when Lu Wu first saw Li Kai, he was truly amazed.

He thought he had encountered a hidden master, which made Lu Wu eager to showcase his talent to attract the master's attention.

But as he continued to show off, Lu Wu realized something was off.

This master didn't seem as formidable as he had imagined, especially in the field of Summoned Beast cultivation, where they seemed to be on par.

When he first realized this, Lu Wu genuinely thought he had become overconfident, daring to compare himself to a master.

What rank could a master be? How could someone as ordinary as him surpass them just by reading a few books?

So Lu Wu buckled down and worked hard again. After this phase of effort, he looked at the master again and clearly understood he was wrong. Their levels were not comparable at all. He was far superior.

At least in the advanced plan for the Rope Firefly Grass, Lu Wu was leaps and bounds ahead!

At that moment, Lu Wu recalled that despite being ordinary, he indeed had a Golden Finger.

With his photographic memory and Golden Finger, he could create "Little Skeleton's Training Manual 2.0" in less than a week of effort.

Not to mention that he had been working hard for over a month now, madly solving problems during the day and reading books at night.

Currently, Lu Wu not only had a solid knowledge base, but with the Golden Finger, he could confidently say that he had surpassed Li Kai in Summoned Beast cultivation.

This was awkward!

He had initially thought of earning Li Kai's recognition through hard work and becoming his disciple.

Then he turned around and realized he could already teach Li Kai. This made Lu Wu feel particularly helpless.

Lu Wu had to change his original goal.

From striving to become Li Kai's disciple to trying to make Li Kai his willing victim.

There was no choice; the daily life of an ordinary person with cheats was just that dull and uninteresting.

Li Kai, on the other hand, had no idea what path Lu Wu had traveled in the past month or what changes had occurred in his heart.

At this moment, he was completely immersed in the notebook Lu Wu handed over.

The notebook Lu Wu handed over was actually a hypothesis focused on his experiment.

Starting with the material list, Lu Wu used the material residue from the cleaning process and changes in the Rope Firefly Grass's attribute as entry points, gradually deducing Li Kai's method from the results.

This was something extremely inconceivable, almost impossible, but Lu Wu did it.

Moreover, his deductions were well-founded, and his various whimsical ideas left Li Kai astonished, often making him exclaim, "This works, too?"

After thoroughly reading Lu Wu's notebook, the way Li Kai looked at Lu Wu changed again.

Previously, he dared to think of Lu Wu as a young man who admired him. Now, he no longer dared to hold such a conceited thought.

Just from this notebook, Li Kai could see that Lu Wu's level in Summoned Beast cultivation was far above his own.

Realizing this, Li Kai's gaze became complicated.

Especially when he saw Lu Wu's plain face, Li Kai couldn't help but feel four parts jealousy, four parts sorrow, and ninety-two parts envy.

At the same time, he confirmed even more that the profession of Summon Beast Cultivator indeed depended on talent.

People like him, who lacked much talent, couldn't match up to the effort of a few months from a genius like Lu Wu, even after years and years of hard work.

Fortunately, Li Kai had encountered such talents before, and quite a few.

After being hit many times, Li Kai's heart had become stronger.

Quickly, Li Kai dispelled the negative emotions, gripped the notebook tightly, and looked at Lu Wu with intense, eager eyes, asking the question he most anticipated: "Can you help me solve the advanced problem of the Rope Firefly Grass?"

Hearing this question from Li Kai, Lu Wu's heart, which had been hanging in suspense, completely relaxed, and he nodded heavily.

With Lu Wu's nod, Li Kai formally underwent an identity transformation.

From the master Lu Wu first thought he was, from the boss who paid Lu Wu, he transformed into Lu Wu's willing victim.

And Li Kai knew it, too.

Although Li Kai had little talent on the road of a Summon Beast Cultivator, with over a decade of effort still not making him a Professional Summoner Cultivator, and although his character was somewhat reclusive, it didn't mean he was oblivious to human nature.

Understanding this made the following matter simple, nothing more than the mutually beneficial PY deal.

"What do you want?"

"I want to learn about the Summon Beast Cultivator's circle, borrow your books to read, and use your workshop and some materials."

Both of them were straightforward.

They quickly discussed the price and came to an agreement in one go!

Lu Wu handed over a list.

On this list were records of more than a dozen materials.

Li Kai glanced at it, roughly estimated its value, thought for a bit, and then agreed.

His straightforwardness was almost excessive, catching Lu Wu off guard.

Lu Wu hadn't expected Li Kai to agree so readily. He had thought Li Kai would hesitate, and he even prepared additional bargaining chips, but they weren't needed.

With Li Kai's nod, Lu Wu and his willing victim—oh no, his boss's deal officially began.

Lu Wu then brought out the advanced plan for the Rope Firefly Grass, which he had prepared long ago.

Yes, it was another notebook. Li Kai eagerly took it and started reading.

As soon as he looked, he became absorbed in it again.

What Lu Wu gave him wasn't just a record of the advanced plan.

The notebook followed on from the previous one he had given Li Kai, documenting Lu Wu's full reasoning process after deducing Li Kai's method and main materials.

It detailed why the plan failed, how to modify it, and finally how Lu Wu derived a new advanced plan for the Rope Firefly Grass from it.

In essence, Lu Wu not only provided the method to Li Kai but also openly displayed the thought process behind it.

Reading through this notebook made Li Kai's outlook on Lu Wu change once more, and Lu Wu immediately understood the look in his eyes—this guy was now coveting his skills, just as Lu Wu had wanted to with Li Kai at first sight…

# Chapter 24: 024 Professional Summon Beast Cultivator Assessment

A month hadn't even passed.

Originally, it was Lu Wu coveting others, but now others had started coveting Lu Wu.

This made Lu Wu feel that a life on cheat mode was just this dull, and he even started to feel a bit inflated.

Fortunately, this dull and inflated mindset didn't last long.

As his dealings with Li Kai began, and as he further understood Li Kai and the circle of Summon Beast Cultivators, this dullness gradually disappeared.

It had to be said, Li Kai was really disappointing.

When Lu Wu first met him, he thought Li Kai had to be a big shot, maybe one of the top Summon Beast Cultivators in the Alliance.

After all, that's how the plot always goes, doesn't it? Any protagonist on cheat mode always meets a big shot.

However, after a while, Lu Wu realized that Li Kai was just an average Summon Beast Cultivator. His skill level really didn't look like that of a big shot.

Just now, after Li Kai completely came clean with him, Lu Wu finally realized that Li Kai was actually just a newbie who hadn't even passed the professional exam.

Lu Wu had hoped to enter the circle of Summon Beast Cultivators through Li Kai, but it turned out that Li Kai himself wasn't even in that circle.

This made Lu Wu very upset!

The sense of accomplishment he felt from conquering Li Kai poured out like a flood.

However, Lu Wu wasn't left empty-handed in his dealings with Li Kai.

At least through Li Kai, Lu Wu learned some information about the Summon Beast Cultivator profession.

The most crucial point was that Lu Wu learned of the existence of the Professional Summon Beast Cultivator exam.

He also learned that if high school students passed the Professional Summoner exam, they could possibly gain direct admission to one of the top Summoner Universities.

When Lu Wu heard this, his eyes immediately lit up.

For him, this was a shortcut, or rather, a kind of backup plan.

Although as someone on cheat mode, Lu Wu had quite a bit of confidence in his ability to get into Summoner University, there was always the fear of unforeseen circumstances.

After a month had passed, Lu Wu had a clearer understanding of Summoner University.

He knew very well that Summoner University had different levels of prestige.

For example, someone like Senior Snowman, who ranked 27th in the city competition, could at best get into the least prestigious Summoner University.

As someone on cheat mode, Lu Wu's goal was naturally set higher.

So when Lu Wu learned about the Professional Summoner exam, he decided that he would aim to ace both the Professional Summoner exam and the high school league!

When Lu Wu made this decision, his eyes were sparkling with determination. Li Kai, who was standing nearby, noticed this and quickly approached him.

He, Li Kai, had five years of experience taking the exam, though he had failed each time. Despite this, he offered his wealth of experience with one implied message.

"I, Li Kai, seek to be carried!"

Regarding this, Lu Wu was initially reluctant.

Just because you want me to carry you doesn't mean I will! After all, when he first coveted Li Kai, he didn't directly pounce on him.

But when Li Kai pulled out the books he had collected and the exam questions he had prepared over five years, and even offered to raise Lu Wu's monthly salary to 50,000 yuan, allowing him to freely use the materials in his shop, Lu Wu found the offer hard to refuse.

Then, just like that, Lu Wu and Li Kai's deal took an odd turn.

Originally, Lu Wu planned to hug Li Kai's thigh to step into the circle of Summon Beast Cultivators, but in the end, it was he who brought Li Kai into the circle.

This change left Lu Wu both helpless and slightly inflated, feeling like he was on the verge of taking off.

Speaking of taking off, Lu Wu remembered he still hadn't started his real task; his Little Skeleton hadn't advanced yet.

How could he talk about taking off when Little Skeleton hadn't even advanced?

Lu Wu quickly got to work, borrowed Li Kai's workshop, asked for materials, and then dove into the workshop to busy himself.

Lu Wu didn't plan to have Little Skeleton advance at Li Kai's place. He borrowed the workshop just to process some materials.

Compared to version 2.0, the materials used in "Little Skeleton's Training Manual 3.0" were more extensive.

Besides cow bone and cow blood, Lu Wu also added White Bone Grass and Dried Bone Root, which needed pre-processing that Lu Wu couldn't do at home.

After spending some time processing the materials, Lu Wu called Pang Duddu to help with the delivery.

Shortly after he called, Pang Duddu arrived on a pink electric scooter.

Lu Wu looked at Pang Duddu, then at the scooter, then at Little Skeleton and the stuff behind him, and he felt a bit exasperated.

"Are you sure this thing can carry all that?"

Pang Duddu looked at it too, then lowered her head and didn't dare speak.

In the end, it was Li Kai, eager to curry favor, who drove over and helped transport Lu Wu, Little Skeleton, and the materials back home.

After sending Lu Wu home, Li Kai felt a bit expectant, hoping that Lu Wu would invite him to stay.

He knew well that Lu Wu was preparing those things to advance his Little Skeleton.

Li Kai had no resistance to such events and really wanted to stay and watch, but unfortunately, Lu Wu didn't keep him; instead, he kept Pang Duddu, who had followed behind.

It wasn't to guard against Li Kai; it was just that his room was too small to fit many people.

After sending Li Kai off, Lu Wu got busy.

The procedure was basically the same as version 2.0, putting bone powder and the pre-prepared seasoning, oh no, materials packet into the pot and boiling it, then pouring the broth into a bucket and finally adding Little Skeleton and cow blood together.

Next, Lu Wu just needed to wait.

But Pang Duddu's family's pig was quite troublesome.

After smelling the broth, it kept drooling and wanted to jump in, so Lu Wu had to take Pang Duddu outside to get peace.

Once outside, Lu Haikong, who was playing with his daughter in the living room, immediately came over to shower Pang Duddu with concern.

"Come, come, sit down and rest. Helping this brat stew the broth must have tired you out.

You look thinner; later, I'll have Aunt Li make your favorite sweet and sour ribs!"

Lu Haikong smiled at Pang Duddu with fatherly affection, but when he turned to Lu Wu, who had been working hard all day and was dripping with sweat, his tone switched to that of a strict stepfather: "You unfilial son, what are you still sitting there for? Go get Duddu a glass of water!"

......

Thanks to Book Friend 20181203203625633, Xu Xuan, Little Luobo, and Book Friend 20200426154230018 for their support!

# Chapter 25: 025 Quality Enhancement

Lu Wu had no idea what was happening.

Pang Duddu was unexpectedly way more popular in his house than he was.

Let's not even talk about Lu Haikong, who could transform from a loving father to a harsh one in the blink of an eye when comparing between him and Pang Duddu.

Even Lu Wu's sister, Lu Ni, especially liked Pang Duddu.

He didn't know if it was because Pang Duddu had more flesh and was more comfortable to hug or what, but every time Pang Duddu came over, this girl would betray him, constantly trying to snuggle into her arms.

Even Li Ruyu particularly pampered Pang Duddu; every time she came over, Li Ruyu would prepare a table full of delicious food for her and try to coax her into eating.

Saying things like, "You're too skinny," "It's good to be chubby," and "Being able to eat is a blessing," such shameless words made Lu Wu suspect that this girl was chubby because she was fed by his mom.

In short, whenever this girl came over, Lu Wu's status would plummet straight down, and he could only squat by the side and serve as a tea-pouring tool for Pang Duddu.

You could say that fate had finally taken a temporary turn.

Of course, Lu Wu had gotten used to this situation. After all, whether it was in his previous memories or the past month since he crossed over, this girl had been coming over frequently,

So Lu Wu adapted very well, and after pouring tea for Pang Duddu, he conveniently helped Pang Duddu carry her family's pig over.

One reason was to make it more convenient for Pang Duddu to cuddle his sister, another was to start preparing to elevate Pang Duddu.

Lu Wu did have a bit of conscience!

It was agreed that he would elevate before flying, and now that Little Skeleton had started advancing, it was about time for him to put this pig on the schedule as well.

Hugging the pig, Lu Wu found a place to start his research.

...

Name: Mini Pig

Power: 0 stars

Quality: Ordinary (upgradable)

Attribute: No Attribute Bias

State: Healthy (Lazy)

Skill: Awakening (97%)

Weakness: No obvious weakness

Description: Give up. Besides eating, it's not interested in anything.

...

Looking at the pig's attributes, Lu Wu fell into deep thought.

His Golden Finger was limited; the quality improvement plan had to be tried before it could appear on the attribute panel, just like the "Little Skeleton's Training Manual" previously.

Or like the Rope Firefly Grass with Li Kai; Li Kai used it, and he could directly deduce it and then it could appear on the attribute panel.

And for Mini Pig, which hadn't used any improvement plans, even if Lu Wu had rough ideas in his mind, the plan couldn't possibly appear on the attribute panel.

This meant that Lu Wu needed to experiment with this pig before he could improve it.

This was particularly inconvenient!

But this wasn't a major issue.

Lu Wu already had a fairly complete set of plans in his mind. He now just needed to simplify this plan to the most basic form and then try it out a bit to make it appear on the attribute panel, after which he could modify the plan that appeared on the panel.

"But although there is a plan, I really don't have much confidence in getting this pig ready.

After all, a Summon Beast Cultivator isn't a deity. If this pig really couldn't make it, I wouldn't be able to turn stones into gold either!

Besides, even if it could be done, the money spent would be exorbitant. Mm, luckily there's a sucker!"

Muttering a few words, Lu Wu began to get busy. He pinned the pig on his legs as a table, took out pen and paper, and started to sketch and write out the plan for cultivating the pig.

This was no easy task. The simplified plan had to be somewhat effective for the pig but also couldn't have side effects. This was a great test for Lu Wu, and the system couldn't help him in this aspect, so Lu Wu had to carefully deliberate repeatedly by himself.

Therefore, Lu Wu busied himself for an hour or two and didn't stop even when it was almost mealtime.

"What are you doing? It's time to eat!"

Lu Haikong never missed a chance to repay Lu Wu, the ungrateful brat, for stealing his private stash and tattling on him. He came over and slapped Lu Wu on the head, grabbing the notebook that Lu Wu had been working on for an hour or two.

At one look, Lu Haikong's eyebrows shot up: "Brat! Are you planning to extend your evil clutches towards Dudu, using their Tuantuan as a guinea pig?

No way, I absolutely won't allow you to do this. With your half-baked skills, experimenting with Little Skeleton is one thing, but if you mess with Tuantuan and something happens to it, I'll break your legs!"

Lu Wu held his head, looking at Lu Haikong.

He doubted that the old man already knew he was pretending.

Listening to what he said, Lu Wu suspected that in the old man's eyes, his status was lower than that of a pig.

Lu Wu didn't bother to explain anything to him, there was no point; even if he claimed to be awesome, the old man wouldn't believe him. He'd wait a bit until Little Skeleton advanced, then he would use Little Skeleton's quality to smack the old man's face.

But Lu Haikong didn't insist too much; slapping him once for fun was enough.

However, while eating, he kept reminding Pang Duddu to be wary of Lu Wu, not let him trick her into selling herself, and not give the pig to Lu Wu.

To this, Lu Wu only rolled his eyes internally and said nothing more.

There wasn't much to say anyway. Regarding Pang Duddu, Lu Wu was very confident; even if the old man talked himself hoarse, it would be useless. If Lu Wu wanted to sell her, he'd just say the word.

Plus, Lu Wu was quite confident that even if he sold the girl, she would help Lu Wu count the money, afraid of others shortchanging him.

Lu Haikong obviously sensed this and so he turned the verbal attack, began saying various bad things about Lu Wu, attempting to damage his image.

Lu Wu didn't care at all, remained unfazed, but Pang Duddu got anxious.

She constantly wanted to defend Lu Wu but couldn't get a word in edgewise and didn't dare to talk back loudly to Lu Haikong. In the end, she was so anxious that her face turned red, and she couldn't even eat properly, taking ten minutes to finish two big bowls of rice.

Li Ruyu, feeling distressed, immediately kicked Lu Haikong under the table, which made the old man quiet down. This meal could finally be eaten in peace.

After eating, Lu Wu was about to go back to continue working on the unfinished plan, but just as he stood up, he suddenly felt a cool sensation flowing up from his head.

At that moment, Lu Wu's head buzzed, and by the time he recaptured his senses, he found that his vision had suddenly become clearer.

However, he quickly realized that this clarity was an illusion caused by a sudden increase in spiritual power; this illusion would soon fade. The important point was that its appearance meant that their Little Skeleton should have completed its quality improvement!

Realizing this, Lu Wu rushed to his room…

# Chapter 26: 026 Black Iron (Pseudo)

Lu Wu's sudden dash toward his room caught Lu Haikong's attention.

"Could it be that this kid really managed to enhance that Little Skeleton's quality?"

Lu Haikong was skeptical yet particularly curious, so he followed.

Piggy from Pang Duddu's family had been eyeing the soup Lu Wu had been boiling for a while. The moment Lu Wu opened the door, the pig darted inside. It was hard to imagine that such short legs on a round pig could muster such astonishing speed in an instant.

Seeing his pig rush in, Pang Duddu quickly followed.

Seeing her son, husband, and Pang Duddu all rush in, Li Ruyu hesitated for a moment but then followed. Even the little girl with short legs walked in with a "tap-tap."

In an instant, Lu Wu's ten-square-meter room was packed to the brim.

At the room's center was the pot with the Little Skeleton. The cover on the Little Skeleton's head had already been lifted, and Lu Wu and the others could roughly see its current appearance.

After all, having advanced in quality, the Little Skeleton had undergone some changes in appearance.

Its frame had grown quite a bit taller, from 1.5 meters to almost 1.6 meters.

The color of its bones had also changed.

Originally pale and seemingly brittle, they now appeared much darker, giving a sense of weight.

For Lu Wu, the most noticeable change was in the Little Skeleton's pupil fire.

Lu Wu could feel that the pupil fire was much brighter and more lively than before, giving the impression that it had become smarter.

This made Lu Wu very satisfied.

The 50,000 yuan he'd extorted from Li Kai hadn't been wasted, at least visibly. He wondered about the changes in its attributes.

To further confirm the Little Skeleton's improvement, Lu Wu went hands-on.

As Lu Wu reached out, someone else did too.

Actually, it was both a person and a pig.

The pig, of course, belonged to Pang Duddu. It had been craving that soup, seizing the opportunity to get into the pot for a drink.

But once inside, it realized there was only about one-third of the soup left.

Even so, it couldn't drink the remaining bits as it jumped in and collided with the Little Skeleton, which then held it.

With no soup left, the pig hugged the Little Skeleton's bones, slurping whatever soup residue remained.

The other person reaching out was Lu Wu's father, Lu Haikong.

Lu Wu's touch was gentle, caressing the Little Skeleton's head as if it were a delicate ceramic. In contrast, Lu Haikong knocked on it like testing watermelons with his knuckles.

"Weird, you really managed to do it. This little guy's quality did improve! Impossible! Not scientific!

Brat, did you cheat?"

Lu Haikong knocked on the Little Skeleton with a face full of suspicion. Lu Wu ignored him and looked to Li Ruyu for help.

Soon, Li Ruyu grabbed Lu Haikong by the ear and dragged him out of the room. She also took Lu Ni, who was there causing trouble, and didn't forget to close the door, leaving Lu Wu and Pang Duddu inside.

Lu Wu felt speechless, wondering what his parents were thinking. Did they want something to happen between him and Pang Duddu?

Lu Wu wasn't in the mood for that. He picked up the pig from the Little Skeleton's bones and handed it to Pang Duddu, then shooed Pang Duddu out as well.

Once everyone was out, Lu Wu finally had some peace and time to study the enhanced Little Skeleton.

Touching it, the kid's attributes came out.

...

Name: Little Skeleton

Power: 0-stars (Ordinary)

Quality: Black Iron (Inferior) (Enhanced)

Attribute: Undead

State: Energetic but a bit dazed, might need a reboot. Try tapping its head to restart it.

Skill: (Training plans - 3)

Weakness: Light, Fire, Thunder

Description: Its quality has improved somewhat, not as dumb as before. Basic qualities are a bit better, though it's still a weakling.

...

After looking at the Little Skeleton's attributes, Lu Wu felt so-so.

He wasn't overly excited but not too disappointed either because the results were about what he expected, without any surprises.

First, the quality improvement meant the previous plans had all disappeared.

This implied the old plans were now ineffective for the current Little Skeleton, and he couldn't continue using them to enhance its quality.

Next was the skill aspect.

Lu Wu had some hope here.

He was looking forward to the Little Skeleton awakening a few skills with the quality boost, but there were none, leaving him quite disappointed.

"Indeed, having too many expectations is no good. If they fall through, it feels awful."

It took Lu Wu some time to adjust his mindset.

Then he began pondering over the Little Skeleton.

"With the quality enhancement done and half the summer vacation passed, my first small goal is complete. The first half of my summer plans is almost over. It's time to draft new plans for the next stage in this environment."

"My initial summer plan was clear.

The first phase was to enhance the Little Skeleton's quality, followed by strengthening it to compete for top-class selection in the new academic year.

But an unexpected situation arose regarding the summoner beast cultivation master's assessment."

"I now hesitate whether to focus on the summoner beast cultivator exam. Given my apparent advantage, surpassing Li Kai in a month, passing it would be no problem, and becoming a cultivator is less stressful than the high school league."

"The issue is, if I focus on the summoner beast cultivator exam, it will be hard to ensure the Little Skeleton reaches top-class level during this summer.

Achieving both goals might be tough.

Even though passing the cultivator exam makes top-class less critical, what about that girl?"

"I need to carry her along!

If I pass the professional summoner exam and go to Summoner University, who will carry her?"

Muttering this, Lu Wu hesitated but soon decided with unusual conscience, settling on the next-phase summer plan.

Anyway, the professional summoner cultivator exam is next year, still time, no rush. This summer, I'll focus on training the Little Skeleton and helping Pang Duddu!

With that, Lu Wu spent several hours drafting a comprehensive plan.

Just as Lu Wu finished, his phone suddenly rang. When he answered, Pang Duddu's tearful, panic-stricken voice came through: "Lu Wu, come quick..."

# Chapter 27: 027 The Pig That Cheats

It was late at night, around eleven or twelve o'clock, when Pang Duddu, who had just gotten home not long ago, suddenly called.

She still had a sobbing tone, which startled Lu Wu.

He knew that Pang Duddu's parents were on a business trip these past few days, leaving her alone at home. Could it be that someone had gone crazy enough to harm her?

Lu Wu hurriedly asked her what was going on.

But after asking for a while, Lu Wu couldn't get any clear information.

He could only tell that the girl was very panicked, very confused, and very scared.

Lu Wu didn't have time to think about it; he grabbed his advanced Little Skeleton and rushed over to Pang Duddu's place.

Fortunately, his home was in the same community as Pang Duddu's, so it didn't take him long to get there. Within a few minutes, he arrived at Pang Duddu's place.

Lu Wu had a key to Pang Duddu's house, so he didn't need her to open the door. He directly unlocked it and rushed inside.

Once inside, Lu Wu's heart calmed down quite a bit.

The house was tidy, not looking like it had been broken into. He didn't see Pang Duddu in the living room but heard noises coming from her room, quite loud. Lu Wu's eyes narrowed, and he gave Little Skeleton a look.

Uh, it didn't understand.

Lu Wu was exasperated and had to shout.

"Open the door!"

This time, Little Skeleton understood and went to open the door.

As it turned out, Lu Wu's decision was incredibly correct.

Just as the door to Pang Duddu's room was opened, a massive figure rushed out and "bang" pressed Little Skeleton underneath it.

Lu Wu heard a crisp cracking sound; it was clear. It was either bones breaking or dislocating.

And Lu Wu saw clearly that the one pressing Little Skeleton underneath was that fellow.

Lu Wu was stunned. Wasn't this Pang Duddu's pig? How had it grown so big?

The pig, originally the size of a fist, had grown nearly two meters long, with two tusks that looked quite terrifying, though it still seemed just as dumb.

The thing pushed Little Skeleton a couple of times, took a couple of bites, and, finding no delicious smell on Little Skeleton, stopped and turned its attention to Lu Wu, its small eyes filled with hunger.

Lu Wu got nervous, fearing the pig might come at him too. With his small arms and legs, if the pig came at him, he'd definitely be done for.

Fortunately, just as Lu Wu was panicking, the pig suddenly twitched and deflated as if it had been deflated, quickly shrinking from a giant two meters long and one meter high back to its original fist-sized self.

Seeing this, Lu Wu sighed in relief but still didn't dare to approach it.

"You, grab it for me."

He ordered Little Skeleton to grab the now small and confused pig. Only after Little Skeleton had it secured did Lu Wu go up and touch it. Just a touch almost made him crumble.

"How is this possible? In just a few hours, how did this pig's attributes change so much?

Did it cheat?!

...

Name: Mini Pig

Power: 0 Star

Quality: Black Iron (Enhanced) (One Tier)

Attribute: Earth

State: Healthy (Lazy)

Bonds Skill: Bonds Growth (A special bonds skill that awakens through intimacy, capable of increasing the quality and power of summoned beasts through bonds)

Common Skills: Giant (Entry-level) (Can enlarge its body; duration is related to stamina)

Earth Thorns (Entry-level) (Basic Earth Element skill)

Weakness: No obvious weakness

Description: Hmm, envious, aren't you? Jealous, aren't you? It's totally cheating!

...

The moment he saw the pig's attributes, Lu Wu felt his heart take a heavy blow.

The pride he had just felt from upgrading Little Skeleton's quality deflated instantly.

Damn it, though he did cheat, he wasn't lying down and relying on the cheat!

The effort he put into upgrading Little Skeleton's quality was known to Pang Duddu. He worked tirelessly, often not stopping until one or two in the morning!

After a month of hard work, he barely managed to upgrade Little Skeleton to the same level as this pig, without even awakening any skills, and then was instantly sat on!

Furthermore, he still needed to continue researching how to upgrade his Little Skeleton next.

But looking at Pang Duddu and her pig,

They spent this month eating and sleeping, and when not eating, they were drooling over Lu Wu. He never saw them making any effort.

In terms of effort, Lu Wu outworked them by miles, and he even had a cheat!

In the end, they did nothing but eat and sleep, yet the pig's quality still improved to the Black Iron level, without the "pseudo" part, carrying three additional skills. Its post-Black Iron upgrade was already clearly laid out.

And this wasn't the worst part for Lu Wu!

The most infuriating part was when he opened the pig's upgrade plan. Seeing it, Lu Wu felt his blood boiling.

...

Quality Upgrade Plan: Bonds Skill Enhancement.

Plan Explanation: Through the Bonds Growth skill, Mini Pig can absorb energy from its owner to enhance its quality.

In simple terms, Summoned Beast upgrades? Summoner has to eat, period!

The better and more the Summoner eats, the higher the pig's quality will be!

Ps: Don't be jealous, you can't compete with this. This is just the dull life of a European Summoner!

...

Seeing this plan explanation, Lu Wu felt a rush of blood that couldn't be stopped. He really couldn't control himself.

"Where is that girl? Where is your owner? Where is she? If I don't beat this damn European girl crying today, I'll take on her surname!"

Saying so, Lu Wu tossed the pig aside and charged into Pang Duddu's room.

As soon as he entered, he saw the quilt curled up on her bed.

No need to guess, the girl must be trembling under the covers!

Seeing this, Lu Wu got even angrier. Damn it, what's there to tremble about?

Isn't this your own cheat? What are you scared of?

"Come out, show me your face! Today, I'll make sure to slap your face swollen!"

"I told you to stop cheating, but you just wouldn't listen!"

Jealous, Lu Wu couldn't control his hands; he went up and pulled off the quilt.

When the quilt was lifted, Lu Wu was dumbfounded.

Because under the quilt was not the familiar round Pang Duddu, but a girl with a good figure wearing particularly loose pajamas, fair-skinned and holding her legs, trembling.

Seeing the figure, Lu Wu's tone immediately softened. Patting her shoulder, he asked,

"Who are you? Why are you on Dudu's bed?"

Just as Lu Wu patted the girl's shoulder, she looked up. When she saw Lu Wu with tear-filled eyes, there was a glimmer in her eyes as she grabbed Lu Wu tightly.

"Lu Wu, I'm scared. I saw a ghost!"

At that moment, Lu Wu's brain short-circuited, leaving only the stunning beauty of this girl in his mind. As for the cheating Pang Duddu? Sorry, Lu Wu had completely forgotten!

...

A new week had begun, and it was time to hit the charts again. Last week, we were knocked out of the top ten in just a couple of days. This week, I ask for your support.

Please vote and donate!

# Chapter 28: 028 The emaciated Dudu

Lu Wu spent a long time trying to connect the slender and beautiful girl in his arms with the chubby Pang Duddu.

It wasn't that Lu Wu was slow or couldn't figure it out; it was just that the transformation was too sudden and shocking.

On one hand, although he was prepared and thought Pang Duddu would be very pretty after losing weight, he didn't expect her to be this stunning!

Even more puzzling was, how long had it been?

Just a moment ago, this girl had been eating voraciously at his house, and now she had suddenly lost over a hundred pounds upon returning home. This kind of thing was hard to believe even if seen with his own eyes.

Of course, whether he believed it or not or was confused didn't matter. It was another thing entirely whether to hug her or not.

The girl jumped into his arms, and she was so pretty; why wouldn't he hug her?

Holding the girl and gently stroking her back to help her catch her breath, Lu Wu casually asked about the situation.

Only after asking did Lu Wu learn that even though Dudu had eaten five bowls of rice at his house, she still felt a bit hungry when she got home and started rummaging for something to eat.

And then something strange happened. She found a very beautiful apple on her bedside table.

At that moment, Lu Wu was puzzled: "What's so strange about finding an apple on your bedside table? Isn't that normal?"

Dudu looked at Lu Wu sheepishly: "Food never lasts more than a day on my bedside table. I ate everything yesterday and forgot to buy more today, so there's no way there would be an apple!"

Hearing this reasonable deduction, Lu Wu was a bit astonished.

He didn't expect this girl to be this smart.

"Then what happened?"

Lu Wu was especially curious about what the apple had to do with her transformation.

Dudu became even more embarrassed, scratching her head and looking down: "Then... then I just ate the apple?"

Lu Wu was speechless: "You knew the apple was strange, and you still dared to eat it?"

Dudu mumbled softly: "I was too hungry, and I thought maybe I just forgot about it..."

Lu Wu held his head: "And then what happened?"

"After eating the apple, I felt cold all over. I thought I was going to die, so I called you!"

Seeing her like this, Lu Wu would have snapped his fingers to teach her a lesson if it had been before. But since she had lost weight and looked stunning, he couldn't bring himself to do it.

Not willing to hit her, Lu Wu focused his attention on the apple.

Actually, Lu Wu found it strange right from the start. He had seen Dudu's Bonds Skill and knew it was powerful, but not to the extent of being extraordinary.

Even if this skill awakening caused Dudu to lose a hundred pounds, it shouldn't have directly boosted Tuantuan's quality to Black Iron and given it two more skills!

Although fat was valuable, it wasn't that valuable!

So, Lu Wu thought the apple Dudu ate might be the key.

"Do you have any leftover apple? Let me see it!"

"No, whatever I didn't eat seemed to be eaten by Tuantuan."

Dudu spoke very softly, feeling embarrassed and a little afraid that Lu Wu would be angry. Holding up her head, she was prepared to get hit, but Lu Wu only raised his hand but eventually just gently stroked her long hair.

Not sure if it was psychological, but Lu Wu felt her hair had become much smoother after losing weight.

"Well, since you ate it, it's not a bad thing!"

Although he said that, Lu Wu's mind started to spin, trying to guess who had brought the apple to the girl.

Her parents?

Not likely. Lu Wu knew them somewhat; they were just an ordinary couple. Although they ran a small business, their living standard was just middle-class and wouldn't be able to get such an apple.

Besides, if they'd brought the apple, they wouldn't have hidden it like this.

If it wasn't them, then who could it be?

Perhaps her other childhood friend, Lin Jianying? Lu Wu remembered that his father was a professional summoner. Despite some accidents, he still had a bit of family fortune and might be able to get such an apple.

But on second thought, Lu Wu felt it was impossible. Not to mention that Lin Jianying hadn't contacted them for over a month, with his behavior, he wouldn't share such a valuable apple after seeing Lu Wu and Pang Duddu summoning Little Skeleton and Mini Pig.

And besides, he didn't have the keys to Dudu's house!

If it wasn't Dudu's family or Lin Jianying, then who brought the apple?

Who would be willing to give her such a good thing?

After counting on his fingers for a while, Lu Wu realized that the ones who pampered her this much were probably just himself or his parents. Could it be that his parents gave the apple?

"Probably not!

If mom had something this good, she would think of me first. She even spent all the family's savings to help me.

The old man is the same way. Even though in front of him, my status seems lower than Tuantuan, this is only because he's not good at expressing his feelings. His true love is for me, so it probably wasn't them either."

Lu Wu pondered for a long time but still couldn't figure out who had given the apple.

Looking at Dudu, although this was a good thing for her, she was genuinely scared.

She had always been timid. Encountering a mysteriously appearing apple that caused her to lose 100 pounds and made her pig grow to two meters after eating it, her first reaction wasn't delight but fear.

She didn't think that such a good thing could suddenly happen to her, so she was still scared, hugging Lu Wu and asking in a low voice: "Lu Wu, did I eat a demon fruit? Have I lost so much weight because I'm dying? I'm feeling dizzy!"

Given the situation, Lu Wu had no choice but to comfort her first.

"Don't worry too much; it probably wasn't the apple but your pig's issue.

Your pig awakened a bonds skill, which can enhance its quality and strength by absorbing the accumulated energy in your body. That's why your weight disappeared!

As for the apple, you probably left it last night, or Tuantuan might have sneaked it in."

Lu Wu did his best to comfort Dudu, but she was still a bit panicked and scared.

To calm her down, Lu Wu eventually suggested she stay at his place for a few days.

His suggestion quickly quenched Dudu's anxiety and fear, replacing them with nervousness.

But despite her nervousness, she finally went home with Lu Wu.

After returning home with Dudu, Lu Wu realized he had rushed out too quickly and didn't bring his keys. He had to knock on the door.

"Who is it at this late hour!"

Rubbing his eyes, Lu Haikong opened the door and almost doing a double take, seeing Lu Wu and Dudu outside. He suspected he might have opened the door wrong, so he closed and reopened it, finally confirming the scene. Lu Haikong was furious: "You ungrateful son, how dare you hook up with another girl behind Dudu's back!"

...

# Chapter 29: 029 Test

```

Lu Haikong saw Lu Wu bring the drastically thinner Dudu home and immediately a surge of anger rose from his heart!

Lu Wu already had Pang Duddu, yet he was still fooling around outside, and with someone this pretty!

And you not only fooled around, but also brought her home?

Scumbag!

Absolute scumbag!

There had never been a scumbag in the Lu family, and they certainly couldn't allow such a person to exist. So Lu Haikong grabbed a broomstick and beat Lu Wu senseless, and Dudu grew frantic.

She hurried over to protect Lu Wu.

"Uncle, please stop hitting him!"

It would've been better if Dudu hadn't tried to stop him. Her intervention only made Lu Haikong even angrier!

"Hiding behind a girl? Letting a girl shield you from the wind and rain? I don't recall ever raising you to be like this!"

Lu Haikong said while lifting the broomstick again, but after lifting it for a long time, he couldn't bring himself to strike. Dudu, protecting Lu Wu like a mother hen, prevented him from hitting Lu Wu.

Just as the situation was deadlocked, Li Ruyu heard the commotion and came out.

"What's going on, Old Lu? Is this... Dudu? How did she get so skinny in such a short time?"

When Li Ruyu called out Dudu's name, the three people present were all shocked.

Lu Wu and Dudu were astonished that Li Ruyu could recognize her at a glance despite losing a hundred pounds.

As for Lu Haikong, he was completely flabbergasted, in utter disbelief.

"Wife, what did you say? She is Dudu?"

"Yes!"

By now, Li Ruyu had come up to Dudu, holding her beautiful face and asking, "Don't you recognize her?"

When Lu Haikong looked at the current Dudu and recalled the Dudu from a few hours ago, he was exasperated.

If he could recognize her, that would be a miracle!

At this moment, Lu Wu also cast a suspicious glance at Li Ruyu. Could it be that she was the one who gave her the apple?

While Lu Wu was pondering, Lu Haikong nudged him, "You rebellious kid, what's going on? How did she slim down so fast?"

Lu Wu also glanced at Lu Haikong with suspicion.

As he pondered whether his father was secretly a big shot, he explained Dudu's situation.

"Her summoned beast awakened a skill, enabling it to enhance itself by absorbing her energy.

After the awakening, it automatically activated, and then she ended up like this!"

After hesitating for a moment, Lu Wu added, "Dudu will stay with us until her parents return. Keep her drastic weight loss and Tuantuan's skill awakening a secret, okay? It must remain confidential."

Pang Duddu had no objections to this. She always went along with whatever Lu Wu said.

Even if Lu Wu sold her out, she would happily count the money for him.

As for Lu Wu's parents, upon hearing this, they wholeheartedly agreed!

"Yes, yes, this matter must be kept confidential!"

"Absolutely confidential!"

Li Ruyu nodded vigorously.

Holding Dudu's face, she felt a mix of affection and worry, secretly thinking she needed to cook many delicious meals to fatten up the girl again!

Lu Wu had no idea what his parents were thinking. After giving them instructions, he glanced at his father once more. Seizing the moment when Li Ruyu took Dudu to clean the guest room, Lu Wu approached his father.

"Dad, do we have any apples at home?"

"Apples? There should be some in the fridge, right?"

"No, I don't mean the ordinary kind. I want the type you gave Dudu!"

With that, Lu Wu's eyes were fixed on Lu Haikong, who looked confused, "Did I give Dudu an apple? I don't remember that."

From Lu Haikong's reaction, Lu Wu couldn't detect any flaws, but he still whispered in his father's ear, "Stop pretending; you've been busted!"

After saying that, Lu Wu went back to his room, leaving Lu Haikong completely dumbfounded.

After a while, realization struck Lu Haikong, who burst into anger, "What do you mean I've been busted? How dare you mess with your old man! Get out here, or I'll beat you to tears!"

Lu Haikong's outburst was quickly subdued by Li Ruyu.

Back in his room, Lu Wu put aside the testing of his father.

He had only been bluffing; in fact, he hadn't discovered anything.

The reason for tricking Lu Haikong was partially because he suspected his father and partially for revenge for the earlier beating.

After bluffing, Lu Wu quickly set the matter aside.

Once back in his room, Lu Wu took out the summer plan sheet he had just made and began modifying it.

Given that Dudu had suddenly improved, Tuantuan had directly advanced to Black Iron, and gained two more skills, getting into the advanced class should be no problem.

If she entered the advanced class, with one year of study, she could at least reach Snowman's level, almost guaranteeing her entry into Summoner University, allowing Lu Wu to shift his focus to summoner beast cultivation.

Well, if Dudu had been her old self, Lu Wu might have let her go, but now she wasn't!

Considering her stunning beauty, how could Lu Wu easily let her go?

She was so naive, with so many bad people out there. If she were still chubby, there wouldn't be much of a problem letting her go; nobody would set their eyes on her. But now that she was thin!

What if she got deceived if left on her own?

Moreover, the maximum potential of the advanced class would only get her to Snowman's level. As her childhood friend, how could Lu Wu let her attend a mediocre summoner university?

So, free-range upbringing was out of the question!

Lu Wu decided he had to nurture her himself, and not only that, he had to take her with him to a top summoner university!

Yeah, that was what a childhood friend should do!

He was doing this purely out of deep childhood friendship, having nothing to do with Dudu's stunning beauty!

Lu Wu was face-blind; he couldn't tell whether Dudu was attractive!

With this mindset, Lu Wu adjusted the summer plan, greatly increasing training for the summoned beast and coordination with Dudu.

From this revised plan, it was clear Dudu was no longer a substitute teammate but now full-fledged.

Even Lu Wu's own goal in joining the high school league had fundamentally changed!

Before, he aimed to fly high and take Dudu with him. Now, he wanted Dudu to soar so he could follow in her wake.

Lu Wu had newfound confidence that his skills would get him through the Professional Summon Beast Cultivator's exam, granting him access to top universities. Therefore, Dudu's performance in the league was crucial.

If she didn't perform well, it would be difficult for them to attend the same university.

Evidently, Lu Wu was now extremely ambitious!

```

# Chapter 30: 030 Goodbye Goblin

I had to admit, Lu Wu had been getting somewhat overconfident lately.

After all, he had been on quite a roll recently. First, it took him only a month to go from craving Li Kai to having Li Kai crave him.

Then he elevated Little Skeleton's quality to Black Iron. Although it carried a 'pseudo' tag, it was still Black Iron quality.

Little Skeleton's quality had now reached or even exceeded the level of some students in advanced classes!

Achieving these two things in just a month, Lu Wu's tiny heart was indeed swelling with pride.

He even almost forgot that he started out as a total loser. Even when Little Skeleton, who had just advanced, was nearly squashed to pieces by Dudu's family's pig, Lu Wu was so distracted by Dudu's sudden weight loss that he forgot about it.

What totally brought him back to reality was a particularly trivial matter.

Wasn't Dudu staying at his house?

Li Ruyu was worried she might go hungry, so early in the morning, she sent Lu Wu out to buy breakfast for Dudu.

Normally, Li Ruyu rarely ordered Lu Wu around, but seeing Dudu so thin, she worried Dudu might be tricked away. She wanted to boost Dudu's impression of Lu Wu, so she sent him out early, creating the illusion that Lu Wu specifically bought breakfast for her.

Although Lu Wu didn't see the point in it and didn't think it would improve her impression of him—after all, this girl's affection for him was already maxed out—

Unless Lu Wu unlocked some new moves, her approval rating should not go up further.

But since Li Ruyu instructed him, Lu Wu went. As soon as he stepped out, he ran into Lin Jianying.

The two collided head-on. Lu Wu looked at the particularly alert goblin behind Lin Jianying, which seemed to have changed significantly from a month ago.

Lin Jianying also glanced at the Little Skeleton behind Lu Wu with a look of surprise on his face.

But Lin Jianying didn't dare to speak, and after nodding to Lu Wu, he lowered his head to leave, but Lu Wu stopped him.

He didn't really have anything to say to Lin Jianying, he just wanted to touch his goblin.

"Haven't seen you for over a month, your goblin is looking pretty buff!"

Saying that, Lu Wu patted the chest of the goblin, which wore a 'don't mess with me' look. The moment he patted it, Lu Wu's eyes squinted.

He had to admit, patting it carried a hint of the mindset of 'Thirty years of turmoil.'

Hmph, a month ago you ignored me, today I'll show you what it means to be out of your league.

But one pat showed Lu Wu what it meant to be out of his league for real.

...

Name: Goblin

Power: 1 star (Ordinary)

Quality: Black Iron (Enhanced)

Attribute: Physical

State: Healthy (It doesn't want you to touch it, it finds you weird, it even wants to chop you up!)

Skills: Fierce Strike (Skilled) Charge (Skilled) Block (entry-level)

Weakness: Magic

Description: After a month of training, its combat power is now fully developed, currently capable of defeating over 10 newly advanced Little Skeletons.

...

Seeing this goblin's attributes, Lu Wu's previously swelling pride almost exploded.

He truly didn't expect that in just a month's time, Lin Jianying could train this goblin to such a state.

Damn it, if Dudu using hacks was one thing, could this guy be using hacks too?

Lu Wu couldn't understand, so his expression was a bit complex.

Lin Jianying saw Lu Wu touching his goblin with a face full of complex and sorrowful emotions, thinking Lu Wu was jealous of his goblin and angry about how he had abandoned him before, so he lowered his head again.

With a very faint voice, he said, "You know, I have my reasons to become a Professional Summoner, so I'm sorry."

After saying that, Lin Jianying ran off with the goblin.

Lu Wu only reacted after Lin Jianying had run off. As for what Lin Jianying had said? Sorry, he didn't notice. Even if he did, he wouldn't care.

Now, after being hit by the goblin, Lu Wu had only one thought: training! Crazy training! Starting today, he would train Little Skeleton like crazy!

As someone with hacks, how could he lose to these lucky guys?

Thinking this, Lu Wu turned to look at his silly and dazed Little Skeleton, his eyes filled with fighting spirit and determination!

After making up his mind, Lu Wu bought dozens of big buns and seven or eight cups of soy milk and went home.

As soon as he got home, he called Dudu over to eat quickly so they could start training afterward!

Hmm, as facts showed, Lu Wu was wrong!

He thought Dudu's affection for him was maxed out and that buying breakfast wouldn't increase it, but facts proved affection could indeed overflow!

This was the first time since Dudu turned twelve that she stayed at Lu Wu's house and ate breakfast bought by Lu Wu. Her eyes immediately turned red, and tears almost fell.

The cute look made Lu Wu's heart skip a beat!

The only flaw was that this girl ate a bit too much; she downed over ten big buns and two bottles of soy milk without any signs of stopping.

Seeing this, Lu Wu's face turned dark.

He had a strong premonition that if this girl kept eating like this, her stunning beauty wouldn't last long. Lu Wuke didn't want her to revert back.

"Stop eating! Stop eating!"

Lu Wu wanted to prevent this nightmare scenario from happening again.

Dudu listened to Lu Wu particularly well; when he told her to stop, she stopped. However, she couldn't help but glance at the buns, her eyes filled with longing, looking as pitiful as could be.

In the end, Lu Wu couldn't resist the pitiful look from the now slim Dudu and had to surrender.

"Alright, alright, eat up!"

He comforted himself, thinking that this girl had a Bonds Skill that could enhance her pig by eating, so she shouldn't get fat with such a skill, right?

Hmm, theoretically, yes, but what was this uneasy feeling in his heart?

In the end, Lu Wu watched as this girl ate four or fifty buns all by herself.

This was under the condition that she showed some restraint since Lu Wu was watching her, and she only ate until she was half-full; her appetite had more than doubled compared to before.

Also, perhaps it was Lu Wu's psychological effect, but he felt that after this breakfast, the girl's entire figure seemed plumper.

"Illusion, definitely an illusion!

She has a Bonds Skill, she can't possibly get fat!"

After forcibly suppressing the terrifying thought that this girl might get fat again, Lu Wu grabbed her hand and said, "Let's go! Time to train!"

On the side, Li Ruyu watched Lu Wu and Dudu leave hand in hand, a motherly smile plastered on her face.

However, the smile also carried a bit of worry!

"Indeed, the girl is too pretty; it's a bit concerning. No, I must make more delicious food this afternoon!

I have to help Dudu put on some weight again!"

Saying that, Li Ruyu got busy with preparing lunch.

...

Thank you to [Y356] [Cold Wind Headache] and [Book Friend 20200426154230018] for your rewarded support!

By the way, here's a book friend group: 245729348

# Chapter 31: 031 Training

Regarding the training of summoned beasts!

Lu Wu actually got the textbooks from the senior sisters in the advanced class early on!

Not only that, thanks to his ordinary-looking face, he even got quite a few copies of the senior sisters' training notes, including the Snowman Senior Sister's training notes.

With textbooks, notes, and Lu Wu's photographic memory and the existence of his Golden Finger.

Although Lu Wu hadn't actually started training Little Skeleton in the past month, he did have some insights on training summoned beasts.

He even had three skill training plans for Little Skeleton, all modified and optimized!

Previously, Little Skeleton's quality hadn't met the training standards and couldn't start, but now, after an upgrade, Little Skeleton's quality finally met the training standards.

So, after discussing it with Li Kai, Lu Wu changed his work schedule to the evening. Hmm, in this regard, Li Kai was quite easy to discuss with.

With the boss's support, Lu Wu could train Dudu during the day.

In Lu Wu's world, due to the widespread presence of Summoners, many related industries and facilities emerged, including various training fields, both paid and free, for summoners to use.

When Lu Wu wanted to find a place to train Little Skeleton, a training field was the first choice, and with a bit of money in his pocket recently, he naturally chose a paid training field.

After finding a well-equipped training field, Lu Wu got membership cards for himself and Dudu, and officially started the summoning beast training.

The training of summoned beasts generally falls into two categories, skill training and actual combat training.

Skill training focuses on mastering or awakening a certain skill through special schemes, emphasizing skill mastery.

Actual combat training improves battle experience, skill proficiency, and overall power through battles, emphasizing comprehensive power enhancement.

For Little Skeleton at Lu Wu's house, it definitely needed to start with skill training.

After all, it currently had no skills, and since Lu Wu hadn't trained it much before, it was difficult to cooperate in battles. If it fought with Dudu's pig now, there were only two possibilities.

Either it would be scattered by Earth Thorns, or it would be crushed by a sit.

So, Lu Wu began with skill training, making Little Skeleton learn the three basic skills "Charge," "Block," and "Dodge" on its attribute panel, and then have it battle the Mini Pig.

Lu Wu had to ensure that within a month, Little Skeleton mastered these three basic skills and reached One Star power!

This way, he had a hope of being selected for the advanced class at the start of the school term.

In this regard, Lu Wu had some confidence, after all, the training plans he mastered were not ordinary ones.

Although Lu Wu hadn't truly started training in the past month due to Little Skeleton's quality issues, only slightly activating the training plans, he had put a lot of effort into them.

Now, all three training plans had been optimized to different extents by Lu Wu.

The most optimized "Charge" had reached version 3.0, the other two had also reached version 2.0.

The training efficiency of the skills was much better than the original.

This was directly reflected in Little Skeleton's skill mastery speed.

The most optimized "Charge" was mastered by Little Skeleton the quickest, taking just two days to reach entry-level.

As for "Block" and "Dodge," although Little Skeleton's mastery speed was slower, it still mastered these two basic skills in eight days.

In other words, Lu Wu spent only ten days in total for Little Skeleton to master three basic skills, which was an incredible training efficiency.

According to what Lu Wu learned from the senior sisters, it took the quickest student in the advanced class ten days to master one basic skill.

Lu Wu's achievement of mastering three basic skills in ten days was unprecedented in their batch.

This efficiency slightly restored Lu Wu's shaken confidence.

Of course, it only restored some confidence, not to the point of making him arrogant.

Because Lu Wu knew that the reason Little Skeleton mastered the three basic skills in ten days was due to the efforts he put in over the past month, it was a result of long-term accumulation leading to rapid progress.

More importantly, Lu Wu really couldn't get arrogant!

After all, he wasn't training alone; he was accompanied by Dudu!

Speaking of Dudu, it made Lu Wu especially distressed.

His distress mainly stemmed from two aspects, one being the efficiency of the summoned beast training.

Little Skeleton at Lu Wu's house mastering three basic skills in ten days was already impressive; Dudu's pig's progress in those ten days was equally astonishing.

With Lu Wu's help in modifying the training plans, the pig improved the "Earth Thorns" skill from "entry-level" to "skilled" in ten days.

Coincidentally, as the pig's skill proficiency improved, it was also when Little Skeleton mastered the three basic skills.

At that time, Lu Wu felt a bit overconfident and arranged a battle between Little Skeleton and the Mini Pig as soon as possible.

Once they fought, Little Skeleton barely struck a "Charge" posture when it was pinned down by the Mini Pig's Earth Thorns, ending Lu Wu's and Little Skeleton's first battle experience with a crushing defeat.

But this wasn't what distressed Lu Wu the most!

The worst distress came from Dudu!

Lu Wu originally thought that after Dudu transformed from a chubby girl to a swan, her swan appearance should be permanent.

After all, her Bonds Skill existed, logically, she shouldn't be able to gain weight no matter how much she ate!

But under Li Ruyu's relentless feeding, in just ten days, this girl gained almost twenty pounds!

Lu Wu's mentality collapsed!

Where was the Bonds Skill? Where was this girl's Bonds Skill?

Wasn't she supposed to not gain weight?

After careful research, Lu Wu discovered that Dudu's Bonds Skill could indeed enhance the pig's quality and power through eating, but this enhancement wasn't gradual.

This enhancement required an accumulation process, and it had a cooldown period.

Dudu needed a certain amount of energy in her body, and after the cooldown period, the skill would activate!

In other words, Dudu didn't actually have any inability to gain weight; she might even get fat more easily. Her skill could only make her lose weight periodically, reach peak beauty briefly, and then get fat again!

After understanding this, Lu Wu's mentality collapsed!

Was this girl only beautiful for a few days every month or two?

# Chapter 32: 032 End of holiday

August 31.

Quan City, Ai Lang Training Center, Room 037 was hosting a particularly fierce battle.

The combatants were from Lu Wu's house, with Little Skeleton who had undergone a month of very strict training, and from Pang Duddu's family, the lazy, slacking Mini Pig.

Hmm, it's obvious that we're once again at the highly anticipated family violence segment.

This was already the 66th time this month that Lu Wu and Little Skeleton had challenged Dudu and her pig.

And 99% of the battle tension was provided by Lu Wu!

The entire training room was filled with Lu Wu's nervous and excited voice.

"Little Skeleton, use Charge and close the distance for me!"

"Dodge quickly!"

"Use Block!"

"Stand up!"

...

Inside, Little Skeleton from Lu Wu's house was obeying Lu Wu's commands and fighting, giving it his all.

Looking over at Pang Duddu's side.

Hmm, when the camera shifted to Pang Duddu, the frame appeared very narrow, barely fitting her in.

It was obvious that after a month, Dudu had once again turned into Pang Duddu.

Although she hadn't reached the previous near 200-pound level, she was already around 160 to 170 pounds. Lu Wu's excitement to have Little Skeleton pummel Mini Pig was largely due to Dudu's current physique.

When Dudu slimmed down, Lu Wu truly loved her stunning looks.

He even felt like not carrying her but directly paying with his body!

But while he hesitated, Dudu reverted to Pang Duddu.

This alone was enough to exhaust Lu Wu mentally, and even more exhausting was the progress Dudu and her pig made this month.

In one month, Lu Wu had raised Little Skeleton's power to 1 star, trained the basic skills Charge, Dodge, and Block to Skilled, and even almost reached Master level with the most used Charge.

Now, Little Skeleton's combat power had taken shape, and the progress was considerable!

But compared to Dudu's pig, the progress of Little Skeleton was still far too inferior.

This disparity was evident not just from the attribute board but visibly through the current combat.

On Lu Wu's side, the tension and excitement were palpable, with Little Skeleton fighting hard. On Dudu's side, she, being timid and gentle, couldn't command with the same vigor as Lu Wu.

Plus, she gained weight this month, possibly upsetting Lu Wu. Hence, she tried hard to reduce her presence these days and didn't even dare to voice commands, relying solely on Mini Pig's spontaneous play.

And Mini Pig had a personality very similar to Dudu in certain aspects.

Loves to eat, lazy to do anything!

Even in fights, it lacked passion. Lu Wu and Little Skeleton were giving it their all, while Mini Pig half-heartedly participated.

Mini Pig would merely plant a few Earth Thorns, take a few steps back to create distance. Yet still, Lu Wu and Little Skeleton couldn't do anything to it.

The battle situation was always in Mini Pig's control, leaving Lu Wu and Little Skeleton struggling to break through.

"Now, Little Skeleton, use Charge!"

At Lu Wu's command, Little Skeleton fully burst forward, swooshing in front of the pig, swinging a baseball bat, ready to send the pig flying. Mini Pig just yawned, then with its nose enlarging and pushing, the fight ended again.

"Lost again!"

Hmm, this "again" felt really heart-wrenching.

Lu Wu and Little Skeleton had both put in a month of effort, yet they hadn't won a single battle.

Lu Wu was very clear about the situation.

One aspect was Pang Duddu's pig being undeniably strong!

...

Name: Mini Pig

Power: 1 star

Quality: Black Iron (Enhanced) (One Line)

Attribute: Earth

State: Healthy (It's hungry, it wants roasted sweet potatoes)

Bonds Skill: Bonds Growth (A special bond skill, awakens through intimacy, enhances Summoned Beast's quality and power through bonds)

Common Skills: Giant (Skilled) (Can enlarge the body)

Earth Thorns (Skilled) (Earth element basic skill)

Charge (Entry-level)

Weakness: No obvious weaknesses

Description: How does it feel to be crushed by someone with everything enhanced?!

...

This was Mini Pig's attribute after a month of training.

And this was without the bond skill between Dudu and it being triggered, if it triggered again, its power would definitely surge again.

Comparing his own little skeleton with others' pigs, Lu Wu had a strong urge to throw away Little Skeleton.

In the past month, Lu Wu profoundly understood why everyone disliked Little Skeleton.

Because its quality was poor, its growth was poor, and the cost-effectiveness of nurturing it was extremely low.

Both were 1 star, both knew three combat skills, both trained for a month, Little Skeleton even worked harder, both were Black Iron —although Little Skeleton carried a (Pseudo), the gap shouldn't be this big.

But putting the two Summoned Beasts together, Little Skeleton was utterly crushed.

This was a huge blow to Lu Wu!

He couldn't grasp why, despite clearly having hacks, he still got beaten.

This didn't align with his previous scripts!

Wasn't it said he would carry Dudu to victory? Now, why did Lu Wu feel an intense premonition of being carried by Dudu instead?

As a cheat-possessing protagonist, Lu Wu's pride wouldn't tolerate relying on someone else's success, nor would he accept this frustration.

"Looks like I must speed up that research!

I'm staying up all night to get that thing out, hoping to incorporate it into tomorrow's training!

With that, Little Skeleton's combat will surge!"

Despite repeated failures, Lu Wu was still full of energy, ready to pull an all-nighter.

Just then, Dudu softly reminded him.

"Um, Lu Wu, we start school tomorrow!"

"School?"

Lu Wu was stunned.

Honestly, Lu Wu's summer vacation had been so fulfilling that he almost forgot about it if not for Dudu's reminder.

And as he remembered, he also recalled something that came with the start of the school term: class assignment.

Previously, Lu Wu had been particularly focused on this. He spent the entire summer vacation preparing for class assignment, and thinking about it now, his emotions naturally shifted.

"If school starts tomorrow, we need to sleep early tonight, can't stay up late.

Otherwise, if an all-nighter affects class assignment exam performance, and I don't get into the key class, then the problem will…"

At this, Lu Wu paused, feeling something was off. Upon careful consideration, he realized, "Even if not getting into the key class, the problem doesn't seem that significant!"

...

卷尾感言

Hmm, I seem to have not written one of these for a long time. While writing Mountain Bandit, I wrote at the end of each volume, but haven't kept this habit since then, not even dividing volumes. I now pick this habit back up.

Talking about this first volume, hmm, I couldn't help but facepalm after finishing it.

Many issues.

Hmm, the biggest problem is that it's somewhat dragging.

Of course, this problem wouldn't matter if kept up with updates. I, Nu Xiao, update ten to twenty thousand a day; you'd hardly call me short or weak.

But unfortunately, due to the new book period, bursting with updates is temporarily impossible. But we can save them, and burst through once published.

Yes, I, Nu Xiao, say right now, upon publication, no less than 30 chapters!

Hmm, that's it, I won't say more, no much else to say, back to writing!

Oh, and do follow Nu Xiao's channel, surprises await!

# Chapter 33: 033 Skill Training Plan Optimization

A lot of things really didn't go as planned for Lu Wu!

Like Li Kai, like the elite class!

When he first encountered Li Kai, Lu Wu really wanted to latch onto the guy's coattails, but a month later, not only did he fail to latch onto Li Kai's coattails, but his own coattails were latched onto by Li Kai instead.

And after Li Kai latched onto Lu Wu's coattails, it took him just a week to confirm that those coattails were as strong and robust as he had anticipated, making him even more zealous about clinging to them, almost acting like he wanted to hang onto Lu Wu's body.

His attempt to latch onto someone else's coattails only to be latched onto was something Lu Wu had not anticipated at all. The second unexpected event was the division of the elite class.

At first, Lu Wu really thought the division was quite important.

The resources invested in the elite class by the school were incomparable to those of the ordinary class, and without entering the elite class, getting into Summoner University seemed nearly impossible.

Yet now, two months later, Lu Wu reconsidered and realized the elite class might be no big deal.

After all, in the past month, he had pretty much mastered the elite class's curriculum.

In other words, what the elite class could teach him, he had already learned in advance, and he even taught Dudu.

At this point, the only thing that might tempt him about the elite class seemed to be the private stuff the elite class teachers might provide, like some special Skill Training Plans, competition experience, and the competitions or Secret Realm trials that the elite class would organize.

These all sounded quite appealing on the surface but actually were not a big deal.

After all, it wasn't easy for the teachers to reveal their private stuff, and as for competitions or even Secret Realm trials, Lu Wu could organize those himself, albeit possibly spending more effort, but it was doable.

In fact, Lu Wu now felt that entering the elite class might bring some inconvenience to him.

He learned from a senior that the education in the elite class was closed-off, with strict management, leaving students almost no private time, and even teammates were assigned by the teachers after comprehensive consideration, which Lu Wu highly disliked.

What if some brainless person wanted to separate him from Dudu?

Though Dudu was chubby now, she would slim down in a month or two. Having seen her peak beauty, Lu Wu was still quite fond of Dudu.

He certainly did not want anyone to take his family's Dudu away!

Moreover, if he had no private time, how would Lu Wu improve the quality of Little Skeleton, how would he soar? Forever being overshadowed by Dudu?

Thus, Lu Wu now felt somewhat hesitant about entering the elite class, "What if we just don't join the elite class?"

Lu Wu mumbled, Dudu standing beside him was stunned, not understanding why Lu Wu suddenly said something so off-topic, but she had always gone along with whatever Lu Wu said. If Lu Wu said no, she nodded and agreed.

Really lacking individuality, really lacking ambition.

Seeing Dudu nodding like a chubby wife, Lu Wu stroked his chin and thought carefully, "Forget it, let's just sign up for now, and if it doesn't work out or isn't fun in the elite class, we can always quit, we have the means anyway!

Let's go home for dinner!"

Saying this, Lu Wu took Dudu's hand and happily went home.

As for the hand-holding, this habit began when Dudu was at her peak beauty.

Although Dudu got fatter and less pretty as time went by, the habit remained.

This inconspicuous pair of Lu Haikong and chubby Dudu drew a lot of attention on their way back from the training hall.

Passersby of all ages on the street watched this pair and also gave Lu Wu appreciative glances.

To them, a 'plain and ordinary' young man holding onto someone genuinely plain and a bit chubby like this clearly indicated love!

Giving up the whole forest for a slightly chubby tree, this young man was definitely a good guy!

Many teenagers who saw this pair even regained faith in love.

They felt that indeed there still was pure and sweet love in this world that didn't care about looks!

Following Lu Wu in a daze, chubby Dudu returned home. After enduring Li Ruyu's enthusiastic feeding of seven or eight bowls of rice, she returned to her home and ate another seven or eight bowls.

Then, she could prepare to reminisce about her day with Lu Wu and go to sleep with a sweet smile.

Her day went like this.

Eat, think about Lu Wu, tease the pig, think about Lu Wu, eat, think about Lu Wu, tease the pig, think about Lu Wu, sleep...

Ah, living as a summoner of great fortune, her life was truly that dull. Comparing it to Lu Wu's, although he was a cheater, his daily life was utterly inhuman.

While Dudu could simply eat and prepare for bed, Lu Wu's night had only begun.

Usually, after eating, he would start studying the knowledge of Summoned Beast Cultivation. Today, however, was different. He was studying the combat power issues of Little Skeleton.

After getting beaten alongside Little Skeleton for a month, Lu Wu was clear on why his Little Skeleton was getting beaten: in short, Little Skeleton was useless and had a poor cost-performance ratio.

Specifically, Little Skeleton's quality was inferior, its basic attributes were weak. Improving its quality by a level or two would help.

Besides the quality issue, Little Skeleton also lacked an explosive skill.

Both of these were issues; solving either one would make Little Skeleton a match for the pig. Solving both would allow Little Skeleton to thrash the lazy Mini Pig from Dudu's family.

Regarding these two issues, Lu Wu was still studying the quality problem, and it would take a little more time to get results. However, he had made some progress on the explosive Skill.

After dinner, he started working on the Skill issue.

In terms of obtaining summon beast skills, there were actually several channels.

One was gained through Dudu's family's affection, another was natural awakening. Both of these channels relied on luck.

Despite his month-long effort after witnessing the terror of the affection Skill, he still had no results.

Thus, he kept working hard but didn't have high hopes for these luck-based methods.

He placed his hopes on Skill Training Plans.

If Lu Wu could acquire a strong Skill Training Plan, he could let Little Skeleton master a powerful Skill.

Unfortunately, Lu Wu had no channels for acquiring Skill Training Plans at the moment.

Or rather, he did have channels, but he lacked the capital to acquire them, so he resorted to a more balanced approach by trying to modify and optimize existing Skill Training Plans.

For example, modifying Basic Skills like Charge, Block, and Dodge Training Plans, altering these Skills with modifications so that the originally basic Skills could unleash more powerful combat power.

In this area, Lu Wu had already done some research and accumulated knowledge, and with some luck, he might get results tonight...

…

Thank you for the support from [Daily x Lazy Cancer][Book Friend 20170726225226343][Ten Minutes Waiting]!

# Chapter 34: 034 Little Skeleton the Clever

In Lu Wu's room.

After dinner, Lu Wu hid in his room for three hours, finally grasping a flash of inspiration. He had a brilliant idea about optimizing the Skill Training Plan.

Thrilled, Lu Wu quickly seized this fleeting moment of insight. He stood up and pressed his hand on Little Skeleton's head, who was nearby, holding his phone and watching TV with earphones on.

He summoned the attribute board, pulled out the skill column, and skillfully brought out the [Charge] Skill Training Plan, which he had already optimized to version 5.0. He then opened the Skill Training Plan modification page and began a flurry of activity.

For Little Skeleton, this was nothing out of the ordinary.

It just turned to glance at the busy Lu Wu, its pupil fire flickering for a moment, then turned back to continue watching Peppa on the phone. This was Little Skeleton's only entertainment every day, and now it was the thing Little Skeleton was most obsessed with.

Over here, after grasping that flash of inspiration, Lu Wu only took half an hour to successfully apply it.

With this flash of inspiration, the [Charge] Skill Training Plan was optimized to version 6.0.

[Ding, [Charge Training Plan 6.0] optimization successful. Would you like to review?]

"Yes!"

Without hesitation, Lu Wu nodded, and a Skill Training Plan page appeared in front of him.

...

Training Plan: Charge Training Plan 6.0

Plan Optimization: Compared to version 5.0, version 6.0 improved the efficiency of charge training to a certain extent.

Significantly optimized the charge effect and added momentum building during the charge and burst power after the charge.

Plan Evaluation: The charge skill was modified to some extent, adding explosive power which it originally lacked. With proper training, it could enhance the burst power of the charge skill significantly. However, flexibility decreased.

Suggestions: Can be combined with skills like [Fierce Strike] and [Heavy Slash] to maximize the effectiveness of charge.

Ps: A fairly good training plan, much better than your previous submissions.

The following modifications added momentum burst direction. Keep it up, newbie who is outclassed by the luck king!

Looking at this version 6.0 training plan, Lu Wu was particularly satisfied.

Although he didn't yet know the actual effect of this training plan, without the support of skills like [Fierce Strike] and [Heavy Slash], whether the power could reach the level of defeating Mini Pig, Lu Wu at least felt he was on the right track.

Following this plan, Little Skeleton's combat power would definitely have a qualitative leap next!

"Not bad, my efforts haven't been in vain!

With the experience of optimizing the [Charge] skill, the remaining two skills will be much easier to tackle. I'm confident I can complete the optimization of those two skills within a week.

Give me another week of training, and by then, Little Skeleton with three optimized skills will definitely be able to compete with that pig."

Of course, this was assuming that pig's Bonds Skill didn't activate.

But even if it did, in one to two weeks, the quality improvement plan for Little Skeleton should be out, and by then, Little Skeleton's power would experience another wave of improvement.

Concerning the confidence of catching up with Dudu and the others before the tournament, Lu Wu was still very confident in himself.

After completing the plan optimization, Lu Wu, in a good mood, spent some time watching TV with Little Skeleton.

Mm, speaking of watching TV, this habit was something Lu Wu learned from Dudu.

She would hold her pig every day and binge-watch shows. Lu Wu thought this might be a way to cultivate intimacy, so he picked it up as well.

After learning it, he wasn't sure if the intimacy had increased, but he did find that ever since Little Skeleton started watching TV, its little brain seemed to get brighter day by day.

Before watching TV, if Lu Wu didn't give it a command, it would just stand there like a dumb skeleton frame.

Now, it occasionally made small movements, and sometimes even imitated actions from the TV. Although these might result in some hilarious effects, it indeed made Lu Wu feel this little guy had become smarter.

So, watching TV became one of the few habits Lu Wu learned from Dudu and maintained.

Lu Wu would even accompany Little Skeleton to watch for a while every evening after finishing up, and every time at this moment, Lu Wu felt that his intimacy level with Little Skeleton should be incrementing '+1.' This made Lu Wu feel like he and Little Skeleton were getting closer, but he had no evidence.

After all, there was no intimacy bar on the attribute panel, and the skeleton couldn't speak, so intimacy was something Lu Wu could only gauge by feeling.

Although feelings could sometimes fool people, Lu Wu believed that as long as he kept watching TV with Little Skeleton, they'd eventually hit it off.

Mm, this was Lu Wu's thought before today. But tonight, Lu Wu started to doubt this idea.

Here's what happened.

After watching TV with Little Skeleton until past one o'clock, Lu Wu remembered he had to go to school tomorrow, so he went to sleep, leaving Little Skeleton alone watching TV.

This was normal procedure. Little Skeleton didn't need to sleep and could watch until dawn.

The problem was that while it watched TV today, it saw a scene where the protagonist helped cover the heroine with a blanket.

Little Skeleton hesitated, its pupil fire flickered, and it turned to look at the sleeping Lu Wu. Coincidentally, Lu Wu's sleeping position wasn't great, and he had kicked off his blanket.

Seeing this, Little Skeleton quickly went over to cover Lu Wu with the blanket.

Although Little Skeleton didn't really understand why it had to cover Lu Wu, it was simply imitating. But after covering Lu Wu, Little Skeleton felt like it had done something significant, making its pupil fire flicker.

At this point, Lu Wu's foot kicked again, pushing the blanket off.

Little Skeleton felt this didn't match the scene on TV and helped cover Lu Wu again. But within two minutes, Lu Wu kicked it off again.

Then ensued a tug-of-war.

Lu Wu kicked it off, Little Skeleton covered it back.

Repeating several times, Little Skeleton began to feel unhappy.

The TV show wasn't like this, something must be wrong.

Little Skeleton used its brain, quickly coming to a conclusion: It must be the blanket's fault, the blanket wasn't obedient. It thought if it tied the blanket up, it would stay in place.

Yes, that's it!

Little Skeleton thought it was very clever!

Conveniently, there was a coil of rope in Lu Wu's room. Little Skeleton picked up the rope and went to Lu Wu's bed, ready to start.

But Little Skeleton hadn't learned how to do this. Standing beside Lu Wu's bed holding the rope and gesturing, it inadvertently gestured to Lu Wu's neck. Just at this moment, a troubled Lu Wu woke up and opened his eyes...

# Chapter 35: 035 School Begins (Please Vote)

On the first day of school, Lu Wu took Dudu to school, sporting panda-like eyes.

Speaking of those panda eyes, he did not sleep a wink after waking up last night.

He went crazy searching for information online.

He searched for things like "summoned beast murder case,"

"My summoned beast is a bit strange," and "Do summoned beasts really never betray their masters?"

The first few searches were normal, but the last one strangely brought up answers involving "How to make your summoned beast do naughty things" and "My story with a human-shaped summoned beast" among other bizarre topics.

These bizarre things greatly interfered with Lu Wu's efficiency, wasting his time, and his panda eyes were largely due to these distractions.

However, he did find some comforting information after a whole night's search.

He learned that summoned beasts generally would not harm their masters.

Although there were incidents of summoned beasts hurting people online, there were almost no cases of them bullying their masters. On the contrary, there were many tales of despicable summoners bullying their summoned beasts.

Confirming this, Lu Wu finally felt a bit at ease.

Moreover, after a lot of gesturing by Little Skeleton, Lu Wu roughly understood what the little guy wanted to do with a rope in the middle of the night.

Left helpless and amused, Lu Wu scolded Little Skeleton, strictly ordering it not to move around at night from now on.

But to comfort and also encourage the little guy, Lu Wu still patted its head in appreciation.

After all, even though the incident scared him, thinking about it carefully, it was actually a good thing.

It meant that Little Skeleton had become a bit smarter and more attached to him.

So, such things were worth encouraging.

Lu Wu had to admit that he felt more patient with Little Skeleton than he did with Dudu.

Yes, in this regard, Dudu had a lot to say, but she didn't dare to speak out.

.....

After arriving at school, Lu Wu discovered that his panda eyes were not unique, especially after he got to his class and saw many others like him.

This was because many people hadn't slept well the night before, just like Lu Wu.

The difference was Lu Wu's sleeplessness was due to Little Skeleton, while theirs was due to nervousness.

For first and second-year high school students, the first day of school basically meant nothing.

But for Lu Wu and his fellow seniors, the first day of school was almost the most important day of the semester.

After all, the class placements for seniors were happening today.

Whether they could get into the advanced class or be admitted to Summoner University would basically be determined today. For students aspiring to attend Summoner University, nervousness and sleeplessness were quite normal.

So, Li Chun was not surprised to see this. However, his gaze lingered a bit longer on Lu Wu after entering.

Li Chun paid quite a bit of attention to Lu Wu and knew about his summer situation.

After all, Lu Wu had been introduced to Li Kai by him, and he often checked in with Li Kai about Lu Wu. Although Li Kai didn't outright say he had helped Lu Wu a lot, he revealed enough for Li Chun to know about Lu Wu's situation.

Li Chun knew that his uncle seemed to value Lu Wu and was seriously training him. Under his uncle's guidance, it seemed that the quality of Lu Wu's Little Skeleton had improved and his power had progressed.

This should have been good news, something Li Chun should have been happy about. But when he saw Lu Wu's panda eyes, Li Chun couldn't help but feel a bit uneasy.

"He's finally valued by my uncle and getting trained. I hope he can catch the eye of that one and get into the advanced class!"

After silently wishing Lu Wu luck, Li Chun spoke out.

"Classmates, quiet down. I have something to say about the advanced class placement test."

"This year's advanced class placement test will be different from previous years. There will be no academic test, only a test of summoned beasts' power.

Those of you who wish to enter the advanced class and have summoned beasts of Black Iron level quality or have mastered three skills, can go to Field 3 immediately to take the test."

Li Chun's words caused an uproar in the entire class.

No one had expected such a change in this year's advanced class test, not only canceling the academic test but also setting such a high bar for the summoned beast power test.

Black Iron quality or mastery of three skills?

This standard immediately eliminated those who had barely met last year's criteria, and these students were the most heartbroken and hardest to accept.

Lu Wu, on the other hand, wasn't eliminated; he was just a little surprised by the major change in this year's placement test.

But surprise aside, the test still had to be taken.

Right from the start, Lu Wu had already decided to mingle in the advanced class first, staying if he was happy, leaving if not, as he had no need to force himself given his special abilities.

So, after asking Li Chun for permission, Lu Wu headed to Field 3 with Dudu under Li Chun's complicated gaze.

When Lu Wu and the others arrived at Field 3, there were already dozens of students there.

Seeing so many students, or rather, so many of Black Iron level or with three-skill mastery summoned beasts, Lu Wu's eyes suddenly lit up, and he couldn't control his eager hands.

Then Lu Wu left Dudu and began his usual antics.

This time, he didn't just pat the girls' summoned beasts. Whoever was a classmate, he chatted with, and whoever's summoned beast he patted.

After a round, Lu Wu collected data on dozens of summoned beasts and, while doing so, he roughly understood the reason behind the changes in this year's advanced class test.

It was said that the school had apparently hired a teacher who graduated from a prestigious Summoner University as the advanced class homeroom teacher, and this placement test was her doing!

Moreover, it was rumored that this teacher was a very young and very beautiful young woman.

When Lu Wu heard this news, he felt the plot was somewhat familiar, with a strong sense of déjà vu, making him slightly agitated.

He felt that this teacher might, perhaps, be attracted by his talent, then immerse herself in his plain looks.

What can he say, being plain-looking is annoying.

Just as Lu Wu was feeling agitated, a cold and arrogant voice accompanied by the sound of high heels rang out, "That one touching the bird, the classmate with the Little Skeleton summoned beast, you can leave now!"

# Chapter 36: 036 Scumbag

"What the heck?"

"What, I can leave just like that?"

Lu Wu was a bit stunned and found it hard to believe. This wasn't how the plot usually played out, right?

So he couldn't help but turn his head to see who this person was, not following the typical routine.

Turning his head, Lu Wu was even more bewildered.

This teacher was so tall!

Oh no, this teacher was so white!

Uh, that didn't seem quite right either!

Following Lu Wu's gaze, he saw a teacher with legs seemingly as long as a meter and twenty centimeters, wearing a professional suit, high heels, a ponytail, and black-framed glasses. Behind her followed a three-tailed black cat, and her aura radiated three meters high.

This teacher's entrance really amazed a group of people.

Just walking over simply from the other side of the playground to this side made many young boys blush and have their hearts race.

The closer this teacher got, the faster these young boys' hearts beat.

However, Lu Wu's heartbeat became steadily calmer as this teacher approached. He had better emotional adjustment abilities, and more importantly, Lu Wu had seen Pang Duddu at her peak appearance.

Compared to Duddu at her peak, this teacher's looks were hardly impressive, so Lu Wu's heartbeat quickly stabilized.

Another reason was the expression on this woman's face, and the way she looked at Lu Wu.

That expression, that look, made Lu Wu feel like she was looking at a worthless piece of trash.

Yes, Lu Wu's feeling was right. In Ye Qingxue's eyes, he indeed was a worthless person with no value to train.

While these students waited, Ye Qingxue had already basically understood the background information of the students taking the assessment.

Lu Wu caught Ye Qingxue's attention with his active behavior and his utterly ordinary-looking face, so she paid attention to his background.

When she confirmed that Lu Wu's family background was just that of an ordinary family, he lost all training value in her eyes.

The reason for this, she explained to Lu Wu when she walked up to him: "Little Skeletons are extremely difficult to train. The cost-effectiveness is low. It requires a massive amount of financial and material resources to give it a chance to catch up with others.

And as far as I know, your family doesn't seem to have these conditions to train it.

Even if your parents are willing to go bankrupt for you, your chances of getting into Summoner University are slim, so you're disqualified. Another suggestion: give up on becoming a Professional Summoner. It's the most rational choice for you and your family."

Ye Qingxue used an exceptionally calm tone to directly pronounce the death sentence of Lu Wu's Summoner career.

For this situation, Lu Wu did not have any special expressions nor any significant emotional fluctuations.

He didn't even prepare to argue for himself or shout any slogans like "Thirty Years on the East, Thirty Years on the West."

After listening quietly, Lu Wu simply said, "Oh," and then summoned Duddu to leave.

Anyway, to Lu Wu, being in an advanced class wasn't a big deal. If they didn't want to play with him, then fine. He had his own cheats. There was no need to endure their prejudice and effort to prove anything.

He could still turn the tables even outside the advanced class!

However, just as Lu Wu was about to leave with Duddu, Ye Qingxue spoke again.

"Wait!"

She now set her eyes on Duddu, or more precisely, on her pet pig.

"Its quality is Black Iron, right?"

Confused, Duddu looked at Lu Wu, and only after he nodded did she follow suit and nod as well.

Ye Qingxue glanced at Lu Wu and asked, "How many skills has it mastered?"

"Three!" Lu Wu answered directly for Duddu.

Hearing this answer, Ye Qingxue's eyes brightened, and she nodded in satisfaction, "Very well, you can stay to accept the next phase of the assessment."

Ye Qingxue noticed that Lu Wu had a significant influence on Duddu, so she immediately said to Lu Wu, "I trust that you won't hinder her future, right?"

In this situation, Lu Wu didn't want to say anything, nor did he have anything to say. He turned and left.

If Lu Wu had nothing to say, then Duddu had even less to say.

This girl never had any opinions—or rather, Lu Wu's opinion was her opinion.

Whatever Lu Wu said, she followed. If Lu Wu said he wanted to sell her, she would help count the money while crying.

When Lu Wu turned and left without hesitation, Duddu followed him like a faithful wife.

Ye Qingxue's face darkened at the sight.

"Let me remind you, many choices in life are incredibly important, like the one before you.

Once you leave this field, it means your path to becoming a Professional Summoner is cut off.

I advise you not to let insignificant things cloud your mind. Following him will only ruin your future!"

Ye Qingxue's words made Lu Wu stop in his tracks and look back at her.

This turn of the head was quite confusing, making Ye Qingxue and the students, who quietly watched nearby, mistakenly think that Lu Wu was going to persuade Duddu to stay.

Only Lin Jianying knew that this was absolutely impossible for Lu Wu, as he himself was familiar with Duddu.

Although Lu Wu had changed, Lin Jianying was still not wrong at this moment.

After stopping, Lu Wu didn't persuade Duddu at all.

He simply took Duddu's chubby hand and then smiled provocatively at Ye Qingxue, "Sorry, our Duddu just loves ruining her future with me!"

With that, Lu Wu pulled the dazed Duddu, made dizzy by his words "our Duddu," and left in large strides.

His steps were full of swagger. Every movement was imbued with the aura of a scoundrel, making Ye Qingxue's hair almost stand on end with anger.

Fortunately, this was a school, and Ye Qingxue still remembered her identity as a teacher. Otherwise, Lu Wu's legs would definitely be broken by now.

However, although Lu Wu's legs weren't broken, his behavior did seem incredibly scummy to others, so after swaggering away, he found himself in a bit of an awkward position.

First, he was summoned for a talk by Li Chun—not just a talk, but Li Chun even notified both families.

After all, this concerned the advanced class and Duddu's future. How could this not involve their parents?

Li Chun genuinely wanted to salvage the situation and get Duddu into the advanced class for a better future.

After both sets of parents arrived, their attitudes were a bit surprising to Li Chun.

Duddu's family was a bit angry knowing that Lu Wu held back their daughter's future, but mostly they felt helpless.

They knew their daughter wouldn't be persuaded, so in the end, Duddu's Dad could only angrily threaten Lu Wu, saying that if he dared to bully his daughter, he would twist his head off. And that was the end of it.

Lu Wu took all the blame by himself.

After it all ended, Lu Haikong patted his rebellious son, beaming with pride, "Good job, son. Well done!"

Lu Wu was bewildered. Shouldn't his old man be beating him for this?

He felt his old man had a problematic worldview. He even suspected the old man was quite a big shot!

# Chapter 37: 037 Little Skeleton's First Victory

Lu Wu's actions on Field No. 3 made him famous at school.

Of course, it wasn't a good reputation; he had now been labeled as a scumbag.

In the eyes of others, it wasn't enough that Lu Wu himself didn't progress, but he even prevented Dudu from advancing, ruining Dudu's prospect of getting into the advanced class for a bright future—how utterly awful!

As a result, Lu Wu almost became a target for everyone at school.

Lu Wu didn't care at all.

Anyway, they only dared to whisper behind his back; if anyone really dared to provoke him face-to-face, Lu Wu would undoubtedly release Dudu without hesitation.

Well, not only did Lu Wu think this way, but he actually did it.

The day after the incident, a student from the advanced class came to trouble Lu Wu, hoping to earn the title of Justice Messenger and increase Ye Qingxue's favorability by bullying him.

Without a word, Lu Wu called Dudu over.

Then, very quickly, this confident young man who had just entered the advanced class was trampled by a pig along with his Summoned Beast.

He came bouncing happily and left limping, clutching his butt—utterly embarrassed.

Worse still, after returning to the advanced class, it seemed that he was directly kicked out of the class by Ye Qingxue.

This created quite a stir, even the principal personally went to Ye Qingxue to plead for the unfortunate boy.

After all, it wasn't easy for Quancheng No. 3 Middle School to produce a few candidates for Summoner University; they couldn't just ruin the boy's future like this.

But no one expected that in front of Ye Qingxue, even the principal's words were useless.

She simply said, "If you can't even beat a student from an ordinary class, you're not qualified to stay in my class!"

Extremely domineering, extremely forceful!

And the principal of No. 3 Middle School was extremely spineless, actually being silenced by a single sentence from Ye Qingxue.

This made people very curious, just what was this woman's identity to be so domineering and unyielding.

However, this incident had little to do with Lu Wu.

No, from a certain perspective, Lu Wu could be considered a beneficiary of this incident.

Although he gained another label of living off a woman in addition to being a scumbag, no one came to trouble him after this.

And no one discussed him anymore; the attention shifted to Ye Qingxue's domineering behavior, and they all went to denounce her, making things much quieter for Lu Wu.

Of course, though it was quiet, Lu Wu wasn't idle during this time.

What could be said, although Lu Wu initially had little interest in the advanced class, even thinking of just going in to take a look and staying if he was happy and leaving if he wasn't,

It was one thing how Lu Wu felt and what mindset he had going into the assessment, it was another to be directly swept out without even a chance for the assessment.

This made Lu Wu a bit unhappy.

He harbored a determination!

Of course, Lu Wu swore that he was definitely broad-minded and absolutely didn't have the thought of making a splash in the league and slapping Ye Qingxue in the face.

He just wanted to prove himself, to let everyone who said he was no good know that Lu Wu was indeed capable.

And to prove himself, first, Lu Wu had to enhance his Little Skeleton's power.

For Lu Wu, enhancing Little Skeleton's power wasn't too big of a challenge.

Although training Little Skeleton was indeed difficult, Lu Wu had already devised an entire training plan quite early.

He was confident he could make Little Skeleton catch up to and even surpass Dudu's Dumpling before the league match; he just sped up the progress a bit now.

Motivated by this determination, Lu Wu's work efficiency skyrocketed.

The optimization of the Dodge and Block skills, which was initially scheduled to be completed in a week, was done in three days by Lu Wu.

Then he spent another four days conducting rigorous training for Little Skeleton, initially grasping three optimized skills.

…

Name: Little Skeleton

Power: 1 Star (Ordinary)

Quality: Black Iron (Poor) (Enhancing)

Attribute: Undead

State: It wanted to watch TV

Skills: Charge (Optimized) (Master)

Block (Optimized) (Skilled)

Dodge (Optimized) (Skilled)

Weaknesses: Light, Fire, Thunder

Description: After mastering three optimized skills, although still quite poor, it already possesses some combat power.

Training it to this level in a few months is quite an accomplishment.

…

This was Little Skeleton's attribute a week after the Field No. 3 incident.

Seeing the attribute board, Lu Wu couldn't help but smile.

It was his first time receiving praise from the system, and with the optimization, Little Skeleton's Charge skill proficiency shot up to the Master level.

These two surprises made Lu Wu's mood instantly bright, feeling as though the sky cleared up, the rain stopped, and he was capable again.

"Come on, Dudu, let's go fight!"

Lu Wu was particularly excited and dragged Dudu to the training grounds.

It was still the same training hall, still the same room as last time, a week later, the sixty-seventh battle between Lu Wu's Little Skeleton and Dudu's Dumpling began once again.

This time, Dumpling had no expectations for the battle.

The pig was inherently lazy, particularly disliking exercise, let alone combat, which required physical effort.

But if it was fighting Little Skeleton, it was somewhat okay since it was quite familiar with beating Little Skeleton.

First minute, kite with Earth Thorns,

Second minute, repositioning to continue kiting, third minute, close in on Little Skeleton, and crushing it with Giant.

The pig had developed a routine for bullying Little Skeleton.

This time it planned to follow the routine and then go home to watch TV with its master.

However, this time things were a bit different.

Dumpling started with a wave of Earth Thorns as usual, which usually flustered Little Skeleton, but this time Little Skeleton seemed more agile, slipping side to side as if its feet were greased, avoiding the Earth Thorns effortlessly.

Seeing the optimized Dodge skill working, Lu Wu was overjoyed and seized the opportunity to give the command, "Use Charge! Hit the pig with a stick!"

Little Skeleton obediently sped up, instantly closing in on Dumpling, swinging its stick 'smack,' unexpectedly catching Dumpling mid-giantization and knocking it off the stage.

After a month of being bullied, Lu Wu and Little Skeleton finally secured a splendid victory with optimized skills and a near-ambush tactic.

This made Lu Wu particularly happy, and the jubilant Little Skeleton looked at its baseball bat in a daze for a while.

For the first time having beaten Dumpling, Little Skeleton expressed that it felt great and wanted to do it again!

On the other side, the knocked down Dumpling got angry!

# Chapter 38: 038 How to Stay at the Peak of Your Appearance

Having achieved a rare victory, Lu Wu and Little Skeleton were ecstatic and especially thrilled, expressing their desire for a rematch.

The pig that got beaten the first time was also very unhappy—it too wanted a rematch!

So, very quickly, the 68th battle between Little Skeleton and Tuantuan began officially.

And then, the hearts of Lu Wu and Little Skeleton, which had just started to soar, were immediately dashed.

Knowing Little Skeleton's power and having endured a hit, the pig was in a particularly bad mood and brought out all its might.

Little Skeleton, who had just tasted the sweetness of victory, was once again brutally beaten.

When Tuantuan went all out, it was particularly terrifying. It didn't go through the motions with Little Skeleton, no kite-flying or acting cute.

It started by activating "Giant", directly used "Earth Thorns" to limit Little Skeleton's movement, and then launched "Charge" to attack.

Hmm, when Lu Wu saw this set of tactics, his feelings were very mixed.

Because this tactic was specifically developed by him for this pig, now seeing it used against his own Little Skeleton, standing on the receiving end, Lu Wu fully realized the terror of this tactic in the hands of this pig.

"Earth Thorns" blocked and restricted Little Skeleton's route, forcing it into a confrontation with the pig's charge.

And then, Little Skeleton faced a tragedy.

Although the pig's "Charge" was an unoptimized version, its size was still an advantage.

It didn't need optimization; just charging forward was as powerful as a Wild Boar Charge, and that power was no joke.

It knocked Little Skeleton down in one go.

Fortunately, the pig held back a bit, and Little Skeleton's Block skill, with its energy-dissipating characteristic, otherwise, just this one blow could have disassembled Lu Wu's Little Skeleton.

In the 68th battle, Little Skeleton, who just tasted victory, was defeated again.

However, this time it didn't dampen the spirits of Lu Wu and Little Skeleton.

Lu Wu was busy analyzing Little Skeleton's current situation, while Little Skeleton? It seemed peculiar; after tasting victory, it seemed to enjoy the feeling, its desire for battle became very intense, and after being knocked down, it looked at Lu Wu again.

The flickering pupil fire conveyed a message to Lu Wu.

It, Little Skeleton, wanted another go!

Coincidentally, Lu Wu also felt that the first two battles were too short and quick, so he let Little Skeleton and the pig have a third match.

For the third battle, Lu Wu mainly focused on Little Skeleton's current data.

Hence, he didn't command, letting Tuantuan hold back a bit, allowing Little Skeleton to fight freely while Lu Wu observed from the side.

After Tuantuan knocked down Little Skeleton once, its mood improved significantly and wasn't as fierce anymore, so in the 69th battle, the two little ones fought for five to six minutes until the pig got tired and didn't want to continue.

This five to six minutes of fighting gave Lu Wu a more detailed understanding of Little Skeleton's current situation.

Undoubtedly, after optimizing the three skills Little Skeleton mastered, its combat power greatly improved.

It could even be said, to some extent, Little Skeleton could fight evenly with Tuantuan.

By "some extent," it meant if Little Skeleton could avoid Tuantuan's Wild Boar Charge.

As long as Little Skeleton could avoid the Wild Boar Charge, it could rely on its flexible speed to drag the battle until the pig got exhausted and didn't want to fight.

Defeating Tuantuan head-on?

Lu Wu had to admit, with Tuantuan's guarded nature, Little Skeleton still couldn't manage that.

The main issue was about weak attacks; as soon as Tuantuan activated "Giant" and its defense skyrocketed, even Little Skeleton's strongest Charge couldn't break through its defense.

"So, it's still a matter of attack power?

In that case, I should consider developing a really powerful skill for it!"

"However, developing a truly powerful skill is a bit challenging.

"Charge", after all, is a basic skill, I've developed almost everything from it. Even if there's room for further development, with my current level, it's hard to pull off.

Thus, to get a skill, I need to think of other ways, sigh, if only this little guy could awaken a powerful skill."

Saying this, Lu Wu couldn't help but look at the pig with eyes full of envy.

Look at someone else's pig, awakening three formidable skills one after another, then look at his own Little Skeleton, still no skill awakening after several months.

They're all summoned beasts, why is there such a gap?

Shaking his head, Lu Wu refocused and continued his study: "Regarding Little Skeleton's quality improvement plan, I've almost figured it out, we can try the plan in a bit. If successful, Little Skeleton's quality should soon improve to Black Iron Quality, hopefully, it can awaken a skill by then."

"If by then this little guy doesn't awaken a skill, I'll have to think of other ways, or shift Little Skeleton's skill training focus to dodge."

Hmm, as long as Little Skeleton dodges fast enough, Tuantuan won't hit it, and it won't lose.

Of course, without attack power, winning would still be hard.

"Hmm, hopefully, when its quality improves, it can awaken a slightly stronger skill."

After mumbling for a while, Lu Wu looked at Tuantuan, who had played for less than ten minutes and was lazily lying in Dudu's arms, then looked at Little Skeleton beside, with its flickering pupil fire, while wielding a baseball bat, seemingly reminiscing its moment of victory.

Although he intended to continue training, he decided against it after some thought.

"Let's go, we'll head to the shop."

He needed to research Little Skeleton's upgrade plan, hoping to finalize it today.

So, less than half an hour after opening the room, Lu Wu, under the bewildered gaze of the staff, checked out, holding hands with Dudu and heading to Li Kai's shop.

On the way, Lu Wu, holding Pang Duddu's hand, seemed to suddenly remember something, stopped and looked at Dudu.

"Your weight seems to have stopped increasing recently? And your hands haven't gotten any chubbier, have you started dieting?"

Hearing this, Dudu got nervous: "N-no... no, I'm eating well, I eat five bowls of rice every meal!"

Lu Wu's brows furrowed instantly: "Five bowls? That's so little, and you still say you're not dieting?

That's not okay, you need to eat more!"

Hmm, if Dudu didn't eat more, how could her energy level meet the standard?

Without the energy meeting the standard, how could she trigger her Bonds Skill and regain her peak beauty?

"Wait, energy storage? I seem to have discovered something very significant!"

Lu Wu's mind suddenly sparked, vaguely thinking of a way to keep Dudu always at her peak beauty.

From 15 Feb 2020, Coins spent on books that aren't selected will be refunded within 30 days. However, Fast Passes will not be refunded.

The selected book will have a mark on the corner of the book cover in 30 days to indicate continuation.

Thank you for your understanding.

# Chapter 39: 039 Li Chun's Request

Lu Wu thought carefully, Dudu's Bonds Skill was triggered by energy, not weight.

In other words, Dudu's weight had no direct relation to this skill's activation.

After all, weight and energy did not equate directly.

Besides, Lu Wu still suspected that the reason Dudu's pig could trigger skills and wake three skills was not due to Dudu's hundred pounds of meat, but entirely because of the apple Dudu ate.

Even though Dudu's terrifying weight gain during this time was indeed influenced by the Bonds Skill, greatly increasing her appetite.

But this kind of appetite was actually the body's increased demand for energy storage. In other words, as long as Lu Wu could solve the energy issue, Dudu's appetite would surely decrease, and her weight wouldn't soar like it was now. She would always maintain her peak beauty.

Realizing this, Lu Wu's heart began to soar.

At that moment, Lu Wu didn't even want to research Little Skeleton's advanced problem anymore; he just wanted to figure out how to help Dudu solve the energy issue.

But after thinking about it, Lu Wu had to temporarily give up this research area.

After all, he had no knowledge reserves in this area.

Although he had now mastered a certain degree of Summon Beast Cultivator knowledge and could easily mix some potions to help Summoned Beasts replenish energy or even enhance quality,

those things were for Summoned Beasts, not for humans.

And certainly not for Dudu!

He didn't have that level of skill. What if he recklessly experimented and caused harm to Dudu?

Right now, Dudu could still maintain peak beauty a few days each month.

If he messed up those few days, and his beautiful wife turned into a chubby friend, who would he cry to?

So, after much hesitation, Lu Wu could only temporarily set aside this idea.

"It's not that it can't be done, it's that the timing isn't right. I'll tackle this project when I have enough knowledge,"

Lu Wu said, looking at Dudu, who was attached to him, and Little Skeleton, whose Pupil Fire was constantly shifting between the baseball bat and Tuantuan, following him: "For now, let's focus on improving Little Skeleton's quality so it can beat Tuantuan fair and square!"

At this time, Tuantuan, nestled in Dudu's arms, suddenly woke up, looked around blankly, glared at Little Skeleton, and then snuggled back into Dudu's arms.

........

When Lu Wu brought Dudu to the store, Li Kai, who was studying, stood up immediately.

His respectful attitude might make someone unaware think that Lu Wu was the boss of the store.

This situation was mainly because, in the month of holding tightly to Lu Wu's thigh, Li Kai clearly felt a significant improvement in his Summoned Beast Cultivation skills.

Now, he even had the confidence that he would surely pass the professional summoner certification exam.

And all these improvements were thanks to Lu Wu.

Plus, he had been asking Lu Wu questions almost every day for the past month, gradually putting himself in the position of a student.

So, although Lu Wu was his employee and much younger than him, Li Kai respected Lu Wu from the bottom of his heart.

"Uncle Li, I plan to further perfect Little Skeleton's advanced plan. Can I use your workshop?"

Lu Wu asked after solving a few issues for Li Kai.

"Sure, sure, go ahead and use it."

How could Li Kai refuse Lu Wu?

At this point, he even wanted to join the fun. In his view, studying Little Skeleton's advanced plan with Lu Wu was an excellent learning opportunity.

But seeing Little Skeleton and the chubby Dudu beside Lu Wu, and considering the size of his workshop, Li Kai wisely didn't open his mouth.

"Sigh, if I had known, I would have made my workshop bigger!"

Watching Lu Wu and Dudu enter the workshop, Li Kai felt deeply regretful.

"Should I rent the place next door and expand the workshop?"

Hmm, Li Kai thought it might be possible!

But just as Li Kai was contemplating this, someone walked into the shop.

Li Kai looked up and saw his nephew, Li Chun, who was also Lu Wu's homeroom teacher.

Li Chun came today mainly for Lu Wu.

To be honest, when the incident at Field No. 3 happened, Li Chun was very disappointed in Lu Wu.

He really didn't expect Lu Wu to do such a lousy thing.

But after calming down and thinking from Lu Wu's perspective, he understood Lu Wu.

He knew Lu Wu's yearning and perseverance for becoming a professional summoner, getting upset when he summoned Little Skeleton.

After waking up, Lu Wu began to work hard with determination, struggling all summer.

Lu Wu's hard work paid off, as his academic performance improved significantly.

Supported by his uncle, Little Skeleton's quality also improved, even reaching the standard for the advanced class entrance exam.

It could be said that Lu Wu climbed out of a hopeless abyss through sheer effort.

And just as he was about to emerge, Ye Qingxue kicked him back down.

Li Chun found it hard to imagine what kind of pain Lu Wu was enduring, despite his playful appearance, facing this situation.

With such empathy, Li Chun understood why Lu Wu held onto Dudu tightly.

It was partly an irrational act in the heat of the moment and partly because Lu Wu didn't want to give up.

Dudu was his chosen teammate and his hope of getting into Summoner University, so it was normal for Lu Wu to hold onto her desperately.

Though this behavior was somewhat lousy, since both Dudu and her family accepted it, as a teacher, he had no reason or position to oppose it.

Besides, given Ye Qingxue's character, this matter was already settled; opposing it now was meaningless.

So, Li Chun decided to support Dudu and Lu Wu as much as possible.

He hoped, despite the slim chance, that they could get into Summoner University.

Though he felt it was unlikely, as long as Lu Wu and Dudu hadn't given up, Li Chun believed he, as their teacher, should push them forward.

Thus, he came to his uncle's shop, making a request that seemed utterly astonishing to Li Kai.

"What? You want me to help Lu Wu get into Summoner University?"

"Yes, I know it's tough, but please help him and Dudu, uncle."

Watching his sincere nephew almost kneeling before him, Li Kai felt utterly bewildered.

From 15 Feb 2020, Coins spent on books that aren't selected will be refunded within 30 days. However, Fast Passes will not be refunded.

The selected book will have a mark on the corner of the book cover in 30 days to indicate continuation.

Thank you for your understanding.

# Chapter 40: 040 Confused Li Chun

Lu Wu didn't know that outside, Li Chun was asking Li Kai to bring him over.

After entering the studio, he directly went into work mode.

There was no other way; his own "cheat" wasn't very powerful. Unlike others, who could operate their "cheats" effortlessly to level up, Lu Wu could only rely on his "cheat" combined with hard work.

After months of effort, Lu Wu could now enter work mode in just one second.

And as Lu Wu entered his work mode, everyone else who came with him also entered their own states.

Over at Little Skeleton's side, he skillfully picked up Lu Wu's phone, put on headphones, and started watching TV in a corner.

Recently, he found a website that Lu Wu called "PiliLala," which had lots of interesting TV shows. Among them, there was a character who looked a bit like him, which he found particularly fascinating.

Even though he couldn't understand what they were saying or doing, let alone the plot, this little guy just enjoyed it.

And Dudu, in the same manner, found a spot to crouch down, holding a pig in one hand and resting her chubby chin on the other, gazing intently at Lu Wu.

She thought that Lu Wu looked much more handsome when he was focused on his work compared to usual.

She could watch Lu Wu in this state forever.

Fortunately, Li Kai hadn't come in at this time, nor had he installed any surveillance in the studio. He didn't know what this group of people, who followed Lu Wu, was doing.

If he had known that this group was either watching TV or admiring Lu Wu, with none of them doing any proper work, Li Kai's mindset would have exploded!

What a waste! Such a good learning opportunity was passed up and given to him, Li Kai!

Of course, Li Kai knew nothing of this; he was puzzled because of Li Chun's words.

And Li Chun, in front of Li Kai, didn't know why his uncle was confused.

He thought Li Kai was puzzled because of his vague remarks, so he was explaining Lu Wu's situation to Li Kai with great effort.

Yes, to further help Lu Wu gain his uncle's favor, Li Chun also made Lu Wu sound a bit better than he really was, even against his better judgment.

He deliberately downplayed the fact that Lu Wu held Dudu back from joining the key class and instead highlighted how hardworking Lu Wu was and how talented Dudu was.

Li Chun hoped to use Lu Wu's hard work and Dudu's talent to move his uncle.

So that his uncle would help Lu Wu out.

Although Li Chun didn't fully understand his uncle's situation, he had heard bits and pieces about it.

He knew that his uncle was not a simple person and was close to passing the Professional Summon Beast Cultivator exam.

If his uncle was willing to help Lu Wu, then Lu Wu might have a chance to get into Summoner University.

Of course, the reason Li Chun dared to ask was also because he knew his uncle valued Lu Wu quite a lot.

Even helping to upgrade Little Skeleton's quality. If it wasn't for this, knowing that Lu Wu already had a high favorability with Li Kai, Li Chun wouldn't dare to ask so casually.

"Lu Wu's summoned beast may have poor quality and poor talent, but his determination to become a Professional Summoner is the strongest and most resolute I've ever seen.

Even though he summoned Little Skeleton and couldn't get into the key class, none of this has defeated him!

He's still working hard for his dream. Shouldn't we help such a young man within our power?"

After spending more than half an hour, Li Chun concluded with this sentence.

After saying this, Li Chun's eyes were locked on his uncle, filled with sincerity and hope.

On Li Kai's side, listening to Li Chun's words and looking into Li Chun's eyes, he was reflecting on whether he had used too subtle words when discussing Lu Wu's situation with his nephew last time, causing unnecessary misunderstanding.

Lu Wu's talent was poor?

Lu Wu couldn't get into Summoner University without clinging to Li Kai's support?

What was all this nonsense!

Although from a Summoner's perspective, Lu Wu was indeed unlucky. His initial summoned beast was Little Skeleton, and his family conditions weren't very good. Generally, someone like Lu Wu would indeed be classified as having poor talent and no hope.

But Lu Wu's situation was not ordinary!

Talent wasn't just about summoner talent. Even though Lu Wu wasn't very lucky, his talent as a Summon Beast Cultivator was at a demon level!

Despite studying for only a few months, his achievements far surpassed Li Kai's efforts of more than ten years.

Li Kai couldn't understand why such a genius, whom he considered very fortunate to be associated with, seemed so pitiable and wretched when described by Li Chun.

Not being able to get into a key university?

Come on, as long as he passed next year's Professional Summon Beast Cultivator exam, he could choose whatever place he wanted!

So, at this point, Li Kai really didn't know what to say.

Looking at his uncle sitting there in a daze for a long time without speaking, Li Chun began to panic. He wondered if he should continue praising Lu Wu when the door to the studio at the back of the shop opened.

Hearing the sound, Li Chun turned around and saw Lu Wu. He was a bit confused and his expression was somewhat unnatural, thinking that Lu Wu had overheard his words and feeling a bit embarrassed.

However, he also thought it was a good opportunity, so he kept giving Lu Wu meaningful glances, signaling him to quickly come and ask his uncle for help.

Focusing on signaling Lu Wu, Li Chun didn't notice that his uncle had already stood up respectfully.

On the other side, Lu Wu didn't understand Li Chun's glances. Seeing Li Chun blinking rapidly, he thought Li Chun wanted him to leave.

"Teacher Li, why are you here?

Oh, you're here to see Uncle Li, right?

You guys talk; don't mind me, I'll handle my own stuff!"

Saying this, Lu Wu started to busy himself in the shop, selecting the materials he needed from the shelves.

Seeing Lu Wu misinterpreting his intention, Li Chun panicked. This usually smart guy was so clueless at this moment!

If it weren't for Li Kai, he would have shouted it out loud.

While Li Chun was anxious, Li Kai was even more anxious. He directly pushed Li Chun aside: "No problem, no problem, we're done talking. Now it's fine. Do you need any help?

Just say the word. I'm super free over here!"

Saying this, Li Kai enthusiastically ran over to help under Li Chun's stunned gaze.

He took the materials from Lu Wu's hands and followed him around like a little assistant.

Watching this, Li Chun's glasses shattered to the ground with a 'crack,' and he stood there petrified…

# Chapter 41: 041 New Quality Improvement Plan

Thanks to [Too Naughty] for the 10,000 reward support!

......

This scene in front of him made Li Chun very incredulous.

He said he didn't understand it at all!

What is going on here?

Wasn't his uncle Lu Wu's boss? Wasn't he the benefactor who helped Lu Wu enhance the quality of the Little Skeleton?

Shouldn't Lu Wu be respectful and deferential to his uncle? Why does it seem like his uncle is the one acting like a sycophant?

Could it be because of Lu Wu's looks?

Looking at the scene before him, Li Chun couldn't help but think in a troubling direction.

With this thought, Li Chun couldn't help but break into a cold sweat.

Quickly shaking his head to throw away the chaotic thoughts, he approached.

"Uh, what are you doing? Need any help?"

As soon as Li Chun said this, Li Kai became furious and turned to glare at him.

This look, full of vigilance and menace, as if something precious was about to be taken away, made Li Chun quite nervous.

The thought he had just thrown away couldn't help but resurface, making his mood extremely complex.

It also made him approach even more resolutely, facing Li Kai's gaze head-on.

Yes, these were steps full of a sense of responsibility. Even if the other person was his uncle, he, Li Chun, would protect and save his student!

On Lu Wu's side, he had no idea what Li Chun was thinking about. Regarding Li Chun's enthusiastic offer to help, he thought for a moment and nodded in agreement.

This wasn't because he thought Li Chun could be of much help.

Mainly, Lu Wu felt that, well, it was time to pretend... uh, no, it was time to let Li Chun understand some of his talents.

This teacher was nice to him, and Lu Wu couldn't let this teacher keep misunderstanding him as a scumbag, right?

Lu Wu wanted Li Chun to know today that there were no scumbags among those surnamed Lu!

Since Lu Wu had spoken, Li Kai naturally had no objections. He roughly guessed Lu Wu's intentions, so after Li Chun approached, he directly warned Li Chun while helping Lu Wu boost his prestige: "You just watch from the side quietly. I'll handle any work, and you don't disrupt Mr. Lu."

"Mr. Lu?"

Li Chun was a little confused. What kind of address was this?

Why did his uncle call Lu Wu "Mr."? Did his uncle have some kind of...

Li Chun was filled with questions, but he quickly got the answers to these questions.

After allowing 'help,' Lu Wu started his work, swiftly gathering the materials he needed and entering the workshop.

As soon as he entered the workshop, Li Chun felt that Lu Wu's entire demeanor changed, becoming particularly serious and focused, with a strong aura, as if he had entered his domain.

"Dudu, take the Little Skeleton out first. I'll call you when it's time to bring it back."

"Uncle Li, help me process the Barbarian Bull Bone, White Bone Grass, Yin Spirit Flower, Clear Spirit Water, and electric shock soil."

"Teacher Li, you, um, you're fine, just stand there!"

Under Lu Wu's instructions, the workshop came to life.

Li Chun watched in amazement as Li Kai happily assisted Lu Wu, efficiently handling those materials.

But what surprised Li Chun most was not this. What amazed him the most was that his uncle, while helping, kept asking Lu Wu questions.

"Mr. Lu, I understand why you need Barbarian Bull Bone, White Bone Grass, and Yin Spirit Flower. They were in the formula you used last time, and you've just upgraded the material quality.

But why are you adding electric shock soil and Clear Spirit Water this time? Is there a particular reason?"

"The reason for adding electric shock soil and Clear Spirit Water is simple. Since the quality of the Little Skeleton has improved, its bones can withstand stronger medicinal properties.

Adding electric shock soil can stimulate the Barbarian Bull Bone and other materials to maximize their effectiveness.

Additionally, it can enhance the Little Skeleton's resistance to the Thunder attribute. It has a weakness in this area, and I want to strengthen it.

As for Clear Spirit Water, it softens the medicinal properties and helps address the Little Skeleton's weakness to the Fire attribute.

Of course, just adding these two materials won't completely solve the weakness, but it will enhance it slightly. I also want to gamble to see if I can awaken a skill for the Little Skeleton.

But this is a preliminary formula. Although it seems almost perfect now, it hasn't been used practically, so I minimized the proportions. We'll try it first and see if any modifications are needed..."

"Mr. Lu is indeed impressive. By the way, how did you solve the material blending issue with this plan?"

"About that, actually, it's quite simple..."

...

Watching his uncle act like an eager student, addressing Lu Wu with "Mr. Lu" and "you" respectfully, assisting Lu Wu while constantly asking questions and being astonished by Lu Wu's responses, Li Chun pinched his own face several times until it was swollen, finally believing that what he saw was real and that he wasn't dreaming.

At this moment, Li Chun profoundly realized that sometimes reality is indeed crazier than dreams!

If he hadn't seen it with his own eyes, he wouldn't have believed, even if beaten to death, that Lu Wu, a former academic underachiever, had transformed into someone even his uncle, who was about to become a Professional Summon Beast Cultivator, needed to humbly seek guidance from!

He had been prepared to ask his uncle to help Lu Wu.

But now it seemed that his uncle was the one clinging to find support.

This reality and discovery made Li Chun's feelings extremely complex, leaving him speechless.

He stood there dumbfounded, staring at Lu Wu and the others, until they finished their work, called the Little Skeleton in, and sent Li Kai and Li Chun out.

But even after leaving the workshop, Li Chun still felt a bit dazed, unable to accept the reality.

Meanwhile, after leaving the workshop, Li Kai was the first to pat his big nephew on the shoulder, who was somewhat doubting life: "Now, do you understand how I felt when you just said that?"

"Uncle, Lu Wu, he..."

"Although Mr. Lu's summoned beast is the Little Skeleton, his talent in summoned beast cultivation is at the Demon Level.

Don't be fooled by the fact that he's only studied a few months. His current level has already reached the professional level. Once he can take the exam next year and get the certificate, Mr. Lu can attend any Summoner University he wishes.

As for Dudu, Mr. Lu not sending her to the elite class must have his reasons. I don't think Mr. Lu's level is any worse than some so-called elite Summoner University graduates!

So, don't worry unnecessarily. Having a childhood friend like Mr. Lu is the greatest fortune of Dudu's life!"

Hearing this, Dudu, on the side, nodded her chubby head vigorously in agreement.

On the other side, Lu Wu in the workshop began preparing to enhance the Little Skeleton's quality!

......

Hmm, another new week has arrived. We didn't make it to the top ten of the signing list last week, so I'm begging you all for support this week!

Vote!!! Anything!

# Chapter 42: 042 Little Skeleton's Charging Baseball Bat

Li Kai's Grocery Store.

Inside the store, after Li Chun had a moment of existential doubt, he took another look at Lu Wu.

Now, his evaluation of Lu Wu began to soar infinitely.

Originally, he thought Lu Wu was a jerk who was dragging down Dudu for his own future, but after understanding the real situation.

After re-examining Lu Wu's actions on Playground No. 3, he realized that Lu Wu wasn't a jerk at all; he was practically a perfect man.

What was his behavior at that time?

It was a declaration of sovereignty, an act of love!

It was loudly telling everyone, Dudu is his!

He was also sullying his reputation so that no other girls would covet him in the future.

It meant he was sacrificing his own reputation for Dudu, giving up the entire forest for her!

It took so much courage and steadfast affection to achieve this.

And with his talents, with his looks, he could find any kind of girlfriend he wanted, but he chose the plain-looking Dudu and was willing to go to such lengths for her. Doesn't this prove that Lu Wu is an exceptional man?

Thinking this, Li Chun couldn't help but nod in agreement with Li Kai's words.

Hmm, the plain-looking Dudu, meeting such an excellent and devoted Lu Wu is indeed her luck.

On the other side, Lu Wu had no idea what kind of scenario Li Chun had imagined outside.

At this moment, he was busy brewing Little Skeleton Soup.

Ever since Li Kai missed the quality improvement of Little Skeleton last time, he set up a set of equipment for brewing Little Skeleton Soup in his studio.

It was to make it convenient for Lu Wu to brew Little Skeleton Soup in the store, in hopes of having a chance to participate and get some benefits.

Now, he finally got his wish, and the equipment he prepared could be used.

With the specialized equipment, it became very simple for Lu Wu to do it.

He just put all the materials inside, boiled it, turned off the heat, added Little Skeleton, and simmered for 30 minutes.

Of course, 30 minutes was because Lu Wu's plan had not been certified by the system yet. Lu Wu was worried that there might be some issues he hadn't foreseen, so he only brewed Little Skeleton for thirty minutes. After seeing the results, Lu Wu pulled Little Skeleton out to take a look.

...

Quality Improvement Plan: Little Skeleton Soup (Modified)

Plan Description: Cheap tap water, combined with Barbarian Bull Bone and White Bone Grass, boiled, then adding Clear Spirit Water and electric shock soil, and finally simmering a fresh, live Little Skeleton for 30 minutes to 3 hours.

Plan Evaluation: Not bad, almost exploiting everything you have learned to the extreme. If you increase the dosage, it should enhance the Little Skeleton's quality, removing the (pseudo) tag. As for advancing beyond Black Iron, keep up the effort.

Ps: So, you are determined to brew this Little Skeleton to the end, aren't you?

...

Although Lu Wu had some confidence in his plan, his heart only settled after seeing this information on the attribute board.

Afterward, Lu Wu struck while the iron was hot and clicked for modifications, making another attempt immediately.

This Little Skeleton Soup plan was originally a simplified version. Lu Wu spent over a month on this plan, putting a lot of effort into it, and had many ideas in mind.

These ideas hadn't been certified by the system before, requiring experiments with Little Skeleton, so he didn't dare to use them recklessly, mostly keeping them in reserve.

Now that the plan was out, Lu Wu let loose. The more he modified it, the more excited he became, until after over an hour, the modifications exceeded fifty percent.

After finishing, Lu Wu admired it for a while, then submitted the plan, feeling a bit apprehensive, like a student waiting for the teacher to grade his homework.

The system didn't make Lu Wu wait long, responding in just a few seconds.

Lu Wu's modification plan was approved, and Little Skeleton Soup became Little Skeleton Soup 1.0. The 1.0 version had a certain degree of improvement in effect and a slight increase in resistance to the attributes of thunder and fire.

Lu Wu was particularly satisfied with this plan. Without saying a word, he began gathering the required materials from Li Kai's store.

Hmm, because this plan was created under existing conditions, all the required materials were available in Li Kai's store.

Lu Wu calculated that the total cost of materials for this plan was close to 200,000.

This was the cost price!

So he felt a bit embarrassed while taking them, but Li Kai kept urging Lu Wu to take more, enthusiastically helping him handle the materials.

With Li Kai's help, soon, Lu Wu started brewing the second pot of Little Skeleton Soup.

"Go on, this time, when you come out, you might be able to beat TuanTuan!"

Hearing this, Little Skeleton's eye flames, which had dimmed a bit after its phone was snatched away halfway through its show, brightened up immediately. After glancing at TuanTuan, who was staring greedily at the pot in Dudu's arms, Little Skeleton eagerly jumped into the soup.

Before going in, Little Skeleton didn't forget to bring the baseball bat.

Lu Wu originally planned to stop it but reconsidered, deciding it wouldn't affect the outcome, allowing Little Skeleton to take it in.

Little did he know, this decision brought him an unexpected surprise.

Three hours later, Little Skeleton emerged from the soup with the baseball bat.

As Lu Wu, who had been teaching Li Kai while keeping an eye on it, saw the three-hour-brewed Little Skeleton, his mouth couldn't help but twitch into a smile.

Li Kai also quickly congratulated Lu Wu, praising his ability, because just from the appearance, one could see the changes in Little Skeleton.

Three hours later, Little Skeleton had grown a few centimeters taller, its bones darker, and a metallic sheen. Most eye-catching was the baseball bat it brought in.

Originally an ordinary, cheap bat purchased online, it now had a strange change. The solid wood bat had acquired a faint black metallic sheen, similar to Little Skeleton's current bone color.

This change was unexpected for Lu Wu. He immediately checked the baseball bat and Little Skeleton's attributes.

...

Name: Little Skeleton

Power: 1 star (Ordinary)

Quality: Black Iron (Enhanced) (one tier)

Attribute: Undead

State: It feels great, it even wants to hit a pig!

Skill: Charge (Optimized) (Master)

Block (Optimized) (Skilled)

Dodge (Optimized) (Skilled)

Heavy Slash (Unmastered)

Weakness: Light, Fire, Thunder

Description: After the quality improvement, basic attributes have been enhanced, combat power has increased, and it has awakened skills.

Although just basic skills, they significantly enhance its strength.

Also, the baseball bat in its hand seems to have changed.

Ps: See, even an unlucky person can be lucky once in a while.

...

Item: Little Skeleton's Charging Baseball Bat

Quality: Ordinary (Enhanced) (one tier)

Side Effect: Slight Electric Shock (Can deliver a slight electric shock effect through charging)

Ps: Don't expect too much from the electric shock effect.

Pss: Remember to charge the baseball bat before fighting.

...

Looking at Little Skeleton and the baseball bat's attributes, Lu Wu couldn't help but smile.

"It seems, Little Skeleton really has hope of beating TuanTuan!"

...

Recommended novel: "My Girlfriend Is a Crown Princess"

Hmm, this is a novel written by a beautiful young lady. Go check it out!

# Chapter 43: 043 Recruiting Teammates

Once Little Skeleton advanced, both Lu Wu and Little Skeleton mentioned the weather was nice, the moon was high, and they wanted to go to the training hall to practice.

However, the pig from Dudu's house disagreed.

This pig was not only lazy but also clever.

Seeing that Little Skeleton was different now, and that bat was different too, it just didn't want to fight Little Skeleton.

"Hmm, bullying the weak is fine, but getting beaten up is not!"

Although it wouldn't necessarily lose, the pig absolutely wouldn't engage in a fight where it might get hit!

With Tuantuan's disagreement, the fight wouldn't start, plus Lu Wu had been busy all day and now it was already past 11 PM, so Dudu's Dad called looking for his daughter.

Having no other choice, Lu Wu could only take back the man's daughter.

Speaking of taking Dudu home, it was quite an interesting matter.

After Lu Wu took Dudu home, Dudu's Dad pulled him inside to give him a scolding, but right after they went in, Dudu's Mom pushed Dudu's Dad to one side.

Unlike Dudu's Dad, Dudu's Mom's attitude towards Lu Wu was unbelievably good, treating him like a son, caring for him in various ways, even scolding Dudu's Dad.

"What's wrong with the young couple coming home late?"

"It would be better if they didn't come back. If they hadn't come back tonight, Dudu's Mom was prepared to discuss with Lu Wu's Mom about getting them together."

Their chubby daughter had finally found a partner, and such a fine one at that; if she didn't hold on tightly, it wouldn't be easy to find another.

With this thought, Dudu's Mom was even prepared to let Lu Wu stay overnight.

What could Lu Wu do? He, of course, refused!

He was still a young bachelor who needed to maintain his integrity, he couldn't just spend the night outside, and besides, Dudu wasn't slim yet.

Lu Wu finally managed to escape from the enthusiastic Dudu's Mom and returned to his own house.

Lu Wu originally thought that it was already 12 o'clock, and there should be no one awake in his house, but as soon as he opened the door, he ran into his old dad.

"Hmm, he was sleeping on the sofa."

"What's going on?" Lu Wu asked curiously.

"I just told your mom that I might have to go on a business trip recently." Lu Haikong looked resentful.

Lu Wu immediately understood, "And then you got kicked out? Dad, I'm not saying anything, but your small company has little money and lots of problems. You wish you could go on business trips for 200 days a year. Why don't you change to another job?

Spend more time with my mom!"

"Get lost, do you think finding a job is that easy now? Do you think I want to? Forget it, not talking to you, you wouldn't understand even if I did, go to sleep!"

Lu Haikong pulled the blanket over his head, indicating that he didn't want to deal with Lu Wu.

Lu Wu shrugged, said nothing, and went straight to his room.

After Lu Wu went back to his room, Lu Haikong, who had previously covered his head with the blanket, peeked his head out, looked at Lu Wu's door, and muttered, "Seems like Little Skeleton's quality advanced!"

Then, Lu Haikong covered his head again and went back to sleep.

As for Lu Wu, after returning to his room, he began to ponder one issue: how to charge Little Skeleton's baseball bat.

Directly plug it into the socket?

Well, Lu Wu thought that wouldn't be a very good idea, but if he wanted to die on the spot, it could be used.

But Lu Wu didn't want to, so he had to think of something else.

"Could a phone charger work?"

Lu Wu's imagination went wild. He tried it and found out that, unexpectedly, it worked.

After plugging in the phone charger, the baseball bat had a new 'charging' progress bar, and it was quite fast; it estimated that it would finish in about three hours.

Seeing this progress bar, Lu Wu was dumbfounded.

A phone charger could fully charge it in two or three hours. Could this thing be lethal?

Forget about electrocuting a person, it probably couldn't even kill a mouse!

Lu Wu felt particularly disappointed, while Little Skeleton on the side, well, Little Skeleton was watching TV and had no comment.

"Since it can advance, maybe it will bring a surprise next time the quality upgrades."

At this point, Lu Wu could only comfort himself.

Then, Lu Wu put the charging bat aside and began his final pre-sleep task—writing a diary!

Lu Wu didn't know when he had developed the habit of writing a diary.

His diary was quite different from others; it was very detailed. From what happened today to the knowledge gained, to reflections on life, Lu Wu wrote everything he could think of.

Occasionally, Lu Wu would also write about his plans for tomorrow or the future, just like today.

In his diary, Lu Wu wrote:

"As of now, the previous considerations and accumulations about Little Skeleton's quality improvement have been exhausted. Little Skeleton's quality has increased, but it's already reached a halt. Given my current knowledge reserves, it will be difficult to enhance Little Skeleton's quality in the short term; it can only be polished slowly.

However, Little Skeleton's power is already sufficient for now, and what's important for me at this moment is not Little Skeleton's power improvement; it's finding a new teammate.

The high school competition requires a team of three to participate. With Dudu, there are only two of us, still one short.

Although the high school competition isn't until early next year, I can't wait until the last minute.

After all, nurturing a teammate takes time, and because we didn't join the elite class, things like secret realms and warm-up matches have to be managed on our own.

Therefore, to cultivate a qualified teammate, I need to start scouting for a suitable candidate during this period.

Hmm, let me list my requirements for a new teammate. Very simple, just three points: a girl, rich, and quite silly!"

Among these three, the most important was rich!

After all, Lu Wu wasn't doing charity. He himself was poor, and Little Skeleton's upgrades relied entirely on Li Kai's support. He couldn't find another poor person, could he?

If he found another poor person, Li Kai's family assets would be depleted, so he had to find a rich one to be the sucker.

Of course, if he could find a summoned beast with inherent nurturing value, combined with tactical value, from a wealthy family, good-looking, and silly, to be the new teammate, Lu Wu would be ecstatic.

But Lu Wu thought carefully and realized it wouldn't be that easy.

This type of person might exist in the school, but they probably weren't available for Lu Wu.

After all, those from wealthy families who wanted to become summoners were usually supported and placed in prominent classes without issue.

If someone from a wealthy family wanted to become a summoner and didn't get into an elite class, their summoned beast was probably incredibly useless.

Even the Little Skeleton from Lu Wu's family could be nurtured by others with a budget of one or two million, and there wouldn't be many more useless summoned beasts out there.

Therefore, real wealthy people willing to spend were mostly found in elite classes.

This gave Lu Wu quite a headache.

After pondering for a while, Lu Wu suddenly had a flash of inspiration: "Ye Qingxue seemed to have said 'those who can't even beat ordinary class students have no right to stay in my class,' didn't she? Should I go to the elite class and find one to beat?"

# Chapter 44: 044 money jar

Lu Wu thought he was quite the clever devil!

Since all his ideal teammates were in the honors class, why not just go there, pick one, and smack them down?

Lu Wu swore, he genuinely was just looking for a teammate, not intending to get back at Ye Qingxue.

Besides, how could this be called revenge?

The teachers were working so hard to teach the honors class, he should help reduce some pressure, right?

The more Lu Wu thought about it, the more feasible it seemed, and he couldn't resist crafting a detailed mischief plan on the spot.

Early the next day, Lu Wu dragged Dudu along to cause some trouble.

Actually, Lu Wu's plan was quite simple.

Anyway, his reputation at school was already not great, so he went to the honors class area flaunting his success, arousing the emotions of the honors class students.

Then, he'd pick one he liked to provoke, beat her up, and kick her out of the honors class.

Then, he could recruit her!

If she refused to join, he'd keep beating her until she cried!

After recruiting her, he'd give her some candy!

The plan was very simple, though a bit rough, but it was straightforward and effective.

However, just as Lu Wu was about to put it into action, a problem arose.

As a famous figure at school, he especially attracted attention from his classmates.

Especially when he and Dudu acted together and headed to the honors class, it caused a huge commotion throughout the whole school.

The news immediately reached the principal of School No. 3, and the poor principal broke into a cold sweat upon hearing it.

Was this little ancestor really planning to take on all the honors class students?

If Lu Wu really did that, it would cause an upheaval in the whole school.

The old principal quickly gave orders, having Li Chun intercept and pull Lu Wu back, and even issued a school-wide notice for this matter.

The notice was long, official, and formal, but to sum it up, the core idea was basically: In the honors class area, neither Lu Wu nor dogs were allowed!

At that moment, Lu Wu was not happy.

Why!

Why bully him, an ordinary, weak, and helpless student?

Lu Wu felt really resentful; he had spent a whole night thinking up a way to recruit teammates, and now it was banned, making him very unhappy.

On the other side, everyone in the honors class, from teachers to students, were also very unhappy.

Especially Ye Qingxue!

It was said that because of this, she lost her temper several times and made the honors class students suffer a lot.

Of course, this had nothing to do with Lu Wu; after all, he was just an ordinary student, and no matter how much Ye Qingxue threw a fit, it wouldn't affect him.

He was busy with his own matters!

With the honors class recruitment plan failed, Lu Wu had to think of another way.

In this regard, Li Chun provided significant help!

Li Chun, after all, was one of the few who knew about Lu Wu's talent. He was also aware that what Lu Wu wanted was just a teammate to form a small team.

Lu Wu was doing all this for Dudu, so loyal and dedicated a student deserved help.

So, with Li Chun's help, Lu Wu obtained a list of wealthy students from School No. 3.

Upon seeing the list, Lu Wu chuckled!

As expected, over ninety percent of the students on the list were in the honors class, which was obviously not going to work for Lu Wu.

With no other option, Lu Wu had to look for the wealthy ones in the ordinary classes.

To his surprise!

This search led Lu Wu to uncover a whole storybook.

These wealthy students in the ordinary classes mostly had their own stories.

Some were inherently lazy, while others had complicated family issues, in short, each had their own problems keeping them from entering the honors class.

After going through this, Lu Wu was almost desperate to find a money jar as a teammate and contemplate just keeping anyone.

But whenever Lu Wu thought of Lee Kai, whose wealth he had nearly exhausted, he could not help but be reminded.

Over the past couple of months, Lu Wu's various experiments had cost Lee Kai hundreds of thousands.

Though he still had some family wealth left, Lu Wu felt a bit reluctant to keep draining it further.

After all, over the next year or so, Lu Wu had to support himself, Dudu, and recruit teammates, which would cost millions, wouldn't it?

Besides, what team doesn't have a rich member?

Even a laid-back group like K-On had a wealthy girl, so their team, aiming to ace the college entrance exam, must find someone rich and foolish, otherwise, their future expenses would be unmanageable!

But what if there was no one?

Just when Lu Wu was almost desperate, Li Chun hesitantly recommended someone to him.

"Hao Zhijian? Why does this name sound familiar?

Oh right, isn't he the unlucky fellow who got bumped by Tuantuan?"

Luckily, Lu Wu had a photographic memory; otherwise, he wouldn't have remembered the guy who excitedly came to trouble him a couple of weeks ago, only to be bumped by Tuantuan and expelled from the honors class by Ye Qingxue.

Lu Wu didn't expect Li Chun to recommend him.

However, upon careful thought, Lu Wu figured it might actually work.

Though this guy had some issues with him, and he wasn't a girl to be gentle with, his summoned beast was decent, and he was wealthy, making him suitable as a money jar. At least milking him wouldn't weigh too heavily on Lu Wu's conscience.

If it were a cute girl, Lu Wu might have hesitated.

"Alright, him it is!"

Once decided, Lu Wu confirmed the choice.

However, although he had selected the candidate, getting him on board was another issue.

Given that they had some animosity, and considering Hao Zhijian's current predicament was Lu Wu's fault, he likely still held a grudge against Lu Wu, so Lu Wu didn't think just asking would work.

"Hmm, I must use the right approach, first beat him up, then trick him!

Yes, that's it!"

Lu Wu muttered to himself, diving back into his world, plotting how to use force and cunning to subdue this money jar.

Li Chun initially wanted to tell Lu Wu that it was actually Hao Zhijian who approached him, hoping to join Lu Wu's team.

Seeing Lu Wu already agreed and immersed in his world, Li Chun decided not to mention it.

Consequently, without knowing, Lu Wu busied himself, eventually creating a "Hao Zhijian Persuasion Guide".

Afterward, Lu Wu took Dudu to block Hao Zhijian.

When they intercepted Hao Zhijian in his class, Lu Wu didn't let the surprised Hao Zhijian speak and directly said: "Didn't you want to fight me? Come, I'll give you a chance!

Find a place for our summoned beasts to fight!"

Hao Zhijian was baffled; this wasn't how he imagined it would go.

"Uh, I..."

"Don't be so hesitant, if you're a man, come with me!"

Saying this, Lu Wu grabbed Hao Zhijian and dragged him off. Today, Lu Wu intended to conquer this money jar through force!

...........

Thanks to [Mo Ti] [Dream Maker Emperor] [Book Friend 20180908195051597] [Divine Heavenly Clothes] [I am a small account] for the rewards and support!

# Chapter 45: 045 Frozen Bird

```

Being dragged by Lu Wu, Hao Zhijian felt a bit flustered.

After all, what Lu Wu displayed was a particularly obvious want to fight him, to make him submit.

This made Hao Zhijian feel somewhat resentful.

He had already lowered his head and asked Li Chun to intercede with Lu Wu, but Lu Wu still wanted to fight him!

However, he did not dare to get angry. On one hand, he could not beat Dudu, and on the other hand, his chances of getting into Summoner University depended entirely on Lu Wu.

In fact, during the time when Hao Zhijian had been expelled from the key class, he and his entire family had been worried about his future.

Although Hao Zhijian's family had money and could help him transfer to another school,

this would take some time. Moreover, it was already a week or two into the semester. Most students had already formed teams, making it difficult to find suitable teammates. Besides, his own summoned beast was not particularly outstanding. Others might not accept him.

Even if he was accepted, he might not make it into the core team, thus making his chances of getting into Summoner University slim.

Therefore, transferring schools was not a good choice.

While Hao Zhijian was worrying about this matter, his father discovered something unusual about Lu Wu.

Yes, Hao Zhijian's father investigated Lu Wu, since in their view, it was because of Lu Wu that Hao Zhijian was expelled from the key class. It was normal to investigate Lu Wu, as well as to plan retaliations, since it concerned his future.

However, after the investigation, his father suddenly changed his mind.

Because his father uncovered a secret about Lu Wu.

In fact, both Lu Wu and Dudu were very ordinary before the summer break.

Normally, with the summoned beasts they had summoned, they shouldn't have a chance with the key class. Yet, in just one summer, their summoned beasts met the key class standards.

Dudu's summoned beast was even able to crush Hao Zhijian. There was certainly something fishy about it, and they discovered the key.

Li Kai! It had to be Li Kai!

Lu Wu's unusual encounter began when Li Chun introduced him to work at Li Kai's grocery shop!

So, it was clear for anyone that Li Kai was the benefactor behind Lu Wu's growth.

With this sudden realization, Hao Zhijian's father had no intentions of retaliating against Lu Wu anymore. He even saw it as an opportunity.

Someone who could cultivate two mediocre summoned beasts to such a level in one summer had to be a Professional Summon Beast Cultivator, and not just any professional. This was a golden opportunity!

As long as his son could connect with Li Kai, getting into Summoner University would be a breeze!

However, they also knew that suddenly trying to connect with Li Kai was not a good choice. After all, they were not familiar with Li Kai's personality, and even if they succeeded, they still had the team issue to resolve.

Luckily, they heard that Lu Wu and his group were also looking for teammates. How convenient!

More importantly, their closest attention to Lu Wu paid off. They were among the first to notice that during the training in the key class, Lu Wu's Little Skeleton had changed since the beginning of the school year.

Because of this, Hao Zhijian urgently sought Li Chun to join Lu Wu's team.

Therefore, Hao Zhijian's current resentment was not due to worrying that he couldn't beat Lu Wu.

He might not be able to defeat Dudu, but he had some confidence against Lu Wu.

He just felt it was tough, worrying that if he beat Lu Wu badly, the chance to connect with Li Kai would disappear.

So, during this time, Hao Zhijian was particularly honest and sincerely expressed that he was already convinced, surrendering completely.

At that moment, Lu Wu was bewildered.

What's going on? I haven't even started fighting, and you're already surrendering?

This guy is acting weird!

Hao Zhijian had no choice but to sincerely express his hope to join Lu Wu's team and become his subordinate, casually mentioning Li Kai.

This was a bad move!

Mentioning Li Kai was meant to show Lu Wu his sincerity.

However, to Lu Wu, the situation felt completely different.

With his keen mind, as soon as Hao Zhijian mentioned Li Kai, Lu Wu could almost guess what was happening.

This guy must have investigated him, and the purpose was obvious, preparing for retaliation.

This didn't sit well with Lu Wu. After all, it was Dudu who beat him, and Ye Qingxue who pushed him out. Yet, this guy investigated and wanted to retaliate against him. This was not acceptable!

Of course, with Lu Wu's magnanimity, he wouldn't hold a grudge over such a small thing, and he certainly wouldn't seek revenge.

After glancing at the eager Little Skeleton, Lu Wu patted Hao Zhijian's shoulder and said meaningfully, "Since we are going to be teammates, we need to understand each other better!"

Then, Lu Wu dragged Hao Zhijian into a training room, booked a room, and arranged a battle.

Hao Zhijian had no choice but to brace himself and fight.

His summoned beast was a beast-type summoned beast, and it was rather rare—a flying species.

...

Name: Frozen Bird

Power: 1 star (Ordinary)

Quality: Black Iron

Attribute: Ice

State: Lively

Skills: Cold Aura (Unmastered)

Tear (Skilled)

Dive (Skilled)

Weakness: Fire

Description: This summoned beast has decent quality; unfortunately, it followed the wrong master. This idiot has no idea how to train it.

...

It had to be said that in terms of quality, this summoned beast was leagues ahead of Little Skeleton.

However, Hao Zhijian didn't know how to cultivate it. A good magic-based summoned beast was trained by him for close combat, and not very well.

Last time, he got crushed by Dudu because he was too careless, attempting a swift finish with a Dive and a Tear, only for Tuantuan to counter with a Giant and a Charge, taking them both out.

Yet, Hao Zhijian didn't think his failure was his fault.

He had some confidence in his summoned beast's power and his ability to command it in battle.

After all, during the summer, he used the Frozen Bird's quality advantage to crush many of his classmates in the training camp.

So, even though he was forced into the ring, Hao Zhijian was quite confident about securing a victory.

There was no suspense in a fight between the Frozen Bird and Little Skeleton, right?

His only concern was how to win.

"Crushing victory won't look good. Better hold back a bit, don't want to discourage him too much. After all, I still need him to introduce me to Master Li. Let him lose gracefully."

With this inexplicable confidence, the battle between Hao Zhijian and Lu Wu began, and, well, ended!

Yes, the battle ended the second it began.

Before the Frozen Bird could take off, Little Skeleton closed in with a Charge and finished it off with a simple strike.

This time, the victorious Little Skeleton wasn't as excited as the first time. Looking at the motionless Frozen Bird on the ground, its pupil fire was indifferent, and it felt a bit bored!

It didn't want to fight a bird; it wanted to fight a pig!

```

# Chapter 46: 046 Prepare

Little Skeleton wanted to fight the pig, but the pig didn't want to pay any attention to it.

This entire time it just stayed in Dudu's arms and wouldn't come down for anything, and even if Dudu put it down, it would just lie on the ground and pretend to be dead.

Since it wasn't sure it could beat Little Skeleton, it absolutely refused to fight it.

While the pig didn't want to fight, the bird was eager to go.

From the bird to its owner, they all felt their previous loss was due to carelessness.

So they all wanted to try again.

If they wanted to fight again, so be it. Compared to the pig, Little Skeleton was more obedient.

Even though it wasn't really keen on fighting the bird, if Lu Wu told it to fight, it would fight!

So, very soon, Little Skeleton and the Frozen Bird's second battle began.

This time, the Frozen Bird learned its lesson. It flew up into the sky to keep a distance from the start, as Little Skeleton had no means of long-range attacks. Once the bird was in the sky, it was basically invincible.

That was the advantage of a flying species summoned beast.

Naturally, there were limitations in formal competitions with restrictions on flying height and duration, ensuring flying species summoned beasts couldn't exploit loopholes.

However, there weren't any such restrictions in Lu Wu's setup.

But that didn't mean the Frozen Bird could do whatever it wanted.

The bird also had no long-range attacks, so while Little Skeleton couldn't hit it in the sky, it couldn't hit Little Skeleton either.

Hao Zhijian clearly didn't intend to use such an underhanded strategy against Lu Wu. Under his command, the Frozen Bird circled around Little Skeleton, and he seized the opportunity to make his bird launch a combination attack.

"Dive, Tear"

Combining these two skills was Hao Zhijian's killing move. This combination was extremely fast and powerful.

This time, both the Frozen Bird and Hao Zhijian were determined to succeed.

In the end, as the attack came down, Little Skeleton performed an optimized "Dodge," nimbly evading the attack. Turning around, it struck down with a stick, and once again the bird was knocked cleanly to the ground.

The first failure could be attributed to a lack of preparation on Hao Zhijian's side.

But this second defeat left them with no excuses.

Little Skeleton's agile movements and precise strike greatly amazed Hao Zhijian.

At that moment, Hao Zhijian's eyes lit up, his gaze towards Little Skeleton and Lu Wu full of heat.

Clearly, Hao Zhijian was coveting something.

Of course, it wasn't Little Skeleton or Lu Wu he was after.

To him, Little Skeleton was nothing more than a worthless summoned beast.

And Lu Wu?

He was just a lucky guy. If Lu Wu hadn't met Li Kai, Hao Zhijian was sure Lu Wu would be nothing in front of him!

Naturally, what Hao Zhijian thought and how he chose to show it were two different matters.

It must be said, setbacks really could sharpen a person's temperament.

A week ago, when Hao Zhijian had just joined the elite class, he carried himself with an air of superiority.

After being crushed by Dudu and kicked out of the elite class by Ye Qingxue, Hao Zhijian had restrained his arrogance.

At this point, he was even willing to flatter Lu Wu, whom he looked down on, to get closer to Li Kai.

Of course, Lu Wu had a general idea of what Hao Zhijian was thinking.

After all, Hao Zhijian was still young, and many of his emotions were not fully concealed.

So, Lu Wu could read his inner thoughts through some subconscious micro-expressions and had an idea of why Hao Zhijian was approaching him and how he viewed him, but Lu Wu didn't mind.

After all, his intentions in getting close to Hao Zhijian weren't pure either.

Just as Hao Zhijian needed a powerful backer, Lu Wu needed a money jar; everyone got what they needed!

Furthermore, since this guy believed Li Kai was Lu Wu's powerful backer, Lu Wu decided to make it a reality.

On one hand, it was a form of self-protection since Lu Wu hadn't properly secured his certification yet.

On the other hand, explaining things would be troublesome and unnecessary.

And it had nothing to do with Lu Wu wanting to play the fool and take advantage of people.

Additionally, Lu Wu wasn't planning to rush to have this fat sheep slaughtered by Li Kai. Hurrying was no good.

There were many things he hadn't prepared yet.

He needed to wait until he was ready before slaughtering this fat sheep.

So, after thrashing Hao Zhijian twice and ensuring he joined his team, Lu Wu found an excuse to reject Hao Zhijian's request to meet Li Kai and sent him away.

Then, Lu Wu took Dudu to Li Kai, pushed aside the eager-to-join Dudu, and pulled Li Chun into the workshop for a long conversation.

Half an hour later, they emerged from the hot workshop, sweat-drenched. Li Kai then made a call to Li Chun.

Using the excuse of protecting Lu Wu's privacy and providing a better growth environment, he emphasized the importance of keeping Lu Wu's secret.

Li Kai had already emphasized this once before, and this reiteration made Li Chun realize how seriously Li Kai took the matter, so he solemnly vowed to keep Lu Wu's secret.

After securing the secret and settling things with Li Kai, Lu Wu started preparing for something else.

Since he and Hao Zhijian were mutually exploiting each other, Lu Wu wouldn't hesitate to bite him hard.

To take a big bite out of him, Lu Wu needed bait that would make Hao Zhijian willingly spend money. And that bait was on Hao Zhijian himself, or rather on the Frozen Bird.

Yes, Lu Wu planned to exploit a skill that the Frozen Bird had awakened but hadn't mastered.

Given Lu Wu's current level, creating a whole new skill-training program for a summoned beast might be difficult, but helping a beast master an already awakened but unmastered skill wasn't too hard.

Lu Wu only took one night to come up with a preliminary plan, set the bait, and patiently waited for the prey to take the bait.

Lu Wu was patient, but Hao Zhijian wasn't.

In the blink of an eye, they had been teamed up for three days.

During those three days, Lu Wu did nothing productive apart from calling Hao Zhijian over for a daily beating, let alone meeting Li Kai.

After three days of this, Hao Zhijian finally got anxious and seriously demanded that Lu Wu take him to meet Li Kai, saying he had something important for Master Li.

Thus, the bait was set, the knife was sharpened, and the prey was eager.

With everything ready, Lu Wu decided not to tease him any longer and reluctantly agreed to take him to meet Master Li Kai!

At the same time, he led the prey into a carefully prepared trap…

...

Thanks to [One Lifetime of Freedom in the Mortal World] for the generous reward.

By the way, the recommendation votes are almost at ten thousand, please support!

# Chapter 47: 047 Master Li

Under Hao Zhijian's plea,

Lu Wu finally "helplessly" took this teammate to see Li Kai.

It took three days to secure this opportunity to meet Master Li, and Hao Zhijian was still very excited.

To make a good impression on Li Kai, both he and his father made thorough preparations.

They dressed properly, and Hao Zhijian even received special training on manners. If it weren't for the concern of being too abrupt, Mr. Hao had even planned to come personally.

Of course, in the end, Mr. Hao didn't come, but he sent Hao Zhijian with a gift that wasn't very valuable, but had a lot of style.

According to their thinking, someone of Li Kai's stature must have seen a lot of monetary bribes, and ordinary money wouldn't do, so the gift had to be stylish, and of a high level.

To this, Lu Wu expressed: 〒\_〒

But he didn't say anything, after all, the gift was for Li Kai, not for him.

Besides, Lu Wu didn't need to show any expression about this.

As soon as Hao Zhijian entered Li Kai's store and handed over the gift, Li Kai snorted disdainfully and then looked at Hao Zhijian with a few degrees of coldness.

Of course, Li Kai wasn't putting on a show.

That was his actual personality.

So cold and aloof, in the first month Lu Wu worked for him, they didn't interact much.

It was only later when Lu Wu displayed his talents and Li Kai coveted them, that he thawed his ice and became very warm and respectful towards Lu Wu.

But that was because it was Lu Wu, it was because of knowledge.

Facing someone like Hao Zhijian, whom he saw as a fat sheep, there was no reason for him to be pleasant.

His cold demeanor left Hao Zhijian at a loss, since the young man was inexperienced. Although he had encountered some setbacks, he hadn't been severely beaten by society, and couldn't adjust well to the cold shoulder.

Lu Wu noticed the awkward atmosphere and helped smooth things over.

"Uncle Li, Zhijian is my teammate in the high school league. He's here today to ask for your help!"

Saying this, Lu Wu nudged Hao Zhijian.

Completely unaware of Lu Wu's sinister intentions, Hao Zhijian gave Lu Wu a grateful look and then respectfully said to Li Kai, "Master Li, I've always heard Lu Wu talk about your exceptional skills in Beast Breeding, and how you have significantly helped him and Dudu.

Therefore, I've always looked up to you, and today I'm here firstly to pay my respects and secondly to ask for a small favor.

I'd like your help to take a look at my Summoned Beast!"

As Hao Zhijian spoke, he didn't notice that Lu Wu and Dudu beside him were both displeased.

Who do you think you are, calling "Dudu" like that?

If not for considering you a fat sheep, they would have been ready to give you a mixed doubles beating by now.

Meanwhile, Li Kai was watching Lu Wu. Seeing Lu Wu's face darken, Li Kai's expression instantly mirrored it: "No time, not helping!"

When those cold words came out, Hao Zhijian panicked.

Not knowing what to do, he forced himself to say a few good words, but it didn't work. It was only thanks to the "warm-hearted" Lu Wu who couldn't stand it and spoke for Hao Zhijian that Li Kai reluctantly agreed.

"For Xiao Lu's sake, I'll make an exception today, bring your bird here!"

Hao Zhijian was overjoyed and quickly handed over the bird, then anxiously stood by and watched.

On Li Kai's side, after taking the bird, he examined it carefully.

As soon as he did, his face turned sour, and he shook his head: "Such a good Summoned Beast, completely ruined, what a waste!"

These words didn't sit well with Hao Zhijian.

What do you mean it's ruined? He thought he took good care of his Summoned Beast, it was white, plump, especially strong, and its attacks were sharp.

Before meeting Dudu and Lu Wu, his bird had been invincible.

Does this old man even know what he's talking about?

Of course, Hao Zhijian didn't dare say this out loud, but his emotions showed on his face.

Li Kai raised an eyebrow: "What, you don't agree?"

Hao Zhijian's face changed: "No no, I trust Master."

"Hmph, hypocrite, but I won't waste words on you.

For Xiao Lu's sake, I'll give you a tip, your Summoned Beast has been poorly raised.

If you don't believe me, go home and put your bird in the freezer overnight and see for yourself!

That's all I have to say, now leave!"

With that, Li Kai stood up, waved his hand dismissively like a master, and headed to the workshop.

This left Hao Zhijian completely bewildered. Just when he thought the meeting was over, Li Kai's phone buzzed in his waist pocket. He glanced at it and turned to Lu Wu.

"Xiao Lu, don't forget to have him pay the consultation fee!"

After saying this, Li Kai strode into the workshop, and Hao Zhijian was stunned: "Consultation fee? What consultation fee?"

"Uncle Li charges for consultations, usually starting at a hundred thousand. Since you're my classmate and teammate, I'll give you a discount, only 99,500!"

Hao Zhijian's face turned black instantly, so his relationship with Lu Wu was worth only 500?

And for just a few words, he had to pay a hundred thousand? Isn't that robbery?

But he didn't dare say anything, nor did he dare to make any decisions on his own, so he made an excuse and called his father.

Hao Zhijian's father, Hao Renjie, also thought ten thousand for a few words was a bit steep, but for his son's future, he reluctantly paid.

In the end, Hao Zhijian transferred the hundred thousand to Lu Wu and then left with a darkened face.

As Lu Wu watched him leave, his face was filled with a loving smile, like watching his own fat sheep.

Yes, it was actually Lu Wu's idea to suddenly charge a consultation fee.

He had two purposes in doing this. One was to create an image of Li Kai as someone who loves money.

Since Hao Zhijian didn't bring valuable gifts, Lu Wu was worried that without creating this image, the boy wouldn't know how to please Li Kai.

The other reason was because the boy called "Dudu"!

How broad-minded was Lu Wu, to let Hao Zhijian call his Dudu by name?

If he started calling Dudu before even seeing her majestic beauty, what would happen if he saw her in the future? Shouldn't he be corrected for this bad habit of calling names casually?

Yes, Hao Zhijian would never expect that the cost of trying to get closer to Lu Wu with a simple nickname would be ten grand.

Of course, he wasn't thinking about this at the moment. Hao Zhijian was now pondering whether he should follow Li Kai's advice and put his bird in the freezer overnight...

# Chapter 48: 048 One cut 5,000,000

Regarding the matter of putting the bird in the freezer, Hao Zhijian never thought it was reliable.

What? Does the old man think that since it's called "Frozen Bird," it must be related to ice, so it has to be put in the freezer, right?

He had thought about it before and even specifically signed up for an ice skills awakening training course.

For this, the Hao Family spent at least a million, but in the end, not a single ice skill was awakened.

Eventually, the teacher at the training class said that the bird had no magic skill talent.

Therefore, when Li Kai said that Hao Zhijian should put the bird in the freezer, the Hao Family found it incredibly unreliable and were very hesitant.

Finally, Hao Renjie made the decision, "Do it!"

Since they already regarded Li Kai as their last hope for Hao Zhijian to get into Summoner University, they had to believe and gamble on it!

But they had to be careful at night, and let Hao Zhijian watch the freezer, making sure he didn't fall asleep. If anything happened to Frozen Bird, they needed to take it out immediately.

With Hao Renjie's decision, the Hao Family took action.

After putting the Frozen Bird in the freezer, the family stayed awake the whole night, waiting outside.

They waited for an entire night.

After enduring the night, they nervously opened the freezer.

As soon as the freezer was opened, the family felt a chill in their hearts. The half-meter-high Frozen Bird was now completely frozen into an ice block.

"Zhijian didn't suffer a backlash, which means the Frozen Bird isn't dead.

Quick, take it out and warm it up."

Under Hao Renjie's command, the family hurriedly scrambled to retrieve the bird.

But just as they rushed toward it, the bird, frozen into an ice block, suddenly opened its eyes, and then it unexpectedly shot up, flying out of the kitchen and into the living room.

The Hao Family was startled and was about to chase after it when they heard a clear chirp. Then, a cold wind blew in, pushing them back into the kitchen.

"What's going on?"

The Hao Zhijian family looked at each other, their bloodshot eyes filled with confusion and belated joy.

"Did the Frozen Bird really awaken an ice skill?"

"It must have!"

The three of them, overjoyed, rushed out of the kitchen as soon as the cold wind stopped. They were stunned to find that their nearly 100-square-meter living room was now completely covered in a thin layer of ice.

Seeing this scene, the Hao Family felt immense respect for Li Kai: "Master Li truly is a master. We couldn't solve it even after spending millions, and he solved it with a ten-thousand-dollar fee!"

What they didn't know was that the person who truly solved the problem wasn't Li Kai but Lu Wu, who Hao Zhijian had dismissed.

And they had no idea that Lu Wu could solve this problem because they had already spent millions on it before.

Their money wasn't wasted; it just needed a trigger.

So, it wasn't that Li Kai solved a problem that millions couldn't with just one word.

He just stole the credit accumulated from a million with a single word.

Of course, the Hao Family didn't know this and were currently immersed in the powerful outburst of the Frozen Bird.

At this moment, they had only one thought in their minds: "Master Li is amazing!"

After shouting this, the Hao Family rushed to embrace the Frozen Bird.

Now, in their eyes, this bird was not just a bird; it was their ticket to a higher level.

With such an incredible burst skill, with proper training, getting into Summoner University shouldn't be a problem.

And this was just the beginning of their contact with Master Li.

They had just contacted him, and spending only ten thousand, they hadn't even fully latched onto his influence yet, and it was already so effective. Imagine what a hundred or a million would achieve!

Now, the Hao Family, excitedly, couldn't wait to go to Li Kai and spend more.

As long as the money was spent wisely, getting into a top Summoner University was surely within reach, right?

In this state, the Hao Family suddenly didn't resent Lu Wu and even thought he was their lucky star.

If Lu Wu hadn't beaten Hao Zhijian, he wouldn't have left the privileged class, nor would he latch onto Li Kai. Without that, who knew when his skill would trigger, or if he could even get into Summoner University!

Of course, this excitement was just a heat-of-the-moment thing.

It didn't mean they would go and thank Lu Wu. Right now, their minds were only focused on two things.

One was the Frozen Bird's skill, and the other was how to latch onto Li Kai.

As for Frozen Bird's skill, after its burst, it seemed to have exhausted all its energy, barely able to stand, looking like it could collapse at any moment. Hoping for it to perform again was impossible.

The Hao Family had a bright idea and decided to take the bird to Li Kai.

On one hand, they wanted Li Kai to check it out, and on the other hand, they wanted to take the opportunity to gain his favor.

They had their own calculations; although it seemed like spending money was the way to latch onto Li Kai.

They knew Lu Wu had latched on without spending a dime, and they believed their son was no less than Lu Wu. They wanted their son to receive the same treatment.

Saving money wasn't the main point; the main goal was to latch onto Li Kai.

Thinking that if their son was valued by Li Kai and became his disciple, it would be a great success.

In their minds, this idea was good, but unfortunately, they were just being seen as easy targets.

From the first time Hao Zhijian saw Li Kai, they had already fallen into Lu Wu's trap.

Now, coming early in the morning, weren't they just coming to be taken advantage of?

Li Kai didn't have a pleasant attitude either and maintained an aloof and unreachable demeanor.

The Hao Family had no choice but to call Lu Wu to help mediate.

Lu Wu readily agreed and came over with a butcher knife.

Then things went smoothly; under the enthusiastic mediation of Lu Wu, Li Kai examined the bird for Hao Zhijian and provided a comprehensive cultivation plan for Frozen Bird.

The plan included everything from training to nutrition.

Of course, the plan wasn't free. The Hao Family paid 5 million for it.

Seeing the 5 million credited to his account, Lu Wu felt for the first time just how easy it was to make money.

From start to finish, neither he nor Li Kai mentioned a price, but the Hao Family insisted on a deal, starting directly at 5 million. Lu Wu was especially satisfied.

The Hao Family was also delighted, feeling that spending 5 million to get Master Li's plan and a chance to latch onto him was worth it!

# Chapter 49: 049 Summoning Beast Equipment Research

Hao Zhijian's 5 million was transferred to the account, and Lu Wu was especially happy.

After all, although this money was nominally given to Li Kai, in reality, it was his.

Li Kai was just the frontman for him.

Of course, Lu Wu wouldn't go to Li Kai to take the money, nor was it necessary. Having the money with Li Kai was much better than with him.

After all, it was millions. Once it passed hands, there would be traces, and where there are traces, there would be trouble.

Anyway, having it with Li Kai was the same. Li Kai had never held back or hesitated when spending money for Lu Wu!

Not to mention that this 5 million was originally earned by Lu Wu. Even if it were his own 5 million, Lu Wu would be happy to spend it.

Of course, his willingness was one thing, but Lu Wu being a bit forceful was another.

Before using Li Kai's money, although Lu Wu knew he had made some contribution, he still felt a bit embarrassed.

After all, Lu Wu still had some face. Taking someone else's money didn't sit right with him, and spending it lavishly wasn't possible.

Now that the money was earned by himself, Lu Wu felt very generous when spending it.

With money in hand, Lu Wu could now research some things he'd only dared to imagine before, such as Summoning Beast Equipment!

Yes, like the "Little Skeleton's Charging Baseball Bat" type of Summoning Beast Equipment!

In fact, after that piece of equipment came out, Lu Wu had always planned to arm Little Skeleton.

Because in this aspect, Lu Wu had researched the league's rules.

After research, Lu Wu found that Summoned Beasts could use equipment, but there were restrictions: it must be Companion Equipment, and no more than three pieces.

The so-called Companion Equipment was similar to Little Skeleton's baseball bat, which mutated during the advancement process and was unique to the little Summoned Beast.

That meant carrying Little Skeleton's baseball bat into the competition was fine. Besides the competition, Little Skeleton could carry two more pieces of equipment.

This got Lu Wu thinking.

Although the high school league only started next year, various warm-up matches for the high school league would start soon.

These warm-up matches were important for students who wanted to participate in the high school league. They helped students adapt to the competition environment and atmosphere in advance and gain some match experience. Key Teams participated every year.

Although Lu Wu's team was not a Key Team, they also needed to participate in the warm-up matches.

Not only did they need to participate, but Lu Wu was even thinking about crushing the school team from Quancheng No.3 Middle School in the warm-up matches.

However, as someone who knew every student in the school, Lu Wu was well aware of Quancheng No.3 Middle School's level, which included quite a few freaks.

Although Lu Wu was confident he could defeat these freaks in the high school league, the warm-up matches would start soon, definitely within a month.

That meant Lu Wu didn't have much time left.

Upgrading Little Skeleton's quality and combat power alone was not enough. To have a meaningful combat power boost, Lu Wu could only pin his hopes on equipment.

Coincidentally, the rich and foolish Hao Zhijian sent the money over, and the 5 million was enough for Lu Wu to research and tinker with Little Skeleton's equipment.

"Although Little Skeleton's bone quality had improved, its advantage was still in speed and agility.

In close combat, on the front line, Little Skeleton's strength ranked at the bottom among the same quality and power level.

So, Little Skeleton's equipment should mainly enhance its speed.

Also, its battle with the Frozen Bird exposed Little Skeleton's lack of long-range attacks, so it also needed a long-range attack method."

After muttering and researching for half a day, Lu Wu designed a whole set of equipment for Little Skeleton.

This set included a leather armor, a cloak, a pair of shoes, and three flying knives.

Of these, the leather armor, cloak, and shoes were meant to be a safeguard.

After all, Companion Weapons were a matter of opportunity and coincidence, and Lu Wu hadn't fully understood them yet. Whether he could actually figure it out was uncertain, so he planned to have Little Skeleton try them for a while first.

And during this period, make Little Skeleton practice flying knife skills like crazy.

Yes, for a while, he wouldn't immediately give Little Skeleton all the equipment right away.

It wasn't that simple!

After Little Skeleton's baseball bat came out, Lu Wu actually started researching this aspect immediately.

After research, Lu Wu discovered that the baseball bat became Little Skeleton's Companion Weapon because of its connection to Little Skeleton's emotions.

Firstly, Little Skeleton had used the baseball bat for a long time, and secondly, it was during the period when Little Skeleton wanted to hit a pig with the bat.

Under such an emotion.

Coupled with the effect of Little Skull Soup 1.0, this equipment truly took shape.

So, to give Little Skeleton more equipment, it was most important that Little Skeleton liked them.

In this case, Lu Wu needed to buy Little Skeleton's equipment and let it cultivate feelings for them over a period.

Considering that taking care of one sheep was the same as taking care of two, Lu Wu also conveniently bought a set of equipment for Tuantuan, a leather armor to enhance its defense.

After all, that pig was also Little Skeleton's teammate.

As for Hao Zhijian's Frozen Bird? Sorry, who was Hao Zhijian? What was a Frozen Bird?

A money jar and a tool beast for competition didn't need any special treatment!

Just ignore them!

Soon, with money in hand, the things Lu Wu wanted arrived quickly.

The second day after the 5 million was in place, Little Skeleton and Tuantuan were already armed.

Although the equipment on them was just ordinary items with no attribute boost, wearing the equipment felt vastly different.

This made Hao Zhijian incredibly envious.

At the same time, Hao Zhijian was also a bit expectant.

He thought that since even those who hadn't spent money had equipped Summoned Beasts, he, who spent 5 million, should also get something, right?

Yes, Hao Zhijian thought so!

His equipment hadn't arrived yet, so it must still be in preparation. After all, he spent money, so his stuff must be better than Lu Wu's!

He just needed to be patient and wait two more days.

But after waiting a week, during which Little Skeleton and Tuantuan had changed their equipment several times, he still didn't see any action on his side.

Li Kai had no intention of getting him anything.

This made Hao Zhijian anxious.

Finally, he couldn't hold back and casually mentioned equipment while pretending to be nonchalant as Li Kai arranged a training plan for Frozen Bird.

"Oh, you mean that equipment! You want it too?"

When Li Kai addressed the issue directly, Hao Zhijian got so excited; his head bobbed like a little chick.

Li Kai, next to him, took a puff of his cigarette, glanced at his phone, and casually remarked, "You want this stuff? Then you need to pay extra!"

# Chapter 50: 050 One month

A blink of an eye, and a month had passed since Hao Zhijian joined Lu Wu and the team.

Speaking of this past month, Hao Zhijian was a mix of snot and tears.

Damn it, these days were truly unbearable.

He was bullied by Lu Wu in various ways.

Almost every other day, Lu Wu found random excuses to beat him up.

At first, Hao Zhijian was bewildered. What exactly had he done to provoke this guy, who bullied him every day out of boredom?

He had tried his best to avoid Lu Wu, but it was of no use.

When he couldn't take the bullying anymore, Hao Zhijian had no choice but to mention it to Li Kai.

He hoped to get some protection from Li Kai.

After all, he was a major client of Li Kai, having spent a fortune.

Not to mention the initial five million, he later added another three million for equipment, without even a guarantee of receiving anything.

Having spent nearly ten million, he didn't expect Li Kai to be partial, but at least to be objective and fair, right?

As soon as he started complaining to Li Kai, Li Kai gave him a sideways glance and said, "Serves you right." This almost pushed Hao Zhijian into depression.

It was Li Chun who, seeing him bullied by Lu Wu every day, quietly pointed out the reason for his suffering.

Maybe, possibly, probably because of Dudu.

When Hao Zhijian first heard this, he scoffed!

Lu Wu bullied him because of that chubby girl?

Ridiculous!

He didn't believe Lu Wu treated Dudu well because he liked her; he thought Lu Wu was using Dudu, interested in her Summoned Beast's power.

So, he believed being bullied wasn't due to this reason alone.

But after observing closely, Hao Zhijian discovered that his bullying was indeed related to this.

That Lu bastard had a huge jealous streak.

Whenever he dared to call out "Dudu," he would get beaten up.

If he got within half a meter of Dudu, it got even worse. Lu Wu wouldn't stop until he had him crying.

Understanding the reason he was being beaten, Hao Zhijian's feelings were complicated.

He realized that Lu Wu truly liked that chubby girl and treasured her, fearing anyone would take her away.

Please, with that chubby girl, who had such heavy taste to challenge Lu Wu for her?

Of course, he didn't dare say this out loud, as it would definitely get him beaten up. He could only keep his distance from Dudu, not coming within a meter of her, and addressing her by her full name.

Even so, he still occasionally got bullied by Lu Wu.

Fortunately, getting bullied wasn't his entire month.

After all, Lu Wu couldn't beat him up all day long.

Lu Wu was also busy. He had to train Little Skeleton, research Summoned Beast cultivation, and work on Summoning Beast equipment projects, only bullying him in spare time.

So, besides being bullied by Lu Wu, Hao Zhijian spent most of his time on Summoned Beast cultivation.

Or rather, on the training plan Li Kai provided for his Frozen Bird's physical to magic system transition.

Honestly, although Lu Wu added him to the team because they needed a money jar and a fat sheep, he wasn't just exploiting him.

In fact, the training plan Lu Wu provided was worth its cost.

Lu Wu didn't just hand over the training plan; he optimized it several times after giving it.

Did you really think Lu Wu bullied him because he was jealous and narrow-minded?

Um, okay, maybe he was!

But besides this, he also needed to understand the Frozen Bird's training progress and optimize the plan accordingly.

Speaking of the Frozen Bird's training plan, Lu Wu had to sigh about what it meant to be wealthy.

Originally, Lu Wu thought spending five million on a training plan was already luxurious, but he realized that the five million was just the beginning once the training started.

Besides the five million, the Hao Family sent over training plans for "Ice Needle" and "Ice Shield" to Li Kai during the training process.

Lu Wu didn't know where the Hao Family got these plans from or how much they spent.

But that wasn't important; what mattered was these plans expanded Lu Wu's knowledge, essentially giving him two free skill training methods.

However, neither Little Skeleton nor Tuantuan were of the Ice system, so they couldn't master Ice Skills. After mastering these skills himself, he could only teach them to the Frozen Bird.

In this regard, Lu Wu had some professional ethics.

He didn't hide anything, learning thoroughly and then teaching Li Kai, who then taught Hao Zhijian.

And since Li Kai took it as a learning opportunity,

He taught Hao Zhijian with utmost patience.

During that period, Hao Zhijian even felt Li Kai had discovered his extraordinary talent and had taken a liking to him.

This made Hao Zhijian feel a bit light-headed.

He thought he was finally about to rise, finally able to stop acting according to Lu Wu's whims, and finally enjoy fair and just treatment.

No longer like before,

Betting three million on uncertain Companion Equipment.

No longer being trampled upon by Lu Wu.

And soon, Li Kai might shift all his affection to him.

When that happens, he would repay all the resentment he had suffered from Lu Wu.

Thinking about this bright future, Hao Zhijian's mentality swelled a bit.

Of course, this small swell wasn't enough to make Hao Zhijian lose control, as he had experienced the harshness of society.

He was quite adept at adjusting his mindset.

He still had his rationality.

He knew victory was within reach and couldn't afford to be arrogant; he had to be low-key and humble.

But the problem was, just as he was adjusting his mindset, trying not to let himself float away, his Frozen Bird, after a month of training, finally mastered "Ice Needle" and "Ice Shield," as well as "Cold Aura."

With these three skills, the Frozen Bird now had five skills and had successfully transitioned from physical to magical.

In other words!

He, Hao Zhijian, was awesome!

At this point, Hao Zhijian couldn't contain himself.

His little heart began to swell, he started to feel the skies clearing, the rain stopping, and he, Hao Zhijian, had risen.

So, joining Lu Wu's team for a month, Hao Zhijian, for the first time, wanted to actively challenge Lu Wu!

# Chapter 51: 051 Research Failure

Li Kai's Grocery Store.

The bloated Hao Zhijian pushed open the door to the workshop and excitedly said, "Lu Wu, let's duel!"

Lu Wu and Li Kai, who were busy, glared at him and shouted, "Get lost!"

"Oh, okay!"

The bloated Hao Zhijian shivered all over, and his head shrank back.

He obediently backed out and closed the door behind him.

Thus, Hao Zhijian's first attempt to challenge Lu Wu to a duel ended in failure.

Inside the workshop,

After driving Hao Zhijian out, Lu Wu and Li Kai continued their work.

To be precise, Lu Wu was busy, while Li Kai was helping him out.

At this moment, Lu Wu was occupied with something he had been researching for a month, the Summoning Beast Equipment.

In the past month, Lu Wu had been frantically searching for knowledge about the Summoning Beast Equipment.

However, Lu Wu was disappointed that after a month of hard work without proper channels, he hadn't gathered much information.

There was almost no relevant knowledge, and all he learned in one month were just a few simple facts.

Nonetheless, the information wasn't entirely useless.

As far as Lu Wu knew, Summoning Beast Equipment could be roughly divided into two types:

One type was Companion Equipment, and the other was non-Companion Equipment.

The former included the Little Skeleton's Charging Baseball Bat, which was an advanced mutation. Only the Little Skeleton could use it, making it exclusive equipment.

The latter was more diverse.

Some came from Secret Realms, some were accidentally created by Summon Beast Cultivators, others mutated due to the environment, or were ancient weapons and items that mutated.

Despite their types, none of these items were common or popular on the market.

This was because non-Companion Equipment had many limitations. Even the pieces in Li Kai's store were mostly for display and hadn't sold in half a year.

In contrast, Companion Equipment, or the Companion Equipment cultivation business, was quite a hot commodity.

One reason was that Companion Equipment had a certain growth potential. More importantly, high school competitions allowed the use of Companion Equipment, which alone created a huge market for it.

Lu Wu learned that the cost of cultivating a piece of Companion Equipment ranged from hundreds of thousands to millions.

This was based on the uncertainty of the attributes and abilities of the Companion Equipment and the uncertainty of successful cultivation.

Don't complain about the high price. This was the only legal way to cheat!

Oh, by the way, this information came from Hao Renjie, who planned to bring money to Li Kai, or rather, to Lu Wu.

After learning this, Lu Wu's emotions were incredibly complex.

He was amazed by the craziness of the wealthy and deeply understood the costly nature of the Summoner profession. He also slightly understood why Ye Qingxue looked down on him upon realizing he wasn't rich. Moreover, he couldn't help but despise Li Kai.

That guy ran a store but didn't even know about such a lucrative avenue.

This insight made Lu Wu very interested in this business. Earning millions without worrying about success or failure was a surefire way to make money. If he could start this business, he would soon achieve many of his little goals.

This was why Lu Wu had been intensely researching Companion Equipment over the past month.

However, cultivating such equipment was not easy.

Especially for Lu Wu, who lacked relevant knowledge. His only way to study was by examining the accidental success of the Little Skeleton's Charging Baseball Bat.

Studying this single case was unimaginably difficult.

In the past month, Lu Wu had spent an enormous amount of effort and conducted countless experiments.

Each experiment cost at least tens of thousands of dollars.

After a month, he hadn't successfully created Companion Equipment and had already spent one hundred to two hundred thousand.

Lu Wu's current mood was imaginable.

Under these circumstances, Hao Zhijian still dared to provoke him. Wasn't that courting death?

If Lu Wu hadn't been making a final effort, he would have made Hao Zhijian cry.

Twenty minutes after driving Hao Zhijian out, Lu Wu and Li Kai finally completed their preliminary work.

Yes, they had cooked another pot of soup.

Despite the soup in front of them being a dark, foul-smelling concoction even Tuantuan avoided, it was the result of Lu Wu's hard work over the past month.

"I have reached the limit of everything I can study about Companion Equipment.

Based on the available information, Companion Equipment formation seemed to be related to the Summoner's emotions. Ideally, a bond between the Summoned Beast and the item was necessary.

In other words, the Summoned Beast must like the item for it to advance.

To meet this requirement, I changed Little Skeleton's equipment several times, swapping the Flying Knife for Flying Needle until it was satisfied."

"Additionally, I modified the soup based on the previous Little Skull Soup, extracting and enhancing possible factors."

"In short, this is the best I can do now. Whether it succeeds depends on this attempt.

If it fails, it proves that my knowledge is insufficient to touch this domain. In that case, I must temporarily give up on the Companion Equipment project."

"Mr. Lu will surely succeed!"

Unlike the anxious Lu Wu, Li Kai had blind confidence in him, and Lu Wu didn't even know where this confidence came from!

"Let's hope so!"

After taking a deep breath, Lu Wu pushed the fully armed Little Skeleton into the soup.

Then, he and Li Kai began a tense and long wait, which lasted three hours.

Three hours later, the Little Skeleton emerged from the soup.

The moment it came out, Lu Wu rushed over to check all its equipment.

Baseball bat, no change.

Flying Needle, no change.

Cloak, no change.

Shoes, no change.

Leather armor, no change.

In other words, Lu Wu's month of hard work, consuming nearly two hundred thousand dollars, ended in failure.

Despite anticipating this result before the experiment, Lu Wu still felt significantly unhappy when it became reality.

"It seems I'll have to wait until I get my professional license to access more information for Companion Equipment."

After trying to calm himself and saying this, Lu Wu immediately opened the workshop door and grabbed the bird-brained Hao Zhijian standing outside laughing foolishly.

"Didn't you want to duel with me? Let's go!"

With that, Lu Wu dragged the bewildered Hao Zhijian away!

# Chapter 52: 052 Quancheng Cup

October 7.

On this day, Lu Wu brought Dudu and Hao Zhijian, who was still limping from a beating yesterday, to the Quan City First Summoner Training Ground.

Hmm, the Quan City First Summoner Training Ground was the largest training ground in Quan City and also the venue for the high school league.

Of course, Lu Wu was not here today to participate in the high school league.

The league would not officially start until March next year, still quite some time away.

However, they were indeed here to prepare for the competition.

In order to build excitement for the league and to encourage the emergence of more Summoners in Quan City, the officials held an annual prelude competition called the Quancheng Cup.

This competition was basically a simplified warm-up version of the high school league.

The rules and process of the Quancheng Cup were simplified from the high school league.

Other than removing the individual competition, the rest was almost identical to the high school league.

The participants were mostly high school seniors.

With a high degree of restoration, the Quancheng Cup allowed the players to adapt to the competition environment ahead of time, helping them perform better when the league officially began.

Of course, it was also a good way to make money; it was said that each Quancheng Cup made the officials a lot of money.

But this obviously had nothing to do with Lu Wu.

For Lu Wu and his team, the focus was on the competition itself.

Lu Wu took the Quancheng Cup very seriously and brought his team here early in the morning.

Furthermore, as the undisputed captain of the team,

Lu Wu was very mindful of his teammates' emotions and started with a speech, attempting to stress the importance of the Quancheng Cup to his teammates.

"Our team has no teachers, no coaches, and although we have Uncle Li, he is not good at team competitions.

This makes us naturally weaker in team cooperation and tactics.

Hence, the Quancheng Cup is crucial for us."

"Whether our team can perform well in the high school league next year depends on whether we can gain enough experience in the Quancheng Cup. So everyone, do your best!

Also, remember, don't bring our grudge against the special class into the competition.

Our main task is the competition, not to make trouble. If we want to prove ourselves, now is not the time, got it?"

Lu Wu focused on the experience and the honing aspect, completely downplaying his desire for the Quancheng Cup prize money.

His two teammates had completely different reactions to Lu Wu's speech.

Naturally, Dudu did not need to be mentioned.

That girl's heart and mind were all about Lu Wu, her eyes glued to him.

Who knew if she understood anything; her head nodded eagerly, her chubby hands clapped constantly, very supportive.

As for Hao Zhijian beside him, well, this guy was not even looking at Lu Wu.

This made Lu Wu very unhappy. He had been speaking mostly for Hao Zhijian, and yet the one who did not need to listen was listening carefully, while the one who was supposed to listen wasn't paying attention. Lu Wu, infuriated, was ready to slap him, but remembered they were outside, so he held back, giving the money jar a bit of face.

Lu Wu restrained his temper and approached Hao Zhijian, asking, "What are you looking at?"

Hearing Lu Wu's voice suddenly in his ear, Hao Zhijian was startled and instinctively covered the back of his head, realizing Lu Wu didn't hit him.

Hmm, for a moment, he felt a bit surprised and touched.

Pointing in the direction he had been looking, Lu Wu followed his finger and squinted his eyes.

In the direction Hao Zhijian pointed, a group of teenagers in identical uniforms as theirs was also gathering.

Lu Wu had seen these people before, over a month ago on Playground 3. Most of them were students from the special class of the third high school.

As Lu Wu looked at them, someone from their side saw him too, and soon all the special class students turned their heads, their eyes fixated on Lu Wu's team.

Over the past month or so, thanks to Lu Wu, the special class students had been tormented by Ye Qingxue.

This had unknowingly fostered a hostile atmosphere towards Lu Wu.

It could be said that Lu Wu was almost like a public enemy to the special class.

Under such circumstances, the special class students stared fiercely at Lu Wu's team, scaring Hao Zhijian.

Despite his usual bravado and claims to defeat the special class, he crumbled under their gaze, trembling.

He was slightly better, at least he dared to glare back while trembling. But Dudu couldn't even do that.

Already timid, she instinctively hid behind Lu Wu, trying to use his not-so-broad shoulders to shield her chubby self.

Lu Wu, on the other hand, felt he was a bit innocent.

He didn't understand why the special class looked at him so fiercely, thinking there might be some misunderstanding.

Mainly because Little Skeleton hadn't got his equipment yet and Lu Wu hadn't grown much, so he didn't have the confidence to confront them directly.

Without much confidence to intimidate them, Lu Wu thought it best to resolve the misunderstanding. They were all classmates and should be friendly.

With this thought, Lu Wu showed a warm smile to the special class and waved.

Lu Wu's smile made his plain face even plainer, charming the girls in the special class.

The boys' gazes became even fiercer, wishing to rush over and beat Lu Wu up.

Damn womanizer, flirting with their goddesses right in front of them.

Lu Wu thought of chatting with them and getting to know their Summoned Beasts, but seeing the situation, he let it go.

"Sigh, these special class students are really unfriendly. Never mind, let's go inside!"

Lu Wu, feeling resentful, lowered his hand and led his team into the training ground.

The Quancheng Cup registration was done online.

It started a week ago, and Lu Wu's team registered early on, coming today to participate in the preliminaries.

However, under the scrutiny of the special class, Dudu and Hao Zhijian were nervous.

Seeing this, Lu Wu quickly reassured them, "Don't be nervous, don't be nervous. In these competitions, there are often some underhanded tactics. The organizers usually separate the seeded teams and give them weak opponents to start.

So don't worry, our first opponent won't be too strong!"

Dudu, hearing this, relaxed a bit. But Hao Zhijian muttered, "What if the organizers think we are the weak ones?"

Right after Hao Zhijian finished, the organizers sent the preliminary information to their phones.

Seeing the information, Lu Wu's team turned pale...

# Chapter 53: 053 The atmosphere gradually became strange

"Attention, Team 233, your preliminary match will commence at 10:30 on Arena A8. Additionally, your opponents for this match are Team 038. Please prepare in advance.

Best of luck!

— Quan City Cup Organizing Committee."

When Lu Wu received this message, both Dudu and Hao Zhijian went pale instantly.

The Quan City Cup served as a warm-up for high school league tournaments.

The competition was significant in scale, and it had its own dedicated official website.

On the official website, to warm up the competition, seed teams had been promoted since a week ago. Coincidentally, the team Lu Wu's team had to face, Team 038, was one of those seed teams.

Although it was just one of the lower-tier seeds, it was still a seed team.

Their information was available on the official website.

Team 038 came from the honors class of Quan City No.4 Middle School.

The captain, Zhang Ke, had a Summoned Beast of Black Iron Quality, the Jungle Wolf.

The other two members, one named Zhang Yong, had a Summoned Beast of Black Iron Quality, the goblin,

And another named Zhang Shan, had a Summoned Beast of Black Iron Quality, the goblin.

This was the information about Team 038. It wasn't much, but just based on this information, coupled with the official recognition as a seed team, it already brought immense pressure to both Dudu and Hao Zhijian.

After all, one of them was naturally timid, and the other was used to being bullied by Lu Wu.

They had just begun to feel a bit more confident, only to be pushed back down by Lu Wu.

Hao Zhijian had little confidence left after a month, and seeing that they were going to face a seed team made him extremely anxious.

The only one who remained calm was Lu Wu, but even he felt somewhat irked inside.

"Screw this, why did they have to start us off against a seed team?"

According to protocol, shouldn't they have thrown a few chaff teams at them first to let them warm up, accumulate some experience before challenging the seed teams?

This immediate arrangement of fighting a seed team put significant pressure on Lu Wu.

However, as the captain and the core of the team, he absolutely couldn't show his pressure; he had to exude confidence to reassure his teammates.

With no other choice, Lu Wu sighed and then took hold of Dudu's chubby hand, gently patting her head with exceptional kindness: "Don't worry, trust me, we can win this!"

With just one sentence, Dudu, who had been nervous, instantly relaxed and nodded vigorously.

After calming Dudu, Lu Wu turned to look at Hao Zhijian beside him. Hao Zhijian turned his head, gazing earnestly, hoping for some words of encouragement from Lu Wu.

Instead, Lu Wu's gentle expression immediately switched to a fierce one: "You can be nervous, but if you perform poorly and we lose, I'll twist your head off!"

Yep, that's typical Lu Wu, always double standards!

But this method was quite effective on Hao Zhijian, scaring him out of his fear instantly.

Or it could be said that Hao Zhijian's nervousness shifted to fear of Lu Wu.

After settling his two teammates, Lu Wu led them to roam around the training grounds.

The match was scheduled for 10:30, and it was still early, so Lu Wu planned to use this time to explore the training grounds.

Firstly to observe others' matches, and secondly to seize the chance to check out others' Summoned Beasts.

Since it was the preliminaries today, the training grounds were not open to live spectators; only participating contestants were present.

It was possible that some of them might be their next opponents, so gathering information in advance was essential. Even if not, as a quasi-professional Summon Beast Cultivator, Lu Wu needed to expand his knowledge of Summoned Beasts.

However, Lu Wu didn't have much luck in inspecting others' Summoned Beasts.

Firstly, the contestants present were highly wary of unfamiliar players chatting them up, fearing they were there to gather intelligence.

Despite his attempts, only girls were willing to talk to him.

Additionally, the event staff soon noticed Lu Wu wandering around, touching everything, and promptly warned him to either sit down and watch or wait at the designated competition arena, rather than wandering around and complicating their work.

Unable to do anything else, Lu Wu reluctantly led his teammates to the waiting area adjacent to Arena A8.

Upon arriving, Lu Wu noticed that quite a few people were seated in the spectator area of Arena A8.

However, their attention was not on the two chaff teams currently competing on Arena A8, but rather on the waiting area.

Naturally, they weren't here for Lu Wu's team.

Their interest lay in the yet-to-arrive seed team, Team 038.

Of course, with Team 038 not yet present, they did occasionally glance at Lu Wu's team.

After all, Lu Wu's team was Team 038's first opponent.

If possible, these players hoped Lu Wu's team would be strong enough to force Team 038 to show more of their strength.

But when everyone saw Lu Wu's team, they immediately dismissed that thought.

Some even hesitated whether to turn and leave.

Lu Wu's team gave off the vibe of a total chaff team.

The team's three Summoned Beasts consisted of:

One Little Skeleton and one Mini Pig—both recognized as particularly weak Summoned Beasts. Although Hao Zhijian's Frozen Bird was decent, it was merely decent, nothing outstanding.

Even if the Frozen Bird were outstanding, it couldn't make up for two weaklings!

So, most of the spectators firmly believed this would be an incredibly dull, one-sided match.

This kind of match wasn't what they wanted to see.

They would rather watch other seed teams compete.

If there was anything that might make Lu Wu's team memorable, it would only be Lu Wu's ordinary face.

Sure enough, Cheng Qingqing stayed precisely because of Lu Wu's face.

After seeing Lu Wu's team's Summoned Beasts, she had planned to leave, but then she glanced at Lu Wu's face and sat back down.

"Qingqing, let's go?"

Her teammate, Liu Qing, pulled her: "Nothing interesting to watch here!"

"I'm not leaving; it's quite interesting!"

"A Mini Pig and a Little Skeleton, what's there to see... Uh, alright, you're right!"

Initially focused solely on the Summoned Beasts, Liu Qing hadn't noticed Lu Wu's ordinary face. When she did, she was briefly stunned, then nodded firmly and sat back down with Cheng Qingqing.

Their behavior left the male teammate beside them bewildered. What's going on? When he too saw Lu Wu's ordinary face, his confusion turned to a pang of jealousy.

What made his jealousy worse was that this wasn't an isolated case; other teams with female members reacted similarly.

As more girls noticed Lu Wu, the atmosphere in Arena A8's spectator area turned peculiar...

# Chapter 54: 054 First Victory

In the spectator area of arena A8,

With more and more girls noticing Lu Wu, the atmosphere became increasingly strange. These girls from different teams started gathering together, whispering all kinds of comments.

"This male god is so handsome. I wonder what his name is, which school he's from, and if he has a girlfriend?"

"Look, look, he's assigning tasks to his teammates. It seems this male god is their team captain. How impressive!"

"But what's up with that chubby girl? Why is she sitting so close to my male god, and she even dares to touch him? Don't stop me, I'm going to chop her up!"

...

In just a short moment, the spectator area of the arena had already transformed into a fan club for the heartthrob.

The boys around were particularly uncomfortable.

By this point, they couldn't figure out whether their teammates were here to observe and collect information on the seed teams or just to see the heartthrob.

They couldn't comprehend it and felt all sorts of indignation.

What's so great about that guy down there? He's got one nose and two eyes just like everyone else. It's not like he's extremely more handsome than them, and his summoned beast is just a Little Skeleton, a complete weakling. What's so fascinating about him to their teammates?

Many of them felt they weren't any worse than Lu Wu and might even be better!

Of course, not many dared to say that. One guy, who was blindly confident just like them, had declared the Little Skeleton to be trash and was almost driven to tears.

"So what if his summoned beast is a Little Skeleton? Our male god is so hardworking, you know?"

All because of that one face.

Lu Wu already had a group of die-hard fans… well, uh, true love fans!

The power of true love fans is strong. The boys around them dared to be angry but didn't dare to speak. They could only direct their resentment toward Lu Wu, silently praying that the 038 team would crush this pretty boy.

They wanted to show the girls who the real men were.

Judging by Lu Wu's team's summoned beasts, they thought this scenario was very likely, no, it was absolutely going to happen.

So, they all waited to see a humiliated Lu Wu and the disillusioned expressions of the girls around him.

Amidst these guys' expectations, the 038 seed team arrived right on time.

For the 10:30 match, they arrived at 10:20.

These three youngsters had a bit of a strategy.

They knew their status as seed players would attract attention, and there would definitely be many players waiting for their arrival.

In this way, the later they arrived, the greater the psychological pressure on their opponents.

And when they did arrive, they would be even more eye-catching.

One side would enter amidst the cheers of the crowd, while the other side would wait in anxiety. Their mental states in the game would definitely be completely different, making it easier for them to secure the victory.

Yes, using tactics even when they had an absolute advantage, this 038 team certainly played dirty.

However, when they arrived, the situation was not as they had expected.

They weren't greeted with respectful and expectant gazes from the onlookers but were instead met with the fanatical rage of Lu Wu's die-hard fans.

"Who are these people, acting so high and mighty just because they are a seed team?"

"Our male god has already arrived, but they are deliberately late. No respect at all!"

"And they're so ugly. If you ask me, they should just surrender right now!"

...

The three members of the 038 team were dumbfounded.

What was happening? This was not in the script! Male god? What male god?

Their confusion lasted until the staff told them to prepare for the match below the stage and when they shook hands with Lu Wu's team. At that moment, they understood.

The 038 team's mentality collapsed on the spot.

They trembled with rage!

All this for a pretty boy whose summoned beast was just a Little Skeleton?

Was there any justice left in the world?

When would ordinary-looking guys like them ever really get to stand up?

In their fury, the captain of the 038 team, Zhang Ke, slapped away Lu Wu's hand and threw a sarcastic remark.

"I don't shake hands with trash!"

This was his last stubborn stand as a regular guy.

But that slap made the girls watching even more upset.

"Bullying, are we? Is there any decency left in you?"

"No basic manners at all. Hmph, people like him don't deserve to win!"

...

Once again, the 038 team was berated by the girls, and their faces turned as dark as the bottom of a pot. But they very sensibly didn't retaliate against the girls and instead turned all their hatred toward Lu Wu's team.

They silently vowed to themselves to ruthlessly crush Lu Wu and his team.

And immediately, they directed harsh words at Lu Wu's team.

"Pretty boy, you just wait!"

They swore to use their power to fight against this damned looks-driven world.

Lu Wu felt quite innocent about this.

He hadn't expected things to turn out like this either.

Besides, it was the girls who were berating them, so why were these guys venting their anger on him?

Sigh, it was all because of this damn unremarkable face of his.

Frustrated, Lu Wu raised his hand and asked the referee on the side, "Excuse me, can we start now?"

When Zhang Ke heard Lu Wu's words, he became even more displeased.

"What, are you in such a hurry to end your match? Very well, I will oblige. I will clear you out the moment the whistle blows."

Lu Wu ignored him and looked at the referee. The referee responded immediately, nodding and blowing the whistle to start the match.

"Action!"

Zhang Ke's team, being tactical experts with very dirty minds, launched a sneak attack even when they were absolutely dominant. Almost the moment the referee's whistle sounded, they issued their orders.

At the command, the Jungle Wolf, goblin, and goblin under 038's command immediately charged forward.

It had to be said, 038 indeed was worthy of being a seed team.

The way their summoned beasts attacked was incredibly fast and fierce, making the girls watching from the arena gasp in shock and the boys pump with adrenaline.

Each of them silently cheered for the 038 team, hoping they would crush Lu Wu's team.

They wanted the pretty boy to experience the harshness of the real world.

However, the script went off-track. As soon as 038's three summoned beasts charged over, rows of earth thorns suddenly emerged.

Thankfully, the three summoned beasts were well-trained, stopping in time to avoid the earth thorns.

But dodging didn't help. As they dodged, the Frozen Bird's cold aura erupted, instantly blanketing the three summoned beasts and significantly reducing their speed.

At the same time, Tuantuan performed a giant transformation and charged forward, directly knocking the Jungle Wolf and goblin, whose movement was restricted by the earth thorns and whose speed was reduced by the cold aura, out of the arena!

In an instant, two of the 038 team's summoned beasts were eliminated, leaving only the goblin, which had also been injured in the leg by the Frozen Bird's ice needle.

It wasn't until then that Lu Wu's Little Skeleton slowly came to the goblin, swung a bat, and finished off the already badly injured goblin.

Thus, with absolute advantage and to everyone's surprise, Lu Wu's team won their initial battle.

...

This chapter seems to have unraveled. Don't you have anything to say?

Like how handsome Nu Xiao is, for example!

Also, there is a Summoning Beast Building in the comments. You can write down any summoned beast you want there.

# Chapter 55: 055 The Troublemaker Lu Wu

A8 arena!

When Little Skeleton knocked down the goblin with a stick, both Team 038 and the guys watching from the spectator stands were dumbfounded.

They felt like their whole world was screwed up.

This match wasn't supposed to go this way, and the result wasn't supposed to be like this!

Wasn't Team 038 a Seed Team?

Wasn't Lu Wu supposed to get crushed?

How come, in the end, it was Team 038 that got demolished and defeated in a flash?

They couldn't figure it out, they really couldn't.

The referee on the side, however, saw it clearly. With his rich experience, he immediately realized that Team 038 lost in a particularly unjust way.

If they hadn't been thrown off by Lu Wu's fangirls at the start, or been confused by the summoned beasts from Lu Wu's side, or initially prepared to take out Lu Wu in a sudden assault.

But instead, if they had taken it step by step and fought Lu Wu head-on, they wouldn't have lost so miserably.

After all, as a seed team, Team 038 did have the power!

But even if they had taken it step by step, the referee believed that the victory of this match would still belong to Lu Wu's team in the end.

Because their tactic was simply too strong.

Mini Pig restricted their movements, Frozen Bird's big move covered and slowed them down, and then Mini Pig burst into action.

This tactic wasn't complex, but it was very effective and powerful.

More importantly, the core performance of this tactic, the Frozen Bird, was absolutely outstanding.

That "Cold Aura" that could cover most of the arena and the "Ice Needle" it could release even after its big move—without a doubt, this Frozen Bird was the key to Lu Wu's team winning this match.

As the owner of the Frozen Bird, Hao Zhijian was definitely the most dazzling and eye-catching player in this match.

Watching Hao Zhijian, the referee thought, a bright new star of the Quancheng Cup was about to rise.

Sure enough, a wave of applause had already erupted on the arena.

This applause belonged to Hao… um, I mean, Lu Wu!

"Amazing, long live the male god!"

"He won, I knew the male god would win for sure!"

"Look at the male god's Little Skeleton's final stick, so cool and cute, I really want to touch it!"

...

Listening to the enthusiastic applause and the girls' screams, everyone on the arena looked confused.

Hao Zhijian was still okay; the victory was so sudden, he hadn't yet reacted.

Plus, he was used to being overshadowed by Lu Wu, so he didn't feel there was anything wrong with it.

But the referee was totally bewildered.

What was up with those girls watching?

Were they blind?

Couldn't they see that in that match just now, Little Skeleton basically didn't play much of a role?

Although it delivered the final blow, it didn't matter whether it did or not!

What was wrong with this world?

The real talent who should be shining like a star was overshadowed by a pretty boy slacker.

The referee felt more and more baffled by this world.

Team 038, who had lost, and those guys on the spectator stand felt the same.

Especially Team 038.

It took them a long time to recover from this harsh reality.

But Lu Wu felt pretty good.

He even waved at the girls in the spectator stand, flashing a scoundrel-like smile.

That smile instantly set off another wave of screams.

Seeing this, the referee felt a burst of irritation.

Sigh, really, geniuses are wandering, and clowns are in the hall.

Knowing he couldn't change this situation, the referee quickly announced Lu Wu's team as the winners and sent them off.

Deciding that out of sight was out of mind.

But Lu Wu didn't leave; he was already worried about finding a chance to touch summoned beasts. Now that he inexplicably had a fan club, he naturally wanted to make good use of it.

As soon as the referee announced the end of the match, Lu Wu took Little Skeleton and Dudu to his fan club.

Soon, Lu Wu was blending in with his fan club and easily collecting a lot of summoned beast data.

He not only collected the data of the girls' summoned beasts but also that of the guys' summoned beasts who were their teammates.

Of course, Lu Wu also collected the girls' contact information and the resentful gazes from the surrounding guys.

Compared to Lu Wu having the time of his life, Dudu didn't have it as easy.

She was already a bit shy and now was squished among so many girls, not at all used to such a scene.

The chubby girl just clutched her plump Tuantuan, trembling.

But the girls around her were extremely nice to her.

Probably because they didn't feel threatened by a chubby girl, and no Mary Sue heroine lacks a chubby friend.

They believed that if they made friends with Dudu, they'd have an easier time getting close to Lu Wu.

But Dudu really wasn't used to this situation and felt at a loss, while Hao Zhijian beside her was particularly envious, wanting to join in.

Unfortunately, this area only allowed one male, Lu Wu. As for Hao Zhijian? Sorry, who are you?

Hao Zhijian was a bit unwilling and made an effort.

It turned out that sometimes you really need to try.

If you don't try, how can you feel what despair is?

"What? You're one of our male god's teammates?

The Frozen Bird that performed so well just now is your summoned beast?

It made a significant contribution to the match? You mean we won because of you?

What a joke, the match victory just now was entirely due to our male god's excellent command!

Please don't steal our male god's credit!"

Within a few sentences, Hao Zhijian, who tried to join in, was left feeling dejected.

Holding his exhausted, drooping bird, he squatted in a corner and drew circles.

Squatting in the corner, Hao Zhijian found that he wasn't the only one in the corner. There were also Team 038, who were equally lost, and a large group of male players whose teammates were taken.

Making deep eye contact with this group, Hao Zhijian suddenly felt like he had found his organization.

But this feeling quickly faded.

Because the Quancheng Cup's official website quickly updated today's match information.

And in today's match, their team's shocking defeat of the 038 Seed Team was definitely headline news.

In less than half an hour, the homepage of the official website featured related videos and articles about their match.

Moreover, as an official website, it was far more objective and fair than Lu Wu's fangirls.

Both the video and the article identified Hao Zhijian as the absolute core of Lu Wu's team.

Seeing this report, Hao Zhijian's eyes lit up.

This time, he genuinely felt like he had made it.

Of course, even though he felt he had made it, he didn't dare provoke Lu Wu. After all, he had been beaten up for a month and wasn't about to get cocky so quickly.

But there was someone he felt he could mess with.

........

A new week, asking for recommendation votes,

Sigh, headache

# Chapter 56: 056 Hotspot

After Lu Wu's team defeated Team 038,

the official media immediately reported on them as an absolute dark horse.

They made their Team 233 replace Team 038 as the seeded team in the Quancheng Cup.

This action by the officials further pushed Team 233 into the spotlight.

Team 233 received unprecedented attention.

This was something even Lu Wu hadn't expected.

Although he initially wanted to become the dark horse of the Quancheng Cup, he didn't expect to be one on the first day of the competition.

This victory, this success, came a bit too fast, and Lu Wu felt it might not be a good thing for them.

If possible, he hoped to follow the usual pattern.

Starting by facing less capable teams, then leveling up by battling monsters, gaining experience and honing the team, and finally bursting out to defeat the seeded team to become the dark horse.

Such a progression route seemed more suitable for their team.

Suddenly being elevated to the status of a seeded player made Lu Wu feel somewhat uneasy.

His main worry was about Hao Zhijian's mindset.

He feared the young man might get too full of himself.

Over the past month, he frequently put him in his place precisely because he knew this kid was extremely prone to arrogance, and if he swelled up, Lu Wu's team would be hard to manage.

Moreover, Lu Wu also worried that he might do something foolish.

Well, it turned out that Lu Wu's worry wasn't without reason, without necessity.

Almost immediately after the match ended and the Quancheng Cup reports came out, while Lu Wu was still in the summoning beast crowd with girls, Hao Zhijian directly shared the related reports on his social media account.

With the caption, "Thirty years on the east side of the river, thirty years on the west side, don't bully a poor young man."

And after thinking for a moment, he even @Ye Qingxue.

Actually, Hao Zhijian's mindset was understandable.

He felt that it was hard for him to get into the honors class.

On the first day, he went to find Lu Wu, for whom? Wasn't it for Ye Qingxue?

As a result, he stood up for Ye Qingxue and got beaten up, and Ye Qingxue didn't feel sorry or comfort him, instead, she directly kicked him out of the honors class.

This event dealt a heavy blow to Hao Zhijian's not-so-fragile heart, causing him to hate Ye Qingxue.

Over the past month and more, Hao Zhijian's heart had been holding a grudge, a grudge to beat Ye Qingxue's honors class, to prove himself, and to give Ye Qingxue a hard slap.

And now, Hao Zhijian felt he had achieved this.

On the first day of the Quancheng Cup, he defeated the seeded Team 038, and he was the MVP of the match.

Such a dazzling performance, plus the official's praise, made Hao Zhijian lose himself for a moment. Plus, Lu Wu was surrounded by girls at the time and couldn't wake him up in time, so he ended up doing something as foolish as sharing the report and slapping Ye Qingxue in the face.

He just wanted to slap Ye Qingxue in the face, but what he didn't expect was the chain reaction caused by this move.

It's important to know that because of this first match's turnaround, at this point, he was the hot topic of the Quancheng Cup.

Many official and unofficial media were paying attention to him, eager for related explosive points.

Once he posted "Thirty years on the east side of the river" as long as one was not blind, they would have known there was a story behind it.

As a result, all sorts of people swarmed like cats smelling fish.

In these cases, just fear someone with intent to investigate, an investigation would quickly yield results. While Lu Wu was still in the girl crowd, the story of Hao Zhijian and Ye Qingxue and even Lu Wududu's were dug up and various reports were released at the first opportunity.

When Lu Wu came out of the girl crowd and opened the Quancheng Cup's official website, his face instantly turned dark.

The entire official website was filled with related information pushes, such as "Inspirational, the team kicked out of the honors class, a month of hard training becoming the strongest dark horse of the Quancheng Cup!"

"Shocking, the unknown past of a beautiful teacher and star student genius!"

"Tear-jerking, an infatuated ordinary girl had her future ruined by a scumbag?"

"Expecting, when will the destined battle between the strongest dark horse and the primary seed team come?"

Teacher-student, turnaround, scumbag, face-slapping...

These were the kind of stories the masses loved the most.

Therefore, even though these reports had only been out for a short time, they quickly captured the attention of the onlookers, firmly occupying the hotspot, further pushing Lu Wu's team and Ye Qingxue into the limelight.

This made Lu Wu furious.

With a dark face, he dragged Hao Zhijian out of the training hall and found a deserted place to scold him.

"What's actually in that head of yours?

I have told you more than once, set this matter aside for me, we can't beat them yet, don't create hostility. But as soon as I said it, you immediately forgot, didn't you?"

"With what you did now, everyone knows. What are you trying to do? Tell me, do you know the consequences of doing this?"

At this moment, due to the past month's experience of being suppressed by Lu Wu, Hao Zhijian still feared Lu Wu.

Despite his reluctance, he still lowered his head, not daring to speak loudly, only managing a small protest: "I never thought a single post would cause such a big stir, besides, it's Ye Qingxue who was too much.

She didn't even give Brother Lu a chance before kicking him out of the honors class. Although Brother Lu doesn't care, I just couldn't stand it!"

One had to admit, this kid knew how to talk.

He even tried to use this opportunity to elicit sympathy from Lu Wu.

These words indeed had some effect, as soon as he said it, Lu Wu's face softened a little.

Of course, it couldn't have been completely softened, the incident had already happened, what could Lu Wu do now? Beat this brat?

That wouldn't solve the problem either!

Helpless, Lu Wu could only drag Hao Zhijian along with a dark face.

Being dragged like this made Hao Zhijian a bit anxious: "Brother Lu, where are we going?"

"Training, if we don't train how will we fight that so-called destined battle?"

......

Compared to Lu Wu's side, which wasn't too bad.

Despite his anger, he could quickly control his emotions, but Ye Qingxue's side was in real trouble.

When the incident happened, Ye Qingxue was giving her students a breakdown of the match, pointing out their mistakes during the game.

In the middle of her explanation, a daydreaming student suddenly exclaimed.

"Teacher, quickly open the Quancheng Cup official website and see!"

Ye Qingxue immediately shot a look full of killing intent: "What's the panic? Is the sky falling? How many times have I told you, stay calm when something happens, don't be swayed by your emotions. None of you listened, did you?"

After reprimanding the student, who trembled in fear, Ye Qingxue then picked up her phone: "Let me see what made you so flustered!

Could it be a seeded team…"

While speaking, Ye Qingxue opened the official website of the Quancheng Cup.

Instantly, her pretty face lost all expression, the words she was saying stopped halfway, and the atmosphere at the scene froze...

# Chapter 57: 057 Unfollow

Ye Qingxue almost coughed up blood when she saw the news on the Quancheng Cup's official website.

The first thing she did was contact the principal of No. 3 High School, asking him to reach out to the Quancheng Cup's website to demand they remove those trending topics.

The principal of No. 3 High School obediently complied.

But the key problem was, while the principal of No. 3 High School was cooperative, the organizers of the Quancheng Cup were not so compliant.

In fact, the reason why Lu Wu's team and Ye Qingxue's situation escalated so quickly was because the organizers were fanning the flames behind the scenes.

After all, the Quancheng Cup was not just a warm-up match for high school leagues but also a huge commercial event.

When it comes to commercial interests, the simplest thing can become complicated.

Of course, the situation with Lu Wu wasn't overly complex either.

It was simply that the organizers saw a profitable opportunity in the buzz, thinking it could draw a lot of attention to the game if handled well.

This was a real benefit.

In the face of benefits, there was no way they would remove the trending topics just because you asked.

The organizers did something even more ruthless. Not only did they refuse to remove the topics, they turned around and sold out No. 3 High School and Ye Qingxue together.

Quickly, reports like "Reflection: No. 3 High School Principal Calls Late-Night to Request Removal of Related Information" started to surface, further igniting the topic.

What the organizers did was a massive pitfall for both No. 3 High School and Ye Qingxue.

...

Late at night, in the principal's office of No. 3 High School, the principal, with his head bowed, called Ye Qingxue: "Mr. Ye, what do we do now?"

There was no response from Ye Qingxue on the other end of the line, just the sound of heavy breathing.

The principal knew very well that Ye Qingxue was trying hard to suppress her anger.

It was clear that Ye Qingxue was not in a good mood, which made the principal sweat uncontrollably.

"Um, how about I contact Lu Wu and ask them to come forward to clarify, or simply ask them to withdraw from the competition?

As long as they back out, the heat of this matter will surely die down."

The principal's idea wasn't bad, but Ye Qingxue didn't want to use it. She couldn't swallow her pride.

"No need, don't they want to see this so-called battle of fate?

Don't they want to see how this dark horse beats my students and slaps me in the face?

Then let them see!

I also want to see how these three little fish think they can defeat my students trained by Ye Qingxue."

Ye Qingxue's response gave the principal of No. 3 High School a huge headache.

He really didn't agree with Ye Qingxue's way of handling the situation. In this kind of matter, it's better to be safe than sorry.

Moreover, with so many of Ye Qingxue's students, how could they ensure every team could withstand Lu Wu and his two buddies?

What if one team got defeated? That wouldn't just be a slap in the face for Ye Qingxue, but also for No. 3 High School.

But his opposition was useless; Ye Qingxue didn't give him the opportunity to object either.

By now, she had already hung up the phone.

The principal had no choice but to sit there, tugging at his already thinning hair, lost in thought.

One has to say, the principal did deserve his position. Although he was timid in front of Ye Qingxue, balding, with a big belly, and somewhat oily, he was still an educated man.

Soon, No. 3 High School released a particularly formal and diplomatic statement on their official social media account.

In the matter at hand, No. 3 High School didn't blatantly take Ye Qingxue's side.

It merely stated that Ye Qingxue's decision to kick Hao Zhijian out of the honors class was a pedagogical issue, and stressed that No. 3 High School did not abandon Lu Wu's team because of this.

It also mentioned how much support No. 3 High School had provided Lu Wu's team during their growth.

Then it brought up Li Chun, saying Li Chun was the teacher assigned to Lu Wu's team.

It also hinted at the educational philosophy differences between Li Chun and Ye Qingxue.

Most of the statement was aimed at clearing No. 3 High School and Ye Qingxue's name.

It downplayed Ye Qingxue's decision to dismiss Hao Zhijian, and portrayed Lu Wu's team as a product of No. 3 High School's specialized education.

Then, it concluded by expressing how happy Ye Qingxue was to see Lu Wu's excellent performance in the competition, hoping for a fair, just, and open battle between Lu Wu's team and her ace team.

After reading the statement, Lu Wu couldn't help but marvel.

It was the first time he realized he had underestimated this seemingly submissive principal in front of Ye Qingxue.

He thought the principal was an imbecile, but it turned out he was a cunning old fox.

The statement effortlessly downplayed the conflict between Lu Wu and Ye Qingxue, framing it as a difference in teaching philosophies between two excellent teachers.

With this statement, regardless of the outcome of the battle between Lu Wu's team and Ye Qingxue, it wouldn't harm No. 3 High School's reputation. In fact, the school might even gain some momentum, attracting attention and laying a solid foundation for future enrollments.

However, the average bystander didn't care about these details.

What they cared about was whether there was more drama to watch, whether the fight would go on.

Once they confirmed the battle was still happening and there was more drama to watch, they were quite happy.

The onlookers were happy, and so were the organizers of the Quancheng Cup.

The fight would continue, which was great news for them.

They had feared that No. 3 High School would defuse the hype.

Now that the battle was guaranteed, the organizers were elated. They began to guide the public opinion, steering the battle towards a positive energy narrative.

Of course, they also made sure to fan the flames, maintaining the heat of the topic.

This made No. 3 High School very happy as well. A single statement had pleased all three parties.

If there was anyone unhappy about this matter, it was Lu Wu.

First, he didn't expect things to develop to this extent in just one day.

Now, everyone following the Quancheng Cup was eagerly anticipating the impending battle.

If they lost under such public scrutiny, it would be incredibly embarrassing.

Lu Wu did have fans, though there were only about ten or so. Still, he cared about his public image.

He feared that if he lost, his fans would desert him.

Well, Lu Wu's worry was somewhat unnecessary. He didn't even need to lose; his fans were already beginning to desert him.

After Lu Wu's match in the morning, the fan group the girls had created for him peaked at 12 members. Once they discovered he had a girlfriend, 10 promptly left, leaving only Cheng Qingqing and her teammates to hang on.

# Chapter 58: 058 The swollen Hao Zhijian

Quancheng Cup organizers basically already decided to use Lu Wu and his team to create hype and drama.

In this situation, the organizers naturally needed to employ some shady tactics.

They had to ensure that Lu Wu's team wouldn't be eliminated before encountering Ye Qingxue's ace team.

And for the organizers, this wasn't too difficult; they soon arranged it for Lu Wu and his team.

As a result, the upcoming matches for Lu Wu and his team became somewhat dull and boring.

Basically, whenever it was Lu Wu's team's turn to compete, their opponents either were weaklings or looked strong but actually were just weaklings.

Additionally, before every match, the Quancheng Cup would do some preliminary hype.

In this regard, the organizers were professionals.

Every pre-match hype made it seem like the team Lu Wu and his team were facing was a boss level team, and their battle would be the final battle in the Quancheng Cup.

But every time, Lu Wu's team would effortlessly defeat their opponents.

Relying on these matches filled with shadiness and drama, Lu Wu's team easily passed the preliminaries.

This made Lu Wu particularly frustrated.

This wasn't the type of battle he wanted!

They couldn't gain any experience from these kinds of battles!

Moreover, these continuous easy victories, combined with the organizers' constant hype on the side, made it easy for someone to become overconfident and arrogant.

Lu Wu, however, didn't become arrogant because he was well aware of the gap between his team and Ye Qingxue's ace team.

Lu Wu had obtained their attributes more than a month ago.

Each member's power wasn't weaker than Tuantuan, or even stronger, and that was a month ago.

Lu Wu had also watched their recent matches; even though he hadn't played himself, he knew they had become much stronger.

If they were to face Ye Qingxue's ace team, there was no hope of victory.

Since he understood this, Lu Wu couldn't become arrogant.

And Dudu, with her gentle temperament and plump body, couldn't become arrogant either.

Lu Wu and Dudu didn't become arrogant, but Hao Zhijian did.

Continuous victories, plus the organizers' reports of him and his Frozen Bird as rising stars of the competition, made him swell with arrogance, feeling that he was incredibly awesome.

He believed it was him who led the team to victory!

As a result, in recent days, he started calling Lu Wu by his full name instead of "Brother Lu."

Right now, at the Quancheng Cup competition venue, Lu Wu was having a headache. Just before the first official match was about to begin, the overconfident guy came over.

"Lu Wu, let me tell you something. After we win the match later, I'm not going to train or review with you all. If my dad calls and asks, just tell him I'm training with you."

Hearing this, Lu Wu squinted his eyes.

"Today's an official match. Our opponents are Team 023, another seed team. Are you so confident we will win?"

"Of course! We're so strong; in the Quancheng Cup, we have only one opponent, and the rest are trash!

Don't worry, I'll definitely take them down in one go in the match later!"

This bastard really was becoming overly arrogant.

Looking at Hao Zhijian's cocky face made Lu Wu furious; he deeply regretted not dealing with this bastard because he was busy with other things recently, allowing him to become this arrogant.

At the same time, he regretted that the location wasn't right, so he couldn't do anything to Hao Zhijian.

Today was the first day of the Quancheng Cup's official matches.

From today, the Quancheng Cup opened to spectators, and Lu Wu's team, being the focus of official hype, received the most attention.

The audience seats at their match venue were packed, and their match was the most popular in the official live stream.

In this situation, Lu Wu obviously couldn't hit Hao Zhijian.

Unable to hit him, Lu Wu couldn't be bothered to argue with him either, choosing to endure for now and planning to deal with him after the match.

Lu Wu's endurance made Hao Zhijian even cockier.

He felt that he had really risen up, thinking that the previously domineering Lu Wu now didn't even dare to speak loudly to him.

This scene was observed by some people, who immediately revealed a playful smile.

"This team doesn't seem to be very harmonious! This is getting interesting."

Many noticed this detail, but their main focus wasn't here.

Instead, they were more interested in the upcoming battle.

During the preliminaries, Lu Wu's team barely had any challenging fights due to the organizers' manipulation.

Today's match was considered their first somewhat challenging battle after their rise, so many people came to watch, including a squad of Ye Qingxue's top students.

Three of them, sitting in the front row of the spectator area, were Ye Qingxue's top students.

As their seats were quite prominent, Hao Zhijian, who had been part of the top class for a day, recognized the three immediately.

When he saw them, his expression changed several times before a proud smirk appeared on his face as he extended his thumb towards them, then provocatively flipped it down, causing the three top students' calm faces to darken.

Just as they were about to respond, Lu Wu's team's first official match began.

"Match time! Both teams, please summon your beasts and take your positions!"

Hearing this command, Lu Wu, who had been resting with his eyes closed, opened them.

"Let's go!"

Lu Wu said, straightening up to lead his team over, but found that Hao Zhijian had already stepped ahead of him, extending his hand to the captain of Team 023.

Captain Li Yi was startled; pre-match handshakes were usually the captains' job. He remembered that this guy wasn't the captain!

But after glancing at the approaching Lu Wu, Li Yi eventually extended his hand to shake with Hao Zhijian and deliberately said, "Captain Hao, I've been following your pig-bird tactics for a long time; they're incredibly powerful. Please go easy on us later!"

He completely ignored Lu Wu, blatantly disrespecting him.

This behavior infuriated Dudu, but Hao Zhijian didn't think anything was wrong. His arrogance over the top, he repeatedly nodded, "Sure, sure..."

Meanwhile, Lu Wu wasn't angry at this moment.

There was no need to be angry; if the opponent misbehaved, he'd deal with them in the ring; if the teammate got overconfident, he'd handle it after the match.

At this moment, Lu Wu focused more on the three summoned beasts of Team 023.

Watching the already positioned summoned beasts in the ring, Lu Wu squinted his eyes, recalling the information about these three summoned beasts.

"Swamp Monster, Slime, Paralysis Moth, they are all quite peculiar summoned beasts!"

......

Special thanks to [Blue Mountain Like Ash][Carefree Person][Di Xiaoyi] for providing the summoned beasts at the Summoning Beast Building.

# Chapter 59: 059 Crystal Slime

```

Quan City Cup officials were really determined to keep the shady dealings going.

Although they arranged for Lu Wu's first match to be against a seed team, this seed team consisted of a bizarre type of Summoned Beasts.

Lu Wu did not even need to touch them to know the attributes of these Summoned Beasts.

He also knew clearly that these three Summoned Beasts were precisely countered by their tactics.

Not to mention, just the Frozen Bird's wide-ranging "Cold Aura" could give them a hard time.

So this match, barring any surprises, would be another crushing victory.

This point seemed to be well understood by Team 023, who had seemingly resigned themselves to their fate.

When Li Yi was talking with Hao Zhijian, he indicated that winning was secondary and participating in the match was primary.

He just wanted to enjoy the match, looking completely resigned.

If Lu Wu hadn't touched the slime left behind by the Slime while they were shaking hands, he would have almost been fooled by him.

...

Crystal Slime

Power: 1 star

Quality: Black Iron

State: Eat, eat, eat...

Skills: Self-freezing (Mastered)

Triple Ice Arrow (Skilled)

Slime Attack (Skilled)

Weaknesses: Fire, Earth, Thunder, Grass

Description: Don't freeze me, it won't work unless you play with ice and get past me.

...

Lu Wu squinted his eyes immediately upon seeing the Crystal Slime's attributes, his gaze towards Li Yi full of playfulness.

This kid was quite cunning!

It was obvious that he had a trump card to counter their tactics, yet he still put on a 'I can't beat you, don't fight me' act.

"Is this supposed to be a surprise for us? Unfortunately, I've discovered it early."

Almost simultaneously as Lu Wu discovered the Crystal Slime's attributes, the pre-match conversation time ended, and the match was about to begin. Hao Zhijian, satisfied, returned to Lu Wu's side, and Lu Wu seized the opportunity to instruct him in his ear.

"During the match, all Summoned Beasts follow my command, I'll direct the battle!"

After saying this, Lu Wu focused on the stage.

Almost at the same time, the referee directly announced the start of the match.

At the sound of the referee's whistle, Team 023 immediately launched an attack.

"Slime, use Slime Attack!"

"Swamp Monster, use Mud Ball!"

"Paralysis Moth, use Paralysis Powder!"

Seeing the opponent's conventional offensive, Lu Wu responded calmly: "Tuantuan, use Earth Thorns to interrupt the Paralysis Moth's skill!"

"Little Skeleton, dodge the attack! Frozen Bird, take flight!"

Lu Wu intended to hold back for a moment, to first understand the opponent's true strengths and weaknesses.

He was worried that, besides the Slime, Team 023 had other trump cards.

Therefore, he played very conservatively, focusing on defense and almost not launching any aggressive attacks.

Lu Wu's response left Team 023 quite surprised.

They had studied Lu Wu's team before and knew that Team 233 had only one tactic, the Pig Bird Flow Ice Thorn.

They had already prepared a countermeasure, ready to make Team 233 suffer when they used the Pig Bird Flow, but instead, they were playing a conventional match.

This gave them a bit of a headache.

Even more unexpected was that, while they had three people commanding, Lu Wu alone was commanding his entire team.

Theoretically speaking, one person commanding was indeed better than three commanders.

It was more coordinated and could better control the pace of the match.

But that was only in theory. In actual combat, it often turned into a mess.

After all, one person commanding meant that Lu Wu had to have the ability to integrate and control the entire battlefield simultaneously.

Any slight mistake in one segment could easily lead to a total collapse.

So, generally, three people took the field together, commanding with mutual understanding, as opposed to Lu Wu's rare one-against-three style in a match, especially at the entry-level.

It was also the first time Lu Wu revealed this skill, shocking the audience instantly.

It was the first time they discovered that Lu Wu, supposedly the pretty mascot of Team 233, actually had such a skill.

Even the commentator couldn't help but say, "Impressive. I didn't expect player Lu Wu to have such high-level commanding skills.

Commanding three Summoned Beasts at the same time without any chaos is truly remarkable.

It seems that player Lu Wu surely has extraordinary qualities to be the captain of Team 233."

The commentator's words and Lu Wu's current performance significantly changed the spectators' perception of him, making him the center of attention.

This annoyed Hao Zhijian a bit, his expression turning a little sour.

He had just been confused about why Lu Wu took over the command in a match that could have been won in one wave. It turned out Lu Wu did it just to show off.

And his expression change was clearly seen by the opposite Li Yi.

Li Yi, who was initially overwhelmed by Lu Wu's steady command, raised the corner of his mouth.

"Captain Hao, what's going on? I was so looking forward to our match, and it turns out you're just a platform figure during the match!"

It had to be said that these Summoners were all quite cunning.

One sentence directly struck at Hao Zhijian's pride, making him immediately take over the command of the Frozen Bird.

"Frozen Bird, use Ice Needle Attack, aim at that Slime."

Since the Frozen Bird was Hao Zhijian's Summoned Beast, his order immediately took away the command rights from Lu Wu. Several icy blue needles shot straight at the Slime but were blocked by the defensive skill "Dirty Water" from the Swamp Monster beside the Slime.

This made Lu Wu frown. However, before Lu Wu could react, Li Yi on the opposite side responded first.

"Is that all?"

"Captain Hao? You're a bit weak, you can't even beat me. How will you face that so-called destined battle? Those three in the stands over there are probably already holding back their laughter."

Li Yi's words precisely hit Hao Zhijian's weak spot, making him feel three mocking gazes on his back.

"Hao Zhijian, calm down..."

"Calm down your head! Frozen Bird, use 'Cold Aura'!"

The enraged Hao Zhijian immediately gave the order, and the Frozen Bird spread its wings and unleashed the "Cold Aura." The cold wind spread towards Team 023.

"Now, Slime, use Self Ice Seal!"

Li Yi seized the opportunity and gave the command. The Summoned Beasts of Team 023 gathered together, and the Slime quickly froze, forming a round ice ball that protected itself, the Swamp Monster, and the Paralysis Moth, easily enduring the Frozen Bird's big move.

"What?"

Hao Zhijian's face changed, unaware that this was just the beginning.

As "Cold Aura" ended, the ice ball around the Slime shattered, and three ice-blue arrows shot straight at the Frozen Bird.

"Frozen Bird, use Ice Shield quickly!" Lu Wu immediately gave the order.

But it was too late. The recent command changes and the big move left the Frozen Bird hesitant, and by the time it reacted to use the Ice Shield, it was too late and was directly shot down by the ice arrows.

The critical issue was not just that. While Lu Wu and team focused on the Frozen Bird, the Swamp Monster and Paralysis Moth of Team 023 simultaneously attacked Tuantuan.

A small area of swamp combined with an anesthesia needle easily took down Tuantuan.

Thus, Team 233's two main forces were completely defeated.

Li Yi's mouth curved into a smile. The victory was decided!

```

From 15 Feb 2020, Coins spent on books that aren't selected will be refunded within 30 days. However, Fast Passes will not be refunded.

The selected book will have a mark on the corner of the book cover in 30 days to indicate continuation.

Thank you for your understanding.

# Chapter 60: 060 Victory

No one had expected that this match would have such a twist.

Almost in an instant, the two main forces of the 233 team were taken down.

Watching from the sky as they fell out of the ring, and the partially giant-sized and paralyzed Tuantuan trapped in the ring.

From the commentators to the audience, everyone thought 233 was finished!

This made the organizers of the Quan City event, who had been watching the battle, frown, cursing 233 as useless. They had given them such a fix, but they still lost.

At the same time, they were pondering what excuse to use to arrange a revival match for Lu Wu and his team.

On the spectators' side.

The three students from Ye Qingxue's advanced class wore mocking and amused smiles.

"I told you there was no need to come and watch, these three guys are a joke.

What fate battle, what comeback, they can't even beat a small team like 023. It looks like their journey in the Quan City Cup is about to end here."

"Whether it ends here is not certain, some people might still use them to stir up some buzz. But it doesn't matter, we've seen their level, which is just average in our class. Not to mention facing those few, we can easily crush them."

Watching 233 being crushed gave the trio immense satisfaction.

On the other side, at the ring, having dealt with two major troubles, a relieved smile finally appeared on Li Yi's face.

Looking at the only remaining Little Skeleton on the stage, and at Lu Wu, whose face looked a bit unsightly, Li Yi said playfully, "Captain Lu, do you think there's any need to continue fighting?"

Lu Wu tried hard to calm his anger, to keep a straight face.

"Why not?"

"Because surrendering would be much more dignified than being beaten down, don't you think?"

"I don't think so, and I don't think I need to surrender!"

"Ah, you won't listen to good advice. Fine, if you want to fight, let's fight. It won't take much effort anyway!"

Three against one, and it's just a Little Skeleton. How much effort could it take?

At this moment, the commentator on the stage saw that Lu Wu seemed unwilling to give up and was preparing to fight, quickly doing his job.

"This match has truly been unexpected.

The 023 team actually kept this in reserve. Relying on something they had never revealed in previous matches, they countered the 233 team's pig-bird strategy and took down the two main players in one move.

Now, on the 233 side, the only one left in good condition is the captain's Little Skeleton.

Although the other side's three Summoned Beasts have consumed considerable energy after a burst attack, they are still in good condition. A 1V3 battle is almost an impossible victory!"

"But despite this, Lu Wu still chose to fight to the end!

This is his dignity as a captain, as a Quan City Cup contestant.

This is the belief in never giving up until the last moment!"

"Look, Little Skeleton is going in, wielding a baseball bat and charging towards the opponent.

This little fellow and its master have an indomitable spirit, a courage to face strong opponents.

Such a spirit is precious, even if they lose the match; they are worthy of respect for having such determination!

Let's see what brilliant moves they have left."

The commentator was speaking very nicely.

But it was clear that he was almost saying that Lu Wu's team was definitely going to lose.

As Little Skeleton charged towards the Paralysis Moth, the commentator's excitement reached its peak.

"Little Skeleton reached the Paralysis Moth, swung its baseball bat, the Paralysis Moth dodged successfully, and shot out a Paralysis Needle. The nearby Swamp Monster used Mud Ball again, and the Slime attacked with Ice Arrow.

Little Skeleton is surrounded, a dead end!

Little Skeleton has no way out, the match tragically en—oh shit…"

As a professional commentator, cursing during commentary was not typical unless truly shocked.

Like now.

In the ring, the 023 team launched a three-sided attack on Little Skeleton.

Everyone thought Little Skeleton was certain to lose, but Little Skeleton twisted its skeleton at an incredible angle to dodge the Mud Ball. It raised its bone hand and shattered the Ice Needle, and didn't even bother with the Paralysis Needle, letting it hit the skeletal frame.

However, the Paralysis Needle's main effect was on paralysis, effective on living creatures but useless against Undead like Little Skeleton.

"Now, get the Paralysis Moth down!"

At Lu Wu's command, Little Skeleton swiftly turned and knocked down the Paralysis Moth with a single blow.

Just after taking down the Paralysis Moth, Lu Wu issued another order.

"Charge, Heavy Slash, and knock out that immobilized Slime for me!"

Little Skeleton instantly burst forward, charging towards the Slime, which was in a frozen state due to its recent use of [Self Ice Seal], and swept the Slime out with a single bat swing.

In a flash, 023 was cleared of two beasts, and Little Skeleton reached the edge of the ring.

Li Yi promptly gave an order.

"Swamp Monster, seize the chance, use Mud Ball to push Little Skeleton off."

At this moment, Little Skeleton had exhausted its old strength and had not yet generated new strength. If attacked, it would surely be unable to dodge.

However, Lu Wu wasn't panicked at all, clearly having a trump card.

Before the Swamp Monster could attack, an Earth Thorn impaled it, followed by a furious giant figure charging forward, sending the Swamp Monster flying out.

This was the recovered Tuantuan, free from paralysis after defeating the Paralysis Moth, delivering the final blow.

As the Swamp Monster was sent flying, the entire arena fell into a deathly silence.

No one had expected that, facing such a dire situation, 233 could still make a comeback from such headwinds.

After a while, the commentator finally reacted, starting to clap excitedly.

"What an extremely splendid match, congratulations to the 233 team for achieving the final victory in this match!"

Following the commentator's lead, thunderous applause and cheers erupted.

"233 is awesome!"

"Lu Wu is awesome!"

"Little Skeleton is awesome!"

At this moment, the applause of victory belonged to the 233 team, belonged to Lu Wu.

This arena had even been renamed to 233 Arena.

The Quan City Cup organizers, who had been following the match, were thrilled too, having prepared to arrange a revival match for the 233 team. They hadn't expected Lu Wu and his team to shockingly win the match.

This thrilling match was perfect for promotion. The organizers quickly arranged for someone to interview Lu Wu and his team, aiming to take advantage of this opportunity and build up the hype.

But when the organizers went to interview, they couldn't find Lu Wu and Dudu. When the interviewers arrived, Li Kai happened to call, and Lu Wu went to answer with Dudu following him, leaving only Hao Zhijian on-site.

He had been fretting over finding an opportunity to clean up his image, seizing the chance, he made the entire interview into his own performance.

# Chapter 61: 061 Unexpected News

At a corner of the Quancheng Cup Competition Venue, Lu Wu picked up a call from Li Kai.

"Uncle Li, what's the matter that you're looking for me at this time?"

Li Kai knew that he was in a competition, and he wouldn't have called unless it was something especially important.

Sure enough, Li Kai's next words took Lu Wu by complete surprise.

"Mr. Lu, I just visited the official website of the Fu City Professional Summon Beast Cultivation Center. Guess what I saw!"

Li Kai was playing coy, which was quite unusual. Lu Wu, with a smile, responded, "What did you see? Has the professional certification been moved up? Can I get my professional certificate early?"

On the other end of the phone, Li Kai nodded vigorously, "Yes!"

"What did you say?"

Lu Wu was stunned, finding it incredibly hard to believe, his face filled with surprise.

Little did people know, acquiring knowledge as a Summon Beast Cultivator was Lu Wu's biggest headache recently.

He had exhausted almost all available channels to acquire knowledge before becoming a professional, and he had already assimilated all that information. Now, he had hit a bottleneck and had been stuck there for a while. The lack of progress in cultivating Little Skeleton was due to this very reason.

Lu Wu had assumed that he would have to wait until next year to resolve this problem, but now, he was hearing news that the assessment was being moved up.

The excitement he felt was unimaginable.

"Actually, it's not exactly that the assessment has been moved up.

The research center in Fucheng has issued a challenge reward. As long as you pass their assessment, you can obtain your professional certificate early. I'll send you the link later, and you can check the details on the official website yourself."

"Alright, alright, alright!"

Lu Wu was particularly thrilled, very eager to learn more.

Without any delay, Li Kai hung up the phone and sent Lu Wu a link.

Through the link that Li Kai sent, Lu Wu logged into the official website of the Fu City Professional Summon Beast Cultivation Center and saw the assessment challenge that Li Kai had mentioned on the homepage.

However, after closely examining the details of this challenge, he felt a headache coming on.

The assessment was written very formally but the content was very straightforward.

It mentioned that the Fucheng Professional Summon Beast Cultivation Center had recently received a special Summoned Beast from a Secret Realm.

The Summoner who owned this beast seemed to be in danger of failing for unknown reasons, and their Professional Center, feeling helpless yet unwilling to lose face or give up on the Summoned Beast, couldn't ask other Professional Centers for help.

So, they came up with a clever challenge, hoping that the Summon Beast Cultivators from Jiangnan would come forward and give it a try.

Non-professionals could also participate, and if they could solve the problem, they would receive a Professional Summon Beast Cultivator certificate, gain access to the Fu City Professional Center's library for a month to read books, and even receive additional rewards.

Of course, the prerequisite was that you had to join the Fu City Professional Center.

The conditions were generous, and Lu Wu was very tempted.

But there was a problem: this assessment challenge coincided with the Quancheng Cup.

If Lu Wu decided to participate in the assessment, and if he were to get held up, he would essentially have to say goodbye to the Quancheng Cup.

This was a difficult decision, and Lu Wu hesitated for nearly a whole second.

"Why hesitate? It's not like you have to give up the Quancheng Cup. Besides, even if you do, there's still high school league, but if I miss this challenge, where else could I get the chance to read books for a month?"

Given the circumstances, Lu Wu wisely chose to step back and first pass the assessment.

Holding that thought, Lu Wu closed the website of the Fu City Professional Center, ready to go out and find Hao Zhijian to have a talk.

However, upon going out, he didn't see Hao Zhijian anymore, but the reporters from the Quancheng Cup were still around.

As soon as they saw Lu Wu approaching, they immediately surrounded him.

"Lu, Hao just said that the reason his Frozen Bird was defeated is that you seized command during the competition to show off, causing the Frozen Bird's movements to be unbalanced. Do you have anything to say about this?"

"Also, Hao said that your Little Skeleton was able to deliver such a fantastic output at the end simply because Team 023 expended too much in taking down the Frozen Bird, and you were just taking advantage of their hard work. What's your response to that?"

"Furthermore, Hao accused you..."

One question after another was hurled at Lu Wu, leaving him utterly bewildered, and when Lu Wu realized what was going on, his eyes instantly narrowed.

Dudu noticing on the side, saw that Lu Wu was getting angry.

Indeed, Lu Wu was in a rather foul mood at the moment, but he didn't let it show. Instead, he even answered those questions with a smile, willingly taking some of the blame...

Over at Hao Zhijian's side.

After passing the buck at the competition venue, he left the area and then got in touch with friends he had arranged to meet with earlier in the day.

Within half an hour, a group of friends had gathered around him.

Surrounded and celebrated like a star, Hao Zhijian was particularly smug, "Let's go, live it up, I'll cover the expenses tonight!"

Clearly, he had already bounced back from his defeat in the competition.

And the blame-shifting during the interview had been cast out of his mind.

All he wanted to do now was to indulge himself.

His friends erupted in cheers at his words, but among Hao Zhijian's social circle, despite the presence of fair-weather friends, there were also one or two true friends.

"Hao, don't you have training this afternoon?"

"Train what? Hao is so strong, skipping one afternoon won't make a difference."

"No, Hao, you just made a mistake in the competition, and you even shifted the blame during the interview. Isn't it a bit much to go out and celebrate now? I think it would be better for you to properly explain things to Lu Wu now."

It really is true that honest advice grates on the ears.

The sincere advice immediately darkened Hao Zhijian's face, "What do you mean I passed the buck? It was Lu Wu's fault. If he hadn't taken over command, we could have taken care of Zero23 in one go. Would there have been any trouble then? And what right does Lu Wu have to lecture me?"

Obviously, the victories over the past two weeks, along with the accolades from the Quancheng Cup officials, had inflated Hao Zhijian's ego to a considerable degree. At this moment, it seemed he had forgotten the harsh lessons he had previously learned.

Seeing that Hao Zhijian was getting angry, the true friend didn't dare to say another word.

Instead, it was the sycophants who started egging him on.

"That's right, Lu Wu is just a pretty boy who got lucky, clinging to the coattails of that chubby girl. Otherwise, he's nothing compared to Hao."

One with a hidden agenda even instigated further, "If you ask me, Hao, you should just poach that chubby girl and kick Lu Wu out. If you're without a teammate, I'm willing to be your sidekick."

"Get lost, if anyone is going to be a sidekick, it'll be me. But you're right, though she's chubby, she's pretty cute. She'd definitely be beautiful if she lost some weight, plus her Summoned Beast is strong. Maybe you should just bite the bullet and make do, Hao. If it's too unbearable, just put up with it and dump her after the high school league."

...

The conversation took a twisted turn, with all manner of disorderly comments spilling out.

Some ideas were tantalizing to Hao Zhijian, but while he was somewhat conceited, he hadn't lost all sense of reality. Some thoughts were still off-limits to him, so he snapped with a stern face, "Stop talking rubbish like this, or we can no longer be friends!"

The flatterers weren't sure if Hao Zhijian meant what he said and were about to encourage him further when an icy voice suddenly cut through.

"I don't think you need friends like these!"

Hearing this voice, Hao Zhijian couldn't help but shudder.

Looking up, he saw Lu Wu, his face ashen, slowly walking towards him with Dudu in tow.

At this moment, Hao Zhijian started to panic somewhat.

However, partly due to his inflated ego and partly because of his friends around him, he was still holding on for the sake of his pride.

"Lu Wu, what are you doing here..."

"Slap!"

Before Hao Zhijian could finish, Lu Wu landed a slap right across his face.

# Chapter 62: 062 Fury

Lu Wu's sudden slap took Hao Zhijian and his cronies completely by surprise.

No one had expected Lu Wu to be so brutal as to go straight for the face.

The quickest to react was actually Hao Zhijian's Frozen Bird.

Although it had spent some time with Lu Wu and had grown quite fond of him, it couldn't stand for him to strike its master and immediately lunged at Lu Wu, only to be knocked to the ground by Little Skeleton, who had been prepared.

At the same time, Tuantuan grew gigantic and sat directly on the Frozen Bird, suppressing it instantly.

Seeing his Summoned Beast hit, the bewildered Hao Zhijian finally came to his senses.

"Lu Wu, you bastard, what are you doing? Let go of Frozen Bird... ah..."

Before he could finish his sentence, Hao Zhijian took another slap across the face.

And it didn't end there, as Lu Wu, now incredibly furious and assertive, followed up with a kick straight into his stomach.

He kicked Hao Zhijian to the ground and, not yet satisfied, kicked him several more times before bending down, pulling up Hao Zhijian's hair, and speaking with a chilling tone, "You don't call me Brother Lu anymore, just Lu Wu. Seems like you've become quite full of yourself these past few days. Do you really think you're all that and that our team can't do without you?

Or should I just kick you off the team right now?"

Originally filled with hatred from being beaten by Lu Wu, Hao Zhijian turned completely pale upon hearing these words, and the curses he wanted to utter were stuck in his throat, unable to come out.

He could feel that at this moment, Lu Wu was not joking with him.

He genuinely wanted to kick him off!

His father had spent 8 million to make connections with Li Kai, and he dared not even think about what would happen if he was kicked off by Lu Wu.

So, after struggling to find words, Hao Zhijian was finally forced to lower his head and say, "I'm sorry, my mistake!"

"What mistake?"

"I..."

Hao Zhijian was a bit lost, what was his mistake? Why would Lu Wu suddenly be so angry?

Was it just because he skipped training? Because he didn't call Lu Wu 'Brother Lu'?

Those would make Lu Wu mad, but not to this extent... Wait...

Hao Zhijian's head, previously knocked silly, suddenly cleared up, remembering what Lu Wu had said when he arrived and what his so-called friends had just said.

Cold sweat broke out all over him.

It was evident that his bunch of fair-weather friends had stepped on a minefield.

"Good, it looks like you now know where you went wrong."

Lu Wu watched Hao Zhijian's changing expressions and slowly let go of his hair, standing up and starting to straighten his clothes while asking: "Will you change?"

"I will! I will definitely change!"

Hao Zhijian nodded vigorously.

Lu Wu glanced at those fair-weather friends of Hao Zhijian who had said the wrong things and said coolly, "Good, then change for me to see!"

At the same time, Tuantuan released the Frozen Bird.

Meanwhile, Hao Zhijian's friends felt that something was amiss and began to get nervous.

Those who had spoken improperly started to look for an escape.

"Um, it looks like you guys have some things to do, so Hao, we'll leave first!"

With that, the two turned to leave, while Lu Wu simply watched Hao Zhijian and said nothing, not stopping them.

But at that moment, Hao Zhijian clearly knew that if he let those friends leave, Lu Wu would definitely kick him out of the team without hesitation.

Now he had to make a choice between his friends and his team.

It wasn't a hard choice to make, so in the end, Hao Zhijian still clenched his teeth and ordered, "Frozen Bird, teach them a lesson."

At his command, Frozen Bird took to the skies and charged at them.

This scared the daylights out of the few, who begged for mercy.

"Hao, what are you doing?"

"Come on, Hao, we've been friends for years."

"Ah..."

...

Their pleas were of no use. In the end, Hao Zhijian still commanded the Frozen Bird to attack his own friends.

Clawing them until they were covered in blood.

While ordering the Frozen Bird to attack, Hao Zhijian looked to Lu Wu for approval—without a nod from Lu Wu, he wouldn't dare stop.

On Lu Wu's side, he initially wanted those jerks to suffer more, but seeing Dudu unable to cope with the situation, turning somewhat pale, he finally spoke up to stop it.

"That's enough, do you want to kill them?"

Upon hearing Lu Wu's words, Hao Zhijian hurriedly commanded the Frozen Bird to stop.

"Brother Lu, I..."

"To strike at your own friends with such viciousness, how could you be so cruel?"

"I..."

It was only then that Hao Zhijian fully woke up and swore to heaven, "They are not my friends. I will definitely not associate with them anymore!"

Lu Wu watched Hao Zhijian coldly, causing Hao to sweat profusely before Lu finally looked away.

"This is the first and last time."

Finally, after dropping those words, Lu Wu turned and walked away with Dudu.

With that, today's incident seemed to have drawn to a close.

Of course, that was only on the surface.

As soon as Lu Wu turned around, his gaze became icy cold.

To be honest, his purpose in coming after Hao Zhijian today had been to beat this son of a bitch.

After all, in recent times, Lu Wu had been in a particularly bad mood.

The scandal at the Quancheng Cup, Ye Qingxue's team's surprisingly strong performance, the bottleneck in Little Skeleton's cultivation plan.

Furthermore, it had been almost two months since Dudu's Bonds Skill had triggered, and it had been almost two months since he had seen Dudu at her peak attractiveness.

Not seeing Dudu at her most attractive made Lu Wu feel like he was dying!

With all these aggravations piling up, Lu Wu was naturally in a bad mood, and now Hao had the audacity to inflate his ego, even daring to blame Lu Wu for his own mistakes in the game—wasn't that like walking into the line of fire?

Even so, at first, Lu Wu only intended to beat him up and leave it at that.

But now, with what had happened, Lu Wu felt he needed to reassess whether Hao Zhijian was fit to be his teammate.

Even though the outburst resulted in Hao bowing his head,

a seemingly enlightened and obedient Hao also knew that this outburst had created a rift in their already distant relationship.

That guy must hate Lu Wu to his guts.

Dudu might be a bit slow, but even she could see it.

"Lu Wu, do you think he will hate you?"

"Let him hate, our relationship was always one of mutual benefit.

Just now, when his fair-weather friends said those things, if he hadn't responded like that,

if he hadn't given me a satisfactory answer immediately when I asked him to change, he would no longer be part of our team."

To be honest, Lu Wu was already thinking about getting rid of Hao Zhijian.

It was just because the Quancheng Cup competition was still ongoing, and after all, he had collected 8 million from him—it would be too heartless to kick him out like that.

Another reason was that neither he nor Li Kai had a Professional Summon Beast Cultivation Master certificate.

Lu Wu was worried that if he fired Hao, and he caused a scene, it might be difficult to handle, otherwise, Lu might have really fired him.

"Let's tolerate him for the time being, hopefully he'll learn his lesson and behave."

Dudu who was standing beside, hearing this and looking at the cold-eyed Lu Wu,

felt that today's Lu Wu was particularly fierce, yet she wasn't frightened at all. Instead, she was unusually happy, her plump self hopping along as she walked.

# Chapter 63: 063 Heading to Fucheng

In a certain residential complex in Quan City.

"Get out, Lu! Get the hell out of here!"

A loud roar, full of the rage of an old father whose cabbage patch had been eyed by wild boars, resounded.

"Uncle, don't be angry, I'm just taking Dudu out for a few days, not doing anything, really..."

Lu Wu tried to struggle, but Dudu's Dad, enraged, picked up a broom and chased after him.

"Not doing anything? Don't think I don't know what you're up to. You absolutely must not, and if you dare take Dudu away, I'll kill you..."

...

In the end, Lu Wu was especially embarrassingly chased out of the house by Dudu's Dad, thanks to Dudu holding him back; otherwise, Dudu's Dad might have chased him down the street.

"It seems taking Dudu to Fu City is out of the question."

Lu Wu sat near the entrance of Dudu's family home, feeling particularly dejected and downhearted.

His desolation was mainly because he reckoned that Dudu's peak of beauty would possibly be triggered these few days, meaning Dudu might return to her peak beauty soon.

Therefore, he especially didn't want to be separated from Dudu and even wanted to take her with him to Fu City.

He feared missing out on Dudu's peak of beauty and didn't want others to know about it.

After all, people were already coveting her as she was, what more when she returned to her peak? It would be unbearable.

So Lu Wu went straight to talk to Dudu's Dad about it after beating up Hao Zhijian.

But as soon as he finished speaking, Dudu's Dad exploded!

Although their relationship was already acknowledged, that was just it.

They normally sneaked around, and the worst he'd do was cry under the covers.

But now, to brazenly take away his precious daughter for several days, what was this about? To use her up? Did he think her father was dead?

Dudu's Dad's blood boiled, and he wanted to kill that bastard.

If Dudu hadn't stopped him, it would be questionable whether Lu Wu could have escaped at all.

"If Dudu can't go with me, then, Dudu, I have to make arrangements."

Lu Wu thought for a moment, then picked up his phone and gave Dudu a call.

"Dudu, if your dad won't let you go with me, then forget it.

But you should eat less these few days, alright? Five or six bowls a meal should be enough, don't overeat.

Also, about the Quancheng Cup, if I can make it back in time, I'll continue to compete; if I can't, then it's fine to withdraw.

And while I'm not around, take care of yourself, be assertive. If anyone dares to bully you, have Tuantuan roll over them.

Listen, you heard it today, there are all kinds of scumbags out there wanting to deceive you for money and sex. While I'm gone, you need to be more vigilant and not get fooled, you understand?

After all, I'm the only good man in this world!

Oh, and about Hao Zhijian, don't see him. If he dares to hit on you, just kill him..."

The more Lu Wu instructed, the more uneasy he felt.

This was the first time he had been separated from Dudu since he had arrived a few months ago, and it felt like he was afraid someone would steal or bully his precious treasure.

So much so that after giving his instructions, Lu Wu put down the phone but still felt completely distraught.

"Maybe I just shouldn't go to Fu City?"

"No, no, this is an opportunity for me. If I don't seize it, I'll have to wait at least half a year to get my professional certificate and access to knowledge. I definitely have to go, even if the chances are slim, even if it might affect the Quancheng Cup, I have to take the gamble."

This gave Lu Wu a real headache, and he couldn't help but complain, "Ugh, that damn old man, what business is it of his if I take my woman out..."

"Before he could finish speaking, there was a noise from the other side of the door that scared Lu Wuyi so much he quickly pocketed his phone, and with Little Skeleton in tow, turned and ran."

"From the other side of the door, the old man who noticed Lu Wuyi's escape scoffed disdainfully, 'Coward!'"

"But despite his cursing, his facial expression softened a bit."

"He had been eavesdropping at the door for quite some time. He had heard most of what Lu Wuyi had just said and could sense the tension and unease in the boy's heart."

"This actually pleased the old man a little."

"Even though he found a thousand and one reasons to look down on Lu Wuyi, sometimes he had to admit that even though his daughter was the apple of his eye, she indeed could be too adorable for her own good."

"Lu Wuyi's concern for Dudu had moved him slightly."

"Of course, just slightly."

"No, it won't do. I can't be fooled by him. Who knows if this kid is only eyeing up Dudu's pig!"

"And what's with him not competing and running off to Fucheng now?"

"Never mind, that's not important!"

"I must keep a close watch from now on; can't let this kid take advantage of our Dudu!"

"Dudu's Dad made up his mind. He wouldn't sleep tonight and would guard the door to prevent his treasure from being duped away."

"On the other hand, Dudu was hesitating, wondering if she should sneak away while her father wasn't paying attention since she really wanted to travel with Lu Wuyi."

......

"After escaping from Dudu's family, Lu Wuyi started to get busy."

"He was preparing to try for the bounty assessment in Fucheng, so he needed to get everything ready today."

"As it turned out, he didn't have much to prepare. Lu Haikong had been on a business trip for half a month and hadn't returned. The house was left with only Li Ruyu and Lu Ni."

"After informing Li Ruyu, he packed a few sets of clothes and the required documents, he was ready to set off."

"Yes, right now."

"The bounty in Fucheng starts tomorrow, and it's just after eight in the evening now. By high-speed rail, it would take about two or three hours to get to Fucheng."

"After a night's rest, he could participate in the bounty at the Fu City Professional Center tomorrow."

"If Lu Wuyi could sort out the bounty smoothly, he might be able to return the day after today, and the next match of the Quancheng Cup at the earliest would be in three days, or a week later if it's delayed."

"By then, Lu Wuyi could join the Quancheng Cup matches seamlessly."

"Of course, that was the ideal situation, but in reality, Lu Wuyi was already prepared to give up the Quancheng Cup."

"After all, the information posted for the bounty in Fucheng was vague. Lu Wuyi couldn't guarantee if he could resolve the bounty in a few days; it might take a week or even longer."

"However, that presumption was based on the assumption that Lu Wuyi could handle the bounty. If he couldn't, or if someone else did, he might be able to return as early as tomorrow night."

"I just hope it's a problem I can solve."

"If I can fix this problem and get the professional certificate early, I'll obtain access to professional-level Summoned Beast Cultivation knowledge, and my skills will improve significantly in a short time."

"Maybe then, I can refine the 'Little Skeleton Soup' and elevate Little Skeleton's quality to 'Bronze.'"

"If that happens, I'll have some confidence in fighting in the Quancheng Cup, or rather, in what's called the battle of destiny."

"Hope everything goes smoothly!"

......

"Please vote for this story."

"To gain more votes, I've changed the update time again, one chapter at midnight, and one at 8 a.m. Ah, life is tough."

# Chapter 64: 064 Storm Giant Bear

The trip to Fu City, Lu Wu wanted to take Dudu along, but in the end, he didn't go alone.

Li Kai was equally interested in this matter, and he had decided from the start to go with Lu Wu.

So, since Dudu couldn't go, Lu Wu's party simply went from three people to two.

Uh, strictly speaking, it wasn't a party of two people, but rather two people and two beasts.

When Lu Wu set out, he had to take Little Skeleton from his house along.

After all, he was still weak, and Little Skeleton couldn't be too far from him, nor could it be put away.

And besides Little Skeleton, Li Kai also brought his Summoned Beast along this time.

Hmm, actually, Li Kai hadn't shown his Summoned Beast at the beginning.

But when they arrived at the high-speed train station for the security check, the device detected that Li Kai was carrying a Summoned Beast, and that's when he summoned it from within his body.

A nearly five-meter-tall giant bear emerging from the forehead of Li Kai, who stood just over 1.7 meters tall, was as shocking as you can imagine.

Not just for Lu Wu, but everyone at the station was stunned.

After all, Summoners who could do this kind of thing are rare in everyday life!

Of course, while he was stunned, Lu Wu also didn't forget to reach out and pet the bear that had just passed the security check.

...

Name: Storm Giant Bear

Power: ???

Quality: Silver (Upgraded)

Attribute: Wind, Thunder

State: Excitement (Fighting, you called me out for a fight?)

Skill: ???

??? , ???

Weakness: ???

Description: Stunned, aren't you? Didn't expect your little buddy to be a big shot, huh?

...

Hmm, looking at the attributes of this Summoned Beast that is clearly eager for a fight,

The expression on Lu Wu's face was truly complex.

How should I put it, Li Kai was a man full of surprises.

When Lu Wu thought he was the boss, he immediately became the underling in front of Lu Wu.

And when Lu Wu accepted him as an underling, he instantly became the boss again in front of Lu Wu.

A guy of Silver Quality, marked with various question marks, what kind of power does this guy have?

Lu Wu didn't hesitate to ask this question directly.

"Uncle Li, what's the power of your Summoned Beast?"

"Leader 3 stars!"

Lu Wu asked directly, and Li Kai responded with particular candor.

And his candid reply made Lu Wu take a sharp breath.

As a Quasi-breeder, Lu Wu was clearly aware of what a Leader 3 stars Summoned Beast meant. It was the standard for a Professional Summoner.

This was an absolute big shot!

You know, not everyone who graduates from Summoner University could become a Professional Summoner.

And Professional Summoners are usually either competing or cultivating their Summoned Beasts in Secret Realms. This was the first live Professional Summoner Lu Wu had ever seen, which made him extremely excited.

"Uncle Li, how come you never mentioned you were a Professional Summoner?"

"That was in the past, now I've changed professions, I am a Quasi-professional Cultivator!"

"Why the career change? Isn't being a Professional Summoner very good?"

"And Uncle Li, is this the only Summoned Beast you have? I heard that Professional Summoners have at least three Summoned Beasts, where are the other two?"

"How did you raise this Summoned Beast? By the way, since you're already a Professional Summoner, why is the level of your Summoned Beast Cultivation so unimpressive?"

...

Lu Wu's barrage of questions gave Li Kai a bit of a headache.

It was clear that Li Kai was somewhat evasive on the topic of Professional Summoners and didn't particularly want to delve into it.

Moreover, this kid was even giving him a hard time.

If it had been anyone else asking, he would have ignored them if he was in a good mood, or would have smacked them already if not.

What do you mean the Summoned Beast Cultivation level is subpar? There are specialties within every profession, all right!

But the one asking was Lu Wu, his own Mr. Lu, which made it difficult for him to refuse to answer.

Though he didn't want to respond, he still had to pick some questions to answer.

Fortunately, Lu Wu was just excited because it was his first time seeing a living Professional Summoner, and he quickly got his emotions under control while also noticing Li Kai's reluctance.

Realizing that he didn't want to talk much about it, Lu Wu didn't press further, giving Li Kai a sigh of relief.

Actually, Li Kai hadn't planned on taking out his Summoned Beast.

It was too much trouble.

Trouble in all kinds of ways.

But after thinking it over, he decided to bring out his Summoned Beast after all.

This was because, upon reflection, he felt there was something off about the bounty offered by the Fu City Professional Center.

The Fu City Professional Center was the leading Cultivation Master Professional Center in Jiangnan Province and represented the highest level of Summoned Beast Cultivators in Jiangnan.

They wouldn't turn to a bunch of newbies, who weren't even Professional Cultivators, for something they couldn't handle themselves.

He suspected there might be something fishy going on.

When he realized this, his immediate thought was to persuade Lu Wu not to go, to avoid a wasted trip and potential danger.

But then he thought, even if there were ulterior motives, it really had nothing to do with them.

He was a retired Professional Summoner, and Lu Wu was a student, both law-abiding citizens; any trickery wouldn't involve them.

Besides, they were going to Fu City, home of the Fu City Professional Center, a gathering place for big shots.

It could be said to be the safest place in Jiangnan Province. Even if there were any tricks, there wouldn't be any danger for those just coming to join the excitement, and there might even be benefits.

Since there was no danger and potentially benefits, their coming was no big deal. Perhaps Mr. Lu might even become a Professional Cultivator early, gaining a better education.

Of course, to ensure Lu Wu's safety, Li Kai still brought his own Summoned Beast.

If something did happen, protecting Lu Wu wouldn't be a problem.

Of course, Lu Wu was unaware of all this.

He didn't know about the multitude of implications behind the bounty.

At this moment, Lu Wu, who had just forcibly shifted his focus from the awe of Li Kai being a big shot, was curiously observing the high-speed train of this world.

The high-speed trains in this world were similar to those in Lu Wu's past life, except the carriages were a bit larger to accommodate seats for Summoned Beasts.

Of course, this only applied to smaller types; larger, special-class Summoned Beasts needed to be placed in dedicated carriages.

Li Kai's Storm Giant Bear didn't need one. Although the creature was over five meters tall and weighed tons, Li Kai was a Professional Summoner and could store his Summoned Beast inside the exclusive space within his body.

Lu Wu's Little Skeleton didn't need one either.

It was about the size of a human, and could stand in the Summoned Beast seats in the carriage.

At this moment, Little Skeleton, like its master, was curiously observing everything around it.

The difference was while Lu Wu looked at the high-speed train's equipment, the swiftly passing scenery outside, and the Summoned Beasts in the carriage, Little Skeleton focused more on the humans inside.

Especially when it saw a couple, Little Skeleton's twin fires of eyes fixated on them, watching very intently.

It had seen television and knew that such humans would hug each other and then start biting.

Although it couldn't understand, it was very curious whether real-life humans also hugged and bit each other.

# Chapter 65: 065 2-star

In Fu City, the capital of Jiangnan Province,

which is also the headquarters of both the Summoner Center and the Cultivator Center of Jiangnan Province.

As the absolute center of Jiangnan Province, the prosperity of Fu City is beyond the imagination of Lu Wu, a youngster from a smaller city like Quan City.

From the moment he stepped out of the carriage, he was struck by the grandeur of Fu City's train station.

As a behemoth that handles tens of thousands of people every day, Fu City takes its security very seriously.

In this world, where hot weapons are ineffective and summoners and their Summoned Beasts are highly integrated, many functions are carried out by the Summoned Beasts.

Lu Wu saw Summoned Beasts skilled in detection at the security checkpoint.

And some Summoned Beasts responsible for security tasks.

Lu Wu noticed that these Summoned Beasts were primarily canine in type.

And in terms of the power of these Summoned Beasts,

Lu Wu had some experience with the ones responsible for security checks; their Quality was around Bronze, and their Power was generally at the Boss Level.

…

Name: Guard Dog

Power: 1 Star [Boss]

Quality: Black Iron (Upgradable)

Attribute: Wind

State: Serious (I love my job, don't ask me to stop!)

Skill: Super Scent (Master), Danger Alert (Master),

Pounce Kill (Master), Tear (Master)

Weakness: Ice, Poison

Description: A Summoned Beast specially cultivated for surveillance, characterized by loyalty, kindness, and gentleness. It is especially friendly to humans; as long as you pose no threat, touching it should not be a problem.

…

A large city is indeed a large city, where even a random Summoned Beast is at the Boss Level.

And when Lu Wu saw its attributes, he felt somewhat reassured.

Previously, when he saw Li Kai's family's bear, all he got were question marks, and he was worried that his Golden Finger was broken.

Now, Lu Wu thought it must be a matter of power levels.

He estimated he could only discern the attributes of Summoned Beasts a higher level than his own, as evidenced by the fact that when he touched another Guard Dog, he got question marks; that one must have been above the Boss 1 Star level.

What Lu Wu didn't notice was that when he was touching the Guard Dog, his own Little Skeleton's Pupil Fire also flickered with curiosity, and it couldn't help but want to reach out a bony hand to touch it too.

As a result, the friendly Guard Dog in front of Lu Wu immediately hardened its gaze and barked at Little Skeleton, and then they were met with misfortune— the security team immediately surrounded them.

Although it was quickly proven that Lu Wu and his group were no trouble, Lu Wu still got a lecture before being let go, which left him so irritated that he slapped Little Skeleton on the head as soon as they were out.

"You better behave next time. Don't move without my command."

Little Skeleton's Pupil Fire swayed; lacking much experience, it didn't understand what it did wrong or why Lu Wu would hit it, and felt aggrieved.

Little Skeleton decided not to cover Lu Wu with a blanket that night, but then felt that it might be too cruel. After some thought, it decided that missing the blanket once would suffice!

Lu Wu had no idea what Little Skeleton was thinking.

After scolding Little Skeleton, Lu Wu followed Li Kai and continued on their way. They hailed a car and traveled nearly an hour before arriving and settling in at a hotel near the Fu City Cultivator Center.

Lu Wu and Li Kai had intended to get separate rooms, but perhaps due to a bounty from the Fu City Professional Center, there was only one room left.

```

No other choice, Lu Wu's first room-sharing experience since his transmigration was given to Li Kai.

After settling in, it was already past one in the morning, and Lu Wu wasn't planning on going to bed yet; he still had things to do.

Today, he had dug up a lot of information about Professional Summoners from Li Kai.

Such information might not have been useful to Li Kai, but it was a different story for Lu Wu.

Influenced by the information from Li Kai, Lu Wu had an idea, a thought on how to enhance Little Skeleton's power.

Little Skeleton had been at 1 Star for quite some time, and during this period, Little Skeleton hadn't slacked in training, stewing soups, or brawls. Logically, it should have hit 2 Stars by now, but it just hadn't happened.

Initially, Lu Wu didn't pay much attention to this, as it seemed there was no shortcut to increasing a Summoned Beast's strength.

Everyone seemed to improve by simply training and fighting.

Lu Wu himself was more focused on improving Little Skeleton's quality, and he hadn't really bothered much with strength before. But today, partly inspired by Li Kai and partly realizing the limitations of his Golden Finger—

he could only see attributes of Little Skeleton up to one major level above—made Lu Wu want to work on this aspect.

After all, a Summoner's power is tied to their Summoned Beast's, and a quicker increase in Little Skeleton's strength would also be beneficial for him. Moreover, Lu Wu was worried that the Summoned Beast at the Fu City Professional Center the next day might be a Boss 2 Stars, leaving him totally clueless.

After all, setting aside his Golden Finger, he was essentially just a newbie close to professional standards.

So, upon arriving at the hotel, Lu Wu began diligently searching for ways to augment Little Skeleton's power.

And his method was quite simple when spoken of.

If put loftily, it was called belief guidance; if said in plainer terms, it was known as bamboozling.

Today, on the high-speed train, Li Kai shared many amusing stories with Lu Wu to divert his attention from topics Li Kai didn't want to discuss. Among them was one where a friend's Summoned Beast hadn't leveled up for years, but did so after its food bowl was broken.

Li Kai had only mentioned this as a fun fact, yet Lu Wu took it to heart.

He felt that in this case, the Summoned Beast's power—or experience—had accumulated to the necessary standards but hadn't advanced due to a lack of a catalyst.

This kind of catalyst could be anger or something else, something emotion-related.

Lu Wu thought it was worth a shot.

So, once at the hotel, Lu Wu went about sweet-talking Little Skeleton.

The feel-good version involved Lu Wu starting from Little Skeleton's quality, narrating the struggles, how others looked down on it, the efforts he had made, and how Little Skeleton needed to fortify itself.

It was a touching, motivationally urinating spiel, but to no avail—Little Skeleton couldn't understand it.

After all, it was still just a few months old, and its spiritual wisdom wouldn't improve until after reaching Black Iron, so all of Lu Wu's motivational talks were gibberish to it.

With no other option, Lu Wu could only switch to sarcasm mode.

He ridiculed Little Skeleton for being inferior to Tuantuan and praised Tuantuan constantly, hoping to infuriate Little Skeleton into leveling up.

This did elicit some reaction from Little Skeleton, but despite Lu Wu's effort, he still couldn't get Little Skeleton to level up.

Watching for quite a while, Li Kai handed Lu Wu a cup of water: "Mr. Lu, take a sip of water, and rest for a bit, maybe this little guy just isn't experienced enough."

Li Kai didn't dare to say that Lu Wu's idea might be wrong.

After all, this was his teacher, but he wasn't optimistic about this sudden idea from Lu Wu—stimulation prompting a Summoned Beast to level up? It couldn't be that easy, could it?

"Thank you."

Lu Wu felt somewhat dejected at this point but hadn't given up. After taking a sip of the water, he set the glass down, ready to continue his efforts.

But because he wasn't paying attention as he placed the glass on his phone, he didn't set it properly, causing the glass to tip over and drench his phone, surprising Lu Wu.

"Crap, my phone's going to be ruined!"

As he was about to rescue his phone, suddenly, he felt a cool stream rush toward his forehead.

```

# Chapter 66: 066 Professional Center

Fucheng, Professional Summoning Beast Cultivator Center.

Early in the morning, Lu Wu and Li Kai had come over.

It was their first visit to the Professional Center, and Lu Wu and Li Kai actually wanted to look around, but there was no opportunity given to them.

As soon as they entered, they were asked if they were there for the reward, and once their identities were confirmed, a staff member led them to a side building of the Professional Center and distributed a document to everyone present.

Then they were asked to wait.

In such a situation, as a complete novice, Lu Wu didn't find anything unusual.

However, Li Kai further confirmed that there probably was something fishy about this reward, guessing that the Professional Center was fishing for something, otherwise they wouldn't have organized it this way.

But he didn't take it too seriously, assuming that any trick was targeted at those other guys, and it wasn't really their concern as good citizens.

Moreover, those guys couldn't really cause any trouble at the Professional Center.

In fact, Li Kai was certain that the Professional Center was likely wasting their effort.

No matter how crazy someone is, they wouldn't come here to cause trouble.

That's not the way to seek death.

"There probably won't be any issues, but we should still be cautious, especially in protecting Mr. Lu."

What Li Kai was thinking, Lu Wu didn't know.

His attention was entirely on the document.

The document distributed by the Professional Center was about the Summoned Beast mentioned on their official website.

…

Name: Unknown

Power: 1 Star [Ordinary]

Quality: Unknown

Attribute: Unknown

Description: A special egg-shaped life form that feeds on No Attribute Bias energy and can roll.

Condition: Unable to absorb energy, life force diminishing…

…

Besides the basic information about that Summoned Beast, there were also pictures of it included in the document.

Looking at this document, Lu Wu furrowed his brows, and he wasn't the only one; basically, everyone present was frowning.

Someone spoke up immediately, "What can we tell from this little information? Can I see the summoned beast?"

Regarding this, the Professional Center was clearly prepared and quickly responded.

"Rest assured, we have arranged everything.

The document given to each of you has a serial number. Once we are ready, we will invite you to observe the Summoned Beast in sequence, each person will have 5 minutes!"

This answer didn't satisfy the people present.

"Five minutes? Isn't that too short?"

"Yeah, what can be done in just 5 minutes?"

"It should be extended, at least half an hour!"

…

Suddenly, everyone in the hall raised their voices, hoping the Professional Center would extend the time.

In response, the staff of the Professional Center was very firm; they said 5 minutes, so it would be 5 minutes, not a minute more.

Realizing there was no room for negotiation, people stopped making a fuss and began to focus on studying the document.

But with the limited information in their hands, and having not yet seen the actual creature, what could they really analyze from this?

Soon, everyone was idle again.

Just as everyone was idly wondering how to pass the time, Lu Wu kicked Li Kai, and the kicked Li Kai touched his nose and stood up.

"Gentlemen, I have a suggestion!"

Li Kai stood up and with a loud statement drew everyone's attention to him.

"All the gentlemen present are here for the reward, but after all, only one can complete the reward and receive the prize. Except for one, perhaps all of us might leave empty-handed.

Coming here in high spirits and leaving disappointed, that's something none of us would want, right?"

Li Kai's words immediately resonated with everyone present.

But no one said anything; they just watched Li Kai perform.

At this moment, Lu Wu, watching the people around him, his eyes gleaming.

Opportunity!

A great opportunity!

Clearly, Li Kai's speaking out was instructed by Lu Wu.

In fact, although Lu Wu was confident in himself, this confidence wasn't to the point of being blind.

Especially when he arrived at the Professional Center and saw that there were over a hundred participants, and people were still arriving, Lu Wu started making other plans.

Just in case, he had to do something to avoid leaving empty-handed if he failed.

And in this situation, what could he do?

Of course, he could only covet the knowledge of the people present. Among the cultivators there, both professional and non-professional, there were about a hundred people. Not to mention the non-professional, just a few tips from any professionals would be beneficial to him.

But having experienced the initial clinging to Li Kai, Lu Wu also knew that in this world, there's no love without a reason.

It was clearly impossible for Lu Wu to just randomly cling to a professional cultivator; hence, he had to think of a strategy.

In this case, he couldn't just cling to someone and ask for knowledge; it had to be a win-win and sharing situation.

So he had Li Kai stand up.

After Li Kai captured everyone's attention and resonated with them, he smoothly relayed Lu Wu's idea.

"I think, since we are all gathered here, we might as well make use of it. Since we already have a venue, why not turn today's challenge into a Cultivator Symposium where we can exchange experiences?

That way, even if we don't complete the challenge and get the reward, none of us would have come here in vain, right?"

Li Kai's words piqued the interest of many cultivators present.

But having an interest was one thing, and heating up the atmosphere was another.

Fortunately, Lu Wu was prepared for this from the beginning.

Seeing that there was some interest, Li Kai pushed a bit more.

"I see many of you are quite interested. How about this, let me start by making a fool of myself.

I recently made some discoveries about Little Skeleton."

Li Kai said he would start, and although the cultivators were interested, their expectations dropped the moment he mentioned Little Skeleton.

In their view, what was there to study about Little Skeleton?

Such Summoned Beasts had little cultivation value, and not many cultivators were interested in researching them.

But no one said anything; it was boring anyway, so they might as well listen.

This listen, drew their attention.

"I have recently developed a quality improvement plan for Little Skeleton. It only requires about 250,000 yuan worth of materials to enhance Little Skeleton's quality to the Black Iron Level."

Li Kai's words immediately heated up the atmosphere.

The previously quiet hall burst into spirited discussions.

250,000?

Black Iron Quality?

How is that possible?

Li Kai ignored these comments; he directly took out the "Little Skeleton Training Manual" and shared it, while Lu Wu focused on extracting useful information from the cultivators present…

# Chapter 67: 067 Sudden Change

Lu Wu had Li Kai toss out the "Little Skeleton Training Manual" to not only heat up the atmosphere but also to tempt others with their knowledge.

Or rather, Lu Wu wanted to use others' knowledge to help him refine the quality improvement scheme for Little Skeleton.

You see, everyone present was a Cultivation Master, and even though most were not professionals, those who came with confidence definitely wouldn't be lacking in skills.

Li Kai, in front of them, brought out a previously unseen scheme, which, if it piqued their interest, would only require a gentle nudge to get them talking freely and help Lu Wu perfect this scheme.

And that was exactly what Lu Wu wanted.

Although they might not come up with any great or detailed improvement plans, with so many people, there was bound to be some ideas and methods Lu Wu hadn't thought of before.

These ideas and methods might not be of much use to others since many were likely spur-of-the-moment thoughts, impossible to verify, or rather, not worth the extensive resources to check.

But the situation was different for Lu Wu.

After all, he was a man with tricks up his sleeve.

What others couldn't verify, he could, and without needing to exhaust any resources.

That was Lu Wu's advantage, the reason he had Li Kai reveal the "Little Skeleton Training Manual."

Things went smoothly, almost exactly as Lu Wu envisioned.

Once Li Kai made the "Little Skeleton Training Manual" public and spelled out his thoughts, more than half of the Cultivation Masters present were intrigued.

And when Li Kai asked if anyone had other ideas to help refine the scheme, someone immediately spoke up.

"I think if this scheme is to be improved, water might be one element to consider. I suggest adding Yin Water to the mix."

Someone countered right away.

"That's not right; Yin Water has a corrosive effect. I think adding some Barbarian Bull Blood might do the trick."

"Barbarian Bull Blood doesn't seem too useful. How about trying some rotten corpse liquid?"

...

One Cultivation Master after another spoke freely, sharing all kinds of ingenious ideas.

Below them, Lu Wu's eyes gleamed, and he quickly snatched the mobile phone from Little Skeleton's hands.

Though his memory was excellent, he was also skillful at never forgetting.

There were too many speaking now, and even with his strong memory, he couldn't keep up. Losing concentration for just a moment could lead to omissions, so recording with his phone was more reliable.

That way, even if Lu Wu didn't remember, he could listen to it several times over.

The phone's rightful owner, Little Skeleton, was somewhat displeased.

It felt Lu Wu was a cheater and had just declared the previous night that the phone was its. Yet here he was, snatching it away again.

Hmph, it decided then and there that it would absolutely refuse to cover Lu Wu with a blanket tonight.

...

On the other side of the Professional Center, the team monitoring the hall noticed the abnormal situation immediately.

"Do we need to intervene?"

The middle-aged man in charge of surveillance asked for instructions from the elder beside him.

The elder shook his head.

"No need, luring them here was a bit unscrupulous to begin with, and stopping their academic discussion now would be quite inconsiderate.

Besides, what they're doing doesn't affect anything; it might even be helpful to us.

Keep an eye on those who are unusually silent or overly excited.

Afterwards, arrange for them to attend a class as compensation."

"Yes!"

"Are there any noteworthy individuals in attendance?"

"So far, nothing unusual; the only one slightly different is that Summoner we just talked about."

The middle-aged man pointed to Li Kai: "However, we've checked his identity, and he's not a suspect."

The elder looked at Li Kai on the screen, feeling a sense of familiarity, and after a moment of recollection, his eyebrows lifted: "Is it him?"

"You know him?"

"I have an impression. He has participated in the professional assessments over the past few years, and I was the chief examiner last year; I've seen his information.

It's rare to see a Professional Summoner change professions, so I remembered him."

As the elder's attention was on Li Kai, Li Kai was engaged in a discussion with a Cultivation Master. The elder listened quietly and then raised his eyebrows slightly in surprise.

"Hmm, his level has increased quite a lot. With his current skills, he should have a chance to pass this year's assessment.

It seems he's encountered a great teacher.

Who did he come with?"

The elder was interested in the great teacher who had taught Li Kai so well in a year; regardless of their skill level, their teaching ability was quite impressive.

He was eager to meet them.

The middle-aged man checked the information, then pointed to Lu Wu, who was holding the phone and recording: "Him!"

Upon seeing Lu Wu, the elder was somewhat disappointed.

"This one should be his student or classmate. It seems his teacher didn't come."

Then, the elder shifted his attention away from Li Kai and Lu Wu.

He refocused on the task at hand.

"How's the preparation for the Summoned Beast coming along?"

"Almost ready!"

The elder narrowed his eyes: "Then let's start. It won't be easy to capture that person with his abilities, fishing requires bait after all.

Why would a fish bite if it can't see the bait?"

The middle-aged man hesitated a bit about starting the risky move: "Elder Zhao, isn't this a bit too risky?

What if that person really comes and takes the Summoned Beast, how will we explain it to the higher-ups?"

Elder Zhao was full of confidence: "Don't worry, no one can steal that Summoned Beast from me!

I stand by my words!"

"But..."

"No buts, I'll take responsibility for any issues, let them start!"

"Yes!"

The middle-aged man had no choice but to pick up the communicator and contact the team handling the Summoned Beast.

"Old Zhang, it's me. You can start now!"

After a few seconds, there was no response on the communicator!

"What's going on?"

Both of their faces grew serious, and just then, the previously unresponsive communicator crackled with a deep, hoarse voice.

"Ah, many thanks to you both. I'll be taking this little fellow with me. Until we meet again."

Following that, the communicator was abruptly hung up.

Now, the elder's previous confidence completely shattered.

Within the Professional Center, a roar as if emanating from the depths of the Abyss resounded.

A giant beast reeking of the Abyss soared into the air, seemingly carrying someone as it charged out of the Professional Center.

"This is bad!"

"Stop him, don't let him get away!"

Under the elder's orders, several immensely powerful auras burst forth within the Professional Center. One terrifying Summoned Beast after another appeared, converging on the Abyss Giant Beast...

# Chapter 68: 068 Concern

Professional Center.

As a roar, like one emanating from the Abyss, reverberated through the space.

In the hall, the Cultivation Masters who had been deeply engrossed in academic discussions were completely baffled.

"What's happening?"

All activity ground to a halt as everyone wanted to step outside to assess the situation, but they were stopped by the Professional Center's staff before they could leave the hall.

"Ladies and gentlemen, a Summoned Beast is rampaging outside. For your safety, please do not move around at will."

"How could there be a Summoned Beast rampage in the Professional Center? Which Summoned Beast is it? What level is it?"

"Judging by the sound, it seems to be an Abyss-type Summoned Beast. The lowest level it could be is likely Leader Level, or even possibly Lord Level. Aren't such level Summoned Beasts not supposed to appear in the city?"

"What exactly is happening outside?"

...

Facing the questions from the Cultivation Masters, the staff members did not respond much, instructing them to wait inside the hall.

Having no alternative, Lu Wu and the others could only listen attentively, with a mingling of curiosity and tension, to the situation outside from within the hall.

The commotion outside seemed to grow even larger as if a fight had erupted.

Various beast roars, battle cries, and sounds of collision could be heard. Without witnessing it firsthand, the noises alone allowed Lu Wu and the others to gauge just how massive the battle outside must be.

Li Kai's face turned particularly ashen.

As a Professional Summoner, he was privy to much more information than Lu Wu and the rest.

He was well aware that the battle taking place outside was undoubtedly of a Lord Level magnitude.

"I can't believe someone would actually dare to make a move in the Professional Center, and on top of that, at the Lord Level."

Li Kai now somewhat regretted bringing Lu Wu along, as even a slight spillover from a battle of this level could potentially end Lu Wu's life.

Fortunately, the battle didn't last long.

A few minutes later, it gradually came to an end. As to the result, Lu Wu and his companions had no idea since they didn't venture outside.

Shortly after the battle outside concluded, the staff from the Professional Center came over.

"We apologize, but a minor incident occurred at the Professional Center, and the original bounty mission has been canceled.

In addition, you may all have to stay within the center for a while."

Upon hearing this, the entire hall instantly erupted.

"What's the situation? How can the bounty mission just be canceled like that? What exactly happened outside?"

"Yeah, what happened outside? Is the mission cancellation related to the incident? Also, on what grounds are you restricting our freedom?"

"We've traveled all this way for the bounty, and you say it's canceled just like that? Isn't that a bit too tyrannical?"

...

The staff members at the Professional Center soothed the discontent among the crowd in the hall.

But despite their assurances, they still didn't explain the incident that occurred outside or the reason for restricting their movement.

How could they explain?

Could they say, "Sorry, but we had a big shot here who was overconfident in fishing, only to be slapped in the face by the fish."

Were they to admit that even though they managed to capture the misbehaving Abyss-type Summoned Beast, in the end, the beast still got away with the bait?

Such an embarrassing matter, how could the Professional Center possibly disclose it?

So they did not reveal any information to the Cultivation Masters present. However, even so, the hall quickly became quiet again.

One reason was that the Professional Center is an official institution, holding sway over the assessments and certifications of Cultivation Masters, as well as related knowledge.

Most of those present were amateur Cultivation Masters, whose assessments, certifications, and acquisition of knowledge all depended on the authorities. Even the professionals were under their jurisdiction, and on their turf, they simply didn't dare to make a fuss.

Besides, the Professional Center's inventory didn't consist only of words of comfort; they also offered some benefits.

One was to ensure that during their time at the Professional Center, they would have at least one Professional Cultivator each day to provide them with more than three hours of class.

Another was the opportunity for an assessment once the incident was over.

If they could pass the assessment, they would be able to obtain a professional certificate, and those with excellent performance could even have the chance to use a Professional Center Cultivation Room.

Pre-qualification for the test wasn't a big deal, but the key points were the lessons and the chance to use a Professional Center Cultivation Room.

The lessons themselves were invaluable, as having instruction from a Cultivator at the Professional Center was an exceptionally rare opportunity.

And the chance to use a Professional Center Cultivation Room was even rarer, meaning one could use any of the materials and facilities inside the Cultivation Room, an opportunity that was difficult even for Professional Cultivators to secure.

With such benefits at stake, the Cultivation Masters in the hall naturally ceased their commotion.

Indeed, among those in the hall, some had their own speculations about what happened outside and why they were being kept there.

For example, Li Kai, who had initially guessed that there might be something fishy about this mission.

The reasons were only two.

Either the fishing had been successful, but due to the commotion, the Professional Center decided to pacify them with some benefits to keep their mouths shut and have an explanation for higher-ups.

Or the fishing had not been successful, potentially even resulting in the bait being taken, and the Professional Center suspected that the fish might still be among them, which is why they were keeping them there.

Li Kai didn't know which situation it was.

If it were the former, there would be no danger, only benefits; if the latter, their current situation could be dangerous.

With that in mind, Li Kai became somewhat nervous and quickly returned to Lu Wu's side.

He might have regretted bringing Lu Wu along by now, but regret was useless at this point; protecting Lu Wu was what mattered.

Meanwhile, Lu Wu had no idea what Li Kai was thinking and lacked any sense of danger.

That wasn't because Lu Wu was foolish but rather because he was inexperienced, and his focus differed from Li Kai's.

All his attention was concentrated on the knowledge he had just acquired.

His mind raced as he systematically organized the insights he had just gained from the other Cultivation Masters.

Using his own knowledge, he was starting a preliminary validation of these concepts.

The harvest was significant, and Lu Wu's eyes sparkled with excitement.

He couldn't help but give Li Kai a side-eye.

Go on, go on, get the conversation heated up again, don't let the exchange stop!

At Lu Wu's prompting, Li Kai, having no choice, begrudgingly went to warm up the crowd again.

However, what Lu Wu did not know was that this interaction between him and Li Kai caught the attention of the Professional Center once again.

That a Professional Summoner like Li Kai would be so deferential and obedient to a youngster like Lu Wu was not a small matter.

The Professional Center immediately conducted a background check on Lu Wu and, upon discovering that Lu Wu's background was exceedingly ordinary, their interest in him surged dramatically.

As for Lu Wu, he was completely unaware of this, for he was immersed in a sea of knowledge. He sensed that Little Skeleton's advancement to the Bronze Level might be hopeful in the near future!

...

I recommend a friend's book, "Excuse Me, I'm About to Explode Seeds."

Uh, this time it's not about a young lady,

# Chapter 69: 069 The Resentful Little Skeleton

Professional Center, the hall where Lu Wu and his group were located.

From the second day after Lu Wu and his companions were detained, this hall spanning thousands of square meters was divided into two areas.

This division wasn't one created by the staff of the Professional Center, but instead was a self-imposed segregation by the Cultivation Masters within the hall.

One side for professionals, one side for non-professionals, forming two distinct groups, one large and one small.

The fewer professional cultivators took up more space and had better positions, while the non-professionals were squeezed into a corner.

This wasn't a case of professional cultivators bullying the non-professionals.

They didn't have the idle time for that, the manner in which the territory was divided simply stemmed from the non-professionals' instinctive reverence for knowledge.

The state of these two groups was also completely different.

The non-professionals gathered to converse whenever they weren't in class, while the professionals, besides during class breaks, were more inclined to silently study on their own.

It wasn't that they weren't social, or less passionate about knowledge than the non-professional cultivators.

It was just unnecessary for them.

After obtaining their professional certificates, these professional cultivators gained the privilege to access the Cultivation Master intranet.

The Cultivation Master intranet was fully-featured, even hosting forums for professional cultivators; they could socialize by simply holding their phones or opening their computers. There was no need for them to interact like the non-professional cultivators.

About all this, Lu Wu was clueless.

He was just a bit regretful that he had fewer professional cultivators to exploit for resources.

But he quickly tossed that regret aside.

Because Lu Wu realized there was still an abundance of resources to be had among the non-professional cultivators.

Firstly, there were a great number of non-professional cultivators, with 89 of them present including Lu Wu and Li Kai.

Moreover, almost every non-professional cultivator had their own specialized field.

Lu Wu only learned today that the field of cultivation could be so broad.

Some specialized in Undead Type cultivation, some in animal type, and others in Human-shaped Summoned Beast cultivation.

There were those who focused on Potions, Summoning Beast Equipment, or who devoted themselves to the development of Summoning Beast Skills.

Among the 89 people, even if they followed the same path, almost each of them had a different focus.

In this circle, Lu Wu felt like a shepherd with a pair of scissors, with wool everywhere in sight!

And so, Lu Wu began to exploit them like crazy!

During the first three days of restricted freedom, Lu Wu had been letting Li Kai remain active at the forefront, guiding the conversation and setting the atmosphere.

And Lu Wu himself listened from behind, recording everything with his phone.

Hmm, these days, Lu Wu's phone was almost always in his hand, which made Little Skeleton feel quite resentful.

Mainly because the last time Little Skeleton's power increased to the 2-star level, Lu Wu decided to wait for Little Skeleton to reach the 3-star level before giving his phone a helpful toss.

So he declared on the spot that he would give his phone to Little Skeleton.

Initially, Little Skeleton was a bit puzzled.

It didn't understand why Lu Wu giving it the phone, was it for watching TV?

Little Skeleton was a bit happy!

And when Lu Wu explained to Little Skeleton that the phone would be its to watch TV whenever it wanted, and it could even play games on it, the Little Skeleton, who had some trouble grasping this at first, was overjoyed.

That night, it covered Lu Wu with his blanket many times over.

Lu Wu didn't kick it off, and Little Skeleton would just uncover and cover him back up again.

At that moment, Little Skeleton thought Lu Wu was the best Lu Wu in the world!

Now, well, Little Skeleton thought Lu Wu was nothing but a liar.

"It had been promised to it," Lu Wu had said that it could watch TV and play with the phone whenever it wanted. But the next day, Lu Wu snatched the phone away.

Little Skeleton hadn't played with a phone for such a long, long time.

It was even getting a bit emotional.

The kind that's not easily soothed.

Well, Lu Wu didn't intend to soothe it, or rather, immersed in the ocean of knowledge as he was, he'd completely forgotten about the matter and hadn't noticed Little Skeleton's mood.

It wasn't until he'd drained the phone with its super-long standby battery over several days that he found it troublesome to carry, and finally tossed it to Little Skeleton.

At that moment, Little Skeleton was feeling quite resentful.

It hadn't expected Lu Wu to suddenly return the phone, which surprised Little Skeleton immensely.

However, after getting the phone, Little Skeleton discovered the screen wouldn't light up.

Not understanding, it didn't know the phone was out of power and thought it was broken, which annoyed Little Skeleton so much that it dragged Lu Wu out of his immersion in knowledge.

Lu Wu, who was suddenly pulled away, was originally very angry, but turning his head to see Little Skeleton holding the phone with Pupil Fire full of resentment, looking like it was about to cry, Lu Wu was out of moves.

"The phone isn't broken, it's just out of battery. Just charge it, and it'll be fine."

Battery? What is that? What does 'charging' mean?

Little Skeleton was still confused and didn't understand.

Lu Wu could only point to the baseball bat held by Little Skeleton: "Look, that's where the 'electricity' is!

Be good, just endure for a few days. When we get back, I'll buy you a new phone and a big power bank."

Having said that, Lu Wu plunged back into the ocean of knowledge and tossed Little Skeleton aside, leaving it to stare at its baseball bat and at the phone with a puzzled face.

Phone, no power, charge, the baseball bat contains 'electricity'...

Could it be that the baseball bat could charge the phone?

Little Skeleton's brain turned slowly—after all, it had no brain—so it took a very long, long time to arrive at this conclusion.

It wasn't sure and wanted to ask Lu Wu.

But by that time, Lu Wu had already been surrounded by a crowd.

With no other option, Little Skeleton had to figure it out on its own, squatting down to place the phone on the ground and then pressing the baseball bat on top of the phone, its Pupil Fire flickering with expectation.

Would the phone start charging now?

Well, in the following days, Little Skeleton was no longer feeling wronged.

It had something to do now.

It was going to charge its own phone.

As a Black Iron Level Undead Type with no brain, Little Skeleton's spiritual wisdom wasn't high, comparable to a two or three-year-old child.

There weren't many thoughts in its head, but it was extremely stubborn.

If it believed that this method could charge its phone, it would just keep watching it.

It wouldn't feel bored or stifled, and it wouldn't doubt whether its method was wrong.

So it just kept watching, one day, two days, for over a week.

And about this situation, Lu Wu had no clue.

It wasn't that Lu Wu didn't care about his Little Skeleton, he was genuinely too busy.

At first, it was because Lu Wu was busy stealing knowledge from other Non-professional Cultivators. Then, when Lu Wu inadvertently revealed himself, he was surrounded...

..........

Thank you to [sk Protector of Constellations ty], [55555cv], [Heart Never Stops], [Yi Liu Xiang], [Ouye 89], [Little Lion Loves Cat], [Book Friend 151112122826375] for your rewards and support.

# Chapter 70: 070 Mr. Lu

Lu Wu was being watched from the first day his freedom was restricted.

The ones who set their sights on him were the old man Zhao Kai Ming with the fishing plan and his lieutenant, the middle-aged He Tianguang.

At the time, perhaps due to the recent embarrassment, Zhao Kai Ming was somewhat mentally unbalanced.

He had just watched a bit of the interaction between Lu Wu and Li Kai and immediately determined there was something off about Lu Wu.

In his own words at the time,

"I guarantee you, this kid is definitely up to something fishy!"

He Tianguang was skeptical even then.

"This kid probably isn't a problem. If there were any issues, he wouldn't have let Li Kai organize the exchange; that would only make it easier for him to get caught."

"You don't understand, this is called setting a persona!

He's doing this to maintain an image of himself as someone who is eager to learn and ask questions, knowing that our Professional Center appreciates such talents. If he can sustain this image, we would naturally feel closer to him and wouldn't scrutinize him too closely.

Just you watch, he definitely intends to keep up this persona. He wouldn't dare make a move or stand out. Nor will he join in the discussions, because doing so could easily blow his cover!"

Zhao Kai Ming confidently declared with piercing insight!

He Tianguang found this explanation convincing, as there was logic and evidence behind it. Surely, experience counts, and one embarrassment didn't prove anything.

Well, it didn't take long for Old Zhao to be proven wrong a second time.

On Lu Wu's side, when he began to fleece the sheep, he did so stealthily.

He pushed Li Kai to the forefront to create a buzz while he took notes and learned in the background.

However, as he went on, Lu Wu realized that he seemed to be encountering a lot of problems.

After all, learning through stealth had its limitations. There were many things he couldn't figure out on his own, leading to frequent dead ends.

To solve these problems, Lu Wu began to try participating in discussions.

As soon as he spoke up, Old Zhao's deductions began to lose their footing.

He Tianguang couldn't help but cast a skeptical look.

Old Zhao panicked and hurriedly patched up his theory.

"This is exactly where his cunning lies.

He's been here for three days now, and we haven't made a move. He must suspect he's being watched.

So he's struggling further, maintaining the eager-to-learn facade to dispel our suspicions.

Next, he surely won't dare to ask deeper questions, as that would expose his lack of real knowledge."

Old Zhao was indeed cunning and astute, and He Tianguang felt a deep admiration.

Yet, hardly had Old Zhao patched up his narrative when he was embarrassed yet again.

Because they noticed that Lu Wu's questions were becoming increasingly sophisticated. At first, they were simple, common-sense questions, but after just two days, the questions Lu Wu posed started to stump the non-professional Cultivators present.

What was even more embarrassing for those Cultivators and for Old Zhao,

Lu Wu's questions weren't the kind that were fanciful or nonsensical.

His questions were fundamentally sound and even based on the original routine questions of the others, to put it plainly, he was hitting the nail on the head.

He Tianguang once again turned his questioning gaze towards Zhao Kai Ming.

Zhao Kai Ming's old face was starting to crumble.

"Well, who would have thought, this kid is actually a little genius, to be able to draw on such a foundation to maintain his persona.

But he definitely won't join the discussion next, as it would expose him."

In fact, the old man was somewhat aware that he probably made a mistake, but his pride wouldn't allow him to concede, so he had no choice but to force an explanation.

Then he wondered how to lure He Tianguang away and downplay the whole issue to save his own face.

Before he could manage to whisk He Tianguang away, Lu Wu slapped him across the face with another direct metaphorical blow.

Following that, not only did Lu Wu join in the discussions, but from the seventh day he was restricted, the pace of the Non-professional Cultivators' discussion was essentially in Lu Wu's hands.

It usually went like this: Lu Wu would throw out a question that piqued everyone's interest, and the crowd would surge forward to study this one question posed by him.

This kind of research often ended with Lu Wu himself providing the answer.

Of course, Lu Wu's pattern of posing questions and then answering them himself wasn't a show-off move.

There was a process involved, and Lu Wu took part in the exploration of the questions.

Every time Lu Wu could directly answer a question, it wasn't just because he had a good brain, but because there were 89 Non-professional Cultivators there.

89 different Cultivators would offer various approaches when faced with different problems.

At this time, what Lu Wu played was the role of collecting and organizing these approaches, and he was particularly good at it.

Therefore, it was often Lu Wu himself who ultimately unraveled the questions.

And after solving a problem, he wouldn't just throw out the solution.

Each time, Lu Wu would explain his own thought process along with the answer.

In this way, every time Lu Wu unraveled a problem, it seemed as if he were giving a lesson.

Whenever this happened, all 89 Non-professional Cultivators listened intently.

Under these conditions, the Non-professional Cultivators' attitude toward Lu Wu began to change gradually.

At first, everyone saw Lu Wu as a diligent and inquisitive junior.

Then, they gradually realized that this junior had an astonishing talent, always asked pertinent questions, and his skill level was not low either; they began to adjust their mindset to regard Lu Wu as an equal.

Later on, they discovered that Lu Wu was making rapid progress, incorporating the strengths of many, and suddenly left them far behind.

Before they even had the chance to feel inferiority, envy, or jealousy because of Lu Wu's talent, Lu Wu had already started leading topic discussions and began teaching solutions.

Each teaching session was still without reservation, sharing his thought process as well.

Suddenly, the attitude of the Non-professional Cultivators present towards Lu Wu became completely different.

Furthermore, Li Kai was no longer holding back at this time either, directly addressing Lu Wu as 'Mr. Lu'.

The people nearby thought that sounded fitting and so they all started using it as well.

In this way, under the astonished gaze of the Professional Cultivators on the other side of the hall, it took only half a month for Lu Wu to become the 'Mr. Lu' to 89 Non-professional Cultivators.

Under these circumstances, He Tianguang once again turned his gaze towards Zhao Kai Ming.

This time, his look contained no doubt.

As an observer of Lu Wu's progress for more than ten days, he had witnessed Lu Wu's advancement firsthand, understood Lu Wu's talent in this area, and when Li Kai called out 'Mr. Lu', he also resolved the confusion about Li Kai's attitude towards Lu Wu.

Undoubtedly, Zhao Kai Ming's inference was wrong; Lu Wu was indeed flawless.

Additionally, Lu Wu's talent and magnanimity greatly appealed to He Tianguang, who was considering taking him as an apprentice, so he spoke up, "Elder Zhao, it seems there's nothing wrong with this child…"

"What problem? Who said he has a problem?"

He Tianguang had barely finished speaking before being angrily interrupted by Zhao Kai Ming, which left He Tianguang flustered.

Before he could gather his thoughts, Zhao Kai Ming pointed at Lu Wu with immense pride, "This boy, he's my disciple!"

# Chapter 71: 071 Assessment

As it turns out, when someone has no shame, they're invincible!

He Tianguang still hadn't recovered from Zhao Kai Ming's use of the phrase "my disciple."

The wily old man immediately switched his demeanor, wearing a face full of benevolence as he made his way to the grand hall where Lu Wu was.

"Ladies and gentlemen, I am Zhao Kai Ming, director of the Fucheng Professional Summoned Beast Cultivation Center. I deeply apologize for the trouble caused by our work errors over the past ten days!"

This old man's first sentence caught everyone in the hall by surprise.

It wasn't so much that the old man had a particularly pleasant way of speaking, but rather his position that shocked them.

Being the director of a Professional Center means being among the highest echelons, a real big shot. Having such a figure apologize was enough to astound everyone present.

Even the Professional Cultivators stood up immediately, swarming around to get a closer look at the big shot.

Yet, Zhao Kai Ming had a very clear goal; his eyes were fixed on Lu Wu as he approached and took his hand, "My boy, I've observed your performance over these past few days. Very good, you remind me a lot of my younger self.

Looking at you is like seeing my own grandson, I feel a special warmth."

He Tianguang couldn't help but curl his lips at these words.

Shameless! Were you even close to being a Professional Cultivator at 18? Could you have earned the recognition of 89 cultivators of nearly professional expertise?

Moreover, wasn't your first comment upon seeing him that 'this pretty boy surely isn't any good'?

He Tianguang felt a pang of jealousy, intensely hoping that Lu Wu could see through Zhao Kai Ming's hypocrisy and recognize the old man's true nature.

After all, he was rather enamored with Lu Wu's potential himself.

Having observed Lu Wu for half a month, He Tianguang was well aware of his talent.

The boy not only had an astonishing memory and nimble thinking, but he also possessed boundless imagination.

More importantly, he had remarkable logical reasoning and integrative capabilities, ensuring his flights of fancy were utilized efficiently and enhanced with moments of inspiration.

Even more crucial was the boy's spirit!

Not everyone could, like this boy, share their knowledge and their thought processes wholeheartedly with others.

Such a boy would appeal to anyone, Zhao Kai Ming included. Even looking at him made one's heart stir.

But as things stood, it seemed impossible for He Tianguang to take Lu Wu under his wing.

Here the old man went, using the topic of Lu Wu's recent research as a starting point to engage him in deep conversation, exuding an aura of a kindly grandfather.

And that longing to make Lu Wu his disciple was not at all concealed.

He couldn't stop talking about what a waste it would be for such a talent to not have an excellent mentor, which made He Tianguang feel like he was having a heart attack.

He even thought to himself that he should report the old man for corruption and get him locked up, so he could take the opportunity to make Lu Wu his own disciple.

Of course, this was just his frustrated fantasy because his desired disciple was being snatched away. He soon let the thought go and focused on tidying up the aftermath, putting it out of sight and out of mind.

With the old man stepping forward, it essentially signaled that the restriction of freedom was over.

The complications caused by the previous incident had to be resolved at last.

He Tianguang was now tasked with arranging the assessment for the Non-professional Cultivators and calming the Professional Cultivators; he had no time to keep an eye on the crafty old man.

Besides, watching him further was futile at this point.

However, although He Tianguang stopped watching, there was someone in the hall who was discreetly observing the crafty old man, and Lu Wu, whose small hand was being held, with flickering eyes.

It was hard to tell what was on their mind.

Meanwhile, for Lu Wu,

being suddenly greeted with a handshake by the old man was a bit disconcerting, yet he was quite thrilled.

Especially when he realized that the old man seemed interested in taking him on as a disciple, or rather, as a student, his eyes brightened immediately.

For Lu Wu, the decision to accept a mentor was a no-brainer.

If someone was offering their support, Lu Wu would latch on without a second thought about whether the benefactor was influential enough; those concerns never crossed his mind.

Grab the offered thigh first, then use its resources to develop.

However, just as Lu Wu was about to bow and cling to that metaphorical thigh,

He Tianguang walked in.

"That director, the dean is looking for you, he says you must come at once!"

Being interrupted at such a crucial moment didn't phase Lu Wu much, but Zhao Kai Ming felt quite disturbed.

He sensed he was being targeted and turned to He Tianguang with a face full of suspicion, his expression clearly asking if this was done on purpose.

He Tianguang felt very wronged; it really wasn't his fault.

He hadn't betrayed the old man.

"Xiao Lu, I'll go first. This is Mr. Zhao's number, jot it down. After I'm done, we can have a good chat."

The old man, before leaving, didn't forget to glare threateningly at He Tianguang.

'This kid, I've taken a liking to him; don't you dare compete!'

He Tianguang smirked. He did want to snatch the kid, but did he dare?

The dean's call reminded He Tianguang that it wasn't just them interested in the boy; those other crafty old men were probably drooling over him too, else the dean's call wouldn't have come so timely.

Giving him several more guts, he still wouldn't dare snatch the kid from those old men.

While thinking so, He Tianguang still secretly slipped Lu Wu a little note.

"This is my number. If you have any questions about cultivation, you can always contact me."

Lu Wu looked at the note in his hand, then at the dignified middle-aged man in front of him, feeling a bit bewildered.

What's going on, the thighs that were out of reach before are now stretching towards him one after another?

Could this be the correct way to unleash a genius's potential?

But, he wondered if the roles of supporter and supported might switch during the embrace?

Well, it was pretty common in his experiences; it was true with Li Kai, and the 89 Non-professional Cultivators as well.

But Lu Wu felt that these two, being bosses of the Professional Center, probably wouldn't end up being supported by others instead after being embraced.

On He Tianguang's side, after he handed the note to Lu Wu, he busied himself with actual work.

The arrangements for the exam for the 89 Non-professional Cultivators had already been set up by the Professional Center.

After passing the note, He Tianguang took the 89 cultivators straight to the exam.

The exam came about suddenly, making everyone quite nervous.

However, when the exam started, everyone was dumbfounded as they looked at the computers.

This is it?

"Yes, because this is an informal assessment, the method is relatively simple. You only need to answer questions on the computer.

The quiz lasts for two hours, and scoring over 100 means you've passed this assessment.

We can then issue you professional certificates."

# Chapter 72: 072 Growth Welfare Plan

The assessment at the Professional Center was completely different from what Lu Wu had expected.

It was especially simple, even somewhat farcical, resembling the first hurdle he had faced when getting his driver's license in his previous life.

Could it be resolved just by sitting in front of a computer and selecting answers?

Lu Wu seriously suspected that the Professional Center was giving them a backdoor.

Indeed, Lu Wu was right.

The Professional Center indeed intended to give them a backdoor.

Or rather, they were deliberately creating the illusion that they had given Lu Wu and the others a backdoor.

In reality, the assessment might have seemed rudimentary and blunt but it truly wasn't that simple; the difficulty wasn't much lesser than a regular assessment.

However, it wasn't apparent, and it also made Lu Wu and the others feel compensated for the unjust limitation of their freedom for 15 days.

Since they had provided this backdoor, if Lu Wu and the others failed to pass, they couldn't well complain.

"They would never expect that this seemingly simple assessment would eliminate seventy to eighty percent of them!

Among 89 people, probably no more than 25 could obtain the professional certificate."

If the Professional Center applied for professional certificates for 25 people, there wouldn't be much pressure, and the issue would be perfectly resolved.

Lu Wu and the others began answering the assessment questions without knowing anything.

At the Professional Center, a few higher-ups gathered around a computer screen that displayed the content on Lu Wu's computer screen.

Zhang Wentao, the head of the Fu City Professional Center, asked his two old comrades beside him, "How many questions do you think this kid can answer?"

"Breaking a hundred shouldn't be a problem, with more time he might answer even more, but with two hours, I guess it should be between 130 to 150.

Old Zhao, what do you think?"

Li Mingrui, the deputy beside Zhang Wentao, made a judgment and turned to tease Zhao Kai Ming, who was huddled on one side.

Damn it!

His prospective apprentice, just like that, disrupted by these two old fools, Zhao Kai Ming was in a bad mood and didn't want to bother with the two old men in front of him.

He also found out only after being called over by these two that they had been aware of Lu Wu a few days ago and had started making plans regarding him.

Their approach to Lu Wu was different from his.

Zhao Kai Ming had wanted to take Lu Wu as a student and make him his own apprentice.

But they thought farther.

They wanted to make Lu Wu a mere tool, a figure to elevate the reputation of Jiangnan University.

Zhang Wentao and Li Mingrui weren't only top officials in the Fu City Professional Center, but also the principal and vice-principal of the first Summoner University in Jiangnan Province, Jiangnan University.

Speaking of Jiangnan University, it had not had an easy time these past few years.

Each year was tougher than the last.

Talent drainage was severe; any somewhat decent talent from Jiangnan Province quickly left for other places, with few willing to stay in their hometown.

This caused Jiangnan University to be crushed in various collegiate competitions year after year, and the university's ranking had rapidly fallen from the top ten to beyond 30th.

This made both principals anxious, their hair nearly falling out.

Whenever they saw potential talents, they thought about pulling them into their own school. Under such circumstances, they naturally wouldn't let go of someone like Lu Wu who came from Jiangnan.

In fact, Lu Wu and the others could have left a week ago, but because Lu Wu had caught their attention, they had decided to keep him until now.

The two old men had a bold idea regarding Lu Wu.

But this idea would have to wait until Lu Wu's assessment was over.

To be precise, they were waiting for the results of Lu Wu's assessment.

Watching Lu Wu, who had started answering questions on the screen, these old men watched nervously yet expectantly.

"If this kid can answer 135 questions correctly, then we'll give him the D-level growth support welfare plan!

If he answers 150 questions correctly, then grant him the C-level benefits!

If he answers 175, then grant him the B-level benefits!

Exceeding 175, we'll give him the A-level benefits, but of course, only if he's willing to sign a guaranteed admission contract with us!"

"B-level and above might be a bit difficult, given that he's followed an unconventional path, but D-level should be no problem, and with some luck, C-level might also be possible."

Amid the nervous and anticipatory gazes of the few old men, Lu Wu embarked on a frenzied answering spree.

One question, two questions, three questions...

Watching Lu Wu continually answering questions, the hearts of Zhang Wentao and the other two thumped in pace.

When they saw that Lu Wu had answered 88 questions in less than 30 minutes, mostly correctly, Zhang Wentao and Li Mingrui's faces flushed with excitement.

It seemed they had underestimated Lu Wu. Based on his speed, he should have no problem reaching B-level, and perhaps even challenge for A-level.

Indeed, around forty minutes in, Lu Wu broke the 100-question mark, reaching 108 questions.

This thrilled the old men, but as they anticipated him smashing through 135 questions, 150 questions, or even breaking 200...

To their astonishment, Lu Wu clicked his mouse and opted to submit his answers.

"Pff!"

Zhang Wentao and the others nearly choked on their own blood.

"Why did he submit his answers now? Didn't anyone tell him the assessment had a two-hour time limit? What was his hurry?"

"But no one told him he had to answer all the questions either, they just told him that answering 100 questions would pass the assessment."

"What now? How do we handle this?"

Zhang Wentao and Li Mingrui were bewildered, this wasn't what they had expected, but Zhao Kai Ming was particularly excited on the side.

"That, my student didn't even reach 135 questions, don't we have some kind of genius welfare program now, would you return my apprentice to me?"

He obviously hoped for the best.

The two old men ignored him.

"It's also our fault that we didn't make it clear to the kid early on. He didn't know how important this assessment was, so he only answered 108 questions before submitting."

"This also displays his confidence—the question bank has 1,000 questions, and he stopped after only 108, which indicates he was confident that these 108 questions would pass the assessment."

"The fact proved he was right, he passed the assessment, but what do we do about the welfare plan for him?"

"That, maybe just go with the A-level benefits!"

"Indeed, with his answering speed continuing in that manner, A-level should be no problem; let's just go with A-level benefits."

The two old men clearly ignored one possibility—that Lu Wu only answered 108 questions because he only knew those 108 questions.

Well, the actual situation was indeed so.

After all, Lu Wu was really an unconventional student, and he didn't know many of the questions.

But his speed of answering was slightly impressive, coupled with his exemplary performance in the hall earlier, the two old men completely overlooked this point.

Seeing the assessment results, they couldn't wait to meet Lu Wu...

# Chapter 73: 073 Class A Support Welfare

Lu Wu was just here.

He had just submitted his answers.

Just as he was about to take some time to memorize the test questions for further study, He Tianguang came over and told him that someone wanted to see him.

Lu Wu's eyes lit up.

Thinking it was Zhao Kai Ming, he quickly called Little Skeleton to join him.

It wouldn't have been a big deal if Lu Wu hadn't called for Little Skeleton, but as soon as he did, Little Skeleton, who was standing behind him, got startled, hastily hid his bony hands behind his back, and secured his phone tightly, afraid that Lu Wu would snatch it away.

"Really, like I'd actually steal your phone!"

Lu Wu chuckled and gave Little Skeleton a noogie, taking the chance to check Little Skeleton's state.

[Nervous (Lu Wu will steal the phone! Lu Wu is a liar, Lu Wu is super bad!)]

Lu Wu almost spat out a mouthful of old blood.

He hadn't expected to have such an image in Little Skeleton's heart.

No, this wouldn't do; he had to think of a way to correct Little Skeleton's misguided perception.

He, Lu Wu, was not a liar!

But Lu Wu was in a hurry to follow He Tianguang to meet the big shots and didn't have time to deal with this; it would have to wait until after meeting those big shots.

The other Cultivation Masters who came with Lu Wu for the assessment watched with envy as He Tianguang took Lu Wu away.

Clearly, the Professional Center had recognized Mr. Lu's talent.

It seemed like Mr. Lu's ascent was not far off.

Regarding Lu Wu's ascent, nearly none of the 89 Non-professional Cultivators present felt jealous. Firstly, they all witnessed Lu Wu's talents themselves, and secondly, they respected his willingness to share his knowledge generously.

Although they had only been together for half a month, and even though Lu Wu was only 18, the 89 Non-professional Cultivators genuinely regarded Lu Wu as a teacher.

Well, except for one person.

That person, hiding in the crowd, had a flickering gaze as he watched Lu Wu's receding figure, appearing to ponder something nervously.

"Dean Zhang, Lu Wu has arrived!"

Led by He Tianguang, Lu Wu quickly reached Zhang Wentao's office.

"Xiao Lu is here? Come on in, come in quickly!"

At this time, Dean Zhang's office was empty except for himself. As soon as he saw Lu Wu arrive, he warmly greeted him, took Lu Wu's hand, and ushered him inside.

Lu Wu was a bit startled and somewhat helpless.

Startled because the person was not who he expected, helpless because he didn't understand why these old men liked to handhold so much – Zhao Kai Ming was like this, and now Zhang Wentao too.

This firm handshake, along with an intense gaze, really put him under pressure!

Considering the other person's status, and the possibility of an offer coming his way, Lu Wu resisted the urge to withdraw his hand.

Zhang Wentao had no idea what Lu Wu was thinking and thought he was overwhelmed by his enthusiasm.

He quickly squeezed harder, hoping to knock Lu Wu out with his warmth and bring him over to Jiangnan University ahead of time.

Unfortunately for him, Lu Wu didn't give him the chance.

"Do you need me for something?"

Seeing that Lu Wu wasn't fazed, Zhang Wentao felt a little disappointed but didn't dodge the question, getting straight to the point.

"Xiao Lu, you're a senior in high school this year, right?"

"Yes."

"You'll be taking the college entrance exam next year; have you decided on a university yet?"

"Not yet."

Lu Wu's eyes sparkled, "Do you have any recommendations?"

"Cough, what do you think of Jiangnan University?"

"Jiangnan University?"

Lu Wu looked at Zhang Wentao with a questioning gaze.

"Jiangnan University is the best Summoner university in Jiangnan Province and was also, at one time, one of the top ten schools in the East Province Alliance.

The university has top-tier resources like the 'Dragon Island' Secret Realm and a strong faculty—it's the best choice for students from Jiangnan!"

"What's more, Jiangnan University is currently launching a welfare program to support the growth of students from Jiangnan. If you sign a guaranteed admission contract with Jiangnan University now, considering your performance in the assessment, you would be eligible for an A-level support welfare!"

Lu Wu was a bit confused, "Performance in the assessment? A-level support welfare?"

"Yes, the assessment you just took was actually for identifying talented students for the Cultivation department of Jiangnan University.

If you answered 135 questions correctly, you would be eligible for D-level support welfare."

This only made Lu Wu even more puzzled.

"But I only completed 108 questions!"

"That's because we on our side didn't do our job properly; we didn't inform you beforehand, otherwise you would not have turned in your paper so early. If you had gone all out, I believe you definitely could have scored 175 in two hours, reaching the A-level standard!"

Dean Zhang clearly had a lot of faith in Lu Wu, but Lu Wu himself did not.

Before he started, he had reviewed the exam and skimmed through the thousand questions, doing all the ones he knew how to do – it didn't matter if he had another hour or even ten; Lu Wu knew he definitely couldn't reach a score of 175.

Well, Lu Wu felt it was necessary to make things clear to Zhang Wentao.

Honesty was a principle for Lu Wu.

But before Lu Wu could say anything, Zhang Wentao preempted him, "The A-level support welfare you would receive includes access to the Professional Center's internal network, a one-time grant of 500 Internal Network Points, and an ongoing monthly allocation of 50 Internal Network Points for three years.

Additionally, you would get one Divine Origin Fruit and a secret book for training Summoning Beast Skills."

"As for the Internal Network Points, they can be used to purchase items and knowledge or exchanged for money at a rate of 1 to 10,000.

The Divine Origin Fruit can enhance your spiritual power without side effects. After consuming it, your spiritual power should reach the level required to contract a second Summoned Beast.

As for the secret book for training Summoning Beast Skills, there's no need to explain. Once you access the internal network, you can choose any skill from the library, with Jiangnan University footing the bill."

"Hmm, those are about the A-level support welfare benefits. Oh, and what were you trying to say just now?"

Dean Zhang gave Lu Wu a brief rundown of the A-level support welfare plan.

In that instant, Lu Wu evolved.

He felt that life shouldn't be constrained by too many rules and principles – they're just unnecessary shackles.

After all, to grow freely and healthily, one must follow their own path!

So, Lu Wu stood tall and proud, "When do we sign the contract?"

Dean Zhang was taken aback, then quickly recovered, hurriedly handing over the prepared documents for Lu Wu to look over.

While Lu Wu was reading the documents, Zhang Wentao mentioned something else.

"Also, we will not be issuing your professional certificate for this assessment!"

Lu Wu was puzzled, "Why not?"

"That's because we hope you will participate in a competition for Cultivators organized by the Professional Center's headquarters next year.

If you can achieve a good ranking as a dark horse in that competition and bring glory to Jiangnan University, you will receive rewards far beyond the A-level support welfare."

Lu Wu's eyes gleamed and, in a moment of inspiration, he asked, "Do I get rewards if I also achieve a good ranking in the high school league?"

# Chapter 74: 074 Accompanied mobile phone?

Lu Wu's brain always worked pretty well, especially when it came to matters of welfare, where his gears spun even faster.

A single success leads to a hundred!

"Are you saying if I were to win the overall championship in the high school league, and then join Jiangnan University as the champion, wouldn't that greatly enhance our university's fame?"

Lu Wu didn't mention rewards, but the excitement plastered on his face made his thoughts abundantly clear.

He was just shy of grabbing Zhang Wentao by the collar and saying, 'hand over the money.'

Regarding this, Zhang Wentao was particularly helpless.

Could you not add your own drama, please?

He valued Lu Wu for his Cultivation Master talent, which had nothing to do with his Summoner Talent.

Nor did he expect Lu Wu to perform well in the high school league.

Because he knew better than Lu Wu how much of a talent-show the league, particularly the provincial competition, would become.

Forget the provincial competition, even in the city contest, Lu Wu's Little Skeleton at his house wouldn't likely achieve much.

So Zhang Wentao really wanted to tell Lu Wu, stop fussing about the high school league, and focus on preparing for the Cultivation Master competition next year.

But seeing Lu Wu's face brimming with excitement and vigor, Zhang Wentao ultimately held back his words.

Anyway, it was like coaxing a child, and the old man just nodded and agreed on the spot.

This made Lu Wu even more excited.

"There will be rewards for my teammates too, right?"

"Yes, for everyone!"

"As long as you guys can make it into the top three in the city contest, I'll give you C-level welfare.

If you make it into the top 50 in the provincial contest, you'll get B-level welfare.

And for the top 30, A-level welfare.

Oh, and I only recognize individual competition results."

This was part of Jiangnan University's talent support program, and it didn't seem too difficult for Lu Wu.

"Yeah, I'm definitely going to secure an A-level support benefit for Dudu!"

Zhang Wentao indicated that it was nice to hear, but didn't want to say much else, thinking the kid had yet to be crushed by competition; after that happens, he surely wouldn't speak such words.

Afterward, Zhang Wentao stopped the hot-blooded Lu Wu, who was about to sign his name on the document.

Although he would've liked Lu Wu to do so, such matters still required his family's consent.

He asked Lu Wu to take the documents home and, with his family's agreement, to sign them.

Of course, other than access to the internal network, any welfare had to wait until after Lu Wu signed.

Lu Wu felt it was unnecessary; his parents gave him a lot of freedom, and he could make his own decisions.

But after contemplating, realizing he could show off to the old man at home, Lu Wu nodded in agreement.

At the same time, Lu Wu remembered, "Crap, I haven't contacted home in almost half a month."

Saying this, Lu Wu reached for his phone to call home, turned to Little Skeleton to ask for it, but Little Skeleton backed up several steps, even dropping the baseball bat, holding the phone behind its back with Pupil Fire flickering.

Seeing its antics, and recalling Little Skeleton's earlier state, Lu Wu finally lowered his hand.

"Forget it, the phone's dead anyway. Besides, it's been half a month; a little longer won't hurt. I'll call after I've taken care of everything."

With that said, Lu Wu turned around.

"Old Zhang, I remember you guys said if someone performed exceptionally well in the assessment, they could use the Professional Center's Cultivation Room, right?"

Zhang Wentao glanced at Lu Wu's lively Little Skeleton, "You want to improve Little Skeleton's Quality?"

"Yep!"

What Zhang Wentao really wanted to say was that Little Skeleton wasn't worth cultivating.

After all, the Little Skeleton was hard to cultivate; the same effort on another Summoned Beast could possibly make it silver, while Little Skeleton was still Bronze. Anyway, once Lu Wu signed, he'd get the Divine Origin Fruit, and then he could just switch to another beast with higher potential to cultivate.

However, after thinking about it, Lu Wu was on the path of a Cultivation Master. It was a good thing that he could think for the sake of his Summoned Beast.

Besides, he was also curious about what breeding plan Lu Wu had now, and just how far he could develop Little Skeleton.

The previous assessment had been interrupted halfway through, so this could be considered a makeup exam for Lu Wu.

Therefore, Zhang Wentao had someone take Lu Wu to the Cultivation Room at the Professional Center.

The Cultivation Room, though called a "room", was actually a huge white building.

The entire Cultivation Room was divided into several areas.

Materials Area, Breeding Area, Experiment Area, and so on...

Lu Wu was directly taken to the Breeding Area.

Upon arriving at the Breeding Area, the first thing Lu Wu received was a form.

Lu Wu glanced at it. It was a form for applying to use the Cultivation Room.

From the type of equipment needed to the materials required, Lu Wu needed to fill it out completely.

Of course, if Lu Wu didn't need materials provided by the Professional Center, he wouldn't have to fill in the materials section.

Lu Wu, holding the form, didn't hesitate at all, quickly ticking and selecting options on it.

He was fast, finishing in less than ten minutes. The reason he was so quick was that Lu Wu had further refined the "Little Skeleton Soup" plan during the past half month.

With a mature plan in mind, he was very clear on what materials were needed, which naturally sped up his writing.

After filling out the form, the Professional Center quickly completed the approval process. Then, Lu Wu was taken to a cultivation room about twenty square meters in size, equipped with the machines that Lu Wu had listed.

At the same time, the materials Lu Wu had listed on the form were also delivered.

While surveying this Cultivation Room, Lu Wu pulled over Little Skeleton who was stashing its hands behind its back and eyeing the pot-like machine in the room with Pupil Fire.

He opened Little Skeleton's attribute panel.

...

Name: Little Skeleton

Power: 2 stars (Ordinary)

Quality: Black Iron (Improved) (one line)

Attribute: Undead

Companion Equipment: Little Skeleton's Charging Baseball Bat

State: Puzzled (This pot looks so familiar!)

Skill: Charge (Optimized version) (Master)

Block (Optimized version) (Skilled)

Dodge (Optimized version) (Skilled)

Heavy Slash (Skilled)

Weakness: Light, Fire, Thunder

Description: Little Skeleton's state seems a bit abnormal. Perhaps there will be a surprise if it's advanced now.

...

As Lu Wu read the description, he paused and scrutinized Little Skeleton, trying to see if there was something different about it, only to have Little Skeleton hide its cellphone even more carefully.

Its state also changed.

"Nervous (Is Lu Wu going to snatch the cellphone again? Little Skeleton must hide the cellphone well and can't let Lu Wu see it!)"

"You're so nervous about your phone. If I throw it into the soup along with the phone, I wonder if I'll brew up a companion cellphone?"

Hmm, Lu Wu thought that was quite possible.

So, he opened Little Skeleton's [Improvement] tab, preparing to check out Little Skeleton's improvement plan before taking action to see if he could tweak it a bit, aiming to help Little Skeleton come up with a companion cellphone...

# Chapter 75: Say a couple of words

Lately, I've often seen some reviews saying the plot is trite, saying they can't continue reading or something.

How should I put it? I'm actually quite sensitive, so seeing these kinds of comments really makes me feel conflicted.

Several of my past books were cut off because I couldn't handle the negative comments.

Of course, I know it's my fault. I can't write something mediocre and not let people talk about it, right?

Besides, even if I say don't talk about it, you'll still do it, right? There's nothing I can do about that.

The only one who can feel depressed is myself.

But what should I do when such comments still hurt me?

After some thought, I've decided to chat with you for a bit.

I think, a novel is like a sightseeing train headed toward the mysterious, the unknown, the bizarre.

The pen in my hand, er, I mean, the keyboard, is the steering wheel of this train, and I am its driver, while you all are passengers on this train.

As the driver, naturally, I want to show you the best views, but sometimes things might not go as planned because it's impossible to always have beautiful scenery along the way.

There might be deserts, forks in the road, breakdowns, drivers might get emotional, and so on,

Besides, even if the journey's picturesque all along, people are different, and it's impossible that everyone likes the same scenery, so regardless, having some people wanting to get off along the way is inevitable.

Nu Xiao hopes, or rather, Nu Xiao requests, dear passengers, when you want to get off, could you, considering we've traveled together after all, not smash the train on your way out?

Leaving quietly or maybe muttering "Nu Xiao is garbage," we divide amicably, leaving me with some good spirits to joyfully continue the journey with friends who still want to travel onward.

Isn't this kind of parting a bit more poetic?

ps: Of course, if you really want to beat up the driver before leaving, that's fine too, since I'm already used to it.

Can't help it. Good-looking people are just especially prone to jealousy and getting beaten up.

............

............

Hmm, not bad, that's that then. I wish all passengers a pleasant journey; Nu Xiao is off to drive.

By the way, there's a driving group here, are you sure you don't want to check it out?

245729348

psss: If someone could often compliment me, maybe I'd drive with even more gusto!

...

...

...

...

...

Damn, I didn't notice I've spent almost half a chapter pouring out Water. So, can this count as my third update today?

# Chapter 76: 075 exploded

Lu Wu opened Little Skeleton's attribute board and used the modified plan for today.

He didn't know if it was because the change was relatively small this time, or because of the knowledge he had accumulated over the past half month.

Anyway, this time the process went quite smoothly, and the "Little Skeleton Soup" reached version 4.0.

…

Quality Enhancement Plan: Little Skeleton Soup 4.0

Plan Modification: Based on the original 1.0, significant changes were made, with "Elite 1 Star" quality Barbarian Bull Bone as the main ingredient, mixed with Clear Spirit Water, White Bone Grass, Hard Bone Ash, and Thunderstruck Soil among other materials.

Plan Evaluation: The medicinal properties were much stronger than version 1.0, and some substances were purified, increasing the likelihood of forming companion equipment.

Using this plan, there was an eighty percent chance of raising Little Skeleton's quality to the next level.

Also, there was a ten percent chance of Little Skeleton obtaining an additional piece of companion equipment.

…

"Not bad, the plan is acceptable. Let's get started!"

After confirming the plan, Lu Wu began to get busy.

Hmm, he actually didn't need to do much.

The materials Lu Wu needed were already processed by the Professional Center.

At this point, Lu Wu did not need to process anything further; he just had to add the materials to the pot in order and boil them.

The equipment here was professional grade, and soon Lu Wu had finished the prep work and the soup was boiling. He then signaled Little Skeleton to come over.

"Get in!"

Having been stewed several times before, Little Skeleton knew it always became stronger afterward. Previously unable to beat Tuantuan, after several stews it seemed to become as formidable as Tuantuan.

If it stewed once more, it should be able to beat Tuantuan.

Thus, Little Skeleton was quite eager about being stewed, clutching the baseball bat and ready to jump in.

However, just before entering, Little Skeleton suddenly stopped, hesitated for a moment, and under Lu Wu's puzzled gaze, handed over its cellphone.

"What's up?"

Lu Wu was startled, why would the little guy be willing to give up its phone? He patted Little Skeleton and saw its state.

[Smart (Little Skeleton knows, Lu Wu has said that phones will break if they get wet!)]

Lu Wu was astonished at that moment. Did this little guy actually have such intelligence?

"It's fine, this isn't ordinary water. The phone won't break if it goes in. And if it really breaks, no worries, I'll buy you a new one!"

Lu Wu really went to great lengths to get Little Skeleton a companion phone.

It took a lot of effort to persuade Little Skeleton to bring the phone into the pot of medicinal water.

"Alright, finally in. Now it's just a matter of waiting. This medicine is quite potent, no need for three hours, probably just about half an hour to finish!"

Inside the Cultivation Room, Lu Wu was waiting for Little Skeleton to stew.

On the other hand, in Zhang Wentao's office, a few old heads were gathered around, studying Lu Wu's material list while waiting for news from his side.

These three were big shots from the Professional Center, veteran Summon Beast Cultivators with incredibly high skills.

With their expertise, they should have been able to quickly deduce the method or the principle behind Lu Wu's material list.

However, upon receiving the material list, these three old men were somewhat confused.

They found they couldn't understand what was going on.

Well, it's not like they couldn't understand at all—they could easily tell that the core of Lu Wu's plan was Barbarian Bull Bone. But aside from that, many of the ingredients seemed inexplicable to them.

For instance, the electric shock soil, and the Clear Spirit Water...

Many of the materials in this plan were extremely dangerous and could easily lead to disastrous consequences, yet they were all listed.

"Isn't he just messing around? How could such a plan possibly succeed?

And adding all those random ingredients, a mistake could blow everything up!

No, I must stop him. Otherwise, if the pot explodes and Little Skeleton blows up, he'll be laid up for at least half a year!"

Li Mingrui couldn't sit still any longer as he looked over the ingredient list.

Without another word, he stood up to rush to the Cultivation Room but was stopped.

"Old Li, don't panic. Maybe he'll succeed. We've been observing the kid for several days now, and he's not impulsive, especially when it comes to Summoned Beast Cultivation. He's always been quite stable.

Since he came up with this plan, he must be confident," said Zhang Wentao, who had quite a bit of faith in Lu Wu.

Zhao Kai Ming chimed in, "Besides, he's not working outside but in the Cultivation Room; nothing should go wrong.

I personally procured the equipment in the Cultivation Room, and the pot he's using right now was crafted by me. You might distrust others, but don't you trust my craftsmanship?

I can assure you, no matter what this kid does, it's absolutely impossible for the pot to explode!"

Just as Zhao Kai Ming finished speaking,

there was an explosion from Lu Wu's Cultivation Room.

At the same time, a harsh alarm blared, and the news was immediately relayed to Zhang Wentao's office.

Upon receiving the news, Zhang Wentao and Li Mingrui both glared at Zhao Kai Ming, then quickly moved to head toward Lu Wu's location.

This youngster was their trump card for next year, and they didn't want anything to happen to Lu Wu.

However, they had doubts that Lu Wu would be unscathed.

The information they got was that the energy of the explosion in Lu Wu's Cultivation Room had reached the level of an Elite 2 Stars.

With such power, Lu Wu's Ordinary 2 Stars Little Skeleton would almost certainly be a goner, and even Lu Wu himself could have been affected by the blast.

This weighed heavily on their minds.

They had finally found such a talent, and before they could properly work with him, he might have been wasted, and they wouldn't even be able to cry about it.

However, when they arrived at the scene and opened the door to Lu Wu's Cultivation Room, the three old men were somewhat stunned.

The situation inside was different from what they had expected.

There was no mess from an explosion in the Cultivation Room, and although there was some spilt soup at the edges of the pot, the overall room was quite clean, the pot hadn't burst, and Little Skeleton was still lying inside.

But at that moment, Little Skeleton seemed to be in a particularly bad mood, facing away from Lu Wuyi as if to say, "I don't want to deal with you."

"The pot didn't explode? I knew it; how could the pot I made explode so easily?

But if the pot didn't explode, what was that explosion just now?"

Next to him, Li Mingrui nudged Zhao Kai Ming, pointing at the charred spot above the pot.

At the same time, Lu Wu, touching his nose, stepped out and said, "That, the explosion was from Little Skeleton's Awakening of a Skill."

"Oh, so it was a Skill Awakening! That makes sense..."

Zhao Kai Ming was nodding off, halfway through his realization.

"It? A Skill Awakening??!!"

# Chapter 77: 076 Bronze

A Black Iron Quality, 2-star Power Little Skeleton.

It awakened a Skill with Elite 2-star burst power.

How is this possible!

Even Bronze, or even Silver Quality Summoned Beasts rarely awaken such powerful skills, not to mention that the Summoned Beast from Lu Wu's house is of Black Iron Quality and is universally recognized as the worst, the Little Skeleton.

Zhao Kai Ming felt that Lu Wu was creating something out of nothing!

However, the trace on top of the Little Skeleton's skull couldn't be wrong, nor could the previous burst of energy.

"Unbelievable! What Skill did it awaken?"

"Thunder Attribute, but as for what specific Skill, the Little Skeleton just awakened," Lu Wu touched his nose. The Little Skeleton is in a bad mood now; it wouldn't let him touch, and besides, the Little Skeleton hasn't truly advanced yet.

"Thunder Attribute? It's a Summoned Beast of the Undead Type, how could it awaken a Thunder Attribute Skill?"

While Zhao Kai Ming was shocked, he also thought of another thing, "Wait, the Little Skeleton awakened a Skill, which means the scheme you worked on is effective? It's successful!

How did you manage to do that?

What is the principle behind this scheme?"

"Oh, you mean this!"

Lu Wu was never secretive about this, and when Zhao Kai Ming asked, Lu Wu explained his entire "Little Skeleton Soup 4.0" scheme, including the thought process and principle behind it.

"Imaginative and brilliant!"

"Genius!"

"Brilliantly clever!"

After listening to Lu Wu's explanation, each of the three old men gave an evaluation, looking at Lu Wu with eyes that seemed to burn with an intense fervor.

Clearly, these old men were now even more eager for Lu Wu.

Zhang Wentao sighed, "Indeed, granting you Grade A support benefits was the right decision!"

Zhao Kai Ming pursed his lips, "What's right about it, I think Grade A is too low, if you ask me, Xiao Lu should be given Grade S benefits."

Lu Wu's eyes lit up at this, "That, are you going to raise the level of my benefits?"

Zhang Wentao glared at Zhao Kai Ming and forcibly changed the subject.

"Err, we need to consider this, but Xiao Lu, you can submit your 'Little Skeleton Soup' scheme to the internal network.

If your innovative scheme passes the review, you can receive a reward."

"Is that so?"

Lu Wu's attention was successfully diverted: "How do I go about this?"

"You just need to log into the internal network, and on the Cultivation Master's innovation page, there's a function to review new schemes. Just submit your new scheme there."

Lu Wu noted this to try once he got back.

Then, under the company of these three bothersome old men, he waited for the Little Skeleton's Quality to advance.

About half an hour later, the Little Skeleton's Quality upgrade was complete.

As soon as it emerged from the pot, the three old men gathered around it, scrutinizing and fiddling with the Little Skeleton.

The three old men were quite interested in this Little Skeleton that had awakened a Thunder Attribute Skill, and in the effects of Lu Wu's "Little Skeleton Soup."

Their scrutiny filled them with astonishment.

"The Quality of this Little Skeleton has improved; it should now be close to the level of Bronze Quality."

"Judging from the flow of energy in the bones, it indeed awakened a Thunder Attribute Skill, but considering this energy flow seems quite gentle, how could it have such strong burst potential?"

"It must be an issue of specific emotions. Xiao Lu, did something happen when it burst out?

Knowing exactly what happened and why it burst out will greatly aid your subsequent training."

All three were experts and quickly identified the key issue.

Lu Wu touched his nose: "Well, the cellphone it was carrying exploded."

"The cellphone exploded?"

"Um, that's its favorite phone."

"That makes things easier. The phone being destroyed must be what triggered its outburst. You should buy it several phones. When fighting, use them as projectiles. Who knows, the Big Move might be triggered while doing it."

Zhao Kai Ming gave out the suggestion.

Little Skeleton shuddered nearby. Even though it couldn't quite understand what the old man was saying, it felt this particular elder was especially wicked.

He actually wanted to smash phones!

But he seemed to also mention buying phones for Little Skeleton.

Hmm, he must be a good person then!

But this left Little Skeleton somewhat confused, was this old man good or bad?

In the end, it could only conclude that Zhao Kai Ming was an old man who was a bit bad yet also somewhat good.

After the three old men toyed with Little Skeleton for a while and more or less figured out its situation, they returned the now bored Little Skeleton to Lu Wu and gave their final evaluation.

"Not bad, the quality just barely reaches Bronze, and it has awakened a Thunder attribute skill.

Oh right, that bat of its seems pretty good too. With proper training, you have a chance of making it to the provincial competitions in high school."

"But your Little Skeleton Soup is even better, don't forget to upload it when you get back.

With such a recipe, you could earn at least a few hundred points in rewards, and there's even a share to be claimed afterward. It's a shame Little Skeleton is not a popular Summoned Beast, otherwise, you could live off this recipe alone.

But don't underestimate those few hundred points, even though they might only convert to several million in cash, you couldn't buy these points even with ten times the money."

Obviously, these old men were more inclined to see Lu Wu steadfastly continue on the path of a Cultivation Master.

Unfortunately, Lu Wu didn't hear them as he was currently inspecting Little Skeleton's attribute board.

...

Name: Little Skeleton

Power: 2 stars (Ordinary)

Quality: Bronze (inferior) (upgradable)

Attribute: Undead

Companion Equipment: Little Skeleton's Electric Bat

State: Angry (If Lu Wu doesn't buy Little Skeleton a phone, Little Skeleton won't cover Lu Wu with a blanket ever again!)

Skills: Charge (Enhanced Version) (Master)

Block (Enhanced Version) (Skilled)

Dodge (Enhanced Version) (Skilled)

Heavy Slash (Skilled)

Charging (Entry-level) (Special Thunder system Skill, can charge itself or its Companion Equipment under normal conditions to add a Thunder BUFF, can deliver electric shocks in Fury mode.

PS: Fury mode has a 1-day cooldown!

PSS: Don't forget to charge it.)

Weakness: Light, Fire,

Description: It's not that scared of Thunder anymore, but still gets hurt if shocked beyond a certain degree.

...

Item: Little Skeleton's Electric Bat

Quality: Black Iron (upgradable)

Side effect: Micro Electric Shock (The existing electric shock effect is enhanced; the shock effect is intensified, which can deliver more fierce power when combined with Little Skeleton's Charging skill)

PS: Its quality has pretty much reached its limit unless you can find some materials to add and reforge it; otherwise, it won't improve much more.

...

Looking at Little Skeleton's attribute board, seeing Little Skeleton's great increase in strength, and noticing the enhancement of its bat's quality, Lu Wu realized something amidst his amazement.

"I seem to have not named Little Skeleton yet; maybe I should?"

# Chapter 78: 077 The New 233 Squad

Quan City.

Lu Wu had spent an extremely fulfilling and happy half-month at the Professional Center, reaping many benefits.

However, life had not been so good for the people in Quan City.

Li Ruyu and Dudu.

Although Lu Wu had informed them before his phone died and had generally explained the situation, they were still a bit worried since they hadn't seen Lu Wu for almost half a month.

Especially Dudu.

Since meeting Lu Wu, she had never been away from him for more than three days. This half-month separation was unprecedented.

So much so that she had lost her appetite during this time, only eating three big bowls per meal and seeming to have slimmed down considerably, much to Dudu's Dad's distress.

But Dudu's situation was still better compared to Hao Zhijian's.

Yes, indeed, the most pained by Lu Wu's disappearance was none other than Hao Zhijian.

It wasn't about love!

Mainly, Hao Zhijian had pinned great ambitions on the Quancheng Cup.

He saw the Quancheng Cup as his chance for redemption, his opportunity for fame, his chance to slap Ye Qingxue in the face.

He had even scripted it all in his mind.

He would lead Lu Wu and their team, crush all competition, and with an overwhelming advantage, slap Ye Qingxue's ace team in the face and easily claim the championship of the Quancheng Cup, becoming the star of Quan City.

Hmm, and if given the chance, he'd also love to slap that pretty boy Lu Wu.

He wanted to prove to everyone that he, Hao Zhijian, was the strongest of them all!

But the script was written, and the key actor had run off.

With Lu Wu missing, he couldn't even think about crushing Ye Qingxue, let alone becoming the star of Quan City.

Without Lu Wu, their team couldn't even participate in the competition, and this was driving Hao Zhijian crazy, making him nearly bald at his young age.

It wasn't just Hao Zhijian who was going bald, but also the organizers of the Quancheng Cup.

After all, Team 233 was a major highlight of this edition of the Quancheng Cup.

For this highlight, for this gimmick, the efforts made by the organizers were known to no one.

They had prepared all sorts of underhand tactics and had a complete contingency plan ready for any situation, except they hadn't anticipated, or rather hadn't expected, that Lu Wu would actually run off.

Even about Lu Wu's departure, they only found out four days after he had gone to Fucheng when they were arranging the next opponent for Team 233.

This was truly a mess!

Left with no choice, the organizers had to contact Team 233 while revising their plans.

After learning from Dudu that Lu Wu had gone to Fucheng and might not return for about a week.

The organizers immediately played their dirty tricks.

They let Team 233 advance by default.

And they released information that Team 233 was undergoing special training and that this team would soon make a triumphant return as kings.

With this, the organizers had truly intervened, controlling the team and the competition.

It was actually against the rules, but the organizers didn't care. All they cared about was whether they could capitalize on this hot topic and ensure the imminent profits didn't slip away.

Besides, as long as Lu Wu could return before the next match, everything would be fine.

But the problem was, it seemed Lu Wu might not be able to come back before the next match!

As the time for the next match approached, Lu Wu had completely lost contact.

Having no other options, the organizers could only contact Team 233, hoping that the team could find a new member in Lu Wu's absence, or that the organizers would provide a substitute member to compete in the meantime.

But then something even more troubling happened.

Dudu firmly stated, "No!"

Lu Wu had said that if he couldn't make it back, they might as well forfeit the Quancheng Cup.

Dudu remembered his words.

So she was adamant; she wouldn't compete without Lu Wu.

Pleading with her, threatening her, nothing worked, she just wouldn't compete.

Faced with this situation, the organizers were at their wits' end. They couldn't very well force the issue either, as bringing this to light would reflect poorly on everyone involved.

Hao Zhijian was beside himself with rage.

He cursed Lu Wu for cowardice and burdening his teammates.

When Hao Zhijian cursed him, a lightbulb went off for the person in charge on the organizer's side.

Why should they keep fixating on Lu Wu and Pang Duddu? They still had Hao Zhijian, didn't they?

Since the whole thing had started with Hao Zhijian and he was the center of attention all this time, with Lu Wu out of reach and Pang Duddu unwilling to partake, they might as well kick out Lu Wu and Pang Duddu.

They could just form a new team centered around Hao Zhijian, taking over this hot issue and their fate battle with Ye Qingxue, right?

They had been worried the 233 squad was too weak, that the final battle of fate would end in an ugly loss without any highlights.

Now, seizing the opportunity, setting up Hao Zhijian with a strong team seemed like a good move.

With this in mind, the organizers approached Hao Zhijian and the two hit it off right away.

They quickly teamed up.

Thus, without even knowing it himself, Lu Wu was expelled by his own teammates.

On his twelfth day in Fucheng, under the organizers' orchestration, Hao Zhijian formed a new 233 squad and made their debut at the Quancheng Cup.

They fought their debut battle.

How to put it? With strong new teammates and some behind-the-scenes manipulation by the organizers, they did put on quite a show.

However, the appearance of this new 233 squad couldn't quite win the audience over.

That was mainly because of the promotional strategies the organizers had used earlier.

They had publicized that the 233 squad was undergoing brutal training and would soon make a victorious return.

Indeed, they returned and seemed stronger, but the team was no longer the same.

This dissatisfaction included many fans loyal to Lu Wu, giving the organizers a real headache.

However, they quickly found a solution.

First was shifting the blame, immediately pinning the 233 squad's reformation on Lu Wu.

Hints everywhere suggested that it was because of Lu Wu that the team had to be reformed.

Well, it wasn't exactly shifting the blame, as the reformation of the 233 squad was indeed due to Lu Wu.

But when Hao Zhijian talked about it, it was all criticisms towards Lu Wu.

He already had a new team now, and the organizers had promised this team would accompany him in the high school league; he wasn't afraid of Lu Wu anymore.

As for Li Kai, the organizers also helped dig up information on him. It turned out he wasn't a Professional Cultivator at all, but an amateur who had failed to pass the examination for five consecutive years.

When the truth came out, the Hao Family was so enraged they wanted to dig Li Kai out and make him return the money.

In such a scenario, why would Hao Zhijian still fear Lu Wu?

Besides shifting the blame, to further fuel the hype, the organizers arranged a new opponent for the new 233 squad.

This new opponent was a team from Ye Qingxue's special class.

Of course, it wasn't the ace team, just an Ordinary team.

The plan was to use this Ordinary team to warm up the crowd, and coincidentally, the night before their match was to start, Lu Wu returned to Quan City…

…

Transition Chapter

# Chapter 79: 078 Proud Little Skeleton

Quancheng Cup Competition Venue.

In the spectator seats, Lu Wu wore a hat that covered half his face, sitting in an unremarkable spot.

To Lu Wu's left was Dudu, whose appetite had grown since Lu Wu's return. At that moment, Dudu was holding a thermos filled with milk tea and a large bag of meat buns for snacks, eating crazily at Lu Wu's request.

To Lu Wu's right was Little Skeleton, who was playing with a new phone.

Additionally, perhaps because of not having seen each other for quite some time, Dudu's family's Tuantuan kept snuggling up to Little Skeleton.

And when Tuantuan was with him, the light in Little Skeleton's pupils kept flickering uniquely.

Occasionally, when Lu Wu touched Little Skeleton and Tuantuan, he could see their states.

Little Skeleton: [Proud (Poor Tuantuan, doesn't have a phone to play with!)]

Little Skeleton: [Proud (Because of Lu Wu not buying a phone for Tuantuan, hmm, Little Skeleton's Lu Wu is super kind—he bought so many phones for Little Skeleton!)]

Just look at how vain this skeleton is, Lu Wu couldn't bear to watch.

As for Dudu's family's pig, it was a different state altogether.

Tuantuan: [Gluttonous (Smells so good, Little Skeleton smells good, I really want to eat!)]

Well, Lu Wu thought this pig had missed Little Skeleton after not seeing him for half a month, but it turned out it was just craving Little Skeleton's bones.

This pig even took advantage of Little Skeleton playing with his phone to sneak a bite.

But it couldn't bite through, almost breaking its teeth.

It also made Little Skeleton aware of its cunning move, causing another change in Little Skeleton's state.

Little Skeleton: [Proud (Tuantuan is so weak!)]

Little Skeleton: [Proud (Hmm, Little Skeleton is super powerful now, Tuantuan can't beat him!)]

For his inflated ego, Lu Wu couldn't bear to watch.

The swollen one wasn't just Little Skeleton, but also Hao Zhijian who had recently reformed the 233 team.

There, Lu Wu sat in the spectator seats and could see Hao Zhijian's puffed-up face in the resting area of the stage below.

Previously, when Hao Zhijian was in Lu Wu's team, although he was arrogant, he restrained himself somewhat because he wasn't the captain and had Lu Wu to keep him in check.

But now things were different.

Now the 233 team had reformed around him, and this young man was the captain. His attitude had swelled beyond measure.

Standing in the spectator seats, Lu Wu could see him striking a pose while scolding his two new teammates.

Seeing this attitude from Hao Zhijian, Lu Wu couldn't help but want to slap him.

Indeed, Lu Wu came today intending to give this guy a slap.

Yesterday, after Lu Wu had returned home, he was upbeat until he heard that Hao Zhijian had kicked him out and formed a new 233 team.

Actually, Lu Wu didn't mind the situation.

He had been thinking of kicking Hao Zhijian out anyway; he had merely hesitated because of the money he'd received.

Hao Zhijian leaving by himself had actually seemed convenient to Lu Wu.

However, this guy didn't just leave—he went around slandering him and Dudu afterward.

That was something Lu Wu could not tolerate.

Therefore, he came early this morning specifically to cause trouble.

But he wasn't in a rush; he could sit by the side and watch as a spectator for a while.

However, what Lu Wu didn't know was that as soon as he arrived, the organizers immediately took notice of him.

After all, Lu Wu came today as a spectator and had to buy a ticket with real-name registration, so as soon as he arrived backstage, people noticed him.

The unscrupulous organizer's director received the news at the first instance and felt this was an opportunity for trouble.

Of course, the organizers themselves would not make a move; it would be too unsightly. They directly forwarded the news to Hao Zhijian.

"What? Lu Wu is back?"

Hao Zhijian was startled upon receiving the message and glanced in Lu Wu's direction.

With that glance, he recognized the conspicuously visible Dudu in the crowd and also noticed Lu Wu beside Dudu.

"Perfect timing, today's battle would have been less colorful without you.

Lu Wu, you just wait!

The humiliation you gave me, I will surely repay you double."

Staring at Lu Wu, Hao Zhijian touched his cheek that had been slapped by Lu Wu half a month ago, his gaze chilly.

However, he didn't plan to confront Lu Wu right then.

He wasn't in a rush; Lu Wu was the main dish, he planned to enjoy the appetizer before coming to the main dish.

The so-called appetizer was naturally the ordinary team led by Ye Qingxue he was facing today.

Coincidentally, at this moment, the referee issued instructions, and the match was about to start, asking both teams to take their positions.

Meanwhile, the commentator at the commentator's desk began his presentation.

"Ladies and gentlemen, the long-awaited match between the newly formed Team 233 and Team 035 from Quancheng No.3 Middle School's key class is about to begin!

I am Lu Benwei, the commentator for this match, and I'll be explaining the game to you."

"Now both teams have taken their positions; on the left our Team 233.

Leading in front is Captain Hao Zhijian; everyone is familiar with him, so I won't introduce him.

Following him are two new teammates, whose summoned beasts are a fire lizard and a hedgehog pig."

"On the right is Team 035, led by Captain Zhang Yunkai, his summoned beast is an earth cave person, and his two teammates' summoned beasts are respectively a big-mouthed skylark and the very common goblin."

"Um, speaking of the composition of summoned beasts, Team 233 here seems quite stronger than Team 035.

Indeed, after restructuring, Team 233 has eliminated irrational setups and harmonized a lot without weak points.

Though the pig-bird tactic is no longer viable since the pig is gone,

the core position of the bird is still there, and it's said that Team 233 has already upgraded their original tactics, which should bring them to a higher level of strength.

On the other hand, looking at Team 035.

The lineup is average, and there hasn't been much impressive performance in previous matches.

Although I shouldn't say anything discouraging before the match as a commentator, I still think Team 233 is very likely to win this match.

"Um, now the captains of both teams are having a pre-match conversation; let's focus our cameras on them."

As his words ended, the images of Hao Zhijian and Zhang Yunkai appeared on the screen on the stage.

In this moment of wide-spread attention, Hao Zhijian stretched out his hand confidently to Zhang Yunkai and proudly said, "Ideally, as classmates, this match should be about friendship first.

But regrettably, I have a must-win reason.

From the moment I was unfairly kicked out of the key class, all my efforts have been to tell her, to tell everyone, I will take back what I lost by my own hands.

So, I'm sorry, but I am taking this match's victory!"

Having said that, Hao Zhijian flamboyantly flicked his hand, turned, and left, not giving the other side a chance to speak. The referee then promptly announced,

"The match begins!"

# Chapter 80: 079 Crush

With a whistle.

The match between Squad 233 and Squad 035 officially began.

At this moment, standing under the arena at the command platform, Hao Zhijian's heart was incredibly excited and overwhelmed.

Finally, the day had come!

He had been waiting for the day to battle against the key class, to prove his abilities to everyone.

"Don't get too happy too soon, and there's no need to be overly joyous.

After all, this squad isn't the core team of the key class; it's just an ordinary squad."

"No one here thinks they can match us, so just defeating them isn't enough. What I need is an absolute, crushing victory!"

And what is a crushing victory?

Taking them all down in one wave with the Hog-Bird strategy?

No!

That form of crushing had become tedious for the audience, another occurrence wouldn't shock them.

So, Hao Zhijian decided to crush the opposition in a different way.

He'd take on three!

Yes, one against three!

It was difficult, but the inflated Hao Zhijian felt he could do it.

On one hand, he was indeed inflated with confidence; on the other, the organizers had arranged for him a Cultivation Master who was said to be from Fucheng just yesterday.

That master truly had some skills, he had upgraded the Frozen Bird's power to 2 stars right off the bat and restructured its battle tactics, setting new strategies.

In just one night, the combat power of Frozen Bird had increased by at least fifty percent.

In this situation, Hao Zhijian felt he should be capable. Even if he couldn't wipe out Squad 035 by himself, he could dominate them in battle and easily crush the opposition with his teammates joining later.

After thinking it over and deeming it feasible, Hao Zhijian said to his teammates beside him, "Have your summoned beasts step back a little, let me spar with my old classmate first."

Hao Zhijian's teammates were quite obedient; they did whatever he said.

And as their summoned beasts moved, the commentators immediately noticed something unusual on the stage.

"Look, on Squad 233's side, the Fire Lizard and Hedgehog Pig are retreating, placing the Frozen Bird at the forefront. What does this mean, a new strategy?

No, I get it, this isn't a new strategy, this is Captain Hao wanting a 1v3!

Yes, Captain Hao is indeed thinking this way. I have to say, it's quite impulsive thinking, a 1v3 is nearly impossible.

But for some reason, seeing the back of Captain Hao, I feel an inexplicable confidence.

Yes, I have confidence in Captain Hao!

Ladies and gentlemen, I'll bet with you, I bet that Captain Hao will win this battle, and if he loses, I'll eat the commentator booth on the spot!"

"Well, let's now focus on the arena and see how this fate-entangled battle unfolds.

Will it be Captain Hao stepping out of adversity to victory, or will the favored sons of Squad 035 take an easy win, let's wait and see!"

As the commentator finished speaking, the screen changed again.

The large screen split into one large and two smaller screens.

The large one showed the arena, while the small ones displayed the members of Squad 233 and Squad 035.

Hao Zhijian had been waiting for this moment. When the camera focused on him, he spoke in a deep voice.

"Come on, let me see what level her students are at.

One by one, or all at once, I, Hao Zhijian, am ready for you all!"

Hao Zhijian's words detonated the entire venue.

Originally, under the deliberate guidance of the organizers, the audience was more inclined to support Hao Zhijian.

After all, a victory for Hao Zhijian had the taste of an upheaval and inspiration, coupled with Ye Qingxue's overbearing nature, made the audience lean even more towards Hao Zhijian.

Now with Hao Zhijian's declaration, the audience felt a special sense of participation, a burst of pride, and an eager anticipation for Hao Zhijian to powerfully wipe out Squad 035 1v3.

So, at this moment, cheers filled the arena continuously.

And this was exactly the effect Hao Zhijian wanted.

The plan was going smoothly; now it all depended on Team 035.

Hao Zhijian looked up towards Team 035 and clearly saw the anger on all the members' faces.

The more furious they were, the happier Hao Zhijian was.

It meant they wouldn't start by ganging up 3v1, as that would be too shameful and unsightly.

For the sake of their dignity, they would probably send out one to face him 1V1. In that case, he could seize the opportunity to swiftly eliminate one, and then handle the 1V2, which would give him a good chance to win.

As expected, the situation at Team 035 developed just as Hao Zhijian had anticipated.

Enraged, Team 035 sent out a Summoned Beast, which delightfully surprised Hao Zhijian.

"Fools, you just missed your only chance to win."

While feeling smug internally, his face showed a mix of regret and anger, "Choosing 1V1, huh? It seems you still underestimate me as before!

Here's one last piece of advice for you; I am not the same as I was before,

and my Frozen Bird isn't the one you knew before. Relying on just one Summoned Beast, especially a goblin, is impossible to defeat me!

You'd be better off attacking together."

Hao Zhijian played his part with deep and uneasy bravado, fearful that they might just nod and agree to a 3v1.

Fortunately, they did not.

Their response was mild.

"No need, it alone is enough to deal with you!"

At that comment, Hao Zhijian's expression darkened tremendously.

Although the response was what he wanted, the contemptuous tone was not.

"Still so arrogant, huh?

It alone is enough to deal with me?

Fine, let's see what's so great about you!

Frozen Bird, attack!"

At Hao Zhijian's command, the Frozen Bird launched its attack.

The commentator began to deliver their spiel from the commentary booth.

"The match officially starts, with the destined battle of Team 233 sparking between the Frozen Bird and the goblin.

The Frozen Bird initiated an attack, Ice Needles leading to cut off movement, followed by a diving attack. Direct confrontation, huh?

No, the Frozen Bird had equipped an Ice Shield and immediately exhaled a Cold Aura upon nearing the goblin.

It was a limited area use, showing the considerable power the Frozen Bird had gained, even creating a slight Fog effect with the small area use.

The goblin was enveloped, and the Frozen Bird charged in, starting with a tearing maneuver.

It seems this will be the final blow."

"Yes, the Frozen Bird is vicious this round, but it's no surprise since Captain Hao has been provoked.

He put in gruelling effort to stand on this stage, finally getting a chance to prove himself to everyone, yet he was still underestimated by former classmates.

Anyone would be angry in this situation, so, this flurry of attacks from the Frozen Bird is more than just against the goblin, it's also a struggle against an unjust fate.

And I believe, victory will belong to the fighter, the so-called high and mighty geniuses will eventually be stepped on..."

The commentator's words were cut off mid-sentence because by that time, the Fog brought by the "Cold Aura" had already dispersed, and the audience could now see the situation in the arena.

The formerly ferocious Frozen Bird was now being pinned down by the goblin, with the goblin's sword also held at the Frozen Bird's throat.

…

What a trash Nu Xiao, so short and flimsy!!!

# Chapter 81: Humiliation

Lost!

Hao Zhijian lost!

In a full outburst, he was defeated in an instant.

No one anticipated such an outcome, including Lu Wu.

Lu Wu never thought Hao Zhijian would lose, having seen the attributes of the summoned beasts in the elite class.

He was even more familiar with the attributes of the three creatures under Zhang Yunkai's command on the stage.

Very average!

When he first joined the elite class, he should have been evenly matched with Hao Zhijian.

Not to mention, Hao Zhijian had been developing for more than two months, so it should have been impossible for him to be utterly crushed.

Therefore, Lu Wu was particularly surprised.

While Lu Wu was merely surprised, on Hao Zhijian's side, it was utter disbelief.

"It's impossible, this can't be happening!

There must be a problem, there has to be!"

At this moment, Hao Zhijian was embodying disbelief and hysterical frenzy.

This wasn't his script; he shouldn't be the one falling here.

"You must have cheated, my Frozen Bird couldn't possibly lose!

Just a mere goblin, how could it possibly defeat my Frozen Bird!"

"Impossible?"

Team 035's captain, Zhang Yunkai, raised the corner of his mouth, "Seems like you're not convinced by your defeat. Want another chance?"

Zhang Yunkai's words stunned everyone, including Hao Zhijian, who hadn't expected such a proposition.

Faced with this situation, he hesitated only a second before nodding his head.

"It was a fluke, this time it was a fluke, I was careless. If we start over, I won't lose again!"

As he uttered these words, the faces of the audience that initially supported him grew unnatural.

Such words on the battlefield were particularly shameless.

He was careless? Were those teams swept away by the pig-bird tactic not careless, too?

The battlefield never compensates for one's carelessness.

Although Hao Zhijian's defeat was unexpected, they preferred to see him accept his loss gracefully rather than this current attitude.

But clearly, that was not possible.

Hao Zhijian wouldn't settle for that, he wouldn't want to see himself stopped here.

Neither did his opponent, Zhang Yunkai, who had no intention of letting Hao Zhijian off so easily.

"Alright, if so, then let's do it again, release his bird!"

At the same time, the goblin on the platform let go of the Frozen Bird.

Hao Zhijian was elated, "This time, I won't be careless, and I won't lose again!"

This time he resolved that no matter what, he would make the Frozen Bird kite the goblin to death.

However, just as the Frozen Bird took off and shot a wave of Ice Needles at the goblin, a gust of wind swept in, scattering the Ice Needles – it was the Big-Mouthed Skylark entering the fray.

Hao Zhijian's face changed, "Didn't we agree on a one-on-one?"

Zhang Yunkai laughingly replied, "It is one-on-one, it's just that this time your opponent is this one!

What, just now calling for a one-on-three, and now you're not okay with a different opponent?"

Hao Zhijian's expression darkened, and he defiantly said, "Who said I can't handle it? As long as I'm not careless, I won't lose even in a one-on-three. Frozen Bird, attack, use Ice Needle, and shoot that wretched bird down."

The Frozen Bird shot out its Ice Needles just as the other side issued an instruction.

"Big-Mouthed Skylark, use Airflow Acceleration!"

The Big-Mouthed Skylark's body surged with the current, its speed erupting as it raced towards the Frozen Bird, and the surging airflow directly knocked the Ice Needles away.

Hao Zhijian's face changed again, "Frozen Bird, use Ice Shield!"

```

"Stupid!"

As he issued this command, Lu Wu and many others in the arena spat out these two words.

It was the worst possible response.

See, before the Ice Shield could even form, the Big-Mouthed Skylark had already come over to easily Tear through the Ice Shield, then firmly grasped the neck of the Frozen Bird with its claws, diving down.

With a "boom," the Frozen Bird was trampled onto the arena floor, facing its second defeat.

He had lost again!

This time, Hao Zhijian was utterly baffled.

He stared at the Frozen Bird pinned to the ground and couldn't recover for a while, turning the thought over and over in his mouth.

"How can this be, how is this possible..."

Zhang Yunkai smiled again, "What do you think, want to give you another chance?"

Humiliation, this was sheer humiliation!

"I do!"

In the end, Hao Zhijian gritted his teeth and nodded his head.

As he nodded, 035 once again set the Frozen Bird free.

And in the moment the Frozen Bird was released, Hao Zhijian shouted furiously at his two new teammates.

"What are you dazing for? Get on with it, annihilate them!"

Clearly, Hao Zhijian had completely given up on one-on-one combat, placing all his hope in team tactics.

This was his only hope for victory.

He knew it looked bad, but he didn't care anymore; he did not want to stop here, absolutely not!

At Hao Zhijian's command, Squad 233 erupted.

The Hedgehog Pig used "Thorny Rain" to constrain movement, the Frozen Bird unleashed a wide-ranging "Cold Aura" to seize control, and finally, the Fire Lizard roared a Fireball.

This set of tactics, a modification of the original Pig-Bird tactic, was Hao Zhijian's own creation, and he felt it was stronger than the original.

However, there was a problem with his so-called stronger tactic right from the start.

The Big-Mouthed Skylark directly countered with "Wind Pressure," blowing both "Thorny Rain" and "Cold Aura" back, while at the same time, Zhang Yunkai's Cave People and Lin Jianying's goblin pounced.

The two Summoned Beasts struck together, instantly knocking the charged-up Fire Lizard out of the arena.

After that, the Cave People easily took down Hedgehog Pig with a "Boomerang," and almost at the same time, the Big-Mouthed Skylark had also captured the Frozen Bird.

The sides clashed for only a moment before Hao Zhijian tasted defeat once more.

And this time, he was utterly defeated, the kind without any chance of recovery.

Over at 035, Zhang Yunkai, who had easily beaten his opponent, smirked and mockingly said, "How about it, the great Hao Zhijian who said 'Thirty years on the east side of the river, thirty years on the west,' want me to give you another chance?"

At this moment, Hao Zhijian's face turned ashen, and he didn't dare to utter another unnecessary word; he didn't even have the courage to nod anymore.

Watching Hao Zhijian, who had been overcome by defeat, Zhang Yunkai who had been holding back for over a month, finally had his moment of exultation.

"Thirty years on the east, thirty years on the west, what nonsense!

Mr. Ye was right to not want you, you trash simply don't deserve to be in our company.

You're even worse than Lu Wu and the others; although they're trash too, at least they have some self-awareness, unlike you who are trash and overestimate yourself!"

As these words hit home, Hao Zhijian, who had already shut down, was stimulated once more.

"Don't compare me with that coward!

Yes, I'm not as good as you guys, but at least I have the courage to stand in the arena and battle with you all, unlike that coward hiding in a dark corner, shivering with fear."

This upset Lu Wu.

Damn it, if you're going to tear into each other, leave me out of it!

What made Lu Wu frown even more was that.

The organizer with ulterior motives switched the cameras at that moment, and Lu Wu and his companions appeared on the big screen.

This left the Little Skeleton, who had been watching the big screen, utterly astonished.

It was on TV!!!

```

# Chapter 82: 081 Lu Wu enters the stage

As one of the most watched team members in this Quancheng Cup,

Lu Wu, with his ordinary appearance, and Dudu, with his adorably plump figure, both made a lasting impression.

As soon as they appeared on the screen, the audience immediately recognized them.

Caught unprepared by this situation, Dudu panicked a little, hastily put down her milk tea and steamed buns, and grabbed Lu Wu's hand, attempting to use Lu Wu's slender body to shield her chubby self.

Lu Wu, on the other hand, frowned.

"What's with the organizers? Why are they cutting to me? I'm just a spectator today. Cut to the commentators' desk. He just said if Hao Zhijian loses he'd chew the commentators' desk. Let him perform that for us.

I've never seen anyone chew a commentators' desk before!

Or cut to the ring—that's where the real action is. They're going at it over there, and I'm thoroughly enjoying the fiery drama. You're ignoring the intense scene and cutting to me—what's the deal?

Trying to drag me into this? I'm not interested in the kind of fight where you can't get physical."

With that, Lu Wu took a bite of Dudu's steamed bun, perfectly embodying the demeanor of an onlooker just there for the snacks.

The audience was speechless.

They're calling you out, and you act as if nothing's happening?

Hao Zhijian's reaction was extremely agitated, his face flushed with anger as he pointed at Lu Wu: "See that, that's what kind of person he is.

A man without a sense of honor, without dignity, a cowardly trash."

"Our team was reassembled because of him. Our defeat is his fault too!"

In his anger, Hao Zhijian seized this chance to put all the blame on Lu Wu.

The more he spoke, the more convinced he became, until in deep resentment and fury, he shouted excruciatingly at Zhang Yunkai, "How can you compare me with that guy?"

"Is there a difference?"

Zhang Yunkai smirked disdainfully, "As Mr. Ye said, whether it's you or him, you're both garbage!"

This comment made Lu Wu, the layabout in the audience, quite upset.

"Damn it, I'm just a bystander today!

You two tear into each other all you want, but can you leave me out of it?

Keep dragging me into this, and see if I don't come down there and knock your heads crooked!"

Hearing Lu Wu's bold words, Zhang Yunkai, who had just triumphed over Hao Zhijian and was still relishing his victory, challenged jokingly, "Oh, you've got guts, come down and hit me!"

Unexpectedly, the moment he said this, the corner of Lu Wu's mouth lifted: "Sure!"

And with that, Lu Wu stood up, pulled Dudu up by the hand, and made their way down the stands with Little Skeleton.

What Lu Wu was doing could be considered a breach of the rules; in principle, he wasn't allowed to go down.

But the organizers, already dealing with the debacle of the newly defeated Team 233, took a wait-and-see approach to the situation.

They even initially hoped that letting Lu Wu go down might extend their interests a little further, so they didn't stop him, and Lu Wu easily descended from the spectator seats.

"You actually dared to come down?" Zhang Yunkai was a bit surprised.

"Why wouldn't I? Didn't you ask me to come hit you?" Lu Wu shrugged, "Here I am, following your request to beat you up, right?"

Lu Wu's tone annoyed Zhang Yunkai.

"It seems I need to take back what I said earlier. You and he are the same type of trash, equally delusional..."

"Enough with the nonsense. I just have one question for you: now that I'm down here, are you going to fight or not?"

Lu Wu waved his hand to cut him off.

This further enraged Zhang Yunkai.

"Fight? Do you really think you're worthy?

Who are you? Who are we?

We're from the key class, students trained by Mr. Ye himself. Even though we're just the most ordinary students Mr. Ye has trained, we're certainly not trash like you who got swept out of the key class.

You have no idea what kind of opportunity you missed the moment you were kicked out of the key class!

You have no clue how powerful Mr. Ye is!"

"Do you know why he just lost so badly?

Because all three of our summoned beasts have reached 2 stars in power!

And it's not just recently, Mr. Ye helped our summoned beasts reach 2 stars a month ago.

My summoned beast's power is already close to 3 stars, and in no more than a month or two, it will reach 3 stars!"

As soon as these words were said, the whole arena went into an uproar.

A 3-star summoned beast, of Black Iron Quality, with that kind of power, you could easily get through the city competitions in high school leagues.

Although Zhang Yunkai's summoned beast isn't at 3 stars yet, there's still more than half a year until the high school league starts.

By the time the high school league arrives, his summoned beast's power will definitely have reached 3 stars, and it might even have reached the Elite Level.

And Zhang Yunkai's little team is just an extremely ordinary one under Ye Qingxue, not even a trump card or considered frontline.

If such a team has this kind of power, imagine how terrifying the power of the key class's trump cards must be, and how frightening the capability of their teacher Ye Qingxue must be?

Probably at least on the Professional Level as a summoner, and she might even be a Cultivation Master!

At this moment, not only was the audience shocked, but the organizers of the Quancheng Cup were also breaking out in a cold sweat.

They also realized that they had been using such a figure for hype; how daring must they be to do such a foolish thing?

Zhang Yunkai was very pleased with this effect.

He then turned his gaze to Lu Wu, wanting to see on Lu Wu's face, which had maintained a frivolous and mocking expression from start to finish, signs of fear, regret, and despair.

However, what he saw was, uh, well, the back of a head!

Lu Wu's attention wasn't here at all; while Zhang Yun was ranting, Lu Wu simply couldn't be bothered to watch and turned his head to teach Little Skeleton, who was clearly interested in "appearing on TV," how to take photos.

"Actually, being on TV is quite simple. Little Skeleton has a big phone, and we can put whoever we want on TV.

See, you press here, then press here, and that's it.

If you want to take a photo of the front, press here; for the back, press here."

Saying this, Lu Wu even helped Little Skeleton turn on the front camera feature, and the two took a picture together. Pang Duddu, who was watching enviously, quietly moved over, hoping to sneak into a group photo, but due to being too puffy with cuteness, he could only get half his face in the shot.

Seeing this scene, Zhang Yunkai was burning with rage.

"Lu Wu!"

"Don't yell, I'm busy!"

"Then you press here, and you'll be taking pictures of the front. Once you master this, later our Little Skeleton can shoot whoever we want."

After Lu Wu finished teaching Little Skeleton the camera functions with ulterior motives, he finally looked up at Zhang Yunkai.

"What's up? Done ranting? Can we start the fight now? If we're not fighting, I'm going home to eat!"

Zhang Yunkai's eyes bulged, teeth clenched: "Fight!"

# Chapter 83: 082 Victory

Unbearable!

Zhang Yunkai absolutely couldn't tolerate Lu Wu's attitude!

What nonsense—rejected at first glance by Mr. Ye, even kicked out by his own teammates, that trash had the nerve to act arrogantly in front of him!

This soured Zhang Yunkai's mood, which had been great after overwhelmingly crushing Hao Zhijian.

So he decided he was going to mess with Lu Wu!

Lu Wu, on the other hand, was naturally unafraid.

Thus, not long after the new Team 233 and Team 035 finished their battle,

the old Team 233 and Team 035 began fighting again.

The organizers were still opting to watch from the sidelines, not intervening—they even seemed to be taking a hands-off approach.

This made Hao Zhijian, who had been beaten into submission, see another chance to turn things around, and he quickly threw himself in front of Lu Wu.

"Lu Wu—oh no, Brother Lu, your team is still one person short. Pick me, pick me. With our Mini Pig Bird strategy, we can form a real team. We have a chance to beat them!"

He knew it looked bad, somewhat humiliating.

But since he had already lost face completely just moments ago, it didn't make much difference—he didn't want to end it like this, didn't want to admit total defeat. After some reflection, he felt he still had a chance to fight.

And his plea left Lu Wu stunned.

"What's going on, I haven't seen you for just half a month and your brain has deteriorated to this extent? Pick you? Do you think that's possible?"

If this weren't the battlefield, Lu Wu would have slapped him across the face.

Without hitting him, Lu Wu didn't want to bother with him anymore. After a cold remark, he pushed him aside and let Little Skeleton onto the stage.

Lu Wu's rejection fueled Hao Zhijian's fury, "Lu, based on what are you not picking me? Without me, you can't possibly win against them.

It has always been this way, without me you're nothing!"

Lu Wu ignored his helpless rage, but Zhang Yunkai glanced at Hao Zhijian.

"You should add him to your team!"

He wanted to crush Hao Zhijian once more, and even more so, to completely breakdown the so-called Team 233.

This team had displeased Ye Qingxue. By utterly crushing them, Ye Qingxue might look upon them more favorably, so he didn't want to miss this opportunity.

"If your entire Team 233 joined forces, maybe you could barely put up a fight against my Cave People.

Just one Little Skeleton and one Mini Pig, you can't possibly be our match, you can't even beat one of us!"

Zhang Yunkai was full of arrogance, continuously provoking.

On the other hand, Lu Wu was, well, quite busy.

"Little Skeleton, hand me your phone!"

"No man, Lu Wu isn't trying to scam your phone. Lu Wu wants to film you so you can be on TV. Fight them, and Lu Wu will shoot it for you, so you can see yourself, Little Skeleton, on the phone."

...

Lu Wu spent quite a while trying to get the phone from Little Skeleton. Finally, when he switched on the camera to film Little Skeleton, he realized there was no summoned beast opposite him.

This annoyed Lu Wu a great deal.

"So, are you fighting or not? Such dilly-dallying with a mere fight—is it because you're scared?"

Zhang Yunkai's brow furrowed. He didn't want to fight a worthless Little Skeleton; such a victory held no challenge. He wanted to fight three!

But at this point, he also didn't want to explain anything or say more, he directly let his summoned beast, Earth Cave People, enter the field.

His patience was nearing its limit; he wanted to quickly see Little Skeleton beat down, wanted to see the expression that should appear on that detestable face of Lu Wu.

Additionally, after making Lu Wu cry, he would naturally get to fight three!

"Now, the match begins!"

At this moment, the organizers, who had so far been unremarkable, finally had a referee step forward to announce the start of the match, somewhat salvaging their dignity.

Signifying that the battle was still under their control.

As soon as the match began, Zhang Yunkai immediately issued commands.

"Earth Cave People, use the Whirling Bone Stick!"

At his command, the Earth Cave Person, about one meter fifty tall with a cow bone helmet on its head, swung its bone stick directly at Little Skeleton.

Lu Wu wasn't idle either, he picked up his phone and opened the camera: "Little Skeleton, the filming has started, you need to put on a good show!"

Once the Little Skeleton in the arena heard this, its state immediately changed.

[Serious (Little Skeleton is going to be on TV, Little Skeleton needs to put on a good show)]

As its state changed, Little Skeleton nimbly dodged the Earth Cave Person's Whirling Bone Stick.

However, just as Little Skeleton avoided it, Zhang Yunkai revealed an inevitable loneliness, the kind that comes with being invincible.

"It's over!"

Almost right after Zhang Yunkai's words fell, the Earth Cave Person had already charged towards Little Skeleton and stopped two meters away, smashing its fists into the ground.

This was another skill of the Earth Cave People, the Earth-shattering Strike!

A typical control skill, when the fists pounded down, a vibration transferred through the ground and briefly paralyzed Little Skeleton. At the same time, the Whirling Bone Stick flew back, already near Little Skeleton's head.

Ultimate kill!

At this moment, even the commentator couldn't contain his loneliness.

"It looks like this match is going to end from the start!

A summoned beast like Little Skeleton just can't beat the Earth Cave People!

If it doesn't fall now, I'll eat the whole arena..."

Before he finished speaking, a slap landed on his face.

The paralyzed Little Skeleton couldn't move its legs, but its bone hands could. It reached out and caught the bone stick.

After an appraising look and comparing it to the baseball bat in its hand, Little Skeleton disdainfully threw the bone stick back at the Earth Cave Person.

Zhang Yunkai's face changed.

"Quick, dodge!"

The Earth Cave Person, very obedient, hastily dodged to the left.

Just right, for had it not dodged, the bone stick wouldn't have hit it, but the dodge placed it squarely in the stick's path.

Little Skeleton seized the opportunity, rushed forward, and landed another blow on the Earth Cave Person who had been smacked down, decidedly winning the victory with ease.

Having finished, Little Skeleton didn't forget to turn its head towards Lu Wu, tilting its skull and pondering for a moment, then gave Lu Wu a thumbs up.

Adorably silly!

On Zhang Yunkai's side,

looking at his defeated Earth Cave Person, his mentality was now much like Hao Zhijian's before.

"How is this possible? How could my Earth Cave Person lose to a mere Little Skeleton?"

"Um, it just got unlucky, was careless. How about giving it another chance?"

Lu Wu, who had turned into a camera operator, gave the same suggestion with a grin that Zhang Yunkai had given Hao Zhijian.

"If that doesn't work, all three of you could go together!"

At that moment, an indescribable sense of humiliation surged in Zhang Yunkai's heart, flushing his face.

Now, he could deeply empathize with Hao Zhijian's feelings back then; he couldn't bear such resentment, such humiliation.

He had to defeat this bastard!

He didn't believe himself to be inferior to Lu Wu, nor the Earth Cave Person inferior to Little Skeleton. It was a mere oversight. Given another chance, he was certain of victory.

However, just as Zhang Yunkai was about to nod and challenge Lu Wu to another round, a cold voice rang out.

"What? You want to humiliate yourself even further?"

As the voice resounded, someone approached.

Lu Wu squinted at the newcomer...

# Chapter 84: 083 Long Legs Girl

Quancheng Cup Competition Venue.

With that sound, all eyes focused on the newcomer.

It was a girl whom Lu Wu had never seen before, yet she felt strangely familiar.

Especially those legs and her facial expression, which looked a lot like Ye Qingxue.

However, this girl seemed even prettier than Ye Qingxue.

Lu Wu couldn't help but take a few more glances.

Well, ninety-nine percent of the men present did the same as Lu Wu, of course, excluding the three people from Team 035.

Their bodies shivered when they saw her.

Especially Zhang Yunkai, whose face had been flushed with raging fury, felt a bone-chilling coldness at that moment.

He quickly leaned in, "Squad leader, I was careless just now. If given another chance, I definitely won't lose. Please believe me and give me another opportunity.

This time, I can surely defeat him..."

"Shut up!"

Two cold words were uttered.

Zhang Yunkai immediately clamped his mouth shut, not daring to utter another superfluous word.

"You lost, accept it. Don't make up ridiculous excuses. Do you want to end up like him?"

The long-legged girl glanced at Hao Zhijian.

Zhang Yunkai stunned for a moment, glanced at Hao Zhijian, then his expression suddenly changed as if he had a sudden realization.

This reaction enraged Hao Zhijian, who was already emotionally unstable due to the unexpected defeat.

"What did you sa..."

Hao Zhijian abruptly stood up, ready to unleash his anger on the long-legged girl, but the girl's cold gaze made him shiver and left him speechless.

The resemblance was uncanny; this girl was just too much like Ye Qingxue.

In her presence, Hao Zhijian felt as though he was directly facing Ye Qingxue, which restrained him from any rash actions.

Watching Hao Zhijian instantly cower, Lu Wu disdainfully curled his lip.

By now, the long-legged girl had already approached Lu Wu.

"You're Lu Wu?"

Lu Wu was taken aback. What was this, a rhetorical question? But still, he nodded.

"Your Little Skeleton is quite impressive. How about returning to the advanced class?"

The moment this was said, not only Lu Wu but everyone was stunned.

Zhang Yunkai and Hao Zhijian were especially anxious—one worried about how to attract Lu Wu to the advanced class, the other concerned about why only Lu Wu was invited.

But right now, both dared not say anything, as all eyes were focused on Lu Wu, curious and expectant about his response.

To be honest, Lu Wu still hadn't figured out who this girl was.

He had been to the selection for the advanced class before and had not seen her, but going by Zhang Yunkai's word, this girl seemed to be the class president.

Now she had mentioned inviting him back to the advanced class; this made Lu Wu quite suspicious, wondering if this girl could be Ye Qingxue's sister.

Regardless of who she was, Lu Wu had no intention of returning to the advanced class.

"Well, it's better not to. My Little Skeleton's quality is poor, quite trash actually, I'd rather not drag you down."

How could a man as magnanimous as Lu Wu consider going back?

Not even if Ye Qingxue herself came pleading would he change his mind.

Receiving such a response, the long-legged girl didn't say much.

She just sighed with regret and then turned around, leading Team 035 away.

This left Lu Wu quite baffled: "She's leaving just like that? Without much of a discussion?"

Lu Wu's words made Long Legs pause, slightly turning back, "After today, the elite class will withdraw from the Quancheng Cup, and you should withdraw too. Don't bother with these minor competitions anymore, they're not suitable for you.

I'm really interested in your Little Skeleton, so here's another piece of advice, take the college entrance exam in another city. That's the only way you might have a chance to make it to the provincial competition!"

"Why?"

"Because our class has monopolized the quota for advancing to the provincial competition from Quan City!"

After saying that, Long Legs turned arrogantly, didn't give Lu Wu a chance to respond, and just walked away.

And this competition, or rather this farce, also turned dull with the departure of Long Legs.

The audience was not in the mood, and the organizers looked as if they had just lost their parents, considering 233 lost, and Quancheng No.3 Middle School's elite class was withdrawing. Now, they were really in over their heads.

At this point, Lu Wu didn't feel like causing more trouble, he gave Hao Zhijian a look urging him to follow and prepared to leave, planning to just call it a day.

However, while Lu Wu wanted to end the day there, Hao Zhijian had no intention of doing so.

The events of the day had been too much for Hao Zhijian.

To say he had fallen from heaven to hell was putting it mildly, he had been preparing to crush team 035 to reach the pinnacle of his life that morning, only to find himself crushed instead.

Then, Lu Wu had strongly defeated Zhang Yunkai, and Long Legs, along with the 035 squad, left and announced their withdrawal.

With this, all his ambitions pinned on the Quancheng Cup had been dashed.

Now, not only could he not become the champion of the Quancheng Cup, nor a new star, nor could he slap Ye Qingxue in the face, and he definitely couldn't expect support from the organizers of the Quancheng Cup anymore.

Even his own team might dissolve, and with his recent performance, it was very likely that he was about to face a situation where he had no teammates and everyone was against him.

Realizing this, a deep sense of fear and even deeper resentment welled up inside Hao Zhijian.

Why resent? Because in his eyes, all of this was caused by Lu Wu!

If it weren't for Lu Wu, he wouldn't have been kicked out of the elite class!

If it weren't for Lu Wu, he wouldn't have had to reform team 233 and wouldn't have lost so embarrassingly!

If it weren't for Lu Wu, his family wouldn't have been swindled out of 8 million by Li Kai!

…

So, everything was Lu Wu's fault!

He would never let Lu Wu off the hook no matter what!

Thus, just as Lu Wu turned to leave, Hao Zhijian let out a hysterical roar, "Lu Wu, stop right there!"

The hysterical roar echoed throughout the competition venue.

However, whether it was Lu Wu or the audience, no one paid much attention to Hao Zhijian.

After all, the awkwardness he had shown in the previous competition was enough, no one was interested in watching his clown performance anymore.

"Don't leave!

Do you know what he has done?

The reason I'm like this now is all because of him!"

"I've figured it all out, I was kicked out of the elite class because of him!

It was because he was expelled from the elite class by Teacher Ye Qingxue that he envied me, provoked me, and schemed for me to be kicked out."

Hao Zhijian shouted desperately, but still, attention was scarce, Lu Wu was even nearly out of the arena.

This made Hao Zhijian even more furious.

"Why won't you believe me?

I really ended up like this because of him; he is a fraudster, he swindled a full eight million from my family!"

This hysterical roar, along with the figure of 8 million, finally caught the interest of the audience, and made Lu Wu stop in his tracks!

…

Stop cursing, there's one more chapter!

# Chapter 85: 084 Hao Zhijian's Benefactor

Hao Zhijian's final roar attracted attention, which made him particularly excited and agitated.

That's right, he had to seize this opportunity to take revenge on Lu Wu—completely, mercilessly!

Lu Wu had ruined him, and he would ruin Lu Wu in return!

"Do you know, after Lu Wu schemed to get me out of the key class, he began to approach me.

At first, I thought he just wanted to pull a teammate to play in the high school league, but later I found out he was after my family's money!

This swindler, together with a guy named Li Kai, set a trap for us, making us believe Li Kai was a Cultivation Master, and then easily scammed us out of a total of 8 million!

I only found out a few days ago that this Li Kai is no Cultivation Master at all; he's trash, garbage who failed five times to become a Professional Cultivator."

"Just this piece of trash, he dared charge us 100,000 for just one consultation!

He dared charge us 5 million for a training program plan for one year!

He even took 3 million from us, claiming he was going to get us some Companion Equipment, but after two months, there's been no sign of anything!

Tell me, if this isn't fraud, what is it?"

Hao Zhijian bit into Lu Wu like a mad dog.

And his words set off a huge commotion.

No one expected a competition to have so many twists and turns; just when it seemed everything was settled, there were still so many juicy stories to dig into!

And the audience's attention was successfully shifted to this big piece of juicy gossip.

By now, the big screen had been split into two parts, one showing the hysterical Hao Zhijian, and the other focused on Lu Wu's side.

Clearly, the organizers were stirring up trouble again.

They did this with two things in mind: one was for the hype, and the other because the organizers had already roughly looked into Ye Qingxue's identity.

Tall and strong, which made them panic.

Just as this incident was creating chaos, they simply pushed it along, letting team 233's members turn on each other, as a sort of apology to Ye Qingxue.

Of course, all of this was done discreetly, unnoticed by anyone, as the audience was focused on the juicy gossip and the screens.

On the screens, Hao Zhijian's side was undeniably distorted and hysterical.

By comparison, Lu Wu's side seemed particularly calm and composed.

He even found a spot to sit down, picking up a bun and holding a milk tea like a person enjoying snacks among the crowd.

His pet Little Skeleton's attention was back on the screen.

Watching the Little Skeleton and Lu Wu on the screen, it was brimming with curiosity.

Upon realizing that the Little Skeleton on the screen would mimic its actions, Little Skeleton became even more excited.

It quickly took out its phone and placed it above its head.

It had observed that it was the only Skeleton with a phone in the entire venue.

It wanted everyone to know that it was a Skeleton with a phone, that its Lu Wu was the best Lu Wu!

The only one who seemed normal was Pang Duddu by Lu Wu's side, whose face was red with urgency, repeatedly insisting "It's not like that."

But she wasn't the focus; the focus was all on Lu Wu's side.

"Why are you all looking at me, oh, you're curious about the 8 million matter, right?

Indeed, there is such a thing, but it's a normal business transaction, conducted completely in accordance with business procedures, and even with a contract involved, not implicating so-called fraud."

How shrewd Lu Wu was; how could he possibly leave an opening for Hao Zhijian to bite into him.

He had been ready to deal with this from the very beginning; in fact, he had come today not only to beat up this kid but also to resolve this 8 million issue.

He was prepared to refund the money.

Of the 5 million for the Frozen Bird training plan fee, Lu Wu didn't plan to give any of it back.

After a trip to Fucheng, Lu Wu gained a deeper understanding of the market. The 5 million he charged was indeed a bit expensive, but it was only slightly so and still within a reasonable range of fees.

As for the 3 million Companion Equipment project, Lu Wu originally planned to scold him before returning the money.

But unexpectedly, Hao Zhijian was so shattered by Sequence 035 that he clung to Lu Wu relentlessly, which made Lu Wu quite unhappy.

Now, he was a bit reluctant to return the 3 million.

On the other hand, Hao Zhijian was even less willing.

"Normal business practice? What a 'normal business practice'. You tell me, in a normal market, which Non-professional Cultivator's cultivation scheme costs 5 million?"

"You get what you pay for. Have you forgotten what that crappy bird looked like before?

A perfectly good Magic Summoned Beast, you insist on training it for close combat. It was our help in cultivation that allowed it to successfully switch systems.

You ask around, which Cultivation Master helping with system transition doesn't charge a few million?

Don't bite indiscriminately!"

"Furthermore, you can question our transaction; that's not a problem.

But you cannot slander my and my boss's reputation in such a public place without going through legal procedures or arbitration by the Professional Center.

Now, I give you two options: one is to apologize to me and my boss, and the other is for me and my boss to sue you, making you compensate us for the damage to our reputation!"

"You!"

Hao Zhijian's face darkened.

But he quickly regained his composure; clearly, he had anticipated this scenario.

In fact, from the moment he, or rather, the Hao Family learned that Li Kai was not a Professional Cultivator, they had no intention of letting Lu Wu and Li Kai off the hook.

After all, that was 8 million; money doesn't just blow in with the wind!

At first, they thought Li Kai must be at the master level of Cultivators to give away money so readily,

It was to cling to powerful coattails, an investment in the future!

Otherwise, they would have found 800,000 expensive for a Professional Cultivator, let alone 8 million for a Non-professional. Now, they felt swindled.

So, during this time, they'd been trying to find a way to deal with Lu Wu, trying to get that 8 million back.

And they had the good fortune to meet a benefactor!

"Lu Wu, do you think that because you signed a contract with me, I can't touch you?

I'm telling you, don't get too smug; you're as good as dead!

I've already sought help from a Professional Cultivator about you and Li Kai conspiring to defraud my family's money.

Upon learning about your impersonation and scam, that person was outraged and promised me justice. I'll call him over right now."

Having said this, Hao Zhijian called the Cultivator who was said to have come from Fucheng.

This Cultivator, having been invited by the organizers, was staying not far from the arena and came over immediately upon hearing the situation.

As a Professional Cultivator, a bookish type who had worked hard to become a certified Professional Cultivator, what he hated most was this sort of fake Cultivator scam.

Today, he was determined to expose the fraudster and restore justice to Quan City.

With this belief, the somewhat silly Cultivator marched onto the scene with great strides.

Hao Zhijian was extra excited; Lu Wu was done for this time!!!

...

Two chapters posted together, you won't say they're too short now, will you?

Also, a new week has begun, I'm asking for your votes!

Oh, and someone plans to campaign for Tuantuan, what do you think about Lu Wu being at the bottom of the rankings?

# Chapter 86: 085 What should I do if the teacher is a fraud? Waiting online, quite urgent!

Quancheng Cup Competition Venue.

As soon as the audience heard that a Professional Cultivator was coming, everyone was eagerly anticipating.

After all, this was a Professional Cultivator, a status even higher than that of a Professional Summoner.

In a small place like Quan City, where even Professional Summoners were rare, let alone Professional Cultivators, everyone wanted to see this legendary "Big Shot."

Amid the audience's anticipation, the person soon arrived.

Well, one must say, from the appearance, this "Big Shot" indeed met their expectations.

He appeared to be in his thirties, wearing a black vintage robe and a pair of black-framed glasses, exuding an extraordinary aura, clearly a bigwig.

Beside him followed a senior executive from the organizers of the Quancheng Cup, also a notable figure, but he was respectfully deferential in front of this bigwig, adding quite a lot of prestige to the latter.

If there was any flaw to this bigwig, it was that he seemed a bit slow and perhaps not very bright.

Hao Zhijian did not care about that.

Once he saw the bigwig coming, he hurriedly went over and took the bigwig's hand.

"Master Wang, you've finally arrived. You must stand up for me!"

This was his hope to defeat Lu Wu, and Hao Zhijian was extremely respectful.

Dragging him, he intended to go straight to confront Lu Wu!

However, it seemed that the bigwig's mind was not on this matter at the moment because he had noticed someone as he entered the venue.

"Hold on with your issue, just wait a moment for me!"

Saying that, Master Wang immediately shook off Hao Zhijian's hand and headed straight towards the oddly-behaving Lu Wu.

Seeing Master Wang heading toward Lu Wu, Hao Zhijian first was stunned, then his face lit up with joy.

This bigwig really liked to joke, saying things like 'not urgent, wait a bit,' yet his actions were quite honest, heading straight for Lu Wu.

Look how scared Lu Wu was.

He had been arrogant just moments ago, but now his face was contorted, unable to speak.

"Cheating me of my money, ruining my career, let's see if you won't die this time!"

Watching Master Wang's retreating figure, Hao Zhijian's face was filled with satisfaction, eagerly waiting for the drama to unfold!

Well, the drama indeed came quickly.

There, Master Wang took just a few steps to reach Lu Wu, while Dudu, in panic, stepped forward trying to defend Lu Wu; she was naturally tongue-tied and timid.

After stepping forward, she didn't know what to say, and could only spread her arms like a plump hen to shield Lu Wu behind her, her eyes brimming with tears as if she were about to cry if anyone dared come closer.

This made Master Wang feel quite wronged.

"Mr. Lu, did I do something wrong?"

Lu Wu touched his nose, pulled Dudu back, and waved Master Wang over.

"Not at all, Uncle Wang, didn't you say you had to leave early for something? You even left our farewell feast early without finishing. How did you end up here in Quan City?"

This Master Wang, who had been Lu Wu's disciple for almost half a month, finally passed Dudu and reached Lu Wu as he had wished.

"The organizers of the Quancheng Cup are acquaintances of mine. They mentioned that a kid needed help boosting his Summoned Beast's power and designing a tactical structure, so I came over first.

That's right, that boy below!

I came over to adjust his Summoned Beast's tactical structure and use your summarized method to boost his Summoned Beast's power to 2 stars."

Master Wang said, pointing at Hao Zhijian below.

Mentioning Hao Zhijian made Master Wang recall the swindler, making him especially furious.

"This kid is quite pitiful; he reportedly paid 800 million to a scammer!

These scammers these days are detestable, not even Professional Cultivators, yet daring to demand 800 million.

Absolutely heartless and crazy, I won't let him off!"

Over here, Lu Wu was sipping milk tea, and upon hearing this, he couldn't help spraying it out.

Wang Dashan, anxious beside them, reacted faster than Dudu and hurried over to pat Lu Wu on the back, "Mr. Lu, take it slow, don't choke!"

"No worries, no worries, no worries..."

Lu Wu waved his hands repeatedly and finally caught his breath, looking at his makeshift disciple with a bizarre expression, "Didn't he tell you who conned him out of 800,000?"

"Er, I haven't had the chance to ask yet."

Scratching his head, Wang Dashan turned and asked Hao Zhijian, who was completely baffled below.

"Hao, you just called and told me that the con artist was here, point them out to me."

Hao Zhijian's face turned dark right then.

The audience's expressions also grew extremely odd.

The atmosphere suddenly became weird, and Hao Zhijian didn't dare utter a word.

Seeing this situation, Wang Dashan thought Hao Zhijian didn't have confidence in him, "Come on, what are you afraid of?

Rest assured, I've got this under control today. Even if I, Wang Dashan, am not enough, our Mr. Lu is here.

Don't underestimate our teacher because he's young. Not only does he possess astonishing talent as a cultivator, but he's also highly regarded by the director and senior management of the Fucheng Cultivation Center. He even has dozens of professional cultivator students under him.

He's a super genius cultivator!

His influence in the Fucheng cultivator circles is far beyond your imagination. A word from him could deal with that con artist.

So, don't worry about anything, speak up, and we can definitely resolve this for you!"

After hearing this, Hao Zhijian was even more afraid to speak.

His brain was buzzing, his face, which was full of smugness before, now turned ashen, and his legs went weak; he couldn't even stand steadily.

Although he couldn't comprehend how Lu Wu, this subpar guy, suddenly became Master Wang's Mr. Lu,

he was very clear that he was in big trouble.

Seeing him like this, Wang Dashan felt even more that something was amiss.

It must be that the con artist had a strong background, which scared Hao Zhijian into silence.

Realizing this might be the case, silly Wang's expression darkened.

"It seems this con artist still has significant power and background, enough to scare the kid from even saying his name.

But I, Wang Dashan, don't care how powerful or influential he is.

For justice, I can't let this go, even if I..."

Wang Dashan got to this point when Lu Wu tugged at him.

This made Wang Hanhan pause, then he felt a chill on his back. Even Mr. Lu didn't dare to let him continue speaking? Told him not to speak?

How big of a shot must this person be, and how bored must such a big shot be to con people for 800,000?

Yet, obviously, this wasn't what he should be focusing on. What he should consider now was whether he should keep pursuing this and whether he, a newbie who had just received his professional certificate, could afford to offend such a person.

Clearly, he could not. The most sensible action was to pinch his nose and act as if nothing had happened.

That would be the wisest choice, but the justice in his heart told Wang Hanhan not to do so. He should stand up, for justice, and even if it meant his utter destruction, Wang the Fool was not afraid.

Lu Wu, seeing Wang Hanhan's gaze shifting from hesitation to determination, realized that this guy might have misunderstood, so he quickly told him the truth, "Actually, that con artist he mentioned was me."

At that moment,

Bookish Wang Dashan's eyes widened, "Mr. Lu is a con artist?"

Confused and tensely nervous Wang Hanhan—anxiously—pulled out his phone and posted a message on the internal forum for help.

What to do if your teacher is a con artist?

Online now, urgent!

…

Since two chapters can't trick votes together, the next chapter will be tomorrow morning at eight, go to sleep early, good night!

# Chapter 87: 086 The Curtain Falls

This silly move didn't surprise Lu Wu at all.

This guy had been a particular headache for Lu Wu back in Fucheng, one whom Lu Wu both loved and hated.

He belonged to that kind of person who was especially diligent, but with a particularly simple mind that was slow to understand and very rigid.

Despite having more knowledge than others, he just couldn't apply it flexibly.

Teaching him was always more difficult than others, but since Lu Wu coveted his knowledge, he hadn't skimped on giving him private lessons.

He knew him very well and knew that causing such a farce was normal for him.

Lu Wu had no other choice but to roughly explain the situation to him.

When this silly fellow finally understood what was happening, he was shocked.

"What? Mr. Lu, he spent 5 million to get your guidance for one year and he still finds it expensive? And even thinks you're a swindler?"

Lu Wu nodded his head.

His deal with Hao Zhijian wasn't a one-off transaction; that 5 million was for a year's guarantee.

Understanding this, the silly man couldn't sit still and immediately rushed to Hao Zhijian, yanking him to his feet.

"Master Wang, what... what are you trying to do?"

Hao Zhijian was scared out of his wits, thinking the silly man was going to hit him.

But that wasn't the case. Wang Dashan's eyes lit up, and he pulled out a bank card and stuffed it into his chest: "Here's 10 million, the password is the last six digits of the account number. Please transfer your contract with Mr. Lu to me!"

The silly man had finally gotten wise for once.

10 million for almost a year of private tutoring from Mr. Lu was too good a deal for him, practically a huge windfall.

As for Hao Zhijian, he was completely dumbfounded.

He was a bit unclear about the situation.

While he was confused, the audience and the organizers of the Quancheng Cup certainly were not.

Seeing a Professional Cultivator so eager, it was clear that Hao Zhijian hadn't lost out on the so-called 8 million deal; he may have even made a large profit.

But that was in the past, and now with this commotion, he probably wouldn't get anything.

There, Hao Zhijian was still befuddled, while Wang Dashan was still pushing, and Lu Wu began to speak.

"Uncle Wang, stop pushing, I'll handle this myself."

With that, Lu Wu made a call to Li Kai in front of everyone, instructing him to refund the full 8 million Yuan that had been received from Hao Zhijian back to the Hao Family.

Out of the 8 million, Lu Wu had spent one to two hundred thousand, which meant Li Kai had to cover that amount. However, Li Kai didn't say a word and immediately returned the money to Hao Zhijian's father's account.

Of course, Lu Wu was magnanimous, but how could he let this go?

"The money has already been returned to you. Our transaction is now concluded.

However, your public defamation of me and my boss today is something I do not intend to let slide. I'll be reporting this to the Cultivation Master Professional Center for arbitration.

If you can't provide satisfactory compensation for this matter, it's far from over!"

At this point, Hao Zhijian was still bewildered and had no idea what Lu Wu's words implied.

Lu Wu had no obligation to explain and, after dropping that statement, he turned to Wang Dashan.

"Uncle Wang, I'm heading to Uncle Li's store. Do you want to come along?"

"Yes, yes, yes!"

Wang Dashan nodded frantically and quickly followed Lu Wu, leaving the competition venue.

It's worth noting that before Lu Wu left, he paused, turned to look at the big screen at the racecourse, then glanced at the organizers' top brass.

He didn't say any superfluous words, just looked for a few seconds, then strode away.

Yet it was those few seconds that made the organizers' executives sweat profusely.

Though they weren't clear on the situation yet.

But they weren't deaf; they had heard what Wang Dashan said.

Lu Wu was highly regarded by the higher-ups of the Fucheng Cultivation Center, with dozens of Professional Cultivator disciples under his command, and was a superstar among Cultivators.

While he might not be at Ye Qingxue's level,

They certainly wouldn't provoke Lu Wu, a talent destined for a bright future, over small gains.

Lu Wu's final action made it clear that he was aware of the role the organizers had played in aggravating the situation.

This was especially troubling for the organizers.

Damn it, they just couldn't understand how Quan City had suddenly produced two such tigers, and they had to face both of them!

But for the organizers, it was still manageable.

Painful, yes, but only a headache.

For Hao Zhijian, or rather the Hao Family, the matter was not so easily resolved.

Take Hao Renjie, Hao Zhijian's father, for example.

At the time of the incident, he was busy with business and couldn't make it over. In the middle of his business dealings, he suddenly received a notification of an 8 million transfer.

He checked his phone and saw it was from Li Kai's side.

At first, he didn't pay much attention, thinking Wang Dashan had been impressive, tearing Li Kai apart and getting the 8 million back easily.

He even called Wang Dashan to express his gratitude right away and was planning to invite Wang Dashan for a meal.

However, Wang Dashan's attitude was very cold, and he hung up after a few perfunctory words.

This puzzled Hao Renjie.

What was the situation? Did the Master think they didn't know how to reciprocate?

Yes, he thought maybe that was it. Giving something back was proper, considering it was also an opportunity to build ties with a Professional Cultivator.

Although Wang Dashan had just become a Professional Cultivator, no matter what, associating with one was excellent for them.

But his illusion was soon shattered!

Hao Zhijian's call came quickly.

"Son, well done. I was planning to deal with Li Kai after your competition, but to my surprise, you resolved this matter yourself, well done, I'm very satisfied!"

Hao Renjie was thrilled to hear from Hao Zhijian.

But Hao Zhijian was unusually silent on the phone.

A father knows his son best, and Hao Renjie quickly sensed that something was off and urgently asked, "What happened?"

As soon as Hao Renjie asked, Hao Zhijian's emotions collapsed completely and he burst into tears with a 'wah', sobbing.

And amidst his sobs, he relayed every detail of what had transpired that day.

Starting from being utterly defeated, then Lu Wu stepping in.

To his last hysterical outrage, along with Wang Dashan's attitude towards Lu Wu, and everything Wang Dashan had implied.

Finally, Hao Zhijian did not forget to repeat Lu Wu's parting words.

Listening to Hao Zhijian's account on the phone,

Hao Renjie's expression switched from joy to anger, from anger to seriousness, from seriousness to pallor.

Especially when he heard the final sentence and realized that Lu Wu was going to the Professional Training Center to file a complaint against them, Hao Renjie could barely hold onto his phone.

# Chapter 88: 087 Lu Haikong returns

Fucheng Cultivation Master Professional Center Cultivation Room.

Having been punished for the previous fishing incident, Zhao Kai Ming, with nothing else to occupy his time, had been holed up in the Cultivation Room for research over the past few days.

Right now, he was focused on researching nothing other than Lu Wu's Little Skeleton Soup.

The reason this old man was delving into this was because he hadn't given up on Lu Wu yet.

Those two old men just temporarily prohibited him from taking Lu Wu as an apprentice. It wasn't as if it were forbidden forever.

Zhao Kai Ming felt that, with adequate preparation, there was still hope to make Lu Wu his apprentice.

In terms of preparation, Zhao Kai Ming thought it would be a good starting point to work on something that interested Lu Wu.

Wasn't Lu Wu's initial summoned beast a Little Skeleton?

Wasn't he always researching how to improve the quality of his Little Skeleton?

Zhao Kai Ming believed he could give him a boost in this regard.

After all, the quality of Lu Wu's house's Little Skeleton had reached the Bronze Level, and its power had also reached 2 stars.

By Little Skeleton's potential, it was actually already nearly triggering a form change through evolution.

It could be that once the Little Skeleton's power reached 3 stars, or the Elite Level, it should be able to evolve.

However, not many Cultivation Masters specialized in researching Little Skeletons. Over the past hundred years or so, there hadn't been many instances of Little Skeleton evolution, and most evolutions were due to chance occurrences, making it particularly difficult to find a viable evolution plan for Little Skeleton.

But this was also an opportunity for Zhao Kai Ming.

If he could develop an advanced plan, he would have a bargaining chip to tempt that kid to become his apprentice.

With this in mind, he had gathered a large group of Little Skeletons lately and started researching using Lu Wu's "Little Skeleton Soup 4.0" as an entry point.

After toiling for 2 days, he hadn't found a direction for Little Skeleton Evolution, but he did notice a problem.

"How strange. After in-depth research these past 2 days, I've realized that while Xiao Lu's plan is decent, it doesn't actually endow the Little Skeleton with Thunder Attribute Skills," mused Zhao Kai Ming.

"Little Skeletons are of the Undead Type, naturally restrained by thunder. It's difficult enough to eliminate their weakness to thunder, let alone have them master Thunder Skills."

"Even if his Little Skeleton had Companion Equipment for Thunder Attribute Skills, awakening such skills would be extremely difficult, with at most a one in ten thousand chance.

And even if the Thunder Attribute Skills were awakened, it's doubtful that the Little Skeleton could withstand it, let alone unleash such powerful effects right away!"

Zhao Kai Ming suspected there might be something unusual about Lu Wu's Little Skeleton.

Or rather, it might have had some serendipity.

"Could it have received something that would help it fuse attributes? But he shouldn't be able to obtain such an item.

Hmm, the bait I used for fishing seemed to have this ability, could it be that it's on the Little Skeleton?"

Zhao Kai Ming's imagination was running wild, but he felt he was being a little too imaginative.

"It can't be!

No, it definitely can't be!"

"The bait does have that ability, but it would require killing it and purifying its core to be possible.

That guy went through so much trouble for the bait, he definitely wouldn't kill it, and even if he did, he absolutely wouldn't place it on the Little Skeleton."

"It's not likely that he ran off on his own, leaving the bait behind, and then hid the thing on the Little Skeleton, right?

And just when the Little Skeleton's quality had improved and then..."

Speaking up to this point, Zhao Kai Ming found it hard to continue.

The more he talked, the more he felt it was a possibility.

And this made him nervous. If his speculation turned out to be true, then Lu Wu would be in great danger.

"No, I must see what's going on over there!"

Zhao Kai Ming, very anxious, immediately stopped his research and ran to inform Zhang Wentao about his speculations.

His concerns caught Zhang Wentao's attention.

Although Zhao Kai Ming's theory was just speculative, without a shred of evidence,

and despite the fact that Lu Wu and his Little Skeleton had been checked over before, with nothing unusual found, it should have been impossible in theory.

But just to be safe, in case the old man's guess was correct, that would be serious trouble.

So, they immediately contacted Lu Wu.

However, they didn't say much, just casually chatted to reconfirm Lu Wu's intent to sign a contract and make sure there were no issues. Once they were sure that Lu Wu was fine and still intended to sign, Zhang Wentao had Zhao Kai Ming take a Divine Origin Fruit to meet with Lu Wu.

If his suspicion proved true, it could protect Lu Wu. If wrong, consider it a simple errand.

"Let's hope it's just an errand this time!

Otherwise, it might already be too late for Old Zhao to make a difference."

Watching Zhao Kai Ming leave in a rush, Zhang Wentao could only pray.

...

On Lu Wu's end, he wasn't very clear about Zhao Kai Ming's situation.

When Zhang Wentao called, he was in the middle of plucking Wang Hanhan's wool.

After hanging up, Lu Wu was about to continue when the phone rang again.

Picking it up, Lu Wu saw that it was a call from his own old man.

"Son, I'm back from my business trip, I'll arrive at the train station in thirty minutes. Come and pick me up!"

Lu Wu was at a loss.

He didn't have a car, so how could he pick up the old man?

But Lu Haikong on the other end didn't give Lu Wu a chance to refuse, and just hung up, leaving Lu Wu no choice but to stop plucking and take a taxi with Dudu to the station.

Arriving at the station and seeing his old man, Lu Wu finally realized why his father had wanted him to come to pick him up.

Lu Wu looked at the four large suitcases by Lu Haikong's side: "Did you go on a robbery spree or something?"

"I went out for a while; shouldn't I bring back some gifts when I come back?"

"This box here is a gift for your mother, this one is for Ni Ni, and these two, these are for you and Dudu."

Speaking so, Lu Haikong passed a pink large suitcase to Dudu.

"Thank you, Uncle!"

Dudu smiled sweetly, reaching out to receive it, but was stopped by Lu Haikong: "No, Dudu, don't handle it; the suitcase is heavy and it'll be bad to hurt your hands. Let Lu Wu take it."

By now, Lu Wu was used to this and didn't bother to say much. He pulled two of the suitcases himself and directed Little Skeleton to take the other two.

Hmm, Lu Wu then realized another benefit of the increased strength of Little Skeleton—it could help out with tasks.

While dragging the suitcases, Lu Wu glanced at the last remaining box.

The first three boxes had their recipients, so the last box was presumably for him, right?

Lu Wu was very curious about what the old man had brought him, so he touched the suitcase through the material.

At that moment, Lu Haikong, having noticed his son's subtle action, added the final point: "Oh, and the last one is for Tuantuan and Little Skeleton."

Lu Wu's face darkened instantly!

# Chapter 89: 088 Surprise

Quancheng Station corner.

A middle-aged man was holding a smartphone, yet his gaze was hardly on the screen. Instead, he was surreptitiously watching Lu Wu from the corner of his eye.

If Lu Wu had seen this man, he would have been able to recognize him instantly.

This was because the man was one of the 89 people from Fucheng previously, but Lu Wu didn't know his exact name.

He was different from Wang Dashan.

Wang Dashan was diligent and useful, with 'wool' to be exploited; this man, however, had no such 'wool' and was less diligent, so Lu Wu didn't pay much attention to him.

However, although Lu Wu wasn't paying attention to him, he was quite focused on Lu Wu.

To be precise, his interest was in Little Skeleton at Lu Wu's house.

This middle-aged man was in cahoots with the one who caused trouble at the Professional Center.

The two men worked together, one overt and the other covert; the overt one drew the attention while the covert one dealt with the spoils of war.

He was the bait that Zhao Kai Ming took out to fish.

They didn't take that thing with them—they wanted to, but couldn't!

After all, it was the Fu City Professional Center; it was not that easy to steal someone's bait.

A well-planned and executed method was necessary, and their plan, simply put, involved the overt man distracting Zhao Kai Ming and others while the covert man, unnoticed, dealt with a Summoned Beast, extracting what they wanted from it.

He then concealed the item using a special method within the body of the Summoned Beast, covering up the object's scent with the beast and successfully smuggled it out.

The Summoned Beast he chose was Little Skeleton because it was Undead Type, which made it easier to conceal, and Little Skeleton was weak and wouldn't notice anything.

In this respect, he was quite successful and skilled.

He hid the object so well that even Lu Wu, who had the system, couldn't detect anything through his inspection of Little Skeleton.

He even managed to deceive the three elders, including Zhao Kai Ming.

Although Zhao Kai Ming eventually became suspicious, it was just a guess and not a discovery of any real clues.

Achieving such a level of deception, this guy could be deemed the strongest in hiding things.

"The hardest part is over, and what remains is a breeze. I just need to find an opportunity to capture this Little Skeleton, refine it at high temperature, and I can retrieve the object."

The typically stoic middle-aged man now couldn't help but reveal a smile at the thought of retrieving that item, mixed with a slight pang of remorse, "Mr. Lu? What a pity!"

The backlash Lu Wu would suffer from his initial Summoned Beast being reduced to ashes was not going to be small. With Lu Wu's current spiritual power, it could take at least a year or more to recover.

Even if he did recover, it was uncertain whether he'd be sharp again or if his brain would still work properly.

Furthermore, he hadn't planned to give Lu Wu a chance to recover.

If he was going to act, he had to do so thoroughly!

"I've set my sights on this thing!

Little Skeleton must die, no one can save it!"

…

On Lu Wu's end.

He had absolutely no idea that someone in an unseen corner was secretly watching him.

It was Lu Haikong by his side who looked at him strangely, stealthily pulling Lu Wu to a corner and fishing for information, "Unfilial son, what have you been up to recently? Have you offended someone? Disgraced someone's daughter?

Hmm, that's the most likely scenario.

Look at you, unfilial son. You already have Dudu and still, you're not satisfied? Daring to be a scoundrel? You're bringing shame to our Lu Family, we've never had scoundrels!"

Lu Haikong felt that his son was not the type to cause trouble; the most likely explanation was that he had played the scoundrel with that face of his.

Lu Wu, caught off guard by this, had his head buzzing, wondering how he had suddenly become a scoundrel?

His old man seemed to have gotten muddle-headed at such a young age.

"How could that be true, Dad? If you can't trust me, can you not trust yourself? I am your son, after all; I would definitely be as faithful as you are!"

What could Lu Wu do when his own father suspected him? He could only resort to some flattery, but who knew that by saying that, his father became even more convinced that he was a philanderer!

With a hand on his shoulder and a particularly earnest tone, his father said, "Son, don't think that being a philanderer, surrounded by different women, is happiness. A philanderer also has his torments. I have a friend who became a philanderer, and even after dozens of years, he still faces the danger of being chased with a hatchet, being hunted down for miles. From time to time, he also experiences incredibly chaotic scenes; it's painfully hard to even speak about how he's living now. So, my boy, never become a philanderer, alright? Be faithful, got it?"

When the old man spoke about the pains of philanderers, his expression had some lively nuances, almost as though he could relate.

Lu Wu started to have doubts.

Could it be that his old man was making up phantom friends?

But he dared not say nor ask.

"Don't worry, Dad, I will definitely learn from you!"

"Besides, I really haven't been a philanderer. I've been rather busy recently—I stayed in Fu City for over half a month and only just got back home yesterday!"

When Lu Haikong heard that Lu Wu intended to learn from him, he looked somewhat unnatural, but his expression quickly shifted as he got pulled into the second half of Lu Wu's explanation.

"What were you doing in Fu City? And you stayed for more than half a month? Don't tell me you went there to charm some family's young lady?"

"No, I went there to participate in an event at the Fu City Summon Beast Cultivator Professional Center!"

Lu Wu had intended to tell his family when he got home, but since Lu Haikong asked, he simply explained everything about his trip to Fu City.

Ten minutes later.

After listening to Lu Wu's explanation, Lu Haikong was completely stunned.

"You're saying that you participated in an event at the Cultivation Master Professional Center in Fu City?"

"Yeah!"

"You're saying that you took on dozens of Professional Cultivators as disciples?"

"Yeah!"

"You're saying the head of the Fu City Professional Center took a liking to you, and they want to send you to Jiangnan University, and they're even offering you an A-grade growth support benefit?"

"Yeah!!!"

Each question Lu Haikong asked was met with an eager nod from Lu Wu!

Although he had lived two lifetimes, at this moment, in front of Lu Haikong, Lu Wu couldn't help but feel a bit proud. It was a pride akin to a grade schooler showing off a perfect test score to his father.

Lu Haikong, on the other hand, was utterly baffled, looking at Lu Wu with deep skepticism. He suspected his son had cheated somehow!

In Lu Wu's eyes, however, Lu Haikong's skepticism seemed more like astonishment, a bit overly excited and unable to react.

Yes, it must be the case, isn't every father's dream for their child to succeed?

Right now, Lu Wu couldn't help but recall the scene a few months ago when his tipsy dad had grabbed his hand and talked about supporting a sky for him. His nose felt tingly as he reached out and grabbed Lu Haikong's hand: "Dad, I've grown up, I've made something of myself, so you don't have to work so hard anymore. I'll take care of our family from now on!"

As he said this, Lu Wu was deeply moved by his own words.

And he felt like his dad must have been incredibly touched as well, especially since Lu Haikong was squeezing his hand so tightly!

# Chapter 90: 089 Human-shaped Summoned Beast

On the journey home from the train station, Lu Haikong seemed unable to recover from the "surprise" of his son's sudden success.

Sitting in the car, he barely spoke the whole way, his head turned towards the outside, deep in thought.

He seemed to be murmuring something to himself.

But his voice was so soft that Lu Wu couldn't hear it; however, Little Skeleton, who was seated next to him, had better hearing and caught snippets of it.

Phrases like "I've not wronged anyone in Jiangnan, right?" "There shouldn't be a problem, it shouldn't be discovered," and "If it really comes to it, I'll just cut ties with that ungrateful son, take my wife and Ni Ni, and run away" echoed faintly.

Little Skeleton listened for a bit but didn't understand, so he just continued to lower his head and play with his phone.

But it was Little Skeleton playing with his phone that caught the attention of Lu Haikong next to him.

After sizing up Little Skeleton for a bit, he reached out and touched a part of Little Skeleton's framework.

Little Skeleton was caught off guard and a bit unhappy about the sudden touch.

He didn't like being touched by anyone other than Lu Wu, and he wanted to tell Lu Wu that someone had touched his Little Skeleton!

But when Little Skeleton's Pupil Fire met Lu Haikong's gaze, he suddenly felt that being touched wasn't such a big deal; after all, this person seemed to be Lu Wu's own Lu Wu.

So, Little Skeleton lowered its head and continued to look at the phone from the heart.

Lu Haikong, however, didn't make any more moves; after touching Little Skeleton's frame and stroking Little Skeleton's head, he withdrew his hand.

And whether it was because he figured something out or because he had stroked Little Skeleton, Lu Haikong's mood gradually improved afterwards.

By the time they arrived home, Lu Haikong had completely reverted to his usual self.

But whether it was Lu Wu's misconception remained unknown.

He always felt that his old man was picking on him more and more.

Bossing him around, nitpicking everything—from his work attire to his breathing rhythm, Lu Haikong found faults with Lu Wu at every turn.

Lu Wu was so hassled that he began to wonder if he had somehow angered his dad.

But after a second thought, it seemed not?

Upon his own reasoning, Lu Wu figured it might be because he had suddenly achieved something, shaking the foundation of his once nondescript dad, the family pillar.

Plus, his dad probably wasn't great at expressing feelings, which could have led to this situation.

As a result, Lu Wu became even more considerate towards his old man.

This left Lu Haikong particularly frustrated, wanting to find an opportunity to beat up the kid to vent but finding no chances.

Over at Li Ruyu's end.

Because both her son and husband returned, she was in a great mood, bustling with Dudu in the kitchen and quickly conjuring up a lavish meal.

"Oh, right, Dad, here, take this!"

During the meal, Lu Wu suddenly remembered something and took out a bank card to hand over to Lu Haikong.

"What's this? You're starting to contribute to the household expenses?"

"No, I borrowed over ten thousand from you before, didn't I? Here's your money back, there's fifty thousand on this card."

Upon hearing this, Lu Haikong was taken aback, then his face lit up with joy.

Due to certain reasons, the money he could spend at home was limited; he was truly strapped for cash, so having Lu Wu give him fifty thousand was indeed a pleasant surprise.

As soon as he got his hands on the bank card, Lu Haikong began to treasure his son greatly.

But before the card even warmed up in his hand, a coughing sound came from the side, and Lu Haikong's expression stiffened. His first reaction was to turn around and hand the card to Li Ruyu.

Well, it looked like he was going to be eating humble pie again for the next month or two.

"Wife, you better hold onto this money for me."

Li Ruyu took the bank card from Lu Haikong, turned her head to look at Dudu as she said to Lu Wu: "I'll save this money for you, for when you get married!"

Dudu was too embarrassed to speak and kept his head down, eating furiously!

Lu Wu looked at Dudu devouring food and not only didn't stop her, he kept piling more meat onto her plate.

Yeah, the more she eats, the quicker she'll slim down!

Lu Haikong, sitting beside them, watched this scene with a sneer.

Tch, what a jerk!

......

Meanwhile, as Lu Wu's family of five was happily enjoying their meal, the middle-aged man who had been following them was preparing to make a move.

"It's about time to act. Even though the Professional Center probably hasn't noticed anything, we shouldn't drag this out too long to avoid complications."

"Now that their whole family is at home, one of them is a useless man without a Summoned Beast.

A three-year-old child and a housewife pose no threat.

The remaining two are just Summoners who are still wet behind the ears, taking them down quietly will be a piece of cake!"

As he spoke, the middle-aged man called out his Summoned Beast.

It was a Ghost Type Summoned Beast.

Enshrouded in black smoke, its power was unclear, but it looked pretty intimidating.

"Using a Leader 3 stars Summoned Beast against such a group might be overkill.

But to die at the hands of a Summoned Beast of this level, you can die without regrets!"

With that, the middle-aged man waved his hand, issuing an order to his Summoned Beast.

"Go in and kill everyone inside, and bring me back the corpse of that Little Skeleton!"

At his command, the situation seemed all but resolved in the middle-aged man's eyes; all he needed to do now was wait for a matter of seconds to a minute.

However, the situation diverged from what the middle-aged man had anticipated. He had given the order, but his Summoned Beast hadn't moved.

It stood there like a piece of wood, motionless!

The middle-aged man first froze, then panicked, breaking out in cold sweat immediately.

Although he didn't know what was happening, something had definitely gone wrong.

But just as he realized this, before he could react, the sound of footsteps reached him.

The middle-aged man looked up and saw a girl in a white palace dress, holding an ice-blue longsword, walking towards them with a celestial aura.

"Who... who are you?"

At first glance, the middle-aged man really thought the girl was human.

But at the same time, his Summoned Beast kept sending him urgent signals of danger through their soul bond, making him aware that the girl in front of him was not a human at all, but rather a Human-shaped Summoned Beast.

And she was definitely a Lord level or even higher existence.

"How can this be..."

He couldn't finish his sentence when a beam of moonlight shone over and the middle-aged man lost consciousness immediately...

......

On the other hand, over at Dudu's.

After having dinner at Lu Wu's house, her father had called her back home.

He was guarding against Lu Wu more than a thief, making sure to bring his daughter home by 9 PM every night, fearing his "cabbage" might get picked by a "pig."

His worries were purely excessive; Lu Wu wouldn't possibly make a move at this time, as he was waiting for Dudu to drastically slim down.

Yeah, according to Lu Wu's estimate, Dudu's Bonds Skill cooldown should be nearly over, and her energy accumulation nearly complete – she should be able to slim down in the next few days.

Thinking of Dudu slimmed down to her stunning beauty, Lu Wu couldn't help but let out a silly chuckle.

What Lu Wu chuckling to himself didn't notice was that someone was looking at his smiling face and curling their lip...

# Chapter 91: 090 Goblin Warrior

Lu Wu, after sending Dudu back home, made a detour to the community supermarket to buy some alcohol for his dad, and also picked up a notebook to write his diary at home.

Just as he left the supermarket, he ran right into Lin Jianying.

"Good evening!"

Lu Wu's eyes immediately fell on the distinctively large goblin behind Lin Jianying and greeted Lin Jianying, who did not expect to run into him and seemed a bit unnatural.

"Good... good evening!"

Lin Jianying's smile was strained as he responded to Lu Wu.

The goblin behind him immediately raised its eyebrows; it remembered this human. This human was strange, always wanting to touch it.

The goblin didn't like him and really wanted to hit him, but its master had said it could not hit or be rude to people, so it could only hide behind Lin Jianying, hoping Lu Wu wouldn't notice it.

But that was clearly impossible.

As soon as Lu Wu saw the creature, his eyes lit up, "Has your goblin advanced?"

"Hm?"

"Can I touch it?"

No, you can't—don't touch me!

The goblin was very unwilling, but unfortunately, its master thought it was okay.

So, the goblin was pulled in front of Lu Wu, who was allowed to examine it freely.

What made the goblin even more uncomfortable was that not only did Lu Wu touch it, but Little Skeleton from Lu Wu's house also got involved.

...

Name: Goblin Warrior (First Evolution)

Power: three stars (Ordinary)

Quality: Ordinary (Upgraded)

Attribute: Physical

State: Humiliated (The goblin was touched by a weird human again; the goblin feels unclean!)

Skills: Fierce Strike (Master) Charge (Master) Block (Master)

Goblin Sword Strike (Master) Dodge (Master)

Talent: Sword Weapon Mastery

Weakness: Magic

Description: Stop looking; your Little Skeleton wouldn't be able to beat it unless you smash Little Skeleton's phone!

...

Looking at the goblin's attributes, Lu Wu couldn't help but narrow his eyes.

He had to say, every time he saw this goblin, its attributes were different.

The changes this time were particularly significant.

Its three-star strength was only a little away from reaching the Elite Level.

Its shape had already undergone one evolution, and although the quality had dropped to the Ordinary Level due to the shape evolution, this did not affect the goblin's combat power.

After all, quality itself does not have a significant impact on combat power.

It mainly affects the potential of a Summoned Beast, such as the upper limit of strength growth and shape evolution.

If the quality cannot reach the Black Iron Level, it would be incredibly difficult to achieve both the first shape evolution and a breakthrough from an Ordinary foundation to the Elite Level.

And often, the breakthrough in power and shape evolution are linked.

Since the goblin has already evolved into a Goblin Warrior, becoming an Elite Level Summoned Beast should not be difficult for it.

Even, if its quality can be improved further during the next phases of training, it might even undergo a Second Evolution and take another leap in power.

However, at the moment, Lu Wu was more concerned about how the goblin had evolved.

After all, when school started, and Lu Wu touched it, the creature only had one-star strength. In less than two months, it had grown to this extent; could Ye Qingxue really be that amazing?

At the same time, Lu Wu couldn't help but recall the girl with the long legs from earlier today.

At the time, he didn't see a Summoned Beast following the girl. Since Summoned Beasts of Ordinary strength cannot stray too far from their masters, they are usually close by. Since that girl was the class president of the advanced class and her Summoned Beast was not with her, there was only one possibility: the girl's Summoned Beast might already be above Ordinary Level.

"Is your class president's Summoned Beast already at the Elite Level?"

Hmm, with a guess in mind, Lu Wu directly asked the question.

"Mm!"

Seeing Lin Jianying nod, Lu Wu couldn't help but inhale sharply.

"Dammit, it is at the Elite Level; no wonder that girl is so arrogant, even claiming she's got Quan City's provincial competition spot in the bag.

But that's not right, isn't it said that you can only have a Summoned Beast after turning eighteen?

It hasn't been that long since she got her Summoned Beast, has it? How has it already reached Elite Level?

Also, how did you train this goblin? How did it get to three stars in just two months?

What's your level in your class?"

The questions Lu Wu asked were strictly forbidden to be disclosed by the advanced class.

In theory, Lin Jianying shouldn't answer.

But he still did.

"As for our class president's Summoned Beast, it's said that its initial quality had already reached the Bronze Level or above.

Add to that Mr. Ye's assistance, and her family's willingness to invest resources, reaching the Elite Level in a few months isn't difficult."

"The reason my goblin reached three stars is that we spent the past month and a half training in the Secret Realm.

Also, Mr. Ye helped me devise a cultivation plan for the goblin, and I've been strictly following her plan for the past two months."

"As for power, my goblin's strength should currently be in the top ten in our class."

Hearing all this, Lu Wu was dumbfounded on the spot.

He had previously thought the average standard of the advanced class should be similar to Zhang Yunkai.

He hadn't expected their strength to be this formidable; no wonder that girl with the long legs dared to claim she was going to monopolize the provincial competition spots for Quan City.

It turns out the advanced class, or rather Ye Qingxue, really had something special.

It also made him understand why the headmaster of Third High was so obsequious in front of Ye Qingxue.

But immediately after, Lu Wu felt puzzled again.

Ye Qingxue was so capable, clearly not an ordinary person, probably a Big Shot; why would someone like her choose to teach in a small place like Quan City?

And why put so much effort into cultivating the advanced class? What did she really want to achieve?

Intuition told him there must be something there.

But then he thought, whatever it was, it didn't really matter to him.

Why Ye Qingxue came to Quan City wasn't important to him; what was important was that with such a formidable roadblock in front of him, it appeared to be quite difficult for him to enter the provincial competition.

Could it really be necessary to take the college entrance exams in another city?

This thought flashed through Lu Wu's mind, but he quickly snuffed it out.

He was a man of broad mind.

Whether his face got slapped wasn't important; what mattered was that he liked to take the college entrance exams in Quan City.

Then Lu Wu had another brief chat with Lin Jianying and, after obtaining the goblin cultivation method from Mr. Ye, prepared to head home with Little Skeleton to write in his diary.

On Lin Jianying's side.

Watching Lu Wu, carrying stuff and leaving, and looking at the drink stuffed in his arms that Lu Wu said was to treat him, his mood involuntarily lifted.

At that time, another visitor arrived at Lu Wu's house...

# Chapter 92: 091 Divine Origin Fruit

Lu Wu, laden with big and small packages, was preparing to go home and write in his diary, when he pushed open the door, he realized that his diary writing might have to be postponed, because there was an unexpected visitor sitting in his living room.

The person was none other than Zhao Kai Ming, who had come out of concern for his safety.

"Mr. Zhao, what brings you here?"

"Well, well, Dean Zhang asked me to make a home visit and, by the way, to bring you some Divine Origin Fruit."

Lu Wu couldn't tell if it was just his imagination, but he felt that the old man was somewhat nervous, even a bit excited and confused.

Hmm, it must be his imagination; this elder was a Big Shot at the Fu City Professional Center, an absolute bigwig. How could he possibly be nervous in the home of a newbie like him?

While Lu Wu was contemplating this, his old man came over with a cup of tea.

"Here, Teacher Zhao, please have some tea!"

"Ah! How can I trouble you with this!"

Zhao Kai Ming instinctively stood up, meticulously and reverently accepting the tea from Lu Haikong.

Taking a careful sip, Zhao Kai Ming felt as if the whole world had suddenly brightened.

What an honor for himself, his ancestor's graves back to the eighteenth generation must be shimmering with blue smoke— to think that he could drink tea brewed by this esteemed person.

Yes, Zhao Kai Ming decided, he wouldn't drink the rest of the tea. He would surely sneak it home when he left and treasure it as a family heirloom, for it was tea personally brewed by that very individual.

Standing by, Lu Wu felt more and more that something was off.

"Dad, do you know Mr. Zhao?"

"How could I? He's a Big Shot from the Fu City Professional Center. If it weren't for your good fortune, I might never have had the chance to meet such a distinguished person in my entire life.

My son really has made something of himself!"

Lu Haikong replied with a silly grin, but internally he was puzzled. What was going on? Did this elder know him?

That shouldn't be the case; a person of this stature shouldn't be able to recognize him.

"Is that so?"

Lu Wu still felt there was something amiss and couldn't help but surreptitiously glance at Zhao Kai Ming, trying to discern something from his expression.

Usually, Zhao Kai Ming had good control over his emotions, but today he seemed a bit too excited and was actually getting nervous under Lu Wu's gaze.

He was breaking out in a cold sweat, thankful that just then, Li Ruyu came out with a plate of fruit.

"Mr. Zhao, please have some fruit!"

"Oh, there are grapes, my favorite!"

The old man began devouring the grapes ravenously, leaving Lu Wu beside him completely baffled—was the elder really that fond of grapes?

Meanwhile, Lu Haikong's expression changed, now fairly certain that the elder must recognize him, otherwise he wouldn't be acting this way.

"Son, Teacher Zhao is here to discuss your direct admission. The matter is settled, and I've agreed. Go sign the contract and bring it to Teacher Zhao."

Lu Wu suspected that his old man was deliberately trying to send him away.

But without saying a word, he obediently nodded and went into his room.

However, once Lu Wu closed his bedroom door, he did not go to sign any contract. Instead, he sneakily left a crack open and observed the interactions between his old man and Zhao Kai Ming.

Lu Wu always felt there was something off about his old man. He had even suspected previously that the apple Dudu transformed after eating had been provided by his old man.

But since his father had acted impeccably after the incident, Lu Wu gradually dismissed his suspicions. Now, seeing Zhao Kai Ming acting this way, he couldn't help but doubt again whether his old man was secretly a bigwig.

However, while Lu Wu surreptitiously watched, he didn't notice anything out of the ordinary with his old man.

No, there was something off.

He saw his dad bend his waist when he entered the room, and his attitude toward Zhao Kai Ming had changed—it was a stiff kind of ingratiating behavior.

Even more so, Lu Wu had caught his dad slipping Zhao Kai Ming a bank card, and that card was clearly the one with five hundred thousand that Lu Haikong had given him before.

His dad, was he trying to bribe Zhao Kai Ming?

Realizing this, Lu Wu felt somewhat amused and moved at the same time, his nose tingling slightly.

Alas, he was certain now; his dad wasn't any sort of major figure.

After all, what big shot would find it a pain to change their name and live in hiding?

Besides, if his dad really were a big shot, he'd first and foremost be a father.

His dad might not be good at expressing himself, calling him an ungrateful son all the time, but Lu Wu knew he was loved, and if he really were a big shot, his Summoned Beast would definitely not be Little Skeleton—he would surely have given him a cheat in secret.

Lu Wu thought about it, and while he had indeed gotten a cheat, it was his own doing, and his current achievements were the result of his own hard work and effort.

So, his father probably wasn't any sort of major figure.

But although Lu Haikong wasn't a big shot, he was still a towering tree, one that could bend over in unseen places to shelter him from the wind and rain.

Lu Wu closed the door carefully, not daring to look anymore, and turned around to find the contract.

After hurriedly signing the contract, Lu Wu came out and handed it to Zhao Kai Ming.

At this juncture, Zhao Kai Ming had completely resumed his imposing demeanor, nodding in satisfaction as he took the contract from Lu Wu, and then handed him a wooden box.

"I'll keep the contract safe, and from now on, you're guaranteed admission to Jiangnan University.

This is one of the A-class benefits, the 'Divine Origin Fruit.' As for the rest of the rewards, they will be credited directly to your account once you register on the internal network."

"Alright, now that the contract is signed, my business here is basically done, and I should be leaving, Xiao Lu, see me out!"

Actually, Zhao Kai Ming didn't want to leave yet, he wished to stay a while longer, but he had to go.

Before leaving, the old man really sneakily took the cup of tea with him.

And as he pulled Lu Wu out the door, after putting some distance between them, he returned the bank card from Lu Haikong to Lu Wu.

He'd have liked to keep it as a family heirloom, but he didn't dare; Lu Haikong had instructed him to make sure it was returned.

Lu Wu had guessed that Zhao Kai Ming would do this, after all, the man was a big shot and wasn't short that much money.

Holding the bank card, Lu Wu was somewhat moved, feeling that the old man had taken his father's feelings into consideration.

Watching Lu Wu, Zhao Kai Ming also felt a wave of emotion; no wonder the kid was so remarkable, he was actually that person's illegitimate child.

After patting Lu Wu on the shoulder and advising him to study hard, Zhao Kai Ming left.

Of course, Zhao Kai Ming did not leave the residential area.

He found a spot near Lu Wu's house and respectfully waited for 'that person' to come find him.

It didn't take long before Lu Haikong, dressed in pajamas, slippers, and messy hair, came over.

Seeing Lu Haikong, Zhao Kai Ming couldn't help but straighten up, reverence and respect nearly spilling from his face.

"Fu City's Zhao Kai Ming greets..."

Before Zhao Kai Ming could announce Lu Haikong's title, he was pulled by Lu Haikong into the nearby woods...

..........

The story about Lu Haikong is explained in chapter 274.

# Chapter 93: 092 Intranet

Lu Wu had no idea that Zhao Kai Ming, who had just left his house not long ago, was pulled into a small forest by his own father.

At this moment, he was busy registering on the internal network.

Lu Wu was extremely interested in the internal network.

As he understood it, the so-called internal network was specifically designed for Professional Summoners and Professional Cultivators. Of course, ordinary people could also access it, but they needed special permission, like the one he had now.

The internal network was fully functional, featuring trading, socializing, and knowledge among other things. Lu Wu had wanted to register the moment he gained access permissions.

It was just that various things had kept him busy until today when he finally had time to officially log into the internal network and register an account.

As soon as Lu Wu's account was registered, resources belonging to the A-grade privileges were delivered to him.

His account immediately received 550 points and a purchasing permission for a Summoning Beast Skill Training Plan.

...

Account: I Want to Be a Sea King (Lu Wu)

Account Points: 550

Account Voucher: One Skill Training Plan Voucher

Account Level: 0

...

After giving his account a quick glance, Lu Wu officially began his first surfing session on the internal network.

Although it was his first time, Lu Wu's goal for this online session was quite clear.

Little Skeleton had already reached Bronze Quality, and its power had reached 2 stars, so it wasn't far from its first evolution.

Especially after seeing Lin Jianying's goblin evolve, Lu Wu felt he also needed to start preparing for Little Skeleton's evolution, so he needed to gather some knowledge on that.

Another matter was the uploading and verification of the "Little Skull Soup" plan that Zhang Wentao had mentioned earlier.

This was a point-earning opportunity, and Lu Wu prioritized it.

He immediately opened the "Cultivator Innovation Page" and took some time to upload both the "Little Skeleton Training Handbook" and "Little Skull Soup."

[Ding, your two new cultivation plans have been uploaded successfully, and your new plans will now be transferred to the nearest Professional Center for verification. The verification will take approximately three to five working days. Please be patient!]

Lu Wu was not surprised by this or, to put it better, he was mentally prepared for the wait.

However, while he was ready to wait, several messages came in succession.

[Ding, your cultivation plans have been received by the Fu City Professional Center for testing. Please be patient!]

[Ding, the Fu City Professional Center has completed the testing of your two plans and has given plan evaluations and rewards. Please check!]

...

Lu Wu checked the messages, which stated that the Fu City Professional Center had passed the "Little Skeleton Training Handbook" and "Little Skull Soup" for verification and had awarded him.

The reward for the "Little Skeleton Training Handbook" was 50 one-time points, and "Little Skull Soup" was 500 one-time points.

Besides the 550 one-time points.

These two training plans would be listed for sale on the internal network's Summoning Beast Cultivation Plan Page, and Lu Wu would earn fifty percent of the revenue from each sale.

Seeing this, Lu Wu immediately opened the Summoning Beast Cultivation Plan Page and started searching for the term "Little Skeleton."

This search brought up hundreds of cultivation plans.

Lu Wu only realized then that there were so many cultivation plans related to Little Skeleton.

However, upon glancing through these plans, he found that most of them only reached Black Iron Level, and only three made it to Bronze Level, with one of them being his "Little Skull Soup."

He also noticed that the purchase prices for these cultivation plans were not high, most being only 1 point, while his "Little Skull Soup" was among the highest-priced at 10 points.

That is, if someone redeemed a purchase, Lu Wu would earn 5 points.

Lu Wu did the math, counting on his fingers—one 5, ten 50, a hundred would be 500!

With that calculation, Lu Wu felt that striking it rich might not be too far off.

But when he saw that the best-selling cultivation plans related to Little Skeleton amounted to only a few hundred and almost none in Bronze were purchased, the slightly elated heart of Lu Wu fell.

"It seems hoping to strike it rich off the 'Little Skeleton Training Handbook' and 'Little Skull Soup' is still a long shot!

Although there aren't few who summon Little Skeleton, mostly they're from ordinary families like me.

We can't even spend much on summoning, let alone nurturing a Little Skeleton afterward.

Even if occasionally there's someone willing to spend money on nurturing, they won't develop Little Skeleton too high.

After all, the cost-effectiveness of nurturing Little Skeleton is too low, its base quality isn't even up to Ordinary. I had to exploit a loophole, and it still took me nearly half a year to get Little Skeleton to Bronze Quality.

Looks impressive, but in half a year, I simply caught up to others' initial standards.

If that's the case for me, it's even more so for others.

Most of them probably treat Little Skeleton as a transitional Summoned Beast, nurturing it to Elite Level at most to satisfy their spiritual power standard, and then contract a second Summoned Beast before sidelining Little Skeleton."

Utility beasts, use them and throw them away, this is the general view of summoners about Little Skeleton!

"By the way, I now have Divine Origin Fruit; if I eat it, I can contract a second Summoned Beast. Maybe I should also ditch Little Skeleton for a fancier Summoned Beast?"

Although he was joking, in that moment, Lu Wu actually felt a slight temptation.

But he forgot that Little Skeleton could hear him. It might not understand everything he said before, but it definitely understood the latter part.

Upon hearing that Lu Wu might throw it away, Little Skeleton dropped its phone in shock and hurriedly came over to hug Lu Wu.

[Frightened (Lu Wu don't throw away Little Skeleton, Little Skeleton will be good, Little Skeleton doesn't want a phone anymore, will cover Lu Wu with blankets many times every day!)]

"Lu Wu was just joking, Lu Wu won't throw away Little Skeleton!"

Lu Wu didn't expect such a big reaction from the little guy and had no choice but to pat and comfort Little Skeleton.

But as he was patting, Lu Wu suddenly felt something was off.

When he touched the first part of Little Skeleton's skeletal structure, he saw a different attribute.

...

Item: ???

Description: A high-grade unknown item, forcibly stuffed into Little Skeleton's skeletal structure by unknown means.

PS: The specific function is unknown, but it seems to have the ability to harmonize energy. Little Skeleton's "Charging" skill mastery is credited to it.

Well, in other words, it has cheated!

...

"What's this?"

# Chapter 94: 093 Diary

Lu Wu's Diary.

"December 3rd.

Today I signed a contract with Jiangnan University and got my hands on the Divine Origin Fruit.

Also, I registered an intranet account and casually uploaded two new plans, effortlessly earning 550 points.

Sigh, the life of a genius is just so plain and simple.

Also, I found out today that Little Skeleton actually cheated in secret.

It stuffed something inside its skeleton that I can't quite identify, but it seems pretty strong.

I'm somewhat unhappy.

After all, as someone as outstanding and upright as me, I really dislike cheats.

Really, I'm not laughing my head off!!!

I've just decided to properly cultivate and train Little Skeleton, focusing on its ideological development. As Lu Wu's Little Skeleton, how could it even entertain the thought of using cheats?

A beast must be dignified and down-to-earth; only through honest hard work can it have a bright future.

However, I'll hold off on using the Divine Origin Fruit for now. I'll research my second Summoned Beast when I have some time.

Right now, properly training Little Skeleton and establishing the correct skeletal outlook is the priority.

Really, I'm not entertaining thoughts of using an underestimated Little Skeleton to beat all the geniuses and become the champion of the high school league.

Although if that happened, Little Skeleton and I would both become spectacularly famous and it might pique people's intense interest in my methods of cultivating Little Skeleton; I could potentially make a fortune from it.

But that's not what I want!

All I want is to train Little Skeleton properly, and that's all!

In terms of training Little Skeleton, there are currently two key points.

One is Little Skeleton's Evolution issue.

The other is Little Skeleton's Power growth issue.

Regarding Little Skeleton Evolution, I looked up some information (damn it, this stupid network ripping me off, it cost me 1 point just to look something up, and a blink of an eye later, 10,000 was gone).

The information I got shows that currently known first-tier Evolutions for Little Skeleton mainly have three directions.

One is the "Skeleton Warrior", another is the "Skeleton Archer", and the third one is the "Skeleton Mage".

There are quite a few directions for Evolution, but damn it, not one has a stable Evolution plan; all of them evolve through chance coincidences.

Furthermore, due to the nature of Little Skeleton's upbringing, not many Cultivation Masters are specifically researching these Evolutions, so if I want to help Little Skeleton evolve, I have to come up with my own plan.

No other way, I had to spend money again.

I spent 30 points to purchase the Evolution details for these three directions to study.

Hmm, after going through the details of these three Evolution directions, I felt Little Skeleton again and found that its attributes had changed.

The Name now has (Evolution) next to it, but there doesn't seem to be a plan yet, probably because I haven't tried experimenting.

But the cheat can be used, which makes things much simpler (strike this sentence).

(Strike out this whole paragraph!)

With a breakthrough in Evolution, I cannot relax in terms of Power!

After all, for a Summoned Beast, Power is the foundation of everything.

Little Skeleton is now two stars, and goblins are three stars; when it comes to a fight, I have no choice but to smash my phone.

If Little Skeleton were three stars, I could have a lively fight with a goblin without needing to smash my phone.

Moreover, the actual purpose of a Summoned Beast's Evolution is to seek a breakthrough in Power.

Without Evolution, it's almost impossible for the likes of Little Skeleton and goblin to reach Elite Level!

So increasing Power is of the utmost importance; Evolution serves the purpose of boosting Power and Combat Power!

I must not put the cart before the horse and let the pursuit of Evolution hinder the increase in Power.

And if I want to increase Little Skeleton's Power quickly, I must visit a Secret Realm!

Currently, I've spotted several Secret Realms near Quan City that are most suitable for Little Skeleton on the intranet. Damn, they're expensive! The lowest admission fee is 5 points, and the highest even goes into the hundreds!

The most ideal one was a secret realm called "Big Cemetery."

Tickets cost 100 points, and you could stay for a month.

Hmm, if I'm heading to the secret realm, I better take Dudu with me. I wasn't thinking about hitting any peak of attractiveness; I wanted to help Dudu boost Tuantuan's power.

Really, I swear to the heavens!

But if I want to take Dudu with me, the biggest problem I'm facing now is Dudu's Dad!

How am I going to convince Dudu's Dad to let me take Dudu to the secret realm?

Ugh, what if I sneak off with Dudu... Would I get beaten up when I return?

"Bald head!"

...

After finishing this diary entry, Lu Wu lay down, his brow furrowed with worry, and casually swatted a mosquito that had landed on the desk.

It couldn't be helped, the mosquito knew too much.

...

After finishing his diary, Lu Wu went to bed.

Over on the other side, there was Lu Haikong.

He had dealt with Zhao Kai Ming and sent him away just as Lu Wu completed his diary, and now he sat in the living room smoking and drinking.

It was obvious he was troubled.

He ran his fingers through his hair once a minute on average, almost scratching himself bald.

The cause of his distress was the problem with Lu Wu.

"Indeed, a son is born indebted!"

When Lu Wu was young, Lu Haikong found him cute and loveable, but as the boy grew older, Lu Haikong felt more and more of a headache.

The child's personality reminded him of his own younger self, and he looked similar too. Lu Haikong couldn't help but be reminded of his own past, especially when he saw Lu Wu bullying Dudu. That really made his hands itch.

But that was a small issue.

The bigger headache for Lu Haikong was Lu Wu's growth dilemma.

He was already eighteen, and the question was whether to cultivate him or not.

This was a very troubling question. If he cultivated him, the kid would inevitably enter this circle.

Once in, with his background, his traces would be deep, and it was only a matter of time before Lu Wu attracted attention.

And once any of the several, well, maybe a dozen, or perhaps dozens of them discovered him – it was hard to say.

In any case, if even one of them noticed him, Lu Haikong's little family could possibly be exposed, and he didn't dare think about how tragic that chaotic scene would be.

But if he didn't cultivate him, after all, the kid was his son.

So, Lu Haikong was particularly vexed.

And his head didn't just start hurting now; it ached since Lu Wu was in high school, persisting to the present.

While he was still uncertain about whether to cultivate or not and how to cultivate, his rebellious child seemed to be doing well on his own!

In theory, this should be a good thing, but Lu Haikong found it hard to be happy about it.

Because this meant that Lu Wu's entry into this circle was almost an inevitability.

At this point, Lu Haikong was considering whether to push him along.

After a few bottles of liquor and packs of cigarettes, Lu Haikong made up his mind.

"Forget it, I won't do it. Cultivating him would leave deep traces, accelerating exposure. He supposedly has what it takes, so let him spread his wings on his own!

But as for Dudu, with that Bonds Skill, I could sneakily give her a bit of a cheat.

Also, I feel this rebellious child is bound to be exposed sooner or later, so it's best to prepare early. Once the kid is out in the open, I'll immediately take my wife and daughter and run for it.

As for Lu Wu? Hmm, they wouldn't go as far as to kill the kid, right?"

...

Next chapter in five minutes

# Chapter 95: 094 Secret Realm Card

Lu Wu was quite anxious about heading to the Secret Realm.

After all, the high school competition was around March or April next year, and it was already December now, leaving not much time before the commencement of the high school competition.

At most, Lu Wu had only five months left.

Five months seemed long, but the figure he was chasing ran fast!

Currently, his Little Skeleton was only 2-star, while that girl with long legs was already elite.

Given another five months, who knows what level that long-legged girl could reach?

Thus, Lu Wu's heart was filled with urgency, wishing he could dive into the Secret Realm the very next day.

But when the next day actually came, Lu Wu realized he simply couldn't leave.

Because from the early morning the next day, the guests at his house never stopped arriving.

From the Quancheng Cup organizers to his school, to the neighbors he was on good terms with, and also the Professional Cultivators from Quan City, the visitors came in waves.

There was no helping it, yesterday Lu Wu's secrets were completely exposed by that silly Wang Dashan during the competition.

At that time, certain people began to pay attention to Lu Wu.

The Quan City organizers were already investigating and pondering how to resolve Lu Wu's dissatisfaction.

In the beginning, the Quan City organizers didn't consider Lu Wu's dissatisfaction to be a serious matter and didn't take it to heart.

They thought of settling it by casually giving some small gifts.

But then, they heard that Zhao Kai Ming, the big shot from Fu City Professional Center, had paid an overnight visit to Lu Wu's house.

Hearing this news, the Quan City Cup organizers broke out in a cold sweat.

They couldn't figure out the relationship between Zhao Kai Ming and Lu Wu, nor what Zhao Kai Ming's overnight visit was for.

What if he had come to advocate for Lu Wu?

Even if he hadn't come to advocate for Lu Wu, someone making an overnight visit implied no ordinary relationship.

Thus, the high-ups at the Quan City Cup organizers held an overnight meeting and were the first to visit Lu Wu's house early the next morning.

After subtly expressing their apologies, they left Lu Wu with a card.

At first, Lu Wu thought it was a bank card, but later he discovered that what the Quan City Cup organizers had left him was in fact a Secret Realm Card valid for half a year.

The function of this Secret Realm Card was to allow Lu Wu, within half a year, to bring two people in and out of some Secret Realms near Quan City at will.

Clearly, the Quan City Cup organizers had put thought into it, even spilling blood.

What they offered was exactly what Lu Wu needed the most at the moment.

This generous gift caused Lu Wu's impression of the Quan City Cup organizers to soar.

Lu Wu, with his naturally broad-mindedness, outright dismissed the previous incident.

Moreover, Lu Wu even exchanged friend slots with the visiting high-ups and established a harmonious and friendly relationship with them.

After seeing off the visitors from the Quan City Cup organizers, the second batch of guests arrived.

The second batch, or rather, the first batch to rush over, was actually the Hao Zhijian family.

It's just that they bumped into the people from the Quan City Cup organizers, so they let them go in first, and waited for the organizers to come out before they called on Lu Wu.

They intended to come and apologize, but clearly, they underestimated the broad-mindedness of Lu Wu.

Lu Wu was known for his generosity, so how could he take such minor conflicts to heart?

He insisted on proceeding according to proper channels.

The Hao Family was dissatisfied with the transaction, so he refunded their money, and when they slandered his reputation, he reported directly to the Professional Center to let them decide how to handle it!

Conveniently, the third wave of visitors was from the Quan City Cultivator Professional Center, so Lu Wu left the matter to them to resolve.

Afterward, the fourth wave of visitors from his school arrived.

Compared to the first two groups, the people from Spring City Professional Center and the school had simpler motives.

One wanted Lu Wu to join the Spring City Professional Center as an honorary member, while the other came to commend Lu Wu.

Lu Wu graciously declined the former, although there were benefits offered, he truly had no time.

He gladly accepted the latter and took the opportunity to request time off for both himself and Dudu.

Next, he would be heading to the Secret Realm and obviously, attending classes wouldn't be possible.

When Lu Wu said he needed to take a leave of absence, Li Chun, a representative from the school, had a complex expression on her face. Here was a student who had missed almost half a month of classes, had barely returned, and before even attending school, he was asking for one or two months off.

If it had been anyone else, they could have been on permanent vacation, but who was asking but Lu Wu?

Don't look at the fact that Little Skeleton in Lu Wu's family had only 2 stars, in terms of power, he might very well be on par with Lin Jianying, but Lu Wu's status was high!

Super Genius Cultivation Master!

He was highly esteemed by the upper echelons of the Fu City Professional Center and had dozens of Professional Cultivator disciples under him!

With such a status, in Quan City, he was an absolute Big Shot to ordinary folks, even the principal of the No. 3 Middle School had to show enough respect to Lu Wu!

As for the students in the key class, there was no need to say more; they were completely on different levels.

From this point alone, Ye Qingxue had actually already been slapped in the face by him.

When he opened his mouth to ask for leave, how could the school possibly say no? How would they dare to say no?

However, Li Ruyu did have some objections when she heard that Lu Wu was asking for a month or two off, but once she found out that Lu Wu was planning to take Dudu to the Secret Realm, all her objections vanished.

Well, in fact, Li Ruyu didn't know what Lu Wu was going to the Secret Realm for, but as long as Lu Wu and Dudu were going out together, anywhere they went to have fun was fine with her.

Another thing was, with the hustle and bustle of people coming and going today, Li Ruyu had also been busy running around all day.

She was a bit tired, but her mood was still quite delightful.

Because her son had made something of himself!

He had signed a guaranteed admission contract with Jiangnan University yesterday, and today, many people had come to visit and bring gifts.

Although she still hadn't figured out how her son had gone from a little slacker a few months ago to a super student today.

But it didn't matter, as long as her son was successful.

Also, Lu Wu had secretly told her that her son was so accomplished now that he could make tens of millions with ease by just taking in a student.

In the future, Lu Wu would be able to support the family, so there'd be no need for his father to work hard on business trips for two hundred days a year.

Li Ruyu was particularly delighted upon hearing this and after sending the guests away, she eagerly discussed with Lu Haikong about resigning and changing jobs.

Well, at the moment, Lu Haikong's glances at Lu Wu were filled with deep resentment, his hands itching to act.

On another note, Lu Wu, after metaphorically twisting the knife in Lu Haikong, went over to Dudu's house.

Dudu had secretly informed him that Dudu's mother was at home, which for Lu Wu, was an opportunity: to take Dudu to the Secret Realm, today was the best choice.

And indeed, with Dudu's mom at home, things were different, as the hindrance that was Dudu's Dad was easily subdued, and Lu Wu effortlessly won the chance to adventure into the Secret Realm with Dudu.

Thinking of going to the Secret Realm with Dudu, and thinking of Dudu's dramatically thinned-down stunning beauty, Lu Wu couldn't keep the corners of his mouth from turning up.

The next morning, Lu Wu was dragging Dudu off to delve into the Secret Realm...

...

Come on, cast your vote, which path should Little Skeleton take for evolution?

Choose one and comment on the corresponding path.

Mage

Warrior

Archer

Other

# Chapter 96: 095 Underground Cave

In Li Kai's car.

Sitting in the passenger seat, Lu Wuyi was sneezing while looking down at his phone.

On the backseat, Little Skeleton and Dudu, who was holding Tuantuan, sat side by side, their gazes fixed on Lu Wuyi in the passenger seat.

The look in Dudu's eyes was filled with excitement and anticipation, while the emotion flickering in Little Skeleton's Pupil Fire was tinged with resentment.

Ever since the day before yesterday when Lu Wuyi carelessly mentioned getting rid of Little Skeleton, the skeleton had hardly played with its phone these past two days, instead doing all it could to please Lu Wuyi,

fearing that Lu Wuyi might actually throw it away.

But after all, Little Skeleton was just a child of a few months, how could it know how to please someone!

During the day it wasn't too bad, as Little Skeleton's clumsy attempts to please Lu Wuyi by serving tea and water were quite appreciated.

But at night it was a different story!

This little guy seemed to think that covering Lu Wuyi with a blanket was an especially impressive way to please him, and countless times throughout the night, he repeated the gesture.

It was a kind thought, but damn, it was already December, and the weather had cooled down. Because of Little Skeleton's fussing, Lu Wuyi nearly caught a cold.

So, for his own sake, Lu Wuyi revoked Little Skeleton's right to cover him with a blanket.

This caused Little Skeleton to become especially downtrodden!

After all, to it, losing the privilege to cover with a blanket was rounding up to losing the whole world!

Now, seeing Tuantuan being held in Dudu's arms, Little Skeleton felt even more upset.

Although Tuantuan's Lu Wuyi wouldn't buy it a phone, Little Skeleton's Lu Wuyi never held Little Skeleton, either!

It seemed that Lu Wuyi really didn't like Little Skeleton anymore, and its own Lu Wuyi was about to turn into a bad Lu Wuyi!

Maybe soon it would become a Little Skeleton that wasn't wanted by Lu Wuyi at all.

Yeah, ever since Little Skeleton's bones had been stuffed with something, its spiritual wisdom had been growing every day, and now it was downright resentful!

...

Lu Wuyi on the other hand, had no idea of the complex and resentful emotions swirling in his Little Skeleton.

He was currently studying the Secret Realm they were heading to.

Since they were going to the Secret Realm, Lu Wuyi had been researching and investigating the realm over the past few days.

Through his research, Lu Wuyi found that there were different types of Secret Realms.

They could generally be divided into two kinds: those controlled by humans and those not controlled by humans.

And the ones that were open to ordinary people, or non-Professional Summoners, were basically the first type of Secret Realm.

Even the Secret Realms controlled by humans were categorized further, into those fully controlled and those partially controlled.

There were exploration-type Secret Realms, as well as challenge and training-type Secret Realms.

The Secret Realm that Lu Wuyi and his group were headed to that day wasn't the Great Tomb he had previously considered, but a trial-type Secret Realm fully controlled by humans.

This Secret Realm, known as the Underground Cave, was located in the mountains near Quan City and was discovered by a Professional Summoner 50 years ago.

After discovering and conquering this Secret Realm, he sold the location to the Professional Summoner Center.

After acquiring the realm, the Professional Summoner Center modified it to a certain extent, turning it into an entry-level, trial-type Secret Realm for training non-professional characters.

The previous elite class had trained in this Secret Realm with good results, so Lu Wuyi planned to spend some time there first.

"We are going to spend the next half a month in this Secret Realm. Our goal is to have Little Skeleton reach three stars and Tuantuan to reach two stars in this half month!"

That was Lu Wuyi's short-term goal.

After achieving this small goal, he would then consider the matters of the Great Tomb.

But as soon as he mentioned this small goal, Dudu became a bit embarrassed and said, "Well, Tuantuan seems to have become two stars."

Lu Wuyi was startled and immediately inquired about the details, "When? How did the breakthrough happen?"

He was still very interested in the breakthrough aspect of Summoned Beasts, wanting to compile a set of effective breakthrough techniques.

However, Tuantuan's method of breakthrough was clearly of no help to Lu Wu.

"Woke up this morning, and Tuantuan had already broken through. I have no idea how it happened!"

Dudu felt somewhat downcast for not being able to help Lu Wu.

On Lu Wu's end, seeing the dispirited Dudu and then looking at the pig in her arms that ate until it was full and slept when it was tired, he couldn't help but turn and glare at his Little Skeleton.

Look at others, both being beasts, they can eat and sleep and manage a breakthrough, so why can't you?

Little Skeleton, already feeling wronged, felt even more aggrieved after being glared at by Lu Wu.

Plus, for some unknown reason, it was also feeling a bit inclined to punch the pig.

...

After about an hour's drive,

Lu Wu and his group arrived at the Underground Cave Secret Realm.

This was their first visit to a Secret Realm, so they were immediately astonished upon arrival.

Mainly because this Secret Realm differed from what they had imagined.

In their minds, a Secret Realm should have more of a mysterious, fantastical flair. But upon reaching their destination, Lu Wu and company seriously doubted whether Li Kai had taken a wrong turn, bringing them to a shopping mall instead.

It was no wonder Lu Wu and his group were suspicious; the place was just too similar to a shopping mall.

There was an underground parking garage for them to park their cars.

Above the underground parking garage were three floors; the first floor housed a supermarket, restaurant, and various shops.

The second floor contained all kinds of stores similar to Li Kai's general store, along with some recreational facilities--Lu Wu even spotted a movie theater.

The third floor was different; it was an accommodation area, yes, the kind for renting rooms.

After noticing this, Lu Wu discreetly paid attention, then quickly withdrew his gaze.

While Lu Wu and his group were taking in this Secret Realm, or rather, this plaza, Li Kai couldn't help but curl his lip, "Honestly, calling this kind of place a Secret Realm doesn't sit well with me. In my opinion, a place completely controlled by humans and already commercialized can no longer be called a Secret Realm!

At best, it's an expensive training ground.

In a Secret Realm like this, hoping for an adventure is virtually impossible!

Without danger and opportunity, how can this still be considered a Secret Realm!

Such a place, we normally wouldn't even bother with..."

As he spoke, Li Kai suddenly had a brainwave, remembering why he was here, and quickly changed his tone, "However, this place does have its benefits. It excels in safety and comfort, particularly suitable for a graceful and composed Cultivation Master like Mr. Lu!"

Lu Wu remained particularly indifferent to Li Kai's abrupt bout of flattery.

After all, he was only stating the truth; indeed, he was such an elegant and composed Cultivation Master.

But Li Kai's words sounded unpleasant to others.

"Hmph!"

A snooty, arrogant snort came from the side, and when Lu Wu looked up, he saw a pair of long legs...

# Chapter 97: 096 Entering the Secret Realm

Quan City, the square outside the Underground Cave Secret Realm.

As Lu Wu turned his head, he and long legs bumped into each other for the second time.

Their gazes met, and a cold snort accompanied the unnatural expression on long legs' face, an impulse to dodge and avoid Lu Wu's gaze flashed in a moment.

Why such an unusual reaction? Was it because of love?

Of course not!

The unnaturalness on long legs' face was due to Lu Wu's current identity.

Just a few days before, she had treated Lu Wu as an interesting Summoned Beast with ordinary power.

But in a blink of an eye, he had become a Genius Cultivator.

This abrupt shift in identity made long legs remember her own condescending attitude and words towards Lu Wu, and she couldn't help but feel a rush of shame.

That feeling was like an elementary student, with a perfect test score in hand, and an inexplicable sense of superiority, lecturing a high school student about studying hard.

It already showed great restraint on long legs' part not to turn and run away.

Not only did she not run, but when her eyes met his, she even retorted, "Hmph, don't think you're something special just because you're a Cultivation Master. Having Talent in cultivation doesn't mean you have Talent in summoning. What I said before stands!

The quota for advancing to the provincial competition from Quan City belongs to our elite class!

If you don't want to stop at the city competition, you better consider participating in another city!"

With that said, without giving Lu Wu a chance to respond, she turned and left haughtily, her ponytail swinging with each step.

Lu Wu was somewhat baffled, but didn't take it to heart—perhaps she was just having a rough day.

Afterward, under Li Kai's guidance, Lu Wu arrived at the administration office of this very Secret Realm.

They were currently in the square outside the Secret Realm. To truly enter the Secret Realm, one needed to go through the administration office to complete the necessary procedures, pay the requisite fees, and wait for the staff to arrange the entrance time to the Secret Realm.

After all, the Underground Cave was a trial-type Secret Realm.

Due to its small size and limited capacity, it required the staff to make arrangements.

Normally, one would have to wait at least half a day in queue, and it was possible to wait for several days if luck was not on your side.

Fortunately, Lu Wu had brought a Secret Realm Card with him.

A Secret Realm Card issued by the Summoner Center grants priority access within all Secret Realms under the center's control.

After presenting his card, not only did the administration office quickly process Lu Wu's paperwork, but they also arranged accommodations for him.

When the staff member asked Lu Wu how many rooms they needed to arrange, Lu Wu hesitated for a while before settling on two rooms (Li Kai would not stay in the Secret Realm; he would return after seeing them to the administration office).

Having sorted out their lodging, the organizers then ushered Lu Wu into a VIP room to wait for half an hour.

During their wait, a staff member explained to Lu Wu and company the important points to note upon entering the Underground Cave.

"The Underground Cave Secret Realm has been modified by the Cultivation Center, ensuring high levels of safety. Before you enter, we will provide you with a Secret Realm Bracelet.

Should you encounter danger within the Secret Realm, or have a special circumstance that requires you to leave, simply click the exit button on the bracelet.

The exit button is set to a fingerprint lock, requiring one second of pressing to activate, minimizing the embarrassment of accidental touches.

Additionally, the bracelet has tracking and recording functions.

It will accurately record your performance within the Secret Realm and assign you a corresponding score.

If your score reaches a certain standard within the Secret Realm, or you break a record, you will receive a reward from us, and your name will stay on the Secret Realm scoreboards until someone surpasses you..."

The staff member spent nearly half an hour explaining the details about the Secret Realm to Lu Wu and company.

The more Lu Wu listened, the more he felt like he was playing an online game.

Especially the scoring feature, Lu Wu realized how much effort had been put into it.

There were many channels to acquire points, including time spent in the Secret Realm, the number and power of defeated Summoned Beasts, and the number of levels cleared within the Secret Realm.

All of these factors influenced point acquisition!

Additionally, Lu Wu noticed that after entering the Secret Realm, the Summoned Beasts that summoners encounter matched the level of their own Summoned Beasts.

And the points earned for defeating those Summoned Beasts were the same.

This meant that ordinary One Star summoners earned points at a rate not far off from Elite Level summoners.

This made all entrants to the Secret Realm stand on an even playing field and resulted in the possibility of ordinary Summoner's scores exceeding those of Elites on the leaderboard.

Furthermore, the top one hundred on the leaderboard were rewarded, with higher ranks receiving better prizes!

The one who ranked first even got to choose a Summoning Stone as a prize.

This greatly drove the players' desire to compete on the leaderboard, a tactic reminiscent of online gaming marketing.

Speaking of the leaderboard, as soon as Lu Wu heard about it, he specifically went to take a look.

He discovered that it featured many faces from the elite classes, with Lin Jianying ranked at 86, while the long legs girl ranked ninth.

Well, Lu Wu managed to recognize her despite not knowing her name because of the photos on the leaderboard.

Seeing long legs' photo, Lu Wu also chanced upon her name—Ye Ruhuo!

"So cocky, I thought you would be more impressive. Making a fuss and ending up only ninth? Well, I'll set a small goal then—claim the first place!"

Looking at the leaderboard, Lu Wu couldn't help but boast a little.

Right after he said that, a familiar snort rang out again. Lu Wu turned his head but didn't see long legs; just a swishing ponytail.

Clearly, he'd been caught in the act.

Now things were awkward—if he didn't take first place, where would he put his face when they next met?

Just then, a notification sound came from the Secret Realm Bracelet on Lu Wu's wrist, signaling the start of the Secret Realm.

"Let's go, I haven't been to a so-called Secret Realm before!"

Lu Wu grabbed Dudu's hand, and the two hurried towards the entrance of the Secret Realm.

At the gate, Lu Wu encountered long legs again, clearly she was among those entering the Secret Realm in this batch.

Lu Wu didn't pay much mind, but the girl seemed very displeased to see Lu Wu holding Dudu's hand.

Another cold snort, another turn, leaving Lu Wu with the view of a solitary ponytail.

Lu Wu couldn't care less about the girl and approached the staff.

"Please choose your mode: solo, duo, or team?"

"Duo mode!"

"Duo mode selected successfully, have an enjoyable trial!"

After going through the simple process, Lu Wu and Dudu were led through a gate, and with one step, they were inside the Secret Realm...

# Chapter 98: 097 Competent Little Skeleton

If you were to ask Lu Wu what it felt like to enter the Secret Realm for the first time,

his answer could only be: Dark!

This "Underground Cave" Secret Realm was especially dark.

Even though there were torches at intervals inside the cave, the light was still insufficient, and the dark atmosphere was heavy.

Lu Wu was okay, but Dudu was having a tough time adjusting.

She was naturally timid and needed a light on to sleep at night. In such an environment, if Lu Wu hadn't been holding her hand all the time, she could have burst into tears by now.

As they entered the Secret Realm, the program on their Secret Realm Bracelets was activated, and a series of information immediately appeared on the bracelet.

"Welcome two contestants to the Trial Type Secret Realm created by the Summoner Center.

As both of your Summoned Beasts are Ordinary 2-star, you are currently on the second level of the Secret Realm.

Each defeated Summoned Beast earns you 1 point, every 100 meters traveled adds 5 points, and every 30 minutes of stay adds 10 points (up to a maximum of 180 minutes).

Defeating the guardian boss earns you 50 points, and entering the third level earns 50 points.

…

"

After scanning the information briefly, Lu Wu focused on the last part highlighted in red font—[No killing of Summoned Beasts inside the Secret Realm without a valid reason]—and then he stopped paying attention, grabbing Dudu's hand.

"Let's go, Dudu, let's level up by fighting monsters!

Don't worry, I'm here, I'll protect you!"

Dudu was easy to coax. With one pull from Lu Wu, one reassuring sentence, and she was no longer scared.

Nodding her head, she somewhat hazily followed Lu Wu as they stepped out of the safety zone of the Secret Realm entrance.

No sooner had they left the safety zone, barely having steadied their footsteps, than a whizzing sound rang out, and a mass of spikes came hurtling towards them.

Caught off-guard, Lu Wu's face turned pale. Before he could react, a pig from Dudu's family suddenly leapt out of her arms, then grew gigantic, using its rear to block the wave of spikes.

It saved Lu Wu and the others, casting a disdainful glance at Lu Wu.

Damn it, he was being scorned by a pig!

Lu Wu erupted in rage: "Little Skeleton! You..."

"Smack!"

With a series of cracking sounds, the Little Skeleton next to Lu Wu vanished.

Lu Wu looked again and saw his own Little Skeleton wielding a bat, ferociously thrashing a hedgehog-type Summoned Beast. The beating was harsh.

Red alarms went off on Lu Wu's Secret Realm Bracelet. If the beating continued, the hedgehog was going to succumb, and Lu Wu would be penalized and fined.

After all, the monsters inside this type of Trial Secret Realm were someone's personal property.

Lu Wu hurriedly told Little Skeleton to stop.

But Little Skeleton wasn't very obedient at the moment; even after being told to stop, it had to hit a few more times.

It was evident that the little guy was really angry.

Though his owner, Lu Wu, was becoming bad Lu Wu, for Little Skeleton, both good Lu Wu and bad Lu Wu were its Lu Wu, and it absolutely wouldn't allow anyone to hit its Lu Wu.

Holding onto Little Skeleton and feeling its huffy mood, Lu Wu's anger dissipated, and he stroked its head while explaining,

"The Summoned Beasts here won't harm me. Our Secret Realm Bracelets have protection features. Even if we get hit, we only lose our trial qualification.

And also, it's not a bad guy. Don't hit them so hard when you meet other Summoned Beasts next time, okay?"

Lu Wu's words weren't completely understood by Little Skeleton, but it still nodded.

It didn't know what exactly it was nodding at, but as long as it did, Lu Wu would be happy, would pet Little Skeleton, and Little Skeleton would be happy too.

As for what would happen the next time they encountered a similar situation? Little Skeleton indicated it would still thrash them ruthlessly!

While Lu Wu was still petting it, naturally, the little one's thoughts were noticed by him.

His hands were a bit itchy at the time, but upon rethinking, this Secret Realm was a special case, fully controlled and commercialized with no danger. The upcoming trip to the Big Cemetery would be a different story.

At that point, in the Big Cemetery where real battles would occur, it would be a matter of life and death, and Little Skeleton's mentality was actually the most appropriate.

With this in mind, Lu Wu decided not to correct him. Just needed to make sure Little Skeleton didn't hit too hard and kill someone else's Summoned Beast when fighting.

"Come on, let's continue!"

After petting Little Skeleton a couple of times, Lu Wu took Dudu by the hand and continued their exploration or rather, trial in the Secret Realm.

With the experience of having been attacked, they adapted their formation,

Little Skeleton led the way upfront while Tuantuan went back to its mini form and was held in Dudu's arms.

The two of them with two beasts walked leisurely through the realm.

Since this was only their first challenge, Lu Wu had no ambitions for a high score yet.

He took the first time as a chance for experience and information gathering, while casually training Little Skeleton and Tuantuan.

Ah, was there some misunderstanding in the order of things?

Never mind, let it be!

Little Skeleton, having just seen Lu Wu attacked, was extra vigilant now while scouting ahead.

It would rush forth at the smallest sign of trouble, stick ready to strike first.

It was overly nervous, but the problem was, its first few hits were accurate, even knocking down a Summoned Beast, stunning Lu Wu.

Lu Wu, not expecting such competence from his own Little Skeleton, praised him for a good while.

It wasn't a problem until Lu Wu praised him—that caused trouble.

Little Skeleton had already been feeling nervous and resentful, afraid that good Lu Wu would turn bad, afraid that Lu Wu would abandon him.

Now seeing Lu Wu praising him, Little Skeleton suddenly felt the world was wonderful again.

Bad Lu Wu was turning back into good Lu Wu.

And its clever little mind wondered—how did bad Lu Wu turn into good Lu Wu?

By being competent!

It was because Little Skeleton was competent!

Lu Wu had just praised it, praised Little Skeleton for being competent!

So, to turn bad Lu Wu good, Little Skeleton had to be even more competent!

With that thought, the little guy was exceptionally motivated.

Holding the Electric Bat in the front, whenever it sensed something off, the little guy would swing wildly.

Then, the facilities in the cave suffered. Torches, walls, stones...

Little Skeleton was on point with its hits; wherever it went, nothing remained intact.

After walking for less than ten minutes, not many Summoned Beasts were incapacitated, but Little Skeleton was exhausted, both its Electric Bat and the thunder energy inside it nearly depleted.

Yet, that wasn't the worst part. Its actions had caused quite a commotion.

The surrounding Summoned Beasts were immediately attracted to it, and thus, not even fifteen minutes into the Secret Realm, Lu Wu was surrounded by dozens of Summoned Beasts and was forced to press the button to exit the realm.

And coincidence had it that Long Legs was a bit sluggish today, taking over twenty minutes to enter the realm. As one left and the other entered, they ran into each other.

The two exchanged a look, creating a slightly awkward atmosphere.

The girl paused, then scoffed.

That scoff meant only one thing:

That's it? That was quick!

# Chapter 99: 098 Half a month

Underground Cave entrance!

When Lu Wu locked eyes with the long-legged lady, she gave a disdainful 'hmm' and immediately, Lu Wu's face darkened.

Who's being called fast, short, and soft?

Who are they talking about?

Do you think he'd whip it out right there to prove them wrong?

Unfortunately, Lu Wu only had the chance to scowl but no chance to prove anything.

With a particularly joyful sneer, the lady arrogantly turned around and strutted into the Secret Realm with her ponytail swaying.

This really put Lu Wu in a bad mood, causing him to turn and glare at Little Skeleton!

However, Little Skeleton was completely oblivious to Lu Wu being upset; it was still excited.

It wasn't good at reading people's moods, which it often got wrong. When it noticed Lu Wu looking, it immediately came over, its Pupil Fire flickering.

Is Little Skeleton impressive? Is Little Skeleton capable?

Is bad Lu Wu turning good? Is he not throwing Little Skeleton away anymore? Is he going to embrace Little Skeleton now?

Little Skeleton saw that Lu Wu hugged Tuantuan!

Seeing the little guy's state, Lu Wu's anger dissipated.

He patted Little Skeleton a couple of times to soothe it.

Afterward, Lu Wu went to the office with his card and lined up. This time he didn't skip the queue but opted for a normal half-day wait.

After all, Little Skeleton had just used up almost all its energy in a single escapade; he needed to charge it and also utilize the half-day to achieve something else.

Such as digesting the gains from the first ten minutes in the Secret Realm and planning for the second visit.

He could also spend some time training Little Skeleton and Dudu.

Yes, Dudu also needed training, but certainly not that kind of improper training.

Bringing out Dudu into the Secret Realm was meant to enhance the Summoned Beast's power, while entrance exams aside from the Summoned Beast needed an academic evaluation.

He brought Dudu out, hence he naturally had to take responsibility and handle the academic aspect as well.

Additionally, Lu Wu planned to allocate some time to research strategies for improving Little Skeleton's Quality and its Evolution options.

Subsequently, Lu Wu spent some time to create a schedule for his stay in the Secret Realm.

This small but dense timetable spanned from 6 a.m. to midnight, nearly every hour accounted for.

It was an incredibly efficient and packed schedule.

Only after filling out this timetable did Lu Wu realize, if he followed this plan, even if Dudu lost weight, he himself wouldn't have time, well, to accompany her.

This left Lu Wu puzzled, as both being men, why couldn't he find time to accompany a girl, yet someone else could plan group activities?

Could it be that he really lacked a playboy's talent?

"It seems I'm just like my dad, deep down a loyal and devoted good man!"

However, the same timetable had a completely different impact on Dudu.

While Lu Wu worried about having no time to accompany her, Dudu felt the timetable was filled with her presence.

Twenty-four hours a day, excluding the six for sleep, the remaining 18 hours were both of them together.

Dudu felt utterly blissful upon seeing this.

So, the question arises!

For the same schedule, two people ended with two completely different attitudes—where exactly did the problem lie?

Hmm, that's a question!

But regardless, with the appearance of the schedule, Lu Wu's mystical training in the Secret Realm officially began.

Every day, besides one trial in the Secret Realm each morning and evening.

Lu Wu and Dudu spent most of their time in the corner of the ground floor restaurant.

Strategic planning strictly followed a set timetable.

Such days passed for Lu Wu and his companions for two weeks.

These two weeks were incredibly fulfilling for Lu Wu, whether in terms of his Summoned Beasts' power improvement or his own knowledge enhancement, Lu Wu made substantial progress.

He was grateful more than once that he had chosen to come to this Secret Realm first, not the Big Cemetery.

Although this particular Secret Realm had been heavily commercialized and was not considered a true Secret Realm by veteran Summoners like Li Kai,

for Lu Wu, this completely controlled, commercialized Secret Realm was the most fitting.

Not only did the Trial's intensity suit Lu Wu's Summoned Beasts, but the environment also suited Lu Wu himself.

Here, completely commercialized and comfortable, as long as one had money, there was food to eat, clothes to wear, and good accommodation conditions that fully met Lu Wu's living needs.

With all his needs met in life, Lu Wu's learning efficiency naturally greatly improved.

In less than half a month, Lu Wu had made all the knowledge from the "Classification of Little Skeleton" his own.

He even further perfected "Little Skull Soup," upgrading it to version 6.0.

Additionally, in terms of Little Skeleton's Evolution, Lu Wu also had some ideas.

Although there were no concrete plans for (Evolution) yet, Lu Wu believed that as soon as he started experimenting, a plan would surely emerge.

In terms of the power of his Summoned Beasts,

Little Skeleton and Tuantuan had both made significant progress over the past half month.

Both had nearly reached a 3-star level. In fact, by this time, Lu Wu could have started trying to smash his phone to stimulate Little Skeleton to level up.

But Lu Wu did not, he held back because he was saving up his Big Move.

This Big Move was being saved up for the "Hengheng Monster"!

Yes, over the past two weeks, the playboy girl had successfully changed her nickname to "Hengheng Monster" in Lu Wu's circle.

The main behavior of the "Hengheng Monster" was, every time they met, a mandatory "heng."

With the exception of the first day, she didn't speak a word to Lu Wu, and all communication was replaced with a "heng."

In the restaurant, "heng"!

Under the score board, "heng"!

Early in the morning seeing Lu Wu and Dudu in the restaurant, "heng"!

At eleven or twelve o'clock at night, seeing Lu Wu and Dudu still in the restaurant, she would also "heng"!

If Lu Wu hadn't heard this girl speak before, he would have suspected whether she was an emotionless machine that only knew how to "heng."

But honestly, having stayed in the Secret Realm for two weeks,

seeing her every time he looked up or looked down, especially over this past week, he bumped into her every day at the restaurant.

Facing the "Hengheng Monster," Lu Wu actually found her quite tolerable.

She might be a bit arrogant and liked to "heng" a bit, but he felt she wasn't a bad person.

Of course, Lu Wu would definitely not admit that the change in perception was because his own Dudu had not transformed yet, and he frequently saw this girl thinking she looked quite nice.

Moreover, even if he felt this girl was not too bad, it did not prevent Lu Wu from planning his Big Move against her.

As Lu Wu knew, the elite class had already left this Secret Realm to train elsewhere, as training here was quite expensive. Her reason for staying an extra half a month was to rise on the leaderboard.

She wanted to take the first place on the leaderboard.

Over the half month, she had made not small progress and had advanced from ninth to second place, not far from the first.

Without any surprises, she would reach the first place today.

The broad-minded Lu Wu was saving his Big Move for today.

Calling him short? Calling him weak? Calling him quick?

Today, Lu Wu would prove to her and let her know what a real man was like!

# Chapter 100: 099 Rushing the Charts

December 19

Quan City, next to the leaderboard at the entrance of the Underground Cave Secret Realm.

Many people had come early in the morning to find a spot to sit nearby.

They were all here to witness history being made, because they knew that today, someone was going to challenge for the top spot on the leaderboard.

And the challenger was a particularly beautiful girl, which of course piqued the interest of the crowd!

Amidst the onlookers, long legs haughtily swayed her ponytail as Hengheng Monster made her grand entrance with her Summoned Beast.

It must be said, despite the slew of messy nicknames Lu Wu had given this girl,

she was indeed beautiful and had a special aura about her; her appearance captured everyone's attention.

Hengheng Monster disliked this kind of atmosphere and these kinds of gazes, her face remaining stern, and when she saw Lu Wu under such scrutiny, she tossed her ponytail even more haughtily with a disdainful snort.

At that moment, Lu Wu was displeased.

'What's with the attitude, think you're so pretty? My wife isn't slim yet, but when she is, she'll be much more beautiful than you!'

Well, even though he grumbled internally, his gaze never left her as he watched Hengheng Monster with the long legs and ponytail step into the Secret Realm.

What Lu Wu didn't notice was that, by his side, Dudu had already devoured several buns at that time.

She was eating ferociously!

Yep, these past few days, Dudu's appetite had only grown.

But for some reason, no matter how hard she tried, she just couldn't slim down.

Moreover, her weight seemed to have solidified, stubbornly sticking around 180, neither going up nor down.

This really frustrated both Dudu and Lu Wu.

Their worries were different though; Dudu was purely anxious, especially seeing Hengheng Monster, which always made her increase her eating speed without saying a word.

Being not so clever, she could think of no other solution. This was her only idea.

However, it was ineffective, and she often ended up working herself into a frenzy.

While eating, she would often end up with red-rimmed eyes, and without letting Lu Wu notice, she'd secretly wipe away her tears each time.

This time was no different; she had tried so hard, having already eaten a hundred buns since morning, but still felt it wasn't enough, she wasn't satisfied, and the feeling needed to trigger the "Skill" was nowhere to be found.

Seeing Lu Wu's gaze following the long legs, Dudu got even more anxious and refrained from saying anything, so she just kept eating while her eyes reddened again.

All she could do was lower her head, quietly wiping away her tears while stuffing buns into her mouth.

Just when the poor girl was feeling all miserable, a pair of hands reached out and cradled her face.

The slow-reacting Lu Wu finally noticed Dudu crying, witnessing her tear-filled eyes. Being smart, he instantly guessed why the girl was crying.

"Crying, huh? Are you anxious because you can't slim down? Don't worry, I'm here, I promise I'll help you slim down!

When our Dudu slims down, she'll be a thousand, no, ten thousand times prettier than that Hengheng Monster!"

Clearly, Lu Wu had not grasped the real reason for Dudu's tears.

But no matter what, the fact that he cradled her head and helped her wipe her tears meant a lot to Dudu.

Her mind went completely blank, and the tears just wouldn't stop flowing.

Obviously, these were different from the tears she shed earlier, but Lu Wu, with his playboy heart yet poor emotional intelligence, couldn't understand the difference. He was just overwhelmed seeing Dudu's unstoppable tears.

After a flurry of panicked actions, he gritted his teeth and took out the "Divine Origin Fruit" he always carried, handing it to Dudu.

"How about you eat this, then? I've been focusing on training Little Skeleton lately and don't really need a second Summoned Beast. If you eat it, maybe you'll finally slim down!"

Actually, Lu Wu had been pondering for some time whether Dudu's inability to gain weight was because of that one apple before?

He felt that Dudu couldn't activate her skill because she lacked sufficient energy.

And the accumulation of energy wasn't something that could be solved by eating alone, or at least not by eating ordinary food.

Previously, Dudu had activated her skill, likely because of that one apple.

Or rather, it was the energy of the apple, and now that she didn't have that, she naturally couldn't slim down.

In that case, to get Dudu to slim down, she would have to eat a similar apple.

Lu Wu didn't have similar apples, but he did have a Divine Origin Fruit.

Seeing Dudu cry so fiercely, Lu Wu had no choice but to bring out the Divine Origin Fruit.

Little did he know that once he took it out, Dudu cried even more fiercely.

Lu Wu was truly at a loss and could only hold the girl gently, stroking her head.

This scene was witnessed by the people around them.

They didn't think much of it, as they were just bystanders, and at most felt that Lu Wu and Dudu didn't quite match in appearance, but it must be true love to behave like this!

What was fatal was that Little Skeleton also saw this.

When it saw Dudu's Lu Wu crying, and then her Lu Wu holding her and stroking her head,

In that moment, Little Skeleton felt as if a door to a New World had opened.

So crying gets you hugs!

Little Skeleton was extraordinarily excited!

Its Pupil Fire shimmered, as it brainstormed how to get hugs through crying.

Lu Wu, completely unaware of his Little Skeleton's thoughts, did know what Tuantuan was thinking.

Tuantuan: "Angry (Why are you two squeezing me in the middle? Trying to suffocate a pig?)"

In the midst of the pig's frantic wiggling, Lu Wu could only helplessly let go of Dudu.

And when Lu Wu let go of Dudu, the wiggling Tuantuan suddenly stiffened.

For some reason, it suddenly felt like its owner had the delusion of turning it into a roast suckling pig.

Hmm, it must be false, Tuantuan's owner is so gentle, so loving towards Tuantuan, he surely wouldn't eat Tuantuan!

Whether Dudu would eat the pig was unclear, but she would not eat the Divine Origin Fruit.

She clearly knew the value of this thing, so once her emotions stabilized after Lu Wu handed it to her, she gave the Divine Origin Fruit back to Lu Wu.

Though usually very obedient towards Lu Wu, Dudu was quite firm and had a strong stance on this matter.

Not eating means not eating!

Unable to do otherwise, Lu Wu could only take the Divine Origin Fruit back.

After that, Lu Wu, uncharacteristically not studying, sat next to Dudu, pulling her hand while waiting for the Hengheng Monster to climb the rankings and speaking quietly to Dudu.

It was a rare moment of relaxation.

Two hours later, the doors of the Secret Realm opened, and the slightly disheveled Hengheng Monster came out.

The first thing she did was to check the leaderboard near the gate of the Secret Realm to confirm that Ye Ruhuo was already in first place, then turned to Lu Wu and proudly snorted.

Just as she was about to run off after her usual snort, Lu Wu, who had rested for two hours, stood up and stopped her.

"Hengheng Monster, are you going to claim your award? Wait for me, let's go together in a moment!"

Saying that, without waiting for the 'Hengheng Monster' to respond, Lu Wu stood up, taking Little Skeleton with him as he walked into the Secret Realm…

# Chapter 101: 100 fastest recommendations

Lu Wu had waited half a month to make his big move, which was naturally to climb up the rankings.

In the past half a month, Lu Wu had been quite busy.

He had been working diligently for 18 hours a day, and his brain was almost worn out.

Outside the Secret Realm, he studied; inside, his mind never stopped turning.

For half a month, twice a day, each session lasted about half an hour to an hour.

That is to say, Lu Wu had spent nearly two days inside the Secret Realm.

For an ordinary person, staying in the Secret Realm for two days might not be much different from staying for twenty days.

But for someone like Lu Wu who had a photographic memory and a quick-thinking brain, the situation was drastically different.

In those two days, Lu Wu had gathered all the information he wanted.

"The so-called ranking rush in the Secret Realm can be seen as playing an instance in a game.

And with games, naturally, there are guides.

Even if there are no forums to find guides for this game, as long as I have enough information, I can create the best guide to clear it!"

The broad-minded Lu Wu never fought uncertain battles!

So, he had just stepped through the gate of the Secret Realm, entered the second layer of the Underground Cave, and Lu Wu started his performance.

This time he had chosen the solo mode, so it was just him and Little Skeleton.

There was no need to follow one after the other; after figuring out where he was, they walked side by side.

They moved quickly because he didn't want to linger on the second layer.

"Climbing the rankings is about scoring points, and there are three rules: combating monsters, walking distance, and time spent. Among all these, storming through the levels is undoubtedly the best way to score points.

Defeating the end-of-level boss and entering the third layer will yield a large number of scoring rewards.

Once in the third layer, combating the monsters there will also award crossing-class combat bonuses!

So there's no need to linger on the second floor!"

Everyone in the rankings understood this principle, but the problem was how to avoid staying at the second layer, or rather, the initial level?

This challenge had stumped many people!

After all, each level of the cave was vast, the environment complex, and there were Summoned Beasts lying in wait.

Moreover, each entry point was different every time, and under various factors, it was extremely difficult to quickly pass the initial level. Even the luckiest ones would take over half an hour to advance.

But this challenge was not a problem for Lu Wu.

Because he had memorized all the terrains of the second layer and the active hiding areas of all the Summoned Beasts.

This was the natural cheat code that players with photographic memories brought to this kind of game.

If he wanted to, he could easily avoid these Summoned Beasts.

Indeed, Lu Wu led Little Skeleton forward swiftly. They encountered no obstacles and arrived at the second layer's end boss within five minutes.

Here, Lu Wu faced his second challenge.

Finding the end boss of the initial level was a challenge, and defeating it was also a challenge.

Unfortunately, this challenge was not a problem for Lu Wu either.

Over the past half a month, he had repeatedly toyed with this boss.

Lu Wu even knew all the attributes of this boss.

...

Name: Earth Hedgehog

Power: three stars

Quality: Black Iron

State: Depressed (Why has this human come again?)

Skills: Fury (Master), Thorny Rain (Master), Drilling (Master), Dust Eruption (Master)

...

Seeing Lu Wu and Little Skeleton approach, the Earth Hedgehog was particularly depressed, having seen Lu Wu almost daily in recent days.

Being tormented by them so much, it was upset to see Lu Wu again.

Without a word, it started to gather its strength, intending to attack as soon as Little Skeleton stepped into its attack range.

One step, two steps, three steps...

Just as Little Skeleton was about to enter its attack range, the Earth Hedgehog was very pleased and ready to strike, but then Little Skeleton stopped just before entering.

The Earth Hedgehog was confused, asking silently, "What are you stopping for? Come over here!"

But Little Skeleton just wouldn't move, standing there still.

This left the Earth Hedgehog quite exasperated, as holding back its power was tiring!

Having no choice, the Earth Hedgehog tried to provoke Little Skeleton, but to no avail, it had to release its stored power to maintain its energy.

However, just when it relaxed, Lu Wu gave the command.

"Now! Attack!"

At Lu Wu's command, Little Skeleton charged forward. The Earth Hedgehog couldn't react in time and only managed to release a wave of "Thorny Rain" to block, but Little Skeleton simply ignored the thorns as it couldn't hurt him anyway.

In an instant, Little Skeleton reached the Earth Hedgehog, stabbed with the bat, then scooped it up into the air, and started a furious barrage of hits with the baseball bat, achieving several combos—thus, the boss was defeated.

Lu Wu's Secret Realm Bracelet promptly beeped a notification.

[Ding, you have successfully defeated the second layer's end boss, you have earned 50 points, current points: 50!]

Lu Wu didn't bother with it and directly led Little Skeleton into the third layer.

As Lu Wu and Little Skeleton stepped into the third layer, the Secret Realm Bracelet chimed again.

[Ding, you have successfully entered the third layer, stay for twenty minutes, and you will gain 50 points.]

Lu Wu still ignored this. As he entered the third layer, he did not start moving immediately.

Instead, he observed the surroundings in the safe zone and then started to think.

At this moment, Lu Wu was organizing the strategy for the third layer.

Yes, the strategy for the third layer!

Although Lu Wu had never been to the third layer himself, he was able to gather information about it.

During the day, he usually stayed in the restaurant to study. The restaurant was frequented not just by him, but other Summoners were present too, including many ordinary three-star ones.

They would chat after their runs, from which Lu Wu could gather quite a bit of information; not to mention, sometimes he would use his appearance to get close to girls and extract information.

Half a month was enough for him to collect the data on the third layer.

His brilliant mind took just a glance in the safety zone, and with his eyes closed, he visualized the rough map of the third layer and some details about the Summoned Beast distribution using the information he had, based on the prototype of the second-layer cave.

And quickly formulated a strategy for his next moves.

"Let's go, if my information is correct, there is suitable terrain fifty meters ahead that suits our plan!"

After saying that, Lu Wu started moving again; this time, however, he didn't lead but followed behind Little Skeleton, as his confidence in the third layer wasn't as strong as in the second!

# Chapter 102: 101 Monster Spawning

Underground Cave Third Floor.

As Lu Wu moved forward alongside Little Skeleton, he analyzed the current situation and explained his upcoming plans.

"According to the intel we've gathered, the third floor of the Underground Cave has four types of Summoned Beasts.

They are the Rock Snake, Earthman, Little Rock, and a type of rodent.

All four Summoned Beasts are three stars and their power levels are quite similar, but the Rock Snake and Little Rock present a tougher challenge for you; their defense is too high, making them too exhausting to defeat through normal means. The only way to beat them is with electricity.

But the bit of electricity you have is what I was planning to save for the boss battle, so we can't use it!

As for the Earthman, it's also a troublesome Summoned Beast and not easy to fight!

That means the only opponent suitable for us to choose is the rodent!"

"So what we need to do now is find a proper place to lure the monster. We'll lure and farm it while accumulating Experience Points for you.

Once your Experience Points are full, I'll smash my phone for you to level-up, then we'll go find the third floor's boss. At that point, I'll smash another phone, you unleash your Big Move and sweep the boss."

As Lu Wu spoke, Little Skeleton nodded his skull.

In reality, it didn't understand a word Lu Wu was saying but it knew that nodding made Lu Wu very happy, and when Lu Wu was happy, so was it.

Lu Wu, on his part, didn't really expect the little guy to understand.

He patted the little guy, knowing it was a bit slow, and talking about these things served more to ease his own nerves.

After all, this was his first time venturing into an instance alone, and although he had become familiar with the second floor, entering the third floor was still rather foreign to Lu Wu, making him slightly nervous.

But he was fairly courageous and quickly adjusted his state.

The duo, a man and a skeleton, soon arrived at the designated spot.

Under the light of nearby torches, the place where Lu Wu stood could be seen as an intersection with multiple branches leading in various directions.

In the center of the junction, there was a decoratively carved stone floor.

Lu Wu carefully observed the surroundings and nodded with satisfaction.

"Good, it seems my information was accurate. With this, we can commence the next phase of the action!"

With that, Lu Wu began to busy himself.

He first took out a bundle of wire and four different bells from the backpack he was carrying.

Then, with Little Skeleton's help, they spent several minutes setting up the wire and bells at several of the junctions as a simple alert system.

Lu Wu then returned to the junction, placing a blob of yellow paste-like substance on the central stone floor.

Indeed, Lu Wu had made exhaustive preparations for climbing the leaderboard, including preparing items for monster farming in advance.

This paste-like substance was specifically prepared by Lu Wu after researching information about the rodents through the internal network to attract them.

"Watch carefully. Once the rodent arrives, don't rush. Wait for it to reach the stone floor and start eating before you make your move. This way, it won't be able to drill underground and escape.

Also, remember, your electricity is reserved for pushing the boss, so you absolutely must not use it while fighting these rodents, got it?"

Facing Lu Wu's instructions, Little Skeleton's skull bobbed furiously.

Hmmm, the nodding frequency was quick, clearly indicating that the little guy truly understood this time.

Yet Lu Wu was somewhat unsure and checked Little Skeleton's state again.

Little Skeleton[Excited (Little Skeleton understood, Little Skeleton is super capable and efficient!)]

Assured that Little Skeleton truly understood, Lu Wu felt relieved. He then found a spot that wouldn't affect Little Skeleton's combat and hid.

It was only then, as Lu Wu hid alone in the corner, that he considered whether or not to summon another Summoned Beast for his personal protection, giving him a sense of security while venturing into instances.

Hmm, perhaps he could choose a Summoning Stone from the leaderboard, maybe he should select one later and raise another Summoned Beast?

While Lu Wu pondered this, a particularly faint noise arose from the left.

Lu Wu and Little Skeleton immediately perked up. Soon after, a mole on the left fork cautiously poked its sharp nose out, sniffed vigorously, and then emerged from the fork, cautiously making its way over to the rocky floor.

"Now!"

As the prey entered the trap and began to lick the bait, Lu Wuyi commanded, and Little Skeleton dashed out in a burst, pouncing toward the rocky floor.

The mole was startled by Little Skeleton suddenly springing into action and subconsciously tried to drill into the ground to escape, but instead, it bumped its head on the rocky floor, almost getting a bump.

Then, Little Skeleton's big club followed.

With a burst of whacking sounds—

[Ding, your Summoned Beast has successfully defeated a three-star mole, and you have gained 5 points!]

Upon seeing this notification, Lu Wu had Little Skeleton stop.

The points were already scored; there was no need to keep hitting the little guy.

After Little Skeleton ceased, acting like an old pro in the Secret Realm, the mole limped away, occasionally looking back thrice at the yellowish paste.

It looked quite pitiful.

But helplessly, Lu Wu couldn't give it to the mole as he used it to lure the monsters.

He didn't carry anything else on him and could only watch the little pitiable creature leave.

Following this mole, Lu Wu and Little Skeleton's monster luring endeavors started to flourish.

This item was extremely lethal to moles; soon, the next unlucky victim arrived, followed by a third and a fourth...

In just half an hour, Lu Wu had attracted 15 moles with this tactic.

These moles were adorably foolish, biting the bait as soon as they arrived, drilling into the ground at any sign of danger, knocking their heads and then getting hit and scored.

Such dumb monsters were especially easy to farm; sometimes, if two appeared at once, Little Skeleton could knock them both out together.

In half an hour, Lu Wuyi scored 75 points in one go, along with the previous 50 points from passing the second floor and 50 points for spending 20 minutes on the third floor.

Together with the walking distance and the time spent in the Secret Realm, Lu Wu's total score abruptly reached 195 points.

What did this score mean? Ask the Hengheng Monster watching the scoreboard outside.

After Lu Wu made his bold statement, she didn't leave but kept standing below the scoreboard waiting for Lu Wu.

She wasn't waiting to see Lu Wu's downfall but rather for him to emerge and fall flat.

Indeed, she never believed the short, swift, and soft Lu Wu could make it onto the scoreboard; after all, she had been following them for the past half-month, and their score never exceeded 100.

For such a guy to suddenly talk about claiming a prize, did that mean Lu Wu was breaking into the top ten? Only the top ten actually had rewards to claim!

But was that possible?

Hengheng Monster did not believe Lu Wu could do it!

She figured, half an hour at most—Lu Wu should have been out by that time.

However, when half an hour passed, Lu Wu hadn't emerged, but his name did appear on the scoreboard.

170 points, ranked 99th!

175 points, ranked 98th!

180 points, ranked 96th!

…

195 points, ranked 85th!

Seeing Lu Wu's ranking rapidly climb, Hengheng Monster started feeling nervous.

Could this guy actually make it into the top ten?

Meanwhile, inside the Secret Realm, Lu Wu was also contemplating; with monsters nearly farmed out, should he let Little Skeleton advance?

# Chapter 103: 102 three stars

Summoned Beasts had no special cultivation techniques for raising their power.

To increase the power of a Summoned Beast, one could only rely on training and battle.

Thus, some Summoners proposed the concept of an Experience Bar for Summoned Beasts.

They believed that there was an invisible, unmastered experience bar concerning the power enhancement of Summoned Beasts.

Only when this experience bar was full could the power of the Summoned Beast be raised.

Although this theory couldn't be verified, it couldn't be falsified either. Coupled with the recent rise of games and the complete lack of achievements by Cultivation Masters in this area, Summoners generally believed in this theory.

They had even compiled some tips to quickly boost experience points based on this experience bar theory.

Among these was the idea of fighting above one's level.

Summoners widely believed that fighting above one's level could drastically increase a Summoned Beast's experience points.

And as long as the experience points were nearly full, there was a high probability that fighting above one's level could lead to leveling up.

However, as for this, Lu Wu now felt that it was false.

His Little Skeleton had been knocking down small ground moles, one by one; within half an hour, it had defeated over a dozen three-star Summoned Beasts. By all logic, its experience should have been full and ready to reach three stars by now, but Little Skeleton showed no signs of leveling up.

"As expected, a group of Summoners don't know a damn thing about Summoned Beasts. How could fighting above one's level possibly lead to leveling up?

In the end, leveling up still comes down to smashing phones!"

Saying this, Lu Wu was about to pull out his large phone to show a smashing to Little Skeleton.

However, just then, a bell rang to the left—evidently another prey had shown up.

Since there was prey arriving, why not finish them off first?

It's just a matter of one strike, after all.

Yet this time, something was off. It wasn't a mole that appeared, but a gray snake with a rocky texture.

Lu Wu was startled by the Big Rock Snake: "Damn, what's going on? This isn't the area for Big Rock Snakes to roam in. How did a Big Rock Snake show up?"

Lu Wu quickly warned Little Skeleton at his side not to go out and fight this creature—it would be a hassle.

Better to just let it go on its own!

However, at this moment, the shadow of the Big Rock Snake revealed a mole behind it, clearly one that had been attacked not long ago.

The foolish mole was jumping around and shouting next to the Big Rock Snake, seeming to be saying something, then it pointed in the direction where Lu Wu and his companion were.

"What's happening here? Did the mole bring the Big Rock Snake to complain? Bringing the Big Rock Snake over for revenge?

Has the world gone mad? Aren't snakes and moles supposed to be natural enemies?"

Well, normally, snakes and moles indeed are natural enemies, but the Underground Cave was different.

This was a commercialized Trial Secret Realm managed by the Summoner Center for decades; all the Summoned Beasts here were old performers of many years, like domesticated Summoned Beasts.

Being domesticated, conflicts between them were relatively few. Additionally, since they experienced beatings together, they naturally grew close.

In such circumstances, it wasn't strange for a mole that was beaten to seek help from the Big Rock Snake to take revenge.

The most important point was that the Secret Realm Manager had noticed Lu Wu's situation; in gaming terms, his situation would be considered exploiting a bug to farm monsters—an issue the manager could hardly ignore and had to address.

While Lu Wu was stunned, the Big Rock Snake was already charging over.

At this point, escaping was too late for Lu Wu; he had no choice but to fight.

"The Big Rock Snake is charging over, Little Skeleton, it's all on you now. Do you have confidence?!"

Little Skeleton was confident, Little Skeleton was super capable!

After drawing lots of little ground squirrels, Little Skeleton was particularly excited and rushed with a club at the sight of the Big Rock Snake charging towards him.

He started charging, and at the moment he approached the Big Rock Snake, he swung the electric baton in his hand, adding the power of charging into the baton and smashing it on the Big Rock Snake's head.

If this hit were on a ground squirrel's head, it would have been knocked askew, but it was a different story with the Big Rock Snake.

The creature was a rock-type Summoned Beast, with extremely strong defense, so this hit was nothing more than a nuisance to it.

Instead, it took the opportunity to rear its head, almost making Little Skeleton lose his grip on the electric baton as the snake's tail whipped towards him at the same time, aimed straight at Little Skeleton's skeleton.

If it hit, Little Skeleton wouldn't just fall apart; he would be rendered useless.

"Left, use Block to leverage!"

Lu Wu issued the command immediately, and Little Skeleton instinctively followed by positioning the electric baton to the left, blocking the tail and leaping up, letting the force fling him away.

Next, while he was flung in mid-air, Little Skeleton turned and pushed off against the wall with his skeletal legs.

"Now, use Charge and Charging, hit it hard in the middle of its back!"

At this point, Lu Wu could no longer afford to let Little Skeleton hold back his powers.

If they couldn't get past this obstacle, there was no point in thinking about defeating the boss.

At Lu Wu's command, Little Skeleton flashed like lightning and instantly smashed into the middle of Big Rock Snake's body, the baton laden with electric light striking down, causing the Big Rock Snake to convulse.

At the same time, Lu Wu's wristband emitted a notification.

But Lu Wu had no time to care about the notification because, at that moment, a surge of icy energy rushed to his forehead, clearly indicating that Little Skeleton had just reached three stars in this battle.

Meanwhile, after taking down the Big Rock Snake, Little Skeleton turned and gave Lu Wu a thumbs-up!

"Well done!"

In his excitement, Lu Wu almost wanted to rush over and give Little Skeleton a big kiss.

The strategies figured out by the Summoners were somewhat useful, having saved him a phone at least.

But before Lu Wu could rejoice for long, the ringing of bells began from every direction.

"Damn!"

Lu Wu's expression changed, realizing that the situation was getting out of control, likely meaning the Secret Realm Manager was clearing a bug.

Lu Wu dared not stay any longer, closing his eyes to listen to the ringing once more before opening them sharply.

"There are no Summoned Beasts down the left fork, let's go left!"

It must be said, in his preparation to climb the leaderboards, Lu Wu was thoroughly prepared, not only setting up alerts in advance but also making sure the bells at each of the four forks were distinct in sound.

Lu Wu could tell immediately where there were beasts and where there weren't.

Moreover, after rushing into the left fork, Lu Wu didn't forget to throw a small ball towards the center.

This too was a prepared tool by Lu Wu; as soon as the ball hit the ground, it emitted thick smoke.

This was specifically prepared by Lu Wu for such situations.

This move left the Secret Realm Manager baffled.

They'd seen cunning tactics, but never tactics this cunning.

And over here, after throwing the small ball, Lu Wu immediately led Little Skeleton towards the third floor's defending boss.

"Just as I expected, the Summoned Beasts are all moving this way, now the third floor is relatively empty, it's the best chance to push forward, seize this chance to find the third-floor boss, defeat it to enter the fourth floor, jump two floors and easily score at least 200 points to claim the top spot!"

# Chapter 104: 103 Level 3 Boss

Quan City, Underground Cave Secret Realm Management Backend.

Several managers responsible for backend maintenance were staring dumbfounded at the surveillance footage of the third floor: on one side, dozens of summoned beasts crowded in the smoke; on the other, Lu Wu was rapidly advancing through the third floor with Little Skeleton beside him.

These managers were almost on their knees watching the monitors.

From the moment Lu Wu had entered the secret realm, his clever maneuvers had never ceased.

At the outset, he had taken only 5 minutes to find the guardian boss of the second floor without encountering any summoned beasts and had easily exploited a bug to defeat the guardian boss.

It took him less than 8 minutes to rapidly clear the second floor, making him the second fastest to pass the initial trial in history (the fastest was a king of luck who had landed right next to the guardian boss).

After entering the third floor, he used bug exploits to effortlessly defeat fifteen 3-star summoned beasts in just half an hour.

With this tactic, he had shot into the top 100 of the ranking board.

The top 100 of the ranking board—consider that this secret realm had seen tens of thousands of people each year and had been in operation for decades; achieving a top 100 ranking was exceptionally challenging.

Yet Lu Wu had breezed into it within half an hour by exploiting bugs.

This forced the managers to take action to clean up the bugs.

They arranged for dozens of summoned beasts to converge from three different directions.

While they did leave room for Lu Wu to escape in their plan, they did not expect Lu Wu to escape so effortlessly.

He easily found the only way out and even left tricks behind to restrict the summoned beasts.

Without any trouble for him, he cheerfully prepared to confront the third-floor guardian.

These secret realm caretakers had been guarding the realm for over a decade, and it was their first time witnessing a challenger like this.

"Keep this up, aren't we really going to let him take down the third-floor boss?

He's already scored 200 points, if he defeats the third-floor boss and enters the fourth floor, that girl who just topped the rankings won't have warmed her seat before relinquishing it."

"It's highly unlikely, the third-floor guardian boss is of elite level. Though it's of ordinary quality at the elite level, it's not something he can defeat, considering his summoned beast is just Little Skeleton."

Indeed, Little Skeleton was considered one of the worst summoned beasts—it was almost a consensus, so Little Skeleton shouldn't be able to defeat the guardian boss.

At that moment, a young staffer spoke up hesitantly, "Have you seen a 2-star Little Skeleton with an electric attribute skill take on a 3-star before?

Besides, how can you be so sure he doesn't have some other strange plan up his sleeve to handle the guardian boss?"

At this remark, the caretakers recalled the objects Lu Wu had used to lure monsters and the last orb; reflecting on Lu Wu's identity and remembering their own experiences of being tricked by cultivation masters, they couldn't help but spit out,

"Indeed, those who play the cultivation game are all crafty!"

...

Meanwhile, Lu Wu was blissfully unaware that his trial was being monitored from the backend the whole time.

He was currently making a rapid advance through the third floor with Little Skeleton.

In his past life, when he'd watched "The Strongest Brain," Lu Wu always felt the TV was full of deceptions.

Everyone was human, and brains couldn't possibly be as exaggeratedly effective as depicted on TV.

Memory Palaces, Microscopic Water Identification—all had to be fabricated.

But experiencing it firsthand, Lu Wu found that people with sharp minds really were extraordinary.

For example, right now, by gathering information, he could effortlessly construct a holographic map of the third floor in his mind, with an accuracy of approximately 95%.

Relying on his exceptional brain, Lu Wu led Little Skeleton to the third floor's guardian within 10 minutes.

The backend staff perked up as soon as they saw Lu Wu face the guardian boss.

Each of them was eager to see what unexpected maneuvers Lu Wu would pull off confronting the guardian boss.

Indeed, Lu Wu didn't disappoint them; he truly performed actions they hadn't anticipated.

Instead of attacking the summoned beast first, he pulled a black metal object from his backpack.

Then, a person walked towards the guardian boss.

Several Secret Realm Managers were baffled, "What is he trying to do, poison the boss with food?"

"That shouldn't be the case, right? Poisoning is definitely prohibited in our realm, right?"

"Well, it's actually not prohibited!" The young man raised his hand again, "Because some Summoned Beasts' attribute is poison, and no one typically uses power beyond their Summoned Beasts to clear levels, so there's no ruling on it."

The backend fell silent, then burst into rage, but they were helpless and could only curse, "Typical Cultivation Masters, all dirty-minded!"

However, they were wrongly accusing Lu Wu this time, as he wasn't planning to poison the boss.

He was just preparing to feed it.

On the monitor, Lu Wu had already approached the guardian boss, Little Rock, "Little Rock, I'll give you this to eat, will you let me touch you?"

Lu Wu's proposal was tempting.

Wait, no, it was rock-tempting!

Little Rock agreed without a second thought and hopped to the edge of the safe zone.

This Little Rock was about a meter tall, made up of 7 rocks, with facial features on the rocks and two arms made from three rocks each, but no legs.

With big eyes and a small mouth but no nose, it looked quite adorable!

As it came over, Lu Wu handed it the black metal, and while it was eating, Lu Wu got a chance to touch the little guy.

...

Name: Little Rock

Power: 0 stars [Elite]

Attribute: Rock

State: Happy (This human is nice, gave me yummy food)

Weakness: Grass, Ice

Skills: Roll (Master), Crash (Master), Defense (Master)

Flying Stone (Master)

Talent: Basic Physical Defense Enhancement

Description: Although it has strong defense, it's not very smart, just a little glutton. You can try to abduct it, deceive it, play with its feelings.

...

Lu Wu was annoyed by the description in the system.

What kind of person did this crappy system think he was? Was he, Lu Wu, the type to play with Summoned Beasts' feelings?

Well, he could still negotiate to deepen their connection, that much he was good at.

"Hey, Little Rock, how about we make a deal?

Later when you fight my Little Skeleton, pretend you can't win and just give up, okay?

If you do, next time I come, I'll bring more of this yummy stuff for you!"

When Little Rock heard this, it was immediately tempted; however, before Little Rock could agree, Lu Wu's Secret Realm Bracelet started sounding an alarm.

[WARNING! WARNING!

Do not deceive, abduct, or bribe guardian bosses!]

Well, abduction failed, fake match plan failed, Lu Wu was somewhat helpless.

"Originally, I wanted to interact with you as an ordinary Summoner, but this is what I got.

I can't help it then, I give up, I'm laying my cards on the table. Go on, Little Skeleton, finish it off!"

At Lu Wu's command, he picked up his phone, and with a smash, he broke it…

# Chapter 105: 104 First

Lu Wu's smartphone crashed to the ground, stunning the surrounding Secret Realm Managers as well as Little Skeleton.

Lu Wu was stunned himself.

Turning his head stiffly, he looked at the adorable Little Skeleton beside him, which seemed neither angry nor ready to explode, and asked, "What's going on here? I threw the phone and it's busted, so why aren't you mad?

Why don't you release your Big Move and smash it?"

As he spoke, Lu Wu reached out and touched Little Skeleton.

Upon touching, Lu Wu's face flushed with embarrassment.

Little Skeleton [Confused (Why get angry? The broken smartphone is Lu Wu's!

Poor Lu Wu, his smartphone is broken, but Little Skeleton isn't pitiful. Little Skeleton has been protecting the phone very well!)]

"Embarrassing!"

He had just been bragging about how clever he was, only to immediately make such a foolish mistake.

Backstage, on their side.

Watching the surveillance footage of Lu Wu covering his face, appearing so mortified he wanted to crawl into a hole.

The managers were thoroughly enjoying themselves, not quite clear on what was wrong with Lu Wu, but could definitely tell that he must be feeling really awkward.

Lu Wu had been confident and in control since entering the Secret Realm today; this was the first time he had found himself in such an embarrassment.

The managers were quite pleased watching him.

"It looks like the strategy he prepared for the boss has failed, and now it's going to be tough for him to take down this BOSS."

"That's good, he's only been in our Secret Realm for half a month, right?

If he were to defeat the boss, he'd end up at the top of the points leaderboard.

Our Summoners' Secret Realm points leaderboard, topped by a Cultivation Master in just half a month, would be quite a face-loss for us!"

"Hmph, I have no respect for these Cultivation Masters who only know how to play tricks, damn it, I've been saving points for years, and one plan has cleaned me out!"

Well, the last one carried a hint of envy, jealousy, and resentment.

While this group was having their fun, Lu Wu at the monitors had also lowered his hand from his face and was directing Little Skeleton to enter Little Rock's battle ring.

"Hey, he's not planning to give up, is he?"

"Normal, having come this far, I wouldn't give up either; got to at least give it a try, no danger anyway!"

"Let him try then, what do you think, how long can his Little Skeleton last?"

"Well, it looks like it's three stars now, surviving a minute or two shouldn't be a problem?"

"Shall we make a bet?"

"I'm in! I bet two minutes, 200 Internal Network points, anyone want to take that bet?"

"I bet one minute, 200 Internal Network points!"

The atmosphere backstage instantly heated up again, and just as the mood was peaking, that young kid raised his hand again.

"Um, can I bet on Little Skeleton winning?"

As soon as these words came out, the group went silent.

Hmm, this young kid seemed to have a Talent for killing the mood; every time he spoke it guaranteed a silence.

But soon, someone backstage snapped back to reality.

"Sure, now we've got one betting on Little Skeleton winning. If you win, it's a clean sweep for you, and each of us will give you 200 Internal Network points..."

"Snap!"

Just as the voice faded, a deafening explosion sounded. The backstage team was stunned and turned their heads to look at the surveillance screen, only to find that the surveillance feed had failed, clearly indicating that the camera had been damaged.

"What's going on here?"

While the backstage team was dumbfounded, they received a message from their system.

[Ding, contestant Lu Wu has defeated the third floor's boss Little Rock, increasing his score by 100. His total score is now 300, currently ranked 10th on the scoreboard!]

Upon seeing this system notification, the backstage team was totally flummoxed.

And at the same time, the one feeling stupefied outside the Secret Realm was Hengheng Monster.

She had felt tense ever since Lu Wu appeared on the scoreboard.

Her nerves stemmed from her knowledge of Lu Wu's Talent as a Cultivation Master, and from their interactions over the past half-month.

She had actually been secretly observing Lu Wu during that time.

After observing him, she found herself filled with defeat, realizing not only was his mind sharp, he was immensely Talented in cultivation, and also incredibly diligent.

Studying for 18 hours a day, aside from entering the Secret Realm, he would spend over a dozen hours focusing on cultivation knowledge.

Having studied it herself, she knew better than anyone how difficult it is to learn cultivation knowledge. She couldn't stand reading the material, falling asleep after half an hour, whereas Lu Wu could manage over a dozen hours.

Compared to him, she truly felt defeated in Lu Wu's presence.

It's normal to feel overshadowed by Talent, and it wasn't the first time she had experienced this, but what made it worse was that Lu Wu was a hard-working genius.

Lacking both his brains and his effort.

What was scarier, she had even poked fun at him with an inexplicable sense of superiority.

That made Hengheng Monster feel particularly special emotions toward Lu Wu, an unexplained sense of shame, wishing she could just crawl into a hole and hide.

The only thing that gave Hengheng Monster some comfort, some solace, was her Talent as a Summoner.

Her Summoned Beasts were stronger than Lu Wu's no matter what, and she was much better than him when it came to challenges in the Secret Realm.

This was her last fortress, and she did not want her final stronghold to be breached by Lu Wu.

But now, it seemed her fortress might not hold!

It took her one or two months to claw her way to the top; she had barely warmed her seat at number one, and Lu Wu had soared up like a rocket to number 10 in the blink of an eye.

You can imagine what Hengheng Monster's mood was like.

She could only keep reassuring herself.

"It's okay, it's all good, he's just tenth, he hasn't passed me, there's no way he'll surpass me! I'm still better than him!

Ye Ruhuo, you can do this, you are still the best!"

Hengheng Monster finally calmed her emotions and mustered the courage to look up at the scoreboard again, trying to convince herself to accept the reality that she would soon be receiving an award alongside Lu Wu.

But as soon as she looked up, she was stunned.

Lu Wu, who had just been tenth, instantly gained another 100 points with a 'whoosh', propelling him straight from tenth to first in one go. And she, who had fought so hard to reach first place over two months, had barely held onto it for less than two hours before being pushed down to second.

Hengheng Monster, unable to bear the shock, fought back tears, but they flowed nonetheless.

Meanwhile, the Secret Realm administrators felt like crying too.

Especially after Lu Wu took the top spot, they were moved by a young voice's weak question, "Does this mean I've won?"

A few Secret Realm administrators nearly cried on the spot. 200 Internal Network Points, that was a fortune for them. Not being Cultivation Masters themselves, they didn't have such wealth and had to nurture their Summoned Beasts. It would take months to save up those 200 points.

And Little Skeleton felt like crying too,

Because its phone was broken, and its Lu Wu had gone bad!

# Chapter 106: Acting unreasonably

"So, I won, right?"

The Secret Realm Management Backend for the Underground Cave.

When the young one timidly asked, the managers on the backend fell silent.

It took a while before someone spoke up.

"Um, should we look at the playback? There was such a commotion just now, maybe this kid brought something in with him?"

"Exactly, exactly, these breeders are all sneaky. He must have smuggled something in!

I absolutely refuse to believe that the burst just now came from Little Skeleton!"

"Right, we're talking about Little Skeleton fighting Little Rock. If this kid was cheating, then it wouldn't count as a loss for us!"

"Check the playback. Let's see Lu Wu's Secret Realm Bracelet for any clues!"

...

For 200 Internal Network Points, these managers really put up a fight.

They immediately got to work, gathering footage from the recently destroyed cameras and from Lu Wu's Secret Realm Bracelet, casting it onto the big screen to reconstruct the scene of the incident.

They saw Lu Wu, covering his face, suddenly lower his hand and whisper something secretly into Little Rock's ear.

Then he started to direct Little Skeleton, telling Little Skeleton to go in and fight with Little Rock.

Nothing abnormal up to this point.

Little Rock, after swallowing the metal given by Lu Wu, hopped and skipped over to Little Skeleton, holding up its arms, trying to puff up its figure to look very serious and strong.

Just that its big eyes would occasionally glance over at Lu Wu, and when it saw Lu Wu looking, it would wave its little hands even more vigorously.

Meanwhile, Lu Wu, after Little Skeleton entered the battle ring, started to slack off.

"Little Skeleton, where's your phone? You have to protect it during the battle. You can't break it!"

Upon hearing this, Little Skeleton's Pupil Fire flickered violently.

It proudly expressed that it wouldn't happen, Little Skeleton's phone wouldn't break, Little Skeleton took good care of its phone, and wouldn't be as silly as Lu Wu to let it get destroyed!

Lu Wu was quite far from it and wasn't touching it.

But having raised Little Skeleton for so long, he could more or less gauge its mood, and immediately, veins popped on his forehead.

Getting cocky, huh? You'll be crying soon.

He continued to coax Little Skeleton at the same time.

"How about Little Skeleton gives Lu Wu the phone to look after? Lu Wu will help Little Skeleton film, so Little Skeleton can be on TV again!"

This had happened before during the Quancheng Cup.

Lu Wu had filmed a clip for it, the one where it was beating the Earth Cave People. Little Skeleton really liked it, so hearing this, it was immediately tricked.

Nodding its head like mad, it set aside its electric baton, then took out its carefully hidden phone from its skeletal frame.

However, at the moment when Little Skeleton's phone was taken out, Little Rock, who had been watching the fun from the sidelines, immediately sprang into action.

With a roll and a charge, it made its way to Little Skeleton's side, and with a clap of its big hands—crack!—Little Skeleton's phone shattered on the spot.

In the moment the phone shattered, Little Skeleton was dumbfounded for a few seconds.

Little Rock, however, was not confused and immediately turned to look at Lu Wu, waving its hands to signal that it had done its job. Lu Wu had to bring it something tasty next time he came in.

Then, a flash of electric light zipped by, and the camera footage went out.

However, it was clear from the footage on Lu Wu's Secret Realm Bracelet that the electric light was the energy burst that came from Little Skeleton's frame after being dumbfounded for a few seconds.

After that, Little Rock, who was still happy, was caught unprepared and knocked down.

Watching this scene, the Secret Realm Management Backend fell quiet once again.

They'd figured it out: Lu Wu had just played with the emotions of two Summoned Beasts.

His Little Skeleton had a Big Move.

Considering what had just happened and Lu Wu's action of smashing his smartphone, it was clear that the smartphone's energy consumption was linked to Little Skeleton's Big Move.

A Big Move for one smartphone.

To activate Little Skeleton's Big Move, Lu Wu lured Little Rock with food to smash Little Skeleton's smartphone.

And in the end, Little Skeleton, having lost its smartphone, unleashed its Big Move.

As for Little Rock, it didn't even get the promised food and ended up taking a beating first.

Considering the battery life just now, Little Rock's injuries must've been considerable!

"Indeed, breeders are all dirty-minded!"

...

Whether dirty-minded or not, Lu Wu didn't care, for he had passed the third challenge.

While the others were crying, Lu Wu cheerfully approached Little Skeleton.

Little Skeleton was now having a temper tantrum because the smartphone was broken.

Although Little Skeleton was a bit slow, its instincts were sharp. It could already sense that its Lu Wu had turned bad, and it wanted nothing to do with him.

However, Lu Wu had already mastered the trick to soothe a petulant Little Skeleton.

He immediately hugged Little Skeleton and stroked its skull.

"Good skeleton, don't cry, don't cry. It's just a broken smartphone, no big deal. Once we get out, Lu Wu will buy another one for you!"

Hugs, head pats, promise of a new smartphone.

This combination managed to successfully dispel Little Skeleton's bad mood.

Seeing that Little Skeleton's state had changed from [resentful] to [happy], Lu Wu couldn't help but curl the corners of his mouth upwards.

He found his Golden Finger quite handy.

With this Golden Finger, he could completely control his Summoned Beasts' emotions.

Being able to control emotions meant controlling the pace of conquest.

"It seems that I do have the Talent of a playboy. Even if I can't be a playboy among humans, I could still be the playboy of Summoned Beasts, right?"

Having defeated the third challenge's boss, Lu Wu's subsequent challenges became much easier.

In fact, the difficulty of this challenge was multifaceted, with the greatest factor being the Survivability of the Summoned Beasts.

Many Summoned Beasts could pass two challenges in a row due to their power or outright attribute suppression.

But that required them to be in peak condition.

Such thoroughfares, needing to find the next level and fight battle after battle, would be too much for even the strongest Summoned Beast to withstand for several hours straight, even with items that replenished energy.

So, no one on the top hundred leaderboard had managed to pass two levels consecutively.

But it was different for Lu Wu; with the aid of his cheating brain, he barely exerted any effort in the first challenge, and though the second one had some complications,

It equally didn't take much of his strength. When Little Skeleton arrived in front of the third challenge's boss, it was almost in full condition.

Plus, Little Rock was easy to fool, and besides expending a piece of metal and two smartphones, only about eighty percent of Little Skeleton's Electric energy was consumed.

Little Skeleton was still in good shape at the moment. Although it had a minor mood swing, with just a touch and a flurry from Lu Wuyi, it was instantly gone, and Little Skeleton once again strutted forthrightly into the fourth challenge with Lu Wu.

Since he had passed two levels in a row, Lu Wu only needed to stay five minutes in the fourth challenge to earn 100 points.

For the well-prepared Lu Wu, this was a breeze: he easily scored 100 points and officially secured the first place.

This left the Secret Realm Manager with a headache—how should they score Lu Wu's performance?

# Chapter 107: 106 Tuantuan three stars

At the Secret Realm Management Backend.

They had some strong opinions about the performance of Lu Wu now.

Because they had watched Lu Wu climb the ranks from start to finish.

They were acutely aware of his process, which could be described as exploiting every loophole and bug, and he even tried to bribe the gatekeeper boss in the end.

They had never seen such a dirty challenger before.

Therefore, they were quite dissatisfied with Lu Wu claiming the top spot.

But upon further reflection, although Lu Wu's methods were somewhat underhanded and not exactly honorable, differing from a typical Summoner's brute force approach, all his methods were within the rules.

He hadn't broken any rules.

Even the act of trying to bribe the boss, there was actually no explicit rule in the Secret Realm against it.

After all, no Summoner had ever considered passing through by bribing a gatekeeper boss, and in the end, Lu Wu didn't succeed in bribing; they intervened.

With that in mind, even if the Secret Realm Managers had qualms about Lu Wu's score, there was nothing they could do.

They also knew who Lu Wu was.

A Genius Cultivator, with backing from Fucheng!

Even though Summoners often disdainfully referred to those who play Cultivators, they were quite subservient when they actually needed their aid.

Hence, they did not dare to offend too deeply.

Eventually, the backend administrators concluded that it was not worth making a fuss.

After all, it was just a matter of who was ranked first and one Summoning Stone, let him choose it.

The Summoning Stones they provided were pre-selected anyway, and the ones left probably weren't that great. At most, the stones would be worth ten or so Internal Network Points, or maybe even a few dozen for an ordinary stone; not a huge loss. Just give him one and get rid of the guy.

Under this mindset of the backend administrators, Lu Wu's Secret Realm Bracelet quickly received a prompt.

"Ding, your challenge rating has reached 400, and you are currently the top scorer on the leaderboard.

You have earned the reward of choosing a Summoning Stone!"

Seeing this prompt, the corner of Lu Wu's mouth lifted.

He wasn't too concerned whether he got a Summoning Stone or not, the main thing was that he had taken first place.

He especially wanted to know, right now, what kind of expression that short, soft, "heng"-sounding Hengheng Monster outside would have.

Because of this, Lu Wu was eager to press the button to leave the Secret Realm.

He was a little worried whether the Hengheng Monster could handle this reality and might have run off.

As it turned out, Lu Wu had somewhat underestimated the Hengheng Monster's toughness, or rather, its stubbornness.

Although the Hengheng Monster was indeed very distressed to see its short-lived first place on the leaderboard be taken away in less than two hours, to the point of shedding tears on the leaderboard, it didn't run away. Its eyes red, it was waiting for Lu Wu at the base of the leaderboard.

As soon as it saw Lu Wu emerge, the Hengheng Monster charged at him immediately, "Heng, I lost this time, but I definitely won't lose again next time!

I will get my rating back and reclaim first place.

Also, I meant what I said before, don't think you can completely defeat me just because you won against me on the leaderboard once!

I will not admit defeat. I will definitely beat you in the high school competition!"

Having said that, the Hengheng Monster didn't wait for Lu Wu's response, turned around, and ran off, her ponytail swaying.

Lu Wu was now particularly pleased.

Although the Hengheng Monster was still obstinate, from her red-rimmed eyes and the sway of her ponytail, one could tell she was struck by the defeat from Lu Wu.

And that made the broad-minded Lu Wu very comfortable.

"I'll make you 'hmmph,' I'll make you strut your stuff, the real game has just begun. Just wait, during the high school competition, I'll definitely make you cry again!"

Amidst these silent threats, Lu Wu was watching the retreating figure of the Hengheng Monster.

Dudu, holding Tuantuan, came over and casually used its plump body to block Lu Wu's view of the Hengheng Monster.

Lu Wu didn't notice Dudu's intention and as soon as he saw Dudu coming over, he reached out and vigorously ruffled Dudu's head: "See? I said we'd aim for number one and we did just that. Impressive, right?"

"Impressive!"

Dudu's head nodded frantically: "Lu Wu is the most impressive!"

"Of course, let's go. I've got a Summoning Stone as a reward. Let's claim the reward and then focus on training Tuantuan a bit more. Once it's three stars, we'll head home!"

Now that Little Skeleton had advanced to three stars, it was time for Lu Wu to officially start preparing for Little Skeleton's advancement.

In theory, they could have gone back now, but considering Tuantuan's power, Lu Wu decided to stay a few more days.

No sooner had Lu Wu finished speaking than Dudu immediately claimed, "Tuantuan is three stars now!"

"Three stars?"

Both Lu Wu and Tuantuan were puzzled.

Especially Tuantuan, which was not only bewildered but also particularly doubtful. Was it really three stars? How come it had no idea?

But if the pet owner said three stars, then three stars it was!

And so, in the time it took for this single sentence to be uttered, the lazy, upgrade-averse Tuantuan turned around and instantly advanced to three stars.

Lu Wu watched the entire process, since as he was petting Dudu's head, he had also casually petted the pig.

He had personally witnessed how this pig advanced from two stars to three stars in the time it took to say a single sentence.

Although he had no idea how the pig managed to advance, nor how Dudu knew their pig was about to level up, this didn't prevent Lu Wu from glaring at his own Little Skeleton.

Look at them, just saying it's three stars and it becomes three stars!

Then look at you—leveling up, unleashing a Big Move, and all that, why is it so much trouble? You even have to smash a phone.

Not just any phone will do; it has to be your phone, which is such a hassle!

Little Skeleton, who was inexplicably glared at, felt very resentful.

Especially when it saw that Lu Wu was petting the pig while glaring at it, Little Skeleton became even more unhappy.

Indeed, Little Skeleton still wanted to swat the pig.

And whether it was because Little Skeleton's intention to swat the pig was too obvious,

Dudu's pig couldn't resist giving Little Skeleton a nudge with its snout, followed by a turn, burying its pig head deep into Dudu's embrace before turning back and proudly 'hmmphing' twice.

This action appeared highly provocative to Little Skeleton.

It clearly meant that Little Skeleton didn't have Lu Wu's embrace!

Little Skeleton was instantly discontented; it most certainly had Lu Wu's embrace, and had just been held a moment ago!

It had been held for a long, long time!

Little Skeleton was so anxious it almost spoke out loud.

Unfortunately, it couldn't speak, and in the end, it could only tug at Lu Wu's clothes, gazing at him with earnest eyes.

Little Skeleton [resentful (a pig says your Little Skeleton doesn't have Lu Wu's embrace, Little Skeleton is resentful, Little Skeleton wants a hug!)]

Seeing Little Skeleton's state, Lu Wu too felt a big headache coming on.

Since stuff had been stuffed inside Little Skeleton's frame, its spiritual wisdom had been growing crazily—it changed every day. It hadn't been long, and now it had learned to feel resentful and act coquettishly.

Lu Wu, truly at a loss, could only symbolically give Little Skeleton a hug.

With this one hug, Little Skeleton was delighted, but Dudu was left stunned...

# Chapter 108: 107 Summoning Stones

Since both Little Skeleton and Tuantuan had reached three stars, Lu Wu no longer needed to stay in the Underground Cave Secret Realm.

However, before leaving, he still had to claim his reward, after all, it was a Summoning Stone.

Lu Wu had seen information about the Summoning Stone on the internal network before and had a certain understanding of it.

The so-called Summoning Stones are actually from the Secret Realms and are found in the ruins within some Secret Realms.

Their function is similar to the pet eggs in games and the eggs of some Summoned Beasts in reality.

The difference is that Summoning Stones require a ritual to summon, while eggs do not.

Also, the Summoned Beasts that come from eggs are mostly predictable.

Whatever the mother of the egg is, that's what the Summoned Beast from the egg will be, with not much difference in quality; however, the Summoned Beast that comes from a Summoning Stone is much more random and full of surprises.

No one knows what can be summoned from a Summoning Stone before it is summoned.

This kind of thing, filled with randomness and surprise, has always been very popular.

However, Summoners and Cultivation Masters react differently to Summoning Stones.

Most Summoners are rather brainless; they like to bet on luck, and with good fortune, a Summoning Stone worth a few dozen points might summon a Silver Quality Summoned Beast.

On the other hand, Cultivation Masters are more rational; instead of betting, they prefer to study the skills needed to identify and differentiate Summoning Stones.

For them, using their own talents to find a high-quality Summoning Stone among a pile of worthless ones is a more fulfilling achievement.

As an elegant and composed Cultivation Master, Lu Wu would naturally not rely on luck when choosing a Summoning Stone.

So when the staff indicated that Lu Wu could pick a Summoning Stone, he immediately requested a few hours to prepare.

Then Lu Wu took Dudu and bought two cell phones, logged into the internal network, and spent 10 points to purchase several entry-level skills in differentiating Summoning Stones.

The reason why he only bought entry-level differentiation skills is that the Summoner profession is only a little over a hundred years old—development in all areas could not possibly be comprehensive.

As for differentiating Summoning Stones, Cultivation Masters are still at the stage of groping blindly.

Moreover, once someone grasps some tricks in stone differentiation, it's like striking gold, and they won't easily share it; even on the internal network, only entry-level identification skills can be found.

However, for Lu Wu, entry-level identification skills were enough.

After all, he relied on Golden Finger, and if Golden Finger was useful in differentiating Summoning Stones, entry-level skills would be sufficient for Lu Wu to develop further.

If Golden Finger was useless in distinguishing Summoning Stones, Lu Wu would not bother to study the identification skills further, as cultivating Summoned Beasts was enough for him to learn.

"Alright! Let's go collect the Summoning Stone!"

After spending a few hours fully grasping those entry-level differentiation skills for Summoners, Lu Wu took Dudu and found the staff, indicating he was ready.

Without saying another word, the staff led Lu Wu to pick a Summoning Stone.

At the same time, in the Secret Realm Management Backend, several admins gathered again.

"Should we bet again?"

One of the admins, who had just lost 200 Internal Network Points, suggested.

"Bet what? The quality of the Summoning Stone this kid picks?"

"Yeah, let's bet on that! Everyone puts 200 Internal Network Points on a quality level, and the one who guesses closest to it takes it all! Also, if most people get it right, the one who doesn't match has to pay for everyone.

For instance, if there is only one person who doesn't guess correctly, that person has to compensate for four."

"Sounds good!"

Having just lost money, these admins were not deterred and wanted to win it back.

But someone quickly spotted a loophole.

"Um, how will we know the Quality of the Summoning Stones he picks?"

About this, the person who proposed the idea already had a countermeasure in mind.

"Well, don't we have a Summoning Array here at the Secret Realm? We could just provide it to him for free, right? As for the cost of using the Summoning Array, let the winner take care of it."

"That's a great idea!"

The few administrators above all agreed it could be done.

At this time, someone else, with ulterior motives, suggested another proposal.

"Hey, I think we could change how we place our bets this time. We bet in secret, write down the Quality we want to stake on a piece of paper, sign it, put it aside, and then we can check the outcomes afterwards. What do you guys think?"

This suggestion was met with mutual glances among the administrators, their heads nodding in unison.

"Sounds good! Sounds very good!"

And so, their second round of gambling began.

But this time, these administrators didn't start by placing bets immediately; instead, they began to hype up Lu Wu one by one.

"Hey, this kid is said to be a Genius Cultivator. He just learned some Summoning Stone appraisal techniques for a few hours.

With his Talent, he'll surely pick up some results in this area, so I believe his haul this time won't be small."

Administrator number one, while talking up Lu Wu, wrote down the words "ordinary" on his piece of paper and signed it.

"Absolutely, this kid definitely stands out as one-of-a-kind, a real talent whose fortunes are surely great!

How could a child favored by the heavens pick just an Ordinary Summoning Stone?"

Administrator number two, also hyping, wrote down "ordinary" as well.

Administrator number three looked at his two colleagues, didn't say much, wrote down "Black Iron", but then thought better of it and crossed it out, writing "ordinary" instead.

Out of the five administrators, the first four all wrote "ordinary." Only the last, a more honest young guy, thought for a moment and wrote down "Bronze."

Clearly, these four older administrators were intentionally setting a trap for this young guy.

They were all old birds, sharp as tacks, well aware that the Summoning Stones in the Secret Realm had been screened over and over, the good ones long picked out, what remained were basically all Ordinary Quality.

Even though there might be a missed gem, they didn't believe Lu Wu could spot such a hidden jewel from what was left.

Did they really think he could master the art of Summoning Stone appraisal just by cramming at the last minute?

What a joke!

How difficult was it to learn the skills to appraise Summoning Stones?

Even if they gave Lu Wu a few days or months, he wouldn't be able to learn a thing.

So, to call this a bet was somewhat misleading. It was more like a few seasoned tricksters ganging up to con the young guy.

Of course, this was mainly because they had just lost some money and wanted to win it back.

Although they felt a bit guilty, there was nothing they could do about it. Summoners were not as wealthy as Cultivation Masters; they had to save up for a long while for those 200 points, and without winning them back, they would have to tighten their belts in the coming months.

Now it was perfect. If the young guy stepped right into their trap, the 200 points they had just lost would be returned!

As for losing?

Impossible!

Unthinkable!

# Chapter 109: 108 Summoning Stone Identification

As the administrators finalized their decisions one after the other,

their attention returned to Lu Wu.

At that moment, Lu Wu had been escorted by the staff into the room storing the Summoning Stones.

Upon entering, Lu Wu found that there were indeed numerous Summoning Stones in the room.

In a room of several dozen square meters, four rows of wooden shelves were filled with Summoning Stones.

The Secret Realm managers had really put in effort to elevate the prestige; each Summoning Stone was individually placed on pristine, jade-like porcelain dishes, radiating a sense of high status.

"There are a total of 138 Summoning Stones here, and you may choose any one of them as your reward for ranking first on the score chart!" the staff member said, extending his hand in a welcoming gesture.

"Um, can I pick them up to take a closer look?"

"Yes, you may, as long as you do not damage the Summoning Stones. Any method you use to evaluate them is fine."

The staff member responded politely, holding back a thought he did not voice aloud.

"After all, if you break it, you'll have to pay."

Lu Wu didn't bother about that much; once he confirmed that he could handle them, he went straight to the first shelf and picked up the first Summoning Stone to examine.

The administrators at the backend laughed when they saw Lu Wu's actions.

"Whoa, look at him. Is he planning to check every single Summoning Stone?"

"Just let him look!"

The four old foxes, considering the young man's feelings, didn't say anything too explicit even though they had made their sale and trapped the youngster.

But from the expressions on their faces, it wasn't hard to tell what they thought of Lu Wu's actions.

There was mockery tinged with scorn.

Especially when they saw Lu Wu pick up a Summoning Stone, glance around it, and then put it down, their faces revealed an evident amusement.

With the speed and nonchalance of Lu Wu's evaluation, it was clear he displayed the epitome of half-baked knowledge.

It was settled, absolutely settled; if someone with his mediocre skills could find a gem among these, they would willingly accept their loss.

Meanwhile, the young man nearby seemed not to notice anything odd, still watching Lu Wu's actions with great interest.

As for Lu Wu,

his mood was still okay at the moment.

The situation was largely as he had anticipated, and his Golden Finger was applicable to the Summoning Stones as well.

However, it maintained the usual quirks of his Golden Finger.

It was usable, but expecting it to reveal all the attributes of the Summoning Stones clearly was definitely impossible.

Fortunately, Lu Wu had studied several entry-level articles on how to judge Summoning Stones before handling them, and at this moment, he was putting that knowledge to use.

By combining the Golden Finger with those entry-level articles, Lu Wu nearly mastered the attributes of the Summoning Stones as soon as he touched them.

However, Lu Wu was disappointed because the quality of these Summoning Stones, based on their attributes, was poor.

...

Item: Summoning Stone

Quality: Ordinary (doubtful)

Description: Based on the judging skills you've mastered for Summoning Stones, they indeed seem to be of ordinary quality, capable of summoning only ordinary quality Summoned Beast Babies.

...

Lu Wu looked at several dozen Summoning Stones, and all the attributes he came across were the same.

This made Lu Wu wonder whether the Secret Realm Managers were just stingy, offering only ordinary quality Summoning Stones, or if there was a problem with his own Golden Finger.

"Could it be an issue with the doubtful quality category? Maybe these Summoning Stones are not just ordinary?"

At this point, Lu Wu was even doubting his own life.

And his words, through the still unworn Secret Realm Bracelet, reached the Secret Realm Management Backend.

The four old foxes, upon hearing these life-doubting words from Lu Wu, couldn't help but grin, clearly anticipating the return of the 200 points they had just lost.

However, considering the young man was still nearby, they held themselves back.

Can't laugh, can't laugh—they're professionally trained, even if they can't help it, they must not laugh.

Meanwhile, as these old pros were rejoicing, Lu Wu also raised his eyebrow because he finally saw a summoning stone of a different attribute.

Item: Summoning Stone

Quality: Black Iron (suspected)

Description: Based on your mastery of summoning stone appraisal, the quality of this stone appears to be Black Iron, but it's not guaranteed.

Although the system's description was still vague, it was, regardless, a summoning stone of a different attribute.

This motivated Lu Wu even more; he revved up his engine and sped up his pace.

The management naturally noticed Lu Wu speeding up.

The old pros, who were trained professionally, almost couldn't hold back their laughter.

In their eyes, it was clear that this kid had realized his skills were inadequate and started to act recklessly.

Seeing Lu Wu in this state, on one hand, the old pros were happy about getting back the points they had lost.

On the other hand, they were also delighted to see the previously confident and strategic Lu Wu now appear disheartened and disheveled.

Under their watch, it took Lu Wu less than ten minutes to feel through all the hundred-plus summoning stones in the room.

After he was done, they thought Lu Wu would be lost in confusion and indecision, but Lu Wu was not.

He directly made his choice and picked up the highest quality stone in the room, which was suspected to be of Bronze Quality.

No one expected this development, not even the staff who had come with Lu Wu.

"Have you made your choice?"

"Yeah, I'm set, is it this one?"

Lu Wu had dawdled for ten minutes and then suddenly made up his mind, which the staff found a bit unaccustomed to, prompting them to add:

"Don't you want to reconsider?"

"No need, I'm not one to dawdle."

This comment left the staff unsure how to respond—non-dawdling? But Lu Wu, who had taken over ten minutes to pick a summoning stone, was surely one of a kind.

What was even more baffling for the staff was how confident Lu Wu was in his choice.

"Besides, there's nothing else to consider; there's no other stone in this room better than this one!"

To this, the staff could only say, if you're happy, so are we.

After all, their job was merely to help Lu Wu pick a summoning stone, and now that Lu Wu had made his choice, their task was deemed complete.

However, just as the staff were about to leave with Lu Wu, the staff's work bracelet received a message. After reading it, they paused and stopped Lu Wu.

"Sorry, one moment please!"

"What's up?" Lu Wu cocked his head.

"Uh, considering your excellent performance during the competition, the Secret Realm has decided to award you an extra Summoning Ceremony. Do you want to use the summoning stone right away?"

"Now?" Lu Wu wasn't ready yet, and besides, he wasn't too fond of the quality of this summoning stone.

The staff added, "A Summoning Ceremony usually requires at least 10 Internal Network Points, and if you're unsatisfied with the Summoned Beast, you can simply sell it back to us without making a contract."

Hearing this, Lu Wu immediately agreed.

"Alright, let's do it now!"

Seeing Lu Wu agree, the old pros in the Secret Realm Management Backend became elated.

It was coming back!

The 200 points they had just lost were coming back.

But their excitement didn't last long; in less than half an hour, the joy on their faces turned to incredulous paleness.

Because Lu Wu had used the summoning stone, and the result was out—Bronze Quality!

Evidently, they didn't get their lost 200 points back; in fact, at this moment, they had lost another 200 points.

# Chapter 110: 109 rotten corpse monster

Underground Cave Secret Realm backend.

This place fell into a brief silence after Lu Wu had used the summoning stone, summoned a summoned beast, and had its quality assessed.

After a good while, the four wily old birds finally burst out.

"How is this possible? How can it be bronze?"

"Didn't they say that these summoning stones have been sifted through time and time again? How could there still be a bronze quality one left? What is the logistics department even doing?

We weren't planning any gimmicks recently!

This is a business secret realm, not a charity one, okay!"

"Also, how did he manage to pick out such a bronze one from amongst these hundred-plus summoning stones?

Could it be that his talent is really that monstrous? That he could learn the art of summoning stone appraisal in just a few hours?

Or is he truly some chosen one, with astonishing luck?"

......

From their words, it was not hard to discern that they truly did not want to believe this reality; after all, although they manage the backend of the secret realm, they aren't any big shots, and those 200 points were really a heavy burden for them.

Only at this moment did they deeply understand what it means to cherish life and stay away from gambling!

......

Meanwhile, over at Lu Wu's side.

At this moment, he was frantically wiping his hands because he had just touched the summoned beast that had been summoned.

...

Name: Rotten Corpse Monster

Power: 0 stars (newly summoned baby)

Quality: Bronze (Inferior) (Upgrade)

Attribute: Undead, Undead Type

State: Hungry (Aba Aba)

Weakness: Light

Description: A summoned beast with some potential, its initial quality is far better than Little Skeleton's.

...

Looking at this summoned beast's attributes, Lu Wu took several steps back in disdain and gestured with his head towards the stupefied staff member beside him: "Do you guys take this thing?"

"What?"

The staff member was a bit dazed; he hadn't yet gotten over the fact that Lu Wu had summoned a bronze quality summoned beast.

"I said, do you want to buy this summoning beast baby?"

Lu Wu repeated himself, and this time the staff member understood, but was even more confused: "You don't want it?"

How could Lu Wu possibly want this thing?

Having discovered that he could sense the attributes of the summoning stones, he was now feeling quite proud, deeming that bronze level summoned beasts were beneath him.

His second summoned beast had to start at gold level, at least?!

Another point was that Lu Wu himself knew that even though he had a cheating tool and could cultivate ordinary summoned beasts, it was too exhausting to train ordinary ones.

For now, aside from Little Skeleton, he didn't plan on cultivating any others.

Of course, Lu Wu wasn't going to honestly explain this to the staff member; he'd just toss any old excuse their way.

"I've already got an Undead Type summoned beast, our Little Skeleton is quite good, I don't need another Undead Type!

Besides, it's too ugly, I'm afraid it might scare our Dudu."

Hmm, Lu Wuqing might not be the most emotionally intelligent, but every now and then, he would say something quite impressive.

Upon hearing this, the Little Skeleton, who was curiously poking the rotten corpse monster with an electric stick, along with Dudu, who was somewhat timidly hiding behind Lu Wu, were both exceptionally happy.

The Little Skeleton even showed off its electricity on the spot.

As if to say, the Little Skeleton is super amazing, the Little Skeleton looks super cool, Lu Wu really loves the Little Skeleton!

It's just that the staff nearby were somewhat powerless to complain.

What kind of crap reason is that?

You don't want it because it's the same type? Go tell that to the Summoners who specialize in nurturing the same type!

Besides, if you're only keeping one of the same type, wouldn't it make more sense to trade the trashy Little Skeleton for the rotten corpse monster?

What's more outrageous, you're rejecting it because it's ugly, as if you're choosing a Summoned Beast, not a wife.

And since when do you care about looks in a Summoned Beast? How come you're not picky about looks when choosing a girlfriend? How did your standards drop so drastically that you end up marrying a chubby girl?

Of course, these thoughts are merely in the mind of the staff who don't dare to utter a word out loud, much less show it. Besides, they'd be too happy if Lu Wu sold them this Bronze Quality Summoned Beast Baby.

Lu Wu might find it ugly, but there are plenty of others who won't.

However, such a trade is not their decision to make; they can only report it to management, namely those four who had just had an epiphany about the true meaning of "cherish life, stay away from gambling."

When they heard that Lu Wu wanted to sell this Summoned Beast Baby, they were stunned too, but then they thought about it.

This guy is a Cultivation Master, and well, Cultivation Masters are not only cunning but also rich!

Plus, among hundreds of Summoning Stones, he precisely found a Bronze Quality Summoning Stone, clearly mastering a certain level of Summoning Stone identification. He wouldn't miss this one Bronze Quality Summoned Beast.

What's treasured by them might be nothing more than a blade of grass to someone else.

Thinking this way, the managers' hearts ached even more.

Heartache aside, the trade must go on.

After confirming that Lu Wu was indeed interested in trading, they swiftly sent a representative. Hmm, those four old slicks, citing poor heart health, immediately sent a young fellow to conduct the trade with Lu Wu.

And maybe it was because Lu Wu helped the young fellow earn a big sum of points, but the young guy was particularly enthusiastic towards Lu Wu and pretty agreeable during the trade.

He even kept suggesting higher prices for Lu Wu.

Eventually, with the assistance of the young guy, Lu Wu sold the rotten corpse monster for 800 points to the Secret Realm.

This price was something Lu Wu looked up on the Internal Network; it was about right for a Bronze Quality Summoned Beast Baby.

And with the sale of this Summoned Beast Baby, Lu Wu's first journey into the Secret Realm was almost at its end.

This trip to the Secret Realm had brought him quite significant gains.

His Summoned Beast's power increased, his knowledge of Summoned Beast Cultivation improved further, he made a splash by climbing the ranks, struck a blow against the Hengheng Monster, and incidentally made 800 Internal Network points.

"Great, I'll spend a few days organizing what I've learned, prepare everything I need to, test out all the methods I've thought of, and then help Little Skeleton undergo its first Evolution as soon as possible."

After getting his gains in order, Lu Wu called Li Kai to come pick them up.

Li Kai was on call and arrived promptly.

One phone call from Lu Wu, and he immediately left his store in the hands of Wang Dashan, who had been lounging around and refusing to leave, and drove over to pick them up.

Lu Wu didn't really have any friends in the Secret Realm, so there was no need for farewells when departing.

Quietly they came, quietly they left.

What Lu Wu didn't know was that two individuals were secretly watching him leave.

One was the Hengheng Monster that had been made to cry today, now holding a grudge.

The other was the young guy who had just traded with him for the rotten corpse monster and added him as a friend.

The difference was that the Hengheng Monster was full of resentment, while the young guy, upon seeing Li Kai arrive, felt a bit regretful, though what he regretted, no one knew.

# Chapter 111: 110 Go Home

After driving like a madman for an hour to the Secret Realm, Li Kai spent another hour on the road bringing Lu Wu and the others to the entrance of Lu Wu's neighborhood.

Helping with the luggage, the hardworking Li Kai was ready to head back without even taking a sip of water.

On one hand, Lu Wu had just returned, and he couldn't tire out Mr. Lu.

On the other, during the drive back, Li Kai had consulted Lu Wu about his own recent research projects and received many enlightening ideas. Now, bursting with inspiration, he was eager to return to his research.

However, as he was about to get into the car, Lu Wuyi pulled him back.

After all, the man had driven for two hours to come over. Lu Wu couldn't let him leave without even having a cup of tea, could he?

Thus, Li Kai was brought into Lu Wu's home for the first time.

But since Lu Wu hadn't informed his family of his return, they were unaware and not a single person was at home when he arrived.

With no choice, Lu Wu put down the luggage and brewed a cup of tea for Li Kai himself.

Meanwhile, Dudu, having put away the luggage, dove straight into the kitchen. It was almost dinner time, and with Li Ruyu not home, Dudu took it upon herself to cook.

One played host and the other cooked; they already resembled a young couple.

Li Kai, seeing this scene, felt a heartwarming atmosphere all around and couldn't help but silently praise his mentor Mr. Lu.

Not only was he a Cultivation Master with amazing talent and an open mind, freely imparting his cultivation methods to others, but even in matters of the heart, he shone with a dazzling light.

Unlike other geniuses who valued appearances and skin-deep charms, going from one love interest to another deplorably.

Mr. Lu, whether before his rise to fame or after, only had eyes for Dudu, his unremarkable, ordinary childhood sweetheart who was even slightly overweight.

What defines a perfect man? Mr. Lu was the embodiment of such a perfect and faithful good man.

With this in mind, the respect in Li Kai's eyes deepened even more, almost overflowing.

Lu Wu was getting a bit embarrassed by his gaze.

"Uncle Li, don't look at me like that, please, drink your tea!

Oh, and Uncle Li, are you free these next few days? I need your help with something!"

"Free, totally free!"

Li Kai didn't even inquire what it was about; he just nodded his head vigorously.

But Li Kai didn't ask, and Lu Wu shared it himself.

"It's like this: Little Skeleton is now at the edge of needing Evolution. I plan to upgrade its Quality a bit more, and on top of that, polish the Evolution plan for Little Skeleton, preparing it for its upcoming Evolution.

The workload is quite large, and I can't handle it alone, so I wanted to ask for your help!"

Hearing this, Li Kai's eyes suddenly lit up even brighter, and his already fervent nodding intensified.

"Especially free, extremely free!

I, Li Kai, am available 24 hours a day, just leave whatever it is to me, Mr. Lu!"

Li Kai knew.

When Lu Wu mentioned helping out, it actually meant teaching him.

He couldn't possibly miss this opportunity.

Furthermore, from what Lu Wu said, it seemed he already had some ideas about Little Skeleton's Evolution plan.

This made Li Kai even more interested.

Although he was a half-baked Cultivation Master, he was still very much driven by a Cultivation Master's thirst for knowledge.

He really wanted to know how his mentor Mr. Lu planned to solve the problem of Little Skeleton's Evolution—a problem no one else seemed able to overcome.

Li Kai even started to ask about it right then and there.

In this matter, Lu Wu always shared openly. Since Li Kai asked, Lu Wu started to discuss it with him.

Both of them were Cultivation Masters, so when they started talking about cultivation, they easily became engrossed and continued until Dudu finished cooking and called them for dinner, pulling Lu Wu and the others out of their intense state of engagement.

"Let's eat first, we can continue talking about this tomorrow."

After inviting Li Kai to eat, Lu Wu turned to ask Dudu, "How come my parents haven't come back yet? Have you called to check?"

Dudu replied like a little wife, "I asked while I was cooking—Uncle said they had some issues and probably won't be back for dinner. Also, Uncle asked us to pick up Ni Ni from Quancheng Hospital after we eat."

Lu Wu's brows furrowed immediately.

"Quancheng Hospital? Why would Ni Ni be at the hospital? Is she sick?"

"It's not Ni Ni who's sick, it's..."

Dudu bit her lip before she said, "It's Granny Li who's gotten sick."

"Granny Li is sick?"

At first, Lu Wu was a bit confused, not clear on who it was, but he quickly dredged up relevant memories from before his time-crossing. Granny Li referred to Lin Jianying's grandmother, whom Lu Wu also knew, or rather, Lu Wu's predecessor knew.

After all, Lin Jianying was the childhood friend of Lu Wu's previous self, and their relationship was even closer than that with Dudu.

And because Lin Jianying's parents were Professional Summoners, their home was filled with summoner-related items, and his predecessor especially loved visiting Lin Jianying's house.

Having visited often, his predecessor also became close with Lin Jianying's grandmother.

Lu Wu remembered that Lin Jianying's grandmother was particularly fond of his predecessor.

Now hearing that the elderly lady was seriously ill and in the hospital, the memory of the kind old woman made Lu Wu feel downcast, and he also understood why Lu Haikong and the others hadn't come back for dinner.

One reason was due to his predecessor's relationship with Lin Jianying; the three families were actually quite close, with frequent visits between them.

Another reason was that Lin Jianying's parents went missing during an exploration in a Secret Realm a few years ago.

Now it was just him and his grandmother at home, and with her being seriously ill, it was normal for Li Ruyu and the others to go help.

Dudu noticed the gloomy mood Lu Wu was in and immediately panicked.

Ever since Lu Wu summoned Little Skeleton, he hadn't exchanged a single word with Lin Jianying, and she did not know how Lu Wu was feeling about this news.

So, Dudu was at a loss and particularly flustered.

Seeing Dudu's panic, Lu Wu gently patted her head to comfort her and said, "After we eat, let's go see Granny Li!"

Dudu was stunned, apparently not expecting Lu Wu to suggest such a thing.

After all, it seemed Lu Wu hadn't spoken to Lin Jianying for months, and everyone thought Lu Wu must particularly resent Lin Jianying and wouldn't visit his grandmother.

Otherwise, Lu Haikong wouldn't have just told Lu Wu to pick up Ni Ni, rather than to see Granny Li.

Lu Wu's intention to visit Granny Li now—did it mean he was about to forgive Lin Jianying?

At this moment, Lu Wu had no clue what Dudu was thinking or worrying about; if he knew what Dudu and his father were worried about, he wouldn't even know what expression to make.

In fact, Lu Wu didn't hold any grudge against Lin Jianying at all.

After all, Lu Wu wasn't his predecessor, and Lin Jianying wasn't Dudu.

So to him, Lin Jianying was just another person who seemed extremely submissive and obedient—a stranger, nothing more.

Resent Lin Jianying? No offense, but was it really necessary? Was Lin Jianying even worth the effort?

Moreover, Lu Wu's decision to visit Granny Li did not imply forgiving Lin Jianying in any way; it was simply a sincere concern for the kind old lady from his memories—the one who had been particularly close to himself, or rather, to his predecessor.

But Dudu didn't dare to ask, and Lu Wu didn't mention it.

However, upon hearing that Lu Wu planned to go to Quancheng Hospital, Li Kai immediately volunteered to drive Lu Wu there.

Lu Wu didn't refuse, and after dinner, they took Li Kai's car toward Quancheng Hospital…

# Chapter 112: 111 Black Fox (Please Subscribe)

Quancheng Hospital.

Lu Wu saw Lin Jianying and his goblin outside Granny Li's operating room once again.

Lin Jianying was squatting in the corner, arms around his knees, his head buried deeply in his arms, slightly trembling, resembling an abandoned cub.

Beside him stood the currently helpless Goblin Warrior.

Lu Wu didn't disturb them, instead, while picking up his sister who rushed towards him as soon as she saw him, he asked Li Ruyu, who had come with him the day before, "Mom, wasn't Granny Li in good health? How did she suddenly become seriously ill, and what's the situation now? Is the surgery likely to be successful?"

Mentioning this, Li Ruyu couldn't help but sigh deeply.

"The doctor said Granny Li had been sick for a while, but she never mentioned it and didn't seek medical attention, always hiding it and enduring it so that Lin wouldn't find out.

Adding to that, Lin has been busy lately and didn't pay much attention, only realizing it when it was already too late."

"Right now, Granny Li's condition isn't very promising. The doctor said they can only try their best to save her, but after all, she is already over seventy, and it's hard to say whether she'll pull through.

And even if she survives this, her physical condition is still..."

As she spoke, Li Ruyu couldn't help but turn her head to look at Lin Jianying in the corner.

"Moreover, since Lin brought Granny Li here yesterday, he's been like this, not eating for an entire day."

Lu Wu knew about the affection between Lin Jianying and his grandmother.

He also knew that Lin was blaming himself, blaming himself for not caring enough for his grandmother, which led to the current situation.

As Lu Wu glanced at Lin Jianying, Li Ruyu bit her lip.

"Lu Lu, you're here; why don't you go and persuade him to eat something? He's always listened to you since you were kids."

"Me?"

Lu Wu was startled, but he didn't refuse, "Alright, I'll try."

Saying that, Lu Wu put his sister down and picked up a box of food silently handed over by his father, approaching Lin Jianying.

Lin Jianying, hearing footsteps, thought it was the doctor or Lu Haikong coming. He immediately raised his head: "How's the surgery..."

Stopping mid-sentence, Lin Jianying realized it was Lu Wu and had a choked-up reaction, his eyes instantly moistening.

Clearly, Lu Wu's arrival was unexpected and quite impactful to him.

If Lu Wu had a human favorability detector like the 'Golden Finger,' he would certainly see something like [Favorability Increase +99][Success in Strategy]above Lin Jianying's head.

Unfortunately, Lu Wu didn't have such a 'Golden Finger,' missing a chance to open the doors to a new world.

"Why are you here?" Lin Jianying whispered.

"I heard Granny Li was ill, so I came to check on her.

Haven't eaten, have you? Here!"

Lu Wu bluntly handed over the box of food. Lin Jianying, not having eaten or drank anything from yesterday till now, was surprised and took the food.

Then, holding the box, he looked at Lu Wu with eyes gradually reddening.

This scene made Lu Wu particularly uncomfortable, frowning, "What are you looking at me for? Eat!"

Seeing Lu Wu frown, Lin Jianying no longer dared to look and obediently opened the box, began eating hurriedly, but choked after just a few bites.

With a sigh of helplessness, Lu Wu passed him a bottle of water.

"Slow down, no one's competing with you!"

After gulping down some water, Lin Jianying slowed down his eating, occasionally casting cautious glances at Lu Wu.

This behavior strongly gave Lu Wu the impression of looking at a male version of Dudu.

How did this childhood friend manage to make them all behave this way?

Moreover, having raised friends like that, how could he simply see his past self summon 'Little Skeleton' and immediately break away himself?

Hmm, why Lin Jianying chose to go solo was a question Lu Wu had not previously delved deeply into.

After all, he wasn't his past self and had no intention of winning Lin Jianying back, so naturally had no reason to investigate further. When he first arrived, he even thought having fewer childhood friends was better to avoid dealing with complicated interpersonal relationships.

Now, seeing Lin Jianying acting so much like Dudu, Lu Wu felt some curiosity to reflect on it.

With Lu Wu mastering the memories of his predecessor, the reason for Lin Jianying's solo journey was easy to figure out.

Lu Wu remembered that back when he was close with this guy, the guy often vowed to become a professional summoner and find his parents.

Knowing this fixation of his, it wasn't hard to guess why he went solo.

And in front of Lu Wu, acting like Dudu, he completely dared not show up before Lu Wu to speak of this matter.

He was afraid to bring up going solo in front of Lu Wu.

So, after they summoned their beasts, he opted for the simplest tactic.

But although Lu Wu guessed the reason, he wasn't prepared to forgive—or rather to speak of forgiveness might be inappropriate—as Lu Wu never really took the matter to heart.

Neither before, nor now.

Knowing the reason wouldn't lead him to reconcile with this cheap childhood friend because he was not his past self, and Lin Jianying was not Dudu. Maybe they could remain ordinary friends moving forward, but Lu Wu felt there was no need to develop it further.

...

Lu Wu and Dudu didn't stay too long at Quancheng Hospital.

It just so happened that Granny Li's surgery was nearing its end.

Half an hour later, the surgery ended—successfully saving Granny Li, though she remained in a coma.

After seeing Granny Li, Lu Wu took Dudu and his three-year-old sister, Ni Ni, home.

Li Ruyu worried that Lin Jianying alone might not take proper care of Granny Li, so she decided to stay and help.

Lu Haikong, seen by Lu Wu as a devoted, faithful man and father, naturally stayed wherever his wife was!

...

Meanwhile, as Lu Wu left the hospital for home, in the Underground Cave Secret Realm, a young guy who had friended Lu Wu earlier received a call.

On the other end, a low, husky voice spoke, "Black Fox, there's a task I need you to handle."

The young man, or rather Black Fox, nodded immediately, "Please give your order!"

"I want you to investigate someone for me, I'll send you the details soon.

Find out everything about him within three days, remember, everything, and keep an eye on his movements. Notify me immediately if he leaves the city!"

"Yes!"

The brief conversation ended and soon after, Black Fox received a message on his phone.

The message contained all the personal details of the person, along with information related to him.

Seeing the information, Black Fox couldn't help but smirk.

"Fate indeed serves strange paths, didn't expect to interact with you so soon."

...

Tomorrow's chapter will be out by 12 pm, I'll strive to overcome my habit of brevity aiming for a 4,000 to 5,000 words chapter.

# Chapter 113: 112 Quality Improvement

Quan City, Lu Wu's house.

After getting home, Lu Wu had Dudu take his little sister, Little Douding, back with her.

Yes, he really treated Dudu like a little wife, assigning her the chores of laundry, cooking, and babysitting, and yet the girl seemed to enjoy it.

This drove Dudu's dad absolutely nuts!

He was already conflicted knowing his daughter had been out for half a month, especially because she had gone with that jerk Lu Wu.

And now, she even brought a kid back with her, almost giving Dudu's dad a heart attack.

Was it really so fast? A kid in just half a month?

Thankfully, he soon realized the child was Lu Wu's sister, which allowed Dudu's dad's heart to keep beating.

But then he thought about how his daughter didn't come straight home after half a month away but went to do chores for Lu Wu instead, and Dudu's dad felt the urge to grab a knife and have it out with Lu Wu.

Unfortunately, before he could act on it, Dudu's mom strongly suppressed that idea.

In the end, Dudu's dad had no choice but to curl up in a corner and sulk, clutching his chubby self that resembled Dudu's physique.

Meanwhile, over at Lu Wu's place.

He was still busy.

It was already 11 p.m., about the time to write his diary.

But what Lu Wu was busy with at the moment wasn't the diary; he was struggling with something on the internal network.

Lu Wu opened up his personal page on the internal network and glanced at his account.

...

Account: I Want to Be a Sea King (Lu Wu)

Account points: 1655

Account Voucher: One Skill Training Plan Voucher

Account Level: 1

...

Looking at his points, Lu Wu frowned.

"1655 points. I have no idea how long that will last. Right, both upgrading Little Skeleton's quality and his evolution require materials. I also need to get an apple for Dudu. Adding it all up, I wonder if these points will be enough!"

Although Lu Wu was good at earning points, he was equally talented at spending them.

Not to mention the previously stated needs, just his study-related points expenditure in the past half month had cost him more than two hundred points.

This mainly had to do with Lu Wu's brain.

He was quick at memorizing and analyzing, and the more he used his brain, the better it got.

The plans regarding Little Skeleton were deciphered by Lu Wu in just half an hour.

So, within a half-month, he had transformed all the classification plans for Little Skeleton into his own.

The gains were significant, but so was the money spent.

Well, it's just the troubles of having a sharp mind.

With such a brain, points clearly weren't enough.

"This can't continue, I'll run out of money sooner or later."

Lu Wu was a bit worried. Life boils down to the essentials, but he felt he needed to find a way to make money since his points were down to just a thousand or two.

"How about I upload the training manuals of Little Skeleton 12345 and all the Little Skull Soup recipes?"

This was the best method Lu Wu could think of to generate revenue right now.

It sounded good and creative.

However, once Lu Wu actually started on it, he realized it wouldn't work!

No, it wasn't that it couldn't work, but the overlap in the plans was too high. They were obviously abbreviated versions, and uploading such versions wouldn't bring any additional profits.

However, when Lu Wu did upload Little Skull Soup 5, it was accepted and quickly earned him a 100-point optimization award.

This reward made Lu Wu feel even more distressed at having given it.

"Damn, such a loss. If I had known this, I wouldn't have uploaded the optimized version first. I should have uploaded the initial version and then optimized it step by step.

That way, I could have earned a few hundred more points."

Rounding it off, Lu Wu felt he had lost a whole world!

But there was no way to fix this situation, and he could only blame his own naivety.

After swearing to exploit the internal network fully in the future, Lu Wu rebounded and began shopping on the internal network.

Lu Wu needed quite a few things to further enhance Little Skeleton's quality.

This time, there was no Professional Center to foot the bill; Lu Wu had to spend his own money.

Also, Lu Wu planned to look for an apple for Dudu on the internal network. After all, Dudu wasn't Lin Jianying; she was his wife. Lin Jianying's problems could be ignored, but Lu Wu had to manage his wife's weight.

Half an hour later, Lu Wu had purchased all the materials needed for Little Skeleton's advancement, spending 220 points and dropping his assets to 1535.

However, Lu Wu could never find the apple for Dudu.

Most things on the internal network were intended for Summoned Beasts, and there was basically nothing useful for human consumption.

Even when Lu Wu searched using the keywords "Human" and "Edible," what came up were items that looked completely unsafe.

Lu Wu just didn't have the courage to buy them for Dudu to eat.

After all, he could mess with anything, but he only had one wife!

"My account level is only at level 1, and my permissions are insufficient. I can't search for higher-level items or find anything suitable. It seems the matter of Dudu slimming down will have to be postponed."

Realizing this, Lu Wu felt particularly down.

"Getting thin once is so hard, not to mention keeping it continuous…"

Thinking this, Lu Wu felt the whole world darken.

"Time to sleep!"

...

The internal network was exceptionally efficient.

The order Lu Wu placed last night was delivered first thing the next morning to Li Kai's shop, containing all the items required for Little Skeleton's quality enhancement.

When Lu Wu arrived with Dudu holding Ni Ni, Li Kai and Wang Dashan had already been busy dealing with the materials.

Seeing Wang Dashan present, Lu Wu was a bit confused.

Li Kai helplessly said, "He's clinging on here, and no matter what I do, I can't drive him away!"

Wang Dashan immediately explained, "It's not like I have anything to do if I went back, so I thought I'd stay and give Li a hand, and earn my meals here."

That silly man, he even learned how to lie.

You're just here because you're greedy, Lu Wu, why make so many excuses.

After observing the interaction between Li Kai and Wang Dashan, Lu Wu more or less understood the situation between them.

After all, Li Kai had been secluded for years, playing single-player games, and now that he finally had someone to join him online, despite verbally complaining and calling it a nuisance, his actions said otherwise.

Li Kai was willing to keep Wang Dashan around, and naturally, Lu Wu had no objections.

A single sheep needs herding, and so does a flock, plus one more sheep means more soup to stew, doesn't it?

Soon, Lu Wu integrated himself into the preparations, but he was startled the moment he pushed open the door of the workshop.

"Huh, Uncle Li, did you expand your workshop?"

"Yes, I bought the space next door and knocked through to create what you see now."

Li Kai spoke with particular pride.

Taking advantage of Lu Wu's trip to the Secret Realm, he had expanded the workshop.

The workshop, now 80 square feet, not only had all kinds of equipment but also had a ventilation system installed.

From now on, he would never miss Mr. Lu's experiments because of a small workspace.

This workshop could comfortably fit twenty people dancing, and they wouldn't even break a sweat.

Lu Wu didn't think much about it, just briefly marveled at Uncle Li's hidden depths, and then dived into work.

In fact, Dudu was the happiest about the expansion of the workshop.

Before the expansion, the workshop was small and cluttered with various items, only allowing two people inside at a time.

So Dudu could only wait outside every time Lu Wu worked.

Now, with the larger space, she could come in and watch Lu Wu during his working hours.

There she was, as Lu Wu started working, Dudu brought a small stool, holding a pig in one arm and Ni Ni in the other, completely engrossed in watching Lu Wu work with focus.

Hmm, Lu Wu looked especially cool when serious, Dudu was very happy and said she could sit and watch him all day.

But she soon realized she celebrated too soon, as she wasn't alone today; she had brought the kids along.

Ni Ni was three years old and very lively; how could she want to be held by Dudu and watch Lu Wu work all day without moving?

Quickly, the little girl started rebelling, and Dudu, afraid she would disturb Lu Wu's work, reluctantly took her out of the workshop.

On Lu Wu's side,

With the help of Li Kai and Wang Dashan, he finished improving Little Skeleton's quality once again within half a day.

But this enhancement did not quite satisfy Lu Wu.

After discovering that Little Skeleton's framework had the potential to wield attributes it shouldn't have been able to, he wanted to use this enhancement to eliminate the remaining two weaknesses completely.

But the result wasn't as Lu Wu had hoped.

…

Name: Little Skeleton

Power: 3 stars (Ordinary)

Quality: Bronze (Enhanced)

Attribute: Undead, Thunder

Companion Equipment: Little Skeleton's Electric Bat

State: Disappointed (Little Skeleton soaked again, but it seems no stronger)

Skills:

Melee Skills: Charge (Master), Block (Master), Dodge (Master), Heavy Slash (Master)

Special Skill: Charging (Skilled)

Weakness: Light, Fire

Description: Overall, while this enhancement somewhat mitigated the effects of light and fire, there was no significant breakthrough.

ps: The stuff in Little Skeleton's framework seems a bit activated; its sensitivity to energy seems enhanced.

…

"Just as I thought, in this form, Little Skeleton's potential is pretty much tapped out; if it doesn't evolve, even with quality enhancement, the gains are minimal," Lu Wu surmised, clearly having anticipated this outcome.

Therefore, he could still accept the properties of Little Skeleton now.

In fact, when he read the final ps, he was somewhat surprised.

This occurrence boosted Lu Wu's confidence, assuring him in managing Little Skeleton's imminent evolution.

Speaking of evolution, the evolution direction for Little Skeleton had basically been determined on Lu Wu's end.

Although the currently known routes—Mage, Warrior, and Archer—were not very satisfactory to Lu Wu, with no other choices but to pick one of the three, he had to let Little Skeleton take the path of a Mage.

Having raised Little Skeleton for such a long time, Lu Wu had to admit that this type of Summoned Beast was somewhat subpar.

Taking the Warrior path, it didn't grow as robustly as others.

No matter how much it enhanced its strength, it was no match for a giant standing five meters tall with a single punch.

The Archer path? Little Skeleton's aim was poor; the last time it hit someone was when they accidentally ran into its shot.

After much consideration, Mage was the only option.

One reason was that Little Skeleton possessed the Thunder Attribute, and secondly, it was exceptionally good in this area.

Despite Lu Wu being a person of integrity who had never cheated, he had no choice but to properly train and guide Little Skeleton, which was breaking the rules.

…

Well, isn't this getting a bit long? The next chapter should be up by 18:00, and I'll try to extend it a bit more in this one.

# Chapter 114: 113 Evolution Scheme

Regarding Little Skeleton's next evolutionary path and tactics, Lu Wuke had it all figured out.

He planned a multi-layered tactical strategy for Little Skeleton.

Normally, use Ordinary Undead Magic, and in critical moments, unleash the Big Thunder Magic Skill.

He aimed to forge Little Skeleton into a standard Magic Skeleton, creating the illusion that it could surely be killed in melee combat.

But when enemies actually got close, Little Skeleton would surprise them with a big club swing.

If the club wasn't enough, wasn't there the "Charging" skill? Smash them with a big phone!

One smash with a big phone, and Little Skeleton would erupt with power.

Opponents would think Little Skeleton's tactics were only two-tiered when, in fact, it had four layers!

If such a strategy took shape, there'd be no doubt it would make all opponents question their life choices.

Lu Wuke himself was thrilled by this strategy, let alone how others would react.

However, the realization of this multi-layered tactical strategy was still a ways off, as his own Little Skeleton hadn't even evolved yet. Lu Wuke needed to work out the evolution plan.

Well, after improving Little Skeleton's Quality, Lu Wuke would get to work on this evolution plan with Li Kai and Wang Dashan.

For the evolution plan of the Little Skeleton Mage Series, Lu Wuke started with those cases where Mages evolved by chance coincidences.

He had a pretty good hypothesis about the conditions for Little Skeleton Mage evolution after half a month of research.

First and foremost was mastering Magic system skills!

At least one Magic system skill must be mastered, and the more the better.

Secondly, it was necessary for Little Skeleton's spiritual power to reach a certain level and cultivate an interest in Magic system skills.

Thirdly, the environment of the evolution had an effect and required some auxiliary materials as well as a ritual to stimulate evolution.

The first two were tasks for Lu Wuke to handle himself.

He had almost completed these preparations.

In terms of Magic system skills, after further improving Little Skeleton's Quality, Lu Wuke spent 10 points on the intranet to purchase a training plan for the basic Undead Magic Skill "Bone Teeth."

He had a coupon, but he didn't use it—using it for just 10 points would be too wasteful.

Once he acquired the training plan, it took Lu Wuke only half an hour to digest it before he started teaching it to Little Skeleton.

Lu Wuke thought it would take Little Skeleton a long time to pick up on Magic system skills, but to his surprise, Little Skeleton caught on quite quickly. Although it didn't particularly like switching from melee to ranged combat.

It felt that beating Tuantuan with a baseball bat was better. It really enjoyed the 'thud, thud, thud' sensation.

Lu Wuke was well-prepared for this.

He found a large number of Mage-themed anime shows for Little Skeleton to watch.

Little Skeleton was still a child; it didn't have strong likes or dislikes. If it didn't like something, just show it some anime, and it would be happy.

This approach was quite effective, and Little Skeleton quickly fell in love with the Mage profession, which looked very cool.

The downside: by watching too much of this violent, show-offy Mage anime, Little Skeleton was a bit influenced and became somewhat chuunibyou.

It even once asked Lu Wuke why people in the shows would sing during a fight, while no one sang when Little Skeleton fought?

It even asked Lu Wuke if he could sing for it during a fight.

At that moment, Lu Wuke was at a loss for words.

This little guy hadn't even evolved yet, and it already wanted to incorporate its own BGM?

If it evolved, would it not ascend to new heights of chuunibyou?

Nevertheless, although Little Skeleton was a bit chuunibyou, the progress in learning "Bone Teeth" was impressive. It mastered Bone Teeth in a day, and in three days, it had increased its proficiency to "Skilled."

This pace was much faster than when it learned Melee Skills.

If Lu Wuke hadn't been so busy recently, leaving no time to teach Little Skeleton, he would have considered giving it another new skill.

However, Lu Wuke's hectic schedule was nearly at an end.

In fact, his mind was entirely focused on Little Skeleton's evolution. What he was busy with was related to the third condition of Little Skeleton's evolution: the environment, materials, and the ritual.

After spending three days working with Li Kai and Wang Dashan on this condition, Lu Wuke finally achieved some results.

And today was the day to test the outcome of his efforts.

...

Inside Li Kai's studio.

At the center of the studio, 13 little skeletons' heads were arranged in a circle.

At the very center of the circle was a set of intricate lines drawn with fresh Blood, with a clump of black Flames at the core.

It looked quite eerie.

A bit of a gloomy atmosphere lingered.

This was the setup Lu Wuke had created for Little Skeleton's evolution. Although it didn't look that big, the expense was not small, with the biggest cost being the black flame in the center.

This was something Lu Wuke had ordered online, costing him 500 points, which made him wince with pain.

"Hope it works; otherwise, those 500 points are down the drain.

If I lose those 500 points, I'm turning Little Skeleton into a soup and drinking it!"

Lu Wuke said grimly before giving commands to Little Skeleton, which was curiously looking at the circle, "Go, move towards the center of that circle, but don't touch the black Flames!"

The black Flames were the switch for evolution. Once touched, Lu Wuke's plan would officially commence; the flame would be rendered useless whether the evolution was successful or not.

With 500 points on the line and no guarantee of a hundred percent success, Lu Wuke absolutely wouldn't allow Little Skeleton to touch it.

To ensure Little Skeleton didn't act rashly, Lu Wuke could only threaten severely.

"If you touch it, you're never playing on a phone again in your life!"

At those words, Little Skeleton immediately jolted, its bone hands quickly behind its back. Its little skull began nodding furiously, then shaking, desperately signaling to Lu Wuke that it would definitely not touch the black Flames.

"Go on then!"

Only after confirming that the little guy understood did Lu Wuke let it proceed.

Watching Little Skeleton carefully approach the circle, Lu Wuke, along with Li Kai, wore expressions of hopeful anticipation mixed with tension.

Wang Dashan quietly nudged Li Kai, "Do you think Mr. Lu can succeed this time?

Is his approach correct?"

As a staunch supporter of Lu Wuke, Li Kai firmly nodded, "Definitely!"

"Yeah, I think so too!"

"Poor Han, just making conversation for the sake of it. When two Lu Wus got together, who would say Lu Wu wasn't up to par?

If anyone said Lu Wu wasn't up to par, they'd get an earful from them!

These two squatted to the side, full of anticipation as they watched, although they both knew that this was just one of Lu Wuyi's experiments and not a preparation for evolution. Still, it was Lu Wuyi's move, and their expectations were high.

As it turned out, it seemed like they were getting their hopes up for nothing.

Because when Little Skeleton entered the circle, there wasn't any particular reaction at all.

Lu Wu didn't have Little Skeleton do anything special, just had it walk around the circle once before coming back out.

This left Li Kai and the others feeling pretty confused.

At this moment, after Lu Wu felt Little Skeleton upon its return and fell into a brief silence, he waved at them, 'Uncle Li, Uncle Wang, come over and give me a hand.'

The two men exchanged glances and came over.

'Mr. Lu, could it be that our preparation was insufficient, and we need to add something more?'

They thought it must be the case, the most logical explanation.

After all, they hadn't noticed anything different about Little Skeleton just now.

Given the circumstances, either the preparation wasn't right, or the experiment had failed. But in the hearts of the two Lu Wu fanboys, Lu Wu couldn't possibly fail, so they assumed the former.

'No, there's no need for further preparation. Just handle this, and it'll be fine.'

Lu Wu said this while carefully collecting the black Flames, and then he went back to his workbench to continue his research.

This left Li Kai and Wang Dashan utterly baffled.

What's the situation? Did Mr. Lu's experiment really fail this time?

It looked like it had!

Li Kai and Wang Dashan looked at each other, first with some disappointment, but quickly admiration and deep reverence for Lu Wu shone through their eyes.

'Mr. Lu truly lives up to his name, recognizing that the experiment has failed with just a glance, and accepting the failure with equanimity. Who else but Mr. Lu could exhibit such grace?'

Li Kai admired, with Wang Dashan nodding in agreement.

Well, what to say, who says middle-aged people don't fanboy or get obsessed?

If they do, there's not much room for the young folks.

And on Lu Wu's side, his attention was completely focused on Little Skeleton, or more precisely, on Little Skeleton's attributes.

In fact, his experiment hadn't failed at all.

After Little Skeleton had walked around the circle, his Name had gained an additional 'Advanced' option.

...

Evolution Scheme: Skeleton Mage (Optimizable)

Evolution Conditions: Master one Undead Magic Skill, a single instance of low-level Undead Flames

Evolution Process: At a location rich in Undead energy, use 13 Little Skeleton heads as a medium and pig's blood as a catalyst to construct a Basic Undead Ritual. Through the ritual and touching the Undead Flames, evolution can be activated.

Evolution Effect: There's a seventy-something percent chance that Little Skeleton can complete the evolution and randomly acquire a Talent.

...

It wasn't easy, not at all. Lu Wu had studied for half a month and tinkered for three days, spending hundreds of points on experiments, and finally, he had developed this advancement scheme.

However, although Lu Wu had developed this scheme, he did not plan to let Little Skeleton advance just like that.

After all, this was just the most basic scheme. This scheme could still be optimized and polished.

With the knowledge Lu Wu had now, he could at least bring this scheme up to the 1.0 or even the 2.0 standard.

Since this was the first time Little Skeleton would evolve, Lu Wu wanted to give him the best.

Moreover, in this scheme, Little Skeleton's 'hack' hadn't been activated yet, which was unacceptable. Lu Wu had to make good use of this hack.

It's already there, how could he not make the most of it?

But, for the following research, Lu Wu wouldn't need to conduct any more experiments since he could now use his own 'hack.'

What he needed to do was to take this scheme as a foundation, supplement it with relevant knowledge, and then further optimize the plan.

That meant what Lu Wu needed now was to seclude himself for intensive study.

Additionally, the related research work on Li Kai's side could also come to a stop.

Yes, regarding this, Lu Wu informed Li Kai and the others without delay.

The two Lu Wu fanboys had just gone through deification, so when Lu Wu mentioned halting the related research, both were perplexed.

What's this situation?

Could it be that after one failure, Mr. Lu was ready to give up?

How could they, the two Lu Wu fanboys, carry on and keep up their admiration?

They hurriedly urged Lu Wu not to give up!

They said a single failure didn't matter and they believed in Lu Wu's Talent and ability to succeed eventually.

This put Lu Wu in an awkward position.

All he could do was scratch his nose and explain: 'Well, my experiment just now didn't fail, actually. It's already successful.'

'What?'

For the first time, the two Lu Wu fanboys were somewhat skeptical; was Mr. Lu teasing them?

Lu Wu had no choice but to take out the initial version of the scheme and explain it to them.

After half an hour of explanation, Lu Wu had a deeper understanding of the scheme and even noticed some blinds spots he hadn't seen before, which was very beneficial.

As for the other two, they were a bit lost.

After all, given their intellectual gap, even if Lu Wu explained everything to them, it was difficult for them to fully grasp.

At this point for them, whether they fully understood it or not wasn't important, what mattered was that from Mr. Lu's explanation of the scheme, which sounded very powerful, they realized that Lu Wu's experiment seemed to have really succeeded.

This made the two Lu Wu fanboys very comfortable.

They were right, after all, Mr. Lu is Mr. Lu, how could he possibly give up partway? They had underestimated Mr. Lu due to their own lack of insight.

Indeed, Mr. Lu was still the strongest.

............

Hmm, Nu Xiao has grown a bit longer!

Next chapter at midnight,"

# Chapter 115: 114 Eggs (Please Subscribe)

The night deepened, silence enveloped the surroundings, and it was once again time to stealthily scribble in my diary.

In Lu Wu's room, his Little Skeleton donned headphones and held a phone, leaning against Lu Wu's bedside engrossed in anime, while Lu Wu sprawled over his desk, penning his diary.

"December 29th.

In the blink of an eye, it's been 10 days since I returned home.

I've been very busy these past 10 days and haven't found the time to write in my diary, but today I can finally sit down to write properly.

A lot has happened in these 10 days.

Firstly, there's the matter concerning Hao Zhijian—the verdict from the Professional Center is in.

They've ordered compensation for mine and Uncle Li's reputational damage and various other sundry expenses, totaling over 8 million yuan.

They delivered the money on the same day!

Well, I'm not interested in money, and I don't even know what 8,113,521 yuan actually looks like—I just know that this dodgy old man in my house exclaimed he was saving it for my future wife and swiftly fleeced me.

Of course, I didn't let him get away with it smoothly. As soon as the money came in one hand, I told my mom with the other, claiming that I handed over 8.2 million to my dad.

Then, my mom cheerfully and oh-so-gently invited the old man into the room.

Hmm, when I saw the old man again, he was limping along, who knows what he went through.

Then there's the matter with Granny Li.

Despite being busy, I managed to visit her a few times over these 10 days.

However, I couldn't shake the feeling—it might be an illusion—that each visit, she seemed to have aged considerably.

Also, my mom mentioned that Lin Jianying was quietly trying to sell the house to pay for Granny Li's treatment.

I knew why she told me this; she has a kind heart and wanted to help out Lin Jianying.

I didn't stop her.

Just a few days later, I heard that Lin Jianying stubbornly signed an IOU and even offered the house as collateral to my mom.

I felt a complex mix of emotions, a bit saddened.

But what can one do with the inevitability of birth, old age, sickness, and death?

Never mind that, let's talk about something cheerful—like Dudu.

Hey, why would I think that talking about Dudu would be a happy thing? She's been nothing but troublesome!

Sigh, it's been so long and she's still not triggered her Bonds Skill.

Dudu's already secretly cried several times. Damn it, I'm really hoping the old man will come out and lay it all on the line with me!

He's a big shot!

The last batch of apples was from him, and he even presented me with a whole box of them.

That way, Dudu wouldn't have to cry, and I could see her in all her... (scratched out)

Whatever, I, Lu Wu, am face-blind; I truly don't crave Dudu!

Also, the old man at home is no hidden powerhouse.

So, the matter with Dudu still falls on me, but that will have to wait. First, I need to get Little Skeleton trained up.

Speaking of Little Skeleton.

This little fella's teenage angst seems to be getting worse; when I ask it to practice its Skill, it sneaks in music when I'm not looking.

What's it going for here? Aspiring to be a Skeleton complete with its own BGM?

In future, if it enters a competition or something, do I need to carry a speaker for it?

Though, when it sneakily plays its BGM, the efficiency of its Skill practice seems to improve significantly. Alright then, let it be; at worst, I'll just strap a couple of speakers to it in the future.

I've almost finalized Little Skeleton's Evolution scheme, too.

We're currently at version 2.0, and I've got the general idea for utilizing a 3.0 version with add-ons. If nothing unexpected happens, I should be able to work it out in a few days.

But, I'm not planning to hole up and work on this 3.0 version for several days; I'm planning to leave tomorrow for the Big Cemetery.

The Evolution of Little Skeleton requires a location rich in Undead Type energy, and the Big Cemetery is ideal; I need to go early to pick an appropriate spot.

Also, for this trip, I've decided not to take Dudu with me.

The Secret Realm at the Big Cemetery is different from the one we've visited before; it carries certain risks, and the atmosphere there is quite morbid and scary. Considering Dudu is timid, it's better not to bring her along.

However, I'm also not too brave myself, so I don't plan on going alone either. I've arranged to go with Uncle Li.

Having a professional-level powerhouse like Uncle Li around should ensure my safety.

Alright, that should do it for today.

Tomorrow I have to head to the Big Cemetery, so I'd better get ready for the trip and hit the hay early!"

Having written the last word, Lu Wu closed his diary with a satisfying clap, tossed his pen aside, stretched contentedly, and then stood to busily prepare the things he would take tomorrow.

In fact, Lu Wu had already made some preparations before starting his diary, so now all he needed to do was to check everything over quickly.

In a few minutes, after inspecting everything he intended to bring, Lu Wu's gaze lingered on the Divine Origin Fruit.

```

"This thing has been in my possession for almost a month now. I was saving it just in case I needed to use it to help Dudu lose weight, but since Dudu refuses to eat it, there seems to be no point in holding onto it. Why not just eat it first?

Imagine if I could find some skeleton horses or Bone Dragons in the Big Cemetery this time, I could even contract one to bring back. Who knows, after some research, it might even be able to fuse with Little Skeleton and come up with something like a Skeleton Knight."

```

Lu Wu was just blabbering that last part.

Yet, he actually took out the Divine Origin Fruit, examined it for a moment, and then popped it into his mouth and swallowed.

"Mmm, it's crispy and a bit sweet, almost like a plum."

Aside from Lu Wu's evaluation of the taste, it seemed like nothing else happened after he ate the Divine Origin Fruit.

But Lu Wu knew that wasn't because the Divine Origin Fruit was fake or expired or anything like that.

He had checked the information on the fruit and knew its medicinal power was mild. After eating it, it would gradually increase mental and Soul Power over the following few days.

"It's just too slow, isn't it? I don't feel anything at all. Forget it, time to sleep!"

Lu Wu went to bed, somewhat disappointed.

But as soon as he lay down, he realized something was wrong.

Lu Wu usually spent every day in high-intensity brainwork, so he used to fall asleep very easily, typically within three minutes of hitting the bed.

But today was an exception. He tossed and turned for over half an hour and still couldn't sleep.

It was evident that the Divine Origin Fruit was giving him a taste of insomnia.

This made Lu Wu even more frustrated.

Just when Lu Wu thought he would have to pull an all-nighter, an inexplicable wave of drowsiness came over him, and he fell asleep straight away.

Not only did Lu Wu fall asleep, but even Little Skeleton, who was leaning next to him, watching his phone and never slept at night, also nodded off.

After Lu Wu and the rest had fallen asleep, a sneaky figure quietly climbed through Lu Wu's window.

Under the moonlight, this shifty individual was exposed – it was none other than the old man of Lu Wu's house.

"Sneaking into my own son's room, what sort of father am I?" Lu Haikong muttered self-deprecatingly to himself while taking a look around Lu Wu's room.

It had been a while since he last entered Lu Wu's room. Looking around now, he noticed it was quite tidy, especially Lu Wu's desk with its neatly stacked notebooks. The only thing out of place was Lu Wu's diary.

Lu Haikong instinctively picked it up and flipped through, but was immediately bamboozled.

"What's all this? Why can't I understand it?"

Well, of course, Lu Haikong couldn't understand it. Lu Wu knew that a diary could be very dangerous – a careless entry could be a deadly weapon leading to social ruin.

So, it was best not to keep a diary at all, but if you must, then make it unreadable.

Lu Wu didn't have many hobbies, except occasionally writing in his diary. He couldn't change that, so he had to find a way to make it incomprehensible.

Coincidentally, the language in Lu Wu's current world was very different from his previous life, providing him with an advantage.

So he used the language from his previous life for his current diary entries.

Under such circumstances, it would be strange indeed if Lu Haikong could understand it.

Unable to understand his son's diary, Lu Haikong didn't think much of it – if one book didn't make sense, he would just move on to another.

Sure enough, he understood the words in a different notebook, but the impact was even greater.

This time, he could make out the words on the pages, each one he recognized. But when put together into sentences, into paragraphs, Lu Haikong was completely baffled.

"What is this? Am I illiterate? Is this what the world of Cultivation Masters is like?"

Lu Haikong began questioning his life choices. With no other option, he stopped his meaningless activity, which only served to torment himself, and went over to Lu Wu's bedside.

Looking at Lu Wu, fast asleep on the bed, completely defenseless and at anyone's mercy, Lu Haikong's expression grew complex.

"For some reason, I keep feeling that I won't be able to stay with you for much longer.

I might be found out soon. If I am discovered, there probably won't even be a chance to say goodbye.

So, I thought about it and decided to secretly leave you something. After all, you're my only son - I might have to rely on you to take care of me in my old age."

As he spoke, Lu Haikong took out Little Skeleton's Electric Bat and fiddled with it, putting something inside it.

Then he pulled out an egg and placed it in Lu Wu's arms but upon second thoughts, he took the egg back.

"Is this too obvious? I should find a more hidden spot."

Saying this, Lu Haikong's gaze swept around Lu Wu's room, finally resting on Lu Wu's wardrobe.

"This will do!"

Lu Haikong said this, then turned around and pricked Lu Wu to draw a drop of Blood and dripped it onto the egg,

then he pulled out a modest-looking wooden box, placed the egg inside, and tucked the box away in the wardrobe.

After completing these tasks, Lu Haikong left Lu Wu's room through the window the way he came.

Throughout all this, Lu Wu remained unaware that someone had secretly visited his room and engaged in some clandestine activities.

```

# Chapter 116: 115 Big Cemetery

Quan City, Underground Cave Secret Realm.

The Black Fox, diligently occupied with his tasks, suddenly received a message.

He glanced at it, a slight smile curling up at the corner of his mouth; after quickly finishing his work at hand, he headed for the restroom.

Inside the restroom, the Black Fox composed a text message and sent it to a boss who had given him orders.

With the successful transmission of the message,

a so-called boss lurking in the shadows began to advance towards Quan City.

And the organization to which they belonged quietly started to mobilize.

An operation was about to commence.

...

Great Graveyard!

The only Undead Type Secret Realm near Quan City.

Lu Wuyi arrived at the Secret Realm early in the morning with Li Kai.

Once there, Lu Wu was immensely glad he hadn't brought Dudu along!

The Great Graveyard here was completely different from the Underground Cave he had visited before.

That was a fully controlled, commercialized Secret Realm, while this one was either semi-controlled or frankly, not controlled at all.

The Summoner Professional Center had just set up a base camp within the Secret Realm for summoners who enter, which was neither large nor particularly well-outfitted.

The conditions were incomparable to those of the previous Secret Realm.

The most critical issue wasn't the camp's conditions; it was the environment of the Secret Realm itself.

As an Undead Type Secret Realm, the environment has always been this type of realm's Achilles' heel.

Other Secret Realms normally boasted clear mountains and greenery.

Though the color green might cause panic in some, most people found it refreshing, after all, it was the environment that was green, not something else.

Even the Underground Cave type of Secret Realm, being underground, may have a slightly poor environment, but it's just a bit dim, and one could easily get used to it after a while.

However, the situation at the Great Graveyard was different.

Especially after leaving the camp, Lu Wu almost couldn't help but turn back.

The sky here was a gloomy black; the ground was somewhat damp and muddy, riddled with potholes filled with some unknown liquid.

Where the ground was relatively clean and dry, there were mounds of earth that bulged like grave sites.

The air was permeated with a smell of decay and stench; gusts of chilling wind whistled through, sometimes accompanied by eerie wails.

In such an environment, you could shoot a horror movie without the need for any ghosts to scare people senseless.

At this moment, Lu Wu also understood why Li Kai had insisted on him wearing a mask and rain boots before leaving the camp.

Although Lu Wu was particularly averse to this environment, the Little Skeleton seemed to like it very much.

After all, it was an Undead Type Summoned Beast, and this place was like home to it; it really enjoyed it here.

While Lu Wu was still bewildered, it had already wandered around several times, and right now its Pupil Fire eyes were fixated on a murky puddle.

Just as Lu Wu came back to his senses and started looking for his Little Skeleton, he saw it and was hit by a strong sense of déjà vu, making him shiver, "Don't jump..."

"Splash."

Unfortunately, Lu Wu was too late.

The moment he shouted, the Little Skeleton lightly leaped and landed on the puddle.

The murky water splashed with the Skeleton's jump, drenching the surroundings, and covering the Little Skeleton with filth.

Seeing this, Lu Wu couldn't help but cover his head with his hand.

It was over; the Little Skeleton was dirty!

He couldn't keep it now!

But that wasn't the worst part, Lu Wu's 'don't jump' had failed to stop it, but it did succeed in attracting the Little Skeleton's attention.

Hearing Lu Wu shout, it happily wobbled over, bringing with it a stench that not even the mask could block, prompting Lu Wu to constantly ward it off with his hands.

"Don't come any closer! Stay right there! Do not come here!"

The Little Skeleton listened obediently and didn't come any closer, but its Pupil Fire eyes were full of resentment.

Why would Lu Wu not let the Little Skeleton come over? Did Lu Wu no longer want the Little Skeleton? Had Lu Wu turned bad?

Seeing the creature actually feeling resentful made Lu Wu seethe.

If it weren't for the fact that they really didn't have the facilities right now, he felt like giving the little rascal a good spanking and then rinse it with a hose a hundred times.

Well, although there were no conditions to rinse it a hundred times, they did have the means to wash it once.

In the end, Lu Wu couldn't restrain himself; he dragged the Little Skeleton back into the camp, gave it a bath, and then they went out again.

Going right back after just leaving, and to bathe a Summoned Beast at that, Lu Wu guessed he must be the first to do so.

"Don't jump into puddles anymore, and don't get yourself dirty again, got it?

If you get dirty again, I won't keep you, and forget about playing with the cellphone!"

Once they left the camp again, Lu Wu, while putting water shoes on the Little Skeleton, gave it a serious lecture.

He pulled out the two most effective threats that he knew would resonate with and frighten the Little Skeleton.

Indeed, these threats were effective, and the Little Skeleton became much more well-behaved.

Although its Pupil Fire eyes still flickered when it saw puddles, it now cleverly sidestepped them.

Little Skeleton was quite clever; it knew that stepping on Lu Wu would make him angry, and if Lu Wu got angry, he would no longer let Little Skeleton play with his cell phone.

As for throwing away Little Skeleton? Little Skeleton wasn't afraid!

This little guy's intelligence seemed to grow by the day; not long ago, a casual word from Lu Wu would have scared it to death, but now threats to throw it away were ineffective.

Because it knew.

Lu Wu wouldn't really throw Little Skeleton away, because Lu Wu liked Little Skeleton the best!

However, the cell phone threat still worked, and Little Skeleton was well-behaved for a good while, avoiding puddles to Lu Wu's satisfaction.

But Lu Wu's happiness did not last long as he soon discovered that Little Skeleton was dirty again.

Not only was Little Skeleton dirty, but so was he.

There was no helping it; the Big Cemetery had its own environment, too muddy on the ground, and no matter how careful Lu Wu was, it wouldn't help.

Unless he didn't walk on his own, otherwise he was bound to get dirty.

Lu Wu could only resign himself to it.

"It's fine to be dirty; you get used to it after a while. Going on an adventure in the Secret Realm, when is it not dirty?"

As he spoke, Lu Wu had already taken Li Kai's advice and climbed onto the neck of the Storm Giant Bear.

How should I put it?

This delicate aura about Lu Wu was completely mismatched with the hardy Summoners.

But Li Kai thought it was quite normal; Mr. Lu, their Cultivation Master, wasn't some crude summoner, okay!

And what's this about being delicate? It was elegance and composure!

Well, what else can be said, other than Lu Wu was quite fortunate to have such a boss and student.

And so, Lu Wu's life in the Great Graveyard Secret Realm began.

Lu Wu's purpose in going to the Big Cemetery this time was twofold: one was to find a suitable Evolution spot for Little Skeleton, and the other was to train Little Skeleton in actual combat, striving to quickly complete the transformation from a warrior to a Mage.

Simply put, when Little Skeleton encounters an enemy, don't use big clubs, use Spells to smash.

This would rely on fighting. Little Skeleton was still young, its melee style hadn't been formed for long, and its brain was becoming more inspired by the day. With more battle experience and guidance from Lu Wu, it should be able to change quickly.

"Little Skeleton's first battle can't be against too strong an opponent. It needs a slightly weaker one, one that will let it fully enjoy the pleasure of using Magic skills to dominate the weak."

With such thoughts, Lu Wu began to help Little Skeleton look for an opponent.

As the saying goes, standing high allows one to see far. Sitting on the neck of the Storm Giant Bear, Lu Wu could see further than others and therefore could spot targets earlier.

Soon, Lu Wu found an opponent for Little Skeleton.

A staggering Corpses!

Although he hadn't fought it yet, Lu Wu could tell at a glance with his current Cultivation Master's ability that this Corpses' power was around two to three stars.

"This one is perfect, its power is close to Little Skeleton's, and it's slow; it'll make the best target. Fighting it, Little Skeleton should be able to enjoy the thrill of overpowering the weak."

Saying this, Lu Wu gave Little Skeleton an order.

"Little Skeleton, fifty meters ahead is a Corpses. Go defeat it..."

Lu Wu had barely finished speaking when a flash of electric light appeared on Little Skeleton, and 'whoosh,' it was gone.

Then, the Corpses was struck down by Little Skeleton's club.

However, due to habits developed in the Underground Cave and the fact that the Corpses hadn't attacked Lu Wu, Little Skeleton, after knocking it down, didn't move, thinking the Corpses would submit like the Summoned Beasts in the Underground Cave.

But the Corpses didn't surrender and immediately retaliated, scratching Little Skeleton and tearing its clothes. The injury wasn't serious, but it made Little Skeleton angry.

These were the clothes that Lu Wu had bought for it, which it liked very much!

Just as Little Skeleton was about to swing its club to strike, Lu Wu's command came.

"Don't use the club, only use 'Bone Teeth,' 'Bone Shield,' and 'Corrosive Hand'!

Now pull away!"

These three were all the Mage Series skills Little Skeleton had recently mastered.

Lu Wu's unexpected command left Little Skeleton confused, not understanding why a job that could be done with a club should use magic.

But Lu Wu was Lu Wu, and Little Skeleton had to listen to him.

So, Little Skeleton immediately distanced itself from the Corpses and threw a 'Bone Teeth' at it, then looked back at Lu Wu.

As if asking, is this how it's done?

"Yes, that's right, go on!"

Lu Wu affirmed and added a temptation, "If you do well, next time you fight, I'll give you some BGM!"

What was "bi ji mei"? Little Skeleton was a bit puzzled.

"It means I'll play music for you when you fight!"

Little Skeleton understood this time, and its enthusiasm surged. As it vigorously nodded its head, it began relentlessly attacking that Corpses.

Left hand 'Bone Teeth,' right hand 'Corrosive Hand.'

Going back and forth with a flurry of blows, it blasted the Corpses into pieces with sheer force.

The moment the Corpses exploded, Little Skeleton looked at the club in its hand and felt it had become somewhat strange.

But quickly, Little Skeleton cast that thought aside, excitedly looking towards Lu Wu with its Pupil Fire flickering.

Although Little Skeleton couldn't speak, Lu Wu could see what the little guy was getting at.

"Little Skeleton won, so Lu Wu has to sing next time, right?"

# Chapter 117: 116 Advanced Skill (Please Subscribe)

Lu Wu had only been away from home once since he transmigrated.

But sometimes, a single trip was enough to cause trouble.

No, scratch that—trouble sought Lu Wu out.

He was just sitting there, minding his own business.

Out of nowhere, Little Skeleton gained an attachment.

And out of nowhere, some ruthless person wanted to find him and kill him.

Talking about bad luck, Lu Wu was quite innocent, but luckily, he had a father.

The last one who came for him was killed by Lu Haikong, but the matter didn't end there, as two were after the attachment on Little Skeleton.

One bigger and one smaller.

The smaller one from last time was killed, the bigger one survived,

He wasn't prepared to let Lu Wu go, or rather, to give up on retrieving the attachment from Little Skeleton.

Because the smaller one died so quickly and cleanly, he didn't leave much clues for the bigger one; moreover, Fucheng was also constantly tracking the bigger one.

That's why, even though the smaller one had been dead for over half a month, the bigger one had only just locked onto Lu Wu.

And even though he had pinpointed Lu Wu, he was only suspicious and wasn't certain that the item was on Lu Wu.

But he wasn't a policeman; he didn't need proof, suspicion was enough for him to act.

"I hope it's him!

But if it really is him, then to silently take down a Ghost, his power must at least be at the leader three stars level.

No, just leader three stars might not be enough, it has to be at least Lord level!

That level of existence could be a bit troubling!"

The bigger one, who was currently on his way to Quan City, felt complicated, somewhat excited, yet also worried.

He was worried that the item wasn't on Lu Wu, and that there might be a Lord level presence behind Lu Wu.

If there really were such a being, things would get troublesome for him!

Although this person was very confident in his own abilities, confident that he could handle his opponent,

The key issue wasn't the possible Lord level presence behind Lu Wu, but that he might have to face an ambush after dealing with his opponent.

"What a hassle, it took so long to free myself, and soon I might have to run again.

But, getting that item and running for a while could be worth it."

With that resolution, he plunged into Quan City.

He wasn't a lone wolf; behind him was an organization, and as a member of an organized group of ruthless individuals, people had already prepared everything for him in Quan City before he even arrived.

He just needed to reach the designated place and meet up with his subordinates.

Once he arrived, the net aimed at Lu Wu, the net against the possible Lord level presence behind him, would open.

Then, with a swift and powerful action, they would trap and scoop up everything behind Lu Wu.

If things went smoothly, he could run off with the dearly desired attachment today.

The journey, at least, went very smoothly.

That afternoon, he reached the designated spot.

When he arrived, his subordinates had everything ready.

The ruthless man took a look and found it even more perfect than he expected.

He was very satisfied, thinking that the Black Fox handling the preparations was talented and needed to be nurtured.

"Now everything's in place, just the final action left!

Just need the gadget on that kid, and if I can grab it and avoid the subsequent ambush, give me a few years and I believe I can make it into the ranks of the top-tier individuals!"

At this critical juncture, even the ruthless man couldn't help but feel excited and exhilarated.

However, life sometimes really shouldn't be celebrated too early—it's easy for extreme joy to turn into sorrow, just like in his case.

His smile hadn't even faded, and he had just raised his arm to give the 'let's move out' order when a discordant voice rang out.

"Uh, sorry, but none of you are going anywhere today!"

With that discordant voice.

An old mess from Lu Wu's house came out, touching his nose, accompanied by a fairy-like summoned beast.

Well, heaven and hell are really close.

Ten minutes later!

The ruthless man's stronghold turned into ruins.

In the middle of the ruins, Lu Haikong held his head, suffering from a severe headache.

"Sigh, why bother having a son when you could have a daughter?

Isn't a sweet and dear little girl far more delightful? Why bother with such trouble?"

This scale of destruction, no matter how much he cleaned up, wouldn't be clear.

Even if it were clear, those particularly sensitive ones would still connect the incident to him, so escape was necessary.

…

Quan City, Great Graveyard Secret Realm.

Lu Wu had no idea whatsoever about what was happening outside.

Someone else ultimately silently bore everything.

His entire focus was on Little Skeleton.

After half a day of training, Little Skeleton's combat style had gradually changed.

It must be said, Little Skeleton had strong learning abilities.

In just half a day, there had been significant changes.

Now it didn't just rush at opponents with a big stick; it had started to use magic skills to attack and kite enemies.

He looked quite the part.

Of course, Lu Wu knew that Little Skeleton was only superficially similar to a mage; deep down, he was still a warrior.

When faced with an opponent, his first reaction was still to use his club to smash, and even if he fought using spells, his tactical thinking and fighting style still bore heavy traces of a warrior.

This would not do, it was not conducive to the Skill Training Plan Lu Wu had envisioned for Little Skeleton.

One could easily recognize it as a warrior, and be prepared for its close combat capabilities, so this aspect definitely needed change.

But this was not a big deal, with more training Little Skeleton would get used to it.

For Lu Wu, the priority was to establish Little Skeleton's magic combat system.

After watching Little Skeleton fight for a long time, Lu Wu also realized where Little Skeleton was lacking as a mage.

"As a warrior, Little Skeleton can fight indefinitely without using electricity, unless its skeleton falls apart.

But as a mage, its endurance isn't as strong.

A mage needs Mana to deal damage, and Little Skeleton's current Mana, when fully unleashed, can't last long.

The saying about 'three-minute real men' applies here.

Well, whether Little Skeleton is a man or not aside, it probably can't even last three minutes."

As a man, Lu Wu felt quite troubled that Little Skeleton couldn't last long, but this was a problem not unique to Little Skeleton; it was common to all mages.

Although a mage's endurance increases in the later stages and becomes somewhat bearable, that's in the later stages; there's definitely no solving the endurance issue in the early stages.

And there's no need to!

For a mage, just focus on increasing the Magic Power.

There's nothing that a set of skills can't kill. If there is, then use two...

Uh, alright, generally if one set of skills can't finish the job, there's no chance for a second set; just lie down and wait for death.

Of course, Little Skeleton wouldn't need to lie down; after completing its skills, it still has its club, but even with melee capabilities, Little Skeleton is still a mage, and Lu Wu needed to help it build a good spell system.

To make Little Skeleton's spells complete.

"Little Skeleton's current three Magic Skills: 'Bone Teeth' as a Basic Skill lacks power!

'Bone Shield' is a defensive skill, essentially a bluff, making one believe that's the last line of defense.

'Corrosive Hand,' although it has a controlling effect, isn't very strong and is somewhat rubbish. All these skills are just to enrich Little Skeleton's skill repertoire.

If we're talking real combat, they might not be very useful.

If we want Little Skeleton's skills to be complete, we're missing two skills, one control skill, and one strong output skill!"

Saying this, Lu Wu started searching through his smartphone attached to the neck of Storm Giant Bear, logging onto the internal network to find skills suitable for Little Skeleton.

Lu Wu quickly found two appropriate skills for Little Skeleton.

One was 'Bone Prison' and the other was 'Bone Spear', both Undead Type Magic Skills, which were in the same series as Little Skeleton's current 'Bone Teeth' and 'Bone Shield'.

However, despite being from the same series, their prices were different.

After all, 'Bone Teeth' and 'Bone Shield' were Basic Skills, while these two were nearing the advanced level category.

Hmm, Summoned Beasts' skills also have levels.

Although the system of Summoned Beasts only had about a hundred years of history and many distinctions were blurred, they still existed.

Summoners themselves summarized them into Basic Levels and Advanced Levels, and the skills currently circulating in the market were of these two levels.

There weren't really any Skill Training Plans online.

After all, the skills available online were either insights from Summoners themselves or the hard work of other Summoners over decades.

The former had no training plans, and the latter definitely wouldn't be sold.

Of course, given Lu Wu's current financial status and proficiency, even if someone did offer an Advanced Level skill, Lu Wu couldn't afford it. Let's put it this way, even if he could afford it, Little Skeleton currently wouldn't be capable of learning it.

To be honest, Lu Wu was even hesitating whether or not to buy 'Bone Prison' and 'Bone Spear'.

On one hand, they were expensive; although these two skills hadn't reached the advanced level, their prices were ten times that of 'Bone Teeth', both Skill Training Plans costing 100 points.

Lu Wu's fortune, although substantial, had also been heavily utilized recently, with just 'Undead Fire' taking 500, not to mention others.

If he bought these two skills, Lu Wu wouldn't have many points left.

He was also worried that Little Skeleton wouldn't be able to learn them if he went for it.

So, after much hesitation, Lu Wu decided to take it one step at a time and went ahead and purchased 'Bone Spear' to increase Little Skeleton's output.

Initially, Lu Wu thought that a skill nearing an advanced level would not be easy for Little Skeleton to learn.

It turned out he had somewhat underestimated Little Skeleton's ability (capacity) to learn (adopt).

In about two days, Little Skeleton mastered 'Bone Spear'.

Seeing his Little Skeleton perform so brilliantly, Lu Wu, spurred by excitement, also acquired 'Bone Prison'.

Little Skeleton did not disappoint Lu Wu, mastering 'Bone Prison' in a day and a half.

Seeing this learning efficiency, Lu Wu, excited, also used up a discount coupon in his inventory, exchanging it for an Advanced Level Thunder Attribute Magic Skill 'Thunder Strike' for Little Skeleton.

Lu Wu hoped that Little Skeleton could master 'Thunder Strike' as quickly as before.

However, after three days, Little Skeleton struggled and failed to even scratch the surface of this Advanced Skill, giving Lu Wu quite a headache.

After much research, Lu Wu finally concluded it was probably a matter of power.

Little Skeleton was still too weak, unevolved, and not elite; not mastering 'Thunder Strike' was quite normal. Once Little Skeleton evolved and advanced, it should be able to grasp it.

As far as Little Skeleton's evolution was concerned, Lu Wu had already practically completed the preparations.

During their time in the Great Graveyard, Lu Wu had finalized the plan for Little Skeleton's evolution and had also chosen the location for it.

Little Skeleton's magic system was now fully built, and preparations for evolution could begin.

"If all goes well, not only could Little Skeleton complete its evolution this time but also its advancement!

Additionally, after consuming that Divine Origin Fruit, both my spiritual power and soul power greatly increased, reaching a threshold. I have a premonition that once Little Skeleton evolves, there will be significant surprises on my end too."

Muttering to himself and feeling expectant, Lu Wu, dragging Little Skeleton along, headed to their chosen evolution point.

...

# Chapter 118: 117 Evolution (Subscribe Please)

Quancheng No.3 Middle School, within Ye Qingxue's office.

A series of knocks echoed.

Ye Qingxue did not lift her head, continuing to examine the documents in her hand.

"Come in!"

The next moment, the door was pushed open, and a teenager walked in, standing respectfully in front of Ye Qingxue.

"You were looking for me, teacher?"

Ye Qingxue stopped what she was doing and looked up at the youth in front of her.

"Your recent training progress has fallen quite behind."

Upon hearing this, the youth panicked, "Teacher, I…"

"There's no need to explain. I am aware of your situation. Your grandmother has been seriously ill, and you've been taking care of her recently, which is an understandable reason for your lagging progress in training."

Lin Jianying, the youth, was startled, seemingly not expecting Ye Qingxue to be so easygoing.

Ye Qingxue did not bother with Lin Jianying's astonishment and continued, looking down at the documents in her hand, "However, though it's understandable, the fact remains that your training is not keeping up.

I hope you can manage this matter and find balance between taking care of your grandmother and training.

It's something you must handle well. After all, you're not alone; you have two teammates, and your lagging behind can impact them."

Lin Jianying nodded, "Rest assured, teacher, I will do my best to catch up with the progress."

"Hmm!"

Ye Qingxue did not say much else, just nodded to acknowledge she had heard.

She then continued with her work, leaving the office in an awkward silence.

"Um, teacher, if there's nothing else, I will go down to train."

Ye Qingxue nodded in response.

Lin Jianying touched his nose and turned to leave.

However, just as he was opening the door to leave, Ye Qingxue suddenly looked up and said, "Oh right, I will be conducting an assessment in 10 days. If you can't keep up with the progress, you'll have to leave your current small team and fall back to a second-line team!"

Lin Jianying was stunned, immediately turning his head to look at Ye Qingxue.

But she wasn't looking at him, and there was no intention of making eye contact, leaving Lin Jianying speechless and with no choice but to leave in silence…

...

Quan City, Great Graveyard Secret Realm.

Having stayed in the Great Graveyard environment for several days, Lu Wu had slowly become accustomed to its conditions, even with his inclination for cleanliness.

Recently, he had been able to walk on the ground and was no longer stuck on the shoulders of the Storm Giant Bear like he had been during the previous few days.

However, these past few days, Lu Wu had not touched Little Skeleton at all.

There was no helping it; the little fellow was too much trouble.

Moreover, combined with the inherent issues of the Great Graveyard environment, within a few days, Little Skeleton had successfully turned itself into a dirty mess, becoming a mobile source of foul smell.

Even so, it kept trying to cling to Lu Wu, to his irritation.

If it weren't his own, Lu Wu would have tossed Little Skeleton away long ago.

"Endure it, just endure a little longer. This little fellow is about to evolve soon, and once it does, I'll be relieved," Lu Wu comforted himself while rushing to the predetermined Evolution Point for Little Skeleton.

The Evolution Point Lu Wu sought for Little Skeleton was located in a basin surrounded by eighteen large graves, 15 miles east of the Great Graveyard Camp.

As the area was a basin and lower in elevation, the ground was filled with a black liquid.

Upon arriving, Lu Wu couldn't stand it and had to return to the Storm Giant Bear's shoulder, but Little Skeleton seemed particularly fond of places like this.

Seeing the site and hearing Lu Wu say he would let it go in, Little Skeleton was ecstatic, its Pupil Fire grew significantly brighter.

Its demeanor was much like an Er Ha who had just seen farmland, incredibly eager to jump in!

This time, Lu Wu did not stop it; it was already dirty, so he didn't care if the little guy got dirtier.

However, the owner of this place was not at all welcoming to Little Skeleton.

As Little Skeleton dashed towards the basin, a black Water Arrow was sprayed at it.

The assailant was clearly a professional, shooting precisely and viciously, aiming straight for Little Skeleton's forehead.

Luckily, Little Skeleton's reaction was quick, and it managed to raise a Bone Shield in time to block the Water Arrow.

Lu Wu nodded his head in satisfaction upon seeing this.

"Hmm, not bad, the training these past few days hasn't been in vain. Confronted with a sudden situation, the first reaction was to use a Spell to defend instead of Dodge.

Although the latter might save more energy, the former is more suited to Little Skeleton's design.

Now, Little Skeleton is a reserved Skeleton Mage.

While Lu Wu was nodding his head, Little Skeleton had already begun fighting with the master of the basin.

The opponent was a Summoned Beast of the Corpses Type.

An evolved form of a Corpse, it was an Elite Level Rotten Mage, just like Little Skeleton, also of the Magic type.

Both were mages, one Elite and one Ordinary, one had evolved while the other hadn't—Little Skeleton was decidedly at a disadvantage.

Over there, the Rotten Mage was screaming hideously, waving its arms continuously casting black Water Arrows.

Meanwhile, Little Skeleton was propping up its Bone Shield while countering with Bone Teeth.

The two mages were like two stationary turrets, neither moving, just bombarding each other with their attacks.

This made Lu Wu unable to help but criticize, "Why do battles between mages seem so lackluster? They're rigid to the extreme! Are these two competitors just not up to par?"

No sooner had Lu Wu spoken than he was proven wrong.

Suddenly, the Rotten Mage that had been mechanically hurling black Water Arrows let out a roar—a clear sign of a spiritual control skill—and Little Skeleton, its opponent, was immediately ensnared, its Pupil Fire dimming.

At the same moment, some black liquid that had fallen on Little Skeleton's Bone Shield began to move, quickly shaping into a black water python and instantly trapping Little Skeleton.

"Oh crap!"

Lu Wu was stunned on the spot, not expecting a wild creature to be so cunning.

Without further thought for mage this or mage that, Lu Wu decisively issued a command.

"Quick, use 'Charging'!"

At Lu Wu's command, Little Skeleton's bones flickered with electric light, not only breaking free from control but also, before being trapped by the black water python, making a quick Charge to close the distance.

But the black Water Arrow hadn't given up on its prey, biting down hard on the tail of Little Skeleton.

Simultaneously, the Rotten Mage swung its arm forward for another assault, several black Water Arrows barreling towards Little Skeleton's forehead.

The Rotten Mage opened its mouth again, clearly readying another control skill.

Lu Wu calmly gave the order.

"Use the Bone Shield, Charge, close the distance for me!"

Obediently, Little Skeleton, shield in place, charged through the Water Arrows, propelled by the speed boost from 'Charging + Charge,' and reached the Rotten Mage. It violently shoved its club into the Rotten Mage's mouth, interrupting the spellcasting.

Then, seizing the moment, Little Skeleton swung its club wildly, rapidly battering the Rotten Mage to near oblivion, on the brink of defeat.

Suddenly, Little Skeleton's Pupil Fire flickered with recollection, remembering that its master, Lu Wu, had instructed it to use spells in combat. It promptly halted its attack, stepped back a few paces, first constrained the now immobile Rotten Mage with "Bone Prison," then delivered a "Bone Spear" to finish it off.

This entire sequence followed the tactics laid out by Lu Wu to the letter—so standardized it was painfully rigid.

Rather than reprimanding Little Skeleton for its obviously self-deceiving behavior, Lu Wu paradoxically praised it, going out of his way to extol the precise angles, timing, and accuracy of its spells, showering it with crazy admiration until it was dizzy from the flattery.

And, truly, Little Skeleton believed that it had defeated the Rotten Mage with spells alone.

It expressed that spells were fun and that it especially enjoyed using them.

Clearly, this was a typical case of being bewilderingly hoodwinked.

In order to steer Little Skeleton towards the path of a mage, Lu Wu really did put in the effort.

After successfully hoodwinking Little Skeleton, Lu Wu started to get busy.

He directed the Storm Giant Bear and Little Skeleton to gather earth from the surrounding graves, elevating the center of the basin to create a platform.

Once the land had been raised, Lu Wu took the blood of the Earth Armor Pig and started drawing lines upon the soil.

After half an hour, a huge pattern composed of lines was completed.

Lu Wu placed the craniums of Summoned Beasts defeated by Little Skeleton in the Great Graveyard around the pattern and positioned a pig's head in its center. He then took out Undead Fire and placed it on the pig's head.

With this, Lu Wu's preparations were essentially done.

Having finished everything, Lu Wu retreated, calling back Little Skeleton—who was now soaked from playing in the water within the basin.

"Go on, go inside, and pick up that flame of Undead Fire!"

Little Skeleton had been frolicking in the water like a playful puppy, yet it was far more obedient than any dog; upon receiving Lu Wu's command, it curiously went into the pattern and picked up the black flame of Undead Fire.

"Boom!"

The moment Little Skeleton touched the Undead Fire, it exploded with a bang, and Little Skeleton caught fire.

Its clothes burned off in an instant, and even the cell phone hidden in its skeleton was destroyed.

Seeing its phone broken yet again, Little Skeleton was instantly upset, but before it could feel too aggrieved, the energy of the Undead Type surged toward it from the entire basin.

Enveloping Little Skeleton in thick black flames, it began tending towards solidification. Soon, Little Skeleton was shrouded in black fog.

Almost simultaneously, Lu Wu felt a chill surge through his brain.

Within this chill, Lu Wu vaguely sensed something in his mind.

Being experienced, Li Kai recognized at a glance that his teacher, Mr. Lu, was about to experience a spiritual advancement.

Li Kai was shocked—Summoners and Summoned Beasts all had levels, but Summoners leveled up slower than Summoned Beasts, usually needing to raise at least two Elite Level Summoned Beasts before advancing.

But Mr. Lu only had at most one, how was it possible that he was advancing so quickly?

Nevertheless, upon rethinking it, Li Kai found it natural that his extraordinary teacher, Mr. Lu, would level up faster than others.

...

I still have the feeling that some people will say I'm too brief, too soft!

# Chapter 119: 118 Little Skeleton Mage

Quan City, Great Graveyard Secret Realm.

The evolution of Little Skeleton and the advancement of Lu Wu happened simultaneously.

The process went smoothly.

After all, Lu Wu had prepared everything necessary, and with Li Kai, a powerhouse overseeing the event, how could it not be smooth?

In about three hours, the evolution and advancement of both were completed.

Lu Wu then opened his eyes.

He felt that the world before him was clearer than ever before.

This should have been a refreshing experience, but unfortunately, he was now in the Big Cemetery.

Thus, this clarity became a deadly thing.

It maximized all the foul smells, decays, and unsightly aspects of the Big Cemetery.

Lu Wu was already a bit of a clean freak, and this ordeal immediately overwhelmed him, turning his face pale and his throat scratchy, almost making him vomit.

This made Li Kai nearby quite nervous.

"Mr. Lu, what's wrong? Are you feeling ill?"

"No, no, I'm fine!"

Lu Wu covered his mouth, taking a while before he finally recovered.

And as Lu Wu recovered, he noticed something unexpected.

He realized he could now see the attributes of the Storm Giant Bear, though not all of them and with several question marks, but he indeed saw them without having to touch the Storm Giant Bear.

Had the Golden Finger upgraded?

This was somewhat of a pleasant surprise for Lu Wu.

Although it seemed it only upgraded the aspect of not needing to touch and there seemed to be a limitation in distance beyond five meters, it was still a pleasant surprise for Lu Wu.

At least it was more convenient than having to physically touch it, constantly needing to ask people to "feel up" the creature.

As Lu Wu felt pleasantly surprised, Li Kai also got excited.

"The evolution of Little Skeleton is also complete, Mr. Lu, you succeeded, you really managed to evolve Little Skeleton into a mage!"

Lu Wu was stunned and immediately looked toward Little Skeleton, his lips twitching into a smile.

At this moment, Little Skeleton had completed its evolution and had undergone some changes in appearance.

Its skeletal structure hadn't grown much, stabilizing at about one meter sixty.

But it now wore a pale long robe, and the baseball bat it held had also turned into a bone staff nearly as tall as Little Skeleton itself.

Little Skeleton was currently curiously looking at its new bone staff and the clothes it had gained.

"Really, with this magic robe on and holding the bone staff, it does look quite the part."

Lu Wu smirked and summoned Little Skeleton over.

Who knew that before Lu Wu even spoke, Little Skeleton, performing a bit of a sulk, put on a "Little Skeleton is unhappy, Little Skeleton doesn't want to deal with Lu Wu" attitude.

Being its raiser, Lu Wu naturally knew how to handle it.

"Are you coming over? If not, don't expect me to buy you a new phone!"

With those words, Little Skeleton could only come over, feeling resentful.

It couldn't help it; it was broke after all.

And phones, really, why do they break so easily?

Isn't there a type of phone in the world that doesn't break?

As Little Skeleton approached, its attributes appeared in front of Lu Wu.

…

Name: Smart and Somewhat Violent Little Skeleton Mage (One-time Evolution)

Power: 1 Star (Elite)

Quality: Ordinary (Upgraded)

Attribute: Undead, Thunder, Netherworld Fire

State: Resentful (Does Lu Wu want to burn you, Little Skeleton? That fire just now was huge! Little Skeleton's phone broke again! Little Skeleton is very unhappy!)

Skills:

Basic Melee: Charge (Master), Block (Master), Dodge (Master), Heavy Slash (Master)

Basic Magic: Bone Teeth (Master), Bone Shield (Master), Corrosive Hand (Skilled), Bone Prison (Skilled), Bone Spear (Skilled)

Special Skill: Charging (Skilled)

Advanced Skills: Ghost Fire Skill (Unmastered), Thunder Strike (Unmastered)

Talent: Dual-tasking (Can cast two magic skills simultaneously, but will increase energy consumption by 30%)

Magic Enhancement (Basic) (Passively increase magic power by 15%)

???, ???

Weakness: Light, Fire

Companion Equipment: Mysterious Bone Staff, Mage Robe

Description: With cheats like this, what else do you expect me to say?

Well, I'll say it anyway, don't get too close, or it will bash your head in with the bone staff!

…

Item: Mysterious Bone Staff

Quality: Bronze (Questionable)

Side Effect: Unknown

Description: At the moment, it seems rather useless practically, it's good for show, but doesn't seem to help with casting spells much.

Right, it seems especially tough, no problem knocking on the head.

Also, killing more Summoned Beasts or charging it seems to be somewhat beneficial for it.

...

Item: Mage Robe

Quality: Ordinary

Side effect: Clean Repair (1 time per day)

Description: Yes, you saw it right, this is a piece of clothing with a self-cleaning repair feature, and it has no other effects.

...

How should I put it, when Lu Wu saw Little Skeleton's new attributes, he was especially surprised.

This little guy not only successfully evolved but his power also increased, jumping right up to Elite 1 Star.

He gained two talents at once, plus one unmastered advanced skill.

Once Little Skeleton mastered those two advanced spells, his combat power would immediately skyrocket.

Although Little Skeleton's quality dropped from Bronze to Ordinary due to overdevelopment of potential, all of this was still worthwhile, making Lu Wu very satisfied.

If it weren't for the fact that this little guy was too dirty now, Lu Wu might have already been hugging and nibbling enthusiastically.

In contrast, the attributes of the little guy's two companion equipment made Lu Wu somewhat disappointed.

After checking them, only two words filled his mind: that's it?

"Really a wasted expectation, the Mage Robe is one thing, but I didn't expect the Bone Staff to be the same.

I was especially surprised when I saw the electric stick turn into a Bone Staff, thinking Little Skeleton would have some powerful external equipment, but it turns out it's just a decorative item."

Of course, Lu Wu said this, but he still held a bit of expectation for the Bone Staff.

After all, its quality wasn't low, reaching Bronze, and it seemed like killing Summoned Beasts could make it grow.

When Lu Wu saw the last part, he hesitated for a moment. Although he was somewhat fed up with the environment of the Great Graveyard, he eventually decided to take Little Skeleton on a monster-hunting spree.

He couldn't help it; he was really curious about what the Bone Staff would become after monster hunting.

Given Lu Wu's current situation, pure monster hunting was not difficult, especially since he had Li Kai with him.

They directly found a Corpse Tomb nearby. Li Kai's family's bear exuded a leader's might, intimidated the corpses directly, and then Little Skeleton would go all out, easily harvesting a large number of Summoned Beasts.

Carrying a newbie for leveling was just that simple!

In just half a day, Lu Wu and his group cleared 4 Corpse Tombs, and the number of corpses fallen under Little Skeleton's firepower reached over a hundred.

From this bout of slaughter, the attributes of Little Skeleton's Bone Staff also changed.

[Energy Storage complete!]

Yes, that's the change!

Nothing else really changed, and Lu Wu's mind collapsed on the spot!

"Is that it? That's all?"

He spent half a day exterminating over a hundred corpses just to get this one line.

Isn't that a rip-off?

If he had known this was the case, wouldn't it have been better to just go home?

"Let's forget it, let's just go home! We'll go home and study this slowly!"

Lu Wu was really tired.

He had stayed in that wretched place for nearly ten days.

During these ten days, he really had it tough, living rough without a single good meal or peaceful sleep.

The worst was the environment of the Great Graveyard.

Lu Wu felt that if he stayed any longer, he would become marinated in its foul stench.

Back to the Secret Realm Camp.

The first thing Lu Wu did was to drag Little Skeleton to the camp's bathhouse for a bath.

This was the longest bath Lu Wu had ever taken in his life.

He spent over an hour, using two bottles of shampoo and shower gel, feeling almost like he was soaking too long before he finally stopped.

After the bath, leaving the Secret Realm and on the way back, Lu Wu immediately called Lu Haikong.

He had been in the Secret Realm for ten days, swallowing coarse food for ten days, and upon his tough return home, he wanted a good meal.

Learning from last time, he decided to call early to have the family prepare.

But when he called, he found it couldn't connect.

Lu Wu tried a few times, still unable to connect.

"What's going on? Did Ni Ni break the phone?"

Lu Wu muttered while dialing Li Ruyu's number, but it still couldn't connect.

This made Lu Wu a bit confused and worried, so he hurriedly made a call to Dudu.

Well, Dudu answered immediately.

"Lu Wu!"

Hearing Dudu's excited voice, Lu Wu's anxious heart felt slightly relieved.

"Dudu, where are my parents? What are they doing? Why isn't anyone picking up my calls?"

When Lu Wu received answers like "don't know" and "Uncle didn't mention" to his rapid-fire questions,

Lu Wu's head started buzzing, and he couldn't help but wonder if he had been abandoned?

# Chapter 120: 119 Tuantuan Evolution

Quan City, Lu Wu's house.

Lu Wu had been home for less than half an hour and had already repeatedly confirmed the details of Lu Haikong and his party's honeymoon several times with Dudu.

He couldn't believe he had been left behind.

After all, he was past the prime age for being ditched. Moreover, such unreliable behavior, although typical of Lu Haikong, did not seem like something Li Ruyu would do.

Li Ruyu should have told him about it, not just leave for a vacation without a word.

But no matter how much Lu Wu confirmed, the result was the same.

They really hadn't left anything for Lu Wu nor briefed him about going on their honeymoon.

Where they had gone was unknown!

When they'd be back was unknown!

Lu Wu couldn't even get in touch with them.

This made Lu Wu somewhat anxious.

If they truly had gone on a honeymoon, then it was fine; he could handle a bit of unreliability. What Lu Wu really feared was that they had run into some trouble.

Their sudden departure had genuinely frightened him.

He was also quite worried about them.

Just as Lu Wu hesitated whether to contact Zhao Kai Ming to ask him for help in checking up on them, his phone rang.

It was Lu Haikong, sending a video call invitation.

Lu Wu, puzzled, immediately opened the video.

As the video opened, Lu Haikong, Li Ruyu, and their three-year-old sister all appeared on the screen.

From the background, it seemed they were in a hotel room; looking more closely, damn, there was even a seaside view outside.

Seeing this scene, Lu Wu didn't know what to say.

Had he been anxious for nothing, thinking something happened to them, and they actually just went on a honeymoon?

Meanwhile, an excited Lu Haikong on the other end of the video said, "Son, see how awesome this hotel is? Five-star hotel, presidential suite, more than ten thousand a night! If it weren't for you succeeding, your dad here could never afford such a nice hotel in his lifetime..."

The old man hadn't finished speaking when someone tugged at his ear.

"And you're still talking. Over ten thousand could buy pork ribs for a whole year, and here you are, wasting it!"

Lu Haikong had secretly booked this extravagant hotel, to Li Ruyu's distress; had it been cancellable, she would've done so already.

"Just this once, our son is capable now, isn't he? He wanted us to enjoy, so what's the harm in enjoying once!"

"How dare you talk back!"

...

After Li Ruyu had dealt with Lu Haikong, she took over the phone and started talking to Lu Wu.

It was only then that Lu Wu learned that the sudden honeymoon was orchestrated by Lu Haikong, who had booked the tickets and hotel without saying a word, and they couldn't be cancelled, so Li Ruyu had no choice but to go along.

Their phone had run out of battery at the beachside, so they hadn't received Lu Wu's calls.

"No worries, Mom. It's rare for you guys to go out, just have fun and enjoy yourselves; I'm fine here, don't worry about me!"

Although Lu Wu said this, Li Ruyu still handed the phone to Dudu to secretly brief her. The two of them chatted about something for half an hour before stopping.

Just as Lu Wu was about to hang up, Lu Haikong sneaked back over and whispered cheekily, "Son, remember to send the money!"

Lu Wu hung up the video call expressionlessly.

Although a bit speechless, his heart settled down at that moment, and right then, his stomach started to growl.

After all, he had been upset the entire day.

"I'll cook!"

Dudu saw this and quickly got up to make food for Lu Wu.

However, just as Dudu stood up, off to the side came an especially irate and particularly angry pig snort from Tuantuan.

At the same time, Dudu, who had just stood up, collapsed back down.

"What's the matter?"

Lu Wu's face changed, and he immediately helped Dudu to lie down flat on the sofa, but by then, Dudu had already fallen into a deep sleep.

Lu Wu became panicked and turned to look at the pig.

At this very moment, Dudu's family's pig was also in a special state.

Radiating a yellowish-brown light all over, Lu Wu checked its attributes and found the little fellow was undergoing an evolution triggered by a Bonds Skill.

Seeing this state, Lu Wu's initial nervousness transformed into ecstasy.

However, amidst the ecstasy, Lu Wu was somewhat perplexed.

Why had Dudu's Bonds Skill suddenly activated today? And what was with Tuantuan's angry snort just now?

Lu Wu immediately fixed his gaze on Little Skeleton next to Tuantuan, who looked utterly clueless.

"Did you do something bad?"

Little Skeleton frantically shook its head.

Little Skeleton's state became [Guilty].

No, Little Skeleton did not do any bad things!

Strictly speaking, what Little Skeleton did wasn't really bad, but neither was it humanly!

Wasn't this little guy bullied by Tuantuan all along?

Now that Little Skeleton had grown strong and even evolved, it naturally wanted to show off.

But Tuantuan wouldn't fight it, so Little Skeleton could only brag.

Things like Little Skeleton was very strong now, could beat lots of Tuantuans!

Like how Lu Wu treated Little Skeleton so well, buying Little Skeleton lots of cellphones!

Lu Wu even bathed Little Skeleton!

Little Skeleton was so capable, that's why Lu Wu liked Little Skeleton.

Tuantuan was so weak; surely Lu Wu didn't like Tuantuan!

Who knows how these two Summoned Beasts communicated, but anyway, Little Skeleton conveyed all these sentiments precisely to Tuantuan.

It even picked up the pig like a ball and tossed it from one hand to the other!

Then the pig got angry.

Next, the pig evolved.

After figuring out the situation through Golden Finger, Lu Wu felt quite conflicted.

He didn't know whether he should scold Little Skeleton or hug it.

Although the little guy did something outrageous, it wasn't human to begin with, and after being bullied by Tuantuan for so long, it was normal for it to seek revenge.

Moreover, without the stimulus from Little Skeleton, who knows when the pig would have evolved or when his wife would regain her peak beauty.

Thinking this, Lu Wu forgave Little Skeleton.

"But come to think of it, is evolving that easy?

Just a little stimulus and it evolves, and looking at it, the improvement after evolution must be significant.

I guess it's not much different from Little Skeleton's evolution."

Once again comparing to others' pig, Lu Wu found it time to resent Little Skeleton again.

After all, he had spent a lot of money to raise Little Skeleton to this point, and the final evolution cost Lu Wu nearly a thousand points.

And that's just the beginning, as Little Skeleton's quality improvement and evolution would all cost money.

This little guy is just a money pit, then look at Tuantuan, how worry-free and simple it is.

Just eat, sleep, level up when need be, and evolve when it's time.

"Look at others, then look at you, what's the use of having you!"

Lu Wu pointed at Little Skeleton's head and complained, then went back to Dudu's side.

Although he was happy that Dudu's Bonds Skill had activated, he was also worried that Tuantuan's evolution would draw too much energy, and Dudu wouldn't be able to handle it.

After all, it seemed she hadn't eaten anything nutritious in the past few months, just ordinary food, and Lu Wu worried she might not be able to withstand it.

"I'll keep a close watch, and if really necessary to ensure Dudu's safety, I may just have to interrupt Tuantuan's evolution."

Between the pig and Dudu, Lu Wu certainly knew which was the right choice.

However, the situation was a bit different from what Lu Wu had anticipated.

He thought Dudu wouldn't be able to handle it, but surprisingly, Dudu's chubby body seemed to have a lot of energy.

Tuantuan had been evolving for half an hour, and Lu Wu hadn't noticed any significant weight loss in Dudu.

This situation made Lu Wu feel even more conflicted.

He couldn't tell whether to feel relieved or worried.

At this rate, if Tuantuan finished evolving and Dudu's weight hadn't reduced at all, Lu Wu wasn't sure whether to cry or laugh.

Fortunately, things didn't go in that direction.

Although Dudu's weight hadn't decreased in the first half hour of Tuantuan's evolution, it started to decrease after half an hour.

Lu Wu watched as Dudu glowed and her figure gradually shrank.

In half an hour, Dudu had slimmed down considerably.

And Dudu's beauty skyrocketed as her figure shrank.

Dudu also started transitioning from cute chubby to sexy.

A few hours later, when Tuantuan completed its evolution and Dudu's weight had shrunk to around 100 pounds,

Tears streamed down Lu Wu's cheeks.

At a height of five feet seven inches, a perfect figure ratio, and a face so striking no one had surpassed it so far.

Add to that the clothes that were several sizes too large and the unconscious state that left her vulnerable.

Lucky for her that the upright and faithful good man, Lu Wu was by her side, otherwise who knows what others might have done.

Of course, Lu Wu didn't do anything. The fact that Tuantuan had just completed its evolution, immediately went Giant form and sat on Little Skeleton played a not-so-small part.

This seriously forced Lu Wu to pull his gaze away from Dudu and focus on the newly evolved Tuantuan.

…

Name: Earth Spirit Pig (Evolved Once)

Power: 1 Star (Elite)

Quality: Ordinary (Improved)

Attribute: Earth

State: Angry (Little Skeleton is very annoying, Tuantuan wants to sit it to death!)

Bonds Skill: Bonds Growth (A special Bonds Skill that awakens through intimacy and can improve the Summoned Beast's quality and power through bonds)

Common Skills: Giant (Mastered) Charge (Mastered)

Basic Magic Skills: Earth Thorns (Mastered)

Advanced Magic Skills: Gravity (Unmastered)

Advanced Close Combat Skills: Cute Pig Trample (Unmastered)

Talent: Physical Defense Enhancement (Basic)

Magic Defense Enhancement (Basic)

Weakness: None

Description: What else can you do? Facing a pig that's on a cheat mode, what else do you expect from me?

…

Hmm, this kind of cheating, Lu Wu couldn't stand to watch.

He shook his head, pulled his gaze away from the pig and Little Skeleton, and had no intention to save Little Skeleton. Trouble it caused, the beating it had to endure, cry as it might.

Compared to them, Lu Wu was more concerned about what to do with his wife.

Should he carry her into the house, or should he carry her into the house?

However, just as Lu Wu hesitated, an old father pushed open the unlocked door of Lu Wu's house and barged in.

"Mr. Lu, where's my daughter? It's already 12 o'clock, why are you still..."

Before he could finish, the old father froze, looking at Dudu lying on the sofa and then at Lu Wu, who was ready to pick Dudu up.

Dudu's dad's eyes immediately reddened, and he grabbed a nearby broom and charged over.

"You already have Dudu and dare to cheat? And to bring her to your home? I'll beat you to death, you bastard!"

# Chapter 121: 120 Make Money (Please Subscribe)

Dudu was slapped by Lu Wu every time he tried to slim down.

Last time it was Lu Haikong, this time it was Dudu's Dad.

It was only after this experience that Lu Wu realized how much his dad loved him!

When Lu Haikong had hit him before, considering it was his own son and with Dudu intervening, he hardly swung a few times and didn't use much strength. But this time it was different.

Dudu's Dad brought out all his strength.

A scumbag dares to cheat on his daughter?

Dudu's Dad felt like chopping up Lu Wu's heart, and he didn't hold back at all!

Facing the furious Dudu's Dad, Lu Wu could only explain with a look of grievance, telling Dudu's Dad that the person lying there was indeed Dudu.

Unfortunately, it was to no avail. How could Dudu's Dad believe that?

Even after the explanation, he got even angrier and hit Lu Wu with even more force.

Who are you trying to fool? This woman is so ugly, how could she possibly be their Dudu?

Such a ferocious attack, and now Lu Wu was being taken away.

Fortunately, Little Skeleton charged out from under a pig's butt in time to rescue Lu Wu, and just as Dudu awoke, Lu Wu managed to get through this ordeal.

Ten minutes later!

Dudu's Dad watched from across the way, tenderly applying ointment to Lu Wu, while occasionally glancing over at Dudu, who returned his gaze with a glare.

Dudu's Dad felt both dreamy and a bit sour.

He hadn't expected his little padded jacket to actually slim down.

She had lost half her weight in just a few hours. If it weren't for Dudu's face vaguely resembling his younger self, he would have hardly recognized her as his own daughter.

However, for Dudu's Dad, his daughter slimming down wasn't too much to handle.

He could accept it, but what really hit him hard was the resentful look his little padded jacket gave him, along with the cautious movements she made to avoid hurting Lu Wu.

With things going like this, if he didn't keep a closer eye, his little jacket might end up belonging to someone else.

Dudu's Dad, worried that Lu Wu might snatch up his homegrown cabbage, pulled Dudu back home after she finished applying ointment to Lu Wu.

His daughter was too vulnerable staying at Lu Wu's house – it was absolutely not safe to leave her there.

Otherwise, by the next morning, nothing would be left.

Lu Wu was particularly reluctant, but he was helpless.

He could only watch as Dudu was taken away.

After Dudu went home, Lu Wu, having not eaten all day and having been beaten up, couldn't sleep and had to take Little Skeleton out to find something to eat.

He casually found a snack bar nearby to appease his hunger and then went to the supermarket to grab a box of instant noodles, some bread, and drinks.

Yeah, now he was alone at home.

Thinking of Dudu, Lu Wu recalled the look her dad had given him when he left, as if watching out for a wolf; he figured he couldn't expect Dudu to cook for him three times a day, so he had to stock up some food for himself.

After buying the stuff, Lu Wu hung the bags on Little Skeleton and was about to head home when another person entered the supermarket. He looked up to find that it was Lin Jianying.

Lu Wu glanced at Lin Jianying and focused briefly on the goblin's Status Bar behind him, asking, "Just got back from training?"

"Yeah!" Lin Jianying nodded.

"Why so late?"

"Because I've been a bit behind my teammates recently, so I've got to push myself harder!"

"How's Granny Li's health?"

"It's been improving over the past few days!"

"That's good to hear!"

...

The relationship between the two was a bit awkward, and the conversation felt forced. Plus, Lin Jianying was quite reserved in front of Lu Wu, making the chat even more stilted.

Lu Wu didn't insist on continuing the conversation and, after patting Lin Jianying on the shoulder, took Little Skeleton and went home.

But before leaving, Lu Wu gave Lin Jianying's goblin a meaningful glance. Startled by Lu Wu's look, the goblin shivered and instinctively stepped back, hiding behind Lin Jianying to stay away from someone who enjoyed touching goblins indiscriminately.

If only the goblin knew, Lu Wu was no longer interested in touching it.

Partly because Lu Wu could now see its attributes without touching, and partly because it simply couldn't keep up with Little Skeleton's pace anymore.

In past encounters with the goblin, every time Little Skeleton's Quality and Power advanced, it used to be a blow to Lu Wu.

Now, the goblin was nothing compared to Little Skeleton.

This made Lu Wu particularly reflective.

"Indeed, as long as one works hard, keeps learning, and has a cheat code, there's no rival one can't surpass!"

After returning home from the supermarket, whether it was because of his advanced spiritual power or some other reason, Lu Wu couldn't tell.

Lu Wu felt exceedingly spirited and just couldn't fall asleep, so he decided to mull over his forthcoming plans.

"Now it's already January, and even though Lunar New Year hasn't arrived yet, the new year has passed.

This year, there are two important events, one is the high school competition, and the other is the Cultivation Master Contest mentioned by Jiangnan University.

The former starts in February or March, while the latter is probably around August or September.

So the focus in the near future is still on preparing for the high school competition."

Originally, there wasn't much for Lu Wu to worry about concerning the high school competition.

Now that his Little Skeleton had advanced to Elite, and Tuantuan as well, having two Elite Summoned Beasts meant they would absolutely dominate the city competition. Lu Wu was confident that the Hengheng Monster would be forced to cry once again.

But the problem was, he was still short one teammate.

That was somewhat awkward.

"Still, this isn't a big problem, there's time yet, and I can slowly look for one. If push comes to shove, I'll just pull in anyone at the last minute.

With two Elite teammates, even bringing along a pig, we could still make it into the provincial competition."

That being said, if they actually brought a pig into the provincial competition, how would they fight the subsequent matches?

Lu Wu was now getting ahead of himself; he didn't even consider the city competition or the Hengheng Monster, only how to ensure that Dudu performed well in the provincial competition to get him some benefits.

In that case, he couldn't be too casual about selecting this one teammate.

"It looks like the only way is to keep searching for a teammate while trying to enhance Little Skeleton's power as much as possible.

If we really end up with a pig, having a more powerful Little Skeleton might still allow us to perform well in the provincial competition.

Right, if Little Skeleton shines in the provincial competition, the sales of the cultivation and advancement plans I've drafted might also take off."

Speaking of this, Lu Wu suddenly remembered that he hadn't uploaded the evolution plan for Little Skeleton.

Recently, he'd shelled out quite a bit of money for Little Skeleton's evolution, and now he was down to just over three hundred Internal Network Points.

Three hundred might seem a lot, but considering Lu Wu's pace of learning, it was uncertain whether this sum would last one or two months.

After all, Lu Wu's approach to studying was indeed quite costly.

So, just thinking about the evolution plans, Lu Wu could no longer care less about doing any planning.

What's the use of planning?

The crux of the matter was to make money!

Money leads to plans!

With money, Little Skeleton could continue to grow more powerful!

Lu Wu hurriedly logged into the internal network and posted the initial plan for evolving Little Skeleton into a Skeleton Mage.

Such a plan was unprecedented, and if validated successfully, Lu Wu could at least earn a thousand points.

Plus, adding in a couple of optimized versions, earning several thousand points shouldn't be a problem.

However, this kind of evolutionary plan wasn't the same as the cultivation plans, and the validation of such plans wasn't quick. After Lu Wu uploaded it, the Fu City Professional Center immediately took over the task of validation.

But at the same time, they sent Lu Wu a message informing that the quickest validation result would take at least half a month, and longer cases might take several months.

After all, this was an evolution plan, and Fu City needed time to cultivate Little Skeleton to the level where it could evolve.

This was no easy task, but there was no other choice; finding a wild Little Skeleton fit for evolution was even harder!

This meant Lu Wu had to wait at least half a month before he could see any points credited to his account, and it could possibly be several months.

This left Lu Wu somewhat disappointed, but there was nothing he could do about it and had to think of other ways to make money.

And sure enough, there were other methods.

Two directions to go.

One was Skill optimization.

Just like the optimization of cultivation plans, there were rewards for Skill optimization, and training plans created after optimization could be sold, although at a relatively lower price.

Lu Wu had sold packages of Little Skeleton's optimized skills "Charge," "Dodge," and "Block," but after incremental exploitation of each version, he had earned only a few dozen points.

Although the training plans were also on the internal network for sale, which could give Lu Wu a cut, he had no expectations about it.

The few cultivation plans he posted last time had only netted him a mere 10 points over the course of more than a month. Unless he became well-known or he was counting on this, he would starve to death.

"In that case, I'm out of options!

I'll have to pivot to another approach for research!

After all, I've hit a bottleneck with the quality improvement plans for Little Skeleton further development would call for too much time and effort, and I can't expect results for several months.

If I want to make money, I need to change direction and focus on another Summoned Beast to develop a few new cultivation plans for a windfall.

Once I have money, I can funnel resources back into my research on cultivating Little Skeleton."

This was the best way Lu Wu had thought of to make money.

After some consideration and searching for more information on the internal network, Lu Wu finally selected his next main focus, the Summoned Beast he would use to earn money.

# Chapter 122: 121 Fleece (Seeking Subscription)

Lu Wu browsed through the options and finally decided to choose Goblin as his second main offensive Summoned Beast.

It wasn't because Lu Wu was interested in this Summoned Beast and wanted to raise one, nor was it because of Lin Jianying's influence.

The main reason was that Goblins were quite popular as Summoned Beasts.

There were a lot of owners and cultivators.

With more cultivators, the market naturally grew larger.

There was one right next to him, which made sourcing materials convenient. Moreover, a bigger reason was that they were cheap!

Lu Wu's learning approach differed from others. People usually focused on a single scheme, learning the basics, and setting up their research labs for various studies and experiments.

However, Lu Wu's method was more costly. When he focused on Little Skeleton, he bought up all of the available schemes for that category in one go.

He then memorized all the schemes and, with the help of his sharp mind and Golden Finger, gradually turned other people's schemes into his personal knowledge.

This learning method was especially suited to Lu Wu, but the problem was that it was extremely expensive!

After all, even on the internal network, there was a limit to Summoned Beast Cultivation schemes.

The limit mentioned here was mostly the Quality limit for cultivation. For instance, for creatures like Little Skeleton, the internal network had just over a hundred schemes with the Quality limit at Bronze.

Lu Wu himself had almost reached the peak in this domain.

To go beyond, he would need to purchase and thoroughly understand the cultivation methods of other Summoned Beasts in the same series and integrate them into the cultivation of Little Skeleton.

Now that Little Skeleton's cultivation had reached this point, going further would require a vast amount of money.

What made Lu Wu wish he could slap himself was that at the beginning, he was naïve and pushed the Little Skeleton cultivation scheme to its peak.

Especially with the final "Little Skull Soup" scheme, he pretty much applied all the knowledge he had learned.

This allowed him to reach the summit of the Skeleton Summon Beast field, but it also meant he missed many opportunities to make money.

If he had broken down the "Little Skull Soup" scheme and watered it down to create at least a dozen different schemes, he could have made a couple thousand points. But now that he had given away all his knowledge points, he couldn't water them down even if he wanted to.

After all, the rewards for submitting schemes were a strategy meant to provide support.

With his own greatest achievements already laid out, the internal network wouldn't offer any rewards unless he made a breakthrough.

At most, they would just list his watered-down schemes for sale, and he would only get money when someone bought them.

In such circumstances, if Lu Wu wanted to make money, he would have to switch to cultivating another Summoned Beast.

And choosing Goblin was because Goblin schemes were cheap; with just over three hundred points in his pocket, Lu Wu could feel the weight of his investment and hoped to learn something new from it.

After all, he only had a little over three hundred points left. If he couldn't make good use of them, before the evolution scheme of Little Skeleton was verified, Lu Wuke would be cut off from funding.

"Damn it, if I don't bleed the internal network dry this time, I won't carry the Lu surname!"

It was with such resentful emotions that Lu Wu began his frantic study!

Well, okay, it wasn't exactly frantic.

He couldn't afford to be too crazy lately.

After all, Dudu had finally managed to lose some weight, and inevitably, Lu Wu's attention was somewhat diverted.

Of course, Lu Wu didn't do anything too outrageous.

He simply took Dudu out every day and spent all day sticking close to Dudu.

Lu Wu couldn't understand why, when Dudu was chubby before, although Dudu's father glared at him and wasn't too fond of him, he hadn't been too guarded against him.

Once Dudu lost weight, Dudu's dad's level of vigilance had increased by hundreds of times.

If not for Dudu's mother, getting Dudu out would have been harder than climbing to the heavens. Even if Lu Wu did manage to take Dudu out, Dudu's dad checked in so frequently it was like being online, calling every ten minutes, messaging every five.

Dare to not answer, and he would immediately call the police!

At that point, Lu Wu was unhappy.

Feeling particularly irritated!

What was wrong with the world? Couldn't there be a little more trust between people?

Did Lu Wu really look that much like a scumbag? Would he definitely do something indescribable when he took Dudu out?

Couldn't they just have a little time and space?

However, fortunately, this situation was gradually improving.

It started with a call every five minutes, then every ten minutes, then every half hour, and finally, Dudu's dad simply stopped calling.

It wasn't out of resignation, but rather reassurance.

Don't misunderstand, it wasn't because he saw any good qualities in Lu Wu, but because Dudu's weight reassured him.

In just under ten days of a crazy father's feeding, Dudu ballooned from under 100 pounds to 160, transforming from sexy back to cute, and Dudu's dad's mind was put at ease.

Hmm, that way, his precious daughter couldn't be snatched away so easily.

Although he hadn't avoided being beaten up for it, breaking several washboards by kneeling on them, he still felt his efforts were worthwhile!

He was ultimately the one who silently bore everything.

On Lu Wu's end, his diligence in studying increased steadily with Dudu's weight gain.

In the past few days when he went out with Dudu, he hardly studied at all.

Later, Lu Wu thought about it and realized this wasn't right, this wasn't the way to go. He needed to study hard to have a bright future!

So, Lu Wu adjusted his mindset and began to study with newfound seriousness.

In just half a month, he had spent all of his three hundred plus points.

Of course, the money was not wasted; those spent points eventually became Lu Wu's knowledge, accompanying him in another way forever.

However, compared to this form of company, Lu Wu would still prefer to see the points reflected in his account backend.

And so, Lu Wu began to synthesize the knowledge he had acquired.

Using Lin Jianying's Goblin as a blueprint, it took Lu Wu only five days to perfect a cultivation scheme.

...

Plan: Goblin Transforming Needle 8.0

Plan Effect: Can enhance a goblin and the quality of a goblin after one evolution.

The former can be enhanced to Bronze, the latter to Black Iron.

Plan Description: Come, get an injection, and you'll get candy!

...

From the moment Lu Wu started focusing on goblin improvement to finally coming up with this cultivation plan, Lu Wu only spent 20 hours.

And that included several days when Lu Wu was just slacking off.

Such efficiency was terrifying, far surpassing the time it took to work on Little Skeleton.

However, this wasn't because Lu Wu had more talent in goblin cultivation than in cultivating Little Skeleton; it was partly due to starting points and partly skill levels.

When Lu Wu worked on the Little Skeleton plan, he had only a flawed system and limited access to information, essentially starting from scratch.

But it was different with the goblins.

By that time, he already had certain resources at his disposal, and he himself had a certain level of skill in Summoned Beast Cultivation, which naturally made the process much faster than it had been with Little Skeleton.

But for Lu Wu, speed wasn't important; what mattered most now was making money.

"The plan is done; it's time to fleece the internal network!"

Lu Wu's eyes lit up as he opened the internal network and submitted his streamlined "injection" plan.

Lu Wu's internal network login permission was granted by the Fu City Professional Center.

The Fu City Professional Center was also closely watching Lu Wu, especially with his research on new Summoned Beast Cultivation plans. Whenever Lu Wu posted something, they would rush to take on the task of validating it.

This time was no different.

As soon as Lu Wu's injection plan was posted, Fu City immediately claimed it.

The person responsible for validation was Zhao Kai Ming, who recently had nothing much to do.

"Has Xiao Lu recently switched to goblin cultivation?

Hmm, learning more knowledge as a young person is good. Let me guide and guard him!"

With the mindset of wanting to mentor Lu Wu, Zhao Kai Ming personally went to the Cultivation Room to experiment with Lu Wu's "injection" cultivation plan.

After the results came out, a smile appeared on Zhao Kai Ming's face.

"Not bad, not bad at all. Xiao Lu's talent is indeed good. He's switched to goblin cultivation for just a few months, hasn't he?

And yet he managed to innovate, coming up with a new cultivation plan. Very impressive!

Truly worthy of being a disciple seen fit by me, Zhao Kai Ming, and truly the son of that person!

However, in the details of the plan, there's still some refinement needed. This child is still too young."

With that, he passed Lu Wu's plan and then began to write an evaluation, meticulously pointing out the issues in Lu Wu's plan.

After finishing, Zhao Kai Ming looked over it, nodding to himself in satisfaction.

"Though goblin isn't my main focus, guiding Xiao Lu is no problem at all!"

Just as Zhao Kai Ming was about to send this to Lu Wu, Lu Wu had already received 50 points in reward, and the "Injection 1.0" version was posted.

"Huh, a new version's up?"

Zhao Kai Ming was startled at first, but quickly grasped the situation: "This kid must have learned his lesson with Little Skeleton, playing it smart now. It seems this new version is his true level.

All right, let's see what his real skill level is!"

Saying this, Zhao Kai Ming spent some time validating the 1.0 version, and after completing the validation, he nodded with satisfaction.

"Good, good, there's improvement. With this, the suggestions I'm going to give him need some adjustments!"

While he was revising his advice, the 2.0 version came out.

Old Zhao was a bit confused, but he quickly regained his composure.

"No worries, no worries, as expected. But this should be Xiao Lu's final plan!"

Rubbing his nose, Zhao Kai Ming validated it once again, revised his advice, and then the 3.0 version came in.

Old Zhao's composure started to crumble, but he still held on.

"That's enough, that must be the final plan!"

Slapping his face, Zhao Kai Ming geared himself up once more!

However, half an hour later, the 4.0 version arrived.

Old Zhao was going slightly insane.

"This has to be the final plan! There can't possibly be more, I swear it!"

Another half hour.

"We're at 5.0 now, if there's more, I'll eat the lab myself!"

Half an hour later.

"6.0 now, is this kid a demon? Is he trying to bleed the internal network dry?"

Still half an hour.

"Another one? I can't give you any more advice!"

"I'm just a waste!"

...

No one knew what Zhao Kai Ming went through that day, but after that, Zhao Kai Ming had not set foot in a Cultivation Room for several months.

Lu Wu didn't know what had happened on Fu City's end, or who had been demoralized.

He just felt that the efficiency on Fu City's end was quite fast; in less than a day, they had completed the validation of 9 versions, netting him a whopping 2,000 points and a tidy profit.

Lu Wu was in a good mood, while at that moment, Lin Jianying in school wasn't feeling quite so happy...

# Chapter 123: 122 Striking (Request for Subscription)

Quancheng No.3 Middle School, exclusive training grounds for the key class.

A training session was underway.

The opponents were a red-haired orangutan on one side and a Goblin Warrior on the other.

The battle between the red-haired orangutan and the Goblin Warrior was intense.

As the owner of the Goblin Warrior, Lin Jianying watched his Goblin fight and sighed a sigh of relief in his heart.

He'd had a hard time recently.

He was under tremendous pressure.

This pressure was primarily financial.

In reality, Lin Jianying had been selected for the key class not because his Goblin was of exceptional quality, but purely because his family had some assets.

His parents were Professional Summoners who had lost contact a few years ago, but they had left him a heritage.

He relied on this heritage to enhance his Goblin to this level.

Initially, that amount of money would have been enough to support him until the high school league.

However, due to his grandmother's sudden illness and hospitalization, he had diverted all the funds meant for cultivating his Goblin to her medical treatments, and even that wasn't enough.

This resulted in a cutoff in the funds used for cultivating his Goblin. Moreover, due to taking care of his grandmother, the training was interrupted for several days, causing disruptions in the Goblin's development and making it fall behind his teammates' pace.

For this reason, Ye Qingxue had specifically spoken to him, clearly stating that if he couldn't keep up, he would be kicked off the current first-line team.

This had put great pressure on Lin Jianying.

Fortunately, he had eventually managed to overcome it.

Now, the Goblin had not only caught up with his teammates but had even surpassed them to some degree.

Indeed, while Lin Jianying was sighing in relief, the battle on the training grounds had already concluded.

The Goblin Warrior had narrowly defeated the red-haired orangutan.

"Not bad, kid! I didn't expect you to catch up and even get ahead of me," a classmate who had battled against him said, giving Lin Jianying a punch, genuinely happy for him.

Being teammates and classmates, he knew the difficulties Lin Jianying had faced recently and was truly glad to see him keep up.

However, at that moment, Ye Qingxue, the teacher who had been watching the match, furrowed her brow.

"Lin Jianying, come to my office!"

After saying that, Ye Qingxue turned and left.

Lin Jianying, suddenly called out, was puzzled, wondering what Ye Qingxue wanted, and felt a bit panicky, but he dared not delay and immediately took his Goblin to Ye Qingxue's office.

As he pushed open the door of Ye Qingxue's office and saw her cold face, Lin Jianying's heart sank.

At that moment, Ye Qingxue had already come up to Lin Jianying's Goblin and was scrutinizing it intently.

Finally, she directed her gaze at Lin Jianying's face.

"Your Goblin has shown significant progress lately, and during the recent battle, the tactical structuring was also adjusted. The adjustments were slight, barely noticeable unless paying close attention."

As Ye Qingxue spoke, her expression grew colder, causing Lin Jianying to tremble uncontrollably, too scared to speak.

But his silence didn't mean there wasn't an issue.

"There are many Cultivation Masters of this level, but not many in Quan City. Even if there were, you couldn't afford them with your current financial capacity. So, I'm very curious as to who would help you for free?

I remember you live in the same neighborhood as Lu Wu; it wasn't him who helped you, was it?"

"Yes!"

Lin Jianying nodded stiffly.

As he nodded, Ye Qingxue's expression was close to freezing.

Regarding Lu Wu, from the beginning Ye Qingxue considered him nothing more than a nobody, one she didn't esteem, never having taken Lu Wu seriously.

Even during the Quancheng Cup, when the friction between Team 233 and Ye Qingxue escalated, despite her anger, Ye Qingxue still hadn't had a high regard for Lu Wuyi.

As proud as she was, unless Lu Wuyi could defeat the student she had trained, she would never hold him in high esteem.

And could Lu Wuyi defeat the student she had trained?

That was clearly impossible!

Even if Lu Wuyi might have had a Cultivation Master supporting him, it was still absolutely impossible!

She, Ye Qingxue, was confident in herself!

But what transpired later slapped her hard across the face, Lu Wuyi defeated her student, even though it was just her most ordinary student, it was enough to shock her.

Yet before she could recover from the shock, information about Lu Wuyi's identity as a Cultivation Master was exposed.

As soon as this identity was revealed, for Ye Qingxue, it was like a slap in the face.

That slap still stung to this day!

Now whenever she heard the name Lu Wuyi, she couldn't help but grit her teeth.

In this situation, when she discovered that Lin Jianying's goblin had been trained by Lu Wuyi, her fury was instantly ignited.

What was Lu Wuyi doing?

Was he sympathizing with Lin Jianying's plight and giving him a helping hand?

What a joke!

Ye Qingxue did not believe Lu Wuyi was that virtuous!

Initially, all she did was fire Lu Wuyi, and he meticulously plotted to humiliate her, how could such a petty person be so good?

In Ye Qingxue's eyes, such actions by Lu Wuyi were nothing but a slap in her face.

How could she, Ye Qingxue, tolerate that?

"Since when does my student, Ye Qingxue's student, need to be taught by him, Lu Wuyi!

Fine, since he wishes to teach, I might as well let him!"

"From now on, you are no longer a member of the key class, nor are you my student anymore!

He wants to teach you? Go on, go find him!

And while you're at it, tell him that I will reclaim the humiliation he gave me in the high school league!"

In her fury, Ye Qingxue did not give Lin Jianying any chance to explain, and she summarily expelled him from the key class!

On Lin Jianying's side,

Suddenly being expelled from the key class, he was entirely bewildered and immediately turned pale with panic; he was even about to kneel before Ye Qingxue, begging her not to expel him.

Ye Qingxue might have thought that being expelled from the key class, he could still go to Lu Wuyi and participate in the high school league.

But Lin Jianying knew.

That was impossible; leaving the key class meant all his hopes were dashed.

He wouldn't go to Lu Wuyi; he didn't dare, he had no face to!

His betrayal had already exhausted all his courage, making him regret it to this day, making him unable to face Lu Wuyi ever since.

How could he possibly have the courage to see Lu Wuyi again, to tell him he wanted to go back?

So, he absolutely could not leave the key class.

But Ye Qingxue was furious, no matter what he said or how he begged, it was useless!

Ultimately, Ye Qingxue still expelled him from the key class.

And Lin Jianying hadn't yet recovered from the shock of being kicked out of the key class, and just as he left the school, another blow came: news from the hospital that his grandmother's condition had worsened, and she was close to death!

…

This chapter is a bit shorter, partly because I'm a bit stuck with the writing and partly because I've been busy. I'll try to make the next chapter longer!

# Chapter 124: 123 The second team member

Account: I Want to Be a Sea King

Points: 2222

Level: 2

Listed Cultivation Plans: Little Skeleton Training Manual Series, Little Skeleton Soup Series, Goblin Transforming Needle Series

Listed Skills: Charge, Dodge, Block

Total Shared Revenue: 232 points

Total Points Spent: 1989

…

Lu Wu looked at his internal network account with a smile of happiness and joy on his face.

Okay, this was no longer just a smile—he was outright laughing!

Especially when he saw the total shared revenue at the end, Lu Wu's smile almost reached his ears.

"What a surprise, a real damn surprise!

I hadn't expected that goblin money would be so easy to earn!"

"Not only did I rake in 2000 points in one go, it's been less than a day and another 222 points have already been credited to my account!

It looks like the popularity of the goblin as a summoned beast is way higher than that of Little Skeleton!

I've hit a gold mine here; I'm going to make a fortune!"

Lu Wu, ecstatic, didn't realize that his harvest actually came from an accident.

In fact, the reason Lu Wu had been able to reap 222 points in less than a day after listing the "injection" series was entirely due to the speed at which the series was listed.

In less than a day, Lu Wu had updated the version nine times.

The internal network had a recommendation feature for newly listed cultivation plans, although it scrolled very quickly.

But the nine consecutive screen refreshes had begun to attract the attention of a small group of people, including some cultivation masters who were very curious about the programs that had been updated nine times in one day, so they jumped on it.

This accounted for the 222 points earned in one day.

However, Lu Wu didn't have a clue about this yet, he simply thought that goblin money was easier to make than Little Skeleton money.

All he could think about now was how to further use the goblin as a summoned beast to make more money.

"Why don't I strike while the iron is hot and delve into the goblin's evolution system?

Just the cultivation plans are so lucrative, if I can develop the evolution system, wouldn't that shoot me up?"

"Also, I haven't found my high school league teammate yet; maybe I should pick a goblin?

If I could put on an impressive show in the high school league with a goblin, given the league's popularity, the advertising impact would be amazing!

I'd definitely make a big fortune after the match!"

Thinking about this, Lu Wu was especially excited, his eyes nearly turning into the shape of money.

Of course, it wasn't that Lu Wu was greedy or money-grubbing.

It was really because it's not easy for a kid from an ordinary family to grow up—all aspects require money.

He calculated that the next phase of quality improvement for Little Skeleton required adopting plans from the "Undead Skeletons Classification," and buying all those plans would cost at least a few thousand points.

After all, his learning path was different from others; others might just need the basics.

He needed to expand his knowledge base as much as possible, experiencing more approaches, so he couldn't afford to miss any plan.

It was going to be very costly!

And that was just the expense needed for improving his own knowledge.

Next, he also needed to nourish Little Skeleton, nurture a second summoned beast, and in the later stages, he might even need to set up a research institute.

Additionally, he needed to nourish Dudu!

He found that every time Dudu used its Bonds Skill, there was a certain reduction in its weight limit.

After Dudu used its Bonds Skill last time, its peak weight settled at 180, and this time, it remained around 160.

This discovery greatly stimulated Lu Wu.

He wanted to help Dudu slim down as soon as possible.

Well, whether he looks good or not isn't important—what matters is that Lu Wu likes helping Dudu.

And to help Dudu slim down quickly, money, or rather points, was essential.

With expenses in all aspects, even if Lu Wu tried to remain aloof, hearing about points would still make his eyes light up again.

"This money must be made!

My second teammate's summoned beast has to be a goblin!

Right, isn't Lin Jianying's summoned beast a goblin? His family's goblin is also quite strong; why don't I just poach him?"

Lu Wu felt pretty confident about poaching Lin Jianying.

He was just like the male version of Dudu; as long as Lu Wu was a bit more assertive, poaching him would definitely not be a problem.

"I'm going to poach him tomorrow!

This kid is also among the top ten in the key class, if I poach him, Instructor Ye Qingxue would probably be so angry she'd bleed."

Thinking about this, Lu Wu was even more delighted, almost wishing he could pick up the phone and start poaching right there.

However, before Lu Wu could make a call, a call came in first.

Lu Wu picked it up and saw it was from Li Chun.

"Hello, Teacher Li, what's up so late?

What did you say? Granny Li is not doing well?

Hold on, I'm coming right away!"

After hanging up, Lu Wu rushed to Quancheng Hospital immediately.

However, since Lu Wu didn't have a car, and it was a bit late for taxis, he ultimately had no choice but to have Little Skeleton carry him to Quancheng Hospital.

Little Skeleton was quite happy with this task, running joyfully.

It enjoyed itself, but the one riding on its back, Lu Wu, suffered.

Since Little Skeleton was nothing but a frame of bones, and it kept running and jumping on the way to Quancheng Hospital, by the time Lu Wu arrive

Despite Lu Wu's desperate effort, he was still one step too late.

When he arrived, Granny Li had already passed away.

Although Lu Wu had seemed to enjoy battling in the Big Cemetery, it was actually Little Skeleton who was doing the fighting, and the opponents were Corpses-type Summoned Beasts.

Lu Wu had never truly faced death before.

He hadn't expected that his very first real encounter with life and death would come in this way.

When he saw the elderly person lying on the hospital bed and Lin Jianying weeping bitterly beside her, a myriad of emotions surged in Lu Wu's heart, and he couldn't quite pinpoint how he felt.

Although he wasn't very close to Lin Jianying or Granny Li,

the memories of his past life were still with him.

At this moment, Lu Wu felt a heavy oppression in the hospital room, making it difficult for him to stay long. He could only step forward, pat Lin Jianying on the shoulder, say "My condolences," and then silently leave the room.

When Lu Wu stepped out, he saw Li Chun not far from the ward, pulling a pack of cigarettes out of his pocket and subconsciously trying to open it to smoke one. However, he paused midway, evidently remembering that smoking was prohibited in the hospital, and silently put the cigarettes away.

Lu Wu knew that Teacher Li was always warm-hearted.

When he had first transmigrated, worried that Lu Wu might take things hard, Li Chun had tried to console him in various ways and even recommended him to work at Li Kai's shop.

He wasn't just like this with Lu Wu, but with other students as well. Since Lin Jianying's grandmother's incident, Li Chun had frequently come to visit.

He would occasionally help Lin Jianying out and had secretly paid for some of her medical expenses.

Therefore, Lu Wu held considerable respect for this teacher.

And greeted him with the utmost politeness,

"Teacher!"

Hearing Lu Wu's voice, Li Chun looked up a bit sluggishly, and upon seeing it was Lu Wu, he gave a slightly forced smile.

"You came?"

"Yeah!" Lu Wu nodded, sitting down beside Li Chun.

Both were in a somber mood and didn't speak much. After sitting in silence for a while, Lu Wu finally spoke up, "Teacher, it's already so late. Why don't you go home first? You still have classes tomorrow, and I can stay here."

Li Chun shook his head, "Tomorrow's classes can be postponed. I can't leave now, I can't leave just you two kids here.

And with Lin's current state, I'm worried!

He was just expelled from the elite class by Instructor Ye this afternoon, and then this happened in the evening. I'm worried he might do something rash..."

"Wait, what did you say?"

Lu Wu was taken aback, then his eyes narrowed, "Ye Qingxue expelled him? Why?"

"I'm not exactly sure of the details, but I know that after today's internal training battle in the elite class, he was called away by Ye Qingxue.

Then he was expelled. Instructor Ye didn't give a reason, and Lin didn't say anything when I asked him. Given what has just happened, I didn't dare press further."

Saying this, Li Chun turned to look at Lu Wu, grasping his hand with a pleading look.

"Lu Wu, I remember your team is still short of one person. Could you consider Lin?

The high school competition is about to start, and with him being expelled now, his future could be ruined without a team to join!

I know there used to be some misunderstandings, some conflicts between you, but you've been friends since childhood. Couldn't you help him out?

He's only 18; we can't let him just collapse now.

Please, teacher, I beg you to help him!"

Lu Wu took a deep breath and patted Li Chun's hand, "Teacher, don't talk like that. Rest assured, I was already planning to take him in!

I won't let him be destroyed like this!

Just wait a moment; I'll go talk to him about this right now."

Saying this, Lu Wu stood up and once again entered the hospital room, coming up behind Lin Jianying.

"You were expelled by Ye Qingxue? What was the reason she expelled you?"

Lin Jianying didn't dare to speak.

Lu Wu added another question: "Was it because of me?"

Lin Jianying shuddered, subconsciously turning his head, his eyes filled with tears and confusion, as if to say 'how did you know?'

"It's not hard to guess. Teacher Li said it was after the training battle, and that Ye Qingxue called you into her office and then fired you.

Then, when Teacher Li asked you, you were too scared to speak.

Thinking about it, there's only one reason it could be, obviously because of the minor tactical adjustments I made for the goblin, as well as the cultivation, which she must have discovered."

In fact, Lu Wu had never intended to accept Lin Jianying, so he had been cautious in adjusting tactics and cultivation for Lin Jianying's goblin, afraid that Ye Qingxue would discover it and cause trouble for Lin Jianying.

But it had still been discovered.

What Lu Wu had not expected was that Ye Qingxue wouldn't just cause trouble for Lin Jianying, but would directly kick him out.

That really upset Lu Wu.

Although he had been preparing to poach Lin Jianying, he didn't want Lin Jianying to leave the elite class in this manner.

Plus, with Granny Li's death, a nameless rage was burning fiercely within Lu Wu, and he couldn't hold it back.

However, he didn't show this in front of Lin Jianying. After confirming everything, Lu Wu said in the calmest tone, "If she doesn't let you stay in the elite class, then so be it—it's nothing to covet.

I just so happen to have a spot open, come and fill it!"

Lin Jianying's eyes widened, "But..."

"Shut up. You still owe me a house, I'm your creditor and you have no right to refuse.

Besides, with the high school competition coming up, where am I supposed to find a teammate now?

That settles it then. I have more matters to attend to, so I won't stay here any longer. Teacher Li is outside if you need help!"

After finishing, Lu Wu didn't give Lin Jianying a chance to respond and directly turned and left the hospital room.

After giving a reassuring thumbs-up to the somewhat concerned Li Chun outside the room, Lu Wu walked out of the hospital while taking out his phone to call Zhao Kai Ming: "Hello, Grandpa Zhao? It's Xiao Lu here. Can I trouble you to investigate someone for me…"

# Chapter 125: 124 Help Mr. Ye reduce teaching pressure

In fact, regarding Ye Qingxue, Lu Wuyi had never really taken her to heart.

After all, he was broad-minded; a small conflict was nothing to him, and he wasn't the type to harbor thoughts of revenge or face-slapping. At most, he would cry during the high school competition by defeating the Hengheng Monster once more.

But this time, what had happened truly ignited a fire within Lu Wuyi.

He had never imagined Ye Qingxue could be so domineering.

All he did was make a minor tactical adjustment to Lin Jianying's goblin, as a form of remuneration for allowing his own research on injections.

To his surprise, Ye Qingxue went as far as expelling Lin Jianying.

That was excessively harsh and pointedly against him, Lu Wuyi!

Furthermore, upon encountering the death of Granny Li, Lu Wuyi's anger flared up even more.

This time, he had no intention of letting it go just like that.

However, he did not act blindly, considering he was just a kid from an ordinary family.

With no powerful backers, he had to think thrice before acting.

If he was going to do something, he should at least understand his opponent's strength; acting rashly without any information was not a wise move.

Hence, the first thing he did was to ask Zhao Kai Ming to investigate Ye Qingxue's background.

Meanwhile, Zhao Kai Ming was left dizzy by the simple act of Lu Wuyi addressing him as Grandpa Zhao.

Xiao Lu was his son's child, and now calling him Grandpa Zhao, rounding up, didn't that make him...

Zhao Kai Ming shuddered and his mind frantically rejected the thought.

Don't think about it! Don't think about it! Don't think about it!

Zhao Kai Ming quickly got into action, utilizing his connections. In less than half an hour, he had Ye Qingxue's information on his desk.

Upon reviewing Ye Qingxue's information, Zhao Kai Ming first checked her direct female relatives.

Uh, don't get the wrong idea, he had no ulterior motives.

It was just a precaution, fearing an awkward situation if he didn't clarify this point.

After checking, Zhao Kai Ming breathed a sigh of relief; seemingly, there were no issues, and then he forwarded the related information to Lu Wuyi.

As Lu Wuyi received Ye Qingxue's information, his eyes narrowed.

Actually, as soon as he had the information in hand, Lu Wuyi's mind became calm.

He had asked Zhao Kai Ming to investigate Ye Qingxue not to uncover her secrets, but as a test.

If Zhao Kai Ming refused to provide him with the information, advising him to let it go, it would be clear that Lu Wuyi was no match for them, and he should not stir up trouble, only waiting to make the Hengheng Monster cry in the high school competition.

Now, Zhao Kai Ming had delivered the information without any superfluous words, indicating it was fine for Lu Wuyi to stir up trouble.

They, Zhao Kai Ming's folks, would cover for him, especially since they were counting on Lu Wuyi to compete for them.

So, the moment he had the information in hand, Lu Wuyi's objective had essentially been achieved.

The information itself became secondary, yet within it, Lu Wuyi found an unexpected but reasonable piece of news.

"I knew she wouldn't just come to Quan City to teach students without a reason. There indeed was a reason!"

The intelligence gave Lu Wuyi a bold idea.

"It's worth a try, but first I'll greet this Instructor Ye tomorrow, help alleviate some of her teaching pressure!"

...

The next morning!

At Quancheng No.3 Middle School, in the key class area.

Lu Wuyi yawned as he stepped into the area of the school that was forbidden to him, accompanied by Dudu.

As soon as Lu Wuyi entered, he immediately attracted the attention of the key class students.

"Yo, fellow students, good morning!"

Seeing everyone looking at him, Lu Wuyi hurriedly waved his hand and greeted everyone with a cheery smile.

Yet his smile sent the key class students into a panic.

The current Lu Wuyi was not the Lu Wuyi of the past.

Although he had practically vanished after the Quancheng Cup, making no waves, he had never been absent in the eyes of the key class.

His image in the eyes of key class students had also been shifting.

From initially being dismissed by Ye Qingxue as trash,

to the nobody who rashly challenged them in the Quancheng Cup, and then to the guy who had bullied their classmates and had some tricks up his sleeve, and finally, the revelation of his Cultivation Master identity dealt a heavy slap to both Ye Qingxue and their faces.

It was so painful that to this day, the key class students felt uneasy just hearing the name Lu Wuyi, itching their teeth with hatred!

But as much as they hated him, they didn't dare say anything now, seeing him, as the statuses were different.

Furthermore, it was said that he had dozens of Cultivation Master disciples under his command. Who would dare to provoke him?

Plus, with Lin Jianying expelled just the day before and Lu Wuyi showing up today.

No one was a fool; they all understood the reason. At such a time, no one dared to stand out, fearing they might provoke Lu Wuyi's ire and get beaten!

If it were just a beating, it would still be a minor matter. The key concern was who knew how Ye Qingxue would deal with it after?

What if they got expelled just like Hao Zhijian and Lin Jianying before, whom could they turn to for a sense of justice?

This situation had led to no one daring to respond when Lu Wu greeted them, reminiscent of how a Big Bad Wolf wished the little white rabbits a Happy New Year.

No one dared to speak up, everyone was shivering, and with the absence of the Hengheng Monster, Lu Wu was somewhat bored.

"You people are really dull. Can't you see that I'm here to stir things up?

I've come here to make trouble, and yet none of you dare to stand up against me? Without a single person willing to rebel, it's hard for me to get excited!"

Lu Wu's words only made matters worse, as dozens of students from the elite class quickly stepped back several metres to distance themselves from him.

"Look at you guys, someone's come knocking on your door to cause trouble, and no one stands up.

Have you no sense of collective honor left? Can't you hold up the banner of building a Summoner's world? You're really letting Mr. Ye down. How do you deserve to be his students?

It seems I need to clean house for Mr. Ye!"

The moment Lu Wu said this, the complexions of the students in the elite class turned uniformly pale.

Now, these students could no longer stay silent, and someone stood up to speak.

"Lu Wu, we're all classmates here, and we haven't done anything to offend you on ordinary days, have we?

It was not easy for us to get into the elite class. Our families spent a lot of money to get us to where we are now. With the high school league just around the corner, could you please show some leniency?"

This student was quite smooth.

He did not dare to say anything bad about Ye Qingxue, but he managed to express his point nonetheless.

'We're just students and haven't offended you, so why take it out on us? If you have an issue, take it up with the right person!'

But those were the kinds of words that Lu Wu did not like to hear.

"What do you mean, 'offended me or not offended me'?

So what if I am offended? I, Lu Wu, have a broad and magnanimous heart; I'm someone who can turn the other cheek. Why would I haggle over my own matters with you?

It's really about being upset for Mr. Ye.

You bunch of misfits, how do you deserve to be Mr. Ye's students? Aren't you just blackening his name?

No, no, I absolutely cannot allow such a thing to happen."

"I remember Mr. Ye once said, those who can't even beat the fish from an Ordinary class don't deserve to be his students, right?

Well then, today I, a fish amongst fish who was rejected by him at a glance, will help Mr. Ye to test you and see if you are worthy of being his students!"

This set the elite class students completely on edge.

With Lu Wu throwing these words out, he was clearly challenging the entire elite class.

What made matters worse was the timing of Lu Wu's challenge—it was right during the elite class's morning exercise period.

At this time, almost all the elite class students were present, but the teacher hadn't arrived yet!

No one could stop Lu Wu, and in such circumstances, the more astute students started preparing to bolt.

"I'd advise you not to go. To flee would be cowardice, being scared off by this fish of mine is a more serious offence than being defeated by me. You would be even less deserving of being Instructor Ye's students.

There are cameras around here, and should anyone run, it'll all be clearly visible in the surveillance footage."

With a single sentence, Lu Wu killed their notion of escape and added, "Actually, you don't really need to run, because there are so many of you, after all. Can't you take on us two by banding together?

Even if you really can't beat us, there are 32 of you!"

Lu Wu didn't spell it out, but this idea set the students' eyes ablaze.

Right, there were 32 of them! With 32 Summoned Beasts, they might not win one-on-one, but could they lose 32 against 2?

Besides, if they really couldn't win, they couldn't all be blamed as a group—could Ye Qingxue expel the entire class?

Realizing this, their backaches and leg pain vanished, and they even began sneakily preparing for battle.

"Oh, I see you've gotten the gist. Well then, let's get started!"

Seeing this, Lu Wu's lips curved up into a smirk and with a grand gesture, he commanded, "Little Skeleton, Tuantuan, charge!"

At Lu Wu's order, Tuantuan, who was very reluctant to gear up for battle, became Giant, and Little Skeleton, who was quite excited, hopped onto Tuantuan's back.

Once aboard, Little Skeleton grabbed Tuantuan's fur and brandished the Bone Staff, imitating the posture of a cavalry charge that he had learned from television.

The next moment, Tuantuan charged, and battle commenced instantly.

Er, well, to call this a battle was an understatement—it was more like a cakewalk!

Without the Hengheng Monster present, and her team absent, none of the Summoned Beasts in the elite class were of Elite Level, and none of the 32 two-star and three-star Summoned Beasts could withstand the two Elite Level ones.

A single Cute Pig Charge from Tuantuan knocked down a bunch, and Little Skeleton atop it was somewhat bored as it knocked out one after another with its staff, even contemplating singing.

Thinking so, it went ahead and did just that!

Sneaking a glance at Lu Wu and seeing a smile on his lips, Little Skeleton pulled out his phone, opened the music app, and played a soundtrack for himself.

And then, both the pig and the skeleton had a blast, fighting fiercely!

By the time Ye Qingxue received the news and hurried over, none of the 32 Summoned Beasts from the elite class was left standing.

When Lu Wu saw Ye Qingxue's instantly livid face as she arrived, he couldn't help but smile sweetly and charmingly.

"Mr. Ye, I know you must be really happy and grateful to me for reducing your teaching burdens, but please, don't thank me."

# Chapter 126: 125 Unrestrained (Subscribe Please)

Quancheng No.3 Middle School, key class area.

Looking at the array of Summoned Beasts of her own students scattered in disarray, Ye Qingxue's face was an iron blue as she listened to the sarcastic remarks coming from Lu Wu's mouth.

Seeing Ye Qingxue's face turn iron blue, Lu Wu immediately couldn't stand it and hurriedly came over with special concern.

"Mr. Ye, what's wrong with you?

Why are you not talking? Are you angry because of these good-for-nothing students?

Hmm, I think so too. What do these guys count for? You've worked so hard to teach them for most of a year, and in the end, they can't even beat a runt you rejected in a glance.

Disgraceful, it's really embarrassing!"

"Mr. Ye, I suggest you definitely expel them all, otherwise such shameful students going out will just get beaten by others.

Those who know will say they're as good as rotten wood, while those who don't will think it's because Mr. Ye, you're capricious and petty, showing favoritism and leading the students astray.

We can't afford this kind of embarrassment!"

"Lu Wu, you're out of line!"

How could Ye Qingxue tolerate this?

She exploded on the spot!

"Take down those two Summoned Beasts for me!"

At this moment, Ye Qingxue's long hair fluttered without wind, and a black three-tailed cat burst out from the region of her heart, charging straight towards Little Skeleton and Tuantuan.

It was evident, despite her anger, Ye Qingxue still had some sense of rationale and didn't go directly for Lu Wu.

However, she had no intention of holding back on Lu Wu's Summoned Beasts.

In the charge of the cat, its front paws were already extended with claws sharp as knives.

Not to talk about killing them, but at least she aimed to inflict serious injuries on them so they couldn't participate in the high school league, making Lu Wu pay the price for today's actions.

Of course, Little Skeleton and Tuantuan wouldn't just sit there waiting for death; Tuantuan immediately tried to create distance while carrying Little Skeleton, who meanwhile unleashed "Bone Teeth" and "Bone Spear" in hopes of intercepting the adversary.

But the gap in power between them was huge. The three-tailed cat was already approaching Leader Level, and Little Skeleton simply couldn't stop it.

In the blink of an eye, the cat broke through Little Skeleton's "Bone Teeth" and "Bone Spear" and effortlessly caught up to Tuantuan, ferociously aiming its claws at Tuantuan's rear end.

Seeing this, Lu Wu's expression darkened, and he was about to speak when a furious shout erupted.

"The out-of-line one is you!"

Accompanied by the shout, a gust of wind arose, and a colossal figure, crackling with lightning, thunderously descended, seizing the cat in a debris-cloud and pressing it to the ground with overwhelming force, making the cat let out pitiful, piercing wails!

This sudden turn of events drastically changed Ye Qingxue's complexion.

At the same time, Li Kai walked over with a cold face: "How dare you bully our Mr. Lu, do you think I, Li Kai, am dead?"

Almost as soon as Li Kai finished speaking, the colossal figure casually swung its arm, and a whooshing sound resounded.

Following that, the previously fierce three-tailed cat was now thrown at Ye Qingxue's feet like a piece of torn cloth.

Simultaneously, as the dust settled, the figure of Li Kai's family Storm Giant Bear was revealed.

Ye Qingxue, upon seeing the Storm Giant Bear, roughly recognized the Summoned Beast's power, and her face turned even paler, filled with disbelief.

"A Leader Level Summoned Beast? How can such a level exist in Quan City?"

But at this point, Li Kai wasn't even paying attention to her. He went straight to Lu Wu with particularly nervous and concerned words: "Mr. Lu, are you alright?"

"I'm fine, Uncle Li, what brings you here?"

Lu Wu touched his nose, somewhat surprised.

In fact, he had intentionally not sought Li Kai's help. On the one hand, he had already approached Zhao Kai Ming, whose influence was sufficient; on the other, Lu Wu knew that Li Kai was rather resentful of his profession as a Summoner.

Therefore, Lu Wu felt that Li Kai might not want to show his face, so for matters like these, he didn't bother Li Kai.

Unexpectedly, Ye Qingxue was even more overbearing than he anticipated, and to his surprise, Li Kai actually arrived.

"Li Chun called me and told me about it. Thankfully, I arrived in time. Otherwise, who knows what might have happened?"

After checking Lu Wu and confirming he was indeed unharmed, Li Kai breathed a sigh of relief but also chided, "I mean, if you wanted to deal with her, you could've just told me, no need for you to personally step in and dignify her! What if she went mad and hurt you?"

Lu Wu touched his nose and winked at Li Kai, then seriously said, "Uncle Li, that's where you're wrong. What do you mean by me wanting to teach Mr. Ye a lesson?

I, Lu Wu, respect my teachers and hold up morals. How could I ever think of teaching Mr. Ye a lesson?

Also, your actions just now were too reckless. Mr. Ye was guiding me. His Summoned Beast was holding back; he had no intention of injuring my Little Skeleton.

Your violent and reckless arrival...

If someone didn't know better, they might think Mr. Ye was being narrow-minded, driven to the wall, and in a fit of pique, seeking to assassinate my Summoned Beasts."

"This is how you treat someone's Summoned Beast like a punching bag?

Mr. Ye was showing you face, and you acting so ferociously, could make people think Mr. Ye is an incompetent straw bag that can't even take a single hit from you."

With that, Lu Wu turned to look at Ye Qingxue with a sincere face: "Mr. Ye isn't the kind of narrow-minded, driven to the wall, fit-of-pique straw bag, right?"

"You haven't planned to assault my Summoned Beast, have you?"

Ye Qingxue nearly died of anger upon hearing that insinuating remark.

She wanted nothing more than to summon her other beast and kill Lu Wu on the spot, but with Li Kai next to her, she could only swallow her fury without a word.

But how could she stay silent?

"No way, no way, no way!

Mr. Ye doesn't even reply to me; you can't seriously be like that, right?

If you don't respond, are you genuinely thinking of assaulting my Summoned Beast? If you assault my beast, I can't just stand by. If you won't answer, I'll have to go through channels and report this to the officials, get the Alliance and the Professional Center involved!"

"You!"

Ye Qingxue was so angry she felt like her blood would explode.

"Look how angry the instructor is... Alright, let's just proceed through the procedures.

No worries, no worries, Mr. Ye, rest assured. Despite how I may appear, I know people—Director Zhao Kai Ming from the Fucheng Cultivation Master Professional Center is a contact of mine. I'll just give him a call, and the process will be simple and quick, sorted after the high school competition."

Saying that, Lu Wu directly took out his phone and dialed Zhao Kai Ming's number.

Now Ye Qingxue couldn't sit idly. Normally she wouldn't be afraid, but at this juncture, she really couldn't afford to go through with this process.

So, when she saw Lu Wu making the call, she rushed to stop him: "Don't!"

"Don't what?" Lu Wu asked, his face full of amusement.

Ye Qingxue, humiliated, said: "Don't make the call?"

"Why not? You don't say a word, this is my way of going through procedures!

Otherwise, how will others view you? We can't let you be wronged!"

Ye Qingxue was gritting her teeth with frustration but had no recourse.

After taking a deep breath, she said in complete humiliation, "I'm not that kind of person, I didn't plan to assault your Summoned Beast?"

"You're not what kind of person?" Lu Wu lifted an eyebrow, clearly dissatisfied.

Ye Qingxue got his point and threw caution to the wind: "Fine, I admit defeat. I am narrow-minded, a sore loser, a hot-headed idiot—happy now?"

"You hear yourself talking; how could you denigrate yourself by telling the truth like that!!!"

By now, Ye Qingxue had been tormented to the point of losing her temper and simply pretended not to hear Lu Wu's jibes.

What else could she do? After being so embarrassed, she just had to hold her nose and agree, aiming to get Lu Wu out of there as quickly as possible.

But Lu Wu wasn't ready to leave yet; he still wanted to deliver the final blow.

"Mr. Ye, let's not discuss what kind of person you are; let's get back to what was just said.

I remember you said, anyone who can't beat an ordinary class is unworthy of being your student, so now none of them are fit to be your students; why not just expel them?"

That crossed the line for Ye Qingxue.

She could bear being humiliated, but this she could not tolerate.

The nonchalant surrender from earlier was to keep this batch of students—no matter what, she wouldn't expel them.

Even at this moment, she doubled down.

"Lu Wu, I have already backed down, don't push it too far. Don't think just because you have support behind you that you can do whatever you like. It's just a Leader Level Summoned Beast. Is it that powerful?"

"Oh, fierce!"

Lu Wu smirked.

With Ye Qingxue's attitude, Lu Wu had essentially confirmed some of his suspicions.

Ye Qingxue had to secure a remarkable result for her key class students in the high school competition, at least reaching the city level.

So, no matter what, she wouldn't let go of these students.

Having cleared that up, Lu Wu was done causing trouble and didn't plan to linger any longer.

"Mr. Ye, I came in good faith to test your students, and now you think I'm deliberately causing trouble.

Good intentions taken for granted; forget it, I'll just leave!"

With that, Lu Wu shook his head, turned around, and left.

Ye Qingxue watched Lu Wu finally go, letting out a long sigh of relief. But before she could finish her sigh, Lu Wu stopped again: "Oh right, a little plug—I'm starting from today at Uncle Li's shop, offering free tactical arrangement adjustments for all students in Quan City who are not in No. 3 Middle School's key classes, and designing cultivation plans at low cost.

Folks, if you're interested, you might want to leave the key class and come find me. I'm quite confident in cultivation aspects, and I'll give you a discount."

After finishing, Lu Wu left without bothering about Ye Qingxue's suddenly darkened expression, striding away with his company.

But watching Lu Wu leave, Ye Qingxue understood that this guy wasn't done with her; he likely knew something and was preparing to target her.

This infuriated Ye Qingxue to the point where she nearly bit through her teeth.

Despite the rage and the humiliation, Ye Qingxue remained composed: "I'd like to see how you plan to target me!"

# Chapter 127: 126 stirring up trouble

Lu Wu had basically stopped attending school.

After his confrontation with Ye Qingxue at school, he went straight to Lin Jianying's place.

When Lu Wu arrived, Dudu's Dad, some neighbors, and Lin Jianying's parents' friends and relatives were already there.

Lin Jianying's home was now empty except for him; Granny Li had left, and the others had come to help deal with the aftermath.

Although Lu Wu was not accustomed to such an environment, he stayed the entire first day without leaving the scene.

By the end of the first day, everything that needed to be dealt with was taken care of, and Lu Wu turned to what he needed to do.

And what Lu Wu needed to do at that time was still to confront Ye Qingxue.

He couldn't help it; that's just who he was—if he made a move, it wasn't easy for him to stop.

For Lu Wu, it wasn't enough to just make Ye Qingxue lose face once.

He had to make her plans for working hard in Quan City over the past half year go down the drain.

According to the information Lu Wu received, the reason Ye Qingxue came to Quan City was that she needed something the Summoner Professional Center in Quan City had.

They were not willing to hand that thing over to her.

But they were wary of Ye Qingxue's background. Yes, this woman also had backing—her father was a seasoned Professional Summoner, and he had a Lord Level Summoned Beast under his command.

Her own Summoned Beast was infinitely close to the Leader Level.

Such an existence was quite a big shot in Quan City.

Even the Summoner Professional Center, a government agency of sorts, had to give her some face.

Eventually, the two sides struck a deal.

However, their deal was not so simple. Beyond the pure financial transaction, the Summoning Stone Professional Center also took an interest in Ye Qingxue.

No, it wasn't her body they coveted—it was her skill.

This woman might be irrational, but she still had some level of expertise, not just as a Professional Summoner but also as a Professional Cultivator, and not just any Professional Cultivator at that.

So the Professional Center took a fancy to her and added a condition: Ye Qingxue needed to work in Quan City.

She had to cultivate at least ten talents capable of entering the provincial competition for Quan City.

This was also the reason Ye Qingxue came to teach in Quan City, and why the Hengheng Monster told Lu Wu they wanted to monopolize the spots for the provincial competition.

If Lu Wu had been unaware of this, it might have been a different story.

But now that he knew, he wasn't going to let Ye Qingxue complete her deal.

Especially after seeing that Ye Qingxue would rather lose face than give up her key class, Lu Wu decided to hit her with another wave!

After all, with Zhao Kai Ming backing him from afar, and Li Kai up close, he was not afraid of her at all.

If he was going to do it, he was going to go all in!

On the day he embarrassed Ye Qingxue, Lu Wu announced that he would offer free tactical refinements to all senior high school students in Quan City and provide low-cost cultivation programs.

For one plan, Lu Wu only charged 100,000!

This 100,000 may sound like a lot, but compared to Hao Zhijian's 5 million, one could see just how much Lu Wu was willing to spend to mess with Ye Qingxue.

With this news released by Lu Wu, Li Kai's little shop was packed to the brim the next day, and even the traffic on the street where Li Kai's shop was located got jammed.

The reason for this mess was Lu Wu's fame.

He had exposed his identity as a Genius Cultivator on the stage of the Quancheng Cup, and almost the entire city knew about his status as a Genius Cultivator and that he had dozens of Professional Cultivator disciples.

Now, in Quan City, Lu Wu was a person everyone knew.

Some had their eye on him, hoping he would lend a hand with devising cultivation plans.

But the Lu Wu of before had been busy with Little Skeleton's Evolution, spending almost a month in the Secret Realm; those who wanted to find him couldn't, and even if they did, Lu Wu had no time to design cultivation plans for them.

Now, hearing that Lu Wu would offer free tactical refinements to all senior high school students and design low-cost cultivation plans, the whole city naturally exploded.

Every senior high school student hurried to get there, creating a scene that even Lu Wu himself had not anticipated.

Not only had Lu Wu not foreseen this, but the officials hadn't either.

However, although they were taken aback, their response was quite swift.

After being informed of the situation, the executives of the Quan City Alliance, the Professional Summoner Center, and the Cultivator Center held a brief meeting immediately.

At the meeting, despite deeming Lu Wu's actions childish and seriously doubting his ability to provide services—after all, there were nearly a thousand senior high students in No.3 Middle School alone, and more than ten thousand across Quan City—a Cultivator would need at least a few days to make tactical refinements and design cultivation plans, and even if Lu Wu was quicker than most, one a day was already impressive.

With the high school competition only a few days away, how many could Lu Wu serve?

Nonetheless, the authorities had no plans to halt the proceedings. After all, it was a good thing for Quan City; if Lu Wu voluntarily offered services, then let him come.

If it could cultivate a few talents for Quan City, that would be good too!

Thus, the authorities swiftly took action, immediately controlling the situation and dispersing the crowd.

Then they coordinated with Quan City high schools to allot the number of slots, prioritizing the top students from the key classes of each high school.

Effectively, the officials had become scalpers.

As for this, Lu Wu didn't mind.

After all, his main goal was to antagonize Ye Qingxue, and he had anticipated the inevitable traffic congestion nearby; with the authorities arranging things for him, he was spared a lot of trouble.

He just needed to sit in Li Kai's little shop, and one after another, top students would be brought before him.

To target Ye Qingxue's elite class, he could really only rely on top students from other schools' elite classes.

"The number of slots for Quan City to advance to the provincial competition usually ranges from nine to twelve.

Our small team has three, Hengheng Monster's team has three, so it will be a bit difficult to snipe them off, but as long as the top students from the other schools perform well, it shouldn't be too hard to knock out the other teams from Ye Qingxue's class."

Hmm, Lu Wu still had a fair bit of confidence in this respect.

Especially after seeing the team of top students from Quancheng No.1 Middle School who were brought before him, Lu Wu's confidence increased a lot.

However, the small team that was brought before him didn't seem too confident in Lu Wu, a Genius Cultivator of their own age, or rather, they didn't quite respect him.

When the three of them came before Lu Wu, they were somewhat impatient, feeling that it was a waste of their training time!

They each had their own teachers and their own plans for training and cultivating their Summoned Beasts; they didn't think that their teachers were inferior to Lu Wu, nor did they believe Lu Wu could come up with better plans.

Others coveted Lu Wu, but they certainly didn't.

As for this, Lu Wu didn't care; it wasn't the first time he'd seen this attitude, and they would soon become eager for his expertise!

...

I had some stuff to take care of today and didn't get back until after nine, so this chapter is a bit short.

# Chapter 128: 127 Mr. Lu's student group

Lu Wu had always been quite desirable.

Especially in terms of looks and cultivation, Lu Wu's desirability was high, and even cultivators like Wang Dashan and Li Kai were tempted, not to mention those top students.

The impatience of Quancheng No.1 Middle School's top students initially dissipated quickly upon interacting with Lu Wu.

Partly because Lu Wu indeed had something special, and partly because the group of top students from Quancheng No.1 Middle School included two girls.

As everyone knows, Lu Wu's "utterly unremarkable" appearance was particularly attractive to girls.

Paving his way with his looks, Lu Wu's service for this group of top students from Quancheng No.1 Middle School went very smoothly.

In just three hours, he had completed the tactical adjustments for their summoned beasts.

At that time, these three top students were stunned.

They all thought that Lu Wu was a bit too impressively quick.

As everyone knows, being quick is not really a good thing for a man.

Especially with something like tactical adjustments, finishing in three hours, of which about two and a half hours were spent by Lu Wu gathering information. This meant that Lu Wu truly only worked for half an hour!

How good could the results be, being so rushed?

Therefore, the only male member among them declared, as an ordinary guy, that he would rather die than change according to Lu Wu's tactical adjustments by the roadside.

Of course, through the deeds of a certain Mr. Wang, we know that people as steadfast as iron usually end up admitting it's actually good.

This ordinary guy was no exception.

After being kindly pulled aside for a talk by his teammates, he agreed to give it a try.

After trying it, the ordinary guy was completely won over.

Lu Wu's simple tactical adjustment significantly improved the combat power of his summoned beast.

This effect surprised not just the ordinary guy, but also the high-ranking officials watching.

Even more surprisingly, after making tactical adjustments for this group of top students, Lu Wu took less than an hour to provide each of them with a new cultivation plan.

This time was also quick!

But it wasn't short or ineffective!

There indeed was something substantial; at least their teacher was astounded after seeing the plans afterward.

Starting with the team of top students from Quancheng No.1 Middle School, Lu Wu formally entered a super busy work mode.

It wasn't just him, Wang Dashan and Li Kai were also dragged into the busy work.

The division of labor in the shop was clear: Dudu was in charge of eating, Wang Dashan and Li Kai took care of welcoming the students and recording information about their summoned beasts.

This information would then be handed over to Lu Wu along with the summoned beasts, saving him the step of having to ask, which further sped up the work efficiency.

Originally, when servicing the first team, it took Lu Wu nearly 6 hours, averaging 2 hours per person.

Now, with this new division of labor, each person only took about half an hour, making the efficiency terrifyingly impressive.

Lu Wu alone provided services of tactical micro-adjustments and cultivation plan designs for 15 students on the first day.

After that day's service, Lu Wu himself felt somewhat insatiable.

Because he found that for him, this was a great, cost-effective learning opportunity.

After all, now as a cultivator, to make tactical micro-adjustments, the other party had to report as much detailed information about their summoned beast as possible.

This so-called detailed information naturally included their original cultivation plan for summoned beasts and the original training programs for summoning beast skills.

Lu Wu directly obtained 15 summoned beast cultivation plans and 28 summoning beast skill training plans.

Although these cultivation plans were incomplete and the information on the skill training plans was also incomplete, with lots of overlapping skills, it was still a significant gain for Lu Wu.

The most important point was that he got all these not only without spending a single point, but people were even paying him money!

Realizing this, Lu Wu's eyes lit up.

This wasn't him providing services to these students; this was simply fleecing them.

He had almost forgotten his initial purpose; now, all he could think about was taking advantage of this opportunity to fleece wildly.

While Lu Wu was excited about this setup, Wang Dashan and Li Kai were a bit overwhelmed.

Their workload for the day was too much, and they were struggling to keep up!

After all, their job was not just collecting information, but they also had to review and explain the plans after Lu Wu provided them, and they had to learn during this process too, which was really mentally draining.

After all, there were only two of them!

Of course, they were also feeling pain but happy at the same time, as they were gaining quite a lot in this process.

They felt that as long as they could learn a bit more.

In this storm, the pain didn't seem much; they could withstand it.

However, by the evening of the second day, they couldn't hold on any longer!

"We can't go on; the number of people served today has risen to nearly 30. If this continues, we'll die from sudden death!"

Wang Dashan felt like he was about to collapse.

His exhaustion was not physical but the mental exhaustion from excessive use of the brain.

"I just find it odd, I'm almost collapsing here, doesn't Mr. Lu ever get tired? He works over ten hours a day, using his brain intensely, but he never seems weary," Li Kai glanced at Wang Dashan and casually said, "Mr. Lu is used to it."

Indeed, Lu Wu had truly gotten used to it.

There was no way around it, even though his transmigration included cheats, those cheats weren't very effective, so he still had to rely on intense studying.

Therefore, from the moment he transmigrated, Lu Wu was constantly engaged in intense learning.

At first, his head would hurt, but eventually, he got used to the pain.

So while Wang Dashan and Li Kai were exhausted, Lu Wu himself was actually in high spirits, getting sharper and more revitalized.

Even when Wang Dashan and Li Kai's heads were throbbing, Lu Wu could still lean over his desk and write in his journal, capturing all his day's learnings through his entries.

Wang Dashan, his head buzzing, admired Lu Wu profoundly upon hearing Li Kai's phrase 'got used to it.'

Despite his admiration, his head still hurt, and he had no idea if he'd be able to work the next day.

Li Kai was slightly better, but not by much. He couldn't help suggesting, "Should we ask the Cultivation Center to lend a hand?"

Wang Dashan, massaging his head, thought that was a good idea.

But just as he was about to nod, he had a spark of inspiration and came up with an even better idea.

"How about we call our fellow students?"

"What?"

Li Kai was confused, but Wang Dashan didn't explain and simply took out his phone, logged into a social media platform, created a group chat, and invited 86 people on the spot. He promptly named the group 'Mr. Lu's Student Group!'

Then, Wang Dashan briefly described the situation and sent out invitations.

The response was immediate; people bought train tickets that very night to come help out—even standing-room-only tickets!

The next morning, after Lu Wu woke up, he saw many familiar faces in Li Kai's shop and was completely dumbfounded!

It wasn't just Lu Wu who was stunned—the officials in Quan City were too.

Initially, when Lu Wu started this, they thought it was just youthful enthusiasm and didn't expect him to pull it off more than perhaps helping a few top students advance.

But Lu Wu was quick.

In just two days, he had managed dozens of students.

Not only was his efficiency staggering, the outcomes were outstanding as well.

And what the officials hadn't anticipated at all was that, on the third day, Lu Wu brought in a large crowd.

Yes, while not many of his students could come for various reasons, 17 still made it, including seven who had already obtained their Professional Cultivator certificates.

The officials were genuinely shocked upon learning of these people's identities.

Although they had heard Lu Wu had dozens of student Professional Cultivators in his charge, they had taken it lightly.

They didn't really believe Lu Wu had that many student Professional Cultivators—that it was probably just posturing.

But Lu Wu indeed had that many students, and with just one phone call, so many came.

This left the officials baffled for quite a while.

But after their initial shock came elation.

This was a rare opportunity for Quan City. If not for this sudden move by Lu Wu, when would the city have such an assembly of cultivators? It was a rare grand event for Quan City,

The officials swiftly got to work, doing everything to assist Lu Wu and ensure his work went smoothly.

If they missed this chance, they wouldn't have another opportunity to benefit from this genius cultivator.

Interestingly, the officials' thoughts mirrored Lu Wu's.

Everyone was thinking about profiting!

And they all felt quite happy, each thinking they were the ones benefiting.

In the process, it seemed everyone made a gain, managing to pull some wool.

So here's the question.

If everyone managed to pull some wool, whose wool was being pulled?

That's a tough one to answer, but a response exists!

It's Ye Qingxue!

Initially, Ye Qingxue had decent skills, especially in a small place like Quan City where she was considered top-tier. Although Lu Wu had picked off all her students, this didn't mean her specialized class was weak.

In fact, they were strong, just unlucky to have faced someone even stronger than Lu Wu.

Had Lu Wu not intervened, Quan City's slots for the provincial competition might have mostly gone to her students, but now, it was hard to say.

At least Ye Qingxue was already feeling the pressure, even reaching into her own pockets to fund her top students.

She knew with Lu Wu and his team around, securing all the slots for the provincial competition was tough, but she was determined to ensure the rest of the slots, aside from Lu Wu's team, remained hers.

Otherwise, she worried that her deal with the Quan City Summoner Center would fall through, potentially failing.

What she didn't know was that her deal was already doomed, as someone had already started undermining it behind the scenes...

# Chapter 129: 128 silver

Quancheng No.3 Middle School, the elite class!

Ever since Lu Wu chose the elite class, the teaching there had undergone earth-shaking changes.

The intensity of the training had increased significantly.

Ye Qingxue, who was not usually present, was now basically a constant figure in the elite class.

She even bled herself out, going all-out to train the two teams in her class, excluding the Hengheng Monster!

She was sick of staying in this broken place of Quan City!

This time, no matter what, she had to secure at least six spots from Quan City to the provincial competition.

As long as she could secure six spots, she would be able to negotiate with the Summoner Professional Center.

She absolutely had to get that one item ahead of time!

Although it meant she had to bleed a lot for it, it would be worth it if she could just get past this wave!

Ye Qingxue had linked getting that item with her competitive spirit against Lu Wu.

She really did not want to lose to Lu Wu again.

If she did, she would have completely lost.

"Mr. Lu wants to snipe me? Absolutely impossible!

I will never let him succeed!

This time, I cannot lose no matter what!"

However, just as Ye Qingxue was grinding her teeth, and even some what hysterically saying these words, her phone rang—it was a call from the Summoner Professional Center.

"Miss Ye, hello, I am the person in charge at the Quan City Summoner Professional Center.

I'm making this call to apologize to you."

"Apologize?"

Ye Qingxue was taken aback upon hearing this and immediately had a bad feeling. "Apologize for what?"

A voice full of apology came from the other end of the phone: "I'm sorry, Miss Ye, due to some reasons, our previously agreed deal has been canceled.

In addition, the City Lord of Quan City asked me to inform you that your professional instructor certificate has been revoked, and we hope you can hand over your current work as soon as possible and leave Quan City!"

Upon hearing this, Ye Qingxue was immediately enraged.

Just as she was about to explode, another call came on her phone—it was from her father.

Ye Qingxue quickly suppressed her anger, hung up the call from the Professional Center, and answered her father's call.

As soon as the call connected, only three words came through, tinged with suppressed anger and a sense of helplessness.

"Come back!"

As soon as these three words were spoken, Ye Qingxue's face instantly lost all color...

......

In Quan City, at Li Kai's Summoned Beast grocery store.

Almost at the same time Ye Qingxue answered the call, Lu Wu also received a call.

His call was from Fucheng; it was Zhao Kai Ming calling him.

"Hello, Grandpa..."

"No, don't call me Grandpa Zhao, just call me Director Zhao or Uncle Zhao!"

Lu Wu had barely started speaking when Zhao Kai Ming interrupted him, sweating bullets.

If possible, Zhao Kai Ming would prefer Lu Wu to call him Brother Zhao.

But considering his age, he decided to brazenly be an 'uncle' instead.

Lu Wu then curled his lips disdainfully. The old man really had no shame; at his age, he wanted to be called 'uncle,' but being a nephew was better than being a grandson, after all.

"Uncle Zhao, do you need something from me?"

"Yes, there are two things!

One is that I have taken care of the issue on your end, so you don't need to be busy providing people with free tactical adjustments and low-cost training programs.

The other is about the High School League. You don't need to participate in Quan City's tournament; both of your summoned beasts are of Elite Level, so it would be bullying if you joined the city tournament.

I've already arranged it for you; you can go straight to the provincial competition when the time comes!"

Ever since Zhao Kai Ming accidentally discovered Lu Wu's true identity, he was extremely attentive towards Lu Wu.

These past few days, he really put in a lot of effort for Lu Wu's sake.

Running around, shouldering the pressure, he finally resolved the issues with Ye Qingxue and the high school competition for Lu Wu.

It's just that he did it so suddenly that it left Lu Wu a bit perplexed.

He was all geared up to snipe at Ye Qingxue, ready for a rematch at the city competition to make the Hengheng Monster cry once more, but then Zhao Kai Ming suddenly called to tell him it was all resolved and that he didn't have to fight in the city competition anymore.

Lu Wu's first reaction wasn't joy, but he felt somewhat disappointed.

After all, Zhao Kai Ming's interference meant he wouldn't get to see the angry face of Ye Qingxue he had been looking forward to, nor the sight of the Hengheng Monster in tears.

But since Zhao was offering so much help, naturally, Lu Wu couldn't very well tell him to mind his own business.

He still had to show his gratitude.

"Uncle Zhao, I really don't know how to thank you, you've really helped me out big time!"

"Just a small effort, small effort, Xiao Lu, I won't lie to you. The first time I saw you, I felt a connection, so don't treat your Uncle Zhao like an outsider. Whatever you need, just come to me, and I'll smooth it out for you.

By the way, I've prepared a gift for you too, it should be delivered to you shortly."

"No, you've helped me out so much already, Uncle Zhao, and you're still sending me a gift? I should be the one sending gifts to you!"

"What are you talking about? You don't consider me an uncle then? If Uncle Zhao gives you a gift, just take it. Besides, it's not mine anyway, it was that young lady who wanted it, and it's of no use to me, might as well leave it for you to play with.

Okay, that's it, Uncle Zhao still has to stub... cough, I've got other things to attend to, let's chat another time."

With that, Zhao Kai Ming hung up hurriedly.

On Lu Wu's end, after hanging up the phone, he couldn't help but shake his head, feeling particularly helpless.

"Ah well, it's tough being so handsome every day and having a slightly better talent; you easily become the object of envy."

Huh, Lu Wu did have that effect that made people envious.

Not long after Lu Wu's phone call ended, someone from the Quan City Summoner Center came over.

It was the president who personally came to deliver the gift Zhao Kai Ming mentioned to Lu Wu.

What surprised Lu Wu was that the item Ye Qingxue coveted turned out to be a token.

Palm-sized, the token bore the two characters [Ciptong].

Additionally, the Golden Finger at Lu Wu's house immediately provided the attributes.

```

Item: Citol Order

Quality: ??? (Above Silver)

Effect: Access the Secret Realm of [Citong Ancient City]!

ps: Unless you've got a Summoned Beast of at least leader level, don't bother using it unless you want to die quietly.

pss: Be careful, this thing is easily destroyed.

Description: With this material, it would be a waste not to make some Companion Equipment.

```

It was Lu Wu's first time seeing something above Silver quality.

However, this item seemed to be a ticket to enter an instance.

Moreover, it was a ticket for an instance that Lu Wu couldn't use at his current level, which was a bit disappointing.

But when he saw the final description, his eyes suddenly lit up.

"Little Skeleton is far from being a leader. Besides, a broken instance might not be of much use. Why don't I use this to craft some Companion Equipment for Little Skeleton?"

Hmm, Lu Wu thought this might be quite interesting.

An item above Silver quality, at the very least Gold, right? If he could craft Companion Equipment for Little Skeleton, wouldn't Little Skeleton soar?

"Hasn't Little Skeleton always been nagging for a phone that won't break?

I'll look into it and craft one with this.

Yeah, my Little Skeleton is so poor, doesn't have anything nice, I should make it something good."

But upon further thought, Lu Wu felt something wasn't quite right.

"But if I really make it an indestructible phone, what about its Big Move?"

"Its Big Move is only triggered by severe emotional fluctuations, and the only two things that ensure such fluctuations are either the phone being broken or me being broken.

If we can't smash the phone, does that mean Little Skeleton will have to smash me to use its Big Move?"

# Chapter 130: 129 Hatching (Request for Subscription)

Because Zhao Kai Ming interfered,

Ye Qingxue's matter came to a close ahead of schedule.

However, although the matter concerning Ye Qingxue had concluded, the situation that Lu Wu had stirred up had not yet ceased.

After all, for Lu Wu, this was a great opportunity to gain benefits. With his nature, how could he simply let it go?

Moreover, his students had been arriving one after another, and the officials of Quan City were hoping for Lu Wu to make a big impact. If Lu Wu were to stop now, everyone would feel it quite regrettable and disappointing.

Thus, rather than winding down, Lu Wu's efforts only grew larger!

By the fifth day, the number of students from the Cultivation Master profession that had come to Lu Wu's side had reached a total of 38.

Li Kai's small shop simply couldn't accommodate them.

Under these circumstances, the officials of Quan City were more nervous than anyone.

Having so many Professional Cultivators coming for such a grand educational event, how could they possibly let Lu Wu and his team be inconvenienced?

They immediately cleared the primary Summoner training field, formerly the venue for the Quancheng Cup, for Lu Wu and his team and arranged for a large number of people to assist him.

With substantial support from the officials, Lu Wu's efforts were thriving, and his efficiency was ever-increasing.

At its peak, he manage to resolve nearly a hundred tactical adjustments for Summoned Beasts and designing cultivation plans per day.

On average, they solved one case in just a few minutes.

The efficiency was astounding, and so were the results.

The event had only been going for half a month, and all the senior high students in Quan City had already been thoroughly assisted by Lu Wu.

However, Lu Wu's activities did not end after assisting these students. Of course, he did not continue to expand the scope of his benefit-gathering. After having assisted all the senior high students, he turned to focus on his own group of students.

They closed the doors and, using the brains of Lu Wu's students, helped Lu Wu process the benefits he had gathered, and it also served as a teaching session for these students, which ended up taking even longer than the gathering of benefits.

The activities continued untiL March before coming to a halt.

The total duration was almost two months.

It was a lengthy period, but the rewards were substantial.

Data on tens of thousands of Summoned Beasts, hundreds of cultivation plans, and hundreds of Basic Skill training methods.

Although both the cultivation plans and the skill training methods were basic and even incomplete, they still represented a tremendous fortune to Lu Wu.

Even though this wealth could not elevate Little Skeleton's Quality to a higher level, it solidified Lu Wu's foundation.

Now, Lu Wu could confidently say that there were few who understood more and were more skilled than him in the cultivation of Summoned Beasts at the "Ordinary" level.

No matter what type of Summoned Beast, as long as it was at the "Ordinary Level," Lu Wu could easily handle it.

"Newbie Village King" was what they called Lu Wu!

Of course, Lu Wu's gains were not just a title.

In the subsequent period, Lu Wu gradually monetized his gains.

During this process, the three Summoned Beasts of team Lu Wu reaped tremendous benefits.

The biggest winner was undoubtedly Lin Jianying's goblin.

Since this goblin was now a member of Lu Wu's team, and coupled with Lu Wu's intention to advertise it during the high school league, Lu Wu paid great attention to its cultivation.

Under Lu Wu's cultivation, the attributes of this goblin underwent a radical transformation.

...

Name: Goblin Warrior (First Evolution) (Single)

Power: 1-Star (Elite)

Quality: Black Iron (Enhanced) (Single)

Attribute: Physical

State: Numbness (It doesn't matter what you do, the goblin is already used to it)

Basic Skills: Fierce Strike (Optimized) (Mastered)

Charge (Optimized) (Mastered)

Block (Optimized) (Mastered)

Dodge (Optimized) (Mastered)

Goblin Sword Strike (Optimized) (Mastered)

Talent: Sword Weapon Mastery

Weakness: Magic

Description: Well, your Little Skeleton has finally succeeded, completely surpassing it!

This is the goblin's current attribute.

With Lin Jianying's family's goblin elites, Lu Wu's team has all become elites.

And with Lu Wu's team becoming all elites, Lu Wu also started preparing to head to Fucheng.

The high school league had already begun in March.

The city-level competition had basically ended by mid-April, and thanks to Zhao Kai Ming giving Lu Wu a backdoor, he skipped the city competition and directly entered the provincial stage.

And the provincial competition was to start immediately after the city competition ended.

Lu Wu and his team had to head to Fucheng for the provincial competition.

Furthermore, unless something unexpected happened, Lu Wu might not return to Quan City for a long time once he left this time.

One reason was that after the provincial competition ended, Lu Wu was to start school.

Another reason was his unreliable father, who, a few months ago, took his wife and daughter on a trip and, midway, on a whim, bought a farm in a rural village that couldn't even be located by a cell phone, and became a farmer, not returning home.

This made Lu Wu's head buzz.

If it weren't for Lu Haikong occasionally calling him to send money, Lu Wu would have thought he'd been abandoned by that old man.

And with Lu Haikong not returning to Quan City, and Lu Wu fully focused on Summoned Beast Cultivation, it was hard to say when he'd be back once he left this time.

So, on the evening just before departure, Lu Wu unusually didn't study, but instead calmly joined Little Skeleton to thoroughly clean up the home where he had lived for nearly a year.

It was a sort of farewell.

Well, this kind of farewell began with quite a ceremonial sense, and Lu Wu did it with much vigor.

But this enthusiasm only lasted ten minutes.

Ten minutes ago, he felt quite poetic; ten minutes later, he felt like a fool.

But since he'd started, Lu Wu could only grit his teeth and continue.

After much work, Lu Wu and Little Skeleton managed to complete about ninety percent.

"Living room cleaned, the old folks' rooms cleaned, guest room cleaned, kitchen and bathroom all cleaned; should I just skip my own room?"

Lu Wu was particularly tired and really wanted to skip cleaning his room.

But Lu Wu was tired; Little Skeleton was not.

It found it quite fun!

Seeing Little Skeleton so energetic, Lu Wu just let go.

"If you're not tired, then I'll leave my room to you. Don't touch the stuff on my desk though; anything else, go for it!"

With that, Lu Wu collapsed on the sofa, while Little Skeleton, full of energy, grabbed the cleaning tools and dashed into Lu Wu's room.

It cleaned Lu Wu's room very diligently and meticulously.

After finishing, Little Skeleton, admiring its own work, was filled with a sense of pride.

However, Little Skeleton soon realized it seemed to have missed a spot; it hadn't cleaned the wardrobe in Lu Wu's room yet!

That won't do, Little Skeleton was about to clean the last place when Lu Wu came in.

"Enough, enough, no more fussing, that's enough. We've got a long journey tomorrow!"

Lu Wu pressed Little Skeleton's head down, pushed it away, and sprawled out on the bed to fall into a deep sleep.

Early the next morning, Lu Wu, with simple luggage and leading Little Skeleton and Dudu, boarded the train to Fucheng.

And almost as soon as Lu Wu left, the wardrobe started to shake.

Not long after,

a cute little creature emerged, looked around, and didn't find Lu Wu, then became confused.

Where's the person?

Where did they run off to? You left your cute little one behind!

Thank you for the support from "Lve Lve Lve Lve Little Whisper," "tworen9999," and "丿踏雪丶爽"!

# Chapter 131: 130 little goldfish looking for Lu Wu

Lu Haikong thought that since he had placed the egg in the wardrobe, Lu Wu, who would always need to change clothes, would inevitably find it at some point. It was just a matter of time.

But regretfully, although Lu Wu did need to change clothes, he had never bothered to rummage through the wardrobe.

Why bother with a wardrobe? Too much hassle!

He had been too busy during this period; who had time to care whether their clothes were fashionable or not?

He only had two sets of everyday clothes—one to wear and the other to wash. It was a simple, infinite loop that didn't even require putting things away.

Lu Wu even found this routine troublesome and had even considered stripping the Little Skeleton's Mage Robe to wear himself.

That way, he wouldn't even have to wash his clothes anymore.

Hmm, not only did he think this, but he actually did it.

Little Skeleton didn't seem to mind; in fact, it quite enjoyed swapping clothes with Lu Wu. Unfortunately, Little Skeleton was only one meter sixty, all bone and no flesh. Its robes were loose-fitting, but still, Lu Wu couldn't fit into them.

So Lu Wu was stuck with his two-set clothing loop.

After all, with his good looks, how he dressed was never an issue, and no one dared to say anything about it.

But this resulted in Lu Wu not opening his wardrobe for several months, let alone discovering the additional box and egg inside.

If he had discovered it earlier, the little creature inside the egg could have emerged much sooner instead of having to wait several months to hatch.

Now the little creature had come out, but Lu Wu had already left.

It didn't affect Lu Wu much; he didn't even know anything had happened.

After all, he and the creature inside the egg hadn't formed a Contract yet.

But for the little creature, the impact was significant.

Lu Sea Air had put a drop of Lu Wu's Blood into the egg while the little creature was still forming, and its consciousness began to awaken, even though it hadn't emerged yet. Over time, it could even sense the outside environment.

That meant, although Lu Wu was unaware of the little creature, it knew about Lu Wu.

It could even be said that it had been living with Lu Wu day and night for several months.

Now that it had emerged and Lu Wu had gone, the little creature was especially confused, resentful, and angry!

While humans could get mad in impotent fury, when a Summoned Beast got angry, the situation was entirely different.

Little Skeleton could cast its Big Move, but the little creature directly evolved in its anger.

Originally a round and plump creature, after rolling around Lu Wu's house for a long time without finding a way out, it stopped next to the toilet. And as it watched the water in the toilet bowl, a burst of gold Light suddenly radiated from the little creature.

Meanwhile, on his way to Fucheng and browsing the inner web, Lu Wu suddenly felt a buzzing in his head accompanied by a surge of coolness—indicative of an increase in spiritual power.

"What's happening? Little Skeleton's Power improved? So worry-free this time, I don't even need to smash a phone?"

Lu Wu was taken aback and hurriedly checked the Little Skeleton standing beside him, curiously poking with bony fingers, oblivious and numb to the goblin being at its mercy.

But this glance only confused Lu Wu more.

"Still 1 star, no Level up huh? Why did my spiritual power increase on this side?"

Furthermore, Lu Wu vaguely felt that something extra was in his head, but due to the distance, this sensing was very weak. Lu Wu researched it for a long time to no avail. In the end, he could only set the matter aside and continued to explore the inner web.

While Lu Wu was confused, researching, and giving up, the little creature in Lu Wu's house completed its physical Evolution.

The original small ball had morphed into a little goldfish after completing its Evolution.

And during the process, it had already formed a Contract with Lu Wu, now knowing where Lu Wu was.

Although it didn't know the exact location, it had a sense of direction and was determined to find Lu Wu!

It wanted to ask Lu Wu!

Why had it been left in a dark box for so long, and why had he overlooked it, leaving behind such an adorable little creature?

The little creature took a leap, diving into the toilet bowl and slipping into the sewer, officially starting its adventurous journey as a little goldfish to find Lu Wu!

…

On Lu Wu's side.

He was completely unaware that he had acquired another Summoned Beast.

And even less aware that the little creature was coming for him, full of indignation.

He had finished buzzing his head, continuing to busy himself.

Today, just as Lu Wu got into the car, the Evolution Plan for Little Skeleton Mage he had submitted months ago finally showed some movement.

The inner web had just sent him an email.

[Your submitted "Skeleton Mage Evolution Plan" has encountered some issues during the verification process that require your response. Below are the questions raised during the verification…]

As he looked at the questions appended in the email, Lu Wu couldn't help but frown.

"What a hassle, this kind of Evolution Plan has many more complications than a Cultivation Plan; it's been months without resolution, and now they have the nerve to send me questions to answer. What a headache!"

But despite his complaints, Lu Wu provided detailed answers to each question.

After resolving this and replying to the email, Lu Wu casually checked his account.

Account: I Want to Be a Sea King

Points: 4023

Level: 2

Listed Cultivation Plans: Little Skeleton Training Manual Series, Little Skeleton Soup Series, Goblin's Transforming Needle Series

Listed Skill Training Plans: Brief (total of 88 kinds)

Total Profit Share Income: 432

Total Points Spent: 2111

...

Over the past few months, Lu Wu hadn't continued to release new Summoned Beast Cultivation plans, but he had earned some points by modifying Skill Training Plans.

Now his total points had reached as much as 4023.

This was quite a fortune, and looking at these points, Lu Wu felt like he was becoming wealthy.

Unfortunately, he feared these points wouldn't last long.

"Now I almost have enough points, it's time to get the second phase of the learning up and running.

It's been several months since Little Skeleton's quality has improved, it's time to enhance it!"

Saying this, Lu Wu opened the internal network and clicked on the Cultivation Plan of the Undead Skeletons Classification.

There were quite a few Summoned Creatures in the Undead Skeletons Classification, a dense pack of them, and Lu Wu had to study every one of these plans.

Not only that, if he wanted to study them in depth, Lu Wu would also need to acquire these Skeleton Summoned Creatures.

After all, to modify the plans with his Golden Finger, Lu Wu needed the creatures present; without the Summoned Beasts, where would he go to modify?

"If I really decide to learn all these plans in one go, these few thousand points I have will not be enough, and I also wouldn't know where to find so many Summoned Beasts.

I can only start with finding a common Skeleton Summoned Creature, learn all its cultivation plans, and then get one to experiment on."

Lu Wu pondered for a moment and chose one of the creatures, the White Bone Wild Boar, as the first object of research.

With points in his pocket, Lu Wu spent them generously, purchasing all 183 cultivation plans for the White Bone Wild Boar at once.

172 of the plans were to enhance it to Black Iron Quality, and 11 plans were to enhance it to Bronze Quality.

The cheapest was 3 points each, the most expensive was 15 points, and the 183 cost Lu Wu a total of 1322 points.

Quite expensive, but for Lu Wu now, it was still manageable.

After all, he had over four thousand points in his pocket, and also, this money was not impossible to earn back.

After he had thoroughly studied these plans, acquired a White Bone Wild Boar, and digested all the plans with the power of the Golden Finger, creating a 9.0 or higher version of the plan, he would release it on the internal network and Lu Wu would not only not lose out but also make a profit.

"Also, the high school league provincial competition is about to start soon.

I've been looking forward to advertising, and if it works out, that'll be another sum of points coming in.

It seems I won't have to worry about running out of resources; in the future, my points will only increase!"

Thinking of this, Lu Wu's smile became even brighter.

And as the saying goes, with a belly full of food and wine, one's illicit thoughts arise (anyway, I'm going to censor myself).

Now that his pockets were a bit filled with points, he began to entertain some ideas that he didn't have before.

"Now that I have enough spiritual power and points, why not get another Summoned Beast to play with?"

"Hmm, Fucheng, being the center of Jiangnan, should have specialized shops for Summoning Stones, right?

When I get to Fucheng, I'll get a Summoning Stone.

This time, I must get a Summoned Beast with at least Gold Quality or above. Raising a troublesome creature like Little Skeleton is enough; I absolutely can't get another low-quality Summoned Beast.

It must be a creature of very high quality, one that's very easy to take care of, preferably one that doesn't need much attention and can grow on its own!"

Lu Wu realized as he said this that he might be daydreaming.

"Alright, it's possible to get a top-grade Summoning Beast Baby, but a Summoned Beast that grows without care and doesn't need much attention is practically impossible.

I just hope to get one that's a bit less trouble than Little Skeleton!"

What Lu Wu didn't know was

that there were indeed such easy-care Summoned Beasts.

They don't need nurturing, no teaching.

They could not only evolve on their own, contract on their own, but also go out of their way to find Lu Wu and deliver themselves to his doorstep.

Extremely easy to take care of!

After all, they came from incredible origins.

The only possible trouble was, when such an easy-care little guy found Lu Wu, it might give him a tail-whip first and twist his head out of shape!

...

Thank you to [Owner of the Capybara Who Wants to Keep a Cat] and [tworen9999] for the reward support!

By the way, I just rotate between two sets of clothes when I'm at home!

# Chapter 132: 131 Arrived at Fucheng

On the train from Quan City to Fucheng.

Lu Wu had just bought the cultivation plan for the White Bone Wild Boar and was getting ready to throw himself into research and study when a message came in.

He picked up his phone and saw it was an official message from the high school league, regarding some matters related to the provincial competition.

Lu Wu glanced over it and noticed that most of the content was fairly routine.

It announced the competition dates, venues, and some other related notices.

The part that caught Lu Wu's attention the most was the format of the provincial competition.

During the city competition, the high school league was split into individual and team sections.

But for the provincial competition, these two parts had been integrated, and there were no longer individual competitions, only team competitions.

However, this team competition was different from the one during the city competition; it wasn't the kind where everyone fought side by side, but rather a format similar to a "defend the fortress" mode.

Competing teams would send players to the field, with the winner staying on to continue fighting against members of the opposing team until defeated.

Theoretically, if you were strong enough, you could take out the entire opposing team by yourself, directly leading your teammates to a lazy victory and ranking up.

"How did it change to this?"

Lu Wu was somewhat surprised.

However, on second thought, he felt that this mode wasn't too bad.

"It doesn't seem much different; even in the previous team competition, if one Summoned Beast was a bit stronger, the effect was similar.

On the contrary, this method now allows individuals to stand out more during the competition. If you perform well, the advertising effect will definitely be great!"

Hmm, Lu Wu was completely focused on money now, hardly a sentence spoken without mention of advertising.

After reading the message, he also logged onto the official website of the high school league to have a look.

The competition was starting in a few days, and it was always good to be prepared ahead of time.

However, Lu Wu only browsed for a bit before turning his attention back to studying the pig.

It wasn't that the official website lacked content; rather, there was too much, and Lu Wu felt that diving into it would be too energy-consuming and not particularly meaningful. It would be better to wait until just before the competition to research the upcoming opponents.

However, while Lu Wu wasn't researching, his teammates were doing it intensively.

Of course, this teammate was not Dudu; she hardly had the time to research anything as she was busy studying Lu Wu every day.

The one immersed in this research was Lin Jianying.

He hadn't started this research just now; since he joined Lu Wu's team, he had been on it.

He truly wanted to do something for Lu Wu, and currently, gathering information about the high school league seemed to be the only thing he could do.

At this moment, on his way to Fucheng, Lin Jianying had almost completed his collection of information and had even started the final sorting.

If things went smoothly, he should be able to finish the final report by the time they arrived in Fucheng.

While Lu Wu studied, Lin Jianying organized information, and Dudu craved Lu Wu's attention,

The journey passed without conversation.

Soon, Lu Wu and his companions arrived in Fucheng.

Just as Lu Wu stepped off the train, two phone calls came in.

One was from Li Kai, and the other was from Zhao Kai Ming.

Both were there to pick up Lu Wu!

Moreover, both of them had already arrived at the station.

Li Kai was arranged by Lu Wu; he and Wang Dashan had actually come to Fucheng a week earlier.

This was to prepare a foothold for Lu Wu in Fucheng in advance, as well as for his laboratory.

Speaking of the laboratory,

Lu Wu was planning to set up one for himself; now that he was a Cultivation Master, having a research lab, or even a Professional Center, was essential for convenience and discretion, whether it was to keep up appearances or for practical reasons.

After all, Lu Wu's plans required live Summoned Beasts, and he couldn't always rely on others as he did when researching the goblin, right?

As soon as Li Kai and the others heard Lu Wu wanted to establish a lab, they all expressed a desire to join in, so Lu Wu had them come over early to prepare. They also had pretty much everything ready within a week.

At least Li Kai and his crew had managed to secure a landing spot for Lu Wu.

As Lu Wu was now arriving, of course, Li Kai would be the first to come and pick him up.

What Lu Wu didn't expect was Zhao Kai Ming!

Lu Wu didn't expect that by merely mentioning it offhand, Zhao Kai Ming not only remembered his schedule but had even come early to wait for him.

This was quite a surprise and a touching gesture for Lu Wu, accompanied by a sense of helplessness.

Clearly, Zhao Kai Ming's enthusiasm was directed at his talent.

Back at the Professional Center, Zhao Kai Ming had expressed a desire to take him on as an apprentice, and now this enthusiasm clearly showed that his intentions had not changed.

If this were a few months earlier, Lu Wu would have accepted without hesitation, but now, Lu Wu felt he might not need a mentor as he could learn quite well on his own.

Nevertheless, since Zhao Kai Ming had come all this way, and had previously given him such a big hand, Lu Wu couldn't refuse.

He could only call Li Kai to explain the situation and then go to meet Zhao Kai Ming, who was already waiting for him at the station.

Well, finding Zhao Kai Ming was easy.

One reason was his conspicuous location, standing right under the station's giant advertising screen; the other was that Zhao Kai Ming's ride was hard to miss.

The twelve-meter-long luxury car was strikingly eye-catching.

Although Lu Wu didn't know much about cars, he could recognize this as a top-of-the-line Divine Dragon model claimed to withstand attacks from Leader Level Summoned Beasts.

This car was insanely expensive and flashy, drawing frequent onlookers.

Despite all this, Zhao Kai Ming still worried Lu Wu wouldn't find him, so he actually stood outside the car waiting for him. As soon as he saw Lu Wu and their team approaching, Zhao Kai Ming hurriedly waved his hands, "Xiao Lu? Over here, over here, over here!"

At that moment, Lu Wu felt the people around him grow silent.

The young ladies who were already sneaking peeks at him now eyed him with even more burning gazes.

Lu Wu was truly helpless; this was way too high-profile.

"Uncle Zhao, thank you for the trouble!" Lu Wu said as he touched his nose and went up to him.

"What trouble is there to speak of, come on, get in the car, get in the car!"

Zhao Kai Ming enthusiastically opened the car door for Lu Wu.

Just as they were about to get into the car, the screen on the advertisement board above their heads suddenly switched. A mature woman in a cheongsam appeared on the screen.

"I am Jiang Yuexing, the Governor of Jiangnan Province of the Alliance.

The high school competition is nearing, and I would like to wish all candidates a triumphant start, achieving high scores and getting into the schools of your dreams!"

This was a quite short video of blessings, lasting no more than 15 seconds, but it was incredibly eye-catching.

Even Lu Wu couldn't help but look up and watch it continuously play three times until it looped again, with Dudu next to him exclaiming in rarity, "What a beautiful auntie!"

When Lu Wu heard this, he immediately turned his head and rubbed Dudu's head.

"She is beautiful, but our Dudu will be even prettier than her once she slims down!"

Upon hearing this, Zhao Kai Ming, who was next to them, turned his head to look at Dudu and couldn't help but twitch his mouth.

Then turning to look at Lu Wu, who just turned around, rubbed the head, and comforted in one fluid, practiced movement, Zhao Kai Ming couldn't help but comment internally, truly worthy of that man's son.

"Xiao Lu, do you guys have a place to stay in Fucheng? Why not stay at Uncle Zhao's house?"

After getting into the car, Zhao Kai Ming asked immediately.

"No need to trouble Uncle Zhao, I have a place to stay here in Fucheng, just send me to this address."

Lu Wu said as he sent a location to Zhao Kai Ming.

This made Zhao Kai Ming somewhat disappointed; he had thought Lu Wu would stay at his house, and he had even been specially called back by his granddaughter.

However, he didn't say anything and directly gave the address to the driver and asked the driver to drive, while his gaze fell on the Little Skeleton, who was curiously inspecting the car.

Although he had already known early on that the Little Skeleton from Lu Wu's house had successfully evolved, seeing the evolved Little Skeleton still made Zhao Kai Ming exclaim in admiration.

He was a seasoned Cultivation Master, and although his main direction wasn't the Skeleton Series of Summoned Beasts, his eyes were still very sharp.

He could roughly assess the level of Cultivation of the Little Skeleton at a glance.

It was truly extraordinary!

He really hadn't expected Lu Wu to cultivate the Little Skeleton to such a degree.

What surprised Zhao Kai Ming even more was that Lu Wu had actually found a plan to evolve the Little Skeleton into a Skeleton Mage.

But then, thinking about who Lu Wu's father was, Zhao Kai Ming felt it all made sense.

"I wonder if Xiao Lu's evolution plan can prove to be successful, if it does, the benefits to him will be inestimable."

But Zhao Kai Ming was also a bit worried.

The evolution plan submitted by Lu Wu had been researched for several months by the Fucheng Center without any outcome.

He was concerned that perhaps that person had secretly cheated during the Little Skeleton's evolution, which led to its successful evolution?

If that were the case, then Lu Wu's evolution plan might not yield results.

In that scenario, not only would Lu Wu miss out on benefits, but the Professional Center would also have wasted a great deal of effort and resources.

The more Zhao Kai Ming thought about it, the more he felt it might be true.

Looking at the Little Skeleton with initially fervent eyes now dimmed a bit, however, he still started talking with Lu Wu about the Skeleton Evolution to open up the conversation.

If they talked about other topics, Lu Wu might not be able to join in and it would be a bit awkward, but when discussing Cultivation, then Lu Wuke was very animated.

Lu Wu talked with him all the way to their destination, even seeming a bit reluctant to end the conversation.

Zhao Kai Ming, however, despite smiling on the outside, was internally cursing.

From the beginning of the topic with Lu Wu, he had been itching to slap himself.

Mainly because his research in the Skeleton Series wasn't in-depth, and when talking with Lu Wu, he found he simply couldn't guide the conversation, and throughout the conversation, felt like an idiot.

Frequently, he would be thrown into a flurry of confusion and breaking sweat by the questions Lu Wu threw at him.

At this moment, he fully recalled the fear of being dominated by 'injections' in the Cultivation Room at the Center a few months ago.

So much so that when Lu Wu invited him to come in and continue talking after reaching the destination, he could only find an excuse to beat a hasty retreat.

Watching the departing vehicle, Lu Wu couldn't help but sigh again.

"Busy as they are, they still find the time to pick me up.

Ah, this damned, uncontainable talent and charm of mine!"

...

Please subscribe and vote!

# Chapter 133: 132 give goblin an injection

Quan City, the sewer system.

The little goldfish was swimming merrily along.

It had to be said, the quality of this little goldfish was really high, its potential was strong, and its aptitudes were astonishing in every aspect.

No training was needed at all; it seemed to know many things by instinct.

What was even more amazing was that Skills didn't seem to cost it much.

Little Skeleton had to go through arduous practice for several days to master a Skill, naturally comprehending them through quality enhancement, evolution, or cheats, while the little goldfish just went with its mood.

After it entered the sewer through the toilet, the goldfish found the sewer environment a bit dark and became somewhat displeased, so a light began shining off its body.

The little goldfish thought the smell of the sewer was unpleasant and the water dirty, so a little bubble formed around its body.

This little bubble could not only isolate the stench but even purify the water quality.

The filthy water of the sewer was instantly purified upon entering the little bubble.

What does "emerging from the mud unsoiled" mean?

This kind of situation with the little goldfish was exactly "emerging from the mud unsoiled"!

But sometimes, being too conspicuous isn't a good thing.

In today's world, Summoned Beasts had infiltrated every aspect of the world, even the sewer systems beneath human cities.

Although these Summoned Beasts didn't affect human life, for some Summoned Beasts, this was quite dangerous.

The little goldfish, shining with light and bubbling, was as conspicuous as it could be.

That's not a good thing, and soon after entering the sewer, it caught the attention of a Summoned Beast within.

The first to encounter the little goldfish and take notice of it was a Mud Monster.

It hid in the filthy sludge of the sewer, quietly waiting for the little goldfish to come closer.

The perception of the little goldfish seemed quite strong; it noticeably slowed down as it approached the Mud Monster.

However, the little one was, after all, freshly hatched, its senses keen but its experience lacking.

Like a silly roe deer, it sensed danger but didn't flee immediately; instead, it wagged its tail curiously and cautiously surveyed its surroundings.

Such a foolish roe deer, how could the Mud Monster let it escape?

Cautiously wriggling closer, and when within striking distance, the Mud Monster suddenly launched an attack, enveloping the little goldfish entirely...

......

Lu Wu had no idea that his little goldfish had encountered danger just as it left the house.

Er, no, he didn't know anything to begin with.

He didn't even know he had gained another Summoned Beast!

While the little goldfish was in danger, he was touring his new territory under Li Kai's guidance.

Previously, when Lu Wu was exploiting loopholes in Quan City, he had gained not only knowledge but also money!

His schemes were priced at 100,000 each!

Although the price was quite cheap, the quantity was overwhelming.

There were nearly ten thousand high school students in Quan City. Although not all sought Lu Wu's help in designing schemes, nearly a thousand did pay the fee.

At 100,000 each, a thousand people amounted to one billion.

In addition, after Lu Wu's event ended, Quan City officials also subsidized Lu Wu with a sum of money.

Having organized such a big event, and Quan City having gained such a great advantage, they couldn't let Lu Wu suffer a loss, right?

Therefore, the Quancheng Alliance, Summoner Center, and Cultivator Center gritted their teeth and each came up with 60 million!

Plus the students' spending at Li Kai's shop, all added up, Lu Wu ended up with a little over three billion in his hands.

Well, casually having three little goals achieved, Lu Wu didn't feel much about it.

Don't ask why, just that he, Lu Wu, wasn't interested in money.

Yes, that's right, Lu Wu wasn't showing off, he truly had no interest in money.

He never even handled this sum; besides sending a sum to his old man, Lu Wu handed the rest over to Li Kai.

And Li Kai, with Lu Wu's fund, came to Fucheng a week early and bought a particularly small research institute.

What Lu Wu was now looking at was this research institute.

Li Kai walked ahead, introducing the place to Lu Wu.

"This research institute has a total of four floors, one underground and three above ground. The underground is where the Cultivation Room is located; the first floor is the office area, and the second and third floors are residential areas.

The total built-up area is over 1,000 square meters, and there is also a courtyard of over 2,000 square meters outside.

However, the previous owners took all the equipment from the research institute, though they did leave a transport van and a sedan."

Although it was called particularly small, it was, after all, purchased with three little goals.

Although the location was a bit remote, other aspects were fine.

At least Lu Wu was quite satisfied.

He could consider himself settled down in Fucheng.

Settling down at 19 wasn't too shabby, right?

With that thought, Lu Wu felt a sense of achievement sprout, and he found a good angle to snap a photo of his conquered territory to send to his old man.

He planned to tempt Lu Haikong, who was squatting on the farm at the moment.

To see if he could lure him over to enjoy the good life.

Lu Haikong didn't reply, but Lu Wu wasn't too concerned, as he had grown accustomed to the old man disappearing for ten days to half a month and then showing up just to ask for money.

On Lu Wu's end, his father didn't respond, while Dudu's Dad was quite anxious on the other side.

The video call came no sooner than he had arrived there, to ensure his daughter's safety and to check Dudu's living environment; indeed, Dudu's mother was also very concerned, so Dudu had no choice but to take them on a tour.

After the tour, Dudu's Dad still had things to say, considering warning Lu Wu not to bully his daughter, but before he could speak, he was suppressed by Dudu's mother.

Dudu's mother repeatedly instructed Dudu to keep a close eye on him, saying such a good catch mustn't be lured away by some flashy temptress!

She even taught Dudu various methods to deal with home-wreckers.

Alas, such advice was doomed to be ineffective; with Dudu's temperament, she could spend hundreds of years and still not learn, and even if she did, she wouldn't dare use such tactics.

...

The following days, Lu Wu remained busy.

Although he had a foothold and a research institute, the other party had taken all the related equipment away.

If Lu Wu wanted to set up his own lab, he needed to have his own equipment.

Even if some of it he might not use, Li Kai and his team would need it.

So, for the next few days, Lu Wu busied himself with acquiring these items.

With the help of Zhao Kai Ming, Lu Wu soon had everything he needed.

Zhao Kai Ming had originally intended to give these to him as a gift.

But Lu Wu insisted on paying for them.

Moreover, in the past few days, it seemed that Zhang Wentao and the others had begun to notice Zhao Kai Ming's unusual attitude towards Lu Wu, so Zhao Kai Ming didn't persist and let Lu Wu pay.

Lu Wu wasn't just being polite to Zhao Kai Ming, though his pockets were empty; he still had points.

In the world of Summoners and Cultivation Masters, Internal Network Points were the real hard currency.

Almost all related items could be purchased with points, including these facilities!

A whole set of basic Cultivation Room equipment for 500 points.

A full suite of research equipment for 500 points.

Transforming the yard into a Summoned Beast training field for 300 points.

A complete set of equipment for confining Summoned Beasts for 500 points.

Three live Ordinary Level White Bone Wild Boars for 150 points.

All of this added up to 1950 points!

This was after the discount Zhao Kai Ming had given him, and after this spending, Lu Wu's remaining points dwindled below a thousand.

Looking at the few points left, Lu Wu felt a sting of regret tinged with addiction, and in the end, he decided not to hold back.

He poured everything into it.

The bulk of the investment went into accessories for Little Skeleton's mobile companion device; Lu Wu had some ideas after several months of research, and although not fully developed, it was worth a try.

Of course, points were the price to pay for experimentation, and Lu Wu dropped another five hundred there, leaving the remaining three hundred-plus for the goblin.

Yes, on the goblin!

After all, the goblin was his advertising model.

For the upcoming high school competition, Lu Wu was willing to spend so that it would perform exceptionally.

You can't make an omelette without breaking eggs!

Well, Lu Wu was more than willing to break those eggs; after this splurge, he was back to square one, pockets completely empty of points.

Now, he didn't even have the funds to get a Summoning Stone to feed a second Summoned Beast.

"Just bear with it, the high school competition is about to start, and as long as the goblin makes a standout performance, the capital I've invested will come back to me."

Lu Wu comforted himself through gritted teeth.

Then, with a ferocious expression, he went to find the goblin: "Come on, I'll give you an injection!"

With that, Lu Wu pulled the poor little thing into the basement's Cultivation Room. The high school competition was starting the day after, and tonight was destined to be a sleepless one for the goblin...

# Chapter 134: Goodbye Hengheng Monster

May 5th.

Fucheng First Summoner Training Center.

The much-anticipated high school provincial competition officially began!

As contestants, Lu Wu and his team arrived at the venue early.

"It's really something, this Fucheng and the provincial competition!"

Upon entering the venue, Lu Wu, coming from a smaller place, couldn't help but express his admiration.

The only competition Lu Wu had experienced was the Quancheng Cup, and as an informal event of Quan City, it was definitely no match for the provincial competition of the high school league.

No sooner had Lu Wu and his team arrived at the venue than they were taken on a tour by the staff to get familiar with the environment.

It was then that Lu Wu learned that each team had their own exclusive rest room during the competition.

Not only that, the venue was equipped with Summoned Beast medical rooms, training rooms, and even cultivation rooms.

With all types of fully-equipped facilities, Lu Wu and his team were dumbfounded, realizing how little of the world they had seen.

Lu Wu and his teammates hadn't even gotten over their excitement when the monitor in the rest room lit up, and a girl with a distinctive look announced a notice.

"All contestants, please take notice.

The opening ceremony of the provincial competition will start at 10:30 AM at the first venue, presided over by Mrs. Jiang, the Governor's wife of Jiangnan Province. Please enter the venue ahead of time and get ready for the ceremony!"

Almost simultaneously, Lu Wu and his teammates received the same message on their phones.

Seeing this message, Lu Wu's eyes lit up—it was an excellent opportunity to gather intelligence.

"Let's go to the first venue!"

The trio, along with their Summoned Beasts, left the rest room and made their way to the first venue as instructed.

Lu Wu's team arrived early, and when they reached the first venue, only their team was there.

Well, the staff was already waiting for them.

After Lu Wu and his teammates arrived, a staff member immediately approached, checked their contestant IDs, and, based on their information, pre-arranged their seating.

And they casually took Lu Wu's team's Summoned Beasts away.

The reason was that the primary venue couldn't accommodate so many Summoned Beasts, so they all had to wait outside.

This made Lu Wu rather unhappy; what kind of intelligence could he gather without his Summoned Beast?

At this point, Lu Wu suddenly found the opening ceremony rather dull.

Sitting in his seat, he felt a bit bored, even to the point of wanting to study.

However, his attention was quickly drawn to something else. Lu Wu noticed that the seating at the first venue had been pre-arranged.

The front row had positions for four teams, with eight rows behind accommodating ten teams. Lu Wu's team was placed in the second row, tenth position.

These arrangements seemed deliberate, which made Lu Wu very curious as to why they were in the second row.

"The positions in the first two rows are for the seed teams. If we are placed in the second row, this proves that we are one of the seed teams in the high school league."

Lin Jianying, who had painstakingly researched information on the high school league recently, finally found an opportunity to apply his knowledge, promptly coming forward to resolve the mystery.

Upon hearing that they were one of the seed teams, Lu Wu felt somewhat surprised and reflective.

In the past, his first competition had pegged his team as mere fodder for the seed teams to gain experience. Now, they had become a seed team themselves.

"Who knows, this time we might suddenly encounter a dark horse and get knocked out of our seed position, repeating history!"

While Lu Wu was indulging in some self-deprecating humor, he suddenly felt a particularly fierce gaze from behind.

Turning his head, he couldn't help but laugh.

It was the Hengheng Monster!

When Ye Qingxue left Quan City, the Hengheng Monster had followed her.

This had led Lu Wu to believe that he'd miss the chance to make the girl cry, but now, surprisingly, he saw her again at the provincial competition.

Then again, considering the Hengheng Monster's power, advancing to the provincial competition wasn't too difficult.

This was good, as it would give Lu Wu a chance to make her cry once more.

Thinking this, Lu Wu couldn't help but raise the corner of his mouth, flashing the Hengheng Monster a particularly brilliant smile.

This infuriated the Hengheng Monster, who bared her fangs at him right then and there.

From the looks of it, if the staff hadn't strictly forbidden contestants from moving about, she probably would have pounced on Lu Wu by now.

"Where's Ru Huo?"

The short-haired girl next to the Hengheng Monster noticed her outburst and, following her gaze to Lu Wu, her eyes immediately brightened, asking with concern, "Do you know him?"

"He's Lu Wu!"

The Hengheng Monster gritted her teeth, while her two new teammates quickly caught on.

The young lady from the wealthy family on the right, patting her private airport, declared confidently, "Don't worry, Ru Huo, we will help you get your revenge!"

"Exactly, we're going to make him cry just like he made you cry!"

The Hengheng Monster was in a hurry, "I've never cried because of him!"

...

With the arrival of the Hengheng Monster and her team as the second squad on the scene, other competitors began to trickle in.

In half an hour's time, all 84 teams, comprising 252 people, had arrived, filling the first arena to the brim.

This was even without the Summoned Beasts; if they were included, the space would truly be overloaded.

Once everyone had arrived, Lin Jianying began introducing the information about the seeded players to Lu Wu beside him.

"The team on the far right of the first row in front of us is from Fucheng. The captain's name is Zhuang Yan, and his Summoning Stone is an Elite Level Big Rock. His two teammates' Summoned Beasts are the Rock Python and the Desert Tree Man, both of Elite strength as well.

The first team in our second row is from..."

It must be said that Lin Jianying put a lot of effort into gathering information; he recognized and understood data about the people in the front rows, which he could access from official websites.

However, Lu Wu found it rather dull to listen to.

After all, it was just dry information, which wasn't very useful to Lu Wu—seeing the opponents' Summoned Beasts in person was much more practical.

Still, some things did pique Lu Wu's interest.

"What about those three in the very front row? They're at the forefront, so they must be the seeds among the seeds, right?

Besides, the way people around here look at them seems a bit off. Why haven't you mentioned any information about them?"

"Them?"

Lin Jianying was taken aback, then said, "I didn't gather any information on them, but they're probably not from Jiangnan Province?"

"Not from Jiangnan Province?" Lu Wu grew even more curious at this. "What's the situation?"

"I looked through the records of past high school competitions, and I found that for several years in a row, the champions and runners-up in the Jiangnan Province area were not students from Jiangnan.

They were all from other provinces who transferred to Jiangnan Province through various methods and channels close to the competition.

The three teams at the front, I have no information on them, but given their prominent position, I assume they are this year's transfers from other provinces."

Upon hearing this, Lu Wu immediately understood why the people around him were looking at those three teams so oddly.

It seemed the opponents had come to slap faces.

However, Lu Wu was still puzzled, "What are they after? Going through all this trouble just to come here and slap faces?"

"For the benefits of being the provincial champions and runners-up!"

Lin Jianying had done some investigation on this matter as well, "It's said that the top three in the provincial competition receive unimaginable benefits.

These benefits are very important for a Summoner's future development, and because Jiangnan Province has been weak in recent years without producing much talent, they resort to all sorts of methods to come here for the high school competition."

Lu Wu raised an eyebrow, "I get it now. They couldn't get resources in their own homes, so they came to ours to feast!

It's quite embarrassing for us; our resources have been snatched away by these people."

Lu Wu's words were filled with a sense of regret and were loud enough that the nearby teams, already close in proximity, heard them.

This resulted in many of them sporting rather unpleasant expressions.

Even Lu Wu's own teammates nearby were not particularly happy to hear what he said.

Among those three teams in front, someone even turned around and glared at Lu Wu then and there.

This made Lu Wu very displeased and he shot back, "What are you looking at? Haven't you seen a good-looking guy before?"

"You!"

The guy was furious and about to burst, but his teammate touched him, cooling his temper. After giving Lu Wu another glare, he sat back down. The one who touched him turned his head and gave Lu Wu an apologetic smile.

As for the other two teams, they didn't turn around or make any moves from the beginning to the end, as if this little ripple had nothing to do with them.

This made Lu Wu narrow his eyes slightly.

"These people have something about them!"

Shortly after this minor disturbance, the opening ceremony officially began.

The Governor of Jiangnan Province, Jiang Yuexing, arrived accompanied by a group of dignitaries to preside over the opening ceremony.

It was on this occasion that Lu Wu saw this person in the flesh for the first time.

It had to be said that she had even more charm and presence in person than in videos.

While her facial features might not quite reach the peak of Dudu's beauty, she truly suppressed Dudu with her aura.

Watching her, Lu Wu couldn't help but feel envious.

"I wonder when Dudu will possess such an aura, and who would be as lucky as I am to marry her and have her as a wife!"

# Chapter 135: Day 1 of the Competition

At the high school Alliance competition's opening ceremony, Jiang Yuexing didn't stay long. After a brief speech, she hurriedly left, looking especially busy.

But that's normal, since she's the Governor, effectively the top authority of Jiangnan Province. She truly has a busy schedule.

However, once Jiang Yuexing left, the opening ceremony lost a lot of its color, even becoming completely uninteresting.

On the stage were just some boring old men speaking.

Lu Wu could only distract himself with daydreaming, pondering: "Should I take first place, or should I take first place?"

In the midst of Lu Wu's daydreaming, the opening finally ended after the last boring old man finished his speech.

"Finally over. These old men can really talk, going on for two hours. Let's go eat and energize. The competition starts in the afternoon!"

Saying so, Lu Wu stood up, stretched lazily, and prepared to leave the first arena with Dudu and the others, but before they had gone far, they were stopped.

Stopping him were two girls, one with short hair who looked particularly capable, and the other seemed to be flat as an airport despite her wealthy background.

Lu Wu immediately recognized the two as teammates of the Hengheng Monster.

Well, speak of the devil and he shall appear.

The guy pushed his way through his two teammates and menacingly threatened Lu Wu, "Hmph, Lu Wu, don't let me encounter you in the competition, or I'll definitely make you cry!"

After speaking, the Hengheng Monster skillfully turned around and walked away, swaying her ponytail.

Lu Wu was already used to this kind of scene, but he was curious why the Hengheng Monster's two teammates hadn't left yet.

The Hengheng Monster herself was a bit confused. After walking a few steps, she realized her teammates weren't following and looked back.

Just in time to see her two teammates pull out their phones and close in on Lu Wu.

"Handsome brother, let's be friends!"

"If you add me as a friend, I'll go easy on you in the competition!"

The Hengheng Monster's face turned green with anger.

These two traitors, who seemingly forgot their humanity at the sight of the opposite sex, had just promised to back her up, goading her into this confrontation, claiming it was to stand by her side.

The Hengheng Monster was quite moved at the time, only to realize that these two had been plotting this all along.

What infuriated the Hengheng Monster even more was that Lu Wu actually accepted their request.

After adding them, he even smiled at her, nearly sending the Hengheng Monster into a rage-induced illness as she huffed and stormed off.

Having teased the Hengheng Monster, Lu Wu's mood suddenly improved quite a bit.

But Lu Wu's good mood soon turned sour when, while exiting the venue, he bumped into one of the three big teams seated in the first row earlier.

There was no conflict, but the encounter took place just outside the first arena.

The other team was retrieving their Summoned Beasts, and during this process, Lu Wu saw the attributes of their Summoned Beasts, which made his brows furrow enough to kill a mosquito.

Lu Wu's gaze and frown also caught the attention of the other team.

But they didn't pay him any mind, glancing over Lu Wu and his team and then striding away.

There was no nod, no smile, not even a flicker in their eyes, as if they were looking at something as inconsequential as small fish or extras in a play.

This just couldn't stand with Lu Wu.

He silently vowed not to let himself meet this team!

Otherwise, he was sure to give them a beating they wouldn't forget.

However, thoughts sometimes just shouldn't be voiced, not even silently to oneself.

No sooner had Lu Wu determinedly thought this than he ran into this very team again that afternoon.

The high school Alliance provincial competition had this structure:

During the preliminaries, 84 teams were divided into two groups, 42 teams each!

The two groups competed separately. These matches weren't elimination rounds but were based on a point system.

Every team in the group played one match. Winning against a team added one point, while there were no points for losing.

After a round, the four teams with the highest points from each group advanced to the top eight.

Lu Wu's team was placed in Group A with the team they had met that morning.

And their team numbers were perilously close—Lu Wu's team was Group A 042, while the other was Group A 001.

One at the top, one at the bottom.

It looked distant, but in fact, it was very close because Lu Wu's team's first match was against them.

This was somewhat awkward.

Even though Lu Wu might be holding back internally after having glimpsed the other team's Summoned Beast Attributes, he was well aware that his own team was not likely to win, at least not yet.

Even if they struggled through, it would surely end in mutual defeat.

With the matches so closely scheduled—one had to play at least three matches a day—coming out of one match battered would make the following matches even tougher.

So, Lu Wu was quite troubled.

However, he was troubled only momentarily before quickly coming to a decision—to let them have their way for now.

After all, it was just the preliminaries; there was no need to get into a life-or-death struggle right away.

He'd bide his time, saving a surprise for the finals.

This was the decision Lu Wu made in just three seconds after seeing information about the opponent.

However, this decision was known only to him and his teammates.

Others weren't clear about the facts, so there was considerable interest in the upcoming match that Lu Wu and his team were about to play.

Whether it was the Hengheng Monsters that had been bullied in the morning or others paying attention to the three out-of-province teams, once they saw that Lu Wu's seeded team was arranged to play against the out-of-province team in the first match, everyone without a match during that time slot came to the venue to watch.

Even those who truly couldn't make it were following the battle on the official website.

Everyone understood that neither Lu Wu's team nor the out-of-province 001 team would fight to the death in the opening battle.

But since both teams were seeded, there should be something worth watching.

Who would have known, as they eagerly awaited the start of Lu Wu's match, what they got was Lu Wu's team admitting defeat.

This result blew many people's minds on the spot!

The competitors themselves were okay with this, as they could understand the choice made by Lu Wu's team at this point.

To avoid the limelight in the early stage of the preliminaries was a very rational choice.

But the game's spectators weren't just competitors; the high school league, one of the most influential competitions, could be said to engage the heart of the entire Alliance.

According to statistics, nearly ten million people were online watching the Jiangnan Province official website at the start of the match, with over a million following Lu Wu's match.

After all, this was the first direct confrontation between Jiangnan Province and the out-of-province Plucking Peach Team.

The submission by Lu Wu's team displeased many, with plenty of internet trolls spraying their criticism online immediately.

"How can team 042 do this? How can they admit defeat without even fighting?"

"Preserving power doesn't mean you do it like this, this is too shameful for Jiangnan!"

"To think they are a seeded team, they have no backbone whatsoever!"

…

At the venue, the Hengheng Monster was particularly unhappy.

Since she hadn't gotten the chance to fight Lu Wu during the preliminaries due to not being grouped with him, she could only come over hoping to see someone make Lu Wu cry.

Instead, she witnessed such loneliness.

This made the Hengheng Monster very upset.

What made the Hengheng Monster even more upset was that after she rushed back to play her own match, earning one point, and then hurried over to watch Lu Wu's second match,

she had just arrived when the referee announced the end of the second match, with Lu Wu's team admitting defeat again.

This time, Lu Wu's team faced a top-tier seeded team from Jiangnan Province, the one that had been sitting in the front row earlier.

Thus, the Hengheng Monster once again didn't get to see Lu Wu take a beating.

This made the Hengheng Monster particularly upset.

What made her even more upset was that when she logged into the official website to check Lu Wu's third match, she saw a considerable number of comments trolling Lu Wu.

This she should have been happy about.

But for some reason, she just couldn't feel happy looking at those comments.

She couldn't help but think of her own ranking being suppressed by Lu Wu in the Underground Cave, and now, seeing Lu Wu being sprayed with criticism, Hengheng Monster felt as if she had been offended as well.

So, the Hengheng Monster was all worked up, and unusually, she hoped Lu Wu would pull himself together.

Maybe make a strong showing in the third match and impress everyone.

If Lu Wu could make a spectacular comeback and they happened to meet in the finals, it would bring her even more of a sense of accomplishment if she could make Lu Wu cry.

The Hengheng Monster specifically checked, and Lu Wu's third opponent was no longer a top-tier seeded team, but an Ordinary one.

This time, that guy couldn't just admit defeat again, right?

He had to actually play at least once, right?

It couldn't be like the last two times where he didn't appear, could it?

Well, Lu Wu responded to the Hengheng Monster's expectation, finally stepping onto the stage amidst the online jeering for the third match.

But as soon as Lu Wu entered the stage and saw the Summoned Beast of his third match opponent, he couldn't help but scowl.

He felt like slapping himself from that morning; talk about a jinx, he really did encounter a dark horse.

This horse was so dark it was almost turning purple!

However, this time Lu Wu didn't immediately admit defeat but tested the waters.

He wanted to see if the opponent would, like himself, consider holding back and admit defeat straight away.

But not testing would have made Lu Wuyi almost spew a mouthful of blood; the opponent timidly expressed that if their opponent was Lu Wu's team, they still felt that they could try and have a fight.

Lu Wu's face turned dark immediately.

What did that mean? Looking down on him, Lu Wu, were they?

Thinking he, Lu Wu, wasn't up to the task, huh?

Did they really believe he wouldn't stop playing nice and just smack them around?

However, reason eventually prevailed, and Lu Wu, rubbing his nose, declared that it hadn't been easy for their Ordinary team to get this far, and as a seeded team, it was their responsibility and duty to look out for the Ordinary teams.

Yes, that's right!

After a speech full of high-sounding words, Lu Wu admitted defeat once again, completing a three-loss streak on the first day!

The moment Lu Wu conceded defeat, the Hengheng Monster was so frustrated she almost jumped up.

However, the captain of one of the three out-of-province teams—the one who had shared a smile with Lu Wu earlier—watching through the network squinted her eyes.

On Lu Wu's side, when he checked his opponent for the next day, his face darkened a bit; it was another seeded team.

# Chapter 136: 135 Going into Battle (Request for Subscription)

May 6.

The second day of the high school competition at the provincial level.

Since the first match was at 9 AM, Lu Wu and his team arrived at the venue early in the morning.

After a short rest, when the time was about right, Lu Wu led his team over to Class A No.33's platform.

At the same time, the official website's live streaming channels were all activated.

However, due to yesterday's stunt pulled by Lu Wu—three consecutive kneels—both the live streaming audience and the spectators at the venue were not many.

Especially the spectators at the venue.

Concerned that Lu Wu might surrender again, few actually came to watch.

However, the live stream attracted quite a crowd as Lu Wu's opponents today were also a Seed Team, which had impressively secured three consecutive wins yesterday.

But because Lu Wu's team had a history of brilliant surrenders, their stream had fewer viewers compared to other Seed Teams.

The audience was also worried about seeing another surrender, which would take away from the excitement of other teams' matches.

However, near the start of the match, the number of viewers in Lu Wu's streaming room surged significantly.

This was because when the camera panned to the spectator seats, people spotted that two teams from Group B were sitting in the stands at Class A No.33's side.

One team was the Hengheng Monster's team.

They had caught the eye with their performance yesterday, easily securing three straight wins.

Plus, the three girls were quite attractive, and they had gathered quite a following in just one day.

However, it wasn't the Hengheng Monster's team that caused the viewer count in the stream to skyrocket, but rather the other team in the stands.

This team was one of the four King teams participating in the tournament and also one of the three visiting teams.

These three teams, seen as outsiders coming in to disrupt and overtake, drew immense scrutiny, and their presence equated to where the flow went.

Seeing this team in the spectator stands, the viewership in Lu Wu's streaming room shot up from less than 100,000 to over 500,000 in a matter of minutes and was still climbing.

The streaming room was filled with all sorts of guesses and discussions.

"This team is from Group B, from Beijing's 044 team, right?"

"Yes, the leader wearing glasses and smiling is called Wang Jun, and the one with the explosive hair looking fierce on the left is Li Kui, and that inconspicuous one on the right is called Zhang Buzhidaoshenme!"

"Their matches yesterday were all resolved by just one person, incredibly strong!

Among the three teams, they're the top contenders."

"Why would such a team come here to spectate? Are they here for team 042?"

"How could that be! This team made Jiangnan Province proud yesterday; they were the only team that didn't immediately surrender against the visiting teams and were also the only team among the Seed Teams that kneeled three times!

I heard this team's Seed qualification was obtained through backdoor connections, so 044 couldn't possibly be here for them."

"Then they must be here for 004!

This team is also a Seed Team, they performed very well yesterday, easily winning three matches; 044 must be here for them.

It seems 004 is quite remarkable!"

"How could they not be? If they were anything less, why would 044 bother showing up? But their trip here might be in vain since 004's opponents have been quite timid, surrendering three times consecutively yesterday, and with 044 showing up today, 042 might just crumble under pressure and surrender again!"

...

While the online audience was making fun of Lu Wu and his team.

On the spectator stands, the Hengheng Monster's team kept looking over at team 044.

The Hengheng Monster's teammates were a bit worried.

"Isn't it, that 004 is so formidable that even this team has come to watch them?"

"In that case, isn't Lu Wu's team going to lose again?"

Hearing this, the Hengheng Monster felt particularly weary.

Her two teammates seemed to have already sided with Lu Wu.

But the Hengheng Monster had a different view on why team 044 had come.

"They came for Lu Wu!"

The Hengheng Monster's statement surprised her teammates, who hurriedly checked her forehead.

"Hengheng, are you feverish? Are you sure they're here for Lu Wu?"

"I admit Lu Wu is handsome, but you're not blinded by his looks, are you?"

"Cut it out, don't call me Hengheng!"

The Hengheng Monster shook with anger, as her teammates who had just befriended her yesterday were already calling her 'Hengheng' today.

"If you call me Hengheng again, I'll sever ties with both of you!"

"All right, all right, we won't!"

Seeing the Hengheng Monster getting angry, her teammates could only surrender.

"Hey, the match is about to start over there, let's watch!"

"Poor Lu Wu, running into two mountains yesterday and today dealing with a team watched by 044, it's hard to say; they might end up conceding four times in a row."

Humph!

That jerk won't lose for sure!

Hengheng Monster stood firmly on Lu Wu's side; after all, she had lost to Lu Wuyi once before, and if Lu Wu were to lose again, wouldn't that be a blow to her pride?

However, when she thought about how Lu Wu had lost three times in a row yesterday, and the last loss was to an Ordinary Team, Hengheng Monster felt quite conflicted.

She could only hope that Lu Wu's team could rise up this time.

...

On the other side, at Arena No. 33.

Under the watchful eyes of the masses, Lu Wu's fourth match had begun.

The teams shook hands under the stage, which was the trash-talking session before the match.

Lu Wu had experienced this segment yesterday.

He came in high-spirited, ready to take down the third team, but ended up facing a dark horse and left disappointed, which made Lu Wu very unhappy.

And today, he wasn't very happy during this segment either.

Mainly because the captain of Team 004 was somewhat scheming.

He didn't shake hands with Lu Wu right away; instead, he first glanced at Team 044 in the spectator's stand, gave a slight nod, and then with a face full of apology, extended his hand to shake with Lu Wu.

"Sorry, sorry, I didn't expect Team 044 to actually show up, got a bit distracted there."

His words seemed to be an apology for his earlier rudeness, but actually, he was leveraging his position.

He was leveraging the presence of Team 044.

In fact, although Lu Wu's team had surrendered three times yesterday without fighting, Team 004 was not aware of the actual strength of Lu Wu's team and did not dare to take it lightly.

Even though they were confident in defeating Lu Wu's team, as the opponents were a Seed Team, fighting them head-on could reveal too much of their strategy and not be beneficial for their subsequent matches.

The match yesterday had exposed a weakness in Lu Wu's team—they liked to conserve their strength—so Team 004 planned to exploit this weakness.

They hoped to coerce them into surrendering without a fight by leveraging the presence of Team 044.

After all, although the audience was not pleased with Lu Wu's team surrendering, as an opponent, they would very much like to see that.

So, as they shook hands, the captain of Team 004 started his act.

"I watched your match yesterday, and although people online are criticizing you for backing out, they don't know shit. They are just onlookers who don't understand the pressure we players face.

In my opinion, Captain Lu's decision yesterday was absolutely the right one.

Facing a team that's about on par, it's better to conserve strength rather than squabble, to ensure better prospects in the subsequent matches.

Captain Lu shows such wise decisiveness, truly worthy of being the captain of one of the 14 Seed Teams."

This was said with heartfelt sincerity, and Silly Dudu behind Lu Wu was completely fooled, nodding along.

Exactly, exactly, that's how brilliant their Lu Wu is.

Lin Jianying, who was nearby, had already grown used to this sort of thing; this girl was always so easily swayed, just someone complimenting Lu Wu would make her think they're a good person.

But soon enough, the seemingly nice image of Team 004's captain crumbled.

He set the stage and then directly got to the point.

"Captain Lu, both our teams are Seed Teams, and today's battle is the first real clash. If we really fight, both sides will be hurt. In that case, no matter who wins or loses, it won't benefit us in the matches to come."

"Oh, so what do you mean?"

Lu Wu squinted, feigning ignorance, while the captain of Team 004 spoke directly.

"I'd like to ask Captain Lu for a favor; how about you let us have this point?"

To push harder, he glanced at Team 044 while speaking, "If Captain Lu can do us this favor, we'd be incredibly grateful. But if you don't, it wouldn't be nice to disappoint them, right?"

While saying this, the captain of Team 004 tightened his grip on Lu Wu's hand.

He applied pressure from all sides.

Making it clear, that if Lu Wu didn't agree, they were prepared to fight to the end.

He believed that, based on Lu Wu's performance yesterday, there was an 80% chance he would surrender from this tactic.

Unfortunately, he miscalculated.

"Sorry, I can't give you this point."

"Huh?" Team 004's captain raised an eyebrow, "Captain Lu, you'd better think it through, this isn't a wise choice for you!

If you don't let us have it, and it turns into a fight where both sides get hurt, we don't mind; after all, we won 3 points yesterday. The worst we would do is not gain another 3 points, but you're different. If you lose another three matches today, you might just get knocked out of the top eight early."

"No way!"

Lu Wu flashed a smile, "Don't worry, we won't lose!"

Team 004's captain stared into Lu Wu's eyes, making sure there was no flicker or hesitation before Team 004 stopped resisting, "Our Team 004 does not seek fights, but we won't back down from one either!

Since you want to fight, then we'll fight, just hope you don't regret the choice you made!"

With that, Team 004 raised a hand, indicating the conversation was over.

The referee on the stage announced the start of the match.

"High School League Preliminaries, Team 042 vs. Team 004 match begins, both sides please choose your Summoned Beasts!"

At this moment, the live chat exploded.

It wasn't easy, but Team 042 finally manned up, and the battle has finally begun!

# Chapter 137: 136 Inheritance Skills

042 accepting the challenge made the online audience quite delighted.

Of course, it wasn't 042's acceptance that delighted them. They weren't really rooting for 042, they were simply looking forward to an exciting match.

If forced to choose between 042 and 004, over ninety-nine percent of them would support 004.

There were a few who went against the grain to support 042, but their voices were drowned out by terms like "brain-dead fans" and "cowards never win".

And back in reality,

At this moment, 044, who was watching nearby, had a different opinion about the outcome of the battle.

An explosive-haired Li Kui on Wang Jun's right commented, "Everyone here is trash!"

He didn't understand why their captain had brought them here. Was it to watch two weak teams peck at each other?

He felt bored but didn't dare say anything, choosing instead to pass the time by watching the girls nearby.

Meanwhile, down at the arena, on Team 004's side.

The 004 captain had a serious look on his face, feeling just like he did yesterday when Lu Wu persuaded a dark horse team to fail.

042 had fallen in three matches, even to an ordinary team. And yet, 042 were not giving up this match either. It was clear they were looking down on them.

The 004 captain's mood was understandably sour. He came in and immediately said,

"Send out Fire Monkey for the first match!"

His two teammates' faces changed, "Captain, Fire Monkey is our trump card, are we really playing it right away?"

"This is a competition, not a video game or a card game!

The use of a trump card isn't to hold until the end for additional points, it's to win a crucial match!"

004 glared towards Lu Wu's team and said decisively, "042 has lost three times. To them, giving up is easier than for others. If we crush their morale right from the first match, they will surely choose to forfeit to save strength for the other two rounds today!"

His teammates, upon hearing this, dropped any objections.

Soon, the summoned beasts for the first battle appeared on the arena.

On 004's side was a 1.3 meter tall monkey, wielding a stick and covered in fiery red fur. Lu Wu's side sent out Dudu's Tuantuan.

When the beasts appeared, the 004 captain relaxed his furrowed brows and breathed a sigh of relief.

Among the 042's three summoned beasts, he least feared this pig.

The goblin felt very tricky, and Lu Wu's Little Skeleton, though crappy, must be noteworthy to have reached this stage. But the pig seemed easy to beat.

Meanwhile, Lu Wu smirked upon seeing Fire Monkey.

The opponent only saw a pig, while he could see the monkey and its attributes.

…

Name: Fire Monkey (First Evolution)

Power: 1 star (Elite)

Quality: Ordinary

Attribute: Fire

State: Excited ("Tell me, who to hit!!!")

Weakness: Water

Skills: Fire Stick (Master) Fire Bomb (Master) Block (Master)...

Inheritance Skills: Skyward Stick (entry-level)

Talent: Fiery Flame Power (Basic) (Increases fire attribute skill power by 10% and fire attribute resistance by 10%)

Description: A monkey skilled with a stick.

…

Lu Wu grinned as he looked at Fire Monkey's attributes.

"They did indeed send this guy, ready to crush our morale in one round, too bad, you can't crush us!"

Just as Lu Wu muttered this, the referee on the stage announced, "The match begins!"

"Fire Monkey, attack!"

At the referee's signal, the 004 captain issued his command.

This battle, he intended to strike swiftly, creating a shocking impact to shatter Lu Wu's team's morale right away.

And the monkey clearly understood its mission.

At the start from the 004 captain, the monkey burst flames from beneath its feet, rocketing up to ten meters in the air like a rocket blastoff.

Simultaneously, the monkey's stick heated to a red glow, surrounded by a 'whoosh' of flames.

Clearly taking advantage of Tuantuan's lack of aerial defense, the monkey charged up its attack mid-air.

Then, adjusting its posture, its feet kicked back, flames spurting out again for propulsion, and the monkey spun its stick as it plummeted downward, burning up into a fireball as it descended.

This comprehensive combo stunned the spectators in the live stream.

Many of them had watched 004's matches the previous day where they hadn't used the monkey in all three matches. They hadn't expected it to not only appear first today but also to perform such an astonishing combo.

"It seems like 004 intends to win cleanly and quickly!"

"With that stick coming down, 042 can be ready to serve roasted pig today!"

"A four-defeat streak achievement is about to be accomplished!"

Online, opinions against Lu Wu's side were pervasive, even among the spectators, where Li Kui, on seeing Fire Monkey's combo, couldn't help but raise an eyebrow, "Yo, a descending stick strike from the sky? This monkey's got some tricks!"

"The quiet Zhang Buzhidaoshenme commented on the side, "It's interesting, but that pig will be even more interesting!"

"What?"

Before Li Kui could grasp the meaning, back in the arena,

Facing the monkey's sky-descending strike, Tuantuan directly went giant size, then turned around, and swung its tail in a 'Cute Pig Tail Whip' moving its pig's butt to block the stick.

"Boom!"

The strike from the sky hit Tuantuan, and flames burst forth immediately.

With both physical and magical damage boosted, normally any summoned beast would have been knocked down.

Unfortunately for the monkey, it was facing no ordinary beast, but one whose talent was fully built into defense.

Basic Physical Defense Enhancement, Basic Magic Defense Enhancement.

Although both talents were basic, coupled with Tuantuan's Giant frightening defense after evolution, the monkey's attacks couldn't hurt Dumpling at all, and Dumpling even flung the monkey away with his rear end.

"Now, take it out in one wave!"

Lu Wu issued the command on behalf of Dudu.

Dudu's pig was also Lu Wu's pig; if Dudu did not command, the pig still listened to Lu Wu's orders.

After all, it was smart enough to know who was feeding it now.

So, at the command of Lu Wu, Tuantuan grunted.

The Advanced Magic Skill "Gravity" activated, and a force of gravity pinned the Fire Monkey to the ground, giving Tuantuan the opportunity to launch a Cute Pig Charge.

Instantly, the roles of attack and defense reversed.

At that moment, everyone held their breath.

No one had expected that such an exciting battle would break out so early in the fight.

Someone couldn't help but think again.

"Could this monkey get squashed just like that?"

Ordinarily, an ordinary Summoned Beast would definitely not be able to withstand this barrage of hits.

But this monkey was not ordinary; it was the ace of a provincial-level high school league seed team, and moreover, it had fought its way up, a level of experience that Lu Wu, who had entered through the back door, couldn't match.

Facing the dangerous situation, neither the monkey nor the captain of Team 004 hesitated or panicked but responded calmly.

"Seize the opportunity!"

The captain of Team 004 uttered just four words, and the Fire Monkey immediately understood its master's tactics. Holding the stick diagonally, it lay there motionless, watching the pig charging towards it.

Ten meters, eight meters, five meters…

As the pig neared, the Fire Monkey's stick erupted in flames, using the fiery blast to push itself away from Tuantuan's Cute Pig Charge.

"Now, Skyward Stick!"

Immediately, the monkey seized the chance of Tuantuan overcharging, gripped the stick with both hands above its head, and began to gather power.

In an instant, flames burst out, surrounding the monkey, and an astounding aura surged forth, causing such terror that the surrounding Summoned Beasts felt uneasy.

On the spectator stands, Li Kui changed his expression again: "Damn, that skill is so twisted!

How can this monkey possess such an explosive burst skill? The power of this stick might reach the level of an Elite 3 Stars or even a Boss!

This stick down, that pig might not die but will be severely injured."

"Yes! But he doesn't dare to bring it down carelessly!" Someone who might be named Zhang San added: "This kind of skill consumes a lot, and its cooldown is also severe, plus this monkey's power is lacking. If this stick comes down, the monkey might be out of commission for several days."

Zhang San was right.

The Fire Monkey's Skyward Stick was explosively strong, but also equally draining.

Under normal circumstances, the captain of Team 004 did not want to use this move.

But using it now was out of necessity.

He hadn't expected this pig's defense to be so terrifying. If he didn't use this move, none of his other techniques would bring down the pig.

But he wasn't just trying to fight with this move, he was gambling.

He was betting that Lu Wu would not dare to let this stick come down!

"Judging by his performance on the first day conserving power, I bet he will concede or at least admit defeat with this pig.

As long as I can force this pig to admit defeat, I can retract the Skyward Strike, and the following fight will be much easier.

Come on, admit defeat!"

The captain of Team 004 stared intently at Lu Wu, waiting for him to speak the words "I concede."

But Lu Wu did not disappoint him, speaking quickly, not to concede but grinning: "Dumpling, charge and crash it!"

At Lu Wu's command, Dumpling huffed and puffed, charging towards the Fire Monkey.

"Damn!"

The mental state of the captain of Team 004 collapsed at that moment, almost swearing elegantly.

Now it was his turn to be troubled. If the other side conceded, should he still bring down this stick?

That wasn't a small question.

If he did bring it down, he could surely take down the pig, but his monkey would be nearly out of use today and would likely remain weakened for several days, operating only at eighty percent of its combat power.

But if he didn't bring it down, he might lose this fight.

This left the captain of Team 004 very hesitant but eventually, he gritted his teeth.

"A few days of the Fire Monkey being weakened is not a problem, and eighty percent combat power can still fight. If this pig gets hit by this stick, it wouldn't matter in the following matches.

Given the performance of Team 042 today, they are strong contenders for the top four. If the pig is out, they won't have a chance at the top four!"

Others' lack of hope increased their chances!

This chain of thoughts raced through his mind, and with a decision made, the captain of Team 004 bit down and issued the command.

"Bring it down for me!"

As the Fire Monkey's momentum peaked, at the command of the captain of Team 004, the monkey focused on the charging pig and swung the stick down.

As the stick was coming down, the Dumpling that had been charging towards him, suddenly turned and leapt from the already close ring.

Simultaneously, as Fire Monkey's stick smacked down, it scorched half the ring; the monkey itself was spent, but the pig had jumped off the ring, and the monkey's attack, unable to extend beyond the ring, was blocked by the ring's built-in defense, leaving the pig unscathed.

"Damn!"

The mental state of the captain of Team 004 collapsed on the spot.

He could now see that they had never planned to take this hit; the display of resolve was just to provoke him to perform this explosive move, while they had actually been prepared to lose from the start.

Now great, his side had won a fight, but his Fire Monkey was spent, and the other's pig was fine, ready for the next fight.

Even worse, the second Summoned Beast from the other side had already eagerly come to the arena.

The captain of Team 004 had no recourse but to call his Fire Monkey back.

Now another question sat before him: the upcoming match, should he fight or not?

# Chapter 138: 137's mind is all dirty when it comes to gaming and nurturing tactics.

High School Tournament Arena.

"Damn, they fell for that? Such a powerful Big Move, and they got tricked into using it just like that?

Is this 004 player an idiot?

Can Captain 004 even use his brain anymore? If it's no good, donate it to someone who needs it early!

No, I mean, switch it out earlier!"

Up in the stands, Li Kui from team 044 revealed his roots from Zu'an immediately after the Fire Monkey's Skyward Strike hit the floor.

"A perfectly good hand, and they play it like this. If it had been me up there, I would have knocked team 042 flat ages ago."

Li Kui looked on with the same pained expression as someone who watched a player with a perfect poker hand still lose the game, deeply distressed and wishing he could go down and take over for team 004.

"If it was you going down there, you'd probably have ended up even worse!"

From the side, Zhang San said leisurely, which Li Kui did not like to hear.

However, before he could even retort, Wang Jun, seated in the middle, pushed up his glasses: "Do you really think the 004 player was tricked into using his Big Move because he's stupid?"

As soon as Wang Jun spoke, Li Kui immediately quieted down and turned to look at his captain.

"Actually, it's not that the 004 player is too dumb, but rather that his opponent was too cunning.

004 thought they had sussed out 042's Weakness in preferring to conserve Power, so their strategy when facing 042 was based on this point.

They wanted to force the other side to surrender during the handshake and chatting phase. Although they didn't succeed, they still managed to apply psychological pressure on their opponents, and began the battle by playing their trump card straight away.

All these moves had one single goal: to break through 042's psychological defenses and win the battle with the least amount of effort."

Li Kui scratched his head: "There's nothing wrong with this tactic, is there?"

"The tactic is not the problem; the problem lies with the people executing it.

In fact, as soon as the two teams came into contact, 004's mindset was completely figured out by the other side.

Whatever they were thinking, team 042 understood utterly.

That's also why 042 started with their strongest defense pig in the beginning."

"004 thought they were outsmarting the opponent, but in reality, they had already become the ones being outsmarted right from the start.

In the subsequent battle, Fire Monkey's regular attacks couldn't break through the pig's Defense, and with no other options, he had to threaten with Skyward Strike again.

Trying once more to scare off the opponent, make them surrender.

But the other side saw through his ploy and directly ordered the pig to attack.

At that point, 004 was really in a dilemma, the pig was running fast, all his attention was on whether to attack or not, leaving no time to focus on anything else.

By the time he made up his mind in the choice between attacking and not, he already had no time left to observe. He had to hastily give the order, leading to team 004 being tricked into using their Big Move."

"So, it's not that 004 is too dumb, but 042 is too smart?"

Li Kui was a bit baffled after hearing this, but quickly he spotted a logical gap: "Wait a minute, if that's the case, then didn't 042 know right from the start that 004 would send out Fire Monkey?

And they knew the situation with Fire Monkey in advance?

They might even know Fire Monkey's Big Move?

That's impossible, right?"

It turns out, despite his burly appearance and explosive hair, Li Kui was surprisingly detail-oriented.

Wang Jun, meanwhile, pushed up his glasses and gazed down at Lu Wu in the arena: "For others, it would be nearly impossible, but it's difficult to say for 042's captain."

"Hm?" Li Kui was taken aback.

"He's a Cultivation Master, sitting there with dozens of Professional Cultivator disciples, a Genius Cultivator who, in a matter of months, can help tens of thousands of students complete tactical adjustments and cultivation designs.

With regard to Summoned Beast Cultivation, he must have a Talent beyond ordinary people; it's not impossible for him to discern the strengths and weaknesses of someone else's Summoned Beast in a short period of time."

Upon hearing this, Li Kui was thoroughly astonished.

Although he was shocked by Wang Jun's words, he didn't doubt them in the least.

If this weren't the case, Wang Jun wouldn't have come over here.

Shaken, Li Kui muttered: "As expected, the minds of those in cultivation are dirty!"

While Li Kui from team 044 was stunned, the nearby Hengheng Monster team was also astonished.

At this time, the spectator seats were sparsely occupied, and the two teams were close enough that 044 wasn't intentionally lowering their voices, so everything said was overheard by the Hengheng Monster side.

This completely befuddled the two teammates from the Hengheng Monster team.

Had it not been for Wang Jun's explanation, they would have never known how impressive their beloved "Big Brother" was.

"Hengheng, is what he said true?"

"Is Bro Lu Wu really a Cultivation Master? And a genius at that!"

"Humph! Don't call me Hengheng!" Hengheng Monster frowned, though she wasn't really angry this time. Partly because Lu Wu finally made a grand showing, and partly because someone nearby was praising him.

She felt tied to Lu Wu, sharing their success and failure; if Lu Wu was impressive, that made her, the one defeated by Lu Wu, impressive as well.

So, her mood was quite good.

As her teammate asked, she immediately lifted her chin: "That's right, this guy is indeed a super-genius Cultivator!"

Boasting proudly, anyone unaware might have thought she was talking about herself.

"What's there for you to be proud of? He's the genius Cultivator, not you - you're just the little poor thing he made cry."

The short-haired girl couldn't resist taking a jab at her, while the long black-haired girl, patting her flat chest, proudly declared: "Right, if anyone's going to be proud, it should be me. I declare that from now on, little bro Lu Wu is my husband!"

"Zhang Lingling, are you asking for trouble!"

The two girls caused a ruckus, making team 044, which appeared serious but was actually quite eager for attention, regret their choice. Wang Jun just wanted to show off to attract girls, but why did they end up fancying Lu Wu?

This blasted superficial world!

......

While there was commotion in the spectator seats.

Down in the arena, team 004 faced a tough decision between attacking and not.

"Let's not attack, just endure for this round!"

Despite being reluctant, they truly had no other option to continue.

This was only the first match, and their monkey had already been fooled into using the Big Move. It was done for the day, with only about twenty to thirty percent combat strength left. Now they only had two more capable fighters; if they continued and sustained any more damage, even if they were lucky enough to overcome Lu Wu and his team, they would struggle in the remaining matches.

Another point was, since they had already faced team 042, they wouldn't encounter them again unless it was in the top eight, so there was no need to help their subsequent opponents by probing 042's capabilities. It was better to leave 042 with their secrets for the seed teams to deal with.

The more seed teams 042 took down, the better team 004's chances of reaching the semi-finals.

With this in mind, team 004 chose to surrender after Fire Monkey won the first match.

This left Little Skeleton quite unhappy, having just climbed up to the stage and taken out his phone to set up his BGM to play.

But Lu Wu was rather pleased.

"Easily taking down one of the seeded teams, they also claimed the first point in the high school league."

However, after their victory, Lu Wu's team didn't celebrate immediately but rushed straight over to Team 004.

Seeing Lu Wu approach, the three members of Team 004 furrowed their brows.

They were a bit nervous. What was this guy coming over for? To rub their defeat in their faces?

"Captain Wu, thanks a lot. If you hadn't given in, our two teams would have both ended up harming each other, giving advantage to others!"

As soon as Lu Wu arrived, he smiled, but his smile was somewhat dazzling, making one feel he was there to provoke.

Damn, just because he's handsome, he thinks he's all that!

However, Lu Wu's attitude and words were quite gentle, at least they were rather pleasant to hear.

Now that the match was over, Team 004 had no intention of clashing directly, as the saying goes, you don't slap a smiley face.

Team Captain Wu Yong responded immediately, "Captain Lu, what are you talking about? We didn't let you win, we're genuinely convinced by your team's better skills."

The two shook hands with a smile, giving off a vibe of letting bygones be bygones.

When the live-streaming camera showed this scene, the malicious comments decreased significantly, and oddly enough, 'Lu Wu is really handsome' began to sneak in among them.

And from Lu Wu's side, he wasn't there to bury the hatchet.

Everyone familiar with him knew that Lu Wu wouldn't bother if there was no benefit. As they shook hands, his gaze landed firmly on that monkey.

"Captain Wu, not to hide it from you, but being a summoner is actually my side job, my main profession is as a Cultivation Master."

When Lu Wu said this, Wu Yong was dumbfounded.

What? You? A Cultivation Master? Are you kidding?

But Lu Wu pressed on.

"I just set up a research institute in Fucheng recently. Additionally, I have several dozen skill modifications and three series of cultivation program patents online. In terms of cultivation, I have some competence."

With these words, both Wu Yong and the audience felt as if they were struck dumb.

Some competence? If this is true, it's like reaching the heavens, right?

How old is he to have achieved all this?

But Wu Yong reacted quickly; amidst his shock, his first instinct was caution.

What's this kid trying to show off by suddenly coming over here?

Lu Wu noticed his wariness, cracked a grin, and pointed at the nearby Fire Monkey, "If you trust me, I can lend you a hand and speed up this little guy's stamina recovery."

It was quite obvious that Lu Wu was itching for the monkey's Inheritance Skills.

This was the first time Lu Wu had seen Inheritance Skills, and he wanted to study it.

Of course, he wouldn't outright say, "Lend me your monkey to study," there had to be a pretext.

And helping the monkey regain stamina was the perfect excuse.

With Lu Wu's offer on the table, Wu Yong hesitated for a moment, wondering if he should trust the other party. Sensing his hesitation, Lu Wu persisted, "I can get him to recover five-tenths of his combat power before the next match. In a day, he'll fully recover, of course, except for that one skill.

Besides, our match is over, and unless we both make it to the top eight, we won't be facing each other again.

I'm also counting on you to take down a few more opponents for me."

Lu Wu's final words eased Wu Yong's suspicions, and he nodded in agreement.

Then, these two teams, which had just fought each other intensely, walked together to the cultivation room of the arena.

Lu Wu's proficiency was, of course, unquestionable.

On the way there, using his external cultivation (cheat) abilities, he quickly won over all three members of Team 004.

After just a few glances and a few touches of the Summoned Beasts, Lu Wu was able to accurately describe the information of Team 004's Summoned Beasts.

Even some of their weaknesses, which they had hidden well or hadn't even noticed themselves, Lu Wu pointed them all out.

They hadn't even reached the cultivation room, but Team 004 was already looking up to Lu Wu in complete admiration.

Arriving at the cultivation room, Lu Wu operated effortlessly, easily concocting a stamina recovery potion for the Fire Monkey.

This was not a skill of Lu Wu's; he had not yet studied Summoned Beast potion-making. That stuff actually came from Zhao Kai Ming.

He had been coveting the monkey since yesterday, and upon discovering that he would face the monkey today, he had calculated everything.

He had schemed to coax the monkey into using its Big Move and to ingratiate himself with its team.

In the end, things went smoothly. After administering the potion, the Fire Monkey's stamina recovered significantly, and Wu Yong seemed quite happy with it.

However, Lu Wu didn't extend further olive branches; too much would be as bad as too little.

Pursuing too aggressively might make him appear ulterior. After giving the potion, Lu Wu left.

As soon as Lu Wu left, just as Team 004 had returned to their lounge, an uninvited guest showed up.

It was another seeded team from Group A, Team 007, who came to gather intelligence.

They aimed to collect intel on both Team 004 and Team 042.

After all, neither of these seeded teams had faced off with Team 007 yet, so getting some information would be useful for future matchups.

But Team 004 was stubborn and dismissed Team 007 with a few words.

Exiting Team 004's lounge, the smiles disappeared from the faces of Team 007 instantly. Team Captain Su Lan spat softly towards Team 004's lounge, "Damn it, you lost and still act tough!

Being defeated by a Cultivator as a Summoner is embarrassing. If it had been us, we definitely would have blown Team 042 away.

Don't want to speak? Well, I don't give a damn!

I, Su Lan, am telling you, if I come looking for you again, I'm a pig!"

At that moment, one of the teammates glanced at his phone, his expression changing, and tugged at him, "Captain!"

"What!" Su Lan answered impatiently, shaking off his arm, "Can't you see I'm busy cursing?"

"Our next match opponent has been announced?"

"So what if it has! What's there to make a fuss about..."

Mid-sentence, Su Lan paused and turned to look at his teammate, "It's not Jiangning's team, is it?"

"No!"

"What about the team from Fucheng?"

"No, not them either!"

Su Lan breathed a sigh of relief; if they weren't these two top-notch teams, then there was nothing to worry about.

But just as he relaxed, his teammate delivered the news, "Team 042!"

"Damn it!!!!!"

Su Lan's expression changed, and he rushed back to Team 004's lounge, pounding on their door.

"Captain Wu, open up, it's your good brother Su Lan here!"

# Chapter 139: 138 I predicted your prediction

```

042 Rest Area.

When Lu Wu and his team saw their next opponent, their mental state slightly crumbled.

"Another seeded team, there's definitely something fishy about this competition!"

This was the fifth match, and they had faced one dark horse and four seeded teams in a row, Lu Wu was almost sick of it.

"Can't we get some weaklings to practice with?

Look at team 004, after fighting us they immediately got a weakling to play against, and what about us? Motherfuckers!"

At that moment, Lu Wu felt the world was full of malice towards him.

However, while Lu Wu was unhappy, the viewers were quite pleased.

After all, the recent fight between 042 and 004 was exciting, albeit too quick and too short, like those certain updates, not very satisfying.

Now, just after 004 had fought, they were assigned against 007 which was quite nice, and the viewers loved it.

The match for Lu Wu's team hadn't even started, and a massive number of viewers had already flooded the live broadcast room, and at the arena they were about to fight in, other competitors had also arrived, in no small number.

Aside from the Hengheng Monster team and team 044, two quite notable teams from Group A also showed up, one being the only foreign team in Group A, 002, and the other the sole elite team from Fucheng, 001.

These were the two teams that Lu Wu had given two points to on the first day.

But these two teams came not for Lu Wu, but for team 044.

Or rather, they came because of the attention 044 attracted.

People thought team 044 was interested in team 004, but when team 044 showed up again for the match involving 042, it became clear they were there for 042.

Moreover, Lu Wu had revealed his identity as a Genius Cultivator.

The time between matches was enough for them to verify the truth of this identity.

This made those teams pay special attention to Lu Wu's team 042.

So for this match of team 042, anyone who could make it came to watch, and those who couldn't were following online.

The level of attention had surpassed the previous match against team 002, with a live broadcast audience reaching a whopping two million.

When Lu Wu saw this information, all his unhappiness and displeasure vanished.

Yes, he was now happy, very happy.

What had he joined the high school competition for?

Wasn't it just for the publicity? How could Lu Wu possibly pass up such a great advertising opportunity?

So, upon seeing this information, he immediately conned Little Skeleton out of his phone, fiddled with it for a while, and then returned the phone to Little Skeleton.

After some quick preparation, Lu Wu's fifth match was about to begin under the watchful eyes of a huge audience.

The appearance of the two teams shocked the viewers instantly.

It wasn't that team 042 had pulled any sort of trick, in fact, their entrance was quite normal. It was in fact team 007 whose entry was anything but ordinary.

To be precise, it was the way the three Summoned Beasts of team 007 made their entrance.

Team 007 actually covered their Summoned Beasts with big barrels and cloths, and then led them under the arena.

"Captain Su, what's this act?"

Lu Wu went forward to shake Su Lan's hand, gesturing towards their Summoned Beasts.

"Isn't this just to add a bit of mystery? It lets the viewers have more unknowns and surprises when watching the match!"

Su Lan responded to Lu Wu casually while shaking his hand.

Lu Wu was filled with black lines, can't you put a bit more thought into your excuses? You've appeared before, could the viewers and your opponents not know what your Summoned Beasts are?

Lu Wu's brain was sharp, and with a quick thought, he guessed the other side's logic.

It was nothing more than guessing that he had the unusual ability to discern the real strength and weaknesses of Summoned Beasts, so they were afraid he would target their weaknesses, hence this act.

The tactic looked silly, but unexpectedly, it was somewhat effective.

Once the barrel was covered and cloth draped over, Lu Wu actually couldn't see the attributes of those three Summoned Beasts.

"This isn't good, you have to lift the cloth, let the sun shine in..."

As Lu Wu spoke, he moved to lift the cloth, but was stopped by Su Lan: "No, no, no, Captain Lu, let's carry the mystery to the end.

Mr. Referee, we've got nothing more to say, can we end the conversation procedure?"

Su Lan obviously had made up his mind not to let Lu Wu see his Summoned Beasts, and there was nothing Lu Wu could do but to raise his hand indicating the conversation was over.

"The conversation is over; the match between team 042 and 007 will now begin, please select your Summoned Beasts to fight!"

As soon as the referee announced this, Su Lan finally breathed a sigh of relief, shook hands with Lu Wu again, and then led his Summoned Beasts back to their area like fleeing.

Meanwhile, the competitors who were observing this scene all had thoughtful expressions.

If things went as expected, these competitors would be guarding against Lu Wu more than thieves, not easily letting him see their Summoned Beasts.

"Am I really that scary?"

Lu Wu felt quite innocent.

All he could do was touch his nose and return to his team's preparation area.

At the same time, Su Lan, who returned to his preparation area, had the corner of his mouth lifted, revealing a complacent smirk.

"Now, everyone thinks I covered my Summoned Beasts with cloth because I was afraid Lu Wu would see them, but they have no idea that my real purpose is to set a trap for Lu Wu."

The team member beside him was very curious: "Captain, what kind of trap are you setting?"

"I am setting a bewilderment trap. Now that I've covered all the Summoned Beasts with barrels and cloth, though it looks ridiculous, it also creates a sense of tension and uncertainty.

He won't have any idea which Summoned Beast we will use."

```

Under such uncertainty, if you were to choose, which Summoned Beast would you send into battle?"

Su Lan appeared to be masterminding a strategy, instructing his two team members.

The two team members pondered for a moment, then had a sudden realization and said at the same time, "Goblin!"

"Skeleton!"

Su Lan's face turned dark immediately, and he gave each of them a slap, "It's the pig! You two idiots!

In the face of uncertainty about the enemy's true strength, the pig is definitely the best choice since it has high physical and magic defense and strong attack power, making it the most suitable to lead the charge!"

Su Lan was making sense, but his two teammates were not convinced.

"But they used the pig in the opening of the last match!"

"That's precisely because they used the pig in their last match, and now that the pig's data has been exposed, it can be easily targeted!

Plus, we have Summoned Beasts on our side that can target theirs!

So their pig definitely won't come out, and I need to set a trap to lure out their pig."

Su Lan was especially helpless. Why, when he was so smart, were his teammates these two fools?

Their opponent this time was a Genius Cultivator like Lu Wu. An average player could think two steps ahead, but surely this kind of Cultivator could think three steps ahead, and to defeat him, he must think even one more step.

He must anticipate the opponent's anticipation of his anticipation!

"Forget it, even if I explain it to you two, you won't understand. Others may think two steps ahead, but you can only think one and a half. Just follow my command!"

Su Lan, with a touch of exasperation like dragging along two pig-headed teammates, and with a bit of confidence in his unparalleled strategic mind, waved his hand and dispatched one of his Summoned Beasts.

"Go, take down that pig!"

Both sides' Summoned Beasts stepped into the arena, and as the canvas was lifted away with a bang, Su Lan's Summoned Beast for battle was revealed.

Lu Wu stepped closer, and a glance at the Summoned Beast's attributes appeared before him.

...

Name: Iron Feathered Eagle (Advanced once)

Power: 1 star (Elite)

Quality: Black Iron

Attributes: Gold, Wind

State: Annoyed (I don't want to be covered with cloth, Su Lan is an idiot!!)

Weakness: Fire

Skills: Dive (Master), Tear (Master), Feathered Wing Attack (Master), Wind Blade (Master)

Advanced Skill: Iron Feather Storm (Master)

Talent: Flexible Flying

Description: A bird that can fly, with quite a temper

...

"It's this bird!"

Lu Wu's mouth curved in amusement at the Attributes, while at the same time, Su Lan also started laughing smugly, "Didn't expect it, did you? The one I sent out turns out to be this because I had already anticipated... What the hell is going on over there?"

By now, the Summoned Beast from the other side had made its way to the center of the stage, and finally, from Su Lan's angle, he could see Lu Wu's Summoned Beast—it wasn't Tuantuan, but Little Skeleton that showed up.

This left Su Lan completely bewildered.

"Why would they send in this Skeleton? That's not right. Isn't it too soon for the Skeleton to come out?

A Skeleton making it to the provincial competition must be extraordinary, definitely a trump card and not easily played!"

At that moment, Su Lan felt a chill, "Could it be the other side has already anticipated my anticipation of their anticipation?"

His two teammates rolled their eyes. It was all from your own foolishness.

They were fed up with their team captain. Why go through so much trouble, only to mess it up in the end!

"Very clever, Lu Wu. Indeed, those who play Cultivators are crafty. I didn't expect you to outmaneuver me, but I, Su Lan, don't go down so easily.

My Iron Feathered Eagle can counter more than just pigs; it can handle Skeleton Mages as well.

Everything is still within my control."

Su Lan forced his swagger, while his teammates beside him were disgruntled, "If you can counter them all, why invent so much drama?"

"Don't sweat the details, just watch how I take down this match!

Iron Feathered Eagle, use Wind Blade, attack!"

What can I say?

Although Su Lan was a bit of a joke, his skill was certainly not ordinary; rather, his cunning was exceptionally dirty.

At his command, the eagle took to the skies, and Lu Wu, assuming he'd maintain a distance for a ranged attack, prepared himself.

Instead, the eagle had barely risen two meters before it abruptly changed direction, charging at Little Skeleton like an arrow released from its bow.

Little Skeleton, caught off guard and who had been ready to play background music on his phone, immediately cast "Bone Teeth" and "Bone Shield" for defense.

Unfortunately, the "Bone Teeth" were swept away instantly, leaving only a fragile barrier of Bone Shield in front of Little Skeleton.

Su Lan's mouth lifted into a smirk, "Didn't see that coming, did you? I thought one step further, how would someone as clever as I distance myself from a Mage?

I said Wind Blade, and that big dummy on my side turned it into a Charge.

Caught unawares, you couldn't possibly stop my big dummy from getting up close."

Su Lan thought the victory was practically his. Once a Mage is approached so close, is there even a fight left?

"I am indeed the most ingenious one!"

# Chapter 140: 139 How lonely it is to be invincible

In the audience stands.

"Damn, how come this guy is even sneakier than a Cultivator?"

044's Li Kui felt his values were being refreshed once again.

Although he didn't hear Su Lan's infinitely nesting strategies, he did see the moves the opponent made as soon as they entered the arena.

"What happened to Wind Blade? This guy actually switched to Charge? If he's this shrewd, why doesn't he become a Cultivator instead of a Summoner?"

"Do you have some misunderstanding about Summoners? Why does it sound like you think Summoners are just brutes in your eyes?"

Zhang San had a headache: "This is just very normal tactics. Moreover, you can't even imagine how crafty a Cultivator's mind is!

Look!"

Before Zhang San could finish his sentence, the battle on the stage took another turn.

The Iron Feathered Eagle crashed head-on into the Bone Shield in front of Little Skeleton, ready to smash the Bone Shield and take down the trembling and pitiful Little Skeleton, when it suddenly realized something was wrong!

This wasn't Little Skeleton wielding its Bone Staff; the battle hadn't even come to that point yet.

How could Little Skeleton's close-combat techniques be so easily forced out?

What went wrong was the Bone Shield; it looked fragile, but when the Iron Feathered Eagle crashed into it, sharp bone spines suddenly extended from the shield.

There it was, Lu Wu's optimized version of the Bone Shield, the "Thorn Bone Shield."

The ferocious Bone Shield could result in mutual destruction—one hit and even if the Bone Shield shattered, the Iron Feathered Eagle would be left battered and bloody.

But at this moment, it was already in front of the Bone Shield. At such a distance, normal summoned beasts couldn't dodge, but the Iron Feathered Eagle was no ordinary beast.

It was a summoned beast with the talent of Flexible Flying.

Faced with the sudden event, it calmly flapped its wings and swiftly dodged the Bone Shield, continuing its charge at Little Skeleton.

Now, it and its master were both extremely excited.

Yes, that's right, that's how it should be.

The stronger the opponent's resistance, the more anxious they would become if the opponent didn't resist.

Fear of getting close meant there might be traps, after all—the opponent is a cultivator, their mind is definitely filthy!

The more Little Skeleton resisted, the more excited they became; it proved that Little Skeleton did not want them to get close, so they would do just that!

In an instant, the Iron Feathered Eagle bypassed the Bone Shield and came right up to Little Skeleton, stretching out its claws and unleashing Tear.

"Got it, I got this Little Skeleton Mage—I mean, damn, what skill is this? He still had this up his sleeve?"

Su Lan hadn't even finished feeling pleased when another change occurred in the fight.

As the Iron Feathered Eagle used Tear, layers of white bones surfaced around Little Skeleton, locking it inside a prison of bones.

This move directly halted the Iron Feathered Eagle's Tear.

At this moment, not only was Su Lan stunned, but the audience in the stands were also taken aback.

Li Kui's eyes were filled with question marks.

"What's this?"

"Bone Prison, it must be Bone Prison. But like the previous Bone Shield, it's an optimized version. Lu Wu is truly a Genius Cultivator!

I didn't expect Bone Prison could be used like this in his hands, turning a control skill directly into a defensive skill!"

Wang Jun was the first to see through the ruse.

At the same time, some in the audience stands also noticed something.

However, they did not express any opinions.

Meanwhile, on the arena, the battle had shifted after the appearance of Little Skeleton's Bone Prison.

With the Bone Prison in place, Little Skeleton immediately became a casting turret. At the same time, the third optimized spell made its appearance.

In a moment, Little Skeleton waved its Bone Staff, and more than ten Bone Teeth shot out from the gaps of the Bone Prison.

This was the optimized Advanced Skill "Ten Short Bone Teeth." This version of Bone Teeth reduced size and power in exchange for increasing their number, a pretty decent skill for crowd control.

But this skill was useless against the Iron Feathered Eagle!

With its body covered in iron feathers, even big Bone Teeth couldn't hurt it, let alone these smaller ones!

So the Iron Feathered Eagle only shielded its vulnerable areas like its eyes and once again launched an excited attack, its claws tearing at the Bone Prison. It was ready to change professions and give Er Ha a run for his money as a demolition team member.

But just as it charged out, its feathers bristled.

Through its perception of the wind, it sensed danger. Unlike Lu Wu's little goldfish, the foolish deer that sensed danger but didn't run, the eagle reacted immediately by halting its attack and widening the gap from Lu Wu.

It reacted very quickly, but the response was problematic.

'Pfft,' a Bone Tooth pierced through its iron feathers and struck its left wing.

Su Lan was flabbergasted at that moment.

"How is this possible? How can a Bone Tooth have such formidable power?"

A Bone Tooth could not possess such might, but an optimized, weaker version of a Bone Spear could.

Among the dozen or so Bone Teeth, a weakened Bone Spear had been mixed in.

Though diminished, its power was still much greater than a normal Bone Tooth, and the Iron Feathered Eagle, caught off guard, couldn't defend against it.

Now, its wing wounded, the bird struggled to bounce back, relying on one wing.

Seeing this, Lu Wu's lips curled up: "Seize the moment, give it the final blow!"

Little Skeleton obediently formed a normal-sized Bone Spear in about two seconds and shot it out, aiming straight for the Iron Feathered Eagle's chest—it was poised to take it down in one move.

"How could I let you succeed? Goofball, use that!"

The Iron Feathered Eagle was angry.

The Iron Feathered Eagle was no idiot, it was Su Lan who was the idiot, Su Lan was the real dumbass!!!

But insults aside, the Iron Feathered Eagle's actions were swift. Enduring the pain, it flapped its wings and unleashed its advanced skill, "Iron Feather Storm."

In an instant, a violent wind erupted, and the Iron Feathered Eagle's feathers fell off, forming an Iron Feather Torrent that surged toward Little Skeleton.

The torrent instantly swept away Little Skeleton's Bone Spear. Despite the Bone Spear being blown away, the formidable power of the attack didn't decrease much and continued to bear down on Little Skeleton.

Lu Wu raised an eyebrow, "Little Skeleton, block it quick!"

Was that even necessary for Lu Wu to say?

Upon seeing the terrifying Iron Feather Torrent, Little Skeleton had already raised its Bone Shield.

It raised not one, but two Bone Shields. These were different from the previous ones, much stronger in defense, but still, they couldn't withstand the opponent's advanced skill.

"Crack," the moment the Iron Feather Torrent hit, the first Bone Shield shattered.

The second one lasted slightly longer, but it too lasted less than three seconds.

After both Bone Shields had shattered, all that was left was a Bone Prison.

But could the Bone Prison stop the Iron Feather Torrent? It lasted for less than five seconds before it also cracked with a snap.

Little Skeleton was in danger!

Most of the audience, when they saw this, had this thought first.

However, Su Lan, one of the combatants, didn't think so.

His opponent was a Cultivation Master, with plenty of tricks up his sleeve. Who knew if there were any more hidden cards to play? It wasn't certain that the big move would flatten Little Skeleton.

Therefore, after launching the big move, the Iron Feathered Eagle paused briefly and then, with a large bald spot on its chest, it followed the Iron Feather Torrent in a dive toward Little Skeleton.

Who would have thought, Su Lan was such a clever and cautious person.

Everyone thought the big move was the trump card. In actuality, the real trump card was the surprise attack that came after it.

And as expected, the Iron Feather Storm did not claim Little Skeleton, who was still standing after the storm had passed.

"Sure enough, it withstood the attack, but even if it did, it's no use, the final victory is still mine, I outplayed you by an extra move!"

While Su Lan was feeling proud, the Iron Feathered Eagle charged in front of Little Skeleton and launched its final attack at close range.

This time, the distance between them was less than half a meter.

Little Skeleton had no defense left and faced with the Iron Feathered Eagle's assault, all it could do was swing its Bone Staff. A Mage swinging a Bone Staff - no need to elaborate on what that looked like, right?

Done for, Little Skeleton was surely done for.

What else could happen, could Little Skeleton possibly knock down the Iron Feathered Eagle with a swing of its Bone Staff?

Well, as it turns out, that was entirely possible!

Little Skeleton swung its Bone Staff.

"Thump!"

A muffled sound of a blunt weapon striking resounded.

The Iron Feathered Eagle, with its featherless chest, suffered a heavy blow and was brought down by that single swing of Little Skeleton's Bone Staff.

At that moment, there was silence in the audience stands, in the live broadcast, and from Su Lan's side.

Everyone stared blankly at Little Skeleton, wordless for a moment.

And just then, background music (BGM) started to play.

"Being invincible is oh so, oh so lonely!

Being invincible is oh so, oh so empty!

Alone at the summit, the cold wind keeps blowing..."

Once the BGM started, the scene was merely stunned, while the live broadcast exploded.

This BGM, this scene, perfect match, right?

"Yes, yes, yes, this is the song, this is the BGM, it's fitting freaking perfectly right now."

"No, wait, referee, organizer, who set this BGM for Little Skeleton?

Why does it have one, and other Summoned Beasts who win don't?"

...

On the other side, Su Lan, who had come to his senses on the field, looked plaintively at the referee.

The referee was equally dumbfounded; don't look at me, I didn't do it, our organization doesn't offer that service.

While everyone was wondering who had put the BGM for Little Skeleton, the BGM suddenly stopped, and Lu Wu's voice came through.

"Let's pause the BGM for a sec; I need to squeeze in an advertisement!

I am Little Skeleton's Summoner, as well as a guaranteed student at Jiangnan University, and also an amateur Professional Cultivator, Lu Wu.

Here, I'd like to plug an enrollment advertisement for Jiangnan University. Those interested in enrolling can come to me to receive a free Cultivator service gift pack.

The gift pack includes services such as cultivation plan design, tactical adjustments, etc., available to all listeners on a first-come-first-served basis!"

"Additionally, I'll give myself a little plug.

All the optimized versions of magic skills used by our Little Skeleton in the competition have been uploaded to the intranet. Interested friends can directly search for my ID number 10054288, where all skill optimization plans are listed, feel free to purchase any.

Alright, advertisement over, please continue to enjoy the custom-made BGM for my Little Skeleton, 'Being invincible is oh so lonely'!"

With that said, the BGM started up again.

"Being invincible is oh so, oh so lonely..."

# Chapter 141: 140 Silver Quality Summoned Beasts

The battle between Lu Wu and Su Lan ultimately ended in Su Lan's defeat.

And for Su Lan, the loser of the battle, there wasn't much regret at this moment, but rather, more admiration.

Lu Wu truly lived up to his reputation as a Cultivation Master. In terms of cunning, Su Lan was willing to acknowledge Lu Wu as the strongest.

"I didn't expect his mage to be capable of close combat. I've lost. In the end, I just didn't think as far ahead as he did!

No, it's not just thinking one step ahead!"

As he said this, Su Lan looked at Little Skeleton on the stage playing the BGM and advertisements on his phone once again, and Su Lan's eyes were filled with admiration.

"I only thought about the competition, but he had already thought beyond the competition. He actually used the match as an advertisement, maximizing his benefits. Our strategies were not even on the same plane. Is this what the world of a Cultivation Master is like?

But then again, choosing the same school as him seems to be interesting. Maybe I should consider it?"

"Captain, don't get any funny ideas. Your bird lost, and they're playing the victory song over there, finishing you off. The second match is about to start; which Summoned Beast are you sending out? Just say the word!"

Dealing with this scatterbrained buffoon of a captain, his two teammates were quite helpless.

They were helpless, but Su Lan was even more so!

"What's there to fight? Our ace has been defeated, and their pig is still standing. Neither of your two Summoned Beasts can break through their defense, just let it take the points."

"But!"

The two teammates were somewhat unwilling to give up but then thought about it and realized there seemed to be no other option.

So, as Little Skeleton finished playing the BGM for the second time and, being particularly addicted, took out his phone to play it a third time, the referee came over.

"The match is over, Team 007 concedes. Team 042 wins this battle. Team 042, please take Little Skeleton down from the stage!"

That's enough, you didn't provide any sponsorship fees, how many more times are you planning to play this advertisement?

Down below, Lu Wu gave Little Skeleton a look.

The increasingly clever Little Skeleton understood in an instant and played the BGM once again, replaying it while slowly making his way down.

He had decided to play the advertisement three times in total.

After the match ended, Lu Wu once again made his way over to Team 007.

He had developed this habit during his last event— wanting to study any Summoned Beast he saw.

Su Lan's bird wasn't bad, and he wanted to study it as well.

However, he came over at an inopportune moment, arriving just in time to see Su Lan being pummeled by his own bird, which was descending from the stage.

Iron Feathered Eagle: Angry (Stupid Su Lan, stupid Su Lan, you made the Iron Feathered Eagle go bald again!)

It wasn't only the Iron Feathered Eagle beating up Su Lan; there was also a small white dog eyeing Su Lan's indescribable parts, its eyes flashing with eagerness and stupidity.

At that moment, Lu Wu's head was filled with black lines.

This was the first time he had seen a Summoner being bullied by his own Summoned Beasts; what a peculiar sight.

But Lu Wu's attention was quickly drawn to the small white dog.

…

Name: White Wolf

Power: 2 stars (Ordinary)

Quality: Silver (Upgraded)

Attribute: Wind

State: Excited (The rice ball wants to bite Su Lan! Can the rice ball bite Su Lan? Rice ball can bite too, right!!)

Weakness: Grass

Skill: Bite (Master)

Description: Don't be fooled by its single skill; when it comes to demolition, no one can match it!

…

Seeing the little guy's attributes, Lu Wu was dumbstruck at first—was this little guy a wolf?

Why did it look more like an Er Ha to him? Would it awaken an "Inheritance Skill" related to Demolition when it grew up?

Nevertheless, the little fellow's Quality was indeed high. This was the first time Lu Wu had seen a Silver Quality Summoned Beast; it was fortunate that this little one was a bit weaker, otherwise if it had participated in the battle, it would have been difficult to fight against.

While Lu Wu was lost in thought over Er Ha's attributes, Su Lan noticed him, quickly pushed his bird off of him, straightened his clothes, and coughed before saying.

"Um, if I told you that this is my exclusive Summoned Beast Cultivation method, would you believe it?"

"Believed!"

Lu Wu stepped forward, shook his hand, and gave a resounding response.

Why wouldn't he believe it? From the moment he saw the attributes of Su Lan's Er Ha, Lu Wu had sworn he would make this friend.

So it wouldn't matter even if Su Lan claimed the Iron Feathered Eagle was his wife—Lu Wu would believe it as long as Su Lan dared to say it!

On Su Lan's side, upon hearing Lu Wu's forceful answer and gripping Lu Wu's warm hand, and then seeing Lu Wu's sincere eyes, he instantly felt as though his heart had been pierced through.

Is this what it feels like to be acknowledged?

…

While Lu Wu and Su Lan were holding hands and gazing into each other's eyes deeply.

In the spectator stands, the captain of Team 002 got up with his teammates and came over to Team 044.

Captain Fang Bai of Team 002 looked indifferently at Captain Wang Jun of Team 044.

"Do you guys have that much free time? To waste it on such a small team like this."

Wang Jun's mouth curled into a smile, "What, you think I'm wasting my time? Are they not worthy of your attention?"

Fang Bai remained indifferent, "If it were a Cultivation Master competition, I wouldn't dare to underestimate them; I could even say that I'm not fit to tie their shoelaces!

But unfortunately, this isn't a Cultivation Master competition, this is a Summoner competition!"

"How does a Summoner competition compare?" Li Kui snapped back.

"In the case of a Summoner competition, with their level, they aren't even fit to tie my shoelaces!

I know you're collecting intel for the upcoming Cultivation Master competition, but I have to tell you, don't waste too much pointless time on this. You'd be better off improving yourself.

As far as this competition goes, only your squad has caught my interest a bit; I don't want to win the final victory without any fun."

After saying that, Fang Bai turned and left with his teammates without looking back.

"Damn! That cocky little punk is so infuriating, makes my hands itch!"

Watching Fang Bai's retreating figure, veins bulged on Li Kui's forehead, almost wishing he could rush over and give him a good beating.

"But what he said isn't wrong," he continued. "Captain, Lu Wu may have exceptional cultivation abilities, but the power of his Summoned Beast is just so-so. We've watched enough, don't need to keep doing so, right?

With the strength he's displaying now, I alone could take on three of them.

Let's get back to training so we can thrash that bastard in the finals!"

With those words, Li Kui swung his fists as if Fang Bai were right in front of him.

On Wang Jun's side, after taking a look at Lu Wu down below, who was getting heated with Su Lan, he murmured, "Looking at him now, he isn't much, but there's still over half a month until the final. Who knows if he might surprise us then? And who can say for sure that what we're seeing now is all the strength he has?"

"What?"

Li Kui looked confused, "What do you mean? Are we going to keep watching his matches?"

"No, we're not watching anymore. Leave some suspense for ourselves, let's go!"

With that, Wang Jun also stood up and led his team away.

As Teams 002 and 044 left, the people in the spectator stands followed suit, leaving only a group of teams that were all girls behind.

Many girls had stars in their eyes as they watched Lu Wu and Su Lan's buddy-buddy behavior down below, their thoughts unknown.

On the Hengheng Monster's side, she suddenly felt uneasy when she saw Lu Wu winning again.

"Let's not watch anymore; let's go back!"

Because she realized, with the way things were going, Lu Wu's team could possibly make it into the top eight, so pressure was mounting on her.

She didn't want Lu Wu to advance while she failed; it would mean losing to Lu Wu yet again.

No, she couldn't forget her goal to make Lu Wu cry!

Meanwhile, in the president's office of Jiangnan University, Zhang Wentao was so excited he had stood up.

"Good kid, what a good kid!

Look at Xiao Lu, such a wonderful child!"

"Just the other day, I was wondering why Old Zhao was so unusually fond of this child. Now, it's clear he saw this child's exceptional qualities!"

Who could argue with that?

Playing a match and not forgetting to advertise for Jiangnan University, before even enrolling, he was already contributing to the school. If he were to enroll later, then what more could be expected?

Even if the advertisement was a bit blunt, an advertisement was still an advertisement!

And to say nothing of the fact that this child had promised free tactical adjustments and formulated Summoned Beast Cultivation plans for others, such generosity held tremendous weight!

"This child deserves a reward, a significant reward at that!"

Zhang Wentao rose from his seat, considering how to reward Lu Wu.

This was not just a moment of excitement, but also a response to Lu Wu's generosity.

It was necessary. This response not only won over Lu Wu's heart but also further amplified the advertisement's impact.

Soon enough, Zhang Wentao had an idea, picking up the phone to issue an order: "Release a statement on Jiangnan University's official website, granting the following rewards to the distinguished student, Lu Wu.

One, an entry spot for the Dragon Island Secret Realm.

Two, 1000 Internal Network Points.

Three, to have all of Lu Wu's Skill optimization plans, as well as Cultivation plans, featured on our channel for one day!"

After the phone call, Jiangnan University immediately started into action.

Soon, Jiangnan University's official channels all released the relevant information, and Lu Wu received the related notifications.

Lu Wu was immediately dumbfounded. Just for advertising?

Could the rewards really be so substantial?

# Chapter 142: 141 You have it now

Lu Wu had finally gotten a break.

After facing five seed teams consecutively, they finally came up against the Chaff Team on their sixth.

This team 038 only had the captain's Summoned Beast at Elite Level, while the other two Summoned Beasts were Ordinary, nearing Elite.

Naturally, they were no match for Lu Wu's team.

However, precisely because this team had no hope of making it into the top eight, they weren't fixated on the score and wanted to do well in every match they could.

After all, in the provincial competition, as long as you don't make it into the top eight, the rest of the rankings don't matter much, and teams that performed brilliantly during the matches were more likely to be remembered.

So, team 038 was the only team so far that Lu Wu had fought from start to finish, playing all three rounds to completion.

And because of the discovery of the benefits of advertising, Lu Wu let Little Skeleton handle all the fights in this battle.

Three fights, three victories, and after each victory, the little one had to play the BGM three times.

As soon as the BGM played, Little Skeleton was happy, Lu Wu was happy, and Zhang Wentao was happy too.

Only the referees were not too pleased.

And the audience was a bit amused.

Having been held for so long, the high school league had seen all sorts of bizarre things, but this was the first time someone treated a match as an advertisement, and they didn't stop once they started.

After every match, it was like watching a drama at home.

But considering his main occupation was a Cultivation Master, the viewers and referees could understand.

Well, that's a Cultivation Master for you, doing such things isn't strange!

After defeating team 038, Lu Wu went over to see them as per usual.

As soon as he arrived, he shook hands with the opposing captain, which left the captain, chaff, and battered by Lu Wu all the way, feeling rather flattered.

"You actually performed very well just now, but with some of the Summoned Beasts' cultivation and training, I, from the perspective of a Cultivation Master, would like to discuss it with you."

Starting with these words, Lu Wu began to chat with team 038.

An hour later, when Lu Wu left, team 038 looked at him with such admiration, almost like looking at a respected teacher.

They felt they had profited.

Though they lost the match, they gained guidance from Lu Wu.

Even though it was only for a brief hour, they indeed benefited greatly, especially the two Ordinary Summoned Beasts; they already had some ideas for their promotion.

And as for Lu Wu leaving, he was also smiling slightly; his gains were likewise not small.

Team 038 had let him 'shear quite a bit of wool'.

Though they couldn't possibly explain in detail their skills training and cultivation schemes to Lu Wu, but just having some clues, some bits of information were very useful for him; he even came away with an idea for skill optimization.

This made Lu Wu resolve that he should 'shear some wool' every time after a match in the future.

This move of Lu Wu's was witnessed by Zhang Wentao through live streaming, and it really moved the old man!

In his view, Lu Wu seeking out his opponents after the matches ended, what was he up to?

He was using Cultivation of Summoned Beasts as a pretext to foster connections, and digging deeper, why else would Lu Wu bother to cultivate these relationships if not to strive for Jiangnan University's recruitment efforts?

Realizing Lu Wu's painstaking efforts, the old man even felt that maybe the rewards were too little, wondering if he should add a bit more?

Good thing there were people around to stop him, otherwise Lu Wu would probably have received another message by now.

…

After returning from team 038, Lu Wu's second day of competitions came to an end.

Once the competition was over, Lu Wu didn't waste a moment and hurried home.

One reason was his eagerness to review his gains from the match and work on the research related to Little Skeleton's accompanying cellphone; another was, while chatting with Su Lan from team 007, Lu Wu noticed another significant boost in his spiritual power.

He initially thought it was his Little Skeleton upgrading again, but when he turned around, his Little Skeleton was curiously petting Gouzi and tapping on a bird, showing no signs of an upgrade.

Instead, while petting the dog and teasing the bird, Little Skeleton seemed to undergo some mental changes, showing faint signs of interest in beating up Lu Wu.

This gave Lu Wu a good scare, prompting him to immediately end the chat with team 007, grab Little Skeleton, and run, fearing his Little Skeleton would be corrupted, and end up learning from Su Lan's bird to gang up on him.

Upon returning, Lu Wu was still a bit worried and gave Little Skeleton a good half-hour of ideological education.

He told Little Skeleton to resolutely follow Lu Wu's leadership and firmly eliminate all such evil energy.

Within Lu Wu's team, there couldn't be Summoned Beasts that didn't align with Lu Wu's core values.

Disobedient Little Skeletons must be resolutely thrown out!

After a mixture of coaxing and tricking, Lu Wu finally called Zhao Kai Ming to inquire about his spiritual power enhancement.

This question came so suddenly that Zhao Kai Ming didn't know what was going on, so he agreed to wait for Lu Wu at Lu Wu's house.

After Lu Wu's match ended, Zhao Kai Ming went over to check on him.

Speaking of which, Lu Wu really had nerves of steel. He hadn't even had a body check yet and after the match with Team 038, he could still chat with people for an hour. That was really something.

Not long after Lu Wu returned home, Zhao Kai Ming showed up.

He started by giving Lu Wu a body check.

After fiddling around together for a bit, Zhao Kai Ming looked at Lu Wu with a complex expression and concluded, "You have one?"

"You have one?"

Lu Wu was a bit baffled, "Male or female? How many months?"

"No, no, no. What do I have?"

Zhao Kai Ming squinted his eyes, "You've got yourself a second contract! In other words, you have a second summoned beast?"

"How is that possible?"

Lu Wu felt that Zhao Kai Ming was making things up, "I should know if I myself didn't make a contract. Certainly not!

Anyway, I've definitely never actively made a contract with a summoned beast, and it's not like the summoned beast can stick itself to me, right?"

Zhao Kai Ming glanced at Lu Wu.

It's impossible for others.

But if it's you, it's hard to tell.

He knew who Lu Wu's father was, and sneaking a summoned beast to him wasn't out of the question.

"But it looks like that is the case. There's indeed an additional contract in your consciousness and judging from the traces of this second contract, it should have been formed just recently.

No more than ten days!

Moreover, the summoned beast from your contract seems to grow quickly; it's already reached the elite level in just a few days.

However, your contract power is a bit weak, so the summoned beast must not be near you."

Zhao Kai Ming, being part of the high-level management at the Fucheng Cultivation Master Professional Center, had his ways, and a simple fiddling gave him a good idea of Lu Wu's situation.

Understanding this, Zhao Kai Ming felt sure about Lu Wu's situation.

It must have been that person who secretly arranged this for Lu Wu. As for why the summoned beast isn't with Lu Wu?

No need to ask!

Clearly, that person must have his own schemes!

Could it be that Lu Wu lost the summoned beast?

That couldn't be possible. Xiao Lu seemed pretty sharp, and if such a blunder did happen, it was that person's responsibility since Xiao Lu didn't even know he had a summoned beast – he was completely clueless!

But would that person make such a stupid mistake? Zhao Kai Ming thought not!

So, Zhao Kai Ming wasn't worried about Lu Wu's situation at all but Lu Wu was panicked!

Hearing this, he immediately became nervous.

"So, it's true that I have an extra summoned beast?

But when did it happen? How come I have no memory of it? And what does this summoned beast look like? Where is it now? Should I go look for it?"

Zhao Kai Ming, believing himself to be fully aware of everything, reassured Lu Wu, "Actually, you don't need to worry too much about this. Having an extra contract is not a bad thing for you. With your current spiritual power, you're almost capable of making a third contract. Even if there's an issue with the extra contract that backlashes, you can handle it.

So, just relax and enjoy the occasional boosts in spiritual power.

As for looking? No need to look for it. There's nowhere you could even begin to search. It will find you itself, and who knows? Maybe someday a summoned beast will just jump in front of you and tell you it's your cute little buddy!"

"Is that so?"

Lu Wu felt somewhat skeptical.

Meanwhile, as Lu Wu consulted Zhao Kai Ming about the spiritual power issue,

near the seas of Quan City, a large group of summoned beasts gathered together.

This group of summoned beasts was quite diverse, including fish, shrimp, crabs, turtles, and even snakes. The types of summoned beasts varied, but if there had to be something in common among them, there actually were two.

One, all these summoned beasts were aquatic.

And another, they were all clustering around a little goldfish.

Dozens of summoned beasts followed behind the little goldfish. Although they were varied and appeared disorganized, their presence felt somewhat imposing.

Especially when the leading little goldfish encountered other summoned beasts blocking the way and called upon them to join in, the scene of dozens of summoned beasts moving in unison was quite something.

Thus, this motley crew, under the lead of the little goldfish, kept growing stronger as they moved upwards…

# Chapter 143: 142 Little Skeleton dreaming of riding a pig

Lu Wu felt that what Zhao Kai Ming said was somewhat unreliable.

Having an extra Summoned Beast appear out of nowhere, how could he just let it be?

But after some research, he found that he had nowhere to look; he didn't even know where he had formed the contract, let alone where to start searching.

Moreover, he was in the midst of a competition, with three matches a day and not a single one he could miss; wanting to leave was out of the question.

In such a helpless situation, Lu Wu had no choice but to put the matter of the second Summoned Beast aside for now.

"Forget it, let it be, maybe it'll just show up on its own like Uncle Zhao said.

I'll check my advertising revenue for today instead!"

Saying this, Lu Wu excitedly opened his internal web personal page, and a wave of happiness hit him full on.

…

Account: I Want to Be a Sea King

Account Points: 1511

Cultivation Plans Listed: Three Series

Skill Training Plans Listed: 88

Cumulative Revenue Share: 943

Cumulative Points Spent: 6234

…

A 1000 point bonus along with 511 points from revenue share, all of these came from advertisements.

These were ads he had placed himself; the channels from Jiangnan University hadn't even started yet, and once they did, Lu Wu's earnings were expected to surge again.

Lu Wu made a rough estimate, "Without counting the channels from Jiangnan University, this wave alone should bring in at least three to four thousand points, right?"

This brought on a surge of happiness.

Especially seeing the backend data, in just a moment's time, 1511 turned into 1512, with more than ten points added in just a minute; Lu Wu felt his happiness nearly bursting out.

Of course, Lu Wu didn't entirely immerse himself in this happiness.

After checking the backend data for a while, he closed it and started pondering.

"Although the ad revenue is substantial now, this kind of income is unsustainable.

In Group A here, there are only a few seeded teams left, and the rest are mostly ordinary teams. There won't be intense battles anymore, and the audience's interest will continue to decline.

Even if it's not pulled down, with the audience numbers as they are, the potential revenue is almost tapped out; the effectiveness of advertisements during the preliminaries will definitely decline gradually.

To further expand earnings, the only way is to enter the finals!"

Of course, for Lu Wu, reaching the finals wasn't difficult, but victory was the real challenge.

"If I can't win, then even though the finals will attract more attention than the preliminaries, my earnings surely won't increase much.

After all, only a few appreciate a talented loser, so for maximal benefit, I must perform spectacularly during the finals.

If possible, victory is a must!!"

Of course, easier said than done, but when it came to the ultimate victory of the high school league, Lu Wu really didn't have much confidence in taking it.

He had seen the Summoned Beasts of his main competitors striving for the first place.

Leaving Group B aside, just in Group A alone, whether it was the foreign Team 002, the local Team 001, or the dark horse Team 008, Lu Wu currently lacked the confidence to beat them.

The reason he conceded on the first day was that he truly had no chance in a fight!

But Lu Wu wasn't ready to just let it be.

Firstly, he still wanted to give it a shot; after all, if he really could take first place, the ad revenue wouldn't be less than ten thousand.

Moreover, if he could win the championship, Jiangnan University probably wouldn't be stingy with their rewards!

Thinking about this, Lu Wu's eyes instantly reddened, and he rose with zealous determination: "I'm doing it!

I'm taking this first place!

Anyone in my way, I'll take down."

Of course, having ambition is one thing, having the ability to fulfill it is another.

"With our team's current strength, taking first place is definitely impossible, but isn't there still time?

Just the preliminaries alone take half a month, and after that, the finals rest for a few days, making it nearly a month's time!"

"Within this month, I have to do everything possible to enhance our team's strength!"

This determination set in.

Lu Wu began planning how to enhance his team's strength within a month.

"For Dudu, it's actually easier, I'll ask Uncle Zhao for help, see if he can find those kinds of apples that Dudu eats, if not, getting something else that Dudu can eat will also do."

Isn't it just about spending money?

For Lu Wu now, as long as money could solve the problem, it wasn't a problem.

Lu Wu immediately called Zhao Kai Ming, who had just left, briefly explained Dudu's situation to him, and then asked him to find relevant food.

Zhao Kai Ming agreed and said he would do his best to help Lu Wu find it, so Lu Wu only needed to wait for news regarding Dudu.

However, things were a bit more difficult for Lu Wu and Lin Jianying.

With Lin Jianying, it wasn't too bad, as Lu Wu's research on goblins wasn't much less than that on Little Skeleton.

He had also spent a lot of effort and injected many skills into the goblin.

Regarding its power enhancement, Lu Wu already had an idea. It was just expensive, and Lu Wu had hesitated before, but now thinking about the minimum starting advertisement revenue of 10,000, Lu Wu felt he could afford it.

Little Skeleton was rather troublesome, though.

Among the three Summoned Beasts in Lu Wu's team, Little Skeleton was undoubtedly the strongest.

Not only was it powerful, but it was also good in all aspects, virtually without any weaknesses.

It was formidable in ranged tactics and equally strong in melee combat.

And even now, whether in ranged or melee, it still had hidden aces up its sleeve. Even if Little Skeleton was to fight alone against the Ordinary team members' Summoned Beasts, Little Skeleton still had a two or three out of ten chance of winning.

But precisely because it was already good in all aspects and its power had been developed to a certain standard, it was very difficult for Lu Wu to enhance Little Skeleton's power in a short time.

After much deliberation, it seemed that companion equipment was the only hope for a burst increase in Little Skeleton's power within a short period.

"Let's do that then. Next, we'll focus on enhancing the goblin and preparing Little Skeleton's companion equipment, aiming to get these two projects up and running before the preliminaries end."

Lu Wu was the kind of guy who acted immediately upon deciding something.

Once he decided to do something, he would do it right away.

Just in time, the materials for researching Little Skeleton's companion equipment had arrived, and Lu Wu got started on that first.

To create the companion equipment better and faster for Little Skeleton, Lu Wu even spent over 300 points to buy a large number of books and plans on companion equipment research from the internal network.

For now, he put aside the White Bone Wild Boar plan and concentrated on absorbing this knowledge.

Also, regarding the goblin, Lu Wu placed another order, spending close to a thousand points to buy relevant resources. He just needed to wait for the resources to arrive to schedule the goblin's enhancement.

While Lu Wu was diligently and strenuously researching companion equipment for Little Skeleton and striving to improve the team's level, Little Skeleton was sneaking into the yard at his home.

These days, the yard had been undergoing renovations.

The training ground's renovation was still in progress, but a building of around a hundred square meters had already been erected in the southeast corner of the yard.

Well, okay, it wasn't actually a building.

It was a facility for confining Summoned Beasts that Lu Wu had purchased from the Fu City Professional Center.

This facility was modular architecture, and they had already prepared it in advance. After Lu Wu paid, they delivered the building and assembled it in his yard.

Now, not only was the facility assembled, but it had also started being used.

Hadn't Lu Wu bought three White Bone Wild Boars the day before yesterday? They had already been delivered and were now confined inside.

And while confining the boars, Little Skeleton happened to be outside watching, which piqued its interest in the three boars.

From the moment these three boars were confined, Little Skeleton would sneak over whenever it had time.

Clearly, Little Skeleton was very interested in these three boars.

Not just because these three pigs were made of bones like it, nor just because they looked somewhat similar to Tuantuan.

The main reason was that little Little Skeleton had a big dream.

It wanted to ride these pigs!

Yep, ride pigs!

Ever since Little Skeleton had ridden Tuantuan once, it had become addicted to the idea of riding pigs.

But Tuantuan was naughty and wouldn't let it ride.

No matter how Little Skeleton secretly pinned Tuantuan to the ground or pinched Tuantuan's ears to make Tuantuan grow bigger, Tuantuan didn't comply.

With Tuantuan not cooperating and new pigs appearing, Little Skeleton naturally shifted its attention to these three White Bone Wild Boars.

Unfortunately, these boars were confined, and Little Skeleton couldn't enter, nor would they come out.

Thus, every time Little Skeleton came over, it could only watch these three pigs from outside and at most take a few pictures or shoot some videos—Little Skeleton couldn't do anything else.

This time was no different.

Once again, after squatting for nearly half an hour without being able to ride a pig, Little Skeleton could only take a picture of the pig and then leave feeling especially regretful and disappointed.

When would Little Skeleton be able to ride a pig again!

…

I'm begging for subscriptions!!!

Don't read pirated versions anymore. If you don't subscribe, Nu Xiao is going to die!!

# Chapter 144: 143 Stew Little Skeleton Again

From May 7th, Lu Wu's team's high school competition gradually became less intense.

After all, there were only 14 seed teams among the 84 groups, averaging about seven teams per group.

In the previous two days, Lu Wu had already faced four teams, plus one dark horse team, so there were only two seed teams left that he hadn't encountered.

Even if he consecutively faced them, Lu Wu's squad could still hold their ground.

Therefore, the subsequent matches weren't as intense as the first two days, but the number of battles in the coming days was indeed much greater.

Basically, every day's three matches, nine rounds had to be played in full.

Under such intense combat conditions, the goblin, who hadn't made a move in the first two days, finally took action.

With the goblin making its move, many who were secretly watching Lu Wu felt completely relieved.

The level of Squad 042 was fully exposed—it was top-notch among the seed teams but still a bit away from being ace teams.

With good luck, they had a chance to make it to the top eight, but advancing further would be very difficult.

However, in the following days, the dark horse team Lu Wu had previously conceded to without fighting began to shine.

On May 8th, they clashed with Squad 007 and easily defeated them.

On the 9th, they defeated Squad 004, and on the 10th, they encountered and defeated another seed team.

Over three consecutive days, they defeated three seed teams, gradually revealing their sharpness.

The audience and the competitors only realized why Lu Wu had chosen to concede when he first encountered them, gaining a deeper respect and apprehension towards Lu Wu's insight and training of Summoned Beasts.

This apprehension soon turned into admiration.

The reason was that after every battle, Lu Wu would find the opponents.

Freely and honestly, he pointed out the issues in their training and cultivation of Summoned Beasts.

Those who received Lu Wu's guidance had significant gains after digesting his advice.

Among them, Squad 038, which battled Lu Wu in the third match on the 6th, gained the most.

Originally, only the captain's Summoned Beast was at the Elite Level, but after Lu Wu's guidance, the remaining two members were promoted to the Elite Level within two days.

This abruptly propelled what was originally a chaff team, Squad 038, sharply upwards, faintly becoming the sixteenth seed team after the dark horse team.

This also caused Lu Wu's popularity among the competitors to skyrocket.

Not only did his opponents actively seek his advice after battles, but even squads from Group B came to him during breaks, drawn by his reputation.

Lu Wu, naturally, did not turn away anyone who came seeking guidance.

In his eyes, they were sheep who came to his door offering themselves for shearing, so why would he possibly refuse?

He seriously advised every visiting team and efficiently sheared them of their wool; meanwhile, Lu Wu did not forget to heavily promote Jiangnan University, pulling in talent!

Originally, this was just a gesture of reciprocity by Lu Wu, but unexpectedly, it indeed drew quite a few people to Jiangnan University.

Including Squad 038, five teams had already signed assured admission contracts, and several other teams were also considering it.

This delighted Zhang Wentao!

Though the provincial competition had 84 teams with over two hundred competitors, in previous years, only a few teams stayed at Jiangnan University; most were poached by teams from other provinces, and those who stayed ranked lower, leading to a sorry state.

Now, with the competition not yet over, Lu Wu had already brought in five teams, including Squad 038, which was potentially the sixteenth seed team. Even Squads 004 and 007 were considering joining, along with Lu Wu's own team, which was bound to reach the top eight.

Even if no other teams joined, this year would be a bumper year for Jiangnan University.

Jiangnan University harvested abundantly, and so did Lu Wu!

Firstly, in terms of points, Lu Wu's personal advertising over the week, although steadily declining, still brought nearly three thousand in revenue, plus almost another three thousand from Jiangnan University's channels, and a reward of 1000 points.

In just around ten days of competition, Lu Wu had earned about 7000 points.

But these points were as easy to spend as they were to earn.

In just under ten days, Lu Wu had already spent 5000 of those points.

A thousand was spent on the goblin.

Fifteen hundred points were spent on Dudu.

Yes, it was finally time for Lu Wu to spend money on Dudu.

Primarily because Zhao Kai Ming was highly efficient on his side; the stuff Lu Wu asked him for was delivered by Zhao the very next day.

What he brought early was something called Little Red Fruit; Zhao Kai Ming had briefly explained that it was a fruit that could nourish people but couldn't be consumed in excess—one per month was the limit for most people.

And one of these fruits cost 50 points; so buying thirty for Dudu for a trial cost 1500 points.

Of course, it wasn't a random trial; Lu Wu took her to the Fucheng Cultivation Center where the experiment was conducted under strict instrument monitoring.

Through analysis, it was fine for Dudu to consume four to five fruits per day; exceeding this number would surpass the energy storage limit of the Bonds Skill.

Clearly, these Little Red Fruits weren't as good as the apples Dudu had eaten before, but it was hard to say for certain, maybe the energy required for Tuantuan to level up back then was less.

Anyway, Lu Wu had Dudu eat 1500 points to see if he could activate the Bonds Skill again.

Now, Dudu had almost finished those 30 points and the Bonds Skill still hadn't activated, so it might take another 1500.

However, spending money on Dudu didn't bother Lu Wu much; what really pained him was spending money on Little Skeleton.

Initially, Lu Wu thought that 500 points would be enough for Little Skeleton's Companion Equipment.

But to his surprise, it turned out to be a bottomless pit. After dumping 500 points and barely seeing a hint of progress, Lu Wu had no choice but to dump another 500, still with no results.

Now, having sunk a total of 1000 points, Lu Wu couldn't just stop, so he had to work on upgrading both the Companion Equipment and the Quality of Little Skeleton.

Then he dumped another 500 points in!

This time, he saw some results, but there was still some distance to a complete success.

In the end, Lu Wu clenched his teeth and splurged 2000 points in one go, creating a mess again on the evening of May 15.

After concocting this mess, he called Little Skeleton over and said earnestly, "This mess cost me 2000 points, plus the previous 1500, I've spent a total of 3500 points.

It's the culmination of all my knowledge to date."

Little Skeleton was a bit dumbfounded.

It had no idea why Lu Wu was telling it this.

It even got a bit bored and wanted to go see the pigs.

"Stop thinking about visiting those pigs. I'm telling you, if you achieve satisfying results today, improving your quality and producing the Companion Equipment, everything will be good."

"Not only will you get to see the pigs, but I'll even give you three pigs to ride and play with each day.

But if you don't deliver good results when you come out, I will cook you today and let Tuantuan eat you!"

At this, Little Skeleton's eyes, ablaze with Pupil Fire, brightened.

It took out its beloved smartphone, then 'plop'—it jumped right into the soup.

Watching the little guy's actions, it was clear that he only heard about getting pigs from Lu Wu, not the part about being fed to the pigs.

There was no helping it; Little Skeleton had grown up and become too smart to fool.

It knew it was Lu Wu's favorite little darling, and Lu Wu wouldn't actually cook it to feed Tuantuan.

Seeing the little fellow acting so smug and fearless, Lu Wu got irritated.

But Lu Wu said nothing, silently adding ingredients after Little Skeleton had jumped in.

He added a junky cross to eliminate Little Skeleton's Light Weakness, a damaged Fire Energy Stone to address the falling Fire attribute, a robotic Summoned Beast battery to enhance the Thunder attribute strength, and a Basic Water Heart to blend and soften the energy.

One by one, he threw the materials, each worth hundreds of points, into the base soup.

Finally, he quietly took Little Skeleton's smartphone and some smartphone-strengthening materials and sneaked them into the pot without Little Skeleton noticing.

After putting them in, Lu Wu quickly put the lid on with a 'clack', then told Little Skeleton that its beloved smartphone had been thrown into the soup.

Little Skeleton, comfortably soaking in the soup, jumped when it heard this and hurriedly felt around for its smartphone.

Soon, Little Skeleton felt the smartphone, but by then, the device had already started heating up. As the smartphone was about to explode, Little Skeleton's Pupil Fire lit up even more brightly.

It struggled hard to push the lid open, but Lu Wu outside pressed down tightly on the lid.

"You're not allowed out. If you come out, this whole soup will be ruined. Thousands of points wasted, and you can forget about playing with smartphones for the rest of your life!"

Little Skeleton's State: Anxious (because Little Skeleton's smartphone is about to break!)

"It won't break. Don't you want a smartphone that won't break? Pour your energy into your phone, honestly soak in the soup, and when you come out, you will have a smartphone that will never break."

After the threat, Lu Wu switched to coaxing.

"Think about it, if your phone never breaks, you won't lose the things you downloaded, your game progress won't disappear, and the things you capture will always be there. How great is that!

Doesn't Little Skeleton want such a phone?"

Little Skeleton paused, then frantically nodded its little skull.

Little Skeleton wanted that indestructible smartphone!

Little Skeleton wanted to ride pigs!

Little Skeleton wanted to store pigs in the smartphone!

With a strong fixation, Little Skeleton began channeling its energy into the smartphone…

# Chapter 145: 144 Little Skeleton's phone

Little Skeleton's soup-making this time was the most conscientious and tense soup Lu Wu had made since starting with Little Skeleton.

After all, it was expensive!

3500 points, and Lu Wu really didn't want to waste them.

Plus, Lu Wu's Golden Finger had evolved once and could now see attributes without touching.

So, for the first time while making soup for Little Skeleton, Lu Wu didn't get distracted.

He watched intently the whole time.

He kept a close watch on Little Skeleton and its phone's attributes, afraid something might go wrong.

After all, this time Lu Wu was using an entirely new plan to make soup for Little Skeleton.

...

Cultivation Plan: Little Skeleton Hotpot 1.0

Cultivation Program: Boil the base, add Little Skeleton, then the side ingredients.

Then simmer!

Cultivation Effect: There's a 90 percent chance of enhancing Little Skeleton's Quality and a 35 percent chance of producing Companion Equipment for Little Skeleton.

Cultivation Plan Description: A hybrid type of cultivation plan, good all around but it's a bit expensive.

...

This Little Skeleton Hotpot had a 90 percent chance of quality enhancement, which was quite high; round it up, and that's practically 100 percent. So, in this regard, Lu Wu wasn't too worried.

What he was mainly concerned about was whether Little Skeleton's phone could become a Companion Phone.

With a 35 percent success rate, round it up, and that's pretty much zero.

So, Lu Wu was particularly nervous.

But he had no other choice, he really couldn't improve it further in the short term, he could only bet on luck.

And today, it seemed like luck was on Lu Wu's side.

He was fortunate.

Under his consistent attention, he noticed the state of the phone in Little Skeleton's hands was gradually changing.

Initially, Little Skeleton's phone had no attributes.

In less than five minutes, Little Skeleton's phone became [A Phone That's About to Explode].

Five more minutes passed, and not only had Little Skeleton's phone not exploded, but it also became [A Phone Where Energy is Stabilizing, But Still at Risk of Explosion].

Five more minutes passed, and the phone turned into [A Phone That's Beginning to Transform into Equipment].

…

Basically, every five minutes, Little Skeleton's phone's state would change.

Each time it was a bit better than before.

In such a state of continuous optimization, an hour after being put into the pot, Little Skeleton's phone began to take shape.

Seeing this scene, Lu Wu was both nervous and excited at that moment.

After all, this phone was the very first Companion Equipment that he truly researched and developed on his own.

However, while Lu Wu was excited, the shaping of Little Skeleton's phone hit a critical snag.

The attribute indicated that the phone had powerful functions but lacked a core material.

Upon seeing this, Lu Wu gritted his teeth and took out the [Citol Order] he had obtained previously.

"An instance or whatever, none of it's as important as equipment, throw it in!"

Saying this, Lu Wu threw the [Citol Order] into the pot.

Using an instance order for equipment was a bold move by Lu Wu.

And this item was truly worthy of being above silver; as soon as Lu Wu threw it in, a dazzling burst of light emanated instantly.

"Ah!!! My eyes!"

Taken completely by surprise, Lu Wu nearly got blinded by the intense light as he was keeping a close watch on the pot.

His eyes teared up from the pain, and he covered them, taking a while to recover, but finally Lu Wu got over it.

And by the time Lu Wu had recovered, everything in the pot had finished.

Whether it was Little Skeleton's Quality or Little Skeleton's phone, it was all done.

At this moment, Little Skeleton was excitedly fiddling with its new phone in the pot.

Seeing this scene, Lu Wu took a deep breath, then his attention was quickly drawn to Little Skeleton's new attributes.

...

Name: Little Skeleton Mage with a New Phone (One Evolution)

Power: 1 Star (Elite)

Quality: Bronze (Upgraded)

Attributes: Undead, Thunder, Netherworld Fire

State: Excited (Little Skeleton's new phone is super cool! The Lu Wu that got Little Skeleton a new phone is super cool!

Little Skeleton likes Lu Wu the most!)

Skills:

Basic Melee: Charge (Master) Block (Master) Dodge (Master) Heavy Slash (Master)

Basic Magic: Bone Teeth (Master) Bone Shield (Master) Corrosive Hand (Master) Bone Prison (Master) Bone Spear (Master)

Special Skills: Charging (Master)

Advanced Skills: Ghost Fire Skill (Skilled) Thunder Strike (Skilled)

Talent: Dual-tasking, Magic Enhancement (Basic)

???, ???

Weakness: Light

Companion Equipment: Mysterious Bone Staff, Mage Robe, Little Skeleton's phone

Description: The Bone Staff and Robe haven't changed much, but the new phone that has sprung up seems a bit too kick-ass.

......

Item: Little Skeleton's phone

Quality: Silver

Function: Energy Storage (Capable of storing nearly three Little Skeletons' worth of energy in the phone, convenient for Little Skeleton to access anytime)

Big phone scan it (When Little Skeleton takes a fancy to a Summoned Beast, after defeating it, use the big phone to scan it and bring it into the phone.

Ps: The Summoned Beast scanned into the phone automatically forms a contract with Little Skeleton, becoming Little Skeleton's Summoned Beast.

Pss: Currently, it can only scan [White Bone Wild Boars], well, Little Skeleton can try too, and now it can only scan three Summoned Beasts at most, and the strength of the scanned Summoned Beast cannot exceed Little Skeleton's.)

Description: It is a powerful phone. With it, Little Skeleton can also become a Summoner.

Besides, it seems to have formed some kind of connection with Little Skeleton's Bone Staff, specifics please explore on your own.

......

"Holy grass!"

Lu Wu looked at the attributes of Little Skeleton and the phone and couldn't help but let slip some fragrant words.

Of course, this was mainly directed at the phone.

After all, apart from the quality returning to Bronze and a few skills improving in proficiency, nothing else had changed much with Little Skeleton's soup-making this time.

Even the jump in quality from Ordinary to Bronze didn't surprise Lu Wu.

After all, Little Skeleton's original attribute was Bronze, and it only fell to Ordinary due to Evolution.

Having been Bronze once, with the right plan and the right amount of energy, returning to Bronze was perfectly normal.

What really caught Lu Wu off guard was the [Little Skeleton's phone].

Lu Wu truly hadn't expected to spit out a Silver phone directly.

Moreover, the features of this phone were so powerful.

[Energy Storage] is not even worth mentioning, as this one skill immensely improved Little Skeleton's endurance.

Turning Little Skeleton from a three-minute True Skeleton into a twelve-minute True Skeleton.

But this skill was nothing in front of [Big phone scan it].

The emergence of this skill directly transformed the Little Skeleton Mage into Little Skeleton Summoner.

Although this skill has significant limitations, with it only being able to scan [White Bone Wild Boars] and [Little Skeleton] for now, it indeed could greatly enhance Little Skeleton's power.

You see, during this time, Lu Wuke has researched the cultivation plan for [White Bone Wild Boar] quite a bit.

For Lu Wu, as long as there are resources, improving the quality and Combat Power of White Bone Wild Boars isn't difficult.

The three that are now lying in the yard are already at 3-Star peak, with a bit of luck, Lu Wu might be able to advance them to Elite Level within a few days.

Just think, if it's really possible, come finals, Little Skeleton can wave the big phone and summon 3 Elite Level wild boars directly.

At that time, it would be a four against one, absolutely able to make the opponent cry, right!

Thinking of this, Lu Wu got excited!

"What are you still lying down in there for? Don't you want to ride a pig? Come on, I'll take you to scan a pig with the big phone!"

As he spoke, Lu Wu lifted the lid, reached out to pull Little Skeleton, but got scalded by the soup.

"Holy, holy, holy..."

In pain, Lu Wu uttered expletives, which alarmed Little Skeleton.

Forgetting all about the phone, it hurried out of the soup, extended a boney hand to grasp Lu Wu's scalded hand, and started blowing on it like in the TV shows.

Well.

Little Skeleton's little actions were indeed a bit cute, and it's care for Lu Wu was very touching.

But the problem is, it's a skeleton, what kind of breath can it blow?

Also, it had just come out of the pot, its bones still radiating heat, and with the bony hand grabbing on, Lu Wu felt his hand was nearly ruined.

"Hot, hot, hot, let go of me, let go!"

Lu Wu scrambled and struggled, finally managing to wrest himself free from Little Skeleton's grasp, but his hands had already swollen up like pig's trotters.

Looking at his hands, Lu Wu's tears were about to fall.

At the same time, for the first time, Lu Wu felt an urgent desire to become a Professional Summoner.

"Seems like I need to become a Professional Summoner sooner, otherwise, my frail body is going to get harassed to death sooner or later!"

Summoners with Summoned Beasts of Ordinary and Elite Level are amateur summoners.

Only when the Summoned Beast's power reaches the Boss Level does a Summoner qualify to be called a Professional Summoner.

Only then will a Summoner's survivability greatly increase.

But Little Skeleton is just at Elite 1 Star now, Lu Wu is still a bit away from becoming a Professional Summoner.

"To rise to a Profession with Little Skeleton, it still takes at least a year.

Sigh, I don't even know what my second Summoned Beast looks like, where it is now, how strong it is, or whether I'll wake up one day and be Professional thanks to it."

After daydreaming a bit into the night, Lu Wu took Little Skeleton to the yard to try out the new phone's new function.

The process was quite smooth; Lu Wu opened the door, let Little Skeleton in.

After it knocked down the three pigs with the Bone Staff, a swipe of the phone brought all three pigs into the phone.

Seeing the three pigs enter the phone at that moment, Lu Wu knew he was a step closer to the championship, and he also knew that his remaining points were probably going to be used up.

But Lu Wu didn't mind at all.

It wasn't that he had become generous, but his little heart had grown numb from pain.

After Little Skeleton captured the three pigs and rode them around in wild joy, Lu Wu used his pig's trotter to place an order, spending the last two thousand points from his account.

Well, he was planning to brew another pot of soup for these three pigs.

After placing the order, Lu Wu came out to see the still excitedly galloping Little Skeleton and suddenly had a thought, "Say, if I throw Little Skeleton into the pot while boiling the pigs, will I boil up something strange?"

# Chapter 146: 145 Olive Branch

As soon as Little Skeleton's phone came out, Lu Wu felt like he almost wanted to pre-order the championship.

Well, okay, that might be a bit of an exaggeration.

He was still quite far from being a champion; if it came down to fighting against those top teams, Lu Wu really didn't have much confidence in winning.

If Little Skeleton could go up another One Star, if the needles prepared for the goblin healed well, and if Dudu's Bonds Skill were activated, then Lu Wu would truly be locking in the championship in advance.

But regardless, Lu Wu felt that, at the very least, getting into the top eight should be perfectly secured.

After all, in his prelims, besides conceding against those three teams, he had fought in almost all the other matches and won them all.

Although there were still three days left and 9 matches unplayed, grabbing those 9 points would be a piece of cake for Lu Wu.

So, unless something unexpected happened, Lu Wu's team should be able to enter Group A in the top four with a score of 39 points and thus make it into the top eight.

Yes, the competition among the strong is just so plain and simple.

However, what should have been a straightforward competition suddenly turned tumultuous on May 17th.

This wasn't because Lu Wu had encountered some super Dark Horse Team and been defeated that day, but because Team 001 had actually lost.

When Lu Wu got this news, he had just finished a match and was in the process of plundering his opponent's resources.

Right in the middle of his plundering, Lin Jianying suddenly came over to tell him this news.

"What's going on here?"

Lu Wu was somewhat stunned: "How did 001 lose?

Did they face 002, or did they come across the Dark Horse Team 003?"

Lu Wu racked his brains. As far as he could see, Team 001 could only have possibly lost to these two teams.

Lin Jianying shook head: "Neither, 001 lost to Team 018!"

"018?"

Lu Wu recalled the information about that team: "Seems like they're one of the seeded teams, their power is alright, but beating 001 seems impossible, right?"

"The two teams didn't even fight; 001 conceded right off the bat as soon as they got on stage!"

As soon as Lin Jianying said this, Lu Wu's eyes narrowed immediately.

They conceded without even fighting? Lu Wu sensed the scent of conspiracy and immediately asked the critical question: "What's the current record of Team 018?"

Lin Jianying obviously did his homework and immediately replied to Lu Wu: "Including this battle with Team 001, they now have a 34-match winning streak!

There are eight more matches left for them, including ones against Team 002, 003, and us."

"So, if in the upcoming 8 matches, even if they lose all three tough fights, they can still end up with 39 points?"

"Yes, and if they can win one of those three matches, then their final score could reach 40 points!"

If that was really the case, then the top four spot Lu Wu's team had nearly secured would probably not be so secure.

This made Lu Wu very upset.

He was preparing for the finals, yet he hadn't expected such complications to arise during the prelims.

"Look into what's going on between Teams 001 and 018!"

Lu Wu now seriously suspected that they were being targeted!

Someone wanted to control the points and push them out of the top eight.

Lu Wu's suspicions were correct.

Almost at the same time that Lu Wu got the news of Team 001's defeat, Zhuang Yan, the captain of Team 001 who had just lost a match, found Team 002.

Zhuang Yan got straight to the point as soon as he came over.

"Captain Fang, I have something I'd like to discuss with you.

I was hoping that in your upcoming match against Team 018, you could let them win."

Team 002's captain, Fang Bai, looked at him coldly: "And if I say no?"

Zhuang Yan grinned: "That's your prerogative; I have no right to interfere. I'm just making a suggestion.

However, it looks like we also haven't fought yet."

"Are you threatening me?" Fang Bai's brows raised, and the chill on his face deepened.

"It's not a threat. I know that Captain Fang doesn't fear a battle with us, and you might not even take us seriously.

But you surely wouldn't want to fight us prematurely and risk exposing some of your hidden cards, right?

The other two teams have been keeping a close eye on you guys. An early confrontation wouldn't benefit either of us."

"If you could give up this point, we would likewise reciprocate and give a point back to you. It's just a show of hands, and there's no harm in it for you, right?"

After saying this, Zhuang Yan didn't wait for Fang Bai's response and just turned to leave.

After leaving Team 002's side, Zhuang Yan went to the Dark Horse Team 003 and repeated the same message.

It was clear that Team 001 was trying to forcibly control the points and squeeze Team 042 out of the top four.

It was a rather despicable act, but in the high school league, it wasn't considered illegal.

After all, Team 001 didn't offer any benefits to Teams 002 and 003; it was merely a threat.

Without any exchange of benefits, such behavior could only be categorized as a tactical maneuver in the competition, not a violation, and so no penalties could be given to Team 001.

Meanwhile, while Team 001 was manipulating the points behind the scenes, Lu Wu's side also roughly figured out what was going on.

Of course, Lin Jianying didn't find this out; he wasn't that efficient.

It was Zhang Wentao who personally called to lay out the situation.

Allegedly, the point control between Teams 001 and 018 was because both teams had signed guaranteed admission contracts with Jiangbei University.

And, reportedly, Jiangbei University had some unresolved issues with Jiangnan University.

Two universities had been fighting over educational resources for many years, constantly tripping each other up.

In other words, Lu Wu was the one caught in the crossfire in this situation.

Jiangbei University, upon seeing that someone endorsed by Jiangnan was making such a splash in the provincial competition, decided to intervene and aimed to push Lu Wu out of the top eight.

Upon hearing this news, Lu Wu almost spit out a mouthful of blood.

"Damn, I didn't expect to encounter such a thing before even starting school!

Old Zhang and the others are too spineless, allowing others to bully them to this degree."

However, as Lu Wu was cursing, someone knocked on the door of his rest room.

"Is someone there?"

Dudu thought it was a player who had come out of admiration, so he went and opened the door.

As the door opened, a middle-aged man wearing a suit and nearsighted glasses, emanating an aura of bookishness, walked in.

"Who are you?"

Dudu, seeing a strange middle-aged man, was a bit confused.

"Let me introduce myself. I am the director of the admissions office of Jiangbei University, my surname is Jiang, Jiang Beifeng!"

While speaking, the man reached out to shake hands with Dudu.

But just as he stretched out his hand, Lu Wu jumped over and grabbed it before Dudu could.

Thinking of shaking hands with his wife? Impossible.

However, Lu Wu's move, although fast, made him forget that his hand had turned into a pig trotter yesterday, so his face darkened as he shook hands.

But in front of an outsider, he was too embarrassed to cry out in pain and forced himself to shake briefly before withdrawing his hand.

Yet the man noticed it and immediately expressed concern, "Lu's hand seems to be burned, I have some special burn ointment here, would you like to try it?"

"No need! May I ask what brings you here?

If there's nothing important, we need to prepare for the next match."

This was a hint for the visitor to leave.

Obviously, Lu Wu was not fond of this man who came in and tried to shake his wife's hand.

Especially after Jiangbei University's recent underhanded tactics, Lu Wu's almost certain spot in the top eight was now in jeopardy.

He had a very poor impression of Jiang Beifeng, thinking that such a person must be no good—certainly the typical example of a hypocrite.

"Lu may have some misunderstandings about me. I'm here today to extend an invitation from Jiangbei University to Lu Wu.

We hope that Lu Wu will consider joining Jiangbei University..."

"I've already signed an endorsement contract with Jiangnan University!"

Before Jiang Beifeng could finish his sentence, Lu Wu had a good idea of what he was about to say, so he rejected the offer without hesitation.

Jiang Beifeng, of course, was not so easily dismissed.

He adjusted his glasses and said, "I understand, but if I may speak frankly, Jiangnan University is not suitable for Lu Wu.

In recent years, Jiangnan University's academic ranking has been on a steep decline, now falling well beyond the thirtieth place.

The dropping rankings have significantly reduced Jiangnan University's resource allocation, and they are on the verge of bankruptcy.

This is evident through the welfare package they offered you.

As far as I know, Lu has signed up for the 'A' Level Welfare Growth Plan with Jiangnan University, right?

Such so-called 'A' level welfare is hardly a benefit for a talent like Lu—it would be more suitable to call it an insult.

All things considered, it amounts to around 3,000 points, which is something Lu could earn in a week of competition, hardly qualifying as welfare."

I must say, Jiang Beifeng was quite persuasive, swiftly belittling Jiangnan University and subtly trying to create an adversarial atmosphere between Lu Wu and Jiangnan University.

And that was only the first pitch. The second one followed quickly.

"If Lu Wu decides to join Jiangbei University, what you can get will be far more.

I can assure you on behalf of Jiangbei University that within our institution, you would be granted the privileges of an associate professor rank.

You would have free access to all of Jiangbei University's internal documents and all research findings related to cultivation.

In addition, Jiangbei University will build a research lab custom-tailored for you with the highest standards.

Each month, you'll also receive a minimum of 10,000 points for research funds.

On top of that, you can access any and all Secret Realm resources controlled by Jiangbei University at your leisure!"

These promises nearly knocked Lu Wu senseless.

He finally understood why teams 001 and 018, though hailing from Jiangnan Province, had been poached by Jiangbei University.

It wasn't that they lacked backbone; it was the sheer abundance offered by the other side.

Lu Wu had to admit that, with such terms presented before him, his initial distaste for Jiangbei University and Jiang Beifeng was nearly swayed.

Just then, Jiang Beifeng delivered his final blow.

"There's something else you might need to know.

As I said earlier, Jiangnan University is on the brink of bankruptcy.

If their ranking doesn't improve this year, their allocation of resources will decline further, exacerbating their situation. At most, they can hold out until next year before likely going bankrupt.

In that event, as Jiangbei University is the primary creditor of Jiangnan University, we will initiate liquidation proceedings, and, without any surprises, Jiangnan University will become part of Jiangbei University.

That is to say, even if you choose Jiangnan University now, you will eventually become a member of Jiangbei University.

But by then, you will miss out on the benefits I've just promised, and you may not even make it into the top eight!"

With this final pitch, Lu Wu's eyes narrowed sharply!

# Chapter 147: 146 Provocation, High Stakes (Seeking Subscriptions)

042 team's resting room.

As Jiang Beifeng's final axe chop was executed, the atmosphere in the resting room solidified.

Even Little Skeleton, who had been fiddling with his new phone, sensed Lu Wu's displeasure at this moment.

Right there and then, he took out his Bone Staff, and his Pupil Fires fiercely stared at Lu Wu, flashing like signal lights.

The message was clear.

Is this person bad? Is he bullying Lu Wu? Should Little Skeleton help Lu Wu beat him up?

At this moment, Lu Wu had no time to pay attention to Little Skeleton.

His gaze was fixed on Jiang Beifeng.

Lu Wu initially thought that the final axe chop was a mistake; however, when he saw that as he expressed his displeasure on his side, Jiang Beifeng's face still bore a gentle breeze-like smile, Lu Wu knew this axe chop was intentional.

In fact, Jiang Beifeng had indeed chopped intentionally.

Before he came to meet Lu Wu, he had prepared two plans.

The first was a sugar-coated cannonball appeasement plan, for Jiang Beifeng.

If this plan worked out, it would obviously be best, easily winning over Lu Wu.

But he knew this plan wouldn't be easy.

Before coming, he had meticulously analyzed Lu Wu, gaining a deep understanding of Lu Wu's background and personality.

Lu Wu wasn't one to be trifled with—those who offended him hardly ended well.

His first teammate lost the qualification for the high school league competition, his future bleak, and a coach who dismissed him at first glance was directly expelled from Quan City, his over half a year's efforts turning into nothing.

From these two cases alone, one could see the nature of Lu Wu.

Although he was not particularly narrow-minded, he was indeed very sentimental and remembered favors.

Jiang Beifeng thought that Lin Jianying was a representative figure proving this about Lu Wu. This young man had betrayed Lu Wu once, but Lu Wu still took him into his team and even went to war with Ye Qingxue for him.

And he helped him cultivate his Summoned Beast to Elite Level.

From Lin Jianying, he could see Lu Wu's sentimentality, and from Li Kai, he saw Lu Wu's gratitude.

Therefore, Jiang Beifeng believed that appeasement might very likely be ineffective on Lu Wu.

Because during the conflict between Lu Wu and Ye Qingxue, Zhao Kai Ming had helped him—a huge favor, plus the various accommodations Jiangnan University had given him during this period.

With Lu Wu's personality, it was highly unlikely he would easily betray Jiangnan University.

Moreover, the advantages he could offer now could also be matched by Jiangnan University, gritting their teeth.

Lastly, and most importantly.

Although he had only met Lu Wu for about ten to fifteen minutes, he could already feel Lu Wu's aversion to him.

This aversion hadn't diminished much despite his generous terms, and obviously, the chance of successful appeasement was nearly zero. Thus, Jiang Beifeng had to give up on the appeasement plan and start the second plan.

"Student Lu Wu should be very clear about your current situation.

018 team has already defeated the 001 team, and the other two teams—001 has also gone to talk to them.

Without accidents, at least one of those teams will surrender without a fight, and then team 018 will be able to surpass you with 40 points, pushing you out of the top four.

This is something student Lu Wu certainly doesn't want to see, right?

After all, student Lu Wu made a substantial amount during the preliminaries from sponsorships.

Not counting the channels through Jiangnan, you must have made around three thousand points. If you make it to the top eight, this amount could at least double, and if you reach the finals, it could double again. If lucky enough to win the championship, you would earn at minimum tens of thousands in revenue.

And now, this income is about to disappear."

As soon as the second plan was initiated, Jiang Beifeng pushed his glasses up and, raising his head again, his facial microexpression changed slightly, wearing a faint, almost imperceptible confident smile, which was particularly infuriating as if everything were under his control.

Lu Wu narrowed his eyes, showing neither pleasure nor anger, "Are you threatening me?"

"Not really; I'm just stating a fact."

"How can you be so sure that either team 002 or 003 will definitely give way to 018?

What if they don't?" Lu Wu said coldly.

Jiang Beifeng clearly was prepared for this point: "If they don't give way, at most, 018 will tie with you at 39 points. Then you'll be tied for fourth place, and to advance, teams 042 and 018 would have to battle it out.

Of course, if it really comes to that, they certainly won't be a match for you, but I won't let that scenario happen.

If that happens, 001 would also lose two matches, and based on the current points of the teams, your three teams would be tied for third place. Then, the third and fourth places would have to be decided among you."

Pausing here, Jiang Beifeng slightly lifted his lips, "Speaking of this, you might feel this situation hasn't changed much from before…"

"No, there is a change!"

Jiang Beifeng hadn't finished, but Lu Wu took over, "When the time comes, on the surface, three teams are vying for third and fourth places, but in reality, those two teams are working together to squeeze us out.

If we first take on 001, they will do their utmost to wear us down to create conditions for 018 to defeat us.

If we first encounter 018, they will immediately surrender, then switch to 001 to let them defeat us, followed by 001 conceding to 018, resetting the competition."

Jiang Beifeng clapped his hands in admiration: "As expected of a Cultivation Master, right, exactly so!

Then, when this match ends, it's up to us to say. As long as we don't push you out of the top eight, the match among your three teams won't end!

So in a sense, this match has already been controlled.

Whether you make it to the top eight is up to us."

Obviously, in terms of momentum, the opponent had overwhelmed Lu Wu by a significant margin.

But Lu Wu was not so easily overwhelmed.

"But there is a prerequisite for you all to achieve this effect, and that is, 001 must be able to defeat us. Are you so confident that he can definitely beat us?"

When Lu Wu said this, his expression did not change and his voice remained steady, but Jiang Beifeng knew he was angry, extremely so; it was time to throw out the second plan.

"I have the same confidence in 001 and our capabilities as you have in yourself.

And since we are both confident, how about a bet!

If, and I say if, you can make it into the top eight under our controlled play, then consider it your win.

If you can't make it into the top eight under our controlled play, then consider it your loss."

At this point, Jiang Beifeng's second plan was formally revealed.

Since the appeasement approach didn't work, it was better to go straight to provocation.

Of course, such a simplistic method of provocation wouldn't work by itself, so Jiang Beifeng added a layer of incentive to it.

"Since it's a bet, there definitely has to be a prize.

If you win, I will offer up 10,000 internal network points and also information about Little Skeleton's second evolution."

When Jiang Beifeng mentioned 10,000 points, Lu Wu wasn't very tempted.

It couldn't be helped, he was a bit inflated now.

Although he couldn't even take out 100 points from his account now, he thought that 10,000 points was small change, and given some time, even 100,000 points wasn't a big sum to him.

But when he spoke about the second evolution information regarding Little Skeleton, Lu Wu really was attracted.

Noticing that instant of temptation in Lu Wu, Jiang Beifeng continued, "And if you lose, you don't have to give anything, you just have to join Jiangbei University.

And the conditions I just mentioned still stand, even now I can give you the 10,000 points and the information on the second evolution of Little Skeleton.

How about it? From your position, this bet is completely advantageous, whether you win or lose, you won't incur any loss. You wouldn't dare not to take this bet with us, would you?"

"If even such a bet scares you, then it just proves that your confidence is all an act, and deep down you're just a coward afraid of failure!"

Interests, provocation.

Jiang Beifeng went all out.

Now, all that was left was to wait for Lu Wu's response.

And regarding Lu Wu's response, Jiang Beifeng was very confident.

He knew Lu Wu very well, this guy wasn't too crafty, and provocation was very effective on him.

Not to mention, he had added a lure to the provocation.

10,000 points, plus information on a second evolution for Little Skeleton, for a kid like Lu Wu with an ordinary background, such an enticement was irresistible.

Combined, Jiang Beifeng was confident he could draw Lu Wu into this sure-lose trap.

Look, he could even see Lu Wu struggling now.

Seeing Lu Wu's struggle, Jiang Beifeng's lips curled up.

'Struggling, eh? Then I'll just give you a push!'

"Of course, this is just a suggestion, if you are really scared, you can actually choose not to bet, or you can even wait until the last day of the preliminaries to agree if you like."

With this push, Lu Wu exploded.

"Bet? Why wouldn't I bet when you're offering money—I have no reason not to agree!"

Jiang Beifeng's lips curled up, thinking he had walked right into it.

However, his smile had barely formed when Lu Wu's next sentence came.

"But the stakes need to change!

This kind of bet where the outcome is the same for me whether I win or lose isn't fun, not exciting!

If we're betting, the stakes should be the same on both sides.

If you lose, you give me 50,000 internal network points and information on the second evolution of Little Skeleton, if I lose, I give you 55,000 points, the extra 5,000 considered the price for the information.

So, with these stakes, do you dare to bet?"

"This…"

Jiang Beifeng hadn't expected Lu Wu to leap out of the trap at this moment, which was somewhat unexpected.

"Wasn't Director Jiang incredibly aggressive just now? With the stakes changed, you can't possibly be afraid to bet, right?"

Well, provocation was now being used against him.

At this point, Jiang Beifeng only had two choices, either agree to a bet with these stakes or refuse—if he refused, Lu Wu could completely escape and call off the bet entirely.

The latter scenario was something Jiang Beifeng absolutely did not want to see.

So, at this moment, all he could do was nod.

"Alright, if you want to change the bet to that, then let's bet on it!"

Regardless, establishing the bet was first and foremost.

Anyway, Lu Wu couldn't possibly win, and when he couldn't pay the 55,000 points after losing, they would discuss other options.

Thus, both parties signed a betting agreement in rest room 042.

As soon as the agreement was signed, Lu Wu stood up to see the guest out.

"Director Jiang, I need to stop by rest rooms 002 and 003, so I won't keep you any longer!"

# Chapter 148: 147 Lu Wu's Calculations

Lu Wu wasn't making excuses to get rid of them.

He indeed needed to visit the resting rooms of team 002 and 003.

Since he had already staked on this bet, Lu Wu naturally wouldn't leave his victory in the hands of others.

If team 001 could go to talk to them, Lu could certainly do the same.

With Lu Wu's personality, if he wasn't confident in persuading those two teams, how could he have easily agreed to Jiang Beifeng's bet?

"Suit yourself!"

Jiang Beifeng naturally knew Lu Wu was about to take action, but he wasn't the least bit flustered.

Utterly calm, utterly gentlemanly.

"Good luck to you!"

After saying that, Jiang Beifeng tactfully made his exit.

Lu Wu watched him leave, then immediately sprang into action, heading straight for team 003's resting room.

Meanwhile, after leaving team 042's resting room, Jiang Beifeng headed to team 001's resting room.

Upon seeing Jiang Beifeng come in, the members of team 001 stood up, and their captain, Zhuang Yan, immediately poured Jiang Beifeng a glass of water.

"Director Jiang, how did it go? Was it successful?"

"Consider it half a success."

Jiang Beifeng took the water and after a sip, continued, "He agreed to bet, but the stake has changed, both sides win or lose 50,000 points."

Hearing this, team 001 sharply inhaled.

"He sure has a big appetite, but these 50,000 points? Can he even come up with that much?"

Jiang Beifeng smiled faintly, "I'm actually afraid he can come up with it. If he does, then I would be in a bit of a difficult situation."

Zhuang Yan noticed a blind spot. "But what if Jiangnan University steps in to cover the bet for him? After all, Jiangnan University seems to hold him in high regard.

They would probably cover it, right?"

As soon as these words came out, Jiang Beifeng couldn't help but laugh.

"That would be for the best!

If so, then I would have much more room to maneuver. After all, 50,000 points isn't a small sum, and Jiangnan University isn't Zhang Wentao's Jiangnan University.

For an Lu Wu who hasn't even enrolled, many in Jiangnan University would definitely have objections!"

While speaking, Jiang Beifeng's fingertips gently tapped on the glass, and in a moment, it seemed thousands of schemes were at the tips of his fingers, which soon returned to Jiang Beifeng's faint smile.

"Let's not talk about those distant issues for now. Lu Wu has already gone off to find teams 002 and 003. He must be confident he can win over those two teams if he had the audacity to accept this bet.

Let's see what impressive performance he can put on.

It's not often that I find someone interesting enough to bet with, and I certainly don't want victory to come too easily."

During his talk, Jiang Beifeng pushed up his glasses.

The raise of his head revealed the loneliness of a master who controls everything, earning the genuine admiration of team 001.

...

On the other side, in the resting room of team 003.

Almost at the same time Jiang Beifeng reached team 001's resting room, Lu Wu arrived at the Dark Horse Team's room, knocking on their door.

"Captain Lu? What's up?"

Sun Qing, team 003's captain, asked knowingly.

But Lu Wu was straightforward. "I'd like you to ensure a victory in your match against team 018."

"Oh?"

Sun Qing's mouth cornered up teasingly, "Am I to take it that you are pleading with me? If so, your attitude seems off..."

Sun Qing didn't finish his sentence when Lu Wu bluntly threw out three words.

"Blood Burning Explosion!"

At those words, Sun Qing was stunned.

"What did you say?"

Lu Wu expressionlessly uttered a series of attributes: "Iron Blade Mantis, Elite 2 Star, attributes Metal, Grass, weakness Fire, excels in close combat, primary offensive skill on the surface is Blade Strike, surface trump card being Iron Man Cutting, but in reality, the Iron Blade Mantis has another true trump card, it..."

The more Lu Wu spoke, the darker Sun Qing's face became, until he couldn't stand it anymore and hastily interrupted.

"Alright, no need to say more!

I know what needs to be done!"

Seeing that his goal had been achieved, Lu Wu's expressionless face finally relaxed into a friendly smile. "Thank you, I should be going now, and one more thing, there's an issue with your Summoned Beast in cultivation. If you trust me, come find me after the match, and I'll help you tune it for free."

After that, Lu Wu shook hands with Sun Qing, then turned and left straight for team 002's resting room.

Watching the striding Lu Wu leave, the entire resting room of team 003 fell into a silence as still as death.

After a long while, as the captain, Sun Qing was the first to speak in admiration, "I always thought Lu Wu's cultivation level was exaggerated, but I never realized it was truly so terrifying.

We've only seen our Summoned Beast a few times, without even a chance to closely observe, and yet surprisingly, in just those few encounters, he has precisely grasped the intricacies of our Summoned Beast, such insight is nothing short of terrifying!"

His teammate, though, was far from pleased.

"So what do we do next? Just be manipulated like this?"

"What do you mean 'what to do'? What else can we do?

Since he has detailed information on our Summoned Beast, naturally, we'll have to do whatever he says.

If we don't comply, and he ends up being eliminated and doesn't make it to the top eight, and leaks detailed information on our Summoned Beast, we will be in a very passive position."

Sun Qing shrugged his shoulders.

"But if he makes it into the top eight, won't we be very passive if we come across him in the finals?"

"It doesn't matter."

Sun Qing expressed complete fearlessness regarding his teammate's concern.

"Have you forgotten his choice when he faced us before?

If he had even the slightest confidence in defeating us, he wouldn't have surrendered and admitted defeat back then. So there's no need to take them too seriously, at least in this competition they pose no threat to us."

Having heard Sun Qing's reasoning, his teammates contemplated the situation and seemed to be reassured.

Although it was a sign of being looked down upon, regardless, 003 had been handled by Lu Wu.

Now all that was left was to take care of 002, and then Lu Wu's first round would be considered over.

Holding detailed information about the opponent's Summoned Beasts, Lu Wu felt confident that taking down 002 wouldn't be difficult.

However, the reality was not as Lu Wu had anticipated.

When Lu Wu found the 002 resting room and tried to replicate what had happened with 003, Captain Fang Bai of team 002 raised an eyebrow, "That's it?"

"What?"

Seeing the other person's expression and attitude, Lu Wu had a bad premonition.

It seemed like what should have been a sure thing was about to derail with team 002.

And indeed, that was the case.

"How should I put it, compared to team 001, you are indeed a bit more clever.

That guy only threatened me with what I saw as an utterly laughable bargaining chip, but you are different. The chip you brought out is substantial, very impressive, really impressive!"

Fang Bai clapped his hands, but his expression grew colder, "But as impressive as you are, you've also made me very angry.

The thing I hate the most is being threatened.

I could dismiss team 001's act as a monkey show with a laugh, but I can't look at yours the same way.

So, congratulations, you have successfully angered me.

I was planning on toying with team 018, but now I'm telling you, I'm letting go of this point with team 018!"

Lu Wu's face darkened, "Do you know what you're saying, what you're doing? Do you understand the consequences of your actions?"

"I know exactly what I'm doing, and you can now take your bargaining chip and scram.

I, Fang Bai, will not be threatened by anyone!"

With this resounding statement, the negotiations between Lu Wu and team 002 officially broke down.

Lu Wu walked out of the 002 resting room and was confused for a long time, unable to figure out what had just happened. Why had his trump card been ineffective?

Could the people from team 002 really be that rash?

They didn't care about their own information being leaked just because of pride?

Besides, there was nothing excessive about his attitude.

Lu Wu knew beforehand that team 002 was arrogant, so he did not adopt a superior posture when dealing with them, but communicated in a negotiating tone.

Yet, they still became angry.

Their negotiation still collapsed, which was something that Lu Wu could not comprehend.

"No, no, no, something's off with team 002!"

Lu Wu carefully compared the micro-expressions on the faces of the team captains of teams 003 and 002 when he had laid his cards on the table.

Captain Sun Qing of team 003 was shocked, and so was Captain Fang Bai of team 002, but his shock seemed to be hiding something.

"Hiding three parts of smugness, seven parts of confidence, and ninety parts of scheming.

His shock is real; he is genuinely astonished by my ability to analyze Summoned Beasts, even deeply wary of this ability of mine.

But he still chose to burst out immediately.

This means that what I saw might not be the whole picture."

As he reached this conclusion, Lu Wu remembered that team 007's Su Lan had a second Summoned Beast, instantly clarifying the situation with team 002 for him.

"It's clear that he must have an even more powerful Summoned Beast.

That's why he isn't afraid of me exposing his secrets, he even wants to use me to reveal the attributes of his current Summoned Beast team.

That way, he can catch others by surprise!"

Realizing this, Lu Wu couldn't help but curse, "Damn, we Cultivation Masters are said to be cunning, but these bastards aren't any cleaner!"

Lu Wu was now in a tough spot.

Even though he had figured out team 002's situation, this did not change his current predicament.

Unless he could find the Summoned Beast team 002 was hiding, they would not be under his control.

And they were clearly on guard now, making it virtually impossible for Lu Wu to obtain their other Summoned Beast.

When it rains, it pours.

Lu Wu hadn't yet come up with a solution when the opponent for team 018's third match was announced to be team 002.

Team 002 was true to their word and chose to admit defeat before the match even started.

This gave team 018 a direct streak of 36 victories, placing them at the top of the score chart for Group A.

Seeing this outcome, Jiang Beifeng shook his head, "It seems I'm going to lock in victory ahead of time, how boring!"

Meanwhile, over with Lu Wu, he was at that moment initiating his backup plan.

# Chapter 149: 148 Annihilation (Subscribe please)

The brain, you see, needs to be used a lot.

Only by using it a lot can it become nimble.

If you leave it idle every day, it won't take long before you can't even speak clearly and can only stammer "ah ba ah ba."

Lu Wu's brain is still quite good.

After all, since he had traveled to this time, he had been using it continuously, learning for more than ten hours a day with the zeal of "learn till I die or I'll die studying."

So, Lu Wu's mind remained quite nimble, this supple energy also gradually transitioned from studying to daily life.

At some point, Lu Wu had started to think far ahead in everything he did.

This was also true in the high school league.

From the moment he decided to bet with Jiang Beifeng, no, actually, from the first day and his three consecutive defeats, Lu Wu had already considered the possibility of the current situation.

He knew that after his three consecutive defeats, manipulation of points by others was a possibility.

But at that time, there was no other option, as he was genuinely unable to win against those three teams.

Therefore, those three points, Lu Wu had to lose.

However, despite losing the three points, Lu Wu had already devised a way to handle point manipulation early on.

This was also one of the reasons why Lu Wu engaged in exploitation during the competition.

Thanks to Lu Wu's exploitation behaviors during the competition, most of the small teams in this tournament now had some connection with him.

This included the few teams in 018 that had not yet played.

Now, of the six teams in 018 that had not yet played, one was Lu Wu's own, and one was team 003; these need not be mentioned.

Both were settled, and these two points would definitely be lost for 018.

Later, if team 018 lost just one more match, their score would be on par with Lu Wu's, giving him a chance to enter the top four of Group A.

The remaining one point, Lu Wu decided to start with the other four teams.

Upon seeing team 002 concede defeat, Lu Wu immediately contacted the captains of those three teams that hadn't yet played against 018 and gathered them in his resting room.

Discussing relevant matters with them.

Jiang Beifeng was always keeping an eye on every move Lu Wu made.

As soon as Lu Wu gathered them, Jiang Beifeng knew immediately and guessed Lu Wu's plan.

"He is planning to use the power of those four teams to defeat you all!"

At this moment, Jiang Beifeng was in the 018 team's resting room, and upon hearing this, Zhou Kai, the captain of team 018, laughed, "He thinks too much; with those four replaceable teams, trying to take us down is utterly impossible!"

As a Seed Team, Zhou Kai had this confidence.

But Jiang Beifeng shook his head, "Don't be too sure, whether those four teams can take you down depends on the arrangement of your matches in the next two days.

Or rather, it depends on when you encounter teams 042 and 003. If you meet these two teams in the second game on the 18th and 19th, then no matter what Lu Wu does, he won't cause much trouble.

But if these two teams are grouped together, then you'll have a hard time.

Then you'll have to fight tough battles all day, and there's indeed a chance that something could go wrong."

After saying this, Jiang Beifeng paused, lowering his head in thought for a moment before raising it again, "Well then, to be absolutely safe, I will make team 001 lose two more matches to bring their points level with Lu Wu's team.

It's a preparation for the worst!

Moreover, I'll make contact with those four teams."

Jiang Beifeng talked big about how this bet didn't 'stimulate' him and how 'a master feels lonely.'

It seemed like he was looking forward to seeing Lu Wu bounce back.

But when he actually saw signs that Lu Wu might make a comeback, he suppressed them with an all-out effort.

The intensity was so great that even team 018 thought Jiang Beifeng was being overly aggressive.

But Jiang Beifeng didn't care what team 018 thought.

For him, the action had to be carried out to perfection, absolutely leaving no chance for Lu Wu to turn the tables.

He immediately contacted team 001 and, after Lu Wu had finished talking with the four captains, Jiang Beifeng went one by one to talk to the captains of those four teams.

It must be said, he was ruthlessly effective.

He intervened directly, telling the four teams that he wanted to sign them over to Jiangbei University.

Of course, at first, they were not willing.

They indicated they were as close as brothers to Lu Wuqing and could not betray Lu.

Jiang Beifeng expressed his understanding.

He appreciated their sentiment and then offered more money.

Once again, it was proven that increasing the monetary incentive was an unglamorous yet effective method.

Faced with such offers, three of the four teams thought their relationship with Lu wasn't that close after all and happily agreed to join Jiangbei University.

In the end, only team 038, which had already signed a guaranteed admission agreement with Jiangnan University and revered Lu immensely, wasn't poached.

But with three out of the four teams gone, Lu Wu's prospects were severely undermined!

Jiang Beifeng wanted to see what Lu Wu could still stir up after pulling out his last hope.

Having taken care of all that, Jiang Beifeng returned to Room 001, holding his forehead, "Sigh, helpless, my head hurts, is there any excitement left in this big gamble?

Can't Lu Wu give me any more surprises?"

What an act.

And no one could top that.

Over at Lu Wu's end.

Jiang Beifeng's sudden move disrupted Lu Wu's plans.

Originally Lu Wu and those four teams had agreed to go back to his house after the match to strategize how to take down Team 018, but after the match ended, only Team 038 arrived.

When Lu Wu saw only Team 038, and learned about Jiang Beifeng's deeds from them, his face looked very unpleasant.

Yet he said nothing, and quickly managed to regain his composure, allowing a smile to bloom on his face again.

Then Lu Wu led the somewhat restrained and bewildered Team 038 away from the field to his house.

On the 17th, Team 038 stayed overnight at Lu Wu's house.

Although it's unclear what happened that night, from the dark circles under the eyes of Lu Wu and Team 038 the next morning, it was evident that they had quite a night.

"It seems he hasn't given up yet, still struggling?

I've miscalculated a bit here, If I'd known his fighting spirit wasn't completely crushed, I would have sent a team to spy on him.

That way, I would be able to see his cards now."

Jiang Beifeng squinted at their dark circles.

Regretfully thinking, should he stir up some more trouble to suppress him further, or maybe get in touch with Team 003?

As this thought crossed his mind, Jiang Beifeng felt a twinge of guilt: "I've already done so much to undermine him, would pulling Team 003 into this be too heartless?

Should I show some mercy and leave them some hope and desires?"

Finally, with a slight pain in his conscience, Jiang Beifeng still pushed open the door of Team 003's lounge.

Well, clearly, in the face of 50,000 points, it didn't really matter to him whether or not he was being humane.

If possible, he still hoped to crush the hopes of Lu Wu with Team 003.

Showing mercy to the enemy is cruelty to oneself.

Jiang Beifeng certainly did not want to end up paying out 50,000 points from his own pocket, so he wouldn't leave Lu Wu any hope.

But, unfortunately, he was not successful this time.

Team 003 refused.

Jiang Beifeng thought it was the price, so he increased the offer.

Yet Team 003 indicated that it wasn't a matter of money; they just didn't respect Jiangbei University.

That left Jiang Beifeng with no choice but to leave dejectedly, rubbing his nose.

After turning down Jiang Beifeng and sending him away, Team 003 immediately notified Lu Wu, pledging their loyalty.

It wasn't that Team 003 was particularly loyal to Lu Wu.

They had no real loyalty to him.

They just thought that Lu Wu was almost certainly out of the top eight, probably feeling explosive, and if they were to kick him while he was down, Lu Wu might very well turn his hatred towards them.

Then, all the little secrets of their Summoned Beasts would be exposed, which they did not want to see as they were still aiming for the championship, so they firmly took Lu Wu's side.

Not only standing with Lu Wu, but also flattering him, hoping to make him happy and see them as good people.

Although this was somewhat demeaning, for the sake of the competition and the championship, being a little humble was not shameful.

On Lu Wu's end, after ending the call where Team 003 pledged loyalty, his expression was dark as the bottom of a pot, he couldn't help but curse out loud: "That guy is really no good.

Looking all decent, but striking so viciously.

He pushes to this extent and still isn't satisfied, continuing on, utterly ruthless."

This was the first time Lu Wu had encountered such a tenacious and vicious opponent.

Someone who, if given ten percent effort, would borrow ninety percent more to inflict a hundred percent damage, mercilessly leaving no chance for recovery, cornering Lu Wu completely.

And it wasn't just Jiang Beifeng who was vicious; God seemed even more ruthless than Jiang Beifeng, not sparing any sympathy for this young Lu Wu.

On the 18th, in his first match of the day, Lu Wu faced Team 018.

The opposing team didn't even show their faces, directly choosing to concede.

And quickly, Team 018's second match arrived, this time against Team 003.

Team 018 conceded again, achieving a back-to-back surrender.

And after Team 018's consecutive surrenders, their next match arrived quickly, and their opponent was none other than Team 038, who had stayed overnight at Lu Wu's house.

That is to say, Team 038 had to face an entirely unexhausted, full-strength Team 018.

Seeing this match information, Jiang Beifeng's lips curled up: "It looks like, our big gamble is about to be resolved today."

Simultaneously, in Team 038's lounge, Lu Wu also said to Team 038, "I'm counting on you for the upcoming match!"

# Chapter 150: 149 preliminary competition is over

```

The match between Team 018 and Team 038 began at Arena A28.

The match was set to start at four in the afternoon.

And before four, Lu Wu had brought Team 042 over to secure a spot.

After all, this match was of critical importance to Lu Wu, as it would determine whether he could avoid entering the top eight or not, so of course, he had to come and watch.

"Excuse me, may I sit here?"

Team 042 had just settled down when a very gentlemanly voice sounded from nearby.

At the same time, the figure of Jiang Beifeng appeared beside Lu Wu.

"Although I'd like to say no, I guess even if I did, you wouldn't leave, would you?"

Lu Wu made no attempt to hide the disdain on his face.

As for Jiang Beifeng, he didn't seem to take any offense and even said with a smile, "I didn't expect to have only met once and yet Xiao Lu understands me so well. It seems we have great compatibility. How about it, Xiao Lu? Once you enroll, why not become my student?"

Lu Wu raised an eyebrow, "Not to mention our bet isn't about enrolling at Jiangbei, even if it were, the outcome of who wins and who loses is still uncertain."

"I happen to think that the outcome is quite clear already."

Jiang Beifeng pushed up his glasses, naturally taking a seat beside Lu Wu, then continued, "If you still had four cards in hand, it would be hard to say, but unfortunately, I've taken three of your cards, leaving you with only the 038, which is a bad one at that. I don't believe you have any chance of winning."

When Jiang Beifeng said this, Lu Wu was still calm, but Lin Jianfeng became quite agitated and pointed at Jiang Beifeng's nose and cursed, "Despicable wretch, your actions are bribing and manipulating the competition, which is a serious violation.

I will report you to the Alliance!"

Upon hearing this, Jiang Beifeng burst into laughter, pushing up his glasses, "I am displeased with such an accusation.

How could you tarnish my reputation like that?

I am the Director of Admissions at Jiangbei University, and I have the authority to recruit students. Recruiting a few students during the competition is perfectly normal, how can that be considered bribing?

As for manipulating the competition, that's even more ludicrous. Those teams are all promised students from Jiangbei University. As a teacher at Jiangbei, helping them plan their tactical strategy for the match is only to be expected.

I'm acting within the bounds of reason, morality, and the law here; if you continue this way, I might have to sue you for defamation."

"You!"

Hearing Jiang Beifeng's speech, Lin Jianfeng was enraged, not expecting someone to be so shameless. But Jiang Beifeng placated with a smile, "Just kidding, just kidding, don't get mad. After all, we'll be from the same university soon, so there's no need to spoil the harmony over such a minor issue."

His attempt to pacify only made Lu Wu's eyebrows furrow even more.

"It looks like Director Jiang is quite confident of victory. Since you're so confident, how about we raise the stakes to 500,000 instead of just 50,000?"

At Lu Wu's bold suggestion, Jiang Beifeng actually seemed a bit daunted.

He was a little uncertain, wondering if this youngster really had some sort of confidence at this moment?

However, he quickly adjusted his attitude, responding with a smile, "No need, I'm not greedy. 50,000 is just fine."

By this time, the match at the arena had already started.

Both team captains were undergoing the handshake and talk phase, and seeing this, Lu Wu lost interest in Jiang Beifeng and instead focused his attention on the arena.

Meanwhile, down below the arena.

Team 018's captain, Zhou Kai, and Team 038's captain, Zhao Lun, shook hands.

Zhou Kai looked at the faint dark circles under Zhao Lun's eyes and sneered, "I heard you were last-minute cramming at Lu Wu's place last night?

How about it? Confident about beating us?"

"Yes!"

Team 038's captain, Zhao Lun, was clearly an honest person.

```

Xiao Lu had failed to notice the sarcastic tone, he nodded honestly and said quite seriously, "Mr. Lu has already taught us a surefire strategy, we will definitely win!"

Upon hearing this, Zhou Kai immediately found it amusing and teased, "Oh, a surefire strategy? Well, bring it on. I hope this so-called surefire strategy of yours can give me a little surprise!"

"I'll do my best!"

Seeing Zhao Lun nodding sincerely, looking a bit silly, Zhou Kai suddenly lost the interest to provoke and tease the fellow any further.

He finally understood why Director Jiang had failed to sway him; it turned out this guy was a simpleton.

Bullying such a simpleton didn't bring him much of a sense of achievement, better to finish him off quickly.

So, Zhou Kai waved his hand, ending the conversation phase.

The conversation over, the battle between the two teams swiftly began.

Team 018's first Summoned Beast was a Little Rock, whereas team 038 sent out a Young Leaf Grass.

Everyone was dumbfounded when Young Leaf Grass appeared.

"Are you kidding me? Using Young Leaf Grass as the vanguard? With its thin skin, isn't it supposed to be held back for later?"

While everyone was astonished, Zhao Lun scratched his head and shared their strategy.

"Mr. Lu said that team 018's Summoned Beasts will appear in the order of Little Rock, Fire Bird, and Goblin.

Since we don't match up to you in terms of strength, we can only try to win by exploiting attribute suppression; hence, our lineup will be Young Leaf Grass, Water Ball Turtle, Cave People."

Zhao Lun's revelation left the audience even more flabbergasted.

Did he just spill their entire strategy?

Was he playing dumb or really dumb?

Team 018 was unsure if Zhao Lun was acting or not, but one thing they did know was that the opponent's disclosed order of Summoned Beasts was indeed their planned order, which made team 018 somewhat panicked.

Could it be that Lu Wu had truly seen through them?

Team 018's captain, Zhou Kai, had good mental resilience and quickly adjusted his mindset.

"So what if he saw through it? In the face of absolute power, all strategies are a joke. Besides, now that he's revealed their order, how could I possibly stick to our original plan?

Forget it, let's fight first!"

At his command, the battle between Little Rock and Young Leaf Grass on the arena officially commenced.

However, the battle was even more puzzling once it started.

Little Rock's side was fine; it attacked Young Leaf Grass earnestly, following its master's orders.

But the situation with the Young Leaf Grass was different.

This little creature, not even a meter tall, made up of six leaves in a humanoid shape, started dashing around the arena as soon as the battle began, using its speed advantage to distance itself from the opponent, all the while scattering seeds as it ran.

These seeds quickly took root and sprouted, and soon, bunches of vibrant green grass grew.

The audience was confused.

Wasn't team 038's purpose in deploying Young Leaf Grass to use attribute suppression to take down Little Rock?

What was the point of this frenzied grass planting?

But they quickly understood; as Young Leaf Grass continued planting, the arena soon turned into a sea of green.

And with the arena vastly green, Young Leaf Grass could just squat in any patch of grass and effectively disappear, leaving Little Rock, which had been in hot pursuit, completely confounded.

Where's the grass?

Where did that blade of grass just now go?

```

"Keep guard, watch out for sneak attacks!"

Now Zhou Kai and his team finally understood, Young Leaf Grass was setting up the battlefield.

With the terrain arranged like this, Young Leaf Grass instantly held a geographical advantage. If it launched a sneak attack now, it had a chance to defeat Little Rock.

Team 018 became cautious for the first time.

However, as Little Rock remained on guard, Young Leaf Grass showed no sign of rearing its head.

The silence all around carried a sense of hiding till the end of time, leaving Team 018 utterly confused. What kind of tactic was this?

"It's wrong, the grass is expanding, it's trying to spread all over the arena, stop it quickly!"

After a standoff for a few minutes, Team 018 finally realized that something was amiss.

But by the time they wanted to stop it, it was too late, and they were at a loss for what to do; they didn't even know where Young Leaf Grass was.

In desperation, Team 018 had no choice but to make Little Rock clear the grass.

But Little Rock was a Rock Type Summoned Beast without a grass-cutting skill. It could only try to uproot it by force, but clearly, its pace couldn't keep up with the grass planting. Moreover, every time Little Rock pulled up grass, Young Leaf Grass would sneakily activate its skill to attack it.

After several attempts, Little Rock became exhausted without any effective result, completely toyed with by Young Leaf Grass.

"Damn!"

Unable to restrain himself, Zhou Kai let out his exasperation. He knew that his side had lost this battle.

It was a particularly humiliating defeat, not because their Summoned Beasts were inferior, but because on paper, Little Rock was actually much stronger than Young Leaf Grass. Even with attribute suppression, Little Rock could have won a head-on battle.

But the problem was that the opponent didn't engage in direct combat at all.

Now, with this situation, the opponent firmly held the initiative, and it was nearly impossible for Little Rock to win.

Indeed, in the end, with no other options, Zhou Kai could only allow Little Rock to roll around wildly in hopes of hitting Young Leaf Grass by chance with area damage.

As a result, Little Rock spent all its energy in a burst of effort without causing substantial damage to either Young Leaf Grass or the grass. Finally, exhausted, it was easily knocked out of the ring by Young Leaf Grass.

"We won!"

Young Leaf Grass secured the first victory with absolute superiority.

Team 038 and those on their side couldn't help but cheer.

Even Jiang Beifeng in the audience couldn't help but praise the tactic.

"This strategy is impressive! To come up with such a tactic overnight, you truly live up to the title of Genius Cultivator.

Quite impressive!"

The victory of Young Leaf Grass somewhat uplifted Lu Wu's spirits, and he was finally willing to engage Jiang Beifeng.

"You seem not to be panicking at all?"

"What's there to panic about? The strength of Team 018 is clear for all to see. Losing the first match doesn't mean much, and besides, in the second match, Team 018 will quickly..."

Jiang Beifeng was cut off by Lu Wu before he could finish.

"Are you about to say, 'Team 018 will quickly make a comeback in the second match'?

With the terrain Young Leaf Grass has created, the start of the second match will become a death trap for them?"

"Hm?"

Jiang Beifeng was startled, but he quickly realized the severity of the situation, his expression turning grave.

"You've already planned this far?

With the current situation, Team 018 has no choice but to use Fire Bird in the second match and burn up all the grass Young Leaf Grass has planted!"

"Yes, this environment is too favorable for Young Leaf Grass. If Team 018 doesn't send out Fire Bird, Goblin fighting Young Leaf Grass in this environment might not win, and even if he could win, Water Ball Turtle could take out Goblin in the next match."

"To protect Goblin from being easily defeated, Team 018 can only choose Fire Bird!

And this is exactly what you've been hoping for?"

Jiang Beifeng pushed up his glasses and quickly pinpointed the issue: "There's something wrong with that patch of grass!"

Lu Wu didn't keep them in suspense this time.

"Correct. While Young Leaf Grass was growing that patch, it used the Enchanting Fragrance Skill in addition to its planting skill.

Right now, the Enchanting Fragrance locked in the grass is harmless, but once it's set on fire, the Enchanting Fragrance will burst out with the thick smoke, covering the entire arena, leaving Fire Bird with no place to hide."

Now that Lu Wu had come clean, Jiang Beifeng fully understood the situation: "So, you're saying, from the moment that patch of grass was sown, the outcome was already decided.

It doesn't matter whether Fire Bird comes out as the second or third, the result will be the same.

If it's the second, it'll be exchanged with Young Leaf Grass, then Water Ball Turtle and Cave People will have the advantage of a two-on-one vehicle wheel battle against Goblin, or Water Ball Turtle goes first to wear Goblin down. Either way, Goblin will be taken out.

If Fire Bird is third, it can only exchange with Water Ball Turtle, and maybe Team 038 can win even more easily."

"Completely correct!"

Lu Wu found that talking to someone smart was refreshing – there was no need for explanations, as the other person understood everything with just a hint.

Of course, if Jiang Beifeng could, he would prefer not to understand because this was anything but pleasant.

"It seems we'll have to continue our bet!

Fine then, let's meet the day after tomorrow and hope you can still put on such a splendid show."

After saying so, Jiang Beifeng stood up and left.

He didn't glance back at the arena again, because he knew the upcoming matches were unnecessary to watch.

And indeed, it was as so.

The subsequent matches unfolded as Lu Wu and the others had said.

In the second round, Fire Bird took the stage and immediately set fire to the grass.

The ensuing thick smoke billowed, and because the arena was specially protected, the smoke couldn't escape, covering the entire arena. Fire Bird got directly affected by Enchanting Fragrance, following Young Leaf Grass in elimination.

Then, Team 018's Goblin faced Team 038's Water Ball Turtle.

They fought fiercely. To be fair, Team 018's Goblin was strong, but it was faced with a tough opponent with high Defense.

Even more fatally, the opponent knew exactly where Goblin's Weakness was.

After half an hour of exhausting combat, Goblin barely managed to defeat Water Ball Turtle, only for Cave People to enter, target the Weakness, and swiftly eliminate Goblin.

Thus, Team 018 suffered a confining defeat to Team 038.

With this defeat, Team 018 had lost three matches in a row, tying Lu Wu and his team in points, although Team 001 also lost two matches the next day.

The final points for the preliminaries of Group A were announced.

Teams 002 and 003 were tied for first place with 41 points.

Teams 001, 018, and 042 were tied for second with 39 points.

Now, Lu Wu was only one match against Team 001 away from the top eight, as well as 50,000 points.

```

# Chapter 151: 150 White Bone Wild Boars

Jiang Beifeng left the field looking quite suave.

But it didn't take long for his expression to sour.

"Damn, how can this happen? I took such a risk to this extent, and Lu Wu still won?"

Jiang Beifeng felt as though the whole world was against him!

"This is a bit too thrilling!

No, I absolutely can't let it get this stimulating; otherwise, my little heart can't take it!"

It took Jiang Beifeng a while to adjust his mindset, and then he immediately summoned Team 001.

When Jiang Beifeng found Team 001,

the match between 018 and 038 had already ended.

Team 001 was already aware of the results and knew Jiang Beifeng's mood probably wasn't great, so they comforted him right away.

"Teacher Jiang, you did everything you could and should have done. This result is not your fault—it's because 018 was too incompetent.

To think they had such a good hand and still managed to lose.

They let down your expectations!"

Jiang Beifeng waved his hand, "No, we can't blame 018 entirely; ultimately, it's my fault.

I focused on the wrong things.

If I hadn't spent my energy on trying to trip up Lu Wu and instead on preparing for the match, this result wouldn't have happened."

"This incident is a lesson for me, as well as for all of you.

Remember, underhanded tactics are ultimately crooked paths; what truly decides everything is the game itself!

It's your own strength!"

It was unclear whether Jiang Beifeng had truly come to a realization or was just saying platitudes.

But regardless, he spoke quite well in the moment.

At least as Jiang Beifeng's diehard fans, Team 001 felt their Teacher Jiang had gained a lot of insight.

Except for Team 042, who just didn't get it.

Such a great Teacher Jiang offered them such good terms, and they refused and even caused so much trouble, clearly unappreciative.

Thinking this, Team 001 became righteously indignant, "Don't worry, Teacher Jiang; Team 042's journey ends here. We will personally take action.

You know our strength; we will definitely keep them out of the top eight."

"I called you over to talk about this. To ensure we leave nothing to chance, before you battle Team 042, follow me.

I will lead you to thoroughly study Team 042.

No matter what, we cannot let today's events repeat!"

Jiang Beifeng did not want to lose, as losing meant losing 50,000 points.

So despite his utmost confidence in Team 001, having just been bitten by a snake, his nature demanded that he give his all.

For their part, Team 001 didn't see the necessity.

But on second thought, receiving personal guidance from Teacher Jiang Beifeng didn't seem so bad.

Thus, not long after the match with 018, Team 001 and Jiang Beifeng were closely analyzing Lu Wu's team together.

They pulled up all of Lu Wu's matches in the league and studied them closely.

After a full day of analysis, they finally had some results, and Jiang Beifeng immediately summarized them.

"From their matches and combining all other information, their strength truly doesn't compare to yours.

All three of their summoned beasts are at Elite One Star, while your overall team is at two stars, and Zhuang Yan's Big Rock is even close to three stars.

In terms of strength, they are absolutely crushed."

"So, if they want to defeat you, the first thing they must avoid is direct confrontation!

They won't engage directly since they know they can't win.

And from the battle between 038 and 018, Lu Wu seems quite skilled at strategizing and exploiting weaknesses, so I suspect they'll prepare a set of tactics specifically tailored for you.

Next, we need to focus our research on—if we were in Lu Wu's shoes, from what angle would they strategize..."

With this as the start, Jiang Beifeng and Team 001 commenced an all-around study.

Meanwhile, over at Lu Wu's side.

He was busy as well.

Jiang Beifeng was tense about the upcoming battle, and Lu Wu was no exception, as he too was preparing for the battle to come.

But regarding the upcoming battle with 001, Lu Wu had a completely different opinion from Jiang Beifeng.

"The attributes of the opponent's summoned beast, I've seen them all.

Very powerful, and except for the last Huangmu People, I don't have any methods to counter the opponent's attributes on my side.

Plus, with their absolute power to crush, this battle will be difficult to win.

So, I must prepare well."

"However, due to the difficulty and the time pressure, the first thing I've ruled out among all aspects of preparation is strategic layout.

Although important, with unfavorable conditions I also don't have the time to deal with that.

What I can do now is to use the limited time to improve the power of the summoned beasts as much as possible so that my side can have the power to take on the opponent directly."

Saying this, Lu Wu started his routine of boiling soup again.

However, this time, the soup Lu Wu was making was not for Little Skeleton, but for the three pigs of Little Skeleton.

In the past few days, the materials that Lu Wu had spent 50,000 points on had arrived.

The soup could be started.

As long as this pot of soup is well-prepared, and Little Skeleton's three pigs can advance to Elite Level, then Lu Wu would possess the strength to confront, or even overpower, the opponent.

Quickly, Lu Wu prepared an unprecedentedly large pot of soup.

After it was ready, Lu Wu let Little Skeleton drive the three pigs into the pot of soup.

Previously, it had always been Little Skeleton who went in for the soup, so sending others in for the first time felt quite novel to it.

Additionally, it had some thoughts about this large pot of soup.

It knew that every time it went into the soup it got stronger, so much so that now it felt a compulsive urge to dive into any soup it saw, which startled Lu Wu.

"You are not allowed to go in, or you can forget about getting a mobile phone!"

Although Lu Wu was curious about what would happen if Little Skeleton and the pigs were boiled together, he wouldn't dare to try it recklessly in case something unfortunate occurred, leaving nowhere for him to cry.

So, under uncertain circumstances, Lu Wu would never boil Little Skeleton and the pigs together.

If he really were to do it, it wouldn't be his own Little Skeleton.

Lu Wu initially wanted Little Skeleton to keep an eye on the three pigs, but worried that the little fellow might sneak in while he was away, so he had no choice but to keep it by his side.

With it by his side, he went to administer another injection to the goblin at Lin Jianying's home.

This was already the eighth injection Lu Wu had given the goblin since the competition began, and logically, the goblin should have shown some changes by now, but after eight injections, it still hadn't shown any signs of activity.

Only its attribute quality had been raised from Ordinary to Bronze, with no other changes observed.

Lu Wu knew it wasn't that his injections weren't powerful.

It wasn't that the goblin wasn't performing well, but rather it lacked a catalyst.

Just one catalyst, and this goblin could undergo a transformation.

"If it could complete the transformation before the contest that would be best, but if not, I hope the match against 001 can put some pressure on this little guy and see if it can transform under that pressure."

After giving the goblin this injection, Lu Wu took Little Skeleton back to the pot of soup.

When Lu Wu arrived, the boiling of the three pigs' soup at the big pot was basically complete.

On a sweeping glance by Lu Wu, the attributes of the three pigs appeared in front of him.

...

Name: White Bone Wild Boar

Power: 0 stars (Elite)

Attribute: Undead, Skeleton

Quality: Black Iron (Upgraded)

State: Satisfied (The soup is really tasty)

Weakness: Light, Flames

Skills: Wild Boar Charge (Master), Bone Armor (Master), Bone Shooting (Master), Defensive Stance (Master)

Description: A pseudo-Elite summoned beast without evolution, its strength is concentrated above ordinary summoned beasts, but it is still inferior to Elite-level summoned beasts.

...

# Chapter 152: 151 The Cost of Tempering

Time passed amid the tense preparations of both Lu Wu and Jiang Beifeng.

May 19th arrived quickly.

After the preliminaries ended, since three teams in Group A had the same score, they had to play an additional match.

This match was to decide which two teams among squads 001, 018, and 042 would enter the top four of Group A and the top eight of the league.

Due to team 001 being a trump team, the match garnered a lot of attention.

Early in the morning, the audience stands and the live streaming rooms were already packed with people.

It could be said that it was the most highly anticipated match of the league so far.

Before the match even started, the number of people in the streaming room had skyrocketed directly to six million, which excited Lu Wu immensely.

With such high viewership, the advertising effect would definitely be superb!

"Great, today, not to mention anything else, just the advertising fees should net a hefty sum."

Lu Wu was excited and so was Jiang Beifeng on the other side.

Jiang Beifeng was a very smart, cautious, and confident person.

Although team 038 unexpectedly defeated team 018, giving Lu Wu who was supposed to be eliminated in the preliminaries a chance to make it to the finals, thwarting his plan to target Lu Wu, he was still confident about today's competition.

For today's battle, he had been researching for two days.

He had hypothesized all sorts of possibilities.

He had anticipated every method Lu Wu could think of.

Any potential strategies, this side had already figured out and prepared accordingly.

Under such preparedness and possessing absolute power, Jiang Beifeng had no reason not to be confident!

If he wasn't confident even under these circumstances, how insecure would Jiang Beifeng have to be?

Hence, Lu Wu was sure to lose today!

That was a declaration from Jiang Beifeng, and no one could change this outcome.

Meanwhile, in another corner of the stands, squad 044 sat once again.

Li Kui stretched out his legs and chewed on a toothpick, quipping while waiting for the match to start, "I actually thought 042 had a solid chance of making it into the top eight, but who knew this sort of thing would happen.

This place in Jiangnan Province really is a small temple with big gusts of wind."

Zhang San, sitting next to him, adjusted his glasses, "The backstory here is probably quite complex, possibly involving issues between Jiangnan and Jiangbei. 042 just had bad luck and got caught in the crossfire.

Otherwise, this sort of thing wouldn't have happened."

Li Kui smirked, "Seems that women are just women..."

"Shut up!"

Wang Jun's face darkened as he sharply interrupted Li Kui, "If you can't keep your mouth shut, I don't mind sewing it up for you."

Li Kui instinctively covered his mouth, repeatedly apologizing.

"Boss, don't be angry, I just talk too much without thinking!"

To defuse the tense atmosphere, Zhang San quickly changed the topic, "Captain, do you think 042 can make it through this round?"

"Very unlikely!"

Zhang San tried to lighten the mood. Wang Jun didn't dwell on Li Kui's comment and refocused on the game, "Team 001 is not weak, 042 virtually has no chance to beat their opponent in terms of pure strength.

The only chance is tactics!

And the battle between 018 and 038 has already made team 001 wary, so without any surprises, 001 will also be prepared in this aspect.

That means, 042 needs to outplay them tactically while they are prepared and aware of 042's strategy, what do you think the odds of 042 winning are?

Virtually zero!"

Making that judgment, Wang Jun fell silent.

From what he knew, the biggest problem for Lu Wu was probably not whether he would win this match, but what would happen after this match.

Now, Lu Wu seemed to already be caught up in the conflict between Jiangnan and Jiangbei.

This wasn't good for Lu Wu.

'It's a shame, Jingcheng University won't interfere in this, otherwise, they should consider taking Lu Wu and getting him out of this whirlpool.

A talent like him shouldn't be mired in such a quagmire.'

Wang Jun felt conflicted.

Meanwhile, Hengheng Monster was even more conflicted.

Sitting in the stands at the moment, she alternated between puffing out her chest proudly like a little rooster and gritting her teeth in annoyance.

This was because after the preliminaries ended yesterday, their team in Group B had successfully made it to the top four and into the top eight.

Comparing this achievement to Lu Wu's side, Hengheng Monster felt she had brilliantly outperformed Lu Wu.

Nowadays, Lu Wu had been targeted by team 001 and seemed hardly likely to hope for the top eight, certifying her win.

Yet, when she thought that Lu Wu might not make it to the top eight, her inability to personally crush Lu Wu caused her to lose some excitement and feel a bit regretful, making her somewhat irritated when looking at team 001.

This girl silently resolved.

If Lu Wu failed to make it into the top eight, she would defeat 018 and make them cry as a way to avenge Lu Wu.

As for 001? Sorry, she felt she probably couldn't handle it.

Hmm, Lu Wu was even less likely to handle it!

Now on this particular platform, apart from the brainless fan squad of Lu Wu which includes member 038, basically, no one believed that Lu Wu could take down team 001.

In this battle, losing was almost a consensus among 99% of the audience here and in the live streaming room there.

Not only the audience, but even some others didn't think that Lu Wu could win this battle.

Jiangnan University, the Principal's Office.

Just as the match was about to begin, the office door was violently pushed open, Zhao Kai Ming charged in, and as soon as he entered, he pointed at Zhang Wentao's nose and cursed, "Zhang Wentao, are you dead or what?

People are bullying you to this extent, yet you're hiding here? Acting like a shrinking turtle, huh!

In my opinion, Jiangnan University is declining day by day because you are the principal!

Can you even remain a principal? If not, get lost and let someone else take over!"

The cursing was horribly unpleasant.

However, the cursed Zhang Wentao didn't get angry but instead stood up and poured a cup of tea for Zhao Kai Ming. "Have some tea, calm down. At your age, why so fiery?"

But Zhao Kai Ming refused to accept the gesture, sweeping the tea aside: "Drink tea, what the hell tea!

Old Zhang, you better handle that Jiang guy for me right now!

Daring to act up on our turf, what the hell!"

"Handle? How to handle? What excuse do we have to take action against him?"

"Excuse? What do you mean by excuse? He's blatantly manipulating the match, do we need an excuse to take action?"

"But he has an excuse, if you want to take action against him for manipulating the match, you need to consider the evidence, right? Even if the evidence is sufficient, aren't you supposed to follow the proper procedures?

Without these, how can you take action against him?"

Zhang Wentao spread his hands, utterly helpless.

Upon hearing this, Zhao Kai Ming was even more furious: "You can't even handle an admissions office director, and yet you call yourself the Jiangnan University Principal, and the head of the Fucheng Cultivation Center."

"Are you blaming me now?" Zhang Wentao felt resentful: "If it weren't for your messing around, causing such a big scene that we can't cover it up, owing Jiangbei University such a huge amount of money, would I be such a pathetic principal?

Now they constantly shove the IOU in my face demanding repayment, and I, the esteemed Principal of Jiangnan University and head of the Cultivation Center, am being bullied like a grandson.

Fine, you think you're capable? You come here and be the principal!"

Once Zhang Wentao exploded, Zhao Kai Ming's momentum was instantly suppressed, but he still muttered, "I know you have it tough, but even in difficulty, can't you secure just treatment for your own students?

If you had intervened earlier, it wouldn't have come to this."

Actually, Zhao Kai Ming was right; Zhang Wentao was partially responsible.

He had indeed been too lenient, mainly because Lu Wu's recent performance had greatly enhanced his perception of Lu Wu. In his eyes, Lu Wu was no longer just a normal student.

He even considered Lu Wu as the hope for revitalizing Jiangnan, so he thought it was necessary to let Lu Wu experience some pressure and test him.

Without any ability to withstand pressure, how could Lu Wu shoulder the responsibility of revitalizing Jiangnan?

As for Zhao Kai Ming's words, Zhang Wentao thought they were an overreaction.

He had everything under control.

"What step has it come to now? Where are we even at? If Xiao Lu loses, at most he'll just miss out on the top eight, that's not a big deal, right?

Actually, this is good for Xiao Lu, at most he'll lose some advertising deals, and I'll compensate him for that!"

Zhao Kai Ming was stunned, "You don't know?"

"Know what?"

"I just spoke to Xiao Lu on the phone, he told me he made a bet with that Jiang guy, if he loses this match, he will not only miss the top eight, but he'll also lose 55,000 points!"

"What?" Zhang Wentao was dumbfounded when he heard this.

The 55,000 points bet was a private wager between Lu Wu and Jiang Beifeng, an agreement kept unpublicized by both, so Zhang Wentao was genuinely unaware of this.

Seeing Zhang Wentao's ignorance, Zhao Kai Ming quickly relayed the intelligence he had just received.

Actually, Zhao Kai Ming only knew because Lu Wu was cunning enough to deliberately inform him, showing loyalty to get some benefits while also emphasizing how Jiang Beifeng had tried to poach him and the conditions offered for that.

He explained the reasons for the bet as well.

Once Zhang Wentao roughly understood the situation, his face turned completely dark.

He had guessed that Jiang Beifeng had attempted to recruit Lu Wu, but he hadn't anticipated the generous terms offered by Jiang Beifeng, nor the existence of such a hefty bet.

"So, what do you suggest we do now? If Xiao Lu loses later, who's going to cover these 50,000 points?"

This question directly buzzed Zhang Wentao's head.

Being a principal already burdened by debt issues made him headache-prone at any mention of money.

But as painful as it was, the incident had occurred, and he had to deal with it.

Thus, Zhang Wentao, clutching his head and grinding his teeth, responded to Zhao Kai Ming: "It depends on Xiao Lu; with Jiangbei University offering such terms, if he decides to go to Jiangbei after the competition, then this money has nothing to do with us.

If he decides to stay, then I'll pay the money, even if I have to sell everything I own!"

At this moment, Zhang Wentao wished he could slap himself.

He felt his brain must have been damaged to think of toughening up Lu Wu, given the steep cost of this ordeal.

# Chapter 153: 152 Unfathomable Lu Wu

Arena 001.

The match that millions had focused on started at 9 AM on the 19th.

However, there was a step before the match started—drawing lots.

Determining whom would face whom in the first round, and then the second, mapping out the order of the supplemental matches in one go.

The order of the matches was crucial.

It was the same for both Lu Wu's and Jiang Beifeng's sides.

And amid their anticipation, the results came out quickly.

Today's first match would be 018 versus 001, the second match was 001 versus 042, and the third would be 018 versus 042!

Seeing this order of matches, Jiang Beifeng's lips curled up immediately.

"It seems, luck is always in sync with me!" he said.

This was almost the perfect result Jiang Beifeng could have hoped for.

Upon seeing this order, he was already certain of today's process and outcome.

001 would concede the first match, then utterly defeat 042 in the second, and in the third, 018 would wrap it up and take 042 down.

It was a perfect arrangement.

"Ah, everything is arranged for the best. It seems that today the outcome of that big gamble will emerge!"

Jiang Beifeng was particularly pleased, his lips curved into an uncontrollable smile.

Under Jiang Beifeng's eager anticipation, the first match of the supplemental battles promptly started at 9:00, yet it also ended at 9:01.

Everything proceeded exactly according to Jiang Beifeng's script—the competitors came onto the stage for the first match, and 001 conceded!

Except for a small portion of people who were baffled, most were not surprised.

They knew that the real contest would start in the second match.

And they didn't have to wait long for this second match.

The first hadn't brought any action, so the second was quickly arranged.

At 9:30 AM, beneath Arena 001,

the leaders of both parties appeared. Lu Wu, representing Team 042, shook hands with Zhuang Yan, the captain of Team 001.

As they shook hands, before Zhuang Yan could even speak, Lu Wu took the initiative.

"Have you ever considered such an issue?" he asked.

"What issue?" Zhuang Yan replied.

Lu Wu's lips quirked up: "You just lost the first match to 018, and if you lose this one, the supplemental matches will be over, and you'll be completely out of the top eight."

Zhuang Yan, full of disdain, said, "Such an impossible event; do you think I need to contemplate it?"

Lu Wu squinted his eyes. "Whether you contemplate it is not the point; the point is what you're going to do about it afterward.

Also, if I am free, let's chat a bit more, gratis.

You must have been researching what tactics I might use lately, right? Now, I can tell you very responsibly and sincerely that I didn't prepare any tactics to deal with you.

I'll go head-to-head, beat you outright.

Oh, your first entrant is the Rock Python, right?

Finally, one more piece of information for you. My first entrant is the goblin!"

With that, Lu Wu raised his hand to indicate the conversation was over.

Zhuang Yan, however, wasn't taken aback by Lu Wu's words, and certainly, he didn't believe that Lu Wu would literally go head-to-head with him.

Team 042 didn't have the power for that; this was clearly a tactic by Lu Wu.

And Teacher Jiang had already spoken about Lu Wu's tactics.

A Cultivation Master like Lu Wu, cunning and sly, wouldn't let you see through his tactics easily.

He would do everything possible to make you anxious, then slowly lead you on.

In such situations, they didn't need to pay heed, only needed to play steadily, without giving him any chance; all Lu Wu's schemes and stratagems would turn out to be paper tigers.

Thus, Zhuang Yan wasn't affected by Lu Wu at all, adhering strictly to their original plan.

After simultaneously raising their hands to end the conversation, both sides sent out their first Summoned Beast.

On Team 001's side was the Rock Python, and on Team 042's, a goblin.

This was quite surprising; both Team 001's Rock Python and Team 042's goblin had been predicted by Lu Wu during the conversation phase.

Why, despite Lu Wu having forecasted that 001 would send out Rock Python, did 001 still choose to stick with it without switching?

Was it because of absolute confidence in their own power?

While the majority of the audience was baffled, Jiang Beifeng narrowed his eyes below the stage.

He was particularly curious about the expression on Lu Wu's face down there, which probably wasn't too pretty.

After all, Lu Wu's words on the stage were clearly strategizing, hoping to influence Team 001 to alter their Summoned Beast's battle order.

But now, Team 001 remained unmoved, completely following their own pace, making things very difficult for Lu Wu.

"He must have guessed the tactic that 001 is going to use next by now; it's the most disadvantageous tactic for him. His chances of winning are now almost zero.

However, given his character, he probably won't despair now.

He wouldn't give up, and might even have a surprise for me, which could very well be related to that goblin."

Thinking this, Jiang Beifeng's curiosity led him to focus his gaze on the goblin.

While scrutinizing the goblin, he began pondering what tactics he would use if he were starting with a goblin.

Meanwhile, as he was thinking, the battle had already begun on the platform.

From the start, the Rock Python launched a vigorous attack, while the goblin from Team 042 chose to Dodge.

"Just like the battle with Team 038, the same tactics. But this goblin doesn't have any 'Grass Planting' skills, so what's its evasion for?

Just because it can't win and wants to flee?"

Jiang Beifeng thought not.

He believed that with Lu Wu's wisdom, since he had sent out the goblin first, there absolutely had to be a plan.

It couldn't just be about sending it out to take hits.

"There must be a plan, there must be a scheme, but where is it exactly?"

Jiang Beifeng used his clever mind to observe the battle, gather intelligence, and continuously deduce the purpose behind Lu Wu sending out the goblin.

On Lu Wu's side,

he too was watching the performance of the goblin closely.

As for sending out the goblin with deep forethought and strategic calculations?

Sorry, there was none!

In this match, the goblin wasn't important at all; it was an expendable entity.

He sent out the goblin merely to wear down the opponent; at most, Lu Wu was hoping that the goblin could find that one opportunity during the battle.

If it could find that opportunity and convert the eight needles into power, that would be best.

If it couldn't find the opportunity, then just wearing down the opponent would suffice.

But Jiang Beifeng didn't think so, nor did Wang Jun from Team 044.

They both felt that with Lu Wu's intelligence, there definitely had to be a scheme.

Absolutely.

So, the two of them widened their eyes, frantically thinking.

However, unable to come up with anything regardless of the angle they considered, they felt that the goblin was merely meant to wear down the Rock Python.

But could Lu Wu really send out a goblin just for that simple reason?

That clearly wasn't likely.

Lu Wu must have had a plan; they just couldn't see it, must have missed the key point.

So, they studied even harder.

After five minutes of such struggling, they were forced to give up one after another.

"Forget it, we can't figure it out. Lu Wu really lives up to his reputation as a Genius Cultivator; his machinations are inscrutable. Let's just wait for him to reveal his hand!"

And they ended up waiting for ten more minutes…

# Chapter 154: 152 Tuantuan two stars

001 The arena over here.

The battle between the Rock Python and the goblin was in full swing.

As the attacking side, the Rock Python's attacks were incredibly fierce, biting, tail sweeping, simple yet terrifying in power and full of momentum, under which the goblin was completely overwhelmed.

There was no helping it, the difference in power between the two was enormous.

What's more deadly was, the Rock Python belonged to the rock type, with extremely strong physical defense, thoroughly restraining the goblin in all aspects.

Even if the goblin were to attack, its minimal attack power could hardly break through the Rock Python's defense.

So, during the battle, the goblin was basically dodging the entire time.

Jumping left and right, bouncing up and down, it was literally running for its life,

terrified to even be grazed or touched by the Rock Python.

With the Rock Python's attack power, if the goblin were to be hit by even one tail swipe, it would be pretty much done for.

Under these circumstances, anyone with eyes could see that the goblin was done for, simply handed over for nothing.

But Jiang Beifeng and Wang Jun wouldn't believe it.

They felt that Lu Wu must have some kind of trick up his sleeve; he wouldn't just send the goblin out to be slaughtered without a plan.

This feeling persisted until the goblin was desperately holding on for about fifteen minutes and finally made a misstep in its positioning, getting swept off the arena, concluding this first battle.

But just like this!

Even though it had come to this, Jiang Beifeng and Wang Jun still felt that there might be more to it.

Lu Wu must have thought it through; him sending out the goblin was surely for a reason.

The goblin might not have turned the battle around this time, but perhaps the trump card was held back for the next round.

So they observed even more closely for any traces the goblin might have left in the arena, but looking and looking, it seemed the goblin hadn't left much on the stage.

At most, some blood was spilled when it got hit at the end.

Could that blood be part of Lu Wu's plan?

Alright, at this point, even Jiang Beifeng and his group felt it was a bit far-fetched.

"It seems that's not likely; in this case, sending the goblin out probably meant it was really just a sacrifice.

But what does this mean, does he just not care anymore?"

Jiang Beifeng pondered more carefully, and although it didn't seem like Lu Wu's style, looking at the current situation, it appeared to be just that!

After all, he was considering it from Lu Wu's point of view.

From Lu Wu's perspective, the difficulty of breaking the situation was something that Jiang Beifeng was more aware of than anyone else.

In this scenario, it wasn't impossible for Lu Wu to have a mental breakdown and just give up entirely.

"Anyway, now 001 has already taken one round; this start is very good, just continue to play steadily, and Lu Wu definitely won't be able to make any waves!"

Meanwhile, on Lu Wu's side.

He watched the goblin being knocked down and was somewhat disappointed.

"Indeed, it still lacked a bit, the goblin didn't burst with potential!"

"I'm sorry!"

Lin Jianying's head bobbed down, terribly ashamed that he couldn't help Lu Wu in this important competition.

"It's okay, it's okay, don't feel pressured, it was anticipated. The goblin still lacks a bit of accumulation, not bursting this time and saving it for the finals might be even better.

After all, we've got this match in the bag."

Having said that, Lu Wu shifted his gaze to Tuantuan who was still drinking bubble tea in Dudu's arms.

He went over and lifted the little guy up.

"Still eating? No more eating, go fight!"

Being held by Lu Wu like a piglet, Tuantuan's chubby limbs flailed and its plump body twisted, using its movements to express its resistance.

Tuantuan doesn't want to fight, Tuantuan wants to drink nainai!

Lu Wu raised his hand and slapped it: "Drink your head, that's called bubble tea, not nainai!

And by the way, don't you dare slack off on me. I know you might have fought before, but if you don't perform well later, you'll only get to eat our leftovers for a whole month, got it?"

When Tuantuan heard this, it immediately stopped squirming, its eyes filling with tears.

Tuantuan doesn't want to eat leftovers!

The effect was good, Lu Wu was quite satisfied.

But one can't always wield a big stick; he had to offer a carrot as well.

So Lu Wu changed his tone and smiled warmly: "Tuantuan, if you don't want to eat leftovers, just perform well. If you do well, even making Little Skull soup for you is possible!"

Little Skull Soup? Tuantuan's eyes immediately sparkled at the sound, its little head nodding furiously.

Tuantuan wants to drink Little Skeleton soup! Tuantuan will try hard! Tuantuan will beat all the bad guys!

"Good, that's the spirit, go on! And remember, if you can't beat them you have to level up, and if that's still not enough, evolution is also an option!"

Saying that, Lu Wu tossed Tuantuan onto the arena.

As soon as Lu Wu had thrown Tuantuan into the fray, Little Skeleton leaned over, its Pupil Fire eyes flickering with resentment.

Little Skeleton didn't want to be made into soup for Tuantuan.

Lu Wu stepped forward and patted the little guy on the head: "Don't worry, whether it performs well or not is up to me. If I say it performs well, it performs well, if I say it doesn't, then it doesn't."

At this, Little Skeleton's Pupil Fires brightened, and its mood improved.

Little Skeleton knew Lu Wu liked it best, Lu Wu wouldn't really let Tuantuan drink up Little Skeleton.

But it was clearly pleased too soon.

"So, even if Tuantuan truly doesn't perform well, if I say it does, then it does!"

Little Skeleton was a bit puzzled; what did that mean? It didn't understand!

"What I mean is, if I lose this match, I'll be in a bad mood. If I'm in a bad mood, Tuantuan's performance is good, and then Little Skeleton will have to be drunk by Tuantuan.

If we win, then I'll be in a good mood, and Little Skeleton won't have to be drunk by Tuantuan.

Even more so, if Little Skeleton performs well, it might even get to ride Tuantuan!"

At this, Little Skeleton's Pupil Fires shimmered again.

Although Little Skeleton vaguely felt something was off, it still expressed a firm resolve, vowing to make an effort and ride Tuantuan!

One trick to hoodwink two Summoned Beasts.

Lu Wu felt he was a step closer to becoming a playboy of Summoned Beasts!

Meanwhile, the battle on the arena had already begun.

Empowered by Lu Wu's promise, Tuantuan showed unprecedented determination, starting off with a giant transformation, followed by a fierce Charge ramming forward.

Faced with Tuantuan's Charge, the opposing Rock Python coiled its nearly five-meter-long body and adopted a Defensive Stance, ready to withstand the full impact.

With a "smack,"

Tuantuan's head collided with the Rock Python's body.

After turning gigantic, Tuantuan grew from the size of two fists to a huge beast about two meters tall and three meters long.

Though the size was due to the Transformation, the weight was very real, and the impact was terrifyingly forceful.

It sent the Rock Python flying four to five meters away.

However, the Rock Python's Physical Defense was naturally strong, and it was even more fortified in its Defensive Stance. It withstood the blow astonishingly well and was even quick to counterattack, lashing its tail directly onto Tuantuan's body.

With a "smack," Tuantuan was sent reeling backward.

The two sides' clash marked the beginning of a battle that was completely different from the first one.

The previous battle was more about overpowering or running away than combat, whereas this one was a true head-to-head confrontation.

They exchanged blows, completely abandoning any use of Spells.

One fought with brutal Charges and clashes; the other with endurance and retaliation.

The two combatants went back and forth, one pushing the other back, then the other sending one flying.

The sheer brute force of their Power collision was fierce and unyielding, firing up the audience's blood but also causing Wang Jun to frown deeply.

What's going on?

Where was Lu Wu's shrewdness and cunning as a Cultivation Master? There was no sign of him using it at all?

Was he really intending to just brute force it?

Or could this also be part of Lu Wu's plan?

But Wang Jun couldn't see any sign of a plan from Lu Wu at all.

While Wang Jun was still confused, Jiang Beifeng saw it clearly.

Lu Wu didn't have a damn plan!

He didn't have a plan at all; he was genuinely preparing for a head-on clash, throwing caution to the wind.

Jiang Beifeng was delighted.

"Let it be a head-on collision, let it crash; I'm eager to see what kind of spectacle you can make out of it."

Almost simultaneously,

Below the stage, Lu Wu squinted his eyes and uttered a faint remark to Tuantuan on the arena.

"Tuantuan, if you keep this up, your performance might not be so great, huh?"

On hearing this, Tuantuan paused in its actions.

All it could think about was performing poorly and possibly missing out on Little Skeleton Soup.

Taking advantage of this moment, the Rock Python lunged forward and coiled around Tuantuan.

Literal hunger for victory!

Once the Rock Python had Tuantuan in its grip, even a fool could see it.

That pig was done for.

However, a smirk crossed Lu Wu's lips at that moment.

Indeed, among the three Summoned Beasts in his team, it was Tuantuan that gave him the least worry.

Little Skeleton and the others needed resources to evolve and break through; this pig needed none.

It could enhance its Power at any moment.

Just as the Rock Python had wrapped around Tuantuan, the pig instantly leveled up from Elite 1 Star to Elite 2 Star.

As its Power increased, a pillar of Earth rose under Tuantuan's feet, lifting both Tuantuan and the Rock Python into the air.

In fact, a single Earth pillar wouldn't suffice to lift them, but Tuantuan possessed a Gravity Skill.

This Skill could increase or decrease Gravity.

Reducing the Gravity to zero, the Earth pillar effortlessly rose, and once mid-air, Tuantuan increased the Gravity again, causing both the pig and the python to plummet toward the ground.

This move was brutal, almost akin to mutual destruction.

The Rock Python was just as ferocious, gripping Tuantuan tightly, determined to fall together.

The two creatures smashed towards the ground, and at the very moment before impact, the entangled Tuantuan disappeared.

It canceled the Giant transformation, removed its own Gravity and, with an effortless leap, evaded; the poor Rock Python, caught off guard, slammed heavily onto the arena floor.

With the Rock Python's own weight of over a thousand pounds, plus the five times Gravity of Tuantuan's Skill and the Power of Tuantuan's recent transformation, the damage inflicted on the Rock Python was formidable – the arena cracked under the impact, and the Rock Python was left grievously wounded.

Tuantuan, unsatisfied, went for another Giant transformation and another ferocious Charge, knocking the severely injured Rock Python out of the arena and easily claiming victory in battle.

After this series of maneuvers,

Not just the spectators but Jiang Beifeng, Wang Jun, and the others were stunned.

Even Lu Wu was taken aback.

No one was commanding that little rascal just then; where had it learned these tactics?

But one thing was for sure, they were fierce!

Upon securing victory, Tuantuan turned to Lu Wu, blinking its large eyes expectantly.

How about that? How about that?

How did Tuantuan perform? Can Tuantuan eat Little Skeleton now?

# Chapter 155: 153 Skill Awakening (Please Subscribe)

"How is that possible?"

At the moment Tuantuan defeated the Rock Python, Jiang Beifeng's eyes narrowed, his face filled with indescribable astonishment.

He had studied Lu Wu's team.

And had done so for two days, considering his research to be quite thorough.

He knew very well that Lu Wu's team possessed significantly less power than Team 001.

Even Jiang Beifeng thought there was a decent chance that the match would end with the Rock Python achieving an overwhelming victory with a one-versus-three outcome.

After all, all of the summoned beasts on Team 042 were Elite 1 Star, while this Rock Python had already reached Elite 2 Stars.

There was also a considerable attribute suppression; Team 042 would find it very difficult to take down the Rock Python.

Of course, Jiang Beifeng hadn't completely underestimated Lu Wu.

He was prepared for the possibility of the Rock Python's defeat, but the defeat he envisioned was definitely not this kind of straightforward, hard-fought victory.

He believed that if Lu Wu were to defeat the Rock Python, it would be through Lu Wu's typical dirty tricks, not this head-on clash.

This began to cause Jiang Beifeng some concern, but he wasn't too worried.

"The strength of this pig is about what I expected. It managed to defeat the Rock Python because it made a breakthrough right in the midst of battle, which is what gave it the ability to withstand the Rock Python.

Lu Wu is fairly lucky, but that's as far as it goes.

Absolute power can't be compensated for with luck. This pig has reached its limit by taking down the Rock Python, at most it will just wear out the Huangmu People a bit, nothing more.

If we take ten thousand steps back, even if it manages to exchange blows with the Huangmu People, there's no way Little Skeleton could defeat Big Rock at the end!"

Thinking of Big Rock's power, Jiang Beifeng felt quite reassured.

At the same time, up on the stage.

After the Rock Python was taken down, the second summoned beast of Team 001, a Huangmu person, also took to the stage.

This Huangmu person was a plant-type summoned beast, shaped like a tree, but without any leaves, its body dry and yellow, with roots growing at its feet, and a pair of eyes on its trunk, extending branches on both sides.

It moved shakily with each step, its movements slow like an old man's, but Lu Wu knew its strength was anything but ordinary.

...

Name: Huangmu Person (one-time evolution)

Power: 2 Stars (Elite)

Quality: Black Iron

Attribute: Plant

State: Stable (My roots will pierce the deepest soil)

Weakness: Fire, Thunder

Skill: Tree Root Whip (Master), Branch Whip (Master), Defensive Stance (Master)

Advanced Skill: Tree Root Domain (Master) (Wherever my roots lay, that is my territory)

Talent: Earth Absorption (Basic) (As long as my roots are in the ground, I can continuously recover from injury and exhaustion)

Description: This is a particularly tricky summoned beast to handle, of course, if you have the right attribute suppression, it is actually quite easy to deal with.

...

I have to say, this Huangmu person is rather strong.

Looking at the attribute suppression, it should be better to use Little Skeleton.

Little Skeleton has a skill that can counter this guy.

However, Lu Wu didn't pull back the pig at this point, part of his strategy was to let the pig wear it down, even though it might not be by much.

Another reason was that Lu Wu had high expectations for this lazy pig.

He always felt like the pig was playing him.

Its true power might not be as simple as it seems, so Lu Wu let the pig continue to fight against the Huangmu person.

"Tuantuan, your performance just now was alright, but it's not yet impressive. If you defeat this summoned beast, then your performance would be considered very good."

Upon hearing this, Tuantuan was visibly displeased.

Tuantuan felt that its performance had already been very good, deserving of Little Skeleton Soup!

But Little Skeleton was in the hands of others, so Tuantuan had no choice but to turn its gaze back to the Huangmu person.

Tuantuan wants Little Skeleton Soup!

Tuantuan wants to defeat this bad beast!

Its fighting spirit flared up in an instant, and at the referee's signal, Tuantuan's hooves surged forward, once again initiating its Cute Pig Charge.

Seeing the pig's charge, Jiang Beifeng raised an eyebrow.

Such a fighting style against the Huangmu person was sheer stupidity.

He even suspected whether the pig was under Lu Wu's command. Did they really think the Huangmu person was like the Rock Python?

This charge was like giving a free kill to the Huangmu person.

In fact, the pig really wasn't under Lu Wu's control, or to be more precise, there was no control at all.

Dudu always lusted after what Lu Wu had, she wouldn't know anything about commanding.

If it weren't for Lu Wu dragging the two of them out for training, the most exercise Dudu usually got from raising Tuantuan would have been bathing it.

It was all about cuddling and eating all day, with practically no combat.

So now, during the match, Tuantuan was completely improvisation.

This way of raising is what's known as free-range training. When free-range summoned beasts fight, their battle style is even more magical.

It can be summed up in four words – 'Xiaji Bada.'

This kind of disorganized combat sometimes can produce quite spectacular fights, such as the previous battle against the Rock Python. Sometimes, however, it was disastrously bad, like now!

Tuantuan charged with a cute piggy rush, heading straight into the Tree Root Domain of the Huangmu People.

The Tree Root Domain of the Huangmu People was not small, with a radius of five meters.

As soon as Tuantuan set foot in the Domain, the tree roots from the arena of the Huangmu People began to show their power.

Several tree roots emerged from the ground, tripping up the pig. Although the pig's charge was not weak, breaking several of the Huangmu People's roots in the first instant, it was still within their Tree Root Domain.

The Huangmu People had nothing else, but they had plenty of tree roots.

Just as Tuantuan had broken a few, more roots popped up to continue entrapping Tuantuan.

Tuantuan's own speed had already been reduced significantly due to the initial obstruction by the roots, and as several more came at him, his speed decreased further. Despite barely managing to break a few, it was to no avail.

Quickly, new roots extended over, and this time Tuantuan couldn't break through, getting completely entwined by the roots.

In the blink of an eye during the encounter, the pig fell into immediate danger.

At this moment, however, Lu Wu remained silent without any intention of giving commands.

He knew this pig very well.

It had its own style of battle, and him speaking out might not necessarily be a good thing for the pig.

For a pig that excelled in "Xiaji Bada," it might be better to let it perform on its own.

And indeed, that was the case. Although the pig usually lazed around and would never leave Dudu's embrace to walk even a step on the ground, when it came to fighting, it was quite impressive.

Facing the bind, the pig repeated its old trick and cancelled its Giant form, easily resolving the danger of being tied up.

But even though the danger of entanglement was resolved, Tuantuan's Charge had failed, and the pig now found itself in the middle of the Huangmu People's Tree Root Domain.

In an instant, the roles of offense and defense reversed!

Originally on the offensive, Tuantuan now became the one getting hit.

The opponent's Huangmu People initiated aggressive mode, with two branches and several roots launching simultaneously in a furious assault!

Lucky for everyone that the Huangmu People couldn't speak; otherwise, the entire arena would probably be echoing with the sounds of "Wood Hit! Wood Hit! Wood Hit!"

However, even though there was no "Wood Hit! Wood Hit!," the sharp sounds of the roots and branches whipping through the air were quite alarming.

From the sound of the air being torn apart, one could infer the power behind it, and feel the peril that Tuantuan was in at that moment.

In the face of danger, chubby Tuantuan exhibited surprising agility.

With swift movements of his hooves, his small body deftly navigated the root zone, deftly dodging the root attacks and even showing signs of getting closer to the Huangmu People.

Could the Huangmu People endure this? They pounded the ground with two branches, causing the roots already in the arena to tremble, the ground shook, flipping Dumpling to the ground, and several roots took advantage of the opportunity to lash out at the pig.

On Tuantuan's side, he unleashed Earth Thorns, and three earth pillars rose to protect him.

Seeing this, Jiang Beifeng's mouth curved up slightly.

"Not bad, this pig. Its combat awareness is quite astonishing, but that's as far as it goes."

No sooner had his words reached the ground, than the Huangmu People's roots easily shattered the earth pillars and hit Tuantuan within.

Luckily, Tuantuan became Giant in the nick of time, substantially boosting its defense, otherwise the attack could have taken little Tuantuan's life.

However, although Tuantuan managed to withstand the attack by becoming Giant, it ended up being tied up tightly as a result.

Once Tuantuan was trapped, the battle was essentially over.

Although Tuantuan's defense was strong and the tree roots had trouble hurting him, becoming Giant required a lot of stamina. Tuantuan's stamina was already depleted during the battle with the Rock Python and now had been drained further, leaving scarcely any left.

In just three more minutes at most, Tuantuan's stamina would be exhausted. If it struggled, the consumption would be even faster.

See?

In order to escape the predicament, Tuantuan tried another round of Earth Thorns and Gravity, but the Huangmu People just endured it all. Tuantuan not only failed to free itself but also nearly depleted its stamina.

Even Tuantuan's fighting spirit was nearly exhausted.

It felt that having fought to this state, its performance should be considered very good, and it was surely entitled to drink Little Skeleton Soup.

So at this moment, its laziness surged up, and it was ready to call it quits.

Seeing this, Jiang Beifeng's mouth curled up again.

"It's over!"

At the same time, Lu Wu also pursed his lips, speaking to Tuantuan in the arena: "Hey, Tuantuan, if you perform like this, then it might not be so good.

If you keep this up, not only will you miss out on the soup, but if Little Skeleton does well later, you'll have to carry him around."

Upon hearing this, Tuantuan, who had been ready to give up resistance, blazed with fiery determination in its eyes.

Tuantuan would never let Little Skeleton ride it.

Tuantuan wanted to drink Little Skeleton Soup!

Yes, Tuantuan's fighting spirit was reignited.

But at that moment, it was nearly out of stamina. What good is fighting spirit without strength?

This made Tuantuan feel incredibly stifled!

It couldn't help thinking, if only it had something to eat!

With food, Tuantuan's strength could surge up!

Huh? Food?

Tuantuan suddenly thought of something, and its piggy eyes turned to the roots that bound it.

Could this thing be edible?

Uh, it didn't look very tasty, and Tuantuan was somewhat repulsed.

But the thought of its imminent Little Skeleton Soup flying away, and the possibility of being ridden by Little Skeleton, caused a fire to light up in Tuantuan's eyes. Then, with a wide-open mouth, it bit down on the tree root.

At the same time, Lu Wu noticed a change in Tuantuan's attribute panel...

…

Let's give a like for Little Skeleton and Tuantuan!

# Chapter 156: 154 Little Skeleton 2 stars

As Tuantuan bit down with a "nom", a new skill appeared on Tuantuan's attribute panel.

...

Cute Pig Eating

Skill Type: Bonds Skill sub-skill

Description: A pig-specific skill derived from the Bonds Skill.

Effect: Able to restore its own physical strength and heal injuries through eating, and even has a very small chance to improve its own quality or acquire the skills of the eaten target.

In theory, anything that can be eaten counts.

Of course, the premise is that the pig must be willing to eat it, and its little body must be able to handle it.

Ps: If my cute owner can't eat it, I, Tuantuan, will gladly eat it!

...

"This can work?"

Lu Wu had casually shouted just to tease the little guy, never expecting to actually stimulate the emergence of such a skill.

And, it seemed like quite a nice skill at that?

"Could this be the correct way to nurture Tuantuan?"

Lu Wu felt that he needed to study this matter further.

...

Meanwhile, up in the arena.

The Huangmu People were dumbfounded; they had not expected the well-tied pig to bite them, taking away a large chunk with a bite of its teeth.

What made the Huangmu People even more aggrieved was that after biting, Tuantuan's pig face showed a particularly obvious look of disdain.

At that moment, the Huangmu People couldn't stand it anymore — you bite it, eat it, and then disdain it?

If you despise it, then don't bite!

This kind of pig deserved to be whipped good!

The Huangmu People's roots stretched out again, intending to bind the pig's mouth shut.

But before they could act, Tuantuan, who had recovered some strength from eating, suddenly pushed forward fiercely, then bit down on the roots in front of them with a crisp crunch.

Despite wearing a disgusted expression, Tuantuan was munching away fiercely. Rather, the biting grew more ferocious.

After all, its strength surged as it ate the roots!

This mad biting gave the Huangmu People a hard time; every time they tried to draw their roots back to save themselves, they ended up being chewed off by Tuantuan instead.

Lu Wu's eyes lit up when he saw this.

"Yo, this little guy has awakened its skill, and its teeth have gotten better!

These roots seem like sugarcane in front of it, crunching and splashing juice with every bite!

It looks like Tuantuan has a chance to win this round."

What do you mean Tuantuan has a chance?

It's looking pretty promising, alright!

Actually, Tuantuan's teeth were good even before the skill awakening; it just never thought to solve problems with its mouth.

Now the door to a new world had been opened.

Plus the skill awakening did indeed increase Tuantuan's biting force to some extent.

What was once a root capable of restraining the pig, now turned into food in front of Tuantuan; it easily escaped the roots with just its mouth.

The former dominant Huangmu People now didn't dare extend their roots.

Although having their roots nibbled didn't cause significant damage—they could recover over time thanks to their talent—their recovery rate couldn't compete with the speed at which Tuantuan gnawed away.

So now the Huangmu People were somewhat wary of pigs.

But while the Huangmu People were afraid, the pig wasn't!

Tuantuan had no intention of letting go of the beast that had been after its body, continuing to attack after breaking free.

This time, Tuantuan decided not to charge.

In the short span, Tuantuan had awakened the pig's talent skill Gong Baisai.

The little guy inserted its tusks into the arena floor, digging and advancing toward the Huangmu People.

The Huangmu People's roots were forced into retreat by Tuantuan, but while the roots could retreat, the trunk couldn't—it was too slow and was soon dug up by Tuantuan.

Just one step away, Tuantuan would be able to nibble on the Huangmu People.

At that moment, the Huangmu People, who had been retreating, suddenly launched an attack.

Two trunk-like arms smashed down while the gathered roots also exploded, attacking Tuantuan's mouth head-on.

The emotions of the Huangmu People were quite clear at that point.

'You think you can eat?

Have a big mouthful; I'll let you eat your fill and see if your mouth can handle it before exploding.'

However, just as the trunk and roots of the Huangmu People shot out, Tuantuan suddenly closed its mouth, canceled its growth in an instant, dropped to the ground to dodge the attack, and then immediately re-activated its growth to fend off the Huangmu People's onslaught.

At the same time, Tuantuan seized the opportunity to launch the Cute Pig Charge.

With a violently powerful collision, the majority of the roots used for the offensive lost their grip on the ground, and the Huangmu People were sent flying out of the arena.

The pig had won another victory.

"Damn, that worked too?"

Jiang Beifeng, in the spectator stands, almost spewed a mouthful of blood.

He could never have anticipated such an outcome—the pig had actually achieved a double kill.

And what's more, it was with such a method that it secured the double kill!

If the reason for this pig's double kill was because he had misjudged its strength early on, then Jiang Beifeng had no excuses.

He was just a fool, incompetent!

But that wasn't the issue!

He discovered that his initial assessment of the pig's strength was quite accurate; when it first entered the fray, it truly was as he had predicted, slightly weaker than the Rock Python.

Yet as the battle went on, the pig's strength kept increasing.

That was beyond his control, although an in-battle breakthrough was still within his realm of acceptance.

What he couldn't accept was that the pig had already powered up once before, having been driven to the brink of defeat by the Huangmu People, its stamina nearly depleted, victory almost within reach.

Then the pig just blatantly cheated.

Its jaw strength became astonishingly potent, and its terrifying rate of stamina recovery was revealed, easily flipping the battle and securing a win.

Who in the world could tolerate this?

Jiang Beifeng felt like he had swallowed something vile.

It took a massive effort for him to suppress his feelings of frustration and disgust and to console himself, "It's fine; the pig has almost run out of stamina, and 001's ace is still in play. Victory is still ours!"

Meanwhile, as Jiang Beifeng was comforting himself, over by the stage, Tuantuan was excitedly bouncing in front of Lu Wu.

Wasn't Tuantuan incredibly awesome?

Didn't Tuantuan perform exceedingly well?

Could Tuantuan now have Little Skeleton Soup?

In light of the pig's performance, Lu Wu should have agreed, but Little Skeleton hadn't fought yet, and Lu Wu didn't dare to commit, afraid that it would affect Little Skeleton's combat morale.

He decided to placate the pig first.

After all, Lu Wu was fully aware of the pig's current condition and knew that it was running on fumes and wasn't fit to stand on the stage any longer. He wanted it to step down for the time being.

However, the problem arose when Lu Wu tried to get the pig to come down.

The pig wouldn't budge!

Tuantuan was so mighty!

Tuantuan could still fight! Tuantuan had to have Little Skeleton Soup!

Lu Wu was now in a bind as he glanced at the pig on the stage and then at the excited Little Skeleton who had come up close to him, his eyes ablaze with Pupil Fire. Lu Wu could only scratch his nose and say,

Alright then, if Tuantuan wants to fight again, let's have another round.

After all, this was the first time the lazy pig showed such enthusiasm. Lu Wu thought it best not to dampen its spirits.

With the third battle's opportunity secured from Lu Wu's side, Tuantuan proud as can be nudged its snout towards Little Skeleton, then made its way back to the center of the stage.

At that moment, on the other side of the stage, 001's Big Rock was also mounted on the platform.

Big Rock was an evolution of Little Rock, almost unchanged in appearance except for being a few sizes larger.

But that larger size was menacing, and standing before it, Tuantuan, even after its Giant transformation, seemed no longer so imposing.

As the two Summoned Beasts stood together, Lu Wu moved closer and quickly glanced at Big Rock's attributes, which immediately turned his expression grim.

Name: Big Rock (One Evolution)

Power: Elite 3 Stars

Attribute: Rock

Quality: Black Iron (Upgraded)

Weakness: Grass, Water

State: Cruel (My master ordered me to heavily injure that pig and not give it a chance to recover its stamina)

Basic Skills: Rock Collision (Master) Giant Force (Master) Defense Enhancement (Master) Rock Shooting (Master)

Advanced Skills: Earthquake (Master)

Talent: Rock Body (Active) (Enhance defense and strength)

What caused Lu Wu's drastic change in expression wasn't Big Rock reaching Elite 3 Stars Power,

but its state.

The adversary clearly worried that Tuantuan, once this battle ended, would quickly recover its stamina, and that 018 might not withstand a revived Tuantuan. So, their plan was to severely injure Tuantuan and render it powerless.

As Lu Wu observed this state, Big Rock had already brazenly initiated its attack.

Enhancing its power with Giant Force, it rushed forward with a Rock Collision Charge.

Lu Wu's expression darkened, and he immediately conceded defeat.

However, even though Lu Wu had declared his surrender, Big Rock's actions didn't cease; it collided with Tuantuan, which was clearly a bit too excited and not thinking straight, likely having its limited intelligence evaporated away, as it also initiated a Charge.

With this collision, Tuantuan was sent flying out of the ring.

Not only that, the tremendous force caused Tuantuan's Giant transformation to vanish, leaving the pig gravely injured, with blood seeping from its nose, mouth, ears—everywhere.

And this grievously wounded pig was now lying in front of Little Skeleton.

Caught completely off guard, Little Skeleton stared at the bloodied Tuantuan for a while, even tapping it with its Bone Staff.

But when Little Skeleton sensed Tuantuan's pain, it instantly understood.

In an instant, its eyes, ablaze with Pupil Fire, flared up fiercely, filled entirely with anger.

Unforgivable!

Tuantuan was Little Skeleton's best mount, and this Rock monstrosity had dared to injure it so severely!

Little Skeleton would take revenge for Tuantuan!

Simultaneously, Lu Wu felt a surge of spiritual power erupt from his mind.

Clearly, Little Skeleton, in its anger, had finally advanced to two stars.

But at that moment, neither Lu Wu nor Little Skeleton was focused on the breakthrough; what they wanted was to smash the Big Rock above them to bits!!!

# Chapter 157: 155 Ghost Fire Skill (Subscription Request)

001 Under the stage.

Little Skeleton's anger almost materialized into flames.

You must understand, although he now had three pigs on his phone, he was now a Skeleton with pigs, having reached the freedom to ride any pig he wanted each day!

However, like humans, the unobtainable always seems the best.

In Little Skeleton's heart, the best ride was still that pig which he pinned to the ground that refused to become giant no matter how much he yelled.

Could Little Skeleton forgive this beast for daring to harm his pig like this?

Absolutely not!

"Go! Kill it!"

Upon Lu Wu's command, the furious Little Skeleton, holding a bone staff in one hand and his phone in the other, stepped onto the stage.

The third and final fight between 001 and 042 was about to begin.

This instantly tensed up the atmosphere in the arena.

And it made everyone watching the fight anxious too.

As for who was the most anxious, it wasn't Jiang Beifeng or Lu Wu but Zhang Wentao!

After all, if Lu Wu lost, he had to pay a hefty sum of 50,000 points, a piece of news he had only received right before the match began.

His current mood was like riding a roller coaster, extremely thrilling!

Initially, Zhang Wentao thought this match was just a minor competition set up for Lu Wu, a stake of Jiangnan's future, to experience the pressures of Jiangnan early—it was no big deal, something he, Zhang Wentao, could handle well.

But then Zhao Kai Ming came along, dumping the pressure of 50,000 points right onto his head, plunging Zhang Wentao's heart into the abyss.

And as the match began, with the Goblin being taken down in the first round, Zhang Wentao's heart felt icy cold.

He felt certain he was going to lose those 50,000 points.

However, once Tuantuan joined the fight, the situation surprisingly improved.

The pig actually managed to take on two opponents at once.

This gave Zhang Wentao a glimmer of hope for Lu Wu in this match. If this state continued, perhaps, maybe, just possibly, he wouldn't have to spend those 50,000 points. His heart started to warm up a bit and began to rise from the abyss.

But just as Zhang Wentao's heart hadn't fully recovered, Big Rock joined the fight!

With this collision between Big Rock and Tuantuan, Zhang Wentao felt his heart shatter.

As the principal of Jiangnan University and the head of Fucheng Professional Cultivator Center, Zhang Wentao's judgment was certainly reliable.

Even through the screen, he could roughly estimate the power of that Big Rock.

That thing had definitely reached Elite 3 Stars!

And as far as he knew, Lu Wu's Little Skeleton was only Elite 1 Star. Although the battles between summoned beasts aren't solely about power—

fights where one beats an opponent of a higher star do happen.

But those are mostly one-star differences; two-star gaps almost never occur.

Not to mention, it seemed like all aspects of Big Rock severely restrained Little Skeleton. Laying out the two summoned beasts, Zhang Wentao really didn't have much confidence in Little Skeleton.

So, Zhang Wentao became anxious for a moment and eventually pulled his gaze away, covering his heart, "I can't watch this anymore, it's bad for my heart. I might as well prepare myself to spend those 50,000 points."

"It's 55,000!"

Zhao Kai Ming corrected him meticulously, making Zhang Wentao more melancholic.

'Do you think you're being careful?

Do you think you're funny?

At this time, you're still quibbling over 50,000 or 60,000 points, is it interesting?'

Zhang Wentao couldn't help but think of sneaking off to the restroom to slap himself and reflect on why he was so foolish to bother this young fellow for no reason.

Just as Zhang Wentao got up, Zhao Kai Ming next to him "Huh'd": "Xiao Lu is actually hiding such a trick?"

"What's that? Let me see! Let me see!"

Though Zhang Wentao had resolved to brace for the final judgment to protect his heart, he couldn't help but turn his head to look again. And with this look, he immediately felt his back and legs rejuvenate.

Because at that moment, Little Skeleton pulled out his three White Bone Wild Boars from his phone.

As Little Skeleton pulled out the three White Bone Wild Boars, everyone inside and outside the arena was dumbfounded.

What kind of move was this?

The most flabbergasted was Zhuang Yan, who had just severely injured Tuantuan and was feeling rather proud.

After all, Tuantuan was severely injured, quite seriously so, looking like it wouldn't be able to recover for today's match or even half a month later, it was almost impossible for it to compete again.

Now, for the 042 team, only a Goblin and Little Skeleton were left with any fighting capability.

The Goblin was not worth mentioning, its power was just so-so, and 018 could handle it. As for this Little Skeleton...

It was a bit tricky; it might even manage a three-vs-one.

But it was no big deal. Since Little Skeleton had appeared, Zhuang Yan had no intention of letting the Skeleton leave the field intact.

Although killing a summoned beast was not allowed in the competition, as an Undead, as long as the head was intact, smashing the skeleton was permissible.

However, just as he pondered smashing Little Skeleton's skeleton and leaving its head, Little Skeleton straight up cheated by releasing the pigs from his phone.

Seeing the three pigs, smaller by two sizes than the giant Tuantuan, lined up in front of Little Skeleton, Zhuang Yan couldn't sit still anymore.

It wasn't that he worried about losing to the three pigs; Zhuang Yan was confident in Big Rock, and even with the three pigs, Little Skeleton couldn't beat him. But with them there, smashing Little Skeleton's skeleton would become troublesome.

So he immediately raised his hand.

"Referee, 042 violated the rules, please have them withdraw the irrelevant Summoned Beasts!"

In his view, wasn't this a violation?

On his side, he had summoned a single beast, while on 042's side, Little Skeleton came out and then released three others with a 'crack.'

Wasn't this a serious violation?

Little Skeleton must take back the boar, otherwise, it wouldn't be easy to shatter its skeleton.

The referee glanced at him and coldly responded, "That is a function of Little Skeleton's Companion Equipment, which has already been verified and registered. They have not violated any rules. It's you, however, who has; 042 had already surrendered, yet your beast continued its attack, severely injuring the opponent's beast.

Such behavior is considered a violation."

Zhuang Yan's face changed, and he said sheepishly, "I didn't pay attention at the moment, and besides, the Big Rock couldn't be stopped mid-charge. It wasn't intentional.

I'll apologize to 042, and I'll cover their medical expenses, all right?"

Before the referee could respond, Lu Wu spoke up first.

"No need, it's all part of the competition. A few bumps and bruises are inevitable!

Right, Captain Zhuang?"

"Yes, yes, yes! Getting injured during a match is quite normal!" Zhuang Yan didn't know why Lu Wu was helping him out, but since there was a way out given, he took it immediately.

Lu Wu smiled meaningfully, then turned to the referee, "Referee, if there are no issues, may I ask if the match can begin now?"

Seeing that the concerned party was so magnanimous, the referee didn't say much more, turning to Zhuang Yan, "Do you have any more issues?"

"No, no more!" What more could he have at this point?

"Since there are no issues, then both sides prepare, the match officially begins!"

The moment the referee announced the start of the match, Zhuang Yan, who had attempted to accuse the other side of a violation and ended up embarrassing himself, immediately gave the order.

"Big Rock, Rock Shooting!

Hit them!"

With Zhuang Yan's command,

The Big Rock on the stage immediately launched its attack!

Big Rock plunged its hands into the arena, prying a chunk directly out of the platform and hurling it towards the three White Bone Wild Boars in front of Little Skeleton.

On Little Skeleton's side, the three boars didn't move an inch.

They instantly activated the skills "Bone Armor" and "Defensive Stance," turning into a wall to shield Little Skeleton from the onslaught.

Meanwhile, Little Skeleton wasn't idle behind them, furiously hammering out skills.

But at this moment, the skills Little Skeleton was using were neither "Bone Teeth" nor "Bone Spear."

These two skills leaned towards physical attacks and couldn't penetrate Big Rock's thick armor. Little Skeleton was now using "Corrosive Hand," a skill it rarely used in combat after learning it.

And it must be said,

Although "Corrosive Hand" was a Basic Skill, it still did some damage to Big Rock.

The hand, made up of black liquid, struck Big Rock, and immediately white smoke billowed up as if sulfuric acid had been thrown on stone, also corroding a shallow layer off Big Rock's surface.

After several attacks, though the corrosive damage wasn't high, it disfigured Big Rock's already insufficient aesthetics considerably.

Perhaps due to the dip in appearances, Big Rock's rage meter immediately filled up.

Its eyes turned red, and its Giant Force was fully invoked.

"Go!"

Following Zhuang Yan's brief command from below, Big Rock abandoned its ranged attacks and charged straight towards Little Skeleton.

As Big Rock sprinted, Zhuang Yan's smile grew bigger.

"Thought that with three more pigs, you could contend with my Big Rock?

Dream on!

Those three are at most Elite 1 Star level, nothing compared to my Big Rock!"

Before Zhuang Yan had finished speaking, Big Rock had already reached Little Skeleton. Before the beast arrived, its skill burst forth.

Big Rock immediately used its Advanced Skill "Earthquake."

Although this skill couldn't shake the entire earth, it could definitely shake the five-meter radius of the arena.

The skill suddenly activated, lifting the three White Bone Wild Boars off the ground; Big Rock seized this opportunity and barreled through them, knocking the three pigs away like a bowling ball.

Seeing this, Zhuang Yan couldn't hold back his laughter any longer.

Little Skeleton's defenses had been breached; next, it was Little Skeleton's turn.

Without the pigs' protection, Little Skeleton was nothing in front of Big Rock, even if it knew some close combat skills.

Never mind comparing its close combat skills with other summon beasts of the same level, even if it could, it wouldn't break through Big Rock's defenses. So, Little Skeleton was doomed to lose!

"Big Rock, smash it!"

Amidst Zhuang Yan's fury, Big Rock rushed up to Little Skeleton.

However, just then, Little Skeleton casually flung a mass of black flames.

With a boom, the flames exploded, turning Big Rock into a black fireball...

# Chapter 158: 156 It's quite normal to have bumps and knocks in a game!

With a "boom,"

Big Rock turned into a black fireball.

It must be said, the scene looked quite terrifying.

Some less skilled audience members thought Big Rock had been taken out in one blow.

But as Big Rock's owner, Zhuang Yan declared he wasn't the least bit scared!

"My Big Rock is the perfect Summoned Beast!

Whether it's Physical Defense or Magic Defense, it's at the very top level; this little fire is not so easily going to harm it!"

And it seemed reality was exactly that.

Although the flames engulfing Big Rock looked frightening, they didn't seem to be causing it much damage.

Even so, Big Rock didn't stop its movements and continued to charge toward Little Skeleton.

The distance between the two was now less than two meters.

Given that distance, combined with Big Rock's terrifying speed,

The average mage definitely couldn't dodge, but unfortunately, Little Skeleton was no average mage.

It was a Skeleton Mage capable of melee combat.

As Big Rock lunged, Little Skeleton deftly dodged the charge with an extremely agile maneuver while tapping Big Rock with its Bone Staff.

Of course, Little Skeleton's Bone Staff wouldn't be able to break through Big Rock's defense, so it didn't even try.

Instead, it used the staff to tap, leveraging the recoil from attacking Big Rock to leap backwards.

At the same time, a few White Bone Wild Boars, having been knocked away before, rallied, and the one closest to Little Skeleton moved in synergy toward Little Skeleton's landing point.

With a "crack," Little Skeleton landed steadily on the back of the White Bone Wild Boar.

After this series of agile moves, everyone's view of Little Skeleton changed.

These moves.

Is this supposed to be a mage?

It was more like a nimble Skeleton Assassin!

However, Little Skeleton quickly demonstrated with its actions that it indeed was an assassin—oh no, a mage!

Once Little Skeleton landed on the boar, the White Bone Wild Boar started to sprint, and Little Skeleton let its phone float beside it.

Then, Little Skeleton, with a staff in one hand and barehanded in the other, activated its double-casting Talent Skill and began to conjure spells.

A continuous stream of "Corrosive Hands" slammed into Big Rock.

Although "Corrosive Hand" didn't deal much damage, each hit made the black flames on Big Rock burn even fiercer.

Jiang Beifeng in the audience noticed at a glance.

The black flames of Little Skeleton were from the Ghost Fire Skill, a type of Netherworld Flames fueled by Dark Energy.

And Little Skeleton was continuously throwing "Corrosive Hands" from afar, essentially to fuel the "Ghost Fire."

"So, they're planning to wear down Big Rock, huh?

All I can say is, good idea, but too naive!"

On the other side, Zhuang Yan was a beat slower but also discerned Lu Wu's tactics, and his face immediately showed a smile of utter contempt.

"How could my Big Rock be so easily worn down by you?

Besides, can you even wear it down?

Big Rock, activate 'Rock Body!'"

Following Zhuang Yan's command, Big Rock activated its Talent Skill.

On the arena, Big Rock's body flickered with a grey light, and a thin layer of grey glow appeared around its exterior.

This layer of glow completely separated Big Rock from the Ghost Fire.

"Big Rock's Talent is a rare active one, not only increasing its power and physical defense but also enhancing its magic defense. Now let's see how you plan to wear it down.

Big Rock, charge at me!"

Under Zhuang Yan's direction, Big Rock continued to charge towards Little Skeleton.

But because there were three White Bone Wild Boars on Little Skeleton's side, it was difficult for Big Rock to reach Little Skeleton.

Mainly because the other side's speed was not inferior, and although they weren't as powerful as Big Rock, as long as they didn't confront Big Rock head-on and just dragged it along, preventing it from getting close to Little Skeleton was still possible.

So on the arena, the situation quickly turned into one where three boars were kiting a rock.

But Big Rock and Zhuang Yan weren't pushovers.

Not to mention, even if they were herbivores, Jiang Beifeng backing them was certainly not.

To deal with the problem of agility, they had long prepared a solution.

Since they couldn't catch up, Big Rock simply stopped chasing and began to constantly use "Rock Shooting."

This was both a response to ranged attacks and a clever tactic.

Big Rock's "Rock Shooting" used the arena's rocks to shoot, and it chose where they landed.

In other words, Big Rock could change the environment of the arena.

Given enough time, creating a suitable environment for itself was not an issue; if worst came to worst and the arena was torn down to be smaller, Little Skeleton would be forced into a head-on confrontation.

Moreover, the ranged attack of "Rock Shooting" wasn't easy to withstand - a moment of carelessness could lead to serious injury.

```

Within minutes of Big Rock changing its tactics, one of the White Bone Wild Boars got knocked out of the ring, while another was hit in the hind leg and slowed down.

The only one left intact, ridden by Little Skeleton, was still in good condition thanks to Little Skeleton's protection, but it was getting harder and harder to hold on.

The arena was now filled with boulders and uneven terrain, reducing the speed of the White Bone Wild Boars.

"It's about time, go all out, take down Little Skeleton for me!"

Seizing the moment, Zhuang Yan decisively issued the command.

Big Rock's eyes suddenly turned red, and it hurled the last boulder while charging towards Little Skeleton.

The last boulder thrown by Big Rock landed right in front of Little Skeleton, blocking their path, and by then Big Rock had already charged up to them.

"It's over!"

Jiang Beifeng confidently rose from his seat in the audience.

Below the arena, Zhuang Yan let out a roar: "Big Rock, blast them!"

At the same time, Lu Wu's lips curled up: "Little Skeleton, it's about time!"

As Lu Wu's voice rang out, the flames in Little Skeleton's eyes flickered.

At the same moment, the pig beneath stopped in its track, the bone staff pointed out, coldly watching the oncoming Big Rock.

A faintly discernible, stirring background music seemed to start playing.

"Cast aside the dreams and future engraved in your heart, even if you disregard the future, what does it matter

The boundaries mean nothing to me

This power turns the unattainable yearnings into a dazzling light..."

With Ms. Missile's BGM resounding, a fierce Thunder Strike mercilessly struck the charging Big Rock, knocking it down with such force that its gray defense wavered as if it would collapse at any moment.

In that instant, Jiang Beifeng, who had just stood up, was shocked back into his seat.

"How is this possible!"

Zhuang Yan was stunned by the thunder strike.

He seriously suspected that Little Skeleton was cheating!

Otherwise, how could a Little Skeleton, an Undead Type summon, possibly cast a Thunder Element spell?

And with such terrifying power, too!

But it was still all good.

"Though that Thunder Strike is strong, it also consumes a lot, and Little Skeleton just cast Ghost Fire Skill, and so many Corrosive Hand spells. With another Thunder Strike now, its mana must be depleted.

Big Rock's defense has not broken, victory is still mine..."

"Snap!"

Before Zhuang Yan could finish his thought, another Thunder Strike landed, shattering Big Rock's tottering defenses and leaving it charred black.

The Ghost Fire and the Corrosive Hand's liquid that had been blocked by its defenses now cascaded onto Big Rock, instantly turning it into a giant black fireball.

The once defensively formidable Big Rock now rolled around in pain and wails.

What frightened Zhuang Yan even more was that Little Skeleton still had mana to spare and showed no sign of stopping.

Amidst the intense BGM of Ms. Missile, the bone staff was raised once more.

If another Thunder Strike came down, Big Rock would either die or be severely wounded; Zhuang Yan couldn't let Little Skeleton continue.

"Stop, enough, we concede..."

"Crack!"

Zhuang Yan had conceded, but Little Skeleton's movements didn't stop. The third Thunder Strike came down and struck a thin crack onto the already blackened fireball that was Big Rock.

As soon as this fine crack appeared, the Ghost Fire swiftly penetrated it,

the faint line immediately widened and began to spread.

Seeing this, the referee quickly intervened; a Water Element summon beast materialized out of nowhere, spraying water onto the scorched Big Rock.

The referee's summon was clearly at Boss level or above; a single splash of water extinguished the Ghost Fire and saved Big Rock's life.

But after the alternation of fire and water, more cracks appeared on Big Rock's body, spreading all over it.

Clearly, although Big Rock had survived, the damage was severe, and whether it could be saved was in question.

Seeing his beloved summon wounded like this, Zhuang Yan furiously confronted Lu Wu: "I already conceded, why didn't you stop..."

Lu Wu shrugged his shoulders: "It's all my Little Skeleton's fault, playing BGM for no reason. The sound was too loud, I didn't hear it.

Besides, a little bumps and bruises in a competition are normal, don't take it to heart.

Learn from me, be cool-headed. Look at our pig, injured like that, and I didn't say a word."

With that, Lu Wu pointed to his own pig.

But Zhuang Yan wished he hadn't; the pig that was bleeding from five holes and looking pitiful a moment ago was now lively, munching on a watermelon. When it heard Lu Wu talking about itself, it turned its head and tilted it as if to think.

Then, the clever Tuantuan promptly flopped down, feigning the appearance of being at death's door.

At the same time, up on the arena,

Little Skeleton got off its pig, ran to Big Rock's side, stomped on it with one foot, crossed its arms behind its back, and began to switch the BGM on its phone to one with advertisement.

"How lonely it is to be invincible..."

```

# Chapter 159: 157 Playoffs Over

As the BGM "How Lonely It Is to Be Invincible" played,

today's additional match officially ended.

There was no need to continue fighting.

The additional match was meant to determine the top four teams, and once a team was eliminated, there was no reason to continue. Team 001 had already suffered two consecutive defeats and was swept out.

The competition is now over!

Everyone might as well go home and find their moms!

Yet, at that moment, both online and onsite spectators were in a state of confusion.

They didn't react for a long time.

It wasn't until the referee's reminder that they woke up from the dream and realized the match had really ended.

Teams 018 and 042 advanced while team 001, one of the ace teams of this competition and the only local ace of Jiangnan, was shockingly eliminated.

This caused many locals, who take great pride in their hometown, to be particularly confused and worried.

There was only that one ace team in Jiangnan, and they were eliminated before even reaching the finals.

What were they supposed to do now? Who would contend with the three foreign teams picking cherries in the finals?

Of course, where there was confusion, there were also those who caught on quick.

Their minds spun—hold on!

Wasn't team 042, who took down 001, also from Jiangnan? They might have lost 001, but they still had 042!

The daunting task of combating the foreign teams naturally transitioned to team 042, and if team 042 could take down team 001, they surely had a better chance against the three foreign teams.

With such smart thinking, they were immediately fired up.

They even started chanting slogans in the venue and on the live broadcast.

Something like "042 is invincible, down with the foreign trash."

Oddly enough, these slogans were quite inspiring, but they were somewhat embarrassing for the three foreign teams who were present.

From Group A, team 002, and from Group B, teams 044 and 066, all ace foreign teams, quietly made their exit when these slogans began.

It was quite the coincidence that the three teams left at the same time and bumped into each other at the exit.

Since they ran into each other, a conversation was inevitable.

Fang Bai from team 002 was the first to speak, "It seems Jiangnan is truly declining; such mediocre teams can actually stand on the same stage as us.

It seems my earlier prediction was right; the top three contenders are still us three."

"You can't say that. There are still some decent teams in Jiangnan, like 042 and 003!" Wang Jun pushed up his glasses.

Fang Bai sneered with undisguised contempt, "003 is okay, I guess, but as for 042, I'll repeat what I said before—if it were a Cultivation Master competition, he alone could suppress us all. But this is a Summoner competition, and even though he took down 001, he's still a nobody in my eyes."

"How do you know that what you're seeing is all their strength?

And their ability has already improved significantly compared to the preliminaries.

There's still a week until the top eight battle; maybe by then, their strength will have improved further. Be careful not to get thrashed by them then."

Wang Jun clearly held high regard for Lu Wu, but his words only made Fang Bai more scornful.

"Don't even give him a week; even a month wouldn't be enough for him!"

With that, Fang Bai walked off with his teammates.

...

Meanwhile, in the audience stands.

Jiang Beifeng sat in his chair, dazed, muttering under his breath, 'How could this happen? How is it possible? Team 001 should have been absolutely impossible to defeat.'

It wasn't that he lacked the ability to face reality.

It's just that the outcome was completely unexpected.

Jiang Beifeng had calculated every possibility before acting.

No matter how he calculated, Lu Wu was not supposed to win.

Even after tripling the displayed power of Lu Wu's team, they still wouldn't have won.

They were already being super cautious!

But what happened?

As soon as the match started, Lu Wu's side started to cheat.

First, that pig made a breakthrough during the match with a Skill Awakening.

Jiang Beifeng could still tolerate that.

But when it came to Little Skeleton, he couldn't take it anymore; it was supposed to be 1 star, he had even checked before the match, but suddenly on stage, it turned into 2 stars.

And that wasn't the worst part; Little Skeleton summoned three half-Elite Level [White Bone Wild Boars] right on the stage.

These half-Elite White Bone Wild Boars had strong combat power, almost comparable to an ordinary 1-star Elite, and Little Skeleton released three at once.

Jiang Beifeng had to endure that too!

Anyway, Big Rock had strong defenses and was overall a good counter to Little Skeleton; Little Skeleton's Ghost Fire Skill couldn't kill Big Rock.

Just when Jiang Beifeng thought Little Skeleton couldn't break through the defense, it directly smashed an advanced Thunder Attribute Magic.

An Undead Summoned Beast using Thunder, aren't you afraid of killing yourself?

Such a terrifying Thunder Attribute Magic, smashing down three times, is this still a skeleton?

Now Jiang Beifeng really wanted to report Lu Wu for cheating.

Report Little Skeleton for cheating, but where to report?

Moreover, for Jiang Beifeng, the most important issue was no longer whether Little Skeleton and the others were cheating, but what he should do next?

50,000 points!

He was betting in the name of Jiangbei University!

The 50,000 points had to be coughed up by Jiangbei University, and although the university could afford it, the question was, would he still be the director of admissions after giving away these points?

Jiang Beifeng felt he was probably not far from cleaning toilets.

"Ah, should I consider switching jobs?"

...

While Jiang Beifeng was pondering this deeply significant issue.

On the other side of the spectator stands, Hengheng Monster was so shocked that she was speechless.

She had never expected Lu Wu to actually win this match, especially against their ace team 001, which her side had no confidence in confronting.

Does this mean Lu Wu is now stronger than her?

Does she still have a chance to make Lu Wu cry?

No!

Hengheng Monster felt that she should be worried about possibly facing Lu Wu in the upcoming top eight.

If she really ran into Lu Wu during the top eight, Hengheng Monster felt she might be made to cry again.

Just the thought made Hengheng Monster particularly anxious.

"Maybe I should just drop out of the competition!"

...

On the other hand, a hundred miles away from Fucheng, over the sea.

Here, there was a group of Summoned Beasts congregated by hundreds.

Leading this group was the little goldfish Lu Wu had fished out, and it was already sensing Lu Wu's presence.

The bad guy who had kept it in a dark box for months and then threw it out as just a fish wasn't far ahead.

The little goldfish got excited, rallying its minions, it sped up heading straight for Fucheng...

...

Sorry, I have something tonight, got back late, this chapter is a bit short.

# Chapter 160: 158 Skeleton Knight Research Report

Little Skeleton played the BGM with advertisements three times in a row on the stage.

He kept playing it until the referee couldn't take it anymore and forcefully ushered him off, yet Little Skeleton still seemed unwilling to leave.

As soon as he got off, Little Skeleton went to check on his mount.

Were the injuries healed? Could he ride it now?

Was there any part of it broken? If broken, he needed to quickly replace it with a new one.

That's how skeletons were.

If a bone broke, just snap in a new one, and it should work for a pig too!

As for Tuantuan, despite its tender skin and succulent flesh, which looked appetizing no matter how you cooked it, it actually had very thick blood.

Although it had just been beaten until blood streamed from its orifices, it was more frightening to look at than painful. A little something to eat would make this little guy all better.

By the time Little Skeleton came down, Tuantuan was already nearly healed, happily digging into a watermelon while keeping an eye on Little Skeleton!

As soon as Little Skeleton came down from the stage and approached it, both Tuantuan's eyes and Little Skeleton's Pupil Fire lit up, and at the same time, they both looked at Lu Wu.

Little Skeleton: Can I ride Tuantuan?

Tuantuan: Can I drink Little Skeleton?

Watching the two little ones simultaneously change their state, Lu Wu said, "Sure, sure, both wishes can be fulfilled."

Lu Wu's mood now was beyond good.

With this win in the extra match, not only would he move into the top four of Group A and the top eight of the league, but he would also gain 50,000 points and information on Little Skeleton's Second Evolution.

Additionally, Little Skeleton had just shouted out an advertisement; the revenue from that was definitely not low, probably starting at at least three to four thousand.

With such big earnings, how could Lu Wu's mood not be good?

Wasn't he close to taking off?

These little requests from the two little ones were naturally all granted by Lu Wu.

However, as soon as Lu Wu nodded his approval, both little ones were unhappy.

While Tuantuan wanted to drink skeleton soup, it did not want Little Skeleton to ride it.

On the other hand, Little Skeleton wanted to ride Tuantuan, but it did not want to be drunk by Tuantuan.

This made the two little ones conflicted and confused!

Their little brains were spinning wildly, trying to figure out how they could eat/ride the other without being eaten/ridden in return.

While the two little ones were wrestling with their dilemma, Lu Wu's phone chimed with messages and calls.

Lu Wu took Zhao Kai Ming's call first, and Zhao's voice, full of surprise and excitement, came through.

"Xiao Lu, I watched the match; congratulations on beating 001 and winning the extra match!

You did great!

Also, when you're free later, drop by the Professional Center; Old Zhang has something for you!"

At this point, Zhao Kai Ming paused, seeming to step away for a few steps, then whispered to Lu Wu, "He's probably planning to improve your treatment, so don't just accept whatever he says; drive a hard bargain with him.

He values you highly and is especially afraid of losing you.

He had already prepared to pay those 50,000 points himself if you had lost.

So, grab him and chop hard, don't be polite to him!"

Now, I'd feel embarrassed to ask for more money, hey!

Lu Wu shook his head.

After exchanging some pleasantries with Zhao Kai Ming, he hung up the phone and then looked at the message that had just come in on his phone.

The message was from Jiang Beifeng, with a document attached and a note, "I'll give you this first. As for the remaining 50,000 points, I'll apply for it when I get back and try to give it to you within a week!"

"That's good; this guy is trustworthy; that saves me a lot of trouble."

Jiang Beifeng's prompt response to the bet after the match improved Lu Wu's impression of him a great deal.

The money was secondary, the integrity was what mattered!

After praising Jiang Beifeng, Lu Wu opened the document to read.

The first thing that caught his eye was the title of the document.

[Research Report on the Skeleton Knight]

"Skeleton Knight?" Lu Wu raised an eyebrow, "This is clearly a warrior-type second evolution; it's got nothing to do with Little Skeleton who has already taken the path of the Mage Series, right?

Could it be that you want Little Skeleton to change professions again, riding a pig and wielding a Bone Staff to hack at people?"

Hearing this, Little Skeleton, who was beside him and pondering the thought of riding Tuantuan without having to be ordered, flashed his Pupil Fire with excitement, indicating that if that were the case, it could do it too.

"No! You can't!"

Lu Wu pushed Little Skeleton's skull away and then skimmed through the research report while taking Dudu and the others to meet with Zhang Wentao.

Since arriving in this world, Lu Wu had spent most of his time reading books for nearly half a year.

His reading speed had also improved, with ten lines at a glance being a basic drill.

He quickly read through the "Research Report on the Skeleton Knight."

The content matched the title—it was a research report on the Skeleton Knight.

The report contained quite a few solid findings about the Undead Skeleton Series, and Lu Wu did find it somewhat rewarding after reading it.

After finishing, Lu Wu finally understood why they said this matter was related to Little Skeleton's second evolution.

The report pointed out that the Skeleton Knight might not have evolved from just one Summoned Beast.

Because the Skeleton Knight could be divided into two parts—one part knight, the other part mount.

It could be seen as the fusion evolution of two different Summoned Beasts.

And the characteristics of the knight part matched Little Skeleton amazingly well; the report suggested that this part could very likely have evolved from Little Skeleton.

The report conjectured: The knight was in fact Little Skeleton's second evolutionary form.

First, Little Skeleton would evolve once, then find a mount for fusion evolution, and finally, they would produce the Skeleton Knight.

Aside from this conjecture, the report also designed several evolution plans based on this guess.

While looking at these plans, Lu Wu's eyes couldn't help but roll around.

"These plans aren't entirely unfeasible, why don't I give one a try?"

Lu Wu felt like this could actually work.

Of course, he didn't mean for Little Skeleton to change professions.

Little Skeleton was on a good path with the Magic series, and there was no need to switch professions.

However, the pigs under Little Skeleton's command could be tinkered with.

Those three pigs had not evolved yet, and Lu Wu thought it was worth a try to see if he could turn them into three Wild Boar Knights.

"Why don't we focus on this for the next week?

One week is too short to significantly improve Little Skeleton's power, but if we can really turn these three pigs into three Wild Boar Knights, then Little Skeleton's power would get a massive boost.

During the finals, it would also give 002 quite a few surprises!"

When it came to 002, Lu Wu's voice deepened, and his eyes narrowed.

Of course, the magnanimous Lu Wu wasn't holding a grudge over previous events; he just felt that as a Jiangnan person, he should be rooting for smashing 002's team...

...…

On the other hand, Zhang Wentao was excitedly rushing to the Professional Center with Zhao Kai Ming.

It was proven that a little stimulation does good to a person.

Stimulated by the prospect of 50,000 points, Zhang Wentao felt his back and legs no longer ached, even feeling like skipping as he walked; he felt decades younger.

While walking, Zhang Wentao was particularly excited, discussing with Zhao Kai Ming how they should reward Lu Wu.

"We can discuss Xiao Lu's perks separately, but today he defeated Team 001; shouldn't I give him an additional reward?"

"Right, I remember he once had a Divine Origin Fruit, but he still doesn't have a second Summoned Beast. Should I try to arrange one for him?

I can get a Silver Quality Summoned Beast, and if I lose face and pay a price, a Gold Quality one isn't out of the question!"

"Hmm, I'll still try my best to get a Gold one, Xiao Lu's Talent is absolutely top-notch, but coming from an Ordinary family, it would take him a long time to get a Gold Quality Summoned Beast if I don't help him."

Upon hearing this, Zhao Kai Ming couldn't help but twitch the corner of his mouth.

Silver? Gold? Don't joke around; someone already arranged a Summoned Beast for Lu Wu, and that one's Quality is at least above Gold.

Why would he care about your lousy Gold one?

Of course, Zhao Kai Ming didn't speak up; if that old man wanted to go through with it, then let him be. Even if Lu Wu didn't want it in the end, it could be given to his teammates.

# Chapter 161: 159 My nephew Lu Wu has the appearance of a Grandmaster.

Thank you for the immense support from "Money is Power"!

Fucheng is a coastal city.

Before Lu Wu traveled to this world, being a coastal city was a huge advantage, a tremendous resource that could greatly help the city's development.

But in this world, the advantages of being coastal have been significantly reduced.

That's because the dangers brought by the ocean have greatly increased.

Originally, the most one would worry about was a typhoon or storm, but now, wild Summoned Beasts occasionally emerge from the sea to attack fishing boats.

Sometimes, there are even Summoned Beast Groups that invade the shores.

Therefore, to ensure the safety of fishermen and the city, the coastal cities in Jiangnan have built a large number of Sea Suppression Towers for observation and suppression.

As the focal point of Jiangnan Province, Fucheng naturally has the most comprehensive Sea Suppression Tower system.

Within a hundred miles of Jiangnan's shores, no movement on the sea surface can escape the detection of the towers.

And today, on the very day Lu Wu finished his additional matches, an ear-piercing alarm suddenly rang out from the coastal Sea Suppression Towers of Fucheng.

At the same time, all the vessels in the Fucheng Sea Area received a broadcast from the towers.

"This is the Fucheng Town Sea Tower Signal Transmission Department.

All vessels please be aware, there is a vast number of Summoned Beasts appearing in the Fucheng Sea Area, and it is suspected that a Summoned Beast tide is about to erupt. For your own safety, all vessels must return to port immediately!"

Upon this broadcast, nearly all the ships in the nearby sea area returned to port immediately.

At the same time, the Sea Suppression Towers went into full operation.

According to their surveys, the invading Summoned Beast Group was massive, with a varied and aggressive species composition, and it was highly likely that their target was Fucheng.

Behind such a large-scale Summoned Beast tide, there must be a Lord-level or higher existence among them.

This was a very dangerous situation, and they had to be cautious in their response.

The Sea Suppression Towers even sent this information to Governor Jiang Yuexing without delay...

While the Sea Suppression Towers were on high alert,

Lu Wu and his team came to the Fucheng Professional Center.

To his surprise, Principal Zhang Wentao of Jiangnan University, who was also the head of the Fucheng Professional Center, was waiting for him at the entrance. This touched Lu Wu deeply.

However, Zhang Wentao was even more excited than Lu Wu, and as soon as Lu Wu arrived, he took his hand.

"Xiao Lu, I've been wanting to meet you to personally thank you for your contributions to Jiangnan University. I didn't want to disturb you during the competition, so I held off, but now that the preliminaries have ended and you've entered the top eight, I can finally have a proper chat with you.

Come on, let's go inside and talk!"

With that, Zhang Wentao led Lu Wu by the hand into the building.

Though Lu Wu didn't particularly enjoy being led by the hand by an older man, which felt uncomfortable and weird, he thought about the benefits he was about to receive and endured it.

In fact, he endured it quite well, sweet-talking and calling him 'Grandpa Zhang' which made Zhang Wentao beam with joy.

However, Zhao Kai Ming, who was nearby, didn't like it.

"Don't call him Grandpa Zhang. If you're going to address him, call him Principal Zhang, or like you call me, Uncle Zhang is fine too!"

Zhang Wentao was displeased with this. At over seventy years old, what's wrong with Xiao Lu calling him 'Grandpa Zhang'?

What irked him even more was that Lu Wu actually started calling him Principal Zhang.

"No, no, don't call me Grandpa Zhang. How about Uncle Zhang? That's much more cordial than Principal Zhang."

As Zhang Wentao spoke, he glared at Zhao Kai Ming, as if to say: 'You old rascal, if you dare oppose again, I'll break your legs.'

Zhao Kai Ming pursed his lips, knowing well it was futile to advise such a stubborn old man.

He couldn't care less against that one's tall stature; he'd let it go, after all, he wouldn't be the one getting hit if trouble arose.

Seeing Zhao Kai Ming not objecting, Lu Wu and Zhang Wentao became amiable.

Lu Wu called him uncle with each breath while Zhang Wentao called him a wise nephew, and they got along splendidly.

Soon, Lu Wu understood the purpose of Zhang Wentao's invitation.

Ah, well, Zhao Kai Ming had already explained before Lu Wu arrived that Zhang Wentao was preparing to improve his conditions.

It was not just an improvement for Lu Wu, 042 as a whole would benefit.

Dudu and Lin Jianying both received guaranteed admission contracts from Jiangnan University along with A-level benefit plans to support growth.

As for Lu Wu, it was even more impressive.

"I heard that Jiangbei University promised you a treatment at associate professor level, they will build a research institute just for you, all the data from Jiangbei University will be open to you, and they will also provide you with 10,000 points of research funds every month, right?"

"These benefits they are offering seem tempting, but in reality, they are setting traps waiting for you to fall in.

Except for the data being open to you, the rest are basically empty promises.

The research institute they build for you belongs to the school, and they have the final say when they want it back. As for the research funds, those may indeed exist.

But accordingly, whatever project you come up with will belong to Jiangbei University in the end. These folks are very cunning!"

Zhang Wentao started off by taking a jab at Jiangbei University.

Then, he outlined the welfare enhancement plan Jiangnan University had for Lu Wu, "Jiangnan University is prepared to directly appoint you as an Honorary Professor of Jiangnan University, with the entitlement of a professorial stipend.

In addition, Jiangnan University will grant you full access permissions.

As long as you wish, all of Jiangnan University's projects, all Skill Training Plans, cultivation plans, all knowledge is available for you to view.

As for the lab, you already have one of your own, so there's no need to build another. Plus, if it's built with the resources of Jiangnan University, it still belongs to Jiangnan University's research facilities."

Of course, there's something Zhang Wentao didn't say.

That was the current financial situation of Jiangnan University; there's no need to mention how strained the resources are for constructing another research facility for Lu Wu, but a top-grade one would truly be a challenge.

However, even though he wasn't prepared to build a research facility for Lu Wu, Zhang Wentao still planned to offer Lu Wu some other benefits.

"How about this, once you enroll, I'll draft an order that lets you choose any item from Jiangnan University's treasury as compensation for that.

Moreover, you should also acquire a second Summoned Beast. In the next few days, I'll find a way to secure a Summoned Beast of Golden Quality for you."

Zhang Wentao said all this in one breath and still seemed to feel it wasn't enough, so he looked at Lu Wu, "Do you have any other requests? If there's anything else you need, just say it, and I'll try my best to meet it!"

"No, no, no!"

Lu Wu shook his head repeatedly.

"You don't have to be polite with me. Feel free to make any requests."

"Really, I don't have any more, this is pretty good already!"

Zhao Kai Ming was expecting him to fleece Zhang Wentao, but seeing his attitude, there's no need for Lu Wu to do so; Zhang Wentao himself was lying on the chopping block, waving Lu Wu over to cut as he pleased, to hack boldly.

With him being so agreeable, how could Lu Wu bring himself to do it?

Seeing Lu Wu not taking advantage, not only was Zhang Wentao not pleased, he couldn't help but sigh.

This wasn't an act from Zhang Wentao; he genuinely felt that Jiangnan University was too poor to offer much to Lu Wu and that this slighted him.

No one knew how important Lu Wu was to Zhang Wentao.

Zhao Kai Ming thought that the reason Zhang Wentao was so determined to offer Lu Wu benefits was that Jiangbei University had offered the same, causing Zhang Wentao to increase Lu Wu's treatment for fear of losing him.

In fact, Zhang Wentao had long wanted to improve Lu Wu's treatment.

Even without Jiangbei University's interference, he was ready to do everything possible to nurture Lu Wu.

As the one who discovered Lu Wu and watched him grow, he knew Lu Wu's talent better than anyone.

Last year, when Lu Wu first came to Fucheng, his Cultivation Master level was only close to the professional level, but in just under a year, Lu Wu's cultivation skills had already reached the threshold of a Master.

A 'Master,' in terms of cultivation, refers to a pinnacle existence in a certain domain or even one with exceptional contributions.

And now Lu Wu qualified as one.

In the domain of the Little Skeleton, he could certainly be considered a peak-level presence.

There was definitely no cultivator in the field of the Little Skeleton who surpassed Lu Wu.

Moreover, Lu Wu had submitted the Little Skeleton Evolution plan, which Fucheng Professional Center had been verifying for the past few months.

Now, near the end of the verification process, once the results come out...

If it was proven that Lu Wu truly found a stable method for the Little Skeleton's evolution, he would be eligible to become a Cultivation Master.

It might be as a Skeleton domain Master, which might feel slightly inferior in the presence of other Cultivation Masters,

But it was still a Master title!

And as a Cultivation Master, Lu Wu would also be entitled to enjoy the associated benefits.

More importantly, Lu Wu was young—he was only 19 years old this year. A 19-year-old Cultivation Master was an extremely rare existence if not completely unique.

And Lu Wu wasn't just specialized in Little Skeleton cultivation; he had ventured into the cultivation of other Summoned Beasts as well.

The recent Goblin injection plan he developed even had Zhao Kai Ming tossing and turning.

That was some seriously impressive expertise. Give Lu Wu a bit more time, and he might just add the title of Goblin Master too.

A 19-year-old with Mastery in two domains.

What kind of talent is this? What kind of genius is this?

This is a monster, alright!

Such an existence, given the right environment, has a very good chance of becoming a Grandmaster of cultivation within twenty years!

And then Jiangnan University could shine because of him.

This was why Zhang Wentao was all out in offering benefits to Lu Wu, still feeling it wasn't enough, and why after knowing about Lu Wu's audacious bet with Jiang Beifeng, he said he would even "smash the pot and sell the iron" to pay off Lu Wu's debt.

Because he had put all his bets on Lu Wu.

For Zhang Wentao, securing Lu Wu was like holding onto the future of Jiangnan University.

So at this moment, he was holding on to Lu Wu's hand very tightly.

And just as Zhang Wentao tightened his grip on Lu Wu's hand, a call from the Governor Mansion came to Zhang Wentao...

...

Little goldfish wants to slap Lu Wu, so please subscribe.

Also, look up "Nu Xiao" on WeChat for a surprise.

# Chapter 162: 160 Strong Skeleton

Zhang Wentao had intended to chat with Lu Wu more.

But unexpectedly, he received a sudden phone call from the Governor Mansion. After answering, his expression changed, and he said, "Alright, I'll be right there!"

Hanging up, Zhang Wentao turned to Lu Wu, "Xiao Lu, I've got to step out for something urgent."

"You go ahead, don't worry about me!"

"When I get back, we'll find an opportunity to have a good chat!"

Having said that, Zhang Wentao directly pushed open the office window and leapt out.

The moment Zhang Wentao jumped, a golden eagle with wings spanning about ten meters appeared out of nowhere and steadied him in the air, and then, with a powerful flap of its wings, it soared upward with an effortless grace.

Lu Wu watched this scene with longing and admiration.

He silently made up his mind that he would eventually find himself a flying Summoned Beast.

While Lu Wu was lost in his thoughts, Zhao Kai Ming nudged him next to him, "Xiao Lu, am I taking you back now, or do you want to hang around here for a bit?"

Upon hearing this, Lu Wu had initially wanted to head straight back.

He had just received the "Skeleton Knight Research Report" and wanted to head back and delve into it to see if he could conjure up something like a Wild Boar Knight.

However, just before leaving, Lu Wu suddenly remembered he didn't have Little Skeleton with him.

After all, one couldn't research a Wild Boar Knight without a skeleton!

So naturally, Lu Wu's eyes fell on Uncle Zhao.

"Uncle Zhao, I remember that the validation for Little Skeleton Evolution is happening here in Fucheng.

If you're validating it, the Cultivation Center here must have bred quite a few Little Skeletons over these months, right?

Do you have any spare ones? I'd like to take a few back for research."

It was a small request, and Zhao Kai Ming promptly agreed.

He personally took Lu Wu to the Cultivation Room, to find the project team validating the Little Skeleton Evolution.

Lu Wu originally came to get some Little Skeletons, thinking he would pick a few and then leave.

But when the project team found out Lu Wu was there, they gathered around him, bombarding him with all sorts of questions they encountered during the validation process.

So Lu Wu was forced to give an hour-long lecture before he could choose any Little Skeletons, helping the project team solve various issues that arose during validation.

After solving these issues, Lu Wu was then led by the project leader into the Little Skeleton cultivation area.

It had to be said, the Cultivation Center did not take small measures; to validate the Little Skeleton Evolution, they had bred nearly a hundred Little Skeletons all at once.

Lu Wu stood on a raised platform, looking down at the densely packed Little Skeletons below, and felt a bit overwhelmed.

However, as Lu Wu's gaze swept over these Little Skeletons, his initial shock faded, replaced by disappointment.

From just the attributes of these Little Skeletons, he could tell that the Cultivation Center had been stingy with spending points on them; their upbringing couldn't hold a candle to his Little Skeleton, as the vast majority of them were flawed and subpar.

But with the sheer number of them, out of the more than a hundred Little Skeletons, there were still a few decent ones.

First, Lu Wu helped the Cultivation Center pick out a few Little Skeletons that had the potential to evolve into a Little Skeleton Mage.

Then, he selected three Little Skeletons for himself.

Out of the three he picked for himself, two were just filler; only one truly satisfied him.

...

Name: Strong Skeleton

Power: 3 Stars

Quality: Black Iron (Upgraded) (A lot)

Attribute: Undead

State: Dazed (Aba aba)

Weakness: Light, Fire, Thunder

Skills: Charge (Master), Thrust (Master)

Description: Clearly, compared to your Little Skeleton, this one is a fool. But of course, that's normal; after all, not every Little Skeleton is as intelligent as yours.

However, its talent is still decent among Little Skeletons; it has some cultivation value.

...

Satisfied to have chosen such a Little Skeleton, Lu Wu kept examining it and even reached out to touch it a couple of times.

This made the Little Skeleton of Lu Wu's house feel threatened.

Its Lu Wu was touching other Little Skeletons; did this mean it was falling out of favor?

Was this new, larger Little Skeleton going to compete with it for Lu Wu's attention?

With this thought, Little Skeleton regarded the taller newcomer with an alert and dangerous gleam in its Pupil Fire.

And just as Lu Wu chose the three Little Skeletons, his phone rang. Picking up, he realized that it was a call from Zhang Wentao.

Lu Wu was puzzled; wasn't Uncle Zhang busy? Why would he call at this time?

Still, he answered it immediately, and as soon as the call connected, Zhang Wentao's urgent voice came through the phone.

"Lu Wu, where are you now?"

"I'm still at the Professional Center. What's going on…?"

"Good, go to any rooftop of the Professional Center immediately, I'm coming to pick you up!"

Without giving Lu Wu a chance to ask questions, Zhang Wentao confirmed his location and then hung up directly.

It was clear that he was frantically rushing to the Professional Center.

"What's going on here?"

Lu Wu looked to Zhao Kai Ming standing beside him, and Zhao Kai Ming spread his hands, "I have no idea either!

But with Old Zhang in such a hurry, it must be something important. We should hurry to the top floor and wait for him."

"Alright!"

With a nod, Lu Wu took Dudu and the others, along with Zhao Kai Ming, to the top of the Cultivation Room.

Zhang Wentao didn't make Lu Wu wait too long. Within a matter of minutes, a loud eagle cry rang out, and Zhang Wentao's Golden Eagle landed right in front of Lu Wu.

"Xiao Lu, hurry up and get on with Little Skeleton. Old Zhao, come over too."

"Dudu, you guys wait for me in the Cultivation Center, don't run around, I'll be right back with Uncle Zhang!"

After telling Dudu to stay put, Lu Wu took Little Skeleton and mounted the back of Zhang Wentao's Golden Eagle.

He also took a moment to check the attributes of the eagle and unsurprisingly, apart from the name "Cloud Piercing Golden Eagle," the rest were question marks, indicating without doubt that this eagle was a creature beyond the leader class.

While Lu Wu was observing the attributes of the eagle, it flapped its wings once more and soared into the sky again.

Lu Wu had initially thought that riding on the back of such an eagle would be thrilling and bumpy, and that if he didn't hold on tight, he might fall off.

However, once the eagle actually took flight, Lu Wu found the experience completely different from what he had anticipated.

Flying on the eagle's back, he barely felt any different than if he were sitting on the sofa in Zhang Wentao's office.

There wasn't any fierce wind hitting his face, nor was there a sensation of weightlessness – it was exceptionally smooth.

So smooth, in fact, that Lu Wu felt a touch of disappointment. As a young man, he had expected the flight to be more thrilling than it turned out to be.

Zhang Wentao, on the other hand, was too preoccupied to notice the subtle changes in Lu Wu's emotions. As soon as the Golden Eagle took flight, he called Lu Wu over to explain.

"Xiao Lu, the reason I called for you in such a rush is that there's a big opportunity I don't want you to miss."

"Big opportunity?" Lu Wu asked with a curious face, "What big opportunity?"

"This morning, the Sea Suppression Tower spotted a Summoned Beast Group approaching, at first thought to be led by a creature above the Lord Level, aiming to attack Fucheng.

But as the Summoned Beast Group drew closer, the Sea Suppression Tower managed to get a clear sense of the true nature of the beast swarm."

"The group of Summoned Beasts entering the Fucheng Sea Area was numerous and of varied types, but their strength was not very formidable. They were almost entirely of the Elite Level, without a single existence above that level.

Let alone Lords or anything above that."

Upon hearing this, Lu's brows immediately rose.

"How is that possible?"

Now he was no newbie and knew very well that a beast tide of this scale, capable of gathering two different types of Summoned Beasts together, would definitely require a Lord Level or above Summoned Beast to assemble.

"Could it be that they just didn't detect the Lord Level Summoned Beast's presence?"

"I went to scout personally, and indeed, no existence above the Lord Level was found," Zhang Wentao negated, "Besides, if there really were a presence above the Lord Level, the Summoned Beast Group wouldn't be at this level of power."

"Then what's the situation?"

Now Lu Wu was really curious, "Without anything above the Lord Level, how could such a scale of the Summoned Beast Group, comprised of different types of beasts, come together?"

Zhao Kai Ming, who clearly had broader knowledge than Lu Wu, combined this with Zhang Wentao's reaction and offered a conjecture.

"There's only one possibility, that within this group of Summoned Beasts, there's a cub with an exceptionally high quality!"

Zhang Wentao said excitedly, "Exactly! That's right! I suspect that among that group of Summoned Beasts, there's a cub of at least Gold quality, maybe even of King level bloodline!

Xiao Lu, this is a rare opportunity. If there's really such a cub and we find it for you to tame, you would basically have a pass straight to become a Master Summoner."

Of course Zhang Wentao was referring to a Summoner master, not a Cultivation Master.

While Lu Wu was close to Master level as a Cultivation Master, becoming a Master Summoner, without this opportunity, might be more distant.

But if he could catch that Summoned Beast cub and tame it, then the title of professional summoning master wouldn't be far off for Lu Wu either.

However, while Zhang Wentao was excited, Zhao Kai Ming was less so.

On one hand, he knew Lu Wu already possessed a Summoned Beast of this rank or even stronger.

On the other hand, Lu Wu already had a second Summoned Beast, and given his current level of spiritual power, he likely wouldn't be able to form a contract with a third Summoned Beast.

So, this cub might not have anything to do with Lu Wu.

Of course, that's not set in stone. If the little guy took a liking to Lu Wu, Lu Wu could still claim it and wait until his spiritual power was sufficient to form a contract.

However, Lu Wu was unaware of these considerations. He had never seen a Summoned Beast of higher than Gold quality before and was extremely excited about the prospect of Zhang Wentao snagging one for him.

But as the Cloud Piercing Golden Eagle drew closer to the sea area, Lu Wu began to slowly sense the contract with that second Summoned Beast that Zhao Kai Ming had mentioned earlier.

At the same time, Lu Wu noticed that his spiritual power was still slowly increasing.

This left Lu Wu somewhat confused.

An audacious thought surfaced in his mind: could the Summoned Beast that Zhang Wentao was talking about be the second one he had contracted without knowing when?

And as Lu Wu was contemplating this possibility, the expressions on Zhang Wentao and Zhao Kai Ming's faces suddenly changed as they turned to look behind them.

With this surge of realization, their expressions grew grim.

"How did the news spread so quickly?"

Following their gaze, Lu Wu saw one after another Summoned Beasts racing towards them from behind.

Each Summoned Beast had riders on its back.

And just like their own group, the riders were older individuals with young people in tow.

The faces of those young people were also filled with excitement and anticipation.

At this sight, how could Lu Wu not understand? This group of individuals was definitely there to compete for his beloved cub.

# Chapter 163: 161 Greedy for fish

At the beginning,

Lu Wu was somewhat displeased to hear that he had inexplicably acquired another Summoned Beast.

First, he had no idea when he got it.

Second, he had no clue what this Summoned Beast was like.

Surely, not just any Summoned Beast that claims to be his can actually be his?

He had to test it first, see it for himself—he needed to feel his heart go "thump, thump" at the sight of it, especially if the Summoned Beast had that "bling bling" special effect.

And now,

Although Lu Wu still hadn't seen his second Summoned Beast,

Hearing what Zhang Wentao said,

And seeing the crowd rushing over intending to compete with him, Lu Wu became nervous.

Yes, what people try to snatch from you is always the best!

With so many after it, his Summoned Beast must be the cutest one!

His precious little cutie couldn't be snatched away!

"Don't worry, with me and Old Zhao here, that cub won't be taken away!"

Zhang Wentao, sensing Lu Wu's nervousness, immediately patted Lu Wu's shoulder reassuringly.

Of course, his words weren't entirely to comfort.

There was confidence in them as well.

Though he was unsure how the news had leaked so quickly, having so many pursuing them in such a short time,

It didn't matter; in the territory of Jiangnan, Zhang Wentao was quite sure of his ability to secure the Summoned Beast for Lu Wu if he set his mind to it.

However, Zhang Wentao's confidence froze on his face almost immediately.

Because just then, a tiger's roar echoed through the heavens!

The Summoned Beasts flying behind Lu Wu and the others hesitated for a moment at the tiger roar, and the expressions of Zhang Wentao and Zhao Kai Ming turned utterly grim: "What's the situation? Why have they come as well?"

Lu Wu turned his head to look and saw a white giant tiger with wings on its ribs, speeding towards them from Fucheng.

On the back of the giant tiger stood a middle-aged man around thirty, with three young men behind him—three somewhat familiar faces to Lu Wu.

Lu Wu had a photographic memory and recognized at a glance that those were the members of the 066 Squad, one of the outside teams.

Before Lu Wu could react, two more beastly roars were heard, followed by the emergence of two more behemoths.

One was a lion, also with rib-born wings, carrying the 002 Squad, and the other was a Jiao Long, with the 044 Squad on its back.

Well, in just this short period, all three outside teams had shown up.

Their arrival redirected all the animosity toward them.

The pack of Summoned Beasts nearby encircled the tiger, the lion, and the Jiao Long, and even Lu Wu, who had been leading the pace up until then, stopped and turned back.

This Summoned Beast cub belonged to Jiangnan, and the opportunity was also Jiangnan's—they would absolutely not allow outsiders to interfere.

The other side didn't rush in blindly but stopped to wait, evidently aiming to negotiate with the people from Fucheng.

As the principal of Jiangnan University and the person in charge of the Fucheng Cultivation Center, it was up to Zhang Wentao to step forward in the situation.

"Fellas, aren't you overreaching a bit?

Today's matter has nothing to do with you, so back off!"

The first to respond to Zhang Wentao was the middle-aged man on the tiger's back—Xu Tian, the head of the admissions department for Magic City University.

"Principal Zhang, that's not quite fair.

The Alliance has rules, and wild Summoned Beasts aren't anyone's private possession.

It's not as if, just because it appeared here, it belongs exclusively to Jiangnan—that's not how it works. It's an opportunity for Summoners; anyone is qualified to subdue it, and it belongs to whoever succeeds."

Beside him, Zhu Qing from Jiangning University, also mounted on a lion, nodded in agreement: "Right, we're all part of the Alliance. Let's hope everyone can avoid being overly fixated on geography and not be too territorial."

The two echoed each other, turning the tables on Zhang Wentao.

Even though they were the aggressors, they made it sound as if Jiangnan was being petty, focused on local ties with a lack of broad-mindedness.

That really made Zhang Wentao laugh in anger—he'd seen shameless, but never this shameless.

"If that's what you're saying, then what about a few years ago when our Jiangnan students came across a Golden Quality Summoned Beast cub near Modu and your people sent them packing—how do you explain that, Magic City University? Don't you owe me an explanation?

And if Jiangning University is so open-handed, why don't you open your Secret Realm to students from outside Jiangning?"

"You people are full of double standards, guarding your own turf tightly, not letting others take as much as a glance, while you drool over what's in somebody else's bowl.

We put up with your antics during the high school Alliance tournaments, but if you take one more step today, don't blame us for not being polite!"

At Zhang Wentao's words, all the Summoners from Fucheng were stirred up and their blood boiled with excitement.

"Retreat, or battle! You choose!"

The crowd was agitated, their righteous indignation swelling in their chests.

This atmosphere was teeming with the intention that, at any disagreement, they would burst into battle with these three people.

Such ambiance squeezed the eyes of Xu Tian and Zhu Qing to mere slits.

Though they did not speak, the expression they wore was unequivocal—they had no intention of backing down!

This only intensified the already taut atmosphere.

The smell of gunpowder between the two parties grew stronger by the moment, as if ready to explode at any second.

However, just as both sides were on the verge of conflict, the person on the back of the Jiao Long, who had been silent so far, also spoke up.

"Everyone, may I say something?"

The person on the Jiao Long was a young man in his twenties, the youngest of the three visiting teachers but also the one with the most authority.

At his words, everyone fell silent.

Even the expression on Zhang Wentao's face relaxed considerably, prompting Lu Wu to take another look at the youth.

Hmm, average in appearance, not nearly as ordinary as him!

"To encounter a summoned beast of such quality is indeed a rare opportunity for us summoners; we may never come across a second chance in our lifetime."

As these words came out, the people of Jiangnan's complexions grew somber, but Xu Tian and Zhu Qing felt a surge of joy that turned quickly to apprehension.

They were pleased that a young man had stepped forward, and their objective seemed ever more likely to be achieved.

The worry stemmed from that same young man taking charge; securing the creature for themselves now seemed a daunting task.

However, at this moment, the young man didn't care about their thoughts and continued: "Since it's such an opportunity that no one naturally wants to miss,

but after all, this summoned beast appeared in your Jiangnan territory.

You have the preferential opportunity, and it wouldn't be right for us to forcibly snatch it away.

How about this proposition, our three universities will each offer 15 student exchange places to Jiangnan in exchange for our students having the chance to tame this youngling? What do you think?"

As soon as the young man said this, the people of Jiangnan visibly changed their expressions.

They were acutely aware of the value of the exchange student places the young man spoke of.

Once you become an exchange student of any university, that institution's resources basically open up to you.

Secret Realms, libraries, treasuries...

All the places that their university students could enter, exchange students could as well, and all the resources their students could access were also available to exchange students.

More importantly, exchange students had a significant advantage:

They could bring resources with them.

Everything these university students received after enrollment had to be earned and exchanged for academic points.

Whereas exchange students entered with academic points of their own, they could even exchange resources for more points.

Thus, exchange students could start off from a higher position than the host institution's own students.

Therefore, as soon as the mention of 15 exchange places per university was made, eyes on the Jiangnan side lit up.

After all, there was only one youngling, but there were 45 exchange places; they all felt it was a profitable exchange to trade 45 places for one creature!

Deep down, the people of Jiangnan knew very well that even if they managed to drive away the three foreigners, the chances of the youngling ending up in their hands were slim.

After all, there was Lu Wu, guarded jealously by Zhang Wentao and Zhao Kai Ming.

In other words, with just one sentence, the young man on the back of the Jiao Long had divided the group from Jiangnan.

This caused Lu Wu at the sidelines to feel a pang of admiration.

The decline of Jiangnan wasn't without reason, seeing these so-called strong individuals from Jiangnan, eager for gain yet shirking duty and forgetting righteousness.

With such people around, it was no wonder that Jiangnan couldn't develop.

As Lu Wu lamented internally, Zhang Wentao and Zhao Kai Ming were not pleased.

They had already decided; the creature was to be Lu Wu's, and they had already made their claims public. When this trio of outsiders interjected, it was no surprise they were upset.

Just as Zhang Wentao was about to decisively refuse, the Lu Wu behind him gave a tug.

"Uncle Zhang, let's agree to it!"

Lu Wu spoke and made a meaningful gesture to Zhang Wentao. While Zhang Wentao didn't understand, Zhao Kai Ming on the side vaguely guessed something.

"Old Zhang, maybe we should agree. After all, it's those students from their side who will be making the attempt.

I truly doubt that Xiao Lu could lose to them."

Seeing that both Lu Wu and Zhao Kai Ming were in agreement and glancing over at the Jiangnan people,

Zhang Wentao also understood that if he refused now, his own people would likely be more upset than the outsiders, so he reluctantly nodded in agreement.

"Fine. But during the taming process, apart from the students we've brought, no one else may intervene to ensure a fair competition!"

With Zhang Wentao's statement made, Xu Tian and Zhu Qing both smiled and nodded, "Agreed."

# Chapter 164: 162 Silver Quality Little Griffin

Zhang Wentao's suggestion, Zhu Qing and Xu Tian completely agreed with him.

After all, every participant was there.

If he intervened, there would be little for them to handle at all.

Thus, having only the students engage was a good idea!

They still had a chance!

The young man riding the Jiao Long didn't object, or rather, he had no intention of taking action himself.

At that time, his gaze was fixed on Lu Wu, relentlessly watching him.

This made Lu Wu quite uncomfortable.

Although he, Lu Wu, was used to being stared at by girls every day due to his 'plain' appearance, this was the first time he had experienced such attention from another man.

"This guy isn't into 'that,' is he?"

Lu Wu panicked a bit and quickly hid behind Zhao Kai Ming.

Upon seeing this, the young man on the Jiao Long touched his nose slightly embarrassed:, "Well,, since everyone agrees, let's do that. First, let's find that little one."

Nobody had any objections to the young man's words.

A group of about ten elites promptly took action again.

Over a dozen Summoned Beasts, of Lord level or even higher, flew directly towards Little Goldfish's Summoned Beast Group.

Soon, Little Goldfish's Summoned Beast Group was surrounded.

The sudden appearance of so many formidable individuals left Little Goldfish and its Summoned Beast Group completely bewildered.

How did so many terrifying figures suddenly show up?

Then, from above in the sky, the giant tiger with wings spread its formidable presence, causing the group of Summoned Beasts on the sea surface below to explode into chaos like water hitting a hot oil pan.

Scared by this display, many Summoned Beasts immediately fled.

Within moments, the team Little Goldfish had struggled to assemble over a half month was reduced to only about ten determined followers remaining with Little Goldfish.

Little Goldfish was dumbfounded!

It took a while for it to realize what had happened, and then tears of sorrow flowed.

From the beginning, it had sensed the malicious figure from its household approaching it.

It even thought that the bad guy from its home had finally noticed it had been left behind and was coming to pick it up, so touched was it, that it decided to go easy when slapping Lu Wu later.

But when the bad guy's group approached, they scared away most of its followers.

Only then did it realize, the bad guy had not come to fetch it but to bully it.

This infuriated the little creature, lucky that it couldn't speak, or else it would have cursed then and there!

Though it couldn't speak, it could shoot Water Arrows, and it had already detected Lu Wu's location, continuously spitting Water Arrows in his direction.

Although Lu Wu had not yet seen the little creature's attributes, he also sensed its grievance and discontent through the Contract, which made him feel extremely awkward.

He truly didn't mean for this to happen!

At this moment, Zhao Kai Ming watching Little Goldfish's condition, felt almost certain that this little guy was probably the one left for Lu Wu by someone.

Meanwhile, the powerful figures nearby had also pinpointed Little Goldfish.

"Is this the little goldfish? The remaining Summoned Beasts are led by it, and it's unaffected by the Lord's presence. Definitely this little guy, its quality is at least at King-level bloodline."

"Why does this little goldfish seem a bit silly, continually spitting water at us? Does it think it can kill us with a splash of water?"

"Just born little creatures, how high can their spiritual wisdom be?"

"Now that we've found it, let's not delay. Let's set a rule,"

The students brought by those elites, all eager, prepared to subdue this Legendary-level little creature.

"To tame such a Summoned Beast apart from earning its respect, there is only one way,, and that's defeating it.

It's simple. Let our people fight with it,, and whoever defeats it, will own it!"

"That makes sense, but the question is,, who will go first?

Surely we can't decide by drawing lots!"

"Let's decide based on the power of the Summoned Beasts!"

Zhang Wentao looked back at Lu Wu behind him:, "To subdue it by defeating it, the weaker beasts are at a disadvantage,, so I suggest, those with the weakest Summoned Beasts go first."

Zhang Wentao had checked, none of the Summoned Beasts present were weaker than Lu Wu's house's Little Skeleton, which would mean Lu Wu could be the first to go.

The problem was,, Lu Wu now didn't dare to go!

He could already sense Little Goldfish's anger and strength through the Contract, and he felt if he dared to send Little Skeleton down, it would probably get thrashed.

Of course, Lu Wu was purely overthinking it.

Little Goldfish didn't want to slap Little Skeleton at all; it just wanted to slap Lu Wu. Little Skeleton would be fine if sent down.

But since he didn't know that, Lu Wu felt,, it might be better to let others take the hits first. Once Little Goldfish calmed down and got tired,, he would go down.

After all, Little Goldfish was his,, having already signed a Contract,, others wouldn't be able to take it even if they defeated it.

Besides, he had already sensed the little guy's strength,, so strong that likely no one present could beat it.

So he hoped others would take the hits for him!

On this note, it was those three outsiders who satisfied him.

Precisely speaking,, it was Modu's Xu Tian and Jiangning's Zhu Qing who satisfied him.

As soon as Zhang Wentao finished speaking, Zhu Qing was the first to find an excuse:, "Principal Zhang makes a good point. Let's do this,, we have both high school and college students here. Let's divide the high school and college students and draw lots ⏤ the high school students go first, followed by the college students."

Xu Tian from the side also spoke up, "This kind of opportunity is rare, we should give young people more chances. How about this, if you all agree with this choice, Modu can have three more exchange student slots."

Upon hearing this, the people from Jiangnan lit up with excitement.

Consequently, after some negotiations, Modu, Beijing, and Jiangning eventually exchanged a total of 20 exchange student slots for Jiangnan's compromise.

Jiangnan agreed to let the high school students go first, which essentially meant agreeing to let the three parties have priority.

After all, there were only 10 high school students present, and taking Lu Wu out of the equation, the rest were all from these three sides.

This infuriated Zhang Wentao so much he almost spewed blood.

What made Zhang Wentao even more desperate was when it was decided that the high school students would go first.

One of the young people took early action, freezing the seas surrounding the little goldfish and temporarily restricting its movement. Then, they had the ten high school students present draw lots.

When the order of drawing was determined, Lu Wu's side drew number nine!

He was the ninth one among ten people; his luck was extraordinarily bad.

Zhang Wentao worried especially that Lu Wu might miss this opportunity.

After all, the trio of teams from other regions was very strong; Lu Wu might not even have a chance going later.

But neither Lu Wu nor Zhao Kai Ming were worried.

Lu Wu even felt unsure about being number nine and wondered if the first eight could placate the little goldfish.

If it didn't calm down, Little Skeleton would have to face it just the same.

Thinking of Little Skeleton possibly being battered by the little goldfish's tail, Lu Wu couldn't help but feel a wave of melancholy.

Lu Wu's sighing and lamenting appearance caught the eye of Fang Bai nearby, who glanced at Lu Wu's number and couldn't help but smirk, "Looks like your luck isn't so great!"

Lu Wu glanced at the 002 number in his hand and retorted, "Having good luck doesn't guarantee you can tame it!"

Fang Bai responded with a cold laugh.

It was clear; this guy was very confident, even believing the little goldfish was already his to claim.

In Fang Bai's view, only two people at the scene could compete with him.

One was Wang Jun, the team leader with the 044 number, and the other was Xu Yang, the team leader with the 066 number, one of whom drew the 10th slot, even unluckier than Lu Wu, and the other drew the 3rd slot, right behind him.

Ahead of him was a regular team member from 066 with decent strength, elite three stars, which was better than Zhuang Yan and Lu Wu but probably far inferior to the little goldfish.

Meanwhile, as he and Lu Wu were speaking,

the little goldfish's restrictions were already lifted, and the Summoned Beast that drew 001 was already facing the little goldfish.

The result was that this Summoned Beast had just gotten into position when it was blasted away by an angry water arrow from the little goldfish.

Seeing this, Zhang Wentao's face lit up in delight, "Number one failed, number two, you're up!"

Hearing this, Fang Bai casually adjusted his clothes, nonchalantly saying to Lu Wu, "You might as well prepare to go home."

Then, he walked toward the little goldfish with his Summoned Beast.

Each of his movements carried an unparalleled genius's commanding aura, as if the little goldfish was already his trophy.

His confidence stemmed entirely from the Summoned Beast by his side.

In that moment, Lu Wu had also seen the attributes of his Summoned Beast.

...

Name: Little Griffin (Growth Stage) (Equivalent to one evolution)

Power: three stars (Elite)

Quality: Silver (Enhanced)

Attribute: Wind

State: Fervor (It's just a mere fish)

Weakness: Ice

Basic Skills: Sprint (Mastered), Wind Blade (Mastered), Flying (Mastered)

Advanced Skills: Fierce Wind Blade (Mastered)

Talent: Bloodline Power (Active Talent) When activated, can raise strength by one level.

Basic Speed Bonus (Passive Talent) Passively increases speed by thirty percent

Description: Among griffins, this one is also considered top quality, very strong in battle!

...

This little Griffin was the source of Fang Bai's confidence.

He had already discerned that the little goldfish's strength was merely at the elite level.

Even if its quality was higher, what use was it?

His Griffin could definitely defeat it!

The power of his formidable Summoned Beast gave him absolute confidence.

Thus, as his Little Griffin stood before the little goldfish, he didn't attack first but chose to boast instead.

"Ladies and gentlemen, I'm sorry, but I'm taking this little goldfish!"

With a king's air completing his statement, Fang Bai waved his hand, and the Little Griffin immediately activated its Bloodline Power, boosting its strength to Boss Level.

Then, this little guy, with immense bravery and aggression, charged towards the little goldfish.

And then, well, after that... the Little Griffin was flung backward...

# Chapter 165: 163 Slap Lu Wu (Subscribe please)

Hmm, the reason Little Griffin was sent flying backwards from Fang Bai's house was that it got a face-full of little goldfish's salty soda spray.

In theory, a Wind Attribute creature like Little Griffin, adept at Flying and innately gifted with a Speed Boost, shouldn't be easy to hit with a spray of salty soda.

But who knew the little goldfish was specially skilled at spraying people. When it decided to hit, it hit, and Little Griffin couldn't dodge at all. It got sprayed and sent flying back.

"Garbage!"

Seeing this scene made Lu Wu even more disappointed than Fang Bai.

He had been hoping Little Griffin could wear down the little goldfish a bit. Even if the little goldfish got caught off guard and defeated, it wouldn't be a big deal.

He'd already formed a contract with the little goldfish; it'd be useless for anyone else to defeat it, unless they took out Lu Wu himself.

So, he wasn't afraid of anyone defeating the little goldfish – the ones who would be annoyed were those who did defeat it. He was just afraid the little goldfish might turn on him later.

He had a bad feeling that he might get beaten up soon!

His brain couldn't help but flash back to the miserable sight of Su Lan being pecked by birds and nibbled by dogs. Lu Wu certainly did not want to experience that.

Whether his premonition would come true or not, he wasn't sure, but the word "garbage" was particularly grating to Fang Bai's ears.

He had no rebuttal at the moment.

After all, he tried to show off and got sprayed instead. Nothing he could say would help now, so he directed his anger at his own summoned beast.

"Get up!

Try the Fierce Wind Blade!"

At Fang Bai's command, Little Griffin, which had just been sprayed and barely steadied itself, spread its wings to accumulate power. Then a dozen or so fierce Wind Blades sliced towards the little goldfish.

The attack was no joke.

Already an advanced skill, now enhanced with the power from its bloodline, the attack had reached Boss 1 Star levels.

The strike concerned Lu Wu; would the little goldfish be sliced up?

Well, it turned out Lu Wu's concerns were unnecessary.

An aura of golden energy materialized outside of the little goldfish's body, effectively blocking the wave of attacks and, while bracing against the assault, it managed to spit out another jet of water.

Then, Little Griffin was sprayed and sent flying once again.

This time, Little Griffin got it even worse, smacking into the ground, unable to get back up.

Within three rounds, an Elite summoning beast, capable of Leader Level attacks after releasing its Big Move, was utterly defeated.

This left the bystanders completely dumbfounded.

This little goldfish was only palm-sized, power at Elite Level, seemingly not even three stars, yet it was so terrifyingly powerful. Could this be an opponent that their fellow Boss Level high schoolers could even hope to defeat?

Up above, the big shots began to see what was going on.

"That's not right, that's not the little goldfish's actual power. It's borrowing strength from those summoning beasts behind it. We must sever its link to the other beasts, or on their own, they have no chance of beating it!"

Xu Tian sensed something was amiss. He was about to act and cut off the connection between the little goldfish and its small army of minions when Zhu Qing stopped him.

"It would be somewhat unfair to those who already tried if we disrupt it now. If you cut the connection, they have to start over from scratch."

Clearly, he was trying to give Fang Bai another chance.

At that moment, a youngster riding on a Jiao Long casually commented, "Let's keep it as it is for now. I like it this way."

Once he spoke, no one dared to object.

And thus, the attempts to master the little goldfish – er, rather, the series of beatings that ensued – began.

Even Fang Bai, with his messed-up appearance, didn't stand a chance. Neither did the others.

From contestants number 3 to 6 who entered the final ring, it was a moment in, moment out affair. None could withstand a second blow.

It wasn't until contestant number 7, Xu Yang, that there was something worth watching, but even then, it was only because he was better prepped than Fang Bai, lasting two rounds before defeat.

With Xu Yang out, it was now the turn of contestant number 8, Lu Wu.

He was even more panicked now. He could sense the little goldfish's mood becoming more irritable, and he was sure he would be punched upon entering the ring.

So, he became somewhat flustered and consulted with Wang Jun at his side.

"How about you go in first?"

Wang Jun just looked at Lu Wu and smiled without a word. With no other choice, Lu Wu touched his nose and, with Little Skeleton by his side, took a tentative step toward the little goldfish.

The closer he got to the ring, the more he felt the little goldfish's tail seemed eager to strike.

He had an uneasy premonition that perhaps, maybe, the little goldfish was indeed preparing to slap him.

This left Lu Wu feeling wronged and on edge.

He walked slower and slower. The twenty-meter distance took him three minutes to cover, leaving the onlookers impatient.

Fang Bai, who had just embarrassingly failed, taunted directly, "Can't you hurry up? You have no hope of mastering it anyway. What's with the dawdling?

A chop to the stretched neck or a head in the shell, it's still a chop!"

Lu Wu immediately became unhappy, "Who told you I can't master it?

I'll have you know, it's my summoning beast!"

Provoked by Fang Bai's words, Lu Wu suddenly lost his nervousness. He marched toward the final ring with Little Skeleton, his strides brisk, emanating an air as somber as the chilling winds of Yi River.

Yes, to Fang Bai and the others, Lu Wu was just offering his head for the chopping block.

Not just Lu Wu; aside from those heavy hitters, everyone in the face of the little goldfish was just fodder.

Eight matches had revealed the little goldfish's strength.

Its level might be around Elite 2 Star, but its combat power was decisively Boss Level, maybe even Boss Level 3 Star.

An entity like that, their entire group stood no chance.

However, Fang Bai and his peers hadn't lost hope, because the big shots told them that the little goldfish's strength came from a special skill. Once their round of high schoolers all lost,

they planned to sever the little goldfish's special skill and give it another go. In a rematch, Fang Bai felt he still stood a decent chance.

So, he was eagerly awaiting for Lu Wu to quickly deliver his head.

They were all no match for the little goldfish. And Lu Wu's Little Skeleton? Wasn't that just another head for the taking?

```

Well, no sooner had Lu Wu gone inside than he was flying out again.

Fang Bai got excited as soon as he saw this.

"Lu Wu has flown out, number 9 has failed, switch... wait, why has Lu Wu flown out?"

Fang Bai was a bit confused, and Lu Wu was even more so.

On one hand, it was because he realized he was yanked from inside and sent flying more than ten meters without seeming to sustain any injury.

On the other hand, it had to do with the little goldfish's attributes.

......

Name: Little Goldfish (One Evolution)

Power: 2 Stars (Elite)

Quality: ??? (Don't ask, just knows it's terrifying)

Attribute: Water

State: Extremely Angry (The little goldfish wants to slap Lu Wu, wants to slap him many, many times!!!)

Weakness: None

Basic Skills: Tail Slapping (Master), Glowing (Master), Lighting (Master), Water Transformation (Master), Water Arrow (Master)

Advanced Skills: A Mouthful of Salted Soda (Master) (Special Water Advanced Magic with Locking Attack capability)

Slap Lu Wu (Master) (A skill awakened by the little goldfish's desire to slap Lu Wu, with the power to slap as hard or soft as it wishes.

PS: Let it slap you more often, the skill might even level up!)

Talent: Child of the Sea (passive skill) Automatically increase a level in power when in the sea

PS: Effective below Lord level, can only increase by one star above it

Commander of the Water Clan (active skill) Conquer Water Summoning Beasts by defeating them and gain followers.

PS: Followers are divided into core followers and ordinary followers. Core followers have a contract with the little goldfish and it can borrow their power for battle. Below Lord level, it can increase by one major level.

[Basic Magic Enhancement] [Water Magic Power Enhancement]

???,???

Description: This is your little goldfish, which you locked in your closet for several months, barely managed to hatch from its egg, and then you forgot it in Quan City. It has come a long way with its followers just to slap you.

......

Upon seeing these attributes, Lu Wu was stunned.

Despite having estimated the creature's power as high as possible, he hadn't anticipated the little thing to be so terrifying.

Especially the "Child of the Sea" and "Commander of the Water Clan" talents.

Are these even talents? They're more like cheats, aren't they?

With these two talents, the little goldfish's combat power could reach leader level directly, which was horrifyingly powerful.

As it turned out, it hadn't even used its full strength up until now.

Although this power heavily relied on the environment, falling back to its original form once separated from the sea and from its followers, even the original form was quite terrifying.

Two advanced spells, one of which was a [Master] level skill.

Keep in mind, Lu Wu had seen only two skills at master level proficiency so far, the last was Er Ha's strange skill [Demolition] from Su Lan's household.

Unlike those, his little goldfish has a master level skill that is, erm, um, called [Slap Lu Wu]. The name might seem silly, but isn't that full of love for him?

Lu Wu looked at the description again.

Even more confused, he locked this little guy in the closet for several months?

When did that happen?

When had he abandoned this cute little creature?

Lu Wu felt unjustly blamed and especially resentful; he genuinely had no memory of the incident.

Then he looked again at the little goldfish who had slapped him once and ignored Little Skeleton. It had bolted out of the water to the edge of the finals circle, staring at him, exceptionally angry and resentful, and, um, particularly looking forward to another slap.

Lu Wu felt it was time to make some things clear.

So he crawled to the edge of the finals circle, arranged by the bigwigs, and faced off with the little goldfish across the circle's boundary.

The little goldfish tried to slap Lu Wu several times but couldn't. Its state then immediately changed: Get in here!

"I'm not going in, if I do, you'll slap me!"

Lu Wu shook his head furiously while trying desperately to think of how to soothe the little goldfish.

"Little goldfish, listen to me, I didn't intentionally leave you behind, it was, it was... it was him!"

Lu Wu stammered for a while, but after seeing Little Skeleton, he decided to pass the buck to it: "Actually, I did think of opening the closet and bringing you with me that day, but Little Skeleton rushed out too eagerly and that's why I didn't open the door. It's all Little Skeleton's fault, you slap it!"

The heartless guy, to avoid being slapped himself, pointed the finger directly at the bewildered Little Skeleton.

The guileless little goldfish was momentarily confused and turned its head to look at Little Skeleton as if pondering whether what Lu Wu said was true.

Just then, a young man atop Jiao Long gently flicked his hand and a force came from behind Lu Wu, pushing him into the finals circle, right in front of the little goldfish.

In that moment, man and fish locked eyes, and the little goldfish's tail started to wriggle in anticipation.

Lu Wu, not accepting his fate, tried to struggle: "Look, let me explain…"

"Whoosh!"

Um, his words were cut off as he was sent sky-high.

The little goldfish had learned its lesson and didn't send Lu Wu flying out of the finals circle again; instead, it began to slap him around inside the circle like a ball...

......

Thanks for the rewards from [Lve Lve Lve Lve Little Whisper], [I am a mask monster], [Young Master Mo of the Shen household]

Sigh, updated early

```

# Chapter 166: 164 playboy

Fucheng Sea Area.

Seeing Lu Wu being tossed around like a ball by the little goldfish, most of the spectators were utterly stupefied, save for a few.

At first, Zhang Wentao was very anxious and prepared to rescue him right away, but he was held back by Zhao Kai Ming.

"What are you doing?"

Zhang Wentao was furious. Pulling him back now—was he trying to get Xiao Lu killed?

However, when he saw Zhao Kai Ming pointing at Little Skeleton who was either indifferent or completely dumbfounded,

Zhang Wentao paused, taking a closer look at Lu Wu's side.

He realized that although Lu Wu was being slapped around and shouting quite loudly, he seemed unharmed and full of energy.

At this point, it was obvious that little goldfish was holding back.

Without holding back, given Lu Wu's amateurish skills, little goldfish could have slapped Lu Wu into oblivion with one strike.

As soon as Zhang Wentao realized little goldfish was pulling its punches, he couldn't help but burst out laughing.

It was clear that Lu Wu and little goldfish had hit it off, although their way of getting along was somewhat special.

He could laugh about it, but many others were close to tears.

There's no need to mention Fang Bai and his group; the fish that was almost in their mouths had flown away.

They stood there, their brains buzzing, completely unsure where they had gone wrong.

Their Summoned Beasts were stronger than Lu Wu's, right?

Then they thought about how little goldfish kept targeting Lu Wu's face and buttocks instead of Little Skeleton, and it just slapped away. Could it be that they had lost based on looks, on those unspeakable parts?

This thought only made them even more depressed.

Fang Bai and his group were just depressed, but Xu Tian and Zhu Qing felt like vomiting blood.

They had already figured out from the interaction between little goldfish and Lu Wu, that little goldfish could have been his to begin with.

In other words, they had offered twenty exchange student spots only to fight over someone else's 'wife'.

No wonder they felt terrible.

The two could hardly resist causing a scene, aiming at least to recapture the exchange student spots they had surrendered.

But at that moment, the young man on Jiao Long's back spoke leisurely, "Now that everything has settled, let's head back.

Principal Zhang, the exchange student spots can take effect immediately. We are always welcoming whenever you decide to send them."

After leaving these words, the young man led the 044 team away directly.

Xu Tian and Zhu Qing were deflated at his sudden interruption.

One reason was that the other party had accepted the outcome, and for them to make a fuss now would seem petty.

Another reason was that they vaguely realized something.

They had come today for little goldfish, but the person on Jiao Long's back might not have the same motive.

He might have known from the very beginning that little goldfish was taken.

Under these circumstances, the exchange student spots he had offered were probably for the arrangement of someone beneath them.

If that was the case, the person below might have some connections with the one on Jiao Long's back.

If a genuine dispute arose, that person might come back to slap them.

So, when that young man left, they too departed, and the rest from Jiangnan also left without delay, casting envious glances at Lu Wu before departing.

In a short while, only Lu Wu, who kept being slapped around, and Zhang Wentao and his crew were left.

Of course, Lu Wu was unaware of all this.

Where did he have the time to care about these things?

At this moment, he was profoundly experiencing what one calls Master Level skill.

Even though he was slapped a dozen meters away, repeatedly pulled in different directions, Lu Wu felt nothing but dizziness without actually being hurt.

But even if he wasn't hurt, that didn't mean he could stand it!

Right now, he was excessively agitated, feeling like he was on a roller coaster with broken safety measures, not knowing when little goldfish might fail to catch him and he'd be done for.

Lu Wu was panicking wildly, but little goldfish just kept slapping more eagerly, and no matter how much he pleaded, it didn't help. Helpless, Lu Wu could only pin his hopes on Little Skeleton coming to his rescue.

When Lu Wu didn't call for Little Skeleton, he was better off, but as soon as he did, he became even more panicked.

Little Skeleton did heed Lu Wu's call and charged over, only to be sent flying by little goldfish.

And then little goldfish went from playing one ball with Lu Wu to playing with two.

Simultaneously slapping Lu Wu and Little Skeleton back and forth, Lu Wu's heart was close to breaking.

What made Lu Wu even more furious was that Little Skeleton appeared to be quite enjoying itself.

Thankfully, Zhang Wentao wasn't just standing by laughing foolishly; he took action in time to rescue Lu Wu from this awkward situation.

After being slapped around for a good while, his feet finally touched the ground, and Lu Wu almost burst into tears with relief.

It was just his two little fellows who were a bit disappointed.

Little goldfish was dissatisfied with slapping Lu Wu around just for a bit, and Little Skeleton also seemed to want more.

Clearly, this little guy treated it all like a fun game.

He even looked at Lu Wu and asked if he wanted to go another round.

Seeing Little Skeleton's state, Lu Wu was infuriated and went up to knock Little Skeleton's head three times.

"Let you play! Let you play! Let you play!"

After knocking on Little Skeleton, Lu Wu then turned to look at little goldfish.

The little goldfish had already given him a beating, yet it was still throwing a tantrum now.

Turning around, it showed its back to Lu Wu and wouldn't look at him, with an "I don't want to deal with you" little attitude.

Upon observing the little goldfish's state once more, Lu Wu thought, yup, just two words, "Pamper me"!

Right then, his head buzzed—where did this little housewife come from? Who had the little goldfish learned this behavior from?

It had beaten him up and now it wanted him to coax it?

But Lu Wu had no other choice but to go over and pick up the little creature.

Despite the little goldfish having slapped Lu Wu so hard that he took flight, it was actually palm-sized. Lu Wu could hold the little goldfish in his cupped hands.

Plus, the little goldfish was all chilly and cool to the touch, holding it felt incredibly good, and Lu Wu felt his heart melting.

At first, the little goldfish seemed very reluctant to be held by Lu Wu.

It squirmed, just like a sulky little housewife, trying to leap from the palm of his hand.

If a young girl acted this way, Lu Wu would definitely be at a loss, but he had ways to deal with the little goldfish.

As a man endowed with Golden Finger, Lu Wu could clearly see the little goldfish's state, and he was determined to become the playboy of Summoned Beasts.

Hence, instead of letting go, he held the little goldfish even tighter, whispering softly, "Let's go, I'll take you home!"

With one sentence, the little goldfish was completely subdued...

...

Meanwhile, at the same time as the little goldfish was being subdued by Lu Wu,

across the way, the young man on the Jiao Long's back had set down Squad 044 and was making a phone call.

A voice full of mature charm came through on the other end of the line.

"How is it? Is it the one he took away that year?"

"Yes, judging by the aura and bloodline, it should be that one," the young man thought of the little goldfish he saw earlier and nodded his head.

This response caused a brief silence on the other end.

After a while, the voice asked, "What about that child? What's their relationship with him? Disciple or adopted son?"

The young man thought back to Lu Wu's series of actions in front of the little goldfish.

A twitch formed at the corner of his mouth—could he say he felt the kid was his own flesh and blood?

Ultimately, considering the potential consequences, the young man decided it was better to feign ignorance, and it seemed the person on the other end wasn't expecting or didn't want to get an answer from him.

"Nevermind, these trivial matters aren't necessary for me to know.

Since he has contracted that Summoned Beast, tell him to make a trip here as soon as possible.

Also, don't interact with him too much during this time, don't let that woman notice anything.

If that woman notices something, you know what the consequences will be!"

After saying this, the other side abruptly hung up the call.

Leaving the young man on this end utterly baffled and feeling helpless.

However, before he could even gather his thoughts, another call came in within two minutes.

This time, the ringing was followed by a voice filled with an authoritative tone.

"Liu Cheng! You're doing well, aren't you!"

No, I'm not doing well!

The young man, or shall we say, Liu Cheng, upon hearing the voice and the words, instantly broke out in a cold sweat.

"Isn't there some kind of misunderstanding?"

"Misunderstanding? Then you tell me, what are you doing here in Jiangnan?"

"I am..."

Liu Cheng opened his mouth intending to say he came with Squad 044 to pick peaches, but he couldn't finish his sentence.

He remembered that this was their territory.

He couldn't use that excuse; saying so would be akin to slapping them in the face.

If he said that, it would spell trouble. But it seemed he might be in trouble even without using that excuse.

"Go on, why have you stopped talking?"

"Well, I came because I sensed the birth of a Summoned Beast with Dragon Clan aura here in Jiangnan."

Liu Cheng had no choice but to steel himself and selectively mention what he could.

"Was it you who sensed it, or did she sense it? Or was it he who notified you?"

The person on the other end said this with a hint of hope.

Liu Cheng knew what she was hoping for, but it wasn't why he came.

"I can't hide it from you, she was the one who noticed it."

Liu Cheng didn't dare to mention the name of the previous person in front of this one, fearing it would incite her anger.

But even though he didn't mention the person's name, she got angry nonetheless.

"So you mean to say, you've helped an outsider deceive your Master Mother?"

At that moment, Liu Cheng felt like he was about to have a stroke.

He finally understood the kind of life his unreliable master was leading.

At the same time, it also made Liu Cheng for the first time truly believe his master's teachings were sincere.

Men, you really shouldn't be a playboy!

# Chapter 167: 165 The little goldfish that loves to dive into the toilet

Liu Cheng finally understood the difficulties his master had faced.

He truly experienced what a chaotic scene is!

He also realized the threat of death on a very personal level!

So, he ran away that very day.

He didn't buy a standing ticket, nor did he take a train; he ran carrying a train!

As soon as he ran away, Lu Wu caught the eye of that person.

Well, okay, even if he didn't run, Lu Wu couldn't have hidden.

But that person didn't come to find Lu Wu immediately. Instead, they sent people to meticulously investigate Lu Wu's family background.

Although they had already investigated before, they had to do it again.

Because the results of the previous investigation were not what she had wanted.

She absolutely refused to admit that Lu Wu was Lu Haikong's son; she was even less willing to admit that Lu Haikong was Lu Haikong.

Compared to this, she was more willing to believe that Lu Haikong saw Lu Wu's talent and decided to cultivate it on a whim.

Otherwise, if Lu Haikong was Lu Haikong and Lu Wu was his son, what did that make her?

The mistress?

And of all this, Lu Wu was oblivious.

He was busy bonding with little goldfish.

Summoned Beasts are like wives; the newer, the better.

Suddenly having such an awesome Summoned Beast that wanted to challenge his own, Lu Wu obviously had to cherish and cultivate a good relationship with it.

In terms of nurturing the affection of Summoned Beasts, Lu Wu made pleasing progress thanks to having the system as a Golden Finger.

If the little goldfish's affection for him was around 50 at first sight, by the time Lu Wu brought little goldfish home,

the affection between the man and the fish had almost reached 90.

In the settings of some less reputable games, this level of affection would allow for some indecent activities that can't be described.

Besides, Lu Wu, while raising his and little goldfish's affection, also figured out when he had contracted with the little goldfish.

According to the clues, it seemed that he had a Contract with the little goldfish while in Quan City.

It said it had been in a dark box for a long time and could feel them walking around every day.

Combining this with the system, Lu Wu confirmed that this little one was actually in his wardrobe.

So, the questions arose: Who put this little goldfish in his wardrobe? And how did he contract with it?

This made Lu Wu involuntarily recall the apple Dudu had eaten and once again doubt his old man.

"I've always felt that the old guy was no simpleton.

Uncle Zhao was a bit off the first time he saw him, and after that, he became inexplicably enthusiastic towards me.

Also, he's been elusive recently. I've asked several groups to find him without success. He only sporadically sends messages asking me to send money."

Mmm, just at that moment, Lu Wu's phone pinged with a new message.

It was from his unreliable father.

Same brief content.

I, Lu Haikong, send money!

Lu Wu was instantly frustrated and replied succinctly, "Raising fish, no money, won't send!"

After sending the message, Lu Wu tossed his phone aside, along with the question of whether little goldfish was given by Lu Haikong.

In fact, on related issues,

Lu Wu had always been deliberately avoiding them.

He was quite stubborn; when he first transmigrated, he didn't handle the relationship with his family well.

His acceptance of his transmigrated family happened gradually after Lu Haikong came back.

But what he accepted was a father who was ordinary and unreliable yet deeply loved his wife, liked to squirrel away money, and occasionally got tricked by him into kneeling at the computer.

A mother who was tender to him but showed her temper towards Lu Haikong.

An ordinary and warm home.

If he found out now that this father suddenly became a big shot, the father figure he knew would collapse.

Then, all the moments that moved him before could become uncomfortable ones.

He wouldn't know how to face this family anymore.

So, there were some issues Lu Wu would explore only to a certain extent, and then he'd prefer not to go any further.

He feared getting a result he didn't know how to face.

The apple incident was one such issue, and the origins of little goldfish were another.

Despite having some guesses in his heart, he didn't want to face them and simply cast the matter aside.

Then, he refocused his attention on the upcoming finals of the high school competition.

This was probably another form of ostrich mentality!

While Lu Wu centered his focus on the upcoming high school competition, his sharp intelligence once again seized the high ground.

His brain was working particularly fast.

Quickly, Lu Wu gained a clear understanding of the competition.

"Right, Little Skeleton has to fight in the finals!"

"Although I now have two Summoned Beasts, the second one, little goldfish, is especially awesome.

But little goldfish's strength is limited; in the presence of the sea and its minions, its Combat Power can reach Leader Level!

But the competition can't be held in the sea, and it can't bring its minions along.

So if we let little goldfish fight in the competition, its ultimate Power would only be Elite 2 Star."

That was one point.

But it wasn't the most important one.

"The most important thing is, the high school competition is not just a competition for me, it's also advertising!

Take today's playoff for example, advertisements broadcast from this morning till now, 10 pm, have added almost 3,000 points to my nearly depleted account in just 12 hours.

During the finals, the advertising revenue could be even more, but if little goldfish were to fight, this income wouldn't disappear, though it would drastically decrease."

After all, having little goldfish fight in the competition and then airing Little Skeleton's advertisements was somewhat peculiar and could affect the advertising effect.

Therefore, if possible, the high school competition should definitely feature Little Skeleton.

That's how to maximize benefits.

However, Little Skeleton's current Power was still lacking a bit.

If he wanted to use Little Skeleton in the competition, he would have to use the week before the top eight starts to enhance Little Skeleton's Power.

Of course, Lu Wu wasn't someone who always chose hard mode for himself.

"In that case, I need to study the White Bone Wild Boar intensively during the next week and try to enhance its Power, so it can achieve Evolution, or maybe even turn it into a Wild Boar Knight.

And as for the goblin, it's already had its Eighth shot, and now that I have the money, I should get ready for its Ninth.

Lastly, there's Dudu.

She's the least of my worries; she and Tuantuan just need to eat.

Tuantuan even awakened a Talent where eating makes her stronger, doesn't she want to drink Little Skeleton Soup?

Once I've stewed the boar, I'll dunk Little Skeleton in for a bit, then trick her into coming over for soup.

Of course, I also need to back up little goldfish's information; if all else fails, I'll have to let little goldfish enter the fray."

Quickly, Lu Wu's clever brain had arranged all the work for the coming week.

After organizing everything, Lu Wu, the workaholic, began to immerse himself in a frantic state of work.

But when Lu Wu buried himself in work, the little goldfish became unhappy.

It had just returned home and wasn't used to Lu Wu's frenzied state of work.

Moreover, having been sweet-talked by Lu Wu all the way home, little goldfish now, like a lovesick young bride, particularly liked to stick close to Lu Wu.

But now that Lu Wu was busy working, he ignored it.

The disparity between the attention it received on the way compared to now was quite large, leaving little goldfish feeling unhappy.

Fortunately, it had already observed Lu Wu in this state for several months while hiding in the closet and knew he could sometimes be like this.

So its affection didn't drop too much, just 10 points.

Lu Wu, noticing the drop in affection from little goldfish, casually petted it, displaying his Summoner's playboy Talent, quickly raising its affection level again, and coaxed little goldfish to go out and play with Little Skeleton.

Little goldfish obediently came out to look for Little Skeleton, but Little Skeleton was busy looking at a phone and indicated it didn't want to play.

Having grown a bit more familiar with both Lu Wu and Little Skeleton, and finding neither of them willing to keep it company, little goldfish became upset again and went to the toilet where it 'plopped' back into the bowl and left!

However, little goldfish's departure wasn't a dramatic exit in a huff.

It simply went out to check on its minions.

Lu Wu's villa was by the sea anyway, making it particularly convenient for little goldfish to go out, with just a dive into the toilet and a turn in the sewer -- it was back in the sea in no time.

It didn't linger in the sea for long.

After wandering around a bit, gathering its core minions, recruiting some new ones, little goldfish returned the way it came.

Coincidentally, when it returned, Lu Wu was in the bathroom.

They had an especially awkward eye contact.

Lu Wu looked at the fish, and the fish curiously looked at Lu Wu's...

# Chapter 168: 166 White Bone Wild Boar Evolution

Ever since I encountered the little goldfish in the toilet.

Lu Wu, who was originally busy, took the time to have a good chat with the little goldfish about this matter.

After he found out that the little goldfish was sneaking out to play through the toilet.

Lu Wu hastily gave the little goldfish a basic education.

He told it that the toilet was meant for going to the bathroom.

You're not supposed to crawl into it; it's dirty!

Then the little goldfish produced a golden protective shield over its body, burrowed into the toilet right in front of Lu Wu, then came back out and showed him through its actions that it wasn't afraid of getting dirty.

It even insisted on nudging up against Lu Wu's nose, asking him to sniff and see if it smelled nice?

Lu Wu's head was buzzing at the time.

His facial expression was especially contorted.

Is this a matter of whether you, little goldfish, are afraid of getting dirty or if you smell nice?

Finally, it took Lu Wu a whole half day to barely convince the little goldfish not to crawl into the toilet or leave the house on its own.

After sorting this out and seeing the little goldfish swear solemnly that it wouldn't crawl into the toilet or leave the house on its own anymore.

Only then was Lu Wu reassured and continued with his own business.

But he had only been busy for a few hours when the little goldfish caused trouble again.

Indeed, the little goldfish was no longer crawling into the toilet or recklessly leaving the house.

But it called its minions over.

Twenty-odd summoned beasts took the route pointed out by the little goldfish through the sewage system, and thankfully Li Kai discovered this quickly. Otherwise, those twenty or so summoned beasts would have all crawled out of Lu Wu's house's toilet.

By then, Lu Wu's new house would be ruined!

Once this happened, Lu Wu had no choice but to stop his work again and deal with the little goldfish's problem.

By now, he had seen that the little goldfish and Little Skeleton were completely different in terms of personality.

Little Skeleton was a domesticated one, raised from having very little spiritual wisdom to present conditions, and its temperament was much more docile compared to the little goldfish. Plus, with a cell phone to play with and a piggy ride, it could spend the whole day at home doing nothing.

But not the little goldfish!

The little goldfish was born to be free-range, albeit passively so, but it had indeed been out half a month.

Half a month was enough for a juvenile like the little goldfish to become wild.

With a wild child like that, it was very difficult for Lu Wu to keep it confined at home and not let it go out.

Keeping it indoors would mean no outlet for its energy, and it would surely find trouble for Lu Wu every day.

This wasn't good for Lu Wu, nor was it good for the little goldfish.

So, Lu Wu thought, why not just let the little goldfish go?

Anyway, he could not cultivate it by keeping it by his side; the creature's quality was high, and it did not require much work from him.

If he let it go, it might even grow better on its own.

Finally, after consulting Zhang Wentao and confirming that it would be okay to release the little goldfish into nearby waters to have fun, Lu Wu set the little goldfish free to roam.

As long as it reported back every day, it was free to play as it liked.

Once the little goldfish was let out to roam, it was thrilled and took its minions to the nearby waters to round up more minions.

Lu Wu was also pleased; he could now fully dedicate himself to his work.

Without the little goldfish causing trouble, Lu Wu's work went especially smoothly.

In a week's time, Lu Wu completed the entire cultivation plan for the White Bone Wild Boar, which had initially been half-researched.

And before the top-eight competition started, he compiled the Braised Pork Ribs cultivation plan series for the White Bone Wild Boar.

On this basis, he added the Little Skeleton Soup series and the knowledge points from Little Skeleton's previous evolution warrior path that he had studied.

Then, spending a whole five thousand points, he made another big pot of soup.

"I've realized that spending points is really getting out of hand. I thought the 3,500-point soup I made for Little Skeleton was insanely expensive, and now, not long after, I've gone and spent 5,000 points on soup.

At this rate, can I make money as fast as I can spend it?"

Looking at the pot in front of him that cost him nearly half the income from a bonus competition advertisement, Lu Wu's heart bled.

Beside him, Little Skeleton's eyes were emitting light, and it kept asking Lu Wu,

'Are you going to stew Little Skeleton? Are you going to stew Little Skeleton?'

"It's not about stewing you; it's about stewing your pig!

Release your pigs!"

On hearing that it wasn't itself being stewed, Little Skeleton felt somewhat disappointed, but still released the three pigs from its cell phone.

After placing the three pigs into the super large pot of soup, Lu Wu also threw in the three skeletons he had obtained from the Professional Center last time.

Finally, Lu Wu covered the pot.

"We'll have results in three hours."

Lu Wu didn't waste those three hours either.

He logged into the intranet and uploaded the Braised Pork Ribs cultivation plan series for the White Bone Wild Boar that he had researched.

Normally, the plans uploaded by Lu Wu would be picked up by the Fu City Professional Center's First World.

But this time, the Fu City Professional Center was a step behind, and as soon as Lu Wu had uploaded it, it was snapped up by the Jiangbei Professional Center.

"What's going on?"

As soon as Lu Wu saw the words 'Jiangbei,' he had a bad feeling.

Indeed, several hours passed after this plan was taken, and there was no news.

If it had been another Professional Center, Lu Wu would have thought it normal, but with Jiangbei, it felt bad to him.

But there was nothing he could do about it for the time being, he could only wait for a response from Jiangbei.

"Never mind them for now, let's go check on my pigs first!"

Lu Wu said and turned off the internal network, returning to the Cultivation Room.

He instructed Little Skeleton to open that pot of soup.

The moment the pot was opened, a figure rushed out, its long spear piercing Little Skeleton's head.

With movements as quick as lightning, it was fortunate that Lu Wu had been cautious not to lift the lid himself, or he would probably have been finished by now.

Little Skeleton reacted swiftly, a Bone Shield instantly appearing to block the spear, as it let go of the Bone Staff in its command, slamming the figure back into the soup. At the same moment, the three pigs in the soup, which had been still until now, also acted on Little Skeleton's command, swiftly suppressing the figure.

In the blink of an eye, it was all over.

Once the figure was suppressed and Lu Wu confirmed there was nothing wrong with the soup, he then went to assess the outcome of this soup brewing session.

First, Lu Wu looked at the Little Skeleton that had attacked Little Skeleton.

......

Name: Strong Skeleton Gun Warrior (One-Time Evolution)

Power: 1 Star (Elite)

Quality: Ordinary

Attribute: Undead

State: Swollen (It thinks it's very strong and even wants to fight)

Weakness: Light, Fire, Thunder

Basic Skills: Thrust (Master), Sprint (Master)

Advanced Skill: Heart Piercing Shot (entry-level)

Talent: Basic Gun Mastery (Increases the power of gun skills by fifteen percent)

Companion Equipment: Bone Spear (Black Iron Quality) (A spear formed from the skeletons of the other two Little Skeletons that didn't survive the evolution.)

Description: The strong Little Skeleton from last time has evolved. You can try to train it into a Skeleton Knight.

......

"Not bad, although we didn't get a Wild Boar Knight, at least there's some hope," said Lu Wu, nodding his head, then turned to look at the three pigs.

......

Name: Iron Bone Wild Boar (One-Time Evolution)

Power: 2 Stars (Elite)

Quality: Ordinary

Attribute: Undead, Skeleton

State: Satisfied (Soaking in the soup is great, strength is surging out)

Weakness: Light, Fire

Basic Skills: Wild Boar Charge (Master), Bone Shooting (Master)

Advanced Skill: Iron Bone State (Master) (A skill fused from Bone Armor and Defensive Stance, greatly enhancing defense when activated)

Talent: Basic Physical Defense Enhancement

Description: You're in luck, this soaking evolved the three pigs directly, making a considerable leap in their strength.

......

Looking at the attributes of the three pigs, Lu Wu's lips curled up into a smile.

"Very good, those 5,000 points were well spent. Although we didn't get a Wild Boar Knight, we've managed to get them straight to Elite 2 Star.

"With the three of them plus Little Skeleton, the four-on-one might even stand a chance against Fang Bai's Little Griffin."

However, this did not mean that Lu Wu's Team 042 had the strength to take on Team 002.

Little Skeleton might stand a chance against the Little Griffin, but whether it could win or not was another matter.

Even if it could win, the other two members of Lu Wu's team might not be able to take down the other two members of Team 002.

Lin Jianying's goblin had already received nine injections, but it still lacked an evolution opportunity and showed no changes yet, as for Tuantuan...

"Hmm, speaking of Tuantuan, I almost forgot about letting it have some of the Little Skeleton Soup."

Lu Wu quickly got busy, moving the advanced Little Skeleton away and securing it, then throwing Little Skeleton into the soup to reheat it for a while, and finally Lu Wu got Tuantuan over.

He hadn't let it drink the Little Skeleton Soup before for fear it might react badly, but now that its Skill had awakened, Lu Wu naturally let it drink to its heart's content, considering it a way to make use of waste...

# Chapter 169: 167 Top eight competition begins

May 27th.

Fucheng First Summoner Training Center.

The quarterfinals of the high school competition had officially begun.

During the preliminaries, the matches were not open to spectators, and aside from the contestants and people like Jiang Beifeng from the admissions office, others could hardly enter the competition area.

But the quarterfinals were different.

The quarterfinals had opened up for live audience viewing.

And so, Lu Wu saw a competition scene that was completely unlike the previous days.

The stands at their first arena venue were packed with people, many of whom carried various types of banners and props for cheering.

Lu Wu glanced over, and those banners were largely inscribed with phrases such as "042, fight on," "Sweep away the visiting teams," and "Display Jiangnan's divine might" and the like.

The moment their Team One made an appearance on the field, goodness, an ear-splitting roar erupted.

Instantly, the entire stadium was filled with voices cheering for 042.

It was pretty obvious, the entire stadium was on Lu Wu's side.

However, it wasn't because Lu Wu and his team had such great charm, but mainly because Jiangnan had been too frustrated in the high school competitions over the past few years.

Each year, the top two had been snatched away by visiting teams, trampling on the students of Jiangnan.

This infuriated the Jiangnan people greatly, but despite their anger, the people on this side had never thought about blocking outsiders from participating in the Jiangnan high school competitions.

In their view, that would be equivalent to bowing their heads to the outsiders completely, proving that Jiangnan was inferior to others.

The people of Jiangnan couldn't stand this. Rather than doing that, they preferred to see a strong team emerge from Jiangnan, a team that could crush all the visiting teams!

Therefore, this situation was not unique to this year.

For the past few years, it was basically the same, with the Jiangnan people pinning all their hopes on the ace team of the year, much like the fans of a certain soccer team placing their hopes in that team.

And the result, naturally, was the same as the fans of that certain soccer team—only disappointment was achieved.

But the following year, they would still place their hopes on the ace team from Jiangnan, just as they were now placing all their hopes on Lu Wu and his 042.

The entire venue, the whole internet, was cheering and rooting for 042.

This was an encouragement, but also an incomparably huge pressure.

Lu Wu's situation was somewhat better, as he had relatively strong resistance to pressure, but his two teammates did not have such a strong ability to handle pressure.

Amidst these cheers, Dudu's chubby hand clutched the corner of Lu Wu's clothes, once again attempting to hide her plump self behind Lu Wu's not so broad figure.

On the other hand, Lin Jianying's forehead broke out in fine beads of sweat, his face pale as a ghost.

This scene before him gave Lu Wu a sense of déjà vu.

Right, there had been a similar occasion during the Quancheng Cup.

This time, just like before, it was up to Lu Wu to reassure his teammates.

Lu Wu took hold of Dudu's chubby yet fluffy cotton-like hand and rubbed the girl's head.

"Don't worry, I'm here for you."

How else to explain why innocent children are happier?

For Dudu, who only had eyes for Lu Wu, nothing could reassure her more than these words from Lu Wu.

Just those few words, just that one affectionate tousle of her hair, and the tense Dudu gradually began to relax.

Lin Jianying, on the other hand, was not so easily comforted.

Although Lu Wu did not act like the hypocrite he'd been when facing Hao Zhijian last time, offering the same reassurance, Lin Jianying's tension did not subside with Lu Wu's comfort; it actually intensified.

Lu Wu noticed his condition and was about to help him relax.

At this moment, a staff member came over and told them to get ready.

They were not asked to prepare for the match at this point, but for the pre-match opening ceremony.

As the beginning of the main event, the quarterfinals obviously had to have an opening ceremony.

Like the last time, it would be held at Arena No. 1, which was also where today's matches were taking place.

Same location, same person hosting the opening ceremony—Jiangnan Province Governor Jiang Yuexing.

What was different was that from the original 84 teams, only 4 remained.

Lu Wu's Team had also moved up from the second row to the first row, closer to Jiang Yuexing, which allowed Lu Wu to see her more clearly.

Lu Wu had thought that Jiang Yuexing would just go through the same routine and leave.

However, to his surprise, Jiang Yuexing did repeat her previous speech, but she did not leave immediately. Instead, she headed straight for Lu Wu.

Watching the voluptuous and dignified lady approach, Lu Wu, caught off guard, was somewhat flustered.

And while Lu Wu was in disarray, Jiang Yuexing had already arrived in front of him.

She said softly, "Now that you're here, the hopes of Jiangnan rest on you this year. Don't let me down."

"Huh??"

Lu Wu was bewildered. He had never expected Jiang Yuexing to say such a thing.

It didn't sound like something a leader would say on such an occasion.

Moreover, he always felt that Jiang Yuexing's gaze towards him was somewhat off. Could she also be attracted by his "ordinary" appearance?

Did she have some improper designs on him?

Before Lu Wu could ponder more on that, Jiang Yuexing had already left the field.

The entire stadium was once again filled with deafening cheers for 042.

This made Team 002, standing not far from Lu Wu, quite annoyed.

Fang Bai particularly wanted to stomp Lu Wu's face into the ground and tell him not to get cocky just because he lucked out and tamed a Summoned Beast of King-level Quality.

They had already figured out the ins and outs of that little goldfish.

Without its little brothers, the little goldfish's power was just at the Elite Level; the victor of this match would still be them, Team 002!

But unfortunately, the current situation was clearly not the right time for provocation.

So all Fang Bai could do was glare at Lu Wu.

As he was glaring, he suddenly saw Lu Wu's chest clothing twist, and a fish head peeked out from the neckline of Lu Wu's shirt, catching sight of him.

Eyes met between man and fish, and then the little goldfish obviously showed a look of disgust and revulsion as if Fang Bai's ugliness had offended it. It quickly looked up at its owner, Lu Wu, and seemed to feel a little better, then dove back into Lu Wu's clothes.

All with a demeanor that said it did not want to see him.

Fang Bai was so angry he felt like he was going to spew blood, firm in the belief that he had lost to the fish on looks.

He swore that given the chance, he would smash Lu Wu's face to pieces.

…

Soon after, the quarterfinals opening came to an end.

The schedule for today's matches was also arranged.

Compared to the preliminary rounds, the quarterfinals schedule was much lighter with only one battle for each team today.

In total, there were four battles throughout the day.

First match: 044 vs. 018

Second match: 042 vs. 054

Third match: 002 vs. 073

Fourth match: 003 vs. 066

Hmm, when the draw results came out, Lu Wu seriously suspected that the officials were rigging the game.

All four ace teams had avoided each other.

Lu Wu's opponent was also an ordinary Seed Team.

Initially, when Lu Wu saw they were from Group B, he got a little excited, wondering if it was the Hengheng Monster.

But it turned out not to be the Hengheng Monster and her team; they were 073, the ones fighting Team 002.

"It seems I am destined not to be the one to make the Hengheng Monster cry again, although it looks like it could be fun to watch her get beaten to tears."

Lu Wu rarely talked about people behind their backs, and on the rare occasions, he did, he somehow always got overheard.

What's more coincidental is that both times the main character was the same person.

He had just finished his sentence when he heard the familiar cold snort he had heard for over half a month.

Lu Wu didn't need to look back to know he had been caught red-handed, but he was not the slightest bit embarrassed. He even turned his head to greet the Hengheng Monster, "Yo, isn't this Hengheng Monster classmate? Long time no see..."

"Don't call me Hengheng Monster!"

The Hengheng Monster was so mad she stomped her foot.

"I'm telling you, don't be too smug. I won't always lose to you, and I will win back one day!"

"Is that so? I look forward to the day. I hope it comes soon and doesn't clash with my first memorial service!"

"You, you… Hmph!"

The Hengheng Monster was just asking for trouble, as Lu Wu's words left her cold snorting, turning around and flipping her ponytail.

Looking at the Hengheng Monster whom he had almost made cry again, the magnanimous Lu Wu's mouth curved into a slight smirk.

He was utterly unaware that many people were watching this scene.

Among them was Jiang Yuexing, acting as a mascot in the front row of the spectator stand.

She wasn't sure if it was her imagination.

When she saw this scene, her gaze seemed to become a tad more dangerous.

It made Lu Wu, who had just taunted the Hengheng Monster away, suddenly shiver without reason.

"What's going on? Why does it suddenly feel colder?

Do I even feel like someone is cursing me as a scumbag?

Hmm, it must be my imagination. Besides, even if it's real, they shouldn't call me a scumbag, right? I, Lu Wu, am the most devoted one, just like my dad!"

Lu Wu might have been better off not mumbling that, because he felt even colder after saying it.

…

Some readers suggested giving Little Skeleton a name, and Nu Xiao is here to collect suggestions.

# Chapter 170: 168 Lin Jianying and the Goblin (Please Subscribe)

The top eight tournament began swiftly.

The first match was between Beijing's Team 044 and Team 018.

The two teams were simply not on the same level.

If Team 001 had made it through the additional matches, perhaps they could have put up a struggle, but with Team 018, they had absolutely no power to resist against Team 044.

Beating them felt just like Team 044 was fighting the chaff teams during the preliminaries, with only Li Kui's "Iron Armor Black Bull" needed to take care of everything.

Even Team 018's bird got taken out in a single wide-range attack by the Iron Armor Black Bull.

The match lasted less than half an hour from start to finish.

That time also included some miscellaneous minor delays, so the actual combat probably lasted less than ten minutes.

This complete domination was frustrating for the audience to watch.

After all, the team getting crushed hailed from Jiangnan.

Although they had signed with Jiangbei, they were still considered part of Jiangnan. How could the audience not feel frustrated by such a crushing defeat?

Fortunately, it was soon time for Team 042's second match.

Even though Team 042 wasn't facing an outside team, the audience was happy to see them in action as the hope of Jiangnan.

And while the audience looked forward to Team 042's shining moment,

there was a bit of trouble for Team 042. Right before the match, Lin Jianying suddenly turned extremely pale.

Lu Wu asked with concern, "What's wrong?"

"I... I need to go to the bathroom!"

Lu Wu knew he was nervous and didn't say much. He just patted his shoulder and said, "Go ahead!"

With Lu Wu's approval, Lin Jianying hurried off with the goblin in tow and rushed to the restroom.

Seeing that he had taken the goblin with him, Lu Wu knew it wasn't just a simple bathroom break.

Sure enough, Lin Jianying returned before the match started ten minutes later, his temples damp, and his cheeks slightly flushed with uneven breathing, looking somewhat embarrassed. However, the anxiety and nervousness had subsided considerably.

He even discussed with Lu Wu upon returning, "If possible, could I take the lead?"

Lu Wu looked at Lin Jianying and the goblin's state, and then nodded his head.

"Alright!"

It was just a formality match anyway; it didn't matter who took the lead.

Plus, Lu Wu had a vague guess as to what Lin Jianying had just done and understood his current state of mind.

So he didn't mind giving him this opportunity.

After getting Lu Wu's approval, Lin Jianying's face became noticeably redder. He turned and solemnly patted his somewhat dazed goblin's shoulder: "It's all on you now!"

Soon after, the second match began.

On Lu Wu's side, the goblin was the first to enter the battle, facing off against Team 054's first-pick, Cave People.

To be fair, the match was quite good.

The power of both sides was that of Elite 1 Star, so they were evenly matched.

After almost ten minutes of back-and-forth, the goblin ultimately won the battle with a Thrust attack.

Lu Wu was quite satisfied with this outcome; given that the goblin hadn't even unleashed its full potential, it was a good result. But the audience was clearly not pleased.

After all, this goblin was not just any goblin from a chaff team; it was from Team 042.

It was the goblin from the team that Jiangnan people had placed great hopes on.

Such a performance seemed poor in the eyes of the audience and didn't meet the standards of an ace team, leading to a barrage of boos.

They felt that this goblin didn't deserve to be on Team 042, which deeply affected Lin Jianying, who had just managed to muster some spirit. His complexion turned even paler and directly impacted his performance in the second match.

As a result, he made obvious errors in directing the goblin during the second match, causing it to be defeated when it could have won, which intensified the jeers from the audience.

They had pinned all their hopes on Team 042, but while Team 044 had shown such dominance, and cruised through a triple victory, what about Team 042?

Even against chaff, their first-pick goblin faltered in the second round.

This disparity made the criticism against Team 042 grow louder given the audience's prior support.

Audiences are fickle, especially when they place all their expectations on you; you can't expect them to be tolerant or rational.

The cheers and praise you receive in victory are equal in measure to the blame you must bear in defeat.

At that moment, Lin Jianying's face was deathly pale.

He hadn't expected that the opportunity he had mustered the courage for would end up in such a fiasco.

The audience's criticism and the guilt from not only failing to help Lu Wu but significantly hindering him plunged Lin Jianying into the abyss.

He could only strive with all his might to control himself and not burst into tears.

"Lu Wu, I'd like to take a break."

After saying this to Lu Wu, Lin Jianying didn't even wait for a response before taking the goblin back to the rest area.

After a few steps, he finally heard Lu Wu say, "Go ahead, I've got it here!"

These words quickened Lin Jianying's steps, hurrying the goblin back to the rest area.

After Lin Jianying withdrew, Lu Wu sent Little Skeleton into the fray.

Little Skeleton entered the battle, and with a "Thunder Strike," decisively ended the fight. When Team 054's third Summoned Beast appeared, Little Skeleton launched another "Thunder Strike," and amid the rising BGM, easily crushed the third creature, securing the victory effortlessly and dominantly.

Little Skeleton's formidable display subdued some of the scorn from the audience.

Yet criticism remained, directed at Lin Jianying.

The audience felt that Lin Jianying contributed nothing to Team 042 and was simply a drag on the team.

The discussions at the venue were restrained compared to the online commentators, who were extremely vitriolic.

Some were already pinning the blame on Lin Jianying should Team 042 fail to win the championship.

Even those with a darker side of mind came up with such a thought.

"If only Lin Jianying would suddenly drop dead right now, Team 042 could get a new member, and their hope of taking the championship would greatly increase!"

Unfortunately, Lin Jianying saw that comment.

Even though it was quickly deleted, Lin Jianying still caught sight of it.

Lin Jianying was stunned at the moment...

In fact, since Lin Jianying joined Lu Wu's team, his feelings were exceptionally complex.

On one hand, he felt gratitude and joy, but on the other, the feeling of guilt was growing heavier by the day.

After all, he was the one who initially refused to team up with Lu Wu because he didn't like Little Skeleton, even though he had his reasons and difficulties, they were never convincing enough to himself.

So, the nicer Lu Wu was to him, the less at ease he felt, and the more guilty he became.

This guilt fermented in his heart continuously, bringing tremendous pressure to his inner self.

He had always tried to think of something to help Lu Wu, to alleviate this guilt.

But no matter how hard he racked his brains, he couldn't find a way to be truly of assistance to Lu Wu.

The high school league information he worked hard to collect turned out to be useless; his gathered intel was not even close to what Lu Wu saw at a glance.

He wanted to take care of Lu Wu's daily life, to clean and cook for him, but that was Dudu's job.

In the end, he found the only thing he could do was perhaps to play well in the matches and fulfill his responsibility as a teammate, providing the greatest support to Lu Wu during the battles.

For that reason, over the past few months, Lin Jianying had been training like mad, preparing with all his might.

But it was during the battle that he realized, his diligent training hadn't really helped Lu Wu at all.

In the battle against Team 001, he was just cannon fodder, his contribution nowhere near Dudu's.

Although he defeated an opponent in today's battle, it still wasn't of much help to Lu Wu.

In other people's eyes, the greatest help he could offer to Lu Wu seemed to be to drop dead.

What terrified him more was that, at that moment, he actually found himself somewhat agreeing with that comment; then the emotions he had been trying to control completely collapsed, and he began to sob uncontrollably in the waiting room, hugging the confused goblin.

The goblin didn't know what was wrong with its master.

Nor could it empathize with its master's current state of mind.

It just felt that its master seemed very unhappy and distressed, so it grew sad too.

Eventually, the goblin's lips pursed, and it started crying along with Lin Jianying...

...

In the waiting room, Lin Jianying and the goblin wept together.

Outside, the competition continued.

After Team 042's match ended, it was the turn of Teams 002 and 073, that is, the Hengheng Monster and her team.

Another battle between aces and seeds, another battle that almost revealed the outcome from looking at the combatants.

The battle began, and without a doubt, it was another crushing situation.

Team 002's leading Elite 3 Star Summoned Beast, Little Demon, exhibited its mighty power effortlessly, defeating two of Hengheng Monster's teammates.

Just when everyone thought Jiangnan side was about to face a one-against-three defeat, Hengheng Monster's Summoned Beast took to the stage.

Her Summoned Beast was a cat with two tails.

Its Elite 2 Star power and combat prowess were quite good, and after about ten minutes of struggle, it surprisingly managed to defeat Team 002's lead Summoned Beast, Little Demon.

The result was unexpected!

The first cries of cheer came from the spectator stands. For a moment, it was as if Team 073 had won.

The cheering was even louder than when Team 042 had won their match.

This was primarily an issue of psychological expectations.

The audience had too high expectations for Team 042; anything less than a crushing victory felt like a failure, while for Team 073, just avoiding a one-against-three defeat was considered a victory.

However, this cheering wasn't good news for Lu Wu.

After Hengheng Monster's hard-won victory over Little Demon, she felt embarrassed and didn't dare to look up, thinking she had lost face.

But the cheers encouraged her, and the foolish woman became smug. She raised her head high, looking for Lu Wu in the spectator seats.

On spotting Lu Wu, Hengheng Monster couldn't help but tilt her head proudly.

This smug look made Lu Wu's teeth itch with annoyance.

The moment Hengheng Monster saw Lu Wu's grim expression, she was even more elated; originally planning to concede after one match, she now decided to fight another.

However, Hengheng Monster quickly learned a simple, unadorned truth through her actual experience.

Don't show off or you'll invite lightning strikes.

Though Hengheng Monster didn't get struck by lightning, her Summoned Beast was nearly beheaded by Wind Blade.

The one acting was the Little Griffin, which had been blasted away by a mouthful of salted soda from little goldfish.

The one commanding was Fang Bai, captain of Team 002.

This guy, after losing his first Summoned Beast, immediately took matters into his own hands, attacking with full force right off the bat, not giving Hengheng Monster the chance to concede and seriously injuring her Summoned Beast.

He was so ruthless mainly because Hengheng Monster's victory prevented them from achieving a one-against-three, putting them at a disadvantage in terms of momentum against Team 044.

But that wasn't the most important reason. What was unbearable for him was that after winning, Hengheng Monster actually flirted with Lu Wu right in front of him.

He just couldn't stand it.

He immediately seriously wounded Hengheng Monster's Summoned Beast, and then defiantly smiled at Lu Wu on the spectator stands.

Dare to show affection in front of him?

He'd twist your Summoned Beast's head sideways!

...

Thank you for the reward support from "Ah Mi Man," "Money Is Power," "Lve Lve Lve Lve Little Whisper," and "Bookfriend20171019091358474"!

# Chapter 171: 169 Semi-finals (Subscription Request)

Lu Wu said he wanted to see the Hengheng Monster cry, and indeed it did cry.

Cradling its neck area that was torn open, revealing a large wound dripping with blood, the Summoned Beast, the Hengheng Monster cried with tears streaming down like rain.

Her crying broke the audience in the arena as well.

Originally, Team 002 was already disliked by the audience because they were an outsider team.

Now, with such a harsh move that almost killed the Hengheng Monster's Summoned Beast and caused such a lovely girl like the Hengheng Monster to cry, the audience's hatred value maxed out instantly.

Lu Wu's frown deepened as well.

He clearly wasn't pleased either.

Even though he had said he wanted to see the Hengheng Monster cry, this was not the kind of crying he had meant to see.

After all, although the Hengheng Monster wasn't very smart, she was not a bad person, and Lu Wu couldn't really categorize her in the same class as Ye Qingxue.

More so, he saw the Hengheng Monster as someone to tease and bully for fun.

Seeing this silly creature bullied so severely, Lu Wu couldn't find joy in it.

And what was more important, he interpreted Fang Bai's challenge to himself.

This really got to Lu Wu.

Just that one look was enough to make Lu Wu note it down heavily when writing his diary at night.

However, the discontent of Lu Wu and the audience did not affect the outcome of the battle.

In the end, Team 002 left as victors, while Team 073, the Hengheng Monster, carried their severely injured Summoned Beast to the medical room.

Lu Wu thought for a moment, then took Dudu to the medical room to offer his condolences to the Hengheng Monster.

After all, from Fang Bai's challenging expression, it seemed that the Hengheng Monster was implicated by him.

Lu Wu originally thought that going there at this time might make the Hengheng Monster think he was there to mock her, causing her not to show him a good face.

However, to his surprise, the Hengheng Monster's face lit up with joy when she saw him come in, rushed in front of Lu Wu, took Lu Wu's hand in front of Dudu, and dragged Lu Wu into the medical room.

"You came just at the right time. The medical room only has the 'Healing Grass' on duty. It used a Healing Skill on Mimi and Mimi fell asleep. Could you check how my Mimi is doing now?"

"Not much scope..."

"What?"

"Nothing, I said let me take a look."

Lu Wu diverted his attention from elsewhere and checked the cat lying on the bed, which was recovering.

...

Name: Two-tailed Spirit Cat (One-time Evolution)

Power: 2 Stars (Elite)

Quality: Black Iron

Attribute: Fire

State: Coma (Just severely injured, though treated, the wound recovered but exhausted a lot of physical and spiritual energy, needs rest and recuperation for a while)

Weakness: Grass, Wind

Basic Skills: Bite (Master), Cat Step (Master), Cat Claw (Master)...

Advanced Skill: Fire Cat State (Master)

Talent: Agility Enhancement (Basic)

Fire Attribute Enhancement (Basic)

Description: Don't look around; this is Mimi...

...

Lu Wu felt like his home system was making things out of nothing; he hadn't been looking around.

He swore!

After all, there wasn't much to look at.

Lu Wu touched his nose and refocused his attention on this Mimi.

He spent some time helping Mimi concoct some body-nurturing potions.

For Lu Wu, this wasn't very difficult.

He had been furiously studying for half a year, had a rich reserve of knowledge, and although he didn't specialize in breeding plans for Two-tailed Spirit Cats, creating a plan for nourishing or conditioning its body was quite simple.

Lu Wu spent about an hour to come up with the plan, and after system verification found no problems, he handed the plan over to the Hengheng Monster.

Just as Lu Wu handed over the plan for treating the cat to the Hengheng Monster, a deafening cheer suddenly burst from the entire arena.

"What's going on?"

Lu Wu was startled. He had been busy with the plan and hadn't noticed the situation outside; the Hengheng Monster's two teammates immediately approached and explained.

"It's the match between 003 and 066, 003 won!"

"How is that possible!"

Lu Wu was full of disbelief.

He knew the strength of both teams, and by 003's strength, they shouldn't have been able to beat 066.

"Did 003 hide their strength? If they really hid their strength, why would they agree to be threatened by me during the preliminary rounds?"

Lu Wu couldn't figure it out.

But there was no need to think about it; seeing it would tell.

Lu Wu hurriedly left the medical room and rushed towards the arena.

When Lu Wu arrived at the arena, it was all over.

At this moment, Team 003 was enjoying their moment of victory right in the center of the arena.

And the entire audience kicked off a carnival of joy.

At that moment, each spectator looked as thrilled as if they had won a five-million-dollar lottery, overwhelmed with surprise.

Initially, they had placed all their hopes on team 042, having little expectation for team 003.

Their only wish was for team 003 not to let team 066 clean sweep through them, and not to lose too disgracefully.

Unexpectedly, in today's match,

the goblins of team 042 underperformed, while team 003, the dark horse, once again displayed their characteristic resilience and surprisingly overcame the foreign team 066.

They became the only team from Jiangnan in recent years to defeat a foreign opponent.

How could the audience not be thrilled?

They were absolutely uncontrollable with excitement!

At this moment, the arena echoed with chants of '003 is awesome' and '003 is invincible,' the slogans initially meant for 042 earlier in the day.

Even the banners had been hastily changed to team 003's.

What was initially dominated by team 042 in the morning now entirely revolved around team 003.

It's fair to say, with this battle, team 003 had made a name for themselves, completely replacing team 042 as the new hope of Jiangnan.

However, Lu Wu wasn't too concerned about this.

After all, he was broad-minded, and team 003 had indirectly helped him; if not for them, Lu Wu might not have made it into the top eight.

He was more curious about how team 003 had won, and he found his answer upon seeing the summoned beast in the arena.

…

Name: Iron Blade Mantis (One-time evolution)

Power: 3 stars (Elite)

Attributes: Metal, Grass

Quality: Bronze (Enhanced)

State: Weakness (state of weakness entered after using a special potion combined with a skill explosion, expected to last about 2 days)

Basic Skills: Drill Blade Cut (Master), Mantis Strike (Master), Block (Master)…

Advanced Skill: Iron Blade Cutting (Master)

Talents: Agility Enhancement (Basic)

Talent: Blood Burning Explosion (Active), which, after use, can increase one star in power, making the summoned beast's attacks more ferocious.

Description: Yup, you read that right—it's drugged up.

…

Upon seeing the attributes of this summoned beast, Lu Wu understood exactly what had happened.

One thing was the power of the summoned beast had increased by one star, and the other was that team 003 had used unsporting methods to win against team 066.

However, Lu Wu knew this but felt no overwhelming righteousness to call out and expose team 003.

He thought it best to pretend he hadn't seen it; after all, it wasn't him who lost.

Besides, team 066 weren't exactly saints either; they had tried to compete with him over the fish earlier, so let them lose now, he thought.

After satisfying his curiosity, what Lu Wu was most interested in now was the schedule for the next day's matches.

"If only we could be matched against team 003 tomorrow, it would be relatively easier to win as they'll be in their weak phase."

Lu Wu quietly mused, looking forward to tomorrow's match schedule.

Soon, tomorrow's match schedule was released.

018, 054, 066, 073

Four teams eliminated, leaving just two matches to be played tomorrow.

In the morning, it's team 003 against team 044, and in the afternoon, team 002 against team 042.

Clearly, fate didn't seem too fond of Lu Wu, as team 044 had snagged the easier match against team 003.

That left Lu Wu somewhat regretful, causing him to sigh deeply.

But he forgot he was still at the arena.

As the captain of team 042, although overshadowed somewhat by team 003, he still attracted considerable attention.

His sigh was noticed by many who were watching him.

Among those close to Lu Wu was Fang Bai, the captain of team 002.

Ever since Lu Wu took the little goldfish, Fang Bai's hatred for him had been soaring.

Now, he even came over to directly provoke.

"What's up? Scared? If you're scared, you can just forfeit; it's not like it's your first time!

You're pretty skilled at this."

Lu Wu couldn't be bothered with such pointless bickering and turned to leave.

He had to leave; this guy was full of animosity, and Lu Wu feared a physical confrontation might occur if he stayed.

But his departure made Fang Bai act even more arrogantly.

It also made the audience think Lu Wu was truly afraid of team 002, causing his popularity and the attention on him to drop considerably.

They turned their hopes more towards team 003.

As for that, Lu Wu didn't have much to say or care about it; the semi-finals were starting tomorrow.

Who was capable and who wasn't would be known tomorrow!

...

Please subscribe; without subscriptions, Nu Xiao is going to shrink and soften.

# Chapter 172: 170 Goblin Evolution

The high school competition's top eight advanced rapidly.

The quarterfinals began on the 27th.

The next day, it was straight to the semifinals.

And the first match of the semifinals was team 003 versus team 044!

As Jiangnan's new hope, and the only team to have defeated foreign teams in recent years, team 003 received the crowd's overwhelming support from the start of the match.

"Go team 003! Defeat team 044!"

"Go team 003! Snatch the championship!"

...

The cheers roared like the waves of the sea.

Banners and props were waved fervently.

Even a blind man could see that the audience had tremendous expectations for team 003.

They were hopeful, team 003 would recreate their past glory.

They aimed to end the history of Jiangnan high school competitions being dominated by foreign teams!

As for team 042? Well, they were once hopeful, but now? Sorry, please stand aside and cool your heels, it wasn't their turn yet.

Lu Wu wasn't too affected by this.

On one hand, it was because he was broad-minded, on the other, he had grown accustomed to such things from watching competitive matches in his past life.

Such things were common in competitions.

More than that, he was currently concerned about Lin Jianying's state.

It was evident that yesterday's defeat had hit him hard.

Although he had rested for a day, his mentality hadn't recovered, in fact, it had grown even tenser.

Because today's match was even more important than yesterday's.

Lin Jianying was truly worried about his performance today, afraid of holding Lu Wu back again, so his current emotional state was especially terrible, ready to collapse at any moment.

This worried Lu Wu, but under such circumstances, conventional consolation was useless.

To quickly stabilize his emotions, Lu Wu had to resort to an extraordinary method.

"Old Lin, this afternoon I hope you can help me take down at least one of team 002's Summoned Beasts!

Can you do it?"

Lu Wu's sudden statement caught Lin Jianying somewhat off-guard.

"I..."

Lu Wu didn't give him a chance to speak, changing his tone: "Sorry, there was a problem with what I just said.

I shouldn't have asked if you can do it, let me rephrase what I just said.

I demand that you, no matter what, must get it done!"

"But I..."

Lu Wu didn't give Lin Jianying the chance to doubt himself, cutting him off.

"You can do it!

This is not my trust in you, but my trust in myself.

I've invested a lot of effort into the goblin for this battle, and now it's in a unique state. I confidently tell you, it can do it!

And you must do it too!"

After dropping these words, Lu Wu left Lin Jianying and the goblin in the resting room while he went off to watch the match with Dudu.

He had done what he needed to do; the rest was up to Lin Jianying.

...

On the side of the arena.

When Lu Wu arrived with Dudu, carrying two large buckets of popcorn and grasping two large cups of milk tea, the match between team 003 and team 044 was just starting.

Amidst the audience's cheering, team 003 and team 044 each sent out their starting Summoned Beasts.

On team 003's side, the starting Summoned Beast was an Elite 2 Star Big Rock, and on team 044's side, it was still Li Kui's Iron Armor Black Bull.

As the Summoned Beasts entered the arena, the atmosphere reached a peak.

"Go team 003!"

"That bull has been arrogant for too long, it's finally met its match!"

"Go Big Rock, crush that bull!"

...

Clearly, the audience had confidence in team 003.

Filled with anticipation, they were waiting for an evenly matched battle.

Amidst that anticipation, the battle erupted, but it also ended in an instant.

In the moment the battle commenced, the two Summoned Beasts collided with pure brute force.

In such a contest of strength, Big Rock was vastly inferior; upon the collision, it was directly toppled by Iron Armor Black Bull's horns and with a further push, the Big Rock was knocked out of the ring.

The whole match from start to finish lasted less than 60 seconds, which even included the time it took for the Summoned Beasts to enter the arena.

The audience, originally cheering, was stunned on the spot, unable to believe what they had seen.

This was completely contrary to their expectations.

They thought that since team 003's Iron Blade Mantis was so strong, Big Rock shouldn't be too far off.

They expected, at the very least, for Big Rock to put up a back-and-forth fight.

```

The result was a defeat in the blink of an eye, and the gap was so large that the entire arena fell completely silent, save for the sound of Lu Wu and Dudu heartlessly eating popcorn.

Had the arena not been so large, it would have likely been quite awkward for Lu Wu and the others right now.

But no matter how awkward it might be for them, it wouldn't compare to 003's embarrassment.

Although they held little expectation for the battle from the start, they hadn't anticipated losing so miserably.

In an attempt to save face, they sent out the Iron Blade Mantis for the second match.

When the audience saw that the Iron Blade Mantis from yesterday's stunning three-in-one victory was taking the field, their sunken hearts leaped back to their chests.

Right, why were they disappointed?

The strongest of 003 was the Iron Blade Mantis, not any other Summoned Beast.

Even the 042 squad had trash like the goblin; it was normal for 003 to have weak links.

Now that the Iron Blade Mantis was out, it would surely shine again...

The audience's mental fortification had only gotten this far, not yet complete, when the battle on the platform ended once again.

As soon as the Iron Blade Mantis took the stage, the Iron Armor Black Bull took control with a "Barbaric Bull Roar" that targeted the mantis's weakened state.

Then with a "Wild Bull Charge," it ended the battle.

At that moment, the audience couldn't believe what had just transpired on the platform was real.

They couldn't accept that the Iron Blade Mantis, which had been so dominant yesterday, was now effortlessly defeated.

They even felt like they were dreaming.

Otherwise, how could such a fantastical, surreal event occur in reality?

The spectator stands fell silent once more.

Lu Wuyi fed Dudu another handful of popcorn while muttering to himself.

"It's pretty normal; if the mantis doesn't erupt with Talent, its raw Power is indeed inferior to the bull, especially in a weakened state. Seems like this match is about to end."

Sure enough, 003's third Summoned Beast entered the arena.

Similarly, it didn't last three rounds before being knocked out by the same bull.

Thus, this eagerly anticipated battle by the audience ended in less than half an hour since the match began.

This short-lived battle, like someone's quick defeat, took the audience through an emotional roller coaster.

Such dramatic rises and falls were the most devastating.

Originally, the audience was confident and felt they could watch on, no matter what happened in the match.

After all, they had steadfast dedication; their hearts had been steeled over several years of shock, and they believed they could withstand anything else thrown at them.

However, this match where 003 failed made many realize their limits; they really couldn't endure it.

The moment 003 lost, at least twenty percent of the audience stood up and left.

They couldn't take it anymore.

They no longer wanted to watch a match destined to be hopeless.

Now that 003 was out, what was there left to anticipate? 042?

That team was even less reliable.

Although Little Skeleton and the pig were decent, the goblin was really a no-go.

Even if Little Skeleton and the pig could defeat their opponents, in the end, they would probably be dragged down by the goblin. Rather than face certain disappointment, they felt it's better not to watch.

Be kind to yourself, to your own heart.

One after another, people 'came to their senses' and left.

The number of spectators onsite continued to dwindle, and the live stream viewership also plummeted from nearly ten million at its peak to less than five million, even lower than the attention garnered for the qualifier matches.

This irked Lu Wu quite a bit.

Damn it, with so few people, the advertising effect later would greatly diminish.

But this wasn't something he could control.

All he could do was play a great match.

Soon, the time came to 2 PM.

The match between 002 and 042 officially began.

By then, the crowd in the stands was less than a third of the morning's, filling Fang Bai with pride. He mocked Lu Wu during the handshake phase.

"Looks like they've already predicted the outcome of today's match.

Are you going to struggle a bit, or would you rather just concede?"

"Sorry, but I'm going to smash your head!" Lu Wu said, slapping away Fang Bai's hand and gesturing that their conversation was over.

And so, the match officially started, with both sides sending out their respective Summoned Beasts.

002's opening beast was an Elite 3 Stars Little Demon, while Lu Wu's was Lin Jianying's goblin.

The moment the goblin stepped onto the field, several more people in the stands got up to go to the restroom.

In the live stream, of the few million still watching, many switched to other entertainment.

They were tired of watching one-sided matches; they were sticking around not for crushing defeats, and it's better to skip unpleasant scenes.

However, what they didn't realize was that they were skipping one of the most thrilling matches of the high school league.

Those who went to use the bathroom, switched to watching TV shows or short videos, or engaging in chats, all froze when they switched back.

Stunned, they watched as the goblin chased the Little Demon around the field.

Little heads popped with big question marks.

"What did we miss?"

Well, they missed the goblin's unprecedented Evolution!

```

# Chapter 173: 171 Blood Sword Dancer (Goblin)

Time rewound to ten minutes prior.

That was about the same time a few audience members with weak bladders had gone to use the restroom.

The Little Demon from contestant 002 made its entrance, followed by the goblin from contestant 042.

The summoners from both sides also took their places in succession.

Summoner 042, Lin Jianying, and the nameless extra from contestant 002.

Although the latter was nameless, he was quite prideful, not even deigning to glance at Lin Jianying, nor did he show any intention of provoking him.

In his eyes, Lin Jianying and the goblin were simply not considered adversaries.

At best, they were only warm-up props before the match.

So, has anyone ever seen a contestant provoke their warm-up props by talking to them?

"The match begins!"

Following the referee's order.

"The match is over!"

The side character from contestant 002 leisurely added a line.

At that same moment, the Little Demon immediately took action, flinging two black energy balls, and then with a flap of its wings like a bat.

The Little Demon charged out like a phantom, following closely after the black energy balls to the front of the goblin.

One attack after the other, the intention to end the battle in the instant the match began was clear.

By now, Lin Jianying should have been issuing commands, but he didn't.

He stood there stunned and trembling, as if he was merely a puppet, while his summoned beast, the goblin, was on the arena stage.

Thankfully, the goblin was quite fierce.

In its hands, it wielded a longsword crafted from fine materials by Lu Wu, not considered to be within the category of equipment, and with one stroke, it sliced through the two energy balls.

Then it lifted its right leg, leveraging the momentum from that stroke to lie down directly, avoiding the incoming Little Demon, then braced itself with its right foot to stand up and turn in defense, managing to survive the first round.

This surprised both the audience and contestant 002's extra.

"Didn't take it down? Looks like there has been some progress, but that's all there is!

Visual Deprivation!"

As the words fell, the pupils of the Little Demon, which were like snake eyes, narrowed vertically, and a negative spell was activated, causing the goblin to become instantly blind.

The Little Demon seized the opportunity, charging forward and aiming its ferocious claws at the goblin's head.

Lin Jianying clenched his fists nervously, his mouth opened, but he still did not issue any command, remaining still as a wooden puppet.

On the other side, up in the spectator stands.

At the moment the Little Demon's claws were unleashed, the audience, with undisturbed hearts, declared the match over within themselves.

However, contrary to their expectations.

The goblin, despite being visually deprived, seemingly unable to see anything, managed to raise its longsword to block the claw strike from the Little Demon.

"It actually blocked? How is this possible?"

"They knew all about our summoned creatures' conditions on this side, so this goblin must have been specifically trained to wear down the Little Demon," Fang Bai commented without much surprise.

"Wear down the Little Demon? With just this goblin? They're thinking too much!

Little Demon, speed up your attack, take down this goblin quickly!"

To conserve the Little Demon's mana, contestant 002 ordered it to attack in close combat.

Flapping its bat-like wings, the Little Demon surged in speed, its figure ghostly, as it launched attacks from all directions around the goblin.

Initially, the goblin could fend off one or two attacks, but it wasn't long before its defenses were penetrated by the Little Demon.

The claws of the Little Demon began to tear open wound after wound on the goblin's body.

Soon, the goblin was drenched in blood from head to toe.

However, despite its pitiable state, the goblin never fell.

Fang Bai's eyebrows knitted at the sight.

"Stop playing around, finish off this trash!"

The extra from contestant 002 was somewhat helpless: "I'm not playing!"

The Little Demon was truly going all out in its offensive, not intentionally drawing out the battle with the goblin.

It was that the goblin genuinely had some substance; although it looked terrible, the injuries were superficial, with the truly severe wounds all being avoided.

Moreover, the state that this goblin was displaying, along with Lin Jianying who had remained silent on the side, increasingly seemed off.

"We can't drag this out any longer, Little Demon, use Demonic Flames!"

With an order from contestant 002, the Little Demon stepped back, raised its claws overhead, and a basketball-sized black flame coalesced in its hands, which it then hurled at the moment of formation.

The goblin, seemingly sensing the Demonic Flames approaching, slashed instinctively with its sword.

A "boom" resounded.

The black Demonic Flames exploded instantly upon colliding with the goblin's sword, engulfing the goblin in black flames.

As the goblin covered in blood was swallowed by the black flames,

the audience knew, this time, it truly was the end!

However, at this moment, they were not overly disappointed.

After all, they knew the goblin's capabilities from the start and had never placed any hope in it, so there was no sense of disappointment.

In fact, they even faintly felt that the goblin's performance today was acceptable.

At least compared to contestant 003 in the morning, the goblin seemed more tragic.

If the goblin ended this way, they were not unwilling to accept it.

However, while they could accept it, Lin Jianying could not.

From the moment he stepped onto the stage today, his feelings had been incredibly complex.

Although Lu Wu had given him a psychological pep talk in the morning, at this moment, his heart was predominantly filled with self-doubt.

He did not distrust Lu Wu, he distrusted himself.

Therefore, he dared not say anything during the match, dare command, for fear that his commands would worsen the situation and lead to the goblin's defeat.

But now, as he saw the goblin engulfed in the black flames, he couldn't hold back any longer.

With eyes red, he shouted at the goblin on the stage.

"Hang in there! Goblin, you have to hang in there! I'm begging you, hang on!"

"I don't want to lose like this, I don't want you to lose like this!

Lu Wu told me, you can do it, you can defeat this Little Demon, so please don't fall, please help me!"

"I really don't want to hold him back anymore!"

At this moment, Lin Jianying's emotions collapsed once again, and he couldn't help but burst into loud sobs.

His behavior made the people from Team 002 unable to help but smirk disdainfully.

Even some of the audience found Lin Jianying's display too unsightly.

"How disgraceful, what a loss of face!"

"Crying because you can't beat someone, is that useful?"

"Have a little pride, man. It's just a match, don't make such a sorry spectacle of yourself!

Do you really expect that Goblin to go berserk just because you cry..."

"Boom!"

Among these discordant voices, a loud 'boom' sounded particularly massive, suddenly drawing the attention of the audience back to the arena.

As they looked back, everyone was dumbfounded.

The Goblin, who should have fallen amidst the Demon Flames, was not only standing just fine, but its state had also undergone tremendous changes.

Blood-red flames engulfed its entire body, and even the longsword in its hand had been dyed red.

At this moment, the Goblin was like a blood-soaked war god, formidable and awe-inspiring.

Seeing this, the corners of Lu Wu's mouth curved up.

"Quite the holder, you held out until now."

Clearly, he had known about the Goblin's condition all along and was aware that the Goblin would burst forth in this match. After all, he had been paying close attention to the Goblin's state these past few days and was well-prepared.

But while he was prepared, the audience and Team 002 were completely caught off guard.

Especially Team 002, their complexions growing even uglier.

The battle was almost over, and they hadn't expected such a twist. Could it be that a Summoned Beast becomes stronger just because its Summoner cries when it's losing?

However, now was obviously not the time to ponder that.

Team 002 quickly reacted.

"Little Demon, I command you to..."

Before the command could be given, there was a flash of blood on the Goblin's side, and in the blink of an eye, it was in front of the Little Demon, the blood-colored longsword slashing down.

The Little Demon beat its wings on its back, dodging the blade like a specter, but the Goblin was equally quick, pursuing relentlessly.

The rhythm of the battle was, at this moment, seized by the Goblin.

The Little Demon, which had almost taken the Goblin down in a single assault, was now completely suppressed and couldn't even lift its head.

And those who had gone to the bathroom, switched out to watch a show, and came back to the arena saw this scene.

The change in the Goblin, which now completely dominated the Little Demon, filled the minds of those who had missed the Goblin's evolution with question marks.

They couldn't help but ask the audience next to them, but at this time, no one paid them any attention.

All of their focus was on the arena, on that blood-red figure.

Lin Jianying, at the edge of the arena, was also staring blankly at the Goblin.

Then, Lu Wu came up from behind and gently patted his shoulder.

"Give your command, it's waiting for you!

Wait for your command to end the battle!"

Lin Jianying was stunned, then turned to look at the Goblin on the arena pushing down the Little Demon. It was deliberately holding back from taking down its opponent. Lin Jianying's eyes reddened once again.

At the same time, he gave the long-awaited command to the Goblin.

"Goblin, end the battle!"

At Lin Jianying's command, the Goblin on the arena paused. The anger and intent to kill that filled its face softened considerably, but its power erupted at that moment.

A flash of blood, and the Goblin sped up like never before, instantly appearing in front of the Little Demon.

The longsword in its hand burst forth, slicing numerous cuts across the Little Demon in an instant, and then with a final kick, it booted the Little Demon out of the arena to claim victory.

At the moment of victory, it also extinguished the blood-red flames on its body and rushed towards Lin Jianying, hurling itself into his embrace.

Lu Wu, seizing the opportunity, reached out and touched the Goblin.

...

Name: Blood Sword Dancer (Goblin) (Second Evolution)

Power: 3 Stars (Elite)

Quality: Ordinary (Upgraded)

Attribute: Blood

State: Happy (Master is finally back, Goblin is so happy, although it was touched by a weird person again)

Weakness: Light

Basic Skills: Sword Dance (Mastered) Charge (Mastered) Block (Mastered)...

Advanced Skill: Sword of Certain Kill (Unmastered) (Quite a strong Skill)

Talent: Sword Skill Enhancement (Intermediate)

Blood Sword Form (Active): Activate to increase power by one star, cooldown time of 1 day.

Activating will cause weakness for one day.

Companion Equipment: Blood Longsword

Description: Why do you need to touch it if you can see the attributes without touching?

...

Name: Blood Longsword

Quality: Black Iron

Effect: Blood Sucking (Basic) (Can recover own physical strength through blood sucking)

Description: Quite an ordinary piece of companion equipment, it's far inferior to what your Little Skeleton has!

...

# Chapter 174: 172 Gale Wolf

Ring 1.

When the battle ended,

the cheering from the audience followed closely after Lin Jianying and the goblin embraced each other.

"042 is awesome!" "Lin Jianying is awesome!" "Goblin is awesome!"

All the praises that were given to 003 in the morning were now completely transferred to 042.

Some even insisted fervently online,

that they had known all along that the goblin would definitely make a splash today.

For this claim, they even provided additional explanation, listing reasons one through four, making a convincing argument.

Of course, if he could have deleted his previous posts bashing Lin Jianying before making this announcement, that would have been even more persuasive.

But that was not the point.

Lu Wu and his teammates were not focused on the audience's opinions.

They were all paying attention to the changes in the goblin.

Although Lu Wu had noticed early on that the goblin's mood was affected by Lin Jianying after receiving 9 shots, which altered the state of the entire Summoned Beast, showing signs of evolving again,

he didn't know that the goblin would evolve into this form, nor did he understand how it had evolved, so at this moment, he was very curious about the goblin.

He really wanted to figure out how this goblin had evolved.

This was a professional curiosity of a Cultivation Master.

The Summoned Beasts of the 042 team were also quite curious about the goblin's evolution.

Little Skeleton, copying others, joined Lu Wu in poking and prodding the goblin with its bony hands.

The little goldfish poked its head out of Lu Wu's clothes to take a look, and lost interest at once upon realizing it couldn't be taken in as a little brother.

The most outrageous one was Tuantuan, who nuzzled its nose all over the goblin and even sneakily licked it, seemingly wanting to taste if the greatly transformed goblin was delicious.

Then it spat out violently, as if it had licked excrement.

This commotion annoyed the goblin.

It felt that it was no longer its former self; the goblin now felt strong and no longer needed to be touched randomly by others.

So it felt it might be able to resist, but just as it pushed Lu Wu's hand away, Lin Jianying slapped it, and the little guy promptly behaved again.

Its state once again turned to numbness.

Touch it, touch it all you want, it was used to being touched anyway, the goblin was already not clean.

In the end, it was team 002 who came to the little guy's rescue.

"042's, how much longer are you going to fiddle with it over there? Are you still competing or what?"

The ashen-faced Fang Bai, with a single sentence, reminded Lu Wu of what his main purpose was for today.

At the same time, the second Summoned Beast from team 002 also entered the arena.

The second Summoned Beast of 002 was a wolf.

…

Name: Gale Wolf (evolved once)

Power: 3 stars (Elite)

Attribute: Wind

Quality: Black Iron

State: Cruel (Master says, try to seriously injure that goblin as much as possible)

Weakness: Grass

Basic Skills: Wind Blade (Master) Bite (Master) Dodge (Master)

Advanced Skills: Gale Wolf (Master) (Upon activation, speed boost is doubled.)

Talent: Speed Enhancement (Basic)

Agility Enhancement (Basic)

Description: An evolution form of the Jungle Wolf, although all its attributes are relatively average, its terrifying speed still endows it with formidable power.

…

Looking at the wolf's attributes, Lu Wu raised an eyebrow.

Not surprised by the wolf's attributes, after all, he had seen them before, but he was observing the wolf's state.

This reminded him of the Hengheng Monster's battle yesterday when the cat almost had its throat slit.

His gaze became a few degrees colder.

"Goblin, come down, Tuantuan, you're up!"

Having figured out the opponent's intent, Lu Wu naturally wouldn't let the goblin stay and be beaten.

The goblin had already had its outbreak and was now in a weakened state; keeping it there would only mean taking hits, and the goblin's skin was definitely not as tough as Tuantuan's.

Fang Bai, seeing that Lu Wu had switched out the goblin, was very disappointed, but he quickly adjusted his mindset and focused on Tuantuan.

"This round should be a secure win; the Gale Wolf fighting this pig is easy since their speed isn't even in the same league!"

In the world of martial arts, speed is unmatched.

This principle applies to Summoned Beasts as well.

At least, having faster speed ensures that the opponent can't touch you, which allows you to firmly take the initiative.

"You know what to do, right?"

"I know, the teasing pig tactic!"

Fang Bai and his unnamed teammate exchanged confident glances.

Then, at the referee's command,

the second battle between 002 and 042 officially began.

As the competition commenced, both Summoned Beasts sprang into action simultaneously.

The Gale Wolf burst forth in an instant, sending multiple Wind Blades shooting towards Tuantuan, while it charged forward at the same time.

This tactic, identical to that of the Little Demon from before, was worthy of a Summoned Beast from the same team.

However, the difference was that the Little Demon's Energy Ball arrived first, while the Gale Wolf had released its Wind Blade first, but its own speed was even faster than the Wind Blade.

By the time the Wind Blade had covered two-thirds of the distance, the Gale Wolf had already reached Tuantuan, its gaping maw aiming for Tuantuan's head.

On Tuantuan's side,

Although it was on the same team as the goblin, its approach to defense was entirely different.

Um, this pig had no strategy whatsoever.

It simply grew giant, and then it stood still, letting the wolf bite at it and the Wind Blade strike it without flinching.

As a result, when the Gale Wolf bit down, the pig's head was fine, not even the skin was broken.

What about those two Wind Blades? They shattered upon hitting Tuantuan, not even a single hair on it was harmed.

This defensive power made Team 002 grit their teeth in frustration.

However, they obviously came prepared as the second command came swiftly.

"Attack its vulnerable spots, eyes, nose, Juhua!"

The Gale Wolf's claws reached out, aiming for Tuantuan's eyes, only to find the pig had closed them.

Not only did it close its eyes, but it also hid its nose underneath its hooves.

After all, it wasn't deaf. Whatever the Gale Wolf could hear, it could too, knowing exactly where the bad guy wanted to attack.

The clever pig knew what to do.

The only thing it couldn't fathom was, what in the world was 'Juhua'?

And the Gale Wolf quickly provided the answer.

This thing was incredibly fast, realizing there was no opportunity at the eyes or nose, it circled to Tuantuan's rear immediately and grabbed for Tuantuan's butt.

Luckily, Tuantuan's encircling tail protected its vital parts, otherwise, it would've been, well, hit there.

Now, Tuantuan finally understood what 'Juhua' was, and the previously lazy creature was thoroughly enraged, instantly activating Gravity, pressing down with tenfold gravity.

Yet, although the wolf's attack wasn't amazing, its speed was genuinely fast.

The moment Tuantuan unleashed its gravity, the wolf was already out of the range of gravity.

Thus, after a round of engagement, neither side could get the better of the other.

However, Team 002 wasn't too disappointed about this.

Everything was within their expectations, and the real focus was coming up next.

The 'Tease the Pig' tactic officially began!

The so-called 'Tease the Pig' tactic was essentially a harassment strategy.

Lu Wu knew Team 002 inside out, and Team 002 also thoroughly understood the status of Lu Wu's Summoned Beasts, knowing exactly how to deal with them.

Although the pig's defense was terrifying, its speed was clumsy. As long as the Gale Wolf kept taunting it, it could exhaust the pig's strength, preventing it from maintaining its giant form.

Once the pig couldn't maintain its giant form, the battle was essentially over.

That was the basic idea behind the 'Tease the Pig' tactic.

But as soon as they started executing it, they immediately realized there was a problem.

The pig simply walked to one corner at the edge of the arena and lay down with its butt facing out, covering its nose with its hooves, its eyes squinted to a slit, and just lay there motionless.

With this posture in place, Team 002 realized they had no way to deal with the pig.

The only part they could attack, its butt, was outside the arena; could they actually charge out of the arena to attack it?

If they really did that, with one gravity from the pig, the Gale Wolf, no matter how fast, wouldn't be able to escape.

And attacking from the front, with the Gale Wolf's speed, although fast, its attack power was pretty mediocre and couldn't penetrate the pig's defense.

Team 002 tried a few times, gained no achievements, and the Gale Wolf was nearly bitten by the pig.

At that point, Team 002 remembered that Team 042's captain was a Cultivation Master.

Playing tactics with them?

They play dirtier than you, okay?

Team 002 was completely stumped.

"What do we do now? Just stand still and wait for its strength to run out?"

"No, if both sides go over five minutes without engaging, it'll be treated as a draw."

"How about we attack every four minutes?"

"Do you understand what 'cumulative' means?"

In the end, after much thought and several probes, Team 002 had no choice but to let the Gale Wolf run to the other side and squat down.

The standoff between this pig and the wolf could only end in a draw.

This was part of Lu Wuyi's calculated plan from the beginning.

If possible, he certainly hoped to take down this wolf, but there was no way, the opponent was too fast, the pig moved too slowly, and the gravity coverage was too small.

In the end, he could only choose this tactic.

This approach, although a bit rogue, was indeed the best outcome.

If they didn't swap out this wolf and let it face Little Skeleton, even if its speed went all out, it would give Little Skeleton a hard time, and Little Skeleton probably wouldn't be able to attack it.

The saying 'nothing can withstand a fast speed' isn't just a casual comment.

And with the battle between the pig and the wolf finished, the final match between Teams 002 and 042 officially began.

The audience held their breath in anticipation.

Fang Bai's heart also tightened up a bit.

He was now a little nervous, worried that Lu Wu would switch to the little goldfish as their third Summoned Beast.

Although they believed they had seen through the true and false sides of the little goldfish, he had seen with his own eyes how the little goldfish defeated their three foreign teams' Summoned Beasts with a 1 against 9, and he wasn't very confident facing it directly.

Thankfully, Lu Wu's Summoned Beast soon took the stage.

Um, it wasn't the little goldfish he was worried about, but Lu Wu's Little Skeleton.

Seeing that it was Little Skeleton, Fang Bai immediately relaxed.

Little Skeleton was no issue, he was confident in defeating Little Skeleton!

Then, he saw Little Skeleton pull out a large cell phone and summon three Elite 2 Star Iron Bone Wild Boars!

# Chapter 175: 173 Easily Taken Down

In the spectator stands.

As Little Griffin and Little Skeleton entered the arena, the audience began to tense up.

They knew the decisive battle was at hand!

Even the Hengheng Monster in the stands tightened her grip on her cat.

Although she wanted to see Lu Wu cry after being beaten, she was more eager to see Lu Wu defeat Fang Bai and Little Skeleton beat Little Griffin.

Not because her opinion of Lu Wu had changed, it was mainly because Little Griffin was just too detestable—it had almost killed her Mimi!

Yes, that was the reason.

...

Meanwhile, over on the field of competition.

Fang Bai was about ready to flip the table!

"Referee, I want to report him, he's switched pigs!"

Fang Bai had been watching the additional matches.

He knew Little Skeleton had a pig!

He had even specifically devised a strategy to counter it.

But damn it, the pig that Little Skeleton brought out this time was completely different from the last additional match!

The species had changed!

Last time it was a White Bone Wild Boar, this time it was an Iron Bone Wild Boar.

Originally white, now they were all black, with greatly improved power.

This was cheating so blatant that Fang Bai wanted to curse aloud.

"No problem, no problem, no problem, he just changed three pigs, right?

I got this! My Little Griffin can take on four alone!

Yes, once Little Griffin uses its skill, it can straight up reach Boss Level, crushing four Elite Level ones as easily as eating food and drinking water, right?"

And as Fang Bai had just finished bolstering his own spirit, Little Skeleton laid out the three pigs sideways, arranging them in a triangle and enclosing itself in the center.

In that moment, the three pigs formed a pig-wall, protecting Little Skeleton securely on all sides.

Once the pig-wall was set, Little Skeleton beckoned to the dumbfounded Little Griffin across from it.

At the same time, the Big Move floating behind Little Skeleton's back emitted a cheeky voice.

"Come on over! Come and hit me!"

Fang Bai's face turned dark on the spot.

"Provoking, huh? Alright, Little Griffin will meet its demands!"

At his command, Little Griffin's wings shook as it dove straight for Little Skeleton.

The audience immediately tensed up as Little Griffin pounced.

Although Little Griffin wasn't nearly as fast as the Gale Wolf from the previous match, its pouncing force was clearly not something the Gale Wolf could compare to.

The beast's arrival was heralded by its sound.

The roar, filled with the aura of the king of beasts, kicked off the battle.

Although this Griffin was still young, the roar was filled with dominance.

And it wasn't just a simple pounce kill; as its figure moved, a gale rose with it, and several Wind Blades opened the way with the roar, its own form following close behind.

This tactic was so old—002 already!

A small team of three Summoned Beasts, all using the same routine.

No creativity at all.

The Little Griffin's tactics might have been more polished, but sadly, they were still useless.

The roar could only add some atmosphere, some presence.

The Wind Blades hadn't even reached Little Skeleton before they were blocked by the pigs in front of it.

Although it wasn't as effortless as Tuantuan blocking the Gale Wolf's Wind Blades, the blades only left a shallow cut on the pigs' skeletons.

As for the Griffin's own pounce kill, that was even more unspeakable.

It was smart enough to aim for Little Skeleton over the heads of the three pigs, which was a potential breakthrough point, but also a trap left for it.

As soon as Little Griffin arrived, a Bone Prison appeared out of nowhere, and all three pigs simultaneously turned and charged towards Little Griffin.

If not for Little Griffin's quick reflexes, its wings flapping to break free from the Bone Prison before the pigs got to it, it might have been squished into a biscuit by the three pigs.

After the first wave of probing attacks ended fruitlessly, Fang Bai didn't care and quickly organized several more rounds.

Obviously, he was a very experienced Summoner.

Although he was holding a Big Move, he didn't throw it immediately but tried to understand the situation as much as possible before using it.

Only after understanding the situation could he open the Big Move to take down his opponent in one fell swoop.

In this situation, Little Griffin launched several consecutive attacks, each different in method and highly aggressive, but each ended in failure.

Fang Bai was not disappointed by this.

At this moment, his mind was rapidly spinning, sorting through the information gleaned from these probings.

Just as he was nearly finished gathering the information and had begun to notice the flaws in Little Skeleton's defense, that cheeky voice from Little Skeleton's Big Move rang out again.

"Come on over! Come and hit me!"

At this moment, the previously tense atmosphere of the entire arena was shattered.

The audience burst into laughter.

Fang Bai's face turned particularly ugly.

He never thought he would be mocked by Little Skeleton one day; such humiliation was unbearable for him.

"Activate the Bloodline Power of Little Griffin for me!"

At Fang Bai's command, Little Griffin unleashed its Big Move directly.

With the Bloodline Power activated, a cyan aura emanated from Little Griffin's body, instantly boosting it from Elite 3 Stars to Boss Level.

"You think hitting you is enough? I'm not just going to hit you—I'll twist off your head!

Little Griffin, Fierce Wind Blade!"

Little Griffin spread its wings and dozens of Wind Blades slashed forward.

Seeing the Big Move, Little Skeleton hurriedly had his pig activate Iron Bone Form, planning to have the pig absorb the damage.

But who would have thought? The Wind Blades, expertly manipulated by Little Griffin, didn't hit the pig. Instead, they slipped through the gaps in the pig's skeleton and headed straight for Little Skeleton behind it.

Just as everyone was too stunned to react, Fang Bai was already awestruck by his own cunning.

"Didn't see that coming, did you? I've got tricks up my sleeve!"

Fang Bai felt overwhelmingly smug.

In just a few rounds, he found the vulnerability, a Must Kill!

But before the smile on his face fully formed, the pig rolled over. The Wind Blades that were meant to pass through the pig got trapped in its bone framework instead.

Even though the pig's skeleton was shattered, scattering bone fragments and even severing a few bones, Little Skeleton behind it remained untouched.

Fang Bai was dumbfounded—what kind of move was that?

He'd been busy for nothing, and all it took was a flip of the pig to thwart his efforts.

This was already a heavy blow for Fang Bai, but to make things worse, Lu Wu casually added insult to injury right then.

"Indeed, I didn't expect all your effort would amount to just this."

Meanwhile, Little Skeleton's Big Move started taunting again.

"You coming over? Come hit me!"

Fang Bai flew into a rage.

"Damn! Little Griffin, give me..."

"Crack!"

His command was cut short by a peal of thunder.

Clearly, Little Skeleton had started to counterattack with a Thunder Strike.

However, Fang Bai wasn't the least bit worried. Little Griffin instantly burst forth and dodged Little Skeleton's Thunder Strike.

Having successfully evaded, Fang Bai, who had been continuously frustrated, finally regained some confidence and mocked,

"Surprised, aren't you? I was well-prepared for your Thunder!"

"Crack."

Before he could finish, a second Thunder Strike fell, and Little Griffin, having just exhausted its energy and unable to muster new strength, couldn't evade and was struck down from mid-air.

"Surprised, aren't you? My Little Skeleton can smash two at once!"

Smack!

A hefty slap landed on Fang Bai's face, leaving him with a swollen nose and bruises.

And the most devastating thing wasn't just the slap in the face—the condition of Little Griffin was far worse.

The moment it was struck by lightning, the three pigs beside Little Skeleton simultaneously used Bone Shooting.

Three thick, sturdy bone spikes flew out, nailing Little Griffin to the ground.

At the same time, Little Skeleton continued to charge up.

Seeing this, Fang Bai's face drastically changed, and he was about to immediately concede defeat.

Just then, Lu Wu added another jab.

"Captain Fang, you're not thinking of conceding, are you?

You've never conceded before. You're not skilled in this area. Do you need me to teach you? I'm quite experienced!"

With Lu Wu's comment, Fang Bai's face turned particularly unsightly as if he had eaten something disgusting, but still, he shouted "I concede" right away.

Yet it was still a step too late.

Almost simultaneously with his concession, another thunderbolt from Little Skeleton struck, nearly killing Little Griffin.

Although it didn't die, the injuries suggested it wouldn't recover any time soon.

"Lu Wu!"

Fang Bai's eyes almost shot fire.

Lu Wu frowned and chided, "Sigh, Little Skeleton really doesn't know how to behave.

It's Captain Fang's first time conceding; you should have given him some time to prepare.

Sorry, Captain Fang, I didn't expect Little Skeleton to be this fierce, inflicting such a heavy injury on your Little Griffin. That's terrible, you still have to contest for third place with 003 tomorrow. Can it still perform with injuries like these?"

"Ah! Next time you concede, you should be more decisive and quick about it, instead of dawdling. If you're beaten, just admit defeat. It's not shameful!

But since you've done it once, it'll be better the next time around, practice makes perfect!"

After Lu Wu went on, Fang Bai's morale exploded on the spot!

# Chapter 176: 174 Little Skeleton Hotpot

As 002 was defeated, Little Skeleton's familiar BGM played, and deafening cheers erupted once again in the arena.

042 became the hope of Jiangnan once again.

As for this, Lu Wu remained quite calm.

On the other hand, Lin Jianying and Fang Bai were extremely excited.

For one of them, it was because he finally managed to be of help to Lu Wuyi.

The other, completely worked up by Lu Wuyi, had his mindset blown and his eyes had turned red.

As soon as the referee announced the end of the match, he was the first to run off to see Little Griffin.

Just as Fang Bai ran off, Team 044 arrived immediately.

The team captain, Wang Jun, extended his hand to Lu Wu, "Congratulations!"

Among the three visiting teams, Lu Wu felt best about Team 044, as there weren't many entries about them in his notebook.

Hence, his attitude towards them was noticeably better.

Grasping the extended hand, he looked at Fang Bai, still in the arena, and spoke with regret, "I originally thought it would be harder, but I didn't expect 002 to be so weak."

Unexpectedly, Wang Jun nodded in agreement, "Yes, indeed it was not a match of equals, but it's alright. Tomorrow it's our turn, and I'm really looking forward to it!"

"So am I!"

Their handshake grew firmer.

Their eyes, facing each other, sparkled with metaphorical sparks.

The camera quickly focused on both of them, creating a tense atmosphere for the viewers in the livestream as if a battle of the century was about to begin.

By the way, it also captured Fang Bai holding Little Griffin in the arena, his face expressing 'damn it all.'

Meanwhile, as Lu Wu and Wang Jun shook hands and gazed at each other intently,

Lin Jianying, from his team, took his goblin once again towards the restroom.

Don't get the wrong idea; he wasn't up to anything indecent—perhaps he just needed to urinate frequently.

Moreover, although he was heading to the restroom again, Lin's state this time was completely different from the last.

Last time he was nervous and anxious, and as soon as he reached the restroom, he leaned over the sink to furiously wash his face, clearly there to resolve some psychological issues.

But this time, he arrived in a clearly good mood, so he was genuinely resolving a physiological issue.

And just as he was about to wash his hands after finishing, an overly enthusiastic voice came from the side.

"Hey, isn't this Student Lin? Hello!"

Lin Jianying turned and saw it was a member of Team 003. He nodded, "Hello!"

"I saw your match today, you performed especially well!"

"Thank you for your kind words!" Lin Jianying, unaware of the strangeness in the other's tone, responded shyly.

"No, no, no, I'm not flattering you at all, your performance today was really good.

Especially that hysterical roar, it truly shook me deeply."

"What do you mean 'I don't want to drag him down anymore'!"

"Hisss" the man gasped, a disgusted expression on his face: "It made my skin crawl, may I ask how you could say something so vile?"

Lin Jianying's face stiffened; even if he was naively unaware before, he now realized what the man was up to.

Ignoring him, he prepared to leave, but the man blocked his path.

Seeing his owner tangled up with a weirdo again, the goblin got very irritated and was about to act, but Lin Jianying stopped him.

He couldn't cause trouble for Lu Wu; the finals were tomorrow, and a confrontation at this time might affect their match.

The man clearly exploited Lin Jianying's mindset, thus becoming even more insufferable.

"Do you actually think you contributed anything to today's match?

You didn't contribute at all.

Was the goblin's evolution because of you? You should know in your heart who really caused its evolution, and you have absolutely nothing to do with it."

Lin Jianying didn't want to deal with him and pushed him aside to leave, but the man's next words stopped him dead.

"The only role you played in this match was to embarrass your team captain.

To your team captain, you are completely worthless."

"Even more pathetically, this situation will follow you your whole life. Unless something unexpected happens, you'll live under his shadow forever, becoming an irrelevant shadow.

Enjoy such a life."

With that, the man patted Lin Jianying's face, then left him standing there in a stupor and went away smiling.

After the man left the restroom, the waiting captain of Team 003, Sun Qing, approached.

He glanced at Lin Jianying, still shutting himself off in the restroom, and gently shook his head, whispering, "Not to criticize you, but is it necessary to stir up trouble with a small fry at this time?"

"Can't help it, I just have this habit, I like to sow seeds whenever I find fertile soil."

Saying this, he turned to look once more at the restroom, smiled, and left with large strides.

When Lin Jianying returned, Lu Wu instantly noticed his unusual mood and asked with concern.

"What's wrong?"

"I'm fine," Lin Jianying said with a smile.

But his smile didn't look like nothing was wrong at all. However, Lu Wu was aware of his personality, knowing that if he didn't mention it himself, it would be hard to get anything out of him. So he glanced at the goblin beside him and noticed its state.

Angry: Master has been bothered by a weirdo again. The despicable weirdo got Master angry. If the goblin sees that weirdo again, he will definitely teach him a lesson!

"Weirdo? What weirdo? Didn't Old Lin just go to the restroom? Could it be???"

Lu Wu couldn't help picturing some R-rated scenes, which made him shiver slightly as he began to understand why Old Lin looked so upset yet unwilling to speak about it.

At that moment, Lu Wu didn't ask any further questions.

But soon he noticed a blind spot, "Wait, why did the goblin say 'again'? Does this happen often to him? Looking closely, Old Lin does look a bit effeminate."

This made Lu Wu look at Lin Jianying with sympathy.

Feeling a sense of duty, he thought that, as the team captain, he should protect his teammate well and should chat with the goblin upon returning to clear up who the weirdo in the restroom was.

Unreachable retaliations on distant battlefields are one thing, but subtle vengeances in arena restrooms are still possible.

After all, today Lin Jianying's, or rather, the goblin's performance was really impressive.

It beat Little Demon in a striking reversal and the effect was like turning the advertising world upside down.

Since the goblin defeated Little Demon, the sales of Lu Wu's goblin injection series had skyrocketed.

So far, this alone had earned Lu Wu over 100 points.

Though it may not sound like much, how long had it been since the goblin's reversal began? Barely an hour, and everyone's attention was still mainly on the competition.

Lu Wu had a hunch that after the competition was over, the goblin injection plan would definitely bring in a lot of profits.

Additionally, the audience was particularly interested in the goblin's evolution, figuring this out would bring in another significant revenue.

Under such circumstances, what weirdo would dare bully Old Lin?

Of course, Lu Wu was determined to settle it!

Upon returning home, Lu Wu secretly pulled the goblin aside. He theno went through the official website to list out players and staff who could access the arena today, and had the goblin identify the weirdo.

Upon hearing this, the goblin, excited to help find the weirdo bullying Lin Jianying, zealously helped Lu Wu identify him.

But it didn't understand why, after it had helped Lu Wu find the weirdo, Lu Wu suddenly turned on the goblin.

"Damn it, I've been so nice to it, and it still called me a weirdo?

This guy really needs a lesson. How am I weird?

Isn't it just some petting and a few injections?

This is infuriating!"

The more Lu Wu thought about it, the angrier he got, prompting him to have Little Skeleton drag the goblin out for a beating.

Afterwards, Lu Wu got busy.

He still placed great importance on tomorrow's match against team 044.

Although 044 wasn't noted in his diary, he had an okay impression of them, but it wasn't going to affect the competition.

It even made Lu Wu look forward to tomorrow's match even more.

"I look forward to a match unfettered by personal grievances."

Well, he said so, but what he actually looked forward to more was the gains after winning the final match tomorrow.

If he could defeat 044 tomorrow, he would become the first team from Jiangnan in recent years to crush an external team.

The rewards to be gained were more than just honor, but also substantial benefits.

There was no need to mention advertising revenue. The Jiangnan officials would definitely reward him.

Plus, there would be rewards for being the first in the high school league of Jiangnan Province, benefits that team 044 was prepared to fight for.

It was definitely not just mere monetary points.

Otherwise, Fang Bai and Wang Jun wouldn't have needed to come; Lu Wu could tell that both of these guys were not ordinary.

Especially Wang Jun who, upon seeing the little goldfish previously, didn't react as excitedly as others, reminding him of that guy's summoned beast's attribute, made Lu Wu even more determined to snatch that first place.

"To snatch the first place, relying on our current power still carries some risks.

044 is stronger than 002, and even though taking down Little Griffin today was easy, that's because Little Skeleton's tri-wall significantly countered Little Griffin.

Little Griffin hasn't grown strong yet, its attack power is average, but it wouldn't be so easy if it were Wang Jun.

So, we need to stew a broth!"

Coincidentally, Lu Wu had already mastered the White Bone Wild Boar breeding plan, and for Little Skeleton, he had devised a new series.

"Little Skeleton Hotpot"

The first version of "Little Skeleton Hotpot" was already available and ready for use.

Lu Wu made a call to Zhao Kai Ming, who quickly arranged for the materials needed for the "Little Skeleton Hotpot" to be sent from the Professional Center.

With the ingredients ready, another pot of soup was quickly cooked.

"What are you waiting for? Get in!"

Lu Wu kicked Little Skeleton, who was lingering by the pot, inside.

Casually, he closed the lid, turned up the heat, and continued to add ingredients through the gaps in the lid.

Slowly simmering the pot of soup.

As the pot cooked, Tuantuan sniffing around, followed the scent...

...

Tonight I'm busy, I'll see if I can rush back. If I can, I'll update three chapters, if not, just two today and I'll make up for it tomorrow.

# Chapter 177: 175 Finals (Please Subscribe)

Lu Wu was making Little Skeleton Hotpot when he casually checked his internal network for updates on the cultivation plan he had submitted for the White Bone Wild Boar.

Several days had passed, and there was still no news from Jiangbei.

Regarding this, the big-hearted Lu Wu didn't say anything, but instead took out his journal and wrote down a line.

"May 28.

On the cultivation methods for the White Bone Wild Boar, Jiangbei Cultivator Center still hasn't responded to me; I, Lu Wu, will remember this vendetta!"

After writing, Lu Wu looked at his nearly full journal and frowned a bit.

"Writing a journal is fine, but it uses so much paper. Hmm, I guess I'll take Little Skeleton's phone and write on that!"

Using Little Skeleton's phone to write his journal, Lu Wu thought this was a good idea.

Safe, and it saves paper!

The only worry was Little Skeleton peeking, but no worries!

Just don't teach Little Skeleton how to read.

If it's smart and learns how to read on its own, then that's fine too; Lu Wu would write in Simplified, and if Little Skeleton could still understand that...

"Then I really can't help it; I'll just have to cook Little Skeleton and feed it to Tuantuan!"

Lu Wu's words deeply resonated with Tuantuan.

Drooling as he looked at the Little Skeleton Hotpot, Tuantuan bobbed his head madly, vigorously showing his agreement.

Little Skeletons are really delicious when cooked; Tuantuan especially loved it.

It just took too long to cook.

Both man and pig watched over the hotpot for several hours before Little Skeleton finally managed to complete this round of broth-making, and then the soup base was taken out of the pot.

"Go ahead, you can eat now!"

As Little Skeleton came out, Lu Wu dismissed the pig and focused his eyes on Little Skeleton.

Upon looking, he felt somewhat disappointed.

Little Skeleton's soak had some gains, but they weren't that significant.

In terms of its attributes, only the quality had some changes.

...

Quality: Bronze (upgraded) (Little Skeleton Hotpot) (thirty percent)

Description: There is a certain degree of improvement in quality, but it is still far from Silver Quality. If the plan isn't optimized, it will need at least two more sessions to reach Silver Quality.

...

Clearly, this round of hotpot didn't lead to a breakthrough increase in Little Skeleton's power, but it wasn't completely fruitless.

Little Skeleton's phone had become somewhat enhanced; although the quality hadn't improved, the skill "Big Move Phone It" had gotten some enhancement.

Originally, Little Skeleton could only summon 3 Summoned Beasts, but now it had increased by one and could summon another.

However, it could still only summon either a White Bone Wild Boar or another Little Skeleton.

Lu Wu didn't hesitate and immediately had Little Skeleton summon the Skeleton Gunner that had evolved a few days earlier.

Little Skeleton seemed particularly unwilling to do this as if it didn't want Lu Wu to have other Little Skeletons around him.

So, after recruiting the minion, it sneakily bullied it, telling it not to come near Lu Wu.

Lu Wu is Little Skeleton's Lu Wu, and Little Skeleton is Lu Wu's Little Skeleton.

It even forbade its minion from calling itself Little Skeleton and even gave this new minion a name, calling it Pei Qi No.1.

Meanwhile, at Lu Wu's side.

Watching Little Skeleton bullying the newly summoned minion, Lu Wu couldn't help but mutter, "Hmm, now Little Skeleton has four Summoned Beasts under its command, and Little Goldfish's core minions number in the teens, with several hundred non-core ones.

On the other hand, as their master, I only have two Summoned Beasts; feels like I'm being outdone by my own minions."

Thinking this, Lu Wu felt a bit upset.

However, he quickly thought it over, a minion's minion is also my minion.

By that calculation, it seems I have hundreds, maybe thousands of minions.

This thought comforted Lu Wu considerably.

He even pondered whether he should find some time to take his minions and their minions out for a stroll?

Hmm, if so, that scene would definitely be quite impressive!

"This could work; I'll arrange it later!"

Later, Lu Wu went back to the Cultivation Room to check on the pig.

This pig truly lived up to being a pig!

While he was busy with Little Skeleton gathering minions, this pig had drunk up an entire huge pot of soup, costing Lu Wu 4,000 points, which he had meticulously prepared.

Now, it was lying contentedly at the bottom of the pot, its belly as round as a watermelon.

"I really don't know how you manage to stuff it all!"

Lu Wu checked its attributes, making sure there were no issues with the pig, then twisted it back to Dudu, and then went off to sleep.

After all, a tough battle awaited him tomorrow, and Lu Wu decided not to stress further.

The next day, bright and early.

The 042 squad arrived at the arena early.

Today was the last day of the high school league.

In previous years, today was always the quietest and least crowded at the arena.

Because in past years, during the semifinals, teams from Jiangnan were generally eliminated.

The finals were watched by outsiders competing for the championship, with Jiangnan teams at most securing third place.

Therefore, past finals generally did not attract many spectators.

But this year was different, with Team 042 participating, which made this year's finals exceptionally lively. Tickets sold out early, the stadium was packed without an empty seat, and quite a few people even had to stand.

Various supportive props were also arranged.

Even Jiang Yuexing and Zhang Wentao, among other big shots from Jiangnan, personally attended.

However, these big shots feared affecting Lu Wu and his teammates' performance, so although they were present, they did not reveal themselves or interact with Lu Wu.

They were afraid of adding unnecessary pressure and impacting their performance in the competition.

Despite these precautions, the higher-ups, including Zhao Kai Ming, were still not optimistic about whether Lu Wu and his team could clinch the championship.

"Old Zhang, do you think Xiao Lu and his team can defeat Team 044?"

"Team 044 is too strong. Even if placed in Beijing, this team would rank in the top ten. It's going to be very difficult for Xiao Lu and his team to beat Team 044!

But even if they can't defeat Team 044, Xiao Lu and his teammates have already done very well.

Besides, Xiao Lu's strengths lie elsewhere. What we originally expected from him wasn't this; it's just a pleasant surprise."

Zhang Wentao clearly didn't view the match between 042 and 044 favorably.

Because he knew the strength of both sides, he could even say that Team 044's power in this competition was unparalleled.

Each member's skills were incredibly formidable.

In contrast, although Lu Wu's side was also good, they still fell short.

Moreover, Little Skeleton and Tuantuan, their two Summoned Beasts, were only Elite 2 Stars, which made the disparity between the teams too great.

It was already impressive they had defeated Team 002.

Zhao Kai Ming knew this too, but what he worried about now was not this.

"My current concern is about Xiao Lu's reaction if he loses.

Look at this scene, look at how these people have put Xiao Lu on a pedestal, considering Xiao Lu is a young man, he might be affected. If he loses, the fall from such a high place—I'm afraid Xiao Lu might not be able to handle it."

On this matter, Zhang Wentao shook his head, expressing a different opinion.

"This is actually what I'm looking forward to. Xiao Lu has had it too easy up until now, encountering hardly any setbacks. If he loses this time, it could even be a good thing for him.

Some falls are better taken sooner rather than later. How can a young person mature without experiencing the ups and downs of life?"

Zhang Wentao's statements carried depth, and Zhao Kai Ming agreed.

"Yes, some falls should come even sooner, ideally during the qualifiers.

A loss of a few thousand points definitely hurts more than this.

It's better than reminiscing about the scars but forgetting the pain!"

This indirect rebuke made Zhang Wentao flush with embarrassment, forcing him to awkwardly change the subject: "Speaking of which, did Jiangbei bring over those 50,000?"

"Not yet, why? Are you so desperate that you're eyeing Xiao Lu's assets?" Zhao Kai Ming was still full of fire.

"Not at all, I'm just concerned, worried about them defaulting.

As for Xiao Lu's money?

Don't worry, I've got no intention of touching it.

Although Jiangnan is poor, it's not so poor as to rely on students for a bailout!"

Zhang Wentao almost raised his hand to swear, saying he'd rather starve than borrow money from Lu Wu.

Zhao Kai Ming, for his part, couldn't be bothered with him anymore and continued to ponder how he would console Lu Wu and help him rebound, should he lose.

…

Soon after, today's competition began.

Though it was the finals, the first match was not between 042 and 044 but between Teams 003 and 002.

These two teams were competing for third place.

Lu Wu was also paying attention to this match.

However, his focus wasn't on Team 002 but on Team 003.

Team 003 had used a substance in their last match against Team 066 and had bullied Old Lin yesterday, which made Lu Wu more attentive towards this team, especially towards the one who had bullied Old Lin.

And perhaps it was psychological.

The more he paid attention, the more Lu Wu felt something off about Team 003.

But when he delved deeper, everything seemed logical, seemingly faultless, which made Lu Wu even more suspicious that there might be something wrong with this team.

As Lu Wu watched, the match between 003 and 002 quickly concluded.

Team 003's Iron Blade Mantis had its Big Move cooldown complete today, so it started with the Big Move straightaway.

The mantis once again performed a one-on-three staggering move, piercing through Team 002.

Of course, Team 003 should thank Lu Wu, because without Lu Wu severely injuring the Little Griffin, it wouldn't have been so easy for Team 003 to achieve a one-on-three.

With Team 003 defeating Team 002 to clinch third place,

Lu Wu's match also commenced.

A bull and a pig took to the field!

This marked the commencement of Lu Wu's toughest battle in the high school league to date.

# Chapter 178: 176 Vermilion Fruit (seeking subscriptions)

Name: Iron Armor Black Bull (One Evolution)

Power: 3 Stars (Elite)

Quality: Bronze

Attribute: Gold

State: Confidence ("This bull is super strong!")

Weakness: Fire

Basic Skills: Charge (Master) Defense (Master) Iron Horn Shooting (Master)…

Advanced Skill: Barbaric Bull Roar (Master) (After activation, it enhances its own strength, up to a maximum of three times the strength

ps: The stronger the increased strength, the faster the stamina consumption.)

Barbaric Bull Roar (Master) (Can intimidate opponents with its roar, interrupting their spells and plunging them into a brief state of chaos)

Talent: Mad Bull State (active) (Once Anger Value and Hatred Value reach a certain level, it activates, entering the Mad Bull State, enhancing its power by one to two stars, losing its reason, and attacking the target locked by Hatred Value at all costs.)

Defense Enhancement (Basic) (Strengthens both physical and magic defenses)

Description: This is an extremely terrifying Wild Bull; it is probably best not to anger it.

…

This is the attribute of Li Kui's bull.

The word "terrifying" is not sufficient to describe it; it is exceptionally terrifying.

Its combat power can completely compare with 002's Little Griffin, or even more terrifying.

Although this bull might not necessarily win in a fight, if Little Skeleton were to face it, the defense formed by Little Skeleton's pigs would likely be broken in the first round.

One ordinary member's power is comparable to the captain of an ace team; one can imagine just how fearsome 044 truly is.

Honestly, Lu Wu did not have much confidence in taking down 044.

But thinking of the gains after taking down 044, Lu Wu's energy surged, and he yelled at Tuantuan on the stage, who was in no hurry.

"Tuantuan, did you enjoy the soup yesterday? If you win this match, you can have it every day, but if you lose, you'll have to be ridden by Little Skeleton day after day."

Carrot and stick!

An old trick, but it works wonders on this pig.

The pig, who was initially lethargic and even a bit scared, perked up immediately upon hearing this.

It nodded its head bit by bit in agreement.

Tuantuan got it; Tuantuan will try hard!

Done, and with a pair of eyes, it stared at the bull in front of it, which was vastly bigger than its non-giant form, trying to tell its opponent with its eyes that it was very strong.

The bull on the opposite side, however, indicated that pigs' eyes were too small—it didn't see anything.

"Both sides ready, begin the match!"

With the referee's command, the battle between pig and bull commenced.

The bull opposite them snorted loudly through its nostrils and kicked back twice, charging immediately.

Tuantuan also initiated Giant on the spot, spreading its legs and charging forward.

With a "boom," the bull and pig collided violently; the pig was instantly knocked back several meters by the bull.

Evidently, in a confrontation of pure strength, the pig was no match for the bull.

But the pig had other advantages; realizing its lack of strength, it immediately activated Gravity, imposing it on the opponent bull.

At the highest tenfold gravity suddenly bearing down, the bull felt a heavy weight on its body.

Tuantuan seized the opportunity, launching an Earth Thorn directly.

A thick Earth Thorn sprouted from the ground, aiming for the bull's lower region.

This move was something the pig learned from a previous encounter with a wolf.

Unable to avoid under the gravity, the bull took a solid hit.

Even though the bull's defense was terrifying, this strike wasn't just any strike; it caused pain to the bull, a definite pain.

This bull was a male.

Though it didn't break the skin, the pain was real.

And when Tuantuan realized this move's effectiveness, its eyes lit up.

Such an attack was simply too cruel.

The bull, already ill-tempered, received wave after wave of these attacks and went into a frenzy.

It bellowed a mad bull roar, completely stunning its opponent.

The casting of [Gravity] and [Earth Thorns] was interrupted.

The raging mad bull seized this opportunity to activate [Wild Bull's Power] and charged straight toward the pig nearby, flipping it over, then raising its hooves high to stomp down on Tuantuan's belly.

Fortunately, due to the short control time of the bull's [Barbaric Bull Roar], Tuantuan shook off the control just in time as the bull's hooves came down, canceled Giant mode, and narrowly dodged the deadly hooves.

While dodging, Tuantuan did not forget to deliver another [Earth Thorn].

The vital spot was struck again, and the already angry bull went into an outright frenzy, activating [Mad Bull State], instantly skyrocketing its strength to Boss Level.

At the same time, the bull launched into a wild and relentless pursuit of the pig.

Initially, Tuantuan tried to evade the frenzied attacks using its small body and agile speed, but it quickly realized that it was not going to work.

Even though the bull was large in size, its speed was not slow.

Tuantuan simply could not create distance.

Moreover, with each stomp of the bull, the arena would cave in, sending soil and rocks flying, all of which were highly damaging.

With its defenses down, Tuantuan could not be immune to these rocks and was soon forced to revert to Giant mode.

```

It grew gigantic, only to be sent flying by the bull.

After being struck, Tuantuan's growth to gigantic size seemed somewhat inadequate.

Seeing this, Lu Wu quickly shouted from below.

"Tuantuan, level up, if you don't level up you can't beat them."

The audience almost burst into laughter at Lu Wu's command.

What kind of instruction was that? At this critical moment, are you not going to give a constructive command?

Why are you issuing such a command? To make the opponent laugh? Your Summoned Beast can level up on voice command? Just level up because you said so?

Well, as it turned out, some Summoned Beasts could indeed level up on voice command, like Tuantuan.

No sooner had Lu Wu shouted than the pig actually leveled up.

It was normal; this pig was naturally good at cheating, let alone the fact that it had drunk two pots of Skeleton soup not long ago.

Although only one pot was the real deal and although most of the effects of both pots were absorbed, these two pots still allowed the pig to accumulate a lot of energy, enabling it to level up on demand.

It advanced straight to Elite 3 Stars.

Once its star level rose, the pig's strength soared by a tier, and Tuantuan felt very strong, even brave enough to face the bull head-on.

Facing the oncoming bull, it lifted its hooves and unleashed an Advanced Skill [Cute Pig Trample] bursting forth.

This was an area-of-effect crowd-control skill, causing enemies within a 90-degree fan-shaped area in front of the pig to enter a brief stunned state.

Theoretically, after the pig stamped, the bull should have been stunned in place for about one second.

But that was just theory; the actual premise for this theory to hold was that the opponent had to be lighter than the pig, and their strength couldn't exceed the pig's by too much.

The bull met neither requirement.

Therefore, this qualified bull wasn't pinned in place and was only slightly stunned for a moment before continuing to charge straight at the pig, impacting it head-on.

Fortunately, the pig was heavy and smart enough to activate gravity immediately, otherwise, it would have been knocked away by the strike.

The impact also snapped the pig out of its daze and made it realize that it still couldn't take on the bull head-on.

What to do?

Level up again?

The pig really did give it a try, but unfortunately, the previously infallible leveling up trick didn't work this time.

That was normal; even cheating had to follow basic principles, it was already at Elite 3 Stars; to level up again, it would have to reach Boss Level, and that's not something it could just do by leveling up.

With the pig unable to level up, it became a little flustered and turned its head to look at Lu Wu with a resentful look in its eyes.

The pig's expression was very easy to understand.

I can't level up and can't beat the bull, what should I do? Waiting online, very urgent!

Lu Wu hesitated for a moment, then gritted his teeth and gave a response.

"You hold on for a bit, I'll cheat again for you!"

Then, Lu Wu stopped watching the pig and turned to find Dudu, taking her straight to the neighboring rest room.

As he left, anticipation he couldn't suppress brightened Lu Wu's face, and his steps quickened.

Dudu, however, followed like a shy and timid little wife.

This move left the audience dumbfounded.

What's happening here?

Your pig is fighting for its life on stage, and you're holding hands with someone and heading off to a small room, what are you going to do?

Could you possibly be about to do something indescribable at this moment?

Isn't that a bit too daring? Can't you pick a better time and place?

Lu Wuke didn't care about the mood of the audience, and after entering the room with Dudu, he immediately took out a fruit.

It was the Vermilion Fruit that Zhao Kai Ming had had delivered that very morning.

It was a high-quality version of the Little Red Fruits that Dudu had been eating.

Dudu had been eating three Little Red Fruits every day for some time, consuming dozens of them already, and her Bonds Skill was on the verge of reaching its peak. Without any accidents, after eating this Vermilion Fruit, her Bonds Skill should trigger.

Once the Bonds Skill triggered, the energy from dozens of Little Red Fruits and one Vermilion Fruit would erupt, and the pig outside would surely experience another major surge in power.

By then, today's arena would be renamed Tuantuan Arena!

However, Lu Wu initially hadn't planned on letting Dudu eat it.

"Because this thing was delivered somewhat late, I wasn't going to let you eat it now, afraid that it would trigger the Bonds Skill for too long and would delay the pig's match.

But under the current circumstances, it's really not okay not to eat it.

We can only give it a try."

The moment he decided to let Dudu eat it, Lu Wu couldn't help but get excited.

After all, whether the fruit would enable the pig to strengthen in time to win the match was uncertain, but his wife was sure to return looking more beautiful.

So, at that moment, he was particularly attentive.

"Come on, open your mouth!"

Lu Wu said as he brought the Vermilion Fruit up to Dudu's mouth.

This intimate gesture made Dudu's cheeks flush red, turning her into a veritable Steam Girl.

She couldn't manage to open her mouth, and in the end, Lu Wu had no choice but to let Dudu eat it herself.

Swallowing the Vermilion Fruit, Dudu's body emitted a faint light, and this time she didn't fall into a coma, instantly demonstrating her shrink ability for Lu Wu instead.

In less than a minute, Dudu went from 160 Dudu to 99 Dudu.

Losing 61 pounds in weight, her beauty surged back to its peak...

```

# Chapter 179: Tuantuan's Power Surges to 177

Over there, Lu Wu dragged Dudu into the rest area.

On this side, Tuantuan was being chased by a mad bull to the point of utter misery.

The bull's eyes were bloodshot as it lowered its head, its horns aiming straight for the pig's rear with a fierce thrust.

In the first few charges, Tuantuan managed to dodge, but on the fourth, Tuantuan couldn't escape and had no choice but to apply the gravity it had been using on the bull onto itself.

Turning its head, it attempted to counter the bull with the pressure of tenfold gravity.

This move certainly increased the pig's strength, allowing it to stand firmer. A pig and a bull collided head-on; unusually, the pig didn't get pushed back, but the cost was taking the full force of the bull's impact.

Just from that one blow, Tuantuan's head was buzzing.

And the bull had no intention of stopping after just one hit. It would step back a few paces after each collision, then charge again.

After the second hit, Tuantuan's condition was no longer just a buzzing in the head; its tusks trembled, and its gigantic form dimmed.

But the mad bull didn't stop, hitting the pig over and over.

Each strike made the pig's body tremble.

Anyone could see the pig's dire situation.

And yet, strangely, its owner couldn't see it.

No, that's wrong, they couldn't see it even if they wanted to; those two were now in the rest area.

Who knows what they were up to, there was no sign of movement for a long time, nor any intention of coming out.

This made the audience particularly anxious.

Even Zhang Wentao was clueless.

"What's going on with Xiao Lu and the others?"

"Didn't Xiao Lu say they were about to cheat?"

Zhao Kai Ming, remembering the Vermilion Fruit he had someone send to Lu Wu, and recalling what Lu Wu said about Dudu's Bonds Skill, couldn't help but grin.

"Old Zhang, rest assured, Xiao Lu has an ace up his sleeve, I guarantee you, this round..."

As soon as Zhang Wentao heard this and saw Zhao Kai Ming's confident expression, he hurriedly stepped forward to cover his mouth.

"You might as well not speak at all. If you say something, even if there's hope for Xiao Lu and the others, it'll turn into no hope."

Zhao Kai Ming's jinxing was famous in Fucheng.

Whenever he had this demeanor and spoke, he was almost always faced with a contradiction, and yet he himself was never aware of it.

"What's wrong with what I'm saying? Don't act as if everything I say turns out the opposite, okay? You all are just too superstitious. If I were really that accurate, let me just say Xiao Lu is going to lose this round, and the pig is going to kneel, then does it mean that immediately..."

"Boom!"

Before he finished speaking, a loud noise erupted from the arena—the bull was actually sent flying.

In that instant, it wasn't just Zhang Wentao who was dumbfounded; even Zhao Kai Ming was stunned.

Could his words really be that effective?

And it wasn't just them who were dumbstruck; the spectators and those in the 044 area were all in shock.

Because at that moment, right there in the arena,

In the midst of that loud noise, a huge transformation had occurred in Tuantuan's form.

The pig's size had increased substantially, its body stretching to three meters high and five meters long, and not just that, at this very moment, a thick layer of black earth armor protected its entire body from head to toe.

This astonishing transformation led people from the 044 side to want to raise their hands and accuse the other side of cheating.

Even in the Pupil Fire of the Little Skeleton was pure incredulity.

How could Tuantuan become so huge all of a sudden?

The clever Little Skeleton immediately thought of the words Lu Wu had said just before entering the rest area. It had been curious about how Lu Wu was going to cheat and had wanted to follow him in.

But it was kicked out by Lu Wu.

Now, seeing Tuantuan transform like this, a huge idea dawned on Little Skeleton's little skull.

"Cheating is so powerful, I want Lu Wu to help me cheat too!"

As the audience was shocked and Little Skeleton tilted its head, pondering how to make Lu Wu help it cheat, the pig that had successfully cheated started its counterattack.

This pig was also one that held grudges.

It remembered all the hits it had taken from the bull just now.

Now that Tuantuan had grown stronger, of course, it wanted to give back as good as it got. Tuantuan's hind legs pushed off the ground as it charged toward the bull.

The pig, having completed its cheating, launched a charge that was completely different from before, far, far stronger.

An ordinary Summoned Beast would have kept its distance, but this bull was not ordinary.

Being in a Mad Bull State, it didn't know the meaning of fear and chose to face the charge head-on. The pig and the bull collided once more, but this time the outcome was completely different.

The bull was at a disadvantage, and the pig completely overpowered it, sending it flying several meters with a thrust.

Tuantuan was triumphantly smug, raising its snout and directly butting the bull upwards, the gravity applied to the bull erasing its weight.

Seizing the opportunity, Tuantuan slammed into the bull again, knocking it out of the arena and effortlessly winning the match.

"Damn it! Just like that, it's a loss?!"

Watching his bull get knocked out of the arena, Li Kui felt extremely frustrated.

This was the most frustrating abnormal battle he had ever fought.

If the opponent had brought out their current strength from the start, Li Kui would have accepted his loss without any hard feelings.

But they hadn't, and the pig had cheated its way up.

Unable to beat its opponent, it simply leveled up, from 2 stars to 3 stars.

Still unable to beat the opponent, it outright cheated, somehow gaining a surge of power, and then the bull, which had been at a distinct advantage, was instantly defeated.

What made it even more unbearable for him was that at that moment, Lu Wu, who had just entered the small room, emerged with a look of bafflement.

"Eh, we won?"

Hearing this, Li Kui's mentality almost collapsed.

Talk about overdoing it!

That's not how you pretend to be clueless!

And what sent Li Kui into a mental breakdown was, when he turned his head to look at Lu Wu, he suddenly discovered Lu Wu leading a girl wearing a mask.

Well, she was a girl wearing a mask and yet gave off an impression of devastating beauty that tugged at the heartstrings.

The moment everyone saw this girl, the cultured ones were already reciting poems and verses that popped into their head on the spot.

How her form was like, graceful as a startled swan, elegant as a wandering dragon.

How she seemed like a light cloud veiling the moon or a flowing breeze carrying back the snow.

All sorts of tiny verses were being misused,

while those like Nu Xiao who lacked culture had already started shouting "Oh crap".

It could be said that Dudu, without even showing her face, had managed to throw the entire audience off course; at this moment, no one was paying attention to the pig that had won.

All the spectators had one thought in their minds.

If she's like this with the mask on, what sort of beauty would she be if she took it off?

This made Lu Wu very unhappy.

He had put a mask on Dudu precisely to prevent others from seeing his wife, but he hadn't expected that even with the mask on, the whole crowd would still stare at his wife.

His wife, Lu Wu's wife, was not for your viewing pleasure!

No one was allowed to look!

With his magnanimous heart, Lu Wu immediately led Dudu back to the resting room.

He himself stood at the doorway, looking as if he would chop down anyone who dared come close to looking at his wife.

"Pfft, jerk!"

Brought one girl inside, and then brought another one out, and still not letting anyone look!

The crowd silently labeled Lu Wu as a jerk, with none more fervent than the Hengheng Monster who was holding a cat and watching the match.

And the one with the most significant reaction was Jiang Yuexing, who, when she saw Dudu, shattered the one-way glass in front of her. Luckily, at that moment, the entire audience's attention was on Dudu, and nobody noticed it happening.

Only Lu Wu felt as if he was chilling to the bone.

Feeling like even his bones were growing ice, he couldn't help but think,

When he was weak, should he fatten up Dudu a bit more to stay safe?

......

After Dudu returned to the resting room, the audience finally redirected their attention back to the competition.

On his end, Lu Wu let Little Skeleton guard the door while he took the time to run over to the edge of the arena to check Tuantuan's attributes.

...

Name: Earth Spirit Pig (Tuantuan) (First Evolution)

Power: 3 stars (Elite)

Quality: Ordinary (Enhanced)

Attribute: Earth

State: Excited (Tuantuan is really awesome right now, Tuantuan wants to drink Little Skeleton Soup!)

Bonds Skill: Bonds Growth

Sub-skills: Cute Pig Eating

Common Skills: Charge (Master) Earth Thorns (Master) Defense Enhancement (Master)

Advanced Magic Skills: Gravity (Master) Earth Spike Forest (Entry-level)

Advanced Close-Combat Skills: Cute Pig Trample (Master)

Talent: Defense Enhancement (Basic) (Dual enhancement of both physical and magic defense)

Cute Pig Form (Active) (Upon activating combat form, undergoes gigantification, power increased by one star, and gains protection from [Earth Spirit Armor], greatly increasing physical and magic defenses.)

Earth Spirit Guardian (Basic) (Passive) (Immune to hard damage from Earth attribute spells of the same level, and as long as both feet stay on the ground, it can continuously benefit from the earth, slowly restoring vitality.)

Description: What more do you want from me?

Boosted like this, what more do you want from me?

......

Looking at Tuantuan's attributes, the corners of Lu Wu's mouth lifted in a smile.

The level of power Tuantuan now possessed was terrifying, and this bolstered Lu Wu's confidence in taking down number 044 a notch.

But he still didn't dare to claim he could beat 044 with absolute certainty, for 044's strength was indeed extraordinary.

At the very moment Lu Wu was examining Tuantuan's attributes, 044's second summoned beast entered the stage.

When Lu Wu saw this particular summoned beast, his eyes narrowed slightly.

...

Name: Shadow Assassin (First Evolution)

Power: 3 stars (Elite)

Attribute: Dark

Quality: Bronze (Enhanced)

Weakness: Light

State: Calm (Maintaining a calm demeanor is an assassin's instinct)

Basic Skills: Back Stabbing (Master) Shadow Binding (Master) Invisibility (Master) Lighting (Master)

Advanced Skills: Weakness Attack (Master) (Able to precisely find the adversary's weakness, delivering the most lethal blow)

Talent: Shadow Transformation (Active) (Transform into a shadow, take refuge in the shadow, control the shadow)

Companion Weapon: Shadow Dagger (Bronze) (A weapon capable of cutting through shadows!)

Description: It doesn't have any burst skills, nor does it need any.

...

This was the first time Lu Wu had encountered a summoned beast with no emotional fluctuations, and although its attributes seemed average, he felt it would be a very troublesome opponent.

Sure enough, right after the Shadow Assassin entered the stage, and the judge announced the start, it vanished into thin air right before everyone's eyes.

The next moment, a thin wound appeared on the thick Earth Armor covering Tuantuan…

# Chapter 180: 178 The Last Battle

The arena was empty, with only a pig on it.

Suddenly, a wound appeared out of nowhere on the pig's back.

It was a rather terrifying sight.

As soon as the Shadow Assassin entered the arena, it demonstrated its incredibly terrifying aspect.

This silent method of assassination was chilling; if it had been any other Summoned Beast, it might have been seriously injured, but unfortunately for the assassin, its opponent was a pig.

The cut didn't actually harm the pig; it merely scratched the Earth Spirit Armor on its back and quickly healed.

However, for the assassin, this was just the beginning.

Soon another wound appeared out of nowhere, this time on the buttocks, not a cut but rather a prod.

And clearly, the assailant was aiming for an indescribable spot.

Unfortunately for the assailant, after the previous encounter with the Gale Wolf, Tuantuan had significantly increased its protection in that area.

Not only did it have a tail, but the Earth Spirit Armor there was much thicker, so Tuantuan wasn't harmed in that manner.

When the second strike failed, the assassin directly changed its glasses.

Although the assassin was skilled in invisibility, its speed wasn't faster than the Gale Wolf's; the pig knew what the opponent was trying to do the moment it made a move.

It simply closed its eyes and covered its nose, lying down on the ground, letting the Shadow Assassin do whatever it wanted.

It must be said, this lazy tactic was something the pig truly enjoyed.

It suited it well—all it had to do was do nothing, and lying there, the Shadow Assassin wouldn't have any way to succeed.

There was no helping it, this pig was frustratingly tenacious.

Thus, the audience saw such a scene.

On an arena that should have been the scene of fierce competition, a pig was just lying there, sleeping.

Wounds appeared around its body from time to time, but none could break through the Earth Spirit Armor or even come close to injuring the pig inside.

Seeing this familiar scenario, the viewers couldn't help but smirk.

It seemed like this round was settled again; the Shadow Assassin simply couldn't breach the pig's defenses, and the pig couldn't locate the Shadow Assassin. Therefore, this round was likely to end in a draw again.

What was to be next was the 042 Summoned Beasts in a tag team battle against the 044 team leader.

However, just as the audience was scripting the narrative for 042, the pig lying on the ground suddenly let out a painful howl and jumped up.

Visibly angry, it turned its head toward its rear end, raising its trotters high and executing a Cute Pig Trample.

It achieved nothing, and Tuantuan then howled once again.

This wasn't a sudden fit of madness; it was a sudden sensation of being stabbed in the buttocks. Although it wasn't injured, it was extremely painful.

It was so painful that it couldn't help but start running, as if trying to escape from something.

Lu Wu down below the arena was also perplexed.

Before Lu Wu could react, the running pig suddenly stopped and then jumped off the arena.

"What's going on?"

This made Lu Wu even more bewildered, and the crowd was stunned as well.

Nobody expected the pig to suddenly jump off the arena.

After Tuantuan jumped off, it remained confused for a while before it suddenly realized and turned back, glaring angrily at the arena. At that moment, the previously unseen Shadow Assassin had appeared above the arena, looking indifferently at the pig, exuding an imposing aura.

Lu Wu then called Tuantuan over.

Checking Tuantuan's state and briefly inquiring clarified the situation.

It was lying perfectly fine when it suddenly felt pain in its buttocks, as if something was stabbing it, causing it to run uncontrollably. As it neared the edge of the arena, it suddenly felt compelled to jump off.

Having understood this, Lu Wu reviewed the attributes of the Shadow Assassin and had a rough idea of what had occurred.

"The dagger! It's the Shadow Assassin's dagger!"

Lu Wu finally understood what the blade's ability to 'cut through shadow' meant—it could directly attack the shadow.

Although the damage wasn't significant, it bypassed defense.

It sounds frightening, but it was manageable as long as the pig could bear the pain, but Tuantuan was a bit too sensitive.

It focused entirely on defense because it was afraid of pain.

Of course, being stabbed didn't keep it down, as it uncontrollably jumped out of the ring, likely due to the Shadow Assassin's Shadow Transformation talent.

It controlled the pig's shadow, and incidentally, the pig itself, which is how it took down Tuantuan.

"It seems that even if you can see the opponent's attributes, you might not fully master their situation!"

There was nothing that could be done about it, as the Golden Finger at Lu Wu's house wasn't the Identification Skill. The attributes he wasn't aware of would not show up on the attribute panel.

"But no worries, the opponent's move must have drained them significantly. Old Lin, it's up to you now!

You should have an advantage against this one. Just make sure to stay away from the edge of the ring and keep moving!"

The goblin had specifically trained to counter Little Demon's "Visual Deprivation," so even if he couldn't see the opponent, he wouldn't be passively hit like Tuantuan.

Soon, the goblin entered the ring, sword in hand.

The new round of competition officially began.

As soon as the referee blew the whistle, the Shadow Assassin vanished again.

Meanwhile, the goblin immediately closed his eyes and headed toward the center of the ring.

He had just taken a step when he suddenly swung his longsword backward, creating a clear sound of clashing blades, and the previously invisible assassin was struck and revealed.

The goblin seized the opportunity, closed in, and kicked the Shadow Assassin, sending him flying.

From the start, the goblin took the upper hand in the first round.

However, the opponent wasn't to be underestimated.

After being kicked away, the Shadow Assassin disappeared again before even landing.

Seeing this, he stopped the pursuit and continued toward the center of the ring.

In that spot, there was a vertical beam of light coming down, leaving only a single point of shadow directly underneath oneself.

In other words, as long as the goblin stood there, the risk of being controlled by shadow transformation was minimal.

So, to defeat the goblin, the Shadow Assassin would need to control him before he reached the beam of light.

This was the strategy that Lu Wu had devised for the goblin.

After all, although the goblin could locate by sound, this ability was too passive, suitable only for defense, not for an active attack.

To defeat this Shadow Assassin, they had to force him to make a move.

Only by forcing him to act could the goblin have a chance to win.

However, the development didn't go as Lu Wu predicted, and the Shadow Assassin didn't attempt to stop the goblin, allowing him to reach the beam of light.

Seeing this, Lu Wu almost understood the opponent's tactics.

The opponent wasn't planning a risky attack but rather preparing to trade with the goblin directly.

"It seems that the Shadow Assassin really drained his energy with invisibility and controlling Tuantuan just now, so now they can only adopt the most advantageous tactics for them."

This tactic was quite rogue-like, but Lu Wu had no other choice at the moment, and he couldn't find where they were.

In the end, he could only let them exchange his two Summoned Beasts for the one Shadow Assassin.

Watching the goblin enter the stage and trade blows with the opponent in just one round before being replaced, Lu Wu couldn't help but curse, "Damn it, who's really the Cultivation Master here?

This guy is just too scheming to watch!"

After saying that, Lu Wu felt something was off.

"No, wait, who said Cultivation Masters are scheming? I am a honest and upright Cultivation Master who never plays tricks!

Right, Dudu?"

He even turned to confirm with Dudu who was behind the door.

Dudu nodded furiously, affirming that Lu Wu was indeed such an honest and upright Cultivation Master.

During this time, the final match between 042 and 044 had already begun.

Little Skeleton skillfully climbed onto the ring, while on the other side, the captain of Team 044, Wang Jun's Summoned Beast also entered.

This was its first appearance in the high school league...

…

I feel like I hear someone saying I'm short.

# Chapter 181: 179 Little Skeleton three stars

Because this was battle 042 versus 044, deciding who would be the champion.

It determined whether Jiangnan could lift its head in pride from this fight.

So the atmosphere at the start of the battle became tense and electric, making everyone incredibly nervous.

Zhao Kai Ming and Zhang Wentao stopped their chattering, fixing their eyes intently on the arena.

The Hengheng Monster tightened its grip on the cat it was holding.

Even in section 002, Fang Bai clenched his fists.

The calmest ones in the arena were probably Jiang Yuexing and Team 003, whose emotions were inscrutable.

However, this tense atmosphere was somewhat dispelled as soon as Wang Jun's Summoned Beast entered the stage.

On the arena side, a tiny, fire-red rooster hopped up and onto the stage.

The appearance of this little fellow left the audience dumbfounded.

The little creature was less than twenty centimeters tall and looked silly and adorable, not at all like a contender for the arena.

This is the Summoned Beast of Team 044's captain?

It looked like it would be easy to bully, didn't it?

Of course, that was what the ordinary spectators were thinking. The ones with slightly better sense all knew that the person who could become the captain of Team 044 was no simple character; hence, his Summoned Beast was definitely extraordinary.

As for Lu Wu, who had seen its attributes, he knew clearly that this little thing was not just extraordinary, but freakishly so.

...

Name: Fire Chick (Once Evolved) (Growth Stage)

Power: 3 Stars (Elite)

Quality: Bronze (Questionable) (Elevating)

Attribute: Fire

Weakness: Water

State: Confused ("Master made me fight, but what is a competition? Can I eat it? Is it tastier than chicken stew with mushrooms?")

Basic Magic Skills: Fireball (Mastered), Beaded Curtain Fireball (Mastered), Fire Wall (Mastered)…

Advanced Magic Skills: Fire Sea (Mastered), Fire Rain (Mastered), ??? (Possibly Exists)

Advanced Close Combat Skills: Giantification (Fire Chick Version) (Mastered), ??? (Possibly Exists)

Talent: Bathed in Fire (Active) (When not activated, can heal own wounds and recover stamina amidst flames. Once activated, can significantly enhance own power, at least by one star, and up to two stars maximum.)

Fire Attribute Enhancement (Basic) (Strengthens fire attribute attacks and defense)

??? (Possibly Exists)

Description: It's a fire player; don't expect pigs to defend against its attacks.

...

This was the information that Lu Wu had seen before; this chicken's power was formidable, and it was indeed one of the few elite-level Summoned Beasts Lu Wu had seen noted with 'Questionable' and '?' in its attribute panel.

Without a doubt, this was a formidable chicken. Whether Little Skeleton could defeat it, Lu Wu really didn't have much confidence.

Now there was no other way; they could only proceed with the original tactics.

After the arrival of the Fire Chick, Little Skeleton also released the pig from his phone.

This time, though, Little Skeleton didn't let them all out, just one.

The fact was, its pigs were afraid of fire; releasing them all wouldn't be able to hold off the opponent, so it wasn't very meaningful. Only one was needed as a mount.

With the pig released, Little Skeleton swiftly climbed onto its back.

The referee gave the signal, and the ultimate battle of the high school league was officially declared started.

It was only at this moment that Wang Jun told his own chicken what it should do.

"Little Fire, defeat the Little Skeleton in front of you, and when you come back, I'll give you a chicken and mushroom stew!"

Are you the devil?

Letting a chicken eat a chicken mushroom stew?

Lu Wuyi shook his head and then proceeded to give Little Skeleton a pre-battle pep talk: "If you win, you can play with the phone and ride on Tuantuan. If you lose, you'll be stewed for Tuantuan to drink!"

Different masters, different Summoned Beasts, different pre-battle pep talks, but the effects were the same.

The eyes of the little chicken lit up on the spot; it opened its mouth and spewed out a fireball towards Little Skeleton.

Little Skeleton was not to be outdone, raising its hand to meet it with Bone Teeth, but it was unable to stop the attack or have much effect. Little Skeleton quickly added a Bone Spear.

This time, there was an effect; the Bone Spear dimmed the fireball considerably, but it still failed to completely stop it. In the end, Little Skeleton set up a Bone Shield to block it.

It took three skills to block one, and the disparity in firepower between the two sides was immediately evident.

Little Skeleton became unhappy then and there, casting a resentful glance at Lu Wu, its Pupil Fire flickering.

Though the distance was too great for Lu Wu to see Little Skeleton's state clearly, having raised it for half a year, he could still understand what it probably meant.

Little Skeleton was outmatched, so Lu Wu should quickly cheat on its behalf, like he had for Tuantuan!

Little Skeleton, fearing Lu Wu might misunderstand, even pointed towards the resting room.

Lu Wu couldn't help but laugh; what, you really thought I could cheat by just entering the resting room, huh?

"I can't, there's no cheat available. Fight properly!"

Lu Wu flatly refused, leaving Little Skeleton feeling quite resentful. It had clearly seen how Lu Wu had enabled a cheat for Tuantuan.

After enhancing Tuantuan, it had become very mighty. Why not do it for Little Skeleton too?

Lu Wu must not like Little Skeleton anymore!

Lu Wu already had the little goldfish; Little Skeleton was no longer his favorite baby.

At this very moment, the Fire Chick opposite them went all out. Fireballs were flung, and a series of Beaded Curtain Fireballs came flying.

The little beak opened up, and it launched a chain of fireballs at Little Skeleton like a Charge rifle.

Little Skeleton, having spent so much time with Lu Wu, had become much more broad-minded. Already displeased, it directed all its hatred onto the little chicken at this moment.

Instead of choosing to tough it out, it patted the pig beneath it.

The Iron Bone Wild Boar got the message and immediately started to Charge, dodging the little chicken's Beaded Curtain Fireballs.

Meanwhile, Little Skeleton was charging up a Thunder Strike on the pig's back.

As an advanced spell, Little Skeleton's Thunder Strike required three to five seconds of charging, and even longer if in motion—at least eight to nine seconds.

This process was quite noticeable.

Wang Jun issued a command immediately.

"Use Fire Rain, interrupt it!"

Fire Chick spread its wings and after two seconds of charging, a sky-full of Fire Rain cascaded down from above the arena.

The arena for Summoned Beast competitions was not small, but neither was it very large, and with Fire Chick's widespread AOE unleashing, there was nowhere for Little Skeleton to hide.

Little Skeleton simply didn't dodge, it decisively let the pig stop in its tracks, and hid beneath it, continuing to charge.

Meanwhile, Iron Bone Wild Boar went straight into Iron Bone State to defend.

Paying the price with the pig's severe injury, Little Skeleton toughed it out through the round of Fire Rain and completed the charging of Thunder Strike.

And struck the first chance it got.

The thunderbolt brought joy to the faces of the audience.

They knew the power of this thunder; Little Skeleton had relied on it to win battles before.

But before their smiles could fully bloom, they were frozen in place.

For at the very moment the Thunder Strike hit, Fire Chick activated Giant Evolution, growing from possibly less than twenty centimeters tall to two meters in an instant, its whole body enshrouded in flames, somehow withstanding the blast.

And while standing up to Thunder Strike, it shot out a blast of flames towards Little Skeleton.

This was its second advanced skill, Fire Sea.

Little Skeleton's response was equally swift, immediately withdrawing the pig, already gravely injured from enduring a bout of Fire Rain.

At the same time, its skeleton flashed with electrical light, suddenly bursting in speed and dodging the descending Fire Sea.

At this point, Little Skeleton's long-concealed Charging skill was also revealed.

And all this happened less than two minutes into their battle. In just two minutes, Little Skeleton had nearly revealed all its cards.

However, this was within Lu Wu's expectations.

It was fairly normal for such a scenario to occur given the significant gap in power between the two sides.

At this point, he issued what seemed a devil-may-care command.

"Little Skeleton, do as you please!"

Upon this command, Little Skeleton's Pupil Fire lit up instantly; the phone brightened, and once again a pig was summoned. Little Skeleton mounted it, clutching the Bone Staff tightly in both hands as electrical light flickered and spread from its own skeleton to the pig it was riding.

Simultaneously, Little Skeleton's phone rang again.

"Stubbornly holding on to one's convictions

Draped in a cloak of arrogance, harboring laughable pride

Swearing fierce and loud at the right time

The sad shame once shelved away high above

In truth has long soaked the self in the mirror..."

This was a song Little Skeleton had found while browsing 'pipilapalapala', a tune dubbed as a nuclear blast hit song.

Little Skeleton liked it very much and had saved it for playing while riding Tuantuan into battle.

Regrettably, this wasn't Tuantuan's first battle.

Even so, as this BGM played, Little Skeleton's Pupil Fire couldn't help but pulse animatedly, and upon close observation, one could even see flashes of electricity within it.

With the BGM accompanying, Little Skeleton initiated a Charge.

Fire Chick, of course, wouldn't just watch Little Skeleton charge at it. Opening its beak, it shot out Fireballs one after another.

Facing the Fireballs, the pig under Little Skeleton, boosted by the electric light, dodged nimbly, avoiding most of them. And for those it couldn't dodge, Little Skeleton simply swung its Bone Staff to smash them apart.

Watching Fireballs shatter before its Bone Staff, Little Skeleton was overjoyed.

Something was stirring within its skeleton, even sensing movement within the Bone Staff itself.

Indeed, compared to being a Mage, Little Skeleton preferred melee combat by far.

This behavior stunned the audience. Wasn't Little Skeleton a Mage? Why was it charging forward now? Using the Bone Staff as a melee weapon, it looked particularly ferocious.

While they watched in bewilderment, Little Skeleton had already charged up to Fire Chick.

At that moment, on team 044's side, Wang Jun curled his lips.

"A mage fighting melee? What a capricious Summoner, and such a stubborn Little Skeleton!

But, my little chick is quite willful too!"

Before his words fell silent, Fire Chick stretched its neck and squawked, flames bursting around its feet and enveloping the bird as it initiated its Bathed in Fire Talent.

Its power surged instantly, escalating from its original Elite 3 Stars to Boss 2 Star in a moment.

And with flames circling it, it charged directly at Little Skeleton.

Facing the oncoming little chick, Little Skeleton's Pupil Fire shone with electric flashes, not moving aside or dodging.

Just as the BGM reached its most rousing part.

"Love is still weeping, consolation rescues lies

Sacred vows forge Hell."

To the accompaniment of the BGM, the electric light in Little Skeleton's Pupil Fire became gradually clearer. It began to distinctly feel the pulse of the Bone Staff, the entire skeleton getting excited, it swung its now-transforming Bone Staff at Fire Chick.

The moment the Bone Staff was swung, all the electric light on Little Skeleton's body surged towards it. The once white Bone Staff began to change, starting from Little Skeleton's bony hand, inch by inch it transformed.

The previously white Bone Staff started turning into a silver-white texture, and bit by bit morphed in shape.

At this moment, Fire Chick obviously sensed danger.

Yet it did not retreat an inch, and after a squawk, it surged forward in a resolute charge.

Right at that instant, a mystic flame phantom coalesced around it.

The moment this phantom formed was the exact moment Little Skeleton's Bone Staff completed its transformation, changing fully from a staff to a silver-white Long Spear, smashing into Fire Chick.

Also, at that very moment, Lu Wu felt a chill run up his forehead.

Little Skeleton had evolved.

The thought had scarcely crossed Lu Wu's mind when the arena above was engulfed by electric and flame lights, drowning out the figures of Little Skeleton and Fire Chick...

# Chapter 182: 180 Victory

Arena.

The moment the silver-white spear smashed into the shadow, bursts of electricity and fire erupted.

The arena reached its most dazzling moment, and the tension also peaked.

Everyone held their breath, their eyes—even if slightly irritated by the bright light—still fixed on the stage, their hearts pounding with anticipation.

Who won this battle after all?

Was it Little Skeleton or Fire Chick?

Even Zhang Wentao, who had said he wanted Lu Wu to taste defeat, was now clenching his fists tight.

Obviously, what he said and what he hoped for regarding Lu Wu winning the championship were completely different.

However, one person knew the outcome the instant the Little Skeleton's spear struck.

Because the moment that bone staff transformed, she knew what was inside it.

Yet, she was not pleased at all; her face immediately darkened as it meant the possibility she didn't want to accept had greatly increased.

So now, her eyes fixed on Lu Wu, she wondered many things.

Her face kept changing expressions.

Elsewhere, the two types of light on the stage held each other in a stalemate before finally breaking.

Eventually, the electricity proved more dominant, and in less than a few seconds, the phantom of the Fire Chick shattered, its fire light dimmed instantly, and the electricity peaked, completely overtaking the stage, sweeping the Fire Chick right off.

This battle was decided in that instant.

Little Skeleton defeated Fire Chick, and Team 042 had triumphed over Team 044 to become the first champion from Jiangnan in recent years.

At that moment, filled with years of Jiangnan people's expectations, joyful cheers erupted loudly, and the arena boiled over once again.

Millions watching the live network broadcast also erupted in excitement.

This surge of joy was difficult to contain; it was the perfect moment for advertising.

Knowing this, Lu Wu quickly rushed to the edge of the stage, shouting at Little Skeleton, "Quick, quick, quick, switch to the advertisement!"

Caught up in inspecting his spear, Little Skeleton snapped out of it and immediately played the advertisement with the background music.

"Being invincible is so, so lonely."

During the advertisement, Lu Wu took the moment to examine the silver spear in Little Skeleton's hand.

...

Name: Mysterious Bone Staff (Silver Spear Form)

Quality: Silver (suspected)

Side effect: Increases the "[Charging]" skill effect by fifty percent.

Skill: Thunder Dragon Strike (condenses all Thunder Attribute energy to deliver a must-kill strike. As strong as Little Skeleton, currently able to inflict Boss 3 Star damage. Cooldown 3 days)

Description: It seems it has many positions yet to be unlocked.

...

Well, this form of the bone staff really was strong.

But Lu Wu was a bit dumbfounded.

"Doesn't make sense, how can the bone staff transform like this?

It's illogical! And how can the companion equipment quality upgrade out of nowhere?

What's the principle here?"

As Lu Wu puzzled over the silver spear, Captain Wang Jun from Team 044 came over, holding a chicken that had returned to 20 centimeters in size, looking utterly exhausted and seemingly powerless.

His face somewhat showed the gloom of defeat.

"I thought I had definitely won, but you had such a trick up your sleeve. Truly fitting of a Cultivation Master!"

Lu Wu didn't take kindly to that.

Blaming their cultivation masters again?

Seeing the look on Lu Wu's face, Wang Jun quickly said sincerely, "I didn't mean you are sneaky; I truly admire you!"

Lu Wu couldn't help but roll his eyes, "What? Are you sure you're not here to pick a fight?"

"Look at it, if I came over, it would just be to get beaten up."

Wang Jun's comment eased the tension, and Lu Wu's gaze then shifted to the chicken in his arms, sincerely admiring it.

"I have to say, your little chicken is really good!"

Indeed, it was good; if it weren't for Little Skeleton's cheating, it would have been unbeatable.

But when Lu Wu called it a little chicken, the already exhausted chicken suddenly got excited, stretching its neck and aiming to peck at Lu Wu.

"What's going on with it?"

"Don't call it little chicken, it gets angry!"

"Eh?"

Lu Wu was startled, took another look at the chicken's state, and realized this chicken was truly odd.

Angry: I'm not a chicken, I am a Phoenix, a very beautiful, very big one that can fly!!!

So, me eating chicken stewed with mushrooms is fine!

What a story!

But Lu Wu didn't have the chance to listen to this story.

They hadn't talked for two sentences when the staff came over to have Lu Wu and the others prepare for the award ceremony.

Well, the high school league's award ceremonies were always especially simple.

Who wouldn't keep the championship simple since it was always someone else's win; just a brief ceremony was enough for Jiangnan side before.

Today was different. After being suppressed for several years, Jiangnan finally had their moment, taking two of the top three spots.

Of course, Jiangnan took the opportunity to really hype up this award ceremony.

The staff even specifically asked Lu Wu and his team 042 to take a shower and change clothes. Yes, this was Zhang Wentao's request, who also personally delivered three sets of Jiangnan University uniforms to them.

This old man clearly learned from Lu Wu how to seize an opportunity for publicity.

And he wasn't the only shrewd one.

While Lu Wu and his team were preparing backstage, about a dozen Jiangnan businesses, somehow having obtained Lu Wu's contact, all wanted to hitch a ride on this wave of popularity.

Under normal circumstances, Lu Wu might have been interested.

But now, as soon as he heard their offers, he immediately lost interest.

After all, almost none of these enterprises related to the summoner industry, and what they could offer was just money.

But Lu Wu wasn't interested in money. Moreover, with the award ceremony schedule being tight, he simply rejected them all.

After some hustle, Lu Wu, leading Dudu and accompanied by Lin Jianying and the staff, went to receive the award.

Initially, Lu Wu was quite joyful.

However, upon arriving at the venue, that joy vanished, replaced by the chilling sensation he often felt during May and June.

At the same time, the people around him all focused their gaze, specifically on the now-slimmed Dudu.

This made Lu Wu quite upset; his wife was pretty, but not for others to ogle at.

Besides, they were wearing masks and conservative uniforms. Lu Wu had checked before coming out to ensure that not a single inch of skin was exposed. To still be staring at them, wasn't that a bit too depraved?

Lu Wu was obviously being narrow-minded, assuming everyone was lusting after his wife.

In reality, the attention on Dudu was partly because she now indeed looked great, but that wasn't the main reason.

The main thing was, Dudu was now slim instead of plump.

Her appearance in this context was problematic; this was supposed to be Team 042's award ceremony, so what did slim Dudu have to do with it?

Why was she holding the Earth Spirit Pig, which belonged to plump Dudu?

Was it that this scoundrel had discarded the old for the new?

During the competition, he called her his sweet plump Dudu, but no sooner had it ended, he switched to a slim version to bask in the glory?

Considering this possibility, the audience's look towards Lu Wu turned rather menacing.

Just then, a sequence of steady footsteps approached Lu Wu, and the crowd in front of him parted, allowing Jiang Yuexing with an expressionless face to walk up to Lu Wu.

Before Lu Wu could react, she pointed at Dudu huddled by his side, looking timid under the scrutiny.

"Who is she?"

"My wife!"

Lu Wu blurted out unconsciously, causing Dudu, holding onto his arm, to stiffen up and then heat flushed to her head.

On Lu Wu's side, he noticed that Jiang Yuexing's gaze on him seemed fraught with much more danger.

Lu Wu even felt like she wasn't really looking at him.

But that wasn't the point. The point was, Lu Wu realized he was about to freeze to death and also snapped back to what he had just blurted out.

"She's my teammate!"

"Your teammate? Which one? Take off her mask and let me have a look!"

"No!" Lu Wu unhesitatingly refused.

He wasn't about to let others see his wife.

Everyone outside was no good, the whole audience was eyeing his wife, what if he took off the mask? That'd be asking for trouble.

No, absolutely not. Even if it killed him, he wouldn't remove the mask.

But as soon as Lu Wu spoke, he noticed Jiang Yuexing looking even more dangerously at him, feeling colder, and even Dudu started shivering slightly.

Fortunately, at that moment, Zhao Kai Ming gathered his courage to come forward.

"Uh, Governor, the one beside Xiao Lu should be his teammate, Pang Duddu.

Although I don't know why she slimmed down so much in such a short time, it's indisputable that she is Pang Duddu, otherwise, the Earth Spirit Pig wouldn't let her hold it.

Also, I think, Dudu's drastic weight loss must be related to the recent eruption by the Earth Spirit Pig."

With this explanation from Zhao Kai Ming, Jiang Yuexing paused, took a closer look at Dudu and the pig in her arms.

After confirming it was as Zhao Kai Ming said, Lu Wu felt suddenly not so cold anymore, and Jiang Yuexing's look at him lost much of its danger and even seemed a bit relieved, though he couldn't tell what she was feeling relieved about.

Zhao Kai Ming, on the other hand, was puzzled.

Actually, what he just said was obvious to anyone with a bit of insight.

Logically, Jiang Yuexing, being a bigwig, should have seen through it, he thought she was trying to clear things for Lu Wu, but now it seemed she genuinely had not noticed before.

That was quite improper!

Then, Zhao Kai Ming suddenly remembered.

Jiang Yuexing, though publicly claiming to be married and asking everyone to call her Mrs. Jiang.

But no one had ever seen her husband, supposedly exploring new worlds in some secret realm. Originally, Zhao Kai Ming hadn't pondered much, but now, considering the situation, a daring thought surged in his mind.

"Could it be…"

Zhao Kai Ming's musings were cut short when Jiang Yuexing suddenly glanced at him, sending a chill through him, turning his face pale.

Done for, he seemed to know something he shouldn't have, would he be silenced?

…

Well, about that missing chapter, let me ponder on it.

Actually, the day before yesterday, I went on a blind date, and these past two days I was chatting with the girl.

But don't worry, she has already rejected me, so I can heal from this and make up the missing chapter.

Yep, that's it, going to have a cry now!

# Chapter 183: 181 Call Mom

At the grand award ceremony.

Lu Wu received the champion's trophy from Jiang Yuexing's hands.

With that, the high school league had come to a perfect end.

Next, all Lu Wu had to do was wait for the post-competition rewards to come through.

These weren't small gains.

The income from advertisements, rewards from Jiangnan for him, the benefits of being in the top three of the high school league.

Lu Wu was excited just thinking about it.

However, what Lu Wu hadn't expected was that the first thing he'd be waiting for wasn't any of these, but a notification for a private meeting.

Jiang Yuexing wanted to have a private chat with him!

As soon as Lu Wu heard this, his head buzzed, and his heart could not help but 'thump thump' wildly.

He wasn't excited; he was nervous.

His few interactions with Jiang Yuexing had all made Lu Wu sense something ominous.

With the way the Governor looked at him being a bit strange, Lu Wu was somewhat scared and not very keen on meeting her.

After all, his stomach was still fine.

And his Dudu's looks were still at their peak.

But as the Governor of Jiangnan, it was clear that whether they would have the chat was not for him to decide.

Having already cleaned up before the ceremony, he was immediately taken away by Jiang Yuexing afterwards.

Zhao Kai Ming watched Lu Wu being led away, with nothing but desolation in his eyes.

"Xiao Lu, it's not that I won't save you, I'm just as helpless myself right now!"

If it was really as he had speculated.

Zhao Kai Ming felt that he and Lu Wu were, most likely, going to be in trouble.

And he would definitely be in deeper trouble than Lu Wu, since after all, he wasn't her son.

...

On the other side.

Jiang Yuexing hadn't taken Lu Wu very far.

She simply brought him directly to the room she had used to watch the competition.

Once back in that room, Jiang Yuexing seated herself on the couch and waved at Lu Wu.

"Come here, in front of me!"

Lu Wu approached nervously and cautiously, stopping two meters in front of Jiang Yuexing, standing up straight.

Jiang Yuexing's eyebrows lifted: "Closer!"

Lu Wu inched forward again, but Jiang Yuexing, growing impatient, simply hooked her finger, and an invisible force pulled Lu Wu right in front of her.

Lu Wu, feeling flustered with Jiang Yuexing staring at him from such a close distance, said, "Mrs. Jiang..."

"Silent!"

Lu Wu shut his mouth.

Jiang Yuexing then began to examine Lu Wu's face very carefully, a scrutiny that lasted for five minutes, occasionally even reaching out to touch it.

At first, Lu Wu thought she might be coveting his good looks, but then he noticed that the more Jiang Yuexing stared at his face, the more her expression changed, the more her gaze seemed like that of someone looking at a scumbag.

It had even reached the point where she might whip out a butcher's knife at any second.

Lu Wu panicked, as he hadn't done anything wrong, and if he was to be knifed, that would be incredibly unjust!

So, Lu Wu couldn't keep quiet any longer.

"Mrs. Jiang..."

"Don't call me Mrs. Jiang!" Jiang Yuexing cut in again, then said, "Call me Mom!"

"What?"

Lu Wu was dumbfounded. Do rich women play that wildly these days?

Jiang Yuexing simply added with an even tone, "Your performance in the high school competition was good, I am very satisfied with you, and I plan to take you in as my adopted son."

At the time, Lu Wu was not pleased, and his eyebrows knitted together.

"Shouldn't this sort of thing be discussed with me first?"

Jiang Yuexing glanced over, her calm gaze revealing a glint of a cleaver, and Lu Wu instantly got the message.

"Um, I mean, I have no objections!"

Jiang Yuexing seemed quite pleased with that.

"If you have no objections, then from today onward, you are my son, Jiang Yuexing's son!"

Fine, you have the bigger fists, you have the cleaver, whatever you say goes.

Since he couldn't resist, Lu Wu had no choice but to accept.

"So, can I start calling you 'Mom' now?"

Saying this, Lu Wu even tentatively called out, "Mommy!"

And wouldn't you know, Lu Wu adapted to the situation quite quickly.

This was mainly because things were different from when Li Ruyu was in the picture; back then, Lu Wu had just traveled through time and felt the guilt of being a cuckoo in the nest.

Now, Lu Wu had no such guilt; he only had one thought in his head.

He was being taken advantage of, and he needed to figure out how to get some benefits in return, so he shouted with especial shamelessness and emotion.

Unexpectedly, when he called out, the face of the mature woman with the queenly air immediately turned red, and a wave of girlish shyness surged forth, the extreme contrast bewildering Lu Wu.

He stood there, dumbfounded.

By the time Lu Wu snapped out of it, Jiang Yuexing had already regained her queenly demeanor; except for a slight flush on her face, there was no sign of her previous reaction, leading Lu Wu to wonder if he had just hallucinated.

To verify, Lu Wu called out again with emotion.

This time, Jiang Yuexing, prepared for it, maintained her queenly persona, though her face flushed slightly.

Seeing this, Lu Wu sweetened up his words.

He fervently called her 'Mom' left and right, mixing in some compliments for good measure.

After all, even if his performance was a bit shameless to the point where even he felt his face getting hot.

He didn't want to just casually call someone 'Mom.'

But she was the Governor, and she had a cleaver, so calling her 'Mom' for survival's sake wasn't embarrassing.

Of course, it was also because of Jiang Yuexing's good looks that Lu Wu could call her 'Mom' so naturally.

If she were less attractive, Lu Wu would probably have remained defiant.

"Mom, this all happened so suddenly, I don't have anything on me to give as a gift, so how about I give you this necklace as a token of my filial respect?"

Having said his piece, Lu Wu began his charm offensive and took off the necklace around his neck, presenting it to her with respect.

Jiang Yuexing was initially very dismissive and resistant; after all, the necklace was taken off Lu Wu's neck, and it didn't look impressive.

Besides, she was the Governor of Jiangnan; could she not see through Lu Wu's petty schemes?

But before she could refuse, Lu Wu added a line.

"I'll tell you, although this necklace is just an ordinary one from the street stalls, it's the first gift my father gave me. I've always treated it like a protective talisman, feeling like my father was silently watching over me, and now I'm giving it to you.

Let it protect you for me!"

Although everything Lu Wu said was a pack of lies,

The moment those words came out,

Jiang Yuexing suddenly felt the necklace in Lu Wu's hand shine much brighter than before, and she couldn't bring herself to refuse.

She happily accepted the necklace.

In that instant, Lu Wu felt that the woman in front of him was not some powerful and authoritative Queen Governor, but rather a gullible maiden with spring fever.

Lu Wu even considered whether he could trick her into more benefits.

Then, he saw Jiang Yuexing smiling at him.

"Good, I am very satisfied with your gift, and as your adoptive mother, I'll also give you a gift in return!"

...

Woke up late this morning, a shorter post can be forgiven, right?

# Chapter 184: 182 Inheritance Land

Here it is! Here it is! Here it is!

Lu Wu just couldn't contain his excitement anymore.

The legendary scenario of being kept by a rich woman and given kingdoms was about to happen.

The payoff for all the times he had called out "Mom" and "Godmom" was finally coming.

However, Lu Wu felt that he couldn't appear too eager; he had to be reserved, even if he was willing a thousand times over in his heart, he still had to put on a pretense.

But then he thought, what if his act led her to push the matter away, and he ended up with nothing?

So, Lu Wu switched to a different kind of reserve, remaining silent, just watching the rich woman timidly nod her head with shyness.

He was hoping that the rich woman would give him a hundred or eighty thousand points.

However, Lu Wu had clearly underestimated Jiang Yuexing's generosity; what were a hundred or eighty thousand points? If she was going to give a gift, it would be something more special.

Jiang Yuexing twirled the recently acquired necklace in her fingers while gently tapping on the table, gradually regaining her queenly demeanor, and articulately said, "I'll give you Jiangnan University."

"What?"

Lu Wu thought there might be something wrong with his ears: "What did you say?"

"I said, I'm going to give you Jiangnan University!"

This time it was clear enough. Lu Wu found that his ears weren't failing him, but it seemed like his newfound rich godmom might have some issues upstairs.

"Godmom, this joke..."

"This is no joke!"

Jiang Yuexing stopped tapping on the table, her gaze fully on Lu Wu.

All the shyness and timidity Lu Wu had seen in her, like that of a young girl, was put away, replaced by an unquestionable authority, a full queenly aura.

"You have already been accepted into Jiangnan University, and you will start this year.

After you enroll, I want you to compete to become the leader of the Jiangnan University summoner's school team.

Then you'll be in charge of preparing for next year's Alliance Cup University Competition!

I want you to shine in next year's competition just like you did in high school!"

Now Lu Wu understood, after all this, the rich woman was assigning him tasks.

Assigning tasks is fine, but giving away universities—why not just ask me to fly to the moon?

Lu Wu rolled his eyes internally.

Of course, he only dared roll his eyes in his mind, not daring to show it on his face.

But he did dare to voice his opinion.

"Um, I heard that the leader of a university summoner's school team is usually a senior student. I'm just a newbie who's just enrolled; I probably won't stand much of a chance, right?

Even if I did manage to beat them, preparing for the Alliance Cup University Competition would be pushing it. I might be eager, but I'm not sure I have the strength!"

Jiang Yuexing glanced at Lu Wu.

She easily saw through his little ruse.

"How to become the team leader and how to prepare for the competition are for you to figure out, and any difficulties are for you to overcome."

Lu Wu's face darkened slightly.

He felt that this rich woman was somewhat stingy.

Even being the Governor of Jiangnan, she was not generous.

All work and no play, it seemed she didn't plan to let the horse graze.

However, just as Lu Wu was worrying about having no grass to eat and being at the mercy of others like a hardworking little horse,

Jiang Yuexing in front of him suddenly changed the subject: "How much do you know about the benefits for the top three in the high school competition?"

Lu Wu blinked, then shook his head, indicating he knew nothing.

"The benefit for placing in the top three of the high school competition is provided by each province. Here in Jiangnan, the top three prize is access to a special Secret Realm controlled by the Jiangnan Alliance—The Inheritance Land!

Here's some information about the Inheritance Land, take a look."

With that, Jiang Yuexing passed Lu Wu a stack of papers.

The information wasn't extensive—just seven or eight pages, roughly three or four thousand words, with an additional map.

In just a few minutes, Lu Wu had read through it all and completely memorized it.

After reading it, an expression of amazement couldn't help but appear on his face.

Without this document, he would have never known such a wondrous Secret Realm existed.

The so-called Inheritance Land was actually a Secret Realm filled with mysterious altars. It opened only once a year and allowed only nine humans to enter each time; there was no limit on Summoned Beasts—one could bring as many as they had, but there was a power restriction—they couldn't exceed Boss Level.

The role of the Inheritance Land was to enhance the power of Summoned Beasts.

Inside, each altar was guarded by a Summoned Beast. Defeating the guardian beast would activate the altar, sacrificing the fallen beast to augment another Summoned Beast's Quality, Power, and Skills.

Each Summoned Beast could only undergo the ritual of inheritance once, but after obtaining the inheritance, they would, at the very least, gain an increase in power of 1 star.

The most terrifying case was from seven years ago, when a summoner conquered an altar, and his Summoned Beast's Quality jumped directly from Bronze to Gold, while its power surged from Elite 2 Star to Boss 3 Star, instantly making said summoner a Professional Cultivator.

Lu Wu looked at the document in his hands, and considering his own chance to enter the Inheritance Land, he couldn't contain his excitement.

While Lu Wu was excited, Jiang Yuexing handed him another intelligence briefing.

"You just saw the information that is available to everyone, but this one is a compilation of non-public intelligence summarized by the Jiangnan side."

Upon hearing this, Lu Wu became even more excited and quickly started to flip through the new materials.

Indeed, the briefing Jiang Yuexing had taken out was far more detailed and comprehensive than the previous one.

It included the classification of altars and some special poses for sacrifices.

"These altars have attributes, and they are separate in levels. Moreover, sacrificing at an altar is not as simple as just slaying the Summoned Beast on it; that's just the basics. By adding different items, the Summoned Beast can receive even more.

As for what to add, we don't have much detailed information on this side; you might want to study the sacrifice-related aspects yourself.

Besides, although the entry to the Inheritance Land is restricted by the number of people, it doesn't limit the number of Summoned Beasts.

Your spiritual power, after Little Skeleton reaches 3 Stars, will enable you to contract a third Summoned Beast.

Now, there's almost two weeks left before this Secret Realm opens; you can use this time to cultivate the third Summoned Beast."

At this point, Jiang Yuexing finally gave Lu Wu a shock.

She handed Lu Wu a token engraved with the word "Town."

"This is the Sea Suppression Tower Logistics Token; you can take this token to the Fucheng Town Sea Tower Logistics Department to select a young summoned creature or a Summoning Stone."

When Lu Wu heard this, he immediately perked up, reached out to take the token, and pondered what kind of Summoned Beast he should cultivate next.

The little goldfish was from the sea, Little Skeleton from land; maybe it was time for something that could fly in the sky!

That's how Lu Wu cheerfully decided on the category for his third Summoned Beast.

But he hadn't forgotten his teammates.

"Could I get two more, by any chance?"

Lu Wu needed to get one for Dudu, and since he was at it, he might as well get one for Lin Jianying too.

The stingy rich woman was surprisingly generous at this moment and nodded in agreement without hesitation.

She also added, "If you do what I just asked you to, I guarantee that you will become the President of Jiangnan University within ten years, and I will also give you some other rewards."

After saying this, Jiang Yuexing didn't explain what the other rewards were and simply dismissed Lu Wu.

"These leaders, always issuing empty promises!"

Lu Wu was dissatisfied but didn't have a choice.

As she gestured to show him out, he had no choice but to leave with the token.

Jiang Yuexing, on her part, looked at the tokens with slight regret and watched Lu Wu leave, turning back three times with each step. Her expression remained unchanged until Lu Wu was completely out of sight, then she pouted and let her queenly facade collapse, showing a girlish emotion as she muttered,

"Do you still expect benefits from me? Do you know how much your dad owes me? Even flaying and picking your bones wouldn't pay it off!"

She had been naive and easily deceived when she first encountered Lu Haikong.

Just a few words from him, and she was eating out of his hand, and after he ate, he ran off, leaving her alone and pitiable.

Now, well.

She had grown up, learned to wear masks, and even mastered the art of writing bad checks.

Lu Wu thought he could trick benefits and eat soft food from her?

Fine! First, pay back what Lu Haikong owes!

"If he can help Jiangnan University through this crisis, I'll consider it paying back one percent of that guy's debt to me."

Jiang Yuexing was determined to have Lu Wu work off Lu Haikong's debt for her.

As for the benefits, Lu Wu could basically forget it.

Of course, this wasn't absolute; if Lu Wu could bring Lu Haikong over, well, she couldn't promise other things, but a hundred and eighty thousand points should be possible.

It was lucky for Lu Wu not to know this; otherwise, he'd probably be plotting how to sell out his dad right now.

Unfortunately, Lu Wu was none the wiser, so he missed out on the chance to get rich overnight, along with the chance for his dad to slap him dead.

After leaving Jiang Yuexing's place, Lu Wu, holding the token, immediately found Dudu, who was being protected by Little Skeleton, prohibiting any male creatures from approaching within a meter.

Well, it was only after Dudu became beautiful that Lu Wu started to show his possessive and jealous nature.

Especially after experiencing the whole audience lusting after his wife twice, Lu Wu felt like the whole world was trying to steal his wife.

Now, if anyone dared to look at Dudu for too long or come within two meters, Lu Wu was ready to swing a brick.

He even had thoughts of fattening Dudu up again so that she would be less desirable to others.

And by the way, it wasn't Lu Wu who first came up with this idea, it was implanted subliminally by his mother during one of Dudu's thin phases.

Before, Lu Wu thought this was impractical; although Pang Duddu was cute, Slim Dudu was sexier.

Cuteness was worthless compared to sexiness.

But now, the jealous Lu Wu thought that fattening her up would be better.

Fat wives are less attractive!

As for Dudu's part, she didn't care about being fat or skinny; she was particularly indecisive. Whatever Lu Wu said went.

If he told her to get fat, she'd get fat. If he told her to slim down, she'd slim down.

She didn't feel resentful or anything. Whatever Lu Wu said, was always right!

# Chapter 185: 183 Selecting Summoning Beast Baby

The matter of the Summoning Beast Baby, Lu Wu did not want to delay.

After all, there were only about two weeks left to enter the Inheritance Land.

He had to quickly tame the Summoned Beasts and cultivate the third one within two weeks.

Otherwise, it might miss this opportunity.

So Lu Wu, after returning to the resting room, prepared to leave with his teammates.

However, upon returning, he found that Lin Jianying wasn't in the resting room?

"Where did Old Lin go? Is he in the restroom again?"

Lu Wu casually asked, not expecting Dudu to actually nod.

Lu Wu was speechless.

Was he weak in the kidneys? Why did he always run to the bathroom?

Just as he was pondering whether to go look for him, Old Lin came back, looking somewhat distressed.

Lu Wu was stunned and instinctively glanced at the goblin's state.

Helpless (Master met that weirdo again, that weirdo is so annoying, master was really upset)

Seeing this state, Lu Wu immediately frowned.

Was that guy ever going to give it a rest? Had he really set his sights on Old Lin?

Why did Old Lin always bump into him every time he went to the restroom?

It looked like he really needed to give him a beating!

That's what Lu Wu thought, and that's what he did. He asked Old Lin and the others to wait for a while, and he took Little Skeleton to the 003 resting room to look for someone.

Unfortunately, he was too late, and by the time he got there, the person had already left. Helpless, Lu Wu had no choice but to return disappointed.

After returning, Lu Wu gave Lin Jianying a serious lesson.

He advised him that as a boy, he should take good care of himself outside; if he encountered any weirdos, he should not be afraid but bravely resist!

Lin Jianying, not fully understanding, was left stunned by Lu Wu's lecture.

Whether he absorbed it or how much he absorbed was not clear, but after Lu Wu's lecture, Lin Jianying seemed in much brighter spirits.

Having comforted and instructed Lin Jianying, Lu Wu no longer delayed and, with his two teammates, rushed to Fucheng's 'Sea Suppression Tower,' escorted by Li Kai.

…

'Sea Suppression Tower'

Though it sounds like a tower, it is actually a military fortress for Summoners.

It is also an important military system in Jiangnan, specifically responsible for guarding the seas, and the headquarters at Fucheng manages all the Sea Suppression Towers in Jiangnan.

Such a place, of course, is not one you can just enter whenever you want.

Before Lu Wu and his team could even get close, they were intercepted by people from the Sea Suppression Tower. Even when Lu Wu showed a token, the other side did not let them pass immediately. Instead, it took about fifteen minutes of verification before they let Lu Wu and his group in.

Moreover, Li Kai, whose strength was unclear, was kept outside.

As soon as Lu Wu and his two teammates entered the Sea Suppression Tower, a colonel in uniform and cloak stepped forward, his demeanor exuding a juvenile air.

He came forward, his eyes falling on Lu Wu, and introduced himself.

"I am Colonel Jiang Tianyang of the Sea Suppression Tower Observation Department, and I am also your cousin!"

"Cousin?"

"The Governor is my aunt!"

Jiang Tianyang, thumping his chest, was particularly proud and showy, very much giving off a 'my dad is so-and-so' vibe.

After saying that, his eyes then fell on Dudu.

Even though Dudu was wearing a mask and uniform, anyone with eyes could tell she was definitely a beautiful girl.

The more mysterious and covered up a girl was, the more curious it made someone, and Jiang Tianyang couldn't help but take a few more looks. However, after just a few glances, Lu Wu stepped in front of him.

Although he didn't speak, his face clearly read 'what are you looking at' as if ready to start a fight at any moment.

Jiang Tianyang immediately raised his hands in surrender.

"Alright, alright, I'll stop looking, I'll stop. Is that okay?

Come on, I'll take you to the logistical department."

Saying this, he turned his head to lead the way, taking Lu Wu and the others toward the logistical department of the Sea Suppression Tower.

Along the way, the guy couldn't stop talking, trying continually to strike up a conversation with Lu Wu.

He seemed particularly curious about his aunt's suddenly acquired foster son.

And Lu Wu, on his part, was also quite curious about this sudden new mother.

So, under the condition that Jiang Tianyang didn't stare at his wife, Lu Wu was able to have a good chat with him.

Through Jiang Tianyang, Lu Wu learned more about Jiang Yue Xing.

Lu Wu had originally assessed from Jiang Yue Xing's appearance and her previous emotional fluctuations that she was probably only about thirty years old.

However, from his chat with Jiang Tianyang, he received a shocking piece of news.

Jiang Yue Xing was at least sixty to start with, possibly even older.

Lu Wu's mind buzzed when he got this news.

He had thought his rich woman was younger than others, but it turned out his own was also a sixty-something rich woman, which complicated his feelings somewhat.

Additionally, Lu Wu learned a bit about his dad's situation.

Ah, not Lu Haikong, but Jiang Yue Xing's husband.

Regarding this, Jiang Tianyang didn't know much, just that they had only been married for a few days before Jiang Yue Xing's husband went to the Secret Realm and had never returned home in all these years.

Upon hearing this, Lu Wu couldn't help but shake his head.

That guy was really carefree; his rich woman, although old, didn't look it at all, and that guy could just leave her alone for more than a decade.

Lu Wu felt that the guy was either dead or had run off with someone else.

But no matter which it was, in Lu Wu's view, both scenarios pegged him as a scumbag.

The reason the rich woman was messing around adopting sons was all on that guy.

If that guy could be like Lu Wu, or like his dad, a good man who didn't mess around outside and came home on time, his rich woman would have her own son, and she wouldn't be adopting sons randomly.

But Lu Wu thought about it, calling someone "godmother" a few times wasn't a loss, after all, he swapped for three Summoned Beasts, right?

Lu Wu was either proud or perhaps consoling himself.

Ahead, Jiang Tianyang called out.

"We're here, this entrance leads to the logistics area for Summoned Beasts at the rear services department.

This area is divided into two parts, one part is the cub area, and the other part is the storage area for Summoning Stones and Summoning Beast Eggs, where do you want to go?"

The former area was relatively hassle-free.

The Summoned Beasts were mostly ready-made, and the quality of most had already been assessed, you just pick directly.

However, finding bargains was difficult, it was unlikely there would be any big surprises.

The latter might have surprises but was more troublesome.

"Let's go to the cub area first!"

If there's a suitable one we'll take it immediately, if not, we'll check the other area.

"Alright, let's go!"

Jiang Tianyang led Lu Wu and the others as they swiped their card to enter the cub area.

The cub area at the Sea Suppression Tower's rear services looked like a zoo.

Different Summoned Beast cubs were divided into various areas.

There were five large areas in total: Beast Type Area, Human-like Zone, Undead Zone, Demon Zone, and Plant Area.

However, among them, the Undead and Demon didn't have many Summoning Beast Babies, essentially just three big areas.

Lu Wu had a clear target in mind, he wanted a flying one.

As for Lin Jianying and Dudu, Lin Jianying's goal was also clear, he wanted a Demon Type Summoned Beast, whereas Dudu's goal was even clearer, she went wherever Lu Wu went and chose whatever Lu Wu asked her to choose.

"Let's go to the Demon Zone first; there are fewer babies there, let's see if we can pick one for Old Lin."

With that decision made, they headed toward the Demon Zone with the guidance of the logistics staff.

"Looks like you don't know your way around here either?"

Seeing the situation, Lu Wu couldn't help but curl his lips.

"I'm not in charge of this area and I barely come here, how would I know the way?" Jiang Tianyang shrugged his shoulders.

Lu Wu was particularly ruthless, "If you're useless, why are you still following us?"

As he spoke, Lu Wu looked wary and pulled Dudu behind him.

He now felt that everyone in the world wanted to snatch his wife. Jiang Tianyang was now useless, it was time to send him packing.

"You think I want to? After you choose a Summoned Beast, won't I still need to handle the paperwork?"

"That's fine then, stay close to Old Lin!"

Lu Wu reluctantly let him tag along but still kept some distance.

Jiang Tianyang almost spurted blood; he swore he'd twist Lu Wu's head off if it weren't for the fact that he was his aunt's godson.

Acting as though he'd never seen a girl before, like a hungry ghost lusting for color.

What made it worse was that the girl seemed to think that what Lu Wu was doing was completely fine, totally right even.

Watching the two clingy people together, Jiang Tianyang couldn't resist the urge to set them on fire.

Continuously feeding along the way.

Soon, Lu Wu and his group reached the Demon Zone.

It had to be said, the Sea Suppression Tower really had few demon-type Summoned Beasts; the whole area had 7 species, totaling only 38 beasts, averaging slightly over four per species.

The caretaker gave Lu Wu and his group a brief introduction upon their arrival.

"There are 38 babies in this area, 13 of Bronze Quality, 27 of Black Iron Quality"

During the caretaker's introduction, Lu Wu, hoping to find a bargain, scanned all 38 Summoned Beasts.

After scanning, Lu Wu found that the attributes of these Summoned Beast Babies were more or less as described by the caretaker; even if there were some variations, they weren't significant.

Considering the situation, this was normal; after all, this place was part of the Sea Suppression Tower's rear services.

Being in the territory of Jiangnan's strongest military power, how could you expect to overlook the quality of Summoned Beasts and find bargains?

"Let's go take a look elsewhere; we've come all this way, let's not just pick any randomly.

Besides, you need a demon-type beast, but it doesn't have to be the second one you choose, right? You could pick the third one!"

After looking around, Lu Wu said to the still-hesitant Lin Jianying.

Lin Jianying was still hesitating when Lu Wu pulled him away.

Then, Lu Wu and the others started wandering around the cub area.

After spending several hours, they checked out the remaining areas, seeing a total of 1221 Summoning Beast Babies in the entire logistics.

After finishing, Lu Wu was somewhat disappointed; he hadn't seen anything he liked.

What puzzled Lu Wu even more was that out of these 1221 Summoned Beasts, not a single one was of Silver Quality or higher.

"Is your Sea Suppression Tower this poor, or are you just too stingy to bring out Summoned Beast Babies of Silver Quality or higher?"

Lu Wu felt it must be the latter.

After all, the Sea Suppression Tower was the big boss within the military system of Jiangnan; their resources couldn't possibly be just this.

Clearly, it was a matter of stinginess.

This gave Lu Wu a further understanding of his rich woman's stinginess level.

"I knew it, how could she agree so easily to give me three, she was waiting for me here!"

As Lu Wu muttered to himself inwardly, Jiang Tianyang beside him asked.

"Got any picks, or should we check out the other side?"

"Let's check the other side!"

Since Lu Wu had come all this way, he couldn't just leave like this, right?

If there were any gains on the other side, great; if not, they'd just leave. Lu Wu really didn't fancy these Bronze Quality Summoned Beasts!

...

Thanks for the rewards from[Lve Lve Lve Lve Little Whisper][Uh Uh Uh Uh]!

# Chapter 186: 184 Warehouse Garbage (Two-in-One)

Lu Wu had originally thought that not seeing any silver quality Summoning Beast Babies at the Sea Suppression Tower was simply because his patroness was being stingy.

However, Lu Wu soon realized that things were not as simple as he had imagined.

After he had finished touring the young beast area, when he suggested going to another area, the logistics department's receptionist clearly expressed impatience.

"The quality of the Summoning Beasts in the young beast area is already excellent. There are no better Summoning Stones or Summoning Beast Eggs in the storage room. I suggest you just pick any one from the young beast area."

Upon hearing this, Lu Wu's brows furrowed.

Before he could explode with anger, Jiang Tianyang, standing beside him, lost his patience and grabbed the receptionist by the collar.

"The quality of these Summoning Beasts in the young beast area is excellent? Since when did the Sea Suppression Tower become so poor that we don't even have one of silver quality? Is the logistics department lining its own pockets and embezzling the Summoning Beast Babies?"

Jiang Tianyang seemed to have been holding back for a long time and now erupted in fury, his presence quite astonishing.

He was like a fierce beast, completely different from the immature dandy he was just moments ago.

Yet, the responsible party grabbed by Jiang didn't panic at all.

"Colonel Jiang, our logistics department operates strictly according to the rules and regulations. If you have any dissatisfaction or issues, you can report them to the discipline inspection department. There's no need to trouble a mere captain like me.

Of course, if you want to hit me, that's fine too. I'll take it and then I'll report you!"

Lu Wu narrowed his eyes upon hearing this.

He had originally thought the Sea Suppression Tower was his patroness's territory, but now...

It was revealing.

He held a token given by the rich woman, and Jiang Tianyang was her nephew, but it seemed they were not highly regarded after all. It appeared the patroness's prestige at the Sea Suppression Tower was not as high as he thought.

Thinking back to the patroness's previously displayed demure demeanor, Lu Wu felt this was somewhat to be expected.

This made him completely lose any hope of finding a better Summoning Beast Baby at the Sea Suppression Tower.

However, he couldn't just leave now; after all, he was holding a token given by the patroness, and his current identity was that of her adopted son.

If he just left, where would that leave the patroness's face?

Where would that leave Lu Wu's face?

So, he didn't remain silent.

"Colonel Jiang, the military discipline at the Sea Suppression Tower is quite strict. A captain stands in front of you, a colonel, neither servile nor overbearing, and provides reasoned advice to your requests.

Such a captain, quite good, quite remarkable!"

The colonel holding the captain's collar was taken aback upon hearing this, turning his head to look at Lu Wu but saying nothing, his face full of 'Have you lost your mind?' expression.

"What are you looking at me for? This kind of captain is not bad at all, probably unique in the alliance's military system!

The Sea Suppression Tower really knows how to manage its troops!

It's just that I don't know if your discipline inspection has memorized the military codes."

By now, even the slowest could tell that Lu Wu was being sarcastic.

"My brain is quite good, with a photographic memory. I just glanced over it; would you like me to recite it for you, from article 76 to 83?

These are all about the behavior regulations for military personnel. Do you want to know which ones you've violated?

According to military discipline, what punishment should you incur?"

With those words thrown out, the expression on the captain's face didn't change much, but his arrogance diminished.

"You wanted to go to the storage room, right? This way!"

A small conflict was resolved just like that.

However, this little episode made Lu Wu profoundly and thoroughly understand that the military in this world was different from the one he knew before his transmigration.

The military he knew before was the people's army, with firm beliefs, strict discipline, always considering the people, and were the guardians that would fight at the front lines when the motherland was in trouble.

But the military in this world, well, it wasn't so clear, even questionable whether they were actually an army.

An incident made Lu Wu realize the complexity of this military.

It also made him further understand his patroness's ineffectiveness.

Not only was she stingy and lacking funds, but it seemed that she was also bullied by her subordinates.

Lu Wu started to seriously doubt whether the rich woman had the ability to support him, wondering if he would eventually have to fight through thorns and thistles for her?

Thinking of this possibility, he couldn't help but shake his head.

"What a loss for the rich woman to have backed me!"

"What? What did you say about a rich woman?"

Jiang Tianyang, next to him, overheard Lu Wu mumbling and couldn't help but lean in closer.

Lu Wu frowned and pushed him outside the caution line.

"No getting closer!"

It seemed as if letting anyone come within two meters of Dudu was a loss.

Jiang Tianyang had grown accustomed to this.

This time, he did not get angry but kept eyeing Lu Wu and mocked, "You know, as much as her, I'm more interested in you."

"Then I'm sorry, please step back another two meters."

```

......

Amidst the playful commotion, Lu Wu and his group arrived at the warehouse area.

Upon arrival, there were more logistics personnel present.

The receptionist seemed to have found his courage and, before allowing Lu Wu's group to enter the warehouse, decided to try to intimidate them.

"Gentlemen, the warehouse is a restricted area. Although you have the 'Sea Suppressing Order' that allows entry into the warehouse, I must solemnly warn you to keep your hands to yourselves while inside. Do not engage in theft or damage to the supplies.

Otherwise, you will face..."

"What article of military discipline are you referring to?"

"..."

With just a sentence from Lu Wu, the receptionist was at a loss for words and after a long pause managed to say, "This is a logistic work behavior..."

"That's to constrain you, not us. If we really damage or steal any items, it's the discipline inspection that handles it.

Just do your job well, and don't try to do what's not your responsibility!"

Clearly, in front of Lu Wu, the receptionist was like a little brother.

With a few words, he had nothing more to say.

He could only bitterly announce an 'inventory inspection,' intending to search them before entry, an attempt to regain some control.

However, Lu Wu spoke again.

"Is your warehouse's detection equipment just for show?

Or does your warehouse not have a guardian summoned beast?

If you have neither of those indeed, a search would be necessary, but before that, I think you need first to explain why the security of a military warehouse is so shoddy?"

Triple kill!

Now the logistics side completely lost their spirit.

They had to let them pass honestly, and the receptionist had no choice but to follow behind them unobtrusively.

This made Colonel Jiang Tianyang, who had been watching the whole time, beam with admiration and excitement as if he'd discovered a new world.

As for the two by Lu Wu's side, they were much calmer.

After all, one was Dudu, and the other was a male version of Dudu.

In their view, this was just a basic operation for Lu Wu.

But Little Skeleton was utterly confused.

Helplessly, though it was smart, it had little understanding of common sense, let alone the intricacies of human society and cutthroat tactics.

Everyone was watching, and while others understood, it could only enjoy the spectacle.

Tilting its head, it looked like, 'Although I don't know what Lu Wu did, it seems like he did something impressive.'

Then, with a simple turn of its little head, Lu Wu was its Lu Wu, and if Lu Wu was impressive, then it meant Little Skeleton was impressive too.

Therefore, although Little Skeleton didn't know what it had just done, it felt very impressive.

Proud of this, it nodded at the pig, wanting to show off.

"See that? Little Skeleton is so impressive. Don't you want to let Little Skeleton ride you?"

However, the pig lying in Dudu's arms turned over, indicating it had no interest in dealing with this fool.

......

On Lu Wu's side,

after a bout of wrangling, they managed to enter the warehouse as they wished, but after taking a look around,

Lu Wu couldn't help but frown.

He looked around and found almost nothing of value.

But this was also within his expectations; the attitude of those logistic personnel made it clear they hadn't planned on letting them take away anything worthwhile.

Judging by some of the emptied spots in the warehouse, it was obvious that items had been hastily removed.

"It seems they're determined to send us back empty-handed."

Everyone knew about Lu Wu's magnanimity, especially broad.

The more they tried to mess with him this way, the more he wanted to leave with something good.

But whether it was Summoning Beast Eggs or Summoning Stones, the high-quality ones had all been removed. Even the occasional overlooked piece was just of Silver Quality.

A Silver Quality baby clearly couldn't satisfy Lu Wu.

So he was particularly unhappy.

Not just him, Colonel Jiang was also dissatisfied.

"Is this all you have in logistics?"

The receptionist saw that it was not Lu Wu but Jiang Tianyang getting angry and suddenly felt like the skies had cleared after the rain, as if he was back in business.

"The Sea Suppression Tower comes from a large family with big business, but there are many freeloaders. Isn't it quite normal to be eaten out of house and home?"

His veiled accusations were directly aimed at Lu Wu's group.

```

Lu Wuyi felt helpless upon hearing this.

Why did this guy always act tough after his wounds had healed? Knowing he couldn't win, yet he still insisted on making useless efforts.

Lu Wu didn't even bother to continue trouncing him now.

It wasn't interesting, nor was there any pleasure in it.

How should I put it? Perhaps gradually feeling the loneliness of invincibility was also a form of growth.

Amidst his invincible loneliness, Lu Wu glanced around and suddenly fixed his gaze on a corner of the storeroom where the supplies were haphazardly stacked, squinting his eyes.

"What are those?"

"Those are some miscellaneous items in the storeroom that need to be cleared out regularly."

The receptionist seemed to be picking up some delusions from Lu Wu's disdainful and lonely demeanor.

Thinking he had gained the upper hand, his manner became a bit more arrogant, "Right, didn't you ask if we had any other Summoning Beast Eggs or Summoning Stones here?

There might still be some in there. Why don't you go pick some out?"

"Kid, you're being pretty cocky!"

Colonel Jiang burst into anger.

Lu Wu, however, couldn't care less about this small fry and directly walked towards the pile of miscellaneous items, scanning the area with his eyes.

To Lu Wu, it seemed like anything in the storeroom wouldn't have been moved far in a short period. Maybe it was hidden right here.

But as soon as Lu Wu took a glance, the items weren't hidden here, yet he found an unexpected treasure.

...

Item Name: Broken Blood Sword

Item Quality: Ordinary

Item Description: It is a piece of junk, but it seems to have a Summoning Stone in the hilt.

...

Item Name: Dried Seed

Item Quality: Above Gold

Description: This is a seed of a Plant-based Summoned Beast that is about to lose its Life Force. If soaked in Plant Essence and used in a Summoning Ceremony, it might be summoned before it reaches its end.

...

Looking at the attributes of these two items, Lu Wu's head buzzed.

"Damn, did I really find treasure?"

At this moment, Lu Wu couldn't care about anything else and hurriedly picked up the dried seed and the broken sword.

And immediately, he removed the crimson Summoning Stone from the hilt of the sword.

...

Item Name: Summoning Stone

Item Quality: Gold (Suspect)

Description: This Summoning Stone is wrapped in Demon energy, likely a Demon Type Summoned Beast Summoning Stone.

...

When he saw this, Lu Wu's eyes immediately lit up.

He had really struck it big with this treasure – a Gold Quality Demon Type Summoning Stone.

However, the situation with that seed seemed quite dire, and it needed to be summoned as soon as possible.

"Colonel Jiang, do you have a Summoning Array here at the Sea Suppression Tower?"

Colonel Jiang was in the middle of berating the receptionist when he suddenly heard this and was somewhat confused. Upon turning his head and seeing a Summoning Stone and a seed in Lu Wu's hands, he was even more bewildered.

"What is this?"

"Just as he said, picking things out of the trash."

Colonel Jiang curled his lip, not knowing what to say anymore, while Lu Wu couldn't be bothered to waste words and asked again, "Is there a Summoning Array in the Sea Suppression Tower?"

"Yes, the logistics department has one!"

The receptionist answered for Colonel Jiang, adding, "Do you need it? I can arrange it for you right away!"

He wasn't being kind, of course.

He was looking forward to seeing Lu Wu make a fool of himself.

He wanted to see what Lu Wu had dug out from the rubbish pile of their storeroom.

Surely, he didn't believe Lu Wu could find any treasures.

After all, this was the Sea Suppression Tower's storeroom, and every item's movement in and out needed strict scrutiny. Even the trash had to be thoroughly inspected several times before being tossed in.

He couldn't believe that under these circumstances, Lu Wu would be able to find a treasure, let alone two?

How could that be possible?

He was sure that both items Lu Wu picked out were garbage.

"Lead the way!"

Lu Wu didn't feel like wasting his breath on this guy anymore, and the receptionist was straightforward as well, leading Lu Wu and the others out of the storeroom.

On the way out, Lu Wu asked again, "Do you have Plant Essence?"

"Yes!"

"I'll buy it at market price! Take all of it out for me!"

"Take it all out? Are you sure?" The receptionist had a mocking look on his face, acting cool, huh?

"You need to pay first, and the Plant Essence is a standard supply item. There's at least four or five thousand points' worth..."

"Take it all out!"

Lu Wu cut him off with a confident interruption.

The receptionist's mocking smile froze, as he clearly hadn't expected this guy to be such a big spender.

"Alright, I'll take care of it!"

The guy nodded his head a bit, then briskly walked away.

Lu Wu watched his retreating back, feeling vaguely that something was not quite right, but he couldn't quite pinpoint what it was.

He couldn't help but glance at Jiang Tianyang, narrowing his eyes as if tasting something, but then he gave up.

"Never mind that for now, let's get the Summoned Beast out first."

It must be said, regardless of what the receptionist was like, he was pretty efficient at getting things done.

In less than a few minutes, he had everything arranged.

"The total is still 5531 points, but I've rounded down the change for you, 5530 points will do!"

Lu Wu found the receptionist's style of rounding oddly familiar.

But he didn't say much, instead, he logged into his account on the internal network.

...

Account Name: I Want to Be a Sea King

Account Points: 8731

Cultivation Plans Uploaded: Little Skeleton Training Manual Series, Little Skull Soup Series, Goblin Injection Series

Modified Skill Training Plans Uploaded: 93 kinds

You have one official review message regarding a Cultivation Plan.

...

These eight thousand-plus points were earned from advertisements during the semi-finals and finals in the last two days, and the number was still climbing crazily.

Lu Wu didn't look any further, he just transferred the points to the other party.

Then he had the receptionist start up two Summoning Arrays, placing a Summoning Stone and a Dried Seed onto them.

Of course, for the Dried Seed, Lu Wu had also prepared a huge container filled with 5530 points' worth of Plant Essence.

After the preparations were complete, Lu Wu had the receptionist begin the summoning.

During the interval of the summoning, he took the time to check an official email.

Before opening it, Lu Wu had a feeling it wouldn't be good news, and indeed, it was just as he expected.

The email was sent from the research center in Jiangbei, stating that there were some issues with the White Bone Wild Boar cultivation plan he had uploaded, and they required Lu Wu to provide an explanation.

After glancing at the email, Lu Wu tossed it aside without care.

He couldn't be bothered with it.

It was obvious that Jiangbei was looking for trouble. Although the White Bone Wild Boar cultivation plan he uploaded was just a preliminary version, with 13 more diabolical versions to be developed for fleecing purposes, the initial plan was pretty solid. He had explained all aspects clearly, and any professional Cultivator, especially those who had done a certain amount of research in the Undead Type cultivation, would be able to understand it.

So, Lu Wu wasn't about to bother replying to them. If they wanted to approve it, then approve it; if not, send it back and he would re-upload it promptly from Fucheng, no need to waste time wrangling with Jiangbei!

Meanwhile, as Lu Wu was reading the email,

A large group of logistics personnel squeezed their way over to the Summoning Arrays.

They had heard the news that someone picked up 'treasure' from the trash pile in the storeroom and splurged over five thousand points, so they came to watch the excitement, or rather, to see the punchline of the joke.

"This guy treats our Sea Suppression Tower's storeroom like what, exactly? Really thinking he could find treasure in the trash pile of Sea Suppression Tower's storeroom?"

"He's dreaming big!"

"It's not about dreaming, it's about being stupid or not, still dropping over 5000 points on this. This guy isn't just wealthy!"

"It's said that he got a 'Sea Suppressing Order' from the Governor's side; he must be born with a silver spoon in his mouth. 5000 points is an astronomical figure to us but maybe just so-so to him.

But honestly, I'm looking forward to seeing what his face will look like after his 5000 points go to waste."

...

Amidst these teasing comments, one of the two active Summoning Arrays produced a result first...

...

Woke up late this morning, to avoid breaking the narrative, I just sent two chapters together.

Hmm, did I grow a lot this time?

# Chapter 187: 185 King-level Quality

At the peak operation of those two summoning arrays, a "big shot" was also paying attention.

This so-called big shot was named Jin Lailai, the logistics head of Sea Suppression Tower.

He controlled the entire logistics system of the Sea Suppression Tower in Jiangnan Province.

Such a person could be considered a significant figure within the Sea Suppression Tower system and even throughout Jiangnan.

Originally, this "big shot" wasn't interested in Lu Wu or Jiang Tianyang.

Even knowing who stood behind them, he wouldn't secretly spy on them.

Previously, when Jiang Yuexing called asking him to arrange three summoning beast babies for her adopted son, he didn't take it to heart and casually had his subordinates handle it.

After all, though Jiang Yuexing was a governor, she hadn't held the position for many years.

Moreover, it was during these years that Jiangnan began to weaken, getting crushed in every aspect from high school competitions, causing Jiang Yuexing's prestige to decline significantly.

In Jiangnan, there weren't many places where she, Jiang Yuexing, could exert her influence.

The Sea Suppression Tower was definitely not somewhere she could meddle.

But Jin Lailai hadn't expected that his subordinates were somewhat competent.

Hearing him say to just deal with it, they directly withdrew all the silver and above, only leaving the bronze.

Jin Lailai was somewhat surprised to hear this but didn't think much of it.

Having three bronze was already quite generous to her, Jiang Yuexing.

In Jin Lailai's view, there were at most two outcomes.

One was that Lu Wu would take a bronze baby and leave, the other was that Lu Wu would leave in anger.

Either outcome wouldn't surprise him, and he could handle both; at most, Jiang Yuexing would come questioning angrily, which wasn't a big deal.

But what Jin Lailai didn't expect was for Lu Wu to choose neither option and instead rummaged through the junk in the warehouse and picked two pieces of trash.

That alone, Jin Lailai still didn't care about.

What truly made Jin Lailai take notice was that Lu Wu then extravagantly spent over five thousand points to purchase all the plant essence they had.

That was unexpected to Jin Lailai.

That's when he took the time to look into the identity of Jiang Yuexing's adopted son, and he realized the individual was quite something.

Not only was he the champion of this year's high school league, but he was also a genius cultivator, and more importantly, it seemed like he was the successor specially trained by the group from Jiangnan University.

Recently, the summoning beast baby that he had coveted ultimately ended up in this young man's hands.

After learning all this information, Jin Lailai couldn't help but start paying attention to the situation on Lu Wu's side.

Now, looking at the two summoning arrays, he couldn't help but mutter to himself in worry.

"Could he really have found a treasure in our warehouse's junk pile?"

And while he was pondering this, one of the two summoning arrays completed the summoning.

A black summoning beast appeared on the summoning array.

Jin Lailai squinted his eyes as he observed the summoning beast, his expression turning slightly ugly.

Meanwhile, on Lu Wu's side.

Those who had been ready to laugh at Lu Wu couldn't muster a smile when they saw the little guy from the summoning array.

They were all stunned.

Those less cultured started cursing in shock.

Because they all recognized the little creature from various movies and illustrations on the summoning array.

Over on Lu Wu's side, they had already figured out the little guy's attributes as soon as it appeared.

...

Name: Hellish Evil (Cute) Dog (Cub)

Power: 1 star (Ordinary)

Quality: Gold (Ascended)

Attribute: Netherworld Fire, Demon

State: Dizzy (Feels cute)

Weakness: Light

Skills: Netherworld Fire (Skilled), Bite (Skilled)

Description: A dog of very high quality

...

Looking at this little guy's attributes, Lu Wu was quite pleased.

"A gold quality Hellish Evil Dog cub with demon attributes, I'm giving it to you!"

When Lu Wu said this, he actually wanted to hug the cute looking little guy and fiercely rub its head before tossing it to Lin Jianying.

But considering the actual combat difference between them, Lu Wu felt that the other side might also see him as cute. If it opened its mouth to breathe out, he might be done for, so Lu Wu had to give up this tempting thought.

Instead, he waved his hand, which in his view wasn't very cool, but to outsiders, it seemed extremely awesome.

Those who had been ready to mock him now only had envy in their eyes.

Damn, this was a gold quality Hellish Evil Dog, the type that if appropriately cultivated could definitely become a lord-level summoning beast.

It could possibly go even higher with good luck. And such a creature was being given away by Lu Wu just like that?

Wasn't that a bit too generous?

At this moment, Jin Lailai's face looked terrifyingly dark.

After all, in his view, Lu Wu was now being generous with his generosity!

A gold quality summoning beast, and moreover, a beast baby of the Hellish Evil Dog breed, were among the top-tier items in the logistics department, alright?

He couldn't help feeling the urge to rush down and snatch the dog back, but he endured.

It wasn't that he was wary of Jiang Yuexing.

Mainly, he was more curious about another summoning beast on the other summoning array.

To make Lu Wu willing to spend 5000 points and so eager to summon it, this summoning beast clearly had a higher quality than the Hellish Evil Dog.

A summoning beast of higher quality than gold?

"Isn't that the same level as the previous one?"

Once he thought of this, Jin Lailai couldn't help but gasp for breath.

If it really was that level of existence, this Summoning Beast Baby, he would never let Lu Wu take it away,

Even if Jiang Yuexing came, it would be the same!

He said that!

Jin Lailai didn't know what Lu Wu was thinking.

On Lu Wu's side, everyone was watching the still-operating Summoning Array.

No one was a fool.

Especially after the Hellish Evil Dog emerged, those who wanted to see Lu Wu's embarrassment had long abandoned that idea.

Now, they just wanted to know, if Lu Wu got the Hellish Evil Dog for free, what level of Summoning Beast would emerge from the one he spent over 5000 points on.

And they didn't have to wait long.

Shortly after the appearance of the Hellish Evil Dog, the Dried Seed in the still-running Summoning Array began to change.

The originally shriveled and dry seed began greedily absorbing the Plant Essence in the container.

The container's Plant Essence, worth more than 5000, visibly decreased by a shallow layer.

Simultaneously, the shriveled seed quickly plumped up and burst forth with a faint greenish glow.

As the green light appeared, the rate of Plant Essence depletion started to soar.

Within a few short minutes, the Plant Essence had decreased by a third.

At this time, the seed had grown from the size of a rice grain to the size of a fist.

Then, a cracking sound was heard as a crack began to appear in the seed.

This crack made everyone's heart tighten, and even Jin Lailai held his breath, fearing the summoning had failed.

Fortunately, Lu Wu's luck was still good.

The crack in the seed was not a sign of failure but rather of a successful summoning.

The moment the crack appeared, the remaining two-thirds of the Plant Essence instantly dropped to just a shallow layer.

At the same time, the crack in the seed widened and shattered instantly.

And the moment the seed shattered, a comforting aura spread out.

Within ten meters of the Summoning Array, all wooden items surprisingly began sprouting new shoots.

"Dead Wood Spring!

This is the sign of a King-level Quality Summoning Beast Baby's birth!"

Those with some knowledge couldn't help but exclaim.

Generally, the birth of a King-level or higher Summoning Beast would have phenomena unless someone deliberately concealed it.

On Lu Wu's end, he immediately saw the attributes of the little green fuzzball that had popped out of the seed.

...

Name: Green Cub

Power: 2 stars (Ordinary)

Quality: King-level (Enhanced)

Attribute: Plant

State: Joy (Man, are you my Ma Shada?)

Weakness: Fire

Basic Skills: Healing Skill (Master), Recovery Skill (Master)

Description: What are you looking at? It's talking about you!

...

When Lu Wu saw the King-level Quality of the little goldfish, he immediately remembered his own home's little goldfish.

Since the King-level Quality was apparent, the little goldfish's quality was clearly above King-level.

However, Lu Wu quickly shifted his focus from the little goldfish.

After all, he wasn't a creepy middle-aged man, always thinking about the goldfish.

What he should be focusing on now was this green fuzzball.

"This fuzzball is clearly more of a support type, not really suitable for me, let's have Dudu make the contract."

After all, what belonged to Dudu was his.

As for what was his, was it Dudu's? That's better left unasked, to avoid embarrassment.

However, just as Lu Wu was about to go over and embrace the green fuzzball waiting for him, a figure suddenly appeared.

This guy, shamelessly, arrogantly, took the opportunity to grab the green fuzzball.

After grabbing the green fuzzball, Jin Lailai turned his head towards Lu Wu without caring about the fuzzball's struggle, "Sorry, due to a staff error, they misplaced my personal item in the garbage pile. I'm relieved you helped me find it.

I sincerely want to express my gratitude here!"

Upon hearing this, Lu Wu's eyes instantly narrowed.

Although he was a bit dumbfounded, his response was swift, pulling out the whole set of beating up the receptionist.

"You say this is your personal item, then I need you to explain why it was in the storeroom?

According to..."

Before Lu Wu could finish speaking, Jin Lailai had already grabbed the Hellish Evil Dog as well.

After he was done, he tauntingly added, "This is mine too!"

Lu Wu's face turned livid, it was his first time realizing that people could be so shameless!

Now he had no choice but to use his last resort.

"Old Jiang, make a call, get your aunt!"

...

A new week, begging for votes.

# Chapter 188: 186 Strongly Debuts

Jin Lailai burst out laughing upon hearing Lu Wu announce that he was going to call people for help.

"Can't win a fight so you call for your parents? That's so childish."

But the real question was, even if he did bring in his "parents," what good would that do?

Where was this place? This was the Sea Suppression Tower!

The strongest military headquarters in Jiangnan; it nominally fell under the jurisdiction of Jiang Yuexing, true, but in reality, her authority wasn't effective here.

Otherwise, Lu Wu wouldn't have been unable to find even a Silver Quality Summoning Beast Baby before; now even more so, he wouldn't dare to so brazenly come and rob.

Therefore, Jin Lailai completely ignored Lu Wu and his gang; he decided to first handle the two Summoning Beasts.

He really couldn't believe it; once he had the rice cooked, what could Jiang Yuexing do even if she came?

However, just as he was about to leave, Lu Wu directly had Little Skeleton cast a Thunder Strike at Jin Lailai.

"Impertinence!"

Jin Lailai didn't expect Lu Wu to make such a move; his face darkened.

A protective barrier appeared out of nowhere around him, directly bearing the brunt of the Thunder Strike.

Yet, even though he resisted the attack, Lu Wu's sudden action had instantly triggered the logistical department's alarm, resulting in an excruciatingly sharp alarm sound that began to ring.

Upon hearing the alarm, Jin Lailai's face grew even darker.

But at that moment, he didn't have the time to deal with Lu Wu.

The alarm had just sounded; people would soon arrive, and he had to first deal with the two Summoning Beasts.

However, before he could make a move, Jiang Tianyang had already finished his phone call and abruptly positioned himself in front of Jin Lailai.

"What's the rush? This issue isn't resolved yet!"

Where could Jin Lihai willingly let Jiang Tianyang stand in his way? He fiercely struck out, preparing to slap Jiang Tianyang down, but saw a gorilla's spectral image suddenly appear around Jiang Tianyang.

Jin Lailai's face turned pale.

"Beast Spirit Protection!"

This was a capability only Lord Level Summoning Beasts possessed!

He hadn't expected that Jiang Tianyang, who usually appeared prodigal and childish, was actually a Master Level Summoner.

His power was not inferior to his own, perhaps even more formidable, which caused Jin Lailai to immediately retract his hand. This also killed his idea of suppressing Jiang Tianyang and handling the Summoning Beasts first.

Yet the anger on his face still spilled out.

"Heaven is being defied, truly heaven is being defied!

Both of you, one attacking a colonel of the Sea Suppression Tower, another displaying insubordination; very well, all very well!"

"You think by escalating the issue, you can reclaim the Summoning Beasts, huh?

Let me tell you, it's impossible; you won't be taking these two Summoning Beasts away today, I assure you of that!"

Jin Lailai's words rang out strongly and forcefully.

Of course, he wasn't just putting on a front; he truly had this confidence.

After all, he had backing!

Right now, the actual leader of the Sea Suppression Tower was his brother, Tower Jin Lihai; otherwise, he wouldn't dare to disregard Jiang Yuexing's authority like this.

He had meant to leave just now to simplify the situation and not because he really couldn't handle it if things blew up.

As expected, the alarm sounded.

The team responsible for internal security in the Sea Suppression Tower arrived immediately, and once the troops were in place, Jin Lailai immediately turned the tables.

"These two, causing trouble in my logistical department, are to be arrested!"

On one side was the Head of the Logistics Department, a Colonel; the person in charge here.

On the other side were a group of unknown young people and the nephew of Governor Jiang.

The decision of whom to side with was crystal clear.

The people complied with Jin Lailai's command and moved forward intending to arrest Lu Wu's group.

As for any explanations from Lu Wu and his team, the guards didn't care, nor was it their responsibility to care.

Their duty was to ensure internal security within the Sea Suppression Tower; they would apprehend any unrest elements first, and leave the rest to others to sort out.

However, whether they could arrest anyone also depended on Jiang Tianyang's approval.

As the group moved, Jiang Tianyang instantly bellowed furiously.

"Scram!"

With Jiang Tianyang's roar, the spectral beast behind him roared, knocking the approaching personnel unconscious and elevating the already piercing alarm to a higher level.

Now, the situation had truly escalated; the higher-ups of the entire Sea Suppression Tower were made aware of what was happening here.

Soon, one after another, figures of Sea Suppression Tower bigwigs appeared out of thin air, including Jin Lailai's brother, the current Tower Master Jin Lihai.

After these leaders surveyed the scene,

the bigwig in charge of discipline immediately stepped forward; he was in charge of this area.

"What's going on? Fighting within the Sea Suppression Tower, who will explain this to me?"

Jin Lailai was the first to step forward.

"It was like this: these three, holding a token from Governor Jiang, came to the logistics department demanding three Summoning Beast Babies. Our department properly arranged for them to select any three from the nursery, but they were not satisfied and looked down on the Summoning Beasts in the nursery.

So, they forced my men to open the storeroom and then took two Summoning Stones from it, summoning these two little ones."

Jin Lailai said, lifting the two Summoning Beasts in his hands.

It was then that everyone noticed the Summoning Beasts he was holding, and their eyes immediately narrowed,

clearly recognizing the quality of the two Summoning Beasts.

Jin Lailai then continued.

"The one on the left is of Golden Quality, while the one on the right is even of King-level Quality.

Such quality Summoning Beasts are to be provided to the warriors of our Sea Suppression Tower who have battled bloodily for Jiangnan. How could they just be taken away by anyone waving some token?

Thus, I detained these two Summoning Beasts.

As a result, both the grandsons of the two governors got angry—one directly attacking me, and the other the guards.

I must say, the grandsons of the governor truly carry great prestige, so full of menacing energy!"

It must be said, although Jin Lailai was a bit shameless.

"But this mouth is really fierce.

Even though he was the one coveting the Summoning Beast Baby, once it got to his lips, the story changed flavor.

It directly turned into the son of the Governor's family being unreasonable and forcibly seizing the Summoning Beast, even tying himself and the Sea Suppression Tower together, directly escalating the issue into a conflict between the Sea Suppression Tower and Jiang Yuexing.

Such shameless words, even Dudu couldn't bear to hear.

Trembling with anger, she clung to Lu Wu, shouting the loudest she had ever in her life, 'That's not how it is! He's the bad one; those two babies were found by Lu Wu in the garbage pile in the storeroom, and Lu Wu even spent a lot of money!'

Lu Wu only then realized that Dudu could make such a loud voice.

Unfortunately, nobody cared about Dudu's words.

There are many places where reason simply doesn't prevail, and the Sea Suppression Tower is one of them.

Once Jin Lailai took the lead to define the situation.

Whatever Lu Wu's group said afterward didn't really matter.

Even if Lu Wu had solid reasons that could break through the heavens, even if the people of the Sea Suppression Tower knew the matter wasn't as Jin Lailai described, even if Lu Wu had irrefutable evidence, the case wouldn't be overturned.

Because this was no longer a simple matter.

It involved a power play between the Sea Suppression Tower and Jiang Yuexing, and the Sea Suppression Tower's reputation.

They wouldn't allow Lu Wu to take the Summoning Beast Babies away, nor would they admit that it was the logistic director Jin Lailai's greed that led him to snatch the Summoning Beast Babies.

After hearing everything, Tower Master Jinli Sea glanced at the big boss responsible for discipline.

The latter being very sensible said, 'Since the facts are clear, then these three are to be expelled from the Sea Suppression Tower, and Jiang Tianyang, the Colonel in the Sea Suppression Tower, is in...'

'Please wait a minute,' Lu Wu interjected. 'I want to know how exactly is this matter clear?

Since it's so clear, then about the video I just took with my phone, can we discuss what's recorded in it?

Also, I just spent over five thousand points to summon those two Summoning Beasts, do you want to talk about that..."

No sooner had Lu Wu finished speaking than his phone suddenly exploded.

Jin Lailai burst into laughter at that moment.

'It seems your phone isn't of very good quality!'

On Lu Wu's side, watching his exploded phone and his own blood-drenched hand, his facial expression gradually cooled down.

'Don't you think you're being a bit overbearing?'

Lu Wu didn't need to say that; it made Jin Lailai laugh even harder and step closer to Lu Wu.

'Kid, how old are you? Still so naive?

Sure, we're overbearing, what can you possibly do about it?'

'What can I do?'

Lu Wu just laughed at that moment.

Looking around at the people from the Sea Suppression Tower, he stated word for word, 'Perhaps no one present knows me, I think I need to properly introduce myself. My name is Lu Wu, the godson of the Governor of Jiangnan, Jiang Yuexing.'

At this remark, people around him all laughed.

The Governor of Jiangnan was the least useful here, and everyone knew what situation her forcibly inserted Jiang Tianyang was in.

Not to mention the godson of Jiang Yuexing, even if Jiang Yuexing's own son came, it would be useless.

Lu Wu didn't care about this.

'It seems this identity isn't very useful?

No matter, I have other identities!'

'I'm also the champion of the Jiangnan High School League, also an honorary professor at Jiangnan University, and a Genius Cultivator with dozens of Professional Cultivator disciples.

Moreover, I also have a King-level Quality Summoned Beast.'

With each title Lu Wu mentioned, the faces of those present from the Sea Suppression Tower darkened a bit more.

And Lu Wu continued.

'And I achieved all this in just one year.

Which means, those you've offended now, are a super genius, a genius rising like a rocket. I guarantee, in five years, at most five years, I will reach a position equal to or even higher than everyone here.

And I, being broad-minded, have a good memory, and will remember everyone I've seen once.

So, I'm putting my words here today, I've recorded today's account and will reclaim it one by one in five years.

Even if you have the system of the Sea Suppression Tower to protect you, I can still target your sons, your grandsons, your friends and family, no one present today will be able to escape!

The only thing you can do to stop me, is to kill me now.

But unfortunately, you don't dare, even though you dare to bully me, you absolutely do not dare to kill me, because behind me is my godmother.

You also don't have the capability to suppress me, because my capital to rise, is my unmatched talent.'

Lu Wu's words really did stun many people.

However, many more just regarded Lu Wu's words as a habitual child venting his frustration after experiencing failure.

Not many really took Lu Wu's words to heart.

A genius? What the world lacks the least is geniuses, you want to flaunt your prowess? First, grow up!

Standing in front of Lu Wu, Jin Lailai mocked even more: 'Yo, what a terrifying speech, okay, I'm waiting, I'll wait for you to come for revenge!'

Who knew, Lu Wu shook his head at that moment.

'No, you don't have to wait, I was just putting on an act for them, as for you? You will die today!'

'I will die today?'

Jin Lailai laughed at that moment.

'That's the best joke I've heard this year, come on, tell me, who gives you the confidence to say such laughable words?'

At that moment, an incredibly calm voice rang out.

'Me!'

At the same time, Jin Lailai's limbs exploded one by one.

Amidst the explosions and the horrifying screams, an extremely dominant queenly figure made her appearance.

Lu Wu narrowed his eyes at this queen.

Indeed, everything was being calculated by her!"

# Chapter 189: 187 With a wave of my hand, I can overturn clouds; with the cover of my hand, I can turn rain.

Lu Wu had always been wondering why Jiang Yuexing wanted to take him as her adopted son, as her rich woman.

Could it be because he was handsome?

Okay, Lu Wu didn't deny that; he indeed looked good.

Before his transmigration, he could have relied solely on his looks for a living, undoubtedly eating better than those who coded words greedily from dawn, whose hairlines were receding, and yet were criticized by readers as hack writers with short and lame works.

But Lu Wu felt that Jiang Yuexing, as a Governor, shouldn't be such a superficial person.

Therefore, he believed that Jiang Yuexing definitely had a deeper meaning.

Initially, Lu Wu thought it was about arranging for Jiangnan University, given that she issued related tasks as soon as she arrived.

Coupled with his talent, it was easy to assume that was Jiang Yuexing's goal.

But when Lu Wu got the Token and arrived at the Sea Suppression Tower, he realized that this adoptive mother seemed eager to use him right away.

Or rather, perhaps from the moment he got the Token, Jiang Yuexing had already begun to treat him as a pawn.

Lu Wu had noticed this when he first entered the logistics department and saw the interaction between the receptionist who started provoking him and Jiang Tianyang.

Even though both of them concealed it well, Lu Wu could still see that something fishy was going on between the two; they seemed to be at odds but were actually exchanging complicit glances.

Subsequently, Lu Wu found a treasure in the garbage heap at the storehouse.

This part seemed plain and normal, just typical opportunistic scavenging, but upon reflection after the fact, Lu Wu realized that this so-called scavenging was deliberately arranged.

The receptionist, from the moment he entered, was subtly drawing Lu Wu's attention towards that area through unconscious gestures.

When Lu Wu actually discovered the garbage heap, the receptionist even gave him a nudge, aiming to make sure he found the treasure.

After Lu Wu discovered the treasure, the receptionist's subsequent actions more directly exposed the ruse—without even checking, he claimed the Plant Essence was worth over five thousand.

And moreover, in less than ten minutes, he delivered the Plant Essence and prepared the container, which was clearly premeditated.

If there wasn't a scheme behind it, Lu Wu absolutely wouldn't believe it.

It was obvious that these fellows had always intended to make Lu Wu summon here at the Sea Suppression Tower.

At first, Lu Wu wasn't entirely clear about the situation, but when Jin Lailai appeared and shamelessly stole his Summoned Beast, Lu Wu's tangled thoughts suddenly unraveled like a ball of yarn.

Jiang Yuexing took him as her adopted son and gave him the Token for this very moment.

Having won the high school league championship, he had become the most famous and highest traffic draw in the entire Jiangnan region.

Additionally, he had the backing of people like Zhang Wentao from Jiangnan University.

Now, he was a rather nice pawn, a piece that could lever obstacles she previously struggled with, or had yet to find the right opportunity to move.

And Jin Lailai was clearly the one who was about to be levered away.

It was from that moment on that Lu Wu knew what role he ought to play; otherwise, he wouldn't have let Little Skeleton directly attack with Thunder Strike, since his usual self wasn't so arrogant.

Nor would he have possibly acted so boastfully!

Why did he act boastfully? Just felt like showing off?

Eh, well, there was a bit of that, but the main thing was that Lu Wu was very aware that he had been labeled with Jiang Yuexing's approval and had become her person, her pawn.

Since that was the case, Lu Wu naturally had to become what she wanted.

If he didn't put on a show, how would he deal with it if Jiang Yuexing's dog and ball of fur refused to cooperate with him later, knowing that he and the Sea Suppression Tower were implacable because of her?

As for the enmity of the Sea Suppression Tower?

Lu Wu felt that even if he didn't boast, they wouldn't like him, since he was already Jiang Yuexing's man.

It could be said that Lu Wu standing there had basically grasped everything.

The only thing he hadn't anticipated was the overbearing nature of his rich woman.

He had just finished saying Jin Lailai should die, and Jin Lailai's limbs exploded one by one right in front of him.

This brutal and vicious scene gave Lu Wu a fright, and he quickly turned around to cover Dudu's eyes, glaring at the domineering queen who had descended upon them.

You kill, just kill, why must you be so vicious.

What if you scare my Dudu?

At that moment, the queen wasn't paying any attention to Lu Wu.

She hovered in midair, her gaze cold as she looked down upon the people at the Sea Suppression Tower.

The faces of those from the Sea Suppression Tower were equally ashen.

Everyone could see that Jiang Yuexing today was completely different from usual.

Her unexpected show of dominance and, even more shockingly, the power she was displaying now, was terrifyingly unexpected.

The sudden burst of power and her assertive demeanor made everyone present have an ominous premonition.

Especially Jin Lailai's brother, the Sea Suppression Tower's Tower Master Jin Lihai, whose expression was so dark it was as if water could drip from it.

But he still was not the one to speak first; instead, another big shot responsible for discipline became his spokesperson.

"Governor Jiang, what is the meaning of this?

Minister Jin is the logistics minister of the Sea Suppression Tower after all. Even if he offended your son, there's no need for such deadly measures..."

"Did I permit you to speak?"

The big shot was interrupted by Jiang Yuexing before he could finish.

Startled, he hadn't recovered when Jiang Yuexing coldly threw out a sentence: "Kneel!"

As soon as the command fell, a terrifying aura burst forth, directly targeting that big shot.

Jin Lihai couldn't sit idly by at this time; he stepped forward to attempt to withstand the aura, only to be swept away, while the big shot was pressed to his knees by Jiang Yuexing's power.

At this moment, the brains of everyone from the Sea Suppression Tower were buzzing.

This was the first time they realized that Jiang Yuexing's power was so formidable.

Even Jin Lihai was no match for her.

Those whose minds worked even faster vaguely realized that today's events were no simple matter.

And Lu Wu, as the one with the sharpest mind, after glaring at Jiang Yuexing, kicked away the limbless Jin Lailai, then took out Little Skeleton's mobile phone, beginning his performance.

After all, there were some things Jiang Yuexing couldn't conveniently do or say; it had to be left to her son to speak.

"Governor, you must seek justice for me, no, for Lord Jin!

There are villains inside the Sea Suppression Tower!

Our team 042 finally beat team 044 to become the high school league champions, and to encourage us, you awarded us the Sea Suppressing Order, permitting us to collect a few Summoning Beasts from the Sea Suppression Tower.

It was said to be the Sea Suppression Tower's reward to us."

This was to legalize the Token.

"But once we arrived, all we saw were Bronze and Black Iron Quality Summoning Beast Babies, not a single Silver one.

We initially thought the Sea Suppression Tower was going through hard times and felt uncomfortable in our hearts.

We even thought about letting it go, not to add to their burden, but the logistics department of the Sea Suppression Tower insisted on inviting us, saying their storage rubbish pile might still have some Summoning Stones and Summoning Beast Eggs for us to dig through.

When I heard this, I was even more touched, the rubbish pile, they even let us sift through the storage rubbish pile, how magnanimous the logistics department of the Sea Suppression Tower must be."

```

At that time, we went there with a pilgrim's heart, and guess what? We actually found treasure in a pile of trash.

We scored two Summoned Beasts, yes, these two."

Lu Wu said, and even pointed to the bewildered Hellish Evil Dog and the Green Cub that kept leaning against him and repeatedly calling out "Ma Shada."

"This one's Golden Quality, this one's King-level.

I could have never imagined actually finding Summoning Beast Babies like these in the waste pile of the Sea Suppression Tower's logistics department.

What surprised me even more was that these two Summoning Beast Babies actually belonged to Minister Jin Lailai who had been left in the storeroom!

When I heard this news, I was shaking with rage!

What has the world come to, what has happened to the logistics department of the Sea Suppression Tower?

They actually let a hardworking minister lose such important babies in the storeroom and then swept them into the trash heap.

And Minister Jin himself, he was so angry he quite literally exploded."

Everyone present was stunned.

God, he exploded his limbs from anger.

What do you think he is, a pufferfish? Explodes when angry and, besides, do you have any idea how he exploded?

Even Jiang Yuexing frowned and landed in front of Lu Wu, patting his head.

"Speak properly!"

Then his gaze fell on Lu Wu's blood-soaked hand and his brow furrowed.

"What happened to your hand?"

"I just told them I had recorded everything on my phone, and then, I don't know how, it exploded and hurt me, but it's nothing serious, not very severe."

Lu Wu couldn't help but curl his lips when he saw that Jiang Yuexing finally noticed the wound on his hand. Enduring the pain and not letting Green Cub, who was eager to please, heal him was indeed the right move.

'Better look pitiful. Even a stingy rich woman has got to give me some benefits later, right?'

However, Lu Wu was just trying to play the sympathy card when suddenly, the expression on Jiang Yuexing's face in front of him darkened, and he turned to Jin Lihai.

Immediately thereafter, Lu Wu distinctly sensed an aura of confrontation, and Jin Lihai's complexion changed again; he suffered an explosive injury to his hand.

Though it wasn't completely severed, the ghastly sight was much worse than that of Lu Wu.

Jiang Yuexing declared assertively, "No one can lay a finger on my son, Lu Wuyi. No one but me, nobody else can!"

Seeing this scene and hearing those words, Lu Wu couldn't help but wistfully imagine the possibilities.

A rich woman indeed is a rich woman, powerful and a good actor, seizing the chance to cripple her opponent.

Yep, in Lu Wu's view, the rich woman was simply taking the chance for revenge. As for what the rich woman said, Lu Wu wouldn't believe a single punctuation mark.

After what had happened today, how could he not be clear that his family's rich woman was quite cunning?

You listen to her words, but if you take them seriously, you might get sold by her.

"Godmother is amazing, I love her.

By the way, this is Little Skeleton's phone. I told them I filmed with my phone, and they thought I used mine, but actually, I used Little Skeleton's.

I've sent you all the videos since I got to Sea Suppression Tower."

As soon as Lu Wu said this, Jin Lihai's already dark face grew even darker.

And those big shots from Sea Suppression Tower who were present subtly started distancing themselves from Jin Lihai and his faction.

Anyone who had managed to get this far wasn't a fool.

Everyone could see that today's issue had been orchestrated by Jiang Yuexing, the Governor who had held her position for five years without much action, unassuming and modest.

Her motive was simple: to topple the Jin Lihai faction and take full control of Sea Suppression Tower, which was rightfully hers.

Lying low for five years, striking with one blow.

Not only was it swift, precise, and ruthless, but it also unveiled Jiang Yuexing's formidable strength.

Adding up the facts with Lu Wu's earlier show of intelligence, everyone knew that Jin Lihai's faction was either going to be dead or critically wounded after this.

At the very least, Jin Lihai's faction would definitely lose control of the logistics department, and Jin Lihai's position as Tower Master could be unstable too.

Sure enough, after Jiang Yuexing watched the videos sent over by Lu Wu, she casually tossed the dying Jin Lailai at the feet of the discipline supervisor, a big shot who was still kneeling on the ground.

And she threw the phone as well.

"The person and the relevant evidence are in front of you; now tell me, what should be done with him?"

The big shot didn't dare to say anything, and didn't even dare to pick up the phone.

"What? Can't decide? If that's the case, then you shouldn't hold your position either."

Jiang Yuexing wasn't surprised, and calmly uttered two names.

"Wang Lihai, Xu Qingli."

"Present!" "Present!"

Two men stood up from among the leaders.

"From today on, Wang Lihai will take over the logistics department, and Xu Qingli will take over the discipline division. Those of you present, who agrees and who disagrees?"

Who would dare to speak now?

Isn't it obvious? They had already arranged everything, so what was the use of speaking up?

Didn't you see that even Tower Master Jin Lihai, whose younger brother had just had his limbs blasted off and whose own hand was nearly crippled, didn't dare to utter a word? Who would dare to make a peep?

"Very well, since no one opposes, then let it be so!

You two, immediately take over your departments. Also, thoroughly investigate Jin Lailai; I want to know how much he has lost in the storeroom during his tenure and how many items are missing from it."

"Yes!" "Yes!"

The two big shots who had clearly sided with Jiang Yuexing early on got up to get to work.

And those who were there to watch the drama also dispersed on their own, with Jin Lihai himself leaving with a shuffling gait. From beginning to end, he did not dare to look back at Jin Lailai, who lay on the ground, pallid, having lost all his earlier arrogance and bluster.

Everyone knew that from that day on, Sea Suppression Tower was going to change, even the entire Jiangnan would change.

Some people couldn't help but be deeply moved.

Reflecting on the five years since Jiang Yuexing's sudden arrival in Jiangnan.

Five years of lying low, keeping quiet.

Sitting honestly in the Governor's seat as nothing more than a figurehead.

Everyone thought she was just a puppet, and even some maliciously speculated how she got the position of the Governor.

Perhaps it was her charming husband of unknown origin, her alluring appearance.

It wasn't until today that they realized that this seemingly harmless figurehead was in fact a powerful, deep-thinking big fish capable of upsetting the heavens and the earth!

......

This chapter is four thousand words, can it count as two-in-one?

If so, I'll consider the debt for the previous chapter repaid.

```

# Chapter 190: 188 Getting stronger by getting beaten

Sea Suppression Tower, Logistics Department.

All matters concluded.

Lu Wu hurriedly handed Green Cub over to Dudu and signaled Lin Jianying to quickly contract the Hellish Evil Dog.

"Did I say these two babies were for you?"

Jiang Yuexing raised an eyebrow, and Lu Wu quickly leaned in.

"Mom, my dear mom!"

At this moment, Lu Wu's face could not have been more sycophantic, and his voice could not have been sweeter.

Seeing Lu Wu's expression, Jiang Yuexing could not help but recall another face, one that looked exactly like Lu Wu when mooching meals.

Thinking of this, Jiang Yuexing's originally good mood soured instantly, and she coldly snorted, "You're so clever, you should have guessed that I brought out these two only as bait, to be used and then forgotten!

Don't even think about taking them!"

The Jiang Yuexing of now was no longer the old Jiang Yuexing, who would let anyone mooch off her. Not a chance!

Not even a window left open!

Her mind was made up; she would give nothing to Lu Wu!

Just let him labor in vain to pay off debts!

Her resolve was solid!

Then,

Ten minutes later!

"Thanks, mom, I love you the most, you are truly my mom!"

Lu Wu sweetly thanked her, then joyously followed Jiang Tianyang to the Cub Zone with Dudu and the others.

Initially, Jiang Yuexing was smiling, but after Lu Wu left, her mind suddenly cleared, and she covered her face with both hands.

"Ugh! I still gave in!"

Not only did she give in, but she also let Lu Wu go to the Cub Zone again; by now, all the Silver Quality Summoning Beast Babies were back, and she allowed Lu Wu to go take a look and perhaps take another one home.

The backfire came so quickly, she hadn't expected it.

She had been determined not to give Lu Wu anything, but she couldn't withstand Lu Wu's fawning, which strongly resembled a certain someone's.

And with him calling her "mom" over and over, Jiang Yuexing just couldn't hold on and capitulated.

"I didn't really give it to him, he passed them to his teammates, so it doesn't count as giving him anything!"

At this point, Jiang Yuexing could only console herself.

Unexpectedly, Lu Wu shared the Summoned Beasts with his teammates, which surprised her.

Especially giving Green Cub to Dudu, something Jiang Yuexing had not anticipated.

However, she unexpectedly didn't dislike Lu Wu's action, though it left her feeling a bit sour; the guy had never been so nice to her.

Shaking off the bitterness in her heart, Jiang Yuexing clenched her fist as she watched the departing Lu Wu and fiercely thought,

"This time he got lucky, but next time, no matter what, I won't give him the slightest benefit; I'll make him labor in vain for me for a lifetime!"

...

Over with Lu Wu.

After the whole ordeal, Lu Wu returned to the Cub Zone for Summoned Beasts.

Indeed, the Silver Quality Summoned Beast Babies had returned.

Lu Wu, not dawdling, headed straight toward the flying beast area.

His goal was clear; he wanted to nurture a flyer.

Flying Summoned Beasts were quite popular among the types available at Sea Suppression Tower, with no shortage of Flying Beast Babies.

Apart from the Bronze Black Iron ones Lu Wu had seen before, there were now an additional 33 Silver Quality Flying Beast Babies.

"Hmm, this is how the logistics department of Sea Suppression Tower should look, but no Golden Quality?"

Clearly, Lu Wu was somewhat disdainful of Silver Quality beasts.

Jiang Tianyang curled his lips on the side, "Do you think Golden Quality would be so common that the previous guy would have been such a shameless beggar, not leaving even a dog for you?"

Lu Wu thought about it but couldn't help feeling disappointed.

After all, his standards were high now, and he truly found it hard to be impressed by Silver Quality Summoned Beasts.

No wonder, none of the 33 beasts caught his eye, leaving Lu Wu deeply frustrated.

"A wasted trip; I should have asked the rich woman to get me a King-level flying Summoned Beast."

Lu Wu thought about asking again but figured that by now, the rich woman had likely come to her senses, and asking again would probably be futile.

"Forget it, let's go home... Eh, what's that?"

Just as Lu Wu was about to leave, he caught sight of a pudgy creature running around in the flying bird area.

The little fellow was exceptionally bold and bravely lunged at the group of Silver Quality youngsters.

To put it plainly, the little guy went there to fight.

Not that it seemed likely, but indeed, it went there to fight.

Though it charged ferociously, its combat power seemed unremarkable.

It was immediately swatted to the ground by a wing, then stepped on and pecked by another youngster, which plucked several feathers from its body and let it go.

But the freed little fellow didn't flee; it took a few steps back with its hind legs, charged bravely again, then was slapped down once more.

The scene repeated.

The pudgy, or rather plucked, creature, swollen from being beaten, seemed insensible to pain and fear.

It kept charging at its targeted opponent.

Though defeated every time, it managed to stand up, clutching its adversary determinedly, like a feisty bulldog with wings.

"This little thing is quite interesting!"

Jiang Tianyang noticed it too, picked up the feisty fellow for a closer inspection.

Suddenly grabbed, the little guy was unhappy, turned its head, and pecked at Jiang Tianyang furiously.

During this time, Lu Wu glanced at the attributes of the little creature.

```

...

Name: Remarkably Stubborn Great Skylark

Power: 1-star (Ordinary)

Quality: Ordinary (Upgrade) (???)

Attribute: Ice

State: Angry (Don't get in the way of my fight! I am destined to become the king of brawlers!)

Special Skill: Awakening (Seems like getting hit actually aids in awakening its skills)

Description: This is a hybrid Great Skylark, although its quality is ordinary, there seems to be different powers within it.

...

Looking at this little guy's attributes, Lu Wu's eyes brightened.

Well, the previously arranged Gouzi and Green Cub were arranged by a rich woman in advance, so if we talk about snagging bargains, this plucked bird seems to be the one he found on his own.

From the attribute panel, this little guy seems to have something special.

However, whether to keep this little fella, Lu Wu really was hesitant now.

At this moment, Jiang Tianyang regretfully said, "How come it's just ordinary quality?"

Exactly, what Jiang Tianyang regretted, was also what Lu Wu was hesitant about, everything about this bird was great, just its ordinary quality was a bit fatal.

Lu Wu had raised Little Skeleton from ordinary to its current state; did he really need to cultivate another from ordinary again?

That seemed somewhat troublesome!

Thus, in the end, Lu Wu shook his head, ready to give up on this little fella.

"Put it back!"

However, just as Lu Wu prepared to put it back, it seemed to fixate on Lu Wu.

Its eyes, bright and fierce, locked onto Lu Wu.

Lu Wu glanced at its state, and his face immediately darkened.

Excited: Are humans coming to fight? I feel I can beat you!

Lu Wu couldn't stand it anymore.

A mere featherless bird, actually daring to challenge him? To say he couldn't even win against a bird?

How could he tolerate this? Without a second word, Lu Wu rolled up his sleeves.

"Come on then, let's fight!"

Then, a man and bird went at it.

Really, don't ask, though the bird was only ordinary quality, though only fifty centimeters tall, and though other younglings had beaten it featherless, it was actually quite strong in a fight.

It took quite an effort for Lu Wu to finally suppress the little fellow.

With his foot on the bird, Lu Wu's demeanor was immensely arrogant, almost like after having a scuffle with the elders at Nanshan Nursing Home.

"Try fighting me? You're nothing!"

As for this sudden performance by Lu Wu, Jiang Tianyang was entirely bewildered.

He didn't understand why Lu Wu suddenly started brawling with the bird after a mere glance, and furthermore, he was unable to understand how Lu Wu felt so proud after defeating a bird.

Beating a bird had actually given him a sense of superiority.

What baffled Jiang Tianyang even more was that there were now clapping sounds.

It was Dudu clapping along with Little Skeleton.

While clapping, Dudu sincerely added, "Lu Wu is the strongest!"

Are you serious?

At that moment, Jiang Tianyang really wanted to grab Dudu and ask, was she seriously serious?

Was she not just making fun?

Then, he heard Lin Jianying nearby praising, "Lu Wu truly is the most talented Cultivation Master, his way of interacting with Summoned Beasts is truly unique."

Hearing this, Jiang Tianyang's head buzzed.

'Are you sure what he's doing over there is 'interacting' with a Summoned Beast?'

He looked, but how did it seem like just unilateral thrashing?

At that moment, Jiang Tianyang felt this world had truly broken, and this thing was too terrifying.

Those two around Lu Wu, obviously had their brains broken from being with him for too long.

Indeed, personal worship shouldn't be a thing.

Just as Jiang Tianyang was about to intervene, preventing Lu Wu and rescuing that poor little bird, something unexpected happened.

That very bird, which Lu Wu was suppressing and beating, suddenly started glowing.

Frightened, Lu Wu quickly got off it, and Jiang Tianyang was stupefied on the spot.

What the heck is this?

Could it be that Lu Wu wasn't just simply beating this bird but truly 'communicating' with it?

Could it be not the world that was wrong, but himself?

Whether it was him who was wrong, he wasn't sure.

In any case, Lu Wu beating down that bird caused its Special Skill to be awakened.

In the light, the bird's attributes also changed.

Originally "Ordinary" quality now jumped directly to "Black Iron."

And another skill appeared in its skill slot.

...

Unyielding·Growth (Entry-level) (Special passive skill, simply put, the more it gets beaten, the stronger it becomes—every time it's hit, its power, quality, and skill proficiency all improve.

Ps: It isn't strong enough yet because it hasn't been beaten harshly enough!

Pss: It's still growing, to maximize this skill's effect, nutrition needs to keep up!)

...

```

# Chapter 191: 189 Summoner Talent

Although the quality of this bird was subpar, its skills were not, so in the end, Lu Wu still took the bird back with him.

After bringing the bird back, this whole affair could be considered completely wrapped up.

What came next had basically nothing to do with Lu Wu.

Jiang Yuexing didn't bother Lu Wu with anything else either, allowing him to focus on preparing for the Inheritance Land in two weeks' time.

With the high school league finished, Lu Wu found himself with nothing else to do.

Therefore, as soon as he got home, he began to think about preparing for the Inheritance Land.

"Two weeks isn't too long, nor is it too short, I must schedule everything properly.

What can be done, what should be done, I have to make a list."

Lu Wu thought carefully.

It took some time, but he listed all the things he could prepare.

One was to learn about altar sacrifices and to prepare the necessary materials for them.

Another was to train and cultivate his summoned beasts, especially the three smaller ones; he had to ensure that they could achieve a certain level of combat power within two weeks.

Furthermore, Lu Wu also had to prepare to advance to a professional summoner.

Hmm, if all goes well, this trip to the Inheritance Land would definitely enable Little Skeleton and the little goldfish to advance to boss level.

Once their powers reached boss level, Lu Wu would officially become a professional summoner.

The divide between a professional and a non-professional summoner is huge.

Before going professional, summoners are just salted fish with no combat power of their own and very poor self-preservation skills; a careless mishap could easily spell their doom in battle.

But after advancing, it's different.

Beyond boss level, the feedback summoners get from their summoned beasts will no longer be just in terms of spiritual power, but will also include feedback in strength, energy, and even skills.

Yes, skills!

Professional summoners can acquire skills from their summoned beasts.

After a summoned beast advances to boss level, for each star upgrade, the summoner will randomly acquire one skill from their roster of summoned beasts.

This is also why Jiang Yuexing was able to suppress the entire field without even revealing her summoned beasts.

Because she herself is an extremely formidable presence.

Also, some extremely rare summoners will awaken a summoner talent after they advance to the professional level, these talents not only enhance the summoners' powers but also greatly improve the abilities of their summoned beasts.

One could say that after becoming professional, summoners in battle are no longer salted fish that can only say "awesome" and need all-around protection.

They can now make a substantive contribution in combat.

Lu Wu doing an experiment or something, doesn't have to worry about accidentally wiping himself out anymore.

Most importantly, once he becomes professional, Lu Wu could regain the ability to whomp that bird.

Although the power of a professional summoner is set to be a big level below the strength of their own summoned beasts, he should still have the power to handle that bird.

So, Lu Wu felt that if he had time in these two weeks, he should also look into information related to professional summoners.

If he could come up with a summoner talent for himself, that would be even better.

That's what Lu Wu thought, and that's what he did.

Consequently, in the following time, Lu Wu's life returned to plain simplicity.

Every day he would get up at six o'clock and take Han, his third summoned beast, the bird stripped of all its feathers, for a fight as morning exercise.

Then he handed the bird over to Lin Jianying, letting Lin Jianying's Gouzi repeatedly pummel the bird.

Hmm, although the bird had its skill awakening, its combat power was still inferior to Gouzi's, and because it lacked command and always ended up on the receiving end of the beatings.

While the bird was being thrashed, Dudu, holding Tuantuan and Green Cub, sat to the side.

Whenever the bird was almost done for, Green Cub would give it a "Healing Skill".

The master-level Healing Skill was quite powerful and could ensure the bird's safety.

With some resources allocated on top of that, the bird's improvement was rapid.

As for Lu Wu himself, he held a laptop, sitting beside Dudu and studied like crazy.

In the first three days, Lu Wu didn't study the knowledge related to altar sacrifices but spent three days integrating and organizing the training plans for the three newly joined little fellows.

With Lin Jianying's Gouzi, Lu Wu took a shortcut; he found a training plan for cultivating a Hellish Evil Dog, made some simple modifications, and handed it over.

For the remaining bird and Dudu's family's Green Cub, Lu Wu spent quite an effort.

He searched across the internal network but couldn't find any information on Green Cub.

With no other choice, Lu Wu had to find a cultivation plan that looked similar to the "King Flower", and after integrating over a dozen plans, he finally formulated an assistance-based training plan for Green Cub, planning to add a few offensive skills, as it would be needed for the altar ceremony.

Both Gouzi and Green Cub took up a full day of Lu Wu's time.

But it took Lu Wu a whole two days for the bird.

He spent two days integrating fifty-three different cultivation plans for a "Great Skylark", and in the end, considering Han's trait of getting stronger by taking beatings, he came up with a "Beating 4.0" training plan for it.

After outlining the nurturing plans for the three little ones, Lu Wu turned his focus to the knowledge of sacrificial altar offerings and began a new round of intense study.

He studied nonstop for one to two weeks!

During these two weeks,

Lu Wu was oblivious to the outside world, engrossedly preparing for his entry into the "Inheritance Land."

Meanwhile, the outside world he was tuning out was anything but peaceful these past few days.

And this so-called unrest, from a certain angle, could be said to have been caused by Lu Wu, or more accurately, related to him.

The catalyst of this turmoil started at the Sea Suppression Tower.

Jiang Yuexing, after taking down Jin Lihai and seizing control of the logistics and discipline departments of the tower, didn't stop there.

It was only natural. After lying dormant for five years, how could her emergence be limited to just one action?

The Sea Suppression Tower was just the beginning!

After taking down Jin Lihai, his successor Wang Lihai began a thorough investigation into the years of corruption and embezzlement in the logistics department that Jin Lihai supervised.

From this starting point, Jiang Yuexing began to unleash her influence bit by bit, which had been secretly growing over the past five years.

Within half a month, countless big shots due to this affair were brought down, and the once-seemingly impenetrable web of interests was torn open by a huge gap by her.

Some authority that should have belonged to her was also reclaimed, one by one.

In short, in just half a month, Jiang Yuexing completed her transformation from a figurehead to the true Governor.

Although she was far from having full control of Jiangnan, at least within Jiangnan, the voice of the Governor Mansion started to grow more influential.

At this point, the identity of being the adopted son of the Governor that Lu Wu bore gained more weight when he presented it, and it wasn't as utterly useless as it was back at the Sea Suppression Tower.

"It's about time to stop, continuing on might touch their sensitive nerves, and there's no guarantee they won't do something irrational.

It's good enough as it is; anything more would be overkill."

Inside the Governor Mansion,

a woman in a wheelchair, dressed in white garments, with white hair and black-frame glasses, exuding an aura of intellect, pushed up her glasses and spoke to Jiang Yuexing in front of her.

"Mm, I need a break on my side too, to process the gains from this time!"

Jiang Yuexing responded while reviewing documents.

The woman in white changed the subject, "Also, how do you plan to handle the situation of Jiangnan University? They are in dire straits right now, and if their ranking doesn't improve by next year, Jiangbei might initiate a cleanup. It will be quite troublesome then."

"Don't worry about Jiangnan University; I have a plan!"

"Your newly adopted son?" The woman's eyebrows raised in query.

Jiang Yuexing nodded, "I've assigned him this task!"

"Are you planning to let him participate in next year's university tournament?"

"I've already agreed with him to lead the team!"

Upon hearing this, even the woman with deep qi cultivation couldn't help but frown.

"My dear Governor, aren't you a little too confident in him? He hasn't even started school yet, and he will only be a freshman by the time the competition starts next year.

He will be up against third and fourth-year students; it's hard to tell if he can even perform well in the contest, yet you're letting him lead the team?

Are you sure he won't disappoint you?"

Jiang Yuexing paused, ceasing her document annotation and looking up at the woman in white, she said word for word, "He is my son, so he won't lose."

The woman's head buzzed.

Where is this confidence coming from?

Plus, is he really your son that you can be so sure?

She felt that this woman might have gone mad.

...

Meanwhile, elsewhere.

Lu Wu was checking his preparations for entering the "Inheritance Land" at this time!

"All beast training aspects are complete."

"Sacrificial materials are ready."

"Also, basic knowledge about advancing in profession is nearly complete."

"Now, only the last part remains!"

Saying this, Lu Wu looked at his little goldfish at home.

"Go on then, bring all of your hundreds of minions to me!"

...

Please subscribe and recommend tickets.

# Chapter 192: 190 Weirdo

Fucheng, Lu Wu's mansion.

Lu Wu had just sent his underling to call over the underling's underlings.

However, within half an hour, his underlings hadn't arrived, but Jiang Yuexing's call came first.

The queen icily asked, "Do you want to reach the heavens or what?"

Lu Wu, bewildered, replied, "What?"

The queen angrily repeated, "Do you want to reach the heavens?!"

Lu Wu, utterly confused, responded, "What are you talking about?"

The queen exploded, "Tell me, by bringing those hundreds of summoned beasts from Little Goldfish into the city, are you trying to reach the heavens or what?!! Do you realize the trouble this could cause for Fucheng?"

Lu Wu understood and whispered defensively, "I was just thinking, since I'm going to the Inheritance Land tomorrow, I'd bring more underlings to boost my power a bit, so I can help you more in the future?"

"The best help you could give me is not to create any trouble! Immediately, send those fish back to where they came from, or else I'll beat them all into fish head soup!"

Lu Wu could already hear Jiang Yuexing clenching her fists on the other end, totally cowed!

"Alright, alright, I'll send them back right away. Don't get angry, anger isn't good for your health? It can make you age fast!"

"If you truly cared, you'd come to Governor Mansion now and let me do something that's good for your health!"

Lu Wu wouldn't dare go; heading over now would probably get him beaten up.

He quickly uttered some pleasantries then hurriedly ended the call.

"This stingy rich woman, is such a small issue worth blowing up like this? Now great, my plan to raid the Inheritance Land with a few hundred underlings hasn't even started and it's already bankrupt."

Lu Wu felt helpless.

He could only send Little Skeleton riding a pig to tell Little Goldfish to herd the underlings back.

Meanwhile, at the Governor Mansion.

After Jiang Yuexing hung up the phone, she was still fuming.

However, her reason for exploding wasn't entirely directed at Lu Wu.

Or rather, her anger wasn't provoked by Lu Wu, but by someone she deemed a 'shameless woman.'

Lu Wu was just unlucky enough to get caught in the crossfire.

But after scolding Lu Wu, Jiang Yuexing actually felt pretty good.

Her previously stern expression and furrowed brows gradually relaxed.

This noticeable change even caught the attention of the woman in white next to her, who found it unexpected.

Normally, a little provocation from that person, and Jiang Yuexing would be upset for days, but today she recovered surprisingly swiftly, even showing a smugness between her brows.

What's the situation here? Despite being bullied like that, what has she got to be pleased about?

Could it be because of Lu Wu?

The woman in white sensed something fishy!

At that moment, another call from Lu Wu came in on Jiang Yuexing's phone.

Jiang Yuexing's lips curved up as she answered the call, and Lu Wu cautiously asked, "Um, how about I just bring a few dozen, not hundreds?"

"No! Get lost!"

With that, Jiang Yuexing hung up the phone, her smile becoming even broader.

Now, the woman in white felt confident; she'd dropped the word "feel" entirely.

There was definitely something fishy going on between Jiang Yuexing and Lu Wu!

…

Back with Lu Wu, his last request was denied, and his face fell.

He had hoped to grandstand a bit.

Showing up with a few hundred summoned beasts would have been quite an impressive scene!

Now, it seemed he had no hope left.

So he lost all motivation right then and there.

"Forget it, forget it, just sleep and level up in the instance tomorrow."

With those words, Lu Wu threw himself onto the bed ready to sleep, but the frustration in his belly kept him awake.

So, he picked up his phone and browsed the internal network.

…

Account nickname: I Want to Be a Sea King

Account points: 2333

Uploaded cultivation plans: Little Skeleton Training Manual series, Little Skeleton Soup series, Goblin Injection series

Uploaded training regimens: 97 types

…

Looking at the sluggish increase in his account points, Lu Wu curled his lips.

"It's been two weeks, and the ad revenue is almost gone. But it's still decent, the high school league ad revenue, especially during the semi-finals and final, probably added up to close to 20,000. This revenue far exceeded my expectations."

True, Lu Wu's account only showed a bit over 2,000 points on the surface, but over the past fortnight, his account's peak points had briefly reached more than 10,000.

But he had spent most of that.

It went on nurturing three little guys, preparing for tomorrow's trip to the Inheritance Land.

And the value he got for these 10,000-plus points was significant.

Preparation for tomorrow's trip to the Inheritance Land aside, the progress those three little guys made in just two weeks was substantial.

In two weeks' time, with the resources he invested, the three little ones had advanced to 2-star level.

They had each mastered certain skills, substantially boosting their combat power.

Particularly the bird from Lu Wu's house; this silly creature was now something Lu Wu dared not fight.

If he fought it again, he'd just be beaten.

And this silly creature didn't look up to Lu Wu anymore.

Whenever it looked at Lu Wu, it seemed to say:

Proud (Human, I've grown stronger. You're no longer my match!)

Each time Lu Wu saw this attitude, anger involuntarily surged in him.

This silly creature ate his food and drank his water, and while Lu Wu raised it from nothing, it had the gall to feel proud and even mock him?

Could Lu Wu stand this?

Absolutely not!

So every time he saw it acting this way, Lu Wu exercised his authority as master to restrain it and then used it as a punching bag.

But the results were often that the more Lu Wu hit it, the more excited it got; the more he hit it, the happier it became.

After such fights, Lu Wu was exhausted while it was full of energy, its state had changed.

Disappointed (Is that all?)

Every time Lu Wu thought of this, he almost couldn't help but rush down and give the bird a beating.

"I can't think about this, it's making my hands itchy!"

"Ding dong!"

As Lu Wu's blood was up, the email alert sounded; a new email had arrived.

Lu Wu opened his inbox and glanced at it; it was from Jiangbei Research Center.

Unsurprisingly, the email pertained to the White Bone Wild Boar cultivation plan Lu Wu had previously submitted. The center rejected the plan Lu Wu had submitted last time.

The reason was that the plan's concept was juvenile and the cultivation master hadn't cooperated with the research center for validation.

Lu Wu didn't bother to say much.

After all, this was also something he had anticipated.

Jiangbei rejected it, so he'd just send it again and let Fucheng handle it.

However, Lu Wu checked the time and saw it was already past midnight.

They had to go into an instance early tomorrow morning, and Zhao Kai Ming and Zhang Wentao were likely asleep by now. It would be rude to disturb them.

"Let's handle it after we return from the instance."

Saying this, Lu Wu put down his phone and then snatched away Little Skeleton's phone who was hugging a bird and scrolling through short videos while sitting by his bed.

Skilled at this, he opened an encrypted app on Little Skeleton's phone, found his diary, and wrote an entry.

"June 14

The Jiangbei Cultivation Center returned my proposal,

Also, that guy Jiang Beifeng owes me 50,000 points and hasn't paid up,

And that rich woman of mine won't let me bring in Dudu's little brothers — I, Lu Wu, remember these grudges.

Lastly, we're starting an instance tomorrow.

If nothing goes wrong, I'll emerge a professional level existence.

Excited!"

After finishing, Lu Wu locked up his diary and returned the phone to Little Skeleton who was eagerly watching him by the bed.

He casually said, father-like, "No more phone for you, you need to rest early, we've got stuff to do tomorrow!"

Little Skeleton indicated slyly (Does Lu Wu not know? Little Skeleton doesn't need to sleep!)

Lu Wu pointed at the bird.

"You might not need sleep, but this silly bird does, it has important matters tomorrow!"

Little Skeleton's eyes, full of Pupil Fire, flashed as he picked up the bird and then smacked it on the back of its head, knocking the silly bird out cold.

Cunningly (See, silly bird is asleep! Can Little Skeleton play with the phone now?)

"You're really a little mischief-maker!"

Lu Wu laughed, tapped Little Skeleton on the head, and then didn't bother with it anymore, lying down to sleep himself.

It must be said, the adaptability of humans is truly astonishing.

When Little Skeleton just appeared, Lu Wu couldn't sleep at night upon seeing him and had to make Little Skeleton sadly face the wall.

Now, Lu Wu slept soundly with Little Skeleton sitting by his bed.

In fact, nowadays, Little Skeleton even acted as a sleep aid for Lu Wu — without Little Skeleton by the bed, Lu Wu might not even be able to fall asleep.

Watching Little Skeleton play with the phone by his bed, Lu Wu's lips slightly curled up as he quickly drifted into dreamland.

After Lu Wu fell asleep, Little Skeleton who had been playing with the phone suddenly stopped, turned its head to look at Lu Wu, then glanced at the silly bird.

Once it was sure the bird was really knocked out,

Little Skeleton then covered Lu Wu with a blanket!

Though Lu Wu, having nearly caught a cold from Little Skeleton's blanket-covering antics before, had since deprived Little Skeleton of the right to cover him with blankets, Little Skeleton hadn't compromised on this matter.

Every night, it still secretly covered Lu Wu with a blanket.

This was its favorite thing to do, even more enjoyable than playing with a phone, so it would never listen to Lu Wu on this matter.

As long as Lu Wu didn't know, Little Skeleton hadn't covered him with a blanket!

Recently, however, Little Skeleton had grown somewhat unsatisfied with just covering with blankets, as it had learned a new operation called 'warming the bed' from the TV.

It found it very interesting.

But it never found the right opportunity to try it.

Because Lu Wu would wake up.

At times like these, Little Skeleton thought, if only Lu Wu could be knocked out like the silly bird, then it could cover Lu Wu with as many blankets and warm the bed as many times as it wanted without being discovered.

Yes, Lu Wu never knew that the nights after he fell asleep were so terrifying.

...

An uneventful night.

The next early morning, Lu Wu and his team got up early.

After a quick tidy up, Li Kai drove them towards the Governor Mansion.

The entrance to the Inheritance Land was known only by the Governor Mansion, so they had to gather there before setting off together.

Lu Wu had originally thought they would be the earliest team, but to his surprise, both Team 044 and Team 003 had already arrived when they got there.

But this was quite normal, as Lu Wu and his team lived in the outskirts, while 044 and 003 were staying in nearby hotels.

Even if they got up late, they could still arrive early.

The three teams met again after half a month, and everyone's gaze immediately turned towards the people they were interested in.

And the most intriguing person for everyone was, well, obviously Dudu.

Yes, not Lu Wu, but Dudu.

Who would bother staring at Lu Wu, a grown man, all day if not for Dudu?

After all, Dudu was the only girl among the nine people from the three teams.

Moreover, at the award ceremony, although she wore a mask and loose clothing that completely covered her in the scorching heat, she still let off an aura of a goddess.

Thus, at first glance, everyone focused on Goddess Dudu, and they found out she wasn't wearing a mask anymore.

At first, they were quite excited, but soon they were all confused.

What's the situation?

Who is this chubby girl?

Where's the goddess?

What happened to the goddess from the award ceremony?

Watching them doubt their lives and quickly turn their heads, Lu Wu's lips curled up slightly, pleased with the effect.

Indeed, a chubby wife did not attract much attention.

However, he himself felt quite disappointed when he looked at Dudu in her current state.

Although the plumper Dudu wasn't ugly, and could even be considered cute, she really couldn't compare to her peak beauty!

But there was really nothing Lu Wu could do about Dudu's weight.

It was bound to increase after each "Skill."

Fortunately, the upper limit on her weight was decreasing.

When Lu Wu first arrived, Dudu's weight limit was nearly 200. After one Skill Awakening, it dropped to 180.

The second Skill brought it down to 160, and this time it had gone down to 140.

Following this pattern, after two more times, Dudu could maintain her peak beauty indefinitely.

Furthermore, Lu Wu also noticed that with each Skill trigger, her peak beauty seemed to enhance even more.

Dudu looked significantly more beautiful at her third peak appearance than at her first.

A few more times, and his Dudu could really become a fairy.

Thinking about this, Lu Wu felt a mix of disappointment and anticipation.

Meanwhile, over at Teams 044 and 003.

After shifting their focus away from Dudu, they started looking at other things.

Such as Lu Wu, or the new Summoned Beasts that had appeared in their team.

Wang Jun's gaze moved from the Hellish Evil Dog to the Green Cub and finally rested on the Han, who hadn't fully grown its fur yet, beside Lu Wu.

Lu Wu also noticed that Teams 044 and 003 each brought a new Summoned Beast, though only one person from Team 003 had brought one.

This one, Lu Wu recognized as the weirdo identified by the goblin as the one who had bullied Lin Jianying in the restroom.

What made Lu Wu frown was that this guy was staring at Lin Jianying right now.

It made Lin Jianying feel utterly uncomfortable.

Lu Wu was immediately upset, "Damn it, bullying my people right in front of me."

Without another word, he went up and kicked the weirdo straight away.

"Enough is enough! Keep looking and see if I don't twist your head off."

…

Another four thousand, feels like I've grown a lot.

# Chapter 193: 191 Rings (Subscribe)

Fucheng, outside the Governor Mansion.

Lu Wu's sudden kick was a bit fierce.

The odd man he kicked was sent tumbling to the ground.

Unit 044 was completely befuddled, while Unit 003 immediately flew into a rage.

"Lu, what the hell are you doing?

Bullying people, is that it?"

Team leader Kong Qing rushed up to Lu Wu right away.

At that moment, he was both shocked and angry.

Angry that Lu Wu had the audacity to strike that big shot, and shocked because, might it mean Lu Wu had discovered something with his sudden move?

"I'm bullying him, so what? My mom is the Governor! Are you going to get out of the way or not? If not, I'll beat you up too!"

It must be said, Lu Wu always had a good grasp of his demeanor.

The tactic he learned from Jiang Tianyang was used much better now than by Jiang Tianyang himself.

It was quite impressive.

Kong Qing was immediately intimidated, and Lu Wu took the opportunity to push him aside and approach the strange man, lifting his leg to kick him once more.

"Kid, you've blocked our Old Lin in the restroom several times already. You come here today and keep staring at Old Lin; what, are you some kind of freak?"

"That, it's a misunderstanding, I really didn't do anything to him."

Facing Lu Wu, this man called Kong Yi was nothing like his arrogant self when he used to bully Lin Jianying, responding only with subservience.

"Misunderstanding, I'm telling you there's no misunderstanding."

Lu Wu said, delivering several more kicks fiercely, exuding the demeanor of a young master through and through.

While Lu Wu was beating up the man, inside the Governor Mansion, there were people watching this scene.

One was the rich woman, Lu Wu's godmother, and the other was the lady in white.

"Is this your adopted son?"

Technically, this was the first time the lady in white had seen Lu Wu.

But she didn't expect to see this side of him, causing her eyebrows to tighten slightly.

Lu Wu's current demeanor wasn't too appealing!

That temperament, radiating from inside out, didn't look like that of a good person, and the lady in white didn't understand what the rich woman found appealing in Lu Wu. His looks, perhaps?

Okay, she admitted, Lu Wu was quite handsome.

But she was long past the age where appearance equated to virtue.

So her first impression of Lu Wu wasn't good at all.

"Your adopted son is beating up a member of Unit 003 outside your Governor Mansion. That won't sound good if word gets out. Are you just going to stand by and watch?"

"He knows what he's doing."

Jiang Yuexing replied indifferently, without stirring.

The lady in white shook her head upon seeing this and was about to intervene when Lu Wu outside stopped.

"Kid, let's leave it at that for today. If you dare to bully Old Lin again, I'll skin you alive!"

After finishing, surveillance showed Lu Wu pushing past Unit 003's members, approaching the main gate of the Governor Mansion, and shouting at the closed doors, "What are you waiting for? Open the gate for your young master! I want to see my mom!"

"Open the gate for him, bring him here!"

Jiang Yuexing ordered immediately, and her underlings sprang into action right away.

The gate of the Governor Mansion opened, and Lu Wu was led to Jiang Yuexing.

As soon as he arrived at Jiang Yuexing's side, the arrogance on Lu Wu's face disappeared in an instant. The speed of the transformation slightly surprised the lady in white, but what surprised her even more was what Lu Wu said next.

"Godmother, there's something wrong with Unit 003!

To be precise, it's the team captain, and that Kong Yi I just beat up—they have issues!"

This abrupt statement from Lu Wu caught the lady in white off guard.

She now wasn't sure whether Lu Wu was framing them or if he really found some problems.

Jiang Yuexing then raised her hand slightly, "Let's hear it."

"This unit, when they previously won against Units 002 and 066, used underhanded methods to win.

That Iron Blade Mantis must have taken some drug to have such a strong burst of power in such a short time.

In this period, I did some investigation, and the drugs that could cause such a terrifying surge are mostly not good ones.

Also, I've checked out the Summoned Beasts of Unit 003,

The Iron Blade Mantis has developed problems, likely a reduction in lifespan, which is clearly a side effect of substance abuse.

And such drugs, which trade life span for power, are all banned—prohibited from development by the Cultivation Center, and are impossible to acquire through legitimate channels.

That is one point!"

"Another point is,

when I was hitting Kong Yi, I noticed something off about the emotions of his Summoned Beast.

Normally, as I was beating him, his beast should have become furious.

But I didn't feel any significant emotional turmoil from his beast; it was as if I wasn't beating its master at all."

"Combining these two points, I think there's a serious problem with Unit 003."

Lu Wu had been keeping an eye on Unit 003 since the final competition.

He had sensed something was amiss with them back then. That's why he paid closer attention today and discovered these flaws.

That was also the reason for his performance just now.

Lu Wu felt that such destabilizing factors should be dealt with quickly, wiped clean from the instance-running teams.

However, at this moment, Jiang Yuexing's reaction was entirely unexpected to Lu Wu.

"Where's the evidence?"

"What?"

"You said you have evidence for all of this," where is it?

"It's all on their Summoned Beasts; just capture them and check, and there will definitely be problems found."

"But what if after the investigation, it turns out there are no problems?

Have you considered that outcome?"

Jiang Yuexing didn't give Lu Wu a chance to respond and continued, "The Inheritance Land only opens once a year, and any delay means they lose this opportunity.

This affects them a lot, and it has a big impact on you too.

What if in the end it turns out they are innocent, can you compensate for their loss? Even if you can compensate financially, can you compensate for the loss of their reputation and mine?"

Lu Wu struggled briefly, "I can guarantee they have problems!"

"With what do you guarantee?"

Jiang Yuexing suppressed him with just a sentence.

"Also, even if all of this is true, why do you choose to handle it this way?

I wanted to say this last time at Sea Suppression Tower.

Like before, you have numerous ways to explain it, why go for such an offensive approach?

Is it more fun this way?"

"Do you realize how immature you are in handling matters?!"

At this moment, Lu Wu was bewildered; he didn't know how the discussion had shifted to his maturity.

Yet, he could sense that Rich Woman was not her usual self.

If he acted stubborn now, the consequences would likely be dire, so he didn't dare backtalk and was exceptionally sincere!

Jiang Yuexing wasn't just harshly criticizing for the sake of it.

After a couple more scoldings, she changed her tone to a more earnest one and said to Lu Wu, "You are no longer the person you once were.

Now, you're not just my foster son, but also the most valued person among Zhang Wentao and those at Jiangnan University.

They even consider cultivating you as the next heir.

So, you must shed that frivolous attitude and habits of the past.

You need to be stable and grand; don't be frivolous and sarcastic like someone else!

When faced with issues, you can't rush in recklessly; you need to think thrice before acting. Your brilliant mind should not just be used for studying and researching but also for understanding people and the world."

Lu Wu had not expected such an outcome.

Not only did he fail to eliminate the instability of 003, but he was also caught up in a lesson on philosophy.

Seeing Rich Woman's demeanor, Lu Wu knew within his heart that it didn't look like 003 would be driven away; he had no choice but to lower his head and show he was taking it all in.

Seeing Lu Wu's acquiescence, Jiang Yuexing didn't intend to continue the lecture.

"Okay, let the matter rest here. You can go now. Oh, and about that greeting gift you've been wanting? Take this ring!" she said, taking off a ring from her own finger and tossing it to Lu Wu.

Lu Wu caught the ring and left with a somewhat dejected air.

It wasn't until Lu Wu had left that Bai Yi spoke up.

"He deliberately acted like a profligate just now, probably to take on the responsibility of expelling 003."

"I know," Jiang Yuexing responded indifferently.

Bai Yi added, "That team, 003, really does have problems."

"I know," Jiang Yuexing replied again.

This time Bai Yi was confused, "If you know, then why not expel Team 003?"

From the interaction between Jiang Yuexing and Lu Wu, Bai Yi clearly understood Jiang Yuexing placed great importance on Lu Wu.

If that was the case, it made no sense for her to leave such an unpredictable element like 003 by Lu Wu's side.

Bai Yi suddenly remembered the ring Jiang Yuexing last handed over to Lu Wu—it was meant to protect him; but this only deepened Bai Yi's confusion.

Instead of using the ring to protect Lu Wu, wouldn't it have been simpler to just drive those people away?

"The issue with Team 003 is complex; there's a lot behind the scenes, and many people are watching. I can't just expel them—they'll have to be left alone," Jiang Yuexing elaborated.

Bai Yi pondered for a moment, then pushed up his glasses and said, "Then why not have Lu Wu give up on this round to the Inheritance Land?"

"Why should he give up?" Jiang Yuexing countered.

"This trip to the Inheritance Land could save Lu Wu at least a year or two and tens of thousands of points' worth of expenses.

There might even be gains beyond our imagination. So why should we give up? I'm already giving them enough face by not interfering with them—there's no reason for us to retreat completely.

And naturally, they wouldn't dare to expect me to back down that much, so they'll do their thing, and Lu Wu will do his, each to their own."

But in the Secret Realm, anything could happen—who can be certain?

What if something unfortunate does occur?"

"That's why I gave him the ring!

I've given him all the protection and help I can; if something still happens, it's just bad luck, and I can't be blamed!"

Though Jiang Yuexing said this, she knew well in her heart that Lu Wu wouldn't die.

The ring she provided was a special piece of Equipment, with many functions, one of which was Damage Sharing.

Should Lu Wu suffer a fatal injury, the damage would be transferred to her and shared with her Summoned Beast, ensuring Lu Wu's safety unless she died.

He was after all someone meant to work for her for nothing—how could she let him die so easily?

The reason she insisted on Lu Wu going was because the inclusion of 003 presented both a crisis and an opportunity for him; things that couldn't otherwise be obtained might now be within reach because of 003's presence.

This opportunity could be greatly beneficial for Lu Wu's growth, and the better his growth, the more he could help her in her endeavors.

...

Another long day passed, and for the third consecutive day, he was exhausted!

# Chapter 194: 191 enters the instance

On the journey to the Inheritance Land.

Lu Wu's face was dark, as if the whole world owed him hundreds of thousands of points.

He originally thought it was a sure thing to kick the instability out.

So he acted arrogantly and even resorted to violence.

But after being arrogant and fighting, when the person wasn't kicked out, it became really awkward.

He was a bit worried, could 003 mess with him when they enter the instance later?

Hmm, Lu Wu felt it was very likely, he would definitely do so if he were in their shoes.

So now Lu Wu was hesitant, should he team up with 044 to ensure safety?

While thinking about this, Lu Wu casually gave Dudu the ring that Jiang Yuexing had brought.

This women's ring, it's better suited for the ladies.

Dudu was thrilled to receive a ring from Lu Wu, the first he had ever given her, but then a problem arose.

Now Dudu, at level 140, had chubby fingers, and she tried several times but couldn't put it on.

By now, Lu Wu also realized what was going on.

His rich woman was usually so stingy, why did she think of giving him a welcome gift today?

There definitely was a problem with the ring, so Lu Wu quickly took it back.

Dudu was still trying hard, but Lu Wu without saying another word took the ring back, which made Dudu feel upset, thinking maybe, probably, definitely Lu Wu thought she was too fat.

Meanwhile, Lu Wu's attention was all on the ring.

He was just occupied with being frustrated, but now that he handled it, he realized it was covered in question marks.

"I knew it, the rich woman still loves me!"

Lu Wu felt quite relieved and also became curious about the attributes of the ring.

By then, they still had a few hours' drive to the location of the instance.

Lu Wu, having nothing better to do, opened his phone, accessed the internal network, and began to meticulously study the ring.

His plan was to figure out the ring's attributes this way.

He had done this kind of task before, starting at Li Kai's shop and doing it for two months, becoming quite skilled at it.

Soon, Lu Wu analyzed everything from the pattern to the material and from the material to the style of the ring, but still couldn't figure it out.

Then, Lu Wu had no choice but to use his ultimate skill.

Lu Wu's ultimate skill was, just randomly guessing!

Regarding item attributes, one can actually guess endlessly, theoretically as long as Lu Wu had patience, he could guess any item's attributes.

It's just that before, such no-brainer tasks weren't something Lu Wu would do.

He always preferred to thoroughly understand the knowledge points and figure things out on his own rather than just guessing.

But now, Lu Wu felt that guessing was fine too.

He spent some time pinpointing the ring as the amulet given by the rich woman, and then started guessing.

Soon, he figured out the rough attributes of the ring.

…

Name: Rich Woman's Love (named by Lu Wu)

Quality: ???

Effects: Damage Sharing (suspected), Powerful Protection (suspected), Power of Rich Woman (suspected)

Description: Well, holding this ring, as long as the rich woman is not dead, you probably won't die either.

…

Lu Wu had to admit.

Looking at these attributes, he was genuinely touched.

Especially the "Damage Sharing" feature; the appearance of this feature instantly boosted his affection for the rich woman by 10 points.

It was already at 80, and another 10 points up would almost make things boundless.

After learning about the ring's effects, Lu Wu felt a small comfort.

At least, he didn't have to worry about being discreetly troubled and silently killed by 003 after entering the instance.

Soon after Lu Wu roughly figured out the ring's attributes, their group finally arrived at the location of the Inheritance Land.

Upon reaching the destination, Lu Wu was somewhat baffled; he never expected that the site of the Inheritance Land would be in a shabby hillock near his house.

This left him with a complaint he didn't know how to express.

Since it was so close, there was no need for them to travel!

And with this distance, couldn't the rich woman just fly them over? Why did they have to take a car?

The elder leading them, not minding Lu Wu's gloomy face, simply took out a token, inserted it into a stone stele at the destination, twisted it like using a key on a door.

Then the stone stele opened up.

After putting the token away, the elder addressed Lu Wu and the others.

"The Inheritance Land is inside, just go in! After completing the inheritance, you'll be teleported out."

Is that all?

Lu Wu felt this instance's initiation method was quite simplistic.

It didn't seem strange to Team 003's members; they took the lead, the first to enter.

Then Team 044 also went inside.

Seeing them enter, Lu Wu didn't have much to say and led his team into the stone stele.

Stepping into the stone stele, the world spun around.

When Lu Wu regained his senses, they were already inside the Secret Realm.

At that moment, they were standing at the starting point of the Secret Realm.

In front of them were three pathways: forward, left, and right.

The two teams that had entered earlier, 044 had stayed to greet them, while 003 had quickly left without a word.

"Which way are you heading?" Wang Jun asked.

"Right, what about you?"

Lu Wu pointed to the right; he had mastered the layout of the Secret Realm and had made detailed plans accordingly. This path was the most suitable for them.

"Then we'll take the left!"

Wang Jun waved his hand, ready to lead the 044 squad to the left. At that moment, Lu Wu stretched out his hand to stop him.

"Be careful of 003!"

With that warning, Lu Wu then led his team toward the right.

Wang Jun was stunned for a moment, then shook his head and led his teammates to the left. Added to the team that had previously walked forward, the three squads had thus parted ways at the entrance.

After entering the instance, Lu Wu began to focus on the instance itself.

Since the rich woman had given him that ring, it meant she must have known about 003.

So, there was no need for him to provoke them unnecessarily; as long as they didn't retaliate, he could happily harvest from the altars.

"The altars in the Inheritance Land are divided into several levels. The lowest level altars are guarded by Ordinary level Summoned Beasts. Above them are the Elite, and further up are the Boss levels.

The effects produced by the altars differ depending on the level of the guarding Summoned Beast.

Little Goldfish, Little Skeleton, Tuantuan, and the goblins, needless to say, are definitely up for challenging the Boss level.

As for the three little guys, we'll see. If there's a suitable challenge, we'll go for the Elite level; if not, even the Ordinary one would suffice.

In any case, even if it's just an Ordinary altar, with item sacrifices, there should still be significant gains."

As Lu Wu spoke, his mind was whirling with thoughts.

He had seen the map of the Inheritance Land and, with Lu Wu's memory, seeing was as good as remembering.

As soon as Lu Wu and his team turned right, all the altars along that route appeared in his mind.

"There's one about fifteen meters ahead at the Elite level; let's go check it out."

Lu Wu said and led Dudu and the others off the main path, walking about fifteen meters to the right, where an altar then appeared before them.

It was a five-meter by five-meter black altar, covered with mysterious runes.

As a Cultivation Master, Lu Wu was especially interested in this altar, immediately instructing Little Skeleton to take out the big phone.

"Ordinary phones can't take photos or videos of the altar, not sure if Little Skeleton's can!"

To Lu Wu's surprise, Little Skeleton's phone could indeed capture the altar.

Lu Wu quickly had it photograph the altar, planning to study it closely once they returned.

Lu Wu then identified the attributes of the altar and the Summoned Beast on it.

...

Name: Mysterious Altar

Level: 1

Function: Sacrificial Inheritance

Description: By defeating the Summoned Beast on the altar, the altar can be activated allowing the Summoned Beast to obtain enhancements in power, quality, and skills, with a one in one hundred thousand chance of gaining inheritance.

...

Name: Goblin

Power: Elite 0 Star

Quality: Black Iron

Other: Minimal

...

After reviewing the altar and the properties of the Summoned Beast atop it,

Lu Wu turned and said, "Our luck isn't bad, an Elite 0 Star goblin, weak against magic. Gouzi should be able to handle it, Old Lin, let your Gouzi take it."

Lin Jianying did not hesitate and sent Gouzi up immediately.

Lin Jianying's Gouzi had reached a 2-star level after two weeks of training.

Normally, a 2-star Ordinary level couldn't beat an Elite.

But fortunately, the goblin on the altar wasn't a typical Summoned Beast.

As a guardian of the altar, the goblin lacked the spiritual intelligence a regular goblin would possess, resembling more a puppet.

Gouzi, being a Golden Quality Summoned Beast, stood a good chance against this type of 0-Star, talent-less pseudo-Elite Summoned Beast.

Under Lin Jianying's command, after about five minutes of maneuvering, Gouzi finally overcame the Summoned Beast.

With the goblin defeated, the altar was activated.

Lu Wu, at the same time, threw in a black crystal.

This was the sacrificial item he had prepared for Gouzi, and then Lu Wu recorded the entire process of the sacrificial inheritance using Little Skeleton's phone.

The process was actually quite fast and simple.

The goblin's death caused the patterns on the altar to light up.

Then the goblin's body and the crystal stone were disintegrated, and after that, a column of light enveloped Gouzi.

In less than ten minutes, the column of light disappeared, and Gouzi's attributes underwent an earth-shattering transformation.

Its power leaped from an Ordinary 2-star to an Elite 1-star.

It also awakened two talents, all aspects seeming quite promising.

After Gouzi's sacrifice was completed, it would usually be time for Green Cub or Han, starting with these three before moving on to the bigger tasks.

However, Lu Wu immediately found another Boss-level altar for Lin Jianying to challenge.

Lu Wu felt that there might be danger from 003 here, and while he had the ring to ensure his own safety, his teammates did not, so he planned to let his teammates complete their inheritance first and get them out safely.

# Chapter 195: 192 Light of Inheritance

In the Inheritance Land.

On a Boss Level altar.

The Lin Family's goblin was fighting a Boss 1 Star kobold.

The fight was fierce, but the outcome was largely predictable.

On one side was merely instinctive kobolds.

On the other side was an experienced goblin, directed by Lin Jianying from behind. Victory was only a matter of time.

Indeed, in less than a few minutes, the goblin had won the battle with a clear advantage.

Seeing the goblin's victory, Lu Wu breathed a sigh of relief.

He had been worried about Lin Jianying ever since they entered the Inheritance Land.

After all, ever since that strange man from team 003 had met Lin Jianying in the morning, Lin's condition hadn't been quite right.

This made Lu Wu feel there was some story between Old Lin and that strange man named Kong Yi, and he worried that that fellow might come after Lin Jianying.

That was also why he was so anxious to get Lin Jianying out of there.

However, since they hadn't sent him yet, Lu Wu hadn't completely relaxed.

He threw the sacrificial item prepared for the goblin onto the now-activating altar, but just then, a problem occurred.

The altar, which had been in the process of activation, suddenly dimmed.

"What's going on?"

Lu Wu was shocked and immediately looked towards the altar.

He saw that the state of the altar had changed to 'malfunction'.

"An altar can malfunction? Do you think you're a machine?"

Feeling that something was off, Lu Wu pulled Lin Jianying and found another Elite Level altar nearby.

The goblin entered the stage and easily defeated the Summoned Beast on the altar.

The altar was activated again, but in less than three seconds, the altar dimmed once more, displaying the word 'malfunction' again.

Now, Lu Wu was certain!

It wasn't the altar's problem. More than ninety-nine percent likely it was someone from team 003 who had sabotaged it.

Realizing this, Lu Wu's face darkened.

"Damn it! Looks like they've really targeted us."

At the same time.

On the other side of the Inheritance Land, where team 003 was located, that strange man's lips curved up.

"Don't rush off, there are great benefits waiting for you. What's the rush?

I'll be done here soon and will send the benefits your way!"

Saying so, this strange man led the 003 squad deeper into the Inheritance Land.

Very quickly, this group came to a deeper part of the Inheritance Land in front of an altar that looked very ordinary.

"This should be it!"

The strange man, or Kong Yi, inspected around the altar before striding onto it.

Yes, he walked onto it himself.

The moment he stepped on, the Summoned Beast on the altar immediately attacked him, but before it could get near, its body was directly sliced apart.

Kong Yi didn't give the Summoned Beast another glance as he pulled out a meter-long, thick, broken finger from his bosom.

It was unclear how such a long and thick finger could fit inside his bosom, but that wasn't the point.

The point was that when he took out this finger, the sky of the entire Inheritance Land seemed to dim slightly, and a faint chilly wind began to blow.

The seemingly ordinary altar below him started operating at that instant.

However, unlike other altars.

Other altars showed white lights when activated, but this altar showed a bloody hue.

Other altars would produce columns of light upon activation, but what appeared here was a vaguely discernable gate, and moreover, this gate was bound by golden chains.

As soon as this gate appeared, the finger that Kong Yi had just pulled out began to move.

It trembled continuously, as if it was either excited or terrified.

Kong Yi directly picked up a finger and placed it on the golden chain.

In a moment, the golden chain emitted a brilliant light.

The chain seemed to come alive, exuding a holy aura.

However, as the golden chain brightened, the altar beneath Kong Yi's feet burst forth with a bloody light once more.

In an instant, Kong Yi's finger and the golden chain on the gate disappeared together, and the indescribable gate opened then.

It only opened for a brief moment, opening and closing in an instant, and then it vanished completely.

But that instant was all Kong Yi needed.

In that moment when the gate opened, he had obtained the answer he sought.

However, this answer seemed not to satisfy him.

"It's actually in that place; this is going to be tricky."

At this moment, Kong Yi's brows furrowed.

Simultaneously, in the center of the Inheritance Land, a golden pillar of light shot into the sky.

The sky of the Inheritance Land, which had dimmed because of Kong Yi's finger and the activated altar, brightened amidst this skyscraper-like pillar of light.

This brought Kong Yi's thoughts from the information behind the gate back to reality.

His eyes fixed on the golden light pillar.

If it were Lu Wu, he probably would not know what this golden light pillar was.

But Kong Yi knew.

He knew even clearer what the appearance of this golden light pillar implied.

"Indeed, the current state of this Inheritance Land is due to the presence of that thing.

Now that I have unlocked that thing, the Inheritance Land has returned to its original state.

In that case, those guys will have their opportunity now, and the real trial of inheritance is about to start."

"However, ordinary trials are boring; a life-threatening kind of trial is much more exciting!"

Kong Yi said and threw something into the golden light pillar.

As that object was thrown, the golden light pillar became tinged with a bit of blood.

At the same time, on Lu Wu's end.

When the towering golden light pillar emerged,

Lu Wu sharply noticed the altar in front of them beginning to change.

…

Name: Mysterious Altar

Level: 1

Function: Trial Teleportation

Description: It locks onto the people around it and teleports them into the Inheritance Tower.

PS: The Inheritance Tower is affected by unknown elements, the difficulty of the trials has drastically increased, and failure could lead to death.

…

When Lu Wu saw the attributes of the altar, his expression changed.

He was about to warn Dudu and the others to be careful when the altar in front of them lit up.

A golden light mixed with blood enveloped Lu Wu and his group.

Clearly, they were locked in.

In a moment, Lu Wu's mind raced.

The change in the Inheritance Land was clearly due to Squad 003, and the odd person in 003 Squad was especially looking out for Lin Jianying, so clearly, the most at risk was Lin Jianying.

At this thought, Lu Wu gritted his teeth and immediately removed the ring from his finger.

Then, resolutely, he handed the ring to Dudu!

......

As for Nu Xiao, well, everyone knows that there are always a couple of days every month when the writing is particularly bad; I'll make some adjustments.

Rubbish Nu Xiao, short and limp (I said it for you)

# Chapter 196: 193 Trial Tower (Subscription Requested)

In the Inheritance Land, Lu Wu had just given the ring to Dudu.

The golden light enveloping them began to exert its power.

Then, that feeling of the world spinning they had experienced upon entering the Secret Realm came again, and with a blink, the scene in front of Lu Wu changed.

He found himself in a huge building.

As to what building it was, Lu Wu couldn't tell from the inside.

He looked around the building for a long while and the first words he blurted out were, "Oh crap."

"It's huge, where is this place? Looking at it, it must be a few thousand square meters, right?

Also, Dudu and the others really disappeared."

Before entering, Lu Wu had been worried they would be separated.

Now, it looked like they indeed were.

But fortunately, Lu Wu had given the ring to Dudu, so he didn't need to worry about her encountering any danger.

As for his side and Lin Jianying's side?

Lu Wu felt there shouldn't be much of a problem.

After all, his rich woman had given him the ring, so she definitely knew there were some issues with this Inheritance Land; she wouldn't just protect him and let his teammates hang out to dry.

So, Lu Wu wasn't too worried about his own safety.

"Let's first see what this place is, huh, there seems to be something over there! Let's check it out!"

Looking around, Lu Wu suddenly saw something resembling a stele inside the building.

With bright eyes and carrying a fish in one hand and a bird in the other, he asked Little Skeleton to lead the way.

A man and three beasts arrived in front of that stele.

This large stele was covered with dense characters, at the very top were the words "Trial Tower."

"Trial Tower?"

Lu Wu briefly scanned it and realized this stele was like a manual.

"It says here that this is the challenge instance of Inheritance Land.

After entering the Trial Tower, it will arrange opponents from low to high level, and defeating each opponent yields rewards.

If you can clear it, you get extra rewards. Looking at this, this place doesn't seem dangerous at all?

It looks like a hidden benefit of the Inheritance Land."

Just as Lu Wu was muttering, a spark flew over.

Little Skeleton immediately raised a Bone Shield to block the spark for Lu Wu.

"Yo, the trial starts now?"

Lu Wu looked in the direction the spark had come from and saw a Fire Rat.

Taking another look at the opponent's power, Ordinary 1 Star.

This trial's opening was a bit demeaning, as Lu Wu shook his head and let go of the bird he was holding.

"Silly, I'll leave this opponent to you."

Proud ("Leave it to Silly, Silly is super amazing, even humans can't beat me!")

The silly bird changed its demeanor and confidently strutted towards the small Fire Rat that had suddenly appeared five meters away.

On one side was the fifty-centimeter-tall Silly.

On the other side was the twenty-centimeter-long, five-centimeter-tall Fire Rat.

As the two sides squared up, Silly's spirit soared, it raised its wings and directly slapped the Fire Rat to the ground.

Then it even went up and kicked twice, pinning the poor Fire Rat to the ground before unleashing a barrage of left and right attacks.

Is this a fight? This is a beating, if anything!

Soon, the poor little Fire Rat was beaten into a streak of light.

As the little Fire Rat turned to light, a glow also emerged around Lu Wu's house Silly.

Obviously, this was the reward for a successful trial.

But because the opponent was trash, the reward from the successful trial was also trash.

The light vanished in a second, and when Lu Wu checked the silly creature's attributes, there was no change at all.

Once the light on the silly creature disappeared, the second level started quickly.

This time, it was still Fire Rats, but their power increased to two stars, and the number increased from one to two.

This time, the silly bird was not having it easy.

Although its skills were decent, its actual combat power was not very strong.

It could bully one-star little brothers, but against two stars, it could only fight evenly.

Now, with two two-star opponents appearing at once, the silly bird was immediately suppressed by the two rats.

These two rats were extremely fierce in their attack.

They scratched with seeds and bit with their mouths, occasionally whipping the bird with their tails lit with small flames.

The bird was miserably beaten.

However, the more miserably the bird was bullied, the happier Lu Wu felt it became.

"My eyes, why did I even keep such a bird!" Lu Wu felt that when he had taken in this bird, something must have been blocking his vision, otherwise, he definitely wouldn't have taken in such a bird that didn't match his temperament as his subordinate.

But no matter what, since it was his subordinate, Lu Wu couldn't just watch it get beaten.

So he had no choice but to verbally instruct the silly bird in the fight.

As a professional boss, Lu Wu's level of command was quite good.

Moreover, as the attributes of the two Fire Rats were completely exposed in front of Lu Wu, leaving no secrets, it was clear what the outcome would be when Lu Wu took action.

Quickly under Lu Wu's command, the silly bird defeated the two Fire Rats, making them vanish in a flash of light.

The bird seemed somewhat unhappy.

It seemed that being beaten up brought it more joy than defeating its opponents.

After defeating the two opponents, a reward arrived, and this time the light lasted a bit longer than before, but still did not last three seconds, still terribly short.

However short it was, the effect was still good.

Once bathed in the light, the silly bird's power jumped directly from two stars to three stars, and all the injuries it had suffered in the fight were healed instantly.

Right there, the silly bird expressed that it felt good and could take another beating.

And the Trial Tower quickly fulfilled this request.

Soon, the third wave of summoned creatures arrived.

This time, the opponents were goblins instead of Fire Rats.

Their strength had also increased, from two stars to three stars, and the number increased from two to three.

Lu Wu furrowed his brows watching this change in numbers.

"It feels like the Trial Tower is being a bit unreasonable with the increase in difficulty, increasing the power is one thing, but also increasing the numbers, at this rate, might we next have to fight four summoned beasts of elite-level?"

If it were just four elites, Lu Wu's side could still cope.

But he was worried that if this pattern continued, by the seventh wave he would face seven Boss 1 Stars.

By the ninth wave, Lu Wu would be confronting nine Boss Level 3 Stars.

What was more worrying was that the stone tablet did not specify how many rounds the trial had nor how it should end.

If this thing doesn't stop, they could really be in danger at that time!

"So the so-called danger is here!"

Lu Wu's eyes narrowed.

At this moment, the battle between the silly bird and the three goblins had also begun.

...

Please subscribe,

# Chapter 197: 194 Evolution

Inheritance Land, within the Trial Tower.

By the time Lu Wu's trials had already reached the third round, Lin Jianying's trials had not yet begun.

Or rather, a far more terrifying trial had already begun on his end.

The oddity, Kong Yi, who had just finished his own tasks, now appeared within the Trial Tower.

With particular enthusiasm and familiarity, he greeted Lin Jianying.

"Yo, we meet again!"

He seemed quite happy to see Lin Jianying, but Lin Jianying was not at all pleased to see him.

As soon as Lin Jianying saw him, he immediately assumed a defensive stance.

His goblin had even drawn its sword in the flash of a moment,

A look that said, if you dare come close, I dare to chop you down.

"We've met in the restroom several times, barely acquaintances, don't be so tense."

"What are you always pestering me for, what exactly do you want?

And, is this your doing? What did you do to Lu Wu and the others?"

"You ask a lot of questions, but no matter, I have some time to spare, I'll chat with you."

The oddity said and, out of nowhere, pulled out a lounge chair and placed it on the ground, then conjured up a small tea table and two drinks, handing one of the cups to Lin Jianying.

"Drink?"

Lin Jianying did not accept.

Even less likely would he accept, as every three-year-old knows not to randomly eat things given by strangers.

Let alone under the current circumstances.

So, Lin Jianying firmly refused.

"Look at you, if I really wanted to do something to you, would I need to drug you?"

Kong Yi said, placing the drink on the tea table, before reclining on the lounge chair, sipping his own beverage while answering Lin Jianying's previous questions.

"The place you're in now is called the Trial Tower, the true core of this Inheritance Land.

Under ordinary circumstances, it would not be activated at all. It only activated because I took something away, so from a certain perspective, this is indeed my doing.

However, this should have been a good thing for you all!"

"Should have?"

Kong Yi took another comfortable sip and then said, "Hmm, if I hadn't meddled, it would have been quite a stroke of luck for you.

Passing a few challenges and enhancing your powers a few levels wouldn't have been a problem.

If you were lucky, you might have even passed all the challenges and received the inheritance.

But now, well, it's hard to say, because I accidentally increased the difficulty of the trials.

I've heightened the difficulty to Hell Level.

This time, if none of you manage to pass, all of you might die in here!"

Lin Jianying's complexion changed, and just as he was about to pounce on Kong Yi, he discovered he couldn't move.

"Don't waste your energy, I've passed the Trial Tower elsewhere before and acquired an item that gives me control over the Trial Tower, so here I'm like a semi-staff member; I'm the one calling the shots now."

"Why are you doing this!"

Lin Jianying asked, suppressing his rage.

"Why? Because of you!"

Kong Yi said, suddenly sitting up, smiling at Lin Jianying with an unnerving eagerness: "I find you very interesting."

At this moment, Kong Yi exuded an air of perversity, he continued, "You suit me well, how about following me?"

"Fine!"

Lin Jianying responded without hesitation, decisively cutting to the point.

Yet Kong Yi was not surprised; instead, he looked rather indifferent.

"So decisive?

Are you trying to get me to release Lu Wu and the others?

I don't want you like this!"

Saying so, Kong Yi stood up and walked over to Lin Jianying: "What I want has never been the you that you are now. The you right now has no value to me; there's not a single thing about you that I like.

Every pore of yours exudes an essence that I detest."

"Weak, incompetent, indecisive!"

"And the very very last thing I can't stand is your feelings for Lu Wu—that sort of emotion where it seems like he's your entire life. I can't understand it, and it especially disgusts me.

So, I came up with a fun idea, how about turning you into the person he hates the most, the person he most wants to kill?"

Kong Yi said, waving his hand.

Lin Jianying discovered that the scene before his eyes was changing.

Or rather, he had been granted a kind of god's-eye view.

Within this perspective, he saw all those who had entered the Trial Tower and were in the midst of their challenges.

Lu Wu, Dudu, and the members of teams 044 and 003.

However, with another wave of Kong Yi's hand, the images of the members of 044 and 003 disappeared, leaving only Lu Wu and Dudu.

"The bonds between people are the most fragile of things, the best friendships can sometimes shatter with a single careless word."

"Sowing discord between brothers couldn't be easier, let alone between you and Lu Wu.

For you, he might be your everything, but to him, you're probably just an ordinary friend.

However, that plump girl holds a special place in his heart.

Tell me, what do you think would happen to your relationship if you killed her in front of Lu Wu?"

Kong Yi sat on the recliner, holding a drink in one hand and resting his face in the other, discussing in an exploratory tone.

Lin Jianying's face turned exceedingly pale at that moment.

His body trembled uncontrollably.

Seeing his reaction, Kong Yi smiled, "It seems you've already imagined it, so let's turn that anticipation into reality.

As for the timing, let's do it when he's just cleared the level.

Jiang Yuexing let him in, so she must have given him something to save his life. With Jiang Yuexing's help, him clearing the level should be no problem.

So, we'll strike right when he's feeling the happiest, after he's received his inheritance. What do you think of this plan?"

Lin Jianying, pale-faced, questioned, "We've done nothing to offend you. What do you gain from doing this?"

This question stumped Kong Yi.

"Gain? Does doing such a thing need a reason?

Isn't this sort of thing dependent on personal interest and hobbies? And isn't it quite interesting?

Besides, don't you think this is actually a good thing for you?

Look, you value Lu Wu, yet he treats you like an ordinary team member, a tool for making money.

Unless something unexpected happens, you'll spend your life silently admiring him from behind.

But if you kill this plump girl, the situation changes, doesn't it?

You'll no longer just be a tool to him, and if you continue to grow stronger and kill a few more people he values, like his parents, for example...

wouldn't your relationship fundamentally change?

Becoming lifelong enemies – such an intimate relationship, doesn't that sound good?

Rather than being invisible, you might as well make him hate you for the rest of his life. Don't you think that script is fascinating?"

Listening to these words and looking at Kong Yi, who though discussing something twisted, did so with utmost seriousness, as if talking about a precious and important piece of art, Lin Jianying was completely enveloped by a chilling fear that welled up from his bones.

It also made Lin Jianying realize that the person before him was a complete lunatic.

"Come now, let's enjoy watching Lu Wu tackle the challenge. You should also get into the mood and prepare for your performance later."

Having said that, Kong Yi no longer paid any attention to Lin Jianying and turned his gaze toward Lu Wu.

At this moment, Lu Wu had no idea that Lin Jianying had been targeted by a lunatic.

He was still busy trying to overcome the challenge.

He was at the third level, where three three-star goblins were relentlessly beating Han.

Lu Wu, on the other hand, was trying to figure out how to make Han defeat the goblins.

"Three-star power,

now he has only three skills. The passive skill that gets stronger as he takes hits doesn't need to be mentioned; it just makes him tougher but doesn't increase combat power or defense.

The remaining two are Defense and Dodge, both with high skill levels, mastered in fact, but they're all developed from taking hits and virtually no offensive skills.

With this combat power, it's nearly impossible to rely on him alone to defeat these three goblins!"

After contemplating for a long while, Lu Wu concluded that there was almost no chance for Han to beat the goblins.

And seeing Han's current state, he really was in a pitiful condition.

The few feathers that had grown back during the past two weeks were almost ruined again.

His body was swollen all over.

This was only because the three goblins were using sticks, not swords – if it had been swords, the bird probably would have been chopped into several pieces by now.

"Alright, Little Skeleton, try to see if you can call your junior. If possible, summon the one with the gun to help it out!"

It's not called Little Skeleton, it's Peppa No.1!

Little Skeleton earnestly corrected Lu Wu's mistake. For it, there was only one Little Skeleton, and it wouldn't allow other skeletons to be called by that name.

"Fine, fine, fine, Peppa No.1, call Peppa No.1 over!"

Lu Wu never bothered with such trivial matters; whatever Little Skeleton said, he complied.

But this clearly made Little Skeleton very happy, and it immediately summoned Peppa No.1 who was two heads taller and joined the battlefield.

Peppa No.1 was an Elite Level Summoned Beast.

Elite battling ordinary was a simple task – just one thrust with the spear took out a goblin.

The battle ended quickly.

And as the fight concluded, two beams of light landed on Han and Peppa No.1 simultaneously for about ten seconds before vanishing together.

"Two beams of light appearing and disappearing at the same time suggest that the rewards are probably split evenly based on the number of moves made. Such a method of reward distribution is quite suitable for power-leveling a junior."

Lu Wu first paid attention to the method of reward distribution, then the gains.

This round's rewards were much greater than the second one; normal summoned beasts would have reached Elite Level by now, but Han hadn't.

Consequently, Lu Wu couldn't help but glance at Han's state and noticed that it was charging up.

If nothing unexpected happened, it should evolve in the next round.

"Then let's raise Han first, let him evolve to Elite before anything else."

# Chapter 198: 195 Boss

Inheritance Land, Trial Tower.

The fourth round of the trial quickly began.

As Lu Wu had expected, there were four Summoned Beasts appearing in this wave, all of them Elite 1 Star goblins.

"Little Skeleton, take down Pei Qi No.1 and you go up, and little goldfish, you go up too!"

The reason why Lu Wu had Little Skeleton bring Pei Qi No.1 down was actually quite simple.

One was to experiment to see if Little Skeleton's phone could be used inside the Trial Tower, and the other was to try out the allocation of trial rewards.

Once he saw the results, it was time for Lu Wu to adjust his tactics accordingly.

Current resources were clearly impractical to be evenly distributed for all Summoned Beasts to grow together.

Therefore, Lu Wu planned to initially focus resources on nurturing his three direct subordinates.

Before reaching the Boss Level, he wanted Little Skeleton and the others to advance to Boss Level.

Only if Little Skeleton and little goldfish reached Boss Level would there be hope to tackle Boss Level stages.

At Lu Wu's command, Little Skeleton and little goldfish immediately made their move.

With Little Skeleton and the others taking action, the fourth wave naturally posed no difficulty.

After Han was beaten up first, Little Skeleton and little goldfish joined forces, chopping melons and slicing vegetables, taking them down directly.

As the four goblins fell, three golden rays of light appeared on Little Skeleton and the others.

Rewards from the Elite Level lasted much longer than those from Ordinary Levels.

After a full 30 seconds, Lu Wu had thought this round would finally allow Han to advance.

But Han had yet to evolve, causing Lu Wu's expression to turn somewhat ugly.

"How come these rewards seem a bit weak? At this rate, after completing the Elite Level, would Little Skeleton and the others reach Boss Level?"

Lu Wu felt it was uncertain.

And if Little Skeleton and the others hadn't reached Boss Level before the Boss Level, then tackling those stages would be quite difficult.

"Now, all we can do is hope the coming rewards are a bit more substantial!"

Very quickly, the fifth wave of Summoned Beasts came out.

This time five oxen appeared, five Elite Two Stars Iron Armor Black Bulls.

With these thick-skinned and sturdy Summoned Beasts, the battle lasted a bit longer, and Little Skeleton and little goldfish took some effort to finally take down these five oxen.

As he took down these five oxen, a familiar sensation finally surged in Lu Wu's mind.

On the other side, Han, enveloped in the golden light, began to go through some changes in form.

This made Lu Wu couldn't help but feel slightly teary-eyed, not easy at all, after five rounds, he finally promoted Han to Elite Level.

After more than three minutes.

The golden light faded and Han had completely changed appearance.

Before the golden light, it was only fifty centimeters tall, and didn't have many feathers on its body.

After the golden light, it had grown thirty centimeters out of thin air, reaching an eighty-centimeter height, and no longer was it bare, but grew a coat of ice-blue feathers.

Truth be told, this previously bald and silly bird now looked quite a bit more handsome and beautiful after growing feathers—still, with its simplistic eyes, but as long as you don't look at the eyes, this bird wasn't too bad.

Well, Lu Wu thought that now, aside from everything else, the bird at least seemed a bit more of a match for himself in terms of looks.

Unfortunately, the bird's looks didn't last any longer than Dudu's weight.

There was no need for other Summoned Beasts to hit it, even as Little Skeleton, seeing Han suddenly grow feathers and change appearance, hardly recognized it.

After a good while, he recognized it was Han, and after recognizing it, Little Skeleton felt even worse, feeling quite uncomfortable. So much so, he crazily grabbed hold of Han and plucked quite a bit of its feathers.

In a matter of moments, a patch on the bird was plucked bare.

Um, now that's how it looked good, the once beautiful Han turned ugly again in minutes.

Little Skeleton felt more comfortable now, and Han seemed pretty good about it, while Lu Wu, who witnessed his own beautiful bird being plucked bare, was in a rather bad mood.

He decided not to look at these two fellows anymore, focusing instead on Han's current attributes.

...

Name: Ice Sparrow (One Evolution)

Power: 1 Star (Elite)

Quality: Ordinary (Upgraded) (???)

Attribute: Ice

State: Excited (Han has grown stronger, Han can take harder hits now!)

Weakness: Fire

Special Skill: Unyielding·Growth (Entry-Level)

Basic Skills: Defense (Mastered), Dodge (Mastered), Cold Aura (Entry-Level), Ice Shield (Entry-Level), Ice Needle (Entry-Level)

Advanced Skill: Cold Ice Body (Entry-Level)

Talent: Increase Recovery Speed (Basic) (Passive) (Recover faster to take more hits)

Damage Absorption (Basic) (Passive) (Able to absorb 10 percent of damage for charging)

Active (Upon certain accumulated Damage Absorption, can reflect back to opponent)

Description: Well, it used to be able to fly, too bad Little Skeleton plucked its feathers.

...

"Not bad, a slow build-up with an explosive outcome!"

Lu Wu was quite satisfied with the breakthrough of this bird.

Combat power skyrocketed in an instant.

Its current attributes had improved significantly from when Little Skeleton had just advanced.

Moreover, it had awakened four ice attribute skills in one go, which could be considered quite powerful.

If Lu Wuyi had some time to train it, its combat power could soar significantly.

Unfortunately, there was no time to train it now.

Just as Lu Wuyi had dealt with the fifth wave of Summoned Beasts, the sixth was already on its way.

At this moment, Lu Wuyi hesitated, wondering whether to maintain the current formation or to bring out Little Skeleton and little goldfish, letting one of them fight this wave of Summoned Beasts?

"If little goldfish and Little Skeleton team up, it would naturally be more stable.

But the problem is, after this wave, whether little goldfish and Little Skeleton could both break through to Boss Level—it's hard to say. However, if only one of them fights.

One against six is very difficult, but if successful, it's almost a hundred percent chance to break through to Boss Level."

After a moment of hesitation, Lu Wuyi quickly made a decision and withdrew little goldfish and Han Han.

"Let's leave this fight to Little Skeleton. If it can take them down, great, if not, little goldfish will take over!"

One against six!

And the opponent was six tough Iron Armor Black Bulls.

This fight was no small challenge. Even with Little Skeleton going all out, it was difficult, but now Lu Wuyi had to try.

There was no choice, because after this fight, the seventh battle would be against seven Boss Level Summoned Beasts.

It would be very difficult for Lu Wuyi if he didn't have at least one Boss Level on his side.

So no matter how tough it was, Little Skeleton had to fight this battle and had to win.

"Little Skeleton, it's all up to you now!"

Little Skeleton nodded its head and, holding the Bone Staff, walked towards the six Iron Armor Black Bulls.

With each step Little Skeleton took, the Bone Staff in its hand began to change, with a silvery white light spreading from the bone hand of Little Skeleton.

By the time Little Skeleton reached the six Iron Armor Black Bulls, its Bone Staff had already turned into a state of a Long Spear.

At the same time, lightning began to appear within Little Skeleton's bone frame.

White Bone Silver Spear Lightning Little Skeleton!

Looking at it, Lu Wu's house's Little Skeleton, aside from being a bit short, had quite an impressive aura.

However, the bulls opposite did not think so.

The bulls were in a bad mood; as soon as Little Skeleton approached, their eyes turned red, and they immediately locked on to Little Skeleton.

Six roars rang out simultaneously, and the six black bulls charged at Little Skeleton at the same time.

At this moment, Lu Wuyi felt relieved.

Lucky for them, these six Iron Armor Black Bulls were not from the 044 team. They were just ordinary Iron Armor Black Bulls, and unlike them, they didn't have spiritual attacks; otherwise, just the six roars would have been enough to trouble Little Skeleton.

However, even without spiritual attacks, the six three-star Iron Armor Black Bulls were still terrifying.

The momentum of rushing in a line was utterly impressive.

Lu Wuyi had no doubt that if these six bulls encountered his previous life's tank, they probably could take out an entire company by themselves.

Facing such opponents, Little Skeleton naturally couldn't engage in head-to-head combat.

Standing still with the spear, waiting for the bulls to rush over, Little Skeleton's bone frame flashed with lightning, ready to leap over their heads.

But these bulls weren't pushovers either.

With a lift of their heads.

Light shot out from the bulls' horns, heading straight for Little Skeleton.

This was Iron Armor Black Bull's skill "Iron Horn Shooting."

Lu Wuyi didn't expect the skill he hadn't seen used by the 044 team during the finals to be used in the Trial Tower against Little Skeleton, and there were six of them.

Luckily, Little Skeleton reacted quickly. With a swing of its Long Spear and a flash of electricity, it blocked two of them, and its bone frame twisted to dodge the others.

At the same time, Little Skeleton's bone frame flashed with electricity again, and with a swing of its Long Spear, it smashed onto one of the black bull's heads.

'Zii zii zii'

In an instant, the sound of flesh being scorched by electricity rang out.

But Little Skeleton couldn't pause to check the results, using the recoil from hitting the bull's head to twist its frame and swing itself onto another bull.

Now, White Bone Silver Spear Lightning Little Skeleton had become Black Bull Silver Spear Little Skeleton.

As soon as Little Skeleton landed on the bull, not only did the bull it was sitting on go mad, but the adjacent bulls also went crazy, all charging over, and several bulls collided, actually managing to disintegrate the bull Little Skeleton had just been sitting on into light.

"This reckless?"

Seeing this, Lu Wuyi was delighted and quickly prompted Little Skeleton to repeat the move.

Once again, it jumped onto the back of another bull.

For Little Skeleton, this wasn't very difficult. With a flash of electricity, it effortlessly jumped onto the back of another, and then that bull was struck by the other four.

It wasn't dead, but that didn't matter, as Little Skeleton finished it off, and the bull turned to light as well.

With this start and this tactic, the following became much easier.

Little Skeleton repeatedly used the same strategy.

These bulls had no intelligence, only the instinct to fight; the same trick could ensnare them countless times.

Although it was difficult to kill a bull in one hit, doing it multiple times would always work.

After several rounds, these bulls were sent off one by one by Little Skeleton.

In the end, the last bull left was the one that caused Little Skeleton the most effort.

Though it was tough and thick-skinned, without a worthy opponent and reluctant to use its Big Move, Little Skeleton furiously output for a while before finally taking it down.

And as the last bull turned to light and vanished, Little Skeleton began its breakthrough, and on Lu Wuyi's side, his heart also began to beat…

# Chapter 199: 196 Lu Wu's attribute

Inheritance Land, Trial Tower.

At this moment, Lu Wu was too preoccupied to care about Little Skeleton's situation.

Now, his attention was entirely on himself.

More precisely, it was focused on his vigorously beating heart.

Before today, he hadn't realized his heart could beat this fast—it felt as though it had an engine installed.

And as his heart beat, Lu Wu felt his whole body starting to heat up.

It was incredibly intense!

This was the feedback from advancing to Boss and also a final step in advancing his profession.

Lu Wu had already understood this situation before he came in, so he was mentally prepared and knew how to deal with it.

He decided not to think about anything else and just focused on the sound of his own heartbeat.

Listening to his heartbeat, he quietly waited for the feedback to end.

The feedback didn't take too long.

As the fifth round shined for fifteen minutes on Little Skeleton, Lu Wu's feedback also ended.

His heart rate gradually slowed back to its previous level.

At the same time, Lu Wu felt as if something new had entered his mind.

Before he could ponder it, something even more astonishing happened—Lu Wu realized he could see attributes.

More precisely, he could see his own attributes.

Lu Wu was stunned, but quickly realized that this must be a system upgrade.

Lu Wu didn't ponder it further and instead focused on his own attributes.

…

Name: Lu Wu

Level: Professional Summoner

Summoned Beasts: Little Skeleton (Boss 1 Star), little goldfish (Elite 3 Stars), Han (Elite 1 Star)

Skills: Charging (Unmastered)

Summoner Talent: Unawakened

Description: Although still a combat weakling, at least there's some combat power.

…

"Charging?!"

Looking at his attribute panel, Lu Wu was both shocked and delighted; this result was almost the best possible.

Of all the skills Little Skeleton had, Charging was the most comprehensive and powerful.

It was still Little Skeleton's core skill!

Having mastered it, Lu Wu could run faster even if he couldn't win a fight.

The only disappointment for Lu Wu was not having his Summoner Talent awakened.

But that was also unavoidable; awakening Summoner Talent was a matter of luck, and it would be great even if one in a thousand could awaken their talent.

Lu Wu didn't dwell on this and turned his attention to Little Skeleton to see what changes there were after becoming a Boss.

…

Name: Little Skeleton Mage who likes to wield a large spear (One evolution)

Power: 1 Star (Boss)

Quality: Bronze (Enhanced) (Single)

Attributes: Undead, Thunder, Netherworld Fire

State: Excited (Little Skeleton seems more capable now!)

Skills:

Basic Melee: Charge (Master), Block (Master), Dodge (Master), Heavy Slash (Master)

Basic Magic: Bone Teeth (Master), Bone Shield (Master), Corrosive Hand (Master), Bone Prison (Master), Bone Spear (Master)

Special Skill: Charging (Master)

Advanced Spells: Ghost Fire Skill (Master), Thunder Strike (Master)

Advanced Skills: Thunder Spear (Entry-level)

Talent: Dual-tasking, Magic Enhancement (Intermediate)

???, ???

Weakness: Light

Companion Equipment: Mysterious Bone Staff, Mage Robe, Little Skeleton's phone

Description: Now that it's a Boss, well, you should consider its evolution.

…

There weren't actually many changes in Little Skeleton's advanced attributes.

Its original talent had been upgraded from (Basic) to (Intermediate), and a new skill, Thunder Spear, had been added.

There weren't many other visible changes, but Lu Wu could feel that Little Skeleton's power had indeed been enhanced significantly.

As for how much specifically, it was hard to say, but he would likely know soon as the seventh round of trials had begun.

Inside the Trial Tower, seven figures slowly appeared.

This time, it was seven Dogman.

And among them, one was clearly different from the others, with a quick glance, Lu Wu could see the attributes of these Dogman in front of him.

…

Name: Dogman Warrior (One evolution)

Power: 1 Star (Boss)

Quality: Ordinary (Enhanced)

Attributes: None

State: Slaughter (It has no feelings)

Weakness: Magic

Skills: Block (Master), Dodge (Master), Charge (Master)

Advanced Skill: Cross Slash (Master) (Just an ordinary attacking skill)

Talent: Block Mastery (Intermediate)

Description: Don't underestimate it; you might not even be able to hit it!

Name: Dogman Priest (One-time Evolution)

Power: 1 Star (Boss)

Attribute: Ordinary (Enhanced)

Attribute: Fire

State: Slaughter (It has no feelings either)

Weakness: Melee

Skills: Encourage (Master), Recovery (Master), Acceleration (Master), Fireball (Master), Chained Fireball (Master)

Advanced Spells: Sea of Fire (Master)

Advanced Skill: Dogman Dance (Master) (The Dogman Priest's dance, don't let it start dancing, or you'll have to face six frenzied Dogman Warriors)

Description: A support-type summoned beast. If you don't pay enough attention to it, it will let you know what trouble means!

"Little Skeleton, let's bring out all the pigs from your house!"

At this moment, Lu Wu had to let the pigs from Little Skeleton's house take the stage.

He could no longer concentrate resources.

Concentrating resources further would make it difficult for Little Skeleton to fight one against nine later.

After all, not all opponents were like those buffalos, so Lu Wu had to deploy all his summoned beasts, letting them utilize this batch of resources.

They needed to enhance their combat power to be more helpful in the upcoming battles.

Upon Lu Wu's command,

Little Skeleton released three pigs from its house.

Now, on one side there were seven Dogmen, and on the other, three pigs, two Little Skeletons, a fish, and a bird, also making up a total of seven summoned beasts.

Even though only Little Skeleton was at the Boss 1 Star level on Lu Wu's side, at least, his lineup was imposing enough not to lose face.

As Lu Wu's summoned beasts were set up, he instantly planned their tactics.

He found it relatively easy to deal with these summoned beasts that had no intelligence but only instincts.

"Do you understand?"

After giving detailed instructions, Lu Wu asked.

In front of him, Little Skeleton and the little goldfish nodded fervently.

These two understood, while silly Peppa beside them also nodded without understanding, just mimicking them out of excitement, although Lu Wu didn't expect much from Peppa.

It was merely there to leech experience.

"Understood? Then, off you go!"

Following Lu Wu's command, Little Skeleton shook hands with a long spear, flipping onto a pig.

Pei Qi No. 1 also found a pig to sit on.

Lu Wu had always planned to train Pei Qi No. 1 into a Skeleton Knight, including pig riding in its daily training,

So it looked rather practiced as it mounted the pig.

With both Little Skeletons riding pigs, upon Lu Wu's order, electrical light flashed on Little Skeleton's frame, and one pig took the lead, charging towards the group of Dogmen!

The moment Little Skeleton moved, the battle instantly began.

Six Dogman Warriors lined up in a row, the first two raising their hands to deliver a "Cross Slash"!

Their worn longswords swung out in a cross shape aimed directly at Little Skeleton.

Little Skeleton was multitasking.

It instantly concentrated two bone shields in front of the blades, which were shattered upon impact, but Little Skeleton didn't care and, with a flicker of electricity on its frame, swept its silvery white long spear.

Electrical energy surged.

Relying on the charge of the pig beneath, the resistance of its long spear, and the boost from the electrical charge, Little Skeleton smashed the two blades,

But scarcely had it caught its breath when two more blades approached, alarmingly close.

At that moment, the Iron Bone Wild Boar beneath Little Skeleton initiated "Iron Bone Form," maximizing its defense and using its frame to block the two incoming blades.

Blocking Boss-Level attacks was not so simple, after all.

The two hits landed on the boar nearly shattered its skeletal frame.

Luckily it was undead, or else that would have been the end for this pig.

But the damage it suffered wasn't in vain; as the pig was hit, Little Skeleton used the rebound to jump further towards the Dogmen.

This leap brought Little Skeleton within three meters of the Dogmen.

At this range, the Dogmen ceased using Cross Slash and charged forward with their swords, three of them quickly surrounding Little Skeleton.

Before being encircled, Little Skeleton drew a little goldfish from its bosom, tossing it towards the Dogman Priest, then abandoned it.

Hands gripping the spear, power intensified, causing the spear to crackle with electricity before violently stabbing into the ground.

Electricity spread across the ground, shocking the three Dogman Warriors and stiffening their movements, seizing the moment, Little Skeleton thrust its spear, piercing the throat of one Dogman Warrior.

Just when Little Skeleton was about to reap the remaining two, a strange and loud singing echoed, clearly the spell of the Dogman Priest.

Simultaneously, the Dogmen in front of Little Skeleton, previously paralyzed by the electric shock, suddenly recuperated and with increased strength, slashed at Little Skeleton.

Though Little Skeleton reacted quickly and raised its spear in defense, it was still pushed back several meters by the two Dogmen.

At the same time, on the other side with the little goldfish,

After being thrown by Little Skeleton, it utilized its small size and, while the Dogman Warriors' attention was on Little Skeleton, breached their defenses.

Then it leaped up, tail whipping directly at the face of the Dogman Priest.

Busy casting "Encourage" to lift the negative states of its companions and buffing them, the Dogman Priest was completely unaware of such a small creature.

It was struck squarely by the tail of the little goldfish.

With that tail whip, the little goldfish fully unleashed the power of the Master level advanced skill "Slap Lu Wu," blowing up the Dogman Priest's head.

It was only at this scene that Lu Wu realized how violent his little goldfish's skill was, and how much his fish loved him.

# Chapter 200: 197 Little Goldfish Breakthrough

Inheritance Land, Trial Tower.

As the Dogman Priest's head burst from a slap, the balance of the battle began to tilt towards Lu Wu.

The two Dogman Warriors, who were as aggressive as if they were injected with chicken blood, had their momentum plummet instantly.

Little Skeleton seized the opportunity, energy erupted once more, and straight away stabbed out with the newly acquired Skill "Thunder Spear".

"Thunder Spear" was a close-ranged, single-target Skill.

The Skill was designed for high burst damage, with highly condensed thunder energy and extreme speed and destructive power.

The Dogman Warrior that it targeted could only manage to lift its longsword before it could block, it was pierced through the skull by Little Skeleton's spear and turned to light.

However, this gave the other Dogman Warrior a chance, who lunged at him with its longsword, slashing down at Little Skeleton's head.

The head was Little Skeleton's Weakness.

While other hits might not bother Little Skeleton much, a strike to the head could potentially be fatal.

Luckily, Little Skeleton was no ordinary Summoned Beast.

As the Dogman Warrior's sword came slashing down, Pei Qi No. 1, riding the Iron Bone Wild Boar, charged over and unleashed the long-awaited advanced Skill "Heart Piercing Shot".

With the Skill from the Advanced Level, augmented by the Iron Bone Wild Boar's charge, the two forces combined managed to impale the Dogman Warrior, breaking the encirclement around Little Skeleton.

Little Skeleton then took the opportunity, raising his hand and stabbing the spear into the Dogman Warrior's head, taking him out.

Thus, of the wave of seven Summoned Beasts, four had perished, and the remaining three were all in pursuit of the little goldfish that killed the Dogman Priest with a tail swipe.

At this moment, Little Skeleton switched from close to long-range combat, utilizing the Dual-tasking Talent again, conjuring two Bone Spears to shoot at the Dogman Warriors.

This was also the first time Little Skeleton used Spell after reaching the Boss Level.

But the results were hardly satisfactory.

The Dogman Warrior that it targeted immediately turned its head, slashing the first Bone Spear out of the air. Although the second one followed closely, it was also blocked by the Dogman Warrior.

However, while it was blocking the Bone Spears, the little goldfish somehow got behind it. With another tail slap, it exploded the Dogman Warrior's head.

The final two Dogman Warriors didn't stand a chance and were easily taken down by the coalition of seven Summoned Beasts on Little Skeleton's side.

As the last Dogman Warrior vanished into light, the reward phase arrived on schedule, with seven streams of light shining brightly.

As the light appeared, Lu Wu's heart began to pound violently again.

He had just experienced this once, and now he felt more prepared, although such things seemed to have nothing to do with experience—it was all about luck.

About twenty minutes later.

The rewards ended, and so did the feedback on Lu Wu's side.

The second wave of feedback made Lu Wu feel even stronger, and he vaguely sensed an extra surge of strength in his stamina.

Besides, Lu Wu opened his attribute panel to take a look.

He still hadn't awakened the Summoner Talent, and the random Skill he received was somewhat amusing to him.

It was the little goldfish's Master Level Skill "Slap Lu Wu".

"Seriously, this one?"

Well, as Skills go, it was quite powerful and formidable; it was just the name that bothered him.

But then Lu Wu thought, as long as he didn't mention it, who would know his Skill was named "Slap Lu Wu"?

With this in mind, Lu Wu felt much better, and turned his attention to the little goldfish.

...

Name: Golden Little Carp (One Evolution)

Power: 1 Star (Boss)

Quality: ??? (Told you not to ask)

Attribute: Water

State: Frustrated (It's hard to go out without my subordinates, the little goldfish isn't as formidable anymore)

Weakness: None

Basic Skills: Tail Slapping (Master) Glowing (Master) Lighting (Master) Water Transformation (Master)...

Advanced Skills: A Mouthful of Salted Soda (Master) Slap Lu Wu (Master)

Advanced Spells: Flood (Master) (Able to create a short-lived artificial sea)

Talent: Child of the Sea, Commander of the Water Clan

Magic Power Enhancement (Intermediate) Water Magic Power Enhancement (Intermediate)

???, ???

Description: Clearly, it has another cheat.

...

Lu Wu stared at the "Flood" Skill on the little goldfish's attribute panel for a good while.

"Isn't this cheat a bit too outrageous?"

Suddenly, Lu Wu felt that this Trial seemed to pose little challenge to him anymore.

In high spirits,

Lu Wu casually looked over the gains of the other Summoned Beasts.

Little Skeleton was still at Boss 1 Star, and its underling, the boar that had nearly been split in two, had recovered. All his underlings had leveled up by one, reaching the peak standard of Elite 3 Stars.

Even the silly one, Han, had leveled up two ranks to Elite 3 Stars.

"If nothing unexpected happens, one more wave and all of my Summoned Beasts will become Bosses!"

Just as Lu Wu said this, the eighth round of the trial began.

Just like before.

The Summoned Beasts in the eighth round were Boss 2 Stars, with eight of them, and just like the previous round, they were all Dogmen.

This time there were six Dogman Warriors and two Dogman Priests.

Their attributes seemed stronger than before, but facing this group, Lu Wu appeared even more relaxed.

Because he clearly knew that this round would be easier to resolve than the seventh.

Meanwhile, on the other side of the Trial Tower.

Kong Yi lay comfortably on a lounge chair, sipping a drink and watching Lu Wu's situation while casually chatting with Lin Jianying, sentence by sentence.

"Don't underestimate your childhood friend; he's got something special. I thought he wouldn't survive the Boss level,

that he'd need something to save his own life, but he got through it so easily and even added a Boss Level Summoned Beast to his command. Impressive!"

Lin Jianying ignored him, his entire being listless.

That made Kong Yi uncomfortable, offering consolation: "Don't be like that. What's the big deal about planning to kill someone? Why so down?

Young man, you shouldn't have this kind of attitude toward life. You need to be brave and strong, or else you'll inevitably collapse one day."

Just listen to that.

The words were inspiring, the tone gentle, like a life coach giving a lesson.

Unfortunately, this person wasn't a life coach but a neurotic psychopath.

Seeing no change in Lin Jianying's emotions, Kong Yi got up and whispered in his ear: "Think about your parents, think about Lu Wu who is about to lose Dudu, think about the Dudu you're going to abuse, and then think about the endless dark life you're about to face?

Who brought all this to you? Don't you want to take revenge on me? Don't you want to kill me?

Do you want to watch the person who manipulatively controls your life live well?

I think you definitely don't want that, right?

So, pull yourself together, live on with boundless hatred for me, grow at all costs.

Until one day you are strong enough, strong enough to stand before me."

Saying this, Kong Yi paused and then smiled, "And then, let me slap you to death!"

"I'm going to kill you!"

Lin Jianying's eyes were bloodshot, his expression ferocious.

"I swear, if you don't kill me now, I will definitely kill you!

Even if I can't kill you myself, I'll tell Lu Wu exactly what happened here. When Lu Wu finds out who harmed Dudu, he will kill you too!"

Next to him, the goblin was even burning with blood-colored flames.

Unfortunately, in front of Kong Yi, they were like two adorable little white rabbits.

The more they behaved like this, the happier Kong Yi became.

"Very good, that's the spirit, it's this kind of attitude that makes you likable.

I really like your murderous intent, but I don't like what you're saying.

Relying on Lu Wu? Why rely on him? Can't you do it yourself?

Do you think you're a failure, that you don't have the potential to kill me?

It seems I need to give you a little confidence to kill me."

Kong Yi said this and took out two drops of blood red as gems from his bosom and effortlessly pierced Lin Jianying and the goblin's chests with his finger. He then injected the two drops directly into their hearts.

With this infusion, Lin Jianying and the goblin were enveloped by a blood-colored light, their hearts beginning to beat violently.

Their aura also changed with the beating of their hearts.

In less than a few minutes, the goblin broke through from Elite 3 Stars to Boss 1 Star, and Lin Jianying became Professional Level.

But now, their eyes were stained red with blood, looking terribly scary.

Lin Jianying could feel his heart beating violently, his head dizzy.

A nameless rage was burning in his heart.

He felt he couldn't control his own thoughts, filled with the desire for havoc and destruction.

This frightened Lin Jianying immensely.

"What... what did you do to me..."

"What did I do? Hmm, I unleashed the beast within you, gave you the capital to become stronger, and incidentally prepared for what's to come.

After all, misunderstandings make for more dramatic storylines, and drama makes for captivating stories, don't they?

So I need to eliminate any chance you have to clarify misunderstandings.

Enjoy the feeling of the beast's roar; I should be coming over to watch the play.

Eight Boss 2 Stars versus two Boss 1 Stars, plus five Elite 3 Star Summoned Beasts, this should be an exciting battle, a battle I couldn't possibly..."

As he was saying this, Kong Yi was stunned, looking at Lu Wu's situation in disbelief: "What's going on? The battle is over?

They won? How is that possible?

How much time has passed? Did Lu Wu use something to save his life?"

Kong Yi was bewildered, and on Lu Wu's side, all of the Summoned Beasts were enveloped in a golden light.

Lu Wu's heart beat violently again as the third feedback from becoming a Boss began, and this time, he had a slightly different feeling...

# Chapter 201: 198 Unlucky Kong Yi

Lu Wu finished the eighth round even faster than the seventh.

The main reason was that the eighth round ran right into the line of fire.

Just as the little goldfish broke through, it gained a new Skill, and they all ran straight into it.

The little goldfish charged forward and used "Flood" to create a temporary false ocean that could only last three minutes.

This Skill would be useless to others, but for the little goldfish, it was incredibly effective.

Once this false ocean appeared, the little goldfish's "Child of the Sea" Talent was triggered, and its Power was directly upgraded from Boss 1 Star to Leader One Star.

Although it could only maintain this state for three minutes, that was actually not a short time—it was enough for some people to take care of several things.

The little goldfish took less than two minutes.

While Kong Yi was still tirelessly wrecking havoc, Lu Wu had already settled the battle and was enjoying his rewards.

The reward from the eighth round directly promoted Little Skeleton and the little goldfish to Boss 2 Star, which was an even faster upgrade than when they were at Ordinary Level.

Han was also brought up to Boss Level along the way.

And with Han's breakthrough, Lu Wu also welcomed his third Boss feedback.

This time the feedback was a bit different: the beating of his heart slowed down, but the whole heart felt as if it were peeled open and reconstructed, which was unbearably painful.

This type of pain was something Lu Wu had never experienced before; he almost died from the agony.

But once he endured it, he actually felt somewhat comfortable.

"This situation? No way, right?"

Lu Wu had an ominous premonition and immediately opened his attribute panel.

He found the Skill "Unyielding·Growth" lying blatantly in his Skill column.

"Did they really feed back this Skill to me?"

Lu Wu was especially speechless, "Why give me this kind of Skill, I'm not a masochist!

This Skill is useless to me!"

This Skill would only take effect if he got hit, but was Lu Wu the kind of person who would let himself take a beating?

Of course not, impossible!

Besides, there was no need for him to take a beating, right?

He is a Summoner, as long as his minions grew stronger, his Power would increase!

So this lousy Skill was utterly useless to him, wasn't it?

But since the Skill was already acquired, he had no way of returning it and just had to accept it.

Lu Wu was feeling down.

On the other hand, Kong Yi wasn't in a good mood either.

He didn't expect that in just a moment of distraction, Lu Wu would have completed the eighth Trial.

How long was his moment of distraction?

Under five minutes in total, okay?

How did Lu Wu manage to take down 8 Boss 2 Star Summoned Beasts with just two Boss 1 Star Summoned Beasts in such a short time?

Kong Yi could think of only one possibility, which was that Lu Wu had utilized some life-saving item.

Of course, it might not be the case—it could be that Lu Wu's Summoned Beasts were just extraordinary.

But he couldn't take that bet.

What if Lu Wu really did use a life-saving item?

If he did use a life-saving item, then it's very likely that Jiang Yuexing, who was behind Lu Wu, was already aware of the situation here. If that were the case, the next act wouldn't play out well.

This won't do!

"It seems I have to speed things up a little and push our play ahead of schedule."

After a moment of hesitation, Kong Yi made up his mind.

"Wait for me, I will go bring that chubby girl over right now."

He was preparing to start this drama right now.

As he spoke, Kong Yi gestured with his hand, and a Gate appeared. He pushed the gate open and walked through.

On the other side of the door was still the Trial Tower.

Hmm, this Trial Tower was a special item; it could allocate individual, isolated spaces to different people.

And where Kong Yi had arrived was the space occupied by Dudu.

His timing was excellent; as soon Jake arrived, Tuantuan had just taken down the last Elite 2 Star Summoned Beast.

Two beams of Gold Light descended and Tuantuan, along with Green Cub, advanced.

Being carried by Tuantuan up till now, Green Cub directly reached Elite 3 Stars, and Tuantuan broke through to Boss Level amidst the Gold Light, while Dudu was promoted to Professional Level at the same moment.

"Oh, you broke through, huh?"

Kong Yi's strange voice suddenly rang out, startling Dudu, who was in the midst of her breakthrough.

When she turned her head and saw the person speaking, her face turned pale.

"It's that weirdo from 003, Lu Wu!"

Faced with danger, Dudu's first thought was to find Lu Wu.

And when she remembered that Lu Wu wasn't with her, Dudu could only pin her hopes on her family's pig.

Scuttling over to the pig, she hid her 170 cm tall, roughly 140-pound body behind the two fist-sized Tuantuan, and threatened in a lacking confidence,

"Don't come any closer, our Tuantuan is super powerful, if you come over I'll have our Tuantuan smash you to death!"

Just at that moment, Tuantuan had finished advancing. Hearing this, it snorted twice, looking at the strange person in front of it.

This effectively meant "I am very powerful, if you dare to come over, I dare to smash you to death!"

But the other party wasn't the least bit afraid of this kind of threat that lacked any deterrent power.

"Oh, really? That powerful, huh? Come on then, let it run me over and kill me!"

The guy said this while walking towards Dudu.

This scared Dudu out of her wits, almost to the point of crying.

"Tuantuan, quickly run him over!"

It was all up to Tuantuan now!

At Dudu's command, Tuantuan instantly grew into a giant and lunged towards the human in front of him.

Kong Yi was amused by this scene.

"What's this? Talking tough while looking so weak? Interesting. But thinking you can squash me with that pig is going to be tough!"

Kong Yi said and just stretched out his hand.

By this time, Tuantuan had charged right up to him.

The "Gravity" and "Cute Pig Trample" skills, both advanced, came crashing down together, and Tuantuan's combat power skyrocketed after reaching the Boss Level.

The combined force of the two skills was terrifyingly formidable.

Little Skeleton might have had trouble dealing with this, but before Kong Yi, it all seemed like a gentle breeze, easily dissipated.

The originally giant pig was slapped back into its original form by his hand.

After effortlessly dealing with Tuantuan, Kong Yi continued smiling as he walked towards Dudu.

"So, your pig can't protect you? What now? Are you relying on the green furball in your arms?"

"You, you, don't come any closer, or I'll kill you; I'm really powerful right now, I can feel that I'm powerful!"

Dudu clenched her small, pale, chubby fists, continuing to intimidate the other party.

But she was nearly crying herself, and the other party still didn't budge an inch, continuing to approach Dudu.

This terrified Dudu all the more.

Subconsciously, she used the power she had just received.

"I told you not to come any closer, can't you hear me?!"

With urgent, angry emotions, Dudu swung a fist at Kong Yi. As her fist moved through the air, Dudu's hand suddenly swelled to more than ten times its size, turning into a huge arm that smashed down on Kong Yi.

Seeing this unfold, Kong Yi laughed.

"You're able to use it just after gaining feedback; that talent of yours isn't bad, but could you please use your brain for a moment?

Your strength comes from the feedback of your pig, and you won't be able to bother me with its Boss Level combat power. You, barely having received any feedback and unlikely to even reach Elite Level combat power, can't even hurt me if I stand still and... oh, damn!"

Kong Yi had barely gotten halfway through his sentence when his expression changed dramatically.

Because, at that moment, he sensed a terrifying power burst forth from Dudu.

This power originated from the ring Lu Wu had given to Dudu, one of several functions known as the "Power of Rich Woman."

Although the so-called "Power of Rich Woman" had been named nonsensically by Lu Wu, its effect was pretty much as he described — to borrow the strength of the rich woman in times of crisis and attack.

"How could Jiang Yue Xing's power burst forth from her?"

While Kong Yi was dumbfounded, he rapidly mobilized his power, attempting to defend against Dudu's punch.

But because he'd been boasting before, his reaction was a beat too slow. Though he managed to muster a defense before the punch landed, it was too hurried and was instantly shattered by the hit.

And that wasn't even the worst of it. Dudu was still in that state.

She was scared to death, so she hit with a ferocity that seemed unstoppable, not caring about anything else and punched after punch hammered into Kong Yi.

Kong Yi blocked the first but not the second punch and was blown away, even spouting blood from the impact.

"Damn!"

Kong Yi, injured and with an ashen face, knew he stood no chance against Dudu, so without another word, he turned and retreated back to the space where Lin Jianying had been.

And after escaping back to Lin Jianying's side, Kong Yi grew more and more furious.

He had never expected that he would overlook one thing: that Lu Wu had given Dudu the power to protect herself.

This led not only to his injury but also to the ruination of his original plan, and he ended up offending Jiang Yue Xing as well.

"Since I've already offended her, I might as well do so thoroughly."

Saying this, Kong Yi grabbed Lin Jianying.

"I had originally wanted you to massacre the fat girl, but given the unforeseen circumstances, I'll have to change the game plan. Just wait, I am going to capture Lu Wu and let you torture him!"

Having said that, Kong Yi opened another gate and walked through it.

This time, it was Lu Wu's space.

Because he had been hurt once already, he wasn't in the mood for any chitchat this time. He entered the space and made a beeline for Lu Wu without a word.

He was so fast.

Lu Wu didn't even see what it was.

He just saw something zoom past him and then disappear in an instant.

"What's going on? Did a big black rat just fly past?"

Lu Wu was utterly bewildered and had no idea what had happened.

Meanwhile, back in Lin Jianying's space, Kong Yi, who had barely escaped from Lu Wu's place, clutched at his neck, his mind filled with the image of the ethereal figure that had just appeared.

His face showed fear, and he was at a loss for words.

Only at that moment did he realize the kind of existence he had provoked and intended to manipulate like a chess piece, or rather, how powerful their backing really was.

At that moment, even this perverted character felt some regret.

But it was too late; he couldn't go back. His throat was slit, the chilling power spread through his entire body, and he was not going to survive.

In his refusal to die so easily!

He absolutely refused to go down like this!

So, in the moments before his death, he fixed his gaze on Lin Jianying. Then his body turned to ash, but a blood-colored light flashed and entered Lin Jianying's body.

# Chapter 202: 199 Final Trial

Fucheng, inside the Governor Mansion.

Jiang Yuexing's brows furrowed suddenly.

Obviously, she had noticed that her ring had been triggered, and Jiang Yuexing became angry on the spot!

"What audacity!"

She had given the ring to Lu Wu only to ensure his safety; she hadn't expected it to actually come into use.

"He's in such a situation and still has the nerve to provoke me; it seems he no longer wishes to live!"

Jiang Yuexing spoke, making contact with the ring immediately.

However, once she made contact, Jiang Yuexing was somewhat stunned.

At this moment, it wasn't Lu Wu holding the ring but Dudu.

Jiang Yuexing quickly reacted and asked the first thing, "How did this ring end up in your hands?"

Dudu, puzzled, looked at Jiang Yuexing's phantasm suddenly emerging from her own pocket, instinctively covering her pockets with both hands, looking defensive, "Lu Wu gave it to me! The ring is mine!"

That defensive little look was clearly fearing that Jiang Yuexing might snatch her ring.

Jiang Yuexing didn't have the time to care about this, "What just happened?"

Dudu responded, "A weird person from 003 came over, and I beat him off!"

Clearly, the girl hadn't realized where the power to drive Kong Yi away had come from.

Jiang Yuexing wanted to ask, but before she could, she sensed a change in her surroundings.

Over at the Trial Tower.

Due to Kong Yi's death, the control of the Trial Tower reverted to its own program, which started inspecting the tower's internals.

"Scanning: 8 trial members inside the Trial Tower. One member has passed through the eighth level of Hell difficulty. The final trial begins!"

"The Trial Tower's final trial starts, commencing a scan for excessive unauthorized power within the tower. Unauthorized power identified and being expelled."

As these two voices spoke, a force acted upon Jiang Yuexing's ring, immediately expelling her consciousness.

Additionally, another force lingered around Lu Wu.

After a few rounds, finding nothing, the force dissipated.

"What's going on?"

Inside the Governor Mansion!

Jiang Yuexing, whose consciousness had just been expelled, suddenly opened her eyes wide.

Somewhat astonished.

Immediately, she sprang into action, heading towards the Inheritance Land.

At the same time, some people who had been keeping an eye on the area after team 003 had entered the Inheritance Land moved from the shadows into the open.

Because by this time, they too had noticed something was wrong.

Kong Yi's presence seemed to have vanished.

When Jiang Yuexing arrived at the entrance of the Inheritance Land, there was already a middle-aged man present.

Seeing Jiang Yuexing approaching, he immediately greeted her.

"Salute to Jiang…"

Before he could finish, a surge of authority pressed down on him, almost forcing the middle-aged man to kneel.

"You better pray my people are unharmed. Otherwise, you and your backers better wash your necks and prepare to die!"

After speaking, Jiang Yuexing ignored the middle-aged man, visibly still enraged.

At this moment, the middle-aged man didn't dare to provoke Jiang Yuexing.

Although Jiang Yuexing's words seemed as deterring as Dudu's clenched fists to him, and though Jiang Yuexing was powerful, she wasn't capable of impacting the forces behind him.

But anyone with eyes could see this elderly lady was not in a good mood now, and provoking an old lady was not wise. If something happened to him, his backers weren't likely to go to war with Jiang Yuexing.

So he stood quietly to the side, patiently waiting for the trial in the Inheritance Land to conclude.

Meanwhile, he silently prayed that the madman Kong Yi hadn't touched Jiang Yuexing's people, as otherwise, controlling the situation afterward would be difficult.

"No, if something really happens and I can't cover it, better find someone."

As he thought this, the middle-aged man quietly contacted someone from their power to come over.

At the same time.

Inside the Trial Tower at the Inheritance Land.

Lu Wu was still puzzled, wondering if a giant black rat had just run past him, when he noticed the Trial Tower seemed to be undergoing a change.

A new spiraling staircase leading upwards appeared in his Trial Tower, seemingly suggesting he should ascend.

"Pei Qi No. 1, go up and check."

Lu Wu looked around, then sent Little Skeleton's underling to scout ahead.

But though he called, Little Skeleton's underling did not budge.

Turning back, Lu Wu saw the fellow twisting his skull, displaying a dismissive attitude.

Clearly indicating to Lu Wu, 'I only listen to my own boss's boss!'

"Are you going or not? If you don't, I'll stew you into soup and feed you to Tuantuan!"

Lu Wu, tossing the threat, saw Pei Qi No. 1 immediately spring into action, gripping a long spear, and briskly made his way up the stairs at impressive speed.

Lu Wu, meanwhile, also took the opportunity to check on the suddenly arrogant and spirited attributes of Pei Qi No. 1.

…

Name: Skeleton Gun Warrior (Pei Qi No.1) (First Evolution)

Power: 1 star (Boss) (Incapable of improvement)

Quality: Bronze (Upgrade)

Attribute: Undead

State: From the Heart (I'm not afraid of being stewed, I just listen to the boss's boss)

Weakness: Light, Fire, Thunder

Basic Skills: Thrust (Master), Sprint (Master), Riding (Master)

Advanced Skill: Heart Piercing Shot (Master)

Talent: Gun Mastery (Intermediate)

Companion Equipment: Bone Spear (Bronze)

Description: Became a bit smarter since becoming a boss, but due to no further evolutions, its power limit has been locked, unable to further bring an increase in power.

...

After seeing the attributes of Pei Qi No. 1, Lu Wu was taken aback and quickly checked the attributes of the three pigs and Han.

...

Name: Iron Bone Wild Boar (First Evolution)

Power: 1 star (Boss) (Cannot be increased)

Quality: Bronze (Upgraded)

Attribute: Undead, Skeleton

State: Anticipatory (Really wants to be ridden by the boss)

Weakness: Light, Fire

Basic Skills: Wild Boar Charge (Master), Bone Shot (Master)

Advanced Skill: Iron Bone State (Master)

Talent: Physical Defense Enhancement (Intermediate)

Description: You should think about evolving the boar.

...

Name: Ice Sparrow (First Evolution)

Power: 1 star (Boss)

Quality: Black Iron (Upgraded) ???

Attribute: Ice

State: Excited (Going to be hit again? Really going to be hit again?)

Special Skill: Unyielding·Growth (Entry-level)

Basic Skills: Defense (Master), Dodge (Master), Cold Aura (Master), Ice Shield (Master), Ice Needle (Master)

Advanced Skill: Cold Ice Body (Master)

Talent: Enhanced Recovery Speed (Intermediate)

Damage Absorption (Intermediate)

Description: It doesn't really have the trouble of increasing its power. Just hit it, the harder you hit, the faster it improves.

Maybe it will evolve while being hit.

...

Lu Wu then checked Little Skeleton and Little Goldfish's attributes.

After the eighth round, both had reached Boss Level 2 Star. Little Goldfish's attributes hadn't changed much, and there were no evolution requirements, but Little Skeleton's situation was similar to its lesser brethren.

His power limit was stuck at 2 stars, and after reaching Boss 2 Star, Little Skeleton couldn't improve further without evolving.

However, Lu Wu wasn't too disappointed about this.

After all, this trip to the Inheritance Land had already saved him a great deal of effort and time.

If it hadn't been for this journey to the Inheritance Land, it would have taken Lu Wu at least a year to elevate his Summoned Beasts to this level.

Moreover, it would have required a significant amount of resources.

"Looking at this, there are more challenges ahead, and with some luck, maybe Little Skeleton and the others could complete their evolution within the Trial Tower.

If Little Skeleton manages a second evolution, that would make competing for the position of team leader at Jiangnan University much easier when the semester starts."

With this thought,

after confirming with Pei Qi No. 1 above that there were no issues, Lu Wu and his group stepped onto the staircase to the next level.

"This round should be the ninth, if nothing unexpected happens, and this time we should be facing 9 Boss Level 3 Star Summoned Beasts.

If we can handle these 9 Boss 3 Star creatures, I wonder if that would allow Little Skeleton to evolve."

As Lu Wu ascended, he muttered, but before coming up, he squinted when he saw the environment above.

"Well, it seems I am not that lucky, something unexpected seems to have happened."

The space on this level wasn't very large.

Just a few hundred square meters.

In the very center, there was a golden altar with what appeared to be a Summoned Beast guarding it.

Additionally, there was a stele next to the altar.

As Lu Wu approached, he saw that the stele was inscribed with the words "Final Trial."

The content below was the same as on the first floor, describing the rules of the "Final Trial."

The rule was simple: as a Summoner, knock down the Summoned Beast on the altar.

"That simple?"

Lu Wu was initially stunned but then realized something: "Did I just misread something?"

Lu Wu looked carefully again, and indeed, the stele was inscribed with the three characters for "Summoner."

At that moment, Lu Wu was baffled.

"What's going on? Does this mean that the trial subject has changed here? It's no longer the Summoned Beasts fighting, but me?"

Lu Wu was somewhat bewildered, and when he saw the attributes of the Summoned Beast on the altar, he was not just a little baffled; he was completely panicked.

...

Name: Altar Guardian

Power: Unknown (Adjusts its form and power based on the Summoner that steps onto the altar)

Description: If you go up there, it might copy the attributes of any of your Summoned Beasts, then come and fight you!

It's likely to be either Little Skeleton or Little Goldfish.

...

Can I really go up there?

If Lu Wu were to go up, whether it copied Little Skeleton or Little Goldfish, he felt that he was only going to be beaten up; he didn't like being hit.

"No way, no way, absolutely not," Lu Wu decided firmly, not to step onto the altar.

But it seems this final trial is mandatory; just as Lu Wu decided not to go up, a golden light enveloped him.

And then Lu Wu found himself involuntarily walking towards the altar.

At the same time, the Altar Guardian had transformed into the form of Little Skeleton...

...

Please subscribe, please vote

I'll try to release a significant chapter today to resolve this instance.

# Chapter 203: 200 Inheritance (Subscription Request)

Inheritance Land, Trial Tower.

As soon as Lu Wu stepped onto the altar, he regained control of his body.

The Summoned Beast opposite transformed into Little Skeleton, and its attributes were displayed in front of Lu Wu immediately.

Name: Little Skeleton Mage (Fake)

Power: Elite 1 Star

Attributes: Undead, Thunder, Fire

Weakness: Light

Skills: Charge (Master), Dodge (Master), Block (Master), Bone Spear (Master)...

Advanced Spells: Ghost Fire Skill (Master), Thunder Strike (Master)

Advanced Skills: Thunder Spear (Master)

Special Skills: Charging (Master)

Weapon: Silver Spear (Fake) (No additional attributes)

Talent: Dual-tasking, Spell Power Increase (Basic)

Description: Well, this is the elite version of Little Skeleton.

"Elite my grandma's valve core!

Do you really think I don't know what Little Skeleton's attributes were when he was an Elite 1 Star?"

Lu Wu almost spat out a mouthful of old blood as he looked at this guy's attributes.

This was simply a pure copy of Little Skeleton's attributes, merely downgrading the power to Elite 1 Star level.

Moreover, whether the power actually decreased, Lu Wu was doubtful at this point.

However, regardless of whether Lu Wu was skeptical or incredulous, none of this helped with the situation he faced.

He couldn't escape the beating he was due to receive.

The opposing Little Skeleton took shape and launched an attack immediately.

A Charge closed the gap, its skeletal frame flickering with electric light, thrusting a spear toward Lu Wu.

As a Cultivation Master, the fiercest skirmish Lu Wu had experienced was bullying a one-star silly creature, and he had never encountered a posture like this before, scared stiff.

His heart pounded violently, his feet sparked with electricity, and his body instinctively moved to create distance from Little Skeleton.

Clearly, from this scare, Lu Wu instantly mastered the "Charging" skill.

But facing this fake Little Skeleton, merely mastering "Charging" was obviously not enough.

Lu Wu knew how to Charge, but so did the opponent, and the opponent knew even more.

The skeletal frame flickered with electric light, speed burst forth once again, instantly catching up to Lu Wu, the silver spear in its hand sweeping directly across, flinging Lu Wu away.

Below the altar, Lu Wu's minions saw him getting hit.

Little Skeleton was the most anxious one, immediately trying to charge toward the altar, but before Little Skeleton could get close, the radiant light surrounding the altar blocked him.

The anxious Little Skeleton, its skeletal frame flickering with electric light, recklessly attacked the barrier blocking him, trying to enter to save Lu Wu, but to no avail.

Even when the rest of Lu Wu's Summoned Beasts joined in, they couldn't shake the light at all.

In this battle, Lu Wu had no one to rely on; he had to fight on his own.

Lu Wu seemed to realize this too, quickly pulling himself together after being hit.

Guarding against the opposing Little Skeleton, he frantically racked his brains.

"Now no one can help me, the only things I can rely on are 'Charging,' 'Slap Lu Wu,' and 'Unyielding Growth,' these three skills.

"Needless to say, the last passive skill, aside from making me a bit tougher, has virtually no use.

And besides, they've got a gun. If I get shot, even the toughness granted by 'Unyielding·Growth' skill will be useless.

Wait a second, a gun?"

Lu Wu suddenly remembered something and his gaze locked onto the long spear in Little Skeleton's hands.

"What if I get rid of that thing? Would my situation get any better?"

Lu Wu began considering how to remove the long spear from his opponent's hands.

Meanwhile, as Lu Wu pondered, the Little Skeleton on the other side made its move.

It launched another attack at Lu Wu.

Only then did Lu Wu suddenly wake up, realizing that it was too soon to think about getting rid of the opponent's spear. He should first figure out how to withstand the attack.

At this moment, Lu Wu could only recall everything he knew about the 'Charging' skill.

Among the three skills Lu Wu mastered, he was most familiar with 'Charging.'

After all, Little Skeleton had awakened this core skill for over half a year.

Lu Wu had used this skill as the core to set tactics for Little Skeleton more than once. He might even understand the function of this skill better than Little Skeleton.

After all, Little Skeleton was just a Summoned Beast. What would it know about 'Charging'?

Based on his theoretical knowledge of the Charging skill, Lu Wu recalled the feeling when he used 'Charging' just moments ago. Combining these two, mastering the skill became quite easy for him.

Moreover, with Little Skeleton wielding a spear and chasing after him, the pressure accelerated Lu Wu's mastery of the Charging skill.

He was able to dodge Little Skeleton's several deadly thrusts by utilizing the 'Charging' skill.

If Lu Wu had checked his attribute panel at that moment, he would have noticed that the proficiency of his 'Charging' skill was rapidly changing, going from 'Unmastered' to 'Entry-level' and then to 'Master.'

This rate of improvement was terrifying.

But such speed came at a cost, which was a significant increase in energy consumption.

Lu Wu's energy was not abundant to start with; sustaining it for three minutes was already a challenge. After recklessly spending a minute, Lu Wu suddenly felt that he had only a slight layer of energy left.

This was critical.

What was even more dangerous was that Little Skeleton seized the opportunity and thrust its spear again at that moment.

At that instant, Lu Wu's brain furiously processed countless ways to respond. Finally gritting his teeth, he incredibly chose not to dodge but to charge directly into it.

'Pu chi'—a sound was heard.

The bone spear of Little Skeleton pierced right into Lu Wu's left shoulder, blood flowing from the wound.

In that moment, Little Skeleton, who couldn't enter the altar, paused slightly, then the fire in its pupils lit up with the glow of thunder.

Inside the skeleton framework, a faint aura emanated, and it seemed as if light flickered within the bones.

Amidst this transformation of Little Skeleton, its four minions all crouched down, seeming to worship it like a monarch.

Clearly, Lu Wu's injury had significantly stirred the Little Skeleton.

At this point, there were faint signs of Evolution.

If this trend continued, just a few more hits could potentially make Little Skeleton evolve.

Unfortunately, Lu Wu on the other side was clueless, not understanding the significant principle of enduring a bit of hardship and fatigue to let his Skeleton win the race.

At the moment his left shoulder was pierced, Lu Wu grabbed the long spear with both hands.

Simultaneously, he used up the last bit of strength in his body, delivering a kick directly at Little Skeleton, sending it flying.

After that, Lu Wu pulled the long spear out from his shoulder, allowing blood to spurt out.

The scene was tragic, and Lu Wu was in great pain.

But amid the pain, Lu Wu unexpectedly felt very exhilarated and comfortable, and even his withered energy seemed to start flowing back.

Clearly, 'Unyielding·Growth' skill was taking effect."

Lu Wu finally understood firsthand what it felt like to be hit, silly style.

This made him cry out, "Come on! Keep hitting me!"

This shout stunned Little Skeleton, and even interrupted its evolution.

Because it realized that its owner, Lu Wu, didn't seem to be in pain; he seemed to be enjoying it.

This directly caused Little Skeleton to lose motivation for evolution, thus halting the process.

However, this was also a good thing; its quality was only bronze at this time, and even if it forced itself to evolve, it wouldn't be perfect. And this evolution experience for Little Skeleton wasn't entirely fruitless.

If Lu Wu had been watching Little Skeleton at that moment, he would have noticed a change in its attributes.

Unfortunately, Lu Wu did not have the time to look at Little Skeleton right now.

He seemed like a different person.

After being wounded, Lu Wu seemed to have opened the gates to a new world; he was no longer afraid of battle, but rather craved it, longed to be struck.

Even though his left shoulder was bloodied and his energy thoroughly drained, Lu Wu still charged forward, switching from defense to offense, battling fiercely with the opposing Little Skeleton.

Seeing Lu Wu seize the spear and charge over, the opposing Little Skeleton immediately switched its mode of attack.

From melee combat to magic.

It raised its hand and shot a Bone Tooth spell.

Lu Wu swung his silver spear, hm, didn't block it, and his shoulder wound got even worse as the Bone Tooth hit him right in the chest.

Fortunately, it wasn't very powerful; otherwise, Lu Wu would have been done for.

Undeterred by his wounds, Lu Wu continued to charge.

The opposing Little Skeleton shot a Bone Spear, and Lu Wu swung his silver spear again. This time because the Bone Spear was longer, Lu Wu luckily managed to knock it away.

But before Lu Wu could celebrate, he realized he couldn't move.

He was trapped by the Bone Prison—a skill his Little Skeleton had learned from him but had never used on anyone else before.

Lu Wu never dreamed that one day he would be trapped by the "Bone Prison" spell he had taught Little Skeleton, used by another Little Skeleton.

What made Lu Wu frown even more was that,

as he was trapped, the opposing Little Skeleton began to gather power.

What it was charging was clear to Lu Wu at a glance—it was Little Skeleton's magic trump card, the Thunder Strike.

Lu Wu knew the terrifying power of this skill.

If it could shatter stones, it could certainly shatter a person.

Lu Wu became frightened, trying to escape the Bone Prison, but it was inescapable.

In less than three seconds, before Lu Wu could break free, the opposing Little Skeleton's "Thunder Strike" crashed down.

At that moment, Lu Wu had no option but to adjust the angle of his hands.

He placed his silver spear above his head and started to fully channel the "Charging" skill, aiming to absorb the falling thunder into the spear.

With a "crack",

the Thunder Strike hit Lu Wu's silver spear.

It incidentally shattered the Bone Prison trapping him. As for Lu Wu? Naturally, he was not spared, getting struck so thoroughly it charred him inside out.

His hair turned into a wild, blown-out mess, his whole body pitch-black, trembling slightly amidst the electric sparks.

Really, at that moment, Lu Wu felt he was truly close to death.

Every inch of his skin ached; he couldn't even control himself anymore. If it weren't for the electrical current supporting him, he might have already collapsed.

But the pain was temporary.

Amidst the agony, the skill "Unyielding·Growth" began to take effect.

Lu Wu started to feel an indescribable sense of relief enveloping him, making him involuntarily groan, and his body rapidly regained control.

The moment he regained control over his body, Lu Wu instantly threw his spear.

The long spear was thrust, and a flash of lightning followed.

With a crack, the skull of Little Skeleton on the altar burst open. Outside the altar, Little Skeleton seemed to empathize, involuntarily flinching.

At the same time, the golden altar beneath Lu Wu lit up, bathing him in a golden radiance.

In this moment, "Unyielding·Growth" and the joy of the golden light combined within him.

Basking in double joy, Lu Wu felt like he could ascend to the heavens.

And indeed, in the eyes of others, he had ascended.

From the moment he killed Little Skeleton, the final trial was completed, marking the end of this trial.

Everyone else, whether they were in a trial or not, were expelled from the Trial Tower.

Everyone who exited the Trial Tower looked up and could see Lu Wu enveloped in golden light.

Different people felt differently upon witnessing this scene.

Wang Jun felt a slight regret, "As expected, I lost to him again."

Lin Jianying, seeing Lu Wu safe and sound, finally relaxed.

As for Dudu, she was now pondering one issue, how to get to Lu Wu?

The remaining two members of Team 003 were too distraught to pay attention to this; their main concern was about Kong Yi.

Regardless of what they were thinking, Lu Wu's inheritance soon came to an end.

As the state of inheritance ended, Lu Wu emerged from his double joy, his first action was to open his attribute panel to check.

…

Name: Lu Wu

Level: Professional Summoner (Elite 2 Star Combat Power)

Summoned Beasts: Little Skeleton (Boss 2 Star), little goldfish (Boss 2 Star), Han (Boss 1 Star)

Skills: Charging (Mastered), Slap Lu Wu (Unmastered)

Special Skill: Unyielding·Growth

Summoner Skill: Power of Inheritance (Obtained through the final trial of Hell level in the Trial Tower, effect to be researched independently.)

Description: After a round of battle, you should have mastered the method to become stronger. Yes, go enjoy beating up your Han! Also, it seems like there is something extra on you?

…

"What extra thing?"

Looking at the attribute panel, Lu Wu was stunned, then patted himself and found an additional golden token on his body.

…

Item: Golden Inheritance Token

Quality: King-level

Description: Obtained through the final trial of Hell level. It seems to control the difficulty of trials, but its uses likely extend beyond that. Feel free to research and experiment, if it doesn't work out, just melt it down to make equipment. This isn't your first time anyway.

…

Lu Wu stared at the token in his hand, then suddenly, the Inheritance Land began ushering out guests.

Before Lu Wu and his party of eight could react, they were swept out of the Inheritance Land…

…

Consider this chapter a two-in-one!

Yes, let's call it a two-in-one, so I've made up for what I owed yesterday.

# Chapter 204: 201 Evil Path Summoner (Request for Subscription)

Outside the Inheritance Land.

Jiang Yuexing's face was cold as she hovered in the air.

Behind her were the middle-aged man from before, and an old man who the middle-aged man had summoned.

From the middle-aged man's treatment of the elderly man, it was not difficult to infer that the elderly man was the middle-aged man's leader.

However, upon arriving and seeing Jiang Yuexing's expression, the leader wisely chose not to approach her and honestly stood behind the middle-aged man.

They stood there for nearly half an hour.

They continued to stand until Lu Wu had finished his tasks inside the Inheritance Land and everyone who had entered was transported out, yet the leader showed no sign of moving.

Even though Kong Yi, whom they had been watching for a long time, was not among those who came out, and the middle-aged man beside him was already impatient to take some action, the leader remained unmoved and even pulled the middle-aged man back.

He signaled him to wait and to endure.

The middle-aged man was confused, not understanding why they had to endure to such an extent against Jiang Yuexing.

Although Jiang Yuexing had indeed risen recently, no longer just a figurehead, and had begun to take control of Jiangnan,

She was now the genuine Governor, but they also had powerful backers!

Behind them was the Elder Council!

There was no reason or logic to be afraid of Jiang Yuexing!

Meanwhile, on Jiang Yuexing's side, she completely ignored the two men, her eyes fixed on Lu Wu.

At that moment, Lu Wu looked somewhat miserable, with his body battered and tattered, and traces of blood that had not yet dried. However, he appeared to be in good spirits overall.

After confirming that there were no issues on Lu Wu's side, Jiang Yuexing did not say much.

With a wave of her hand, she led the members of Squad 042 and simply left.

Throughout the whole time, she did not even glance at the two men behind her.

"She just left like that?" The middle-aged man's face displayed disbelief. "You just let her go like that?"

"What else could be done?" the leader answered with a tone of helplessness.

"You should have stopped her!

The moment Kong Yi's presence disappeared, she immediately came over. There must definitely be a problem. Now that Kong Yi has disappeared, we should make her cooperate with our investigation!"

Hearing the middle-aged man's words, the leader was even more helpless.

"You are still too young. Do you believe that if you had dared to stop her just now, you would have been splattered with blood!"

"She wouldn't dare? We are from the Elder Council!"

As the words 'Elder Council' were spoken, the middle-aged man puffed out his chest a bit, as the organization clearly gave him considerable support and confidence.

However, the leader's next sentence made him shiver.

"Elder Council? She has killed members of that council before!"

"She, she has killed members of the Elder Council?"

The middle-aged man turned timid, carefully asking.

But his leader obviously didn't want to dwell on this topic. "Enough, let's not worry about this and focus on investigating Kong Yi's situation.

We all know what kind of person Kong Yi is.

He is the most notorious and most horrifying among the Evil Summoners.

Unbelievably cunning and extremely strange, ever since he began to meddle with that item, we had watched him and clashed with him countless times, and he has escaped many of those encounters.

So, I wasn't surprised that he managed to escape this time."

"After all, with his abilities, it's impossible that he didn't know we were watching him.

You tell me, if you were him and you knew we were keeping an eye on you, would you dare to take the risk without being sure?"

"Of course not!"

The middle-aged man cooperated honestly, and the leader was quite pleased.

"You see, even you have that sense of awareness, let alone Kong Yi.

So, I'd already prepared for the eventuality that Kong Yi would slip away from us once again after leaving the Inheritance Land.

It's not a big deal since what he obtained in the Inheritance Land was merely a clue, and not the final result.

Let him run, since in his quest for that item, he will surely appear again, and we will continue to monitor him."

"But I am still curious, how exactly did he escape?"

The middle-aged man asked a very good question, giving the leader a chance to show off.

"It's not difficult to deduce how he escaped.

He had once cleared the Inheritance Land before, although not this side, he definitely did clear it, and he probably held an Inheritance Order, which is one point.

Additionally, there's Jiang Yuexing.

He must have noticed the life-saving measures Jiang Yuexing had for Lu Wu, so he must have first taken control of the Trial Tower, then purposefully activated Jiang Yuexing's life-saving methods, and later released control.

This way, as the Trial Tower returned to its rules, it would eliminate any force not supposed to be in the Trial Tower.

He used this power to break free from our control and seized the chance to escape."

Listening to the leader's analysis, the middle-aged man was immensely impressed.

"This Kong Yi is indeed incredibly cunning, truly living up to his reputation as the most elusive and hardest to kill among the Evil Summoners.

Such a cunning opponent, only you could handle him well."

Well, the middle-aged man's flattery was not bad, and the leader found it quite comforting.

"Alright, enough of that.

You go get to work. Take control of Kong Yi's two teammates, and also make contact with the other three.

As for the people Jiang Yuexing took away, as long as they are still in Fucheng, there's no need to bother.

She has suffered a great loss and is not likely to just let it go, doing anything more would only provoke her further."

"She's really angry right now, and provoking her is definitely asking for trouble!"

The leader's survival instinct was strong, knowing well enough not to provoke the proverbial 'tail of a tiger.'

Once the middle-aged man found out that Jiang Yuexing had killed people from the Elder Council, he became cautious.

He made it clear he would not mess with this 'tigress.'

After the middle-aged man left, the leader's expression turned grave.

"What a Kong Yi, able to escape so easily despite our tight encirclement. He truly is a tough opponent!

But you've just run out of luck, next time I definitely won't let you escape!"

On one side, the middle-aged man and the leader discussed Kong Yi.

On the other, Lu Wu who was sent home by Jiang Yuexing, was also talking about Kong Yi.

It was only then that Lu Wu learned in the Trial Tower, Kong Yi had tried to make a move on Dudu.

Lu Wu was furious!

His wife had already turned into a chubby girl, and yet someone dared to target her, it was utterly insane!

How could Lu Wu bear it?

He immediately hugged his rich woman's thigh.

"This bastard, to think he dared bully our Dudu! Godmother, let's catch this guy and grind him to feed Tuantuan!"

Hearing that he would be fed, Tuantuan immediately perked up, popping his head out from Dudu's arms and barked twice.

After realizing that no one was listening to him, nor was anyone going to feed him, he reluctantly returned to the mountains.

At this moment, Jiang Yuexing's focus was not on Kong Yi.

"Why did you give her the ring I gave you?"

"Huh?" Lu Wuyi was taken aback.

That's not what we were talking about?

But Jiang Yuexing didn't care; she wanted to discuss this and continued interrogating: "Are you smart enough to not understand why I gave you this ring or what its purpose is?"

"Of course, I know it's to protect me. It has the skills 'Damage Sharing,' 'Powerful Protection,' and 'Power of Rich Woman'!"

Lu Wuyi regretted mentioning it as soon as he did, as Jiang Yuexing's expression turned even colder.

"Knowing that, you still gave the ring to her?"

"I was just worried about her! She's so naive, and in that situation, she needed the protection more than me.

My skin is thick, I won't die that easily, and besides, I still have you. You're even closer than my mom, you definitely won't let anything happen to me."

Sometimes, women are easy to deal with.

A single phrase could settle things, and with Lu Wu's phrase, the iciness on Jiang Yuexing's face melted.

In fact, her anger stemmed from the fact that this ring incident reminded her of a similar past event.

Someone had transferred something she gave to them to another girl.

So when she saw the thing she gave to Lu Wu on Dudu, her anger erupted.

But Lu Wu's sweet 'godmother' brought Jiang Yuexing back from her memories.

She then remembered, this was her godson.

From a mother's perspective, knowing the danger he faced, Lu Wu still gave the ring to Dudu and trusted her unconditionally to save him.

Jiang Yuexing's anger dissipated.

She then decided not to dwell on the ring and steered the conversation back to Kong Yi.

"Besides Dudu, has anyone else seen that man?"

"Seems not, I don't think I've seen him!"

Lu Wu thought for a moment; indeed, he had not, although it seemed a giant black rat had scurried past which probably wasn't Kong Yi. He wouldn't stoop to such a level of appearing blatantly before him, right?

"I haven't seen him either!"

Lin Jianying also shook his head.

"I haven't seen anyone else since entering the Trial Tower."

Lin Jianying himself found it strange that he hadn't encountered him even once in the restroom; it didn't make sense that he wouldn't seek him out in the Trial Tower of all places.

He tried hard to remember, but it seemed he truly hadn't.

Clearly, it appeared he had forgotten that part of his memory.

Jiang Yuexing had anticipated this result.

The same as another leader's guess, Kong Yi's disappearance had two possibilities, either he died or he escaped.

The possibility of death was slim as Kong Yi was powerful and resourceful; even Jiang Yuexing herself would struggle to kill him.

So his most likely option was that he escaped, using her power.

"He's not simple, looks like he has already escaped. Also, don't leave Fucheng recently and since you gave her the ring, don't stray too far from her."

Though the chances of Kong Yi returning were slim, Jiang Yuexing still felt it necessary to remind Lu Wu.

Her reminder made Lu Wu panic.

"That guy is that strong?"

"Decades ago, he was already at Master level, what do you think?"

Hearing this, Lu Wu suddenly became tense. Despite recently gaining a surge of power, he now felt like he was ready to face a beating.

He felt the urgent need to become more powerful soon!

...

Lately, the subscriptions and votes have been so weak that I'm driven to a helpless laugh

# Chapter 205: 202 Frustrating Lu Wu

Lu Wu here.

At first, when he heard about Kong Yi's situation, he was quite panicked and even thought about getting beat up.

After all, only by getting beaten could he get stronger and provide Lu Wu with a sense of security.

But panic is just panic, and Lu Wu couldn't live in constant fear.

Besides, he still had Dudu, didn't he?

Spending every day with Dudu, he wasn't too afraid of Kong Yi.

After all, Kong Yi couldn't do much to Dudu in Inheritance Land, and besides, he had Li Kai at home.

Uncle Li at his house wasn't a pushover either. His house's Big Bear was almost at the Lord level, and just a step away from Master Level. With him around, Lu Wu felt somewhat secure.

Thus, shortly after Jiang Yuexing left, Lu Wu adjusted his mindset.

He decided to just do what he had to do.

And having just come out from the instance, Lu Wu felt the most important thing to do now was to check what he had gained from the instance.

Yes, he thought so, and so he did.

First was the improvement in power.

"Over here, Little Skeleton and little goldfish both hit Boss 2 Star, and I've also turned professional.

The rest of my followers have also become Bosses.

Over at Dudu's, she turned professional, and Tuantuan hit Boss 1 Star, Green Cub almost did but hit Elite 3 Stars.

Old Lin is pretty much similar to Dudu, only his Gouzi lagged a bit at just Elite 1 Star.

The system also upgraded, now I can see the attributes of summoned beasts within twenty meters, and I can also see the attributes of professional summoners."

Then there was the item aspect.

Not much there, just that Lu Wu had obtained a "Transmission Order."

"Right, the item I originally spent nearly ten thousand merits intending to sacrifice was saved and not used, and also, Little Skeleton's phone still has several detailed photos of altars, which I can use to study the altars in the future."

Having tallied everything, especially realizing he saved nearly ten thousand points, Lu Wu instantly felt much better.

After finishing counting his gains, it was time for Lu Wu to consider what he needed to do next.

Lu Wu thought for a moment and listed what he needed to do.

"One is to research the evolution issue of Little Skeleton and his minions.

One is the task given to me by the rich woman.

Oh right, there's also Jiang Beifeng who owes me 50,000 points and the issue of the White Bone Wild Boar training program hasn't been solved yet."

"Among these, the latter two are minor matters; the important ones are the first two."

Although the rich woman's task was imposed on Lu Wu by the rich woman herself,

after spending some time together, Lu Wu felt that the rich woman was pretty good to him.

So, he took her task to heart.

After listing these tasks, Lu Wu started to get busy, focusing mainly on the rich woman's task and secondarily on the evolution of Little Skeleton and the others, as he began planning his life for the coming period.

"The task given to me by the rich woman is to become the team leader of Jiangnan University's team and participate in next year's university competition.

This definitely needs to be approached in two steps; first is the team leader issue.

I need to know how to become a team leader. Should I just resolve it by force, or do I need another method?"

About this, Lu Wu naturally won't bother cracking his brain himself.

After all, he had people that could be used.

Lu Wu directly contacted Zhao Kai Ming to consult about this matter.

The information he got made Lu Wu quite shocked; he hadn't expected this matter to be unexpectedly simple.

Lu Wu had thought he would have to go through numerous trials and tribulations to defeat the current team leader and become the team leader himself, but,

surprisingly, as soon as he expressed this intention, Zhao Kai Ming immediately made a gesture.

"This matter? This is a small issue, just leave it to your Uncle Zhao!

Let me tell you, your Uncle Zhao still carries some weight at Jiangnan University, this kind of small matter should indeed be left to your Uncle, I can settle it clearly in minutes!"

Lu Wu heard Zhao Kai Ming vow solemnly.

He instantly believed his boast, feeling that this matter was definitely settled.

Then, Lu Wu no longer worried about how to become the team leader, and started preparing for the tasks that would follow his appointment.

He also casually asked Zhao Kai Ming to take on the task of collecting past data on the university competitions and Jiangnan University's squad.

Zhao Kai Ming patted his chest and went to work.

"Hmm, now I just wait for news from Uncle Zhao. Once he sorts out the team leader issue and delivers the competition and team data, I will plan the next phase according to the situation."

With that, Lu Wu suddenly found himself with some free time.

And since Lu Wu wasn't the type to stay idle, he knew he had to make use of this time.

Just right, there were two minor issues yet to be dealt with.

Lu Wu planned to just handle these two issues while he was at it.

He made another call to Zhang Wentao, asked the Fucheng Cultivation Center to prepare, and then Lu Wu booted up his computer and re-uploaded the initial version of the White Bone Wild Boar cultivation plan.

System prompt: the plan is under review.

This was just a procedure, Lu Wu remembered it was quite fast, so he didn't mind it.

While waiting for the plan to be reviewed, Lu Wu picked up his phone and made a call to Jiang Beifeng.

After the competition, Lu Wu had been busy with matters concerning the Inheritance Land, and those 50,000 points had been outstanding for half a month now, Lu Wu felt it was time to urge him.

The call connected, and the other side picked up quickly.

Lu Wu took the initiative: "Hello, Teacher Jiang, you told me last time that I would get 50,000 points within a week at most, but now half a month has passed, and there's still no news. You're not planning on reneging, are you?

I'm telling you, we signed an internal network agreement, you can't renege on this account. If you don't pay up, I might just have to sue you!"

His tone was particularly strong!

However, once the person on the other line began speaking, Lu Wu was flabbergasted.

"Are you Lu Wu?"

It was a middle-aged man's voice, very polite and courteous, but it was not Jiang Beifeng's voice.

Lu Wu had a feeling that something was amiss.

"What? Isn't this Jiang Beifeng's phone? Where is he?"

"Oh, the thing is, this number belongs to Jiangbei University's Admissions Office, and Mr. Jiang Beifeng has resigned, so the university has taken back this number.

Also, let me introduce myself, I am the new person in charge of the Admissions Office at Jiangbei University..."

Lu Wu didn't wait for him to finish and cut him off.

"I'm not interested in who you are or what's happened to Jiang Beifeng. What I want to know now is, Jiang Beifeng made a bet with me on behalf of Jiangbei University, owing me 50,000 points. When do you plan to pay me back?"

"I was actually about to discuss that matter with you."

The middle-aged man on the phone remained polite, but his words made Lu Wu furrow his brows.

"Here's the situation. Our Jiangbei is a legitimate university, and we strictly prohibit gambling among teachers and students.

Therefore, from any angle, Mr. Jiang Beifeng had no authority nor could he represent our Jiangbei University in betting with you.

He was also dismissed from Jiangbei University because of the gambling issue!"

"So what you're saying is, Jiangbei University plans to deny this debt?"

Lu Wu was clearly not pleased.

But the person on the other line still smiled, "I'm sorry, but Jiangbei University does not endorse gambling nor will we respond to any gambling matters.

If you have any disputes with Mr. Jiang Beifeng in this regard, please resolve them privately.

Furthermore, as an educator, I would like to remind you, cherish life and stay away from gambling. You are..."

"Click!"

Lu Wu, his face stern, hung up the phone directly.

"Not bad, I didn't expect Jiangbei University could stoop this low and outright deny the debt.

Seeing how confident they are, I bet I can't even get in touch with Jiang Beifeng now."

Lu Wu was grinding his teeth in anger.

After all, 50,000 points was not a small sum of money!

Don't think that Lu Wu made money quickly and fiercely before, but that was thanks to the platform of the high school league.

And also because the teams from Jiangnan had been suppressed for several years by outside teams. Lu Wu winning the championship had brought relief and pride to the people of Jiangnan.

It can be said that Lu Wu made that money then due to a perfect alignment of talent, location, and people's support.

Even then, Lu Wu had only made a bit over 20,000.

Now, the easy 50,000 about to slip through his fingers, could Lu Wu swallow this insult?

"This money must be recovered!"

Lu Wu definitely would not let this slide.

However, just as Lu Wu was pondering how to reclaim the money, the results of the assessment for the "White Bone Wild Boar" cultivation scheme came out on the internal network.

Lu Wu picked up the phone, about to inform Zhang Wentao when he suddenly noticed something wrong with the assessment.

"What's going on? Not approved?"

After checking the content of the assessment, Lu Wu's eyes narrowed.

He opened the email right away, and his face grew even darker.

The email was short. If you chopped off the beginning and the end, it basically contained only one line of information.

[Your "White Bone Wild Boar Soup" scheme was not approved because it highly overlaps with an existing scheme!]

"How is that possible? I've reviewed all the White Bone Wild Boar cultivation schemes and none were the same as mine. How could there be an overlap?"

Lu Wu darkened his face and opened the "White Bone Wild Boar" cultivation scheme section.

As soon as he did, he was stunned.

Because he discovered that there was an additional cultivation scheme, and the scheme's name was "White Bone Wild Boar Soup".

Lu Wu had a hunch what had happened.

"This couldn't be the doing of someone from Jiangbei Cultivation Center, could it? They wouldn't stoop to such despicable measures, would they?"

Yet indeed they had!

Lu Wu bought a copy of the "White Bone Wild Boar Soup" scheme and read it thoroughly.

After reading it, Lu Wu felt like his worldview had been turned upside down.

This was clearly plagiarism of his scheme.

Or rather, it couldn't even be called plagiarism; it was outright copying.

At most, they had translated it back and forth after copying and made a few modifications they thought were clever.

"So blatant, so brainless?"

Lu Wu felt this did not seem like something Jiangbei University or Jiangbei Cultivation Center would do.

There were many ways to suppress him; they didn't need to resort to such disgusting methods.

But the truth was, they did exactly that!

This really upset Lu Wu.

And that wasn't the end of it.

Today seemed to be a particularly unlucky day for Lu Wu, with one frustrating matter following another.

Lu Wu had not yet recovered from the shock of Jiangbei denying the debt and the plagiarism of his cultivation scheme, when Zhao Kai Ming who had just confidently told Lu Wu he'd handle the team leader issue called.

Lu Wu had hoped for some good news finally, but Zhao Kai Ming started with, "Xiao Lu, maybe we should just forget about the team leader position this year?"

Upon hearing this, Lu Wu was on the verge of exploding!

# Chapter 206: 203 Lu Wu's Counterattack

Lu Wu had to exert quite an effort to calm his nerves before asking:

"What happened?"

"That," Zhao Kai Ming hesitantly began, "I just discussed the team leader position with Old Zhang, and we had nearly finalized everything when Old Li interfered, and the deal fell through."

Zhao Kai Ming was quite embarrassed, and even a little meek.

He started by shifting the blame, then explained the situation to Lu Wu.

Simply put, someone had already reserved the position of team leader for next year's university competition.

It wasn't about using connections to secure the position.

If anyone was using connections, it was actually Lu Wu.

Lu Wu had been scheming to become the team leader, whereas the person who had reserved the position was begged by Jiangnan University to take the role.

After all, Jiangnan University had been declining recently.

For several sessions in a row, their university competition rankings were too dreadful to watch, causing Jiangnan University's ranking to drop repeatedly.

Additionally, Jiangnan University was having financial troubles.

If Jiangnan University couldn't perform well in next year's competition and secure more resources, it could very well be absorbed by Jiangbei the following year.

So, to save Jiangnan,

Vice-Chancellor Li Mingrui had used countless connections and poured much effort into finally persuading someone he believed could help Jiangnan perform well in next year's competition.

How could they possibly offer the position of team leader to Lu Wu just because he said he wanted it?

Moreover, although they had confidence in Lu Wu, it concerned his future, and Lu Wu hadn't even started school yet. How could they entrust such an important position and task to him?

"So, Old Li's idea is, you train for one year, and then next year, the position of team leader will be yours!"

Zhao Kai Ming carefully explained all this.

Meanwhile, Lu Wu, having heard all this, had almost calmed his feelings.

"Alright, I understand now."

In fact, for Lu Wu, this matter would have been quite simple and straightforward if Zhao Kai Ming hadn't initially guaranteed he could handle it.

It was merely a stumbling block on Lu Wu's path to becoming the team leader of Jiangnan University's team.

Such things, Lu Wu had been aware of from the start.

Stumbling blocks, he could simply move away when the time came.

However, for now, Lu Wu's role as team leader needed to be put on hold.

He would at least need to wait until after school started and he had faced the stumbling block.

There was still some time before school started, and Lu Wu could use this period to deal with issues of debt evasion and plagiarism.

After hanging up on Zhao Kai Ming, Lu Wu leaned on his hand, his eyes shifting.

He thought about how he should handle these two issues.

Actually, these two issues seemed troublesome, but they were relatively simple for Lu Wu to resolve.

He had many methods at his disposal.

However, his current mood wasn't very good, so he decided to use the method that would be the most satisfying for him.

…

While Lu Wu was figuring out how to solve these two issues,

A thousand miles away at the Jiangbei Professional Training Center, someone was in a good mood.

This person, Shi Ying, was the director responsible for verifying cultivation plans at the Jiangbei Professional Training Center.

His job was quite profitable.

Moreover, if one was bold yet cautious, it was easy to find opportunities to advance and profit in this line of work.

Recently, Shi Ying had seized such an opportunity, and possibly, a bigger opportunity awaited him.

A while ago, his superiors had ordered him to suppress a cultivator from Jiangnan; this task was handed to him.

As an expert bureaucrat, Shi Ying might not do well with some tasks, but when it came to suppressing others, he had plenty of tricks up his sleeve.

Coincidentally, the target had submitted a cultivation plan, and Shi Ying immediately took it and left it unattended.

Initially, Shi Ying only intended to apply some pressure and create trouble for the person, but unexpectedly, the target was very patient. Even though the plan was withheld, there was no reaction, and when they looked for faults, the target didn't engage.

Even when the plan was eventually rejected and sent back, the person didn't immediately reupload it, giving Shi Ying no opportunity to continue suppressing him.

This made Shi Ying, who was already displeased with the insufficient suppression and poor task performance, quite uncomfortable.

So, he changed his approach and directly hired an amateur cultivator, uploading the other person's plan first.

He quickly approved it, seizing the rewards before the other person could react.

This approach was extremely disgusting and also a severe violation of regulations.

But Shi Ying didn't care.

On one hand, he was targeting someone already intended for suppression by a big shot.

Plus, he was well-protected, so even if the situation was thoroughly investigated, it wouldn't trace back to him.

Moreover, defending a cultivation plan was extremely troublesome; even if the person sued the Professional Center headquarters, without sufficient evidence there would only be futile arguments.

Even if there was enough evidence to bring him down, it wouldn't matter.

He would just take all the blame onto himself. After all, it wasn't considered a significant issue, and the headquarters would let their Jiangbei side handle it themselves.

Since he was performing tasks for a big shot in Jiangbei, the final outcome would surely be a concealed promotion rather than a demotion.

Shi Ying had thoroughly considered all the angles.

Whether the other party swallowed his pride or made a big fuss, Shi Ying wouldn't suffer, and escalating the situation could even provide him an opportunity to climb higher.

Therefore, Shi Ying was secretly hoping that Lu Wu would escalate the situation, which would allow him to demonstrate his loyalty to the boss.

And indeed, this thought of Shi Ying's was not lost on his boss behind him.

It was, in fact, deliberate that they turned a blind eye and let Shi Ying stir things up.

They even subtly helped things along from behind the scenes.

The reason was simple: they wanted to torment Lu Wu.

From Jiangbei's perspective, they had ample reasons to target Lu Wu. On the minor end, Team 001's failure to make it into the top eight was Lu Wu's fault; more significantly, it was Lu Wu standing in the way of Jiangbei University's scheme against Jiangnan University.

Adding another layer was the issue of the new stepmother that Lu Wu had recently gained.

And on the topmost level, there was the talent that Lu Wu had revealed.

Ever since Lu Wu emerged onto the scene, his information had been in the hands of Jiangbei's upper management.

Just a year ago, Lu Wu had been a poor student.

His grades had always struggled around the pass mark, but since he'd summoned Little Skeleton, he seemed to have had an epiphany.

In just half a year, he had reached the level of a Professional Cultivator.

The cultivation programs he developed for the goblin and Little Skeleton impressed all the educators in the field. Even more astonishing was that he seemed to have mastered Little Skeleton's evolution plan, which Jiangnan was still verifying.

If the evaluation plan succeeded, Jiangnan might take the opportunity to promote Lu Wu to the position of a Master Cultivator.

This was something Jiangbei did not want to see.

Therefore, they had to suppress Lu Wu.

They didn't need to completely crush Lu Wu, but at the very least, they wanted to ensure that Lu Wu achieved nothing next year.

For this purpose, Jiangbei had specifically tailored a complete scheme for Lu Wu.

What Lu Wu was seeing now was just the first step.

Inside the office of the Jiangbei person-in-charge, the relieved Jiang Beifeng outlined his entire plan to the Jiangbei University President and Jiangbei Cultivation Center Head, Lin Huai.

"According to the information we've received, Lu Wu has just returned from the Inheritance Land.

And he's just called to chase up on debts; he might have already discovered the plagiarism by now.

From what I know of him, he's surprisingly petty.

First, he was swindled by Jiangbei, and then this incident happened; given his character, he definitely won't let this go.

So he will definitely make a big fuss, and the bigger it gets, the better.

What he definitely won't expect is that I have already prepared a trap here, just waiting for him to make a big fuss."

Jiang Beifeng paused here, and the President across from him, Lin Huai, was a perfect foil, promptly asking, "What kind of trap?"

Jiang Beifeng, feeling pleased, smiled slightly.

"Imagine someone tells you that a young man has gone from being a poor student to a cultivator almost at Master Level within just one year. What would you think?

Besides shock, wouldn't you be a bit suspicious?"

"You mean to suggest?" Lin Huai also caught on.

Jiang Beifeng's smile grew, "I don't mean anything, I just want to offer the public a possibility.

Could it be that his genius persona is fake?

Could it be that much of his research is plagiarized?

Could it be that he grabbed all of these achievements through someone else's power and manipulation?"

Hearing this, Lin Huai couldn't help but gasp.

Jiang Beifeng's move was insidiously venomous.

He wanted to use Lu Wu making a fuss about the plagiarism to add fuel to the fire later.

By manufacturing evidence and shaping public opinion, he aims to throw the blame—Dirty Water—back on Lu Wu.

Rumors are easily fabricated with just a word, and clarifying them is not nearly as simple.

And right now, Lu Wu, still young and emotionally unstable, could be severely damaged by such rumors, and in the absence of clarification, he might never recover and could even be completely destroyed.

"From what I know of him, rumors won't completely destroy him, but they will definitely make him miserable.

It'll be difficult for him to move on from this incident anytime soon.

The most important thing is, with this scandal as a foundation, even if Jiangnan later verifies the evolution plan for the Little Skeleton Mage, we will have an excuse to obstruct Lu Wu's ascension to a Master."

Holding off just a year or two would suffice, by that time, Jiangnan would have already been absorbed by Jiangbei, and Lu Wu would be one of us. By then, his achieving the Master title would not only be inconsequential to us—it would even make us look better."

Jiang Beifeng's tactics were, as always, deviously underhanded.

The dirty tricks of the high school league were not enough; now he planned to tarnish Lu Wu further.

However, dirty as these tactics were, the bigwigs of Jiangbei still loved them.

Lin Huai immediately expressed that Jiang Beifeng should take full control of the matter.

And that was exactly what Jiang Beifeng wanted.

During his time in Jiangnan, he had botched the high school league and lost 50,000 points, causing many people in Jiangbei to criticize him.

Even losing his previous position as the head of admissions.

But momentary success or failure was irrelevant.

As long as Jiang Beifeng could handle this smoothly, he would not only rectify his previous mistakes but also further his career.

Thinking of this, Jiang Beifeng was rather excited.

As Jiang Beifeng wallowed in his excitement, his cell phone rang. Seeing the caller displayed, his face instantly soured and he cursed, "Motherfucker, Lu Wu…"

# Chapter 207: 204 shameless woman

Debt evasion and plagiarism.

Confronted with these two matters, Lu Wu took the initiative to address the issue of debt evasion first.

The 50,000 points had been dragged out for so long, he couldn't let them continue to delay.

And there were two ways to settle the debt of 50,000 points.

One was to find Jiang Beifeng and demand payment in person.

This method was the most tiresome and least rewarding; let alone finding Jiang Beifeng being difficult, expecting to collect the debt was even harder, so Lu Wu directly disregarded this option.

He chose the second method, to have someone else do the debt collection.

Lu Wu and Jiang Beifeng's betting agreement had been signed under the witness of the online platform.

Now that this incident had occurred, Lu Wu could ask the online platform to collect this debt.

Both Lu Wu and Jiang Beifeng were aware of this.

But they also knew that, while this might be the case in theory, it was different in practice.

Although the online platform indeed would help with debt collection and this was one of its major services, it required a process and some time.

And time, or rather a process, was exactly what Jiang Beifeng wanted.

Yes, he had even calculated this into the equation.

He had never intended to default on the debt from the beginning; the debt couldn't be evaded since the agreement was signed under the auspices of the online platform.

But there was room to maneuver this situation.

Starting with debt evasion, his goal was to provoke Lu Wu's emotions and enrage him first.

The online platform's collection was slow and bureaucratic, giving him lots of room to operate, and a few moves would be enough to irritate Lu Wu beyond measure.

Just when Lu Wu couldn't take it any longer and was ready to use coercive measures, Jiang Beifeng would promptly repay the points.

After this wave, Lu Wu's mental state would be on the verge of exploding.

This would save Jiang Beifeng a lot of effort for his next moves.

However, Jiang Beifeng overlooked one thing.

He hadn't anticipated that Lu Wu would have to deal with debt evasion, plagiarism, and team leading issues all at once.

With everything coming at him simultaneously, Lu Wu's anger was instantly provoked, leading him to resort to extreme methods right from the start.

Lu Wu's extreme method was actually quite straightforward, still involving the online platform.

He directly ordered goods worth 50,000 points on the online platform, and when it came to payment, Lu Wu directly used his betting agreement with Jiang Beifeng as a transaction.

Yes, this thing could be traded.

Because it was an agreement signed under the witness of the online platform.

Once the online platform approved the review, then this thing was worth 50,000 on the platform.

However, if the transaction was made directly with the online platform, it would only be valued at 95% of the agreement amount.

That is to say, the online platform would take a cut of 2,500 points.

This was not a small amount; normally, Lu Wu might think twice and hesitate about whether to proceed.

But with his current mood being sour, what's 2,500 points?

Give it up, then!

And then, the debt that Jiang Beifeng had evaded was transferred from Lu Wu to the online platform.

The efficiency of the online platform was quite fast. As soon as the transaction was completed, they immediately notified Jiang Beifeng.

"Please be advised that your betting agreement with 'I Want to Be a Sea King' has been officially taken over by the online platform.

Your account points have been frozen, and your assets are about to be liquidated. Please repay the debt of 50,000 points within three days, or further fees will be incurred due to the delay. Additionally, the online platform will auction off your assets.

If the auction proceeds are insufficient to cover the debt, the online platform will initiate a supplementary repayment procedure."

Looking at this piece of information, Jiang Beifeng's face darkened.

"2,500 points, huh? Lu Wu is really ruthless, to simply let them go like that."

Clearly, Jiang Beifeng was aware of this aspect.

He just hadn't expected that Lu Wu, known to be miserly, would throw away 2,500 points without hesitation.

"It seems I still don't understand him thoroughly enough!"

But Jiang Beifeng quickly adjusted his emotions.

This matter was just a minor episode for him, not a big deal.

"Evading this debt was originally to enrage him; seeing his current state, he's already ignited. If the debt evasion fails, then let it be; it gives me the opportunity to focus more on the upcoming plan."

From the very beginning, Jiang Beifeng had never taken the online platform's debt collection seriously.

Although the online platform's collection was notoriously aggressive and not repaying debts was famously dreadful, that didn't concern Jiang Beifeng.

Jiangbei would pay out the 50,000 points for him.

He just had to concentrate on dealing with Lu Wu.

But speaking of dealing with Lu Wu.

At first, Jiang Beifeng felt some pressure in his heart.

After all, the kid was extraordinarily cunning and seemed to have the support of a rich woman now.

Bullying him now meant that the kid would certainly retaliate in the future.

But even so, Jiang Beifeng still decided to proceed.

On one hand, he was not content with losing to Lu Wu; he had been fully prepared before, and it was only because Lu Wu had cheated that he won, and Jiang Beifeng couldn't accept losing to a cheater.

On the other hand, and most importantly, this was an order personally issued by someone.

Since that person was paying attention to this matter, he naturally had to execute it well.

If he did well and could curry favor with that individual, then Jiang Beifeng could also rise high.

With discontent and interests at play.

Jiang Beifeng couldn't think of any reason not to target Lu Wu.

"Come on, let's stir things up, let's have a good game again!

This time, I'm definitely going to defeat you!"

Jiang Beifeng really didn't believe that he would lose to Lu Wu once and lose to him again!

With that confidence, Jiang Beifeng began his bustle.

He needed to prepare. Judging by Lu Wu's current state, he absolutely would make a big fuss about it. As soon as Lu Wu kicked up a ruckus, Jiang Beifeng would immediately take action.

"Of course, I don't rule out the possibility that he suddenly has his brain kicked by a donkey, or someone stops him by his side. So, I have to be prepared here too. If Lu Wu doesn't make a fuss, we'll help him do it!"

...

Meanwhile, in Jiangnan.

Lu Wu was also not idling.

After sorting out the bad debt issue, he turned his attention to the plagiarism issue.

Like Jiang Beifeng, Lu Wu focused more on resolving the issue of plagiarism.

Initially, Lu Wu wanted to blow the matter up.

He even had a plan that would make Jiangbei regret it.

But before Lu Wu acted, he suddenly remembered what his rich woman had said.

Yes, it was before entering the instance when he was about to take down Team 003. His rich woman had advised him to stay calm in the face of trouble, to think thrice before acting, not to be sarcastic or radical, and to keep his cool.

After all, the rich woman was beautiful.

So, Lu Wu did listen to her words, to some extent.

So before he acted, he let himself cool down and reviewed the whole matter.

The more he reviewed it, the more Lu Wu couldn't understand why Jiangbei would do this.

Why would they bully a kind, upright, handsome, and harmless Little Cultivator like him?

Where had he possibly gone wrong to offend others?

To clear up this matter, Lu Wu specifically contacted Zhang Wentao.

Zhang Wentao was also in the dark about the whole situation, completely clueless why it had unfolded like this.

Logically speaking, no matter how much Jiangnan University and Jiangbei University were at odds, they shouldn't have involved Lu Wu.

Such a talent should be pampered by any place. Who would want to bully him for fun? Besides, did they really think the rich woman behind him was just for show?

"Could it be that someone in the Jiangbei Professional Center got greedy and did this without the upper echelons knowing?"

After discussing with Lu Wu for a long while, Zhang Wentao came up with such a hypothesis.

Once this hypothesis was out, Lu Wu immediately understood why Jiangnan was suppressed so badly by Jiangbei.

The problem lay with the leadership.

The leaders in Jiangnan were too upright, too naïve.

How could the high levels of Jiangbei not know about such a thing?

Lu Wu's proposal had been suppressed for over half a month, not to mention that just after Lu Wu completed an instance, the other party had taken the initiative to publish the cultivation plan.

Could this be just an individual's behavior?

This was clearly a well-organized, planned, and premeditated scheme targeting him, Lu Wu!

But even after much thought, Lu Wu still couldn't figure out why someone as handsome as he was would be despised.

When he couldn't figure it out, Lu Wu simply stopped thinking.

"Let's try a probing move first.

Uncle Zhang, could you use your name to ask for an explanation from Jiangbei, telling them if they can withdraw the cultivation plan and have the wrongdoer apologize to me, we can let this whole matter go?

If not, then we will follow due process!

Oh, and remember to record it!"

"Okay!"

Perhaps because he had just rejected Lu Wu's position as team leader, Zhang Wentao felt a bit embarrassed in front of Lu Wu at that moment.

Whatever Lu Wu said, Zhang Wentao went to do.

Meanwhile, Lu Wu logged onto the internal network to gather information from Jiangnan and Jiangbei while Zhang Wentao was on the task.

He knew that Zhang Wentao would definitely return unsuccessfully. Since the other party had already made a move, they would definitely not back down so easily.

If it had been Lu Wu himself doing this, he definitely wouldn't easily target such an outstanding, kind, likable, and promising Cultivator.

But once he did, it surely wouldn't just end there.

There must be more tricks up their sleeve.

But Lu Wu didn't even know the other party's purpose in targeting him, let alone guess why they were doing it.

So, Lu Wu went to the internal network to learn about the situation in Jiangbei at this time, particularly focusing on the relations between Jiangbei and Jiangnan.

After pondering for a long time, Lu Wu figured that the reasons for Jiangbei targeting him were few.

They either disliked him, or they disliked Jiangnan University, or they disliked his mom.

Of these three, Lu Wu found the third most implausible.

But after seeing the situation between Jiangnan and Jiangbei on the internal network, Lu Wu had a vague feeling that maybe, it was precisely this third reason.

Hesitating for a moment, Lu Wu made a call to his rich woman.

Directly on the phone, Lu Wu recounted everything he had encountered. While Lu Wu told the story, he could clearly sense the rich woman's anger.

It was a kind of anger with a clear direction.

She swore a few times, calling someone "shameless."

There, Lu Wu had cracked the case. He thought so! Why else would someone bully him? It turned out it was the rich woman's fault.

Lu Wu seized the opportunity to explain his resolution plan to her.

As soon as Lu Wu spoke, the rich woman immediately became happy.

"Very good, go ahead and do it!

Let that shameless woman know my might!"

This is my plan, what does it have to do with you, my rich sponsor?

Lu Wu rolled his eyes, full of disdain, but when the words came to his lips, they changed. He slapped his chest, "Leave it to me. Dare to bully my godmother, I'll let her know that there's such a thing as 'regret' in this world!"

After that, Lu Wu hung up the phone, elatedly starting his preparations.

# Chapter 208: 205 Iron Armor Bull Milk

This side, Lu Wu.

Not long after obtaining the go-ahead from the rich woman,

Zhang Wentao made a call to him, clearly indicating that the negotiation had produced a result.

"How is it? What did they say?"

"Principal Lin said that they would investigate thoroughly, and if it's true, there will definitely be an explanation for you," said Zhang Wentao.

"Such a standard official response!"

Lu Wu curled his lip, continuing to work on his task at hand while speaking, "You're working hard, Uncle Zhang. Could you please remind them every three hours for me?"

"Sure!"

At this moment, Zhang Wentao felt less like the principal of Jiangnan University and more like Lu Wu's personal secretary.

But he went off to carry out the work nonetheless.

Meanwhile, Lu Wu, after hanging up the phone, continued to be busy within the Cultivation Room.

Exactly what he was busy with, only he knew.

On the other side, in Jiangbei.

From the moment Zhang Wentao first came to negotiate, Lin Huai had called over Jiang Beifeng and briefed him on the situation.

"It's quite surprising, isn't it? Instead of causing an immediate commotion, they started with a negotiation."

Jiang Beifeng had made detailed preparations for this occasion, foreseeing every possible reaction from Lu Wu and planning how to resolve each one; that naturally included the option of the other party initiating negotiations.

Therefore, Jiang Beifeng still appeared confident in his course of action.

"It seems someone has suppressed his temper. No matter, continue to bully him a bit more, and he will start the commotion himself."

"Next, if things go as expected, Zhang Wentao will definitely come to negotiate again. I will leave this matter to you to handle. That person is paying attention, so you must do a good job!"

"Rest assured, you can leave it to me! I guarantee I'll handle it perfectly!"

In front of his superior, Jiang Beifeng could not possibly admit any inability. He patted his chest enthusiastically, and casually mentioned the 50,000 points matter as well.

"Don't worry about it, I'll take care of it. You won't have to personally cover those 50,000 points."

Although Lin Huai as a leader might be incompetent in other areas, he was quick to issue promises.

As for whether those promises were empty, Jiang Beifeng wasn't worried.

He was being tasked with a dirty and tiring job, and besides, Lin Huai had agreed to the bet before. 50,000 points would definitely be covered by Jiangbei on his behalf.

With that, Jiang Beifeng mentioned it in passing and then went off to handle things.

Swiftly, three hours passed.

Zhang Wentao called once again, and this time, it was Jiang Beifeng who answered.

"Principal Zhang, this is Jiang Beifeng, the Senior Director of the Jiangbei Professional Training Center. We have already investigated the plagiarism case you brought to us, and it seems there might have been some misunderstanding. Regarding the plan for 'White Bone Wild Boar Soup,' our center had already started verification a month ago.

Thus, there is no question of plagiarizing Lu Wu's work. If anything, there is more suspicion of plagiarism on the part of Lu Wu.

However, we won't quibble over these things and only hope that Lu can learn from this and reform."

Zhang Wentao was stunned upon hearing this response.

He genuinely didn't know, nor could he imagine that Jiangbei could be so shameless.

He wanted to argue based on facts, but before he could even start, the other side promptly shut him down.

"I understand you might emotionally disagree with this outcome.

But no worries, if you need the relevant evidence and materials, we can provide them to you.

In addition, if you're still unsatisfied after reviewing the evidence, you can proceed through the official channels!"

After stating this, Jiang Beifeng hung up right away.

That call left not only Zhang Wentao baffled but also Shi Ying, who was at his side.

"What if Jiangnan really wants the evidence?"

"That's easy, isn't it? Just create some fake evidence of a submitted offline scheme, or some evidence of scheme verification. It's all quite straightforward."

"We can make it, but it'll be full of flaws."

"Just do it if I tell you to, what's with all the questions? Get it done and show it to me!"

What Jiang Beifeng wanted was evidence full of holes to treat the others like fools.

If he didn't generate such evidence, how could he anger Lu Wu?

And if the evidence was later proven to be fake, it didn't matter.

Whether it was reneging on a deal or plagiarism, it was all part of laying the groundwork for the next plan.

Not to mention that plagiarism is hard to prove, but even if it was proven, isn't there Shi Ying as a white-glove and a scapegoat?

Just kick him out when the time comes.

It won't threaten him, nor affect the plan.

As for the potential impact on the Jiangbei Professional Center, that wouldn't happen either.

Jiangnan and Jiangbei had been in conflict for so long that it was widely acknowledged the two sides didn't get along; people would most likely see this as just another clash between the two. The worst outcome would just be the removal of Shi Ying, which wouldn't affect Jiangbei too much.

Quickly, Shi Ying had fabricated the so-called evidence.

Jiang Beifeng carefully reviewed it and made edits to the 'evidence'.

After ensuring this 'evidence' was sufficiently inflammatory, he sent it off to Jiangnan's end.

"I really can't believe that after seeing this evidence, Lu Wu will be able to hold back. Next, we just wait for Lu Wu to create a scene."

As soon as the evidence arrived in Jiangnan,

Lu Wu hadn't even started dealing with it, and Zhang Wentao sprayed out a mouthful of old blood first.

"They've gone too far, too far, Jiangbei really has gone too far!

No, I can't let this matter rest!

I must seek justice for you!"

Speaking, Zhang Wentao reached for the phone to contact old friends to resolve the issue, but was stopped by Lu Wu.

"Uncle Zhang, don't rush.

Can't you see that by first throwing Jiang Beifeng's name out and then tossing this thing into the mix, they're trying to enrage us? I bet they're just waiting for us to make a scene."

"Are we supposed to just let this go?"

Zhang Wentao couldn't swallow his anger.

Lu Wu, on the other hand, thought it was rather good.

"Don't worry, I'm not going to let this go.

Here's what we'll do, you first go through the normal procedures and report the matter to the Cultivation Center Headquarters.

Then, make a statement through the channels of Jiangnan University, explaining the situation. Additionally, mention that I have a way to prove that I developed this plan, as I possess an optimized version of it.

Besides, I hold the core secret of this plan."

"This?"

Zhang Wentao had no idea what medicine Lu Wu was selling in his gourd.

He asked out of curiosity, but Lu Wu said nothing further, simply instructing him to go ahead and do it.

In the end, Zhang Wentao obediently followed Lu Wu's instructions.

He first filed a report for the plagiarism, and then through the channels of Jiangnan University, publicized the matter of Lu Wu's plan being plagiarized by the Jiangbei Cultivation Center.

Once Jiangnan acted, Jiangbei got wind of it immediately.

When Jiang Beifeng saw it, the corner of his mouth lifted slightly.

"Exactly as I expected, this kid really made a fuss, and a big one at that.

Speaking out through the channels of Jiangnan University—does he intend to prove his innocence to the world?"

Jiang Beifeng wasn't too anxious about whether Lu Wu could prove his innocence, because his plan for Lu Wu wasn't just about plagiarism.

From the beginning, Jiang Beifeng's scheme against Lu Wu was multi-layered.

The outermost layer was to infuriate Lu Wu by dishonoring debt, to stir his nerves; the second layer, the plagiarism, was to further enrage and allow the incident to ferment.

As long as the incident fermented, Jiang Beifeng's second objective would be achieved.

As for whether Lu Wu could prove his innocence, Jiang Beifeng was not concerned.

Since their last encounter, Jiang Beifeng had been enlightened; to tackle Lu Wu, he couldn't expect him to follow his plan and had to prepare for the best and the worst outcomes.

Whether Lu Wu could prove his innocence or not did not affect the next steps of the plan.

"However, if we could trip up Lu Wu while he tries to clear his name, the rest of the plan would proceed much more smoothly."

With this thought in mind, Jiang Beifeng made a phone call.

At this point, he was calling a project team of the Jiangbei Professional Training Center.

In fact, Jiang Beifeng had considered this current situation from the beginning and had made preparations.

Ten days ago, he had the Jiangbei side set up a project team consisting of experts in White Bone Wild Boar research; they had begun researching Lu Wu's plan from ten days prior to prepare for this moment.

And Jiang Beifeng's call was particularly timely - when he called, the project team had just had a significant breakthrough.

As he called, he was the first to hear the good news.

"Director Jiang, good news, great news—we've just made a huge breakthrough in our research.

We found that the White Bone Wild Boar Soup can be optimized. By simply adding one ingredient, we can raise the quality of a Black Iron White Bone Wild Boar to Bronze level, and the total cost of the ingredients for the complete plan is only about 800 points."

"What?"

Jiang Beifeng did not expect to hear such news from his phone call, but he reacted swiftly, realizing the secret of the White Bone Wild Boar Soup that Lu Wu was said to hold by Jiangnan, and quickly asked, "What's the ingredient?"

"It's Iron Armor Bull milk!"

"Prepare all the relevant materials at once, we're going to see Principal Lin right now!"

After Jiang Beifeng hung up the phone, he didn't go straight to Lin Huai. Instead, he made another call to have his people look up some things, and only then did he set off to meet Lin Huai.

Soon enough, Jiang Beifeng and the project leader met with Lin Huai.

Coincidentally, at the same moment the project leader handed over the materials for Lin to review, Jiang Beifeng received another phone call.

"Director Jiang, I have the results of what you asked me to look into. Starting today, the Jiangnan Governor's Mansion has been buying up large quantities of goods, and currently, they have acquired about 30 percent of the market's Iron Armor Bull milk."

Hearing this, a smile crept onto Jiang Beifeng's face.

"It seems a little extra preparation doesn't hurt; look, I've accidentally got a hold of their trump card."

Meanwhile, Lu Wu was also muttering to himself.

"My goodness, I've practically given it away, Jiangbei can't possibly fail to notice, right?

Hmm, considering Jiang Beifeng's craftiness, he's bound to notice, but it might take some time. For now, I can only hope they discover it quickly."

# Chapter 209: 206 Huge Profits

Jiangbei Cultivation Center.

When the project manager delivered the relevant experimental data and Jiang Beifeng discovered that the Governor's Mansion in Jiangnan was stockpiling a large amount of "Iron Armor Bull Milk"...

A truth unfolded before Jiang Beifeng and his team.

Clearly, the so-called secret and trump card of Lu Wu had now been grasped by them.

At this moment, Lin Huai issued the first order.

"Quick, sweep the market immediately, buy up all the 'Iron Armor Bull Milk' that's still available!"

As the head of the Jiangbei Cultivation Center, Lin Huai understood the value of the cultivation plan they had developed better than anyone.

For just 800 points, it could enhance a Black Iron or even ordinary quality White Bone Wild Boar to Bronze Level.

What did this mean?

It meant that the cultivation cost of the White Bone Wild Boar could be reduced by more than half.

It meant a massive business opportunity was right in front of them.

Once this news was announced, "White Bone Wild Boar Soup" would become the hottest cultivation plan, and White Bone Wild Boars would become the most sought-after Summoned Beasts, while "Iron Armor Bull Milk" as the core ingredient would become the bestselling commodity.

The Jiangnan Governor's Mansion had stockpiled "Iron Armor Bull Milk" clearly intending to seize this opportunity to make a fortune.

Since Jiangbei had discovered this, how could they possibly miss such a great opportunity to make money?

Under Lin Huai's instructions, Jiangbei joined the market sweeping immediately.

The Summoner's market is very sensitive.

Jiangbei's involvement caused the price of the "Iron Armor Bull Milk," which was not previously in high demand, to begin soaring, increasing by thirty percent in a short time.

However, Jiangbei did not care about the price increase. Even if the price doubled or tripled, they were willing to spend the money.

Because the production of "Iron Armor Bull Milk" was not high, it was easy to control with money, and as it was the core ingredient of "White Bone Wild Boar Soup," controlling the milk meant they could still make their money back regardless of the cost.

Once Jiangbei cleared the stock, Lu Wu knew about it immediately.

But he pretended not to know and continued to let Zhang Wentao announce that at eight o'clock tomorrow evening, he would reveal the core secret of the "White Bone Wild Boar Soup" cultivation plan.

He also mentioned that this core secret would have a profound impact on the cultivation of the kind of Summoned Beast known as the White Bone Wild Boar.

When Jiangnan made its announcement, the people in Jiangbei laughed.

"Seeing his confidently sworn appearance makes me want to laugh. This kid probably couldn't imagine that we've already seen his cards," one remarked.

Shi Ying was clearly the most amused.

When Lu Wuyi initially talked about having an optimized version, having a core secret, Shi Ying was somewhat panicked.

But soon after Jiangnan's announcement, his side got the optimized plan and found out about the so-called core secret.

With that, Shi Ying's hanging heart was also put at ease.

He even felt relaxed enough to start joking and taunting Lu Wu.

Jiang Beifeng, next to him, felt similar to Shi Ying, though he was even more carefree.

"I lost to Lu Wuyi once before; this time, I can finally see Lu Wu make a fool of himself!

I would really like to see what his expression will be then."

The people in Jiangbei were particularly wicked; although they already had the optimized version and the secret, they deliberately held off releasing it.

They were timing it.

Since Lu Wu announced through Jiangnan channels that he would make the announcement at eight the next evening, such things could not be rescheduled.

So they timed it perfectly.

It was to maximize Lu Wu's embarrassment and to monopolize the relevant resources.

They continued to hold off until two hours before Lu Wu was scheduled to disclose, releasing their optimized "White Bone Wild Boar Soup" at 6 p.m. the next day.

And they did so quietly.

The purpose was not to alert Lu Wu, to let Lu Wu go on stage and talk until he finished, and then they would reveal it and slap Lu Wu in the face.

However, their plan was not successful.

Because at eight o'clock, Jiangnan University updated a post.

They postponed the event, delaying it by five days.

This made the people in Jiangbei feel somewhat regretful.

"It seems they have realized that we have seen their cards."

Unable to see Lu Wu's embarrassed state, Jiang Beifeng was a bit disappointed, but he didn't dwell on it.

"You won't come out, right? Postponing it by five days, huh?

Alright, we'll speak first on our side; I'm curious to see what you can say after five days."

Jiangbei quickly took action, responding officially to this plagiarism incident for the first time.

The approach of Jiangbei was not like that of Jiangnan, which issued statements online, but instead, they directly contacted journalists, formally and officially responding to this matter.

And Shi Ying was pushed to the forefront to handle this situation.

This was how Shi Ying responded to the incident.

"Regarding the recent accusation from Lu Wu, the foster son of the Governor of Jiangnan and a recommended student of Jiangnan University, against our Jiangbei Cultivation Center for plagiarizing his cultivation scheme, I, on behalf of the Jiangbei Cultivation Center, formally respond.

First, please, colleagues, review some documents..."

Shi Ying started off by emphasizing Lu Wu's status as the foster son of the Governor of Jiangnan before presenting the so-called documentary evidence, which proved that a month before Lu Wu submitted his cultivation scheme, they had already received a similar cultivation scheme.

"As you can see, colleague Lu Wu submitted his scheme almost half a month late.

The similarity between both schemes is over ninety-five percent.

Of course, we cannot solely conclude from this that the Cultivation Master who submitted half a month earlier than student Lu Wu is free from suspicion of plagiarism.

After all, during that time, student Lu Wu was busy with the high school league and might not have had the time to upload his work.

Oh, I almost forgot to mention, Lu Wu is also the champion of the Jiangnan high school league.

In just one year, student Lu Wu evolved from an ordinary student to a talented individual excelling in both academics and martial arts, and he even managed to develop the most cutting-edge cultivation schemes for goblins, Little Skeleton, and White Bone Wild Boar, a feat of talent that can only be described as terrifying."

It must be said that Shi Ying's sarcastic manner does not fall short of Lu Wu's.

In fact, it's even more annoying.

Of course, he only dared to say so much and no more, swiftly steering the conversation back and dropping the final bombshell.

"However, in the end, we in Jiangbei confirmed that the author of the 'White Bone Wild Boar Soup' did not plagiarize Lu Wu.

Because just yesterday, that Cultivation Master optimized the 'White Bone Wild Boar Soup.'

After optimization, the 'White Bone Wild Boar Soup' now requires only 800 points to cultivate an ordinary quality 'White Bone Wild Boar' into a 'Bronze Quality'."

From here, Jiangbei's response completely turned into a product launch event.

Journalists' attention was gradually drawn to the cultivation scheme that claimed to turn "ordinary" into "Bronze" with just 800 points.

As soon as the press conference ended, various reports emerged.

The ordinary crowd continued to spectate, but those with Summoned Beasts being 'White Bone Wild Boar' focused their attention on the optimized 'White Bone Wild Boar Soup.'

For Jiangbei, it was time to reap the rewards.

In the office of the Jiangbei leader, Shi Ying excitedly reported to Lin Huai.

"In just one day, the optimized 'White Bone Wild Boar Soup' cultivation scheme sold over 1000 copies.

Each scheme costs 20 points, and just from this, we've earned over ten thousand points.

And that's just the small portion; in terms of materials related to the cultivation scheme, we sold 300 copies in one day, each for 800 points, netting a profit of 255 points per copy, earning over seventy thousand, totaling close to a hundred thousand points of revenue!"

As he spoke these data, Shi Ying felt the blood in his veins boiling.

He knew he was going to make a fortune.

This was only the first day, and the Cultivation Masters had not yet verified the authenticity of the scheme; once they did, these numbers were definitely going to skyrocket.

After all, the White Bone Wild Boar is a relatively common summoning beast, and now with such a cost-effective cultivation method, many cash-strapped Cultivation Masters would surely raise one.

Events indeed turned out as Shi Ying predicted.

By the second day, the cultivation scheme had sold over 3000 copies, and 1500 copies of the materials were sold.

On the third day, the total number of cultivation schemes sold reached 8000, and 4500 copies of materials were sold.

This meant that, in three days, the Jiangbei Cultivation Center had earned over a million points.

They even received military orders from the Jiangbei region; the military ordered 1500 copies in one go, and other provincial militaries were also reaching out to Jiangbei.

One after another, they all eagerly threw their money at Jiangbei.

Lin Huai could never have imagined that by simply bullying Lu Wu a bit, he could reap such benefits.

He was extremely delighted.

The only somewhat displeased person was probably Jiang Beifeng.

Lin Huai had initially promised to help him with that 50,000, but due to several military orders coming in, coupled with some unsettled payments and the recent substantial purchase of Iron Armor Bull herd at Jiangbei, funds were tight, and those 50,000 were not given to Jiang Beifeng.

Naturally, Jiang Beifeng was not pleased.

Fortunately, Lin Huai didn't completely refuse but only requested a postponement.

He even personally negotiated with the internal network, paid some interest, and got the repayment date extended to fifteen days later.

This made Jiang Beifeng willing to continue dealing with Lu Wu.

Yes, dealing with Lu Wu!

Even though Lu Wu had helped Jiangbei earn over a million points, they still needed to deal with him.

That person was not yet satisfied, and Jiang Beifeng hadn't played his move yet.

Now, as the five-day delay mentioned by Lu Wu was almost up, Jiang Beifeng was curious to see if Lu Wu dared to show up and what he would say next.

And Jiang Beifeng's anticipation was indeed well satisfied by Lu Wu.

The five days flashed by, and this time, Lu Wu did not delay any further but chose to start a live stream in his own cultivation room.

Lu Wu had waited five days.

He had endured for five days, and it was time for Jiangbei to spit out what they had swallowed, blood and all.

…

Dizzy, I forced myself to finish coding this chapter,

# Chapter 210: 207 Unable to Evolve

Regarding Lu Wu's intention to reveal the secrets of the "White Bone Wild Boar" during his livestream, the attention was actually still quite huge.

After all, this matter had caused quite a stir.

From the current situation, it was obvious that Lu Wu was the destined loser.

His postponement five days ago and Jiangbei's huge profits from the "White Bone Wild Boar Soup" over the past five days made the situation clear.

So, this so-called explanation, this so-called livestream of Lu Wu.

Anyone with eyes could tell without watching that this was destined to be a public execution.

The outcomes were limited to a few.

Either it would be postponed again, or Lu Wu would keep putting out optimized versions of the "Boneless Wild Boar Soup," continuing to claim that Jiangbei had copied him.

The best possible outcome was just to bring out another plan to prove his innocence.

No matter which situation occurred, Lu Wu was destined to be nailed to the post of shame as a failure or even a plagiarizer.

However, even though everyone knew what the result would be, when Lu Wu actually started the livestream, there were still quite a lot of viewers.

People from Jiangbei, people from Jiangnan, and even many unrelated folks came to watch the fun.

Jiang Yuexing even stopped her work specially to watch her own son's performance.

On Jiangbei's side, a busty young lady was taking a bath and opened the livestream, laying eyes on Lu Wu for the first time.

When she saw the disheveled Lu Wu, she frowned slightly, seemingly disliking his image.

But Lu Wu knew nothing about this.

He was busy livestreaming.

"Over here, over here, Little Skeleton, come this way, nevermind, just don't move. You let go of the phone and let it come on its own."

As Lu Wu spoke, the viewers could see that their viewing angle was rising.

Following that, a sneaky Little Skeleton appeared in the frame.

The little guy hid behind Lu Wu, curiously peering at the livestream, with a flickering Pupil Fire in his eyes, as if he had discovered a new continent.

Then, the viewers noticed that Lu Wu's figure in the livestream was shrinking, while the Little Skeleton's image was getting bigger.

The viewers hadn't reacted when Lu Wu moved swiftly, reaching Little Skeleton's side and slapped it on the head.

"Didn't you see I'm busy? What are you messing around for?"

After slapping Little Skeleton, Lu Wu took out his own phone.

"Lend me your phone, use mine in the meantime, oh, and if you want to watch my livestream, you need to click here, then here, and then here."

"Got it?"

"Good, now go play!"

After sending Little Skeleton away with his own phone, Lu Wu turned back to the camera.

"Hello, dear viewers, hello everyone, I'm the host Lu Wu, stage name Nu Xiao, welcome to my livestream. Those who haven't followed yet, hit follow, and if any rich folks are here, let the gifts flow!"

The viewers watched this scene, each with a baffled expression.

What is this? Still asking for follows? Still asking for gifts? Do you really think you're here to livestream?

What confused the viewers more was that there were indeed people sending gifts.

As soon as Lu Wu finished speaking, someone sent him 100 rockets worth $500 each.

The viewers looked carefully, and the nickname of the person sending Lu Wu gifts was "Jiangbei Cultivation Center Jiang Beifeng"!

And with Jiang Beifeng's tip-off, a string of donations started coming in, with each nickname starting with Jiangbei.

The viewers' expressions suddenly became amused.

So, it looks like there are spoilers here, huh?

Yet, Lu Wu seemed completely unaware of the spoiling, and he even started giving thanks.

"Thank you, Old Tie Jiangbei Wind for the rockets, so generous!"

"Thank you, Old Tie Shi Ying for the yacht, you're even more generous!"

"Thank you to whoever from Jiangbei for the tips, people from Jiangbei are so generous!"

"Thanks to Lu Wu for the super rocket, hmm, Lu Wu is most generous, wait, aren't I just here?"

In the midst of thanking, Lu Wu paused, then reacted.

"Little Skeleton!!!

Did you secretly tip?"

Lu Wu quickly snatched the phone from Little Skeleton hiding in the corner and demanded, "How did you know my payment password?"

Little Skeleton looked innocent and quite resentful.

It wasn't him, Little Skeleton hadn't done anything.

Lu Wu paused, then looked more closely at the tip-off from a user named Lu Wu, clicked on the profile to find out it was really Tuantuan.

Case closed.

"Dudu, is your money burning a hole in your pocket? A fool tips me, and you tip too; wouldn't that money be better spent buying ribs to enjoy?

No, I need to educate Dudu in person to teach her frugality."

Saying this, Lu Wu actually seemed ready to go and educate his silly wife.

This left the viewers quite speechless.

Did Lu Wu really forget what today's livestream was about?

Fortunately, Lu Wu hadn't moved yet, when the phone rang.

Jiang Yuexing called, and keyed in just two words.

"Stop it!"

The moment Jiang Yuexing spoke, Lu Wu calmed down on this side and continued to face the audience.

"Where did we leave off? Oh, live stream versus live stream!

Today, I'm holding this live stream mainly to explain why there was a delay last time."

At last, it began!

Seeing that Lu Wu was finally getting to the main topic, different people displayed different emotions.

Over at Jiangnan's side, especially those led by Zhang Wentao, they were all tense and anticipatory, hoping that Lu Wu would be able to clear his name.

As for Jiangbei's side, led by Lin Huai and Jiang Beifeng, they were all waiting to see Lu Wu make a fool of himself, waiting to see Jiangnan make a fool of themselves too.

Although Lu Wu's performance had just been laughable enough, they were hoping to see something even more tragic.

"Too bad, Lu Wu didn't turn on the comment stream."

Jiang Beifeng even felt slightly regretful for not having the chance to provoke Lu Wu further.

Meanwhile, on Lu Wu's side, he could guess what state certain people were in now and what state they would be in next, especially those on Jiangbei's side.

They were probably laughing now, but soon, they would be crying.

"The reason my last live stream was postponed was because just before the live stream, I suddenly had an idea!

I discovered that using 'Iron Armor Bull Milk' as the core ingredient could further modify and optimize the 'White Bone Wild Boar Soup' cultivation plan.

According to this cultivation plan of mine, with a maximum of 600 points worth of materials, you could elevate a White Bone Wild Boar from 'Ordinary' quality to 'Bronze' quality!"

As soon as Lu Wu said this,

Jiang Beifeng's lips curled up.

"So, indeed, within five days he had further optimized the 'White Bone Wild Boar Soup' plan?

Being able to save 200 points on materials, Lu Wu is truly a genius, too bad it's useless."

How did it matter if Lu Wu had optimized the plan?

Now, Lu Wu was on the side accused of plagiarism, his optimized version wouldn't even pass the review, let alone be sold.

Even if Lu Wu could prove he hadn't plagiarized, it would still require a process, and by the time he completed that process, Jiangbei would have firmly secured the production of Iron Armor Bull Milk and further optimized the plan.

By that time, Lu Wu would still be at a complete loss.

The Lin Huai next to Jiang Beifeng also looked approvingly at him.

This young Jiang had a good foresight indeed, it was his suggestion to work on the Iron Armor Bull herd.

However, just as they were feeling proud over on their side, Lu Wu suddenly turned the corner in his speech.

"But then I discovered that there's a problem with this cultivation plan!

The problem with this cultivation plan lies in its core material, the Iron Armor Bull Milk!"

"Using Iron Armor Bull Milk as the core material can indeed enhance the quality of the White Bone Wild Boar over a short period.

However, it also produces some issues, the most serious ones being three."

"First, due to the attributes of Iron Armor Bull Milk, which somewhat counteracts the Undead Type.

So, although it can enhance the quality of the White Bone Wild Boar, it also impacts the skeletal structure of the White Bone Wild Boar, causing weakened bone connections after fortification.

It might not seem like much ordinarily, but once it encounters a shock attack, it could easily fall apart."

As soon as Lu Wu made this first point, everyone in Jiangbei and those who had purchased and used the 'White Bone Wild Boar Soup' cultivation plan started frowning.

If what Lu Wu was saying was true, then this was indeed a serious issue.

Yet, that was not all, Lu Wu immediately shared the second point.

"Secondly, also due to the attributes of the Iron Armor Bull Milk, after using this plan on White Bone Wild Boar, it produces some exclusive reactions to the Undead Attribute.

This kind of reaction would slowly lead to the weakening of the Undead Attribute skills mastered by the White Bone Wild Boar, possibly weakening it by about one layer."

Now, the faces of those people looked even worse.

And very soon, Lu Wu delivered the most fatal blow.

"The third point, which is also the most important, is that I discovered because of the Iron Armor Bull Milk, White Bone Wild Boars following this scheme cannot evolve into Iron Bone Wild Boars!"

The third point was short, but its impact was the greatest.

With that statement thrown out, the Summoners in Jiangbei who had bought and used the cultivation plan could no longer stay seated.

They desperately wanted to know if what Lu Wu was saying was true.

However, since Lu Wu's live stream had interactions off, they couldn't make a query, and what annoyed them even more was that Lu Wu ended the live stream right after making these three points.

"Alright, that's basically all I wanted to say in this live stream. This is the result of my incessant efforts over the past five days. Now, I'm off to teach my silly Dudu a lesson, see you all later.

Uh, and lastly, thanks again to Old Tie from Jiangbei for the contribution, Old Tie from Jiangbei is truly generous."

After saying that, Lu Wu immediately went offline.

On his end, things were smooth and straightforward, but over at Jiangbei, it was chaos.

"Quick, quick, quick, go verify what he said right now!"

Lin Huai tried his best to calm himself down and gave the first orders.

At this moment, even Jiang Beifeng didn't have his usual composure, quickly picking up his phone to contact the team that worked on optimizing the 'White Bone Wild Boar Soup'.

He urged them to verify it right away.

In this moment, Jiang Beifeng fervently hoped that Lu Wu was lying.

But he knew very well, in his heart, that ninety percent of what Lu Wu said was likely true.

And if what Lu Wu said was true, then Jiangbei was in big trouble, and the trouble for him and Lin Huai was even greater!

# Chapter 211: 208 Tragic end

Lu Wu's livestream had just ended when Jiangbei exploded with activity.

Those who had purchased the White Bone Wild Boar Soup cultivation scheme in the past few days were targeting the Bronze Quality.

A Summoned Beast of Bronze Quality might mean nothing to Lu Wu or the geniuses who could qualify for the high school league provinces competition.

But for an average Summoner, a Bronze Quality Summoned Beast was the very stepping stone to unlock the door to their profession.

Now they'd heard that though the White Bone Wild Boar was indeed Bronze, it couldn't evolve into an Iron Bone Wild Boar, which was a deathblow.

The currently known evolution path for the White Bone Wild Boar was to become an Iron Bone Wild Boar. Without the ability to evolve, it would be stuck at Elite 0 Star. Who would be foolish enough to spend 800 points on an Elite 0 Star Summoned Beast?

So, in less than ten minutes after the livestream, Jiangbei received hundreds of return requests.

These were the easiest to handle.

Jiangbei tried to placate the customers, and if that failed, they would pinch their noses and accept the returns.

What really gave Jiangbei headaches were the various calls for complaints and claims for compensation.

After all, five days had passed, and the majority of the materials from the over 8,000 sold cultivation schemes had already been used.

It was too late to return them, so they could only seek complaints and protect their rights with Jiangbei.

After all, the cultivation scheme had been approved by Jiangbei itself.

Now that the scheme had issues, Jiangbei would undoubtedly have to take full responsibility.

Many people had staked their entire lives' savings on pursuing a profession, and now their hard-earned efforts had gone to waste—could they endure such a blow?

Some even dragged their pigs straight to the Jiangbei Cultivation Center.

Just dealing with these customers was enough to cause a huge headache for the Jiangbei Cultivation Center.

But what was more devastating was the military's reaction. The local military in Jiangbei was still manageable, just requesting cancellations.

However, the military from outside Jiangbei not only demanded cancellations but also demanded compensation for their losses from Jiangbei.

If these were merely customer-level disputes, the last one was organizational trouble.

In less than half an hour after Lu Wu's livestream, the Beijing Headquarters of the Cultivation Center called.

They informed Lin Huai that an investigative team from Beijing would arrive in Jiangbei overnight and requested Jiangbei to prepare for coordination with the investigation.

Upon hearing this news, Lin Huai was almost at the point of having his head explode.

Though the Cultivation Centers were highly autonomous, the authority of the headquarters was significant. If any issue was discovered, decades of Lin Huai's efforts could be wasted overnight.

And did Lin Huai have problems?

Well, the word 'problems' could be omitted; of course, he had problems.

Unlike Zhang Wentao, Lin Huai was an old bureaucrat who valued his interests greatly.

Naturally, he had many issues. Not to mention the distant past, he had just recently misappropriated the finances from Jiangbei University and Jiangbei Cultivation Center to purchase an Iron Armor Bull herd in his own name.

He was preparing to seize a goldmine.

But one livestream from Lu Wu turned the goldmine into a volcano that could erupt at any moment and burn him alive!

Now, Lin Huai could only hope that what Lu Wu said in his livestream was all false.

The optimized cultivation scheme was perfect, with absolutely none of those defects?

But was that possible?

It was about as likely as a daydream!

The issues Lu Wu mentioned were not difficult to verify.

At least, the first two were quite easy to check.

In less than an hour, the verification data arrived at Lin Huai's place.

"Experiments demonstrate that indeed, there is a problem with bone structure linkage in White Bone Wild Boar after using the White Bone Wild Boar Soup, and vibrations do indeed cause the White Bone Wild Boar to fall apart.

Furthermore, the wild boar that had used the White Bone Wild Boar Soup is indeed showing a slight rejection reaction to the Undead attribute.

Last, regarding evolution, while we don't yet have the final data to confirm that the White Bone Wild Boar can't evolve into an Iron Bone Wild Boar after using White Bone Wild Boar Soup, based on the current situation, the success rate of evolution for those who used the optimized soup has indeed decreased.

We cannot rule out the possibility that it can't evolve!"

As the project leader stated the results of the verification, Lin Huai's face changed drastically, turning fierce and grim.

"Are you all blind? How could you have missed such obvious flaws and side effects?

How could you possibly have missed them?"

At this moment, Lin Huai was like a beast ready to pounce, furious and vicious, unable to stay calm.

Because he knew very well what these results meant.

They meant that decades of effort could be lost in an instant. How could he remain calm?

After berating the project director, he turned to Jiang Beifeng. At this moment, Jiang wasn't the sensible and clever subordinate who had brought him great profits anymore, but a harbinger of doom.

"Jiang Beifeng, you pride yourself on being smart, don't you?

Didn't you tell me everything was within your control?

Then tell me, how exactly did you take control? Tell me, how did we get to this point today? And tell me what we should do next!"

Jiang Beifeng was also not in a good state.

But he managed to keep calm, better than Lin Huai.

And he had already deduced what had happened.

"We have been outsmarted by Lu Wu. It's clear he has known about the aftermath problems of the Iron Armor Bull Milk cultivation scheme from the beginning.

He intentionally avoided mentioning it and led us to discover it ourselves.

He probably knew we had fallen into the trap when we started purchasing "Iron Armor Bull Milk" in large quantities, which is why he said he would reveal the secret of "White Bone Wild Boar Soup" the next day. His apparent attempt to prove his own innocence was actually forcing us to launch our product before him, leaving us no time to verify the scheme.

Then he delayed us for another five days, just so we would sell the flawed training scheme on a large scale.

When we had almost sold out, he would step forward and point out the shortcomings of the training scheme, putting us in danger."

In fact, Jiang Beifeng, upon careful consideration, didn't find Lu Wu's move to be particularly clever, it was just that Jiangbei had fallen due to greed.

If it weren't for the greed for the huge profits from "White Bone Wild Boar Soup," they wouldn't have been led by the nose by Lu Wu, nor would they have ended up in this predicament.

But it was useless to say these things now—no one wanted to hear it, including Lin Huai!

"I'm not asking you to be a Monday morning quarterback, I'm asking you what we should do now!"

Jiang Beifeng, true to his name, quickly thought of a solution.

"There's only one thing we can do now!"

"Speak quickly!"

"Push out Shi Ying."

Jiang Beifeng clenched his teeth and continued, "Expose the truth and push Shi Ying out, laying all the blame on his shoulders.

Tell the public that it was Shi Ying who plagiarized and stole Lu Wu's training scheme."

"What's the use of pushing out Shi Ying now?"

"It's useful. Once we push him out, we can turn around and bite back at Lu Wu, telling the public that Lu Wu had known about the flaws in 'Iron Armor Bull Milk' from the very beginning. He deliberately kept silent, intending to trap us Jiangbei and those summoners."

Jiang Beifeng was desperate, "Anyway, in our current state, no matter what we do, we can't escape our involvement. So, it's better to announce it ourselves and firmly latch on to Lu Wu, dragging him down with us.

If we're going down, we might as well splash him with dirty water and fulfill the task given by that certain person.

Only then might that person possibly reach out to save us."

Lin Huai, upon hearing this, felt this made sense.

At this point, his side had completely collapsed, and there was no point in persisting in denial of plagiarism, so he nodded in agreement.

And so, before the team from Beijing even arrived, the Jiangbei side moved into action without a second word and directly pushed Shi Ying forward.

That very day, Jiangbei released a statement saying that an exhaustive investigation into the plagiarism had yielded results.

It was Shi Ying, the head of the Cultivation Scheme Verification Department of Jiangbei, who conspired with the Cultivation Masters and plagiarized Lu Wu's "White Bone Wild Boar Soup" training scheme—a crime most sinister, and he had already been dismissed from his position.

Those who do the dirty work for their leaders are destined to take the fall, almost inescapably so.

Shi Ying, who had dreamed of rising to great heights—even if exposed, it would've been a blessing in disguise—soon after being made the scapegoat, news of his suicide at home from fear of punishment swiftly spread.

After Shi Ying was pushed out to take the blame, Jiangbei continued its operations.

A concerted effort was made to manufacture public opinion and douse Lu Wu with dirty water.

They claimed Lu Wu was cunning and had known about the "White Bone Wild Boar Soup" flaws all along but kept quiet, leading to the downfall of thousands of summoners' life's work.

From a certain perspective, this was also true.

However, at present, the hatred in Jiangbei was locked in more firmly.

Whether it was condemnation or claims, targeting Jiangbei made more sense.

Thus, although some people might bear a grudge against Lu Wu, the bulk of the firepower was still concentrated on Jiangbei.

Jiangbei was heavily tormented.

Lin Huai and Jiang Beifeng were both tormented no less severely.

Few organizations are monoliths, and Jiangbei was no exception.

When the walls fall, everyone is ready to push; when the drum breaks, everyone is eager to strike.

When Lin Huai was untroubled, he was the powerful Jiangbei University President and in charge of the Jiangbei Professional Training Center, with words that carried great weight. But when a problem arose, there were those below him ready to undermine him.

Once the team from Beijing arrived, Lin Huai's misappropriation of public funds to buy the Iron Armor Bull herd was reported.

To save himself, Lin Huai could only sell the bull herd.

But while the "White Bone Wild Boar Soup" was hot, the bulls were a treasure; once the soup lost its appeal, the bulls became worthless.

No one wanted the herd anymore at that time.

So he was unable to cover the financial hole, and even if he could fill the gap from the bull herd, there were those below him ready to dig him another one.

Quickly enough, Lin Huai was caught for corruption, bribery, misappropriation of public funds, and serious bribery and was taken down directly.

From beginning to end, the powerful figure Lin Huai had hoped for never intervened.

This made Lin Huai both angry and desperate. But even so, after being taken down, he dared not utter a single word about that person.

With Lin Huai taken down, it didn't take long for internal network people to come knocking on Jiang Beifeng's door.

He still hadn't repaid the 50,000 points.

With Lin Huai gone, there was naturally no way for Jiangbei to repay this sum for him.

So, the internal network initiated a liquidation process and forcibly auctioned off Jiang Beifeng's properties.

Jiang Beifeng had considerable assets, but not enough to cover the 50,000 points. After selling all assets, he still owed over 3,000, and the internal network immediately signed an Exploration Agreement for the Secret Realm with him.

The day after Lu Wu's live broadcast ended, Jiang Beifeng was sent into an extremely dangerous Secret Realm.

If he managed to come out alive, his debt would be considered settled.

# Chapter 212: 209 Thanks to Jiangbei Old Tie for sending the beef

Jiangnan, Governor Mansion!

"Finally, I showed that woman what I'm capable of! It feels great!"

The rich woman from Lu Wu's house, having put down her queenly facade, laughed like a girl with a face blooming with smiles.

It wasn't easy at all!

Jiang Yuexing had fallen out with that woman over some matter more than twenty years ago.

Ever since then, Jiang Yuexing was always the one being bullied.

She was bullied from all sides.

After she took up the post of Governor in Jiangnan, that woman took direct control of Jiangbei and continued to bully her for five years, resulting in Jiangnan also becoming a miserable mess.

This was the first time in many years that Jiang Yuexing gained the upper hand.

Lu Wu had just finished live-streaming his trump card.

Without saying a second word, Jiang Yuexing took immediate action and brought down Lin Huai and Jiang Beifeng.

Yes, it was her behind-the-scenes push that led to Lin Huai's downfall.

If it weren't for her, it wouldn't have been so easy for Lin Huai to fall, let alone so quickly.

Having taken down Lin Huai, Jiang Yuexing felt she had won a great victory. She was so delightfully happy that she was like the simple-minded daughter of a rich landlord.

However, at that moment, the woman in white threw cold water on her excitement.

"You shouldn't get too happy too soon. That one probably doesn't care about Lin Huai's fate at all.

For her, it's easy to replace Lin Huai and support someone else in his place.

It wouldn't take much effort!"

Upon hearing this, Jiang Yuexing's excited expression dissipated a lot.

She knew that the situation in Jiangbei was different from Jiangnan.

Or rather, their control over their respective territories was different.

Jiang Yuexing had been employed for five years, she had been a figurehead until this year when she finally managed to obtain some power.

Whereas, that woman had been in Jiangbei for twenty years, already having significant control over Jiangbei, and after Jiang Yuexing took office in Jiangnan, that woman took complete control over Jiangbei.

Nowadays, Jiangbei was practically that woman's little kingdom, where her word was even more effective than the Alliance's.

Dismissing a President of Jiangbei University was no difficult feat for her.

Without this level of control, she wouldn't have been so confident in these years to think about annexing Jiangnan to become the Governor of both provinces.

Nevertheless, having gained the upper hand for the first time, Jiang Yuexing was still in a pretty good mood.

"Regardless, being able to take down a President of Jiangbei University, making a good profit on the side, and causing a headache for Jiangbei, I am quite satisfied with the outcome."

Feeling quite pleased, she even considered whether she should be nicer to Lu Wu.

...

Elsewhere, over in Jiangbei.

Jiang Yuexing was right; many people in Jiangbei were indeed having a headache.

Lin Huai had fallen, but a complete mess was left behind.

Issues still needed to be resolved.

Now facing Jiangbei were two problems.

One was the compensation issue with Lu Wu.

The other was pacifying customers who had bought "White Bone Wild Boar Soup."

Firstly, with Lin Huai admitting to plagiarism before his downfall, Jiangbei would have to provide corresponding compensation.

Even though Shi Ying had taken the blame, Jiangbei had profited from the plagiarised cultivation program, so Lu Wu had every right to demand compensation.

Simultaneously with Shi Ying's confession,

Jiang Yuexing immediately sent a letter in the name of Lu Wu to Jiangbei.

She demanded compensation for Lu Wu's financial losses, reputation damage, emotional distress, among other expenses, totaling 1,432,111 points.

Over a million points, down to the last decimal.

The second issue of customer appeasement was even more crucial.

Although the customers' financial losses were around three to four million, beyond the financial aspect, they suffered a greater loss: contract loss.

Because of a cultivation plan, their Summoned Beasts were ruined.

Faced with a choice, they could either accept it and spend a lifetime taking care of an Elite 0 Star Summoned Beast or abandon the White Bone Wild Boar and form a new Contract with another Summoned Beast.

Neither choice was easy, both carrying heavy consequences.

Therefore, some customers had already demanded that the Jiangbei Cultivation Center must compensate them five times their losses.

Now, these two financial responsibilities were weighing down on the Jiangbei Cultivation Center, leaving its executives in hot water.

Their headache was not that they couldn't afford the compensation.

The Jiangbei Cultivation Center had the money; they just didn't want to part with it.

On one hand, they felt that since Lin Huai caused the issue and he had already been removed, there was no reason for his team to foot his bill.

On the other hand, it was also a consideration for the high-ups of the Jiangbei Cultivation Center.

Following Lin Huai's downfall, Zhou Kai, the former second-in-command, was now managing the Professional Center.

He was beginning to sense that the situation behind the scenes was orchestrated by that woman.

So, at this point, how he handled this mess was critical.

It would directly affect whether he could become permanent.

If he did well and satisfied her, he could be confirmed in his position; if he didn't, he might just bite the dust.

Therefore, after much hesitation, Zhou Kai adopted a particularly damaging solution.

Lu Wu's live stream ended on the third day.

The Jiangbei Cultivation Center made a statement again, claiming they would assume full responsibility for the incident and expressed their intention to compensate those whose interests were damaged in the event to the best of their ability.

What a beautiful statement that was; it brought tears to people's eyes and made them sigh at how Jiangbei was still full of good people after all.

But then, Jiangbei's tune changed.

They said that due to the previous head, Lin Huai, embezzling and occupying the Professional Center's funds year after year, the center's finances were in difficulty and might not be able to compensate everyone's losses all at once, so they could only do it in batches.

The victims felt that this was also understandable.

It was quite an achievement for Jiangbei to straighten out their attitude in such a short amount of time.

They didn't expect Jiangbei to compensate everyone in one fell swoop anyway; giving out a little bit to each person in batches would suffice.

After receiving the victims' understanding, Jiangbei quickly set about dealing with the compensation issue and soon posted a compensation list.

Almost all clients were considered, and each would initially get 300 points, totaling 4,677 people, amounting to an expenditure of 1.4 million points.

Looking at this list, the victims were not very satisfied, but they could accept it and looked forward to receiving their first installment of compensation.

But, just when Jiangbei had whet their appetite for the compensation, in less than half a day, they issued another statement.

They announced that due to unforeseen circumstances, Jiangbei would delay compensating their clients.

Just this one short sentence, with no explanation of the reasons.

Now, the victims all exploded, surrounding the Jiangbei Cultivation Center.

They demanded an explanation.

But even faced with this situation, Jiangbei said nothing about the reason and simply kept pleading that they would definitely compensate, but needed a bit more time.

Second-in-command Zhou Kai personally came out to play the victim, even kneeling and apologizing on the spot to a crowd of non-professionals as both a Master Level Summoned Beast and a Master Level Cultivation Master.

For such a big shot to go to this extent, what more could the clients, the victims, say?

They just had to pinch their noses and accept it.

Yet, as they were begrudgingly accepting this, a rumor started to spread.

"Did you hear? They say that the reason Master Zhou Kai is delaying our compensation is that the guy named Lu from Jiangnan is demanding compensation from Jiangbei!

He's claiming that Jiangbei copied his plan and profited from it, so he's asking Master Zhou Kai for a compensation of over 1.4 million points."

"What? Is this news true or false?"

"Master Zhou Kai had agreed to compensate us and then suddenly canceled it, and he was forced to kneel and apologize, what do you think?"

"So Master Zhou Kai just gave it to him like that?"

"His foster mother is the Governor of Jiangnan, what could Master Zhou Kai do?"

"Well, well, well, what a Governor of Jiangnan, what a Lu Wu.

That despicable wretch knew there were problems with the cultivation plan and said nothing, already caused us so much misery, and now he even dares to come and compete with us for compensation?

No way, we can't let him bully us like this, we have to confront him!"

"Right, let's demand answers from him, he must explain himself to us!"

...

With Zhou Kai's performance, the already angry people were easily ignited, and their fury was quickly redirected towards Lu Wu.

That very day, hundreds upon hundreds rushed to Jiangnan to confront Lu Wu for an explanation.

Within the Professional Center, a group of executives who saw this effect eagerly gathered around Zhou Kai to flatter him.

"With this, not only is Jiangbei's reputation restored, but you've also cleverly dealt with the mob outside. Dean Zhou, your move was truly brilliant."

"Dean Zhou is indeed worthy of being Dean Zhou, far more astute than Lin Huai."

"Don't compare Lin Huai with our Dean Zhou, Lin made such a mess out of a small issue and still needed Dean Zhou to clean up after him—how could he be compared to him?"

These executives were acting like real bootlickers.

However, there were also those who were more restrained and pragmatic.

"But now, do we really have to give Lu Wu the 1.4 million-plus points compensation?"

At the mention of points, the executives all quieted down and looked at Zhou Kai, who was well-prepared.

"We definitely have to give something, but it doesn't necessarily have to be money. Didn't Lin Yuan leave behind a herd of Iron Armor Bulls?

I remember when Lin Yuan bought this batch; he spent more than 1 million, right? Just give Lu Wu this herd at a discounted price of 1.4 million!"

As soon as Zhou Kai mentioned this, the executives on the spot burst into laughter.

This herd of bulls were indeed bought by Lin Huai for two to three million, but that didn't mean they were worth that much now.

Lin Huai had been taken advantage of when White Bone Wild Boar Soup was at its peak, artificially inflating prices—it was then that he got fleeced.

But now, with Lin Huai gone and the White Bone Wild Boar Soup craze over, the value of these bulls naturally plummeted.

Previously, Lin Huai had tried everything to sell them but failed, and now they were of no use to Jiangbei.

Unsellable and even necessitating the construction of a pasture to keep them, which was both costly and burdensome, and wouldn't bring in much money, it was better to just pass them to Lu Wu.

As for whether Lu Wu would want them or not?

Did that matter? Jiangbei was going to give them regardless—take it or leave it!

At Zhou Kai's command, Jiangbei immediately had the herd of bulls sent to Lu Wu.

On Lu Wu's end, he was stunned when he heard the news.

"What's going on? They're sending me a herd of Iron Armor Bulls? Is Jiangbei really that generous?

Don't tell me they didn't know that the White Bone Wild Boar Soup's plan was undisclosed and that I had a solution?"

After giving it some thought, a smile curved Lu Wu's lips: "Well, I did keep quiet about that, but anyway, I should still thank the Jiangbei Old Tie for the herd of bulls.

Mmm, the Jiangbei Old Ties are really such good people."

# Chapter 213: 210 Company

About "White Bone Wild Boar Soup."

This thing Lu Wu uploaded was the initial version.

And to fleece, Lu Wu prepared 13 versions of it.

Although there were suspicions of forced uninstalls, no one could imagine the depth of Lu Wu's research on "White Bone Wild Boar Soup."

Jiangbei couldn't possibly fathom that Lu Wu could solve the "White Bone Wild Boar Soup" issue.

After all, over the past three days, Jiangbei had mobilized all its power to study "White Bone Wild Boar Soup" and address the problem at its root.

But the conclusions they reached were harsh.

Any White Bone Wild Boar that used "Iron Armor Bull Milk" in "White Bone Wild Boar Soup" absolutely couldn't evolve into an "Iron Bone Wild Boar."

There were only two ways to solve this problem.

Either spend a lot of money to remove the effects of "Iron Armor Bull Milk" on the White Bone Wild Boar, or find another evolutionary path.

Neither method was reliable.

Jiangbei was completely desperate, believing that the "White Bone Wild Boar Soup" plan was a total failure.

No one could salvage this plan.

Otherwise, they wouldn't have sent the herd of Iron Armor Bulls to Lu Wu.

They even thought their move was quite clever, handling the bulls stuck in their inventory while playing both Lu Wu and the victims.

Lu Wu also thought their move was quite clever.

If only the people from Jiangbei were around, Lu Wu would have loved to give Zhou Kai a kiss.

What a good guy!

Lu Wu immediately called over Li Kai.

"Quick, quick, quick, arrange a ranch for me right away, and yes, don't we have a valley nearby? Contract that valley for me!"

After giving the order, Lu Wu felt something was amiss.

"No, no, wait a second, we can't seem too eager; what if Jiangbei takes back the bulls?

Uncle Li, you prepare first, and once the bulls arrive, we start."

After the instructions to Li Kai, Lu Wu made a call to Jiang Yuexing, opening the conversation by calling her mom, sweetly and sickeningly.

"Spit it out, what do you want?"

Jiang Yuexing now saw right through Lu Wu's antics; his sweet talk meant he definitely needed a favor.

"I need your help to receive a batch of bulls, and I also need you to approve some land for me, I want to keep these bulls."

Jiang Yuexing obviously knew what bulls Lu Wu was accepting and clearly understood the purpose of his call.

"You can solve the White Bone Wild Boar Soup issue!"

See, she was so confident she even dropped the word 'can.'

Lu Wu nodded.

"Mhm, also, I am planning to establish a Summoning Beast Company, the main business being 'White Bone Wild Boar Soup.' Mom, do you want to invest? I'll give you shares!"

Lu Wu tried being cute and adorable.

Attempting to cute his way through.

Unfortunately, it didn't work, and Jiang Yuexing immediately asked the crucial question.

"How many shares will you give me? How much do I need to invest?"

Lu Wu was at a loss for words for a moment; Jiang Yuexing smirked, knowing this guy was all about schemes and not about paying.

Just like someone she knew, a jerk!

"Alright, alright, I'm not interested in your stuff, I'll have someone handle these things for you."

After that, Jiang Yuexing hung up.

Her tone was flat, but Lu Wu on the other end felt his rich woman seemed a bit miffed?

But it's good that the rich woman didn't want money; it saved him a sum!

"Rich woman is so stingy with me, so it's okay if I'm a bit stingy with her, right?

Hmm? Should be no problem!"

Though he said that, when establishing the company, Lu Wu still gave the rich woman twenty percent of the profit-sharing shares.

After all, the rich woman was tight-fisted, but she was still good to him.

Last time in the instance, she gave him a Damage Sharing ring; it was only right to be good to her.

On the rich woman's end, Jiang Yuexing was quite happy when she saw she owned twenty percent of the shares of the company Lu Wu set up, being the second-largest shareholder after Lu Wu.

But her happiness didn't last long.

Because she realized there were several other shareholders.

One was Lu Haikong, one was Pang Duddu, and another was Li Ruyu.

Jiang Yuexing's gaze fixed on the last name, and all her dissatisfaction turned into a cold snort.

Although Jiang Yuexing was unhappy,

she didn't hinder Lu Wu.

She had taken care of everything necessary, provided land for Lu Wu, helped him set up a company, and even sent people to assist Lu Wu in structuring the company and organizing the ranch.

The most effort was put into the cattle aspect.

Jiang Yuexing not only sent people to receive this batch of cattle but also had another batch purchased.

Now that the "White Bone Wild Boar Soup" project was cooling off, many speculative businessmen like Lin Huai were stuck with unsold cattle.

Jiang Yuexing was able to buy at a low price.

The peak price of a cow that had risen to 900 points could now be purchased for 200 points.

Lin Huai had bought 3500 heads at the peak, but Jiang Yuexing rounded it up for Lu Wu, acquiring 5000 heads.

This nearly swept away all the cattle available on the market.

The woman in white shook her head at the scene.

It was clear to her that the Governor was acting out of spite; he refused the no-cost shares and insisted on spending 300,000 points.

However, these 300,000 were Jiang Yuexing's private funds, unrelated to Jiangnan's financials, so she couldn't really object.

However,

"She has been miserably bullied by that person; these 300,000 points are probably her last bit of savings. Spending her savings out of spite means she will likely have to live a tight life hereafter."

Lu Wu was unaware of the rich woman's spiteful actions.

However, after discovering that the number of cattle received had increased by 1500, Lu Wu increased the rich woman's shares by ten percent.

To Lu Wu's surprise, the rich woman refused!

Not only did she refuse, but she also returned ten percent of her shares.

Lu Wu didn't know what was going on with his family's rich woman, but he didn't dare to ask.

His instincts told him that dwelling on this matter would bring no good.

Thus, Lu Wu had to set this issue aside for now and focus on managing the company.

Getting the company up and running was a considerable task.

Fortunately, with the help of the rich woman's people, the framework of the company was set up, and all that was left for Lu Wu to do was to organize the company's leadership.

Lu Wu didn't have many people on hand.

So, Lu Wu had to make use of everyone available; Li Kai, Wang Dashan, and a few other students were called over to establish the structural foundation of the company.

After sorting out the company, next was the ranch.

This did not require much effort from Lu Wu; the rich woman had thoroughly taken care of it.

She set up a huge ranch in the suburbs of Fucheng and even found a group of professional breeders to take care of the cattle.

Lu Wu hardly had to put in any effort.

However, once this batch of cattle had arrived, Lu Wu still personally went to see his 5000 heads of cattle.

Looking at the endless pasture, a strong sense of achievement surged within Lu Wu.

"Ah, this is my empire!

These are my cattle and horses!"

…

While Lu Wu was indulging in his fantasies,

Zhou Kai in Jiangbei also began to sense that something was amiss.

"First, Jiangnan sent the Sea Suppression Tower's people to take away the cattle as soon as they entered Jiangnan's territory, now someone is massively sweeping up cattle in the market. Why do I feel something is off?

Could it be that Jiangnan has found a solution to the 'White Bone Wild Boar Soup' dilemma?"

Upon this thought, Zhou Kai shuddered.

"Impossible, impossible, impossible, absolutely impossible!"

Zhou Kai dared not believe his speculation; if he was correct, then he would be in big trouble.

"It must be that Jiangnan wants to develop the Iron Armor Bull industry, yes, that must be it!

It absolutely cannot be that Lu Wu has mastered the solution to the 'White Bone Wild Boar Soup' dilemma!"

Now, Zhou Kai had no choice but to hope that things would turn out as he thought.

Otherwise, if this matter went sour, the position he hadn't yet secured might no longer belong to him, and he might even fall from power.

However, reality does not change at the behest of one's will.

The events that are destined to happen, no matter how much Zhou Kai prayed or denied, were futile.

…

I've been continuously losing hair these past few days, could it be because I've been typing too much and am going bald?

Ah, I'm already so pitiable; won't you all subscribe to offer some encouragement?

# Chapter 214: 211 Iron Armor Wild Boar

Lu Wu had been busy rounding up cattle and setting up a company.

He had been occupied for three days straight.

His days had been quite fulfilling, but it hadn't gone so well for some.

Zhou Kai was one of them.

Although he was suffering alone in Jiangbei, a group had traveled to Jiangnan to cause trouble.

This group consisted of the victims of the "White Bone Wild Boar Soup" incident.

Stirred up by Zhou Kai, he arranged for people to further provoke their emotions, bringing them to Jiangnan.

For three days, they sought dialogue with Lu Wu.

They demanded Lu Wu explain the situation regarding the "White Bone Wild Boar Soup."

They believed that Lu Wu, the creator of this harmful cultivation program, wasn't entitled to any compensation at all.

Therefore, they wanted Lu Wu to pay 1.4 million in compensation to them.

They also demanded Lu Wu publicly explain his failure to report the incident to the public.

They wanted Lu Wu to kneel and apologize to them like Zhou Kai.

Additionally, they made a series of bizarre demands.

Obviously, those who could make these demands were all from Jiangbei.

They were intensifying the conflict between Lu Wu and the victims.

Although among the victims there were also many rational ones who thought the situation wasn't largely related to Lu Wu,

Lu Wu was also a victim, and they should focus on claiming compensation from Jiangbei.

However, these rational victims were in the minority and most did not come to Jiangnan, choosing to stay in Jiangbei to address the issue.

Those who came to Jiangnan were the more impulsive, radical victims.

Having lost their life savings, their emotions were already unstable and easy to manipulate.

Provoked by agitators, they were easily stirred up.

And then, thousands of people headed for the Jiangnan Professional Cultivation Center.

The Jiangnan Professional Cultivation Center held out for two days, but on the third day, someone slipped up and Lu Wu's home address was leaked.

Then, these thousands of people, along with thousands of pigs, surrounded Lu Wu's villa, chanting slogans at it.

Mostly things like, "Despicable Lu Wu, return our hard-earned money!"

"Shameless scoundrel, kneel and apologize!"

Such were the slogans.

One by one, burning with righteous indignation, they demanded Lu Wu come out and talk to them.

As for this situation, Lu Wu didn't care.

In fact, it could be said that Lu Wu intentionally let it happen.

After all, this was Jiangnan, Fucheng, the stronghold of Jiang Yuexing.

If it wasn't for Lu Wu's intentional indulgence, how could these people have caused such a commotion?

Lu Wu wanted them to create a scene, to keep the issue hot until he had almost dealt with his matters, then he would resolve the problem of the "White Bone Wild Boar Soup."

This kind of marketing tactic was something Lu Wu had learned before his time travel.

Used properly, it could not only solve the problem but also make the "White Bone Wild Boar Soup" explode in popularity.

So Lu Wu let them make a scene, didn't interfere, and even had the media stir up the hype.

Of course, Lu Wu didn't forget to ask the rich woman to help keep an eye on things, to prevent any chaos.

In theory, with the rich woman watching, nothing should go wrong.

But damn it, sometimes things don't go as expected.

And indeed, something did happen.

On the first night that these people surrounded Lu Wu's villa, someone among the victims died.

This person was arranged by Jiangbei to incite emotions.

It was said that during the day, he was the one who most fiercely criticized Lu Wu.

Several times, he tried to storm Lu Wu's villa door, demanding Lu Wu come out to talk, demanding Lu Wu kneel and apologize to the victims, and he repeatedly insulted Lu Wu as well.

It could be said, under everyone's eyes, he maxed out his hatred value.

Such a person suddenly died, what could have happened? Who could be the prime suspect?

Without a doubt, it must be Lu Wu!

Thus, the emotions of this group of victims were immediately ignited.

Thousands of people stormed Lu Wu's villa, demanding the murderer be handed over.

"Damn, I didn't expect the people from Jiangbei to be so ruthless, actually using a human life to stir up trouble.

No, we can't delay any longer, we must resolve this issue as soon as possible!"

Under these circumstances, naturally, Lu Wu could no longer afford to delay.

Thus, on the second day of the siege, at noon, Lu Wu officially appeared.

At that time, thousands of people and pigs still surrounded Lu Wu's villa.

They were calling for Lu Wu to come out, but as they shouted, they suddenly felt that something was amiss.

"Look behind you!"

Someone shouted, and the victims turned to look behind them immediately. Upon seeing what was there, they were stunned.

A pig truck had appeared right behind them.

A pig carriage, pulled by three Boss Level Iron Bone Wild Boars, was slowly approaching them.

One pig had a Boss Level Skeleton Gunner riding on its back, and sitting in the carriage was a Little Skeleton holding a phone, embracing a Bone Staff and clad in a Magic Robe.

Beside it, a goldfish was floating with a plucked bird foolishly staring at the fish, seemingly lost in thought.

The group of victims who had come knew about Lu Wu beforehand.

They knew these were Lu Wu's Summoned Beasts.

What intimidated them wasn't the all-Boss lineup of summoning beasts on Lu Wu's side.

Rather, it was the Summoning Beast Army slowly advancing behind the pig carriage, hundreds of beasts arranged in formations according to their species, which left a remarkable impression.

Such a display was quite astonishing indeed.

This scene alone had subdued the thousand people present.

Hearing the sudden silence outside and seeing the dumbfounded victims, Lu Wu looked up at Little Skeleton's phone hovering in the sky, and at the rapidly increasing viewer count in the livestream, topping a million in a short time, Lu Wu nodded in satisfaction.

This grand entrance had been long-awaited and meticulously planned by Lu Wu.

Today, it finally came into play, and Lu Wu felt quite comfortable.

Only, the victims in front of Lu Wu weren't feeling as comfortable.

Damn it, we came here for justice, not to watch you, Lu Wu, show off.

Someone from Jiangbei who came to stir up trouble immediately stepped forward.

"Lu Wu, you finally showed yourself..."

Before he could finish his sentence, Lu Wu leisurely interrupted him.

"Gao Zhanlong, male, thirty-three, married, amateur Professional Summoner, initial summon is a goblin, Elite Three Stars.

Formerly a non-staff member of Jiangbei Professional Center, contracted a White Bone Wild Boar three days ago and used 'White Bone Wild Boar Soup.'

His purpose was to infiltrate the group of victims and incite them.

He was also the last person to see Zhang San last night, the deceased, making him a major suspect in the case."

Gao Zhanlong's face changed, and seeing that things were heading south, someone stood up to back Gao Zhanlong.

"Lu surname, you better not slander..."

"Zheng Yaoxian, male, thirty-one, single, amateur Professional Summoner, a non-staff member of Jiangbei Professional Center..."

"Gong Shu, male, twenty-nine, single..."

...

Lu Wu recited the data of more than a dozen people in one go.

Unsurprisingly, all these people were arranged by Jiangbei.

As the details of these people were read out one by one, the thousands of victims calmed down, though not entirely convinced.

But one by one, their rationality gradually returned as they started to think they might have been manipulated.

Reflecting on it, they realized that these were indeed the most fanatic and aggressive among them.

This was the effect Lu Wu had hoped for.

"Everyone here is not a fool; you can discern for yourselves whether their identities are true or false, and you probably know what their motives are."

"How should I put it, this group from Jiangbei is truly despicable.

They copied my cultivation plan and created this mess, not thinking of solving the problem but rather focusing all their efforts on exploiting the victims and me, the original creator.

Lin Huai was like this, and so was the newly appointed what's-his-name, Jiangbei, really leaves one at a loss for words."

With these words, Lu Wu effectively aligned himself with the victims.

The control of the situation was completely in Lu Wu's hands.

And Lu Wu didn't give the victims a chance to react before he delivered his trump card.

"Let's not dwell on Jiangbei's matters. Let's go back to the 'White Bone Wild Boar Soup' cultivation plan itself.

Actually, I only recently found out the drawbacks of this plan.

It wasn't intentional concealment or failure to report.

I also didn't expect Jiangbei's operations to be so efficient, selling thousands of copies in just a few days."

"Of course, there is definitely a fault on my part too, areas where I could have done better.

If I could have protected my cultivation plan from being copied, none of this would have happened, and you wouldn't have been harmed so badly by Jiangbei."

"So, after the incident, I've been feeling very guilty and have also been actively looking for a solution."

None of the victims on the ground liked hearing this from Lu Wu.

It sounded just like empty official talk, empty promises everyone could make.

So young, yet speaking like an old bureaucrat.

But then they heard Lu Wu continue.

"Fortunately, I finally found a solution. If they can't evolve into Iron Bone Wild Boars, why not evolve into something else?

So I've been working tirelessly, exhausting all efforts, and finally, I've found another evolutionary path for the White Bone Wild Boar, a path suitable for you."

When he said this, the victims were all stunned.

And when they saw that Lu Wu selected several White Bone Wild Boars among them, reaching Elite Level, and in less than two hours, evolved them into 'Iron Armor Wild Boars' right there,

the victims' confusion turned to joy.

The seemingly officious Lu Wu transformed before their eyes into a likable young man who spoke pleasantly.

At the same time, watching this scene through the livestream and hearing Lu Wu announce that the 'Iron Armor Wild Boar' evolution plan had been verified and was available for purchase on the internal network, Zhou Kai completely collapsed.

Muttering under his breath.

"It's impossible, this can't be!"

# Chapter 215 215: 212 got rich

Actually, Jiangbei was just unlucky this time.

They suffered because they knew too little.

They underestimated Lu Wu's level.

What they didn't realize was that the optimized version they used was actually one that Lu Wuyi had initially discarded.

In the beginning, Lu Wuyi set out on the "Iron Armor Bull Milk" path, but once he realized he needed a whole new evolution scheme to move up, he changed his course.

After all, he had a competition at the time and decided to go with the "Iron Bone Wild Boar" path first.

But even though he went with the "Iron Bone Wild Boar" path, Lu Wu still had ideas about the iron armor, so there were significant traces of it in his cultivation scheme, which made it very convenient for Lu Wu to mislead Jiangbei.

This was an unintentional small trap that Lu Wu had left in his own cultivation scheme.

And when Lu Wu found out his scheme had been copied, he took advantage of this little trap.

He first deliberately led Jiangbei astray, and then he feverishly worked on the evolution scheme.

Lu Wu was quite fortunate as, within five days, he came up with an evolution scheme for the "Iron Armor Wild Boar."

Then Jiangbei's side was in trouble.

Of course, Jiangbei didn't know this and even if they did, they wouldn't believe Lu Wu could come up with a new evolution scheme within five days.

Look at Zhou Kai who was still in a frenzy.

"There must be a problem, definitely a problem. How can an evolution scheme be developed so easily?"

Zhou Kai just couldn't believe that Lu Wu had actually solved the "White Bone Wild Boar Soup" issue.

And he did it in the most domineering way.

He just came up with a brand new evolution scheme that allowed the White Bone Wild Boar to evolve directly into an "Iron Armor Wild Boar."

Who would believe such a thing?

But very quickly, Zhou Kai had to believe it because the attributes of the "Iron Armor Wild Boar" were made public.

...

Name: Iron Armor Wild Boar (One-time Evolution)

Power: 1 star (Elite)

Quality: Ordinary (Upgraded)

Attribute: Undead, Metal

Weakness: Light, Flames

Talent: Iron Armor State (Passive) (Increases physical defense by 15%, magic defense by 5%, and strength by 30%)

...

These were the basic attributes of the Iron Armor Wild Boar.

In addition, there were three pages of various detailed data.

Looking at this data, all the original problems with the White Bone Wild Boar were resolved after evolution, looking on all fronts to be roughly on par with the "Iron Bone Wild Boar," and even a bit better in terms of talent.

What forced Zhou Kai to believe it was that

This set of data was not published by Lu Wu, but by the Beijing Cultivation Center Headquarters.

Yes, Beijing Headquarters.

As soon as Lu Wu told Jiang Yuexing that he could solve the "White Bone Wild Boar Soup" issue and explained how he would do it,

Jiang Yuexing contacted Beijing Headquarters and asked Lu Wu to send the evolution scheme over.

On one hand, it was because of Jiang Yuexing's connections, and on the other hand, the issue between Jiangnan and Jiangbei had become very big, plus Beijing was also very interested in Lu Wu's new evolution scheme.

So after the scheme was submitted, they verified it in just two days.

Not only did they evolve an "Iron Armor Wild Boar" but they also conducted tests on all fronts, and issued the above report.

Their efficiency was many times faster than Jiangnan's.

Little Skeleton's evolution scheme had been submitted for several months and Jiangnan was still not finished verifying it.

However, it wasn't entirely Jiangnan's fault.

After all, cultivating Little Skeleton was difficult, and the evolution's direction was towards a Mage, so it was normal for it to be slower.

Additionally, materials for the White Bone Wild Boar were abundant and easy to come by, making verification simpler and quicker.

And with the data backed by Beijing Cultivation Center Headquarters, everything for Lu Wu from that point on went smoothly.

The victims who originally surrounded Lu Wu's house left once they realized the problem had been solved, and they had no reason to cause further trouble.

And Lu Wu took this opportunity to re-optimize the "White Bone Wild Boar Soup" cultivation scheme.

The scheme uploaded by Jiangbei at best was only the "White Bone Wild Boar Soup 5.0" version, and that was the misled version of 5.0.

When Lu Wu made his move, he directly split the "White Bone Wild Boar Soup" into two series.

One was the regular "Iron Bone Wild Boar" path series, and the other was the "Iron Armor Wild Boar" path series.

The former was named "True White Bone Wild Boar Soup 13.0," and the latter was the "White Bone Wild Boar Soup 9.0" version.

Both versions could upgrade the quality to Bronze, the difference being the former would cost about 1500 points, while the latter, despite having some issues before evolution, would only need 600 points. Even adding on the extra cost of evolving into an "Iron Armor Wild Boar," the total would only be around 1000 points.

In other words, for just 1000 points, one could, without any unexpected issues, knock on the door to a profession.

With that, the "White Bone Wild Boar Soup 9.0" became the hottest cultivation plan of the moment.

The day Lu Wu uploaded this plan, sales reached 3,000 copies, and just from that, Lu Wu had made 30,000 points.

In addition, the company Lu Wu had just started had also opened for business.

Although they were not yet able to sell all the ingredients for "White Bone Wild Boar Soup 9.0," they controlled 5,000 Iron Armor Bulls.

Their ranch was practically the largest in the entire Alliance when it came to Iron Armor Bulls.

They had control over seventy percent of the market's supply of bulls.

Whether it was "White Bone Wild Boar Soup 9.0" or the evolution of the Iron Armor Wild Boar, "Iron Armor Bull Milk" was one of the core ingredients.

As a result, when the "White Bone Wild Boar Soup 9.0" cultivation plan exploded in popularity once more, a flood of merchants swarmed to Lu Wu's side.

The milk produced by Lu Wu's ranch was basically all booked each day.

After calculating, Li Kai found out.

Just from selling milk, the ranch could bring in a net profit of 50 to 60 thousand points for Lu Wu every day.

Almost every day, each bull could earn Lu Wu 10 points.

This excited Lu Wu greatly.

In a day, 50,000; in a month, that's 1.5 million points; in a year, that's nearly 20 million points.

Suddenly, Lu Wu felt he no longer needed to put in any effort.

"What do I need a rich woman for? Why bother going to school? Why take part in any university league? Why compete in any Cultivation Master contests?

No need to do anything anymore, I don't have to do a damn thing!

Sitting at home, I can level up to the max!"

Lu Wu sat at home looking at the ledger, laughing so hard his mouth was almost crooked.

He was absurdly inflated with pride.

"So, the rich woman wanted me to join the university league just to solve Jiangnan University's financial crisis, huh? Come on, tell me how much Jiangnan University owes Jiangbei, and I'll pay it back for Jiangnan!

I'll become the creditor of Jiangnan University!"

Hmm, that's what Lu Wu thought, and he actually did just that, instantly calling the rich woman.

He expressed that as a son, he wanted to contribute to his mother's efforts.

Jiang Yue Xing was very gratified and disclosed the amount Jiangnan owed.

"Five hundred million!"

"What the hell?"

"Five hundred million! Jiangnan University owes Jiangbei University five hundred million!

You said you wanted to repay it, right? When are you going to transfer the money to me?"

Lu Wu's expression became serious, "Mom, just leave the university league to me. I promise to handle it perfectly!"

After saying that, Lu Wu hung up the phone.

Then he slapped his own face.

"I think I'm still young, I still need to work hard!

Yeah, isn't my Iron Bone Wild Boar's evolution almost done? Come on, let's work hard and aim to finish it tonight!"

Saying this, Lu Wu really did start working diligently and made his way to the Cultivation Room.

He planned to work on the evolution of the Iron Bone Wild Boar, a project he stumbled upon while cultivating the Iron Armor Wild Boar.

Once he gets these three pig evolutions underway, Little Skeleton's combat power could be further improved.

School was about to start, and it was time to prepare for the university league. Any amount of extra strength would help.

And just as Lu Wu adjusted his mindset and worked hard on the evolution plan for the Iron Bone Wild Boar,

Inside a room of Lu Wu's villa, a person was curled up in bed, his face fierce and his body shivering continuously, as if resisting something, in immense pain.

This condition lasted for over an hour until the person lying on the bed finally relaxed.

He knew he had made it through another day.

But he didn't know whether he could make it through tomorrow.

Ever since he began killing people yesterday,

that pain, that bloodthirsty impulse surging out from within became even more terrifying.

If this continued, he knew he would eventually lose control of himself.

He knew he couldn't go on like this.

But what should he do, ask Lu Wu for help?

How would Lu Wu view him, now that he had become a monster?

Perhaps he would, no, he definitely would come to his rescue, but could Lu Wu really help him with his condition?

He didn't know; maybe he could, maybe he couldn't.

Right now, his feelings were very complicated; he both hoped that Lu Wu could save him and didn't want to trouble him, let alone let Lu Wu see himself as a monster.

"Perhaps, leaving is the right choice after all!"

# Chapter 216 216: 213 Two Plans

Jiangbei.

With the "White Bone Wild Boar Soup" incident gradually drawing to a close,

Jiangbei began to churn internally.

For, not long after the conclusion of the incident, Zhou Kai stepped down, and the man most eligible to take the highest positions of both Jiangbei University and Jiangbei Cultivation Center left them vacant, stirring up ambition among those below.

One by one, they rubbed their hands in anticipation, ready to vie for these two spots.

However, before their competition had even begun, it suddenly came to an abrupt end.

The Education Bureau directly parachuted a new President for Jiangbei University.

As for the Professional Training Center, the Beijing Headquarters also recommended someone to take the lead.

With both giant mountains of the Alliance having spoken, the situation in Jiangbei seemed to be stabilized all at once.

On the very next day after the decree was issued,

Two spirited middle-aged men stepped into Jiangbei.

They were on a mission from their organization.

They swore to change the landscape of Jiangbei, to break down the small kingdom of a certain individual,

To return Jiangbei fully and completely into the embrace of the Alliance.

"Those old fools are at it again. I just conceded slightly to that stupid woman and they think they have a chance?

A bunch of old things with good memories for food but not for beatings.

Forget it, let them come. Think of it as boring entertainment," said a certain "big sister," while looking through several documents in her hand.

She pondered which card to play, which person to use for the best effect.

"Let's go with this one. She's been out having fun for so long, it's about time she came back. If she doesn't, she might forget she even has a mother!"

Saying this, the big sister tapped her slender finger on the photo of a girl.

......

Jiangnan.

On Lu Wu's side,

The evolutionary path of the White Bone Wild Boar, until the "Iron Armor Wild Boar" appeared, had always been just the single "Iron Bone Wild Boar."

Without a second evolution scheme, the pinnacle of White Bone Wild Boar would only be Boss 1 Star Level.

Such is the disadvantage of low-quality Summoned Beasts.

The ceiling is low.

The limits others easily reach at birth require tremendous effort and countless resources for them to achieve.

And every step upward is exponentially harder for them than for higher-quality Summoned Beasts.

And naturally, all this difficulty ultimately falls on the shoulders of the Summoner.

Nevertheless, Lu Wu was quite willing to tackle such difficulties.

On the one hand, as a Cultivation Master, Lu Wu was very interested in resolving this kind of issue,

On the other hand, by solving the "Iron Bone Wild Boar" problem, not only could Lu Wu enhance his own power, but he could also make a profit.

White Bone Wild Boars are not unpopular. There are countless who are stuck at the Boss level and cannot advance further, so if Lu Wu could break the limit, making a fortune was definitely out of the question.

Regarding the evolutionary scheme of the "Iron Bone Wild Boar,"

Lu Wu currently had two plans in mind.

One was to alter the evolutionary route entirely, abandoning the Iron Bone path for the Iron Armor path.

Upgrading to the Iron Armor Bull, evolving it into either the Iron Armor Black Bull or the Bronze Bull, using their milk as the core material.

With the 5,000 Iron Armor Bulls that Lu Wu held in his hands, the benefits of success with this plan were self-evident.

The other plan was the Fusion scheme Lu Wu initially intended to pursue.

Fusing the Iron Bone Wild Boar and the Skeleton Warrior to follow the Skeleton Knight route.

Although this path wouldn't make money, Lu Wu was still very interested and had researched it for a long time.

One made money, while the other did not.

Between the two options, Lu Wu hesitated for just a second before ultimately making a decision.

Hmm, as a mature and handsome adult, Lu Wu chose both!

He wanted to make money and have the Skeleton Knight, too.

This really increased Lu Wu's workload a lot.

But this wasn't a big deal for him, either. Ever since his transmigration and acquisition of the Golden Finger, being busy had become his norm.

Being engaged in studying and working for over ten hours a day was typical for him.

Now, spending over ten hours a day in the lab didn't bother Lu Wu at all.

He thought it was quite nice; he was well-suited to it.

Dudu on the other hand was also getting used to it. When Lu Wu worked, she would just hold Tuantuan and watch by his side.

Over the past year, Dudu had gotten the hang of it.

Even if Lu Wu was completely focused on his work and had no time to pay attention to her, it was no problem.

She was content just watching him from the side.

Of course, if Lu Wu needed her to serve tea, fetch water, do laundry, or cook while he was working, and she could be of some help to him, Dudu was even happier.

It felt like being a child bride, doing nothing all day but revolving around Lu Wu.

Dudu acting this way was something Lu Wu felt quite comfortable with.

With this chubby girl by his side, Lu Wu felt very assured.

But someone thought this wasn't okay. One day, Lin Jianying stopped Dudu while she was cooking.

"You know this isn't good, right?"

"Huh?" Dudu was completely puzzled.

"I know you're happy this way, and I know you feel blessed, but you can't go on like this forever."

Lin Jianying's mood seemed off; he normally wouldn't say such things.

He knew it was probably pointless.

Dudu wouldn't change her ways, but he still wanted to speak up. He was afraid that if he didn't say it now, he might not get another chance.

"Don't you see that Lu Wu is striving for greater things?

Even someone as strong and talented as him is always working hard. You can't relax, okay?

Lu Wu will continue to get stronger, and you need to keep getting stronger, too!

Only then can you keep up with him."

Lin Jianying spoke very earnestly and sincerely; he was truly speaking from the heart, but Dudu still completely failed to understand.

"Old Lin, can we talk about this another time? I'm in a hurry."

"You still don't get it!

It seems necessary to let you face some realities!"

Old Lin spoke to himself, which made Dudu a bit unhappy.

"Move aside, I need to make food for Lu Wu!"

Lin Jianying didn't step back, his aura slowly building up.

He wanted Dudu to understand a simple truth.

To stand by someone like Lu Wu required an understanding of the commitment involved.

"Wait a second, this won't take much time. I need to show you how much you've fallen behind because you've wasted..."

"Slap!"

Dudu, in her rush to cook for Lu Wu, didn't let Lin Jianying finish his life lesson. She smacked him, sending both him and the goblin flying.

"I told you I'm in a hurry, hmph. I'm not making your portion for lunch."

Having said that, Dudu holding Tuantuan quickly scurried off to cook.

This was Dudu's first time hitting someone.

It showed just how dangerous it was to hinder Dudu from cooking for Lu Wu.

On the other hand, Lin Jianying, having been sent flying by a slap, took a while to regain his senses.

He looked up at the receding Dudu, recalling that terrifying slap, and smiled.

It seemed she didn't need his concern after all.

"Pretty good, this is fine, too!"

...

I woke up late in the morning, so the first update is a bit short.

Well, it's been so long, it's time for you to experience my short updates for a change.

# Chapter 217 217: The 214 plan is unveiled

In the office of the Jiangbei University President.

The new Jiangbei University President Zhao Jianzhi held a cup of clear tea as he gazed down at Jiangbei University through the window, a smile hinting at the corners of his mouth.

He had taken office five days ago.

In those five days, his colleagues at Jiangbei University had prepared many a welcoming gift for him.

On his first day in office, he requested a meeting, but not a single senior staff member attended.

On the second day, he proposed to review the university's finances and was ignored by everyone.

The third day was even more bizarre; a female teacher was actually prepared to offer herself to him.

Of course, there were people waiting outside ready to catch him in the act.

...

In just five short days,

Jiangbei University had laid various traps for him through all kinds of means, a misstep could mean his utter ruin.

It was clear that they were all sending him the same message.

Jiangbei University didn't welcome him!

Jiangbei didn't welcome him!

Under such circumstances, he found it extremely difficult to move forward, not to mention carrying out his work and completing his tasks, even being a good president was hard.

But faced with this situation, Zhao Jianzhi was not discouraged.

He knew what he would be up against before he came.

Had he not been prepared to face these circumstances, he wouldn't have come at all.

Moreover, he hadn't come away empty-handed in these five days.

In just five short days, he could already see that Jiangbei University was a deformed institution.

The strife here was more intense than at any other university, any other power.

Such a place, where hearts could never be truly united, clung together solely out of fear for someone.

And this kind of unity born out of fear was, in fact, quite fragile and easily shattered.

"Just you watch, in three months, no more than three months, I'll make her lose her grip on Jiangbei University!"

Zhao Jianzhi was full of confidence, and he had every right to be.

His words were no vain boast.

When he made this statement, he already had a complete plan in mind.

He was sure his plan was perfect, and he believed that the power behind him would help him carry out this plan.

However, just as Zhao Jianzhi was brimming with confidence,

He noticed some unrest within the campus.

The source of the disturbance was not the restless students but those elusive senior officials of the university who had shown their faces only sparingly in the past five days; they were now emerging from whatever corners they had hidden in and gathering together.

Waiting beneath this office building with utmost respect.

This scene made Zhao Jianzhi frown.

"It looks like they're here to welcome someone?

Who requires such a reception from them? Could it be her?"

Thinking of that person, a trace of tension appeared on Zhao Jianzhi's face without his own awareness.

He was not ready to face her.

"However, it's not always possible to face someone in the best shape, and since she has come, it's not bad to meet her!"

Zhao Jianzhi quickly adjusted his mindset.

Straightening his clothes and holding that cup of tea, Zhao Jianzhi headed downstairs.

And just as he reached the ground floor, the person the group of high-ranking officials from Jiangbei University were waiting for also arrived.

Zhao Jianzhi raised his eyebrows—it wasn't her, but a girl.

A girl who looked to be in her twenties, dressed in a blue short-sleeve T-shirt matched with denim shorts, wearing thick-soled boots of indeterminate leather origin, with a ponytail and a duck-tongue hat, her tanned skin radiating youth and wildness.

Zhao Jianzhi was still puzzled, unsure of who she was,

When the people around all bowed in unison.

"Miss, welcome back!"

Dozens of big shots bowed in unison—it was quite a scene.

Zhao Jianzhi watched, his lips twitching involuntarily.

Please, you are university professors, not someone's house slaves, alright?

Despite his internal complaints, Zhao Jianzhi soon realized who this girl was—it must be Zhang Yuechu, the daughter of that influential figure.

When in Rome, do as the Romans do, Zhao Jianzhi also stepped forward to greet her.

"Miss Zhang, it's a pleasure to meet you; I've long heard of your beauty and grace..."

"Are you Zhao Jianzhi?"

Zhao Jianzhi was abruptly interrupted before he could finish his sentence.

Seeing the situation, he knew it was unfriendly, and the smile on his face immediately retracted.

"That's me, may I know what guidance Miss Zhang has to offer?"

Zhang Yuechu nodded, "Yes, I'm in charge of Jiangbei University now, so pack up and leave!"

"What!"

Zhao Jianzhi was a bit taken aback; this was too direct.

"Miss Zhang, I am from the Education Bureau..."

"Don't want to leave?"

"I have no reason to leave, and you don't have the right to force me out..."

Before he could finish his sentence, a terrifying aura pressed down on him, and Zhao Jianzhi's face changed color. He hadn't expected the other party to resort to violence without a word. Instantly, he summoned his strongest summoned beast, the Earth Fire Winged Dragon at the Professional Level 3 Star.

However, as soon as the summoned beast appeared, Zhang Yuechu blew it away with a punch.

His strongest summoned beast was destroyed, and the terrifying backlash struck Zhao Jianzhi's soul, severely damaging it, and it didn't stop there.

Zhang Yuechu stepped closer and threw another punch directly into Zhao Jianzhi's chest.

This horrific punch nearly killed Zhao Jianzhi, and clearly, Zhang Yuechu had held back her strength.

After striking down Zhao Jianzhi, a Master Level summoner at the peak of his game, Zhang Yuechu stopped and said indifferently, "President Zhao Jianzhi was attacked on campus, critically injured and nearly dead. From now on, I will take over as the acting president of Jiangbei University!"

Hmm, the girl had made quite an entrance upon her return.

This show of power was aimed not only at the figures behind the Education Bureau but also at her mother.

She wanted to tell her that since she had been allowed to return and had been given Jiangbei University, from today onwards, Jiangbei University would be her turf.

She would make Jiangbei University strong in her own way.

No one was going to boss her around on her turf!

......

Whether Zhang Yuechu's show of power had frightened her mother was uncertain.

But Lu Wu's mother was truly scared.

Yes, this was the thing.

As soon as Zhang Yuechu returned, Jiang Yuexing received the news right away.

She really got a shock.

"How could this woman come back? Why did she hand Jiangbei University over to this woman?"

Jiang Yuexing was a bit panicked.

No one understood that mother and daughter duo better than she did.

The mother, sinister, cunning, mean, and shameless, had outsmarted her with her brains and methods.

Her daughter, domineering and authoritative, bullied her with brute force.

She could barely handle one of them, but now that both were back, Jiang Yuexing felt the whole world had darkened.

"I knew it. Why had she been so quiet recently? She was just plotting this bad move!"

......

On the other side, at the Education Bureau.

Zhang Yuechu had just put Zhao Jianzhi in his place.

Less than half an hour later, the Education Bureau received the news.

"Insolence, such insolence!"

Inside the Education Bureau, North Jiang Boss Zhao Yugu, who had recommended Zhao Jianzhi to Jiangbei University, was furious: "Committing violence in public, injuring the president appointed by the Education Bureau, Zhang Yuechu really has gone too far.

Chairman, I request an order be issued to arrest Zhang Yuechu immediately."

The chairman stayed silent, his head bowed, while an understanding member beside him tried to give the chairman an out.

"Well, Jiangbei University professors testified that Zhao Jianzhi was seriously injured by an Evil Summoner, and Zhang Yuechu saved him!"

When Zhao Yugu heard this, he laughed angrily: "Do you really believe such child's play? What kind of Evil Summoner is so strong that they could severely injure the president within Jiangbei University?

Chairman, Zhang Yuechu is a great malefactor, she must be severely punished."

"Since Elder Zhao doubts the report from Jiangbei University, why not ask Elder Zhao to lead a team to investigate personally?"

Hmm, with this one sentence out there.

Zhao Yugu had nothing more to say.

He only dared to shout in this place, letting him go and find trouble with Zhang Yuechu.

He dared not, he was also panicked.

After all, the girl was notorious for being unreasonable, and her background was even more notoriously solid.

Her mother was now the de facto ruler over Jiangbei, not to mention her even more feared father.

Her mother had repeatedly stated in public that Zhang Yuechu's father was "that man."

He was a man even the Elder Council was reluctant to offend lightly; who among them dared to provoke him easily?

Moreover, Zhang Yuechu herself was an incredibly distinguished talent.

At 18, her initial Summoning brought forth a Summoned Beast with King-level Quality, and in less than six months, she reached a professional level.

By 19, she had reached the Senior Professional Level as a Summoner.

At 21, she was a Master Level Summoner.

As soon as she became a Master Level Summoner, she forcefully killed a summoner at the peak of Master Level.

She was now 26, having just returned from five years of training in the Secret Realm, and no one could say for sure what her power was now.

With terrifying personal power and a fearsome background, who the hell, having nothing better to do, would dare to provoke her?

Didn't they see how her mother turned Jiangbei into a little kingdom, with the Elder Council turning a blind eye?

"Let it be, let it be. No one died; let's just drop it."

In the end, after venting, Zhao Yugu could only back down.

......

On Lu Wu's side.

At this moment, he had no idea what was happening in Jiangbei.

He was busy with the Evolution of the Iron Bone Wild Boar.

After a busy week, the evolution plan for the Iron Bone Wild Boar and the plan for the evolution of the Skeleton Knight were finally sorted out.

...

Evolution Plan: Steel Armor Wild Boar

Description: The Second Evolution plan for the Iron Armor Wild Boar, with Copper Armor Cow Milk as the main ingredient, supplemented with Steel Bone Monster powder, and 38 other ingredients.

Simmer these materials into a broth and let an Iron Bone Wild Boar or an Iron Armor Wild Boar stew in it for about 5 hours.

Evolution Success Rate: Seventy-eight percent

PS: This is currently the most optimal evolution plan.

...

Evolution Plan: Wild Boar Skeleton Knight Evolution Plan.

Description: A fusion-type plan based on the Skeleton Knight, with a certain chance of merging the pig and the knight into one entity, but the difficulty is immense. A small mishap could lead to the demise of both the pig and the skeleton.

Evolution Success Rate: Seventeen percent

PS: Take a gamble; a bicycle might turn into a motorcycle.

...

Both plans had a very high success rate; the first one was almost guaranteed.

As for the latter, Lu Wu rounded up a bit.

Seventeen rounds up to a hundred, plus the original ten percent, directly equals a hundred and ten percent success rate, doesn't it?

So Lu Wu decided to take the risk!

# Chapter 218 218: 215 Second Evolution

Lu Wu immediately took action after deciding on the evolution scheme and tasked Li Kai with procuring all the necessary materials.

Right, before the company existed, Lu Wu used to get everything through the internal network channel.

Now that he had a company, he naturally delegated these trivial matters to it.

Procuring materials on his own was about ten to twenty percent cheaper than the internal network.

Plus, it spared Lu Wu the headache.

Saving time, saving money, of course, Lu Wu would use his company.

Li Kai was quite efficient, and in less than half a day, he had all the materials Lu Wu needed ready.

Materials for evolving two Steel Armor Wild Boars totaled 6000 points.

And the fusion material was more expensive, costing Lu Wu over ten thousand for just one set.

Fortunately, Lu Wu was now well-off and didn't care about spending ten or twenty thousand.

Once the materials were in place, Lu Wu started with the pigs.

After boiling the pigs' soup, Lu Wu hurried to stew the pigs.

Then, Lu Wu took the rare opportunity to relax and went to sleep nearby, leaving Dudu to keep watch for him.

To say Lu Wu was carefree would be an understatement.

He slept and asked Dudu to keep an eye out, but Dudu said she was only used to watching Lu Wu and would doze off seeing anything else.

So, Lu Wu called Little Skeleton over to watch for him.

Little Skeleton wondered what was so interesting about watching a pot of soup?

It said it usually watched its phone and would fall asleep watching the soup, and then it called silly Han over.

It told Han that two formidable creatures would jump out of the soup to attack it, so Han should watch closely and not let them escape.

Well, after passing the buck around a few times, the task eventually landed on Han.

Still gullible and young,

Han took it seriously and intently watched over the pot for more than five hours without blinking.

Finally, when the soup's lid opened, Han perked up with excitement, stood up, and warmed up, ready for the formidable creatures to come out and fight it.

But the formidable creatures didn't come out; instead, Tuantuan from Dudu's family ran in.

Han had also been eyeing the pot hungrily for over five hours and couldn't resist when the lid finally opened.

Decidedly not, 'swoosh' it leapt right into the pot.

With a "splash," it jumped into the soup and squealed as it was scalded out, coming out looking bright red and thoroughly overcooked.

That made sense since Tuantuan, without being gigantic, naturally had low defense.

And its miserable squeal woke Lu Wu, who found himself lying on Dudu's legs.

He was a bit dazed but didn't pay too much attention to these details.

After all, Dudu was in its cute form, and this form's allure obviously couldn't compete with that of a pig.

After a moment of confusion, Lu Wu got up and headed to the Cultivation Room.

By the time he arrived at the scene, the pot of soup was surrounded by Summoned Beasts.

Little Skeleton crouched down and curiously poked Tuantuan with his bone finger, eliciting squeals from the pig every time.

Green Cub was dutifully casting healing spells on Tuantuan, and a dog was sneakily watching from behind.

Both Tuantuan and Han still had their eyes glued to the soup.

The former couldn't bear to part with the soup, while the latter was obviously entertaining a bold idea.

All the Summoned Beasts of 042 were there except for Lin Jianying's goblin.

But at the moment, Lu Wu's attention wasn't on that; he came over and chased the little ones away, then instructed Little Skeleton to pull the pigs out of the soup.

At Little Skeleton's command, the pigs climbed out of the pot.

Yep, Lu Wu didn't need to check their attributes to know just by their appearance that they had successfully evolved.

These two pigs had shrunk slightly in size after they evolved, each about two meters long and 90 centimeters tall, with the black skeletons that used to possess a metallic sheen now taking on the color of steel.

Additionally, the skeletons were now covered with steel scales.

They looked more like mechanical pigs than Undead Pigs, rather fierce and brimming with power and a sense of explosiveness. Just by their appearance alone, Lu Wu was very satisfied. What pleased him even more were their attributes.

...

Name: Steel Armor Wild Boar (Second Evolution)

Power: 2 stars (Boss) (Maximum Leader 3 stars)

Quality: Ordinary

Attributes: Metal, Undead

State: Swollen (This pig is very strong)

Weakness: Light (Strong), Thunder (Weak), Flames (Weak)

Advanced Skill: Steel Roar (Entry-level), Wild Boar Trampling (Skilled)

Talent: Steel Armor (Passive) Increases Physical Defense by 40% and Magic Defense by 20%, has a slight reflective effect against physical attacks.

Steel Armor Defense (Active) Upon activation, movement is not possible, but Defense is increased tenfold.

...

After checking the Steel Armor Wild Boar, Lu Wu nodded in satisfaction.

"Hmm, quite good."

The data in all aspects was acceptable, their Talent evolved from two to one, and their power's upper limit had increased to Leader Level.

Still clunky, but truly quite good.

"Such pigs can not only help Little Skeleton but should also net me a handsome profit."

These pigs, if released to the market, would likely be very popular.

However, Lu Wu currently had no intention of disclosing the Iron Armor Wild Boar's evolution plan.

The main reason was that the materials needed for the Iron Armor Wild Boar's evolution were milk from a once-evolved Iron Armor Bull, which wasn't available on Lu Wu's farm.

So, if he released them to the market now, he wouldn't be the one profiting. He'd wait until he had completed the bull's evolution.

"It seems I need to prioritize the research of the Iron Armor Bull."

But that was a matter for the future. The focus today was on evolution, with the pig's evolution completed, and the Wild Boar Knight's evolution was yet to begin.

This was the crux of the day.

Lu Wu had specifically slept for five hours for the evolution of the Wild Boar Knight.

After the pig had evolved, he even ate a meal.

Thoroughly refreshed from his rest,

Lu Wu began the second round of evolution for the day.

Quickly, Lu Wu concocted another potion, submerging the final pig and the Skeleton Gun Warrior together in it.

However this time, after submerging them, Lu Wuke didn't go back to sleep.

How could he dare sleep with only a 17% success rate for this evolution?

If he went to sleep now, Lu Wu could guarantee the pot would be ruined.

Once it began, Lu Wu's eyes remained fixed on the bubbling concoction, his focus absolute, constantly monitoring the soup, the Skeleton Gun Warrior, and the Iron Bone Wild Boar for any changes in attributes.

Yes, this was why Lu Wu had slept for five hours just before, and why he felt confident to take this gamble even with only a 17% chance.

It wasn't that he was staking his hopes on luck, but rather on an exploit.

As long as he kept a vigilant eye,

The moment he noticed anything amiss, he could intervene immediately; if it couldn't be corrected, he could stop the process altogether, thereby ensuring the evolution would never fail.

A 17% success rate could become a 100% success rate.

...…

Short, I know, it's 2000 words short. I'll make it up tomorrow.

# Chapter 219 219: 216 Steel-armored Wild Boar Skeleton Knight

Jiangnan, inside Lu Wu's house.

Lu Wuyi's eyes were fixed unblinkingly on the changing attributes of the soup, pig, and skeleton.

He constantly monitored and speculated about how the changes in attributes would affect what was to come.

The materials were ready at his side, and he was always prepared to fix any issues as soon as they arose.

This was an extremely energy-draining task.

Moreover, the consumption of energy increased as time passed.

The first two hours were okay; it was just making soup, strengthening the pig and the skeleton separately, with not many changes needed from Lu Wu.

But from the third hour, the fusion of the pig and skeleton began, and various problems gradually emerged.

At that point, Lu Wu had to be even more vigilant, identifying problems early and quickly resolving them.

Every problem was taxing on both his mind and resources—of the more than ten thousand materials prepared, over three thousand were for unexpected incidents.

And those materials were indeed put to good use.

Of course, this wasn't something that made Lu Wu happy.

It was particularly troublesome.

In just the two hours from the third to the fifth, there were as many as thirteen issues that arose.

That was an average of one every ten minutes.

Lu Wu needed to monitor all the issues closely and resolve them.

In such a state, Lu Wu lasted only five hours before he felt overwhelmed; his head buzzed with pain, which made it hard for him to focus entirely.

And unfortunately, it was towards the end of the fusion evolution process when problems were most frequent.

One moment of inattention and if Lu Wu did not manage it, the entire evolution could collapse.

Naturally, this was not something Lu Wu wanted to see.

So, he gritted his teeth and persisted, closely monitoring the soup even as the buzzing in his head turned into stabbing pain.

Lu Wu's perseverance was not without reward.

Soon, the pot of soup reached the sixth hour, and the pig and skeleton had entered the final stages of fusion.

By then, the evolution was almost certainly successful.

Knowing this, Lu Wu finally could not withstand the pain in his head and relaxed slightly.

However, just as Lu Wu relaxed a moment, there was a problem with the soup in the pot—this time, the problem arose from the pig and skeleton themselves.

In a critical moment of their fusion, something went wrong.

It was as if a couple about to get married suddenly realized that they weren't each other's type and couldn't spend a lifetime together; thus, they started to fight.

And both were critical to the evolution.

With both of them causing trouble, could the evolution still proceed?

Problems quickly emerged, and after the first issue arose, the situation Lu Wu had been struggling to maintain completely collapsed, and one problem after another surged forward.

This sudden turn of events flustered Lu Wu.

Although he quickly recovered, his mind, which had been focused on solving problems for six hours, was still active.

In this state, Lu Wu's first thought was how to resolve the issue right in front of him.

This thought almost caused his head to explode.

There were too many problems accumulated and, given the current situation, there was no way to solve them.

"It looks like I can only give up for now… Wait, Little Skeleton, go calm them down!"

Just as Lu Wu was about to give up, he suddenly remembered the skeleton at his house.

He called Little Skeleton, who had been playing with a cell phone.

Little Skeleton was quite sensible and obedient; he went up to the pig and skeleton and slapped each one.

Like a domineering father, he told the skeleton and pig,

"What's this about liking and fitting? Deal with it, just deal with it for dad!"

Little Skeleton, playing the role of the stern father, was quite authoritative.

He managed to arrange the whole marriage on the spot.

Although the forced match might not have been sweet, it was still twisted into shape; the pig and skeleton began their fusion.

Various problems began to slowly dissipate.

Seeing this, Lu Wu was overjoyed and hurriedly got busy, resolving the issues and escorting the pig and skeleton to the bridal chamber.

Another half-hour passed, and just as Lu Wu's head was about to explode,

the evolution finally succeeded, and as the pig and skeleton came together, Lu Wu's Little Skeleton at home also underwent some changes.

The sense of authority of Little Skeleton as an old father seemed slightly more pronounced.

Lu Wu blinked and checked Little Skeleton's attributes; aside from one Talent in the Awakening process, he didn't see much change.

And that Awakening Talent had been awakening for a long time.

It had started awakening when Lu Wu left Inheritance Land, but it had been quite half a month since then, right? Still in the Awakening process, that really left Lu Wu speechless.

"Wait, there's a progress bar in the Awakening, 10%?

Is the appearance of this progress bar related to the fusion of the pig and skeleton?"

Lu Wu was not very sure, but he felt it might be related, and he could try to study this aspect in the future.

But for now, his focus was on the pig and skeleton.

Lu Wu wanted to see what the fusion of the pig and skeleton produced, and after that, he needed to sleep.

Now, he was just too tired.

Lu Wu looked towards the soup; this time, the pig and skeleton had both emerged.

Although they had successfully evolved together, they didn't appear en masse; the pig and the skeleton emerged separately.

At this moment, the pig and skeleton had undergone significant changes from before the evolution.

The pig had evolved into something similar to a Steel-armored Wild Boar, but its overall frame seemed more lightweight, feeling like it had gained more burst power.

Moreover, its back had a flat spot suitable for the skeleton to ride on, clearly prepared specifically for the skeleton.

On the Skeleton's side, there was no change in size, standing at about 1.8 meters tall.

It now wore light armor of a steel color, and even its spear had turned to steel.

The Pupil Fire flickered, giving off an imposing aura.

When Lu Wu saw them, he found that their attributes were unified.

...

Name: Steel-armored Wild Boar Skeleton Knight (Second Evolution)

Power: 2 stars (Boss) (Highest Lord 0 Star)

Quality: Ordinary

Attribute: Metal, Undead

State: Barely (The pig is average) Disdain (Peppa is trash, Little Skeleton is better, but Little Skeleton doesn't want me)

Weakness: Light (Strong), Flames (Weak), Thunder (Weak)

Advanced Skill: Wild Boar Trampling (Mastered) (Pig), Heart Piercing Shot (Master) (Skeleton)

Combined Skill: Impact One-Shot (Unmastered)

Talent: Steel Armor (Passive)

Speed Boost (Basic)

Riding Unity (Active) (Once used, both parties' power consolidates, significantly boosting its Combat Power

ps: The specific boost depends on the remaining stamina of both parties, up to two stars)

Description: Well, you successfully arranged a marriage.

However, even though these two individuals are not quite satisfied with their other halves, they eventually came together, so there's still a significant increase in Combat Power.

...

"These attributes are not bad!"

Lu Wu looked at the attributes of the Steel-armored Wild Boar Skeleton Knight and didn't feel the shame of a feudal patriarch, instead, he felt pretty good about his actions.

Fusion, well, that's how it is.

How can every match be perfect? It's enough that they can work together.

"I can't hold on, my spiritual power is exhausted, I'm going to sleep!"

With that, Lu Wu, clutching his head and waist, dragged his heavy steps off to sleep.

.....

Jiangbei.

Inside a manor.

On a fluffy long couch, Zhang Yunyi, the Governor of Jiangbei, lay reclined.

In front of Zhang Yunyi was Zhang Yuechu, who had just returned yesterday and directly seized control from Zhao Jianzhi.

Mother and daughter together, they looked like sisters.

However, this mother and daughter pair seemed out of sync.

After an awkward exchange of looks, Zhang Yunyi was the first to speak.

"There are many ways to handle Zhao Jianzhi, why use this method?"

"I wanted to."

Zhang Yuechu pouted, like a sulking child.

Zhang Yunyi didn't mind.

"Good, as long as you can bear the consequences, I don't oppose whatever you do."

Zhang Yuechu didn't react.

"Do you not think this is much of an issue, believing that the Education Bureau has settled it, confirming Zhao Jianzhi as a grievously wounded Evil Summoner.

Has the Education Bureau bowed down, and this issue is no longer relevant?"

Only a mother knows her daughter.

Zhang Yunyi, upon observing Zhang Yuechu, spoke levelly.

"Just now, the Education Bureau issued a document about security at Jiangnan University, which directly notified the entire Alliance and criticized Jiangbei University's security for being inadequate, allowing the principal to be attacked on campus.

Using this as an excuse, they have already canceled the resources that were meant to be available later this year."

"Moreover, the security department has also issued an order to Jiangbei, demanding that I capture that Evil Summoner within six months, or they will intervene in helping Jiangbei build a security system."

"This, is the cost of your actions."

Zhang Yunyi seized the opportunity to give Zhang Yuechu a lesson in ethics.

"Rules exist for a reason; don't try to break them!

The consequences are beyond your imagination."

"Of course, if you're powerful enough to rewrite the rules, then I have nothing to say, considering that from the time Summoned Beasts came into existence, all societal rules have been based on force."

"Even if you possess the power to break the rules, it doesn't allow you complete freedom.

The rule of order is the foundation of the world's operation.

As you trample it, you must also endure each piece of it when it shatters.

Even if you are strong enough to be immune to these damages, others will be harmed.

Your freedom, your unrestraint is built on others.

Once you completely override the rules, what you are unwilling to endure will have to be endured by others.

So, my advice remains, do not try to destroy the rules, follow them, respect them, then control them."

At this, Zhang Yuechu finally responded.

"Like you, then?"

Zhang Yunyi was momentarily speechless.

Zhang Yuechu did not press her advantage further, turning and leaving. As she stepped out of the room, Zhang Yuechu paused.

"I will resolve the troubles I've caused."

With that, Zhang Yuechu strode away.

# Chapter 220 220: 217 Study Abroad Exchange

August 20th.

Jiangnan University commenced its new academic term.

On this day, Zhang Wentao arrived at the school bright and early.

He greeted everyone he met with a smile, radiating pride and joy.

Indeed, Old Zhang had been in a great mood lately.

Firstly, he had accepted Lu Wu, a student with the potential of a Grandmaster.

Meanwhile, Jiangbei had been courting disaster repeatedly.

They first tried to plagiarize Lu Wu's cultivation plan to sabotage, but instead of causing trouble, it backfired, landing Lin Huai and Zhou Kai in hot water.

Then, Jiangbei University made another baffling move.

They actually appointed the Governor of Jiangbei's daughter, Zhang Yuechu, as the head of Jiangbei University, putting them at odds with the Education Bureau.

This directly led to Jiangbei University losing a significant amount of resources.

Also revealing the fact of Jiangbei University being a 'family school' prompted students who had initially applied there to switch to other schools.

Jiangbei University became entangled in its own troubles.

Seeing his old rival in such a state brought immense joy to Zhang Wentao.

What delighted him even more was the current progress of Jiangbei University.

His primary concern was the "University League."

In this regard, the team leader that Li Mingrui had found was quite commendable and gave Zhang Wentao a pleasant surprise.

He believed that under his leadership, Jiangnan would definitely make a mark in this year's league.

Lastly, what thrilled Zhang Wentao to no end was Lu Wu.

The boy's growth had completely exceeded his expectations.

Especially during the plagiarism incident, he had come up with an evolution plan involving the "Iron Armor Wild Boar."

Not only did this plan make Lu Wu a fortune, but more importantly, it presented Lu Wu with the opportunity to earn the title of a Master Level Cultivation Master.

When Zhang Wentao first took notice of Lu Wu, he was counting on showcasing him in the upcoming Cultivation Master competition to secure some resources for Jiangnan University.

However, unexpectedly, Lu Wu no longer qualified to compete.

Well, he was nearly a Master now, why would he compete? Wouldn't that be akin to bullying?

"The headquarters is already processing it, and if all goes well, Lu Wu should be able to don the Master's title next month.

A 19-year-old Cultivation Master, and specifically a Master in the domain of the White Bone Wild Boar, his presence should secure additional resources for Jiangnan University next year."

"Furthermore, given his rate of growth, it should only take him a year to fully mature, making the next year's university league undoubtedly dominated by Jiangnan."

Thinking about this got Zhang Wentao's blood boiling.

He felt rejuvenated, as if his back and legs no longer ached.

Just as Zhang Wentao was reveling in his good fortune, a domineering and wild roar erupted, enveloping the whole of Jiangnan University.

The roar made everyone's heart at Jiangnan University skip a beat, nearly causing Zhang Wentao to twist his ankle in his joyful stride.

While the people were somewhat okay, it was tragic for the Summoned Beasts.

During this roar, ninety-one percent of the summoning beasts at Jiangnan University kneeled.

The Elites were trembling on the ground, and those above Elite level, though not lying down, looked utterly panicked.

Of course, there were exceptions, such as Lu Wu's group.

When the roar sounded, Little Skeleton was completely focused on playing with his phone, unfazed.

Tuantuan hid in the mountains as if nothing had happened, and Green Cub?

It was held in Lu Wu's arms, just as fond of Lu Wu as its companion Dudu, always gazing at and sticking close to him.

To outsiders, it would appear that Lu Wu was their real master.

Little Goldfish was frolicking in the sea, and Lin Jianying had told Lu Wu a few days ago that he was going out to train in a secret realm and hadn't returned since. In the 042 squad, the only one reacting to the roar was Silly.

This silly bird was looking up at the sky with bright eyes, even making a couple of calls.

It was almost as if it was beckoning someone to come down and fight.

What Lu Wu hadn't expected was that Silly's calls actually managed to summon the creature above them.

With a 'swoosh,'

A whirlwind kicked up a great cloud of dust. Lu Wu instinctively closed his eyes, and when he felt the dust settle and opened them, he found a massive bird, a very large bird, had landed before him.

Lu Wu then checked its attributes.

...

Name: Xuan Que (???)

Power: ???

Quality: ???

?????

...

Well, besides its name, everything else was a question mark.

As Lu Wu examined the bird's attributes, it suddenly vanished into thin air, and two human figures along with two summoned beasts appeared before him.

The one in front had an aura stretched over eight hundred meters, dotted with question marks.

As for the one behind, Lu Wu hadn't gotten the chance to look before the one in front blocked his view.

"Are you Lu Wu? The adopted son of Jiang Yue Xing?"

"Uh."

It was the first time Lu Wu had seen someone directly address a rich woman by name, and combined with the question marks on the person, even if Lu Wu was naive, he knew this was someone powerful and immediately acted respectfully and obediently.

"It's me!"

Zhang Yuechu looked at the guy in front of her, who looked unremarkable and honest. For some reason, she felt an affinity towards him, as if he were a long-lost younger brother.

Her tone unconsciously softened a bit.

"You're pretty good, how about coming to my Jiangbei?"

"Jiangbei?" Lu Wuyi was startled.

Just then, the bigwigs from Jiangnan, led by Zhang Wentao, rushed over.

"Miss Zhang, we did not expect your visit today, and apologize for not welcoming you from afar."

Zhang Wentao ran ahead, squeezing Lu Wuyi behind him, blocking him in front of Zhang Yuechu.

Lu Wuyi hadn't reacted yet when Zhao Kai Ming and others also arrived, all intentionally or unintentionally keeping Lu Wuyi away from the woman in front.

After all, this woman was infamous for being unreasonable, and Lu Wuyi had caused Jiangbei to lose two big shots, who knew if she might suddenly make a move on Lu Wuyi.

And now Lu Wuyi also realized who the girl full of question marks was.

She was the notorious Zhang Yuechu, the Governor of Jiangbei's only daughter who recently made headlines by crippling a Master Level Summoner.

Lu Wuyi suddenly felt a chill and instinctively stepped back.

Boys need to protect themselves when outside.

Such a fierce woman was better kept at a distance, as the people from the Education Bureau would act on impulse, and his slight frame was no match for a slap from them.

But soon, Lu Wuyi's confidence returned.

Because at that moment, a woman appeared on the scene.

She was his "rich woman."

Seeing his rich woman there, Lu Wuyi no longer felt any back or leg pain.

He felt he could once again show off with pleasure.

Yes, show off.

He was clear on these things.

On the first day of school, coming over with a girl was obviously to show dominance, and Lu Wuyi felt his moment to show off had arrived!

But now Lu Wuyi was squeezed a bit too far away to see the girl's attribute.

He was not sure if he could pull it off.

Well, no need to be sure now, as Lu Wuyi soon realized he had no chance at all.

Jiang Yuexing came over, gave Zhao Kai Ming a look, and then Zhao Kai Ming came over and took Lu Wuyi away.

"Uncle Zhao, why run? They are clearly here to cause trouble. Leave it to me, I'll handle this clearly for you.

Besides, my godmother is here; that girl won't be able to stir up any waves."

Lu Wuyi did not notice, but when he said this, Zhang Yuechu glanced at Jiang Yuexing, making Jiang Yuexing very uncomfortable.

She was somewhat panicky, but unwilling to show weakness.

In such a situation, she could not retreat.

"Yuexing..."

"Governor Jiang, please address me as Vice Principal Zhang, I am here today representing Jiangbei University for an exchange with Jiangnan University."

Hmm, Lu Wuyi guessed right, Zhang Yuechu was here to show dominance.

But showing dominance isn't something one just does; one has to see if the opportunity is given.

And Jiangnan clearly wasn't planning to give her that chance.

Zhang Wentao immediately stepped forward, "I'm sorry, Vice Principal Zhang, today is the opening day of Jiangnan University..."

"Perhaps I didn't make myself clear, the exchange I meant involves study tours, and your Jiangnan University is the first stop, and also the last."

"Study tour exchange?!!"

As soon as Zhang Yuechu said this, the big shots from Jiangnan were all stunned.

Even Zhao Kai Ming, who was dragging Lu Wuyi away, stopped in his tracks.

Nearby, Lu Wuyi was somewhat dumbfounded: "What is a study tour exchange?!"

Zhao Kai Ming's expression was complicated, and after a moment, he explained to Lu Wuyi.

"The so-called study tour exchange is a mechanism created decades ago by a powerful individual.

Before the university tournaments, the ranking of Summoner Universities was decided by the Education Bureau through a non-transparent judgment.

Many universities weren't satisfied with their rankings, and one powerful individual stood up under the banner of 'study tour exchange' and challenged all the universities ranked above theirs.

This forced the Education Bureau to improve their school's ranking.

Since then, the mechanism of a study tour exchange took shape and was popular for over a decade.

But because during those years, many students died, the Education Bureau had to intervene and created the university tournaments to determine the rankings.

Afterward, 'study tour exchanges' gradually became unused.

I didn't expect her to bring this up today, and even placing Jiangnan as the first stop."

As Zhao Kai Ming explained, Lu Wuyi understood.

It turned out this girl wasn't just targeting Jiangnan University; she was challenging all universities.

"But why did she pick Jiangnan as the first? You seem very surprised."

"The study tour exchanges over those years developed certain rules.

There were exchanges that involved students only, and some involved both students and teachers. Generally, a university is chosen as a starting point, then all are challenged in turn, returning to the starting point to challenge it again.

Generally, the starting point of the tour is chosen to be stronger than one's own university. This..."

Lu Wuyi understood again: "So, our Jiangnan University is going to be crushed twice?"

# Chapter 221 221: 218 Domain

Zhao Kai Ming nearly choked on Lu Wu's words.

"What the hell do you understand?"

"What do you mean Jiangnan University is going to be thrashed twice?"

"Who told you that Jiangnan University will definitely be thrashed?"

Zhao Kai Ming was initially quite agitated, after all, he was very proud of Jiangnan's honor.

However, upon closer thought, it seemed that this was indeed the case.

He suddenly felt somewhat dejected.

On the other hand.

Over on Zhang Yuechu's side.

When Zhao Kai Ming was explaining to Lu Wu what "exchange program" meant, Zhang Wentao had already changed his attitude regarding whether they would be trashed or not.

There was no helping it; they had brought up the "exchange program," how could Jiangnan refuse now.

Yep, the "exchange program" was not something to refuse, it was kind of an unspoken rule.

Originally, because of that guy who came up with the exchange program, if during the "exchange program" they encountered a cooperating school and won the fight, that was it, but if they met a non-cooperative 'exchange' school, buildings were definitely going to be demolished.

After he set this precedent, the rule was established.

Everyone agreed that during an exchange program, the party being visited cannot refuse.

Although normally even if you refuse, nothing much happens, considering Zhang Yuechu's personality and considering the legend that it was her father who came up with this.

No choice, Zhang Wentao could only acknowledge it, touching his nose.

Taking a beating was better than having buildings demolished, especially since Jiangnan's finances really couldn't withstand it.

"How would you like to exchange? Summoning or cultivation? Student or teacher?"

"Summoning, students and teachers together!"

Zhang Yuechu said and called a girl standing next to her.

"Students first, she'll exchange with you, just defeat her and that's enough!"

Zhang Wentao looked at the girl standing next to Zhang Yuechu and then at the two summoned beasts beside her, even though he didn't have Lu Wu's Golden Finger.

But as a Master Level Cultivation Master, he could tell that both summoned beasts that the girl had brought were not simple.

Besides, even without looking at any summoned beasts, just the fact that Zhang Yuechu brought her out meant this girl was definitely not ordinary.

So, who should he choose to fight, Zhang Wentao hesitated slightly.

At this moment, a clear voice rang out.

"I'll do it!"

Simultaneously, a student walked over with a summoned beast.

Zhang Wentao turned his head to look, and his face showed delight when he saw who it was.

Meanwhile, Lu Wu's gaze also fell on the person and his summoned beast as they walked past, and Zhao Kai Ming muttered to him.

"That's the one Old Li found."

Lu Wu then understood.

So it was a stumbling block, no wonder he looked so punchable.

While Lu Wu was observing the stumbling block, the stumbling block also glanced at Lu Wu, nodded in acknowledgment, and then strode toward the door area, standing in front of Zhang Yuechu.

"I am a senior student at Jiangnan University, my name is Zhao Li, and I'm taking on this exchange for Jiangnan University!"

Yep, this stumbling block's entire being exuded that sort of confidence that came from the bones.

He even dared to directly challenge a big Demon King like Zhang Yuechu.

Zhang Yuechu glanced at the girl beside her.

"Xiao Yu."

The girl immediately stood forward, and then Zhao Li threw a spanner in the works.

"Wait, she's not the one I want to exchange with, it's you!"

Zhao Li looked earnestly at Zhang Yuechu, "I know I'm not your match right now, you could probably squish me with a finger, but I still hope to challenge you.

A true strong person, only by challenging the strong can one grow stronger, so even if it's a sure loss, I want to fight this battle!"

Look at Zhao Li's words, with all that adolescent fervor, Lu Wu couldn't help but curl his lip.

Zhang Yuechu's brow also furrowed.

Had it been a different place, a different time, she would have smacked this guy down long ago.

Zhao Li could also read the room, seeing Zhang Yuechu's displeased expression, he didn't continue down the suicidal path, but instead turned to face the girl beside Zhang Yuechu.

"Xiao Yu, right? It seems I need to show my power in front of Vice Principal Zhang, go ahead!"

Xiao Yu didn't seem to fully grasp what Zhao Li meant, but obediently 'oh-ed' and sent out her large Snowman.

"Bingbing, I'm leaving it to you!"

"Mu, finish the battle quickly!"

Zhao Li's mouth curled into a smile, encouraging his own three-meter-tall gorilla.

The battle between the gorilla and the Snowman erupted instantly.

The fight exploded in a moment, but also nearly ended in that same moment.

The loser was the Snowman. The Snowman was quite powerful, but lacked combat experience, and was almost instantly defeated by Zhao Li's gorilla.

This result surprised Lu Wu, and also surprised the others from Jiangnan University, they had been expecting a grand battle, but it ended so abruptly.

On this side, after Zhao Li crisply secured victory, he continued turning to Zhang Yuechu.

"Now can I and you..."

"Xiao Zhao, come down!"

"Old Li..."

"Stop talking!"

Before Zhao Li could finish offering another challenge to Zhang Yuechu, he was abruptly pulled down by Li Mingrui.

A newborn calf may not fear a tiger, but that doesn't mean us teachers are fearless.

We've just taken down Jiangbei's students, smacked them in the face; provocate them further, and you won't even know how you died.

Yet, after Zhao Li was forcibly taken down, they on the Jiangnan side found that Zhang Yuechu didn't seem overly shamed or annoyed.

It seemed as if she was completely indifferent to Xiao Yu's defeat.

No, not seemed, she simply didn't care about Xiao Yu's victory or defeat.

The main focus of her study tour was herself; Xiao Yu was merely incidental.

Her own victory or defeat didn't matter.

As long as there was growth by the end of the tour, that would suffice.

However, Zhao Li's behavior had still angered Zhang Yuechu. Thus, the face she had initially been willing to spare was not going to be spared any longer.

"The student exchange is over; now it's time for the teachers' exchange. How about this, all of you teachers from Jiangnan University, step up at once. Of course, if Governor Jiang wishes to join, that's fine too. I really don't care."

You might not care, but I do!

Upon hearing this, Jiang Yuexing stepped back a few paces with a light and breezy smile, signifying that she was not itching to participate in this exchange.

On the Jiangnan University teachers' side, many frowned slightly, ready to say something, but Zhang Yuechu didn't give them a chance to speak.

"Fine, since no one stepped back, you all will be my partners for this exchange."

With that said, Zhang Yuechu snapped her fingers, and an invisible aura expanded, encircling about 13 high-ranking officials from Jiangnan University in front of her.

Once this aura appeared, the faces of all the big shots on Jiangnan's side changed drastically.

"A Domain!"

Everyone knew what this meant; it implied that Zhang Yuechu's power had reached beyond that of a Lord.

It also meant they were about to be severely thrashed.

Sure enough, ten minutes later, when Zhang Yuechu withdrew her Domain, 13 big shots from Jiangnan University, including Zhang Wentao, all sported a pair of dark circles under their eyes.

In contrast, Zhang Yuechu remained as unflustered as ever.

The outcome was clear.

It was evident that Zhang Yuechu had intended to slap some faces.

"So, this concludes the exchange between Jiangbei and Jiangnan. We shall meet again next time."

After resolving the battle, Zhang Yuechu didn't linger in Jiangnan. Glancing at Jiang Yuexing and then at Lu Wuyi, she summoned the Xuan Que, and with Xiao Yu, they rode away on the creature, borne aloft by the wind.

The figure of the departing Xuan Que prompted the students of Jiangnan University to gaze up for a long while, their emotions turbulent and unsettled.

It had to be said that Zhang Yuechu's so-called exchange was a success.

Indeed, when Zhang Yuechu raised her Domain into mid-air during the fight, the whole school had witnessed it.

So the students knew what had happened and saw their own teachers, even the school principal, get abused.

Perhaps because of Xiao Yu's failure, the students of Jiangnan didn't feel that Jiangbei was bullying them.

Their attention was more drawn to Zhang Yuechu's immense strength and personal charisma.

The students didn't feel inadequate; they all believed they were quite strong. It was just that their teachers, including the 13 high-ranking officials, were weak, unable to land even a single counter against one person.

With such teachers, no wonder Jiangnan couldn't hold its head high against Jiangbei.

The students of Jiangnan, especially the newly enrolled freshmen, began to disdain their teachers and school.

Some students, particularly those partial to good looks, even pondered transferring to Jiangbei.

But the thought of their 'home school' quickly extinguished this idea, as strong as Zhang Yuechu was, she belonged to Jiangbei, and it was better not to attend such a school.

Of course, this was just the beginning of Zhang Yuechu's study tour. What it would be like after she finished her circuit was hard to say.

And this was the purpose of Zhang Yuechu's tour.

She was fulfilling her promise, dealing with the situation she had created in her own way.

Naturally, these developments were unbeknownst to Lu Wu.

He was just like the students beside him, gazing at the sky, his heart surging with emotion.

He wondered when he would possess that level of strength when his own bird would be able to carry him to the skies.

Thinking this, Lu Wu glanced down at the silly Mu at his feet.

Looking at its bare, silly appearance, and its dopey eyes...

And then seeing it put on an expectant look the moment it caught him staring, as if asking if he was about to hit it...

Lu Wu couldn't help covering his face with his hands, wondering how he ended up with such a bird.

Since he had it, Lu Wu had never seen Mu with a full coat of feathers, let alone watching it soar to the heavens.

"Sigh, I wonder if I'll ever have the chance to ride it into the sky in this lifetime."

As Lu Wu sighed, Zhao Li came before him.

"You're Lu Wu, right?"

"Uh, yes!"

Taken aback that his obstacle had come before him, Lu Wu was slightly astounded.

At that moment, Zhao Lei's lips curled into a smile: "I've heard you're quite interested in my position as the team leader. Well, I'm quite interested in you, too. So, how about this, we have a match? If you win, I will cede the position to you, and if I win, you join my team!"

# Chapter 222 222: 219 Lu Wu's Terrifying Combat Power

"Huh?"

Lu Wu was somewhat baffled.

Was this man in front of him trying to challenge him?

The man facing Lu Wu made it clear.

Yes, he was indeed aiming to take Lu Wu down.

"Powerful ones can only prove themselves through battle!

Come on, let's have a fight!

I will use my power to prove to you that I am the most suitable leader!"

Lu Wu was speechless.

This guy must either be suffering from chuunibyou or have something wrong with his brain.

But Lu Wu wasn't opposed to fighting.

After all, removing obstacles was something he needed to do anyway.

Now the obstacle had brought it up himself, saving Lu Wu a lot of trouble.

"Uncle Zhao, find us a place. I'll take him on."

"Okay!"

Zhao Kai Ming quickly arranged a training room for Lu Wu and Zhao Li to lock themselves in and sort it out.

"Why do we have to close the door? Can't we fight with the door open?"

Zhao Li seemed uncomfortable with the idea of fighting behind closed doors, without an audience he felt his combat power greatly diminished.

"I don't like fighting in front of others, it feels like performing tricks like a monkey, my combat power decreases."

Lu Wu casually made up an excuse; he couldn't very well say that he didn't want to expose the pig from his house yet, right?

It wasn't ready for the market yet.

Zhao Li believed him, showed understanding, and shared his preference: "I like it when there's a crowd, the more the merrier—I get more excited!"

A typical case of getting excited in front of an audience, just showing off really.

An old case of chuunibyou.

Lu Wu didn't feel like chatting any further.

"Let's begin! Uncle Zhao, you be the referee."

"Okay!"

Zhao Kai Ming nodded his head and then took on the role of the referee, asking both sides to summon their beasts.

On Zhao Li's side, he summoned the same big gorilla that had been with him before.

Lu Wu had already seen the attributes of this gorilla.

...…

Name: Steel Bone Gorilla (Second Evolution)

Power: 1 Star (Leader)

Quality: Ordinary (Silver) Enhanced

Attribute: Metal

State: Proud (Mu is super strong)

Weakness: Fire (Moderate) Grass (Strong)

Basic Skills: Omitted

Advanced Skills: Blast Punch (Master), Steel Bone Burst (Master)

Killing Move: Sky Shattering Fist (Master)

Talent: Physical Defense Enhancement (Intermediate), Magic Defense Enhancement (Basic)

Strength Enhancement (Intermediate)

Description: A very powerful gorilla.

...…

Leader 1 Star level power.

Such power was considered top-notch among the students of universities, at least at Jiangnan University.

Unlike Lu Wu, who entered university already at the Boss level, he was more of an exceptional case.

Ordinary university students usually started around Elite 1 Star level, and many hadn't even reached Elite.

Summoner University was a four-year program, and although the resources of the university allowed for rapid growth, it was rare for someone to reach Leader level within four years.

Lu Wu had looked through records of past university competitions.

Those who reached the Leader level were almost always in the top 30.

The top thirty might not seem like much, but in terms of school rankings, that could mean a significant improvement.

After all, those top-ranking Leader levels were usually a whole team, which was why Zhang Wentao and co. had pinned their hopes on Zhao Li.

When Zhao Li brought out his gorilla, Lu Wu didn't waste any words, and directly sent Little Skeleton into the fray.

"If you're at Boss level, one Summoned Beast won't be enough to beat my Mu. Maybe call a couple more, like that bird next to you, or bring over the pig too.

Otherwise, it wouldn't be a fair fight for me to win!"

Look at the way he spoke, Lu Wu was a bit baffled.

"Don't you know about my Little Skeleton? Haven't you seen its matches?"

"No! I have not."

Zhao Li was honest: "Principal Li told me you're a freshman, and once your Summoned Beasts were at Boss level, I stopped paying attention. There's such a big gap, I was sure I could beat them... What the hell is this?"

Before Zhao Li could finish talking, Lu Wu's Little Skeleton took out its big phone and directly summoned all its minions from the mobile phone.

Two Steel Armor Wild Boars, one Steel-armored Wild Boar Skeleton Knight.

Seeing the opposition changing from one to four, Zhao Li was a bit baffled.

"Where did these Summoned Beasts come from?"

"They're Little Skeleton's minions. Didn't you say just one wouldn't be enough? So I brought a couple more!"

But you're bringing way too many!

Zhao Li's head buzzed, regretting that he hadn't looked at Lu Wu's information before coming here.

But then he thought again that a true strong man should fight another strong one. His Mu being Leader Level should not have a problem taking on four.

The guy's zeal returned.

"Come on then, let's do it this way. I'll defeat you for sure. Mu, go take them down!"

With Zhao Li's command, the battle erupted.

The gorilla from Zhao Li's household initiated the attack.

Chuunibyou as Zhao Li might be, his combat instincts were still sharp.

He knew exactly how to fight, and although he had the advantage in power, his opponent had the advantage in numbers.

So to fight this battle, he needed to go for a burst attack—catch the king first, taking down Little Skeleton quickly to resolve the fight was the key.

The gorilla charged straight at Little Skeleton.

On Little Skeleton's side, the two Steel Armor Wild Boars charged forward, first roaring and using "Steel Roar", then stomping their feet, unleashing "Wild Boar Trampling".

Both skills were controlling abilities.

The former used the sound of metallic shocks to attack the brain, while the latter shook the body with its tremors.

Both at once delivered a physical and psychological double strike to the gorilla.

Meanwhile, Pei Qi No. 1 also launched an assault at just the right moment when the two boars performed their controls, channeling all its strongest power.

"Riding Unity" activated instantly, Pei Qi No. 1's power went from Boss 2 Star to Leader 1 Star, and the combo move "Impact One-Shot" also exploded.

In almost an instant, it rushed in front of the gorilla, and while the gorilla was still stiff, "Impact One-Shot" was thrust out.

The incredible burst power sent the four-meter-tall, several-ton giant gorilla flying meters away.

Before it hit the ground, Little Skeleton casually dropped a Thunder Strike from his phone.

"Crack" "Crack" "Crack"

Three consecutive Thunder Strikes struck, and the gorilla, which was hopping around just seconds ago, went completely black.

The battle was decided.

Lu Wu had dominated Zhao Li with an absolute advantage, breezing through the fight effortlessly.

Looking at this result, three out of the four people present were completely dumbfounded.

Zhao Kai Ming, Zhao Li, and Lu Wu were all bewildered—they were all equally surprised at how powerful Lu Wu had become.

Only Dudu, who was holding a pig, calmly expressed:

Her Lu Wu was the best.

"I haven't fought in a while, it seems I've severely underestimated my own combat power. Without realizing it, I didn't expect to become this strong."

Among the bewildered, Lu Wu was the first to come to his senses, his face as lonely as snow.

And the second one to snap out of it was Zhao Li.

As he came around, he exclaimed, then stared at Lu Wu with a somewhat scary expression.

Seeing this, Lu Wu panicked, thinking the guy couldn't take a loss.

When he saw Zhao Li lunge at him, his instinct was to kick him, sending Zhao Li flying away again.

However, the launched Zhao Li immediately got up and lunged again, his expression even more frightening this time.

But, he had learned his lesson after the kick and didn't come all the way up to Lu Wu. Instead, he stopped in front of Lu Wu and gave him a thumbs-up.

"You won. From today on, you are the team leader of Jiangnan University."

"Uh! Okay!"

"Also, from today on, you're my target, Zhao Li. I lost this time, but I will defeat you. Next time, I'll definitely win back!"

After speaking, the guy vigorously wiped the nosebleed that had resulted from Lu Wu's kick.

Uh, he didn't wipe it clean, instead smearing half his face red, but he didn't care—well, he didn't notice—and spun around in what he thought was a dashing move. Then he went over to his gorilla, summoned it back, and 'scuttled' off to the medical room.

Watching his whole performance, Lu Wu suddenly felt that this stumbling block was a bit silly, but seemingly interesting, and not entirely irritating.

Zhao Kai Ming's head was spinning at the side.

Jiangnan University had been preparing to make Zhao Li the team leader.

And had even let Zhao Li join the school team a month early.

This was a done deal, but then this twist came unexpectedly.

He never imagined that Zhao Li, an experienced professional summoner, would be trounced by Lu Wu, a freshman.

What to do now? What about their previous plan?

Zhao Kai Ming felt his head grow heavy at the thought, but then it struck him—this wasn't his problem. If anyone should be worried, it should be Old Zhang and Old Li, not him, Zhao Kai Ming.

He knew nothing, saw nothing, it wasn't Zhao Kai Ming who arranged the fight. If there's an issue, they should go to Lu Wu and the others.

Thinking this way, Zhao Kai Ming's mood suddenly improved.

However, before long, a phone call from Zhang Wentao came in.

"Old Zhao, come over, bring Xiao Lu to my office. I've got a big treasure to show you!"

Hearing Zhang Wentao's warm voice, Zhao Kai Ming's heart went cold.

It was over, it seemed he couldn't shake off this blame.

Moreover, as Old Zhang had just been beaten up, among Jiangnan University's entire upper echelon, only he, Zhao Kai Ming, had escaped unscathed, so he figured he was in for a beating when he went in.

However, upon meeting Zhang Wentao, Zhao Kai Ming found that things were different from what he expected.

Great, although Old Zhang was wearing sunglasses and occasionally covered his face, he seemed in a good mood.

He didn't appear too angry about the fight between Lu Wu and Zhao Li; in fact, he very smoothly accepted Lu Wu as the team leader.

Actually, this matter was pretty normal.

Jiangnan University initially didn't want Lu Wu to be the team leader because they felt that Lu Wu still needed time to grow.

And another reason was the fear of Zhao Li running away.

Well, the latter reason might have been the more significant.

After all, Jiangnan University's finances were really tight, and after all their effort to poach Zhao Li, if they lost him over the team leader issue, Jiangnan would have nowhere to cry.

Now it was Zhao Li himself proposing to hand over the team leader position to Lu Wu, to become Lu Wu's underling, to defeat Lu Wu and take back the leadership. Naturally, Zhang Wentao and the others wouldn't refuse.

They were even pleasantly surprised by the strength Lu Wu had demonstrated.

"So, starting today, you're our Jiangnan University team leader. Next year's university competition is in your hands!

Later I'll have someone take you to see the team so you can get familiar with it."

Zhang Wentao patted Lu Wu's shoulder, extremely excited.

However, Lu Wu himself wasn't all that excited.

In fact, it seemed he had something to say, "Uncle Zhang..."

"At school, you should still call me Principal Zhang." Zhang Wentao subtly prompted Lu Wu to correct himself, adopting a demeanor of separating personal from professional matters, but Zhao Kai Ming at his side couldn't help but smirk; the old man was obviously backing down.

Lu Wu paid no attention to these details.

"Principal Zhang, regarding the school team and the university competition, could you let Zhao Li manage it for me?"

"Hm?"

As soon as Lu Wu spoke, Zhang Wentao and Zhao Kai Ming were taken aback, wondering what move Lu Wu was playing now.

Wasn't he eager to be the team leader?

Why was he now considering giving it up once he had the position?

"The thing is, I have some matters to attend to with my company and my own summoned beasts. Plus, I might have something important to do after a while. So, while I'll accept the title of team leader and participate in the university competition,

could Zhao Li or someone else handle the management aspect of the team for me?"

Now, Zhang Wentao and the others understood. Lu Wu simply wanted to participate in the competition.

He didn't want to deal with the troublesome aspects outside of it.

Zhang Wentao could understand this, whether it was Lu Wu or his own company.

Both were in a phase of growth at this time, and it was true that Lu Wu wouldn't have the time to deal with the school team's miscellaneous matters, so Zhang Wentao readily agreed.

However, when it came to Lu Wu's company,

Zhang Wentao's eyes immediately lit up.

He knew that the company Lu Wu had established, Lu's, had been making quite a profit recently.

Earning tens of thousands of points a day.

Incidentally, Jiangnan University was in a bit of a financial bind.

Although it wasn't a big leg to cling to yet, Zhang Wentao felt it might be something he could latch onto.

While Zhang Wentao was thinking about holding onto a big leg to leverage, Lu Wu went straight to business.

"Oh, and there's one more thing. I remember you promising me that I'd have access to all of Jiangnan University's projects, all resources, and all knowledge.

Additionally, you seemed to have agreed to let me enter Jiangnan University's treasury and choose one item, right?"

Lu Wu suddenly brought it up, causing Zhang Wentao to be somewhat confused.

Did I say that? When did I say it? How many chapters ago was that?

Alright, he remembered now, he had said it before the top eight competition.

And then Zhang Wentao felt a bit uneasy!

He hadn't even had a chance to cling to the big leg or leverage anything, and he was already being leveraged. Zhang Wentao felt his heart ache.

But still, he nodded grandiosely, confirming that he had indeed said it, that it was true.

"Then please take me to the treasury and library of Jiangnan University!"

# Chapter 223 223: 210 Jiangnan University

Jiangnan University, outside Zhang Wentao's office.

Lu Wu came out first, teasing his Summoned Beast Dudu while waiting for Zhao Kai Ming, who was held up by Zhang Wentao.

After a short while, the office door opened, and Zhao Kai Ming came out wearing sunglasses.

"Uncle Zhao, why are you wearing sunglasses?" Lu Wu was quite curious.

"The sun is too bright, too bright. Let's go; you wanted to visit the treasure vault, right? I'll take you there."

Saying this, Zhao Kai Ming quickly walked a few steps and moved in front of Lu Wu.

He was afraid that Lu Wu would see his face.

As he walked, he cursed Zhang Wentao in his mind for not being a good guy.

He had to give him a black eye too, claiming what's shared in blessing should also be shared in adversity.

'Damn it, the trouble is mine to face, but where's my share of the blessings?'

Of course, it seemed there weren't any blessings to enjoy on their side of Jiangnan University.

Zhao Kai Ming, huffing with anger, led Lu Wu out of the Administrative Building and toward the treasure vault.

On their way, they passed the university's training areas, went through the challenge zone, and the research area.

Zhao Kai Ming didn't forget to introduce the environment of Jiangnan University to Lu Wu.

"We just visited the training area, which covers 5 acres. There are over a hundred small and large training grounds, which can accommodate Leader Level Summoned Beasts at the highest. But there's only one of each type of training ground, and it's currently out of order.

Then we have the challenge zone over here.

The challenge zone is mostly comprised of Secret Realms, which were transformed into challenging environments by the predecessors of Jiangnan University.

Originally there were 38, but now due to problems with Energy Operation, 23 artificial realms have shut down."

Lu Wu did know what these so-called Artificial Secret Realms were - facilities constructed using buildings, equipment, and items for training purposes.

Lu Wu didn't expect Jiangnan University to have such high-end facilities, and in such a large number—23 in total.

This showed how wealthy Jiangnan University used to be, and conversely, how impoverished it was now compared to then.

Zhao Kai Ming's mood seemed to lower a bit: "Now in the challenge zone we only have 15 natural realms left, among which 1 is Elite, 10 are Boss Level, 2 are Leader Level, there's also a Lord, and one of a special level.

Some of these realms are quite interesting; you should come and see them when you have the time."

Saying this, Zhao Kai Ming sped through the challenge zone without giving Lu Wu a chance to look around, and took him to the research area.

"The research area here is where the instructors and professors have their labs. Currently, there are 123 labs of various sizes, of which 88 are idle or abandoned, and the rest are still operational.

Many of these operational labs have interesting projects. Xiao Lu, you should visit them when you have time."

As he spoke, Zhao Kai Ming suddenly remembered something: "Right, Old Zhang mentioned that if you're interested, you can set up a lab at the university. The school provides the space."

Having been beaten, Zhao Kai Ming also sold out Zhang Wentao's secrets: "Don't think this old geezer is kind-hearted. He's very crafty. He sees that you have money and is planning to swindle you into funding a lab.

He might even hope for a cut of any research achievements you make, considering he's been drooling over your White Bone Wild Boar Soup for not just a day or two."

After speaking, Zhao Kai Ming thought for a bit and then added: "But the old man is also pitiful. Jiangnan owes so much money; it's nearly crushed him, which is why he's doing this.

Well, Xiao Lu, if you can help—how should I put this..."

Zhao Kai Ming scratched his head, feeling a bit embarrassed for a moment, but finally said.

"If you can, please help him and help Jiangnan University."

Lu Wu scratched his head.

He hadn't planned on setting up a research lab lately.

His mind was consumed by thoughts of becoming stronger, which were primarily caused by Zhang Yuechu.

In fact, until today, Lu Wu had felt quite content with his progress—immersing himself in research, developing his company, growing and improving steadily.

After all, with a rich woman backing him, as a child with a rich patron, Lu Wu could grow up happily.

But after witnessing Zhang Yuechu's display today, dominating 13 bigshots of Jiangnan University single-handedly, and then seeing the rich woman's performance throughout the ordeal, Lu Wu suddenly felt that his family's rich woman might not be that powerful.

Lu Wu sensed that the rich woman was at a disadvantage when faced with Zhang Yuechu.

Considering that Zhang Yuechu was the daughter of the rich woman's rival, and the fact that just this daughter could outclass his rich woman, if the rival herself also stepped in, wouldn't his rich woman be devoured?

Wouldn't his own puny arms and legs be gnawed on as well?

Would it be too late then for him to accept another mother?

Lu Wu felt it was precarious.

This left Lu Wu feeling very insecure, his mind fixated on becoming more powerful.

However, Lu Wu didn't outright refuse the idea of a research lab.

"Um, about the research lab, I'll consider it."

While fobbing off the issue, Lu Wu took the opportunity to ask a question that had puzzled him for a long time.

"Uncle Zhao, I heard that we, Jiangnan, owe Jiangbei University 500 million points. Is that true?"

Zhao Kai Ming obviously hadn't expected Lu Wu to suddenly steer the conversation in this direction and was taken aback for a moment, but still nodded quickly: "Yes, indeed we have a debt of 500 million points."

"How did we get into that much debt? 500 million points, if you convert that into money, that's fifty trillion. How can our school still owe so much?

And having borrowed 500 million points, why are we still in such poverty?" Lu Wu was especially puzzled.

As for Zhao Kai Ming, it seemed he was prepared to let Lu Wu understand the current state of affairs at Jiangnan University, without hiding anything.

Since there was still some distance to the treasure vault, Zhao Kai Ming went on to explain bit by bit to Lu Wu.

"First, we should talk about the 500 million points, it's Jiangnan University that owes Jiangbei 500 million, but it's not like Jiangbei actually gave us 500 million.

Let alone Jiangbei, even the Education Bureau, if you asked them to cough up 500 million points all at once, they would have a tough time doing it."

"Secondly, regarding points and money, they can be exchanged for each other, but it's not an unlimited exchange.

The creation of this points system was specifically intended to serve Summoners.

It acts like a wall, segregating Summoners from ordinary people."

"It's a bit inappropriate to put it this way, but from a certain perspective, points indeed serve this function.

In today's world, although almost everyone can be a Summoner, not everyone can grow to become one.

Talent, resources, and other factors mean that real Professional Summoners actually make up only about five percent of the population, or even less.

Most of the world's people are just ordinary people with Summoned Beasts.

They live together with Summoners, in the same society, but the resources they control and need are different, hence the need for two separate currency systems."

"Points and money are two different systems, they're interconnected but cannot be fully integrated.

You can exchange them on a small scale, but you can't surpass a certain limit because the economic system of ordinary people would easily collapse."

Regarding points and money, Zhao Kai Ming had a lot to say and said it well, but listening to it made Lu Wu somewhat frantic.

So are you telling me, after all this, that 500 million points does not equal fifty trillion money? Can you be any more roundabout?

Hmm, Zhao Kai Ming obviously sensed Lu Wu's grievances and quickly got to the point.

"Also, in the world of Summoners, the points system can sometimes be rather unreliable, because an item's rarity or a person's power can cause sudden shifts, with prices becoming outrageously high just for a little bit of something."

Lu Wu knew this.

In his previous life, there were many strategic rare items that cost tens of millions or even hundreds of millions per gram.

At the same time, Lu Wu also understood why Jiangnan owed Jiangbei so much money.

"Did we borrow some important items from Jiangbei?"

Zhao Kai Ming shook his head: "Not items, people!"

"People?"

"Yes, about over a decade ago, Jiangnan University initiated a project that, when it came to a critical moment, lacked both manpower and materials. At that time, the relations between Jiangnan and Jiangbei were still good.

So when they faced difficulties, Jiangnan immediately thought of Jiangbei.

Jiangbei was very righteous back then and came to our aid without a second word, led by a Nationally Treasured Cultivation Master from Jiangbei who was just one step away from Grandmaster.

That Master brought along their students to join in on this project."

At this point, Zhao Kai Ming paused and couldn't help but feel a wave of emotion.

Lu Wu then understood.

"It failed?"

Zhao Kai Ming didn't care for that comment.

"What kind of talk is that? Saying it failed? They died!

Not only did that Nationally Treasured Master from Jiangbei die, but three of our Jiangnan's Nationally Treasured Masters died along with them.

Their deaths not only cost Jiangbei, who had initially signed an agreement with us stipulating compensation in case of failure, and even more so if it was a total loss, but nearly bankrupted us at Jiangnan.

Add to that, at the time, there was still another Nationally Treasured Master supporting.

So Jiangbei didn't see much change.

But our Jiangnan suffered, without Nationally Treasured Masters at the helm and our foundation having been drained; we've been on the decline from ten years ago up till now.

And so, Jiangnan ended up owing Jiangbei a huge sum, we've paid a lot, but still owe five hundred million."

Lu Wu truly understood now.

Research has risks, Jiangnan really suffered!

And talking about this, Zhao Kai Ming's mood had lowered significantly, and Lu Wu didn't continue to probe his wounds, although he was quite interested in the project that doomed Jiangnan University.

The rest of the way was silent.

Under the guidance of Zhao Kai Ming, Lu Wu arrived at the treasure vault of Jiangnan University...

...

I'll make up for it tomorrow, yeah, at least twelve thousand words tomorrow. If I don't finish, I'll live stream dressed as a woman in wrath!!!

# Chapter 224 224: 221 Dragon Teeth wrapped in Death Energy

Jiangnan University, Treasure Room.

Lu Wu was dumbstruck.

Zhao Kai Ming painted a vivid picture of Jiangnan University's poverty to Lu Wu along the way, describing the university's dire straits.

At the time, Lu Wu didn't feel much.

After all, he had just enrolled and didn't have a deep sense of belonging to Jiangnan University; it was hard for him to empathize.

But arriving at the Treasure Room, Lu Wu suddenly realized emotions are universal.

Looking at the hundreds of square feet that were mostly empty, Lu Wu now fully shared in the university's poverty.

"How come there's only so little stuff?"

What rendered Lu Wu speechless was that when he glanced over the items in the Treasure Room, nine out of ten pieces were Black Iron.

And most seemed to have no known use, appearing to be valueless ornaments just to make up the numbers.

Seeing this situation, Lu Wu was utterly speechless.

You call this treasure? You call this a Treasure Room?

Isn't this just a rubbish collection area?

Zhao Kai Ming quickly tried to pass the buck.

"Ahem, don't look at me, man; it's Old Zhang's fault.

Almost everything in the Treasure Room was sold by him; he's inhuman. He's nearly sold everything our ancestors struggled to accumulate, and to save face, he's filled the place with this junk, but he never considered, who is he kidding with these fakes? We are the only ones who come in here."

Lu Wu could guess what happened even without thinking much about it, and he wasn't interested in the reasons.

"Is this all there is in the Treasure Room?"

"Eh, actually, there are some nice things. What kind of item are you looking for? I can help you find one."

In this regard, Lu Wu had a clear goal.

"I'm looking for materials; I mainly want to upgrade Little Skeleton's phone. Right now, it can only hold four minions, which is too few."

Zhao Kai Ming's face twitched involuntarily.

Mom sell batch, a phone that can hold four minions, and that's considered too few? Not satisfied?

Of course, it wasn't enough. Lu Wu had recently been investigating the evolution of Little Skeleton.

He felt that the talent within Little Skeleton's Awakening might be a breakthrough, but that talent only activated once during Pei Qi No.1's Fusion Evolution, and even then, only 10%.

Therefore, Lu Wu felt that he had to expand Little Skeleton's capacity to at least ten slots, and naturally, the more, the better.

Everything was for the sake of Little Skeleton.

Of course, when it came time to verbalize it, Lu Wu had his own way.

"If we can find the right materials in the Treasure Room to upgrade Little Skeleton's phone, and its minions could increase by a hundred or eighty, then we would basically cruise through the university competition."

Zhao Kai Ming's eyes lit up as soon as Lu Wu mentioned this.

He completely forgot about the task given by Zhang Wentao before they left, to dupe Lu Wu with something of Silver Quality.

"Come on, come on; I know Old Zhang has stored a batch of good stuff he's too stingy to sell or use. I'll show you!"

Zhao Kai Ming said as he pulled Lu Wu deeper into the Treasure Room, stopping in front of a wall.

"I remember it's here; I secretly watched Old Zhang mess around with this wall before. Just give me a second!

There's got to be some sort of mechanism here."

As he spoke, Zhao Kai Ming began to examine the wall closely.

"Got it, right here!"

Zhao Kai Ming pressed on a corner of the wall, and then a grating alarm sounded.

Well, the scene was quite awkward.

Fortunately, the alarm was sudden and just as quickly ceased.

In a matter of minutes, the alarm stopped, and a gate in front of Lu Wu and Zhao Kai Ming opened.

"Huh, it really opened? I told you it was this spot!"

Zhao Kai Ming stood, hands on hips, while Lu Wu shook his head.

It was clear that Zhang Wentao had opened the door for them, and Lu Wu could already foresee the rough time Zhao Kai Ming would have when he returned to see Zhang Wentao; probably his dark circles would deepen.

Thinking of this, Lu Wu felt a tad guilty.

But this didn't affect Lu Wu's determination to walk through the gate. After all, the enhancement of Little Skeleton's power was the most important thing!

Entering the Treasure Room's gate revealed a secret chamber of less than twenty square feet.

Inside, there was a simple shelf with a lonely placement of five items. Lu Wu swept his gaze over them, and their attributes appeared before him.

...

Name: ???

Quality: ???

Effect: ???

Description: ??? Err, wait, this shouldn't be a question mark.

But the screen is full of question marks already, what more do you want me to describe?

...

Five items, almost all marked with question marks.

It was clear that these were the last bits of Jiangnan University's assets.

Lu Wu was sure that right now, Zhang Wentao must be watching with bated breath as he made his choices.

Honestly, imagining an old man watching him pitifully through surveillance, Lu Wu was indeed hesitant to proceed.

So, Lu Wu could only try not to think about Zhang Wentao watching.

If he didn't think about it, it wouldn't be awkward!

There was no helping it; Little Skeleton was the most important.

Old Zhang could let his blood be drawn if he wanted to, as agreeing to enter the treasury was also something he consented to.

So, Lu Wu wasn't troubled about whether or not to take something. What bothered him was, with all the items being question marks, which one should he actually take?

Which one would be useful for Little Skeleton's phone?

That was the question, but figuring it out wasn't difficult.

He had a cheat.

He directly used the "Item Effect Validation" function to verify each item, asking which one could help to enhance the quality of Little Skeleton's phone.

After going through each one, among the five items, only one was useful for improving the quality of Little Skeleton's phone.

It was an especially large tooth-like object.

"What's this?"

Curious, Lu Wu picked it up.

"This?" Zhao Kai Ming stepped forward and examined it carefully. "This should be a Dragon Tooth?"

"Dragon Tooth?"

"Yep!" Zhao Kai Ming nodded. "Doesn't our Jiangnan University have a Secret Realm on Dragon Island? This must be obtained from exploring the Dragon Island Secret Realm. A Dragon Tooth that can be placed here is likely from a dragon above a Lord in rank; its quality should be around Gold to King-level."

Saying this, Zhao Kai Ming paused, looked around to make sure no one and no surveillance was present, then continued with Lu Wu.

"Although the dragons from the Dragon Cave are Western Dragons, their materials are quite valuable. They're good for cultivation or making equipment and props, very popular. This one that's left until now and not sold by Old Zhang might have some issue.

Why don't you find something else? The one in the middle looks quite valuable. You could take it back to see if it's useful. If not, sell it and exchange for material you can use. Anyway, the stuff here, if you don't sell it, Old Zhang will eventually."

While Zhao Kai Ming said this, back in the office, Zhang Wentao's teeth were grinding fiercely.

Of course, all of this was unknown to Lu Wu and Zhao Kai Ming. At this moment, Lu Wu's gaze was fixed on the Dragon Tooth.

With Zhao Kai Ming's explanation, the attributes of the Dragon Tooth in Lu Wu's hand had changed.

...…

Name: Dragon Tooth Enveloped by Death Energy

Quality: King-level (Suspect)

Effect: Has a certain effect on upgrading Little Skeleton's phone.

Description: There seems to be a slight problem with this item—it appears to have heavy death energy. However, it doesn't seem to affect Little Skeleton too much.

...…

Having seen this, Lu Wu didn't hesitate any further.

"This'll do! It looks good, very suitable for me."

With that, Lu Wu tried to pick up the Dragon Tooth, which was the size of his arm, only to discover he couldn't lift it.

"This thing is quite heavy."

He had no choice but to let Little Skeleton carry it.

With the Dragon Tooth collected, Lu Wu's visit to the treasure repository was at an end.

Seeing that Lu Wu was taking the Dragon Tooth, Zhang Wentao breathed a sigh of relief, muttering "good kid" to himself several times.

At the same time, Zhang Wentao pulled out the research data on the Dragon Tooth and sent it to Lu Wu.

As for Lu Wu, after acquiring the Dragon Tooth, he had Zhao Kai Ming escort him to the library.

"Are you going to read books?"

Lu Wu shook his head: "No, I'm going to move the library."

Zhao Kai Ming didn't understand what Lu Wu meant at first, thinking he was joking. It wasn't until they arrived at the library that Zhao Kai Ming realized Lu Wu wasn't kidding; he was indeed there to move the library.

Of course, Lu Wu wasn't there to move books.

That kind of silly task wasn't for Lu Wu!

Times had changed. The library's books were indeed available in hard copy, but there were also electronic versions.

Lu Wu, wanting to move the library, naturally wasn't going to move the hard copies.

He went to the library, contacted the staff directly, took out Little Skeleton's phone, and asked the staff to copy all the electronic books from the library onto Little Skeleton's phone.

The staff members were baffled at the moment.

Jiangnan University's electronic library was huge, with not only text but also various images and videos. Could this tiny phone really fit it all?

Wouldn't it burst?

It turned out that Little Skeleton's phone was indeed capable of fitting the entire Jiangnan University electronic library.

After all, this phone was a Silver Level piece of Equipment. Such equipment could contain pigs and skeletons, let alone an electronic library.

It took a bit long though—four whole hours to get the electronic library loaded into Little Skeleton's phone.

After it was done, Little Skeleton's phone ran a bit slower.

Of course, the slight slowness wasn't noticeable to Lu Wu, but Little Skeleton could feel it.

It really felt its phone had slowed down, which upset Little Skeleton tremendously.

The little guy clutched the overused phone tightly to its chest.

Annoyed (Lu Wu sure was going to be bad again, Little Skeleton would never lend its phone to Lu Wu again.)

Yeah, clearly Little Skeleton hadn't realized the severity of the problem.

Lu Wu had loaded all the Jiangnan University library data, as well as all the information he had purchased from the internal network in recent times, onto Little Skeleton's phone.

What did that mean?

It meant that Lu Wu had set his sights on Little Skeleton's phone.

From now on, Little Skeleton's phone was going to become Lu Wu's data machine, his library. And with Lu Wu's attitude towards studying, the time Little Skeleton could play with the phone would probably be limited to the hours when Lu Wu was asleep.

...…

# Chapter 225 225: 222 Master

Lingnan, on a bus heading deep into the mountains.

A young boy sat by the window with a goblin by his side and a dog in his lap, staring blankly yet expectantly at the scenery outside.

His expression was a mix of bewilderment and anticipation.

Bewilderment because he did not know where his future was heading, anticipation because he knew exactly where he was going now.

He was heading to a place called the Demon Cave, an exploratory secret realm.

Exploratory secret realms are not fully controlled by humans.

In the eyes of a summoner, these are the true secret realms, representing opportunities that have given rise to countless formidable beings.

But at the same time, they also represent danger.

Five years ago, his parents had entered this very realm and had never returned.

Today, five years later, he had arrived.

The bus stopped at a campsite deep in the mountains.

At that moment, the boy on the bus hesitated briefly before taking out his phone to send a text message.

Then, he picked up the dog and, along with the goblin, stepped off the bus.

Heading towards the campsite deep in the mountains.

...

Jiangnan, at Lu Wu's house.

Early in the morning, Lu Wuyi made a phone call to Lin Jianying.

Still no answer.

"He told me he was going to visit grandma's grave and would be back after paying respects, but it's been several days now, and not only has he not returned, I can't even reach him through calls.

What on earth is Old Lin up to?"

Lu Wu was worried.

"He wouldn't have gone there, would he?"

That guy had always been obsessed with rescuing his parents.

Wanting to become a professional summoner was also for that reason, and it wasn't impossible that he had run off to try and save his parents during this period.

"But it's been five years, what could he possibly rescue? A pair of skeletons?"

Lu Wu's casual complaint attracted Little Skeleton over.

Obediently (Lu Wu, are you calling me?)

"Yes!"

Seeing the little guy come over on his own, Lu Wu didn't hesitate to take the phone straight out of Little Skeleton's hands.

Little Skeleton wasn't happy about that.

Angry (Little Skeleton's phone is not for Lu Wu to borrow. Lu Wu has turned bad and will break Little Skeleton's phone!)

"Go away, what's this 'your phone my phone'?

You are my skeleton, your phone is also mine!

I'm confiscating this phone today, you go and train!"

Super angry (Little Skeleton doesn't want to train. Little Skeleton is super strong. Little Skeleton doesn't need to train. Little Skeleton wants to play with the phone!)

"You? Super strong? You're just super inflated!

Do you believe that right now little goldfish could beat 10 of you? And that's just on land, if it were in the sea, a hundred Little Skeletons together wouldn't be enough for little goldfish!

See that Dragon Teeth? I brought that here for you to train your Bone Teeth. When you've trained your Bone Teeth into Dragon Teeth, then come and ask me for the phone!"

In the end, Little Skeleton was suppressed by Lu Wu.

He could only go reluctantly, holding the Dragon Teeth he had secured from Jiangnan University yesterday, to the training ground.

After suppressing Little Skeleton and obtaining Little Skeleton's phone,

Lu Wu hesitated for a moment, then made a phone call to the rich woman in his family.

It was because of Lin Jianying's situation, and Lu Wu wasn't comfortable with the boy going out alone. Furthermore, the exploratory secret realm of the Demon Cave was far too challenging for Lin Jianying, and Lu Wu was worried about him encountering accidents, so he asked the rich woman to arrange for someone to go and check on him.

The rich woman was quite easy to talk to, and indicated that she would send someone over.

The rich woman nodded in agreement, and Lu Wu breathed a long sigh of relief.

"With the rich woman's people watching, there shouldn't be a problem."

Lu Wu temporarily set aside the matter involving Lin Jianying and began to focus on the matters at hand.

Lu Wu didn't have many things at hand.

He had just secured the position of team leader, and with nearly a year left until the university league matches, Zhao Li would handle the preparations.

The launch of the Steel Armor Wild Boar into the market wasn't something Lu Wu planned to rush into either.

One reason was that the farm's production capacity couldn't keep up.

Another reason was that the Steel Armor Wild Boar, being a second evolution Summoned Beast,, catered mainly to professional summoners, and its release would certainly impact the market.

Some people's interests would be harmed.

Organizations that managed to make a living in the professional summoners' domain were enormous, and only those with strong arms and legs could handle such momentous affairs.

Clearly, Lu Wu was not currently capable of that.

Even his company would not have been feasible to start if not for the rich woman backing him.

At this time, if he took too large a step by launching the Steel Armor Wild Boar into the market and it caused trouble, the rich woman might not be able to protect his company.

This was also what the rich woman had said.

Therefore, Lu Wu was not in a rush with the Steel Armor Wild Boar matter and decided to delay it for a while.

In such a case, Lu Wu's most pressing issue was improving his own strength.

As a summoner, as the strength of his summoned beasts increased, his own strength also increased accordingly.

Among his summoned beasts, Little Goldfish and Han were relatively easy to handle.

Little Goldfish could be left to grow on its own; in fact, strictly speaking, it had already grown up.

It now had the strength of a Boss 3 Star (it had gained another star a few days ago), the Talent of Child of the Sea could elevate its strength by a major tier, and the Talent of Commander of the Water Clan raised it another major step.

It became a lord-level existence in the ocean.

For its skills, it could comprehend them on its own, happy to learn one, not happy learning another, without any need for Lu Wu to train it. In its presence, Lu Wu as a summoner seemed particularly useless.

Apart from spending money on nutritional supplements for Little Goldfish, he was of no use.

As for Han, well, its cultivation also had nothing to do with Lu Wu.

Just fight.

Grab it and thrash it vigorously, then feed it something after the beating, and Green Cub could heal itself and improve its own strength quality; Lu Wu could only design some tactics for it.

Han didn't even like that.

It believed that being a bird meant fighting head-on, none of this utilizing speed advantage, flying in the sky, or any skill combinations—it saw all those as useless nonsense.

Just fight head-on.

Either it's knocked down by the opponent, or it knocks down the opponent, this simple excitement is what battle is all about to a bird.

So, surveying the summoned beasts under Lu Wu, Lu Wu found the meaning of his existence as a summoner only in Little Skeleton, at his own home.

Whenever he looked at Little Skeleton, what surged in Lu Wu's heart was sheer pride.

It was he who, with a malfunctioning Golden Finger, with meticulous care, step by step, had cultivated Little Skeleton to its current state.

This made Lu Wu exceedingly proud; he felt incredibly awesome.

Thus, in terms of strength improvement, Lu Wu naturally focused all his efforts on Little Skeleton.

He needed to solve the evolution problem for Little Skeleton.

Only by resolving Little Skeleton's evolution problem, could this little guy's strength increase again.

Yet, regarding Little Skeleton's evolution, Lu Wu had no clues at the moment.

After all, he, Lu Wu, was the first to cultivate a Little Skeleton to the level of a Boss.

There were no previous instances of a second evolution for Little Skeleton, and Lu Wu couldn't gain experience from others, he could only draw inspiration from other Skeleton Series summoned beasts.

These other Skeleton Series summoned beasts indeed provided Lu Wu with some inspiration, letting Lu Wu think of some other evolution methods.

For example, like the Wild Boar Knight, but Lu Wu felt those weren't suitable for Little Skeleton.

So, for the time being, Lu Wu still focused his attention on Little Skeleton's phone, planning to first improve the quality of Little Skeleton's phone and Little Skeleton's quality, and bring out the talent within Little Skeleton's awakening before considering Little Skeleton's evolution problem.

For this reason, Lu Wu brought out the plan he had come up with while previously researching Little Skeleton's phone.

He began immersing himself in research, expanding his knowledge, and upgrading the plan.

In this research, Lu Wu's talent and abilities were undoubtedly exceptional.

Moreover, he now had in his possession a phone that contained the digital library of Jiangnan University and had, having spent over a hundred thousand, swept through the internal network Lu Wu could access for information.

He had the capability, the plugins, and the knowledge reserves.

The research on this plan by Lu Wu was progressing rapidly.

Within a week, the plan was already nearing its conclusion.

However, just as Lu Wu's plan was about to conclude, there arose complications in his research.

One aspect was inherent to the plan itself.

When Lu Wu incorporated the element "Dragon Teeth" into the forming plan, he realized the previously nearly finalized plan collapsed.

The framework of his original plan couldn't support the addition of "Dragon Teeth."

There were only two solutions to this problem.

Either remove "Dragon Teeth" and stick to the original plan, or upgrade the plan structure.

Lu Wu couldn't bear to do the former, and his current reserve of knowledge wasn't sufficient for the latter.

Whether it was the Jiangnan University library or the information Lu Wu could collect from the internal network, all had their limits.

This knowledge was only up to the professional level; anything beyond that was off-limits for Lu Wu due to insufficient privileges.

Unless Lu Wu could secure a Master title, such knowledge wouldn't be accessible to him.

Meanwhile, as Lu Wu was grappling with this issue, Zhang Wentao brought him good news.

The "Little Skeleton" advanced plan he had uploaded more than half a year ago had been validated successfully; the plan for Little Skeleton to advance to Mage was feasible.

At first, this news didn't excite Lu Wu much.

Success was just success; in terms of validating a research plan, the rewards usually amounted to just a few hundred to a thousand merit points.

Currently, Lu Wu, who dealt with tens of thousands daily, no longer considered such a reward significant.

However, what Lu Wu didn't expect was that along with the validation of Little Skeleton's advancement to Mage, there came another piece of good news.

"Additionally, Xiao Lu, your Master title application has been approved."

"What's that?" Lu Wu, upon hearing this news, was stunned for a moment and only after a while managed to respond, "Does that mean I'm already a Master-level Cultivation Master?"

This gave Lu Wu a profoundly lonely feeling akin to solitude amidst snow.

He recalled that he seemingly hadn't yet received his professional certificate, and to his surprise, the Master certificate was set to arrive first.

"News came from Beijing; your Master-level certificate review was approved. Once you go to Beijing to collect the certificate, you'll officially be a bona fide Master-level Cultivation Master."

Zhang Wentao was quite excited, but Lu Wu frowned immediately upon hearing that he needed to make a trip to Beijing.

"Do I have to go to Beijing to collect it? Can't they send someone over? Or find someone to help me pick it up? I'm at a critical moment in my research."

"I'm afraid that's not possible. The awarding of the Master Certificate is a very serious and solemn affair, and your presence is required.

Besides, the award ceremony also comes with rewards. As the youngest Master-level Cultivation Master, the reward should be quite substantial!

Perhaps it could even grant you access to the treasury of the Beijing Cultivation Center."

Zhang Wentao clearly knew how to motivate Lu Wu by now.

With a single sentence, he got Lu Wu's spirits back up.

"When do we go? Is now okay?"

Upon hearing about the reward, Lu Wu was more enthusiastic than anyone; he instantly had Little Skeleton call little goldfish back and together with Dudu, he prepared everything needed for the trip.

Lu Wu was almost ready, and both Zhao Kai Ming and Zhang Wentao also arrived.

Lu Wu was set to go to Beijing, and the two of them planned to accompany him.

One was to support Lu Wu, and the other because they didn't want to miss such a face-gaining opportunity.

......

In Lingnan, deep within the Demon Cave Secret Realm.

A summoner squad was moving forward, chatting and laughing.

This squad consisted of four people, led by a middle-aged man whose Summoned Beasts were an Earth Cave People Warrior and a Dogman Warrior called Wu Yong.

The woman on his left seemed to be in her thirties, still charming, with a gentle smile on her face, and her Summoned Beast was a seemingly harmless Snowman.

Her name was Li Jing, and she was Wu Yong's wife.

There was also one girl, roughly twenty-one or twenty-two, who looked incredibly youthful.

This girl, Wu Mei, was Wu Yong's daughter.

This squad was a typical family of Summoners, and the only outsider in the team was Lin Jianying, who stood in the middle.

However, although Lin Jianying was the sole outsider, he wasn't alienated by the squad.

Whether it was the leader Wu Yong, or Li Jing and Wu Mei flanking him on either side, all three were very close to Lin Jianying.

They protected him, took care of him.

Wu Yong occasionally looked back to check on Lin Jianying's condition.

"Lin, are you tired? Do you want to rest?"

"Uncle Wu, I'm fine, you don't need to look after me."

Despite having spent a few days together, Lin Jianying was still somewhat shy when facing Wu Yong, his uncle.

"You shouldn't be polite with your uncle. If you're tired, or if anything's up, just talk to Uncle Wu. You're Old Lin's son, which makes you our son too. We should look after you.

Besides, your dad once told our family's Old Wu that we should marry Mei to you.

Old Wu has agreed to that..."

"Mom!"

Beside them, Wu Mei stomped her foot and pouted.

Lin Jianying's gaze was inevitably drawn to her, and watching her blushing face, the love-stricken Lin Jianying felt his heart pound uncontrollably.

Not daring to stare longer, he averted his eyes to his own feet after just a glance.

But his family's goblin kept staring fiercely at Wu Mei.

In the goblin's eyes, Wu Mei was also a weirdo, this bulging-chested weirdo who kept bullying their master and making their master's face turn red.

She was often distracted, and the goblin didn't think she was a good person.

Even worse than that weirdo in the large house who loved giving injections.

Speaking of that injection-loving weirdo in the large house, the goblin started to miss the large house, Little Skeleton, and the others, wondering when its master would take it back.

Now the goblin realized that aside from being touched and injected by the weirdo, the large house was actually quite nice.

The goblin was thinking about the large house.

At this time, Lin Jianying was also thinking that it was time for him to leave this squad.

He had encountered this squad on his second day entering the Demon Cave Territory, exactly speaking, they found him in the morning while he was inquiring around the camp for news about his parents.

Initially, Lin Jianying was very wary of Wu Yong's family who suddenly approached him.

After all, he was an adult and wouldn't simply believe anyone claiming to be his uncle, even though he really hoped to hear news about his parents.

However, after chatting with Wu Yong's family, Lin Jianying realized they were indeed acquaintances of his parents, whom he had heard about from his parents before.

Furthermore, the meticulous care of Wu Yong's family over the next few days fully won Lin Jianying over.

After all, apart from Lu Wu, Wu Yong's family had been the kindest to him since his parents vanished.

So, during those few short days of interaction, this family had gained a significant place in Lin Jianying's heart.

But the more this was the case, the more Lin Jianying felt he couldn't stay with them any longer.

He knew his own circumstances, and he knew he wasn't suited to have friends right now.

Thus, after some hesitation, Lin Jianying finally broached the subject of parting ways with Wu Yong during a rest.

"Um, Uncle Wu, school is starting, so I'm planning to go back tomorrow."

As soon as Lin Jianying spoke, the previously joyful Wu Yong's family suddenly fell silent...

...

Adding the morning's 3000, that totals 7600 with 3400 left!

# Chapter 226 226: 223 Little Skeleton's New Junior Brother

On the high-speed train from Fucheng to Beijing.

Lu Wu was playing with Little Skeleton's phone, looking at the attributes of a new underling that Little Skeleton had just subdued recently.

Name: Skeleton Mage (Pei Qi No. 2) (First Evolution)

Power: 1 star (Elite)

Quality: Ordinary (Bronze (inferior)) (Enhanced)

Attribute: Undead, Nether Water

State: Asleep (Sleeping in the phone)

Weakness: Light (Strong), Flames (Moderate), Thunder (Moderate)

Basic Skills: Corrosive Hand (Mastered), Nether Water Shield (Mastered), Nether Water Attack (Mastered)

Advanced Spells: Nether Water Sword (Unmastered)

Talent: Nether Water Spell Enhancement (Basic)

Description: A particularly crappy summoned beast.

Since Pei Qi No. 1 merged with the pig, their slots in Little Skeleton's phone had merged from two into one.

That freed up one slot.

Right then, there was a breakthrough in the evolution of the Little Skeleton Mages at the Fucheng Research Center, so Lu Wu got a Little Skeleton Mage from there.

Yes, it was the one Lu Wu was looking at now.

Judging from its attributes, it was exceptionally crappy; it had no prestige when brought out, not to mention its combat power. For the current Lu Wu, this little guy was practically useless, and Lu Wu might have been able to suppress it himself without even making a move.

But Lu Wu still let Little Skeleton keep it.

It was for research purposes.

"Another first-evolution Skeleton Mage added, but Little Skeleton's talent awakening hasn't changed. Is it because the underling's first evolution is not good enough? Or is it the Skeleton Mage itself?

Not sure yet, but I could try evolving the Little Skeleton Mage further."

For Lu Wu, this Little Skeleton Mage was just a tool mage.

Its purposes were two-fold: one to verify the rules of Little Skeleton's talent awakening, and the other to scout ahead for Little Skeleton.

Lu Wu planned to cultivate it for a second evolution first, to see if he could find other paths of evolution.

Of course, evolving a Little Skeleton Mage to that level was expensive, but luckily, Lu Wu lacked everything but money.

With tens of thousands of points a day, Lu Wu could cultivate this little guy without even spending a day's worth of money.

"Hmm, it takes about ten hours from Fucheng to Beijing. The phone plan for Little Skeleton is still at a bottleneck, so I'll take this time to tailor a money-burning cultivation scheme for this Pei Qi No. 2.

After all, it's just twenty or thirty thousand, quite cheap."

Upon hearing Lu Wu's words, Zhang Wentao beside him couldn't help but cover his heart.

Twenty or thirty thousand to cultivate a Little Skeleton? And that's cheap?

Is that even human talk?

As expected, Lu Wu became less adorable after he got rich.

Meanwhile, as Lu Wu was preparing for research, the phone that Little Skeleton was playing with rang.

Little Skeleton obediently handed it over.

"Lu Wu, a rich woman is looking for you!"

Lu Wu was startled and took the phone: "Mom, what do you need?"

"Why didn't you tell me when you left?" Jiang Yuexing was clearly displeased.

Do I need to report that I'm just going to Beijing to get a certificate and then returning?

Lu Wu frowned and straightened up.

Rich woman, are you teaching me how to handle my matters?

Well, it was forceful, but of course, this was just in Lu Wu's thoughts. What came out of his mouth was especially sweet: "Isn't this just me going to get a Master Certificate to surprise you?

Your son is the youngest Master Cultivator in the history of the Alliance, am I not bringing you glory?"

Lu Wu easily manipulated the rich woman.

"Go early and come back early, don't dawdle too long outside, it's not safe.

Also, if some messy woman comes looking for you, don't go off with her, you hear?"

The rich woman's tone had softened a lot as she spoke like a mother, instructing Lu Wu with a list of matters before finally hanging up the phone.

After ending the call, Jiang Yuexing thought about it and still felt something was off.

Beijing had many women of questionable character, and she worried Lu Wu might be led astray. She wanted to follow him there but was too tied up to leave.

With no alternative, Jiang Yuexing had no choice but to make another call.

As soon as the other party picked up, Jiang Yuexing blurted out, "My son is going to Beijing for a visit, watch over him for me, and don't let any shady women get near him."

With that said, she hung up the phone.

Leaving the person who answered the call completely bewildered.

…

On Lu Wu's side,

He got busy immediately after hanging up.

It took him about eight hours to tailor-make a cultivation plan for Pei Qi No. 2.

After tallying up the cost, Lu Wu noted, "Hmm, elevating Pei Qi No. 2 from ordinary quality to bronze will require about twelve thousand points."

"Pretty good, pretty cheap, it's just about ten times more expensive than a White Bone Wild Boar.

It can be earned back in less than a morning."

Zhang Wentao turned away, huffing and puffing.

Enough is enough.

He truly despised such ostentatious wealth flaunting. Points? That's just gross money!

Knowledge is the sweet stuff!

"Uncle Zhang, I'll send you the points and the list later, could you arrange for someone to deliver it to my place?" Lu Wu said.

Upon hearing this, Zhang Wentao immediately turned back, thumping his chest, "Consider it done!"

Well, how to put it, at that moment Uncle Zhang also found points rather sweet-tasting.

He could make at least a thousand or eight hundred from this order alone.

Not long after finalizing the cultivation plan for Pei Qi No. 2, the high-speed train reached its final stop.

This was Lu Wu's first time visiting Beijing in his two lifetimes, and his mood was somewhat excited.

Stepping out of the train car,

Lu Wu's excitement level soared a few notches.

Mostly because he was stunned by the facilities at Beijing Station.

The first time Lu Wu traveled from Quan City to Fucheng, he was just as amazed by Fucheng Station, thinking that compared to Quan City, it seemed like a small village.

Now arriving in Beijing, Lu Wu's feelings were not much different.

Primarily because the facilities at Beijing Station were completely different from those at Fucheng Station, which focused primarily on architecture.

In Beijing, it was a combination of architecture, props, and even equipment.

From the moment Lu Wu disembarked, every object he saw seemed to have attributes.

What caught Lu Wu's attention the most, however, were the lights hanging overhead at the station.

Lu Wu initially thought they were just for lighting, but a closer look revealed that was not the case.

…

Item: Danger Sensing Processing Light

Level: Silver

Description: A hybrid of tools and technology, capable of not only providing illumination but also detecting energy within a range. It can suppress and eliminate energy outbursts in real-time.

ps: Can eliminate leader-level attacks

pss: Requires recharging.

…

Lu Wu never imagined that a mere lamp at the station would possess a silver quality, the same level as Little Skeleton's phone.

Was Beijing a bit too extravagant?

Moreover, there were other facilities, all equipped with detection and security functions.

Lu Wu could not help but exclaim after surveying them, "Just this station alone must have cost tens of millions, right?"

A local nearby overheard and immediately chuckled at his remark.

"Millions? Little bro, poverty has limited your imagination. This station was built with the involvement of people from the Cultivation Center in Beijing, its value can't be measured by money.

Don't even talk about millions, even billions couldn't build a station like this."

Did I say the millions were in currency?

Lu Wu was somewhat speechless, not knowing where this guy's bizarre sense of local superiority came from.

But Lu Wu didn't feel like arguing with him.

After all, this 'local' was just an ordinary person.

And although this uncle was filled with that inexplicable sense of superiority, he wasn't a bad person, just purely fond of showing off.

There was no need to confront him, so Lu Wu casually replied, "Beijing really is something else, our little place can't compare at all."

That ended it, the words directly hit the uncle's sweet spot.

The man got excited and said to Lu Wu, "Let me tell you, this station is nothing in our Beijing.

The headquarters of the Summoner Center, the headquarters of the Cultivation Center, the Alliance headquarters are all several streets ahead of this place.

Also, you know about the Phoenix Nest Training Ground, right?

It's the largest training ground in Beijing and it's currently hosting the Cultivation Masters competition. You guys should definitely go there if you have a chance. I'm telling you, it will be an eye-opener.

Right, the day after tomorrow is the finals of the Youth Cultivation Masters competition. If you want to go, you should go then.

That match will definitely be thrilling, you'll see how our Beijing's top talent, Guzhentian, crushes everyone.

Yes, yes, you absolutely mustn't miss it, you definitely need to see it. When you buy your tickets, just mention my name, I have a good brother there. Mentioning my name will be useful.

By the way, do you smoke? Want to try some Hua cigarettes?

I tell you, I just have a habit of smoking Hua, smoking others makes me cough…"

Lu Wu couldn't help but laugh and cry.

It was quite a struggle before he could finally free himself from this streetwise uncle.

As Lu Wu was leaving, the streetwise uncle didn't forget to wave his hand and remind Lu Wu to mention his name when buying the tickets.

It gets a discount!

"More like breaking a bone!"

Lu Wu shook his head but the matter of the Cultivation Masters competition indeed piqued his interest.

"I'll see then, if I have time and nothing else going on, I will go and check it out."

On the streetwise uncle's part.

He didn't realize until Lu Wu had left that Lu Wu wasn't alone; he was with two elderly gentlemen, a middle-aged man, and a chubby little girl.

At that moment, he was quite shocked, thinking that this little brother he just met might be somewhat significant?

But he didn't pay much heed.

After all, they were probably people he would never meet again.

...

Coming out from the station, Lu Wu and his group headed straight for the headquarters of the Cultivation Center.

They took a vehicle.

Although Zhang Wentao could fly, he couldn't just fly around in Beijing, in fact, anywhere outside Jiangnan, Summoned Beasts like Zhang Wentao couldn't just fly in any city's airspace.

The Alliance had specifically mandated this, as a lord-level Summoned Beast roaming freely over a city was too dangerous.

This was why Lu Wu and his group, instead of flying, took a motorized vehicle instead.

Initially, Lu Wu and his group could have gone directly to the Cultivation Center Headquarters, but halfway there, Zhang Wentao and Zhao Kai Ming insisted on stopping at a hotel to settle down first.

Lu Wu was a bit confused.

Just grabbing a certificate and leaving, why settle in?

To this, Zhang Wentao and others explained that Lu Wu was still too young.

Jiangnan University and others had waited who knows how long for the chance to appear before the old folks at the headquarters, how could they go there casually?

They needed to dress up a bit.

So, upon arriving at the hotel, Lu Wu was half-forced by the two elderly men to take a bath, and then was dressed in a set of Jiangnan University uniform that the two had specifically brought.

When Lu Wu came out, he realized that it wasn't just him getting spruced up.

Zhang Wentao and Zhao Kai Ming were also dressed to impress.

Wearing black Sun Yat-sen suits, sporting gold-rimmed glasses, and wearing the Jiangnan University badge on their chests.

Have to say, the two elderly men looked quite respectable after dressing up.

Still not finished, these two old men even rented a fleet and a ceremonial team.

Seeing their setup, those who knew understood that Lu Wu was receiving a Master Certificate, those who didn't thought Lu Wu was about to become the president of the Alliance.

"I mean, is this necessary?"

"Yes!"

Lu Wu felt helpless, but Zhang Wentao and Zhao Kai Ming were resolute.

They even contacted the media.

They had no choice, Jiangnan University had declined for too long, too long without any glory.

Moreover, not long ago, Zhang Yuechu single-handedly toppled all the senior officials of the school.

Now, Jiangnan University was a laughingstock throughout the entire Alliance.

This time, by using Lu Wu, the youngest ever Master Cultivator, to make a splash and vindicate Jiangnan University, how could they miss this chance?

Lu Wu could understand their feelings.

So, he didn't say much and let them go ahead with it.

A few hours later,

A massive fleet set out from the hotel where Lu Wu and the others were staying, ostentatiously heading towards the Cultivation Center Headquarters.

At this moment, Zhang Wentao and Zhao Kai Ming, excited, had no idea what awaited them at the Cultivation Center Headquarters.

Just as their fleet reached the main gate of the Cultivation Center Headquarters,

the gates of the Cultivation Center were tightly closed, outright refusing their fleet entry.

This situation was anticipated by Zhang Wentao and others, as they knew that the headquarters was not a place one could enter at will, and they didn't expect the fleet to go in.

They had contacted acquaintances at the headquarters the day before to make arrangements, asking the fleet to wait outside.

They took Lu Wu and the media inside, collected the certificate, then took a lap around the city before returning to the hotel.

However, just as Zhang Wentao and the others had the fleet stop and were about to take the media inside, someone came out from the headquarters.

An impeccably groomed old man in his fifties appeared.

He glanced at the fleet and the ceremonial team and immediately frowned.

"What's all this? What's with the fleet, and these media and ceremonial teams? Are you putting on a monkey show? Dismiss all of this!"

Zhang Wentao hurried forward, "May I ask who you are?"

"I am Deputy Director Gu Tian of the Beijing Cultivation Center."

Hearing the man's title, Zhang Wentao bowed slightly, "Deputy Director Gu, good day. I am Zhang Wentao, the President of Jiangnan University. We came here today with our student Lu Wu to collect his Master Certificate. About the fleet and ceremonial team, we had reported to the center in advance."

"Even if you reported, it's not acceptable. Just to collect a Master Certificate and you're making a spectacle like a monkey show, dismiss all of this!"

"This—"

Zhang Wentao felt embarrassed.

Hesitating whether to contact his old friend, but considering his old friend's influence was not greater than the man's, Zhang Wentao gave up, not wanting to trouble his friend.

"Old Zhao, let's withdraw the fleet—"

"You don't need to withdraw. Just retreat two li away, there's a parking lot there. We'll have them come over after we collect the certificate."

Although Lu Wu disliked Zhang Wentao's fuss, he didn't like seeing him being bullied, so he didn't remain silent at this time.

Zhang Wentao brightened up.

"That's a good idea."

As he was preparing to have the fleet retreat to the parking lot two li away, Gu Tian spoke up again.

"Better to just withdraw, to avoid embarrassment later. After all, you might not even get the certificate!"

Saying this, Gu Tian approached Lu Wu, looking him up and down.

"Are you Lu Wu?"

"Yes, I am!" Lu Wu responded expressionlessly.

"Young man, let me advise you to stay grounded. Don't seek undue glory, or you'll only suffer the consequences!"

After saying that, the old man turned and walked away.

Leaving Lu Wu utterly baffled.

...

4400 plus 7600, 12000 achieved, forget about cross-dressing.

# Chapter 227 227: 224 Beast Soul Burst

Encountering such a setup by an old man named Gutian,

the originally lively and festive atmosphere vanished in an instant.

Lu Wu here was fine, but Zhang Wentao and Zhao Kai Ming on the other side were somewhat at a loss.

They had no idea that a seemingly good situation would turn into this.

It had gotten to the point where they didn't know how to handle it anymore.

And shortly after Gutian went inside, another old man quickly came out.

He waved at Zhang Wentao's group with a face full of apologies.

"Old Zhang!"

"Old Zhou!"

Upon seeing his old acquaintance, Zhang Wentao immediately found his bearings and hurried over to greet him.

"What's going on? Who was that just now?"

"Let's not talk about that here, this isn't the place for discussion. Have the media withdraw first, and you three, come with me inside."

"Oh, okay!"

Zhang Wentao was quite trusting of his old acquaintance.

He did as he was told, dismissed the media, and then brought Zhao Kai Ming and Lu Wu into the headquarters of the Cultivation Center.

But are media professionals that easily dealt with?

Yes, they were paid to come.

But they were already here, so they couldn't just leave without making the most of it, could they?

Wasn't there a readymade news story right in front of them? They immediately picked it up and ran with it.

Of course, Zhang Wentao didn't know about this yet; he was busy seeking information from his old pal, Zhou Zheng.

Jiangnan University didn't seem to have offended anyone at headquarters, so why would they need to target him like this?

"Actually, it's mainly due to Gutian.

The Master Certificate was already settled, but today Gutian suddenly spoke up saying he had received an accusation stating that your student's persona was fabricated.

Whether it's 'Little Skeleton Evolution' or the 'White Bone Wild Boar' evolution, they were concocted by pooling Jiangnan University's resources.

All to create a 19-year-old Cultivation Master.

So he came forward, demanding that headquarters re-examine the qualifications of your student for the Cultivation Master."

"This—"

Zhang Wentao and Zhao Kai Ming were stunned,

then filled with anger.

"Who on earth would resort to such despicable tactics, causing such rumble!"

"Let me find out who it is, and I'll knock his head crooked."

Zhou Zheng shook his head, "What you should be considering now is not this, but how you will face the upcoming review."

"A review is just a review, what is there to be afraid of!"

On this point, Zhang Wentao and Zhao Kai Ming were particularly confident.

"We've done nothing wrong, we fear no review!"

Their attitude caught Zhou Zheng off guard.

In fact, upon hearing the news of the accusations from Gutian's side, his initial reaction was to believe it.

Even as Zhang Wentao's old friend, he felt that it was very likely Jiangnan University's engineered scheme.

But seeing Zhang Wentao and his colleagues so confident now truly surprised Zhou Zheng.

He couldn't help but turn his head to look back at Lu Wu, and what he saw then dumbfounded him.

Lagging a couple of steps behind them, Lu Wu was currently gesturing at his phone.

"What are you doing?"

"Livestreaming!"

Lu Wu replied as if it were the most natural thing in the world, continuing to focus on his phone.

"Hello, friends, how are you? I'm your host, Nu Xiao, and I'm currently at the Beijing Cultivation Center Headquarters.

I came here today to receive my Master Certificate.

But just now, I received the news that someone reported me, tore into me, saying Nu Xiao is a fake talent.

They won't award me the certificate and want to review me.

I will not accept this. Send some gifts my way, everyone, and I'll take you on a tear through the Beijing Cultivation Center Headquarters to get back the Master Certificate that belongs to me."

Lu Wu's livestream had once been shaken up by the Jiangnan and Jiangbei University incident, garnering millions of followers.

Now that Lu Wu had started streaming, nearly ten thousand people tuned in almost immediately.

With Lu Wu dropping key phrases like 'Beijing Cultivation Center Headquarters', 'Master Certificate', 'reported', and 'tear through', it was no doubt that the livestream exploded instantly.

After boosting viewership with a few rockets to attract more traffic, the number of people in the livestream soared within minutes of starting.

And the viewership had already reached well over a million.

Suddenly, the sheer size of the audience took the streaming platform by surprise.

According to protocol, the platform should have been delighted by such popularity and would have provided resources, but the issue involved the Beijing Cultivation Center Headquarters, and the platform didn't have the guts to intervene recklessly.

However, they also didn't dare shut it down, as Lu Wu was no ordinary figure.

Thus, the platform's strategy was to contact the Beijing Cultivation Center Headquarters to deal with it themselves.

In reality, this was no longer necessary, because the Cultivation Center Headquarters staff had already come over to address the situation.

Just as Lu Wu's livestream began, a cold voice rang out.

"Enough is enough with your antics!

The Cultivation Center Headquarters isn't the place for this kind of behavior!"

As the voice echoed, Gutian's hand reached out, attempting to grab Lu Wu's phone.

This move, though appearing nonchalant, was laced with malice; had he succeeded, Little Skeleton's phone would have been damaged, if not destroyed.

"Stop!"

Zhang Wentao and Zhao Kai Ming instantly turned pale as they witnessed this and stepped forward to intervene without hesitation.

They blocked the strike with their own hands.

However, this move thoroughly enraged Gutian.

"How dare you resort to violence within the headquarters! Jiangnan University has some nerve!

Is this a rebellion?"

There's a saying about the guilty party filing the suit first; though he was the one who had acted first, now he was the one asking questions.

Jiangnan University was utterly helpless and used to being bullied; when faced with oppression, they habitually bowed their heads to admit fault, hoping to keep the peace.

"We were presumptuous, we..."

"There's no need for any more nonsense. Take them down first, and confiscate that crime tool before we talk."

Clearly, the concessions from Jiangnan University were useless; they were being bullied regardless.

Following Director Gu's command, a team of security personnel surrounded Lu Wuyi and his group.

Faced with this situation, Zhou Zheng could no longer remain silent.

"Director Gu, isn't this going a bit too far? It's just a live stream. If we turn it off, then..."

"This isn't the place for you to speak!"

Well, there was no use for Zhou Zheng either; with just one sentence, he was completely suppressed.

His face a mix of green and red, he glanced at Zhang Wentao and the others, feeling he had lost face, but he said nothing more and could only pinch his nose in retreat.

At this moment, Lu Wu truly witnessed the harsh reality of this world.

Since his arrival, Lu Wu's journey had been smooth sailing, and with the environment being similar to his previous life, he once held an incorrect perception of this world.

He thought it was a world full of warmth and civilization.

Only now did he realize it was a blatantly barbaric world with survival of the fittest.

Now, this Mr. Gu obviously had his eyes on his phone.

He had found a random excuse and was ready to start his robbery.

Yes, Lu Wu guessed correctly.

Gu was targeting him primarily because of the phone, which was certainly one factor.

He had been watching it for a long time.

A device that could grant Summoned Beasts to Summoned Beasts was absolutely a strategic level item with high research value. If obtained, it could benefit his current project greatly and perhaps even advance him to Grandmaster.

So he had pulled this stunt.

Though he knew the headquarters would definitely not let him get away with such nonsense, regardless, he had to get the phone first.

Once the phone was in his hands, he could easily come up with any excuse, like needing to repair it before returning, to keep hold of it.

Even if he couldn't permanently claim it for himself, studying it for some time was always possible.

As for the impact, no one was killed or even injured, so what could the repercussions be?

Besides, he had the Elder Council backing him – any impact could be mitigated.

With such confidence, Gu acted without restraint.

"What are you waiting for? Go! Take that phone and lock them up in solitary confinement for a good bit of reflection!"

At Gu's command, the security guards closed in on Lu Wu.

"Who dares!"

Zhang Wentao and Zhao Kai Ming immediately shielded Lu Wu.

"Stubborn fools!"

Afraid of further complications, Gu swiftly took action, striking at Zhang Wentao and Zhao Kai Ming.

Before his palm even reached them, the color drained from their faces.

The power of their opponent far exceeded their expectations; they couldn't block it at all. At this moment, Zhang Wentao and the others felt immense humiliation. Zhang Yuechu was like this, and so was Gu; one after another, they trampled over them without restraint. Would they have dared to do so more than ten years ago when Jiangbei was at its peak?

But they, Jiangnan, had indeed fallen, and it wasn't the first or second time they had been bullied. Should they just endure and give in this time?

After all, they really couldn't beat them, could they?

This thought arose in an instant.

But it also dissipated in an instant.

No!

They absolutely couldn't back down!

They could compromise on other things, but not when it came to Lu Wu – they absolutely couldn't back down.

Zhang Wentao gritted his teeth and stepped forward. At the same time, cries of a wild beast echoed from within him, and Zhang Wentao's momentum surged with the beast's wail.

Amidst the wailing and rising momentum, Zhang Wentao let out his own roar.

"We old bones of Jiangnan might be bullied, but not him; he is the future of Jiangnan. I will not allow him to suffer any injustice, nor will I allow you to bend his spine!"

In his roar, Zhang Wentao threw a punch.

Gu's expression changed on the spot.

"Beast Soul Burst?!! Are you insane? You have a death wish?!"

He couldn't comprehend why Zhang Wentao would go to such lengths over a phone.

But whether or not he understood, Zhang Wentao had already taken action, his punch shattering Gu's palm wind, and a powerful shockwave spread, sending the surrounding guards flying.

However, as a consequence, Zhang Wentao's own orifices began to bleed after throwing that punch.

He appeared utterly miserable, but still standing, he used his last ounce of strength to say,

"We the people of Jiangnan will not allow anyone to bully us."

After speaking, Zhang Wentao collapsed weakly to the ground.

"Old Zhang!"

Zhao Kai Ming immediately caught Zhang Wentao, while Lu Wu's face turned an iron shade of blue, his emotions surging with extreme anger.

On the other side, Gu realized he had made a grave mistake.

If it had just been about taking Lu Wu's phone, it would not have been a big deal; he could simply return the phone to Lu Wu afterwards and offer a superficial apology. But now, with Zhang Wentao's desperate struggle, matters had escalated beyond control, and regardless of whether Zhang Wentao was dead, he would not get off lightly.

In such a situation, Gu was in a foul mood.

However, having gone this far, Gu felt it was too much of a loss to just give up now.

"Regardless, let's get the phone first!"

With this thought, Gu reached out again, not bothering for an excuse this time, and made a direct grab for Lu Wu's phone.

"Again!"

Zhao Kai Ming was also tough, ready to burst out his Beast Soul like Zhang Wentao, but Gu didn't give him the chance, slapping him away and continuing his grab for Lu Wu's phone.

At that moment, faced with the blatant robbery, Lu Wu felt despair and helplessness for the first time.

However, just as Lu Wu's phone was about to be taken, and something in his heart seemed about to emerge, a roar of a Jiao Long sounded.

A tail whipped over, smashing Gu's palm and sending Gu flying...

...

I'll try again today to see if I can hit twelve thousand.

Just to be clear, there won't be any cross-dressing if I don't make it!

# Chapter 228 228: 225 Review

Beijing, Cultivation Center Headquarters.

A sudden dragon tail shattered Gutian's palm wind and sent him flying.

But Gutian's power was not ordinary, and the tail hadn't really seriously injured him.

However, the person who had struck had intimidated Gutian.

"Liu Cheng, is it you? How dare you assault someone in our Cultivation Center?"

Clutching his chest, Gutian got up with a ferocious look on his face and shouted in Lu Wu's direction.

Yet no one appeared.

It was as if there was never anyone there.

Gutian's face darkened, and his gaze fixed on Lu Wu; he still hadn't given up the opportunity to get a hold of Lu Wu's phone.

"You won't come out, huh? Fine, let's see if you can keep hiding."

As Gutian was about to make a move, a booming shout interrupted him.

"Have you caused enough trouble!"

At the same time, an old man wearing a Tang suit appeared on the scene.

Seeing the newcomer, Gutian's face changed; he knew he had temporarily lost his opportunity. With a cold snort and a wave of his hand, he was ready to leave, waiting for another chance, but the man called out to him: "Deputy Director Gu, you initiate a fight without justification at the headquarters, leading to Principal Zhang from Jiangnan University being seriously injured and on the verge of death. Are you planning to just leave like this?"

"What do you want then?"

Gutian did not try to explain; it was pointless and unnecessary.

He actually wished to see what a director, whom he was about to push into retirement, could do to him.

The old man in the Tang suit stepped towards Gutian and said word by word, "It's not about what I want, it's about what you should do!

Lu Wu was broadcasting live from the headquarters, and that does not violate any of the headquarters' regulations.

You were the first to make a move, and you caused Principal Zhang's severe injuries; the responsibility lies with you.

So you must provide compensation.

One million points for Principal Zhang's side, plus, considering your recent behavior, I don't think you are suitable to review Lu Wu's Master Cultivator certification.

You need to hand over this task."

"No!"

Gutian decisively refused: "I'll pay the one million points compensation, but his review must be done by me!"

Reviewing Lu Wu was a chance for him to get a hold of the phone and a chance to suppress Lu Wu; he could not possibly give that up.

His categorical refusal caused the Tang-suited old man's face to darken instantly. On Gutian's side, there was no fear; he stood his ground, and the atmosphere became tense with swords drawn.

At this moment, a remarkably calm voice began to speak.

"By the way, may I ask how you intend to review whether I qualify for the master's certificate?"

Lu Wu's sudden interjection broke the tense stand-off.

He drew the focus to himself.

Lu Wu fixed his gaze on Gutian and repeated his question, "I heard that you got a report on me, saying whether it's the 'Little Skeleton Mage Evolution Plan' or the 'Iron Armor Wild Boar Evolution Plan,' none of these are my work.

They all come from someone else's hand.

I'm not concerned with where you got your information from, but now I have a question: how exactly do you plan to review this?

And how can you ensure the fairness of your review? Or is it that whatever you say goes?"

Gutian's brow arched.

"I'm pleased that you could ask, but I don't like your tone.

Hasn't anyone taught you to respect your teachers?"

"Teacher?"

Lu Wu laughed: "A teacher imparts knowledge and instructs students, an elder commands respect by virtue of their virtue.

Do you qualify?"

"You!"

Gutian's face changed, and he could hardly contain his anger enough to slap Lu Wu, but the old man in the Tang suit stopped him.

At the same time, a barely audible dragon's roar could be heard.

This made Gutian quickly calm down.

"Kid, you asked me how I would review you?

It's simple, in two steps, one theoretical and one practical.

I'll ask questions about those two schemes, you answer them, and second, I'll provide the necessary materials and you complete the evolution. If you pass both stages, I'll consider you have passed.

How about it, kid, do you dare to accept my review?!"

Lu Wu's eyes narrowed: "Dare? Of course, I dare, but I have a question: what if I pass the review?"

"You'll get the certificate if you pass!"

"That's it?"

"Yes, that's it, and you can choose not to!"

Gutian's smirk grew; the boy wanted to fight him, but he held the power. He was curious to see what waves Lu Wu could stir up.

"Fine, then no review; I don't want that master certificate.

Uncle Zhao, let's go back. Now, right away, let's take the critically injured Zhang back to Jiangnan, and we won't take the compensation either!"

With Lu Wu's words, Gutian's face changed.

He hadn't anticipated the desperate situation of Zhang Wentao. Now, with things like this, if he let Lu Wu and his party return, the matter would blow up completely.

Soon it could evolve into a conflict between the local Cultivation Centers and headquarters, which could become difficult to manage.

Even with the Elder Council behind him, it might not be enough to protect him.

So Gutian was forced to stop Lu Wu.

"What do you want?"

"It's simple, just three conditions: first, apologize publicly to our Jiangnan University; second, increase the compensation for our principal from the original one million to ten million; third, I demand a public review, that is, conducting the review on my live stream."

Lu Wu wanted to make other demands, such as gaining access to the Cultivation Center Headquarters Library or seeing Gutian kneel, among others.

But ultimately, Lu Wu refrained.

Because he knew demands that could not be met were of no use to issue.

The old man in front of him was so overbearing and arrogant clearly because he had backup; haven't you noticed that with the situation escalated to this point, only one big shot from the Cultivation Center, the Tang-suited big shot, has shown up?

This situation could mean one of two things.

Either this old man's background is so influential that no one dares to mess with him, or they are caught up in some kind of trouble.

The matter might not be as simple as Lu Wu imagines.

The big shots are unwilling to get involved.

Now it seems very likely to be the latter, which is why making demands that the other party cannot possibly meet is meaningless.

In the end, even if I were to complete the inspection, the other party might not fulfill their end.

So what's important now is to create a favorable environment for myself. I want to quickly resolve the issues in Beijing and leave this place.

"Okay!"

After hesitating for a moment, Gutian nodded.

He also knew what Lu Wu wanted was nothing but a fair environment; he would give him 'fairness' then.

Anyway, he didn't believe Lu Wu could pass the inspection.

As a national treasure-level Master, how hard could it be for Gutian to stump a little kid?

"Okay, let's start then. I'm in a hurry."

Lu Wu glanced at Zhang Wentao and said coldly.

At this time, an old man in Tang suits leaned over: "He is seriously injured, let me take him for treatment first."

"No need, our principal is still robust; he won't die anytime soon."

The current situation was unclear, and Lu Wu didn't trust anyone present.

Including this Tang suit-wearing old man who seemed to be on his side, who obviously watched the play for a while before jumping out. Lu Wu wouldn't feel at ease handing Zhang Wentao over to him; who knew what he might do to Zhang Wentao.

Besides, Lu Wu had also checked Zhang Wentao's attributes. Although others were question marks, the State was [Coma] (no life danger for the time being).

Thus, Lu Wu felt it was best to keep Zhang Wentao by his side and leave this rotten place after resolving the problem.

And Lu Wu's attitude was seen by the bigwigs at the headquarters.

Two elders at the pinnacle saw this and one of them curled the corner of his mouth.

"It seems this kid has a very poor impression of us.

By the way, Old Yuan, are you really prepared to watch this brat show off his power? In my opinion, you should go down and squeeze him to death. Even if you can't kill him, you should kick him out of the Cultivation Center.

Look at what he's doing now. If you continue to let him be, he's going to crap on your head."

"It's not time yet."

"Alright, alright, be patient. I want to see how long you can bear.

Hey, they seem to have started. Do you think this kid can survive this round?"

"If he can't make it, there's still that other kid keeping an eye on it."

"True enough. Let's just enjoy the show."

...

On Lu Wu's side.

At this point, Gutian's so-called inspection had already begun.

Presently, Gutian held the Evolution plans for [Little Skeleton Mage] and [Iron Armor Wild Boar], his lips curving into a smile.

To be fair, both Evolution plans were ingeniously designed, and the thought behind them was indeed astounding.

As a national treasure-level Cultivation Master, Gutian felt it was very easy to find fault.

With a casual glance, he found a question and threw it out.

"The Evolution plan for [Little Skeleton Mage] contains the phrase 'activation of the Undead Fire Talent'..."

Gutian paused, giving the impression that he was asking what this phrase meant. Lu Wu provided a direct answer.

"To advance a Little Skeleton to a Mage, spiritual power is key. Undead Fire is crucial for activating spiritual power. The specific operation is..."

"Who asked you that? I'm asking you which page and line the section is on?"

This question took everyone by surprise, as no one expected Gutian to be so shameless.

However, Lu Wu remained composed and responded, "Page 7, line 13, there are 13 words before and 21 words after. Moreover, this plan has a total of 12,112 words and 2,321 punctuation marks.

If you're interested, I can recite it backward for you."

Lu Wu's calm reply easily resolved the other party's challenge and instead embarrassed Gutian.

But this was just an appetizer.

"You're quite skilled; it seems you've put in the effort.

So, it's time I too made an effort."

Subsequently, Gutian started a new round of questioning.

It must be said, Gutian, the Deputy Director of the headquarters and a national treasure-level Master, although not on the Undead Type path, had a deep knowledge of Undead.

The questions he raised were all tricky from every angle.

He even set traps, and one careless step could get tangled.

After seriously throwing the first question, he waited to laugh at the youngster's missteps.

Instead, he found himself to be the joke.

His little tricks were simply insufficient in front of Lu Wu.

Whether it was [Little Skeleton Mage] or [Iron Armor Wild Boar], both plans were ones that Lu Wu had discarded from his hand.

For Little Skeleton, although Lu Wu had not been able to make it undergo a Second Evolution, he had already vastly outpaced the plans.

[Steel Armor Wild Boar] had already been created on the [Iron Armor Wild Boar] side.

When Gutian trifled with Lu Wu over the content of two plans, it was purely humiliating himself.

Not only did Lu Wu answer each question, but he also left what seemed like flaws and traps in each answer. If Gutian stepped in carelessly, it would result in disgrace.

The scene lasted for less than twenty minutes; Lu Wu appeared calm and composed, while Gutian was at his wits' end.

Even laymen in Lu Wu's livestream audience could see that Gutian was thoroughly overwhelmed by Lu Wu.

After only 25 minutes, Gutian could no longer hold out. After struggling for five more minutes, he threw out one last question, which Lu Wu resolved in a few minutes, and also pointed out three flaws in the problems Gutian posed and his counterarguments.

Gutian was theoretically defeated, and Lu Wu was particularly speechless.

"That's it? Is this all? Your level is a bit low!

I thought you might struggle a bit longer and ask some profound questions, but it's all surface-level stuff."

Gutian's face turned blue; he wanted to retort but couldn't find an excuse and could only grit his teeth and shout, "You've passed the first round, next is the second round!"

# Chapter 229 229: 226 Light Attribute pig?

Lu Wu passing the theory wasn't a surprise to many.

Even Gutian probably didn't expect a single theory to stump Lu Wu, after all, the kid's talent was genuine.

But what no one expected was how easily Lu Wu would win.

It was almost no longer a case of Gutian testing Lu Wu, but rather Lu Wu dominating Gutian.

This made the viewers in Lu Wu's live streaming room do a double-take and stirred the imaginations of many big shots at headquarters.

They were all cultivators, and with such a talent before them, they had every reason to be excited.

But since that one person hadn't spoken, no one dared to make a move just yet.

Therefore, Gutian could still do as he pleased.

"Kid, don't get too cocky," Gutian warned. "My main focus isn't the Undead Type; your performance just now doesn't mean much."

"Now I'm surprised," Lu Wu retorted. "You haven't even studied the Undead Type, and yet you have the authority to review me? The big shots at headquarters must be truly enlightened."

"You!" Gutian's face darkened as he struggled to respond, ending up with only a veiled threat: "You can only be proud for now."

Lu Wu gave the old man a glance, appearing confident.

Lu Wu could guess with his toes that there would be a problem with the materials up next.

Sure enough, after about fifteen minutes, when Gutian's people had delivered the pigs and materials, Lu Wu's eyes narrowed.

"Everything is here, start," urged Gutian. "As long as you can produce an Iron Armor Wild Boar, you will have passed the verification."

"That might be a bit difficult!" Lu Wu had already finished examining the materials and looked up at Gutian. "Or rather, this is a task that is nearly impossible to complete."

"If you can't complete it, then you fail the review," Gutian declared. "Next, please stay and cooperate with our investigation on academic fraud."

"Are you in such a hurry?" Lu Wu challenged. "Don't you want to hear why I can't produce an 'Iron Armor Wild Boar'?"

"I don't need excuses, I only want to see results."

"You want results? Fine, but change the materials. There's something wrong with this batch," Lu Wu stated coldly, to which Gutian responded with an equally cold laugh: "You say there's a problem, and there's a problem?"

The materials did indeed have problems, and they were laid out by Gutian himself days in advance, made to be secretive. It wasn't something that just anyone, not even a seasoned master, would likely notice.

So Gutian was confident, thinking Lu Wu was bluffing.

Yet, he was wrong.

"When I say there's a problem, there is a problem!" Lu Wu stated unexpectedly firmly and stepped forward to approach the White Bone Wild Boar.

"There's a problem starting with it, first its power, it's an Ordinary 3-star, okay, but it's a newly advanced 3-star.

Then there are its bones!

Its bones are permeated with something else, and it's of the Light Attribute."

As Lu Wu spoke, he grabbed one of the pig's ribs and snapped it cleanly, and upon squeezing, the bone crumbled, revealing wisps of transparent liquid within.

"This is Spirit Water diluted three hundred times; it won't affect the pig temporarily, but will affect its evolution.

Moreover, there's something stuffed into its spine. If I'm not wrong, it should be powder made from grinding up Light Attribute Tool Fragments.

How could a pig brimming with such things possibly evolve into an 'Iron Armor Wild Boar'?"

Gutian's face changed as he truly hadn't expected Lu Wu to see through his scheme.

An elderly man in traditional attire spoke up in support.

"Gutian, this is too low of you."

"The materials were prepared by headquarters, not by me," Gutian said unabashedly, his face showing no hint of embarrassment upon being exposed. His face had lost so much face today that he was somewhat immune to it. He felt no embarrassment at being outed.

He could retreat if necessary since his backup plan wasn't limited to this one alone.

"Who knows if the replaced pig will have other problems," Lu Wu shook his head.

"If you're so afraid, then you might as well give up," Gutian sneered.

Lu Wu shook his head. "Giving up is out of the question. I'll use this very pig, but I'll need some other materials, and the kind I'll make it evolve into won't be an Iron Armor Wild Boar, but rather a different variant. Plus, once it has evolved, I'm keeping the pig."

His declaration caused everyone present to look shocked.

No one could figure out what Lu Wu was up to.

Hadn't he already seen that the pig had been tampered with?

With such extensive tampering, how could the pig possibly still evolve successfully?

Had Lu Wu's brain been kicked by a donkey?

However, Gutian reacted swiftly, eager to get Lu Wu to commit before he could change his mind, and immediately nodded in agreement.

"It's settled!"

Once Gutian agreed, Lu Wu got to work.

First, he checked on Zhang Wentao's state, had Green Cub heal him to ensure Zhang Wentao could last, then Lu Wu stood up and wrote a list for the Cultivation Center to prepare the materials and tools he needed.

Then, Lu Wu got busy thinking about how to realize the bold idea in his mind.

About half an hour later, when Lu Wu had thoroughly consolidated his plan, he opened his eyes and immediately tested an evolution scheme on the pig.

It passed, with a success rate of twenty-two percent, much higher than the previous seventeen percent. It was time to get started.

By this time, the materials and tools from the Cultivation Center had been brought over, and everything was ready.

Lu Wu didn't waste any more words and set into motion.

He processed the materials he needed one by one and then put them into a large pot.

As Lu Wu busied himself, the entire Cultivation Center headquarters fell silent.

Nearly all the big shots were watching Lu Wu's cultivation attempt.

Among them were masters who were experts in the Undead Type, but they had to admit that after watching for a long time, they couldn't understand what Lu Wu was attempting.

Even the two people at the very peak were confused.

"Yin Spirit Flower, Corpse Water, Holy Spring Water, a rotten heart...

So many random things. Old Yuan, do you understand what this kid is doing?"

"He..." Old Yuan watched intently and, after a moment of contemplation, provided a response that even he wasn't sure of: "He's trying to integrate the Light Attribute into this pig."

"Are you sure?" the voice next to him rose an octave.

"Are you crazy, or is he crazy? Can the opposing Undead and Light Attributes fuse together?"

"I can probably confirm that's his line of thinking, as for whether it will be successful, why not just watch and find out?"

At the same time, deep within a Secret Realm at headquarters.

An elderly figure with white hair and beard emerged from the Secret Realm, looking disheveled.

He stepped out and immediately felt that something was off at headquarters—it was unusually quiet.

"What is everyone doing?"

The old man paused, attuned himself for a moment, and discovered that everyone's attention seemed concentrated not far from the entrance to headquarters, seemingly engrossed in something.

Following his curiosity for a lively scene, the old man also took a look.

At a glance, he was puzzled.

"Where did this kid come from? Why does he look so familiar, as if I've seen him before? Hold on, what is he doing?

Cultivating? At the entrance to headquarters? And live broadcasting? Quite interesting."

"Eh, something's not right. The pig he plans to cultivate seems to have an issue—there's a Light aura in its body. Was this fool duped by someone? What can he make happen with a pig like this?"

The old man hadn't finished speaking when Lu Wu had already prepared the materials on his side, ready to start making the soup—the process was different from before, as this time Lu Wu had Little Skeleton do it.

"Little Skeleton, use the Ghost Fire Skill on the pot, and stop when I say."

Under Lu Wu's direction, Little Skeleton funneled the black Ghost Fire into the pot.

The bigshots who were watching were taken aback.

Even the old man could not help but pluck a beard hair.

"Ghost Fire Quenching? Ingenious, truly ingenious. Why didn't I think of using Ghost Fire to process these materials?

These materials are mixed with some unwanted Dark attributes; if managed well, Ghost Fire could work wonders."

At this moment, the pot of materials began to undergo changes.

Just as the transformation started, Lu Wu had Little Skeleton stop the Ghost Fire, leaving the old man perplexed.

"Why stop now? Couldn't it have burned longer? Should it have burned longer? This kid is just too young to grasp the perfect timing... Oh crap, he's actually pouring Holy Spring Water in there. Undead materials with Holy Spring Water—what's he trying to do?"

And the old man was shocked not only by these.

After stopping the Ghost Fire, Lu Wu started a regular fire and gradually added all of the Light materials into it.

In half an hour, the soup that even Tuantuan from Dudu's family found peculiarly repugnant was done.

At this point, Lu Wu turned off the fire and then let Little Skeleton toss the pig into the pot.

With a "plop," the pig was thrown in.

In that moment, Gutian couldn't help but crack a smile.

It was over.

At the same time, the bigshots at headquarters were all silently thinking, 'It's done for.'

Indeed, as soon as the pig was thrown in, white smoke billowed up, and a hissing sound, like that of sulfuric acid burning, filled the air.

Everybody thought that the pig would definitely disintegrate.

But the unexpected happened.

The pig didn't disintegrate; instead, a white, holy flame soared up and enveloped the pig.

The bigshots, sensing the scene, were clear that a special reaction was occurring within the pig's body. The Undead and Light attributes—two elements usually like fire and tinder—were now coyly blushing at each other.

One by one, the bigshots were dumbstruck.

"What?"

The most dumbfounded one was the old man who had just come out.

He finally realized what was happening.

"So, this kid already knew about the pig's situation, and he's planning to fuse the Undead and Light attributes? Insane, absolutely insane, but I like it!"

The old man's eyes nearly ignited with a scorching intensity as he gazed at the pot of soup.

He awaited with anticipation for Lu Wu's next performance.

And Lu Wu's subsequent actions did not disappoint him.

Absorbed in his work, Lu Wu monitored the changes in the attributes of the pig and the soup, gradually adjusting the Fire Monkey, adding ingredients, and controlling the nuances.

It must be said.

At this moment, Lu Wu's performance appeared to those obsessed with cultivation as an exquisite yet perilous high-wire ballet; each move danced along the edge of danger and brilliance, intoxicating the onlookers.

So-called cultivation was, in essence, about ultimate control, and Lu Wu had obviously achieved that at this point.

At the very least, he'd reached it through his meticulous manipulation.

With one move, he had conquered many of the purest Cultivation Masters.

At this moment, almost all the bigwigs had matched their breathing rhythms to Lu Wu's pace, feeling the same heartbeat with him, focusing on the changes within the pot.

In their eyes, the pig in the pot was no longer just a pig, but an artwork.

An artwork that was taking shape slowly under Lu Wu's painstaking efforts and their watchful gaze.

Nearly everyone anticipated the birth of this piece, yearning for it to burst forth with its radiance.

The only exception was Gutian.

His face was extremely unsightly.

He had never anticipated Lu Wu's skill reaching such a near-perfect, almost cheat-like level.

As soon as Lu Wu displayed this standard, he knew he was doomed to lose; regardless of whether Lu Wu could actually bring the pig to life, there would be a throng of people ready to support Lu Wu.

They had let him be, solely because Lu Wu's talent had been obscure; now that it was unveiled, plenty would stand up for Lu Wu.

But even knowing he was bound to lose, Gutian still prayed for Lu Wu's failure.

In that case, his own defeat wouldn't be quite so absolute, and perhaps he could still exploit the Elder Council's backing to create a ruckus, maybe even snatching away the victory.

But he was disappointed.

Everything went smoothly, and two hours later, the pig in the pot completed its transformation, erupting with a dazzling holy light.

As they gazed upon the pig, suspended in midair, its skeleton clad in white but radiating a sacred luminescence, everyone was mesmerized.

Except for two people, Gutian and Lu Wu.

Gutian's face was ashen, while Lu Wu fixed his gaze on Gutian; their eyes met for an instant, and Lu Wu's lips curved up in mockery, his expression full of scorn.

Gutian was furious at that moment.

Yet before he could express his anger, Lu Wu's was already more sudden and intense.

Lu Wu suddenly staggered, his face deathly pale and filled with indignant fury, he roared, "Gutian, you despicable wretch!"

What?

Caught off guard, Gutian failed to react before the fully-formed pig shattered with a 'crack.'

As the pig broke, the hearts of the bigwigs watching this scene also skipped a beat, and then a nameless rage surged forth.

Before they could act, a furious old man appeared on the scene, grabbing the bewildered Gutian by the scruff.

"An artwork that merged the attributes of Light and Undead, ruined by your despicable hands!"

Gutian's face shifted, about to explain, but the old man gave him no chance, grabbing him like a doll and flinging him violently side to side, soon leaving Gutian bloodied and beaten; the spectacle left even Lu Wu dumbfounded.

He'd simply tried to bluff his way through the failure without expecting this turn of events.

Well, but now it seems this outcome isn't too bad…

# Chapter 230 230: 227 War Soul Tablet (Seeking Subscriptions)

"Enough or not?"

"Is this enough?"

"Is this enough, kid?"

While the old man was hammering Gutian to a pulp,

a string of voices echoed in Lu Wu's head.

Lu Wu was a bit dumbfounded at the time and couldn't figure out where the voices were coming from.

Seeing that Lu Wu didn't respond, the old man continued his assault, nearly beating Gutian to death.

However, the headquarters didn't let Gutian die.

Just when the guy was about to be smashed to smithereens, a figure appeared out of thin air.

"Elder Tie, let me handle this from here."

"Ah, it's you, Sun, the young one. Alright, alright, I'll leave it to you."

Upon recognizing the visitor, Elder Tie acquiesced readily, casually tossed the near-dead Gutian onto the ground, and then, rubbing his hands, walked over to Lu Wu, giving him a nudge with his shoulder.

He whispered, "Kid, I did a good job, didn't I? Whatever score you settle this time, you've got to share a bit with me, and you still haven't shared the money from our last job. We've got to settle that too!"

What the hell?

Lu Wu was utterly bewildered. He now knew where the voice was coming from, but what on earth was the old man talking about?

At that moment, Gutian, who had been beaten to within an inch of his life, looked up at Sun Kongkong with hatred and said, "Sun, Deputy Director, Tie Xiong is taking advantage of his age and nearly killed me, I..."

"Pfft!"

Before Gutian could finish, the old man beside Lu Wu instantaneously appeared in front of him, grabbed him with brutal force, and threw him down, knocking him unconscious.

"Scum, did you really think that being backed by the Elder Council meant you could do whatever you want?"

After tossing Gutian aside, the old man returned to Lu Wu's side

to discuss the division of the reward.

This made Lu Wu's head nod frantically.

Give, give, give, give!!!

You're the boss; I'll give you whatever you want, just don't hit me!

At this time, 'that young Sun', the Deputy Director, also approached Lu Wu.

He started by giving Zhang Wentao a greenish healing touch.

With one application, Lu Wu saw that Zhang Wentao's state had changed from (Critically Injured) to (Healing).

"He unleashed his Beast Soul Burst with a single strike. The injury is substantial but not too severe. After I've treated him, he'll need to rest for a month or two before his body recovers. However, the power of the Summoned Beast he burst might drop by one or two Star Ranks."

Sun Kongkong's initial treatment of Zhang Wentao gained him a bit of goodwill from Lu Wu,

which he then managed to increase.

"Additionally, regarding the ten million points Gutian promised you, I'll make sure he..."

"Ten million points?!!" Elder Tie exclaimed upon hearing the amount, echoing in Lu Wu's mind and nearly knocking him out with shock.

"Kid, you're something, huh? You're playing high stakes this time? No way, you've got to share some with me; I want a bigger cut this time..."

Lu Wu had no idea how to respond to the old man, but thankfully, Sun Kongkong was also there: "Elder Tie, this was earned with Principal Zhang's life on the line; you can't take it."

"Oh, alright then!" Elder Tie replied, looking quite resentful, but then immediately realized: "Hey, young Sun, were you eavesdropping on me?"

"Just call me Sun, can we drop the 'young' part? And as for your last words, you shouted them out loud; do I need to eavesdrop?"

Sun Kongkong didn't bother arguing with the old geezer and continued speaking to Lu Wu.

"In addition to those ten million points, we'll also be issuing your Master Certificate, and the headquarters library will be open to you; you can visit any time you like."

Upon hearing this, Lu Wu's eyes immediately lit up: "Can I take books with me?"

Take books? Sun Kongkong was surprised at first, but realizing Lu Wu wasn't joking, he touched his nose and said, "Some you can take, others not. You'll have to check at the library when you visit.

Furthermore, as compensation for your pig, the headquarters will grant you a chance to visit the 'War Soul Tablet.'"

"War Soul Tablet?"

His words made several of the ten people present gasp.

Especially the security personnel, whose eyes filled with envy looking at Lu Wu. Even the watching bigwigs thought Lu Wu was pretty lucky, considering the compensation from the headquarters was quite fair.

The old man was the only one who found it uninteresting.

"Does that boy need an opportunity from you guys to visit the War Soul Tablet?

Isn't that thing long since been played out by others?"

Lu Wu was also looking bewildered, not knowing what the War Soul Tablet was.

Sun Kongkong explained it to him.

"That's a special artifact, found by the research center in a tribe from a Secret Realm, visiting it can help Summoners and Summoned Beasts with their Talents and Skills."

Hearing this, Lu Wu's eyes suddenly lit up.

Sun Kongkong continued, "Additionally, while Gutian is from the Cultivation Center, he doesn't represent the Cultivation Center. We're still quite welcoming to you, there's no rush for you to go back. I'll make sure someone takes good care of Principal Zhang. Besides, the Beijing Cultivator Competition is underway, and if you're interested, you can go check it out.

Take a look at that young man named Guzhentian; he's pretty good."

The last sentence was spoken by Sun Kongkong through a mental message. After speaking, Sun Kongkong gave the unconscious Gutian at the side a significant look.

Then, without waiting for Lu Wu to react, Sun Kongkong patted Lu Wu's shoulder and was about to walk away, but then he thought better of it and came back, glancing at Tie Xiong and mentally telling Lu Wu, "Absolutely, absolutely do not give him any money."

After that, Sun Kongkong left.

As soon as Sun Kongkong departed, things got lively around Lu Wu.

A group of big shots who had been watching the excitement came over, the quickest were those who specialized in the Undead Type. They were particularly fond of Lu Wu.

They were also particularly fond of Lu Wu's recent actions and now were really eager to chat with him.

But alas, the old man didn't give them the chance.

"Go on, go away, cool off over there, I'm borrowing this boy to play with for a couple of days."

Saying this, the old man unceremoniously whisked Lu Wu away.

A few minutes later.

In a particularly disheveled research institute.

The old man stood in front of Lu Wu, hands on his hips.

"What's your name now?"

"Now?" Lu Wu's heart skipped a beat, why was he asking for his current name?

Did he discover his transmigrator identity?

He was a bit panicked, but still honestly responded, "My name is Lu Wu."

"Lu Wu? I get it, the girl you're trying to woo this time has the surname Lu!"

What do you get?

What wooing a girl, I, Lu Wu, have someone, I don't mess around.

"Are you sure you're not mistaken about who I am, elder? I never mess around with people!"

"You're still pretending with me, I know it, you're planning on denying your debt, aren't you? Do you believe I will call those girls right now to come here?

Oh right, one of them is in this vicinity as well. If she gets startled by this, you're going to be hunted for a few more years.

That girl is getting more and more terrifying."

The old man shivered at the thought of a certain woman.

As for Lu Wu, he really was utterly confused.

"You really are mistaking me for someone else, I'm honestly not the scoundrel you are talking about."

"Right, you're not a scoundrel, you are quite faithful.

Okay, you don't need to argue, I'm familiar with the situation, you play your game, soak your girls, I won't stop you, but you have to pay back the money you owe me first."

The old man appeared as if he understood everything.

At this point, Lu Wu had no choice, "How much did he owe you?"

When the old man heard Lu Wu implying he would pay, he was both shocked and overjoyed.

"Five thousand!"

Lu Wu was taken aback, thinking he misheard, "How much?"

"Five thousand! Ah, and given the beating of that 'surname Gu' just now, you need to add another 500, making it a total of five thousand five hundred!"

The old man thought for a moment, then added, "Points."

Lu Wu was dumbfounded right then. He thought the old man knew about the more than ten million points he had earned and was trying to extort a large amount from him, but to his surprise, the old man only wanted five thousand five hundred points.

Lu Wu was quite surprised.

"Here, here, take it!"

The magnanimous Lu Wu immediately transferred fifty-five thousand to the old man.

When Old Lin received the payment, he was dumbfounded.

"One, two, three, three zeros? Fifty-five thousand? Little... kiddo, you... you seem to have given too much."

"That extra, consider it a gift for respecting your elders."

Look how excited Old Lin got; Lu Wu found it strange. With such a formidable power, earning some money should have been a breeze for someone with Old Lin's strength; it was as if he'd never seen so much money in his life.

Little did he know, Old Lin had the ability to earn money, but he was even better at losing it.

Give him a thousand points, and he could lose ten thousand; give him ten thousand, and he could manage to lose hundreds of thousands.

It wasn't that he couldn't earn money; it was that all the money he earned went to paying off debts.

His account had never held more than ten thousand points.

Things had been better a while back when someone else was hustling money with him. Since that partner claimed to have found true love, Old Lin's life had gone downhill.

But now, things were looking up. This youngster was splashing cash around again, cavorting about and even more generous than before, flicking fifty-five thousand as if it were nothing.

Old Lin felt like his springtime was approaching.

He immediately grabbed Lu Wu's hand and pledged his loyalty: "Kid, from today onwards, you're my boss again. Tell me who to punch, and I'll do it, even if it's against the Elder Council or Yuan Hua.

I can watch your back when you're on a date with a girl, guaranteeing a radius of, uh, no, five kilometers. Well, that might be a bit difficult, too. But definitely within two kilometers.

I can assure you, within two kilometers, none of your darlings would be there."

Old Lin's myriad of words boiled down to one thing:

"Use me; I'm cheap and useful."

Lu Wu was caught between laughter and tears, but if fifty-five thousand could buy Old Lin's loyalty, it seemed like a good deal.

After all, despite his unreliability, Old Lin was quite skilled.

He could easily overpower Zhang Wentao, and Gutian would only be beaten in his presence; Old Lin was truly a strong supporter.

And as Lu Wu was thinking about how to cling onto this support, his phone rang.

It was Jiang Yuexing calling. Lu Wu answered the phone.

Jiang Yuexing was concerned: "How are you doing now? Is everything okay?"

"Mom, I'm fine, don't worry about me."

Old Lin, listening to Lu Wu's conversation with Jiang Yuexing, was instantly shocked.

The one calling was the little maiden from the Jiang Family, right?

What did this kid call her?

Mom?

How could he be into such perverse role-play after just a few years?

...

Elsewhere.

In Lingnan, deep within the Demon Cave.

In Ten Thousand Demon Valley.

At this moment, Lin Jianying was holding Wu Mei, filled with complex emotions.

Yesterday, he had brought up the idea of leaving to Wu Yong and his family; they seemed reluctant, but they didn't ask him to stay either.

But then, something happened that night.

In the middle of the night, Wu Mei suddenly called him out, saying that he was leaving tomorrow and she had something she wanted to tell him.

Lin Jianying had a vague guess about what it might be.

His rational mind told him not to go, that going would only make it more difficult, but he still honestly followed Wu Mei.

And so, unsurprisingly, Wu Mei confessed her feelings to him.

A beautiful young woman, one whom Lin Jianying also had a fondness for, confessed to him.

Logically, Lin Jianying should have been overjoyed.

At that moment, his heart was indeed pounding wildly; he was truly ecstatic and wanted to nod and agree.

But in the end, reason brought him to a halt.

He knew his own situation well.

Right now, he wasn't suitable for any attachments.

He had actually secretly checked on his own condition, and his current state was known as "Evil Summoner."

An Evil Summoner is one who is controlled by evil thoughts.

They could enhance their existence by slaughtering summoners and their Summoned Beasts.

Once tainted by evil, they could never free themselves for life. The Alliance's attitude toward Evil Summoners had always been very firm, Must Kill!

Hence, Lin Jianying knew that he couldn't, and shouldn't, be with her.

However, just as Lin Jianying was about to sternly refuse her, an accident occurred.

A Leader Level Summoned Beast suddenly appeared and attacked them. The two frantically fled. Fortunately, Wu Mei was familiar with the surroundings. Led by Wu Mei, Lin Jianying narrowly escaped the chase of the Summoned Beast.

But Wu Mei also got injured in the process of protecting him.

What was worse, that Summoned Beast seemed to have no intention of letting them go, constantly patrolling nearby. Lin Jianying and Wu Mei were forced to hide in a narrow cave, hoping for rescue to arrive.

In the cramped space, the two could only cling tightly to each other.

At first, both of their emotions were on edge because of the Summoned Beast outside, terribly anxious.

But as time passed, the Summoned Beast outside seemed to grow impatient and slowly moved away.

Once the Summoned Beast left, Lin Jianying's attention shifted from the danger to something else.

The narrow space, the tight embrace, the beating hearts, coupled with a strange fragrance.

Soon, he became emotionally confused, and the girl took a slight initiative.

Um, some things that should and shouldn't have happened, happened.

Old Lin achieved a feat far earlier than Lu Wu even knew how to.

Once the deed was done, the relationship between Old Lin and the girl made rapid progress, and they cuddled in the small space, whispering softly to each other.

They talked about the past, present, and future.

The scene was exquisitely beautiful; Lin Jianying wished it could stay this way forever.

His defense crumbled, and Wu Mei easily uncovered some secrets.

"So, you managed to grow so much because of your childhood friend?

He is a Genius Cultivator?

His mother is the Governor of Jiangnan?

So impressive!"

Embracing Lin Jianying, Wu Mei's lips revealed a sweet smile, her face filled with anticipation for the future.

But then Lin Jianying spoke up.

"He's great, but unless something unexpected happens, I won't go to see him again."

"Why?" Wu Mei didn't understand.

"Because it would only bring him trouble."

"Really not going back!"

"Yes, I have reasons I can't go back." Saying this, Lin Jianying cupped the girl's face, looking at her earnestly, "Will you wait for me? I need to venture deep into the Demon Cave. I believe my parents are still alive. After I rescue them, will you come away with me?

We will find a place where nobody knows us and live like immortals in love, okay?"

Wu Mei smiled radiantly.

Her smile was especially sweet, mesmerizing Lin Jianying, but her following actions chilled him to the bone.

"No way!"

Lin Jianying was stunned, not yet reacting to the situation when the girl in his arms kicked him squarely in the chest, sending him flying out of the cave.

...

A two-in-one chapter, adding this morning's chapter here.

Additionally, I'll compile some properties of Summoned Beasts and post them on the official account for those interested.

Search for Nu Xiao against your better judgment.

# Chapter 231 231: 228 Evil Entry (Request for Subscription)

Wu Mei's sudden kick caught Lin Jianying completely off guard.

But Lin Jianying's goblin wasn't caught off guard.

Seeing this monstrous woman attack its master, the goblin got angry and drew its longsword, charging towards Wu Mei.

However, before it could even reach Wu Mei, a tiger rushed out and slapped the goblin away.

At that moment, Wu Mei had already grabbed Lin Jianying's dog.

Lin Jianying still hadn't recovered.

The woman who had just been tender and sweet with him had suddenly turned hostile.

What confused Lin Jianying even more was that the tiger, which had just sent the goblin flying, was the same one that had chased them the night before.

This scene completely dazed Lin Jianying.

And he wasn't the only one dazed.

Wu Yong and Li Jing beside him were equally stunned.

Hadn't they all followed the plan? What kind of drama was this?

The two of them hurriedly came out from the shadows.

"Mei, what's going on?"

Upon seeing Wu Yong and Li Jing emerge, Lin Jianying turned deathly pale.

Even as naive as he was, he knew something was off.

But he still couldn't believe it; he thought Wu Mei must have had her reasons; it had to be some misunderstanding.

"Ms. Wu, is there perhaps some misunderstanding?"

"Misunderstanding?"

Holding Lin Jianying's dog, Wu Mei smiled as she came to face Lin Jianying. "No misunderstanding. Your eyes just now told me that you're very determined, very determined to go to a godforsaken place and play the doting couple with me."

"Is it just because of that?" Lin Jianying was dumbfounded.

"Yes, just because of that!"

While speaking, Wu Mei came to Lin Jianying, stepping on his chest and looking down at this guy, who had transformed from a boy to a man with her help.

"You think I slept with you because I was in love? Wasn't it just because I saw your background and thought I could cling to a rich husband so I wouldn't have to live this life anymore?

After sleeping with me, you told me you had a childhood friend who could play with Golden Quality Summoned Beasts thanks to his father the Governor, but then you refused to go back and rely on him.

You wanted to elope with me, what a joke. If I wanted to elope and live a hard life, would I need you?"

The more Wu Mei thought about it, the angrier she got, her foot coming down hard on Lin Jianying's head.

"Mei! Don't do this! We can talk this out."

Wu Yong, still keeping up the façade of the nice uncle, quickly came over to pull Wu Mei away.

"What's there to talk about? He said if he went back, he'd only cause trouble for his friend—it's clear this kid is in trouble and can't go back!"

Wu Yong paused, turning to look at Lin Jianying. "Lin, have you gotten yourself into some kind of trouble?"

At that moment, Lin Jianying, pale and trembling, couldn't utter a single word.

Then Li Jing came over, speaking softly to Wu Yong. "Old Wu, you really are befuddled. Whether Lin has caused some trouble or not, do you think he and Mei can go back to how things were before?"

Wu Yong thought about it and nodded.

"That's true, things can't go back to how they were."

With those words, Wu Yong's gentle mask was torn off as he grabbed Lin Jianying by the hair and yanked him up.

"Kid, I was hoping you could be our son-in-law, but now we just need to find a place to bury you."

The intense pain in his scalp and Wu Yong's words, loaded with murderous intent, completely shattered the facade built over the past few days, making Lin Jianying painfully aware that this family really wanted to kill him.

But he still couldn't understand.

"Why? Even if I've caused trouble and can't go back, why would you kill me? I was just with her, with her…"

"You still wanna say you slept with me, right? There have been many men before you, you're not the first and won't be the last. Consider it a kindness from me letting you enjoy yourself before dying."

Lin Jianying's eyes widened in shock.

At that moment, he couldn't reconcile the woman in front of him with the shy, timorous, sweet, and lovely Ms. Wu of before.

And his ordeal was far from over.

Wu Yong finally told Lin Jianying the truth.

"Well, since things have come to this, there's no point in hiding it from you anymore.

Actually, I never was a friend of your father."

Lin Jianying had guessed as much, which wasn't a surprise, but what Wu Yong said next completely devastated him.

"I'm actually your father's enemy. A few years ago, it was I who had your father killed."

"What did you say?" Lin Jianying's eyes turned bloodshot.

"I said, it was me who had your father killed.

A few years ago, your parents found a clue about a treasure in the Demon Cave, and after I found out, I asked him for advice."

In the end, he didn't speak; I had no choice but to find a way to bring down him and his wife.

Then…"

As he spoke, Wu Yong crushed one of Lin Jianying's fingers.

The excruciating pain caused Lin Jianying's face to turn pale, but he clenched his teeth and did not cry out.

"Hmm, quite spirited, just like your father. He also didn't cry out when I broke all his bones. In the end, I had no choice but to start from your mother's side."

"Do you want to know what I did to her?"

"I can tell you in detail!"

As soon as Wu Yong said this, Lin Jianying completely broke down.

Full of anger and pain, he roared, and his heart began to beat violently.

A power that he had suppressed for a long time erupted.

Lin Jianying's eyes instantly turned red.

Not just him—even the nearby goblin was now shrouded in a sinister blood-red light.

"I'll kill you, I have to kill you!"

"Falling to evil?"

Wu Yong's face changed, and he instinctively took a few steps back.

"No wonder you said you couldn't go back, you've fallen to evil, become an Evil Summoner. Yes, this version of you indeed can't return.

And it's good you didn't bring Mei back, or we would all have been implicated."

"In view of this, I'll let you die a bit more easily!"

During the conversation, another leader level black tiger rushed out, easily suppressing Lin Jianying and the goblin in cooperation with Li Jing's tiger.

"Evil Summoners are indeed terrifying, but pity, you're just a professional level Summoner; falling to evil doesn't make a difference.

Finish him, bury him after killing him, and don't touch the blood of an evil Summoner and their Summoned Beast with your mouth."

At Wu Yong's command, the two tigers slapped down, collapsing half of Lin Jianying and the goblin's chests, blood splashed everywhere, obviously they were dead beyond dead.

Immediately, Lin Jianying and the goblin were buried.

As for Lin Jianying's Gouzi, it fell into a coma the moment Lin Jianying died and was taken away by Wu Yong's family.

This was a Golden Quality Summoned Beast; even if it had been contracted once and might not be contractible again, Gouzi was still very valuable.

They probably also got a good price for it.

Actually, the reason Lin Jianying was targeted was not only because he foolishly asked around about his parents from the start but also because of this Gouzi.

Initially, Wu Yong and his group didn't plan to rob.

They planned to have Wu Mei latch onto Lin Jianying, and even if she couldn't marry him, at least they could scam some money, which indeed they managed to do, but unfortunately, Lin Jianying was an Evil Summoner.

Wu Yong looked at Gouzi and shook his head.

"Sigh, I've been busy for several days, and all I ended up with was this dog; it was a total hassle."

At that, Wu Mei's lips curled up: "Not a waste, as long as we got this dog."

"What's the use of this dog? It's not worth much money."

"Who said I'm selling it?" Wu Mei rolled her eyes and her lips slightly curved: "Let's go to Jiangnan."

"Jiangnan?"

Wu Yong and Li Jing's faces shifted.

"You're crazy, don't you know his childhood friend is the Governor of Jiangnan's adopted son?"

"I know, how could I not know, I am looking for him."

Wu Mei gently picked up Gouzi: "I want to give this dog to him."

Wu Yong and the others also came to a realization.

"You mean to?"

"Sleeping with Lin Jianying is sleeping, and sleeping with his childhood friend is also sleeping, Lu Wu, right? If I take him down, I won't have to worry for the rest of my life."

"No way, that idea is too crazy, Lin Jianying was killed by us…"

"You don't say, I won't say, who would know, besides, who would think, who would dare believe that a murderer would deliver himself to the victim's relatives and friends?"

Wu Mei smiled cunningly: "Fortune favors the bold. Whether you like it or not, I am definitely going to Jiangnan!"

It was clear this woman had a lot of confidence in herself.

Perhaps a bit too much...

...

Alright, I know I'm short, it will be longer tomorrow.

Still aiming for fifteen thousand.

Yes, succeeded, now show me your women's attire, if not, act as if nothing happened.

# Chapter 232 232: 229 On the Possibility of Little Skeleton Transforming into a Beautiful Girl

Beijing, Cultivation Center Headquarters.

Lu Wu originally didn't plan to stay long at the headquarters.

After all, having encountered Gutian right off the bat, Lu Wu really had no fond feelings for this place.

His initial thought was to leave as soon as he solved the problem and got the certificate.

But once the problem was actually solved, Lu Wu found that he couldn't leave right away.

One reason was that the Cultivation Center Headquarters had offered him too much.

Whether it was the library or the War Soul Tablet.

Lu Wu was very interested in both.

Another reason was that Zhang Wentao also disagreed with the idea of just leaving.

Yes, that old man.

This old man had an outburst and then collapsed into a coma, waking up after being treated.

Upon waking, the old man had a face full of indignation about being bullied and a tragic resolve to sacrifice himself.

But when Zhao Kai Ming next to him told him that his injuries weren't for nothing, that just that hit earned him ten million points,

This old man's eyes lit up like light bulbs.

After repeatedly confirming with Zhao Kai Ming that he wasn't being deceived, the old man suddenly felt energized and even thought he could take another hit.

Yes, ten million a hit, a few more times and Zhang Wentao felt his body could take it.

Seeing the old man's pathetic state, Lu Wu felt both amused and frustrated, yet also a bit sad.

Jiangnan University was now so poor that it resorted to Zhang Wentao selling himself to make money.

However, the reason Zhang Wentao opposed leaving so soon wasn't to look for opportunities to get hit.

He just wanted to finish what they hadn't done before.

They had arrived in style and wanted to leave in style too.

No choice, the more you lack something, the more you want to show it off.

Jiangnan University lacked too much now, and the old man didn't want to miss this chance.

The old man insisted, so Lu Wu didn't say much, having the support of a big shot after all.

"Alright, since you insist, we'll go back in style once your injuries are better. You rest up; Dudu and I will have a look around the headquarters."

Lu Wu said and was about to leave with Dudu.

That scared Zhang Wentao and Zhao Kai Ming.

"Don't, don't, don't wander around alone, it's not safe. If you want to wander, let Old Zhao accompany you."

Both old men were clearly not yet over their trauma.

But Lu Wu just said, "Don't worry, I have a bodyguard."

"Bodyguard?"

As Zhang Wentao and Zhao Kai Ming were baffled about where Lu Wu got a bodyguard from, the door to the hospital room was pushed open, and a guy in a sharp suit and sunglasses, looking every bit the part of a bodyguard, walked in.

"Boss, did you call me?"

At that moment, not just Zhang Wentao and Zhao Kai Ming, even Lu Wu himself was baffled.

"Who are you?"

"Me!" The bodyguard took off his glasses and showed his face, "It's me, boss!"

Lu Wu held his forehead, "Old Tie, what are you playing at?"

"Boss, didn't you hire me as a bodyguard? I got myself this outfit just like in the movies, cool huh?"

Saying so, the old man even struck a pose, showing off his new attire.

"Right, boss, can I get an expense reimbursement for this outfit? It cost twenty-two thousand!"

"Points?"

Lu Wu's head was buzzing. The old man shook his head.

"Alliance Coin."

"That's no problem then!"

Hearing it was Alliance Coin, Lu Wu was relieved. This old man was easy to handle, just two points would do.

The old man was also happy, his face brimming with a joyful smile.

This kid got dumb; he's easier to fool than before, the old man had overcharged him twenty thousand and he hadn't even noticed.

Finally, two blissfully happy fools arm in arm and shoulder to shoulder cheerfully left the hospital room, leaving Zhang Wentao and Zhao Kai Ming stunned and speechless.

Zhang Wentao was still okay.

He just didn't know where Lu Wu had found this ridiculous bodyguard.

But Zhao Kai Ming knew; he had seen with his own eyes how this old man nearly hammered Gutian to death.

He wouldn't believe it if he hadn't seen it with his own eyes.

Such a big shot was tamed by Lu Wu in minutes to become a bodyguard.

…

"Old Tie, where's the library?"

After coming out from the hospital area, Lu Wu asked.

"Boss, follow me!"

Hmm, this old man quickly got into the work mode, leading the way for Lu Wu.

Especially professional, especially stylish, especially imposing.

"Hey ahead, make way, didn't you see our boss is passing through? Make way! Anyone not making way gets beaten to death!"

Not only did the old man shout this, but he actually made good on his words, slapping a perfectly fine bystander to the ground.

This scared Lu Wu to no end.

Wasn't this bodyguard being too arrogantly overbearing?

Lu Wu couldn't tell whether the bodyguard was supposed to protect him or was getting ready to attract hatred for him.

He hurriedly rushed forward to hold the old man back, but then he heard the old man's voice in his head.

"Boss, this is one of Gutian's men!"

Oh, then no worries, you carry on, Lu Wu even sneakily kicked once too.

After the fight, both Lu Wu and the old man felt more relaxed, the old man rubbing his hands and coming over.

"Boss, that was not a bodyguard's job."

"What?" Lu Wu was puzzled.

The old man was slightly embarrassed, "Could you give me a little extra money?"

ужалблемоон: No problem, Lu Wu grandly waved his hand, "Fifty thousand!"

"Points?" The old man was delighted.

"Alliance Coin!"

The old man was disappointed, but thinking about it, it wasn't too little, so he perked up again.

"But next time, you have to ask me before you fight," Lu Wu felt it necessary to add that stipulation; otherwise, this old man would likely knock everyone in the headquarters down.

It turned out that this decision by Lu Wu was quite prudent; as soon as he spoke, the old man's spirits dropped, another quick-money scheme blocked.

But he didn't give up, so throughout their walk, this old rascal kept it up, always eyeing the passersby.

There was also the fact that such a money-loving and cash-strapped old man hadn't dismantled and sold the headquarters by now which was a miracle.

Lu Wu had no idea that the headquarters had already been dismantled several times, whether intentionally or not. How else could a big shot like him be so broke?

What Lu Wu didn't know even more was that two peeping Toms were watching this whole scene.

Sun Kongkong glimpsed the scene and twitched the corner of his mouth, "Old Yuan, are you sure you don't want to intervene? From the looks of it, Elder Tie could fleece this kid of a lot of money. If we keep ignoring this, we might have to rebuild a few more buildings at headquarters soon."

Yuan Hua shook his head. "No need to bother with him for now. When Lu Wu is here, he has no time to cause trouble. Once Lu Wu leaves, I'll just transfer the money from his account."

Hearing this, the grandson immediately laughed.

He also felt relieved; it seemed that the old man below was thoroughly under control.

...

After much hassle and thirty minutes, Lu Wu finally arrived at the library.

Yep, he was here to move the library.

Just as he reached the library, he immediately told the administrator that he wanted to transfer the library to his cellphone.

This stumped the administrator.

"This, this might not be possible?"

Before Lu Wu could react, the old man's eyes lit up.

This was an opportunity to make money!

"Not possible? You say it's not possible?"

The old man slammed his hands on the desk.

"This electronic library, our boss is determined to move it today, and even Yuan Hua can't keep it!"

The momentum was so fierce; it almost made the administrator cry.

At this moment, Lu Wu couldn't help but nod his head repeatedly; the playful old bodyguard was somewhat useful after all.

In the end, the administrator agreed to let Lu Wu move the electronic library.

But it wasn't really because he was scared by the old man.

This kind of thing couldn't be settled just by a scare, and in the end, it was the grandson who called.

Moreover, they didn't completely open up everything for Lu Wu to move.

The library only granted Lu Wu access to the Professional Level, and Master Level materials were not available to him.

But even just the Professional Level information was quite substantial.

Just the download would take more than ten hours, Lu Wu couldn't just foolishly wait here for ten hours, so he asked the librarian for some books that he couldn't download or take away, but could read in the library.

Lu Wu asked, "Do you have any books on Undead Skeletons Classification? Preferably related to the second evolution of skeletons."

The administrator shook his head hard, indicating they didn't have such a thing.

Lu Wu scaled back his request.

"Then bring me all the books on Undead Skeletons Classification you have; I'll read them here."

Because of the presence of the bodyguard, the administrator was quite obedient, not daring to talk back with something like 'you can't finish them,' and just got to work honestly.

Soon, the related books were brought to Lu Wu.

There were quite a few.

Lu Wu took a look.

"'On the Possibility of Summoned Undead Beasts Living Forever,' 'On the Operational Principles of Summoned Skeleton Beasts,' 'On the Wondrous Uses of the Soul Fire,'

'On Whether Bone Dragons, as One of the Dragon Clan, Can Transform into Huge, Busty, Beautiful Girls like Ordinary Dragons?'"

Looking at these book titles, Lu Wu was a bit stunned, especially with the last one, even more baffled.

"Who wrote these books? Can these be printed? You sure they won't corrupt the Alliance's youngsters?"

At this moment, the old man beside him coughed awkwardly.

Lu Wu was startled and quickly glanced at the author column on the books, and saw the name Tie Xiong clearly written.

"Elder Tie, you wrote these?"

The bodyguard covered his face, nodding.

Back then, foolishly doing anything for money, he left behind a dark history.

What embarrassed him the most wasn't that he had written and sold well, but when it came time to collect his manuscript fee, the old man realized he hadn't earned a single cent; it was all offset against the debts by the shameless Yuan Hua.

In the end, he didn't make any money and simply accumulated a dark history.

By the way, this wasn't even his biggest dark history. His greatest dark history was a book titled "On the Possibility of Summoning Cat-Eared Beast Girl."

That book sold the best—and yes, Lu Wu had read it.

It served as Lu Wu's introductory book to becoming a Cultivation Master.

It's just that the introductory material was a bit strange. There was a period when Lu Wu secretly pinched Li Ruyu's two-tailed spirit cat, trying to make it transform.

But that was the Lu Wu of the past; he was no longer the same person he was a year ago.

This was a type of book Lu Wu wouldn't...

Okay, he still read it.

It was unclear whether Lu Wu was interested in the huge-breasted girls or felt embarrassed. Anyway, he picked up the book and started reading.

And the more he read, the more stunned he became.

He found this book completely different from the previous "Cat Eared Girl."

The old man had gone for a low-end approach in that one, simplistic and even somewhat vulgar. But this "Bone Dragon" was different.

Even though this book also had some low points, what Lu Wu saw in this book was more of the old man's academic exploration.

In half an hour, Lu Wu finished the book, feeling a surge of excitement, he pulled the author nearby to discuss the big-breasted girls.

The bodyguard was also shocked.

At first, he thought Lu Wu was mocking him.

After all, be it "Cat Eared Girl" or "Breast Bone Dragon," although he was the author, the ideas were provided by this youngster.

Not only that, this youngster was hands-on. All the vulgar content in the books was his doing, and now he was acting as if he had never seen such things. Wasn't this deliberate?

But what he hadn't expected was:

Not only did Lu Wu finish reading the book in half an hour, but he also started discussing it passionately, focusing only on the scholarly content of it.

This in itself was a huge shock for the bodyguard.

When did this youngster become so interested in things beyond adult content? And how could he ask such professional questions?

Hadn't he always been a fool in cultivation?

Previously, when the bodyguard saw Lu Wu toiling with pigs, he thought Lu Wu was just pretending, but now, after talking to him, he realized that Lu Wu truly had expertise, and it wasn't even low.

This left the old man confused.

Could it be that he had really mistaken the person?

Was this youngster not that youngster?

But looking at Lu Wu's imposing attitude, he recognized this imposing attitude—it was the one he knew.

The old man's head was spinning, but in the end, he decided not to bother with it.

Why care so much? As long as Yuan Hua didn't object and he was making money, that was enough.

Thinking this, the old man let go and joyfully discussed the "Breast Bone Dragon" with Lu Wu.

The two extended their discussion from "Breast Bone Dragon" to "Dragon to Girl," then to "Pig to Girl," and finally, Lu Wu even pulled over the perplexed Little Skeleton to discuss with the old man whether it was possible to turn Little Skeleton into a girl.

Um, the old man stroked his beard, pondered for a while, and stated,

In theory, it should be possible.

No sooner had the old man finished speaking than he felt a chill running from the base of his tail to his forehead.

This feeling was all too familiar to the old man. He quickly scanned the surrounding area for any potential beauties, but after looking around and seeing no beauties, he still pinpointed what had caused the chill down his spine.

There, the chubby girl Lu Wu had brought along was glaring at him.

...

4,000, and another 11,000, aiming for 15,000 today,

Also, I saw someone asking for the group number: 245729348

# Chapter 233 233: 230 promoted to leader?

Facing Dudu's glaring eyes,

the old man declared,

"What are you looking at? It's no use looking at me; I will still say it!

I, the old man, cannot be subdued by might!"

Afterward, the old man and Lu Wu began all kinds of research on Little Skeleton,

discussing from all angles the possibility of turning Little Skeleton into a girl.

Little Skeleton was shocked.

Did Lu Wu want to turn Little Skeleton into something that looked like Dudu?

Little Skeleton refused, Dudu was too ugly, and Little Skeleton did not want to change into that. If it had to change, it would prefer to become like Tuantuan.

That way, it wouldn't have to walk and could be held by Lu Wu.

However, if it became like Tuantuan, then playing with a smartphone as a pig's trotter would be rather inconvenient.

This was a problem.

Little Skeleton hesitated for a moment and, when it came to being held by Lu Wu and playing with a smartphone, Little Skeleton ultimately chose both.

Hmm, which means Little Skeleton is a bit better after all.

It could both play with a smartphone and let Lu Wu hold it, even cover Lu Wu with a blanket.

So Little Skeleton absolutely would not change!

As for Lu Wu, he had no intention of actually changing Little Skeleton.

He brought Little Skeleton out not because he wanted to feminize it, but because Lu Wu realized that the old man's cultivation level was really not low.

Especially in terms of the Undead Type, the little old man was much more knowledgeable than him.

Even though some of his ideas were full of gambling, particularly liking those with great risks and great destructive forces, Lu Wu could still learn quite a bit from him.

So he brought out Little Skeleton, ostensibly to talk about feminization, but in reality, he wanted to use the old man's knowledge to research Little Skeleton's second evolution.

In this regard, the little old man gave Lu Wu three different directions.

"If Little Skeleton is to become a girl, first, you need to give it a flesh body. Without a body of flesh, you can't make it transform out of thin air.

But since it's an Undead Type, you can't just say it will have a flesh body and make it so.

Therefore, you need to operate. Hasn't it not gone through its Second Evolution yet? Isn't it following the Mage path?

If you fit it with the heart of a Witch Demon, perhaps you could let the little guy evolve into a half-Witch Demon, half-Skeleton being.

If this step is successful, then what follows is easy.

It would be very simple to turn it into a girl."

Lu Wu pondered for a moment.

"This is quite interesting, but it requires high precision, and a Witch Demon's heart is not so easy to obtain.

Even if I managed to get one, Little Skeleton wouldn't be able to master it right now."

The old man thought about it and then offered another suggestion, "Or you dismantle Little Skeleton's skeleton, leave only its head, then you find a Bone Dragon, chop off the Bone Dragon's head and attach Little Skeleton's head on it.

Perhaps with one evolution, Little Skeleton would evolve into a Little Skeleton Bone Dragon, and then it would have a chance to become a busty young lady?"

Lu Wu thought about it and decided it was unreliable.

"Even the weakest Bone Dragon is of Lord Level, and they're even rarer than Witch Demons. Not to mention whether I can get one, even if I did, it would be very difficult to succeed with the head swap."

"Well, then there's only one last method left, to train it up. Train it beyond a Lord, and perhaps it will turn into a beautiful girl on its own."

Great, the old man's suggestion was as good as not saying anything.

Lu Wu quickly got the old man back on track, focusing on Little Skeleton's evolution and setting aside the feminization, just discussing Little Skeleton's second evolution.

Discussing such ordinary Second Evolutions quickly reduced the old man's enthusiasm.

Clearly, he was not interested in a non-feminized Little Skeleton.

However, after Lu Wu transferred another five hundred to him, the old man felt that the topic was still worth discussing. He offered Lu Wu plenty of advice on Little Skeleton's Second Evolution, as well as the optimization of Little Skeleton's phone.

How to put it, after this conversation,

even though things like feminization were still up in the air, whether it was Little Skeleton's evolution or the smartphone optimization, Lu Wu still made quite some gains.

Lu Wu even felt that, given some time, he could come up with an optimization plan for Little Skeleton's phone.

Lu Wu and the old man had quite a long talk. After finishing their discussion, Little Skeleton's phone was also almost ready.

The electronic library of the Cultivation Center Headquarters was moved into Little Skeleton's phone.

After getting the phone, Lu Wu checked the time and saw it was still early, just past eleven in the evening, not even midnight.

Lu Wu thought to himself, why not go and check out the "War Soul Tablet" as well.

It's always more secure to claim all the benefits possible.

Moreover, Lu Wu remembered that the "War Soul Tablet" seemed to have an impact on the Summoned Beast's skills and talents.

He wanted to take Little Skeleton to try it out, to see if he could speed up the awakening of its talent.

If he could directly activate Little Skeleton's talent, that would be best.

It would save Lu Wu a lot of trouble.

"Now?"

Lu Wu voiced his thoughts, and the old man wondered if it might be a little late for that.

Lu Wu waved his hand, "Add money!"

Well, then the old man thought there was no problem anymore.

He led Lu Wu and Dudu towards the War Soul Tablet.

From the old man's familiarity with the path, it was clear he came often. But as they walked, he subconsciously veered towards a small side path.

"Elder Tie, is there a reason we can't just take the main road?"

Lu Wu swallowed hard as he looked down the pitch-black narrow path.

The old man indicated that Lu Wu didn't understand.

"You can get there by the main road too, but you'll be discovered."

"Discovered? Why should we be afraid of being discovered?"

Lu Wu was a bit confused. The old man also realized by now that their visit wasn't meant to be secretive this time; they had Sun, the Deputy Director's authorization, so there was no need to sneak around.

Once he remembered this, the old man instantly became energized, emerging from the side path and leading Lu Wu towards the 'War Soul Tablet' in an open and aboveboard manner.

His mannerism was just like the time Zhang Wentao brought Lu Wu to the headquarters.

It felt almost like he was going to receive a prize.

Under the old man's guidance, Lu Wu and his group soon arrived outside an ancient-looking grand hall.

This was the War Soul Hall where the 'War Soul Tablet' was kept.

As soon as the old man arrived, he ran up obsequiously, full of self-importance.

"Open the doors for my boss, quick!"

"Sun, Deputy Director said Lu Wu may bring one Summoned Beast in, but you cannot enter!"

The old man was a bit disappointed, but he didn't show weakness in his retort.

"Who said I wanted to go in? I couldn't care less about that broken thing!"

On Lu Wu's end, he didn't hesitate much before choosing Little Skeleton.

He handed the little goldfish to Dudu: "Wait here for me, I'll be right back."

With that, Lu Wu stepped into the grand hall with Little Skeleton.

Upon entering, Lu Wu's gaze was immediately drawn to the huge stone stele in the center of the hall.

"That's huge!"

The stele was eight meters tall and one meter thick, with a 'war' character engraved upon it.

Thirteen chains wrapped around the monument.

Despite standing still in the center of the hall, the stele gave Lu Wu the impression it could come to life at any moment.

While Lu Wu was observing the stele, Little Skeleton had already curiously approached it.

And, much like tourists snapping photos, it took out a phone and 'click', snapped a picture of the stele.

It was an utterly ordinary action.

Neither Lu Wu nor Little Skeleton thought anything of it.

But as the 'click' sounded, the bound stele trembled violently as if offended.

The thirteen chains hummed ominously.

Lu Wu saw that among the previously inscrutable attributes of the [War Soul Tablet], a [Fury] state had appeared.

Before Lu Wu could even process why the stele would become enraged, a faint, almost imperceptible voice arose.

"War!"

With the 'war' character's manifestation, all thirteen chains on the stele snapped at their roots.

A terrifying and indescribable power spread out. Lu Wu and Little Skeleton were sent flying out of the hall and fell into unconsciousness.

And, in that moment, the grand hall collapsed.

The guards responsible for the hall, including the old man, were completely dumbfounded.

What just happened?

Lu Wu had been inside for barely a minute, right?

What could Lu Wu have done in less than a minute?

How come he was thrown out and the hall just collapsed?

Almost simultaneously, every major figure in the Cultivation Center Headquarters, even throughout Beijing, perceived the disturbance at the 'War Soul Tablet' site.

The headquarters' bigwigs all rushed to the scene.

This included those two voyeurs.

Upon everyone's arrival, all eyes were immediately fixed on the old man.

"Elder Tie, what have you stirred up this time?"

"It wasn't me, don't talk nonsense, I didn't do anything!"

Elder Tie was dumbfounded at the time.

He really hadn't done anything this time.

However, nobody believed him at all.

Even the guards who had just been outside the hall with him looked at the old man with suspicion.

After all, the old man's past was just too much.

Thanks to him, the headquarters needed renovation every so often, and every time he caused trouble, he had the same innocent and clueless expression.

This time was no different, and his acting was particularly convincing, almost real.

Yuan Hua didn't waste words, nor did he show any intent to investigate.

Once he confirmed that Lu Wu and Little Skeleton were simply in a coma and the War Soul Tablet had calmed down after a burst of activity, his gaze fell on the old man.

"The costs for renovating the hall and resealing the War Soul Tablet will be counted on your head," he said.

The old man felt wronged.

He really wanted to argue, this time it truly wasn't his fault, he was just an onlooker.

All of this was caused by Lu Wu, although he had no idea how Lu Wu had done it.

But as he was about to speak, the old man swallowed his words back down.

On one hand, he knew that his character was already set in stone, and no one would believe him anyway.

On the other hand, the old man felt that if he had a lot of debts, adding a little more didn't make much difference since he couldn't pay them off anyway- he might as well shoulder them.

If he didn't take the blame, the money would be charged to Lu Wu's account, and he would have no way to make money if Lu Wu went bankrupt.

So, he had no choice, for the sake of money.

The old man could only take the blame upon himself.

...

The old man bravely took on the blame.

Lu Wu, on the other hand, was in a completely special state.

When the 'War Soul Tablet' had just erupted,

An indescribable, unique power surged directly into the foreheads of Lu Wu and Little Skeleton.

Under this power, Lu Wu and Little Skeleton fell into unconsciousness.

But although their bodies were unconscious, their consciousness was indeed awake.

Or rather, their consciousness was in a special state.

Lu Wu felt as if the world was spinning, and the scenery before his eyes had completely changed.

At this moment, he was no longer in the grand hall of the Cultivation Center Headquarters, but in an extremely wild world.

In front of Lu Wu, there appeared a stone monument of unimaginable size.

Beneath the monument stood a group of giant beings, each seemingly a hundred meters tall, staring at him with massive eyes.

As Lu Wu and the group of giants locked eyes,

The giants roared out loud.

"Battle!"

With a single 'battle' cry, an invisible wave of sound surged, striking at Lu Wu's consciousness.

This force, which condensed sound and consciousness, almost completely shattered Lu Wu's consciousness.

Lu Wu felt his very avatar of consciousness beginning to tear apart bit by bit, starting with his fingertips.

This kind of pain was excruciating, making one wish to die on the spot.

Besides this direct damage, what was even more terrifying was the assault on the mind.

This simple roar invoked a sense of fear deep within Lu Wu.

It made Lu Wu want to turn tail and flee immediately.

But he did not.

Well, that wasn't because Lu Wu was brave, but rather the first wave of direct damage had already left him unable to move.

He didn't even have the strength to run, and could only stand there passively 'enjoying' it all.

Oh, actually, that's right, he was indeed enjoying it.

Because not long after the first wave of pain appeared, the Skill "Unyielding·Growth" he had acquired from Han started to activate.

An indescribable sense of relief surged through him.

This put Lu Wu into the legendary state of 'suffering yet delighted.'

In this state, a smile spread across Lu Wu's lips.

Seeing this, the giant beings opposite him were taken aback – Lu Wu was actually smiling.

How could that be allowed, wasn't that a provocation to them?

Consequently, another roar with the word 'battle' resounded.

More intense pain fell upon Lu Wu, and simultaneously, an even stronger sense of relief surged forth, making Lu Wu let out moans that were not fit to be seen.

Then the giant tribe picked a quarrel with Lu Wu.

One 'fight' roar after another rang out, immersing Lu Wu in wave after wave of pain and pleasure.

During this process, Lu Wu's consciousness grew at a terrifying speed.

But there's always a limit to everything, and this growth had its limit as well.

Soon, Lu Wu reached this limit, as the pain far exceeded the pleasure.

This was getting life-threatening, Lu Wu nearly got overwhelmed by such pain.

And just as Lu Wu was about to be overwhelmed by this pain, in reality, the silly creature from Lu Wu's house ran over to Lu Wu's side.

It could feel, it truly could feel the state Lu Wu was in at that moment.

This bad person had abandoned it to take a beating alone.

How could this be allowed? Silly wanted to join in the fun of being beaten up, too.

But it didn't know how to join in, which made Silly so anxious it almost made a sound.

Fortunately, at this moment, an old man was watching.

The old man was stunned by what he saw, hesitated for a moment, grabbed the bird, knocked it out with a slap, and placed it on top of Lu Wu.

Then he applied his Summoner Talent "Damage Sharing" on both Lu Wu and Silly.

It had to be said, the old man's assist came at just the right time.

With the Talent "Damage Sharing" in effect, both Lu Wu and Silly felt better.

Lu Wu felt better because the pain lessened, and Silly felt better because it was finally getting beaten up.

Watching Lu Wu and Silly lying together and moaning at the same time, the old man couldn't help but shake his head.

"Can't bear to watch, can't bear to watch."

Then the old man glanced at Little Skeleton.

Hmm, also in a coma, also smacked by the War Soul Tablet, Little Skeleton seemed much more comfortable, with something slowly oozing out of its bones.

But that's not to say it wasn't damaged in any way, at least Little Skeleton's phone was no longer intact.

The device might not be completely broken yet, but it had cracked.

"A phone for an opportunity, he has made a good deal.

However, he was actually knocked out by the War Soul Tablet, it seems I really mistook him for someone else.

This guy can't be that guy, but what's with this ferocity?"

The old man pondered for a while before a bold idea emerged: "Could it be that this kid is that guy's son?

Hmm, they do look a bit alike, otherwise his ferocity is inexplicable."

And almost as soon as the old man figured this out.

Two peeping toms on the other side also spotted something.

Sun Kongkong, watching from a distance as Lu Wu lay in the hospital bed experiencing pain and pleasure, turned up the corner of his mouth: "First Jiang Yuexing, then Liu Cheng, followed by Elder Tie, you can't tell me this kid has nothing to do with that guy, I wouldn't believe it.

I wonder why you're treating him so favorably, even taking the blame for Elder Tie's pot on his behalf, turns out he's your little nephew.

No, that's not right!"

Sun Kongkong paused, sorting out the relationship: "He was born to your brother-in-law, but not by your sister, does that still make him your nephew?

Um, worthy of you. If it were me, I'd catch this kid and beat him to find out where his dad is."

Yuan Hua didn't say a word as if he hadn't heard the little grandson's words.

The little grandson wasn't idle, continuing to talk to himself.

"But then again, if you really press him for his dad's whereabouts, who knows who'd win the fight. It's better to let him cool off as he's been doing recently.

However, I've heard that woman has appeared nearby recently. If she finds out about this kid's identity.

Given that woman's personality, it's hard to tell what she might do."

Yuan Hua still didn't respond.

The little grandson leaned into Yuan Hua's ear, full of mischief: "But seriously, Old Yuan, won't you get angry seeing your brother-in-law's child with another woman in front of you?

Don't you have any thoughts, like secretly putting a hood over his head and giving him a good beating?"

His actions successfully riled up Yuan Hua, and after a long silence, he raised his head to say something out of the blue: "Recently, the headquarters' budget is insufficient, Elder Tie's bill has been pressed for replenishment, and there's quite a shortcoming in the construction of War Soul Hall."

"So?"

"We'll deduct it from your salary!"

Sun Kongkong was dumbfounded at that moment.

Just as he was about to argue, the remote surveillance showed a change in the hospital room where Lu Wu was.

The bird on Lu Wu was rapidly increasing in power, and in just a moment, it seemed to be heading toward Leader Level...

...

Five thousand, plus four thousand in the morning, and another six thousand.

I'll finish it off tonight. I must see your crossdressing!

# Chapter 234 234: 231 Guzhentian

Among all the Summoned Beasts in Lu Wu's house, Hanhan was the most special.

It grew stronger by taking hits.

The more severe the beating, the stronger it became.

And now, the beating it was enduring was evidently severe.

It leaped onto Lu Wu, and in just a few minutes, it had leveled up to Boss 2 Star.

With Hanhan's increase in level, Lu Wu's soul was strengthened, enhancing his resilience to beatings.

The group of giants, seeing this, shouted "battle" even more fiercely.

And as the giants shouted "battle" more intensely, Lu Wu and Hanhan's progress accelerated even more.

Thus, very soon, Hanhan reached Boss 3 Star and madly rushed towards the Leader Level.

At this rate, it could become a leader in half an hour, barring any surprises.

But everything has its limits.

No matter how incredible Hanhan's talent was, it couldn't grow stronger indefinitely.

It still had to adhere somewhat to the law of conservation of energy; Hanhan needed the energy and potential within it to support its growth.

And after two continuous breakthroughs, Hanhan's potential was almost exhausted.

Advancing further, it might reach the leader level, but the cost of a forced breakthrough would be unbearable.

Not to mention a forced breakthrough to leader level, even now, both the bird and Lu Wu were suffering.

Lu Wu's face had turned much paler.

Yuan Hua and the others clearly understood this as well.

"We can't let them continue like this, go take care of it."

"Why should I go? Isn't Elder Tie there too?"

"Didn't you see he doesn't even trust himself?"

Thinking about it, Sun Kongkong realized it was true. If the old man handled it, Lu Wu might accidentally explode, so Sun Kongkong had no choice but to go, touching his nose.

In a flash, Sun Kongkong appeared at Lu Wu's bedside.

But just as he appeared, a fist the size of a casserole smashed towards his head.

Sun Kongkong's expression changed: "Oh shit, Elder Tie, don't hit me, I'm one of us!"

It was no use; the fist still smashed onto his forehead, sending him crashing into the wall.

After the hit, the old man said, "Ah, it's little Sun.

I thought you were some villain. I got carried away, are you alright?"

Trust you, my ass, you rotten old man.

Sun Kongkong was certain that the old man did it on purpose, just to get back at him for earlier, but there was nothing he could do.

He couldn't beat him, so what else could he do?

Of course, he chose to forgive him.

Sun Kongkong said he was fine while covering his swollen face, limping over to Lu Wu, and took out two fruits from his bosom—one he stuffed in Lu Wu's mouth, and the other in Hanhan's.

Then he took out a token engraved with the character "suppress," placing it on the heads of Lu Wu, the bird, and Little Skeleton.

As the "suppress" character was placed on Lu Wu's forehead,

In Lu Wu's mental world, the massive tablet, the frightening giants, and the repeated shouts of "battle" all began to dissipate.

At the same time, a unique power surged into Lu Wu's consciousness.

In that moment, pain vanished, and joy doubled.

Amidst this joy, Lu Wu vaguely sensed that something extra had appeared in his brain.

Ten minutes later.

The joy disappeared, and Lu Wu woke from his coma.

The first thing he did upon waking was to check his attributes.

...

Name: Lu Wu

Power: Professional Summoner (Boss 2 Star)

Mastered Skills: Charging (Master), Slap Lu Wu (Master), Unyielding·Growth (Master)

Summoner Talent: Power of Inheritance (Unawakened)

Damage Sharing (Entry-Level) (Capable of establishing a link among one's Summoned Beasts to share the damage among them.

Currently, at most one shared target can be established.)

...

The Charging skill improved to Master, and a new talent for Damage Sharing had been added.

This was the gain from this ordeal for Lu Wu.

Considering the gains, they weren't too bad, as the previous pains weren't endured in vain.

As Lu Wu looked at his attributes, he also noticed the particularly satisfied Hanhan lying on him, and took the opportunity to check Hanhan's attributes as well.

...

Name: Ice Sparrow (First Evolution)

Power: 3 Star (Boss)

Quality: Bronze (Enhanced)?

Attribute: Ice

State: Satisfied (The beating was so comfortable!)

Weakness: Fire

Special Skill: Unyielding·Growth (Master)

Basic Skills: Defense (Master), Dodge (Master), Cold Aura (Master), Ice Shield (Master), Ice Needle (Master)

Advanced Skills: Cold Ice Body (Master)

Talent: Enhanced Recovery Speed (Advanced)

Damage Absorption (Advanced) (Once a certain level of damage is absorbed, the power can be unleashed)

Description: For this silly bird, defense and dodge are obviously not skills that a bird should possess.

Such skills would hinder it from taking hits!

...

Lu Wu was truly astonished by the bird's sudden enhancement.

Wasn't this silly creature just one star before? How did it almost reach leader level just while he was asleep?

But that's not the main issue, where's Little Skeleton?

Lu Wu clearly remembered that the little guy was blown away along with him.

Lu Wu was particularly worried about its safety.

When he turned his head, Lu Wu got a shock.

When he woke up, Little Skeleton had also just woken up.

The first thing Little Skeleton did after waking up was to check on Lu Wu, and after making sure Lu Wu was okay, albeit looking a bit silly, it looked down at its phone.

Upon looking, thunder sparked from Little Skeleton's skeleton.

Sad (Little Skeleton's phone is broken! It's Little Skeleton's favorite phone, and Little Skeleton doesn't want a new one!)

When Lu Wu saw this state, his gaze fell on Little Skeleton's phone.

...

Name: Little Skeleton's Phone

Quality: Silver

State: Damaged

Description: The core was shattered by a powerful force, the phone is severely damaged, but the data and the pig are not lost, there's still a possibility to fix it.

...

Seeing these attributes, Lu Wu finally sighed in relief.

It's good that it's not completely broken, if it were, and the data and the pig inside were lost, Lu Wu would have really been at a loss.

"Don't worry, don't worry, the phone isn't destroyed, Lu Wu will help Little Skeleton fix the phone."

Little Skeleton's pupil fire flickered, the state changed.

Suspicious (Really? Is Lu Wu not deceiving Little Skeleton?)

"No, definitely not, don't worry, Lu Wu will certainly be able to fix your phone."

Lu Wu had a bit of a trust foundation with Little Skeleton.

After getting a definite answer from Lu Wu, Little Skeleton calmed down and stopped crying, but it started tugging at Lu Wu, urging him to fix the phone right now.

"Not now, this isn't a good place to fix the phone, we need to go back to fix it!"

Little Skeleton's pupil fire sparkled, and it began acting coquettishly by pulling on Lu Wu's sleeve.

(Can we go back? Little Skeleton doesn't like this place, Little Skeleton wants to go back and fix the phone.)

Lu Wu was both amused and frustrated, soothing the little one while casually checking out its attributes.

Compared to the silly bird and Lu Wu, Little Skeleton's attributes hadn't changed much.

Its power was still two stars, as it hadn't advanced and therefore didn't increase.

In terms of skills, except for [Charging] and [Thunder Strike], which had been advanced to master level, other skills had not moved.

On the talent side, the two that had already awakened remained unchanged, and the one still awakening had progressed from ten percent to seventy percent.

Lu Wu was somewhat disappointed that it had not fully awakened.

While Lu Wu was lost in his thoughts, a coughing sound came from nearby.

Lu Wu turned his head only to discover that a grandson had appeared in his hospital room at some unknown time.

"It seems you're almost well now."

Seeing Lu Wu, who had been lost in his thoughts since waking up, finally noticing him, Sun Kongkong hurriedly said, "Then we should talk about compensation now."

"Compensation?"

Lu Wu was puzzled, "What compensation?"

"You just collapsed the War Soul Hall, have you forgotten about that already?"

"War Soul Hall? Collapsed? I did? Really?"

Lu Wu wasn't deliberately denying it; he honestly didn't know.

At this moment, Tie Xiong stood up: "Young man, don't falsely accuse others. I was the one who brought down the War Soul Hall, it had nothing to do with him."

Well, between his own innocence and his boss's fortune, the old man knew clearly what to choose.

He had nothing to lose, but the boss's money was important.

Seeing how quickly and willingly the old man took the blame, Sun Kongkong couldn't help shaking his head.

"Alright, let's not count the War Soul Hall incident. Let's talk about how you and your bird just ate two of my Spiritual Origin Fruits."

Lu Wu still looked confused.

"What Spiritual Origin Fruits? Did I eat them?"

"No, I was watching the whole time, absolutely not, this kid is trying to scam you!"

The old man declared that he would definitely protect his boss's financial security.

Lu Wu was still a bit dazed.

He really did not know whether he had eaten them or not, but considering that the other party was a bigshot from the Cultivation Center, Lu Wu had no choice but to reluctantly say,

"Well, although I don't remember this incident, if you say I ate them, then let's just say I did. How much do I owe you?"

"Little grandson, our boss definitely didn't eat them, you dare to bully my boss and see what happens!"

Alright, these two guys, one playing the aggrieved card and the other playing tough, left Sun Kongkong without any options.

In the end, he stopped playing mind games with Lu Wu.

He came straight to the point with Lu Wu.

"Your Little Skeleton's phone broke, right? How confident are you in fixing it?"

Lu Wu was a bit confused, this guy jumped topics so quickly, they were just talking about compensation, and now they were discussing the phone.

Lu Wu glanced at Little Skeleton and touched his own nose.

"I'm pretty confident, I can definitely fix this phone!"

As soon as Little Skeleton heard Lu Wu's words, his eyes sparkled with joy.

Joyful (Lu Wu will fix it, Lu Wu is the best!)

But at that moment, Sun Kongkong decided to play devil's advocate.

"Are you sure? If I'm not mistaken, your phone was damaged by the War Soul Tablet, and there is still the power of the War Soul Tablet lingering inside it. Repairing such a phone won't be easy.

That power is like a ticking time bomb, and a single misstep could ruin your entire repair effort.

In my estimation, your chances of successfully repairing it are less than five percent."

Little Skeleton didn't like hearing this at all.

He lashed out aggressively at Sun Kongkong.

Angry (Don't talk nonsense, you villain, Lu Wu is the best, and he will definitely fix Little Skeleton's phone.)

Sun Kongkong ignored the aggressive Little Skeleton and shifted his focus to Lu Wu.

"I have something here that can neutralize the power of the 'War Soul Tablet' and a skill for crafting tools. Both could be really helpful for fixing your phone. Would you like them? I can give them to you if you want."

By now, Lu Wu had figured it out.

This guy definitely needed something from him, otherwise, he wouldn't be rambling so much.

So, he spread his hands and said straightforwardly, "Just tell me what you need."

Lu Wu looked at him, not saying a word, but the intent was clear.

Sun Kongkong cracked a smile, "You know about the Cultivation Master competition, right?"

"I do," Lu Wu nodded.

"Would you be interested in participating?"

"I don't think I can participate."

Lu Wu was baffled; he did want to participate since it was a Cultivation Master competition, which he could possibly learn a lot from, but he had inadvertently advanced to Master Level, while his peers were still amateurs and professionals.

That made Lu Wu quite regretful.

Alas, if only his progress could have been a bit slower, he could have participated in this year's competition.

Since Sun Kongkong brought it up, there must be a preparation.

"You definitely can't as a contestant, but you could participate in other roles, like a referee, or a judge."

Hearing this, Lu Wu found it interesting indeed.

If progressing too fast prevented him from competing, acting as a referee or a judge seemed like a viable alternative.

However, Lu Wu was puzzled by Sun Kongkong's reasoning for inviting him to the Cultivation Master competition.

Wait a minute, Lu Wu suddenly remembered that the first time Sun Kongkong met him today, he had mentioned this topic and also mentioned not giving money to the old man.

He had dismissed it at the time, but now recalling it, Lu Wu vaguely understood Sun Kongkong's purpose.

"It seems you've guessed it, yes, exactly, I want you to rig the competition!"

Lu Wu wouldn't accept this.

He was a decent young man; he couldn't just rig the competition because someone asked him to.

Justice and integrity still mattered to him.

"If you don't go, Guzhentian will win the championship 100%."

Lu Wu sharply noticed the loophole.

"What's the relation between Guzhentian and Gutian?"

Sun Kongkong smiled, "His son!"

Hearing this, Lu Wu narrowed his eyes, "Then I must do it!"

...

In Beijing, at the Gu Family's house.

Today, the previously arrogant Gutian was lying on a sickbed.

Clearly, the old man's beating had been quite severe.

So severe that even spending a fortune on top-notch medical experts couldn't heal him immediately.

From the looks of it, he would probably need to stay in bed for a while.

Suddenly, a soft sound came, and the door of Gutian's room was carefully pushed open.

Despite the cautious approach, it still woke Gutian up.

"Didn't I say not to disturb me without my orders? Get out!"

You have to admit, Gutian still managed to convey an imposing presence.

A roar made everyone within a hundred meters tremble, yet, unexpectedly, the person who entered the room did not leave.

Gutian furiously said, "What, didn't you hear my words..."

"Father, it's me!"

At this moment, that person came forward to the bedside of Gutian.

Seeing who it was, Gutian's demeanor changed instantly, becoming gentle and kind.

"Tiān'er, it's you?

Those wretched servants, I told them to keep quiet, not to disturb you. You have the finals tomorrow..."

"It won't matter, it's just a game of house after all."

Guzhentian said indifferently, brimming with confidence, and Gutian nodded proudly.

"Yes, yes, my son Tiān has the talent of a Grandmaster; how could those mediocrities compare to my son."

For Gutian,

If there was anything he was most proud of in his life, it was having a son like Guzhentian.

Guzhentian had shown extraordinary talent from a young age.

At three, he could read; by five, he began learning cultivation knowledge, and by the age of ten, he had already reached the professional level.

Now at 21, he had actually already reached the Master Level.

He was busy with his own projects and hadn't had time to get certified before this year's competition.

What would certification have to do with Lu Wu?

Besides, this was just his talent in Sky Suppressing Cultivation. Not only was he skilled in cultivation, but his talent as a summoner was equally terrifying.

At 18, he opened his initial Summoned Beast.

Though the initial creature was only of silver quality, it didn't limit Gutian's rise.

In just one year, he got his initial Summoned Beast to Boss Level, and now at 21, his beast had reached Leader 3 stars, just one step away from the Lord Level.

What do you call Grandmaster potential?

Gutian was exactly that!

And he was both literary and martially gifted.

In Gutian's view, his son was the most talented genius in the world, and Lu Wu was just a pretender.

That was why he had slapped Lu Wu.

The phone was one reason, but another was that he didn't want Lu Wu stealing the glory that belonged to his son.

There were other factors involved as well.

So from the start, his mindset was to keep Lu Wu down, until his son reached the top with the dual title of Master of Beast Cultivation and Summoning.

He had made thorough preparations, but then Liu Cheng and Tie Xiong came out of nowhere and not only disrupted his plan, but even left him injured like this.

Luckily, Yuan Hua feared the people behind him and did not punish him too severely—just docked a few months' salary.

However, now that his own son, who he prided so much in, saw him in such a sorry state, Gutian felt extremely embarrassed.

"Damn brat, don't let me find an opportunity, or I'll make you pay back a hundredfold for today's embarrassment!"

A father knows his son best, and this saying applied to Sons as well.

Although Gutian didn't voice it, Gutian could guess what his father was thinking.

So, while tucking a blanket over his father, Gutian said, "After the Cultivation Master competition ends tomorrow, I might as well meet this Lu Wu."

"Don't do anything foolish, I heard that Tie Xiong is acting like his bodyguard now, if you go there…"

"Son isn't looking for a fight. Isn't he the youngest Cultivation Master? I, as a 'junior,' would like to ask for his guidance."

Gutian understood his son's implication; he was preparing to win back some honor on the cultivation front.

After hesitating a moment, Gutian didn't refuse but grinned and said, "Alright, I'll go with you then, and see how this so-called Cultivation Master advises you."

Obviously,

even after seeing Lu Wu perform impressively, Gutian still did not believe that Lu Wu could match his son.

To him, there wasn't even a basis for comparison between Lu Wu and Gutian.

One had been forcefully accelerated in just over a year, while the other was a talent growing diligently since the age of five.

What basis for comparison could there be between the two?

"So what if Lu Wu got his Master certificate? My son Zhen Tian will show him who is the real genius!"

And almost exactly when Gutian was proud and pleased, his phone rang.

"Who is it at this hour?"

Gutian sounded displeased but checked the caller ID. After seeing it was one of his lackeys, he answered, "What's up?"

"Director, over an hour ago Elder Tie took Lu Wu to the War Soul Hall."

"So they went, what's there to fuss about?"

"No, after they went to the War Soul Hall, it collapsed right after Lu Wu entered."

"Collapsed, how could the War Soul Hall just collapse?"

"Deputy Director Sun and the others are blaming Elder Tie for it, but I think it was Lu Wu.

He passed out after the collapse and just recently woke up.

I heard his Summoned Beast leveled up two stars, and also, his phone seems to have broken."

"A broken phone?"

Gutian exclaimed as he hastily stood up.

The sudden movement aggravated his injuries, making him cry out in pain. However, he couldn't care less about that now; his focus was entirely on the phone.

"Are you sure his phone is broken?"

"Yes, I saw him trying to console that little Skeleton."

This piece of news was hard for Gutian to swallow.

"Damn! How could it break? What does it look like now?"

"I saw a crack."

Gutian was somewhat relieved: "Just a crack? Is the Summoned Beast out?"

"No!"

With that response, Gutian became even happier.

"That's good, that's good!"

The phone was very important to him; a total breakdown would have been very distressing.

However, just as Gutian was briefly relieved, his subordinate had more bad news.

"Additionally, I heard Deputy Director Sun plans to let Lu Wu participate in tomorrow's Cultivation Master competition."

"He's entering the competition? It's already the finals, plus he's got a Master certificate, how can he compete... wait!"

Gutian's expression changed: "That Sun, he's not planning to make Lu Wu a judge or a referee, is he?"

Almost at the same moment, Gutian's phone received a notification about a change in tomorrow's competition lineup.

An additional referee was added.

Seeing this message, Gutian's lips curved slightly: "Interesting, it seems he wants to be my judge? Well then, let me see if you're qualified enough!"

…

For the cross-dressing challenge of 15,000, my brain nearly exploded, but fortunately, I succeeded.

Help me check for any typos, and I'll correct them later!

# Chapter 235 235: 232 Shining Debut

September 1st, Phoenix Nest Training Ground.

As the final round of the Cultivation Master competition, today's Phoenix Nest was extraordinarily lively.

Many who typically wouldn't spend the money on a ticket came along today.

Among them was a certain street-wise character Lu Wu encountered at the train station.

This old street-wise character had a wallet tucked under his armpit, with half a pack of cigarettes poking out, swaying as he walked, greeting every vaguely familiar face with a "little bro" here and a "good big bro" there.

Anyone he recognized even slightly, he'd suggest they mention his name when buying a ticket.

The way he carried himself, you'd think he owned the Phoenix Nest himself.

But after shouting for a while, all his "little bros" went to officially buy tickets, and he alone sneaked off to buy one from a scalper.

A standing-room ticket, at that!

He had no choice—seated tickets were too expensive, out of his financial reach.

In fact, if it weren't for such a grand event that he'd be embarrassed to meet his peers without attending, he wouldn't even splurge on a standing ticket.

"Hope I don't run into anyone I know!"

If he bumped into an acquaintance in the standing area, it would be a huge embarrassment.

Then he thought, who are my friends anyway?

All big shots, why would they be in the standing area?

Definitely, no chance of running into any acquaintances!

Well, the moment he walked in—goodness me—the standing area was sparsely populated, but they were all his "good big bros."

The scene became somewhat awkward for a moment.

But the awkwardness was quickly overshadowed by the lively banter of the big bro gang.

"Hey, what brings you here?"

"Just strolling around!"

"Want to share a cig? This is the only kind I smoke, anything else makes me cough!"

And as he was bragging and joking with a bunch of "good big bros," the old street-wise character suddenly widened his eyes: "Isn't that my little bro?"

"Which one is your little bro?"

"That one, that one, there, in the middle, he just went backstage."

Pointing excitedly at the corridor, the street-wise character exclaimed, "I'm telling you, that really is my little bro. I was chatting with him just a few days ago."

No one believed his claims, but nobody contradicted him either.

Who doesn't know how to brag?

Everyone there was good at it, and soon they were all blowing hot air.

"Oh, your little bro is part of the crew? What's his name? I'll ask my big bro to give him a leg up some day!"

"Yeah, my big bro runs this area, his word is law!"

This made the street-wise character feel a bit uneasy. This time he hadn't lied at all; that really was his little bro, he'd spoken with him before.

But then he thought.

His little bro was probably just an ordinary worker, it wouldn't add much to his own prestige, so he didn't dwell on it.

Turning his head away from that matter, he happily joined in the boasting.

The back row of the standing area was happily engaging in tall tales.

Similarly, the front row of the spectators' section was also happily full of banter.

Only the participants differed in their bragging.

And if one were to say who was the most eye-catching among the front row of the spectator's section, it had to be Gutian.

Knowing that Lu Wu was going to be a judge, he had his sickbed moved right down to the spectator's area.

He wasn't about to miss the chance to watch his son trounce Lu Wu.

So, despite being severely injured, he insisted on coming, and the injuries didn't stop him from boasting one bit.

His arrival as an injured spectator drew the circle's big shots to gawk at him.

A small part were genuinely concerned, but the majority came to see him made a laughingstock.

But Gutian didn't care in the slightest.

Let them laugh; he was laughing too.

Whoever came up to him, he always had the same response.

"My son Zhen Tian has the talents of a Grandmaster!"

In essence, it boiled down to one sentence, I take the beating, I lose face, but I have a good son.

All you lowlifes and your unworthy descendants can only be suppressed by my son. The next Phoenix Nest Training Ground shall be renamed Zhen Tian Training Ground.

And the forthcoming era will be known as the Era of Zhen Tian.

His son from Gutian will dominate an entire era.

You could say, this guy showed off his son to the extreme.

Many who came for a laugh couldn't tolerate his smugness and left after a few words.

Especially those with juniors in the finals.

They all hoped their descendants would show some spirit and suppress Guzhentian.

But they also knew in their hearts that among the young people of this generation, truly no one could suppress Guzhentian.

If one really had to name someone, Lu Wu might be a candidate.

After all, no matter how one put it, Lu Wu was currently the youngest Master Level Cultivation Master, at least a title above Guzhentian.

And he had obtained his master certificate despite the difficulties posed by Gutian.

Gutian had struggled so much, not only failing to get the certificate but also ending up in such a sorry state.

If Lu Wu could have participated in the competition, perhaps there might have been hope to suppress Guzhentian.

But unfortunately, Lu Wu was already a master and could not participate in such a competition.

This left many people greatly regretful, including Wang Jun.

"Alas, I originally thought he could shine in the Cultivation Master Championship, but who knew he shone too brightly and missed this competition. If he could've participated, today's match would have been much more exciting."

And amidst everyone's frustration and Gutian's bragging, today's competition officially began.

"The Finals of the Cultivation Master Championship begins, please welcome the contestants to the stage!"

As the announcement echoed around the Phoenix Nest, spotlights converged on the stage, illuminating one contestant after another.

Each contestant's entrance was accompanied by a beam of light and a brief introduction.

"The first to enter is Wang Junkai from Jingcheng University..."

"The second to enter is Yi Yang from Magic City University..."

"The third to enter is Qianxi from Jiangning..."

One after another, seven in total, seven beams of light fell, all standard and ordinary introductions.

But with the last one, things were different.

A brighter column of light fell upon a young man, as the introduction geared towards him began.

"The last contestant to enter, our genius contender, the most likely to claim the championship, with a performance that dazzled everyone, the strongest genius, Gu—Zhen—Tian!"

As the name Guzhentian was announced, the entire Phoenix Nest erupted.

One could say, at least half of the people here today were for Guzhentian.

And a large portion of those were girls.

They were quite satisfied with Guzhentian's entrance.

But just as their screams filled the air, the lights on the eight contestants suddenly went out, dimming the once bright stage.

The audience thought it was the darkness before dawn, that the stage's main lights would soon turn on.

However, after a long wait, the stage lights remained off.

As the audience was left bewildered, a series of footsteps sounded.

Then, the voice sounded once more over the stage.

"The introduction of the contestants is completed, next up for introduction, the judge of this competition!

He is a symbol of an era,

He is the embodiment of miracles, in whose presence, so-called geniuses are just ordinary people with a bit more smarts.

Without him, the Cultivation Method would remain forever as a long dark night!"

"He is the historically youngest Master Level Cultivation Master, from Jiangnan University, Lu—Wu!"

With that uplifting announcement, an unprecedented beam of light fell upon the stage, shining on a ninth person who had appeared out of nowhere.

Under this beam of light, the otherwise 'Ordinary' Lu Wu became exceptionally dazzling.

The street-smart guys in the standing area shuddered.

"Holy grass, isn't that my little brother?"

# Chapter 236 236: 233 If you can defeat me, you can become the champion!

Lu Wu's sudden appearance was something that many people did not anticipate.

Almost everyone thought today would be Guzhentian's solo show, with all the spotlight supposed to be on him.

Who knew that halfway through, a Lu Wu would suddenly show up?

And the organizers, they directed all the light onto Lu Wu.

They even said things like "Without Lu Wu, Cultivation would be like an eternal night."

Gutian's old face turned as gloomy as if water was about to drip from it.

Although he knew Lu Wu would appear, and knew he would come as a judge, he didn't expect Lu Wu to be so high-profile.

And at that moment, the people who had just been dismissed by his son were casting their gazes upon him.

In their eyes, on their lips, smirks full of ridicule were brimming.

This instantly enraged Gutian.

"Alright, alright, you're planning to let Lu Wu steal my son's glory, to let my son live under his shine, aren't you? How could such a cunning scheme succeed? My son Zhen Tian has the talent to be a Grandmaster; how could he be suppressed by a Lu Wu so easily? You people watch, watch how my son suppresses this absurd young upstart, to show you all who is the most talented Cultivation Master of this era!"

In the midst of his furious rant, there was boundless confidence.

This was a father's confidence in his son.

On-site, apart from Gutian, there were actually quite a few people who were annoyed with Lu Wu.

Especially the ordinary audience members.

Five or six out of ten people found this suddenly emerging Lu Wu disagreeable.

Who is this guy, with such an attitude?

Even saying "Without Lu Wu, Cultivation would be like an eternal night"?

Has the Cultivation Method not been around for a hundred years? Bragging should not be like this.

Moreover, what backwater school is Jiangnan University?

From such a nobody college, how does such a nobody have the right to stand above Guzhentian and act as a judge?

Even the standing room area's group of loafers unanimously sided with Guzhentian, only the one who had met Lu Wu wavered between the two for a moment, eventually choosing the latter.

"I feel my little brother here is not too bad!"

"Not bad my hammer, look at him, barely even grown, must be some backdoor dealings."

"Right, look at him, probably knew he couldn't compete, so he sneaked in with a judge title."

...

In the audience seats, although there were some who didn't condemn Lu Wu for his looks, it seemed only that loafer stood with Lu Wu.

But it wasn't just the audience that opposed Lu Wu as judge—contestants on stage weren't happy either.

Almost immediately as Lu Wu appeared, four out of the eight contestants raised their hands, each requesting the organizers to replace the judge.

Those who made it to the finals of the Cultivation Master competition were geniuses in their own circles, if not as prominent as Guzhentian.

Geniuses are often proud and arrogant; how could they easily submit to someone else?

They might have reluctantly accepted if it were a crushing genius like Guzhentian serving as a judge, but for an unknown like Lu Wu to emerge, how could they easily accept this?

Even if they knew some of Lu Wu's legends, the contestants didn't think they would lose to him.

So one by one, they demanded the organizers change the judge.

While the audience below and the contestants above were condemning Lu Wu, Guzhentian got up and walked towards Lu Wu.

Seeing this, the audience below and the contestants on stage all fell silent.

Everyone watched these two as they drew closer, anticipating their upcoming confrontation.

Finally, Guzhentian reached Lu Wu, extended a hand with a mild smile, "Lu Wu, is it? I've heard great things, and now I finally get to meet you..."

"Who allowed you to move around? You're a veteran contestant; don't you know you can't just walk about freely on the competition stage? You're so eager to move around, are you trying to bribe the judge? Excellent, your actions have drawn my attention, now get back immediately! Otherwise, I'll disqualify you right now!"

Hmm, the much-anticipated confrontation did not occur.

Guzhentian had barely extended his hand when he was directly rebuffed by Lu Wu.

Guzhentian was caught off guard by Lu Wu's refusal to play by the expected script and couldn't help but look somewhat embarrassed.

Meanwhile, Lu Wu completely disregarded Guzhentian, turning after rebuking him to address the contestants.

"And you over there—Wang Junkai, Yi Yang, Qianxi, right? You're all so eager to jump the gun, even wanting to replace the judge, do you want me to get you a ladder to climb straight to heaven? As contestants, you need to be aware of your roles. What you should be doing is demonstrating your talent as impressively as possible in the competition, not nitpicking the judge."

"If you're so good at making demands, why not just ask for the trophy and be done with it?"

"And as for you lot, standing there without a shred of presentability, do you really think just because it's a cultivation competition, you don't have to care about how you present yourselves?

Don't you know this competition is the focus of the entire Alliance?

If our friends from other districts see that our Hua District contestants look like this, wouldn't they laugh their heads off?"

Having thoroughly berated all the contestants, Lu Wu was still not satisfied, he even turned to scold the audience below the stage.

"And now for the audience of this edition.

You guys, I really have to say a few words, especially the old man in the front row, yeah you, the one lying on the hospital bed. You're in this state and still come to watch the competition?

Who let you in? If you get too excited during the competition and kick the bucket, whose fault is that?

If you're too old to see straight and your brain's gone bad, just admit it and don't pretend to be capable.

And the rest of you, what are you doing here? Are you here to watch a competition or a beauty pageant?

Instead of paying attention to the competition, you're judging the judges. If you love to comment so much, why not go to Bǎijiā Jiǎngtán, what are you doing here?"

After leaving both the contestants on stage and the audience below in a state of shock with his rant.

Lu Wu shook his head and heaved a sigh, "Alas, this has to be the worst competition I've ever overseen!

Alright, enough chit-chat, now I'll announce the rules for today's final round."

There's no denying that Lu Wu had a commanding presence when berating others.

He firmly controlled the situation with his tirade.

While both the contestants and the audience were still bewildered, Lu Wu explained the rules for the finals.

"Cultivation Master competitions are not the same as Summoner competitions.

Summoner contests are crude and straightforward – just fight it out.

You hit me, I hit you, whoever wins is the champion, but Cultivation Masters are different; they can't fight.

Because a Cultivation Master can't directly use what they've learned to brawl. You can't just throw a 'Little Skeleton Soup 1.0' at someone and have them counter with 'White Bone Wild Boar Soup 9.0'.

Though both of these are quite good ideas, the latter, 'White Bone Wild Boar Soup 9.0', is particularly cost-effective, allowing one to cultivate an ordinary quality White Bone Wild Boar into a Bronze Quality one for only 600 points.

But, obviously, these can't be used directly in competition, right?"

During the rule explanation, Lu Wu shamelessly slipped in an advertisement.

Tie Xiong's eyes lit up at this move, and he quickly took note of this sly tactic and underlined it.

Lu Wu even paused deliberately to give the audience time to take in the advertisement before continuing, "Therefore, the design of a Cultivation Master's competition is much more complicated than a Summoner's.

After all, fairness must be considered.

The disciples of different Cultivation Methods have different specializations, and it's hard to place those varied specialties on the same stage and still ensure fairness.

If you were dealing with a genius like me, who has mastered multiple techniques, then their advantage would just be too great.

However, the organizers managed to solve this problem eventually."

Lu Wu proclaimed, gesturing grandly, "Please look behind me!"

Following Lu Wu's sweeping motion, stone tablets descended one after another.

Each tablet was three meters tall and covered with closely packed text.

"These stone tablets behind me contain the questions for the final round!

There are a total of 12 stone tablets, and each one has 12 questions on it. The twelve stone tablets are divided into four major levels: A, B, C, and D, with each level further divided into three sub-levels: upper, middle, and lower."

"The lowest tier is D-lower, and solving one question from D-lower will gain you 1 point.

For each level ascended beyond that, add 1 point, so solving one question from A-upper grants you a full 12 points."

"Starting now, you contestants have three hours to review the questions. After the three hours of review time, each of you will choose 12 questions to serve as your individual test.

Whoever scores the highest after answering their questions will be the champion!"

Actually, everything Lu Wu had said was already known to those present.

The contestants were aware of the rules, and even the audience knew them, so there was no surprise there.

What both the audience and the contestants were curious about, though,

under these rules, what was the point of having Lu Wu as a judge?

You see, according to the previous rules, there was no need for a judge, so with an added judge now, there must also be a role for him, right? Surely he wasn't just there to flaunt his authority?

Lu Wu quickly satisfied the audience's curiosity.

"Hmm, what I just described was the original set of rules, the ones without a judge.

Now that there's me, a judge, the rules have changed.

Instead of contestants solving questions, now they'll be changing questions!"

"The rules regarding review and selection remain the same. After selecting, you can make changes to your chosen questions, and then pass them to me for resolution.

If I solve them, no points will be awarded; if I don't, then points will be added to the contestant's score.

In the end, the one with the highest score becomes the champion."

"In other words, to become the champion, you have to stump me!"

# Chapter 237 237: Lu Wu hasn't been born in 234 days

As Lu Wuyi's statement, "Stump me, and you're the champion," was uttered,

the entire Phoenix Nest Training Hall instantly fell silent.

Everyone knew the difficulty involved.

12 steles, 144 puzzles.

The types and difficulty levels of the puzzles varied.

Even if Lu Wu had known the answers beforehand, it would have been useless because he wasn't solving the puzzles chosen by the competitors.

Instead, he would be solving the puzzles chosen and modified by the competitors.

Such puzzles were definitely harder and more tricky than the ones on the steles.

And for this tricky set of puzzles, Lu Wu needed to solve 96. To everyone, this was an impossible task.

At the same time, Gutian in the audience understood Lu Wu's malicious intent all at once.

To others, Lu Wu had to solve 96 puzzles.

To him, Lu Wu did not need to solve that many; in fact, he only needed to solve one.

As long as Lu Wu solved Guzhentian's one puzzle, the championship that originally belonged to Guzhentian would be lost.

How could Gutian sit still?

He raised his hand immediately.

"I protest, this rule has a huge flaw; the referee can manipulate the outcome of the match. I demand the organizers change the rules."

The old man reacted quickly, but it was futile.

"Protest denied, the competition begins!"

With Lu Wu's order, the big screen on stage started the countdown.

3:00:00

2:59:59

...

As the countdown began to decrease, the competitors on stage started to move, all except for Guzhentian.

He politely asked Lu Wu, "May I ask, Referee Lu Wu, may I move now?"

"You may!"

Lu Wu nodded, and Guzhentian walked over to him.

"How about a bet?"

"What?"

"Referee Lu Wu is presumably targeting a certain someone, and during the impending match, you will inevitably target that certain someone..."

Lu Wu didn't like to hear that, although it was true, he couldn't just say it out loud.

"Are you doubting my fairness as a referee?"

"Yes!"

"To be precise, it's not doubt, but one hundred percent certainty that you will target me in the next match, but I don't care.

You can target me all you want. I can guarantee that you won't be able to answer any of the questions I pose."

Having said this, Guzhentian turned around and walked toward the steles.

At the same time, thunderous applause erupted from below the stage.

"Guzhentian!" "Guzhentian!" "Guzhentian!"

The roars represented the public opinion of the Phoenix Nest Training Ground at that moment.

Clearly, Guzhentian's confidence and domineering presence had conquered the entire audience.

In just a few words, Guzhentian set the roles between himself and Lu Wu firmly.

Lu Wu was seen as the villain with overwhelming power and bullying tendencies.

Guzhentian, on the other hand, was like the protagonist who was oppressed by power but not at all cowardly, resilient, and unyielding.

Between the villain and the protagonist, the audience at that moment sided with the protagonist.

Well, although there might be a portion swayed by their looks, at least the majority felt this way.

As the villain, Lu Wu was quite aware of his role.

After Guzhentian began solving puzzles, Lu Wu snapped his fingers, and the staff brought a sofa onto the stage for Lu Wu, complete with a fruit plate, snacks, and beverages.

Additionally, they handed two game controllers to Lu Wu.

At the same time, Little Skeleton also excitedly ran over.

Then the master and beast duo leisurely lay on the stage, engrossed in their games.

The big screen behind the stage switched to the game interface while they were playing.

Hmm, all classic games.

"Soul Fighter," "Big Snowman Brothers," "Super Li," "Tank Battle," "Ninja Deep Cabinet."

"A bit to the left."

"Get down, get down," "Leave that F for me, don't take it,"

The stage was filled with the sounds of gaming and Lu Wu's voice.

Not going to lie, though old, these games were still quite fun to play.

Especially for someone like Lu Wu, who hadn't played in a long time, he was immediately entranced.

Little Skeleton was even happier.

This was the first time Lu Wu had played games with Little Skeleton, and it was thoroughly enjoying itself.

Back in the audience seats, everyone's eyes were practically shooting fire.

On one side, they were strenuously solving puzzles, and on the other, Lu Wu was happily playing games.

They had never seen a referee act like this before.

And that wasn't even the most outrageous part. Quick dinner time approached at half-past eleven.

Those solving puzzles still had an hour left and no time to eat.

Lu Wu was busy playing games and didn't have time to eat either, but no worries, someone brought him food.

By half-past eleven, a girl around 5'5" and about 140 pounds, a bit on the plump side but incredibly cute, one who could easily be a knockout if she slimmed down, came over with a food container.

"Lu Wu, time to eat!"

"I'm playing a game, why don't you feed me?"

"Oh," cooed Dudu sweetly, then took out the chopsticks and started to feed Lu Wu bite by bite.

The audience below exploded at the sight.

Not only did the audience below blow up, but several of the competitors on stage did too.

This casual attitude of Lu Wu's, in the eyes of those competitors, was an utter trampling of their dignity and a desecration of this sacred competition.

So Wang Junkai from among the competitors couldn't hold back first.

A little over two hours, he brought over his chosen problems that had been completed and modified.

"Judge, have you finished correcting my questions? Your turn to answer them."

Wang Junkai's face was challenging, but Lu Wu kept playing his game and eating his food, not even glancing up, "Finished? That fast? Alright, go ahead and read them out. I'm busy and don't have time to look."

"You!"

Wang Junkai's face darkened, and after taking a deep breath, he said solemnly, "Please show me some respect!"

Lu Wu didn't even lift an eyelid in response.

That infuriated Wang Junkai, but then he thought, oh, you're putting on airs? Fine, let's see how you fare!

Let's see if you'll be embarrassed when you can't answer.

With that in mind, Wang Junkai read out his first question.

After it was finished, all attention in the Phoenix Nest turned to Lu Wu, waiting for his response.

Only Gutian curled his lips dismissively: "That kid won't answer, besides my own problems, he won't bother with the others!"

Gutian, being a big shot, could make his voice resonate throughout the Phoenix Nest even if he was injured.

Almost simultaneously, Lu Wu swallowed another mouthful of food and then said, "Next question!"

In an instant, the whole Phoenix Nest was in an uproar.

Of course, the great Demon King was planning to blow the whistle for his own side.

And he was so blatant about it, not even bothering to pretend, immediately calling for the "Next question!" without even a show of consideration.

That actually made it somewhat difficult for Wang Junkai, not knowing if he should continue reading.

After a brief hesitation, Wang Junkai still read out his second question.

"Next question!"

From the second "next question" onwards, the audience was no longer surprised, not even Wang Junkai. He just continued to read out the questions mechanically.

With every question he read, Lu Wu threw back a "next question."

Until the very last one was finished.

This time, Lu Wu didn't proceed with the next question. Instead, he sighed, and just as Wang Junkai sighed and turned to leave, he suddenly heard Lu Wu say,

"Kid, you're narrowing your own path!"

Wang Junkai was taken aback, wondering what he meant.

Lu Wu, still playing his game, responded, "Your first problem was about goblin breeding, the original question asked whether understanding a goblin's habits and training skills would be of help.

What you modified it to was, how to utilize the goblin's habits in training, not a big change, but it reveals you've actually studied goblins quite a bit and you haven't forgotten to set traps in the questions...

Then the second question...

Followed by the third question..."

Lu Wu, engrossed in his game, carefully analyzed each question posed by Wang Junkai.

From the original versions of these problems to their modifications, the traps and thought processes employed by Wang Junkai in altering them, and what Lu Wu discovered about Wang Junkai through these questions.

Lu Wu pointed them all out one by one.

And whether it was Wang Junkai or the audience below, their attitudes changed during Lu Wu's continuous explanation.

Initially, everyone thought Lu Wu was just being a jerk, clueless about breeding.

But as Lu Wu explained, even summoners who weren't deeply knowledgeable about breeding felt they comprehended quite a bit and benefited greatly.

The change in Wang Junkai was even more noticeable.

From initial anger to later disdain, to surprise when Lu Wu started explaining, then admiration, by the time Lu Wu finished discussing all his questions,

Wang Junkai was sitting in front of Lu Wu respectfully like a student.

In Wang Junkai's eyes, Lu Wu was not just solving problems anymore; he was teaching him.

This was also an old habit of Lu Wu's, starting from the first time he taught Li Kai, he had passively learned the skill of teaching.

And this was a skill that Lu Wu kept upgrading; if this skill could be displayed on the attribute panel, then its proficiency level would be at least master level.

Not only Wang Junkai learned quite a bit, the other competitors who were still striving also benefited immensely.

Even Guzhentian himself had to admit that at least in goblin matters, he was not as good as Lu Wu.

This forced Guzhentian to change the questions he had originally planned to ask.

But the other competitors did not have this concern. Seeing the time was almost up, they brought their questions to Lu Wu one by one, and read them out.

Lu Wu, still engrossed in his game, answered them one after another.

With every answer, another person sat down beside Lu Wu.

More than three hours later, apart from Guzhentian, Lu Wu had analyzed all of their problems, although he had not given any of them any answers to any of their questions.

Yet not a single person doubted Lu Wu's ability to solve these problems.

After all, even the ones who had posed those questions were now sitting beside Lu Wu respectfully, like disciples.

Who would doubt Lu Wu's ability to solve these questions?

The audience watched Lu Wu playing games and eating fruit.

Then they turned to look at Guzhentian, the super genius who had started out so calm and confident, now sweat covering his brow, eyes fixed intently on the problems before him, unable to utter a single superfluous word.

Comparing the two, it was clear who stood higher.

In that moment, the audience finally understood the organizer's opening statement: "Without Lu Wu, breeding would be eternally stuck in darkness."

Turns out, that proclamation wasn't just bragging!

# Chapter 238 - 238 235 Diced Shrimp with Pigs Heart

﻿Chapter 238: 235 Diced Shrimp with Pig’s Heart Chapter 238: 235 Diced Shrimp with Pig’s Heart Phoenix Nest Training Ground.

Lu Wu had finally grown tired after playing video games for several hours.

With Little Skeleton reluctantly saying goodbye, he put down the game controller and lay on the sofa, while Dudu considerately massaged his head.

On the other side.

Guzhentian’s side.

He had started off full of confidence, declaring, “The questions I modified, you won’t be able to answer a single one,” but now, his confidence had vanished, replaced by sweat drenching his head and body.

From the initial three hours given, to the three hours Lu Wu spent addressing the other seven participants’ questions.

In total, it had been six hours, and Guzhentian still hadn’t presented his questions.

At this point, anyone could see Guzhentian’s embarrassment.

The image of Guzhentian, always composed and unbeatable, had utterly collapsed.

On Lu Wu’s side, however, he had established his image as the Demon King.

While playing games on one hand, he effortlessly dominated the whole scene, not only subduing seven players but also making Guzhentian too afraid to present his questions.

The extent of Lu Wu’s formidable nature was clear for all to see.

Moreover, Lu Wu was especially kind.

Seeing Guzhentian sweating profusely, he even said to him, “Don’t rush, take your time, I can take a ‘nap’ and wait another three hours for you!”

Listen to that, such magnanimity, such heartwarming words.

Many of the sensitive girls in the audience were moved to tears.

But there were some who found it hard to accept, and leading them was Guzhentian himself.

His complexion turned even paler at Lu Wu’s words.

The resentment from the disgrace was written all over his face, yet he still had no solution.

Having just followed Lu Wu’s analysis and teachings for over three hours, his mind was now a complete blank.

He knew better than anyone the terror that was Lu Wu; he knew that even if he was given another three hours, even three more days, it would be extremely difficult for him to modify 12 questions, no, it would be tough to even make one question that could stump Lu Wu.

At this moment, Guzhentian’s face began to show signs of defeat and even despair, emotions that should never appear on his face.

And this scene was unacceptable to many.

Guzhentian’s admirers couldn’t accept it, and neither could his father, Gutian.

Guzhentian had always been Gutian’s greatest pride.

Gutian always believed his son was the strongest, the best; he couldn’t accept what he was seeing now.

There must be a problem!

Gutian felt there definitely had to be something wrong with this scene!

And he quickly discovered the crux of the issue.

“I’ve got it, I know where the problem lies; the problem is with these questions.

These twelve stone tablets only have Lu Wu’s questions on them.”

“The so-called modifications don’t actually change anything.

Because no matter how you modify them, they still fit within the same framework, and as long as they’re within the same framework, it’s impossible for anyone to come up with a question to stump him!

That’s cheating!

We must switch to different questions!”

Gutian’s words woke up Guzhentian and astonished the entire audience.

Everyone turned their attention to Lu Wu, seeking verification of this point.

To this, Lu Wu didn’t deny.

“Well, you’ve discovered it, huh? Indeed, it is so.

These 144 questions you see here, I spent over an hour creating them yesterday, and it did take me quite some effort.”

Lu Wu’s response made it seem to the ordinary spectators at the Phoenix Nest Training Ground that the aura of the Demon King had diminished significantly.

Especially for Guzhentian’s admirers, it gave them a reason for Lu Wu’s terrifying performance and Guzhentian’s failure.

It wasn’t that Guzhentian was incompetent, but that Lu Wu had been cheating from the start.

Since Lu Wu had the answers from the beginning, no wonder his performance was so terrifying.

Of course, this was just the perspective of the ordinary audience.

The same event, when viewed by different people, can be completely different.

Ordinary viewers thought Lu Wu was cheating, but the competitors sitting next to Lu Wu and the big shots seated in the audience changed their expression.

You see, those 144 questions above varied in difficulty and subject matter.

Coming up with so many questions would be harder than solving them.

Typically, without a professional team spending one to two months, it would be impossible to devise them, yet Lu Wu managed to do so in an hour or, at most, over one night.

It was clear just how terrifying Lu Wu’s knowledge reserve and mastery levels were.

Thus, when Gutian revealed this, it didn’t lower Lu Wu’s prestige among the Cultivation Masters, but instead raised it considerably, albeit indirectly.

And Gutian’s suggestion to change the questions was even more preposterous.

Whose questions are not used?

How could the questions be changed just because the questioner is a referee?

Gutian was simply making trouble without reason,  
 He himself knew this too.

But he couldn’t care less about that now; he had to help his son escape Lu Wu’s trap.

Only by breaking free from the framework defined by Lu Wu could his son Zhen Tian hope to defeat Lu Wu, or rather, escape Lu Wu’s crushing victory.

He had already seen that Guzhentian was being suppressed by Lu Wu at the moment; his once invincible and confident state of mind was beginning to crumble, spiraling into self-doubt.

This was the last thing Gutian wanted to see, he needed to help Guzhentian maintain his confidence.

So, Gutian was particularly aggressive at this moment, “Since you designed the questions, they must be changed!”

Of course, although he was forceful, he had no real expectation that Lu Wu would change the questions.

As long as Lu Wu said no, he could seize the opportunity to make a fuss and walk away from the competition with Guzhentian, preserving the last bit of his son’s confidence.

If you don’t compete, you can’t lose!

This was a mentality akin to burying one’s head in the sand, true both for Guzhentian’s ears and for Gutian’s.

However, what he didn’t anticipate was that Lu Wu wouldn’t play by the book.

“Change the questions? Sure!”

Lu Wu stood up with a smile, stepping deliberately toward Guzhentian.

“If you don’t have the confidence to alter these questions, to make them into something I can’t answer, then we can change the questions, or even change the whole game.”

“How about this? You set the questions, I’ll modify them, and you answer them. How does that sound?

If you can correctly answer just one question that I’ve modified, I’ll consider you the winner!”

Lu Wu’s tone was gentle, seemingly amicable.

But every word he spoke was like a soft knife, piercing directly into Guzhentian’s heart.

Heart-strike tactic!

The best way to strike at someone was never a physical assault, but a psychological one.

‘You think you’re so great, Guzhentian?

You Gutian are proud, aren’t you? Your son has the talent of a Grandmaster, doesn’t he?

Fine then, come on. I, Lu Wu, am standing here today, ready to crush your son with my rules. And if that’s not enough, it’s okay, I can turn it around and crush him again with your son’s rules.

Until he breaks completely!’  
 Lu Wu’s malicious intentions were transparent to Gutian, whose face turned an ashen blue with eyes full of murderous intent.

“Lu Wu, you dare!”

Lu Wu couldn’t care less about him. Even if Gutian wasn’t as injured as he was, Lu Wu would not be afraid—he had bodyguards.

Today, Lu Wu had come with only one purpose: to destroy Guzhentian.

It couldn’t be helped; Lu Wu’s heart had always been so magnanimously broad.

“So, how about it? I’ve already given you such a huge concession. You wouldn’t still be afraid, would you?

If you really are too scared, then it can’t be helped. Let’s just leave it at that.”

At that moment, Guzhentian clenched his fists tightly, but soon relaxed them and said indifferently, “Gutian doesn’t shy away from defeat. Let’s consider the match lost, but if Master Lu would like to play, then Gutian shall oblige and play along with Master Lu!”

“But Gutian has one condition…”

…….

It’s short again, I know,

# Chapter 239 - 239 236 Why did it take you more than a year to handle

﻿Chapter 239: 236 Why did it take you more than a year to handle such a simple thing? Chapter 239: 236 Why did it take you more than a year to handle such a simple thing? Phoenix Nest Training Ground, on the stage.

Guzhentian did his best to calm himself, trying to settle his nerves.

To calm himself, he even declared that he was willing to concede the match.

He used this method to tell others, and also remind himself, that he was not a sore loser.

Creating an impression of willing to sacrifice the match for a fair competition with Lu Wu.

This act of Guzhentian scored him points in the eyes of the audience.

However, his true intention was to strip Lu Wu of his role as a judge.

He had to admit that Lu Wu’s dual role as a Master and a judge had a considerable impact on him, so he wanted to minimize this by his action.

It was also for his “condition” or rather, to make a bet with Lu Wu.

“I hope to make a bet with Master Lu,” he said, “if Master Lu can’t stump me, I hope to get Master Lu’s Little Skeleton’s cellphone.”

As soon as Guzhentian spoke these words,

The entire place was stunned, but no one was more shocked than Gutian in the audience stands.

Upon hearing this, he instantly realized that his son’s withdrawal from the championship was to secure Lu Wu’s cellphone for himself, and he was deeply moved.

Meanwhile, when Little Skeleton beside Lu Wu heard this, he immediately objected, tightly grabbing onto his cellphone with one hand while his Bone Staff transformed into a Long Spear, almost wanting to strike down this villain attempting to steal his cellphone.

On Lu Wu’s side, his eyes narrowed, the slits gleaming with dangerous light.

Guzhentian continued, “Of course, if Master Lu can stump Gu, Gu will likewise offer…”

“No need!”

Guzhentian was interrupted by Lu Wu before he could finish his sentence.

And as the words “no need” came from Lu Wu, there was a noticeable shift in Guzhentian’s demeanor.

That was a sign of his regained confidence.

In Guzhentian’s view, this meant Lu Wu was wavering, no longer the unbeatable Demon King that he had long been unable to challenge.

However, Lu Wu then spoke again.

“There’s no need for complications. If you can answer the updated questions I’ll pose, I’ll reward you with the cellphone. If you can’t, it’s fine as well, you don’t need to give me anything.”

By saying this, Lu Wu was essentially saying: ‘What do you want? We are not at the same level.’

With a single sentence, he pushed back the confidence that had started to return to Guzhentian.

But it also ignited pride and anger within Guzhentian.

Gutian in the audience stands clenched his fists even tighter, feeling the humiliation imparted by Lu Wu as his own.

Yet, neither father nor son voiced anything. Guzhentian suppressed his anger, trying to calm himself again, and with a stable mindset, he nodded to Lu Wu as a gesture of acknowledgment, then went off to prepare his questions.

On Lu Wu’s side, watching Guzhentian get busy, he felt he might as well utilize the time and turned back to engage his seven disciples, discussing the 144 questions he had posted.

Three hours passed swiftly.

As Lu Wu completed another round of discourse, Guzhentian had finally prepared his questions.

He walked over to Lu Wu, holding twelve questions that consolidated sixteen years of his learning.

At that moment, anyone could see that Guzhentian’s demeanor was drastically different from three hours earlier.

Now, there was no sweat on his brow, no hint of hesitation.

There was confidence, absolute confidence in his learning and in the questions he posed.

Yes, absolute confidence!

He had stepped out of Lu Wu’s shadow, and in domains where he excelled, even preparing to challenge for the title of Master, Guzhentian had no reason to lack confidence.

“Master Lu, my questions are ready.”

“Then go ahead and read them!”

“Alright!”

Guzhentian did not waste words and directly delivered all twelve of his prepared questions.

As Guzhentian spoke, there was yet no reaction from Lu Wu’s side, but Gutian in the audience stands laughed first.

Guzhentian’s twelve questions were all related to the evolution aspects of the Summoned Beast “Snowman.”

These were questions Guzhentian had put great effort into tackling.

Even though he had modified the questions, they retained a high level of specificity, and if Lu Wu lacked in-depth understanding of the “Snowman,” he would likely struggle to answer, let alone revise these questions.

Indeed, as Guzhentian threw out these questions, Lu Wu’s brow furrowed.

“Ah, issues regarding the evolution of the Snowman can be quite tricky, as I haven’t studied it in depth.”

Guzhentian immediately responded, “If Master Lu hasn’t studied it, I can provide you with time to research and even offer the necessary materials.”

This act, although seemingly fair, was actually a form of cajolery – problems posed by Lu Wu, although wide-ranging and tricky, lacked this level of specificity and required practical knowledge to solve.

However, his required specific knowledge.

Thus, offering time to research was quite reasonable.

Of course, Guzhentian’s generosity was not out of magnanimity but aimed to create an illusion of fairness.

These were questions he himself had struggled over a year to conquer, and he was confident that even given time, Lu Wu would not be able to address these questions in a short span.

Unexpectedly, Lu Wu declined the opportunity to consult resources.

“That won’t be necessary; although I haven’t deeply studied the Snowman, I do have basic knowledge, and moreover, I’m quite adept at evolution. If it’s just about solving or revising the questions, I should be able to manage.”

When Lu Wu made this statement, Guzhentian raised his eyebrows.

He thought Lu Wu was being a bit too arrogant.

However, before he could reply, Lu Wu had already started analyzing the questions given one by one.

“The first question is about the attribute of the Snowman’s evolution.

The Snowman is an Ice and Snow System Summoned Beast; its enhancement attribute is key to its evolution. The issue you raised was whether to use ‘Snow Ice Crystal’ or ‘Ice Heart’ to enhance its attribute, and you kindly let me not fuss over the details of the enhancement.

It seems like you have researched this question for a while and have been struggling with whether to use ‘Snow Ice Crystal’ or ‘Ice Heart.’ However, this is a trap question you set for me.

In general, if the condition was for evolution, it should be ‘Snow Ice Crystal,’ which is an ordinary evolution method, but given your deep research into the Snowman, it is clear you are aiming to develop a new method of evolution.

Therefore, your choice should be Ice Heart.

Next is the environmental impact on the evolution of the Snowman…

Then there’s the third question…”

In less than half an hour, all the questions posed by Guzhentian were analyzed one by one by Lu Wu,

from Guzhentian’s thoughts when posing these questions, the traps he set, to the impacts of these questions on subsequent issues.

Even in these questions, the implicit understanding and concept of the Snowman’s evolution held by Guzhentian were all refined by Lu Wu.

After that, Guzhentian was dumbfounded.

Though he had estimated Lu Wu as highly as he could,

to win against Lu Wu, he even resorted to asking questions in a tricky manner from his area of expertise.

Yet it was still to no avail.

Lu Wu, relying on his superb reasoning and learning abilities, easily grasped the intent behind the questions, found answers from his psychological approach, and deduced knowledge points from these answers.

In just less than half an hour, the results of his efforts over more than a year were almost entirely decoded by Lu Wu.

This is not to say that Lu Wu’s research on the Snowman has surpassed his.

It wasn’t that fast; Lu Wu wasn’t that monstrous.

After all, he had studied for more than a year, and it would take Lu Wu about a week to catch up.

But Lu Wu had already mastered the core concept of Guzhentian about evolving the Snowman and added the answers deduced just now.

At this moment, Lu Wu’s understanding of these questions was almost as good as Guzhentian’s.

Then, it was Lu Wu’s turn to perform.

He began to modify the questions he had analyzed and laid them out one by one in front of Guzhentian.

On Guzhentian’s end,

watching the questions modified by Lu Wu,

his head buzzed, every question was almost similar to what he had asked before, but when he tried to answer, he found they were significantly different.

All of these questions, without exception, touched on another aspect of Guzhentian’s way of thinking.

Each question seemed answerable, but Lu Wu would divert him just two or three sentences into his response.

In vain, he revealed his knowledge, but he could not answer a single question correctly.

All twelve questions were like this.

With Lu Wu playing tricks on him twelve times in a row, Guzhentian’s confidence gradually waned, and by the last question, he felt completely defeated.

Watching his dispirited son, Gutian shouted from below, “Sophistry, this is sophistry, Mr. Lu’s questions are simply logical traps!”

Indeed, his words were true.

In facing Guzhentian, whether in answering questions or posing them,

it was not just knowledge that crushed Guzhentian, but more so the logic of language and thought; Guzhentian was simply being led by the nose by Lu Wu.

If it really came down to solid knowledge, at least regarding the Snowman, Lu Wu was definitely not better than Guzhentian.

Many experts present, even Guzhentian deep down, thought this way.

However, just as everyone had this thought, Lu Wu suddenly asked the organizers to find a regular 3-star Snowman and some other corresponding materials.

When Lu Wu mentioned the materials he needed, Guzhentian immediately looked up,

his face full of disbelief as he stared at Lu Wu.

He clearly knew what Lu Wu was going to do.

“Impossible, he’s just bluffing; he couldn’t possibly know about the new evolution method for the Snowman I was researching, it must be a sham!”

While Guzhentian was incredulous, unable to believe his eyes,

the organizers brought over the Snowman device and the corresponding materials.

Lu Wu didn’t waste words, and quickly started working, then took a thick syringe and injected a blue icy liquid into the Snowman.

As the potion was injected, a chill began emanating from the Snowman, and its form started to change.

In less than two hours, an exquisite ice and snow maiden appeared on stage.

The moment the ice and snow maiden appeared, Guzhentian completely broke down.

He couldn’t believe that the new evolution method for the Snowman, which he had researched for over a year, was replicated by Lu Wu, who had merely discussed it with him for a few hours.

Moreover, the outcome was even more perfect than he had anticipated.

This completely extinguished the light in Guzhentian’s eyes.

He muttered, “Impossible, I’ve researched this for over a year and haven’t even reached the final step, how could you do it?”

Lu Wu, puzzled by his remark, said, “What? Such a simple thing, how did you spend more than a year on it? Were you slacking off?”

With these words, Guzhentian’s face turned pale, and he immediately spat out a mouthful of blood, collapsing to the ground…

# Chapter 240 - 240 237 Harvest

﻿Chapter 240: 237 Harvest Chapter 240: 237 Harvest With Guzhentian spewing blood and falling into a coma,

the competition had come to an end for Lu Wu.

However, Lu Wu still chose a champion out of the remaining seven contestants with due diligence, selecting someone named Wang Yuan.

Of course, for the audience, who became the champion of this competition didn’t matter anymore.

In their minds, the competition had been renamed the Lu Wu Cup.

This 19-year-old freshman, the youngest contestant on stage,

had crushed everyone while serving as a judge.

He played the game and tamed seven contestants.

The final face-off against Guzhentian was even more spectacular.

In less than five hours, Lu Wu finished what the other had been researching for over a year without completing.

He let all the contestants and audience know what it meant to dominate the present age, and what it meant to be an unparalleled demon king.

Even Sun Kongkong, who had prompted him to join the competition, had not anticipated such a result.

When Sun Kongkong heard that Lu Wu had beaten Guzhentian to the point of vomiting blood and becoming reclusive, he was utterly dumbfounded.

“Is this guy really that fierce, that brutal?”

“But, isn’t this a bit too much? Gutian might go insane, right?”

Well, considering how much pride and love Gutian had for his son, the possibility of him going crazy was not small.

Although Lu Wu was now protected by both Tie Xiong and Liu Cheng, making Gutian powerless even if he lost his mind,

it was inevitable that Gutian might do something irrational.

A careless move could render Yuan Hua’s prior patience in vain; thus, Sun Kongkong thought it best to send Lu Wu back early.

Coincidentally, Yuan Hua and Jiang Yuexing were also of the same mind.

Thus, no sooner had Lu Wu returned from Feng Chao than he received a message from Sun Kongkong, asking him to prepare to return to Jiangnan early.

“Go back? That’s fine by me, it’s just Principal Zhang over here…”

“No problem at all!

We can go back now!”

Zhang Wentao was especially excited at the moment.

Obviously, he had already heard about Lu Wu significantly boosting Jiangnan University’s reputation at the competition.

Since Lu Wu had already achieved so much, whether to hold any ceremony here was not as important.

Zhang Wentao nodded, while Lu Wu was somewhat silent.

To be honest, there was some dissatisfaction in his heart.

Although he also wanted to get back early to fix Little Skeleton’s phone, research issues regarding the Little Skeleton Mage, and he was also very concerned about Lin Jianying,

Beijing didn’t hold much for Lu Wu to reminisce over compared to Jiangnan.

But he was still a bit irked.

Mainly because he felt he had completely overwhelmed everyone, including Guzhentian, to the point of seclusion, but now he was being rushed back home, which gave him a strong sense of fleeing in haste.

It made Lu Wu feel choked up.

However, he didn’t say anything, just silently made a note against the Gu father and son in his heart.

“Next time I come to Beijing, I must personally break Gutian’s limbs. As for Guzhentian? This time, I made him give up on the cultivation aspect; next time, I’ll break him as a Summoner!”

Lu Wu was indeed magnanimous at heart, and once he settled this score in his mind, he felt much better.

After packing up, Lu Wu and his group set off on the journey home.

Different this time was that Lu Wu was taking someone extra with him back home than when he arrived; Tie Xiong said he wanted to stay close to protect Lu Wu all the way to Jiangnan.

Although anyone with sight and a sound mind could guess the old man’s intentions,

it was clear he hadn’t made enough money and planned to follow Lu Wu to Jiangnan to continue earning.

But the Cultivation Center allowed Tie Xiong to accompany Lu Wu back to Jiangnan.

Aside from adding Tie Xiong, the team also gained a Summoned Beast.

Yep, the very Summoned Beast that Lu Wu had brought out at the competition.

…

Name: Snowman Effigy (One-time Evolution)

Power: 1 Star (Elite)

Quality: Ordinary (Black Iron) (Enhanced)

Attribute: Ice and Snow

State: So hot (The effigy is so hot, it’s about to melt)

Weakness: Fire (Ordinary) Grass (Strong)

Basic Skills: Snowball Attack (Master) Ice Shield (Master) Dodge (Master)

Advanced Skill: Resistance Aura (Unmastered)

Talent: Ice and Snow Creature (Passive) In cold environments, it can significantly enhance the Snowman’s power and skill intensity.

Description: Put away your sleazy gaze, don’t look at it just because it’s well-shaped, but it cannot charge…

…

Lu Wu had not felt the system’s scathing tongue in a long time.

Who’s being sleazy? Who wants to charge?

He, Lu Wu, was the most proper, alright?

Besides, from an attribute perspective, the Snowman Effigy’s attributes were mediocre, and Lu Wu wasn’t too impressed.

However, thinking that this one evolution plan was foolishly given to him by Guzhentian, and that he just optimized it a bit, amounting to scoring an evolution plan for nothing, made Lu Wu’s mood quite good.

Then, upon further thought, although the Snowman Effigy couldn’t charge, its form was still quite attractive, and if released to the market it was likely to be very popular; he would earn another sum, making Lu Wu even happier. He immediately picked up his laptop and uploaded the Snowman Effigy’s evolution plan.

After uploading the evolution plan for the Snowman Effigy, Lu Wu took out two items.

One was a special wooden token, and the other, a book.

These were the things given by Sun Kongkong; the wooden token was to deal with the ‘War Soul Tablet’ energy inside Little Skeleton’s phone, and the book was the skill he mentioned for forging items.

…

Item: Suppressing Order

Item Level: Silver

Description: A one-time use item that can be used to suppress Lord-level energy or special mysterious energies,

…

This was the description of the token and the book.

As for the book, Lu Wu opened it and read it during his journey back.

Unexpectedly, after reading the book, an additional skill appeared on his attribute panel.

…

Hammering Hand (Unmastered): A special Summoner skill specifically used for item forging and fusion.

Can improve the chances of items or equipment successfully taking shape.

…

This was the system’s introduction, but as someone who had completely read the book, Lu Wu understandably had a deeper understanding of Hammering Hand.

Simply put, this skill could hammer out the impurities in items, promoting the fusion of elements within the items and equipment.

It was a particularly useful skill.

“It seems that my focus has to change, and I need to master Hammering Hand as soon as possible, while also increasing its Skill Mastery as much as possible.”

This thing would be very useful for his upcoming repairs and upgrades to Little Skeleton’s phone.

Thinking this way, Lu Wu began to devote all his energy to researching the Hammering Hand skill.

Meanwhile, as Lu Wu was studying Hammering Hand, at the Lingnan Demon Cave, someone had shaken off their parents and was resolutely heading towards Jiangnan with a dog in tow…

…

I’m short, I’m soft, I confess, I’m not a human!!

I’ll try to have a burst of releases tomorrow,

# Chapter 241 - 241 238 Learn Equipment Prop Making

﻿Chapter 241: 238 Learn Equipment Prop Making Chapter 241: 238 Learn Equipment Prop Making Fucheng Station.

The first thing Lu Wu saw upon getting off the train was Jiang Yuexing.

At that moment, his heart skipped a beat, and tears involuntarily streamed down his face.

He had only left for a few days, and Jiang Yuexing had come to the station to greet him in person.

Was this the profound maternal love of a rich woman?

But soon, Lu Wu realized he was wrong; it was a landslide!

She wasn’t there to pick him up at all.

Or rather, picking him up was merely incidental; the main focus was on collecting her bodyguard.

There, Jiang Yuexing pushed past the teary-eyed Lu Wu who had eagerly approached and walked up to Tie Xiong.

“Elder Tie, I’m sorry for the trouble my son has caused you.”

“Not at all, protecting the boss is my duty. Ah, Miss Jiang, I’ve done quite well with my work, how about you give me a raise?”

The bodyguard rubbed his hands, his face alight with excitement.

However, Jiang Yuexing was exceptionally calm, ignoring the request for a raise as if it never happened.

“Elder Tie, since it’s your first time in Jiangnan, you and my son should stay together.

I’ll make sure my son takes good care of you.”

Afterwards, Jiang Yuexing led Lu Wu and the bodyguard towards Lu Wu’s house.

When they reached Lu Wu’s sprawling mansion, Jiang Yuexing naturally had someone arrange accommodations for Tie Xiong, thus sending the bodyguard off, and then grabbed Lu Wu: “How much did you pay this old man?”

“Not much, just fifty or sixty thousand,” Lu Wu answered, puzzled why Jiang Yuexing would ask.

Jiang Yuexing thought it was Alliance Coin and relaxed slightly.

Then, after a moment, Lu Wu added: “Points!”

Jiang Yuexing’s face immediately fell, and a vein throbbed on her forehead.

“Why did you give him so many points?”

“So many?”

Lu Wu thought fifty or sixty thousand was rather little for hiring a bodyguard of such caliber.

“I was planning on giving him 50,000 points a month!”

“No way!”

Jiang Yuexing, now agitated, slammed the table. She glanced over to the old man to make sure he wasn’t coming over before quickly instructing Lu Wu, “Listen, you can’t give him too much money. Also, keep him away from the city center, and most importantly, you absolutely must not let him into the Cultivation Room!”

“Why not?”

Lu Wu didn’t understand; he thought the old man seemed quite capable. Jiang Yuexing was about to explain, but then she heard the old man’s footsteps and had to give up on clarifying.

“Just do as I say!”

Jiang Yuexing finished speaking just as the old man was almost upon them, seamlessly transitioning to another topic.

“There’s also another issue regarding Lin Jianying.”

Lu Wu’s attention was instantly captured, “Old Lin’s? Have you found him?”

Jiang Yuexing shook her head, “Not yet. I sent someone to look for him a while ago, but when I recently inquired about their progress, I found out the person I sent has gone missing.”

“Missing?” Lu Wu was taken aback. “How could that be?”

“The specifics are unclear at the moment. It could be danger encountered in the Demon Cave, an issue with Summoned Beasts, or even someone else’s foul play. But I’ve already sent people to investigate.

Furthermore, if Lin Jianying returns during this period, you must notify me immediately.”

Seeing Lu Wu deep in thought, Jiang Yuexing hurriedly added, “And don’t you go off to the Demon Cave on your own, alright?”

“Got it!”

While Lu Wu was worried about Lin Jianying’s situation, he had no intention of venturing into the Demon Cave himself.

For one thing, he had been exceptionally busy lately.

On the other hand, he was also aware of his own limitations.

Putting aside his Beast Breeding skills, he was just an ordinary Professional Summoner.

And one that could be considered coddled in a nurturing environment at that.

Tracking people down or engaging in life-threatening activities were not Lu Wu’s strong suits – there were more capable people under Jiang Yuexing’s command who could handle finding Lin Jianying.

Going himself would likely just cause more trouble for Jiang Yuexing.

So Lu Wu agreed that he would behave and not act recklessly.

Such specialized matters should be left to professionals.

Once she was certain Lu Wu would comply, Jiang Yuexing left the big mansion.

As soon as Jiang Yuexing left, Lu Wu started to get busy with his own tasks.

Currently, his most urgent matter was fixing Little Skeleton’s phone.

This phone was crucial not only for Little Skeleton’s potential Evolution but also immensely important for Lu Wu himself.

After all, it held his journals, access to the electronic libraries of Jiangnan University and the Cultivation Center Headquarters, as well as all the materials Lu Wu had downloaded from the internal network.

Just purchasing those materials began at 100,000 points.

Thus, repairing the phone was of paramount importance.

Regarding the phone’s repair and upgrade plan,  
 “Currently, there’s only a five percent chance that my plan will both repair and upgrade the phone. Clearly, it’s impractical to attempt improvements from the perspective of Beast Breeding; I must start with the equipment instead.

Another issue is the ‘Hammering Hand’ skill; this also needs to be improved as soon as possible.”

Regarding that particular skill,  
 On his way back, Lu Wu had thoroughly mastered the theory, but the skill remained ‘Unmastered’ in practice.

This was because he understood the theoretical foundation but had not truly practiced it.

To enhance this skill, hands-on practice was by far the best method.

Of course, it was unthinkable for Lu Wu to start by using Little Skeleton’s phone for practice – the costs were simply too high.

He could only turn to the internal network to find tips on crafting equipment for hands-on training.

Breeding was actually quite an extensive field, encompassing Beast Breeding, Potions, and Equipment Crafting.

Up to now, Lu Wu had been following the path of Beast Breeding. Although he had unexpectedly created “Little Skeleton’s Charging Stick” and “Little Skeleton’s Phone”, he did not have a systematic education in equipment crafting.

Taking this opportunity to enhance his chances of fixing Little Skeleton’s phone, Lu Wu started to learn about equipment crafting.

And while Lu Wu was wholly engrossed in learning about equipment crafting,  
 He had clearly forgotten about Jiang Yuexing’s request to keep an eye on the old man and to keep him out of the Cultivation Room.

Of course, this was mainly because Lu Wu had spoken with the old man.

He was aware of the old man’s level; while not sure if the old man had reached Grandmaster, he was certain that the old man’s Breeding skills were definitely well above Master Level.

Lu Wu felt, what was the harm in such an expert entering a Cultivation Room?

He hadn’t been paying much attention to this matter for a while.

But as for the old man, having returned to Jiangnan and seeing Lu Wu studying hard, he found himself bored and idly decided to check on Li Kai, who was busy in the Cultivation Room. With nothing better to do, the old man went in to take a look…

# Chapter 242 - 242 239 Rules Level Talent Money Sacrifice

﻿Chapter 242: 239 Rules Level Talent: Money Sacrifice Chapter 242: 239 Rules Level Talent: Money Sacrifice Jiangnan, inside Lu Wu’s house.

Lu Wu had just returned and started working on his computer immediately.

The first thing he tackled was the basic knowledge of tools and equipment.

It’s true what they say, you don’t know until you learn.

Only after he started did Lu Wu realize that the study of tools and equipment was no small matter.

Although both tools and equipment were only at the entry-level, either on the internal network or in terms of cultivation, there were still various types and methods involved.

For equipment, there were categories such as Companion Equipment, Universal Equipment, and Ancient Equipment.

As for tools, they were divided into Combat Equipment, Supporting Equipment, Life Tools, and Technology Items.

Lu Wu now began to learn the basics about equipment.

“It’s not easy to work with Companion Equipment. If you want to quickly produce them, it’s almost impossible to improve the proficiency of Hammering Hand, so I’ll start with Universal Equipment.”

The so-called Universal Equipment.

They didn’t have so many restrictions.

Unlike the Skeleton’s cell phone and long spear, which only Little Skeleton and Lu Wu could use.

Universal equipment could be used by anyone or any summoned beast once it was formed.

“Universal Equipment’s Big Move heavily relies on casting equipment skills or techniques. Currently, the universal equipment recipes posted on the internal network all require specific casting skills, but I don’t have to worry about that; Hammering Hand is a good skill.

Basically, it can handle any recipe for Universal Equipment.

With that, what follows will be much simpler.

Just find a suitable recipe for Universal Equipment and start practicing.”

Speaking of which, Lu Wu started searching on the internal network.

If it had been before Lu Wu had started his company, he would have been extremely cautious and selective in searching for equipment recipes.

Now, did Lu Wu need such trouble?

He directly opened the “Universal Equipment Recipes” section and swept through all the “Ordinary Quality” and “Black Iron Quality” Universal Equipment recipes.

Then came the final settlement.

“Ordinary Equipment Recipes, 321 items, 3420 points.

Black Iron Equipment Recipes, 68 items, 6800 points.

A total expenditure of 10,220 points!”

With a wave of his hand, he spent over ten thousand points, which for Lu Wu was just one-fifth of what he earned in a day.

Though it hadn’t been a month since he started his company.

Lu Wu now felt that he had lost all conception of money and points.

Now, Lu Wu felt that he could utter that phrase.

Lu Wu has no interest in money; he really hasn’t touched money at all.

“Ah, who can understand, at such a young age, I carry the worries that I should not at my age. How on earth can I spend sixty thousand points in a day?”

Lu Wu couldn’t help feeling melancholic.

However, just as Lu Wu was feeling melancholic, an indescribable sensation surged into his heart, making him vaguely feel as if something tremendous was about to happen.

And almost at the same time, Lu Wu felt his entire house trembling.

“What’s happening? Is it an earthquake?”

Lu Wu was bewildered, not even having time to react.

An extremely angry roar suddenly resounded.

“What’s that sound? So fierce! Also, why does it sound so close?”

At that moment, a deafening explosion sounded nearby.

Simultaneously, the trembling that had just stopped in Lu Wu’s house intensified, and the main structure of the house was about to collapse.

Lu Wu’s face changed, and a flash of electricity zapped through his body as he immediately came out of the house.

He intended to go save Dudu, but instead, when he opened the door, he saw Dudu, anxiously holding Tuantuan, coming to find him.

“Lu Wu, it’s an earthquake, run!”

Without a second word, Lu Wu scooped up Dudu and rushed out of the house.

They arrived at the villa’s outdoor training field.

As soon as Lu Wu came out, Little Skeleton, who had been training with Han there, immediately came over, pulled Dudu out of Lu Wu’s arms, and started chatting to Lu Wu in bone language, pointing towards the Cultivation Master.

Thankfully, Lu Wu had the system; otherwise, anyone else wouldn’t have understood what Little Skeleton was saying.

“Lu Wu, Lu Wu, just now Little Skeleton was practicing seriously. Suddenly, there was a crack followed by a roar, then a boom, and now it’s like this.

Oh right, Little Skeleton was practicing seriously. Is Little Skeleton’s phone fixed by Lu Wu?”

Well, okay.

Although Little Skeleton was earnestly updating Lu Wu with sign language, Lu Wu still didn’t understand.

But looking at the current situation, Lu Wu didn’t need to understand, anyone with working eyes could tell what had happened, and where.

At this moment, the Cultivation Room built underground at Lu Wu’s house was directly blown apart.

Many cracks spread from the Cultivation Room.

These cracks were the reason for the earthquake at Lu Wu’s grand mansion, and not only Lu Wu’s mansion was affected, but several villas and many facilities around were also damaged.

Of course, Lu wasn’t aware of this yet.

His focus was on the Cultivation Room, or more precisely, on a summoned beast on top of the rubble of the Cultivation Room.

This summoned beast was ten meters tall, covered in yellow fur, and looked like a chick, but who the hell has ever seen a chick over ten meters tall with the power of at least a Lord level?

Also, how the hell did such a creature come about?

As Lu Wu became baffled, the ten-meter-tall chick suddenly collapsed and died.

Hmm, it had totally cooled down, yet it didn’t forget to take out the last remaining courtyard near Lu Wu’s house as it fell.

Looking at this little chick—oh no, big chick—its attribute changed from the original question mark to:

…

Name: Mysterious Big Chick

Power: ???

State: Cooled down

Description: It would never have expected that a simple cultivation experiment would end up being taken away because of some old man’s meddling.

Shivering with cold!

Why treat chickens this way?

ps: Although it has already cooled down, there is still energy inside it; if stewed, it should be quite nourishing. Your pig has already started shedding pathetic tears from the corners of its mouth.

…

What is this thing?

How can such a big chicken fit in one pot for stewing?

No, no, got distracted by the broken system.

Lu Wu shook his head, pulling his attention away from thoughts of soup back to reality, his eyes falling on the old man and Li Kai next to the big chick.

At this moment, Li Kai was completely baffled.

He swore, he really was just doing a specifically simple cultivation.

Just wanted to verify once whether his cultivation plan was effective for this chick.

Li Kai was very confident that his cultivation plan was highly effective, and wouldn’t normally fail. Even if it did fail, it definitely wouldn’t affect the meat quality of the chicken—the flavor of chicken stewed with mushrooms at night would surely be delicious.

As for why this happened, Li Kai really didn’t know.

“Could it be that I’ve been influenced by Mr. Lu for too long, and my cultivation abilities have improved to the extent that I can create such a big scene effortlessly?”

Old Li found it incredibly incredible and hard to believe.

Although hard to believe, Li Kai seriously assured Lu Wu that he would take responsibility for this matter.

But the old man next to him, at this moment, his hands behind his back and eyes looking at the sky, had the demeanor of ‘don’t look at me, it’s none of my business’.

Lu Wu was speechless—dare to take some responsibility?

If it’s none of your business, then whose is it? Could Li Kai have caused such a scene?

“Tell me, what exactly happened?”

“What to say? I don’t know; I don’t know anything, don’t make me pay.”

“Relax, such a small amount of money is nothing to me, Lu Wu; I won’t make you pay.”

With Lu Wu’s words, the old man relaxed.

Then scratching his head, he somewhat embarrassingly explained the situation to Lu Wu.

In simple terms, the old man was idle, saw Li Kai busy in the cultivation room, and decided to give him a few pointers.

As he was giving pointers, the old man got intrigued, casually did something, and then it ended up like this.

“The situation is roughly like that!”

Following this bout of explanation from the old man, Lu Wu didn’t understand anything.

“Wait, according to what you’re saying, sir, you didn’t physically intervene from beginning to end, so how did one casual action lead to this situation?”

Lu Wu was very curious—what kind of action could turn an ordinary-level chick into a ten-meter-tall, lord-level chick?

“This is my talent, did I not tell you?”

“When did you say that?”

Lu Wu rolled his eyes, but at this moment, he was more interested in the old man’s talent: “If it’s convenient, could you talk about your talent?”

“There’s actually nothing inconvenient about it!”

The old man scratched his head and revealed the talent that most of the high-level members of the alliance already knew about.

His talent was something extremely special that he had awakened by accident during an exploration in a secret realm upon encountering a fragment of a Gate.

He explained the name and specific effects of his talent to Lu Wu.

After finishing talking about his talent, Lu Wu looked at the old man’s attribute panel again and noticed that his attributes had changed.

Where there had previously been question marks, there was now a talent called “Money Sacrifice.”

…

Talent Name: Money Sacrifice

Talent Level: Unknown

Talent Effect: Can change certain aspects of things by sacrificing the money controlled by the user; the more money sacrificed, the greater the change.

Talent Description: This should be a talent close to the rule level.

However, this talent is extremely unreliable; out of a hundred attempts, there might not be one that has a positive effect.

Each use cannot control the amount of money sacrificed or the direction of change, and a slight inattention can easily cause large-scale destruction.

ps: However, from a certain perspective, this is also an extremely perverted talent; if fully explored, it could be an unmatched cheat.

…

Upon seeing this talent, Lu Wu’s eyes instantly lit up.

At the same time that Lu Wu’s eyes lit up, the old man’s did too.

He recognized that look—it was the look of an easy mark.

When his talent was first exposed, many cultivation masters who were not short on money had that look.

Hmm, afterwards, they all became poor!

Later on, the old man fell out of favor…

# Chapter 243 - 243 240 Little Skeletons phone enhancement

﻿Chapter 243: 240 Little Skeleton’s phone enhancement Chapter 243: 240 Little Skeleton’s phone enhancement The talent exposed by the old man, termed as “Rule Level,” highly intrigued Lu Wu.

But as interested as he was, Lu Wu didn’t immediately start to research it by grabbing the old man.

On one hand, Lu Wu knew the priorities of matters.

Currently, compared to researching the old man’s talent, fixing Little Skeleton’s phone was clearly more important.

Another reason was that Lu Wu’s brain wasn’t broken.

The old man’s talent was obviously no secret anymore.

Those interested in his talent definitely wouldn’t just be Lu Wu alone.

And considering the old man’s impoverished appearance and recalling the rich woman’s instructions at Lu Wu’s house, Lu Wu knew it would be very difficult to undertake such research even if he just thought about it with his toes.

Of course, the most important thing was that Lu Wu had received a bill.

It was about the casually executed move mentioned by the old man.

Lu Wu’s large villa collapsed, and houses within several miles were also damaged to various extents.

Just doing a simple calculation, the compensation Lu Wu needed to pay reached a staggering 12.1 billion Alliance Coins.

At 10,000 per point, that was over 120,000 points.

This didn’t include the 30,000 plus points directly sacrificed by the old man with his casual move.

That is to say, with such a simple move, over 150,000 points were gone.

It was essentially the money Lu Wu earned in three days.

Although Lu Wu could still afford it, damn, Lu Wu was actually lucky this time.

The fact that the little chick was just of Ordinary Level, and only lasted a minute after the eruption before cooling down; had it been an Elite or Boss material, it would have been difficult to predict the outcome.

Then there was Jiang Yuexing sending over a word of love.

Lu Wu could only temporarily set aside researching the old man’s talent.

Instead, he shifted his focus to researching Equipment.

In this regard, Lu Wu had no other choice; he couldn’t cheat like others and had to grind.

He grinded fourteen hours a day.

It took him three days to fully master all 321 ordinary formulas.

After mastering the ordinary formulas, Lu Wu didn’t continue with Black Iron but instead pulled out a car design and found a professional car designer.

Lu Wu spent half a day learning car design from this designer.

In just half a day, he completely gleaned all there was to know from the car designer.

So much so that the car designer, when leaving, had a lost look in his eyes and kept muttering “impossible.”

Clearly, he was struck by Lu Wu into doubting life.

Meanwhile, Lu Wu, after completely learning about car design from the designer, officially started working.

First, he produced a detailed blueprint and then issued a long list of goods to Zhang Wentao.

Upon seeing the list, Zhang Wentao immediately fell off his chair.

He quickly took the list to find Lu Wu.

“Xiao Lu, what’s with this list?”

“This, oh, I’ve been researching Universal Equipment lately and need some materials to practice.”

Zhang Wentao’s lips twitched.

Practicing needed materials worth hundreds of thousands of points?

Hundreds of thousands of points could buy a Golden Quality Universal Equipment!

Golden Quality? Zhang Wentao suddenly shivered, “Xiao Lu, you aren’t planning to make Golden Quality Equipment, are you?”

“How could that be!” Lu Wu, while busying himself with optimizing the diagram, said, “Principal, don’t you know me? I, Lu Wu, am the most stable person, and I keep my feet on the ground when it comes to academic research in cultivation.

I haven’t even learned to walk properly yet, how could I think about flying?

I’m planning to make ordinary quality equipment.”

“Ordinary quality equipment?”

Zhang Wentao’s voice rose by an octave.

Clearly, he didn’t believe a punctuation mark of what Lu Wu said; whose ordinary equipment needs materials worth hundreds of thousands of points.

“Really, it’s truly ordinary equipment, look, the design is already prepared, take a look!”

Saying this, Lu Wu finished the diagram in his hands and handed it over to Zhang Wentao.

Zhang Wentao took the diagram with skepticism.

He was stunned.

Uh, not because he was shocked by the diagram but because he couldn’t understand it.

Although Zhang Wentao was also a Cultivation Master, he wasn’t specialized in equipment; he could understand ordinary equipment diagrams, but Lu Wu’s was beyond his understanding.

No matter how he looked at it, it seemed like a car’s diagram, not an equipment diagram.

“Eh, Boss, your diagram is done?”

Just then, while Zhang Wentao was bewildered, Tie Xiong came strolling in from outside.

Seizing the opportunity, Zhang Wentao quickly handed over the diagram: “Elder Tie, please review Xiao Lu’s diagram.”

“Let me see, let me see!”

Tie Xiong clearly knew what Lu Wu was up to and showed great interest in the blueprint, nodding repeatedly as he examined it.

“Not bad, not bad at all. Xiao Lu’s design concept is really clever.

Using 3655 ordinary-level pieces of equipment as parts and skillfully fitting them together to make a camper.

Also, from the design, it’s clear that every item you designed can be used without interfering with each other. This design can be called perfect.”

The old man couldn’t stop praising it.

Beside him, Zhang Wentao finally understood what Lu Wu’s “ordinary equipment” really was.

He was planning to turn over three thousand pieces of equipment into a vehicle.

No wonder Lu Wu’s item list even required two airplane engines.

This thing, once created, might be even more terrifying than ordinary golden-quality equipment!

While Zhang Wentao was astounded, the old man spoke again, “However, although you’ve shaped it, the spirit hasn’t really come together yet. It lacks a system.

Xiao Lu, how about letting me give it a try once you finish assembling it?

I’ve occasionally had a one-shot soul-entering experience. Maybe this one time I could integrate a system into this vehicle, and by then, it could perhaps become a legendary-level piece of equipment.”

Hmm, ever since the old man discovered Lu Wu’s potential to be an easy mark, he seized every opportunity to sell himself to Lu Wu.

This time was no exception.

And before Lu Wu even got tempted, next to him, Zhang Wentao’s heart nearly exploded on the spot.

If this old man really got his hands on it, Jiangnan University might literally fly to the sky.

Immediately, he grabbed Tie Xiong’s leg, tears and snot running down his face: “Elder Tie, the previous president of Jiangnan University was like a brother to you.

Please spare Jiangnan University!”

The old man was so embarrassed, he could only touch his nose indicating it was a joke.

But the joke clearly wasn’t funny to Zhang Wentao.

He became somewhat reluctant to prepare the materials for Lu Wu.

He was afraid that once the vehicle was completed, the old man would send Jiangnan University sky-high in one shot.

However, Zhang Wentao ultimately couldn’t resist the temptation and accepted the order.

As Zhang Wentao was busy delivering the materials, Lu Wu rearranged the repair plans for Little Skeleton’s phone.

This time, with the knowledge of 321 ordinary equipment recipes under his belt, the success rate of repair and upgrade significantly increased from five percent to forty-three percent.

It was nearly half now, and that was without improving the skill level of “Hammering Hand.”

If the skill level of “Hammering Hand” could be improved, it should increase the repair success rate further.

Of course, if Lu Wu could completely master the knowledge of tools and equipment, the success rate would definitely increase further.

But Lu Wu didn’t have much time left.

The state of Little Skeleton’s phone, after being damaged, was not stagnant.

Or rather, the deterioration of Little Skeleton had never stopped; it was just slow.

In its current state, the phone could last a maximum of ten days, or at least five days before breaking down.

Lu Wu couldn’t wait, so he had to quickly improve his proficiency in the “Hammering Hand” skill.

Under Lu Wu’s urging, Zhang Wentao quickly delivered the first batch of materials.

Once the materials arrived, Lu Wu immediately brought over a group of Cultivation Masters from the Fucheng Cultivation Center to help.

They assisted Lu Wu, who was responsible for crafting the core parts of the equipment, frantically increasing his proficiency in the “Hammering Hand” skill.

In just three days, Lu Wu had completed 122 pieces of ordinary equipment.

Although it was still far from the 3655 pieces required by Lu Wu’s blueprint, making 122 pieces of ordinary equipment still significantly improved Lu Wu’s skill proficiency.

He successfully upgraded the “Hammering Hand,” a notoriously difficult skill to master, from unmastered to “Mastered” within three days.

Although it was only the second stage of skill proficiency,  
 it boosted Lu Wu’s confidence in repairing Little Skeleton’s phone.

Moreover, with the phone’s deteriorating condition, Lu Wu finally decided to start repairing and enhancing Little Skeleton’s phone by his eighth day back in Jiangnan.

Right, repairing and enhancing had to be done together.

Because equipment like Little Skeleton’s phone can’t be repaired at all.

Thus, the enhancement and repair had to be done together.

Additionally, since the phone was companion equipment, isolating enhancement and repair wasn’t feasible; the main material had to be added.

In other words, Little Skeleton had to be thrown in to stew together.

Thus.

The enhancement, repair, and quality improvement of Little Skeleton’s phone – Lu Wu decided to handle all of it together.

He prepared a huge pot and cooked a massive soup, tossing Little Skeleton and the phone in together.

Tuantuan, standing beside, once again let tears drip from the corner of his mouth.

And almost at the same moment Lu Wu threw Little Skeleton and the phone into the pot, someone who had set out from Lingnan, after enduring countless hardships, finally arrived in Jiangnan, stepping into Fucheng.

“I’ve arrived, finally arrived. I’ve finally reached Fucheng, and the hardships I endured along the way have paid off!”

# Chapter 244 - 244 241 Little Skeleton Quality Upgrade

﻿Chapter 244: 241 Little Skeleton Quality Upgrade Chapter 244: 241 Little Skeleton Quality Upgrade Since the old man’s blast had wiped out Lu Wu’s house,

his Cultivation Room had now been relocated to Jiangnan University.

After all, there were many research institutes around here, and Lu Wu had randomly picked one to refurbish.

It took about 7 days and a total of 120,000 points to fix up, but it turned out to be quite impressive.

The day it was finished, the neighbors from Lu Wu’s house came to gawk.

These Jiangnan University professors visited Lu Wu’s lab, all of them marveled like poor neighbors on a door-to-door visit.

They were green with envy.

Some even made not-so-subtle comments about the school’s delayed research funding.

Their intentions were somewhat clear, having heard about the school’s recent windfall of tens of millions.

Although everyone knew where that money came from, it didn’t stop some from wanting to improve their own research environment.

Of course, Lu Wu wasn’t very aware of this.

When the professors were visiting, he was busy preparing for the final repairs of Little Skeleton’s phone and wasn’t present; by the time Lu Wu was there, the repair and enhancement work had already begun.

The professors had also left.

Now in the spacious Cultivation Room, only Lu Wu, Dudu, and the old man remained.

Lu Wu was busy with repairs and enhancements, Dudu was busy trying to stop Tuantuan from jumping into the pot, and the old man was eyeing Lu Wu, pondering whether to coax him into giving him a chance too.

As for the Skeleton in question, Little Skeleton was lying comfortably in the pot, soaking in a bath.

With arms spread and resting on the edge of the pot, Little Skeleton tilted its skull with its Pupil Fire flickering.

If this were an anime scene,

Lu Wu would be able to see two blushes on Little Skeleton’s cheeks, and its eyes closed, the entire skeleton would look extra cute and soft.

But unfortunately, this wasn’t anime, and Lu Wu didn’t enjoy seeing Little Skeleton like this.

“Get your hands into the soup, and also, put your head down.”

Fear (No, the fire in Little Skeleton’s skull will go out, Little Skeleton will die!)

“Bullshit, that’s Soul Fire, it can’t go out, get your head down!”

Lu Wu, wielding a stick, forcefully pushed Little Skeleton down, scaring it quite a bit.

Fear (It’s over, Little Skeleton is done for, bad Lu Wu is going to stew Little Skeleton for Tuantuan!)

Not to mention, the skeleton was quite strong, and Lu Wu couldn’t push it down with the stick, so he had no choice but to resort to his ultimate trick.

“Can’t get down? If you don’t, I won’t repair Little Skeleton’s phone, and I won’t be nice to Little Skeleton anymore.”

Resentful (Don’t not fix the phone, Lu Wu.)

Reacting to this, Little Skeleton obediently crouched down in the pot, and once inside, it felt even happier.

Happy (Great, Little Skeleton’s fire didn’t go out!)

But this state of affairs made Lu Wu unhappy.

“Just now you called me bad Lu Wu and begged me not to fix the phone, but you didn’t ask me not to be nice to Little Skeleton anymore, does that mean you don’t like Lu Wu anymore?”

Proud (Lu Wu won’t stop being nice to Little Skeleton, Lu Wu likes Little Skeleton the most!)

“Show-off!”

Lu Wu quirked his mouth, giving the little guy a tap on the skull with the stick that was neither too light nor too heavy.

Then his voice softened significantly, “How is it, is the water temperature okay? Comfortable?”

Happy (Comfortable!)

Little Skeleton even started to shake in the pot.

Seeing that it didn’t seem to have any adverse reactions, Lu Wu sighed in relief but still gave it a precautionary warning.

“I’m stewing you today without a lid, so if you start to feel uncomfortable, don’t jump out, okay? If you do jump out, the phone can’t be fixed!”

Serious (Little Skeleton understood and wouldn’t jump out.)

“What a good boy!”

Using a stick to stroke the little guy’s head in place of a hand, Lu Wu then shifted his attention from Little Skeleton to the phone beside it.

From the moment Little Skeleton and its phone were thrown into the pot,

the state of Little Skeleton’s phone remained very stable, absorbing the pot’s energy at a steady pace.

“The first phase of energy absorption is quite good, very stable. Some of the internal parts of the phone that were on standby due to damage are also starting to revive, and there’s also that power coming from ‘War Soul Tablet,’ which is still holding steady for now.”

Overall, Lu Wu was quite satisfied with this phase.

However, it wasn’t yet time for Lu Wu to start the repair.

The parts inside the phone hadn’t been fully activated. It was very easy for problems to occur during repairs at this stage, so Lu Wu needed to wait another half hour.

During the half-hour wait, Lu Wu also started to chat with Little Skeleton.

Asking how Little Skeleton’s recent training was going.

Well, ever since Little Skeleton’s phone broke, in order to please its good owner Lu Wu and get him to help fix its phone, it had been training daily with Han.

Showing the kind of behavior a good skeleton should exhibit.

Of course, Lu Wu was aware of how Little Skeleton’s training was going.

After all, he could see the attribute panel, and Lu Wu knew every bit of Little Skeleton’s progress.

He was aware that Little Skeleton had recently focused its training on the skills “Bone Teeth,” “Bone Spear,” “Bone Shield,” and “Bone Prison.”

In fact, the training plan for Little Skeleton was designed by Lu Wu.

Since Lu Wu obtained that “Dragon Teeth wrapped in Death Energy,” he had been letting Little Skeleton use the Dragon Teeth as a model to practice these magic skills.

During this time, Lu Wu paid close attention to Little Skeleton’s progress and could say he understood the situation even better than Little Skeleton itself.

At this time, his intention in discussing this with Little Skeleton was to get it to focus its attention on this matter.

During a quality enhancement process like the one Little Skeleton was going through, if it could concentrate on a specific aspect, there was a high probability of achieving additional gains during the quality enhancement.

This was exactly Lu Wu’s idea.

And at this moment, Little Skeleton, soaking in the soup, particularly enjoyed chatting with Lu Wu.

Or perhaps it’s better to say that Little Skeleton always enjoyed interacting with Lu Wu.

But this guy, Lu Wu, typically spent more than 14 out of 24 hours studying, with the rest of the time spent sleeping.

Although Little Skeleton was in constant companionship with Lu Wu, there weren’t many real opportunities for communication.

Now, at last, there was a chance to relax and converse with Lu Wu, and Little Skeleton couldn’t be happier.

It was particularly talkative.

As soon as Lu Wu tossed out a topic, Little Skeleton started chattering nonstop.

Starting with how it trained and what improvements it had made,

it spoke animatedly and with great enthusiasm.

Of course, there were also things that dampened Little Skeleton’s spirits.

The most upsetting thing for Little Skeleton was the realization that it seemed to have become much less useful.

There were many little companions it couldn’t beat anymore.

Tuantuan, who had never participated in training before, recently started joining in, but each session was brief. His goal was quite clear: beat up Little Skeleton and then leave.

Han used to be unable to defeat Little Skeleton as well.

Now, it had become so powerful that Little Skeleton couldn’t beat it.

As for the little goldfish, there’s no need to mention it. It’s tough at home and even tougher outside.

As Little Skeleton muttered this, he suddenly became dejected.

(Dejected—Little Skeleton knew that Lu Wu loved a capable Little Skeleton the most. If Little Skeleton wasn’t capable, would Lu Wu still like him?)

This was the first time Lu Wu had seen the little guy like this.

Normally, this was when Lu Wu was supposed to comfort the little guy.

But considering that it was in the midst of a quality enhancement, Lu Wu felt he should provoke the little guy rather than comfort it.

Give it a sense of crisis.

“Yeah, Lu Wu likes a capable Little Skeleton.

If Little Skeleton can’t do anything and plays with his phone every day without training, then Lu Wu won’t like him anymore.”

Lu Wu said this with utmost seriousness, scaring Little Skeleton, who had never seen Lu Wu so serious about not liking him before.

(Alarmed—Actually, Little Skeleton is still very capable. Little Skeleton will train hard and become strong quickly. Lu Wu, please don’t stop liking Little Skeleton!)

Lu Wu pushed a little harder: “What if you can’t become stronger?”

Little Skeleton pondered for a moment, then suddenly, his Pupil Fire sparked.

(Sly—Little Skeleton can cover Lu Wu with a blanket, can pour water for Lu Wu, and can even warm Lu Wu’s bed. Little Skeleton is learning to cook, too.

Lu Wu, can you not like Dudu so much? I can do everything Dudu does.

It’s enough for Lu Wu to like just Little Skeleton!)

Lu Wu was stunned by this sudden outburst.

He thought the skeleton was going to strive harder, but it turned out it was trying to steal Dudu’s business.

“That doesn’t make you capable; you can’t do that!”

Torn between laughter and tears, Lu Wu gave the little guy a knock on the head: “You’re not like Dudu; you need to become stronger to be capable!

A Little Skeleton that doesn’t become stronger can’t do anything!”

With that knock on the head from Lu Wu, Little Skeleton’s mood brightened, and he even became a bit smug.

The little guy was getting smarter every day.

Just now, it was scared stiff by Lu Wu, but as soon as Lu Wu’s torn laughter came out, Little Skeleton knew Lu Wu was just teasing him.

Lu Wu wouldn’t abandon him.

His smugness made Lu Wu’s teeth itch.

Sigh, Little Skeleton was growing up, his brain was getting sharper, no longer so easy to fool!

But Lu Wu didn’t give up—if hard tactics didn’t work, he’d switch to soft ones.

“Little Skeleton, Lu Wu really isn’t going to abandon you, but you don’t like being bullied by Tuantuan every day, do you?

And don’t you want to defeat Han again?”

“Also, do you remember how your phone broke, Little Skeleton?”

“Do you remember the last time I was beaten by a fake Little Skeleton? I even vomited blood.”

Hearing this, Little Skeleton immediately stopped being smug.

Lu Wu seized the moment: “What caused all this? What is wrong? Is it the world?”

“Not right, the reason for all this is because Little Skeleton isn’t strong enough!”

“If Little Skeleton were powerful enough, he wouldn’t have been bullied by Tuantuan, his phone wouldn’t have broken, and Lu Wu wouldn’t have been hurt by the broken Little Skeleton until he vomited blood.”

“So Little Skeleton, become stronger!”

“Become so strong that you make the world tremble! Only then can you protect the phone, protect Lu Wu!”

It had to be said, Lu Wuyi really knew how to handle Little Skeleton.

With Lu Wu’s final call to arms, Little Skeleton’s emotions were instantly stirred up.

Determined (Little Skeleton must get stronger, must protect Lu Wu, must guard Little Skeleton’s phone!)

Lu Wu had timed it just right, just as he had managed to play Little Skeleton, the phone nearby had absorbed enough energy.

Seizing this chance, Lu Wu tossed the critical ingredient, “Dragon Teeth,” into the boiling mixture.

As soon as the “Dragon Teeth” hit the pot, the temperature of the flames below began to rise violently.

Lu Wu immediately used the “Hammering Hand,” drawing the Death Energy from the “Dragon Teeth.”

At once, the entire pot’s contents reacted violently.

As though it was about to boil over.

At the same time, Little Skeleton, who had been comfortable before, began to feel pain.

It was a bone-chilling cold, a pain from the Soul Fire to his bones that Little Skeleton had never experienced before.

But now, Lu Wu could only let Little Skeleton endure.

He needed to repair the phone.

As the Death Energy from the “Dragon Teeth” erupted, Lu Wu’s arm crackled with electricity, the Energy of lightning softening the prepared Dragon Teeth.

Then he infused the essence of the Dragon Teeth into Little Skeleton’s phone.

With the essence of the Dragon Teeth entering, Little Skeleton’s phone began to strengthen, the “War Stele”‘s energy inside was activated, and, fortuitously, Lu Wu was prepared, instantly using the “Suppressing Order.”

The two forces dissolved, leaving only slight remnants.

Lu Wu could have easily dealt with these remnants, but after some thought, he decided to merge this remaining energy into Little Skeleton’s phone.

Then, under the influence of the “Hammering Hand.”

Little Skeleton’s phone, the “Dragon Teeth,” and the entire pot’s concoction began to fuse.

Before Lu Wu’s energy ran out in the nick of time, he managed to complete the repair. Once the phone was fixed, Lu Wu had nothing more to do; the phone would strengthen itself.

It was then that Lu Wu turned his attention back to Little Skeleton.

Seeing that Little Skeleton was still enveloped in pain, Lu Wu didn’t hesitate to use his only available Summoner Talent.

He established a Damage Sharing connection between himself and Little Skeleton.

Once the link was established, Little Skeleton, who had been suffering, found the pain had lessened.

Upon closer inspection, Little Skeleton roughly understood what had happened, the Pupil Fire within the pot flickered.

The skeletal frame opened wide and began to voraciously devour and absorb the energy in the pot.

Entering the phase of Quality enhancement.

Little Skeleton fell into a deep sleep.

More than five hours later, when Little Skeleton woke up from the deep slumber.

Little Skeleton found that it seemed ready to kick ass again!

…

A new week, Nu Xiao grew longer, won’t you guys cast a vote?

# Chapter 245 - 245 242 Little Skeleton Dragon Bone Controller

﻿Chapter 245: 242 Little Skeleton Dragon Bone Controller Chapter 245: 242 Little Skeleton Dragon Bone Controller Little Skeleton’s competence or incompetence, Lu Wu knew best on that front.

He had already tested it once before Little Skeleton had awakened.

…

Name: Little Skeleton Mage (first evolution) (Evolution Direction 8)

Power: 3 Star (Boss) (Could not continue to improve before evolution)

Attribute: Undead, Netherworld Fire, Thunder

State: Coma (In the lingering effects of evolution, a rare quietness)

Weakness: Light (strong) Fire (weak)

Basic Skills: Omitted

Advanced Skills: Ghost Fire Skill (Master), Thunder Fall Skill (Master)

Advanced Skills: Thunder Spear (Expert)

Special Skills: Charging (Master)

Talents: Dual-tasking, Magic Enhancement (Intermediate)

Dragon Bone Controller (Basic) (Passive) (A skeleton mastering dragon bone magic, significantly enhancing the power of bone series spells and causing mutations in them)

Commander Skeleton (Active) (Can elevate the power of one’s own subordinate skeletons or utilize the power of subordinate skeletons to enhance one’s combat abilities.

Maximum self-improvement is one major level, not exceeding a Lord.

Current Talent coverage for skeletons: 2/10

PS: Limited to skeletons, pigs are useless.)

Companion Equipment: Mysterious Bone Staff, Little Skeleton’s phone

Description: It seems like it can really do the job now!

…

Item: Little Skeleton’s phone

Quality: Gold

Functions: Energy Storage (Intermediate) (Stores about 25 Little Skeletons’ energy)

Big Phone Swiping (Intermediate) (The targets subdued are still Little Skeletons and pigs, increased to 15!)

Durability (Advanced) (Attacks below Lord level cannot damage it)

Data Storage (Advanced) (Capable of storing a large amount of official or unofficial data)

Description: This time the repair work went quite smoothly, everything’s quite okay, plus, there seem to be some other features in the phone that couldn’t be developed due to material limitations, please pay attention.

…

This, then, are the attributes of Little Skeleton and Little Skeleton’s phone after one cooking session.

Overall, Lu Wu was relatively satisfied.

The phone was perfectly repaired, and the number of Little Skeleton’s minions increased from the original four to 15.

On Little Skeleton’s side, the two awakened talents aren’t bad either.

Even can be said to be a pleasant surprise.

Especially the last one called “Commander Skeleton”, which is quite similar to little goldfish’s “Water Clan Commander” talent.

Well, it’s similar in attribute, not as complete in talent as little goldfish.

Little goldfish’s talent includes the ability to subdue minions.

Little Skeleton’s side doesn’t have that, its talent only has an effect, totally lacking the subjugation ability.

It’s a good thing Little Skeleton has a Little Skeleton’s phone, otherwise this talent would practically be wasted.

But again, if Little Skeleton didn’t have this phone, it also wouldn’t have been possible to trigger this talent.

After looking through all of Little Skeleton’s attributes, Lu Wu went on to click and check the (Evolution Direction) section behind Little Skeleton’s name.

The Evolution Direction section glaringly showed eight evolutionary paths, but mostly ones Lu Wu didn’t care for.

What “Little Skeleton Pig Knight”

What “Little Skeleton Pig Mage”

What “Half-Witch Demon Little Skeleton”

All these were the evolution directions that Lu Wu had researched recently, suitable for Little Skeleton’s minions but not fitting for Little Skeleton in Lu Wu’s opinion.

Nevertheless, he still opened it.

Because before the Little Skull Soup, there were only six evolution directions.

After the soup, two more were added and naturally, Lu Wu was curious about what these two were.

Upon checking, the two additional evolution directions both amazed Lu Wu, one was “Little Skeleton Dragon Bone Controller” and the other was “Little Skeleton Commander”.

Hmm, from the names alone, one could see the origin.

The former because of the “Dragon Bone Controller” talent.

The latter because of the “Commander Skeleton” talent.

Lu Wu briefly reviewed these two advanced schemes and afterward, Lu Wu had a general understanding of these two professions.

First was the “Dragon Bone Controller” form.

To achieve this form of evolution, Little Skeleton’s skeletal structure needs to be changed to dragon bones, either replacing with dragon bones outright, which is straightforward and cheaper, or adapting the bone structure to elite dragon bone standards, which is expensive but has nearly the same effect.

The resulting Little Skeleton would see a massive improvement in personal power.

Whether it’s bone-related spells or combat skills, all would see significant enhancements, even possibly mastering skills of the Dragon Clan.

Then there’s the “Commander Skeleton” form.

To achieve this form, the key doesn’t lie on Little Skeleton itself, but rather on Little Skeleton’s minions; Lu Wu would need to get 10 core minions for Little Skeleton and make them all undergo a second evolution.

Just from these two evolutionary methods, Lu Wu could see at a glance the different directions they would take afterward.

The former aims towards enhancing the individual strength of the skeleton, while the latter follows the route of a Lord.

“Well, both of these evolutionary paths are quite good, but it would be great if they could be combined.”

Hmm, people are always greedy.

Lu Wu is no exception, faced with this choice, Lu Wu’s first instinct is to want it all.

Anyway, using both together seems to have no conflicts, just means spending more money.

Lu Wu didn’t care about the money at all.

So when he saw the two evolution paths, he started to figure out how to merge the two plans into one.

At this moment, Lu Wu’s method seemed unwisely simple and brutal.

He went straight for the money!

Without second thoughts, he opened the internal network, heavily solicited for “Dragon Bone” and Little Skeletons that had undergone either one or two evolutions.

At this point, the roles of money and the platform came into play.

Although Lu Wu could cultivate the Little Skeleton to the second evolution himself.

But that would be troublesome, laborious, and costly, taking around ten to twenty thousand points to elevate a regular Little Skeleton to a Boss Level from no evolution to Second Evolution.

However, if Lu Wu were to purchase them online, he wouldn’t need to spend that money.

He directly offered 500 points each for the once-evolved Little Skeletons, and slightly more expensive, just 2500 points for the twice-evolved ones.

With this, Lu Wu’s task listing caused quite a stir once it went up.

Everyone thought Lu Wu was incredibly generous.

After all, Summoned Beasts are only contractible as babies; once grown up, they couldn’t be contracted but only used as materials or for research.

Usually, a once-evolved Summoned Beast could earn a maximum of two to three hundred points if dismantled and sold, and that’s only if they had research value; those without such value were not even desired for free.

The twice-evolved ones were more expensive, but the most valuable ones could fetch around a thousand points.

Lu Wu directly doubled this and even spent money on advertising, tempting many summoners on the spot.

Not a few got the news and headed straight into the Undead Type Secret Realm.

Although once-evolved Little Skeletons were rare, and twice-evolved even rarer, they weren’t in demand usually, so no one bothered with them.

Now suddenly someone was interested, and many summoners knew where to find them.

As soon as Lu Wu’s reward was posted, in less than five minutes, he had a lot of contacts, and he immediately switched the contact details to Li Kai to help him handle it.

He instructed Li Kai to collect as many twice-evolved Little Skeletons as possible and even better if there were three-time-evolved ones; money was no object for Lu Wu!

This series of tycoon moves made the old man behind Lu Wu almost drool.

He even contemplated whether to catch a three-time or four-time evolved Little Skeleton for Lu Wu?

But, racking his brains, the old man couldn’t think of where to find a three-time or four-time evolved Little Skeleton and had to give up on the idea.

While Lu Wu was busy spending money.

Over at the Cultivation Room, Dudu had let Tuantuan go.

Tuantuan, excited, waddled over with its round little butt to drink some Little Skull Soup.

This had basically become a routine.

The soup Lu Wu made was always eventually drunk by Tuantuan, this time no exception.

Moreover, this time the soup was made from the bone marrow of the Little Skeleton itself, making it especially delicious, and Tuantuan was especially eager and drooling for it.

However, just as Tuantuan pounced towards the pot, ready to jump in and drink all the soup, a bony hand reached out and grabbed Tuantuan’s twin pig ears.

Yep, the one who caught it was indeed the Little Skeleton, feeling capable once more.

Feeling rejuvenated and with its subordinates backing it up, the Little Skeleton felt it was necessary to settle the scores with Tuantuan for the past bullying.

This made Tuantuan yell out in anger, wanting to turn giant and squash the Little Skeleton, but worried about ruining the soup in the process.

At this moment, while holding the pig’s ears, Little Skeleton’s eyes sparkled with Pupil Fire.

Fighting, winning is the only way to have soup, understand?!

Tuantuan was stunned for a moment, its small eyes glimmered as it let out a resonant grunt.

Then, these two little fellas, like kids arranging a fight, sneakily slipped out of the Cultivation Room.

Coincidentally, as these two little guys snuck out, the adolescent Zhao Li came over.

He felt he had made significant progress recently and was preparing to challenge Lu Wu.

But as soon as he arrived at the front door, he saw Little Skeleton and Tuantuan.

Seeing their posture, apparently preparing to fight, Zhao Li’s attention was instantly drawn.

Despite noticing Zhao Li, Little Skeleton and Tuantuan ignored him.

Now, these two little guys, one puffed up, the other fighting for food.

Upon reaching the lab door, they started fighting right away.

On Tuantuan’s side, without a word, it immediately turned giant while Little Skeleton pulled out its repaired phone, releasing all its buddies from inside.

Little Skeleton releasing its buddies was unexpected to Tuantuan.

But it didn’t care; for food, even if it were against a hundred buddies from Little Skeleton, Tuantuan would fight it out.

Without a second word, a direct charge, followed by a Cute Pig Trample.

On Little Skeleton’s side, also showing no weakness, two Steel Armor Wild Boars went up and returned the favor with their Wild Boar Trampling.

Three pigs clashed head-on!

Tuantuan clearly had the absolute advantage, but Little Skeleton had more subordinates.

While Tuantuan clashed with the Steel Armor Wild Boars, Little Skeleton activated Skeleton Commander, elevating its Boss 3 Star power close to Leader Level.

Simultaneously, a Master Level Thunder Fall descended.

Previously, without subordinates to hold Tuantuan back, Little Skeleton’s Master Level Thunder Fall had never successfully hit; but now that it did, the effect was quite impressive.

With a ‘crack’, Tuantuan was stunned to the bone.

Seeing the pig shivering from his attack, Little Skeleton couldn’t be more excited.

One Thunder Fall after another came down, seeming to repay all of Tuantuan’s previous bullying.

After ten consecutive Thunder Falls, even the tough-skinned Tuantuan was knocked down.

Its size shrank from the giant size to mini.

Seeing Tuantuan down, Little Skeleton couldn’t feel prouder.

Pushing aside its subordinates, it came before Tuantuan, propping a bony hand on its hip, Little Skeleton looked up, ‘click clack’ laughing.

Smugly feeling triumphant (Little Skeleton is capable now, Tuantuan is no longer a match for Little Skeleton, and no more soup for Tuantuan.)

Just as Tuantuan had already laid down, indifferent to moving and had even closed its eyes.

Suddenly, Little Skeleton updated its status, and downed Tuantuan’s eyes snapped open…

…

Asking for votes!

Seeking subscriptions, seeking support for the lonely old Nu Xiao…

# Chapter 246 - 246 243 Lin Jianyings message

﻿Chapter 246: 243 Lin Jianying’s message Chapter 246: 243 Lin Jianying’s message Jiangnan University, outside Lu Wu’s research institute.

A huge noise suddenly erupted, shattering many of the institute’s glass panes.

By the time Lu Wu came to his senses and rushed outside,

all he saw was Little Skeleton and its minions sprawled on the ground, and the dumbstruck teenager Zhao Li.

“What the heck? Did you do this?”

Zhao Li’s head shook violently.

He hurried to explain to Lu Wu that it wasn’t him; it was a pig that did it.

Lu Wu was taken aback, then turned to look at Little Skeleton.

“A pig did it? When everything was going just fine, why would Tuantuan lash out at you?”

Little Skeleton clasped its head with both hands, feigning death by smashing its head against the ground, but it was useless. It couldn’t fool Lu Wu with its attribute, as Lu Wu roughly figured out the situation from Little Skeleton’s state.

He realized that this little one, swollen with pride, had challenged Tuantuan to a duel and got pummeled by him.

Lu Wu instantly felt a sense of schadenfreude.

“Serves you right, getting all puffed up!

You’re not even evolved yet and you’re picking fights with Tuantuan, do you not know it just wolfed down a big chick?”

By Lu Wu’s guess, Tuantuan’s power had reached the point where it could become the leader anytime now, so it was perfectly natural for this little guy to provoke and get thrashed by it.

After laughing at Little Skeleton’s expense, Lu Wu turned to Zhao Li.

“Did Senior Zhao come to see me? What’s up?”

“Nothing, just strolling around!”

Zhao Li shook his head rapidly. There did use to be something, but not anymore.

He was naive, but not stupid.

After witnessing the fight between Little Skeleton and Tuantuan, how could he dare to talk about fighting with Lu Wu?

Considering the combat power Little Skeleton just demonstrated, wouldn’t he get utterly thrashed?

Without another word, he quickly beat a retreat.

As soon as Zhao Li left, Lu Wu suddenly felt his trouser leg getting heavy. He quickly grabbed his waist and looked down, glaring at Little Skeleton who was tugging at his trouser leg: “What are you up to!”

Hoping (Little Skeleton wants to soak, it must become stronger!)

Lu Wu rolled his eyes. Clinging to that phone every day and now realizing it needed to get stronger after a beating.

What took it so long?

Still, having this intention was good, and Lu Wu thought it needed encouragement.

“Lu Wu is going to prepare the soak for you, but it will take some time. You should train properly during this period, got it!”

Little Skeleton shook its head (Little Skeleton won’t train, if it trains, Tuantuan will beat Little Skeleton, and Tuantuan has been super naughty recently!)

Lu Wu didn’t like hearing this.

“It’s definitely because you provoked it, otherwise why would such a lazy pig like Tuantuan beat you up punctually every day? Could it be that Dudu is instigating it?

That’s even less likely, alright?”

Dudu, such a soft girl, how could she ever tell Tuantuan to bully Little Skeleton?

So, it was definitely Little Skeleton’s fault!

These words from Lu Wu made Little Skeleton feel so wronged, it just lay on the ground motionless.

Angry (Little Skeleton is unhappy now, Lu Wu isn’t nice anymore, Little Skeleton is starting to dislike Lu Wu a bit.)

“No way, who did you learn this from? What’s with acting like a girl, throwing tantrums at the drop of a hat?”

Lu Wu thought about it, and there didn’t seem to be anyone around for the little guy to mimic.

“No need to talk further, it must be watching too much TV. Starting today, your phone is confiscated. Later I’ll buy you some Bone Series Advanced Spells, and you will train properly!”

As he was speaking, Lu Wu was just about to cruelly fish out his smartphone, which he’d been protectively clutching like Little Skeleton, when Zhao Li returned not long after having left.

Hmm, he had walked away before, but now he was running back, looking rather urgent.

“What’s the matter? Did you make a round trip from Jiangbei University?” asked Lu Wu.

“No, not that. There’s a girl looking for you at the school entrance.”

“Looking for me?” Lu Wu was even more puzzled. “Who is it? A guy or a girl?”

“A girl, covered in wounds, and she brought along an equally severely injured dog, seems like a Hell Puppy.

After saying she needed to find you, she passed out. She seems to have been taken to the infirmary now.

I bumped into a student who was on their way to notify you, so I came instead…”

Zhao Li hadn’t finished speaking when he saw Lu Wu leave behind a ‘thanks’ and hurry towards the infirmary.

His urgency was clearly due to the words “Hell Puppy.”

There weren’t many Hell Cubs of Golden Quality, and the only one that could be linked to Lu Wu was Lin Jianying’s.

Lu Wu was almost 100 percent sure that the Hell Puppy was Lin Jianying’s Gouzi.

His assumption was confirmed upon reaching the infirmary.

The girl who was looking for him was undergoing emergency treatment, while on the dog’s side, its medical treatment was nearly finished.

In the infirmary, a sentimental sister with teary eyes told Lu Wu about the girl and the puppy’s condition.

“The Hell Puppy was well protected. Although it’s in a coma due to an unknown poison, it has no other injuries on its body. It’s the girl, however, she’s got over thirty wounds, both deep and shallow.

Most of them seem to have been inflicted recently, and on top of that, it looks like she hasn’t eaten for several days, her spirit and energy nearly drained.

Her survival is almost a miracle.

Given her current state, whether she can pull through is hard to say.

It seems she must have suffered tremendously on her way to find you.”

As the nurse was speaking, her gaze when looking at Lu Wu became somewhat accusatory,

like the gaze one would give to a scumbag.

Obviously, her little mind had conjured up a melodramatic story of a scumbag’s betrayal and a lovelorn girl’s quest to find him.

However, Lu Wu had no time to pay attention to these perceptions.

Lu Wu immediately contacted Zhang Wentao and Jiang Yuexing to arrange for the best medical team to come.

He then went to check on the puppy’s condition.

As the nurse had described, the puppy was indeed in a coma.

Lu Wu glanced at the puppy’s attributes,

and immediately his brow furrowed deeply.

This pup was indeed Lin Jianying’s, but the problem was, its contract with Lin Jianying seemed to have been severed.

In this world, a Summoned Beast’s contract with a Summoner being severed generally has only two possibilities.

One is that the Summoner actively breaks the contract, and the other is that the Summoner has passed away.

Whichever of these two possibilities it may be, Lin Jianying’s current situation did not bode well.

It was even possible that she had already met with disaster.

Furthermore, Lu Wu discovered that the puppy’s situation was more than just a coma.

It seemed that due to the contract being broken with Lin Jianying, the pup’s soul was extremely weak, already on the verge of fading away.

Considering its current state, it was unlikely to wake up.

“If it doesn’t wake up, the only one who can enlighten us to the situation would be that girl. Now, our only hope is for her to pull through!”

…

I apologize for being a bit short, sorry.

# Chapter 247 - 247 244 troublemakers want to harm me

﻿Chapter 247: 244 troublemakers want to harm me! Chapter 247: 244 troublemakers want to harm me! Jiangnan University, Medical Department.

Following Lu Wu’s phone call,  
 quickly, the top medical team of Jiangnan came over.

With the aid of Summoned Beast’s healing skills and medical technology, the girl quickly pulled through.

This was excellent news.

However, closely following the good news, was some bad news.

The girl did wake up, but she seemed to have lost her memory due to a severe head injury.

This meant that Lu Wu couldn’t get any information about Lin Jianying from her.

Then, even worse news arrived.

Not long after this girl woke up, Lin Jianying’s dog had also completely died.

Lu Wu was stunned when he heard this news.

He had seen the state of the dog, and although it was dead, it shouldn’t have happened so quickly.

After inquiring about this, Lu Wu found out that the medical team had made a mistake with the medication while trying to save the dog, resulting directly in the dog’s death.

This situation was really messed up.

The clues that had initially been right in front of him were almost completely severed again.

Lu Wu had no options left but to ask Jiang Yuexing to begin investigating from the girl’s identity, hoping to find some clues.

After a whole day of hassle,  
 all Lu Wu managed to bring back from the medical room to the research facility, was the dog’s corpse.

He placed down the dog’s corpse,  
 and Lu Wu slumped into a chair, massaging his temples with both hands.

Clearly, today’s events were draining for him.

Although his relationship with Lin Jianying was nowhere near as close as with Dudu, they had still been teammates and roommates for several months.

Now his whereabouts were unknown, and the dog given by him had died right in front of his own eyes.

Lu Wu’s emotions were really low at this moment.

A feeling of powerlessness washed over him.

At the same time, Lu Wu also vaguely felt that something was off about this situation.

A girl arrived here severely injured, and as soon as she did, lost her memory.

A dog arrived here poisoned and in a coma, and as soon as it did, died!

Although both scenarios seemed reasonable, they gave Lu Wu a feeling of being deliberately arranged.

But this was only a feeling, if you asked Lu Wu for evidence, he had none on his side.

So, Lu Wu was organizing his thoughts.

“Suppose this really was deliberately arranged, then what’s the purpose?

Is it to keep me from knowing Old Lin’s news?

Why? Is it because he’s not dead yet? Does the other side not want me to save him?

Or is there a secret with Lin Jianying?

That shouldn’t be though, if they could orchestrate such a coincidence, then this woman shouldn’t have appeared in front of me.

Moreover, Old Lin shouldn’t have any secrets either.

If he had secrets, I would definitely have noticed it.”

Lu Wu organized his thoughts for a long time but couldn’t make sense of anything.

Helpless, he currently had too little information at hand.

“Sigh, it’s useless to think blindly, now I can only wait for news from the rich woman, hoping she can find something from this woman’s identity.”

Lu Wu brought his thoughts back, then looked back at the dog’s corpse.

He discovered that the dog’s corpse had already been surrounded.

Little Skeleton and the others saw Lu Wu returning with the corpse.

Each one of them crowded over, the little guys surrounded the dog’s corpse, Green Cub, Tuantuan, and even Han showed clear sadness.

After all, the dog was their friend, and of course they were sad now that their friend had died.

However, Little Skeleton’s state was somewhat different, its Pupil Fire flickering, seemingly puzzled about why its companions were sad.

Lu Wu understood.

This was because Little Skeleton was an Undead Type Summoned Beast, and its definition of life and death was different; in its view, it seemed like the dog hadn’t died.

“Wait, not dead!”

Lu Wu was startled.

He of course knew that the dog was definitely dead, the medical team and system had told him the dog was dead.

But being dead didn’t mean it couldn’t be revived.

Even if it couldn’t be revived in the form of a Hell Puppy, perhaps it could come back in another form.

With this thought, Lu Wu’s eyes suddenly lit up.

“Little Skeleton, give me a kiss!”

Feeling his thoughts suddenly clear, and finding a new approach, Lu Wu was extremely happy, going up and nibbling on Little Skeleton’s head.

This sudden bite left Little Skeleton dazed.

What’s happening?

Did Lu Wu also learn from Tuantuan to eat Little Skeleton?

Shivering from the cold!

Well, Little Skeleton was truly cold now.

Because after Lu Wu nibbled it, while it was still dazed, he snatched its phone and ran off.

By the time Little Skeleton realized, Lu Wu was already gone, but Dudu was there.

Right, Little Skeleton felt cold because of Dudu’s gaze.

Over at Lu Wu’s side.

He began searching through the proper and improper data in Little Skeleton’s phone.

This phone was stuffed with a lot of data, much of which Lu Wu himself hadn’t seen yet, he didn’t know if there was data about Undead Transformation in there.

From how Little Skeleton viewed the dog’s state,  
 it seemed that the dog did meet the conditions for transitioning into an Undead.

So, Lu Wu wanted to look for related data.

On this aspect, Little Skeleton’s phone really did have data, quite a lot actually.

There were training programs, skills, ceremonies, all sorts of messy stuff.

Lu Wu counted them, and there were at least 23 ways to transform the dog into an Undead.

However, although there were many methods, after looking through them, Lu Wu felt that none were reliable.

These methods could indeed transform the dog into an Undead, but basically none of them could maintain the dog’s consciousness.

If Gouzi couldn’t retain his current consciousness while transforming into an Undead, then the Undead Transformation of Gouzi would seem meaningless in Lu Wu’s eyes.

“Looks like I’ve got work to do again.”

With no other options, Lu Wu had to put aside Little Skeleton’s evolution scheme and turn to study the Undead Transformation plan for Gouzi.

While working on this, he awaited the outcome of Jiang Yuexing’s investigation.

Logically, Jiang Yuexing’s investigation shouldn’t be too slow.

This girl was connected to Lin Jianying and starting from places Lin Jianying might appear, the investigation should have produced results quickly.

However, Jiang Yuexing had been investigating for three days, and the girl’s health had already improved under top-notch medical care.

Yet Jiang Yuexing had not found anything.

This surprised Lu Wu—was this rich woman really that inefficient?

However, although the rich woman was inefficient, it wasn’t all bad news on Lu Wu’s side.

There was still plenty of good news.

One was that the plan to transform Gouzi had nearly been completed in three days.

Another was regarding Little Skeleton.

Lu Wu, during the time of improving Little Skeleton’s Quality, issued a reward for acquiring “Little Skeleton” and “Dragon Bone.”

With the influence of spending money.

The progress of these two matters was quite quick.

In just three days, significant progress had been made in both aspects.

Regarding the Dragon Bone, Lu Wu had spent almost one hundred thousand points purchasing three Western Dragon spines, two skulls, and one Eastern Dragon spine.

All were of Lord Level.

These items were already being delivered.

On the side of Little Skeletons, Lu Wu had also made significant gains.

Up to now, twenty-seven First Evolution Little Skeletons had been delivered.

There were also seven Second Evolution Little Skeletons, which was quite a bargain at a total of 31,000 points.

Additionally, Li Kai had received news about a possible Fourth Evolution Little Skeleton.

When asked what price he should set for a Fourth Evolution Little Skeleton, Lu Wu immediately offered a high-tier price of one hundred thousand.

Just as Lu Wu had made this offer, the old man disappeared three hours later.

Needless to say, the old man had definitely gone to capture that Fourth Evolution Little Skeleton.

Lu Wu frowned when he heard this news.

He had always felt there was something fishy about this affair, and now that his bodyguard had run off, Lu Wu immediately sensed it.

Definitely, one hundred percent, there were troublemakers aiming to harm him.

And coincidentally, not long after Lu Wu’s house bodyguard ran off, Lu Wu, while busy tackling the last difficult problem of Undead Transforming Gouzi, was approached by the woman who had come back with Old Lin and Gouzi.

Hearing this news, Lu Wu’s brows furrowed tightly.

“She’s supposed to have amnesia, right? How could she come looking for me?”

“It seems that the deepest memory she retained is your name, so she wants to find her lost memories from you,” Li Kai responded.

She could find a damn memory.

Lu Wu sneered; he didn’t even know that girl, how could he help her recover her memories?

“Let her stay in the medical room.”

At this moment, Lu Wu was at a critical moment in solving the problem of Undead Transforming Gouzi and didn’t want to deal with that girl.

Lu Wu now felt something eerie about the whole situation.

Definitely, someone was trying to harm him, so he felt it was very likely that there was something wrong with that girl.

His first instinct was to avoid contact with her.

But after giving the order, Lu Wu felt that it wasn’t right to do so.

It wasn’t that Lu Wu was suddenly moved by compassion; he was now fully caught up in the rhythm of there being troublemakers.

“At this time, it doesn’t seem right not to meet her.

If there is a conspiracy behind this, the troublemakers must be around me. This woman must also be a key pawn, she is the only person who has information on Old Lin, I can’t seem too indifferent.

Otherwise, they might either think that Old Lin isn’t important to me, or they might guess that I have other ways to figure out the truth.”

Keeping one’s cards close to the chest, Lu Wu thought it better not to let others see them.

Thus, Lu Wu ultimately took back his order and went to meet that girl.

At the institute, Lu Wu met this dog-delivering girl for the second time in the guest room.

Lu Wu didn’t immediately meet with the girl, but stayed outside for a while, observing her. She wore a loose hospital gown, her complexion pale, her long hair draped over her shoulders, sitting there, giving off a helplessly delicate and pitiable sick beauty’s appeal.

Compared to her, Dudu seemed like a chubby little duck.

And now, this chubby little duck was busily caring for and fussing over the girl.

Actually, not just now, over the past three days, Dudu had frequently taken care of the girl, and they had become quite familiar with each other.

Now, the girl seemed to place her trust and reliance on Dudu, continuously holding Dudu’s hands.

Lu Wu watched from outside for a long time but couldn’t discern any issues.

The woman looked just like an innocuous little bunny.

After some hesitation, he pushed open the door.

“Sorry to have kept you waiting!”

Lu Wu suddenly pushed open the door, startling the girl.

She quickly stood up, hiding behind the chubby Dudu with a trembling demeanor.

“Don’t be afraid, it’s Lu Wu!”

Dudu petted the girl’s head, soothing her.

After being calmed by Dudu, the girl took a while to emerge from behind Dudu, a delicate and fair face blushing deeply.

She glanced at Lu Wu then swiftly retreated, like a frightened little bunny.

This made Lu Wu frown. Was he really that scary?

Dudu explained from the side, “She’s always like this, very shy.”

This girl indeed resembled a little bunny, but Lu Wu, already prejudiced about being targeted by troublemakers, wasn’t so easily deceived.

“Dudu, you go out first, I need to talk to her.”

As soon as Lu Wu said this, the girl quickly grabbed onto Dudu’s clothes, not letting Dudu leave, her eyes watery as if tears were about to fall any moment.

But it was no use; Dudu still left.

“Don’t worry, Lu Wu is a good person, he won’t hurt you.”

With simple reassurance, Dudu left.

As soon as Dudu left and the door closed, the guest room was left with just Lu Wu and the girl.

The girl, having lost the support of Dudu, could only hide behind the back of the sofa.

Lu Wu then steadily walked towards the girl, stepping close in front of her, bending down to look into her eyes, and asked each word deliberately, “Who sent you?”

# Chapter 248 - 248 245 Gouzis Memories

﻿Chapter 248: 245 Gouzi’s Memories Chapter 248: 245 Gouzi’s Memories Lu Wuyi’s statement directly frightened the girl into a confused stupor.

She stood there, dumbfounded, not knowing what to do next.

Lu Wuyi then pressed harder.

“Don’t play dumb, I know you haven’t lost your memory.”

“How could it be such a coincidence that you lose your memory right when you arrive, and Gouzi just dies?

Also, why is there absolutely no record of you before you came to Fucheng, even after the Governor of Jiangnan, my adoptive mother, had your background checked for three days and found nothing?

There are too many irregularities about you. I suspect you’re playing a distressed act to get close to me.

Tell me, who sent you to approach me?

Is it someone from Gutian or Jiangbei? What’s their objective? To get at Little Skeleton’s phone or something else?”

“I advise you to confess honestly, or I will make you wish you were dead.”

Lu Wuyi was especially fierce at this moment, and his ferocity made the already baffled girl burst into tears.

Tears are a woman’s best weapon, especially for those skilled in their use.

The girl’s crying was pitiful to behold.

It left Lu Wuyi, who had just been extremely fierce, suddenly without any idea of what to do.

He could only let Dudu handle it while he scratched his head and left the reception hall.

As Lu Wuyi stepped out of the reception hall, the hand scratching his head dropped to his side, and his expression calmed.

This had been a test by Lu Wuyi.

He suspected that someone was manipulating him.

And if it was indeed someone’s doing, the role this woman played in this matter was intriguing.

Whoever she was, her purpose was definitely clear: to get close to him.

Otherwise, her existence had no meaning.

And now that Lu Wuyi had voiced his suspicions, it could serve two purposes.

One was to probe, to test this girl and the people behind her.

If there indeed were people behind her, they would certainly react next, trying to dispel Lu Wuyi’s suspicions.

The other purpose was to emit false signals.

To let people believe that he was still merely doubting this girl’s identity. They wouldn’t know that the Undead Transformation of Gouzi had already progressed significantly.

Soon, Lu Wuyi might be able to transform Gouzi fully and obtain the clues he wanted from him.

This way, it could make the opponents lower their guard.

“Keep a good eye on her!”

After telling Li Kai to watch the girl for him.

Lu Wuyi turned back to his studio and completely finalized the plans for Gouzi’s Undead Transformation.

After sorting out the plans for Gouzi’s Undead Transformation, Lu Wuyi didn’t start transforming Gouzi right away. Instead, he first took Little Skeleton to see those that had been delivered over the past three days.

Twenty-seven first-evolved and seven second-evolved.

A total of thirty-four Little Skeletons, and Lu Wuyi glanced over them, mostly Skeleton Warriors.

Or perhaps it should be said that the first-evolved were all Skeleton Warriors, and the second-evolved were all Skeleton Knights.

Lu Wuyi didn’t hesitate.

He told Little Skeleton to take those seven Skeleton Knights under his command, and then he began to pick and choose among the twenty-seven first-evolved Little Skeletons.

Little Skeleton could take fifteen underlings, and already having four, it seemed he could only take eleven more, but actually, he could take thirteen.

Two of them could combine evolve with the original two boars to become “Steel-armored Boar Knights.”

This meant that, subtracting the seven second-rank ones, Lu Wuyi could choose six more.

But considering more skeletons would still be delivered, Lu Wuyi planned to pick just two more first-evolved Skeleton Gunners.

He decided to fill the ten slots for Little Skeleton “Skeleton Commander” first.

After Little Skeleton took these nine new underlings under his command.

Lu Wuyi sent an order to Zhang Wentao, requesting a batch of materials be sent to him.

Once these materials arrived.

Lu Wuyi started to get busy.

What he busied himself with was not the “Steel Armor Skeleton Knights” but the Undead Transformation of Gouzi.

Clearly, this move was meant to divert attention.

In the process of Gouzi’s Undead Transformation.

The routine was the same as before, set up a cauldron, put Gouzi and the ingredients inside it, and arrange a ritual formation outside the cauldron.

After everything was in place, Lu Wuyi let Little Skeleton commence by igniting the ingredients in the cauldron with the Ghost Fire Skill.

As the materials in the cauldron were set aflame, dark, eerie flames burned, activating the ritual beneath, turning the cultivation room into a sinister scene.

Several hours later.

The flames in the cauldron extinguished, leaving only a pristine white skeleton of Gouzi quietly lying there.

Now came the most crucial step of the ritual.

Lu Wuyi stepped forward, took out a can of blood, and with a small knife, made a cut on his own body. After letting out a bit of his blood, he poured both the blood from the can and his own blood over the skeleton of Gouzi.

As the blood poured in, the ritual was fully activated.

A surge of soul fluctuation emerged from Gouzi’s skeleton, a faint Soul Fire appearing within Gouzi’s skull.

With the emergence of the Soul Fire, a temporary soul connection was naturally established between Lu Wu and Gouzi. At the same time, a flood of memories surged from Gouzi toward Lu Wu.

Lu Wu’s vision began to see the world from Gouzi’s perspective.

The first scene that appeared was from when Gouzi had just emerged from the Sea Suppression Tower, an unremarkable scene.

What Gouzi knew, Lu Wu already knew.

Next, what appeared before Lu Wu was the situation inside the Inheritance Tower.

From here on, everything that appeared was unknown to Lu Wu.

Gouzi had witnessed the entire encounter between Kong Yi and Lin Jianying, allowing Lu Wu to see, for the first time, Kong Yi’s persecution of Lin Jianying.

He heard what Kong Yi had planned to do to Lin Jianying, to Dudu, and to him.

This made Lu Wu so furious that he nearly bled from anger.

Fortunately, it seemed that Kong Yi was killed by the rich woman. However, just before his death, he transformed into a blood light and entered Lin Jianying’s body.

After this, it was outside the Inheritance Tower.

After leaving the Inheritance Tower, Lu Wu, through Gouzi’s viewpoint, discovered that Jiang Yue Xing had visited Lin Jianying secretly at night several times after sending them home.

And it wasn’t just once, but several times.

The first time was to check on Lin Jianying’s health and to ask about the “Gate” matter.

What exactly was said Gouzi didn’t hear clearly; it was quite tired at the time and fell asleep after a few words.

The second time, one night, Lin Jianying came back from somewhere, and to Gouzi, he seemed like a completely different person, unusually fierce.

That night, Jiang Yuexing came over.

In the dark room, Jiang Yuexing coldly stared at Lin Jianying, “This is the first time and also the last time. If there’s a next time, I will kill you myself!”

The third encounter.

It was the night Lin Jianying told Lu Wu he was leaving. Jiang Yuexing came to see him and said only one sentence.

“Since you choose to leave, then never come back!”

This was also the last time Lin Jianying and Jiang Yuexing met, to Gouzi’s memory.

Upon seeing this, Lu Wu suddenly understood.

Why, despite entrusting the rich woman to protect Lin Jianying, things still went wrong, why it took three days to look up a woman’s identity, only to find nothing.

The rich woman had not intended to protect, nor had she planned to look for Old Lin.

It was even possible that Gouzi was killed by the rich woman.

And all of this was likely due to Kong Yi’s final blood transformation and the rich woman’s discussion about the “Gate” with Old Lin.

Unfortunately, Gouzi fell asleep at a crucial moment, missing out on that key information, which made Lu Wu especially upset, but he could only continue following Gouzi’s memories.

Following Gouzi’s memories further.

Then, Gouzi followed Lin Jianying as he left.

First returning to Quan City for a tribute visit to Granny Li, then he bought a ticket straight to Lingnan.

After that, Lin Jianying encountered the Wu family trio at the Demon Cave.

Then Lu Wu watched as Lin Jianying was deceived by the three members of the Wu family.

Watched as Lin Jianying was tricked out of both his color and his life.

Finally, Old Lin and a goblin were brutally crushed to death.

When he saw that scene, Lu Wu’s whole body was surging with blood.

Wishing he could kill those three from the Wu family himself.

Unfortunately, Lu Wu couldn’t do anything; he could only continue to watch through Gouzi’s memories.

Looking further, it was the part where Wu Mei said she was coming to find him.

This segment stirred Lu Wu’s anger once again.

And it wasn’t over yet.

When Wu Mei voiced her intentions, Wu Yong and Li Jing forcefully stopped her.

That woman was crazy, but those two were not.

They understood the danger of letting her come to Jiangnan; if it wasn’t exposed it was fine, but once exposed, it was almost a certain death scenario.

They felt that the safest course of action was to kill Gouzi, separate it into materials, and make a fortune.

Under the strong opposition from Wu Yong and Li Jing, the woman had no choice but to accept her fate.

However, on a certain day after they killed Lin Jianying, a mysterious person suddenly found her.

Claiming to offer her a chance to change her fate.

And then that mysterious person whispered something in her ear.

Gouzi, crouched in the corner, watched as the woman’s expression gradually twisted.

After that, Gouzi saw a group of people suddenly appear, taking down the Wu family of three and this dog as well, and injected something unknown into it.

After that, Gouzi fainted.

Its memory also abruptly ended.

…  
 This chapter had several revisions, finally managed to get it done.

# Chapter 249 - 249 246 Skeleton Hellhound

﻿Chapter 249: 246 Skeleton Hellhound Chapter 249: 246 Skeleton Hellhound Gouzi’s memory was all watched.

Lu Wu now had a rough understanding of the situation.

First was Old Lin’s current state.

Basically, he was done for.

Together with that one goblin, they were killed by two leader-level Summoned Beasts.

Knowing Old Lin’s situation, Lu Wu instead became less anxious.

Since Old Lin was already gone, there was no point in him being in a rush now.

Even if he were to rush out now and eliminate that woman, it wouldn’t mean much.

He could kill her anytime.

The key problem now was that Lu Wu had to clear up two things.

One was why the rich woman did this to Old Lin? Why keep it a secret from him?

And another, who was that last mysterious person?

What was their purpose?

Lu Wu felt enveloped by a shroud of darkness.

However, he had no way to do anything right now.

Regarding the rich woman, he couldn’t confront her.

Even if he did, it might not yield any results.

Moreover, Lu Wu now vaguely doubted whether the rich woman had any ulterior motives for letting them into the Inheritance Land, knowing full well that there was something off with Kong Yi?

He even suspected, was Old Lin’s current situation orchestrated by the rich woman?

Trust is a funny thing; it can be incredibly strong, yet so fragile.

It might withstand the test of life and death but not a single trial.

Given what Lu Wu was facing now, his bodyguards were absent, he felt inherently insecure, and upon suddenly witnessing all this in Gouzi’s memory, it was quite normal for his trust in the rich woman to plummet significantly.

His current worry was, what if he eagerly went to confess to the rich woman—no, to come clean.

What would he do if the rich woman suddenly revealed her true colors as the big bad wolf?

By comparison, dealing with that woman on the other side seemed a bit easier.

Her goal was nothing more than to get close to him, to gain his trust. Now that Lu Wu was aware of the situation, he could simply wait and watch her performance.

Wait for her to reveal her own flaws.

“Looking at it this way, I can only do nothing now and be led by the nose!

If I really want to do anything, I can only wait for that unreliable bodyguard to return.”

In the end, Lu Wu made the most helpless choice.

After setting the tone for his response to what was to come, Lu Wu shifted his focus from Gouzi’s memory to Gouzi after his transformation into an Undead.

At this moment, Gouzi was already being held in Little Skeleton’s arms and stroked.

Lu Wu roughly scanned Gouzi’s attributes.

…

Name: Skeleton Hellhound (One-time Evolution)

Power: 3 Star (Elite)

Quality: Silver (Gold) (Enhanced)

Attribute: Undead, Demon

State: Amnesia (Its memories were all seen by you, no longer pristine and unwanted)

Weakness: Light (Strong)

Basic Skills: Bite (Mastered), Pounce Kill (Mastered)

Advanced Skill: Hellfire (Unmastered)

Talent: Flame Absorption (Passive) (Can absorb fire attacks to recover one’s own physical strength and mana)

Hell Awakening (Active) (Unleashes the power of hell within to enhance combat power, currently can be maximized to Boss 2 Star, but it consumes a great deal of physical strength and mana.)

Description: Although its brain isn’t too good, having become Undead, its power hasn’t decreased by much.

But you need to keep an eye on it, or it might tear your house down if you’re not careful.

…

Hmm, while Lu Wu was looking at this dog’s attributes,

Lu Wu distinctly heard a crisp snap. Looking up, he saw the dog biting down on Little Skeleton’s bone frame.

As a result, Little Skeleton’s bone frame was unscathed, but the dog’s teeth almost dropped out.

Seeing that Little Skeleton was playing quite well with the dog, Lu Wu turned his attention to Little Skeleton’s phone.

More precisely, he was checking the status of Little Skeleton’s subordinates.

By now, there were already nine subordinates on Little Skeleton’s phone, seven Skeleton Knights and two Skeleton Gunners.

Moreover, with the original Steel Armor Skeleton Knight, Little Skeleton now had eight second rank subordinates—just two short of ten.

And Lu Wu quickly filled this gap for Little Skeleton.

Weren’t there two first-tier Skeleton Gunners?

Lu Wu directly stewed these two first-tier Skeleton Gunners along with the two Steel Armor Wild Boars Little Skeleton already had.

Several hours later, two more Steel-armored Boar Knights joined the ranks of Lu Wu’s subordinates.

Now, the ten second rank subordinates under Little Skeleton’s command were complete.

“The Skeleton Commander’s requirements for advancing are now met, next up is the Dragon Bone Controller!

And I need to push harder for little goldfish and Han. I must enhance their strength as soon as possible.”

How should it be said? Lu Wu wasn’t a person who felt particularly secure to begin with, and this incident just exacerbated that feeling.

Lu Wu felt that his own strength was inadequate and that he needed to enhance his power as soon as possible.

However, Lu Wu didn’t have much time to boost his subordinates’ strength.

Just as Lu Wu had finished managing Little Skeleton’s ten subordinates, Zhao Kai Ming came looking for him, with a somewhat unsightly expression.

“Uncle Zhao, what’s happened?” Lu Wu asked with concern, only to hear Zhao Kai Ming say, “I have something here that I need you to look at.”

With that, Zhao Kai Ming grabbed Lu Wu’s hand, pulling him into the Cultivation Room.

Once inside the Cultivation Room, Zhao Kai Ming let go of Lu Wu’s hand, cautiously checked the Cultivation Master to ensure no traps were left behind, and then said to Lu Wu, “Xiao Lu, listen to me. I just received information that both the death of that Hell Puppy and the girl’s amnesia were orchestrated by people under Governor Jiang’s orders.”

“What? Is that true?”

Lu Wu was shocked.

“Absolutely true, without a doubt. And I’ve also found out the identity of that girl.

Her name is Wu Mei, her father is Wu Yong and her mother is Li Jing. Their family and Lin Jianying’s parents were friends. More than half a month ago, when Lin Jianying went to the Demon Cave Secret Realm, he encountered their family.”

Having delivered this news, Zhao Kai Ming added with a meaningful tone, “I simply asked the friends from the Demon Cave Secret Realm to look into this, and they found out quite easily.”

“How is that possible? If it’s that easy to find out, why couldn’t my stepmother uncover it?” Lu Wu found it hard to believe.

“I’m not sure about that, but the girl’s identity is real. I have also surveillance footage from the Demon Cave Camp.”

Saying this, Zhao Kai Ming took out his phone and played a video.

In the video, Lu Wu saw Lin Jianying and Wu Mei’s family of three having a joyous meal together at the Demon Cave Secret Realm camp.

“How could this be?”

Perhaps feeling that this revelation wasn’t shocking enough, Zhao Kai Ming continued, “Also, I’ve found out that the ones chasing this girl were the men under Governor Jiang’s command.”

With these words, Zhao Kai Ming produced the relevant evidence.

Piece by piece, the proof was irrefutable.

It all pointed to the deeds of Jiang Yuexing.

# Chapter 250 - 250 247 Dragon Bone Soup

﻿Chapter 250: 247 Dragon Bone Soup Chapter 250: 247 Dragon Bone Soup Jiangnan University, in Lu Wu’s lab.

“Xiao Lu, let’s escape!”

Upon revealing all the evidence, while Lu Wu was still confounded, his legs had already begun to tremble.

“If we don’t escape now, I’ll be next!”

“What do you mean?”

Lu Wu narrowed his eyes, “Uncle Zhao, do you know something?”

What a joke!

How could Zhao Kai Ming not know?

From the first minute he received this intelligence, he felt he understood.

Besides him, absolutely no one could grasp Jiang Yuexing’s thoughts so quickly.

Without a doubt, it must be because Lu Wu had recently performed too well, too similar to someone who had hurt Jiang Yuexing, so Jiang Yuexing wanted to kill Lu Wu!

It must be so!

From the beginning, he found it odd that Jiang Yuexing would take Lu Wu as her godson, now it seemed she was preparing a big game.

Taking in Lu Wu was just to strike and take revenge on Lu Wu’s father comprehensively.

There, she had already made her move.

Now that Lin Jianying had already encountered trouble, the second would definitely be him, the third was Dudu, and the last one would be Lu Wu.

It was definitely the case!

But knowing was one thing, Zhao Kai Ming couldn’t tell this to Lu Wu at this moment.

What could he say?

Was he supposed to just say, “Your dad screwed someone over, and now they’re preparing to strike at you to get back at him?”

If he said that, he’d be killed by Lu Wu’s dad too.

So Zhao Kai Ming was very tight-lipped now, saying nothing, just constantly urging Lu Wu to flee with him.

But Lu Wu was incredibly stubborn at this moment.

“I won’t flee, I absolutely won’t. I won’t believe my godmother would do such a thing. There must be some hidden information here, I need to find her and clarify!”

Saying this, Lu Wu turned around intending to find Jiang Yuexing, but Zhao Kai Ming grabbed his legs.

“My goodness, my revered ancestor, please don’t go. If you go, my little life is over!

Besides, the facts are right before our eyes, what more is there to say.”

Zhao Kai Ming pleaded tearfully and persistently, but Lu Wu refused to listen; he was convinced Jiang Yuexing wouldn’t deceive him and insisted on confronting Jiang Yuexing face to face.

Old Zhao was ultimately out of ideas.

He could only suggest, “How about we first head to the Demon Cave Secret Realm?

Lin Jianying might still be alive in the Secret Realm, we can rescue him first. Then you’ll have evidence when you want to confront Governor Jiang.”

Upon hearing this, Lu Wu thought it made sense.

“Alright, let’s do that.

But, you’ll have to wait a day for me.”

Since the Dragon Scorpions were already delivered, Lu Wu planned to first make skeleton a pot of soup before going.

This made Old Zhao anxious.

Everything was urgent, and he was still in the mood to brew skeleton soup?

Jiang Yuexing might arrive at any moment.

But Lu Wu insisted, and he had no choice but to help Lu Wu, sighing all the while.

“Ah, why is my life so hard.

Just when Jiangnan University was starting to improve, we encounter such an issue. It would have been better if Governor Jiang hadn’t exploded; a few more years and Jiangnan University could have developed.”

He murmured in his heart.

This move of Jiang Yuexing was truly irrational.

If she had given Lu Wu a few years to develop, perhaps he could firmly grasp Jiangnan just like Jiangbei.

Plus, if she maintained good relations with Lu Wu, she might actually have a chance to rise to power.

Such a perfect game, how could she play it wrong?

One can only say, a woman cheated by a scoundrel really can’t be rational.

“Ah, no, I didn’t mean that person was a scoundrel!”

Zhao Kai Ming shook his head, clasped his hands, and hurriedly apologized to someone far off in the horizon.

On this side, Lu Wu then started the full effort on the “Dragon Bone Controller” Evolution Plan.

Due to the urgency, Lu Wu couldn’t meticulously combine the “Dragon Bone” and “Skeleton” Evolution Plans.

He could only roughly use the two Evolution Plans together.

Now, the “Skeleton Commander” Evolution Plan was already mostly ready, all conditions satisfied, and Little Skeleton could evolve immediately if Lu Wu wished.

What was left was to prepare the Dragon Bone Soup.

Lu Wu, with Zhao Kai Ming, handled three dragon spinal cords and two dragon skeletons using a special method, grounded them, poured them into a pot, added some other ingredients, boiled it all and then threw the Little Skeleton in.

After stewing for a while and allowing Little Skeleton to absorb the necessary essences and nutrients,  
 Lu Wu cut out the last eruptive part and lifted Little Skeleton from the pot.

He worried that if the “Dragon Bone Controller” Evolution was pursued to the end, the Little Skeleton wouldn’t be able to evolve into the “Skeleton Commander.”

Therefore, Lu Wu had Little Skeleton stop the evolution of the “Dragon Bone Controller” at 90%.

After that, Lu Wu notified Dudu to bring Tuantuan over for soup.

Meanwhile, he packed up the luggage, took Little Goldfish who had just returned from frolicking in the sea, Little Skeleton who had just finished making the soup, and Silly who had just been beaten up, and found Zhao Kai Ming.

“I’m ready here.”

“Hurry up, and bring Dudu along.”

“Why bring Dudu? I’m just going to save Old Lin and will be back soon.

My foster mother would never hurt Old Lin, this must all be a plot, and I need to find out the truth.”

Lu insisted, leaving Zhao Kai Ming with no alternative.

The two men and three beasts, under cover of night, silently left Jiangnan University, drove to the nearest city, and then took a direct bus to Lingnan.

Their mode of traveling was quite secretive.

But almost as soon as they left Jiangnan University, someone already knew about it.

Inside the administrative building, someone contacted another through anti-eavesdropping devices.

“He didn’t confront Jiang Yuexing, but went to Lingnan!”

The person seemed especially angry that Lu was not following their script.

The person on the other end of the device seemed somewhat surprised.

“What is he doing in Lingnan?”

“He still doesn’t believe that Lin Jianying’s death is related to Jiang Yuexing. He says he wants to save Lin Jianying and find out the truth himself.”

“That means your plan has failed then, I told you, it’s not so easy to drive a wedge between him and Jiang Yuexing. Since it’s like this, let’s do it my way now!”

The person on the other end who had not originally planned to rely solely on dividing Lu Wu from Jiang Yuexing seized the opportunity to take bold action, which agitated the person in the administrative building.

“No, I can’t do that. He is the hope of revitalizing Jiangnan University. I can help you alienate him from Jiang Yuexing, but I absolutely refuse to let you harm him.”

Hearing such naive words, the person on the other end of the device burst into laughter.

“You are still dreaming of using him to revitalize Jiangnan?

Let me ask you, do you want Jiangnan University to remain listless as it is now, or do you want a vibrant one, yet one like Jiangbei University?”

A single sentence from the person on the other end speechless the person in the administrative building.

And the opposition didn’t stop.

“He has already grown so much, in just over a year, he has developed from an ordinary boy to this level.

With his Boss Level power, his monstrous cultivation talent, and the company he owns, supported by the Zhang Wentao series.

His godlike status among the young generation after the Cultivation Master contest, give him a few more years, and it might be hard to tell who really controls Jiangnan University.

Once he controls Jiangnan University. With his power, Jiang Yuexing will be able to continuously produce loyal talents.

With time, she will, like that one from Jiangbei, slowly purge and erode us, and within ten years, Jiangnan might become the next Jiangbei.”

This statement made the person in the administrative building turn pale and he weakly insisted, “We can still alienate him from Jiang Yuexing.”

“I’ve already given you a chance to try, and you’ve failed, haven’t you?”

“Not yet, he has already started doubting Jiang Yuexing. He even wanted to confront Jiang Yuexing in person but was stopped by Zhao Kai Ming.

Just give him the truth now, his relationship with Jiang Yuexing will definitely deteriorate.

By then…”

“By then, a few years, or ten years later, the person controlling Jiangnan will have the surname Lu!”

The person on the other end interrupted him.

“Enough, don’t bring this up again. We’ve finally got an opportunity with that old guy out of the picture, and now with Lu Wu away from Fucheng, it’s a perfect chance to deal with him.

If we don’t solve it now, it will be almost impossible later.

Stop hesitating and struggling, just do as I said.

If you can’t, the debt you owe Jiangbei, I’ll find a way to settle it for you.”

After saying this, the person on the other end switched off the connection.

Meanwhile, inside the Sea Suppression Tower, a man with a severed hand set down the device, then contacted another person using another device.

“Are you certain that he has that item on him?”

“I am certain, the item is either on Lu Wu or that girl. Once you take down those two, you’ll obtain that ring. Controlling that ring will allow us to tackle Jiang Yuexing.”

“Then, as agreed, once it’s done, I’ll hand over Jiang Yuexing to you!”

After speaking, this person terminated the communication and stepped out from the shadows, the light revealing a sinister and brutal face; this person was none other than the Tower Master of the Sea Suppression Tower, Jin Lihai, whose hand had been broken by Jiang Yuexing a few months ago.

“My brother and my vengeance will be fulfilled soon!”

At the same time.

Far off in Jiangbei, Zhang Yunyi stretched lazily.

Then, propping his chin in his hand out of sheer boredom, he looked towards Jiangnan and muttered to himself, “Don’t say I didn’t give you a chance, I’m even gathering all the troublemakers for you. If you have the capability, take them down, and you’ll secure your internal stability.

I’m honestly, earnestly helping you.

But if you cannot take them down, well, I can’t help but blame your incompetence.”

Speaking thus, Zhang Yunyi smiled sweetly, brightening the dim room.

……

Please subscribe and support!

# Chapter 251 - 251 248 Demon Cave

﻿Chapter 251: 248 Demon Cave Chapter 251: 248 Demon Cave On the high-speed train headed to Lingnan.

Throughout the journey, Zhao Kai Ming was restless, nervously looking around.

Everyone seemed like a bad guy to him, and he suspected that each one could have been sent by Jiang Yuexing to capture them.

To protect himself, he somehow got a hold of a face mask and put on sunglasses as well.

Not only did he gear himself up, but he also handed a mask and sunglasses to Lu Wu for him to wear too.

“Do we really need to do this?”

“Yes, absolutely!”

Zhao Kai Ming nodded fiercely, “My intuition tells me that we’ve probably been exposed, so we must hide ourselves well.”

“It’s no problem for me to hide, but how can it and him hide?”

Lu Wu said, covering his head and pointing to Little Skeleton who was, for once, looking at a phone.

And Han Han, who couldn’t sit still on the train, constantly asking Little Skeleton to hit him.

Zhao Kai Ming was stunned at the sight and then lowered his head to contemplate, “This is a serious problem, I wonder if anyone in the carriage brought a blanket!”

With that, the man was actually preparing to buy a blanket from other passengers in the carriage.

Lu Wu had to pull him down and cover his face.

“Alright, stop fussing. I’ve told you, my rich woman won’t hurt us. If you’re so scared, you can just leave me and run.”

“No way, I must protect you!”

Zhao Kai Ming thumped his chest, “Xiao Lu, rest assured, with Uncle Zhao here, no one can harm you, Uncle Zhao guarantees it!”

The more he said, the paler Lu Wu’s face became.

Lu Wu now really wanted to thank Zhao Kai Ming’s entire family.

Didn’t he have any idea what kind of luck he’s had?

Seeing Lu Wu’s pale face, Zhao Kai Ming thought Lu Wu had no confidence in him and was about to swear an oath, but fortunately, Lu Wu quickly stopped him.

Otherwise, this old man might utter some vow to ensure Lu Wu’s safety.

Lu Wu might very well end up dead because of a careless statement.

“I believe, I believe, I believe! Isn’t that enough?”

“Believe in your Uncle Zhao, and you’re set. I’m solid!”

Zhao Kai Ming patted his chest so hard he nearly knocked the wind out of himself.

After he finished, he leaned in and cautiously asked Lu Wu, “Xiao Lu, can you contact your dad?”

“My dad? Who knows where that old man is squatting now; he said he wanted to create a paradise and hasn’t contacted me for a long time. I nearly forgot I had a dad until you mentioned it!”

Lu Wu said, picking up his phone and making a call to that unreliable old man in his family.

Zhao Kai Ming’s eyes lit up at the sight.

There was hope, being able to contact him meant there was hope.

But the light in Zhao Kai Ming’s eyes quickly dimmed; Lu Wu’s call didn’t go through.

“He’s not picking up. No telling what that old man is up to. I’ll leave him a message; he’ll get back to me when he sees it.”

Lu Wu said and then started to search for news related to himself on his phone.

He took screenshots of all the news where he stood out and sent them to the old man, then let it be.

According to Lu Wu’s understanding of the old man, it would take at least three to four days to get a reply.

Seeing there was no hope of contacting Lu Haikong, Zhao Kai Ming began to hedge and ask Lu Wu if his dad had left him any good items.

The subject weighed heavily on Lu Wu, deeply profound.

“Uncle Zhao, you know, our family is just ordinary; my dad is a normal middle-aged man.

The reason I’ve got to where I am today is all down to my own efforts.

As for my dad, although he couldn’t offer material support, he silently encouraged and supported me from behind, and that, to me, is the greatest gift.”

In a nutshell.

My awesomeness is all down to Lu Wu himself and has nothing to do with anyone else.

Zhao Kai Ming heard this and glanced at the little goldfish in Lu Wu’s arms, saying nothing.

He didn’t know how to comment anymore.

After that, Zhao Kai Ming stopped thinking about contacting Lu Haikong.

His mind was occupied with how to outwit Lu Wu.

Zhao Kai Ming felt that if Lu Wu could be fooled by Lu Haikong for almost twenty years, there must be something off in his head. If he found the right tactic, he could surely trick Lu Wu into running around with him.

Forget the Demon Cave, it was a wretched place where they could be accidentally discovered by Jiang Yuexing’s people and captured.

So, for the rest of the journey.

Zhao Kai Ming racked his brain trying to outsmart Lu Wu.

It was all to no avail. In the end, Lu Wu and company arrived smoothly in Lingnan.

Once in Lingnan, the old man volunteered to find a car and was ready to drive Lu Wu to make a getaway.

Once Lu Wu got in the car, he turned on the navigation.

Zhao Kai Ming had no choice but to drive with a grimace, taking Lu Wu towards the Demon Cave.

On the way to the Demon Cave, Lu Wu started discussing with Zhao Kai Ming how to find Lin Jianying.

“We two strangers just arrived here and it’s not easy to find someone in unfamiliar territory. So, Uncle Zhao, you have friends here in the Demon Cave, right?

Why don’t you call your friend over, I’ll hire him, let him bring some more people. A hundred points a day for helping me search for someone. If they find the person, a reward of 10,000 points. What do you think of this idea?”

After Lu Wu finished speaking, he evaluated his own suggestion: “A reward of 10,000 points seems a bit stingy for me, Lu Wu. Let’s make it a direct reward of 100,000 points for finding the person.”

As soon as these words were out, Zhao Kai Ming almost crashed the car.

“How much? A hundred thousand!!!”

“Yeah, a hundred thousand points, roughly the equivalent of two days’ earnings for me. I can afford it!”

With that statement, Zhao Kai Ming felt a particularly sour pang in his heart.

Back when Lu Wu made a bet with Jiang Beifeng, Old Zhang had thought about selling everything he owned to help Lu Wu gather the stakes.

Now, looking at Lu Wu, casually tossing around tens of thousands like it was nothing.

Damn, is this the world of the rich?

By now, Zhao Kai Ming was tempted too. If he could find Lin Jianying, wouldn’t he, Old Zhao, suddenly become rich?

But when he thought about his current situation, and then about Old Zhang who had just won ten million not long ago, Zhao Kai Ming felt that these tens of thousands weren’t that appealing anymore.

Nevertheless, Zhao Kai Ming helped Lu Wu contact someone.

By now, he pretty much figured that unless Lu Wu found Lin Jianying, he was not likely to flee. Since that was the case, Uncle Zhao thought he better help Lu Wu in the search.

Even if they only found a corpse, if they found him, there would be hope of helping Lu Wu make an escape.

So, through Li Mingrui’s connections, Zhao Kai Ming found people at the Demon Cave Camp.

Zhao Kai Ming or, it should be said, Li Mingrui’s efficiency was quite good.

Before Lu Wu and the others even reached the Demon Cave, Li Mingrui had already found people to help Lu Wu.

Not only that, but Li Mingrui also suggested they revise the reward announcement, suggesting to start with tens of thousands might not be a good idea, as it is uncertain if they could find the person and it would definitely cause a lot of trouble.

After all, that place is the Demon Cave Secret Realm.

It’s a secret realm not controlled by humans, where the rules are chaotic, and carelessly flaunting wealth might attract trouble.

Therefore, after arriving in the Demon Cave area.

Lu Wu posted the reward notice, hanging it at the entrance of the Demon Cave Camp. It called for anyone with information on Lin Jianying, offering a reward of 5 to 50 points.

Finding the person would be rewarded with 500 points.

No matter how Lu Wu looked at the notice, it seemed a bit unreliable.

“Isn’t this a little too low? Who would be interested for just 500 points?”

Zhao Kai Ming rolled his eyes, not wishing to deal with a nouveau riche.

And as it turned out, the allure of 500 points was absolutely astounding.

Almost everyone who entered or left the Demon Cave Camp would take a look at the notice, and ninety-five percent took out their mobile phones to snap a picture of its content.

Moreover, that very day people came forward with information.

And not just a few people.

There were more than a hundred.

While among them were some who were just trying to take advantage of the situation, there were still many who came with actual information.

With the help of these people’s information, Lu Wu roughly pieced together the activities of Old Lin in the Demon Cave.

Among them was a critical piece of information.

Someone had witnessed Wu Yong appearing in the Fallen Demon Valley within the Demon Cave Secret Realm.

With this information in hand, Lu Wu’s group was invigorated.

They immediately dragged Zhao Kai Ming and followed the informants straight to Fallen Demon Valley.

Zhao Kai Ming was also excited this time.

“If we find Wu Yong, maybe we can find Lin Jianying too.”

And it turned out the old man was quite optimistic.

But once they got to Fallen Demon Valley, the old man’s optimism faded.

Zhao Kai Ming looked around and, not seeing Wu Yong, turned his head in confusion and asked, “Didn’t you say Wu Yong was here?”

At that moment, the informant’s mouth curved into a smirk: “Indeed, Wu Yong is not here, but someone else is!”

With that said, the informant clapped his hands, and then seven or eight people emerged with more than a dozen Summoned Beasts in tow.

Lu Wu and Zhao Kai Ming both froze at the sight of the emerging group and beasts.

The shock on their faces pleased the informant, “Surprised, huh? Thought you could rob…”

The word “rob” hadn’t even been fully uttered.

The informant was smacked down by Lu Wu with a slap.

Then, Little Skeleton, little goldfish, and Han all sprang into action. Without Zhao Kai Ming lifting a finger, this group that, at best, were just Bosses was knocked down by Lu Wu.

“A bunch of guys, not even having a leader among them, dare to try robbing us. Have their brains gone bad?”

After dealing with the group, Lu Wu dusted himself off and even took out a towel to wipe Little Skeleton clean.

Wiping the bloodstains off Little Skeleton and casually patting its head, he kicked Han away as he tried to get close for a wipe, and called to Zhao Kai Ming, “Let’s go, let’s head back!

What a wasted trip!”

Zhao Kai Ming had not yet replied when someone shamelessly interjected, “A wasted trip? That won’t do. Since you’re here, there’s no need to go back, just stay!”

Almost simultaneously, a ferocious beastly roar sounded, and a terrifying Wind Blade, more than a dozen meters long, slashed towards Lu Wu and his group…

# Chapter 252 - 252 249 Acts

﻿Chapter 252: 249 Acts Chapter 252: 249 Acts Fucheng, Jiangnan University.

Almost at the same time events unfolded at the Demon Cave, someone at Jiangnan University was also preparing to make a move.

However, unlike the grand affair at the Demon Cave,  
 a more covert operation was in the works at Jiangnan University.

One reason being that this was Jiangnan University’s grounds, where grand gestures were impossible to pull off.

An outburst of Lord Level power would immediately attract the attention of Lord Level experts within the university.

Therefore, no entity above the Lord Level was involved in this university affair.

Nor was there any need for it.

After all, the target was just a foolish young girl.

And the executor was none other than Wu Mei, a woman of high rank with a treacherously dark mind.

Moreover, this scheming woman had already gained Dudu’s trust. Under these circumstances, wouldn’t it be easy to take down such a naive girl?

Inside the Lu Wu Research Institute, Wu Mei covered her head, crying out in agony, “Dudu, my head hurts!”

This sent Dudu into a panic.

“Does it hurt? What should we do?”

“Could you take me to the medical center?”

Wu Mei’s words gave the bewildered Dudu a sense of purpose.

“Okay, okay, okay.”

With a nod, the unsuspecting Dudu naively supported Wu Mei to Jiangnan University’s medical center.

Seeing her prey walk straight into her trap so effortlessly,  
 Wu Mei felt no sense of accomplishment, only resentment and envy.

She just couldn’t understand, in what way was she inferior to this foolish woman?

Prettier than her, smarter than her, but why was her own fate so much worse than this dimwit’s?

She was just a childhood friend of Lu Wu, which was why he would consider her.

And yet, this utterly worthless woman was soaring high with Lu Wu’s support.

At just 19, she already became a Professional Cultivator, with a King-level Summoning Beast Baby, something Wu Mei couldn’t even dare to dream of.

Every time she thought about it, Wu Mei was overwhelmed with jealousy and unbearable anguish, feeling the world was unjust.

However, today, Wu Mei suddenly felt that fate was fair after all.

Even though she didn’t have everything that the stupid girl did, she wouldn’t have to meet an early death like her.

‘Only 19 and already going to die, truly pitiful. I wonder if I’ll have the chance to torment her a bit.’  
 “Ms. Mei Mei, what’s wrong?”

As Wu Mei fantasized about tormenting Dudu, the clueless girl worried about her: “Is your headache really that bad?”

“Mm, it is indeed quite severe,” Wu Mei said with a meaningful tone.

Dudu didn’t understand, nor could she comprehend, but hearing Wu Mei’s severe headache alarmed her. She picked up Wu Mei and hurriedly carried her to the medical center.

Soon, Wu Mei was brought to the medical center.

Upon arrival, they were immediately greeted by someone.

Without a second thought, Dudu pleaded for help, “Teacher, Ms. Mei Mei has a headache, please check on her.”

“This way!”

A woman in a white lab coat led Dudu into a room next door.

As they entered, the door was promptly locked.

Lying on Dudu’s back, Wu Mei immediately took the syringe the woman in the white lab coat had secretly passed to her and injected it into Dudu’s neck, pushing the liquid in.

“Hey, Ms. Mei Mei, what are you doing?”

Even at this point, Dudu remained naively puzzled.

Seeing her expression, Wu Mei couldn’t help but laugh, patting Dudu on the face, “Foolish girl, I’m getting rid of you, of course!”

“Ha!”

Dudu’s eyes bulged, and it took her a while to react, “Are you a bad person?”

“Are you trying to capture me to threaten Lu Wu?”

Her reaction in this aspect was particularly quick, jumping directly from Wu Mei being a bad person to the idea of threatening Lu Wu.

However, at this moment, Wu Mei was ignoring her.

Instead, she turned to the woman in the white lab coat next to her, “Hey, your drug is not very effective, is it?”

The woman in the white lab coat didn’t respond, but instead glanced at her watch and started counting down, “Three, two, one, down!”

As the word ‘down’ left the lips of the woman in the white lab coat, there was a ‘pop’ sound.

Hmm, Dudu was fine.

On the contrary, it was Wu Mei who collapsed to the ground.

Witnessing this unexpected turn of events, Dudu, whose mind wasn’t exactly the sharpest, crashed on the spot.

It wasn’t just Dudu whose brain had frozen, the woman in the white lab coat was also bewildered.

What’s happening? Dudu was the one drugged, so why did Wu Mei faint?

While she was still confused, the locked door was opened, and Zhang Wentao came in with a group of people.

“How could this be?”

The woman in the white lab coat’s face changed, and she immediately rushed towards Dudu.

She planned to seize Dudu as a hostage, but as soon as she lunged forward, she was slapped down by Dudu.

…

The commotion at Jiangnan University was easily snuffed out.

But it was not so simple at the Demon Cave.

As the over ten-meter-long Wind Blade sliced towards them, Zhao Kai Ming released his Summoned Beast right away.

A ten-meter-tall gorilla appeared out of thin air, and with a punch, it shattered the Wind Blade.

No sooner had the Wind Blade been smashed than a burning meteorite fell from the sky towards Lu Wu and his group, but it too was violently deflected by the gorilla.

However, the gorilla was not having an easy time.

Lu Wu had already seen that its palms had been slashed, and a large section of its fur was scorched.

It even seemed to be gasping for breath.

At that moment, the person who had just spoken also showed his face.

Above the heads of Lu Wu and his team, a bird had appeared at some point, carrying three people on its back.

Lu Wu basically recognized all three, well, to be precise, he had seen them once at the Sea Suppression Tower but was not very familiar with them.

However, Zhao Kai Ming seemed to know them quite well.

Seeing the three, he cursed on the spot, “Jin Lihai, Wang Ma, Li Yi, you three old bastards are crazy, aren’t you? Starting this kind of joke?”

Lu Wu, hearing this, was at his wit’s end.

Was this old man stupid?

Was this a situation where they were joking with you?

While Lu Wu was making his comments, Zhao Kai Ming’s voice sounded in his mind.

“I’ll hold them off, you run!”

At the same time, Lu Wu noticed that Zhao Kai Ming and the gorilla were both charging up their power.

Seeing this, Lu Wu gained a bit more confidence in Old Zhao’s intelligence.

But Lu Wu had no intention of running. There was no need. Now that he had lured them out, why should he flee?

“It’s not me who should be running, but them!”

Lu Wu said confidently, casually taking out an item from his pocket and gently squeezing it until it shattered.

At the same moment, a formidable and overwhelming aura surged into the sky.

This sudden outburst frightened Jin Lihai’s group of three, with two of them even planning to run away on the spot.

Lu Wu sneered, “Run? Isn’t it a bit late to think of escaping now?”

Just then, another burst of power appeared, directly intercepting the aura that belonged to the rich woman.

Hmm, the scene became particularly awkward for a moment.

# Chapter 253 - 253 Breakthrough Leader 250

﻿Chapter 253: Breakthrough Leader 250 Chapter 253: Breakthrough Leader 250 Originally,  
 After viewing Gouzi’s memories, Lu Wu harbored some doubts about the rich woman.

But as Zhao Kai Ming bumbled in, Lu Wu realized that the likely target behind Wu Mei’s arrival was Jiang Yuexing.

Thus, the rich woman once again gained Lu Wu’s trust.

Lu Wu temporarily set aside Lin Jianying’s matter and started to deal with the issues concerning Wu Mei first.

On the day of simmering Dragon Bone, Lu Wu quietly contacted the rich woman right under Zhao Kai Ming’s nose.

He had intended to warn the rich woman.

To his surprise, she was not foolish at all and had already been aware of the situation early on.

She even had a vague guess as to who was stirring up trouble.

In this situation, Lu Wu’s identity quickly changed, from the hunted to the hunter.

Originally,  
 Everything was going smoothly.

The prey was lured out, and at that moment, Lu Wu had planned to signal by smashing a cup, allowing the rich woman to rush out and take away the three people, thus ending Wu Mei’s affair. Afterwards, Lu Wu would conveniently find Lin Jianying’s corpse and demand the truth from the rich woman.

All this had been planned by Lu Wu, but who would have known there would be a problem when smashing the cup.

At the crucial moment, the rich woman got stuck and couldn’t make her move, which was embarrassingly awkward.

Gold Jin Lihai and the other two immediately fixed their gaze on Lu Wu.

Right then, Old Zhao, who had been charging up all this time, exploded!

“Shaking Heaven and Earth!”

With a roar from Old Zhao, the giant gorilla clenched its fists, lifted them high, and gathered a sphere of light between its hands before smashing down with immense force.

As the gorilla’s fists pounded down, the air trembled and the ground shook, nearly causing Lu Wu, who stood behind the gorilla, to stumble.

And yet, more terrifying was what happened in front of the gorilla.

The ground instantly split open, and an invisible shockwave headed straight for Jin Lihai and his companions.

It was as if the sky was about to be torn apart.

This terrifying blow stunned even Lu Wu, and Zhao Kai Ming quickly kicked him.

“Stop gawking, run!

Run towards the valley, towards the narrow areas.”

This time, Lu Wu dared not disobey; with no support from the rich woman, he had no choice but to turn and flee.

But just as Lu Wu moved, a mocking voice sounded.

“Thinking of escaping? Isn’t it a bit too late to think of running away now?”

Jin Lihai had somehow already reached the area and returned Lu Wu’s earlier words.

At the same time, he reached out to grab Lu Wu.

Fortunately, Zhao Kai Ming was nearby. He kicked Jin Lihai’s hand away.

Not only that, but Zhao Kai Ming also turned and kicked viciously at Jin Lihai’s body, sending him flying several meters.

The kicked Jin Lihai’s face darkened as he looked up at Zhao Kai Ming: “Zhao Kai Ming, it seems you are really asking for death!”

At the same moment, Zhao Kai Ming lifted his head, showing crimson eyes.

“I’ve said, leave this to me. As long as I don’t fall, nobody else will lay a finger on him.”

As he spoke, a mournful cry of a Summoned Beast resonated from within Zhao Kai Ming, boosting his aura even further.

“Beast Soul Burst? It looks like you really do wish to die. But do you think, with just a Beast Soul Burst, you can protect him?”

As Jin Lihai spoke, a Summoned Beast emerged from his body.

“Chase after that human ahead, and bring him back to me.”

“Over my dead body!”

Zhao Kai Ming’s complexion changed and he lunged forward, but Jin Lihai moved to meet him, blocking him.

Without Zhao Kai Ming’s interference, the Summoned Beast rushed straight towards Lu Wu.

In the blink of an eye, the Lord Level leopard-shaped Summoned Beast approached Lu Wu and raised its sharp claws, swiping at Lu Wu’s back.

Jiang Yuexing, who had arrived just in time, witnessed this scene.

Her complexion shifted, she burst into speed, and was about to throw herself forward.

But the woman in front of her blocked her.

Jiang Yuexing’s face turned ashen: “Get out of my way!”

The woman opposite shook her head indicating she wouldn’t let her pass.

“He’s not your biological son; why the urgency?”

Jiang Yuexing didn’t wait for her to finish speaking and attacked, but the woman effortlessly parried Jiang Yuexing’s blows.

While defending, she didn’t forget to add a few words.

“Don’t you want to know why I am doing all this?”

“Not interested!” Jiang Yuexing replied coldly.

The woman opposite arched her eyebrow: “Not even interested in seeing that scumbag?”

At this remark, Jiang Yuexing’s assault visibly faltered.

“What if I say, this young man is truly that scumbag’s son, do you think that scumbag would let him die so easily?

And, do you really think, if that scumbag had not left something on this young man.

Would that old man be so diligently following him?”

The woman then turned her head towards another corner: “Stop hiding, I’m speaking to you. This is our business with that scumbag, you wouldn’t intervene, right?”

With one sentence, the old man who had been about to stir stepped back to hide even more securely.

Better leave, the old man had experience; these matters were not suitable for meddling with, better to let them handle it themselves—anyway, Lu Wu wouldn’t die.

Just like that, Jiang Yuexing and the high-salaried old man that Lu Wu specifically tricked into coming back, were rooted to the spot by a single sentence.

No one helped Lu Wu.

That was truly life-threatening for Lu Wu.

As the black panther swiped down with its claw, what reacted quickly on Lu Wu’s side was the light-flashing eyes of the silly Han.

He dove in to take the hit for Lu Wu at the first opportunity.

Moving swiftly, Lu Wu quickly applied “Damage Sharing” to silly.

As the talent took effect, the black panther’s claws had already lacerated silly’s body, its terrifying swipe leaving several gashes.

Upon Lu Wu, bone-deep agony spread throughout his body.

It was nearly enough to bring Lu Wu to his knees.

He was still faring better; silly was lying on the ground, barely clinging to life, and that was only because Lu Wu had taken some of the damage on its behalf. Otherwise, it might have been killed by the swipe.

The panther attacked again after the unsuccessful first strike.

In a flash, it lunged at Lu Wu.

But little goldfish and Little Skeleton at Lu Wu’s side were not pushovers either.

As the panther pounced, a terrifying amount of water surged toward it—an attack from little goldfish’s skill, flood.

With one use of the skill, a temporary sea was created, and little goldfish’s power soared instantly from Boss Level 3 Star to Leader Three Stars. It swam swiftly through this makeshift sea to get close to the black panther and smote it with a swish of its tail.

The strike, “Slap Lu Wu,” unleashed with full force, hit the panther.

In the same moment, Little Skeleton unleashed all its minions from Little Skeleton’s phone and immediately activated the “Skeleton Commander” talent.

Under the empowerment of this talent, Little Skeleton’s power rocketed through three tiers, momentarily reaching a Leader Three Stars level.

In its hands, the Bone Staff transformed into the Silver Spear in an instant. As its skeleton flashed with electrical light, it entered the fray, the silvery Long Spear crackling with electricity as the Advanced Skill “Thunder Spear” erupted.

A savage thrust aimed at the back of the panther’s head.

A combined assault from two Leader Three Stars entities thundered forth simultaneously.

This burst of power was indeed impressive.

But alas, it was all for naught.

The panther dodged with agility, effortlessly evading even underwater the swipe of little goldfish’s tail while its own tail whipped back at little goldfish.

Turning, it clawed at Little Skeleton.

With effortless ease, the panther repelled both Little Skeleton and little goldfish.

Naturally, one would expect no less from a true Lord Level beast; how could it possibly be defeated by two summoned beasts artificially boosted to leader level by talents?

After pushing back little goldfish and Little Skeleton, the panther made a beeline for Lu Wu.

Lu Wu had just fed silly some nutrients and saw the approaching panther, not retreating but advancing. His body flashed with lightning, pushing the “Charging” skill to its limits before he lashed out with a slap.

Master Level “Charging” coupled with Master Level “Slap Lu Wu.”

The power unleashed was formidable.

At this moment, Lu Wu was aglow with electricity, looking as divine as a deity—quite the spectacle.

Regrettably, Lu Wu’s moment of glory lasted but a second.

The next, Lu Wu was struck in the chest by the panther’s claw, visibly caving in as he was flung through the air.

The panther, still unsatisfied, pursued further.

In an instant, it was upon Lu Wu, but just as it arrived, the panther let out a pained wail.

That brought a smile to the watching Zhang Yunyi, though it quickly faded as she realized her joy was premature.

It wasn’t her scumbag action she had anticipated, but rather a sneak attack by Lu Wu.

Knowing what he was up against, Lu Wu of course didn’t come unprepared but had brought several life-saving items with him.

Among these, the most powerful were two items: a piece of battle armor that could withstand a Lord Level attack and a syringe threatening the Lord Level summoned beast.

Both items were compromised in the previous clash, with the battle armor sustaining a gash from the panther’s claw.

Fortunately, Lu Wu seized the opportunity and managed to blind one eye of the panther.

Nevertheless, this did not seem to be good news.

Caught off guard, the panther entered a bloodthirsty fury due to its blinded left eye and lunged with bared teeth at Lu Wu’s head.

With its wide-open jaws, it was about to bite down—Lu Wu’s head destined to crack open like a watermelon.

Fortunately, at the critical moment, Little Skeleton charged in, its Long Spear flashing with frightening electricity. It was unleashing the Big Move in Silver Spear Form.

Thunder Dragon Strike!

To deliver this strike, Little Skeleton spent eighty percent of the Energy Storage in Little Skeleton’s phone.

Energized by the reserves of about twenty skeletons, the attack, Thunder Dragon Strike, had reached Lord Level strength.

With a thrust of the spear, a Thunder Dragon crackling with electricity bellowed and smashed into the panther, blasting it away.

little goldfish also rushed out at that moment, delivering yet another “Slap Lu Wu”—its tail slammed straight into the black panther.

A triple onslaught left the Lord Level black panther floored, its head smashed by little goldfish.

“We won! I actually beat a Lord Level summoned beast!”

At that moment, even Lu Wu was stunned by his own prowess, not having expected his own power to be so formidable.

At the same time, the corners of Zhang Yunyi’s mouth lifted slightly, and Jiang Yuexing clenched her hands a bit, seeming nervous.

Clearly, Lu Wu’s celebration was premature.

How could a Lord Level summoned beast be so easily defeated?

The disembodied head of the black panther dissipated in an instant, and at the same time, an intact panther appeared behind Lu Wu, swiping a claw.

The battle armor on Lu Wu was torn, and blood spurted forth.

Intense pain forced a scream from Lu Wu.

This scene was clearly seen by Little Skeleton, who had just unleashed a powerful move and was about to enjoy the recognition from Lu Wu.

Watching Lu Wu get hit again in front of it, a surge of power welled up from within Little Skeleton’s bones.

Simultaneously, little goldfish seemed to burst with pride at the notion of defeating a Lord Level summoned beast, its strength undergoing a breakthrough in that instant, soaring from Boss 3 Star toward Lord Level.

Even silly, who had received nothing more than a scratch and some nutrients from Lu Wu during the battle, triggered its passive skill as Lu Wu was attacked.

Thus, its digestion of power accelerated, also breaking through at that moment.

Three minions breaking through at the same time, three torrents of feedback surged over, combined with the Unyielding·Growth Skill Passive—Lu Wu felt as if he was on the verge of ascending to heaven.

But he wasn’t in a particularly good mood.

He wanted to ask his little minions,  
 “Does my staying alive hinder your ability to output?”

# Chapter 254 - 254 251 Skeleton Commander Control Dragon Bone

﻿Chapter 254: 251 Skeleton Commander Control Dragon Bone Chapter 254: 251 Skeleton Commander Control Dragon Bone Lingnan, Demon Cave, Fallen Demon Valley.

As the shadow leopard swiped its claws, the three underlings of Lu Wu all advanced, and three streams of power surged from within Lu Wu’s body.

The burst of power allowed Lu Wu’s strength to break through.

But at this moment, Lu Wu had no time to indulge in the sensations of his breakthrough.

His three underlings were currently advancing, and no one was coming to his rescue; Lu Wu could only save himself.

Enduring the pain in his back, a flash of electricity manifested on his body, unleashing all his power to dodge the shadow leopard’s second wave of attacks.

As Lu Wu dodged, he discovered…

His strength and speed both had drastically increased and were still improving.

What shocked Lu Wu even more was that he could clearly see the shadow leopard’s attributes.

…

Name: Shadow Leopard (Second Evolution)

Power: 1 Star (Lord)

Quality: Black Iron (Silver) upgrade

Attribute: Dark, Shadow

State: Frustrated (Dodged by this human again, such humiliation, might as well burst out a Shadow Strike to take him down!)

Weakness: Light (Strong), Flames (Weak)

Basic Skills: Pounce Kill (Master), Tear (Master)…

Advanced Skills: Shadow Claw (Master), Mad Tear (Master)

Killing Skill: Shadow Strike (Master) (Attacks the target’s shadow to inflict damage on the actual body)

Talent: Shadow Clone (Active) (Can summon a shadow clone with 80% of the original’s power, capable of blocking one instance of damage instantly.)

Shadow Transformation (Active) (Once activated, it becomes immune to physical attacks and reduces spell damage by 80%)

Domain: Shadow Domain (Insight 1%) (Unable to use)

Description: This should be the strongest Summoned Beast you’ve faced so far.

…

The system wasn’t wrong; this beast was indeed the strongest Lu Wu had encountered since his debut.

It was terrifyingly powerful.

Normally, Lu Wu wouldn’t last more than one or two rounds against it.

Now, by being able to see the opponent’s attributes and quickly discerning the intentions of the shadow leopard, Lu Wu narrowly dodged several attacks, but this only prolonged his stamina for three more rounds.

In the fourth round, the shadow leopard cornered Lu Wu.

Just as Lu Wu was about to be smacked into the ground by the shadow leopard, one of his three evolving underlings finally completed its evolution.

A figure rushed forward, unbelievably fast, and directly collided with the shadow leopard.

Lu Wu was stunned when he saw the figure’s appearance.

It was a bird about 1.3 meters tall, with wings almost three meters wide and covered in ice-blue feathers, looking extraordinarily majestic.

Of Lu Wu’s three underlings, only one was a bird, clearly the silly one.

The attributes confirmed to Lu Wu that he wasn’t wrong; this was indeed the silly one.

…

Name: Ice and Snow Skylark (Second Evolution)

Power: 1 Star (Leader)

Quality: Ordinary (Silver) upgrade (???)

Attribute: Ice and Snow

State: Excited (Come on, hit me!)

Weakness: Flames (Moderate)

Special Skill: Unyielding·Growth (Master)

Basic Skills: Defense (Master), Dodge (Master), Cold Aura (Master), Ice Shield (Master), Ice Needle (Master)

Advanced Skills: Cold Ice Body (Master)

Killing Move: Unawakened

Talent: Enhanced Recovery Speed (Advanced), Damage Absorption (Advanced)

Description: Nothing can stop its desire to be hit.

…

It must be said, this little fellow’s appearance improves significantly with each evolution.

But its looks, just like Dudu’s, never last for long.

Last time its feathers recovered only to be plucked out by Little Skeleton, and now, although not plucked, it was slashed several times by the shadow leopard, covered in blood, and its peak appearance instantly ruined.

Even its little life seemed in danger.

As Lu Wu was preparing to join the combat, another great wave of water surged over, slamming into the shadow leopard.

This trick had just been tried once before, and the shadow leopard, recognizing it, knew that the golden little fish was coming.

The enraged shadow leopard summoned all of its strength, calming its mind and secretly gathering power to wait for the little goldfish, ready to burst forth and whisk the little goldfish away.

However, it didn’t even sense the little goldfish’s presence before it was slapped across the face by a tail.

This burst of power far exceeded the shadow leopard’s expectations, directly sending it flying, while simultaneously the little goldfish surfaced, opening its mouth to spray a massive water column right onto the shadow leopard.

Lu Wu also saw the little creature’s attributes as the goldfish surfaced.

The skills and talents had not changed much in form; it was just that its strength had reached Leader 1 Star, and the Child of the Sea skill could boost its power to the Lord 1 Star Level.

Of course, this was already terrifying.

Keep in mind, the little goldfish wasn’t even fighting in its favored environment.

The strength it demonstrated now was not even half of its full might; it could still become even stronger.

On the shadow leopard’s side, having been taken by surprise by the little goldfish’s assault, although it was somewhat disheveled, being a genuine Lord Level, it wasn’t so easily defeated.

It felt it could still fight.

However, just as the shadow leopard was about to burst forth, a silver-white long spear, suddenly thrust forward from behind it.

This attack was unexpected, but even so, with the spear’s speed, the shadow leopard could have dodged it.

With the spear’s thrust, an almost indistinct roar resounded, mysterious and powerful, momentarily affecting the shadow leopard, causing it to slow down by a step—too late to avoid the spear entirely.

“No choice,” the Shadow Leopard had to directly activate Shadow Transformation to avoid the spear filled with silvery white lightning.

At this moment, Lu Wu’s eyes were fully fixed on Little Skeleton.

Little Skeleton had now completed its second evolution, undergoing significant transformations.

Although its height had still not broken through the 170cm barrier, remaining around 1.6 meters, its attire had undergone a massive change.

The original Mage Robe had been replaced with a suit of seemingly light armor, adorned with some mysterious runes on its bones and a Bone Crown on its head, which looked quite imposing.

The attribute panel had also seen significant changes.

…

Name: Skeleton Commander with Dragon Bone Control (Second Evolution)

Power: 1 Star (Leader)

Quality: Ordinary (Silver) Enhanced (1 level)

Attributes: Undead, Netherworld Fire, Thunder, Dragon Bone

State: Angry (Little Skeleton wants to kill this cat!)

Weakness: Light (Moderate)

Basic Skills: Abridged

Advanced Spells: Ghost Fire Skill (Master), Thunder Fall Skill (Master)

Advanced Skills: Thunder Spear (Master)

Killing Move: Dragon Bone Power (Unmastered)

Special Skill: Charging (Master)

Talent: Dual-tasking, Magic Enhancement (Advanced)

Dragon Bone Controller (Basic), Commander Skeleton

Companion Equipment: Mysterious Bone Staff, Little Skeleton’s phone, Dragon Bone Armor (Bronze), Bone Crown (Bronze)

Description: Don’t have any expectations for Little Skeleton’s armor and helmet. They are merely for decoration.

But now, it is indeed stronger, at least having the combat power of a Lord 1 Star.

…

Looking at Little Skeleton’s attributes.

Lu Wu couldn’t help but have tears welling up in his eyes.

Impressive, right?

It was all bought with money.

Being naked wasn’t enough; Lu Wu had to go through a harsh beating for the evolution to occur.

Lu Wu thought about how hard it had been.

Previously, leveling up Little Skeleton merely involved smashing phones, but now it had evolved to smashing Lu Wu.

Considering this pace, Lu Wu didn’t know if he could withstand the next wave.

Well, whether Lu Wu could endure the next wave wasn’t clear.

But that Shadow Leopard definitely couldn’t withstand this one.

With Little Skeleton completing its evolution, the tide of battle instantly turned. Little Goldfish and Little Skeleton, working together seamlessly, front and back, left the Shadow Leopard battered within just a dozen turns.

However, just as Little Skeleton and Little Goldfish were about to finish off the Shadow Leopard, a voice filled with brutality and displeasure rang out.

“Not bad, I didn’t expect you could push the Shadow Leopard to this extent, Lu Wu. You truly live up to your name as a monster.”

Lu Wu’s expression changed, and he turned to look.

He saw Jin Lihai dragging Zhao Kai Ming’s body over.

“What have you done to him?”

“Don’t worry, I promised I wouldn’t kill Zhao Kai Ming. He’s not dead, but his limbs have been broken, and he lost a Summoned Beast; a few years of bed rest should somewhat do the trick,” Jin Lihai said as he walked towards Lu Wu.

Little Skeleton and Little Goldfish, seeing this, quickly left the Shadow Leopard and returned to Lu Wu’s side. The only one left clueless was Han, who was still under the feet of the Shadow Leopard.

At Jin Lihai’s end, seeing Little Goldfish and Little Skeleton returning to retaliate against Lu Wu, the corner of his mouth rose.

“These two Summoned Beasts are pretty good, especially this Little Skeleton. Growing from an ordinary skeleton to what it is now is quite impressive.

But, relying on these two little ones to stop me is still far too inadequate.”

As he said this, Jin Lihai let go of Zhao Kai Ming and sped towards Lu Wu.

Seeing this human in front of him, Little Skeleton’s entire skeleton flickered with electric light, its Pupil Fire flickered, and its Bone Teeth gnashed, looking particularly fierce as if it wanted to rush up and stab him with a spear.

But Lu Wu held it tightly.

Because he could see the opponent’s attributes, Master Level Peak power was definitely not something Little Skeleton could handle, nor something they could solve by force.

Unable to overcome him, Lu Wu’s side could only reason.

“Master Jin…”

However, the other party didn’t even give him a chance to reason.

Lu Wu hadn’t even finished speaking when Jin Lihai had already appeared in front of him, reaching for Lu Wu’s neck.

Jiang Yue Xing was nearby, Jin Lihai didn’t know how long Zhang Yunyi could last, so it was safer to take Lu Wu down first.

Ah, this was a very rational approach, but at the same time a very wrong approach.

Jin Lihai’s hand stretched out, and before he even touched Lu Wu, Lu Wu had already passed out.

All of Lu Wu’s Summoned Beasts succumbed, sprawling out simultaneously.

“What’s happening?”

Jin Lihai was stunned; he hadn’t even touched him. Why had Lu Wu suddenly collapsed?

Instinctively sensing something was wrong, he subconsciously wanted to retreat.

But it was too late, or rather, even if he retreated, it was already too late.

At the same time, a figure emerged from Lu Wu’s heart, dressed in a white palace attire, holding an ice-blue Longsword in her hand, her face veiled, her aura ethereal as if a banished fairy.

Seeing this person, Jin Lihai froze, then as if thinking of something, he looked unbelievably at Lu Wu.

Realizing Lu Wu’s identity, he knelt immediately.

“I didn’t mean to…”

His plea was cut short as a seemingly invisible Sword Qi swept across, and everyone still standing fell down.

With one sword, this fairy turned to look towards Zhang Yunyi and others.

# Chapter 255 - 255 252 The brutal chaotic scene of Lu Haikong

﻿Chapter 255: 252 The brutal chaotic scene of Lu Haikong Chapter 255: 252 The brutal chaotic scene of Lu Haikong Coming Soon (Chapter Title TBD)  
 …

The Demon Cave, Fallen Demon Valley.

As the fairy glanced over, from Zhang Yunyi to Jiang Yuexing, all felt a chill run through their bodies.

The old man hiding nearby decided to retreat decisively, concealing himself better than anyone else.

They had thought of that scumbag leaving a contingency plan on Lu Wu’s body, yet they never expected it to be this woman.

The fairy instantly appeared in front of Zhang Yunyi and Jiang Yuexing.

A longsword rested on Zhang Yunyi’s neck.

This woman was indeed the most evil, having deceived her master for wealth and seduction back in the day. It was better to kill such an evil woman.

With the sharp sword at his throat, Zhang Yunyi remained completely calm.

While Jiang Yuexing was still confused and at a loss, she looked straight into the fairy’s eyes, “I want to see him!”

Then, Jiang Yuexing finally came to her senses and quickly nodded her own head, “Me too.”

The fairy looked at Zhang Yunyi, then at Jiang Yuexing.

To be fair, if she had to choose one to meet her Family Head, she would pick the more foolish one.

But now she would choose neither.

Before she could refuse, Zhang Yunyi spoke up, “I have something to say to him, you can contact him and let him decide whether to see me or not.”

“Me too!” Jiang Yuexing echoed quickly.

The fairy still looked doubtful, not very willing to relay the message.

Zhang Yunyi then pulled out the big guns, “You tell him, if he doesn’t see me, I’ll have my daughter set her sights on his son!”

“Me too…” Jiang Yuexing foolishly followed suit until she realized something amiss, “This isn’t right, they are… they are…”

She stumbled over her words before finally muttering, “Shameless woman!”

The fairy was clearly frightened by Zhang Yunyi’s ultimatum.

Though a Summoned Beast, she had spent enough time in the human world to understand the basics.

She knew this was taboo.

Normally, people with a sound moral compass wouldn’t even speak of such things.

Let alone act on them.

But the fairy thought it over and remembered, twenty years ago, this woman had sneakily drugged her Family Head, one of the few who’d been extremely assertive and successfully taken advantage of him, resulting in a child.

This woman might actually be capable of such actions.

So, after some hesitation, the fairy decided to contact her Family Head.

She closed her eyes, and far away in a small farmstead, a certain scumbag cradling his daughter while picking fruit connected with her.

“Xiao Yue, what’s up?”

“There are women looking for you, two of them!”

Upon hearing this, Lu Haikong’s face immediately darkened, “Are you stupid? Haven’t I told you?

I, Lu Haikong, used to have no choice, but now I’m reformed. All my exes and ex-exes, I will not meet them. Otherwise, if my wife finds out, I’ll have to kneel on a washboard.”

As he spoke, Lu Haikong missed Lu Wu a bit.

Back when Lu Wu was around, he would at most kneel at a keyboard, but now with no keyboard at home, he had no choice but to kneel on a washboard, the thought alone brought tears.

“No way, absolutely not. Even if I, Lu Haikong, die, I definitely won’t meet them if I die out there.”

“But one of the women said, if you don’t see her, she’ll have her daughter pursue Lu Wu!”

Upon hearing this, Lu Haikong immediately lost his composure.

Although several of his exes took that approach, very few actually had daughters capable of doing so, and by now he had guessed who it was.

“Fine, fine, fine, bring her here, no, find a place and wait for me, I’ll be right there!”

With that, Lu Haikong hung up the communication on that end, and the fairy on this end opened her eyes.

Without a word to the two women, she grabbed Zhang Yunyi and vanished in a flash.

Jiang Yuexing, watching from the side, had no doubt that Lu Haikong had agreed to meet with Zhang Yunyi.

Moreover, by not taking her along, it was clear he did not wish to see her.

Jiang Yuexing felt a wave of sorrow.

She couldn’t understand why, despite her good treatment of Lu Wu, he still didn’t want to meet her.

Instead, he wanted to meet Zhang Yunyi, a shameless woman?

Was it because she lacked a daughter?

Fortunately, it wasn’t like twenty years ago; Jiang Yuexing had progressed, otherwise she would be squatting there with tears streaming down.

But she couldn’t swallow this indignity.

She went down and gave a few not-too-light, not-too-heavy punches to Lu Wu, who was in the midst of advancing.

Unable to meet the man, she took her anger out on his son.

…

Elsewhere.

On Zhang Yunyi’s end.

Pulled by the fairy, she blinked and found herself in a courtyard atop a mountain peak.

She had only just arrived.

Soon after, a figure materialized out of thin air in the courtyard.

At that moment, Lu Haikong was wearing a straw hat, dressed in work clothes, and holding a basket filled with various fruits.

“Want a peach?”

Right off the bat, Lu Haikong naturally offered a peach to Zhang Yunyi.

“No, thank you!”

“I won’t eat it then. Xiao Yue, when you have the chance, can you please give these to Dudu for me? I haven’t seen the girl for a long while, and I have no idea how she’s doing, whether she’s gotten fat or not.

Ruyu is right, Dudu is cuter when she’s a bit chubby, looking not so adorable when she’s too thin.”

Upon meeting his ex, Lu Haikong didn’t forget to enquire about Li Ruyu’s intended daughter-in-law.

He even brazenly chatted about his current partner in front of his ex, a sleazy move, but Zhang Yunyi didn’t care at all.

Because the relationship between Zhang Yunyi and Lu Haikong was different from that of usual exes.

Jiang Yuexing was the fool, still desperately clinging to Lu Haikong, while Zhang Yunyi had little to no interest in him from the start.

Because she had never been interested in men to begin with.

What she coveted was Jiang Yuexing, and before she figured out how to seduce her, she found out that Lu Wu had beaten her to it.

Furious, the woman schemed to sleep with Lu Haikong.

Thus, even though the two had a daughter, they never really got along.

That was why Lu Haikong agreed to see her.

Being threatened was one reason, avoiding awkwardness was another, and he also knew that Zhang Yunyi must have something she needed from him.

“Speak plainly, what is it? My girl is waiting for me to feed her, I need to hurry back.”

Zhang Yunyi didn’t beat around the bush either.

“It’s like this, your son and his Summoned Beast have caused trouble for Yue Xing!”

“What?!” Lu Haikong was taken aback.

“Some time ago, the Elder Council was keeping an eye on an Evil Cultivator who had clues to the Gate and, under the Elder Council’s manipulation, entered the Jiangnan Inheritance Land to search for these clues.

He ended up dead inside, and most likely, she killed him.

But now, the members of the Elder Council have taken notice of this person’s death, and they suspect Yue Xing.”

“Because that foolish woman, upon discovering that one of your son’s childhood friends came out of the Inheritance Land transformed by evil, chose to hide it from the Elder Council instead of reporting it, ending up releasing that person secretly when she couldn’t conceal it anymore.”

“Wait a minute, who are you referring to by childhood friend?”

Lu Haikong frowned, looking naturally imposing.

“Lin Jianying, the male one.”

“Male? No problem then!”

Hearing this, Lu Haikong immediately relaxed and casually asked, “How is Lin doing now?”

“Dead!”

Lu Haikong raised an eyebrow. “Killed by the Elder Council?”

“No, it was because your son gifted him a Golden Quality Summoning Beast Baby which attracted unwanted attention, and in the end, he tragically died in the Demon Cave.”

Lu Haikong was stunned, letting out a long sigh.

It seemed he was lamenting the unpredictability of fate, that a young man who grew under his watch had just perished like that.

“The current problem is, with Lin Jianying dead, all clues regarding the Gate are lost, and given the Elder Council’s value on the Gate, they will definitely trace it back to that foolish woman’s head.

And that woman cannot be investigated!”

It was because Zhang Yunyi understood this that she took the opportunity to incite the restless fools in Jiangnan.

Partly to pave the way for her own forthcoming actions and partly to find Lu Haikong so he could help resolve this issue.

“I understand, I’ll handle this problem.”

Lu Haikong was easy to talk to and nodded in agreement.

And on the spot, he took out his phone and made a call.

Zhang Yunyi, with sharp eyes, distinctly saw that the name on the phone was labeled ‘Old Fox.’  
 After a moment, the call was answered on the other end.

“Xiao Lu? What’s up?”

“Nothing, just wanted to let you know Lu Wu is my son. Please take good care of him.”

“As long as you abide by our agreement, there won’t be any issues with that.”

“Don’t worry, you know what kind of man Lu Haikong I am? When I make a promise, it’s solid for ten thousand years.”

Just like that, with a few words, Lu Haikong ended the call and gestured to Zhang Yunyi across from him that it was taken care of.

“So your real name is Lu Haikong. Should my daughter change her last name? Wouldn’t Lu Yuechu be much better than Zhang Yuechu? I’ll have her acknowledge Lu Wu as her brother in a few days.”

“Don’t!”

When Lu Haikong heard this, it gave him a headache.

If Lu Wu found out about this, and then Li Ruyu learned of it, he wondered how many washboards he would have to kneel on to mollify her.

So, it was better if Lu Wu never found out.

Besides, he, Lu Haikong, was not truly a scoundrel. Everything he did before was out of necessity.

And as Lu Haikong was waving her off, Zhang Yunyi blurted out, “What’s your agreement with Chairman Li?”

“That’s none of your…”

Lu Haikong stopped mid-sentence, realizing she was trying to trap him.

Moreover, she managed to sneak out that person’s identity.

This made Lu Haikong very annoyed, so he tapped the table and said, “There are things people should and shouldn’t know – ignorance is not knowing what you should know, but boredom is knowing what you shouldn’t know.

When you don’t know what you should, yet you still concern yourself with what you shouldn’t know, that’s courting death!”

With that, Lu Haikong turned and disappeared.

At the same time, the Fairy also left huffily with her basket.

Zhang Yunyi was taken aback and before she could react, the Fairy who had stormed off returned, raised her sword, and sent Zhang flying several dozen meters away.

Having struck with her sword, the Fairy felt much better and left once again with her basket.

# Chapter 256 - 256 253 Senior Summoner

﻿Chapter 256: 253 Senior Summoner Chapter 256: 253 Senior Summoner When Lu Wu woke up from his coma,

he found himself back in Jiangnan.

He was in his own research center at home, and he was fine; his Little Skeleton, little goldfish, and Han were also unharmed.

Beside him, Dudu was taking care of him.

Lu Wu was taken aback, but he quickly came to his senses. There was no time to ask how he got back, so his first question was, “How is Uncle Zhao? Where is he? Is he alright?”

“Grandpa Zhao is in the medical room.”

“Take me to see him!”

Without another word, Lu Wu got up, too rushed to even check his own physical state, and headed to the medical room.

Over in the medical room, Lu Haikong saw Zhao Kai Ming.

He had been badly beaten by Jin Lihai and was still in a coma.

And Lu Wu could see his condition at a glance from the attribute panel.

…

Name: Zhao Kai Ming

Power: Master Level

Summoned Beasts: Earth Giant Ape (Lord 3 Star), Wind Spirit Tiger (Lord 3 Star) (Beast Soul heavily injured)

State: Limbs severely fractured, soul heavily damaged.

With his current condition, he wouldn’t be able to get out of bed for a few years.

…

Seeing Zhao Kai Ming’s attributes, Lu Wu’s anger flared up.

He immediately made a phone call to the rich woman.

“Governor, what did you promise me? Why has this happened? Can you explain it to me?”

At this moment, Lu Wu wasn’t even addressing her respectably.

His mood was obviously sour.

It was no wonder, he had trusted Jiang Yuexing to use himself as bait; now that things had turned out like this, it would have been strange for Lu Wu to be calm.

Lu Wu was burning with fury, while on her end, Jiang Yuexing was also in over her head.

Zhang Yunyi’s goal was to help her with the gate issues and the troubles with the Elder Council, that was correct.

But that was only one of his goals.

Aside from the motive invisible to Jiang Yuexing, there was another motive that she could see.

In Jiang Yuexing’s opinion, she had been played by Zhang Yunyi once again.

Although in this incident, her original intention was to take down people like Jin Lihai and use the situation to gain an advantage.

The situation was cleverly exploited by Zhang Yunyi, who used others to kill for him; Moon Shadow slaying Jin Lihai and others, leaving no witnesses behind.

Even if Jiang Yuexing could provide sufficient evidence to prove that it was indeed Jin Lihai and his group causing trouble,

with their deaths, Jiang Yuexing’s position would become extremely passive.

Jiang Yuexing’s ‘ambitions’ were now completely exposed, and the internal forces of Jiangnan now saw her as a person as ambitious as Zhang Yunyi.

This further intensified the conflict between Jiang Yuexing’s Governor Mansion and the internal forces of Jiangnan.

And that wasn’t even the worst part; the deadliest problem was that Zhang Yunyi had also driven a wedge between her and Lu Wu.

She indeed had good intentions towards Lu Wu.

But the fact that her plan with Lu Wu had failed was also true, as now Zhao Kai Ming was lying there, and Lu Wu himself had nearly died once.

She was at a loss for words she couldn’t explain.

Even if she revealed that Lu Wu couldn’t die because a being called Moon Shadow was protecting him,

claiming she was momentarily blinded by the desire to see her father, it probably wouldn’t help now.

After all, Zhao Kai Ming was already lying there.

Exposing her awkward relationship with Lu Wu’s father would only worsen her relationship with Lu Wu.

Therefore, after hesitating for a while, Jiang Yuexing simply didn’t know how to explain.

She even felt a bit resentful.

After all this, she hadn’t met Lu Haikong and had instead attracted a mess of trouble to herself.

It was only after Lu Wu noticed her state that he calmed down somewhat and changed the subject.

“Who stopped you at the time? Which one from Jiangbei?”

“Hm!” Jiang Yuexing nodded.

“And Jin Lihai?”

“Dead!”

“Dead? How did he die?”

“Killed by Zhang Yunyi!” Jiang Yuexing had no choice but to pass the buck.

When Lu Wu heard this, his eyebrows raised. Even if he thought with his toes, he would realize that both he and the rich woman had been played.

Realizing that the rich woman was also a victim, Lu Wu’s anger subsided somewhat.

He had wanted to ask more about the situation and even about Lin Jianying, but realizing that this was a phone call, Lu Wu hesitated for a moment and did not say more.

Finally, both of them remained silent on the phone for a while before awkwardly hanging up.

Clearly, the incident had affected their relationship.

After he hung up, Lu Wu’s brain started to churn.

“Although I don’t know how the one in Jiangbei found out about Old Lin’s situation,

and why they used that as a lure, from the current outcome, everything seems to have been planned by that one from Jiangbei.

Jin Lihai, Wu Mei, they were all just her pawns.”

“Her motives, as far as we know now, are two; one is to use Uncle Zhao’s injury to divide me and the rich woman.

Another is to use Jin Lihai’s death to further exacerbate the conflict between the rich woman and the Jiangnan Group.

Additionally, there might be other motives, but those are still unclear.”

Understanding the true mastermind behind the scenes, Lu Wu should have been thinking about how to retaliate.

But after some thought, Lu Wu ultimately decided to spare them for the time being.

This was purely because they were in Jiangbei, which was a bit far away.

And not because the other party was the Governor of Jiangbei, the powers in Jiangbei were more terrifying than those in Jiangnan, or that their daughter alone could take on an entire school.

And reportedly, she had traveled and fought along the way, with no one able to defeat her so far.

Yes, it had nothing to do with all that.

Lu Wu wasn’t scared, he honestly just thought Jiangbei was too far, and compared to Jiangbei, some people needed to be struck down sooner.

“No matter how you look at it, there must have been internal involvement from Jiangnan University in this incident.

Whether it’s the matter of Gouzi being killed or Old Zhao’s information, it could not have been done without someone from inside the school.

But there’s no way to pursue this with the rich woman for now.

After all, Jin Lihai is the Tower Master of the Sea Suppression Tower. The rich woman can fight him but can’t easily kill him.

Even if there was evidence, it wouldn’t be allowed.

Rules, although seemingly fragile, do have their limits.

The difference lies in the threshold of tolerance—some worlds have higher thresholds, others lower.

If Jin Lihai died, the rich woman would have clearly crossed the red line of the rules.

Now, the best solution for the rich woman would be to make some sacrifices, minimize the impact as much as possible, and flip the script on this matter; otherwise, if it were truly investigated, it would be quite troublesome for her.

Therefore, Jiangnan University has dodged a bullet this time.”

This made Lu Wu feel very uncomfortable.

Having been dealt such a blow, and nearly dying himself, the main conspirator was out of reach because they were too far away, and the close participants couldn’t be touched either. How could Lu Wu possibly be comfortable?

“No, this matter can’t just end like this.

Old Zhao’s injury can’t be in vain, I must take down those at Jiangnan University!”

However, as easy as it was to say, Lu Wu didn’t even know who the person was, so to deal with them, he first had to find out who it was.

Additionally, someone who could deceive Old Zhao, and had the status to collaborate with Jin Lihai.

That person’s position in Jiangnan University was likely not low, and it wouldn’t be easy for Lu Wu to take them down.

After all, Lu Wu’s current backing, Jiang Yuexing, goes without saying.

The rich woman was currently in a bind herself over that person in Jiangbei, and couldn’t get involved in this situation.

As for Zhang Wentao and Zhao Kai Ming?

Both of them had erupted in Beast Soul for him, and each was in a worse state than the other.

Zhao Kai Ming didn’t need to be mentioned; he would definitely be bedridden for over half a year, unable to do anything during this period.

As for Zhang Wentao.

Due to the eruption of the Beast Soul, he had just finished transferring the rights and responsibilities he had on his hands.

Now, with no power to fight and only able to help with some minor affairs, relying on him to topple Jiangnan University would not be so easy.

So, “To find that person and take them down, I first need to have a certain level of power within Jiangnan University.”

As he said this, Lu Wu already vaguely had some ideas.

“I remember, the position of the student council president at the university has quite a bit of authority, and it seems that elections are being prepared recently.”

At this point, Lu Wu’s eyes lit up.

With his current reputation, running for the student council president should be quite easy.

“This method might work, but before that, I need to talk to Uncle Zhang.”

As he said this, Lu Wu suddenly started.

He remembered that this could also be one of the goals of that person in Jiangbei.

If he now begins to fight with this person from Jiangnan University, there would be only two possible outcomes.

Either Lu Wu would drive the other party away, or the other party would drive Lu Wu away.

Regardless of which one is ousted, it’s sure to add to the already strained resources of Jiangnan University.

Now, the most rational approach would actually be to put this matter aside for now.

At least wait until after the university league is over to address it.

But that’s the rational approach, and Lu Wu was not in a rational state.

His capacity for tolerance was only so large; he couldn’t stand being provoked for so long. As for this matter in Jiangnan, Lu Wu was determined to make them pay the price.

But this also made Lu Wu vigilant.

In that moment, his eyes narrowed again.

In an instant, countless ideas flashed through his mind.

Finally, he said, “It seems that my relationship with the rich woman still needs to deteriorate a little more.”

Having a plan in mind, Lu Wu then emerged from the brainstorming and finally had time to pay attention to his own physical condition.

“Come to think of it, I seem to have made a breakthrough!”

Lu Wu hurriedly focused on himself, calling up his attribute panel.

…

Name: Lu Wu

Power: Senior Summoner (Leader 2 stars combat power)

Summoned Beasts: Skeleton Commander with Control Dragon Bone (Leader 1 Star), little goldfish (Leader 1 Star), Han (Leader 1 Star)

Mastered Skills: Charging (Master Level), Slap Lu Wu (Master Level), Dragon Bone Power (Unmastered), Cold Ice Body (Unmastered), Flood (Unmastered)

Special Skill: Unyielding · Growth (Skilled)

Summoner Talent: Power of Inheritance (Unmastered)

Damage Sharing (Mastered) (Perhaps from taking so many hits, skill proficiency has risen a bit; you can now link two targets to share damage.)

…

You are all mature readers by now, you should learn to vote, subscribe, and reward on your own

…

# Chapter 257 - 257 254 Lu Wus Prestige

﻿Chapter 257: 254 Lu Wu’s Prestige Chapter 257: 254 Lu Wu’s Prestige After reviewing his attributes.

How should one put it? Lu Wu was somewhat dissatisfied with what he achieved this time.

He gained three new skills. The skill “Flood” was specifically designed to complement the little goldfish’s talent, making it a divine skill for the little goldfish but useless for Lu Wu.

As for “Dragon Bone Power,” Lu Wu didn’t have a dragon bone, nor could he modify himself to have one, so it was hard to say whether this skill would be discounted for him.

Lastly, “Cold Ice Body” was okay, but Lu Wu wasn’t fond of such skills used for enduring hits.

Overall, the gains were much smaller than when he was a boss.

However, since he had broken through, Lu Wu’s power had improved to some extent, which was somewhat a good thing.

And there was another thing.

Little Skeleton had also successfully undergone the Second Evolution.

There was no doubt that Little Skeleton, having evolved twice, would reach the Lord level.

Furthermore, the shortest record from Leader 1 Star to Lord 1 Star was a little over a year, and that was with serendipitous encounters.

Thus, even if Lu Wu had superpowers, Little Skeleton would not become a Lord anytime soon.

This was a good thing for the current Lu Wu.

He didn’t have to rush into figuring out the matters about Little Skeleton’s potential third evolution.

He had time to slowly “charge” himself and handle some necessary matters.

For instance, the one just mentioned.

Thinking of this, Lu Wu immediately shifted his gaze from the attribute panel and made a phone call to Zhang Wentao.

“Hello, Uncle Zhang, it’s me, Lu Wu.”

“Yes, I’ve woken up. I’m fine. Things are good on my end. I’d like to talk to you about something concerning the student council. Where are you now?

Me? I’m currently with Uncle Zhao.

Oh, you’re coming over? Sure, I’ll wait for you!”

After hanging up, Lu Wu returned to Zhao Kai Ming’s hospital bed, leafing through Zhao Kai Ming’s medical records while waiting for Zhang Wentao to arrive.

Meanwhile, at Zhang Wentao’s place.

When Lu Wu’s call came through, he was just making tea with Li Mingrui.

“Old Li, let’s continue our chat next time; I’m going to visit Old Zhao.”

Zhang Wentao didn’t suggest that Li Mingrui should come along.

Li Mingrui was perceptive enough to nod in agreement, saying ‘Go ahead,’ and watched Zhang Wentao leave.

Just watching Zhang Wentao’s departing figure, Li Mingrui was chewing over the keywords ‘Lu Wu,’ ‘Zhao Kai Ming,’ and ‘student council’ in his mind, falling into deep thought.

Zhang Wentao didn’t make Lu Wu wait too long.

Soon he arrived at Zhao Kai Ming’s hospital room.

“Xiao Lu, are you interested in the position of president of the student council? That’s great. I used to think you weren’t interested, so I never mentioned it.

Now that you are interested, let me explain in detail.”

No sooner had Zhang Wentao arrived than he began discussing the role of student council president with Lu Wu.

In a simple conversation, Lu Wu realized that the authority of Jiangnan University’s student council president was much greater than he had anticipated.

Not only could he be involved in the school’s internal affairs, but many school matters also needed to be processed through the student council, which even controlled some of the school’s assets.

Theoretically speaking, the president of the student council was basically a high-ranked leader in the school, especially one with substantial power.

Of course, that was theoretically speaking.

The position held that power.

But not every president of the student council was capable of exercising that authority.

Some enhanced the system with their powers, infusing the school with more vigor, while others could only acquiesce to the school’s demands.

Stuck between the school and the students, it was a thankless position on both ends.

The current president belonged to the latter category.

However, if Lu Wu were to assume office, he would certainly belong to the former category, Zhang Wentao was quite confident about that.

Lu Wu had never let him down.

As for Lu Wu’s concern about how to take office?

To Zhang Wentao, this was no issue at all. As long as Lu Wu spoke up, he wouldn’t have to do anything; the entire student body would elevate him.

After all, he was the youngest Master-level Cultivation Master in history, the same Lu Wu who, as a referee, had spectacularly defeated the top eight in the Cultivator’s contest.

Now, Lu Wu was virtually the pride of Jiangnan University.

“Since that’s the case, I’ll leave this matter in your hands.”

Zhang Wentao slapped his chest confidently, “Rest assured, leave it to me. I’ll handle it flawlessly!”

His manner was very much like Zhao Kai Ming lying nearby.

But, thankfully, it was just a resemblance. If it were Zhao Kai Ming, Lu Wu might have to think of another way, or find someone else to help him.

Once Zhang Wentao undertook this task, he got down to business with great gusto.

Very soon, an announcement appeared on Jiangnan University’s campus network about Lu Wu running for the next president of the student council.

The Jiangnan University campus network was not very active.

Moreover, the timing was off, as it was class time and few people were online.

But still, there were some.

During a freshman theory class, a round-faced girl was distracted during the lecture and logged into the internal social network to browse.

She was having a good time until she accidentally saw a report about Jiangbei University.

The report stated that Jiangbei University’s study tour had reached Jiangning, and the longstanding top ten school, Jiangning University, sent several young teachers to the challenge but still got beaten badly.

To date, Zhang Yuechu from Jiangbei had completed 28 consecutive wins, leaving only Modu and Beijing universities left to conquer.

The report also mentioned that, judging from Zhang Yuechu’s performance, securing a Grand Slam victory over Modu and Beijing would not be a problem.

What upset the round-faced girl was that this report, aside from praising Zhang Yuechu, also dragged Jiangnan University through the mud once more.

The report stated that Jiangnan University was the only non-tier-one university among all those challenged by Zhang Yuechu and the only one whose entire senior management was overturned.

It mentioned that Jiangnan University was about to be erased from the list and that even someone as talented as Lu Wu couldn’t reverse the declining trend of Jiangnan University.

It even suggested that although Lu Wu was from Jiangnan University, he might not really be a Jiangnan person.

He had joined Jiangnan University only because his adoptive mother was a Jiangnan native.

It probably wasn’t because he valued Jiangnan University, and it was possible that Lu Wu was already prepared to switch schools the moment Jiangnan University was crossed off the list.

After all, with his talent, he would be welcomed anywhere.

The round-faced girl was fuming as she read this.

Now, all that Jiangnan University had left was its pride in Lu Wu.

And they even wanted to strip them of that pride—how could she stand it?

With a shout of ‘Come on,’ she immediately launched into a counterattack in the comments section against the braindead editor.

But she was alone and ultimately overwhelmed in just a few exchanges, nearly shutting herself down with frustration, prompting her to log onto the campus network to call for backup.

As soon as she logged into the campus network, the round-faced girl let out an exclamation.

The sound was full of incredulous joy, ringing out loudly enough to completely overshadow the teacher’s voice at the podium and nearly shattering the classroom windows.

It was unclear how such a soft and cute girl could produce such a terrifyingly high pitch.

“Li Jingjing!”

The teacher on the podium was infuriated and let out a signature roar, charging towards her.

Normally, this girl would have been scared into trembling, but today was different—she wasn’t scared but extremely excited; she grabbed the teacher’s hand, jumping up and down with enthusiasm, “Teacher, Lu Wu is going to run for the next student council president!”

“It’s just Lu Wu running for…

Wait, what did you say?”

The teacher snapped back to reality, and all the students in the class perked up their ears.

“Lu Wu is going to run for the next student council president, it’s true, the campus network announced it!”

The round-faced girl, Li Jingjing, quickly pulled out her phone to show the announcement to the teacher.

Seeing the announcement on the campus network, the teacher was stunned on the spot, “It’s really true.”

The students in the class also immediately logged into the campus network on their phones.

Upon seeing the announcement on the campus network, a deafening cheer erupted from the class.

Then students ran out like crazy, rushing to the next classroom, the training ground, the combat zone, and anywhere students could be found to spread the news immediately.

In less than half an hour.

The news that Lu Wu was running for the next student council president spread throughout the entire school.

The entire Jiangnan University erupted into deafening cheers.

It was a joy like seeing the dawn after standing in the abyss.

This situation was something Lu Wu had never anticipated.

He hadn’t experienced all that Jiangnan University’s students had gone through, so he wasn’t clear on what him running in the student council president election meant for Jiangnan University’s students.

So, when Lu Wu heard the cheers, he was completely baffled.

Meanwhile, as Lu Wu was stunned by this scene.

In the student council president’s office, the previous president, Wen Mingzhi, was stunned for a long time, then his eyes turned incredibly red, and tears actually started falling.

This usually gentle and elegant man suddenly burst into loud sobs.

Wen Mingzhi’s crying baffled the surrounding student council officers, and what baffled them even more was when Wen Mingzhi suddenly sobered up, hastily slammed the desk, and stood up shouting, “What are you waiting for? Gather all the student council officers; we need to find junior Lu Wu.”

This really baffled everyone nearby.

The vice president hurried over, grabbing him, “President, I know this is tough for you, but you need to be rational right now; you can’t just rush into things…”

“Rational my ass, I can’t stay rational anymore, quick, quick, gather everyone, I can’t wait for the election, let’s pass the mantle to junior Lu Wu today.”

Saying this, Wen Mingzhi rallied the student council officers into action.

Only then did they realize that the president wasn’t looking for trouble, but was stepping aside to let a capable person lead, this immediately lightened the mood of the student council.

Soon, a petition organized by the student council was launched.

The entire student body unanimously agreed that Lu Wu should start his tenure today…

# Chapter 258 - 258 255 takes office

﻿Chapter 258: 255 takes office Chapter 258: 255 takes office Jiangnan University, under the organization of the Student Council.

The excited students crowded the medical room into a circle.

As the crowd gathered, the deafening cheers gradually transformed into a name.

“Lu Wu!” “Lu Wu!” “Lu Wu!”

They vented their current excitement and joy in this manner.

With such a commotion, neither the school authorities nor Lu Wu’s side could remain silent.

On the school’s side, Zhang Wentao immediately organized a meeting to discuss how to resolve the issue.

In his view, it wasn’t much of a discussion but just a formality.

“Now that everyone has seen the situation, since the students all want it this way, let’s just go with the flow!” said Zhang Wentao.

His words won the approval of half of the teachers present.

Jiangnan University had been declining year by year in recent years.

Moreover, after a dozen masters from their school were overthrown by Zhang Yuechu alone, the prestige of the upper echelons among the students had reached rock bottom.

On the other hand, Lu Wu had become Jiangnan University’s greatest pride in decades.

His appointment as Student Council President would indeed be a good thing.

However, equally, there were those who were less pleased.

They had many reasons for their displeasure, but ultimately all their concerns centered on Lu Wu’s deep traces of Jiang Yuexing and the issue of Lu Wu being only a freshman.

Surprisingly, these voices were quite loud, making the originally procedural meeting somewhat contentious.

At that moment, Grandmaster Li Mingrui had not given a stance as one of the big shots present.

When both sides noticed this, they realized that Li Mingrui was no longer at his seat at some point.

Looking again, they saw Li Mingrui had moved to the window, his eyes gazing outside.

After a long while, Li Mingrui turned to look at the people present, particularly at those who were opposed.

“Who can tell them the opposition?” he asked.

Was this a soul-searching question?

Indeed, who could go and speak words of dissent to this group of excited students?

Moreover, under these circumstances, did their opposition or approval even matter anymore?

On one side were the high-ups whose reputation was tarnished by being overthrown by a single person, and on the other side was Lu Wu, who had fiercely contested on behalf of Jiangnan University.

If they positioned themselves against Lu Wu, they would effectively be standing against the students.

Given the current state of Jiangnan University, what might happen was hard to predict.

So in the end, the school authorities ultimately only approved Zhang Wentao’s proposal to appoint Lu Wu as the immediate President of the Student Council.

This appointment was posted on the campus network right away.

The release of this appointment further ignited the already excited student sentiments, plunging the entire campus into celebration. The cheering could be heard for miles around Jiangnan University.

While the students were happy, the teachers now had a headache.

They tried several times, using threats and earnest persuasion, hoping to get these over-enthusiastic students to calm down and return to class, but it was largely ineffective.

Ultimately, it was Lu Wu who came out.

When Lu Wu appeared, the issue was quickly resolved.

He didn’t actually say anything clever. In fact, he wanted to, but before he could, he only had time for an opening line.

“Please give Mr. Lu some face…”

Then, as if honoring his request, the students suppressed their joy and returned to their classrooms.

This left the hard-working teachers who had spent half a day trying to control the situation stunned, and Lu Wu was quite uncomfortable himself.

I haven’t even started showing off, and they’re already gone?

However, Lu Wu soon had no time to dwell on that.

Because while the ordinary students had left, members of the Student Council had not.

The outgoing President of the Student Council was the first to come over, with red eyes and hands holding Lu Wu’s tightly in an affectionate manner as if to say, “I’ve finally waited for you, glad I didn’t give up!”

Isn’t this a bit creepy?

Lu Wu subconsciously wanted to pull his hands back, but it was too late. He was dragged off to start the handover process.

On the other side.

At Jiangnan University, among the students.

Although they had returned to their classrooms because of the face-saving compromise, the excitement in their hearts was still hard to contain.

Round-faced girl Li Jingjing felt this more than anyone.

Now full of power, she believed she could take on those she had previously been unable to defeat.

Without a second thought, she captured the notice of Lu Wu’s appointment as President of Jiangnan University’s Student Council and took it as a weapon, rushing back to the comment section of that report.

She threw her trump card into the fray.

It felt like slapping those doubters right in the face.

Who says just because Lu Wu is from Jiangnan, he belongs to Jiangnan?

Lu Wu is their Student Council President at Jiangnan University!

He would surely lead Jiangnan University to regroup and soar to new heights.

At the same time, there were many others like Li Jingjing doing the same thing.

Almost all the students were venting their excitement on the intranet.

Thanks to their efforts, the news of Lu Wu’s appointment as Student Council President spread through the intranet immediately.

Once the news got out, it garnered widespread attention.

After all, Lu Wu’s status was no ordinary matter.

Not only was he the youngest master-level Cultivation Master in history, but after the Cultivation Master competition, he was also recognized as the strongest cultivator among the younger generation.

A genius acknowledged by all, destined to reach the Grandmaster Level.

So now, Lu Wu’s popularity on the intranet was on par with Zhang Yuechu’s, who had already overthrown 28 universities, both of them being top-tier figures.

Any news about Lu Wu immediately drew attention, just like how it was when Zhang Yuechu challenged a university.

However, if Zhang Yuechu gained praise and admiration for overthrowing universities, the news of Lu Wu becoming Jiangnan University’s Student Council President was met with skepticism.

Comments in the discussion areas related to this topic were predominantly negative.

Many accused Lu Wu of being irrational.

Some even bluntly said that Lu Wu’s behavior was a display of overconfidence turning into arrogance following his win in the Cultivation Master competition.

They said the ship of Jiangnan was already at the brink of ruin.

The doomed vessel, riddled with holes, sinking was a foregone conclusion.

The situation was irreversible by anyone, Lu Wu included.

After all, although Lu Wu was a genius, his talent was in cultivation, which didn’t necessarily mean he had the talent for management.

His presidency might not only fail to change Jiangnan University’s situation, but it might also accelerate the sinking of the ship due to a more aggressive and arrogant approach.

The commenter concluded that rather than wasting time as Student Council President, Lu Wu would do well to focus his energy on cultivation.

This tirade incensed the excited students of Jiangnan University.

…

Getting up at seven in the morning to write, just to make sure this chapter gets posted before heading off to see a movie. I hope you understand if it’s a bit short, given how hardworking I am.

Yeah, I’m off to watch “The Eight Hundred” and will continue writing when I get back.

# Chapter 259 - 259 256 Lu Wus Fire

﻿Chapter 259: 256 Lu Wu’s Fire Chapter 259: 256 Lu Wu’s Fire It must be said.

Lu Wu had only sent out a single message and became the president of the student council with the support of the entire school’s student body.

That experience, the scene at the time, gave Lu Wu a dreamlike feeling.

Although it wasn’t his first time being surrounded by tens of thousands of people, nor was it his first time being entrusted with their hopes, this time was more unexpected to Lu Wu than the last time in the high school league finals.

The impact was much stronger than the previous time on the field.

It was as if tens of thousands of people were confidently betting their futures on him.

At that moment, even Lu Wu, who was initially prepared to use the position of the student council president for his own ends, couldn’t help but feel a sense of mission.

A sense of mission to do something for this group of students who supported him so.

This kind of feeling is commonly known as being “charged up.”

But quickly, this sense of mission was dragged back down to the realities of mundane affairs.

This was mainly because Wen Mingzhi took the initiative to acquaint Lu Wu with the tasks at hand right away.

The handover of work for the president of the student council wasn’t complicated. Wen Mingzhi, accompanied Lu Wu, explaining all his responsibilities and permissions in detail, as well as handing over all the work he had completed or was in progress to Lu Wu.

Finally, and most importantly, he handed over a key and the ledger to Lu Wu.

“This is the ledger of the student council, and this is the key to the student council’s storeroom.”

Wen Mingzhi solemnly handed over the ledger and the key to Lu Wu.

With this transfer, Lu Wu could clearly feel the boy in front of him becoming much more spirited.

As if he had shrugged off a heavy layer of shackles from his body.

Without looking at anything else, just this reaction alone allowed Lu Wu to vaguely guess that his position might not be an easy one to hold.

The ledger might not be pleasant to look at.

Still, he started to flip through it right away.

Upon checking, Lu Wu’s brows immediately furrowed.

Lu Wu couldn’t believe his eyes when he saw that the student council of Jiangnan University only had around 3,000 points left on the books.

That shouldn’t be the case, wasn’t it said that the student council managed a part of Jiangnan University’s industries?

How could it be so dire?

With doubts in mind, Lu Wu read the entire ledger.

After finishing the read, Lu Wu also gained a general understanding of the student council and even Jiangnan University’s current situation.

Indeed, the student council managed a significant portion of Jiangnan University’s industries.

However, the student council was only managing these industries, and the real revenue didn’t enter the student council’s account, or to be more precise, didn’t stay for long.

Moreover, those so-called industries actually had a real breadwinner, which was the entry fees to the Challenge Area.

The Challenge Area was where Lu Wu passed swiftly by the entrance during his first visit to Jiangnan University, guided by Zhao Kai Ming.

At the time, Zhao Kai Ming told Lu Wu that the Challenge Area had a total of 38 Secret Realms, with 23 Artificial Secret Realms suspended, and 15 Natural Secret Realms in operation.

The truth was, Zhao Kai Ming did not tell Lu Wu the whole truth at that time.

The 23 Artificial Secret Realms hadn’t actually suspended operations; they were just no longer open to the students of the University.

The operation of Artificial Secret Realms required resources, and only a few academic points could be collected from the students of the University, with the operational funds needing to be provided by the school itself.

But the school simply didn’t have the money to afford the operation cost of these Secret Realms.

Therefore, someone came up with an idea to block these 23 Artificial Secret Realms internally and open them to the outside.

To earn points, the money earned could also subsidize the students.

This idea was a good one, but since it was somewhat embarrassing, the school didn’t find it convenient to do it themselves, so the student council became the scapegoat.

After several years of operation, those 23 Artificial Secret Realms indeed started to bring revenue to the student council.

Excluding the operating costs, the 23 Secret Realms managed to earn as much as 30,000 points daily.

That was nearly half the revenue of Lu Wu’s own company.

30,000 a day, that’s 900,000 a month, and 10.8 million a year.

Logically, after a few years, the student council should be rolling in wealth.

But now, there were only these 3,000 points left in the account.

The reasons were all recorded in the ledger.

The destinations of these points were only a few: some had to be turned over, some were used for the upkeep of school facilities, funding various events, and some were extorted by certain teachers.

Yes, extorted by teachers.

As Jiangnan University’s rankings fell year by year and the funding was continuously cut, the teachers’ compensation within the school was in decline.

Some people set their sights on the student council’s account.

From the ledger, Lu Wu could see that nearly three million points had been taken away this year under various pretexts.

What Lu Wu found even more unbelievable was.

This was no longer the act of any single teacher but had become a bad habit at Jiangnan University over several years of development.

Almost everyone in Jiangnan University was dipping their hands into this money bag, except for a few teachers.

Under these circumstances, what use was it for the student council to be able to earn more?

After reading through the ledger, Lu Wu, who was already fired up, immediately issued two directives.

“Right now, immediately, redo the accounting and list all the teachers who have taken money from the student council these years for me.

I need to know how much money these people took, under what pretense they took it, and where the money ultimately went!”

“Furthermore, immediately stop selling tickets to the Artificial Secret Realm Area. After the current batch of trainees finishes, seal off the area without delay. Without my command, no one is permitted to reopen this region.”

Lu Wu’s two orders astounded Wen Mingzhi as well as the members of the student council.

They were all aware of the idea that a new official fires off three orders upon taking office.

They also harbored some expectations, hoping that Lu Wu’s inauguration would change the current state of the student council.

But no one had expected this moment to come so swiftly.

Lu Wu hadn’t even fully completed the handover, and he had already undertaken two major actions, truly catching the student council officials off guard.

Wasn’t this being a bit too uncompromising?

Lu Wu was practically declaring war on the entire school’s teachers.

Besides, halting the operation of the Artificial Secret Realm Area was no small matter.

Just deciding to do it like this, is that okay?

Everyone stood there, stunned, unsure whether to carry out Lu Wu’s orders or not.

“What are you dawdling for? Get moving!

Also, Senior Wen, I might have to trouble you for a while. You’ll need to stay a bit longer, as there are some matters for which I’ll need your guidance.”

“President, you… this…”  
 Wen Mingzhi wanted to dissuade him further, but Lu Wu didn’t give him the chance.

“Do as I say!”

After saying that, Lu Wu picked up his phone and made a call, then strode off to find Zhang Wentao.

Watching Lu Wu walk away with purposeful strides, Wen Mingzhi was vaguely beginning to regret it.

He regretted the decision regarding Lu Wu becoming the president, as Lu Wu was indeed too authoritative.

He wasn’t sure if the university, already beset by turmoil, could withstand the upheaval brought by Lu Wu.

This was Wen Mingzhi’s concern, and it was shared by a few others.

On his side was worry, while on the student council’s side was rising excitement.

They were fed up with being caught between students and teachers, bearing grievances from both ends, fed up with spineless leadership, and now Lu Wu’s assertiveness gave them a refreshing sense of elation.

“I’ve been sick of those bastards for a long time, screw it!

With President Lu here, what is there to fear!”

Encouraged by a rousing call from one of their hot-headed peers, the student council sprang into action.

On one hand, they organized manpower and scrutinized the account books.

On the other, they dispatched personnel to deal with the sealing of the Artificial Secret Realm.

Lu Wu, upon leaving the school, immediately called Tie Xiong on the phone.

“Hello, boss, about that thing last time…”  
 “I don’t want to hear about last time’s issues, I just want to know if you are coming back to work or not?”

“Coming back, coming back, totally coming back!”

“Then come back right this instant!”

After finishing the call, Lu Wu hung up and went straight to the principal’s office to find Zhang Wentao.

“Xiao Lu? Weren’t you handing over work? Why have you come here?”

“I’ve just reviewed the student council’s account books and there are some issues I’d like to discuss with you.”

Lu Wu didn’t beat around the bush and got straight to the point, “Firstly, regarding the Artificial Secret Realm Area opening to the public, its construction was supposed to serve our school’s students for training.

Now, using it as a profit-making facility to outsiders is an infringement on the rights of Jiangnan students.

Moreover, I’ve just seen that the income from this hasn’t been used for the students.

Most of it has been siphoned off by teachers and professors under the guise of research projects.

Regardless of the original purpose of this project’s establishment, from the results, it seems to have become a tool for profit for certain individuals.”

Zhang Wentao’s heart began to race wildly upon hearing Lu Wu discuss this matter.

He had been well aware of the issue for some time and deeply resented it, but he himself lacked the ability and the courage to tackle this matter. Now seeing Lu Wu focus on this immediately upon taking office,  
 Zhang Wentao was mixed with emotions.

He felt nervous, uneasy, but also somewhat excited.

“What do you plan to do?”

Lu Wu shared his orders and thoughts.

“I have already had people organize the account books from the past few years.

Who took money, under what guise, as soon as the account books are in order, I hope you can call a meeting. At that time, I’ll review each case to ascertain if the money they took was indeed spent on the projects they claimed.

If not, I expect them to refund what they took.”

“Also, I’ve already ordered the student council to seal the Artificial Secret Realm Area. I hope this place won’t be opened to the public in the future.

As far as I am aware, currently there are restrictions on the number of students who can enter the 15 Natural Secret Realms.

Excluding those realms which are off-limits, only a hundred or so students can enter for training each day. I hope the Artificial Secret Realm’s resources can be allocated to our students instead.”

Upon hearing this, Zhang Wentao’s blood boiled with excitement.

These were the very changes he had longed to make.

However, before he could revel in his excitement, the door to the principal’s office swung open, and someone came in, “Lu Wu, forgive my bluntness, but you are being reckless!”

# Chapter 260 - 260 257 Scram

﻿Chapter 260: 257 Scram! Chapter 260: 257 Scram! Jiangnan University, inside Zhang Wentao’s office.

While Lu Wu and Zhang Wentao were talking, a middle-aged man in his forties pushed the door open and barged in.

Both Lu Wu and Zhang Wentao’s expressions darkened, but the man walked in as if he didn’t notice.

This man was Hao Renyi, the Director of Academic Affairs at Jiangnan University.

Upon entering, he strode up to Lu Wu, reaching out to grab his hand. Lu Wu stepped back to avoid him.

Not perturbed, he spoke earnestly to Lu Wu, “Lu Wu, I understand how you feel.

Having become the student council president with the expectations and support of your peers, you are eager to do something to repay them.

I also appreciate your original intentions behind these two initiatives. They are good and commendable.

I am thankful and relieved that you have such a mindset.”

From the moment Hao Renyi started speaking, it was clear he was an old bureaucrat.

First affirming Lu Wu’s intentions, he continued, “But after all, your experience is lacking, and you’re not fully considering the implications of your actions.

Let’s set aside the first matter for now. Let’s talk about shutting down the Artificial Secret Realm and opening it up to students.

Do you realize what that means?

It means, the university would have to spend at least 10,000 points a day on this, and with the school’s finances, we simply can’t support it.

The current operation of the Artificial Secret Realm, although a measure of last resort, is the best we can do for now.

It brings in 30,000 points a day for the school, and it’s the lifeline that keeps the school afloat; it simply cannot stop.

If it stops, given the current financial situation of the school, I’m afraid it won’t last three months.”

“Additionally, you haven’t considered the current environment we’re facing at Jiangnan University.

Yes, perhaps there are some internal discipline problems with the school right now, but that’s not the most pressing issue. The most pressing issue is the threat from the external environment.

Jiangbei’s ambition to take over Jiangnan is relentless, and right now what we should be thinking about is preserving Jiangnan, not turning our own school upside down.”

At this point, Hao Renyi spoke with such anguish, “Lu Wu, hear me out, stop this nonsense of yours, or else if things go wrong, Jiangnan University could be destroyed by your hands.”

It was undeniable; this guy had good lung capacity.

He managed to say such a lengthy speech in one breath.

The dramatic tension was impressive as well, and it even slightly influenced the excited Zhang Wentao.

Unfortunately, it just had to be that certain unmentionable parts of him weren’t so clean.

“You’ve said a lot and said it well, but there are still some things I don’t understand.”

After his performance, Lu Wu, who had just picked up his cellphone, began to clap and then sincerely engaged in a different discussion, “Your name is Hao Renyi, correct?”

“Yes, it’s me!” Hao Renyi was taken aback.

Lu Wu narrowed his eyes, “I’d like to ask, where did the 850,000 points you took from the student council go this half year?”

Upon hearing this, the color drained from Hao Renyi’s face.

“Lu Wu, don’t slander me. I, Mr. Hao, have not taken a single penny from the student council.”

Lu Wu responded with a sneer that barely concealed his contempt, “You didn’t take it, but I just happened to look at your information a moment ago along with that of the students you oversee and your teaching assistants. Coincidentally, their names are all on the bill I was just reviewing.

The 850,000 I mentioned was taken by them, under the guise of three different research projects.

I am quite interested in the research projects they’re working on, and I’m especially curious about why the projects on ‘Butterfly Worm color-changing,’ ‘chameleon color-fixing,’ and ‘the medicinal properties of Clover juice’ needed to spend 850,000 points over three years.

Please inform them for me. Ask them to—how should I put it—prepare, no, to present their research logs and reports for my review at any time.”

Upon hearing this, Hao Renyi’s expression changed dramatically, and he hastily tried to explain, “Lu Wu, you see, this—”  
 “Shut up!”

Before Hao Renyi could say more, Lu Wu cut him off.

“Director Hao, I don’t want to hear any explanations from you right now. In a couple of days, I’ll hold a special meeting, and you can talk to me then.

Now, immediately, disappear from my sight.

Get out!”

Lu Wu’s thunderous “Get lost” left Hao Renyi’s face deathly pale.

Had this been any normal student council president, Hao Renyi would have made a fuss by now.

But, unfortunately for him, he was dealing with Lu Wu.

The person in question was the youngest-ever Master-level Cultivator, and he had the backing of Jiang Yuexing and Zhang Wentao.

Hao Renyi didn’t dare to confront Lu Wu head-on.

He had only come to intimidate Lu Wu with his authority, but now that he found his tactics ineffective, he had no choice but to swallow his pride and leave.

Watching Hao Renyi depart, Lu Wu then turned to look at Zhang Wentao.

“Sorry, Uncle Zhang, I took the liberty.”

“No, no, no!”

Zhang Wentao was especially excited at the moment, as Lu Wu had done something he had always wanted to do but never dared.

Zhang Wentao had always been aware of these internal issues at the school; he knew even better what was causing them.

The main reason was that Jiangnan University had grown weak, with Jiangbei University eyeing it like prey.

In recent years, they had barely been getting by on the educational resources allocated based on the university rankings.

And each year’s university ranking consisted of various indicators.

Performance in the university league was one indicator, but not the only one.

Another aspect was the strength of the faculty, which was also a criterion for assessing a university’s ranking.

It was precisely because of this that Zhang Wentao, despite being aware of people like Hao Renyi within the school, was unable to deal with them.

Getting rid of them, whether by firing or their own resignation, would have dealt a significant blow to Jiangnan University’s ranking.

This was also the reason why Zhang Wentao had been enduring their presence for so long.

Regarding this matter, it was only after Lu Wu had sent Hao Renyi away that Zhang Wentao talked to him about it.

Upon hearing this, Lu Wu felt a buzz in his head.

Now, a huge problem was lying before him.

He had to decide whether to continue or not.

If he continued, how would he deal with the university ranking issue after handling those teachers?

If he didn’t continue, he, Lu Wu, had already made bold claims, and to go back on his word now would be quite embarrassing.

Lu Wu was slightly headachy and couldn’t help but complain, “Uncle Zhang, why didn’t you tell me about this earlier?”

“I thought you knew,” Zhang Wentao said with an innocent face.

“That’s not the point. Even if I knew, do you think I could solve this problem?”

“You can! If it’s you, I’m sure you’ll be able to solve it!”

Zhang Wentao nodded resolutely.

He was almost like a die-hard fan of Lu Wu now.

In his eyes, Lu Wu was practically synonymous with miracles.

Ever since he met Lu Wu, he had been continuously creating miracles.

The first time he came to Fucheng, he appeared to be an amateur Cultivator with limited skills, yet he ended up teaching dozens of Cultivators far more experienced than himself.

He even trained a handful of Professional Cultivators.

Then there was the high school league, followed by the Bone Soup incident, and Lu Wu’s rise to be a Master-level Cultivator who single-handedly suppressed the Gutian father and son.

Since he came to know Lu Wu, Zhang Wentao had never seen him stumped by any difficulty.

He had not been before, and Zhang Wentao felt that even the current predicament at Jiangnan University would not be able to stop Lu Wu.

On this point, he had even more confidence than Lu Wu himself.

Lu Wu looked at the old man and, feeling helpless, could only touch his nose and say, “Alright, you’re right!”

…

Got a stomach ache, this one’s a bit short, will make it up tomorrow.

# Chapter 261 - 261 258 You will come

﻿Chapter 261: 258 You will come! Chapter 261: 258 You will come! Exiting Zhang Wentao’s office.

Director Hao immediately left the academic building, left the school, and entered a private room at a training field nearby the school.

By the time Director Hao arrived, there were already some people waiting in the private room.

Upon seeing Director Hao, they immediately greeted him with grave concern, “How did things go?”

Director Hao shook his head, “Not optimistic. Lu Wu’s stance is very firm; it seems he’s not planning to let this go.”

Hearing this, the people present panicked.

“What should we do now?”

“With his meddling, how are we supposed to proceed? My Summoned Beast still needs over 120,000 resources to advance to Lord!”

“And what about us? He’s not going to deal with us, is he?”

Watching the people in the private room descend into chaos,  
 Director Hao furrowed his brow and slammed his hand on the table, “What are you panicking for, one by one!”

“Director Hao, with Lu surnamed causing such a mess, we can’t help but panic.

Life’s tough as it is, and his actions are making it impossible for us to survive.

If we’re not careful, we might even end up in jail.”

“Jail?” Director Hao laughed at this.

“Don’t worry, we have more than a dozen people present, and countless others who have extended their hands in this affair; it’s impossible to count them all.

So many people, let alone putting them all away, even putting away three or five would be a huge blow to Jiangnan University as it stands.

As long as they want to save Jiangnan University, they daren’t do anything to us.”

This was where Director Hao’s confidence lay.

“So, you don’t need to panic.

Carry on as usual. Lu Wu wants to investigate, right?

Everyone go back and prepare the relevant documents.

As long as we have reasonable and appropriate justifications, he can’t do anything to us.”

Then someone else spoke up.

“But what if we don’t have any?”

Hmm, there are so many points involved, and the situation has been going on for several years. When it came to taking money, we always came up with any excuse at the time, but now, several years have passed.

Most people’s excuses will certainly no longer hold up.

“It doesn’t matter. If there aren’t any reasonable excuses, sympathetic ones will do.

Just find some sympathetic excuses, spill a bit of Blood, ward off calamity with money, give Lu Wuyi a sum, and this situation should blow over.”

Hearing about the need to spill Blood, many were not happy with the idea.

Director Hao then had to earnestly persuade, “Keep perspective, when such incidents occur, nobody can do anything about it.

What is their status, and what is ours?

If we were in Jiangbei, we would only be their servants.

This one is on a roll right now; we can only swallow our pride a little.

Losing some money and making some reparations to him, letting him have his moment, is all we can hope for now.

Also, don’t be too worried; he doesn’t dare to do much to us.

Earlier in the chancellor’s office, he pointed out all the projects I was involved in.

It was both to embarrass me and, in essence, a hint – a subtle suggestion that we empty our pockets to avert disaster.”

“The fear is that this one may have too big of an appetite.”

“Then, let’s all admit guilt and see if he dares to penalize!”

In a matter of a few sentences, Director Hao set the tone for their response. Then everyone in the private room left to get busy, preparing to deal with this sudden challenge.

They must be ready to face Lu Wu and vie with the student council when Lu Wu decides to strike.

There was a flurry of activity on both sides.

And in terms of speed, it was ultimately the student council that moved a bit faster.

At Lu Wu’s behest, Wen Mingzhi gathered more than a dozen cadres to sort through the past five years’ ledgers.

Over five years, who took how much money under what names, was all listed out.

When a list made its way into Zhang Wentao’s hands, he nearly lost his mind.

“In just five short years, they actually siphoned off 21.45 million from the student council!”

Not long ago, Zhang Wentao was over the moon for earning 10 million points with a Beast Soul Burst.

Yet he hadn’t anticipated that Director Hao and co. had stripped away so much.

Lu Wu, on the other hand, was fairly calm about it. Just over three million for the first half of this year – is 21.45 million much for five years?

Lu Wu felt that it wasn’t a lot.

It was roughly equivalent to a year’s revenue for his company.

After Zhang Wentao looked over the list, Lu Wu handed the roster back to Wen Mingzhi.

“Senior Wen, post this list up.”

Wen Mingzhi was dumbfounded on the spot.

Post it up? What did that mean? Where should it be posted?

At that moment, Lu Wu turned to Zhang Wentao and said, “Principal, let’s call a meeting. The location will be in the auditorium, inform the whole school faculty and students to attend!”

Upon these words, Wen Mingzhi, who hadn’t yet recovered from the previous shock, felt utterly bewildered.

Lu Wu was clearly planning on launching an attack on those teachers in front of the entire school. Wasn’t this behavior a bit too radical?

Had Lu Wu considered the potential consequences of a mishap?

As the former president of the student council, Wen Mingzhi knew the condition of the school very well.

Lu Wu was openly slapping those teachers in the face. If they got cornered, how would Lu Wu manage the fallout?

Even if Lu Wu was formidable, could he handle so many teachers at once?

Even if Lu Wu managed to deal with these teachers, while he might feel relieved afterwards, what would become of the school?

Wen Mingzhi was extremely anxious.

But he knew his words carried little weight, and Lu Wu didn’t seem the sort to listen to him.

All he could do was pin his hopes on Zhang Wentao.

As his thoughts turned, and he looked at Zhang Wentao, Wen Mingzhi realized he had been hopeful for no reason. The old man was no use at all and wouldn’t persuade Lu Wu.

In fact, why wouldn’t the old man persuade Lu Wu?

Now his whole being was almost soaring; he was incredibly excited, nodding furiously.

With the principal reacting like this, what more could Wen Mingzhi do?

He left with a heavy heart.

Yet, for some reason, though worried, Wen Mingzhi’s strides became more determined and lighter.

His anxious heart seemed to be infused with a surge of energy.

Indeed, which young man doesn’t possess a bit of rashness, a bit of passion?

Wen Mingzhi had sat in the president’s seat for years, and he had loathed this situation for a long time.

But lacking the capability and the boldness to change anything, he could only ensure he wasn’t corrupted and tried his best to fight for the interests of his fellow students within the narrow confines he was given.

His days were suffocating.

He had long wished for someone to step forward, riding on the Seven-colored lucky cloud, wielding the Ruyi Jingu Bang, and sweep away all the ghosts and goblins.

Now that person had appeared, he worried he wouldn’t handle it well, worried that he might even bring the house down with his blows.

It wasn’t until Lu Wu made it clear he wanted to strike, and Wen Mingzhi realized he had to face the situation and couldn’t change it, that his concerns began to dissipate and his blood began to boil.

Quickly, this list was posted by the student council.

At the same time, the school also sent out a notice.

September 5th, 9 a.m., there was an event in the school’s auditorium, and the entire faculty and student body, regardless of any reason, were not allowed to ask for leave and had to attend.

The list and announcement were released together.

The entire school was in an uproar once again.

Students were quite baffled at first, unclear on what was happening.

The teachers’ reactions, on the other hand, were more intense.

Everyone understood that Lu Wu was about to publicly slap someone in the face.

“What the hell? What exactly does Lu Wu want to do? Does he want to make all the teachers lose face in front of the whole school?”

“With this move, how are we supposed to have any dignity to continue teaching here?”

“How preposterous, how preposterous!”

Even some hot-tempered teachers banged on the table on the spot.

“I’m not going. I definitely won’t go to the auditorium this time. I’ll just stay in my office. Let him do whatever he wants.”

This idea actually gained the approval of many teachers.

After all, no one was so cheap and foolish as to willingly offer their faces to Lu Wu for smacking.

…

Soon enough, the morning of the 5th arrived.

When the time came, students from the entire school were basically all present in the auditorium.

Because of a full day of fermenting, they basically knew this was Lu Wu’s doing. It was the first fire lit by Lu Wu since taking office, aimed to fight for their rights.

Hence, almost all students were in attendance.

The teachers, however, were noticeably less present.

Apart from a few guilt-free and some less involved teachers who came, the vast majority of teachers did not show up.

Even Hao Renyi, who had initially agreed to give Lu Wu face, also failed to appear.

In the eyes of Hao Renyi and the others, Lu Wu was overstepping his boundaries.

Therefore, they couldn’t pamper Lu Wu too much and needed to give him a lesson.

To let Lu Wu know that face is something you have only when given; if not given, you can’t even pick it up.

And for Lu Wu, this situation did not matter to him.

As soon as all students had gathered and it was time, the event organized by Lu Wu began straight away.

Lu Wu himself stepped onto the stage.

“Hello to all the students and teachers. I am Lu Wu, the president of the student council.

I’ll briefly explain the reason for gathering everyone here today.”

“The main issues are two things. The first is about the Artificial Secret Realm in the challenge area.

Previously, the Artificial Secret Realm was run by the student council and not open to the interior.

That’s because Jiangnan University was financially strapped and required resources to support the operation of the Artificial Secret Realm, so during a special period under special conditions, we had to take helpless measures.”

“Now, after several years of operation, the Artificial Secret Realm Area has earned enough resources for Jiangnan University. Hence, I announce the cessation of the Artificial Secret Realm’s external business.

Subsequently, the Artificial Secret Realm Area will gradually open to our own students.

The specific opening times and conditions will be announced, but it won’t be later than half a month!”

Lu Wu’s opening remarks instantly set the auditorium on fire.

For years, students of Jiangnan University had had a tough time.

Their own challenge area, their own Secret Realm, yet because their own home was broke, they couldn’t even get a glimpse of it, and instead had to squeeze among tens of thousands of people for just over 100 slots in the 15 Natural Secret Realms per day while outsiders could come and go with their money.

Now, at last, the Artificial Secret Realm was being reclaimed, and they finally had the hope of entering the realm for training.

Were the students not excited?

But very soon, someone poured a bucket of cold water on their excitement.

“Student Lu Wu, your idea is good, but the problem is, where will the money to run the Secret Realm come from?

As far as I know, there are less than 3000 points left in the student council’s account, right?

To operate the Artificial Secret Realm for one day, at least 10,000 points are needed. Are these points enough to run it for even a day?”

This was a planted shill.

With one sentence, he managed to stir up the emotions of all the students.

“What’s going on? Didn’t they just say the student council made a ton of money from the Artificial Secret Realm? How come there’s only 3000 points now?”

“Does the student council have any money?”

“Can the Artificial Secret Realm even be opened?”

The most unbearable, the most frustrating thing is not never having owned something, but to be just about to have it and then suddenly about to lose it again.

The students were extremely anxious.

As soon as this sentiment came out, it was easy to stir up, and Lu Wu had already set the stage earlier.

The list had been released early in the morning.

Every student admitted to Summoner University was no fool, and they quickly figured out where the money had gone.

Just like that, the students’ emotions were ignited.

“How come a crappy project requires hundreds of thousands for research? It’s a shameless act of embezzlement.”

“These people are too much, leeching off the school.”

“They must be punished!”

…

As the underground emotions boiled to a peak, Lu Wu raised his hand to calm them.

“Please be quiet, students. You don’t have to worry about the resources for running the Artificial Secret Realm. Since I’ve brought it up, I will definitely solve it. If I really can’t solve it, I will pay the costs myself.”

“Let’s put aside the matter of running the Artificial Secret Realm for a moment, and talk about the second issue.”

As he spoke, Lu Wu took out a list.

“The list I’m holding in my hands represents the project funds withdrawn from the student council’s account over the past five years.

As the president of the student council, I have the right and the power to oversee and inspect whether these funds were used where they were supposed to be. Today, I would like to take this opportunity to review them from start to finish.”

“First is Director Hao Renyi. Over five years, his students and assistants established 13 projects and drew 9.41 million points from the student council’s account.

Now, I need to inspect these 13 projects. Director Hao, please provide me with the relevant materials for these projects.”

As Lu Wu’s voice fell, there was no response.

“It seems Director Hao is absent? No problem, let’s get in touch with him remotely.”

Lu Wu said, dialing Hao Renyi’s number.

Waiting for Hao Renyi to answer with the speakerphone on, the first call went unanswered.

“No problem, he might be busy.”

Unperturbed, Lu Wu dialed Hao Renyi again, but still, no one picked up.

Lu Wu didn’t say a word and dialed again.

The third call similarly went unanswered.

It made the students incredibly angry, but finally, on the fourth call, Hao Renyi picked up.

“Hello, is this student Lu Wu? Sorry, I’m a bit tied up here, so I won’t be able to make it to the auditorium.”

Hao Renyi’s tone carried a mix of casualness, flippancy, nonchalance, and a deep-seated brazenness.

Since a confrontation was already underway, there was no need for him to play coy.

His attitude set the students’ emotions ablaze, but Lu Wu remained unruffled.

“It’s alright, you’ll come.”

Before he could finish, there was a loud bang on the other end of the phone, and after a moment, two people suddenly appeared in the auditorium.

One was Lu Wu’s bodyguard, the other was Hao Renyi, looking like a defeated cur.

…

The next two chapters will be posted together this evening.

# Chapter 262 - 262 259 Suppression (Subscription Requested)

﻿Chapter 262: 259 Suppression (Subscription Requested) Chapter 262: 259 Suppression (Subscription Requested) Jiangnan University, the Grand Auditorium.

Hao Renyi, who had just said he was too busy, parachuted into the auditorium a few minutes later.

Lu Wu glanced at Hao Renyi in Tie Xiong’s hands and nodded.

“Though your words say no, your body seems quite honest, just a bit disheveled.

Elder Tie, let him go so he can tidy himself up.”

“Okay!”

Tie Xiong nodded his head and casually threw Hao Renyi onto the ground.

Hao Renyi climbed up from the ground, “Lu Wu, listen to me, let me explain…”

“You don’t need to rush to defend yourself right now. What I want to talk to you about are those thirteen projects of yours.

Immediately, have your people send me the information on those thirteen projects.”

Lu Wu was extremely domineering.

Hao Renyi had no choice but to look at Tie Xiong and had to call his people to send over the information on the thirteen projects.

Being on the same campus, Hao Renyi had actually prepared these documents early.

So it was delivered quite quickly.

In less than ten minutes, all the information about the thirteen projects was brought over.

At this point, Hao Renyi was neither proud nor arrogant, but respectfully delivered the documents, “Lu Wu, here is the information on those thirteen projects.”

“Read it!”

“What!” Hao Renyi was stunned, but quickly reacted, “Alright, alright, I’ll read it!”

The guy opened the documents and began reading, starting with the general outline.

It detailed the direction of each project research, the timeframe of the research, the personnel involved, the resources consumed, and the final outcomes.

“13 projects in total, involving 76 people, with funding of 7.52 million points, over a span of five years. Nine were successful, three failed, and one is still under research.

Of the nine successful ones, three have reached cooperation agreements with related companies and will be launched into the market within three years at the latest, at which point the invested research and development costs will be gradually recovered.”

Hao Renyi had made it to the position of Director of Academic Affairs.

While he might not be good at anything else, he was still pretty capable of fronting such a facade; it seemed quite believable.

The students below wouldn’t be able to detect any issues, but Lu Wu listened and immediately applauded.

“Not bad, not bad at all, to achieve such a degree in just one day’s time. Good, carry on!”

“Carry on?”

Hao Renyi’s face changed.

“Yes, carry on. What you just read are your results; now, I want to hear the process.

Read your research log.”

“Lu Wu, this is inappropriate; it relates to the secrecy of the research projects…”

“Read it!” Lu Wu’s face was expressionless.

Shuddering, Hao Renyi had no choice but to pick up a research log and begin reading.

Hao Renyi may not have been prepared for actual results, but he had prepared a decent research log.

The log sounded pretty convincing when he read it.

At least, it was enough to fool the students below. But to Lu Wu, it was utterly useless.

From the moment he started reading the log, Lu Wu barraged him with one question after another.

In less than five minutes, seven questions concerning material prices, specific operations, experimental results, and processes had Hao Renyi completely overwhelmed.

Under Lu Wu’s questioning,  
 even students specialized in Pure Summoning could spot the issues with Hao Renyi’s research log.

This so-called research log was completely fake, not even remotely related to the research projects.

By rights, Lu Wu should have stopped by now.

But he didn’t; he insisted on Hao Renyi reading from start to finish.

But how could Hao Renyi possibly do this?

After reading for just ten minutes and realizing that there was absolutely no way to fool them, and even a fool could see he was faking, Hao Renyi stopped.

“Keep reading, why stop? Can’t continue?

Alright, since you can’t continue, let’s move on to the next topic. Where exactly did you spend all those points?”

Lu Wu relentlessly cornered Hao Renyi against the wall.

By then, Hao Renyi realized Lu Wu’s determination to expose him.

So, he lowered his head, clenched his teeth, his expression becoming fierce.

“Fine, I admit it, these thirteen projects were never actually developed; it was just a pretext we used to ask for money from the student council.

I accuse, I report, every single teacher on Lu Wu’s list was involved; their research projects were all fake, mere pretexts for getting money from the student council.”

Hao Renyi’s words weren’t surprising anymore, but what he said next was unexpected.

“But we also had our difficulties.

We were compelled to do this, as the finances of Jiangnan University were increasingly tight, and the teachers’ salaries and research funds were underpaid year after year. Our own days were nearly unbearable.

After all, we are someone’s father, someone’s son; we have our own families to consider.

We resorted to such measures to get by.”

Upon hearing this, the students present felt as if their entire outlook on life had been renewed.

And Lu Wu was inexpressibly heartbroken.

“It’s not easy at all. Director Hao really has it tough. We, the tens of thousands of students at Jiangnan University, have failed you, making you resort to the painful decision of embezzling millions in points.”

“It’s us, the students of Jiangnan, who have let you down!”

Hao Renyi couldn’t care less now, he was ready to go down with the ship.

After all, he couldn’t run away or shake off the blame.

Now the only solution was to play his trump card.

“My fellow students, I, Hao Renyi, admit that my actions have let down the school and all of you. Starting today, I, Hao Renyi, resign from my position as the Director of Academic Affairs at Jiangnan University.”

“Me too!”

“Me too!”

Following Hao Renyi’s declaration, a succession of resounding and forceful “Me too!”s echoed through the space.

At the same time, the doors of the auditorium swung open and a procession of teachers walked in, their presence bold and assertive.

One after another, row upon row.

After about a hundred teachers took the stage together, they all stood firmly behind Hao Renyi, their determination clear in their eyes, and in unison they said, “We are willing to resign from Jiangnan University, and we hope that Lu Wu, the Young Governor, will allow it.”

Listen to what they say and look at their ranks.

Those who knew the truth understood that they were corrupt criminals confessing their sins. Those who didn’t think they were sacrificing themselves for an ideal in their hearts.

And this was also the trump card of Hao Renyi and his associates.

Since Lu Wu refused the face he had been given, it might not be just Hao Renyi who would be dealt with today, but who knows who tomorrow.

In that case, their entire interest group didn’t need Lu Wu to unearth them; they’d all come forward themselves.

Directly turning the tables on Lu Wu.

“Young Governor, we all tender our resignation to you. Now, either agree or disagree; give us a straightforward answer.

Remember, it’s all of us. We all stand together as one.”

Hao Renyi now became brazen as well.

He felt entitled to arrogance because he knew Lu Wu wouldn’t dare do anything to them.

With them gone, Jiangnan University wouldn’t have to wait until next year for their rankings—they would cease operation by tomorrow.

Lu Wu definitely wouldn’t dare touch them.

Now, Lu Wu could only step back. If Lu Wu stepped back, they could press further, forcing Lu Wu to admit that the money they had embezzled was rightfully and legally theirs.

As long as Lu Wu admitted it, the matter would be considered over, and Lu Wu would no longer be able to pursue them.

As for what happened next, weren’t the people from Jiangbei already in contact with them?

If they defected to Jiangbei, what could Lu Wu do to them?

With a complete plan in mind, Hao Renyi fearlessly returned, “Young Governor, what do you say—agree or not; give us an answer…”

“Smack!”

Before Hao Renyi could finish, Lu Wu slapped him across the face, the crisp sound of the slap reverberating through the auditorium.

The slap left Hao Renyi completely stunned; he had not anticipated that Lu Wu would dare to be so aggressive at this time.

It also fired up the students below.

After delivering the slap, Lu Wu turned his gaze away from Hao Renyi to the students below.

“Yesterday, just yesterday, Hao Renyi said something to me. He said I was messing around, said I was ruining Jiangnan University.

I did not respond at the time, and now I’ll give my response to him and to everyone.”

“I am indeed set on destroying Jiangnan University!”

“I am set on destroying a Jiangnan University that has been infested with these vile parasites.

Look at these people on the stage, no, these parasites.

Looking at this group of greedy creatures sucking the blood of Jiangnan University, don’t you see why our university has been weakening year by year?

It’s not because we, as students, aren’t working hard, and it’s not because of the pressure from external powers. It’s because of them!”

“Now you tell me, should we keep them and continue to struggle on with these parasites, or should we wield the knife and cut them off, destroying this rotten school to rebuild a new Jiangnan University?”

“Answer me!”

As Lu Wu called to arms,  
 The heart of every student in the auditorium began to pound fiercely, and driven by passion, they instinctively raised their arms, shouting, “Cut them off!”

“Cut them off!”

…

The deafening roars echoed once more as the will of all the students coalesced, giving Lu Wu their answer.

And this response caused Hao Renyi and the others, who had not anticipated it at all, to look visibly shaken.

In the midst of the cheering, Lu Wu walked toward Hao Renyi and the others.

“Unfortunately, your resignation cannot be accepted.”

These words briefly pleased Hao Renyi and the others, but they quickly plunged into even deeper despair.

“You are suspected of embezzling and misappropriating public funds. Since you have confessed, your arrest starts now.”

As Lu Wu spoke, Elder Tie began to act.

An immense aura of terror bore down, pinning all these people under its pressure.

Under the pressure from Elder Tie, this group had no chance to resist. All they could do was beg Lu Wu for mercy or threaten him.

Hao Zhijian chose the latter.

“Lu Wu, you’ll regret this. You will definitely regret it. Your actions today will ruin Jiangnan University.”

“Whether I’ll regret it, I don’t know, but you definitely will!

As for whether Jiangnan University will be destroyed, let’s just wait and see!”

# Chapter 263 - 263 260 Excellent Worries

﻿Chapter 263: 260 Excellent Worries Chapter 263: 260 Excellent Worries Lu Wu had just taken office as the president of the Jiangnan University Student Union.

Jiangnan University, a university on the verge of being struck off the register, started to attract attention as a main character.

Despite the many who were pessimistic about Lu Wu,

There were equally as many who hoped that after taking office, he’d pull off something amazing and deliver a standout performance.

And Lu Wu didn’t disappoint them.

Within less than three days,

A scandal of epic proportions broke out at Jiangnan University.

Lu Wu dealt with over a hundred corrupt teachers, including the dean of academic affairs, with a thunderous approach.

The news exploded online as soon as it was released.

In the following days, Jiangnan University became an absolute hot topic.

The public engaged in heated debate over Lu Wu’s thunderous tactics.

Some applauded, optimistically stating that Lu Wu had cleared the institution of its parasites and would surely lead Jiangnan University from the doldrums to glory.

Others shook their heads, saying that Lu Wu was too young and too headstrong, acting without considering the consequences.

He might have felt great dealing with those teachers in one fell swoop,

But what about the day-to-day running of the school?

What about future rankings?

Some thought Lu Wu’s actions had pushed Jiangnan University to the edge of a cliff, and that if he didn’t handle things well, the university could easily plunge into the abyss.

There were also murmurs of conspiracy theories suggesting Lu Wu’s real motive was to solidify his control over Jiangnan University by removing dissent.

That behind Lu Wu was Jiang Yuexing pulling the strings.

Regardless of which theory it was, everyone agreed on one thing: Jiangnan University was about to enter the era of Lu Wu.

And indeed, it was so.

Following the assembly hall incident, Lu Wu’s prestige climbed to a new peak.

Meanwhile, the authority of the university’s faculty hit rock bottom due to the scandal.

With Zhang Wentao’s backing, it was truly the dawning of an era of Lu Wu at Jiangnan University.

This was something that Lu Wu himself had never anticipated.

Afterwards, Lu Wu took a moment to reflect and realized he had indeed gotten a bit carried away.

When he first ran for president of the student union, his intention was simply to seek revenge on a certain bigwig within Jiangnan University.

But unexpectedly, before he knew it, he had firmly taken control of the university.

Lu Wu found himself Helplessly caught up in a situation where he had inadvertently applied too much force.

And it wasn’t the first time this had happened.

Starting from Li Kai, it had been that way.

Initially wanting to become a Disciple, he ended up becoming the master instead.

At the Cultivation Master competition, he had intended to compete but ended up as a judge.

And now, the situation with Jiangnan University…

Sigh, in the deep silence of the night,

Lu Wu would often sit pondering with Little Skeleton’s small cranium, wondering if he was perhaps too outstanding.

He even asked Little Skeleton for its opinion.

Little Skeleton, busy with its phone, didn’t bother to answer until Lu Wu confiscated it, at which point it firmly asserted,

Little Skeleton’s Lu Wu was the very best Lu Wu in the world!

Sincere in attitude, genuine with Pupil Fire, yet somewhat dampening the mood was its eagerness to retrieve the phone from Lu Wu after speaking.

Of course, outstanding individuals have their own unique set of troubles.

Since Lu Wu had overexerted himself and effectively become the actual president of Jiangnan University,

The burden of Jiangnan University now rested on Lu Wu’s shoulders.

Currently, the university had one major problem.

Well, originally there were two issues: finance and education.

Now, however,

Lu Wu came in and immediately dealt with Hao Renyi and over a hundred others.

These individuals were imprisoned,

And 13.5 million points were squeezed out of them, which had not yet been completely wasted, in addition to the 11.2 million points already in the school’s finances.

The accounts of Jiangnan University now boasted a substantial 24.7 million points,

The wealthiest the university’s accounts had been in nearly a decade.

Additionally, over a hundred teachers were cut, saving a great deal of salary expenses, and the remaining teachers were more or less affected by the incident.

Though they weren’t dismissed, money still had to be deducted from their salaries.

After accounting for these reduced expenses, Zhang Wentao did the math for Lu Wu, and with the 24.7 million, Jiangnan University could operate normally for a full year.

So financially, there were no issues at the moment.

The real problem was the sudden loss of over a hundred teachers, which affected teaching.

School was almost at a standstill for the past couple of days; Lu Wu had to get it up and running quickly, and ensure that students could resume their normal studies.

This was now the most pressing matter.

So, the day after dealing with Hao Renyi, Zhang Wentao called a meeting to address this issue.

“We need to think of a solution to this problem,”

Zhang Wentao said right out of the gate.

But no one took up the conversation.

Lack of solutions was one thing, but there was also a sense of resentment.

With the move Lu Wu had made immediately upon arrival, he might have come off as a saint in public. However, with over a hundred individuals like Hao Renyi handled on the administrative side, even those who remained weren’t immune to penalties.

Who could feel comfortable at this moment?

Every pair of eyes rested on Lu Wu.

The message was clear, weren’t you, Lu Wu, able and powerful? After flexing your muscles, it’s you who has to wipe your own backside.

In the end, it was Li Mingrui who, seeing the atmosphere become too awkward, stood up and said, “I think we should try to expand our teaching staff.

Whether we recruit people ourselves or ask the Education Bureau for assistance, we need to get the school up and running first.”

That was a pointless statement.

It was as good as saying nothing.

Recruit people? Where could Jiangnan University find people to hire now? It was uncertain if it could last another year; who would be willing to join a school with an uncertain future?

And what about the Education Bureau? How could they possibly send people to Jiangnan University?

Besides, even if people did come, they would need time to adapt and acclimate, so it wouldn’t be easy to get the school back on track, would it?

But no one voiced any objections, and they all acted like upright logs.

It made for an extremely awkward scene.

In this awkward atmosphere, it was Lu Wu who appeared the most content.

He had been busy since the meeting started.

Sorting out the materials in his hands, now that everyone was silent, Lu Wu had almost finished his work and finally looked up.

As soon as Lu Wu looked up, the atmosphere of the meeting changed instantly.

Everyone sat upright, in a proper manner.

Clearly, despite their issues with Lu Wu, they were still quite intimidated by him.

“Since the teachers have no good solutions, may I, Lu Wu, be so bold as to speak a few words?”

Lu Wu’s remark resulted in a collective eye-roll from everyone present. Bold? Who would dare to silence you?

Lu Wu ignored these reactions and went straight to the point.

“Here’s the thing, I think that since Jiangnan University is in this current state, why don’t we be a little bolder and give up our traditional educational methods, establishing a new system that suits the current situation of Jiangnan University, how about that?”

If Lu Wu had said this at any other university, it wouldn’t be a surprise if someone slapped him right there, let alone the wave of opposition that would have ensued.

But Jiangnan University was different.

On one hand, the impact of Lu Wu dismissing over a hundred people was still felt; on the other, the teachers seemed to adopt a “damned if you do, damned if you don’t” attitude.

Jiangnan University was already in a dire state; let Lu Wu do as he pleased.

Seeing that no one dared to speak up, Zhang Wentao stepped in to encourage Lu Wu.

“Let’s hear what changes you have in mind!”

“It’s like this, I’ve decided to abolish the four-year system.

Jiangnan University currently uses a four-year curriculum, with different courses for freshmen to seniors.

I plan to do away with this entirely.

All students, whether freshmen or seniors, will be classified simply as Ordinary or Honor students.

Honor students can later apply for a graduation assessment; if they pass, they can graduate or choose to stay at the school.

In other words, one could potentially graduate on the spot after passing the assessment, and those who don’t could remain students forever.”

Lu Wu’s words left everyone dumbfounded.

They had no clue what Lu Wu was plotting.

Lu Wu, however, paid them no mind and continued.

“Furthermore, Jiangnan University will no longer offer tiered teaching to students.

After completing the most basic courses, all students will be able to take all remaining courses.

Of course, I will introduce a system of academic points, where taking certain courses will require meeting specific academic criteria, the specifics of which are detailed in this document which I’ll distribute for everyone to see.”

As he said this, Lu Wu began distributing the documents he had prepared from the start.

Seeing this, everyone in the room understood.

Zhang Wentao and Lu Wu said they were convening a meeting to discuss with them, but in reality, they were just informing them of the outcome.

Of course, no one dared to object.

Even if they had objections, they wouldn’t dare voice them.

They all looked down at the documents distributed by Lu Wu.

The documents were a combination of educational methods from different zones of the Alliance, coupled with sect system concepts from novels Lu Wu had read in a previous life, and developed in collaboration with Zhang Wentao.

On the surface, it seemed like a school, but essentially, Jiangnan University was now being steered in the direction of the sects found in the fantastical worlds Lu Wu had read about in his previous life.

Only the exterior had changed.

Sects became the school, Sect Leaders became the principal, elders became professors,

and Disciples became students.

However, after these radical alterations by Lu Wu, it turned out that there wasn’t much difference from the previous version of Jiangnan University.

This was normal.

The world Lu Wu was now in was not his former world, and the nature of schools was quite different from those in his previous life, already bearing deep imprints of the sects.

Lu Wu had simply deepened these imprints slightly.

Now, his document being out, the teachers took a look and realized that aside from thinking some of Lu Wu’s ideas were far-fetched, they did not find them too extreme.

Only Li Mingrui saw something more.

But at this moment, it was not his place to say anything.

Nor did he need to; such matters were to be reported to the Education Bureau, and any comments were for the Education Bureau to make. Lu Wu was clearly stepping over the line, and the Education Bureau would definitely not approve.

Without opposition, Lu Wu’s proposal was quickly approved by the school.

And it was promptly reported to the Education Bureau. During this period, the opposition Li Mingrui had anticipated did not materialize.

Perhaps they thought Jiangnan University was a lost cause and saw no point in hindering their desperation, or there was some other reason, but the Education Bureau approved it quite readily.

With the Education Bureau’s approval, the reforms at Jiangnan University officially began.

# Chapter 264 - 264 261 Credit System

﻿Chapter 264: 261 Credit System Chapter 264: 261 Credit System Jiangnan University was already the center of attention at this time.

Their reforms had, of course, been discovered as soon as they were implemented.

Seeing the major moves made by Jiangnan University, ordinary Summoners simply thought that Lu Wu had great ambition and had made bold moves, but the same action was seen very differently by those at other Summoner Universities.

What was this situation?

Abolishing the grade system, and graduates could stay on as faculty? The school had autonomous management rights?

It seemed like each of these moves crossed a line, didn’t it?

Could this really be approved by the Education Bureau?

Was the Education Bureau planning to relax its regulations recently?

If so, then they weren’t troubled anymore.

That day, many universities submitted applications to the Education Bureau, hoping to leverage this wave to see if they could get approval for things previously denied.

The Director-General of the Education Bureau laughed when he saw these applications.

What were all these guys thinking?

Did you also have a father named Lu Haikong?

He unhesitatingly rejected all the applications and even picked out a few particularly fanciful ones for public criticism.

This left the leadership at various universities dumbfounded.

What was this, if everyone was requesting reforms, why was it okay for Lu Wu and not for them?

Was it because their schools were too well run?

Not like Jiangnan University, which was about to fail?

On this point, the Education Bureau also stepped forward to respond, clearly indicating that, yes, you guessed right, it was because of this.

Of course, the way the Education Bureau spoke was a bit more diplomatic.

They stated that Jiangnan University’s reform was a targeted experiment by the Education Bureau.

Experiments carry risks, so for the time being, the reforms at Jiangnan University would not occur at other universities.

With these declarations by the Education Bureau.

The leaders of the universities previously rebuffed felt much better.

Yes, they were rebuffed because their schools were run too well.

That was just the way it was.

It’s hard for the competent to mess things up.

Afterward, they gave up on the idea of taking advantage of the situation and instead focused their attention on Jiangnan University.

They settled down to watch developments.

…

At Jiangnan University.

Under the leadership of Lu Wu, the reforms began.

The original grade system was abolished, and each grade and class was also abolished.

Lu Wu turned the school into two departments: Summoning and Cultivation.

The Summoning Department was divided into Combat and Exploration faculties.

The Cultivation Department was divided into Beast Breeding, Equipment, and Potions faculties.

Each student could choose to join one of the faculties.

After joining, students would receive basic instruction and, after completing the basic instruction, could freely choose their courses.

Additionally, Lu Wu established an Academic Points system.

Academic Points were essentially the equivalent of currency on campus and could be used to alter living conditions.

They could be used to learn skill training plans, enter secret realms, and purchase cultivation materials.

As long as you had enough points, you could pretty much do whatever you wanted.

There were several ways to earn these points.

One was by automatically receiving 10 points upon enrollment.

Another was by applying for assessment after completing course studies and receiving points based on assessment performance.

Additionally, the school would offer missions, and completing these missions would earn corresponding points.

Moreover, Lu Wu planned to create a top 100 leaderboard, where students who made the list could also earn points.

These were the few ways to obtain points at present.

Lu Wu’s system, while simple in explanation, was challenging to implement.

There were quite a few issues to be resolved.

Fortunately, at this time, Lu Wu’s authority in Jiangnan was unshakable. The teachers might have had their opinions, but Lu Wu’s orders were always carried out immediately and without reservation.

In just five days, Lu Wu had roughly set up the framework.

But soon after the framework was established, Zhang Wentao immediately realized there was a problem.

They were running out of money!

Previously, Zhang Wentao had optimistically said that the school’s account with over twenty million points was enough for Lu Wu to spend for a year and a half.

But just after a few days, they were nearly out of money.

This was mainly caused by the credit system.

In Lu Wu’s design, the value of Jiangnan University’s points was roughly 1 to 10 compared to the Internal Network Points, and conversion was open.

Lu Wu had immediately issued 10 points to every student.

Currently, Jiangnan University had a total of 18,111 people, which meant about 1.8 million points.

At the beginning, when the money was allocated, Zhang Wentao was quite pleased—it was just 180,000 academic points, equating to 1.8 million points, right? He had given them since Jiangnan University was financially able now.

But soon, Zhang Wentao couldn’t smile anymore.

Because these students had quickly completed the basic courses and passed the exams for those courses.

That meant another expenditure.

Zhang Wentao then felt a bit of heartache, and soon after, the students who had completed the basic courses began to choose courses they had previously studied.

They completed the courses quickly and passed the assessments.

For courses like these that students chose by themselves, as long as they were offered by the institution, they were free, and passing the assessments even earned them academic points.

For the seniors, this was a legitimate opportunity to rack up points.

They couldn’t possibly pass up such an opportunity.

Under these circumstances, some of the top students managed, within a week, to boost their points to 231, which was practically equivalent to earning 2,310 points weekly, translating to at least tens of millions in cash.

And the headache for him was that a large portion of students converted their academic points into internal network points.

Even if they didn’t convert all, they did convert a part.

Despite Lu Wu’s rule that the conversion from academic points to internal network points was limited to a 1:10 ratio and from network points to academic points at 12:1, these students still made the exchange, clearly believing the internal points were more reliable.

This nearly bankrupted the university’s finances.

Zhang Wentao was in tears.

Hugging Lu Wu’s legs, he begged him not to open more channels for converting academic points into internal network points. At this rate, they wouldn’t even need Jiangbei University to intervene—they’d go bankrupt within a month.

“Stay calm, let them exploit it a bit more; if it’s not enough, I’ll transfer some funds from the company to cover it.”

Lu Wu obviously had a contingency plan.

But he didn’t share it, leaving Zhang Wentao uneasy.

It also made the onlookers anxious.

Everyone thought it was over, that Lu Wu had played too big, and they might accidentally break Jiangnan University.

At this rate, it would be a miracle if Jiangnan University could last a month.

This even made the students of Jiangnan University nervous.

Some people pleaded not to rush the conversion of points, to leave some leeway for the institution.

But it was useless, human nature is selfish; some things just can’t be controlled.

Despite knowing that continuing this way might lead to bankruptcy, the students would not stop.

From their point of view, it was a systemic fault.

If they didn’t convert, others would, and the university’s finances would eventually collapse; if they were late, they might miss out.

Some even thought, what does the university’s bankruptcy have to do with them?

At worst, they would just transfer to Jiangbei as students; they might as well make a profit first.

As for the possible consequences that Lu Wu might impose, they were not afraid.

The worst would be expulsion.

In response to this situation, Lu Wu’s solution was simple.

He poured all the remaining funds into organizing the first internal Summoner competition at Jiangnan University.

The competition was normal, but the rewards were abnormally generous.

The first place could even win a Golden Quality Summoning Beast Baby.

Even those who finished in the top hundred would receive 100 academic points and a cultivation plan tailor-made by Lu Wu (with no limit on time or users).

And the only condition to enter the competition was having 300 academic points.

Everyone could see that this competition was Lu Wu’s strategy, but they still fell for it, mainly because the conditions Lu Wu offered were too tempting.

Top hundred could receive the cultivation plan tailor-made by Lu Wu.

And with no time limit or user restriction, either.

What kind of person was Lu Wu?

He was the youngest Cultivation Master in history, destined to become a Grandmaster level figure.

This was equivalent to a promise from a Grandmaster, and not just students from Jiangnan University were interested, even those outside the university were too.

This competition intensified the previous rush to convert points.

However, the scenario changed from converting academic points to internal points; now it was internal points to academic points.

With the conversion rate at 12:1, Jiangnan University managed to regain some ground.

Later, Lu Wu set the competition date three months later, using this opportunity to stabilize the academic points and resources within Jiangnan University while seizing the chance to implement reforms.

Optimizing issues brought about by the operation of the credit system.

This brought the previously collapsing reform back on track.

But Lu Wu only had three months to complete these changes; otherwise, at the end of the competition, the rush could happen again.

For Lu Wu, this was like setting a difficulty mode for himself.

Of course, there were ways to solve this, simply by ending the exchange of academic points and internal points—but Lu Wu was reluctant.

The academic point system was his core weapon for developing Jiangnan University; cancelling the exchange between academic points and internal points would make rapid development of Jiangnan University nearly impossible.

So, for now, Lu Wu could only make a big move.

While Lu Wu was preparing his big move, another major event occurred in the Summoner University Circle related to Jiangnan University.

Zhang Yuechu had just conquered Jingcheng University, completing the grand tour of academic visits.

# Chapter 265 - 265 262 Steel Armor Wild Boar Upgrade Package

﻿Chapter 265: 262 Steel Armor Wild Boar Upgrade Package Chapter 265: 262 Steel Armor Wild Boar Upgrade Package Zhang Yuechu had completed the grand slam and, if nothing unexpected happened, she would soon arrive at Jiangnan University.

This news caused a stir among Zhang Wentao and the others.

Lu Wu, on the other hand, remained unusually calm.

What’s the fuss? It’s just Zhang Yuechu.

Let her come, anyway, it’s not Lu Wu who will be beaten.

He was just a student; could Zhang Yuechu actually hit him, Lu Wu?

Compared to Zhang Yuechu, Lu Wu believed that the most pressing issue was still the problem of academic points under the credit system.

He had secured three months’ time through the competition, but if he couldn’t achieve results within those three months, he would still be in trouble when the time came.

Thus, currently, Lu Wu’s focus was all on perfecting the credit system.

And to improve the credit system, the most crucial point was to ensure the value of the academic points.

Currently, one academic point could be exchanged for 10 points.

This rate was set by Lu Wu himself.

However, students did not believe the points were worth this amount.

Considering points as currency, in the students’ eyes, they were nowhere near as reliable as points.

What Lu Wu needed to do was to increase the value of the academic points and endorse them.

In this regard, Lu Wu had been prepared from the start.

September 25.

It was the 15th day since the modifications at Jiangnan University were completed.

The official channels of Jiangnan University released two announcements.

One was the announcement of the opening of Jiangnan University’s internal online store.

The other was about the announcement of the academic points exchange at Jiangnan University.

The former was relatively simple, merely announcing that Jiangnan University was preparing to launch an online store.

Currently, Jiangnan University’s online store was only open to those within Jiangnan University.

The information about the announcement on academic points exchange was more substantial.

It vaguely suggested that soon, Jiangnan University might open its academic points exchange feature to the public.

However, the exchange of points open to the public could only be used for purchasing goods in the store.

These two announcements came out of the blue, confusing outsiders, unsure of what game Lu Wu and Jiangnan University were playing.

While they were still puzzled.

Suddenly, the Lu Group held a new product launch, claiming that the Lu Group had overcome technical difficulties and unlocked the “White Bone Wild Boar’s” second evolutionary form.

The Lu Group’s new product “Steel Armor Wild Boar Evolution Gift Package” had been successfully developed.

This product enabled the “Iron Bone Wild Boar” and “Steel Armor Wild Boar” to complete their second evolution successfully, with a success rate of 87%.

With this news, people immediately linked it with the earlier announcements from Jiangnan University.

After all, the head of the Lu Group was Lu Wu, who was also in actual control of Jiangnan University now.

Jiangnan University had just released an announcement, and right on its heels, the Lu Group held a new product launch.

If there was no trickery involved, only fools would believe that.

Sure enough, very soon, Jiangnan University and Lu’s issued a joint statement.

The Lu Group and Jiangnan University had reached a cooperation, signing an exclusive sales agreement for the “Steel Armor Wild Boar Evolution Gift Package.”

That same day, people discovered that the online store of Jiangnan University had quietly listed the “Steel Armor Wild Boar Evolution Gift Package.”

It was priced at 400 academic points and was only purchasable with academic points.

Moreover, only 100 packages were sold each day (reservations could be made)!

With this move, Lu Wu had the masses clapping in approval.

The “White Bone Wild Boar” as a Summoned Beast was already quite popular, and adding the previous “White Bone Wild Boar Soup” incident, there were now more people raising White Bone Wild Boars as a second Summoned Beast.

After all, Lu Wu’s company was bringing in fifty to sixty thousand points in revenue every day.

The scale of raising White Bone Wild Boars could be imagined.

Now that Lu Wu had overcome the challenge of the second evolution of the White Bone Wild Boar, he had further unleashed the potential of the White Bone Wild Boar.

A White Bone Wild Boar capable of second evolution even had a slight chance of becoming a Summoned Beast above the level of a Lord.

This was a gold mine!

And Lu Wu placed this gold mine with Jiangnan University.

This move would establish a reliable sales channel for his company on the one hand.

On the other hand, it would back the credit system, solidifying Lu Wu’s credit system.

It would also keep Jiangnan University firmly within his grasp.

Allowing Lu Wu’s modifications at the university to proceed smoothly.

From the day the online store of Jiangnan University launched, and the “Steel Armor Wild Boar Evolution Gift Package” came online, the exchange of academic points at Jiangnan University reached an unprecedented peak.

Just in one day, Jiangnan University had nearly 30 million points converted into academic points.

The store’s 100 Steel Armor Wild Boar Evolution Gift Packages were instantly sold out.

As for pre-orders, they were now backed up for three months.

Pre-orders required academic points to be submitted upfront, meaning that on the first day the Jiangnan University account received around thirty to forty million points.

Looking at the account balance, Old Zhang nearly passed out from shock, as it was his first time realizing how easy it was to make money.

“One day, 30 million, one month is 900 million, a year is 10.8 billion, Xiao Lu, we’re rich!

Those 500 million at Jiangbei, we could pay them off in less than a month.”

Old Zhang, exhilarated, hugged Lu Wuyi and jumped around, almost wanting to kiss him on the face.

“Firstly, I have to correct something, these 30 million are all advance payments, and moreover, this situation won’t last long – at most it could bring in one or two billion points in a week, that’s about it.

Secondly, eighty percent of these points are mine, and only the remaining twenty percent belongs to Jiangnan University.

Lastly, can you get off me? Don’t you see that my Dudu is about to kill you?”

Although Lu Wu said that, Zhang Wentao’s excitement did not diminish.

Even twenty percent amounts to over six million a day, sixty million in 10 days, over one hundred million a month.

It was a figure Zhang Wentao couldn’t have even dreamed of before.

While excited, Zhang Wentao also felt a bit embarrassed looking at Lu Wu.

“Xiao Lu, isn’t twenty percent too much for the university?

This ‘Steel Armor Wild Boar Evolution Gift Package,’ from R&D to materials production, is done by your company. The university is only handling sales and gets twenty percent. It seems a bit…”

Lu Wu shook his head, saying, “No worries, no worries, I, Lu Wu, am not fond of money, nor am I interested in making money. As long as the university can develop, whether I make money or not does not matter.”

Upon hearing this, tears almost fell from Zhang Wentao’s eyes as he reached out and grasped Lu Wu’s hand, too moved to speak.

However, at that moment, he heard Lu Wu continue, “Besides, I still have about forty percent of the profits, which is almost enough for me.”

“What’s that?”

Zhang Wentao was startled.

“You still have forty percent of the profits?”

“Yes.”

The key to the gift package was the milk from the Steel Armor Bulls, which was produced at Lu Wu’s family ranch, so of course, his profits were high.

Hearing this, Zhang Wentao only wanted to say, could you return my previous sentiment and maybe increase the share for Jiangnan University a bit?

Of course, Old Zhang just thought about saying this but didn’t; even if he did, it would only yield a chuckle from Lu Wu.

Afterward, Lu Wu transferred 25 million points from Jiangnan University’s account.

This money was needed to upgrade the scale of the ranch and improve the quality of the Iron Armor Bulls there.

Moreover, Lu Wu needed to expand his company’s scale and establish production lines.

The ‘Steel Armor Wild Boar Upgrade Package’ was different from previous products.

Lu Wu’s company originally sold milk.

Now, as it was selling finished products, naturally, the investment was significant.

Currently, there were only three Steel Armor Bulls in his ranch, and the output was definitely not enough to meet the demand. Lu Wu needed to increase the numbers of Steel Armor Bulls.

The evolution and cultivation plans for the Steel Armor Bulls, as with Lu Wu’s Steel Armor Wild Boar evolution plan, were not public.

Indeed, many forces held some private cultivation plans.

After all, some less valuable plans like the Little Skeleton upgrade package could be monetized only if made public, while highly valuable ones like the Steel Armor Wild Boar couldn’t fetch more than a few hundred thousand points if uploaded to the intranet.

But keeping it in hand was a different story, allowing Lu Wu to launch the ‘Steel Armor Wild Boar Evolution Gift Package’ to harvest resources.

In fact, Lu Wu’s idea for the ‘Steel Armor Wild Boar Evolution Gift Package’ began because he found that the Steel Armor Bull’s cultivation plan wasn’t for sale, but the product was directly sold instead.

Initially, when the White Bone Wild Boar Soup was introduced, the Jiangbei Cultivation Center intended to do the same, but their plan was copied.

If Jiangbei didn’t make it public, Lu Wu would. They had no choice but to make it public.

And now, with Lu Wu’s launch of the ‘Steel Armor Wild Boar Evolution Gift Package,’ he had reaped a huge profit, and now he was looking to purchase the Steel Armor Bull evolution products, which would also involve a substantial cost.

Compared to Steel Armor Wild Boar,  
 the Steel Armor Bull’s products were much more expensive, costing 8000 points per unit.

Currently, Lu Wu’s ranch had 371 Iron Armor Bulls eligible for evolution, costing about three million in total.

Quite affordable for Lu Wu.

However, just as Lu Wu’s company transferred the points, the other party stated that the transaction couldn’t proceed at that price.

They mentioned that due to the rise in prices of certain raw materials for the Steel Armor Bull upgrade products, the price of the products had to be increased as well.

Clearly, they were exploiting Lu Wu’s company’s profitable situation by jacking up the price.

Such scenarios were common, and Lu Wu said he could understand, asking them for their current price.

With a slight smile, they mentioned it wasn’t too expensive, just 80,000 points.

# Chapter 266 - 266 263 Task System Established

﻿Chapter 266: 263 Task System Established Chapter 266: 263 Task System Established Lu Wu was a bit dumbfounded when he heard the other party ask for 80,000 right off the bat.

Especially hard to believe was the fact that the other party didn’t seem to know who he was.

Could it be that Lu Wu’s reputation held no weight at all?

Or was it that Lu Wu looked like he deserved a beating, and everyone wanted to step on him when they saw him?

Even if you’re going to raise the price right there on the spot, you ought to follow some basic rules, right?

Thus, Lu Wu spoke to them in a joking tone,

“Don’t you know who I am? Aren’t you afraid I’ll just develop an advanced plan myself and steal your business?”

The other party was very polite,

“Dear, if you can pull that off, you’re welcome to try!”

Lu Wu nearly spat out a mouthful of old blood.

He immediately hung up the phone.

After hanging up, Lu Wu felt something was off and had someone check the background of that company.

Upon checking, Lu Wu knew where the problem lay.

It lay with the owner of the company.

The company was named “Sky Suppressing Cultivation,” and the owner’s surname was Gu, yes, like Gutian of the Gu family.

The company belonged to Gutian.

After all, it was an old rival,

“No wonder!”

“Well, I originally wanted to take it easy, but now it looks like I have to handle it myself,”

Lu Wu said this with a sense of helplessness.

But his sleeves were already rolled up, and his eyes were shining brightly.

Clearly, he was gearing up for a big fight.

Meanwhile, as Lu Wu was filled with determination,

Gutian was in a great mood too.

Hiking the price right off the bat was his direct instruction, seeing as Lu Wu had made a mess of the father and son of the Gu family last time in Beijing.

He had been bedridden for over a month, and his son had been questioning his entire life after that beating.

After the competition ended, Guzhentian locked himself in his room for a full week.

It took a lot of effort just to come out of his room, and the next day he dived into the Secret Realm and hadn’t come out since.

Having been humiliated by Lu Wu, it was no wonder Gutian didn’t want to sell to him.

“That kid’s character leads me to believe he’s probably already working on the Steel Armor Bull’s evolution plan?”

Regarding whether Lu Wu could develop an evolution plan for the Steel Armor Bull, Gutian didn’t doubt it.

Given his talent, Lu Wu would surely be able to come up with it.

It was just a matter of how long it would take.

And right now, the redesigned “Steel Armor Wild Boar Evolution Gift Package” at Jiangnan University was crucial; if Lu Wu delayed, his and his company might endure, but Jiangnan University couldn’t handle it.

“Besides, even if he figures it out early, he’ll find out that I have him by the neck in terms of the critical materials, and at that point, he’ll still have to beg me.”

Thinking that soon, Lu Wu would have to come begging, Gutian felt incredibly delighted.

While he was enjoying this thought, his phone rang.

Gutian looked at the caller ID, flinched, and instinctively stood up to pick it up respectfully,

“Mr. Feng…”

Before Gutian could finish his greeting, the old man on the phone asked, “Did you choke off Lu Wu’s neck with the Steel Armor Bull product?”

Gutian was taken aback.

Cautiously, he responded, “How could such a small matter disturb you…”

“Do not provoke him!”

That was all the person said before hanging up, leaving Gutian holding his phone, utterly dumbfounded.

After a while, Gutian realized what had happened, and he immediately called his subordinate.

Soon, Gutian’s subordinate contacted Lu Wu’s company to retract the previous quote and expressed willingness to sell to Lu Wu’s company at a price of 5,000 per piece.

This price effectively meant making no profit at all.

Mainly because that phone call had scared Gutian, and he was somewhat panicked.

So there was a sense of trying to avert disaster by taking a financial hit.

But his attempt to avert disaster didn’t come to fruition, as his subordinate soon returned and reported back to him.

“Boss, the Lu Group has reported that they’ve developed a new evolution scheme.”

Upon hearing this, Gutian was stunned.

How long had it been?

Less than three hours from start to finish, and they had managed to develop a new evolution scheme?

Gutian felt that either Lu Wu was lying, or he was cheating.

The truth was the latter.

Initially, from the moment Lu Wu purchased those three products, he had deduced Gutian’s evolution scheme through the products.

It was just that Lu Wu was conscious of copyrights.

He felt that stealing someone else’s idea was not right and wanted to support the original legally.

However, unexpectedly, he encountered Gutian, who refused to cooperate, leaving Lu Wu no choice. He immediately went to the ranch and pulled out 371 Steel Armor Bulls on the brink of evolving.

The cultivation plan was something that could be used on a Summoned Beast once a day, not just once a day in total.

This meant that as long as Lu Wu had enough Summoned Beasts, he could actually modify the scheme hundreds of times in a day.

He pulled out all 371 Steel Armor Bulls and modified each one.

Just as Gutian was about to concede, Lu Wu came up with a scheme he hadn’t anticipated.

Evolution Scheme: Steel Armor Dairy Cow

Description: A brand-new version modified from the original Steel Armor Bull evolution scheme.

This version is only applicable to female cows, and though the combat power of the evolved cows will be lower, the quality of the milk produced will be much higher than that of regular Steel Armor Bulls.

Not only is it superior as a material, but long-term consumption can also strengthen the physique of a Summoned Beast.

This scheme was much better for Lu Wu than Gutian’s, which made Lu Wu question how he could possibly still want Gutian’s products.

Even if Lu Wu’s cultivation scheme was a bit more expensive, costing about ten thousand points each, he was determined to use it.

With this cultivation plan, production of Lu Wu’s “Steel Armor Wild Boar Evolution Gift Package” no longer faced any problems.

Lu Wu was then able to focus more on the reforms at Jiangnan University.

And after firmly establishing the academic points system, Lu Wu’s reforms could officially begin.

At this time, Lu Wu was finally able to integrate the task system.

Over the next few days, Lu Wu began to meet with various people in Jiangnan Province.

First and foremost was his godmother, Jiang Yuexing.

Setting up the task system for the Cultivation Institute was manageable since it was all about cultivation; Jiangnan University could handle it internally.

But the situation at the Summoner Institute was different.

Their tasks were mainly combat and exploration-oriented.

Such tasks couldn’t just come out of nowhere, nor could Jiangnan University arrange them just for students’ amusement.

Thus, Lu Wu needed to meet with Jiang Yuexing to discuss outsourcing some tasks from the Alliance, like hunting Summoner criminals, rounding up Summoned Beasts, and patrolling.

Since returning from the Demon Cave, Lu Wu hadn’t seen the rich woman.

He hadn’t expected that their first meeting would be in a professional capacity.

Their relationship changed at that moment.

Originally a mother-son relationship, now one was the de facto leader of Jiangnan University and the other was the Governor of Jiangnan Province; they were essentially in a working relationship.

Possibly due to the incident in the Demon Cave, Jiang Yuexing was surprisingly cooperative during the discussion of this new collaboration.

Lu Wu easily secured a piece of business from the Alliance’s side, giving the task board at Jiangnan University’s Summoner Institute some work.

Subsequently, Lu Wu also met with the head of the Summoner Center and similarly secured a piece of business from there.

Smoothly, Lu Wu established the task system at Jiangnan University.

Once Jiangnan University’s task system was established, the broad framework of Jiangnan University’s reforms was basically in place.

Following that, Lu Wu wouldn’t need to be so busy; he just needed to supervise and make any necessary adjustments.

As for whether Lu Wu’s reforms this time would succeed or fail, only time could tell.

However, Lu Wu was quite confident in himself.

If nothing unexpected happened, he should be successful.

The plot involving Jiangnan University will end in one or two chapters, and then we’ll return to Summoned Beast Cultivation.

Also, please subscribe and support!

# Chapter 267 - 267 264 three months

﻿Chapter 267: 264 three months Chapter 267: 264 three months Time, this elusive thing, sometimes moves incredibly slowly, feeling like an eternity, but other times it races by.

And just like that, December arrived in the blink of an eye.

By this time, three months had passed since Lu Wu took charge of Jiangnan University.

Three months ago, some speculated that under Lu Wu’s leadership, Jiangnan University wouldn’t last a month before going bankrupt.

Yet now, after three months, Jiangnan University, having been twisted into various shapes and forms by Lu Wu, still stood.

And supposedly, it was doing quite well.

Someone had compiled a list of actions taken by Lu Wu after assuming control of Jiangnan University, along with a timeline.

On September 12, Lu Wu announced his intention to run for student council president, and was promptly elected by the entire student body that very day.

By September 15, he took down Hao Renyi and a group of corrupt individuals parasitizing Jiangnan University, sending them to prison.

On September 17, Jiangnan University began its reform, introducing an academic points system.

On September 25, Jiangnan University announced an internal competition, subsequently launching an online store and entering into collaboration with Lu Wu’s Lu Group.

September 30 saw the establishment of Jiangnan University’s task system, which began operation; academic points were also made available for external exchange.

The last major initiative began on October 1, when Lu Wu invited cultivators from the Alliance to come to Jiangnan University for an academic exchange.

The exchange lasted a whole month.

According to Jiangnan University’s official statistics, a total of 811 cultivators participated in the event.

Among them, 31 were at the Master Level, with the rest being Professional Cultivators.

Everyone involved in the exchange gained something, but the biggest winners were undoubtedly Jiangnan University and Lu Wu.

Lu Wu managed to persuade 188 people to stay at Jiangnan University.

That was because many cultivators already had backing from powerful organizations and were not easily able to switch loyalties; otherwise, that number might have been doubled.

With these cultivators joining, the Cultivation Institute at Jiangnan University was quickly established.

The task system of Jiangnan University’s Cultivation Institute was being perfected, and the store continued to launch new products.

Also, during this exchange, the term “Mr. Lu” started to spread.

Reportedly, even Cultivation Masters at the Master Level showed Lu Wu the respect due to a teacher.

This news spread, further enhancing Lu Wu’s infamy.

It can be said that after this exchange, Lu Wu’s status in the world of summoners underwent a tremendous shift.

Initially, he was merely seen as an anomaly, a future Grandmaster, a future big shot.

But after the exchange, people realized that Lu Wu had already grown; at least in the domain of cultivation, he was undoubtedly a big shot.

Even Master Level cultivators showed deference to Lu Wu, indicating just how formidable he was in the field. Some even began to call him a Grandmaster.

Following the exchange,  
 Lu Wu and Jiangnan University put a hold on any significant moves, with Lu Wu disappearing from the public eye.

This absence lasted for more than a month.

It wasn’t until December 5 that Jiangnan University issued an official announcement through official channels.

The content was specific.

From December 15 to 17, Jiangnan University would be open to the public.

During this period, anyone who had either spent over 500 academic points in Jiangnan Mall or had that amount in their account could present the relevant proof and enter Jiangnan University to watch the first Summoner competition.

This announcement served as both an invitation and a marketing tactic.

Many who already had investments in the competition, who were already interested in the current state of Jiangnan University, acted on it.

That day, sales in Jiangnan University’s online store reached new heights.

Zhang Wentao, counting his money in the background, couldn’t stop grinning.

Yet what excited and intrigued Zhang Wentao even more than the revenue wasn’t the money; he was looking forward to December 15, the day the campus would open to the public.

There’s a saying, isn’t there?

“Walking in brocade at night is like being rich without returning home.”

Jiangnan University was finally turning things around, and Old Zhang was naturally eager to show off.

So, it was actually his idea to open the campus to the public.

He just wanted to strut a bit.

Old Zhang’s penchant for showing off was something Lu Wu had become familiar with during his time in Beijing.

Hence, he didn’t stand in the way.

The old man had struggled for most of his life; now that he finally had the chance, why not let him strut? It’s not as if there was nothing to show off.

Time swiftly moved to December 15, and Jiangnan University was especially lively that day.

For one, it was the first day the university was open to outsiders, and the final of the big competition at Jiangnan University was fast approaching.

That day, Zhang Wentao was bustling around the school gate early.

“Hey, isn’t that Old Li from East University? You’re here too? Come and sit down, please.”

“Director Zhao from Magic City University? Hello, hello, hello, take a seat, quick…”

“Professor Liu from Jingcheng University, a pleasure to meet you…”

…

The president of Jiangnan University was personally welcoming guests at the school gate.

A bit undignified, perhaps, but Zhang Wentao was doing it with great enthusiasm and excitement.

He was specifically looking out for people from other schools.

As soon as he spotted someone, he was sure to pull them aside for a chat.

Boasting and showing off in various ways.

Occasionally dropping hints like, “My hands have been rather dry lately,” while simultaneously flashing the Gold Level item that Lu Wu had given him.

If it caught someone’s attention, Zhang Wentao would just wave his hand dismissively.

“This trinket? It’s a casual creation by our Xiao Lu. To purchase? No, no, no. The quality? It’s just Gold, pretty average really.”

“Let’s not talk about this… Ah, why is it so blinding?

Oh, it’s the glare from our brand new gate. Honestly, that kid Lu Wu, I told him the old gate was fine, no need for renovations, but he wouldn’t listen and went on to spend over a million yuan refurbishing a new one.

He even collaborated with those Masters from the Cultivation Institute to turn it into an enchanted item, claiming it had detection and even Lord Level suppression capabilities.

What’s the point of this fuss? Jiangnan University is secure; who would attack us?

Isn’t it a waste of money?

Sure, we only spent a few million points, but wouldn’t it cost someone else an arm and a leg?

Ah, Lu Wu’s a good kid; it’s just his unused hardships don’t teach him thrift.”

Was it that Old Zhang had been repressed for too long? Having the chance to show off, he couldn’t restrain himself—it was a complete self-indulgence.

He almost drove the people he clung onto insane with his incessant bragging.

If they weren’t genuinely curious about Jiangnan University’s current state and the important competition, they would hardly tolerate Zhang Wentao’s nouveau riche demeanor.

…

Anyone there? Make a noise!

# Chapter 268 - 268 265 Ms. Red-haired (Seeking Subscriptions)

﻿Chapter 268: 265 Ms. Red-haired (Seeking Subscriptions) Chapter 268: 265 Ms. Red-haired (Seeking Subscriptions) There wasn’t a single person who Old Zhang stopped that could bear his suddenly rich demeanor.

Everyone he stopped started off smiling cheerfully, then the smile on their faces gradually became forced, until finally, they were all just holding it together.

At that moment, pretty much everyone wished there was someone who could take care of Zhang Wentao, the showoff.

In fact, there was someone who could deal with Zhang Wentao, and no, it wasn’t Lu Wu, but Zhang Yuechu from Jiangbei.

After all, Jiangnan University still owed her several hundred million points.

If she were to come over, the old man couldn’t possibly strut his stuff.

Unfortunately, Zhang Yuechu was destined not to come.

Three months ago, after she had picked a fight with Jingcheng University to complete the grand slam.

It wasn’t long before she suffered an attack from an unknown powerful adversary.

It was said that although Zhang Yuechu managed to fend off the opponent, she herself was seriously injured and had been recuperating in Jiangbei this whole time; if nothing unexpected happened, she basically wouldn’t be coming over.

That was also the reason why Zhang Wentao dared to strut his stuff.

With the biggest creditor absent, of course he could flaunt as he pleased.

However, the reason why Zhang Wentao could strut his stuff was also that Jiangnan University indeed had the capital to do so.

Jiangnan University changed every three months.

And the results were truly significant.

Most importantly, in terms of economic gains.

The Jiangnan online mall had been in operation for three months, and it had been open for over two months.

A rough estimate showed that in just three months, Jiangnan University had earned close to two billion points.

The bulk of this came from the “Steel Armor Wild Boar Evolution Gift Package” and the “Snowman Evolution Gift Package.”

The latter was added later by Lu Wu.

Mainly because Lu Wu found that the “Snowman” type of summoned beast, although not strong in power, was especially popular because it had a humanoid form.

So Lu Wu optimized this package a bit and put it up, and unexpectedly it became one of the main products of the Jiangnan Mall.

Later, with nearly two hundred cultivation masters joining, the Jiangnan Mall continued to improve.

Revenue also continued to increase, and now it was bringing in over a million academic points a day for Jiangnan University.

Now, if Jiangnan University really wanted to pay back those five billion, it could actually do so fairly quickly with a bit of a struggle.

Of course, Jiangnan University currently had no intention of repaying the debt.

After all, the repayment time was still far off, and Jiangnan was in need of construction at the moment.

In the past three months, although Jiangnan University had made a lot of money,  
 They spent even more.

They had already spent close to three billion, all of which was used for the construction of Jiangnan University.

This caused everyone entering Jiangnan University on the open day to be almost blinded by the nouveau riche atmosphere, starting from the school gate, extravagance was everywhere.

What met the eye were mostly products of the combination of architecture and equipment.

Even the school’s greenery included many plants transplanted from secret realms with environmental improvement effects.

Faced with such a Jiangnan University, Jing University and Mo University were still fine.

They felt the scene was just average and far from their caliber, but it was quite shocking for some from non-top-tier universities.

Among them, the most impacted and shocked were the people from Dong University.

Jiangnan Province didn’t have just one summoner university like Jiangnan University; besides Jiangnan University, there was also Dong University.

This university had been established only a few years ago.

Being in the same Jiangnan, Dong University had the most say about what Jiangnan University used to be.

Previously, Jiangnan was so poor that numerous people had left, and the school’s academic administration building was about to collapse without money for repairs.

But look at them now.

The emotions of the people from Dong University were incredibly complex.

They had originally thought that Jiangnan University was about to collapse and that they, Dong University, were on the rise, but out of nowhere, Jiangnan University had gotten lucky and received Lu Wu.

It had been less than half a year since Lu Wu enrolled, and the once deadbeat Jiangnan University had miraculously turned over a new leaf.

However, for the major universities, money wasn’t the most important thing.

What they were most concerned about wasn’t that, but the outcomes of the changes at Jiangnan University.

They wanted to know, after three months of changes, how were Jiangnan University’s new systems running?

To understand this, they visited the cultivation and summoning colleges of Jiangnan University.

After one round, these people realized that the changes at Jiangnan University seemed to be doing well.

Everything was rather systematic.

The daily routine at the Summoning College was dominated by mission training.

As for the curriculum, apart from the basic classes, the rest was self-study.

After students selected their courses, the school would notify them of the time to come for concentrated studies.

On the Cultivation College side.

There tended to be fewer people than in the Summoning College.

Many areas were not open, and outsiders didn’t know much.

After making their rounds in the Cultivation College, their only discovery was that there were more teachers than students.

The place was swarming with senior Cultivation Masters, even Master Level ones were not hard to find.

Just looking at these teachers, one didn’t need to see the students to know the power of the Cultivation College.

That made the leaders from other schools even more envious and jealous.

They were envious of the power of the Cultivation College, of course, but even more so of Jiangnan University’s dumb luck in coming across Lu Wu, such a freak of nature.

After all, whether it was the resurrection of Jiangnan University or the achievements of these teachers from the Cultivation College, it was all because of Lu Wu.

It was Lu Wu who had made Jiangnan University what it was today.

And there was Lu Wu, the creator of today’s Jiangnan University, who, while a group of people from other schools were stunned by Jiangnan University’s current state, sat in his own research lab absent-mindedly stroking Little Skeleton’s head, the epitome of helplessness.

“Sigh, I didn’t mean to go so overboard again!”

Lu Wu was genuinely helpless, he swore that he just randomly made a few tweaks, he really hadn’t meant to make Jiangnan University so good and grand.

After all, now that Jiangnan University had become so good and grand, there was so much less fun to be had for him, Lu Wu.

“Sigh, I was originally thinking I’d help Jiangnan University rank well by doing well in the university league matches, just get through this year, then lead Jiangnan University in a tough struggle, paying off the university’s debt in five years.

Then take another five years to develop Jiangnan University to its current level.

But with this accidental effort, I completed the ten-year plan in just three months. Little Skeleton, can you understand how I feel right now?

Right now, life feels dull and tasteless, filled with a kind of loneliness of being invincible that you just can’t understand!”

Little Skeleton might not have understood the first part of what Lu Wu said, but it got the loneliness of invincibility at the end and immediately queued up the song for Lu Wu.

“How lonely it is to be invincible…”

Lu Wu’s face darkened, and he gave Little Skeleton a slap on the forehead: “Do you think you’re funny?”

Little Skeleton’s Pupil Fire flickered, feeling especially resentful. Wasn’t it the very loneliness of invincibility Lu Wu had spoken of?

“Forget it, forget it, it’s no use talking to a dumbass like you.

I’ll go talk to someone who can understand me instead.”

Lu Wu was particularly helpless, particularly dejected, as he stood up, timing it perfectly. Today was the open house, and there was a special opening ceremony where Lu Wu needed to make an appearance.

On the other side, at Jiangnan University’s first training field.

A huge stage had been erected here.

Beneath the stage, thousands of Jiangnan University students and a few thousand visitors watched as Zhang Wentao, who had promised ‘just a few words,’ ended up speaking for a whole hour.

Just as everyone was starting to get impatient, he finally said contentedly, “Now, please welcome the president of the Jiangnan University Student Union, the Honorary President of the Jiangnan Province Cultivation Center, and the chairman of Lu Group, Lu Wu, to the stage.”

The moment Zhang Wentao’s words fell, a tremendous roar erupted.

Before the audience could figure out what was happening, a vehicle over two meters high and five meters long drove onto the stage.

The car door opened, and Lu Wu, accompanied by his Little Skeleton, stepped out.

As Lu Wu stepped down, the vehicle started to move and with a few clicks, it transformed into a ten-meter-tall robot.

The cool transformation scene left everyone gaping in amazement.

Then, after their stunned silence, deafening applause and cheers followed.

Clearly, at this moment, the training field had been unofficially renamed Lu Wu Training Field.

While everyone was excited, Lu Wu picked up the microphone handed to him by Zhang Wentao.

“Fellow students, teachers, and friends who have traveled far, welcome to Jiangnan University. I am Lu Wu.

You probably all recognize me and have heard the rumors saying I’m some sort of genius or freak.

And I thank you for your applause and affection just now.

Today, I want to clarify that in fact, I, Lu Wu, am not a genius or a freak; I am just an ordinary young man who has been rather lucky.”

“My journey to this point has been purely due to luck.

The current situation of Jiangnan University is actually a minor contribution on my part, the result of everyone at Jiangnan University’s hard work.

But everyone tends to ignore this fact, preferring to credit everything to me, bestowing upon me undeserved honor, prestige, and wealth.

This does not make me happy. To be honest, my happiest moments were always when I had nothing and was struggling silently in the library.

If possible, I would like to go back to those times, to start over with nothing and work hard again, not to bask in the glory that rightly belongs to the whole of Jiangnan University.”

Um, Lu Wu’s riff in the research lab was just to set the mood for this moment of a master’s lonely path.

It has to be said, Lu Wu did a successful job of capturing the emotions, reminiscent of a certain Mr. Ma.

The audience below was blinded by Lu Wu’s depth of character.

It seemed as if Lu Wu himself was shrouded in a golden light.

However, just as Lu Wu was bathing in this spotlight, an incongruous voice suddenly sounded.

“Do you truly wish to return to a state of having nothing?”

When Lu Wu heard this, he was flabbergasted.

Who was this? Couldn’t they see he was just showing off? How could they be so faceless?

And at that moment, Lu Wu’s bodyguard Elder Tie immediately tensed up.

He was prepared to act but was a step too late, as a red-haired Ms. swept Lu Wu into her arms on the stage.

Soft and fragrant; Lu Wu was completely dumbfounded as he suddenly heard the teasing voice of the red-haired Ms. next to his ear, “I can help you with that.”

Faintly, as Lu Wu fell into a coma, he glimpsed himself being lifted into the air, while Little Skeleton wasted no time diving into his heart…

……

Only two updates today, as it’s Qixi Festival and I’m planning to celebrate the festival with Fifth Miss.

# Chapter 269 - 269 266 Mysterious Cave

﻿Chapter 269: 266 Mysterious Cave Chapter 269: 266 Mysterious Cave December 15th.

For Jiangnan University, this day was the most glorious in the past decade.

Yet, no one expected that it would also become the most chaotic day for Jiangnan University.

The day was sunny and bright.

Lu Wu was still putting on airs on the stage.

Suddenly, a red-haired lady descended from the sky, scooped up Lu Wu in a ‘swoosh’, and disappeared.

This unexpected scene left everyone present utterly dumbfounded.

It also threw the open day at Jiangnan University into disarray.

The whole scene was in complete chaos.

At that moment, Zhang Wentao had no more interest in showing off and promptly asked Tie Xiong for help in the rescue.

However, Tie Xiong expressed that he was completely out of options.

“If it’s her, I can’t catch up with her, nor is it right to chase her. If she gets pushed into a corner, she might do anything.

Better let that guy handle it himself.”

Zhang Wentao didn’t understand nor wanted to listen to Tie Xiong’s words.

Regardless, he must rescue Lu Wu.

Jiangnan University now couldn’t function without Lu Wu.

One reason was that Lu Wu was the current de facto spiritual leader of Jiangnan University, and the other was because two of Jiangnan Mall’s flagship products, the “Steel Armor Wild Boar Evolution Package” and the “Snowman Doll Evolution Package,” could only be produced by Lu Wu.

Lu Wu mastered the most vital part.

After all, these two products were now the lifeblood of Jiangnan University, and naturally, Lu Wu was doing everything possible to ensure these products couldn’t be decoded by others.

Hence, not only did Lu Wu hold the most crucial part, but he also encrypted it. Safe, yes, but without Lu Wu, there was basically no way to produce these two products.

At this time, Jiangnan University simply couldn’t function without Lu Wu.

Without him, Jiangnan University, which had just turned things around, might be beaten back to its original state.

But no matter how anxious Zhang Wentao was, it was useless. The person had been kidnapped, and Tie Xiong didn’t dare to chase for fear of provoking that woman, so Old Zhang could only fret.

And Old Zhang wasn’t the only anxious one.

Or rather, the most anxious person wasn’t even Zhang Wentao.

The one most anxious about Lu Wu being kidnapped was Dudu.

At that moment, her whole demeanor changed.

The ordinarily silly Dudu turned into an angry little lioness when Lu Wu was captured.

Especially fierce!

If Jiang Yuexing, who just happened to be at the scene, hadn’t held her back, she would have chased after them already.

Dudu was restrained and couldn’t chase, but someone else took immediate action.

The one who acted was Zhang Yuechu from Jiangbei University.

Although she wasn’t present at Jiangnan University, the big news of Lu Wu’s kidnapping had spread through the intranet almost instantly, and Zhang Yuechu was one of the first to find out.

However, she didn’t chase after them for Lu Wu’s sake but for that red-haired lady.

Three months ago, it had been her who attacked her, and she had a score to settle!

…

In the dim cave,

the unconscious Lu Wu slowly woke up.

As soon as he opened his eyes, Lu Wu immediately surveyed his surroundings.

“The environment is dark and dry, the space is narrow, so it must be inside a cave. There’s no one around, where did the lady who was holding me go?”

Could she have coveted his handsomeness, whisked him away, and then ran off after having her way?

Thinking this, Lu Wu began to panic and hurriedly checked his condition.

“Clothes are neat, no signs of being undressed, no injuries on the body, no signs of being bound, and it seems Little Skeleton has followed me here.”

He seemed to be fine.

This left Lu Wu very confused.

What’s going on here?

Why had that person kidnapped him?

After kidnapping him, why not tie him up? Aren’t they afraid he will run away?

“Could it be that someone was chasing her, and she thought it was too troublesome to bring me along, so she dumped me here.

That’s unlikely, given her strength, carrying me wouldn’t be difficult.

Moreover, if there were really some reason why she had to abandon me, I wouldn’t be left so unscathed.

In addition, there are no signs of a fight nearby. It doesn’t seem like the other party abandoned me here out of necessity, but rather it seems intentional that I was placed in this particular cave.”

So, the question is, why did she kidnap him, and why throw him into this cave?

“Could it be that there’s some danger in this cave?”

Lu Wu panicked and immediately summoned Little Skeleton from his heart.

When a Summoned Beast reaches the Leader Level, Summoners automatically gain the ability to store their Summoned Beasts within their bodies, thanks to the contract.

Having utilized this ability, Little Skeleton had followed him when Lu Wu was captured.

Now, as soon as Lu Wu released Little Skeleton, it instantly became alert and summoned all its minions to take a defensive stance.

Its state changed as soon as it appeared.

Reliable (Little Skeleton will definitely protect Lu Wu!)

“Okay, I trust you, but there’s no enemy at the moment. Can you call your minions back? I’m almost being squeezed to death by them.”

The cave they were in was only about two meters wide and a little over three meters tall. Little Skeleton summoned three Steel Armor Knights, eleven Skeleton Knights, and a Skeleton Mage at once. The already cramped space was now packed full, and Lu Wu was squeezed into a corner.

It was lucky that Little Skeleton’s minions were all bony, otherwise Lu Wu might have been squeezed to suffocation by now.

Then, under Lu Wu’s command, Little Skeleton retracted most of its minions.

No longer squeezed against the wall, and with a sigh of relief, Lu Wu’s intelligence could finally return to its peak and he continued to ponder: “Whatever the reason, right now this is an opportunity for me.

Let’s see if I can escape first.”

With that, Lu Wu started moving with Little Skeleton.

They cautiously navigated forward through the cave.

As he walked, Lu Wu’s head never stopped moving, continuously swiveling.

He wasn’t being silly; rather, he was trying to ensure his gaze swept every corner around him.

After all, he was a man with a cheat.

Usually, if there was anything abnormal around, Lu Wu’s eyes could detect it.

Sure enough, after only a few steps, Lu Wu spotted something odd; a big black rat was darting towards them.

…

Name: Earth Rat (1st Evolution)

Power: Boss 1 Star

Quality: Ordinary (Silver)

Attribute: Earth

…

“A Boss Level Summoned Beast?”

Seeing the rat’s attributes and the way it charged over, Lu Wu was instantly baffled.

Were these rats always so brave?

Even a Boss 1 Star rat dared to act so hostile?

There was no need for Little Skeleton to take action; Lu Wu simply reached out with a flash of lightning and squashed the dashing big black rat dead.

To kill a Boss Level Summoned Beast with bare hands, Lu Wu had become quite a formidable expert without realizing it.

However, before Lu Wu could fully enjoy his triumph, a rustling sound rose up, and hundreds, if not thousands, of rats surged towards them…

# Chapter 270 - 270 267 Artificial Secret Realm

﻿Chapter 270: 267 Artificial Secret Realm Chapter 270: 267 Artificial Secret Realm Inside a mystic cave.

Lu Wu stared in disbelief at the thousands of Earth Rats hurling towards him.

“Damn it, how is this possible!”

Lu Wu was not an ordinary Summoner.

In addition to being a Professional Summoner, he was also a Master Cultivation Master, the man who was destined to become a Grandmaster.

Lu Wu’s knowledge reserve in the field of Summoned Beasts was far beyond what an average person could imagine.

His understanding of Earth Rats went beyond the information on their attribute panel; he had even more details mastered from various texts.

“As far as I know, although Earth Rats live in groups, it’s usually just a couple with a bunch of babies, and the young leave to start their own families once they mature. At most, there might be seven or eight gathered together, so how could there be such a large number of them? And they’re so aggressive too, daring to attack ‘Little Skeleton’ who is at Leader Level despite being mere Boss Level.

Also, why can’t I see their state? This is not normal!”

Lu Wu couldn’t make sense of it all, but now wasn’t the time to ponder these mysteries.

The rats had already pounced, leaving Lu Wu no choice but to grab ‘Little Skeleton’ and run.

He knew it was dangerous to face such an unknown number of opponents head-on without understanding their capabilities.

Furthermore, Lu Wu noted that they were standing on earth which could become precarious in a battle, considering that Earth Rats can burrow!

Thus, Lu Wu and ‘Little Skeleton’ switched on their [Charging] skill and started sprinting wildly.

With both activating their skills, they sparked and zipped along, creating a trail of fire and lightning.

Their speed was incredibly fast, and the special effects were dazzling, bringing a different kind of brightness to the dark cave.

However, Lu Wu soon realized the flashy skill effects were not necessarily a good thing.

Although the cave was not merely a straight path and had many forks, which they had taken several of, the flashing lightning they emitted made it impossible for them to shake off the rats.

What was even more troubling for Lu Wu was that, within less than three minutes of running, he noticed that the rat horde behind them had grown in size.

It seemed as if an inexhaustible supply of rats was joining the chase.

This made Lu Wu quite nervous as he couldn’t help worrying, “Could the entire cave be filled with rats?”

Well, Lu Wu guessed right.

Soon enough, rats started surging towards them from the front as well.

Lu Wu’s complexion changed; they were now trapped.

There was no choice but to fight!

“Little Skeleton, break through!”

(Leave it to ‘Little Skeleton’—’Little Skeleton’ is fierce!)

As ‘Little Skeleton’ acknowledged the command, its Bone Staff transformed into a Silver Spear, leading the charge into the fray of the approaching rat horde.

With its Long Spear dancing in hand, lightning flashing, it effortlessly swept away a large swath of Earth Rats.

Then, it unleashed a strike of [Thunder Spear].

Leader Level power combined with the enhancement of the Silver Spear, plus the burst of an Advanced Skill from Master Level proficiency.

In one fell swoop, it shredded through the dozens of Earth Rats in front of them, allowing Lu Wu to break out of the encirclement with ease, avoiding a pincer attack.

This was the absolute crushing might of a Leader Level against Boss 1 Star.

But this was not something to celebrate.

Because Lu Wu and ‘Little Skeleton’ were in no better a situation than before.

Soon, more groups of rats moved to intercept them.

Lu Wu had to rely on ‘Little Skeleton’s’ repeated bursts to break free again and again.

Yet, the cave was surprisingly vast, and the number of Earth Rats inside was unimaginable.

Continuing like this, they might run out of energy before even escaping the cave.

To change this situation, Lu Wu’s mind raced wildly as he surveyed everything around him, gathering information and analyzing it.

“The stability of this cave exceeds expectations. ‘Little Skeleton’ has unleashed so many bursts along the way, yet I haven’t seen any damage to the cave, let alone a collapse.

This is highly abnormal.

The state of these Earth Rats is also abnormal since I can’t see their state.

Plus, their power is remarkably uniform, all at Boss 1 Star, and their numbers are uncountable. ‘Little Skeleton’ has killed over a hundred since we started, and yet they keep coming in endless waves.

This is completely unscientific.

Also, I’ve noticed that the surroundings of the cave seem familiar, but I’ve been moving in one direction the whole time through intersections without turns, and the paths were not long enough to lose my sense of direction.

I should not be coming back to the same place, but the environment keeps repeating.

The cave feels as if it’s been duplicated in modules.”

All these abnormalities, these dissonances led Lu Wu to a realization about the situation he was in.

“I might be inside an Artificial Secret Realm.”

This made Lu Wu’s expression sour.

“It must be. I was wondering how that woman disappeared. How come there were no restrictions; it turns out this cave is the tool for my confinement.

Without a doubt, the place where I woke up must be the only safety zone in this Artificial Secret Realm.

As soon as I leave that area, no matter where I go, I’ll be chased by Earth Rats.”

With this in mind, a choice presented itself to Lu Wu.

Either continue aimlessly wandering outside like a headless fly, to be exhausted to death by the endless horde of Earth Rats, or to return to the safety zone and be a prisoner.

Faced with this dilemma, Lu Wu didn’t hesitate for long.

“Little Skeleton, let’s go back!”

Little Skeleton was stunned and unsure why Lu Wu wanted to go back.

But he obediently followed Lu Wu’s instructions, and the two of them started to head back.

After about half an hour, Lu Wu and Little Skeleton had returned to the place where Lu Wu had woken up.

Sure enough, once they got back there, the swarms of Earth Rats had vanished.

This situation undoubtedly confirmed Lu Wu’s suspicion.

He was trapped by the Red-haired Ms. within an Artificial Secret Realm.

Almost at the same moment that Lu Wu realized this, the voice of the Red-haired Ms. echoed in the cave.

“One hour and three minutes, you’re much better than a certain someone. He killed for three days and three nights before he realized something was wrong and came back here.”

Upon hearing this, Lu Wu immediately put on a sweet smile, “Hello, beautiful, kind, generous and pretty sister!”

“Hmm, the first thing you do is flirt with me, you are just like him.

Some people told me you were his son and I didn’t believe them, but now I’m starting to.

It looks like he’s been doing well these years, having a child who has grown so big. Now, what should I do to cherish you?”

Lu Wu could tell that the Red-haired Ms.’ tone became gentler as she spoke, which terrified him. It felt as if at any moment she might pull out a cleaver and jump out to chop him up.

Lu Wu quickly shook his head.

“Beautiful sister, you’ve got the wrong person. Although I have no idea who this ‘he’ you’re talking about is, he’s definitely not my dad.

My name is Lu Wu, my father’s name is Lu Haikong.

He’s just a plain and ordinary man.

Someone must be jealous of my talent and is framing me!

Both my father and I are really good people,  
 Especially in relationships, we are both incredibly faithful and good men!”

Lu Wu tried his best to clear both his and his father’s names.

But the more he emphasized loyalty, the more the Red-haired Ms. started to laugh.

That laugh, how should I put it, was very pleasant to the ears but made Lu Wu increasingly uneasy.

He couldn’t help but lean closer to his Little Skeleton.

Though Little Skeleton couldn’t perceive how creepy the laugh was, it could sense Lu Wu’s panic.

So, Little Skeleton hugged Lu Wu.

Comforting (Don’t worry, Little Skeleton will protect Lu Wu. Little Skeleton is super strong.

Even Tuantuan can’t beat Little Skeleton!)  
 Well, Little Skeleton was getting cocky again.

But in this environment, Little Skeleton’s arrogance was quite useful.

With this hug from Little Skeleton, the voice of the Red-haired Ms. overhead became even more unnerving.

“Not even sparing your Summoned Beast, this exact same heartless madness, how could you not be father and son?”

This was a huge misunderstanding for Lu Wu.

Was he the kind of gentleman who tried every means to turn his Summoned Beasts into little sisters?

Clearly not!

He, Lu Wu, stood tall and firm. How could he possibly have any thoughts about his own Summoned Beast?

For the first time, he crawled out from Little Skeleton’s embrace to show his innocence.

“The more you try to cover, the more it gets exposed, you’re indeed a scumbag!”

Lu Wu’s face darkened, and he returned to Little Skeleton’s embrace.

“So brazen, utterly despicable!”

That was too much.

Lu Wu clarified, “Sister, I really don’t have feelings for Little Skeleton!”

Now it was Little Skeleton’s turn to be unhappy.

Bone hand on its hip.

Liar (Lu Wu likes Little Skeleton the most!)  
 “Go away, go cool off somewhere else. Can’t you see I’m about to chill out? Stop messing around!”

Lu Wu pushed Little Skeleton away.

With this push, the Red-haired Ms.’s laughter became even more gentle.

“Leading someone on and then abandoning them, you seem very skilled at this, don’t you?”

Alright, Lu Wu gave up struggling. He realized that she was completely convinced that he was a scumbag who even had an affair with Little Skeleton, and whatever he said was useless.

He had to change the subject.

“Sister, is there something you need from me? If there’s anything I can help you with, just tell me!

I guarantee I’ll handle it perfectly for you.”

“I want to meet your father!”

Lu Wu had learned his lesson and no longer argued about whether his father was a good dad or the dad she was looking for. He immediately agreed, “Meet my dad? Easy! Just let me go, and one phone call will guarantee to bring him over to you.”

As soon as Lu Wu said this, the Red-haired Ms. laughed again.

“Such a good child, but I doubt calling him will work.

I’ve already tried calling him using your phone and sent him a video of you, but there’s been no response from his side so far.

So, we need to try a different approach.”

Lu Wu, full of the will to survive, slapped his chest, “Whatever method you want, just say it. I guarantee I’ll cooperate with you!”

The Red-haired Ms. was pleased and joyfully shared her plan with Lu Wu in a gentle voice.

“I plan to find a Mother and Son Tree, then tie you beneath it and cut you with a knife, one slice at a time, until he shows up.”

# Chapter 271 - 271 268 Crazy Battle

﻿Chapter 271: 268 Crazy Battle Chapter 271: 268 Crazy Battle “Old Lu, Old Lu, I always thought you were a good man like me,”  
 “I never expected you to be such a scumbag.”

“You’re not even human anymore, bringing shame to our Lu Family, I, Lu Wu, cut off ties with you from today!”

…

Inside the safety zone of the Artificial Secret Realm.

Lu Wu held his phone as he furiously cursed.

While cursing, he also sneakily paid attention to whether Ms. Red-haired made any moves.

Obviously, he was cursing for someone else to hear.

Well, today marked the third day since Lu Wu had been imprisoned in the Artificial Secret Realm.

Over these three days, Lu Wu had a pretty good understanding of Ms. Red-haired’s personality through several exchanges.

In general, two words could sum up Ms. Red-haired.

Psychotic, obsessive!

Once she decided something, it was practically unchangeable.

If she believes Lu Haikong is a scumbag, then Lu Haikong is a scumbag, just as she believed that Lu Wu and Little Skeleton were having an affair, so they were.

No matter how Lu Wu explained, it was useless.

And explaining might even provoke her.

So, for these three days, he had been indulging this lady’s whims.

Every day, with nothing better to do, he would hold Little Skeleton’s phone and curse Lu Haikong, sentence by sentence.

On the surface, he seemed to be trying to appease Ms. Red-haired.

In reality, he was behind the scenes frantically cramming knowledge about the “Artificial Secret Realm.”

Of course, Lu Wu was not the type of person who would sit back and accept his fate.

From the very beginning, his desire to escape had never died.

Especially after he learned that this woman wanted to find a Mother and Son Tree to tie him up and torment him, Lu Wu’s determination only grew stronger.

One reason was Lu Wu’s overwhelming will to survive.

Another was not wanting Li Ruyu to get hurt.

The so-called Mother and Son Tree is a special plant, which mainly serves to establish a unique connection between mother and child through their bloodline.

It is generally used to pass on power or for healing.

But there are also other malicious uses.

For example, the kind of pain transmission this woman wanted — if Lu Wu were tormented under the Mother and Son Tree, Li Ruyu would feel the same level of pain.

That was something Lu Wu did not want to see, so he had to run.

And to run, the first thing Lu Wu needed to do was to leave this “Artificial Secret Realm.”

But it was impossible to brute force his way out of such an Artificial Secret Realm; he needed to outsmart it, and to outsmart it, Lu Wu needed a good understanding of the realm.

That was why Lu Wu had been cursing Lu Haikong for three days.

Of course, the fact that Lu Wu could curse for three days wasn’t only to distract Ms. Red-haired; he certainly had grievances against Old Lu.

Lu Wu was no fool.

He just did not want to admit it, but deep down he knew very well that the scumbag Ms. Red-haired was looking for might be Lu Haikong.

If it was him…

This guy used to be away on business for 200 days a year; Dudu’s apple, little goldfish’s origin, and his recent whereabouts for the past half-year — all would make sense.

This made Lu Wu very unhappy.

“Damn it, not only did you pretend to be weak and not bring me along, but you also got me into this huge mess, you old man better pray I can’t get out, or else you better prepare to kneel until your legs break!”

After muttering viciously,  
 Lu Wu tossed Little Skeleton’s phone to the idle Little Skeleton drawing circles on the ground and then closed his eyes to sort through the knowledge he had crammed into his brain these past three days.

Here, Lu Wu must commend his own intelligence, having previously stuffed all the knowledge he could collect from Jiangnan University, the Cultivation Center, and the internal network into the phone.

Otherwise, being locked in the Artificial Secret Realm, he would be totally clueless.

Regarding the Artificial Secret Realm, Jiangnan University had done quite a bit of research — they had created 23 of their own, with systematic information available in the library.

After reading these materials, Lu Wu had a comprehensive understanding of the Artificial Secret Realm.

The so-called Artificial Secret Realm does not mean creating a realm out of thin air by artificial means.

That would be too difficult and costly; virtually an impossible task.

Artificial Secret Realms are generally modified from fragments of real ones.

There are roughly two types: one like Jiangnan University’s building style, fixed in place and immovable.

The other is a movable type of Artificial Secret Realm, even portable.

The one Lu Wu was currently in should be of the latter type.

And this type of realm is generally not a modern creation, or rather, should be said like this.

This type of movable Artificial Secret Realm is usually obtained from the ruins of real ones, believed to be a product of another civilization.

Such portable Artificial Secret Realms are generally an item.

Once trapped inside, there is only one way out, and that is if the item’s owner lets you out.

This means, unless Ms. Red-haired is willing to release Lu Wu, there is no way he could get out for sure.

“Getting her to let me out also has only one possibility, and that is when she finds the Mother and Son Tree. By that time, I’d be getting cut up anyway, so it would actually be safer not to leave.”

In that case, it seemed that Lu Wu had only one path left: to wait for death.

But Lu Wu was definitely not someone who was willing to just wait for death.

“Others may not have recorded a way, but I will research one myself.

This Secret Realm is an Artificial Secret Realm as well; I’ll look for a way out with that mindset. With my abilities, I’m certain I’ll find one.”

As Lu Wu silently psyched himself up, he began to ponder over how to find a way to leave the place.

“First and foremost, I must understand as much as possible about this Artificial Secret Realm. Merely hiding in the safe zone and waiting for death won’t give me any solution.

I have to traverse the entire Artificial Secret Realm, to understand every nook and cranny.

I also have to try going all out in battle against the rats.

Only by grasping the rules that govern this Secret Realm will I have a chance to glimpse its principles, and only then will there be hope of leaving.”

Once he had a plan, Lu Wu immediately sprang into action.

“Little Skeleton, let’s go; we’ve been sitting for three days, and it’s time to stretch our limbs.”

With that, Lu Wu pulled up Little Skeleton, who had just barely gotten hold of his phone and had started watching TV for a short while.

Resentful (You’re so mean, Lu Wu!)  
 Resentful as it was, Little Skeleton still obediently followed Lu Wu out.

As they stepped out of the safe zone, the Earth Rats appeared once again.

“This time I’ll do it, I need to stretch my muscles a bit.”

Thanks to Ms. Red-Haired, who occasionally provided food for Lu Wu, he was quite energetic despite having been confined for three days.

As soon as he came out, he asked Little Skeleton for the Bone Staff.

As the owner of the Little Skeleton, he could still use its Equipment.

With the Bone Staff in hand and lightning flashing, it immediately turned into a Silver Spear. In his hands, the Silver Spear burst forth with power.

“Hundred Birds Phoenix Spear!”

“Seven Probing Coiling Dragon Spear!”

“Blossoms Gun!”

“Dragon Head-Raising!” “Return Horse Spear!”

With each roar, a burst of lightning flashed, and Lu Wu unleashed a terrifying sequence of spear techniques.

The ferocity and terror were overwhelming.

Wherever the Long Spear went, no rat was spared.

If this scene were placed before Lu Wu crossed over, anyone who didn’t know better would have thought Lu Wu was an unmatched Gun God capable of using supreme spear techniques.

But in reality, those spear techniques were just him shouting for fun.

He would only repeat the same few moves over and over again.

If it wasn’t a “Charging Draw,” it was a “Charging Stab.”

Despite its simplicity, Lu Wu became more and more adept with even those few moves, creating variety as he played with them.

Gradually, his attacks seemed to develop a pattern.

His endurance, however, was weak; as a Summoner, his Energy wasn’t as plentiful as that of Summoned Beasts. After only about ten minutes, his energy was spent.

His body no longer sparking with electricity, Lu Wu could only rely on brute force to fight the rats, and the spear’s Attack Power sharply dropped.

Where before a casual spear thrust could handle a rat, now he had to hit their vital points.

Seeing the situation, Little Skeleton prepared to step in and help Lu Wu, but Lu Wu stopped him.

“No need to come over; I can handle this myself.”

After preventing Little Skeleton from intervening, Lu Wu focused even more intently on the battle.

He worked hard to make each spear thrust hit the rats’ vital points.

He worked hard to dodge the rats’ attacks.

But Lu Wu’s human strength was limited. While he started robustly, he soon showed weaknesses, and an Earth Rat burst from the ground, clawing towards Lu Wu’s groin.

Despite Lu Wu’s quick reaction, with a clench of his legs, he blocked the claw.

At the same time as he was attacked, the passive effect of the “Cold Ice Body” Skill was triggered, frosting the Earth Rat’s body, but also completely disrupting Lu Wu’s attack rhythm.

His weaknesses fully exposed, the surrounding Earth Rats showed no mercy and quickly swarmed him.

In an instant, Lu Wu was pinned to the ground.

Under such circumstances, Lu Wu could only give up his Long Spear and curl into a ball, covering his groin with both hands while letting the rats attack away.

This compelled Little Skeleton to intervene once more, as he could not stand idly by. With a sweep of the Long Spear and a flash of lightning, he helped Lu Wu break free from the encirclement.

The rescued Lu Wu, however, was not ready to quit.

Having just been beaten up, he now seemed especially Excited.

He had even regained some Energy, and without a word, he snatched the spear back from Little Skeleton and again plunged into battle with the Earth Rats.

After not too long, Lu Wu broke out with sudden strength, the Long Spear alive with electric light, clearing a dozen nearby Earth Rats in a burst, and incidentally, draining the little recovered Energy as well.

Soon enough, Lu Wu was once again knocked down by the rats, leaving Little Skeleton to come to the rescue anxiously once more.

Yet after being saved, Lu Wu remained just as elated, continuously shouting, “Thrilling, thrilling, thrilling!”

It was clearly the effect of Han’s “silly” Skill, which kept Lu Wu Excited, letting him enjoy the thrill of becoming stronger through battle.

Afterward, Lu Wu and Little Skeleton started an endless loop.

Lu Wu would be surrounded, Little Skeleton would rush to the rescue, Lu Wu would break free, snatch the spear and go wild, before getting swarmed again…

Throughout this process, Lu Wu felt as though he was soaring, while the Little Skeleton by his side felt incredibly sad.

(This is bad, Lu Wu has broken just like Han!)

# Chapter 272 - 272 269 Yan Ruxue

﻿Chapter 272: 269 Yan Ruxue Chapter 272: 269 Yan Ruxue “Ms. Red-haired, what’s your name?”

“Where did you meet my scumbag dad?”

“How did this scumbag cheat your feelings?”

……

Inside the Artificial Secret Realm.

After a crazy day of battling, Lu Wu, who had been carried back by Princess Little Skeleton.

While savoring the aftertaste of being beaten, he casually chatted up Ms. Red-haired, who hadn’t spoken much for a while.

She didn’t pay him any attention, and Lu Wu didn’t mind; he kept talking to himself.

“Do you want to know what kind of person my mom was?”

As soon as Lu Wu mentioned this, Ms. Red-haired, who had just ignored him, couldn’t sit still anymore.

She had looked through Li Ruyu’s information and discovered that she was just an ordinary woman.

An ordinary woman in terms of looks, power, and personality.

At least among the many women Lu Haikong had been with, she was the least remarkable.

If she had to say something special, it was that she couldn’t find any information on Li Ruyu from twenty years ago.

But that wasn’t strange; it was possible that Lu Wu hid it from others for fear of revenge.

So, Ms. Red-haired was also very curious and couldn’t figure out where she had lost.

However, while Ms. Red-haired was curious, Lu Wu suddenly stopped talking.

This made her very uncomfortable: “Why aren’t you talking?”

Hearing Ms. Red-haired’s voice, the corners of Lu Wu’s mouth turned up.

“You’re listening, huh? I thought you weren’t interested, so I didn’t want to keep talking to myself.”

“You can talk!”

“Ah, I don’t want to talk now, not unless you answer my question first.

Ms. Red-haired, what’s your name?”

Lu Wu’s words plunged Ms. Red-haired into silence.

She was very familiar with that expression; it was just like someone else’s, making her itch for action.

“Am I being too nice to you? Do you need to suffer a little?”

“Bring it on!”

As soon as Ms. Red-haired said this, Lu Wu got excited: “Whip me to your heart’s content!”

His excited appearance astonished Ms. Red-haired and confirmed to Little Skeleton nearby that their Lu Wu really had gone bad, becoming as silly as Han.

But then, Little Skeleton thought for a second, if Lu Wu had become as silly as Han, wouldn’t it be much easier to make him happy?

Little Skeleton then had a bold idea, and with a ‘puff’,

the end of the long spear gently tapped Lu Wu’s body.

“Ah!”

Lu Wu moaned with pain and pleasure, taken by surprise.

Seeing that this tactic seemed effective, Little Skeleton gave Lu Wu a few more thumps.

This angered Lu Wu, and he snatched the long spear from Little Skeleton, whipping Little Skeleton’s head repeatedly.

“Are you dumb, are you dumb, are you dumb?

Didn’t you see I was talking to Ms. Red-haired? Why are you causing trouble here? Go play with your phone over there.”

He shooed Little Skeleton aside and continued chatting with Ms. Red-haired.

But after Little Skeleton’s interruption, Ms. Red-haired also realized that Lu Wu seemed to be the kind of pervert who got more excited the more he was beaten, a discovery that made her feel she might have figured out where she had lost.

Lu Wu was so much like Lu Haikong; many habits were probably the same.

Perhaps she had lost because she was too good to the scumbag, didn’t want him to get hurt, which instead made the scumbag find it dull.

Realizing this, Ms. Red-haired felt she had mastered the trick to reclaiming Lu Haikong.

Once this was forced out, she would directly find a small dark room to lock Lu Haikong in.

Whips and candles all at once, she was sure she could tame him.

“Ms. Red-haired, Ms. Red-haired, Ms. Red-haired, are you there?”

Lu Wu’s calls interrupted Ms. Red-haired’s fantasy.

But because she had found a way to deal with Lu Haikong, Ms. Red-haired was still in a good mood and nodded: “What is it?”

“Ms. Red-haired, what’s your name? I can’t keep calling you Ms. Red-haired, can I?”

After a moment of silence, Ms. Red-haired responded: “Yan Ruxue!”

Lu Wu got excited all of a sudden: “Yan Ruxue? That’s a beautiful name, suits you so well, you are just that kind of stunning and pure woman.”

Lu Wu was never stingy with his praise or flattery.

But unexpectedly, he hit a sore spot, and Yan Ruyu, who was initially frosty, responded more warmly: “Your dad said the same thing!”

This sudden tenderness made Lu Wu shiver and he quickly leaned toward Little Skeleton.

At this point, Yan Ruyu’s mood was completely ruined by Lu Wu, so she stopped paying attention to him and withdrew her consciousness, continuing her efforts to find the Mother and Son Tree.

On Lu Wu’s side, once he realized he was no longer the focus of attention,

he once again snatched the phone from Little Skeleton, who had just picked it up and just started a game.

Numbness (Lu Wu was no longer the good Lu Wu, Little Skeleton must be strong!)

“Strong your head, you big-headed ghost!”

Lu Wu slapped the little guy again, then made Little Skeleton sit in front of him to block the view. Taking advantage of the moment Yan Ruyu was distracted, Lu Wu quickly recorded all the intelligence he had just gathered into his cell phone.

Hmm, even though the previous fights had been intense, Lu Wu hadn’t neglected to collect information, and he managed to gather quite a bit.

(The Earth Rat in the Secret Realm, when killed, would decompose naturally within ten minutes, which means that the Summoned Beasts here are not really Summoned Beasts. They are just segments of illusory beasts, or say programs, formed by Energy Bodies)

(If so, the Artificial Secret Realm must have a system that covers everything outside the safe area and can refresh the illusion beasts anytime, anywhere.)

(In addition, the power of the Summoned Beasts also changes. For the first two hours, they are all Boss One Star. After two hours, their power begins to increase, and Boss Two Star Summoned Beasts start to appear.

The specific limit is unknown, but it’s not likely to reach Lord Level, as Yan Ruxue mentioned that scumbag Lu had fought for three days and nights the first time he entered.

If the Earth Rat could reach Lord Level, he definitely wouldn’t have lasted that long.

…)

Lu Wu typed out a lengthy segment of intelligence.

After finishing, he began to look over the information and fell into deep thought.

“I have some ideas, but the intelligence is still too scant. I need to collect more.”

In the following days,

Lu Wu’s life in the Artificial Secret Realm became routine.

Once his strength recovered and his injuries had mostly healed, Lu Wu started to go wild with Little Skeleton.

They only returned when they were battered and exhausted.

As soon as he returned, Lu Wu began to chat up Yan Ruxue, talking about anything and everything, acting cute, and begging for various foods.

Sometimes Yan Ruyu would respond with a sentence or two, other times she ignored him.

However, during this period, Lu Wu also figured out a set of topics that Yan Ruxue would surely engage with.

That was to talk with Yan Ruxue about Li Ruyu.

As long as it was about that topic, Yan Ruxue was almost certain not to ignore him, and she seemed more spirited when it came to conversations about Ni Ni.

Additionally, Lu Wu found that Yan Ruxue was especially interested in how Li Ruyu usually treated Lu Haikong.

Especially in terms of how Li Ruyu punished Lu Haikong.

Talking about this perked Lu Wu up as well.

He even categorized the punishments into levels.

The lowest level involved kneeling on keyboards and durians.

A bit more serious was pinching hands and pulling out fingernails,

And beyond that were the infamous Ten Great Tortures of the Qing Dynasty.

Lu Wu shared everything he could think of, just to vent on behalf of Yan Ruxue. But to his surprise, Yan Ruxue started taking notes in a notebook, clearly intending to actually give them a try.

Lu Wu was oblivious to this. If he knew, he definitely wouldn’t be this collected.

He would definitely be more unrestrained.

That old rascal deserved some comeuppance.

As days passed in such an environment, before he knew it, half a month had gone by since Lu Wu had been captured.

In this half-month, thanks to being beaten up, Lu Wu significantly improved his power.

When he first entered the Secret Realm, his Combat Power was merely at Leader 0 Star level. Half a month later, Lu Wu’s Combat Power could reach Leader 2 Stars.

And even Little Skeleton,

Who had done nothing but watch Lu Wu get beaten up, had improved by one star.

This made Lu Wu very unhappy.

He, Lu Wu, had taken a beating to go up one star, and Little Skeleton, doing nothing, also went up one star.

What’s up with that, they grow stronger through beatings—Han and Skeleton—and Little Skeleton grows stronger just by watching Lu Wu get beaten up?

It made him so angry that he was tempted to turn Little Skeleton into a person and smack his butt.

But apart from that irritation, everything else was pretty good.

In half a month, Lu Wu had gathered almost all the intelligence he needed.

Now, Lu Wu had a way to escape.

But he just didn’t dare to try it because his method was a bit conspicuous, and he was afraid that trying it would mean his demise.

So, Lu Wu had been waiting for the right opportunity.

But whether this opportunity would come, Lu Wu was not sure.

Yesterday, Yan Ruxue had already told him that she had found a lead to the Mother and Son Tree and expected to find it within the next couple of days.

That meant if Lu Wu couldn’t find an opportunity in the next two days,

He’d probably die without even trying.

This made Lu Wu feel helpless and even more distressed that in all this time, there had been no news from his rotten old man back home, as if he had given up on his son.

It was quite despairing for Lu Wu.

And just as Lu Wu was about to lose hope of escape, he suddenly felt the entire Artificial Secret Realm shaking.

Lu Wu narrowed his eyes. It seemed that his chance had just arrived!

# Chapter 273 - 273 270 Devouring Core

﻿Chapter 273: 270 Devouring Core Chapter 273: 270 Devouring Core After over half a month of research, Lu Wu had become quite skilled in the domain of Artificial Secret Realms.

He knew clearly that if the Artificial Secret Realm was shaking violently, it must be under fierce attack from outside.

In other words, Yan Ruxue must be fighting with someone at this moment.

Lu Wu didn’t know who the other party was, but he was clear that this was almost his only chance to get away.

But Lu Wu still didn’t dare to be careless.

If Yan Ruxue was just experiencing minor skirmishes and resolved the battle quickly, any rash action on his part would spell doom.

So, before he acted, Lu Wu decided to test the waters first.

“Sister.”

“Beautiful Yan Ruxue, are you there?”

“I have a big secret about my mom to tell you?”

…

There was no reaction; she must be too preoccupied.

But Lu Wu was still not at ease and added another line: “Want to know why my dad chose my mom over you?

Because you’re way inferior to my mom!”

After saying that, he quickly hugged Little Skeleton.

This was a crazy act of testing the waters with his own life.

With his understanding of Yan Ruxue, if she had any spare time, she would definitely not stand for that.

But after waiting for two minutes, there was still no response.

Lu Wu’s spirits lifted, and he quickly handed the phone to Little Skeleton.

“Quick, quick, quick, Little Skeleton, get moving!

Call out two ‘Steel-armored Boar Knights.'”

Little Skeleton immediately summoned two minions; as soon as they appeared, Lu Wu instructed Little Skeleton to leave the boars and the two Bone Spears behind and send the two skeletons back.

“One person, one boar, follow my command and charge!”

Lu Wu grabbed the two Bone Spears, mounted a boar, and directed Little Skeleton, who also mounted a boar, to charge out.

Because time was short, Lu Wu didn’t clear the way himself but had Little Skeleton do it.

After all, although he had been fighting for most of the month, his Power might not necessarily surpass Little Skeleton’s, plus this was his first time riding a boar, so it was better for Little Skeleton to lead the way.

Little Skeleton did not disappoint Lu Wu.

Leading the charge on his boar!

The Bone Staff in his hands took on the form of a Silver Spear, with lightning flickering along its length—the spear was like a dragon. Under Lu Wu’s command, it was a storm of sparks and lightning.

Lu Wu lay flush against the boar’s back, clung tightly to the beast, and followed closely behind Little Skeleton.

While keeping up, Lu Wu pondered the method to breach this Artificial Secret Realm.

“The ‘Earth Rats’ within this Artificial Secret Realm can become continuously stronger and regenerate.

This means that there is a system within this Artificial Secret Realm that allows them to become stronger and regenerate.

What I need to do now is to locate the core of this system.”

“And to find the core of this system, the upcoming actions are crucial.

I need to gather a large number of Earth Rats and eliminate them en masse instantaneously.

This kind of instantaneous consumption can force the system to increase Energy Operation, which is how I will locate the core.”

Lu Wu not only knew clearly what he needed to do.

He also knew exactly where to go to do it.

Over the past half month, he had scoured every nook and cranny of this secret realm, and he had already marked out in his mind the locations where the core likely resided. He was confident he could find it with a systematic search.

Soon, Lu Wu and Little Skeleton arrived at the first destination.

Upon reaching it, Lu Wu yelled loudly.

“Let’s get to work!”

Amidst his bellow, Lu Wu swung his spears and charged out in reverse, while Little Skeleton summoned its minions.

Of course, it didn’t foolishly summon them all at once like before, but in pairs.

The minions that emerged followed behind Lu Wu and started charging.

Soon, Little Skeleton’s cavalry was formed.

Lu Wu and Little Skeleton became the two leaders of the cavalry. Lu Wu led the charge to the designated spot, stopped, the troops turned around with Lu Wu shifting from front to back, and Little Skeleton shifted from back to front.

The troops charged again.

In this manner, Lu Wu and his cavalry repeatedly charged and violently slew the Earth Rats.

After thirteen rounds, the number of kills roughly matched the value Lu Wu had estimated, but there were no changes here.

“Change spots!”

With a command from Lu Wu, Little Skeleton promptly withdrew its minions, and they moved to the second location to continue the operation they had begun.

Lu Wu had a total of seven suspected places on his list. It took two to three minutes to reach each, and slaughtering took about ten minutes.

With some luck, Lu Wu could find it in as little as over ten minutes, or it might take one to two hours if he was unlucky.

Or it was even possible that after checking all places, he might still not find the right location.

However, Lu Wu was quite fortunate.

In just under half an hour, at the third location, Lu Wu noticed something unusual.

“It’s here!

The core should be behind this wall. Little Skeleton, break it down for me!”

Upon Lu Wu’s command,

Little Skeleton immediately activated its “Skeleton Commander” Talent.

With the Talent activated, Little Skeleton’s Power surged from Leader 2 stars to Lord 1 Star.

As its Power surged, Little Skeleton gripped the Long Spear in its hand tightly.

Light flickered, energy gathered—all set for an outburst of the “Thunder Dragon” skill that came with the Silver Spear Form.

This concentration of power caused Yan Ruxue outside the Artificial Secret Realm to change expression.

Subconsciously, she glanced at the necklace on her chest.

“He really is his son, calling everyone ‘sister’ sweetly before, but when it’s time to strike, he’s more ruthless than anyone.”

Yan Ruxue spoke gently, yet her hand moved towards her necklace.

And just then, a cold snort sounded, “Who gave you the confidence to be distracted in battle against me?”

A flame descended from the sky, heading straight for Yan Ruxue, forcing her to withdraw her hand and raise her head in defense.

Almost at the same time, Little Skeleton within the Artificial Secret Realm thrust his spear.

Inside the Secret Realm, a wall crumbled, revealing a brilliant light that emanated from behind it.

“It’s open!”

Lu Wu’s face lit up with delight, ready to order Little Skeleton to charge in and destroy the core.

Almost simultaneously, from the broken wall, a cute baby rat emerged.

The moment it appeared, Lu Wu noticed that the Earth Rats, which had been fiercely attacking them, instantly stopped their assault.

“Something’s not right; Little Skeleton, kill that rat baby,” Lu Wu quickly reacted, and Little Skeleton’s response was swift, thrusting out the Long Spear almost immediately.

But it was still a step too late.

The rat baby vanished in an instant.

As the light behind the wall disappeared, so did the countless Earth Rats around them, transforming into energy and dissipating.

As everything else vanished, something else was appearing.

Where the rat baby had just disappeared, a fist-sized figure materialized out of thin air and started to expand rapidly.

In the blink of an eye, a yellow-skinned rat over two meters tall appeared in front of Lu Wu.

…

Name: Mountain Rat

Power: Lord 3 stars

Attribute: Earth

Weakness: Water

Description: You guessed it right; this rat is just the outer shell, the Energy Core is inside its body; defeat it to get the Energy Core.

…

“Defeat my ass!”

As everyone knows, Lu Wu, like Nu Xiao, is civilized.

He usually doesn’t curse, but right now, he couldn’t help it.

Damn it, a Lord 3 Star beast, how could one possibly fight this?

“Run!”

Lu Wu could only let Little Skeleton hurry to gather its underlings and run like mad.

But it was already a bit too late for Lu Wu and his group to consider escaping as a terrifying gravity immediately bore down upon them.

This gravity was far more brutal than Tuantuan’s.

Lu Wu and Little Skeleton were directly pinned to the ground, immovable—yes, Little Skeleton too.

Forget about it having just recalled its underlings; even with its own power at a mere Leader 2 stars, even if it had called them all out and used its talents to reach Lord 1 Star power, it would still be fake strength, unable to withstand the onslaught in front of them.

“Although I was hoping for a stroke of luck, it seems my luck really isn’t with me this time!”

However, just when Lu Wu felt that his escape was about to fail, the entire Artificial Secret Realm suddenly began shaking violently.

Lu Wu vaguely heard Yan Ruxue calling out Zhang Yuechu’s name, exceptionally gentle.

Lu Wu was stunned, and before he could figure out what was happening, the Artificial Secret Realm shook even more intensely.

At that moment, the overwhelming gravity pressing down on them vanished.

Lu Wu turned to look at the Mountain Rat and noticed its power level fluctuating wildly.

One moment it was Lord Three Stars, the next it changed to Leader 3 stars, and then back to Lord Three Stars.

The entire rat seemed to be frozen stiff.

“Someone has seriously damaged the main body of this Secret Realm from the outside; this is a perfect opportunity!”

Realizing the situation, Lu Wu’s eyes sparkled with excitement.

“Little Skeleton, stab it!”

Smart (Understood!)

The particularly clever Little Skeleton seized the opportunity, thrusting the Long Spear directly into the Mountain Rat.

Whether it was due to Little Skeleton choosing the right moment or sheer luck.

In any case, the Little Skeleton’s spear pierced through just as the Mountain Rat’s power dropped to Leader One Star.

Thus, the Bone Spear easily penetrated the rat’s body, and with a soul-piercing thrust, it hit the core.

“Crack”

A sound as if the core had shattered.

Energy from within the core started to leak, and the Long Spear in Little Skeleton’s hand greedily swallowed it all.

Almost simultaneously as the spear absorbed the energy, the Artificial Secret Realm where Lu Wu was located cracked with a snap.

A massive crack appeared beneath Lu Wu’s feet.

Through the crack, Lu Wu clearly saw two enormous snow-white mountains outside.

“Quick, while we can.”

Lu Wu seized the opportunity, pulling Little Skeleton into his heart and jumping towards the snowy peaks.

What Lu Wu did not expect was that as he left through the crack, someone suddenly grew in size, blocking his vision with something incredibly soft and fragrant.

Before he could react, he felt his neck being lifted.

His body was moved back by about twenty-odd centimeters, and then he saw an exceedingly gentle face.

At that moment, Lu Wu felt a chill run down his spine.

“Uhm, maybe I should just stay inside instead.”

# Chapter 274 - 274 271 Rescued (Seeking Subscriptions)

﻿Chapter 274: 271 Rescued (Seeking Subscriptions) Chapter 274: 271 Rescued (Seeking Subscriptions) Leaving the Artificial Secret Realm.

With his neck being grasped, Lu Wu looked at the extraordinarily gentle smile of Yan Ruxue in front of him.

Everything about Lu Wu was not okay.

At this moment, Yan Ruxue’s smile was especially tender, “You’re quite capable, huh? He couldn’t destroy the Secret Realm, yet you managed to do it. How should I praise you for that?”

“Umm, if you want to praise me, could you let me go?”

Hearing such naive words, Yan Ruxue’s smile became even gentler, “What do you think?”

At this moment, the tender yet bone-chilling gentleness made Lu Wu suddenly feel staying in the Artificial Secret Realm might not be an unacceptable ordeal. He thought about it and realized he actually had super liked it inside.

Now he was begging the organization to give him a chance to reform and to let him go back inside the Secret Realm.

Unfortunately, the Secret Realm was already broken and could no longer be entered.

Moreover, Yan Ruxue didn’t seem to have any intention of letting him in.

With no other choice, Lu Wu could only turn his head to see if Zhang Yuechu was still around.

He had just heard Yan Ruxue calling out Zhang Yuechu, who had just helped him escape. It must have been Zhang Yuechu.

Where was she now?

Hurry up and come out to save me!

Yan Ruxue, who was holding him, saw at a glance that Lu Wu was looking around for something.

“You don’t need to look anymore. She was seriously injured by me while helping you break the necklace. She’s run off now, and there’s no one who can save you,” she said.

Hearing this sent Lu Wu’s face turning dark.

After all the effort, it seemed he had been struggling in vain.

This made Lu Wu very uncomfortable.

Why couldn’t Zhang Yuechu hang in there a little longer?

But no matter how frustrated he felt inside, he was excessively sweet with his words,  
 “Sister, you’ve misunderstood. Actually, I just noticed someone attacking you from outside. That’s why I fought my way out to save you.”

“Just like him, such thick skin. I’ve always wanted to cut it open to see why his skin could be that thick, but I can’t bear to cut his. How about I cut yours instead!” Yan Ruxue said and then her pale fingers grazed a circle on Lu Wu’s delicate face.

This scared Lu Wu out of his wits.

Although scars were a man’s medals, Lu Wu didn’t fancy his face getting disfigured.

“Sis, let’s not play like this. If you must, just beat me up, but cutting my face seems really unnecessary, right?”

Unfortunately, she had no interest in beating him up.

She just wanted to slice his skin, and was already starting to do so.

Her fingernail pierced Lu Wu’s skin and with a downward pull easily opened a cut from the corner of his eye to his chin.

Blood uncontrollably flowed from Lu Wu’s cheek.

Just as it seemed that Lu Wu’s facial skin was about to be peeled off, a valiant cry sounded,  
 “Kneel down for me!”

As the energetic voice rang out, Zhang Yuechu, who had supposedly left according to Yan Ruxue, appeared out of nowhere behind her and threw a tremendously powerful punch towards Yan Ruxue’s back.

Yan Ruxue’s reaction was extremely quick; she immediately stopped what she was doing, dodged Zhang Yuechu’s punch, and then turned around, twisting her waist and kicking Zhang Yuechu’s timely defensive fists, sending Zhang Yuechu flying away.

However, despite repelling Zhang Yuechu with a hit, Yan Ruxue felt a burning sensation in the hand that was holding Lu Wu and unconsciously let go.

The moment Yan Ruxue relaxed her grip,  
 A fiery red glow lit up, enveloping Lu Wu as he vanished in an instant.

Zhang Yuechu also retreated at that moment.

But Yan Ruxue couldn’t let Zhang Yuechu escape so easily; she knew that the one who rescued Lu Wu was Zhang Yuechu’s Summoned Beast. Capturing Zhang Yuechu was pretty much the same as capturing Lu Wu.

So she instantly accelerated, preparing to chase after Zhang Yuechu to stop her.

However, at the very moment the outbreak began, Yan Ruxue’s face violently changed, she stopped in her tracks, and her eyes fixed on a corner nearby, no longer concerned with the fleeing Zhang Yuechu and Lu Wu.

“You’ve finally come out!”

As the words left Yan Ruxue’s faintly red eyes.

In that corner, a figure appeared, or rather the silhouette of a Summoned Beast.

Dressed in snow-white palace attire and radiating a celestial aura, it was none other than the Human-shaped Summoned Beast known as Moon Shadow.

“Where is he?” Yan Ruxue asked.

“The master said he can’t see you, the lady won’t let him see his ex.”

Moon Shadow repeated the ruthless words of Elder Lu.

Upon hearing this, Yan Ruxue, who had already been emotionally unstable since Moon Shadow’s appearance, grew even more bizarre, smiling with utmost gentleness, “Is that so, he refuses to see me?

Well, to see him I guess I’ll have to use some extreme methods.

Lu Wu, that’s right, Lu Wu, I’m going to capture him and tie him to the Mother and Son Tree…”

Yan Ruxue was agitated, but Moon Shadow interrupted her flatly.

“The master will kill you!”

This statement, like a clap of thunder, stunned the already somewhat uncontrollable Yan Ruxue.

She lifted her head, her face filled with disbelief, and stared at Moon Shadow, “What did you say?”

“I said, the master will kill you.

Even though the master feels guilty towards you and even reluctant to harm you, if you hurt the lady, he will surely kill you.

Not just you, anyone who dares to inflict even the smallest harm on the lady, he will eliminate them.

Even if it’s the young master!”

Moon Shadow intended to persuade Yan Ruxue.

But clearly, as a Summoned Beast, she lacked in certain areas.

At the very least, she couldn’t really distinguish between an Ordinary person and a deranged mad person.

Besides, any woman who hears that the man she has set her heart on is determined to kill her for another woman would likely go mad.

And sure enough, Yan Ruxue began to laugh, her laughter unusually tender, unusually healing.

“So, he’s that resolute in his choice of her, is he?

Then, since I can’t be chosen by him, perhaps being killed by him is not such a bad ending after all.”

Hearing this, a blue ice Longsword appeared in Moon Shadow’s hand.

“I won’t allow you to harm the lady, you have absolutely no idea how much the master has sacrificed for her.”

“Do you know how much I have sacrificed for him?”

As Yan Ruxue’s voice, gentle enough to chill one to the bone, echoed, she gently crushed a Legendary Quality artifact she was carrying, and instantly vanished from in front of Moon Shadow.

Moon Shadow, watching Yan Ruxue’s disappearance, paused for a moment, then after sheathing her sword and looking around, she closed her eyes and remotely contacted Lu Haikong.

“Master, I think I messed up.”

She briefly explained the situation.

At this moment, Lu Haikong, who was kneeling on a washboard after dodging Li Ruyu’s request to talk on the phone with Lu Wu for the 38th time, was stunned and rubbed his throbbing temples.

Feeling an immense headache.

Just then, a little rogue named Little Luobo sneaked over.

“Daddy, Ni Ni saw mommy secretly crying.”

Hearing this, Lu Haikong’s headache intensified.

“It looks like I need to go see that kid.”

…

Please subscribe.

# Chapter 275 - 275 272 Lu Haikong you turtle grandchild

﻿Chapter 275: 272 Lu Haikong, you turtle grandchild! Chapter 275: 272 Lu Haikong, you turtle grandchild! Lu Wu felt the world spin around him.

Then, he was running into the wind, the kind of rush that made it impossible to keep his eyes open.

Finally, when he stopped and landed with his eyes open, he saw a bird as tall as himself, which looked somewhat familiar to him.

On a closer look.

…

Name: Xuan Que

Power: ???

Attribute: Fire, ???

Weakness: ???

State: Don’t guess a female bird’s thoughts (you can’t guess without enough power)

Description: Do question marks need an explanation?

Alright, it was Zhang Yuechu’s bird.

…

Now, Lu Wu understood.

This was the big bird that had appeared at Jiangnan University, only now it was smaller.

While Lu Wu was looking at the bird’s attributes, Zhang Yuechu had arrived.

“Quick, move it, that woman could catch up at any moment,”

were the first words from Zhang Yuechu as she arrived.

Then, Lu Wu found himself being carried forward by a red light.

This confused Lu Wu.

“Sis, why can’t we just fly?”

Ah, humble Lu Wu now calls everyone sister.

He sounded especially sweet, and even the busy Zhang Yuechu couldn’t help but take the time to answer Lu Wu’s question.

“We can’t fly; we’d be too easy to spot in the air, so we can only run on the ground.”

“Oh!”

Lu Wu nodded to show he understood, then added, “Thank you, sister, for saving my life. I will definitely repay you in the future.”

“Want to repay me?

How about opening up the sales rights for the ‘Steel Armor Wild Boar Evolution Gift Package’ in Jiangbei?”

Zhang Yuechu teased as Lu Wu opened his mouth to speak, but she didn’t expect his serious nod in response.

“Of course, I’ll arrange it as soon as I get back!”

Her answer left Zhang Yuechu a bit stunned.

“A drop of water shall be returned with a bursting spring, not to mention saving a life.

Sister, you even got hurt saving me. If you don’t allow me to repay you, I won’t feel at peace.”

Lu Wu spoke with genuine sincerity.

In reality, he was just afraid she would abandon him halfway, and he would be captured by Yan Ruxue again.

For Lu Wu at that moment, survival was crucial.

With life, anything was possible, but without it, nothing mattered.

But Zhang Yuechu didn’t know that and was really fooled into thinking Lu Wu was a grateful young man. Her already favorable impression of him rose considerably.

However, just as Lu Wu was improving Zhang Yuechu’s impression of him,

‘Swoosh’, a figure appeared out of nowhere, blocking their path.

“Damn it!”

Caught off guard, Lu Wu was understandably frightened.

Zhang Yuechu, on the other hand, reacted quickly.

“Xuan Que!”

With a light shout, the firelight wrapped around Lu Wu and enveloped Zhang Yuechu as well. Xuan Que took to the air, increasing in size to the form Lu Wu had seen before, and then with a swing of its wing, it covered hundreds of meters in an instant and started a desperate flight.

Yan Ruxue saw this and said, “Running away? Now that I’ve broken the necklace, I don’t need to worry about conserving energy. Where can you run to now?”

As she spoke, Yan Ruxue too soared into the air, following closely behind.

It must be said that Xuan Que’s speed was truly terrifying, but Yan Ruxue’s speed was equally astonishing.

No matter how hard Xuan Que tried to escape, Yan Ruxue was always right behind.

And by this time, Lu Wu atop Xuan Que realized that both Zhang Yuechu and Xuan Que were actually injured.

Xuan Que’s speed began to decrease slowly, and being caught was only a matter of time.

“This won’t do, we can’t keep this up, or we’re all done for.”

“Sis, I’m especially grateful that you came to save me.”

This sudden statement from Lu Wu left Zhang Yuechu a bit bewildered.

She hadn’t understood why Lu Wu said that when she saw him leap from the bird’s back.

As he jumped, Lu Wu smiled warmly at Zhang Yuechu.

Zhang Yuechu, unprepared, watched as Lu Wu jumped off Xuan Que and fell straight toward the ground.

Following that, Yan Ruxue, who had been chasing Xuan Que, suddenly changed direction, tracing a graceful arc as she easily swooped down to catch the falling Lu Wu.

In that moment, Zhang Yuechu understood.

Lu Wu didn’t want to drag her down and chose to sacrifice himself.

Realizing this, Zhang Yuechu was flooded with complex emotions, as nobody had ever shown such selfless bravery for her.

Little did she know, Lu Wu had just taken a gamble.

He figured that staying on Xuan Que, they were bound to be caught eventually, and by jumping, there was a chance Yan Ruxue might not notice him and he could escape with his life.

Unexpectedly, Moon Shadow’s provocation completely locked Yan Ruxue’s hatred value onto him.

He leapt, and Yan Ruxue caught him mid-jump, whisking him away.

That was the fact, but Zhang Yuechu didn’t know.

Thus, at this moment, Zhang Yuechu was quite heated, even calling a halt to Xuan Que and preparing to turn around to rescue him.

But Yan Ruxue, her emotions stirred by Moon Shadow, was on the brink of collapse. After seizing Lu Wu, she discarded any concern for Zhang Yuechu and dragged Lu Wu straight towards the direction of the Mother and Son Tree.

No matter how hard Zhang Yuechu chased, she couldn’t catch up and could only watch, helpless, as Yan Ruxue took Lu Wu away.

Watching Lu Wu disappear, for some reason, her heart felt unbearably stifled.

…

Over here with Lu Wu.

After returning to Yan Ruxue’s grasp once more.

A sickeningly sweet smile once again surfaced on Lu Wu’s face.

“Sister, you might not believe this, but it was that woman who struck first. I honestly didn’t want to run away. I like Sister the most. It was she who insisted on dragging me away.”

Upon arrival, Lu Wu immediately started to pass the blame, to which Yan Ruxue responded, “It doesn’t matter!”

Hearing this “it doesn’t matter,” Lu Wu vaguely sensed something amiss.

Yan Ruxue now seemed even more terrifying than before.

Just a while ago, Yan Ruxue seemed somewhat communicable, but now, Lu Wu felt that if he misspoke even a single word, he might be torn to pieces on the spot by her.

Hence, Lu Wu very rationally kept his mouth shut.

But while he remained silent, Yan Ruxue suddenly became interested.

“What kind of person is she?”

Lu Wu knew exactly who “she” referred to, having discussed her before, but he didn’t know how to engage in this topic right now.

Afraid of further inciting Yan Ruxue’s temper, Lu Wu dared not speak.

Yet, his silence did nothing to improve Yan Ruxue’s mood.

“She must be a very good person, right? You must have lied before; she must be prettier, better, and more capable of making him happy than I am.

It must be so. She has to be that kind of person.

Otherwise, I wouldn’t have lost so utterly.”

“I really envy him for finding such a lover, and I also envy her for making him settle down for her.

They must be very happy now, right?

Should I just not show up again, stop being unreasonable, and not disturb him anymore?”

Listening to the constant murmurs from Yan Ruxue’s mouth, Lu Wu suddenly didn’t know what to say.

If he had to say something, Lu Wu could only say,

Scumbag Lu!

Lu Wu had to admit that he felt somewhat sad for Yan Ruxue.

But soon after, his sympathy was replaced by sheer terror.

“But I just can’t control myself.

When I can’t see him, I uncontrollably miss him,

when I think about him being with someone else, I uncontrollably feel jealous,

when I hear he would kill me for her, I’m even more unable to control myself.

So, I’ll just make his wish come true!”

After saying this, blood began to redden from Yan Ruxue’s eyes, and blood started flowing from her nostrils, ears, and mouth.

As she bled from the seven orifices, Yan Ruxue’s speed surged.

The terrifying speed meant that even the air resistance alone caused countless injuries to Lu Wu.

During this intense burst, in less than fifteen minutes, Lu Wu was dragged over a hundred kilometers away to a mountain range, stopping under a tree over two meters tall.

With a casual wave of her hand,

Yan Ruxue threw Lu Wu out, and he was caught by a stream of energy and bound to the tree trunk of the Mother and Son Tree.

In a frenzy, Yan Ruxue didn’t hesitate to strike,

‘Puchi’ was the sound.

Yan Ruxue’s right hand pierced Lu Wu’s abdomen, with unspeakable pain bursting forth, nearly causing Lu Wu to faint.

Yan Ruxue’s expression at that time was even more complex than Lu Wu’s.

Lu Wu’s face bore only pain and worry.

But on Yan Ruxue’s face, it was like a jar full of emotions had been overturned within her heart.

Every kind of expression, every kind of emotion was surfacing.

With one hand still inside Lu Wu’s abdomen, her tears mixed with blood streaming down.

She opened her mouth several times, finally uttering, “You’re finally here.”

“I’m here!”

Behind the Mother and Son Tree, with no indication of when he had appeared, Lu Haikong nodded.

“Are you here to kill me?”

Lu Haikong shook his head, “I can’t kill you, I just can’t bear it!”

Yan Ruxue’s face grew even more complex, a mix of joy and bitter resentment, “Didn’t you say you would kill anyone who hurt her?”

“But you didn’t actually hurt her – you just stabbed this brat in the belly. By the time you stabbed him, I had already destroyed the Mother and Son Tree.”

Upon hearing Lu Haikong’s words,

Yan Ruxue was stunned.

Meanwhile, Lu Wu, who had been stabbed in the belly, was completely dumbfounded; it turned out Old Lu had been there all along.

And if he could destroy the tree at the instant Lu Wu was stabbed, he should have been able to save Lu Wu at the same time, too.

Realizing this, a fury began to surge towards his heart, which Lu Wu couldn’t suppress, and he couldn’t help but curse out loud, “Lu Haikong, you bastard!”

# Chapter 276 - 276 273 Li Ruyus attribute (Seeking Subscriptions)

﻿Chapter 276: 273 Li Ruyu’s attribute (Seeking Subscriptions) Chapter 276: 273 Li Ruyu’s attribute (Seeking Subscriptions) Lu Wu was in agonizing pain.

His body hurt, but his heart hurt even more.

However, after yelling, his head also started throbbing.

Yan Ruxue slapped him right on the forehead.

With one slap, Lu Wu fainted.

When he woke up again, he had no idea how much time had passed.

All he knew was that his wounds had been dressed.

The bandaging was done delicately, clearly showing that it was done with care.

Looking around, he was still under the Mother and Son Tree.

Next to him, Lu Haikong was crouching and playing with a phone, Little Skeleton’s phone.

Little Skeleton had also come out from somewhere.

At that moment, Little Skeleton was sitting there looking utterly dejected.

Resentful (That old man is so mean! Stealing Little Skeleton’s phone!)

Seeing this, Lu Wu couldn’t sit still any longer; he immediately stood up, walked over, and snatched the phone from Lu Haikong’s hands.

“What are you doing? Give it back, I was about to make a pentakill.”

“Pentakill, my ass!” Lu Wu immediately turned off the game and instantly called Dudu.

“Hello, Dudu, yeah, it’s me, everything’s fine here.

Alright, you stay good at school, I’ll be back soon.”

After reassuring Dudu in a particularly gentle manner, Lu Wu turned his gaze toward Lu Haikong with less kind feelings.

He asked coldly, “Where’s Yan Ruxue?”

“She left after dressing your wounds!”

As soon as Lu Wu heard that, he was stunned.

He had thought that Lu Haikong was the one who dressed his wounds, feeling a momentary touch of emotion—only to realize it was Yan Ruxue.

Yet, Lu Wu felt something was off.

“Hold on, she dressed my wounds? You must be joking, right?”

He had seen Yan Ruxue’s behavior earlier, and Lu Wu couldn’t believe that she would tend to his wounds.

“Actually, you misunderstood her; she just threw a bit of a fit. Yan Ruxue is quite gentle among them; she cools down if you coax her a bit.”

“Her? A little fit? Gentle? They? Just need some coaxing?”

Upon hearing this, Lu Wu’s mentality collapsed.

“Old Lu, you’ve finally stopped pretending, haven’t you? You’re finally ready to be frank with me, aren’t you? Tell me, how many other women do you have out there!

Is my godmother also involved with you? It must be true, I knew it! How could just anyone randomly decide to acknowledge someone as their son and treat me so nicely—turns out it’s because of you, you old wreck.

And, since Yan Ruxue can be easily pacified, why didn’t you deal with it until now?

For half a month, I was locked up by Yan Ruxue for a whole half month; do you know what I’ve been through all this time?

Also, my belly—when you could just destroy a tree, was it so hard to save me?

Besides, if you’re so capable already, why didn’t you just fly me out?

Do you know how hard it was for me to get to where I am today?”

As Lu Wu yelled, Lu Haikong, initially embarrassed, found his voice, “Feels like you had quite an easy walk though!

Hmm, just like my son…”

“Shut up! Is that what we’re discussing here?”

Lu Wu was completely frustrated.

If it weren’t for the fact that he probably couldn’t beat the old man, he would have thrown a punch.

“I’m telling you, old man, you’re finished. I’m going to tell my mom, make you kneel on a washboard until it breaks.”

As soon as Lu Wu said this, Lu Haikong quickly rushed over and hugged Lu Wu’s legs.

“No, no, no, don’t tell your mom. If you’re really upset, go ahead and hit me, just don’t tell your mom, okay?

Besides, I had my reasons.”

“It’s not like I was trying to flirt with Yan Ruxue and the others deliberately; that was back when I was young and foolish. After I got together with your mom, I’ve never wronged her.

For these twenty years, I haven’t met any of my exes.

Even when you were captured and held for over a month, I didn’t show up until she threatened to harm your mom.

I’m committed now!”

At this, Lu Wu’s head buzzed, “You call this committed?”

“Whether it’s called committed or not, the point is, you can’t tell your mom about this.

After all, the past can’t be changed, and telling her would only hurt her feelings.

You wouldn’t want to see your mom hurt, right?

So let’s forget about the past and bravely look forward.

The beautiful life is always ahead, isn’t it?”

As the old man spoke, he was almost force-feeding Lu Wu with clichés.

Lu Wu was trembling with anger.

But he really didn’t have a way to deal with the old man.

He couldn’t beat him, scolding didn’t faze him, and as for telling Li Ruyu, Lu Wu just thought about it.

Bringing it up wouldn’t do Li Ruyu any good.

As long as the old man could truly commit to a good life with Li Ruyu from now on, Lu Wu felt he could endure it.

But soon, Lu Wu found something amiss again.

“You just said you haven’t seen your exes for twenty years, then what was the deal with your business trips for two hundred days a year?

Were you going off to see a mistress?”

“No, no, no, my boy, don’t you trust me—or yourself?

We’re father and son, there’s a lot in common between us.”

Both my son and I are faithful sorts, though my previous girls were somewhat numerous, but I, Lu Haikong, am definitely not the type to two-time.”

That time before, I really was busy with something.”

“Really, I swear, if I’m lying may I never have a…”

Lu Wu didn’t let him finish, kicking him before he could.

“Don’t swear on me, swear on yourself!”

Lu Haikong, to cool Lu Wu’s anger down, honestly took the kick and honestly made a pledge himself.

“Your mom misses you; I’ll take you to change into a new outfit, and we’ll go home to see her.”

“We agreed not to talk to your mom about today’s incident.

If you dare tell her, I’ll tell Dudu about the women you have outside.”

Upon hearing this, Lu Wu looked scornful.

“Do you think Dudu would believe it? And besides, our Dudu is so kind that even if I established a harem, Dudu wouldn’t say a word.”

“Scumbag!”

Lu Haikong became enraged, smacking Lu Wu on the back of his head: “How could the Lu Family produce a scumbag like you!”

“Did I give you face, did I give you face, did I give you face!

All I did was enjoy a bit of flirting, you’re the real scumbag here, I’m still a virgin, you know.”

Lu Wu, incensed, kicked out.

“Who are you calling ‘old man’!”

“Just you, what about it!”

…

Half an hour later.

Dressed in new clothes, Lu Wu, under the guidance of Lu Haikong, arrived at a small farm in Jiangnan Village.

“When I left, I already told your mom I was coming to pick you up.

When she asks, just say I picked you up.”

“Also, during the last while when your mom hasn’t contacted you, I told her you were busy studying, that you requested we don’t disturb you. You’ll have to shoulder that blame in a bit.”

“Also, don’t mention anything about Lin to your mom, it would upset her.”

“Additionally, here’s her favorite snack: take it and say you brought it back yourself.”

“There’s more—wait, don’t go yet, allow me to think, there might be other things to be careful about.”

Despite already being outside the farm, Lu Haikong continued to hold onto Lu Wu, endlessly warning and instructing.

Through his actions, Lu Wu realized that one lie had to be covered with a thousand more.

“Could you have told me this from the start, so we wouldn’t have to go through all this trouble?

What’s your plan now?

Do you intend to keep my mom trapped in this small farm forever?”

“We’ll definitely leave, but it’ll be a bit later, a bit later.

For now, please help me handle this situation.”

At that moment, Lu Haikong displayed a level of nervousness Lu Wu hadn’t seen before.

Pathetically sweating.

But it was also because of this that Lu Wu decided to cooperate with him.

After aligning their stories outside, Lu Wu then entered the farm carrying packages prepared by Lu Haikong.

It had to be said, Lu Haikong had done a decent job with the farm.

It covered an area of about 50 acres, and it boasted carefully tended varieties of fruits and vegetables.

At the center of the farm was a small lake, beside which stood a beautifully delicate villa.

A few adorable dogs were kept outside the villa.

As Lu Wu approached, the dogs began barking.

A small head peeked out from a window on the first floor.

Seeing Lu Wu and Lu Haikong arrive laden with goods, the young girl called out excitedly.

“Dudu, Dudu’s back!”

Hearing this, Li Ruyu, who was cooking in the kitchen, ran out with a spoon.

“Why are you running? Be careful not to fall!”

Lu Haikong hurriedly went to meet her but got pushed away by Li Ruyu.

Clearly, at that moment, the consistently present Lu Haikong couldn’t compare in stature to Lu Wu, who she hadn’t seen in a long while.

“How was the journey, tired?

Where’s Dudu? Why didn’t she come back with you?

Has your past half-year been particularly tough? Look how thin you’ve gotten, and what happened to your face?

All your father’s fault, spending money on this farm, trying to grow new types of fruits and vegetables, now we can’t go back, have to stay here…

…”

In her excitement, Li Ruyu tossed the spoon to Lu Haikong to let him cook and grabbed Lu Wu, pouring out her heart excitedly.

And she didn’t notice.

That the moment Lu Wu saw her, he froze on the spot.

Because he saw an attribute panel on Li Ruyu’s person, a panel that shouldn’t be there.

…

Name: Li Ruyu

Race: Body (???) Soul (Li Ruyu)

Description: A life snatched back from the hands of Death.

Perhaps she hasn’t realized that she has been dead for a long time.

…

Seeing this attribute, Lu Wu instantly turned his head to look at Lu Haikong…

# Chapter 277 - 277 274 Night Talk (Subscribe please)

﻿Chapter 277: 274 Night Talk (Subscribe please) Chapter 277: 274 Night Talk (Subscribe please) Late at night.

At the small pavilion by the lake on the farm.

Lu Wu was doing something rare—neither studying nor writing in his diary.

He sat casually at the edge of the pavilion, leaning against the pillar behind him, one hand playing with Little Skeleton’s crown, the other stroking Little Skeleton’s skull, his eyes gazing blankly at the lake surface reflecting the moon.

After a while, a sneaky figure entered the pavilion.

He kicked the Little Skeleton, who was watching TV, causing it to lean toward Lu Wu with a resentful look, then he took a seat across from Lu Wu.

Lu Wu turned his head and glared at Lu Haikong, “Why are you bullying it?”

Lu Haikong naturally diverted the topic, lifting up the two bottles of white liquor in his hand, “Wanna drink?”

“Give me a bottle!”

“You’re really going to drink? I was just being polite.”

Lu Haikong was stunned for a moment, but Lu Wu unceremoniously grabbed a bottle, unscrewed it, and took a big swig.

This was Lu Wu’s first time drinking since he had crossed over, as well as his first encounter with white liquor in both his lives.

And because that gulp was a bit too large, he choked a little, couldn’t help but cough violently, taking a while to recover.

This gave Lu Haikong a good laugh.

“Choking on a drink, kid, you’re no good. You’ve got none of my style from back in the day.”

“Why would I want your style from back in the day?”

Lu Haikong still hadn’t detected the abnormality in Lu Wu’s words and naturally said, “Because you’re my son!”

“Are you sure?! I don’t think it’s necessarily so.”

“You unfilial son!”

Hearing this, Lu Haikong immediately gave a kick in his direction.

“What’s wrong with you, saying that kind of thing?

Also, your performance today was very poor. What did you mean by constantly spacing out when your mom was talking to you?

And why were you staring at your sister for so long? You almost scared her to tears.

Don’t think you can… just because you caught me slipping a little.”

“Whose body does my mom have?”

Lu Wu’s sudden question interrupted Lu Haikong’s rambling, leaving him completely frozen.

Lu Wu didn’t stop there, continuing to speak, “And what’s the deal with my sister’s body?

What’s the situation with that summoned beast of my mom’s?”

It took a while before he caught on.

He fell silent for a moment, took a hard swig of liquor, then turned to look at the lake.

After a while, Lu Haikong finally let out a long sigh.

“So it’s like that, huh? You’ve figured it out? That’s something. How much do you understand?”

Lu Wu took another gulp and turned to look at the lake, “If I’m not mistaken, my mom’s body should belong to someone else, and she should now be in a state of spirit possession.

With my sister, her body contains a strong death energy, and if we’re not careful, it could erupt at any moment, leading her toward Undead Transformation.

If that happens, she’ll either die or become an Undead creature without spiritual wisdom.

And my mom’s so-called ‘double-tailed cat’ isn’t actually a double-tailed cat at all, but a Netherworld Cat cub.

Its power even reaches the Lord Level and its talents are soul control and death energy control, mainly to stabilize the death energy in my sister’s body and the soul issue in my mom’s.”

Lu Wu’s outburst.

It took Lu Haikong aback; he knew Lu Wu had noticed something, but didn’t expect him to notice so much.

What puzzled him even more was, “How did you figure it out?”

Lu Wu didn’t answer directly, simply replying, “I’m said to be the most ‘demonic’ Cultivation Master!”

“You? A Cultivation Master?”

Lu Haikong pursed his lips, indicating disbelief.

Lu Wu glanced at him sideways, “Didn’t you read the message I sent you?”

“I was worried your mom might see, so I haven’t used that phone in a long time, hardly paying attention to any Summoner related news.

The only thing we watch on the family TV is either variety shows or melodramas; I’ve been dragged by your mom to watch hundreds of episodes of melodramas recently.

What do you mean by telling me this? You really became a Cultivation Master.”

Lu Wu realized, this old man wanted to change the subject.

Without another word, he snatched up Little Skeleton’s phone, pulled up his related information, and tossed it over to the old man.

Old Lu picked it up and looked.

He froze on the spot.

After a while, he looked at Lu Wu with a face full of doubt, “Are you really my son?

Back in the day, I was well known as a ‘cultivation idiot’; how could I have fathered a son with such demonic talent in cultivation?”

“Where is this sense of superiority coming from for you?

Does being a ‘cultivation idiot’ make you proud?”

Lu Wu snatched the phone from Lu Haikong’s hand and returned it to the resentful-looking Little Skeleton.

“Let’s get back to what we were just talking about.

What’s the situation with my mom? And am I really your son?”

“Not, I get why you’d ask about your mom’s condition, but asking if you’re really my son is what kind of situation?”

“I’ve observed it already. My mom’s condition must’ve been going on for ten to twenty years.

That means it should’ve been like this since before I was born.

Under such circumstances, if she really gave birth to me, my current state should be similar to my sister’s.

So, I suspect I’m not her biological child.”

After finishing, Lu Wu even kicked Lu Haikong, “Hurry up and tell me, are we biologically related or not?

If we’re not related, let’s sever this father-son relationship at once.

Make an announcement to the whole world.

I don’t want someone popping up every other day, kidnapping me, and locking me up for ten or fifteen days.

While you’re at it, tell me about all those women you’ve been with who have daughters, because if I can’t be your son, I can still be your son-in-law.”

Lu Wu’s words almost destroyed the atmosphere, and Lu Haikong’s head was covered in metaphorical black lines.

He slapped Lu Wu on the back of the head.

Grinding his teeth angrily, “My Lu Family has been loyal for generations, how could I have fathered such a scumbag as you?”

Look at that resentful expression.

Anyone who didn’t know better might think Lu Wu was the kind of scumbag that deserted dozens or hundreds of people.

After slapping him, Lu Haikong gave an explanation.

“Let me tell you, don’t think about all that nonsense.

You’re my own flesh and blood. Do you really think I traveled for two hundred days a year for nothing?

It’s all because your mother insisted on having a son.

To conceive you, I don’t know how much effort it took, and it was a full ten years to solve your problem.

Just as I had resolved your issue and hadn’t had a few good years to myself, your mother again wanted to give me a daughter.

You have no idea how exhausting that was, your sister’s problem still hasn’t been completely fixed.”

However, Lu Wu didn’t just take his word for it and asked how Lu Haikong had solved it last time.

Regarding this, Lu Haikong didn’t hide anything and explained in detail.

After hearing the explanation, Lu Wu pondered it carefully.

“That method is brilliant, who thought of it?

Also, why not use it on my sister?”

“Your sister’s Death Energy is much stronger than yours; it’s not so easy to resolve, but we’re almost there. We just need the right opportunity to handle it.”

Lu Haikong outright ignored Lu Wu’s first question.

Lu Wu didn’t press on it but instead asked about Li Ruyu’s current situation.

Since this topic had come up.

Lu Haikong decided to no longer hide the truth from Lu Wu and roughly explained the reason why Li Ruyu had become this way.

Lu Wu initially thought there might be some complicated story behind it.

But there wasn’t, it was surprisingly simple.

Or rather, Lu Haikong made it sound incredibly simple.

His exact words were, “Your mom was my first love, who had passed away due to illness. Then I heard about something that could grant any wish, found it, passed the preliminary tests, and then your mom was resurrected, just like that!”

“Is that all?”

Lu Wu was very disappointed with his father’s storytelling ability.

The same story, if given to Nu Xiao, wouldn’t just be told better but with more flair, stretching out to several million words before calling it quits. Yet in Lu Haikong’s mouth, it was just this dry sentence.

Lu Wu inquired further, but there were many details Lu Haikong was unwilling to discuss.

For instance, who told him about this information?

What was the thing that could grant any wish?

Whose body did Li Ruyu have?

Lu Haikong didn’t answer any of these.

The only question he did answer was about the preconditions for granting the wish.

“Gaining the true hearts of ninety-nine girls!

That’s the precondition to making the wish come true!”

Lu Haikong gave Lu Wu a definitive answer.

To this, Lu Wu responded with a “Heh!”

And gave the old man a few more kicks.

“Do you really think I’m an idiot? What kind of ridiculous condition is that?

You’re clearly trying to legitimize and rationalize your scumbag behavior, not a chance!

Let me tell you,  
 you, Lu Haikong, are defined as a scumbag in my book, a confirmed case that’ll never change in this lifetime!”

After finishing, Lu Wu guzzled down a bottle of liquor.

Then he went back to his room to sleep with Little Skeleton.

With Lu Wu gone back to sleep, only Lu Haikong was left in the pavilion.

He too guzzled the bottle of liquor and gazed at the moon’s reflection on the lake, murmuring to himself, “Scumbag, huh? Hmm, I guess I am indeed a scumbag, no mistake about that!”

# Chapter 278 - 278 275 Moon Shadow

﻿Chapter 278: 275 Moon Shadow Chapter 278: 275 Moon Shadow Inside the villa of Lu Haikong.

The day after Lu Wu returned.

While Li Ruyu was cooking, Lu Wu glanced at Lu Haikong and then sneaked in to help her.

Helping out while tattling.

“Mom, I need to tell you, it’s not that I didn’t come back in the past half a year. It’s because my dad wouldn’t let me. He said I was in the way, you know.

He said if I dared to come back, he would dare to break my legs.”

“And also, I actually brought you even more stuff.

There are still two suitcases and several bags. I asked my dad to carry them, but he found it too troublesome and just threw them away, saying these were enough to fool you.”

“And what’s more, he was asking me when I would go back yesterday…”

…

Upon hearing this, Li Ruyu’s face changed immediately.

She rushed out with the spoon in her hand.

She grabbed the ear of Lu Haikong who was watching TV with his sister, completely ignorant of what had happened.

“What are you doing, wife? I haven’t done anything bad lately, have I?”

“Come here!”

…

Ten minutes later.

Lu Wu sneaked out of the kitchen and wandered into the study, smiling at an old man who had just been beaten up, his eyes nearly closed with glee.

He finally felt some of the anger that had built up since leaving Yan Ruxue dissipate.

“Having fun?”

Lu Haikong, in agonizing pain, replied, “How could I have fathered such an ungrateful son? I’ve slaved away for ten years for your sake, and this is how you repay me?

You might as well pack your things and get out early!”

Lu Wu narrowed his eyes, “Mom, my dad just called me an ungrateful son and told me to get out early…”

“Shut your mouth!”

Lu Haikong was scared stiff and hurriedly covered Lu Wu’s mouth, but it was already too late.

He could already hear Li Ruyu’s hurried footsteps approaching.

And so, Old Lu, who had just been beaten up a moment ago, had his ear twisted and received another lesson.

“My son has told me that he’s not busy now and can stay with me every day. He’s even planning to call Dudu over.

You are not allowed to send our son away anymore. If you do, I will send you away!”

“By the way, when is Dudu coming over?”

“I called her just now, she should have arrived by now. I’ll go pick her up with my dad; we should be back in an hour or two.”

Upon hearing this, Li Ruyu immediately brightened up, “Then you two hurry up and bring Dudu back. I’ll make a dozen dishes and cook two pots of rice!”

After Li Ruyu spoke, she turned and got busy.

Lu Wu then looked at Lu Haikong, “Let’s go pick her up.

By the way, bring some research materials and equipment for me, or maybe find a construction crew to come over; I’m planning to build a Cultivation Room.”

Hearing this, Lu Haikong’s face darkened.

“You actually plan to stay at my place for a long time?”

Lu Wu tapped his temple, “Right, your place is safe, and my mom is here.

We’ll pick up Dudu, and then I’ll be staying here.

After all, I now have a company making money for me and can continuously obtain resources. I might as well lay low here until I’m invincible in the world.

It’s better than being unpredictably caught by the likes of Yan Ruxue and locked up for ten days or a half month every other day.”

“Who has ever become invincible by skulking around?”

“Me! I’m a demon-level cultivation prodigy. Give me time and I’ll show you how invincible I can be!

And I’m not going out anymore!”

“No way!”

Lu Haikong was especially resolute on this point, “You have to go out; you can’t stay here.

Unless you are willing to cut off all outside contacts, I will absolutely not allow you to stay.

You will expose this place and draw them here.”

“Some of them can be quite extreme. What if your mom gets hurt?

You’d better get out of here!”

Hearing this, Lu Wu’s face darkened.

“Old man, are you saying that while you live a happy and carefree life here, I’m out there taking hits for you?

I’m not going out, you can’t make me!”

Lu Wu really did not want to experience that ever again.

One moment everything was fine, and he was faking it well, but then suddenly someone would swoop down from the sky and take him away, locking him up for a good half a month. How could Lu Wu stand it?

Seeing Lu Wu’s reaction, Lu Haikong had no choice but to lay all his cards out on the table.

He spoke to Li Ruyu for a moment, indicating they were heading out, then he took Lu Wu away from the farm. Soon, they appeared in a remote area.

“What are you up to, old man?”

Lu Wu looked around at the somewhat secluded surroundings and felt a bit nervous.

With a sly grin, Lu Haikong replied, “I’m showing you a great treasure!”

Hearing this, Lu Wu got even more anxious.

But soon, Lu Wu’s anxiety vanished.

Because just as Lu Haikong said he was about to show a great treasure to Lu Wu, a sister dressed in a white palace costume and a veil, exuding an ethereal presence, appeared out of thin air in front of Lu Wu.

Lu Wu was stunned for a moment when he saw this girl.

On one hand, it was due to the girl’s beauty and temperament, and on the other hand, it was because of the girl’s attribute.

…

Name: ??? (Moon Shadow)  
 Power: ???

Quality: ???

Attribute: Moon, ???

Description: Um, what’s in front of you is a human-shaped Summoned Beast who can ‘charge’.

By the way, she seems to be quite familiar with your body, probably having spent some time inside your body, and she just came out from it.

…

Seeing the girl’s attribute, Lu Wu suddenly remembered what Yan Ruxue had said before.

She said that Old Lu was crazy enough to not even let Summoned Beasts off the hook. At the time, Lu Wu didn’t take it to heart, thinking that Old Lu couldn’t be that insane, but now he realized that Old Lu seemed to really be that crazy.

When Lu Haikong saw his son standing there stunned,  
 he looked like he hadn’t seen much of the world, his lips curling up, ready to see Lu Wu make a fool of himself.

He thought Lu Wu probably couldn’t tell that Moon Shadow was his Summoned Beast, and later would definitely misunderstand that Lu Haikong was keeping a mistress. Then, Lu Haikong would have a chance to put this defiant son in his place.

However, Lu Haikong didn’t expect that right there and then, Lu Wu grabbed his hand, extremely excited, and asked, “How did she change like this?

Can you do the same for my Little Skeleton?”

Lu Haikong was a bit dumbfounded.

“You can see that?”

“What’s so hard about that? I even know where she came from.

Old man, I misjudged you, you even arranged a bodyguard for me.”

“Did you also figure that out? Kid, you must be cheating!”

Lu Haikong started to doubt his life.

However, he didn’t dwell too much on this aspect and instead started discussing serious matters with Lu Wu.

“Look, I’ve arranged a bodyguard for you, so you better get lost soon.

Stopping by occasionally for a meal is okay, but I really can’t stand you staying here for long.”

Indeed, in just a day or two, Old Lu had been brought to his knees, hit once, and lectured once. If Lu Wu stayed any longer, Lu Haikong didn’t know how he would survive the coming days.

But that wasn’t the most important thing; the most important was the safety issue.

If Lu Wu was to grow, he certainly couldn’t do without resources and external contact.

He couldn’t, like Lu Haikong, erase his tracks, as it would easily expose Lu Haikong’s secret garden.

Then, when the chaotic scene ensued, Lu Haikong didn’t even know how he would die.

So, no matter what, he wouldn’t let Lu Wu stay.

On Lu Wu’s side, he was actually just worried about the safety of himself and Dudu. Now that he had discovered such a bodyguard inside his body,  
 Lu Wu felt like staying or not staying became insignificant.

Thus, the father and son happily reached an agreement.

Lu Wu would bring Dudu over to have a meal and stay for a day, and then they would head back to Jiangnan University.

Agreement reached, both father and son were happy.

Lu Haikong took Lu Wu back to Jiangnan University to find Dudu, and without anyone noticing, brought Dudu back to the manor.

Hmm, even Dudu didn’t realize what was happening until she found herself outside the farm.

But Dudu was also easy to please. Although she didn’t understand the situation, seeing Lu Wu by her side, she just forgot all her concerns.

“Lu Wu!”

She called out in surprise, then threw the pig in her arms aside and lunged to hug Lu Wu.

Poor Tuantuan was still asleep and ended up thrown into the lake.

The moment it hit the water, the pig woke up and was confused. How did Tuantuan end up in the water? Where was Dudu?

How could she leave her adorable little one behind?

Turning her head, and seeing Dudu hugging Lu Wu on the shore, the pig understood.

Lu Wu was back, huh? Was Little Skeleton back too?

The pig found itself missing Little Skeleton a bit.

While the pig was thinking about Little Skeleton, there was a disturbance on the lake’s surface, and when Tuantuan turned her head, she saw Little Skeleton swimming towards her.

Seeing this scene, Tuantuan was especially excited as she rushed to meet her buddy she hadn’t seen for nearly half a month.

In a moment, a pig and a skeleton met.

Tuantuan was all excited, and Little Skeleton’s Pupil Fire was flickering joyfully as it reached out and covered Tuantuan’s nostrils, pushing it back into the water, obviously wanting to play in the water with Tuantuan.

Because of this action, at this moment, Tuantuan’s excitement and joy turned to anger.

Who’s playing with whom?

Is this the time to play?

This Skeleton’s lack of attention to detail ruined so many of the pig’s tender moments!

Then, the pig and the skeleton started fighting in the water.

In the end, Lu Wu finished dealing with Dudu before calling the two little ones up.

After a stern lecture, Lu Wu, holding Dudu’s hand, with Little Skeleton carrying Tuantuan, entered the manor like a family of four returning to their maternal home.

This scene made Li Ruyu very happy.

Just when she saw Dudu, she couldn’t help but frown.

“Look how skinny this child’s gotten, not even reaching 160 pounds, right? No good, I need to add a whole cow to the meal today!”

# Chapter 279 - 279 276 Return

﻿Chapter 279: 276 Return Chapter 279: 276 Return Lu Wu had agreed with Lu Haikong to stay for just one day.

But in reality, Lu Wu and Dudu had stayed at the farm for a week.

The main reason was that Li Ruyu refused to let them go.

Besides, Lu Wu had also mentioned to Lu Haikong when tricking him that he was quite free now, and staying at home for a few more days wouldn’t be a problem.

So, Li Ruyu just wouldn’t let Lu Wu leave by any means.

And she was mostly holding on to Lu Wu because of issues with Dudu.

The old Dudu used to grow so well, packing on twenty to thirty pounds in ten days.

But this time, Li Ruyu found that Dudu wasn’t growing any longer.

During this week, despite continuous feeding, with various cows consumed by Dudu, her weight remained around 140 and didn’t increase.

A 140-pound Dudu was already very cute, and anyone with clear sight could see that Dudu would be super pretty if she slimmed down.

Yet despite efforts, they simply couldn’t fatten her up.

This fact made Li Ruyu very anxious.

So, later on, Li Ruyu changed her strategy. Since Dudu couldn’t be fattened up,

she decided to coax her instead.

She pushed for Lu Wu to make it official with Dudu, quickly.

Therefore, from the fifth day after Lu Wu came home, he had to listen to Li Ruyu mention the desire to hold a grandchild more than ten times a day.

Complicating matters, Lu Haikong was particularly supportive, egging them on from the sidelines.

Lu Wu was driven nearly to the point of mental exhaustion.

Lu Wu hastily took Dudu and fled as if escaping.

“I’ll just leave you here; you can find your way back on your own.”

Lu Haikong dropped Lu Wu and Dudu off at a random corner in Fucheng and then disappeared in a flash.

Watching Old Lu leave, Lu Haikong breathed a sigh of relief.

But before he could fully exhale, Old Lu suddenly reappeared in front of Lu Wu.

“Remember, don’t forget about the grandchild business. Arrange it as soon as possible!”

“Off you go!”

Lu Wu’s face fell, and with one kick, he sent the old man flying.

He was clearly fed up with the old man and the whole situation.

Meanwhile, Dudu, holding the pig and tugging at the hem of her clothes, her face flushed and head lowered, she was obviously contemplating the idea of ‘grandchildren’.

To this Lu Wu replied, “When you weigh a hundred pounds, then we can have kids!”

As if joking, Lu Wu was a man who prided himself on his chastity, and it was not going to be that easy to win him over.

After that, Lu Wu looked around the environment, took out Little Skeleton’s phone, and casually called Li Kai.

“Li Kai!”

“Mr. Lu?” The person on the other end recognized Lu Wu’s voice, filled with surprise and joy.

From the time Lu Wu was captured until now, almost a month had passed, and aside from Dudu, Lu Wu hadn’t contacted anyone, including Li Kai.

The main reason was that Lu Haikong was worried about his own den being exposed and had forbidden contact, so this was the first time Li Kai had heard from Lu Wu, naturally surprising and delighting him.

“It’s me, Li Kai. I’m at this location; come pick me up.”

With that, Lu Wu sent his location to Li Kai.

Li Kai was quick to respond, arriving at the designated location in less than half an hour, even bringing the old man with him for security’s sake.

“Mr. Lu, it’s really you. Are you alright?”

“I’m fine; just had a bit of a walkabout.”

As he spoke, Lu Wu didn’t forget to glare at the completely unreliable bodyguard, the old man: “You’ve lost your wages for this month and last!”

The old man chuckled sheepishly, without the cheek to argue.

His bodyguard skills had indeed been less than stellar.

Lu Wu knew that the mess had been orchestrated by his own Old Lu, so he didn’t persist in blaming the old man.

Turning to Li Kai, he asked, “How’s the company and the school been in the past month?”

“The company’s situation is alright, even though without you the Steel Armor Wild Boar Evolution Gift Packages and Snowman Evolution Gift Packages have been halted temporarily, it wasn’t much of a problem.

But the school has had bigger issues.”

“On one hand, because of the school store’s pre-ordered goods not being delivered on time, it has caused customer dissatisfaction.

Numerous customers have demanded refunds and compensation.”

“Additionally, during this period, quite a few students were injured during their tasks, leading to their parents causing disturbances at the school.”

…

On the way back, Li Kai roughly described the current situation at Jiangnan University.

To sum it up in one sentence.

Without Lu Wu, Jiangnan University was in utter chaos!

Lu Wu wasn’t too surprised by this, though.

Jiangnan University’s development had revolved around him.

It was his presence that allowed Jiangnan University to grow rapidly and address a series of problems.

Without him, it was quite normal for Jiangnan University to be a bit chaotic.

These were all not big issues.

As long as he returned to Jiangnan University, everything could be easily resolved.

However, it didn’t take long for Lu Wu to realize that the situation was perhaps a bit worse than he had anticipated.

“Additionally, Principal Zhang’s old injuries had flared up some time ago, and recently he has been hospitalized and recovering. Currently, Principal Li Mingrui is acting as the head of the school.”

“Also, coincidentally on the day of your return, people from Jiangbei University arrived.”

“Jiangbei University?”

Lu Wu was a bit taken aback, then he quickly realized, “Is it Zhang Yuechu leading the team? They must be here to settle accounts.”

“It’s not Principal Zhang; he left the school after you disappeared and hasn’t returned yet.

The team this time, it seems, is led by a young teacher with a group of students, and they have come to complete the last battle of their study tour.”

Lu Wu was a bit taken aback, hearing it wasn’t Zhang Yuechu, but he didn’t care too much.

He then asked another question.

“By the way, have you taken care of the thing I asked you to do in the Demon Cave Secret Realm?”

What Lu Wu referred to was the matter of Lin Jianying’s remains.

He had entrusted this task a while ago, but it remained uncompleted.

Mainly because, although Lu Wu had seen the memory from Gouzi, he knew where Lin Jianying had died.

But the memory wasn’t comprehensive and didn’t allow for precise location; they could only hope to get information out of Wu Mei.

She was uncooperative, and only just before Lu Wu was captured by Yan Ruxue did they make some breakthroughs.

By now, several half months had passed, and logically, Old Lin’s remains should’ve been retrieved.

“Sorry, our men have dug up the area around the target for a mile radius, but still haven’t found it.”

Hearing this, Lu Wu’s eyes immediately narrowed.

“Keep looking until it’s found!”

…

Amidst the conversation between Lu Wu and Li Kai,

their car entered Jiangnan University.

At that moment within Jiangnan University, an exchange visit was unfolding at the university’s First Training Field.

The leader of Jiangbei University’s study group,

watching the one-sided battle within the training field, with a slight smile, said to Li Mingrui who was watching, “Before I came, I heard that your Jiangnans have improved quite a bit in the past three months, raising my expectations slightly, but I didn’t expect you all to still be so fragile!

Seems your renovations haven’t done much good after all!”

…

Hmm, my cute niece has come over, so I’m not sure if there will be an update tonight.

# Chapter 280 - 280 277 Untitled

﻿Chapter 280: 277 Untitled Chapter 280: 277 Untitled Jiangnan University and Jiangbei University had quite a disparity in power.

And it was not a small one.

This kind of gap could not be closed in just over three months.

Not to mention that Jiangbei had not been idle over those three months either.

Zhang Yuechu had triumphed in every battle during his journey!

Along the way, he had also attracted quite a few talents to Jiangbei.

Take the team that Jiangbei brought this time, for instance.

One teacher and three students.

The teacher existed at the Master Peak Level, and the remaining three students were all at the Senior Summoner level.

Each had at least one Summoned Beast of the Leader Level.

Any one student could have taken on the young Zhao Li.

With such a powerful lineup striking, Jiangnan naturally had no power to resist.

But the biggest problem on Jiangnan’s side was not one of power.

It was a problem of morale.

From the moment Lu Wu disappeared, the morale at Jiangnan University, one could even say the whole school’s operation, had encountered issues.

From the teachers to the students.

Everyone was worried about the future of the school.

In such a situation, when Jiangbei University came knocking, Jiangnan University had little response.

If it came to a fight, then so be it.

It wasn’t as if they hadn’t been beaten by Jiangbei before; just let it be!

That was almost the mentality of everyone at Jiangnan University.

Except for a few like Zhao Li, most people were quite nonchalant about winning or losing.

Such an attitude from Jiangnan made the leading teacher from Jiangbei look down upon them.

“I was actually looking forward to today, but your performance is disappointing,” he said.

While the teacher spoke, a car drove into the first training field.

The car’s sudden intrusion disrupted the ongoing match.

Jiangbei’s teacher frowned again, “Principal Li? Are your people at Jiangnan always this arrogant? Who is this, driving straight into the training field, didn’t you see we are having an exchange here?”

As he questioned, he noticed Li Mingrui frozen on the spot.

Li Mingrui’s eyes were fixated on the car.

The teacher from Jiangbei, named Zhou Qingyun, paused and turned his head, just in time to see Lu Wu push open the car door and step down.

The moment Lu Wu alighted, the entire training field fell silent.

All eyes converged on Lu Wu.

Then, cries of disbelief filled the entire training field.

“President! The President is back!”

“The President is back! The President has returned safely!”

…

Zhou Qingyun and his Jiangbei squad clearly saw that just the mere act of Lu Wu getting out of the car dramatically changed the atmosphere.

Even on the training field, where the match had been half-lost and all seemed hopeless,  
 students who had given up all struggle suddenly found renewed energy.

They ran to their defeated Summoned Beasts, encouraging them, “Tuantuan, get up! The President is back; stand up for me. We need to show our best side to the President.

Even if we lose, we must lose with grace!

We can’t embarrass the President!”

“Right, we can’t embarrass the President. Fight against this bunch of Jiangbei weaklings!”

The entire atmosphere of the training field had completely changed.

The students, previously indifferent to victory or defeat, were now exploding with competitiveness, almost as if they wanted to devour Jiangbei University’s four teams.

This sudden change startled the Jiangbei team.

What was even more unexpected for those three students from Jiangbei was seeing their previously arrogant teacher rush over to Lu Wu immediately after his arrival.

“Master Lu? It really is you, Master Lu; your safe return is truly wonderful!”

Look at how surprised and happy he was.

On him, there was none of the arrogance from before; if anything, one could only see an air of sycophancy.

This attitude caught Lu Wu somewhat off guard.

“Who are you?”

“I am Zhou Qingyun from Jiangbei University. I led the team here to Jiangnan for this exchange. I didn’t expect to have the luck to see your safe return during this period—it’s truly wonderful.”

People from Jiangbei?

Lu Wu had no fondness for Jiangbei.

But with everyone watching, it was hard for Lu Wu to be cold when the other was smiling warmly.

“Good to meet you, Teacher Zhou. Thank you for your hard work, Teacher Zhou.”

Lu Wu shook hands with him, then turned to the students in the training field and said, “This exchange is about learning from each other. Since Jiangbei’s team is here, my fellow students, interact more with them, deeply engage with them.

Winning or losing doesn’t matter; what’s important is that you show Jiangnan’s spirit and demeanor, understand?”

“We understand!” \*2888  
 Nearly three thousand students in the training field responded in unison.

They shook the entire Jiangnan University.

Satisfied, Lu Wu nodded.

“Good, carry on with the exchange. I have some matters to attend to, Principal Li, we…”

“Wait!”

As Lu Wu was about to leave with Li Mingrui, a student from the Jiangnan team stood up.

“Lu Wu, I challenge…”

“Shut up!”

Zhou Qingyun’s face changed before he could finish.

He sternly cut off the rest of his statement.

He knew exactly what his student was intending—challenging Lu Wu!

This idea was completely insane.

This was Jiangnan University, and Lu Wu was the spirit leader of Jiangnan University!

Here, even Zhou Qingyun had to tread lightly and grin bearingly, yet his student dared to challenge Lu Wu. Wasn’t this courting death?

Now, everyone in the training field looked at the student differently.

But Lu Wu himself didn’t react overly, nor did he accept the challenge.

“Sorry, I just came back today and have quite a few issues to handle, so let’s forget about the challenge for now.

Of course, if you are really interested in me, I will participate in the university league this year; you can challenge me then.”

With that, Lu Wu waved to Li Mingrui, “Principal Li, let’s go see Uncle Zhang.”

Li Mingrui, without a word, joined Lu Wu and they both got into the car.

Li Kai drove out of the training field.

As soon as Lu Wu left, the training field immediately became lively.

Many students, originally spectators, jumped down, surrounding the Jiangbei student who had just spoken up about challenging Lu Wu.

“I, Jiangnan’s Zhang San, challenge you!”

“I, Jiangnan’s Li Si, challenge you!”

“I, from Jiangnan…..”

…

Almost simultaneously, this one student received challenges from hundreds of people.

Everyone was thinking the same thing.

Damn it, daring to challenge Lu Wu at Jiangnan University, is this a challenge?

This is an insult to all the students of Jiangnan University.

Could they tolerate it?

Now, this student from Jiangbei also realized what he had done. Seeing the fierce group of Jiangnan students before him, he knew he was probably going to be worn out today…

# Chapter 281 - 281 278 Shes your sister

﻿Chapter 281: 278 She’s your sister! Chapter 281: 278 She’s your sister! Jiangnan University’s medical team was quite impressive.

Especially after Lu Wu took over.

Jiangnan University had flourished, turning the original infirmary into a medical department.

Not only did they construct an entire building, but they also invited a top medical team from outside.

All aspects were excellently managed.

This was originally intended to support the task system.

No one had expected that, up to this point, Zhang Wentao and Zhao Kai Ming would be the ones who stayed longest.

When Lu Wu came along with Li Mingrui.

Zhang Wentao and Zhao Kai Ming were playing chess in their patient gowns.

When they saw Lu Wu push the door open, both men were both surprised and pleased.

Especially Zhang Wentao.

As soon as he saw Lu Wu, he grabbed Lu Wu’s hand and said, “During your disappearance, I couldn’t sleep at all. Now that you are finally back, I can finally get some good sleep.”

“You don’t look like someone who can’t sleep.

I heard that your old injuries recurred and I was quite worried, but you look good now.

You’ve even gained a few pounds, and your complexion is much rosier. How are you feeling? Is everything okay?”

“I’m fine, I’m fine.”

“That’s good to hear. Uncle Zhao, how about you? How are you?”

“I’m almost fully recovered, too, able to jump and bounce. I think I will be discharged soon.

But how have you been this past month?”

“I’m fine, I’ve been eating and sleeping well.”

……  
 In the ward, Lu Wu was chatting with the two old men.

Dudu next to him started peeling fruits, and Old Zhang casually took an apple and stuffed it into his mouth.

The only one who was silent was Li Mingrui.

He stood to the side, stiff as a statue.

He did not join in the conversation with Lu Wu, and both Old Zhang and Old Zhao ignored him.

Especially Old Zhang, who had a cold expression whenever he looked at him.

Clearly, the two old men had not been getting along during Lu Wu’s absence.

Half an hour later.

Lu Wu had finished checking the two old men’s health.

After confirming that they were fine, Lu Wu then left the ward.

Exiting the ward, Lu Wu glanced sideways at Li Mingrui.

Casually, he said, “You should resign from the position of president. For that position, I don’t consider you appropriate!”

After dropping this abrupt statement, Lu Wu left immediately with his group, leaving Li Mingrui standing alone in the corridor.

Li Mingrui certainly knew why Lu Wu had said that.

Previously, it was him who had communicated with Zhao Kai Ming and collaborated with Jin Lihai, and he was also behind the recurrence of Zhang Wentao’s old injuries during Lu Wu’s absence.

Lu Wu had returned and first brought him to see Zhang Wentao and Zhao Kai Ming.

It was to judge how to deal with him based on their condition.

Now, Lu Wu had given his verdict.

Making Li Mingrui resign voluntarily was offering him a way out.

Now, the choice facing Li Mingrui was either to accept the dignified exit that Lu Wu offered or to resist and see.

This choice, had it been a month ago, might have been difficult for Li Mingrui.

But now, the choice really wasn’t hard.

Because Li Mingrui knew very well that resisting would only result in him losing his dignity.

Thus, he ultimately just sighed deeply and turned, his whole body exuding dejection as he walked towards the administrative building.

This was the current Lu Wu.

Or rather, this was how much control Lu Wu now had over Jiangnan University.

As Jiangnan University thrived because of him, it also fell completely under Lu Wu’s control.

Even Li Mingrui, who had been developing in Jiangnan University for decades, couldn’t withstand a single sentence from Lu Wu.

That day, Li Mingrui announced his resignation as president of Jiangnan University.

As the president of a university, Li Mingrui’s resignation should have been a significant event.

However, hardly anyone cared about it.

Because what everyone focused on was Lu Wu’s return.

Lu Wu’s return was a significant event for both Jiangnan University and the entire Summoner world.

Numerous media outlets moved into action.

Making immediate contact with Jiangnan University.

They expressed a desire to interview Lu Wu, as the public was very interested in what had happened during the month he was taken away.

This was definitely a hot news story.

But how could Lu Wu have time for any interviews at that moment?

Not even a month had passed since his departure, and Jiangnan University was already in complete disarray.

Moreover, with the recurrence of Zhang Wentao’s old injuries and his decisive handling of Li Mingrui,  
 Lu Wu had all the affairs of Jiangnan University resting on his shoulders.

Just resolving these issues was enough to keep him busy.

Even if he managed to solve this series of problems, Lu Wu wouldn’t have any leisure time left, because of the situation he was captured in.

All the competitions and open days that Jiangnan University had originally scheduled halfway through were canceled.

It was not a problem to cancel the open day, but the competitions had to be continued.

Besides, the production of the “Steel Armor Wild Boar Evolution Gift Package” and the “Snowman Evolution Gift Package” had to continue as well.

“Who has time for interviews with all these issues?”

However, these problems were not really big issues.

Or rather, they were huge issues when Lu Wu wasn’t around, but after his return, they only kept him busy for a while.

In just three days, Lu Wu had resolved them one by one.

Jiangnan University, once a tangled mess, was back on track.

Zhang Wentao, whose ‘old injuries relapsed’ thanks to Li Mingrui, was finally back out helping Lu Wu handle affairs.

Just as Lu Wu was about to have some free time, people from Jiangbei gave him more issues to deal with.

Jiangnan University, inside the president’s office.

“That is, in addition to the academic exchange, I also come with another task.”

Zhou Qingyun, sitting on the sofa, tentatively looked at Lu Wu and spoke.

His hesitant demeanor made Lu Wu subconsciously feel that what he was about to say was probably not good news.

Old Zhang beside him subconsciously covered his account book, his instinct telling him Jiangbei was here to ask for money.

Yes, Old Zhang guessed right.

“That is, our Jiangbei University is also planning to reform, and we have some financial issues, so we hope Jiangnan University can repay some money if possible.”

Originally, Jiangbei University’s strategic plan towards Jiangnan University was to take over.

If next year Jiangnan University’s ranking falls short, Jiangbei will immediately start the liquidation process and directly absorb Jiangnan University.

But now, Jiangnan University had Lu Wu, a disruptive force.

In just three months, Jiangnan University rose from the mire.

Jiangnan Mall was booming; given the current situation, it was definitely impossible for Jiangbei to take over Jiangnan.

Thus, Jiangbei had turned their attention to the money.

To this, Lu Wu was not surprised.

“How much do you plan to ask for?”

The way he phrased it, Jiangbei obviously would ask for as much as they could get.

Zhou Qingyun cautiously said, “It would be best if you could repay it all.”

Upon hearing this, Zhang Wentao immediately got agitated.

“Impossible!

Absolutely impossible!”

What a joke, Jiangnan University had made some money in the past three months.

But most of it had been spent.

Plus, with Lu Wu being detained for over a month, this month’s sales of the mall’s two main products were sustaining, barely covering the current expenses.

There was hardly any money on the books.

Not to mention five hundred million, Jiangnan couldn’t even come up with fifty million.

Zhang Wentao looked at the ledger and gritted his teeth, “The most we can pay now is twenty million!”

His use of the word ‘only’ sent chills down Zhou Qingyun’s spine.

In fact, before coming, Jiangbei had assessed the situation at Jiangnan.

They figured that with Jiangnan University’s spending over the past three months, there wouldn’t be much money left, so Zhou hadn’t expected an offer of twenty million.

Jiangnan’s current financial strength was considerable.

But this twenty million was certainly not enough for Jiangbei.

And Jiangbei’s real goal wasn’t just Jiangnan University’s twenty million.

“That is, if it’s only twenty million, that definitely won’t be enough.

Of course, as brother universities, we know Jiangnan University can’t procure much for now, so we have another solution on our side.”

“Speak!” Zhang Wentao’s eyes lit up.

“It’s like this, our Jiangbei University is planning to launch Jiangbei Mall, could Master Lu allocate some of the ‘Steel Armor Wild Boar’ and ‘Snowman’ gift packages for sale on our side?”

Upon hearing this, Zhang Wentao and Lu Wu responded immediately.

“No!”

“Yes!”

‘No’ was from Old Zhang, ‘yes’ was from Lu Wu.

Upon hearing Lu Wu agree with a nod, both Old Zhang and Zhou Qingyun were dumbfounded.

They hadn’t expected Lu Wu to agree so straightforwardly.

Lu Wu explained, “I had already promised Ms. Yue Chu.”

“Xiao Lu!”

“She saved me from the devil once.”

Upon hearing this, Zhang Wentao and Zhou Qingyun instantly understood, and Zhang Wentao had no more objections while Zhou Qingyun was still confused.

If he had known this earlier, he wouldn’t have raised the issue.

However, Zhou was still pleased that things were going smoothly.

Then, Zhang Wentao and Zhou Qingyun discussed for a while.

Finally, it was decided that Jiangnan University would allocate forty percent of the shares for Jiangbei University to sell.

That day, this news was sent back to Jiangbei.

Jiangbei was stunned upon receiving this news; they never expected Jiangnan to agree so readily.

Then, the news about Zhang Yuechu saving Lu Wu spread far and wide.

These two were already hot topics, and now with news involving both of them, a tale of a beauty saving a hero, the public’s rich imagination was instantly ignited.

By the time the news circled back to Jiangnan, what Jiang Yuexing heard was already a version where Lu Wu and Zhang Yuechu were together and about to have a baby.

This frightened Jiang Yuexing so much that she immediately made a phone call to Lu Wu.

“You can’t be with Zhang Yuechu, can you?”

As Lu Wu was still processing, Jiang Yuexing dropped another bombshell.

“She’s your sister, you know!”

“What??!!!”

Lu Wu “(ºДº\*)”

# Chapter 282 - 282 279 Preparing for the College Tournament

﻿Chapter 282: 279 Preparing for the College Tournament Chapter 282: 279 Preparing for the College Tournament The fact that Zhang Yuechu is my sister really shocked Lu Wu for a while.

And then, Lu Wu found himself falling into the troubles that came with knowing this piece of information, or you could say the cost that needed to be paid.

Does knowing this come with a cost?

The answer is, of course!

And the cost is not low.

After Jiang Yuexing revealed that Zhang Yuechu was Lu Haikong’s daughter,

Jiang Yuexing also began to lay her cards on the table with Lu Wu.

Yes, Lu Wu guessed it right – she was one of Old Lu’s exes.

Now the question was, how was Lu Wu supposed to face one of Old Lu’s exes?

What if this godmother demanded to see Lu Haikong, what should Lu Wu do?

If he refused, it wouldn’t be fair to Jiang Yuexing, as she had been pretty good to him.

Moreover, she was indeed quite pitiable, having waited for that old scumbag for twenty or thirty years.

If he agreed, it would be unfair to Li Ruyu.

Lu Wu was absolutely clueless about what to do.

Fortunately, Jiang Yuexing did not bring up this difficult request with Lu Wu.

Or perhaps it would be better to say she didn’t dare to.

Jiang Yuexing might look like a dominant queen,

But when it comes to emotions, she’s somewhat timid; in truth, she wouldn’t even know what to do if she actually met Lu Haikong.

Looking at this woman, who obviously wanted to know, yet cautiously avoided anything related to Lu Haikong,

Even Lu Wu felt the urge to give a good thrashing to his family’s irresponsible old man.

“Damn scumbag!

I have a feeling that this scumbag is going to get me killed one day.”

To prevent his premonition from coming true,

In the following days, Lu Wu pretty much didn’t leave Jiangnan.

Jiangnan was gradually getting back on track since his return.

Lu Wu had to worry a lot less now.

At this time, Lu Wu could shift his focus from Jiangnan University to the upcoming university league.

Although Jiangnan University had developed quite a bit now,

But the university league was still an event that Jiangnan needed to partake in.

On one hand, it was for the resources that came with university rankings, and on the other, it was to showcase Jiangnan University’s brilliance publicly.

Therefore, Lu Wu not only had to participate, but also had to perform as outstandingly as possible.

After all, he was now the spiritual leader of the Jiangnan University students.

His performance was tied to the face of the entire Jiangnan University.

Thus, Lu Wu’s idol burden inevitably became heavier.

And so, Lu Wu started a three-month special training aimed at the university league.

This special training was not just for him alone.

Apart from him and Dudu, Lu Wu also chose four students from the whole school to train.

The format of the university league is this:

Each school sends a team of six to participate, but even though it’s a team of six, the competition is individual!

The ranking of each school is based on the total performance of the team.

Under such rules, it’s very hard to break into the top ten if only one person is strong; the entire team needs to be strong.

To ensure Jiangnan University could achieve good results in the university league, Lu Wu really put his heart and soul into it.

He reviewed the attributes of all the students’ Summoned Beasts in the entire school and finally chose four people.

What Lu Wu didn’t expect was that these four people were all his acquaintances without exception.

First off, Zhao Li, of course, doesn’t need to be mentioned – with his Summoned Beast being a Leader 1 Star, he was a shoo-in.

Besides him, the other three were freshmen from the first year.

They had all competed against Lu Wu during the high school league and were swayed by him to come to Jiangnan University.

These were none other than the former captain of Team 004, Wu Wei, with a Summoned Beast boasting the Inheritance Skill of “Skyward Stick,”

The former captain of Team 007, Su Lan, with the Summoned Beasts Iron Feathered Eagle and White Wolf,

And the last one was a complete surprise to Lu Wu; he was dumbfounded when he saw her, not expecting her to be at Jiangnan University.

Hmm, that would be the Hengheng Monster.

At that time, Lu Wu asked her this question directly, only to receive a familiar cold snort and a turn of the head in response.

She looked especially infuriating, but in the end, Lu Wu still included her in the team.

Hmm, how else was he going to tease her?

After finalizing the selections, Lu Wu called all four of them over.

As soon as everyone arrived, Lu Wu got straight to the point.

“I’ll keep it short and simple.

The reason I called you guys over is straightforward, just to let you know that from now on you’ll be members of the school team, joining me in the upcoming university league,” he declared.

As soon as Lu Wu said this, Zhao Li and the other three were stunned.

Wu Wei, Su Lan, and the Hengheng Monster didn’t expect to be chosen, and Zhao Li didn’t expect his remaining three teammates to be these three.

Zhao Li couldn’t sit still at that point, “President, isn’t their strength a little too weak?

All of them are only at Elite 3-star level – participating in the university league with that strength isn’t to compete, it’s to be cannon fodder!

Wouldn’t it be better to switch back to our previous team?”

Although Zhao Li’s words annoyed Hengheng Monster and the others,

They couldn’t deny that they were indeed a bit lacking in strength.

So, at the moment they were silent, all looking at Lu Wu.

Lu Wu shook his head and denied it: “I’ve looked at the previous school team – their strength is mediocre, and the breeding style of their Summoned Beasts has already been set, unlikely to make big advancements in a short time. Sending them to compete in the university league would quite frankly not be much different from being cannon fodder.

So, these three will do.”

Of course, that wasn’t the most important point.

The most important point was that they were all senior students.

Even if Lu Wu could turn decay into magic and help them grow, at best people would think they were Jiangnan University’s trump cards.

It wasn’t very meaningful to have them compete in matches.

Therefore, rather than cultivating them, Lu Wu was more willing to foster these three freshmen.

He wanted to set an example with these three new students.

To tell everyone in the Alliance that Jiangnan University could not only make money but also cultivate talent.

As long as these three could achieve results in the college league, Jiangnan University’s reputation would be established.

Next year, when Jiangnan University was recruiting, they could lure a bunch of fresh and tender new students.

It could be said that Lu Wu really had Jiangnan University’s development close to his heart.

“Alright, regarding the optional task, let’s settle it like this.

Here are four contracts, take a look, and if you have any questions, just sign them.”

With Lu Wu’s current prestige, even the university president could be replaced easily, let alone this.

Zhao Li, seeing Lu Wu’s resolute stance, didn’t say much and picked up the contract passed to him by Lu Wu.

Upon reading it, he was stunned.

The contract in his hand required him to sign a ten-year working contract with Jiangnan University.

For the next ten years, he would have to sell himself to Jiangnan University.

That was the price he had to pay, and in return, he would get a cultivation plan worth about 10,000 Academic Points.

What did 10,000 Academic Points mean?

That was equivalent to 100,000 points!

The other three had contracts similar to Zhao Li’s, with cultivation plans ranging from 10,000 to 30,000 Academic Points, and the required working durations ranged from 10 to 40 years.

Hengheng Monster had the longest one; despite being just a 20,000 Academic Points cultivation plan, she needed to work for Jiangnan University for 40 years.

Obviously, Lu Wu had slyly tricked the girl.

However, she didn’t know it, as the details of each contract weren’t disclosed, nor were they compared openly.

After all, Lu Wu was right there in front of them.

After reading the contract, all four had similar reactions, with no hesitation, they directly signed their names on it.

With their names signed,

this special training aimed at the college league officially began.

The first thing Lu Wu did was to splash the cash.

Crazy amounts of cash.

Not to mention his own investments, just Little Skeleton alone was a money-consuming giant with 15 lackeys in the mobile phone.

Ever since Dudu returned, he did nothing but eat Vermilion Fruits every day,

burning through about 1,000 points worth of Vermilion Fruits daily.

Clearly, Dudu was determined to slim down to 220 pounds.

Just in the first month of special training, Lu Wu spent 1.2 million points.

Zhao Li received 100,000, Wu Wei 200,000, Su Lan 200,000, Hengheng Monster 200,000, Lu Wu himself 410,000, and Dudu alone consumed 90,000 worth of Vermilion Fruits.

With such expenditures, the results were naturally significant.

Zhao Li’s originally Bronze Quality gorilla, Wu Wei’s Black Iron Level Fire Monkey, and Su Lan’s Black Iron Level Iron Feathered Eagle all advanced to Silver Quality.

Hengheng Monster’s originally Bronze Quality Two-tailed Spirit Cat and Su Lan’s already Silver Quality white wolf jumped straight to Golden Quality.

Lu Wu took it a step further; he upgraded all of Little Skeleton’s 15 underlings to Silver Quality in one go.

This was the power of burning money!

However, although the quality of these Summoned Beasts had greatly improved and their foundations had thickened, their actual power hadn’t increased much—in fact, it could be said there was hardly any improvement.

Of course, this was all part of Lu Wu’s plan.

The special training was scheduled for three months, and only the first month had passed.

There were two more months to go, which would be the time for the real surge in power.

During the next two months, Lu Wu didn’t put the team together for training.

It didn’t make much sense.

After all, there was no small gap in power between the members of the team.

And their training methods were different.

So it was better to split them up.

Lu Wu designed different training methods for Zhao Li and the others, arranged different Secret Realms, and provided each with a Lord Level big shot as a bodyguard.

Then, just like scattering seeds, he sent them off.

Today he scattered four newbies; in two months, he would reap four mature teammates capable of competing on their own.

When he sent them off, it was just in time for Chinese New Year’s Eve.

No sooner had Lu Wu scattered them than Lu Haikong came calling.

He said to Lu Wu, “Your mom is telling you to come home for dinner.”

Then, Lu Wu took Dudu back to the farm for a meal and stayed for two days before Lu Haikong escorted Lu Wu and Dudu to Dudu’s family.

At Dudu’s family home, Dudu’s Dad was almost moved to tears when he saw Dudu slimmed down to just 140 pounds.

What had Lu Wu done to his poor girl?

He snatched a broom and began a furious assault on Lu Wu.

No one knew where Dudu’s Dad, who was nearly 200 pounds, got such agility from—Lu Wu, despite his Leader Level power, was made to hop and skip in escape.

In the end, it was only after Dudu and Dudu’s mother firmly held back Lu Wu that he was spared a tragic fate.

Then, Dudu’s Dad gave up on battering Lu Wu, and instead set about trying to fatten his ’emaciated’ daughter back up.

So, just after Li Ruyu had finished feeding Dudu, her own father began to feed her non-stop as well.

Unfortunately, no matter how much Dudu ate, her weight remained at 140.

This troubled Dudu’s Dad to no end, and he kept glaring at Lu Wu, convinced that this scoundrel had secretly done something.

Eventually, Lu Wu spent three days of utter misery in Dudu’s home.

Only then did he take Dudu back to Jiangnan University, ready to enter the Dragon Island Secret Realm and officially begin his special training…

# Chapter 283 - 283 280 Dragon Island Bully

﻿Chapter 283: 280 Dragon Island Bully Chapter 283: 280 Dragon Island Bully Dragon Island Secret Realm.

This is one of the rare secret realms within the alliance that produces Dragon Summoning Beast Babies, and it was one of the few remaining impressive features of Jiangnan University before Lu Wu took over.

But this impressive feature, it’s a bit lame.

The thing is, although it’s called Dragon Island.

The dragons produced are Western Dragons, and due to excessive hunting during the initial clearing, there are practically no dragons left on the island now.

The Summoned Beasts that are present are mostly sub-dragons with dragon bloodlines.

Another thing is, Dragon Island is vast, and the power levels of the Summoned Beasts within this realm vary significantly.

There’s no place similar to a newbie village.

Once you enter Dragon Island, you might be happily singing songs and slaying elite beasts, and suddenly, a Lord appears and blasts you with fire.

For these reasons, the Dragon Island Secret Realm could only serve as Jiangnan University’s façade.

It looks good on paper, but is seldom developed.

Other than some professors and bosses, hardly any students go in there.

The only first-year students who went were Lu Wu and Dudu.

After returning alive to Jiangnan from Dudu’s family.

Lu Wu immediately dragged Dudu and his team into Dragon Island.

As soon as they entered Dragon Island, stepping on the ground, Lu Wu briefly observed the surrounding area and then began summoning his minions.

“Come, come, form a line, I’ll just say a few words.”

Yeah, Lu Wu had gotten used to being a leader, he always had to say something before doing anything.

Dudu, Little Skeleton, and others cooperated as well.

As Lu Wu spoke, Dudu stepped forward, hugging Tuantuan and stood on the far left.

Little Skeleton, who was a bit shorter than Dudu, hugged Lin Jianying’s dog and took second place, the third was the hairless Han, fourth was Dudu’s Green Cub, and at the very end was the little goldfish.

Seeing their skilled motions and this high-to-low arrangement, it was clear that this wasn’t Lu Wu’s first time doing this.

“Our main purpose for entering Dragon Island this time is for special training, as the college competition is just two months away.

For the glory and development of Jiangnan University, we must perform brilliantly in the competition.

Therefore, we need to make good use of these two months to work hard to improve and empower ourselves, only a powerful self can perform excellently.

Understand? Applause!”

There was a rattling noise from below.

Regardless of whether they understood or not, they gave Lu Wu face, even the little goldfish, wrapped in a water orb and floating in mid-air, also slapped its tail to show support.

This pleased Lu Wu greatly.

“Good, next I’ll briefly talk about the content of our special training.

The content is simple, beat them up!

We’ll start here and sweep across the entire Dragon Island.

No matter what Summoned Beast we see, whether it’s Ordinary Level or Lord Level, just beat them up!”

As Lu Wu called out, his minions energetically clapped their hands.

At the same time, the previously peaceful and serene Dragon Island Secret Realm officially ushered in an era of tumult.

Lu Wu truly walked the talk, starting from their landing point and began pushing through deeper into Dragon Island.

Although it’s an island, Dragon Island is quite vast.

The diameter of the entire island is at least hundreds of kilometers at its shortest.

Its area is approximately one-sixth of Jiangnan Province.

With such a large island, naturally, the ecology is diverse.

Over the years, Jiangnan University has recorded 321 different types of Summoned Beasts on Dragon Island, and that’s only the ones accounted for, who knows how many more there are.

The Summoned Beasts on Dragon Island are mostly of the animal type.

Additionally, because dragons, as you may know, share a certain characteristic with someone from Lu Wu’s house.

They are particularly trashy.

And they have a much bigger appetite than that person.

That guy is choosy about who he faults, dragons are not.

Dragons don’t care about what breed, size, or looks their partners have, they truly embody boundless love.

In short, any dragon that can, will, and if they can’t, they find ways to make it possible.

This has led to a phenomenon.

That is, anywhere on Dragon Island, you could randomly meet a dragon species.

They all carry more or less the noble blood of the Dragon Clan.

Those with this blood generally have decent combat power, and the Summoned Beasts here usually stick in groups. Engage one, and a whole group jumps out, so not many dare to provoke them.

There are few teachers from Jiangnan University who come here, so the Summoned Beasts of Dragon Island generally had good lives.

But this peaceful life, from today onward, was gone forever.

…

“Does that forest over there seem to have a group of monkeys? Let me check, let me check?”

Just after arriving, Lu Wu’s eyes were already fixated on a nearby group of Summoned Beasts.

As his eyes scanned over, the attributes of the creatures appeared before Lu Wu.

…

Name: Wood Dragon Monkey (Second Evolution)

Power: Leader 3 stars

Quality: Silver (Enhanced)

Attribute: Wood, Dragon

State: Eating melon (the monkeys on the other side are strange)

Weakness: Fire (General)

Skill: Omitted

Talent: Omitted

…

Lu Wu glanced at its attributes, and it was also staring at Lu Wu, its eyes full of curiosity.

It seemed that it had never seen such an ugly monkey, casually munching on a fruit, with absolutely no intention of provoking Lu Wu.

However, it didn’t anticipate that just because it stared at him a little longer in the crowd, it brought disaster upon its monkey clan.

“Staring at me? Beat it up!”

Following Lu Wu’s order,

his summoned beasts sprang into action.

Without a word, Little Skeleton released his 15 minions and together with silly little goldfish and others, they charged towards the monkeys.

Even Tuantuan, the round furry Green Cub, rolled its round body to help but was caught by Lu Wu.

This little one was a support, going in wasn’t helping, it was delivering food to the enemy.

It was Dudu’s Tuantuan that had to go.

This pig was especially lazy.

Seeing a fight was coming, the pig instantly turned around and buried its head in the mountains.

A state of ‘Tuantuan sees nothing, Tuantuan knows nothing’.

Unfortunately, it couldn’t escape its fate as Lu Wu went straight up and pulled the pig out from Dudu’s arms.

“Off you go!”

With a flash of electricity, Lu Wu threw the pig with force, launching it out.

The pig, not originally wanting to partake in the battle, was the first to be thrown into the arena, landing right in front of the bewildered Monkey King.

A moment of a dumbfounded stare shared between a monkey and a pig.

The lazy pig sighed, performed a Giant Transformation, and began an utterly ruthless battle.

The battle erupted quickly and ended just as fast.

The main reason was the mismatch in power.

The Wood Dragon Monkey Leader might have had Leader 3 stars, but their clan only had around 30 monkeys, of which six or seven were young monkeys, only three were Leader-level, and the others were mostly Boss-level.

They were no match for Lu Wu’s side.

In less than ten minutes, the group of monkeys was beaten down.

However, Lu Wu didn’t kill them. He only took some blood from these monkeys with a syringe, stole some of their fruits, and used them as practice targets for Green Cub’s healing before letting the monkeys go.

The poor monkeys got a beating out of nowhere.

But they were not alone.

After beating the monkeys, Lu Wu turned around and beat up another group of Summoned Beasts.

…

Name: Earth Dragon Deer (Second Evolution)

Power: Leader 3 stars

Quality: Silver (Upgraded)

Attribute: Earth, Mischief

State: Curious (What’s going on over there? Such excitement!)

Weakness: Water

…

These silly deer gathered around to watch the commotion while Lu Wu was beating up the monkeys.

Unexpectedly, after beating the monkeys, Lu Wu turned around and gave them a beating too.

And these deer were profoundly silly.

After being beaten by Lu Wu, once they realized that he was just beating them, not killing them, these deer grew bolder.

They started to gather around Lu Wu and his group.

An entire clan, limping along, followed Lu Wu to watch the excitement.

They witnessed firsthand how Lu Wu and his gang of bullies beat every clan within ten kilometers.

The sight exhilarated them; they jumped around as if thoroughly enjoying the show.

After watching, the deer even brought some fruits to Lu Wu’s group.

The gesture seemed to say, ‘Good show, here’s your reward.’

This hurt Lu Bully’s pride.

He came to Dragon Island to be a bully.

From day one on the island, Lu Wu swore to beat up every Summoned Beast.

To make every Summoned Beast tremble at the thought of him, and these deer thought of him as an entertainer — could Lu Wu tolerate this?

He beat up the group of silly deer right there.

But although they were beaten, after the beating, these deer still clung to Lu Wu and his group.

Their pair of silly eyes seemed to tell Lu Wu,

They were set on watching this excitement, and nothing could change their minds, they declared.

Beating them didn’t scare them, and killing Lu Wu was also not an option.

After all, these silly, dopey deer were a bit foolish but looked quite cute; eventually, Lu Wu simply let them stay as spectators.

Thus, Lu Wu and his group gained a bunch of dopey spectators.

Wherever Lu Wu went, this group of silly deer followed.

Whenever Lu Wu fought a Summoned Beast, they’d be on the sidelines, cheering and rooting for Lu Wu’s team.

After the fight, they would even bring fruits and grass for Lu Wu’s team.

Sometimes, they took over the traffic duties for Lu Wu’s team and even became guides.

When Lu Wu couldn’t find any monsters to fight, he’d ask these dopes.

These silly creatures, though not strong or smart, were extremely fast, liked to wander around, and were very familiar with the Dragon Island environment.

With these guides, Lu Wu’s plan to beat up all over Dragon Island was much smoother.

They always managed to find hidden Summoned Beast clans on the island to beat one by one.

With over three hundred clans cataloged by Jiangnan University, within a month of entering Dragon Island, Lu Wu had beaten more than two hundred clans on the outskirts.

This month, Lu Wu proudly became the bully of the outer edges of Dragon Island.

And as the guides, the silly deer also became the sworn enemies of all clans on the outskirts of Dragon Island.

Unsurprisingly, by the time Lu Wu would leave Dragon Island, these silly deer’s days of reckoning would come…

# Chapter 284 - 284 281 Bone Dragon Wrapped in Death Energy

﻿Chapter 284: 281 Bone Dragon Wrapped in Death Energy Chapter 284: 281 Bone Dragon Wrapped in Death Energy How long would it take to dominate Dragon Island?

If someone else were asked this question, they might not know the answer.

But if you asked Lu Wu, that would be the right person to ask, as he was quite clear about it.

From his first day on Dragon Island, it took him exactly one month and thirteen days to beat up every single known Summoned Beast tribe on the entire island.

Yes, you heard that correctly—every single one!

From the tribes possessing powerful Summoned Beasts of Lord Level to those of only Elite Level, Lu Wu didn’t spare a single one.

If Lu Wu couldn’t beat a Lord Level Summoned Beast, he would shake things up.

Didn’t Lu Haikong come clean to Lu Wu about the Moon Shadow?

Whenever Lu Wu encountered an unbeatable foe, he would call on Moon Shadow for help.

However, there were very few instances that he couldn’t handle nowadays.

The most powerful on Dragon Island were the Dragon Clan, but this race had weakened due to the previously started development of the land, and also because of Jiangnan University’s financial struggles over the years.

Zhang Wentao, that inhuman guy, came over to hunt constantly, every other day.

They invaded as if robbers storming into a village.

If they could catch dragons, they would catch dragons; if not, they’d go after sub-dragons, or at the very least, ruthlessly scrape up resources—they never returned empty-handed.

As a result, the current strongest presence on Dragon Island was merely that of a Lord 3 Star.

In the core area, there were mostly just Leader and Lord 1 and 2 Star beings.

And after more than a month of intense (cross) grueling (domineering) training (path), Lu Wu’s team also experienced significant power increases.

Little Skeleton, silly, little goldfish, and Tuantuan all reached the standard of a Leader 2 stars.

Little Skeleton’s minion, Green Cub, as well as Lin Jianying’s Gouzi, had also achieved Leader Level.

The whole team was of Leader Level, and with little goldfish and Little Skeleton—both Leader 1 Star—they could battle with Lord 1 Star Summoned Beasts.

Then there was Tuantuan who was lazy yet kept steadily increasing in combat power without ever revealing its true strength.

Ordinary Lord 2 Star Summoned Beasts were simply no match for them.

Their power was fearsome indeed.

With this level of special training, Lu Wu’s side could almost consider their minor objective complete.

Originally, after completing his conquest, Lu Wu was also preparing to pack up and leave Dragon Island.

However, just as Lu Wu was about to leave, a silly muntjac bit onto him.

“What’s going on?” Lu Wu asked, and the muntjac bolted.

As it ran, all the muntjacs behind it started hopping along, a bunch of silly muntjacs hopping forward while looking back at Lu Wu’s side as if to make sure he was following.

Lu Wu had been on Dragon Island for more than a month, and this group of muntjacs had been following him that long.

After a month, he had grown quite familiar with these muntjacs.

Knowing how they behaved, it was clear they must have discovered something good or interesting.

“Let’s go, follow them and see,” Lu Wu waved, and his squad followed suit.

Lu Wu originally thought they would reach their destination soon, but to his surprise, those silly muntjacs hopped around for quite a long time.

It took nearly two hours of leading Lu Wu and his team until they finally stopped in a valley.

“What place is this?” Lu Wu looked puzzled at the valley before him.

It didn’t seem like a good place—

A large valley, devoid of any greenery, all that met the eye were bare black rocks and brown earth, looking desolately barren.

Such a place seemed out of place on a tropical island like Dragon Island.

Additionally,

Since there were no plants, the area was bare, nothing could be hidden, and it seemed there was nothing particularly special?

Of course, since the silly muntjacs had led them here, Lu Wu still took a look around.

After a survey, Lu Wu indeed didn’t see anything special.

This puzzled Lu Wu, who then found the muntjac from earlier and asked, “Why did you bring me here?”

Once he had asked, Lu Wu focused on the muntjac’s state.

Its state indeed changed immediately, but it seemed meaningless.

Lu Wu noticed ‘strange’ and ‘fun,’ among some other incomprehensible attributes.

While Lu Wu was baffled,

The group of muntjacs ran to a corner of the valley, hopping around one by one.

Dozens of muntjacs hopping in one place created a peculiar sight.

And then, to Lu Wu’s surprise, something happened.

Mid-hop, one muntjac was suddenly propelled by some unknown force, shooting up about twenty meters into the sky before falling back to the ground with a ‘thud.’

The way it fell, it seemed it didn’t quite grasp what had happened.

However, after such a fall, the muntjac seemed even more excited, its eyes glowing as it ran back to the same spot to continue hopping.

Not just this one, all the muntjacs seemed more excited than before, hopping around like mad.

And now, Lu Wu’s attention was thoroughly captured.

Because he noticed that sudden surge of fleeting power, he even discerned its attribute.

…

Name: Weakened Dragon Domain

Description: Should be the domain power of a dragon that’s either close to death, or should have died.

Uncontrolled, triggered randomly.

…

Seeing this attribute, Lu Wu’s eyes lit up immediately.

He hurried over to take a closer look and observe the spot where the muntjacs were hopping.

If viewed plainly, Lu Wu hadn’t noticed anything unusual, the ground beneath his feet seemed to be just ordinary earth. However, the attribute he had just seen convinced Lu Wu that there definitely was something underneath.

So, Lu Wu called a halt to the group of roe deer.

But the roe deer were a bit too enthusiastic at the moment, and Lu Wu couldn’t stop them by shouting.

With no other choice, Lu Wu could only discipline the group of roe deer with a beating, after which they all became compliant.

Then, Lu Wu began directing his subordinates to excavate the area.

Lu Wu’s side, along with Little Skeleton’s 15 subordinates, totalled 21 Summoned Beasts. Added to that were the roe deer, which, after being beaten and seeing Little Skeleton and the others digging with great interest, joined in the task.

During this process, Lu Wu’s subordinates and the silly roe deer were frequently repelled by the Domain, but the power of the Domain was very weak and didn’t inflict any harm on the Summoned Beasts.

On the contrary, it made the silly roe deer even more eager to work.

With their help, Lu Wu quickly dug down more than three meters deep over an area of roughly three hundred square meters.

At this time, Lu Wu finally made a discovery.

They encountered a stone, and Lu Wu saw its attribute.

…

Name: Stone Wrapped in Death Energy

Description: There should be something under this stone.

…

Upon seeing this, Lu Wu immediately had his subordinates dig along the stone.

“Go, go, go, hope is right before our eyes.”

Lu Wu’s subordinates were indeed working hard.

But as they dug, Lu Wu realised something was not quite right.

The stone was so massive it was almost beyond his expectation, blocking further excavation.

In other words, unless Lu Wu could remove the stone, he wouldn’t be able to dig any further down.

Lu Wu did have Little Skeleton try to break the stone.

It could shatter the stone, but its size was beyond imagination.

Just the part visible from what they’d dug up was over three hundred square meters, and Lu Wu was not clear how much larger it was below.

This was quite a headache for Lu Wu.

While Lu Wu was troubled, Moon Shadow emerged from his heart.

Carrying that ice-blue longsword, Moon Shadow circled the stone then touched a spot and put the sword away.

Lu Wu, looking at the unchanged stone beneath his feet, was a bit stunned.

“No way, Auntie Moon Shadow couldn’t move it either?”

Moon Shadow did not respond but motioned for Lu Wu and the others to move aside, then gestured towards the stone.

A gentle breeze blew, and then something shocking happened.

The enormous stone began to crumble to dust, blown away by the wind.

In an instant, dust filled the air.

Once the dust settled, Lu Wu discovered a deep pit, several dozen meters deep, where the boulder had been.

Apparently, the pit was the volume of the stone.

Conservatively estimated, the stone was at least fifty meters in diameter.

Such a massive stone had been turned to dust by a single touch of Moon Shadow’s sword.

Moon Shadow’s power was truly terrifying!

However, Lu Wu’s attention was quickly drawn away by something else; he discovered what seemed to be a cave under the pit.

At this moment, black gas was emanating from the depths of the cave.

Following that, along with a roar akin to that from Hell, a figure rushed out from the depths of the cave.

…

Name: Bone Dragon Wrapped in Death Energy

Power: Lord 1 Star

Quality: King-level (Upgraded)

Attributes: Dragon, Undead

State: Excited (“I’m finally out, I, the great one, am finally out!”)

Weakness: Light (Strong), Flames (Weak), Thunder (Weak)

Basic Skills: Negligible

Advanced Skills: Dragon Power (Master), Dragon Clan Fighting (Master), Dragon Language Magic (Master)

Killing Move: Dragon Breath (Master)

Talent: Dragon Power (Active) – Significantly enhances Combat Power upon activation.

Dragon Body (Passive) – Immune to physical and Spell attacks from leaders and below. Leader Level physical and Spell attacks reduced by 70%, Lord Level physical and Spell attacks reduced by 40%.

Dragon Power (Active) – Upon activation, can intimidate opponents, lowering their attack and defense, and can even cause weaker opponents to lose the will to fight.

Description: This is a Bone Dragon born from Dragon Bones.

It has been imprisoned in the Dragon Tomb for decades, and today, it has finally emerged.

PS: The Bone Dragon is very excited, it believes it can take on five at once.

…

Well, the Bone Dragon was excited, and Lu Wu was excited too.

He was already prepared to leave, but he hadn’t expected such a gain just before departing.

This Bone Dragon, Lu Wu decided, not even Jesus could stop him from claiming it!

“Charge, beat it up!”

Following Lu Wu’s order, all his Summoned Beasts swarmed towards the Bone Dragon…

Today is the 31st; everyone, use your spare Monthly Tickets to support Nu Xiao.

# Chapter 285 - 285 282 Transform for your daddy

﻿Chapter 285: 282 Transform for your daddy Chapter 285: 282 Transform for your daddy The battle broke out in an instant.

On Lu Wu’s side, Little Skeleton took the lead, with its 15 minions trailing closely behind.

However, as soon as they charged forward, the Bone Dragon cast a disdainful glance at them.

Even though this poor creature had been locked underground for decades,  
 it was still a being of Lord Level and could tell at a glance that those charging at it were nothing but trash.

In the face of this rabble, the Bone Dragon activated its Dragon Power Talent.

A roar filled with tremendous mystery and dominance rose, spreading an invisible force.

The movements of Little Skeleton’s 15 minions came to an abrupt halt.

It wasn’t just them; even Little Skeleton itself felt somewhat suppressed by the Dragon Power.

Just the use of a Talent alone dominated the opponent – the Bone Dragon’s attack was relentless as it opened its jaws and unleashed a stream of black Dragon Breath.

All of Little Skeleton’s Summoned Beasts within the attack range were engulfed.

It was ready to conclude the battle with a breath of Dragon’s Breath.

Of course, Little Skeleton wasn’t just sitting around doing nothing.

As the Dragon Breath cascaded out, Little Skeleton’s Bone Staff instantly transformed into Silver Spear form, and with a raise of its hand, it shot out a spear of thunder, clashing head-on.

Despite being a Summoned Beast of King-level Quality with Lord Level power,  
 Little Skeleton was merely Leader 2 stars; there was an enormous gap between their strengths.

When Little Skeleton launched its spear, it shattered instantly, but fortunately, Little Skeleton wasn’t just any skeleton.

A little goldfish opened its mouth and shot out a mouth cannon.

Tuantuan immediately became giant and, with a forward charge, executed Cute Pig Trample.

Han was particularly excited to meet the Dragon Breath head-on.

Four against one.

The result was quite clear!

Han was slammed to the ground by the Dragon Breath on the spot, the little goldfish’s mouth cannon was shattered, and Tuantuan’s Cute Pig Trample along with Little Skeleton’s second thunder spear were successively broken through by the Dragon Breath.

Ultimately, it was Tuantuan that stood at the forefront, using its gigantic body to block this wave of Dragon Breath.

But it wasn’t easy for it to hold; its giant form flickered, nearly unable to maintain its enlarged state.

In just one round of combat, the Bone Dragon showed Lu Wu the meaning of power.

This guy was almost the most formidable enemy their small team encountered after entering Dragon Island.

Facing such an opponent, both the little goldfish and Little Skeleton couldn’t possibly hold back.

The little goldfish immediately unleashed its skill Flood, quickly creating a sea, and with the activation of its Child of the Sea Talent, its combat power swiftly rose from Leader 2 stars to Lord 1 Star level.

Little Skeleton also activated the Skeleton Commander at the same time, its strength surging to Lord Level as well.

With the cheat activated, both Little Skeleton and the little goldfish felt unstoppable.

Confident Little Skeleton was the first to launch an offence.

Electricity flashed on the framework, the Charging skill burst forth, and the framework turned into a bolt of lightning heading straight for the Bone Dragon.

Before the Bone Dragon could even defend itself, the little goldfish opened its mouth for another mouth cannon.

The same mouth cannon, but this time the power that shot out was completely different from before.

If earlier it was just a water ball, now the water ball contained streaks of chilling air, its power more than doubled.

What was truly fatal wasn’t just the individual attacks, but the timing of these two attacks striking together.

The two companions had rampaged across Dragon Island for over a month; their coordination was quite tacit, and their timing was impeccably precise. Under their joint maneuver, many Lord-level Summoned Beasts had been overwhelmed.

Unfortunately, their opponent this time was the Bone Dragon.

Faced with the two-pronged assault, the Bone Dragon simply raised its bone claw and effortlessly tore through the little goldfish’s mouth cannon.

Little Skeleton seized the opportunity, circled to the Bone Dragon’s rear, and was about to deliver a jab when the Bone Dragon’s tail swept and sent Little Skeleton flying.

And it didn’t end there; the Bone Dragon promptly pursued the attack.

It must be said that even though the Bone Dragon had been locked up for decades,  
 its battle experience was all inherited and it knew exactly how to hit its enemy when they were down.

In an instant, it caught up to Little Skeleton, stretched out its dragon claw, grabbed its head with one claw and its foot with another, and viciously tore Little Skeleton in half in a single movement.

The scene was too horrific to describe.

The sight scared Lu Wu into eating several sunflower seeds in rapid succession.

While Little Skeleton was torn apart, the little goldfish’s long-range attack was finally ready and a massive mouth cannon blasted forth, striking the Bone Dragon.

At the same time, both Han and Tuantuan, who had been hit by the Dragon Breath, also recovered and came back into the fray.

Han leaped up and took the opportunity while the Bone Dragon was hit by the mouth cannon to launch a ferocious charge, ramming its head against the Bone Dragon.

To be honest, Han throwing itself in the attack was quite something to witness.

Despite not having much fur on its body and still bearing the scars of the Dragon Breath, its charge was executed with both momentum and style, causing everyone on Lu Wu’s side to stop their sunflower seed snacking and watch expectanly.

Then came a soft “plop!”

Well, the very next second after making contact, Han was casually slapped into the ground by the Bone Dragon’s paw.

Not only did the Bone Dragon easily overpower Han, it even dived down toward Tuantuan, who couldn’t be reached underground, grabbed it with both hind claws and lifted it up.

It aimed to tear Tuantuan apart just as it had Little Skeleton, but Tuantuan cleverly cancelled its giant state and evaded that lethal strike, leaving the Bone Dragon tearing at nothing.

At the same time, lightning flashed as a Thunder Dragon charged straight at the Bone Dragon.

The one who made the move was Little Skeleton, who had just been torn apart by the Bone Dragon.

Well, as an Undead, being torn apart wasn’t a serious injury for Little Skeleton, as long as its skull was intact, it wouldn’t die.

So, at the same moment it was ripped open, Little Skeleton began charging up, and as the Bone Dragon was showing off, Little Skeleton detonated the attached attack of its “Silver Spear Form.”

The strike was impressive.

The entire sky was filled with lightning and the faint sound of a roar, the special effects were incredibly gorgeous.

Unfortunately, it didn’t inflict any damage.

The ferocious attack slammed into the Bone Dragon, but in the end, it didn’t even damage a single hair.

After all, its innate Talent was there.

Leader Level damage reduction of seventy percent, even the most terrifying attacks would lose much of their power after such a reduction.

And with Little Skeleton’s burst attack, Lu Wu and his small team were completely out of options.

Lu Wu had come to realize it.

This Bone Dragon, with its King-level Quality and Lord status, had terrifying strength.

Up until now, it hadn’t even used its ultimate move.

Looking at the current situation, if Little Skeleton and his team didn’t make a breakthrough in their strength, it was virtually impossible to defeat this Bone Dragon.

And what about Little Skeleton and the team’s condition?

Well, Lu Wu looked over and saw they were all quite stable, not showing any signs of advancing or evolving despite the tough battle.

This caused Lu Wu to shake his head involuntarily.

“It looks like, to take down this Bone Dragon, the death of one or two Lu Wus seems inevitable.”

Lu Wu felt guilty inside.

By staying alive, he was dragging down Little Skeleton and the others’ output.

But, having said that, Lu Wu didn’t have the intention to sacrifice himself for the sake of Little Skeleton and the others.

He couldn’t spoil them like that.

Every time they couldn’t win, they couldn’t rely on sacrificing a Lu Wu to break through; where in the world could you find that many Lu Wus to sacrifice?

If they couldn’t win, then they couldn’t win—after all, Lu Wu had big thighs to latch onto.

“Auntie Moon Shadow!”

With Lu Wu calling out to Auntie Moon Shadow, she walked empty-handed towards the Bone Dragon.

As Moon Shadow made her move, the Bone Dragon immediately sensed it.

It threw Little Skeleton and the others aside and turned its head to look at Moon Shadow.

Looking at the approaching Moon Shadow, the Bone Dragon showed no sign of cowardice.

It even began to speak.

“Woman, will you be the one to face me next?”

As these words came out, Lu Wu was instantly dumbfounded.

How could this dragon talk?

And something seemed off about its voice. Why did it sound babyish? It was calling itself “lord,” but had this dragon been weaned yet?

While Lu Wu was still bewildered, something even more baffling happened.

The Bone Dragon, putting on airs with its claws moving in all directions as if it were in a fight, looked particularly imposing.

“Come on, let’s see how fierce your lord is—ah woo…”

Before the Bone Dragon could finish its bravado, Moon Shadow slapped it on the forehead, directly causing what was supposed to be a pain-insensitive Bone Dragon to cry out in a whiny voice.

The once arrogant Bone Dragon now flickered in its Pupil Fire the emotion of fear.

This woman was fierce, and it seemed it couldn’t win.

The Bone Dragon’s first instinct was to run away, but before it could, Moon Shadow grabbed its tail and pulled it back, hitting its forehead again.

“Ah woo… it hurts!”

And now, Moon Shadow, imitating Lu Haikong’s manner, said something that baffled Lu Wu.

“Transform for me, now!”

After that, Moon Shadow pounded on the Bone Dragon, beating it until it cried out pitifully.

It sounded so pitiful.

After all, even though the Bone Dragon looked big, its voice was particularly young and whiny, and it made Lu Wu feel like his heart was melting as it cried.

He couldn’t help but feel a tad guilty, as if he was bullying a kindergartener.

Just as Lu Wu was contemplating whether to ask Moon Shadow to stop, the most shocking moment unfolded.

Under Moon Shadow’s beating, the gigantic Bone Dragon began to shrink rapidly.

In less than three minutes, the originally three to four meters tall Bone Dragon had become a tiny creature less than one meter tall.

But what was even more important wasn’t the reduction in size—it was that with Moon Shadow’s final strike, the species of the Bone Dragon transformed.

It turned into a red-eyed, wailing little girl of about five or six years old.

Seeing this little girl, Lu Wu felt as if all his principles had shattered.

This creature called itself “lord”?

How could he feel, no matter how he looked at it, that it was female?

# Chapter 286 - 286 283 Dragon Tomb (Subscribe please)

﻿Chapter 286: 283 Dragon Tomb (Subscribe please) Chapter 286: 283 Dragon Tomb (Subscribe please) Inside Dragon Island.

Lu Wu stared at the Bone Dragon turned into a little Lolita for quite a while.

Then, his eyes suddenly lit up as if he remembered something.

Without a second word, he quickly pulled Little Skeleton over.

“Aunt Moon Shadow, help me turn Little Skeleton into a girl,”

Before Moon Shadow could respond, Lu Wu called over Dudu and the others, “And Little Goldfish, and Han, and Green Cub and Gouzi. Oh, and this pig too! Just change them all!”

Just the thought of all his summoned beasts turning into cute girls excited Lu Wu immensely.

Unfortunately, Moon Shadow couldn’t transform them.

Moon Shadow explained that turning someone into a girl wasn’t something she could do whenever she wanted; the other party had to meet certain conditions.

And Little Skeleton and the others clearly didn’t meet the conditions to become girls.

This left Lu Wu quite disappointed and dejected.

Dudu, on hearing Little Skeleton couldn’t turn into a girl, relaxed his grip and revealed a particularly happy smile at the corners of his mouth.

“Forget it, if they can’t change, they can’t change. It’s not like I really care about having girls or anything.”

By the time Lu Wu said this, he had already approached the Bone Dragon Lolita.

He reached out and touched the baby-fat-filled face of the little girl.

Soft, felt good to the touch, which made Lu Wu unable to resist pinching it, causing the little girl to get mad, waving her small arms at Lu Wu menacingly, “Don’t touch the boss!”

Oh, that spirit, feisty yet adorable.

But a single slap from Moon Shadow quieted her down.

With an ‘ow’, she hugged her reddened head and crouched to the side, starting to cry.

Lu Wu found this scene particularly endearing.

He felt an urge to make a contract with her.

Unfortunately, though she looked like a little Lolita, she had already matured.

She was already at the Lord Level, and as much as Lu Wu craved her, contracting her wouldn’t be easy.

Because he had missed the optimal contracting period.

Contracting her now would bear a great risk for Lu Wu; if she resisted, Lu Wu’s soul could be severely damaged.

Moreover, Lu Wu was far weaker than her, and if she resisted, he could end up an idiot.

Even without resistance, it would be difficult for Lu Wu to succeed in contracting her.

However, Lu Wu wasn’t entirely without means to acquire her.

“If Little Skeleton’s phone could be upgraded further, maybe I could take this girl under control. Right, phone upgrade, seems like there are tombs on Dragon Island, and who knows if there are materials underground that could be used for the upgrade.”

Only then did Lu Wu remember there was a cave below yet to be explored.

He quickly pulled Loli Dragon over to ask about the situation below.

As soon as the little girl heard Lu Wu asking about the situation below and that he wanted her to lead them down, she panicked.

“Indeks won’t go down, Indeks doesn’t like it below, don’t lock Indeks down there!”

At that moment, she wasn’t tough or bossy.

Naturally, having been trapped for decades, the last thing the freshly surfaced Loli Dragon wanted was to return to the cave below.

But what mattered now was not what she wanted, but what Lu Wu wanted.

Clearly, Lu Wu wanted to go, so not long after coming up, she was taken down into the cave by Lu Wu.

As Lu Wu had expected, beneath the cave was a massive cavern filled with corpse after corpse.

From the remaining skeletons and the extent of their decay.

This Dragon Tomb had probably been sealed for at least several decades to a hundred years.

The real situation was more or less what Lu Wu had estimated.

According to Indeks’s description, it had been dark here since her memory began.

No one had ever opened this tomb.

Lu Wu was also unclear why the Dragon Clan of Dragon Island would seal this tomb, but that wasn’t important to him.

What was important was what he could obtain from this tomb?

This kind of experience was sort of an adventure, and Lu Wu was quite looking forward to what he could gain from it.

So, Lu Wu personally took action and spent a full three hours thoroughly searching the entire Dragon Tomb.

This search yielded quite a nice haul for Lu Wu.

He found handfuls of Silver Quality skeletons and even a large pile of Gold ones.

Among them, the highest grade was this one.

…

Name: Dragon King’s Skull

Quality: Legendary

Effect: ???

Description: This is the head of a summoned beast that is above Lord Level.

The head contains traces of Domain Power, making it an excellent material.

…

Lu Wu looked at the nearly two-meter-high skull, cracked and all, and couldn’t help but smirk.

Yeah, Lu Wu was laughing wildly.

“With these materials, upgrading Little Skeleton’s quality should be no problem.”

In addition to dragon bones scattered everywhere, Lu Wu also discovered some materials.

The ones that Lu Wu favored the most were the plants known as [Dragon Blood Grass] and [Dragon Soul Grass].

Both these plants were based on Gold Quality materials, and even underneath that one Dragon King’s head, Lu Wu saw two Legendary Quality Dragon Blood Grass plants and one Legendary Quality Dragon Soul Grass plant.

…

Name: Dragon Blood Grass

Quality: Legendary

Effect: Strength enhancement, ???

Description: Grows in Dragon Tombs, absorbing the nutrients of dragons; there’s a chance it could grant one the Dragon Bloodline, but consumption is not advised.

…

Name: Dragon Soul Grass

Quality: Legendary

Effect: Soul enhancement, ???

Description: Similar to Dragon Blood Grass, consuming this item is beneficial, but only the very silly would dare to eat it raw. You’re not that silly, right?

…

This was the first time Lu Wu had seen plants, or rather herbs, of Legendary Quality.

It’s hard to measure how valuable these materials are with points.

If one must put a price in points, a single plant could sell for at least tens of millions in the hands of someone in need, or even more.

That’s how the Summoner’s world works.

The higher the item is, the more valuable it becomes.

However, items above Legendary Quality are basically nonexistent on the market.

Items of such grade are usually bartered rather than sold.

Although this form of trading is a bit primitive, it’s better than introducing them into the trading system and destabilizing an already fragile economy.

While thinking about all these messy things, Lu Wu uprooted the grass.

He took the Dragon King’s skull, which was quite heavy. It was a good thing Lu Wu had many skeletons on his side, otherwise, he wouldn’t have been able to carry it.

Besides this skull, Lu Wu collected some Golden Quality Dragon Bones. After ensuring that he had nearly cleaned out the Golden Quality Dragon Bones, Lu Wu finally left the tomb and resealed the site.

Of course, it wasn’t a complete sealing.

Lu Wu planned to have the school send someone to search through this Dragon Tomb thoroughly once he was out.

After leaving the Dragon Tomb, Lu Wu’s special training on Dragon Island had come to a particularly fulfilling conclusion.

Over the past month, not only had the power of his Summoned Beasts soared tremendously,

he also picked up a Dragon Lady, excavated a Dragon Tomb, and found materials to further enhance Little Skeleton’s quality. The ending couldn’t have been more perfect.

So, after saying goodbye to that group of silly creatures,

Lu Wu directly left Dragon Island.

On the side of the silly creatures,

seeing Lu Wu and his group disappear in a ‘swoosh,’ the group of creatures was baffled.

Their little heads were filled with huge question marks.

They clearly couldn’t understand how Lu Wu and his group disappeared.

But soon, this group of creatures realized the biggest problem wasn’t how Lu Wu and his group had disappeared.

Instead, it was now that Lu Wu was gone, what were they supposed to do next?

They had been gallivanting around with Lu Wu for over a month, and now that the fun was over, their days suddenly became boring.

Just as this group of silly creatures was bored and didn’t know what to do next, a tribe previously bullied by Lu Wu surrounded them.

It seemed like they thought, since they couldn’t beat Lu Wu, beating up this group of silly creatures instead to vent their frustration was an excellent idea.

Well, the idea was really good.

It’s just that the combat power of the Summoned Beasts that ganged up on the silly creatures was a bit too weak.

Although these creatures seemed silly, their power was actually quite formidable, and they had been with Lu Wu for over a month.

While Lu Wu had nothing else to do, he enjoyed training this group of silly creatures, and under his guidance, their combat power had increased by thirty percent compared to a month ago.

Consequently, the Summoned Beasts that had surrounded them ended up being easy targets, getting beaten down by the silly creatures.

Through this battle, the silly creatures had an awakening.

They suddenly found something fun to do.

Since Lu Wu was gone, they might as well fight on their own.

Hmm, they decided to mimic Lu Wu and clear the entire Dragon Island of Summoned Beasts.

With this idea,

the era of the second generation bully of Dragon Island officially began.

Of course, compared to the first generation that had Moon Shadow by their side, the second generation might find it much harder to dominate…

…

Meanwhile, back with Lu Wu.

After leaving Dragon Island, he started to get busy again.

He was busy with enhancing Little Skeleton’s quality.

As Lu Wu’s initial Summoned Beast, Little Skeleton’s quality had been elevated from Ordinary to Silver in just over a year.

This kind of improvement would be unimaginable for others, but Lu Wu felt it was not enough.

Even the little brothers of Little Skeleton had reached Silver Level; it was somewhat improper for it, the boss, to remain just Silver.

Luckily, he had gathered this batch of materials on Dragon Island.

Lu Wu planned to boost both Little Skeleton’s quality and Grade to a higher level.

The best outcome would be to complete this enhancement before the university competition.

If it could be completed before the university competition, Little Skeleton might even make Loli Dragon Lady Indeks a subordinate.

Having such a Lord Level subordinate, Lu Wu could basically coast through the university competition.

…

A new month, asking for votes and subscriptions

# Chapter 287 - 287 284 Departure (Request for Subscription)

﻿Chapter 287: 284 Departure (Request for Subscription) Chapter 287: 284 Departure (Request for Subscription) Time flew by quickly and it was soon the end of March.

The university competition was set to begin in early April.

But such a large-scale event generally required early preparation.

By the end of March, the preparations for the university competition had started.

The competitors also began to make their way to Beijing.

That’s because the venue for the university competition was the Feng Chao training ground which Lu Wu had visited once before.

As the team captain of Jiangnan University.

It was natural for Lu Wu to start getting ready to depart.

However, just before setting off, Lu Wu was still squatting in the cultivation room and had not come out.

Yes, he was making his last-ditch efforts!

But his efforts this time were not aimed at enhancing Little Skeleton’s quality.

Although Lu Wu had rushed his efforts since returning from Dragon Island, he still hadn’t managed to improve Little Skeleton’s quality before the competition started.

This was mainly because Lu Wu was a bit too ambitious.

He wasn’t satisfied with just enhancing the quality of Little Skeleton— he was also planning to upgrade the quality of Little Skeleton’s phone.

As a result, his upgrade plan was set, but there was a problem with the materials.

A key material was missing.

Worse still, this material needed to be of Legendary Quality, which was quite hard to procure.

The material of Legendary Quality was simply not available on the market, forcing Lu Wu to put off enhancing Little Skeleton’s quality and wait until he reached Beijing to see if he could get his hands on it.

What Lu Wu was working on now was actually the transportation they would use for this trip.

Going out, the most important thing was to be impressive.

Taking the train was so boring; Lu Wu decided to drive to Beijing this time.

And for the thousands of kilometers from Jiangnan to Beijing, a standout vehicle was necessary, and though such vehicles were available on the market, Lu Wu did not want to buy one.

Instead of buying, he preferred to build or modify one himself.

Anyway, it wasn’t his first time doing such a thing.

Especially now that the Cultivation College at Jiangnan University had become more powerful, Lu Wu could outsource many tasks.

And with enough money to spend.

He eventually managed to get the vehicle made.

“Finally got it done!”

Wiping the sweat from his brow, Lu Wu looked proudly at the vehicle in front of him.

The vehicle before Lu Wu was twelve meters long, three meters wide, and five meters high, making it gigantic among RVs.

And the biggest feature of this vehicle wasn’t its size.

Nor was it the interior, for which Lu Wu had hired a top designer.

It was the vehicle itself.

Like the one he had created for the open house, this vehicle was shaped like a piece of equipment.

All of its components were made from equipment items.

The lowest quality of the equipment was Black Iron Level, and the highest had even reached Golden Quality.

And this thing wasn’t just randomly thrown together.

In the system’s test, it was already considered a whole piece of equipment.

…

Name: Lu Wu’s Show-off RV

Comprehensive Quality: Gold Level

Comprehensive Performance: In terms of defense, the defense system could withstand a full-force attack from a Lord Level Summoned Beast for five minutes.

In terms of speed, it could reach a speed of 1200 kilometers per hour at full throttle while still ensuring a comfortable interior.

In terms of attack, well, the vehicle wasn’t equipped with weapons, but if its collision could be considered an attack, a Lord Level Summoned Beast couldn’t withstand a single hit from it.

Overall Evaluation: This is an exceptionally well-performing RV.

If there had to be any issues with this RV, it would only be the cost of production and daily expenses.

PS: If you’re broke, don’t ask! You’ll cry!

…

Overall, Lu Wu was quite satisfied with the vehicle he had created.

The performance was excellent, and the design cool beyond measure.

With this vehicle now ready, Lu Wu had officially begun preparing for his departure.

Since Lu Wu had planted some seeds two months ago in the Secret Realm, they planned to head directly to Beijing from there.

There were only four people boarding the vehicle with Lu Wu.

Li Kai, who was responsible for driving; Old Tie Xiong, in charge of security;

Along with Lu Wu and Dudu, plus a whole vehicle of Summoned Beasts and various materials.

Thus, Lu Wu embarked on his road trip to Beijing.

Initially, when he set off, Lu Wu was especially interested in the vehicle he had created.

He was the one personally driving it.

When he first left the university gate, Lu Wu kept it under control, but once he hit the freeway, he immediately pushed the speed to 500.

Even though this was far from the vehicle’s top speed, the speed still shocked other drivers on the road.

The Alliance’s law enforcement had no choice but to intercept the vehicle.

Being stopped, Lu Wu was still a bit confused.

“Was I driving too fast?”

“No, you were flying too low!”

With that, Lu Wu had no choice but to reduce his speed.

But as soon as the speed of the car dropped, Lu Wu felt that driving at this speed was boring and lackluster, so he handed the driving over to Li Kai and ran to the carriage to admire the scenery along the way.

It must be said.

Since Lu Wu had traveled to this time,

For over a year, he was either crazily studying or on the road to crazy studying.

Most of the time, he was holed up in a small space.

He seldom had the time or opportunity to go out and stroll, let alone go on a road trip.

That was also why Lu Wu chose to take a road trip to Beijing.

Sitting on the couch in the carriage, watching the scenery speeding by, tasting the snacks Dudu handed to him, and occasionally pinching the chubby cheeks of Dragon Lolita, who was watching TV with Little Skeleton next to him, a full sense of happiness surged in his heart.

“This is living!”

“It seems, I’ve spent my past days too cooped up, too hardworking.

I’m still young after all, I should take the time to go out and see the world, experience different things.”

That’s when Lu Wu realized.

Hmm, studying is still more interesting!

There, Lu Wu had only enjoyed the road trip for about three or four hours when he quickly found it boring.

The scenery outside the window was more of the same, the snacks were the same few kinds, and sitting idly in the carriage with nothing to do, Lu Wu grabbed Little Skeleton’s phone from him and started studying.

The TV was being enjoyed, and suddenly the phone was snatched away.

Both Little Skeleton and Indeks were upset.

Especially Indeks, who immediately slapped her flat chest and, hands on hips, yelled at Lu Wu, “Give the phone back to this lord.

This lord wants to watch TV with Little Skeleton.”

Huh, this girl had only joined less than half a month ago and had already been led by Little Skeleton down the path of internet addiction with no return.

Lu Wu found this quite amusing.

He casually tossed two phones over and just handled that girl and Little Skeleton.

However, although there were new phones to play with, Indeks was clearly more interested in the Little Skeleton’s phone in Lu Wu’s hands.

She could still feel it.

Little Skeleton’s phone was the best.

Especially for playing games, Little Skeleton’s phone was much more fun than other phones.

It ran fast and was not easy to break, Indeks loved it.

“If only this lord could have such a phone.”

When Lu Wu heard this from the little dragon loli, the corner of his mouth lifted.

Having hope meant being gullible.

With this girl’s intelligence, even if the quality of Little Skeleton’s phone improved after upgrading and couldn’t capture dragons, Lu Wu was confident that once his power was great enough, he could deceive this girl into contracting with him.

…

Meanwhile, as Lu Wu and his party headed towards Beijing,

In a certain secret realm, a young man was commanding a summoned beast in battle.

His opponent was a Lord Level 1 Star summoned beast.

His summoned beast was merely a Leader 3 stars creature.

However, despite only having Leader 3 stars, the combat power of his summoned beast was quite terrifying, managing to stand toe-to-toe with a Lord Level 1 Star opponent without falling behind.

If Lu Wu had been there, he would have recognized this youth.

This young man was none other than Guzhentian, who had suffered a mental breakdown at last year’s Cultivation Master competition.

Guzhentian had changed a lot compared to last year.

Last year, he exuded confidence, carrying a scholarly and bookish air.

Now, he embodied a previously absent sharpness and resilience.

Watching his summoned beast struggle in battle,

Guzhentian’s face showed no panic.

What appeared were cool-headedness and determination, his eyes locked on the field, his mind rapidly processing.

One victorious strategy after another surged to his mind.

Now, he had a hundred ways to defeat his opponent, ninety-nine of which were simple, but he chose not to take them. He chose the hardest one instead.

Because he didn’t have much time left.

He didn’t need to put more pressure on himself to grow faster.

“Let the storm come harder, how can the growth of the strong not endure hardships?”

As Guzhentian muttered,

He directly activated the hardest mode, even putting his and his summoned beast’s lives on a tightrope.

He was looking for a chance to break through in a desperate situation.

He was lucky to find such an opportunity.

Ten minutes later, he and his summoned beast, both covered in blood and wounds, defeated their opponent.

And both of them had advanced to the Lord Level during this battle.

Watching Guzhentian break through, a person approached from the side.

“Young master, congratulations on advancing to Master Level Summoner.

A 22-year-old Master Level Summoner, you’re only a year behind the so-called strongest talent, Zhang Yuechu. And not only are you a Master Level Summoner, but you’re also a Master Level Cultivation Master, which makes you far better than the so-called Zhang Yuechu.”

Facing the sycophancy of his underling, Guzhentian was quite indifferent.

He even changed the subject: “Is the university league about to start?”

His subordinate was a bit puzzled but still nodded immediately.

“Yes, it’s starting soon.”

“Then help me secure a position as a referee. Now that I’m a Master Level Summoner, I should qualify for a referee’s position, right?”

As soon as Guzhentian spoke this, his subordinate instantly understood Guzhentian’s intentions…

# Chapter 288 - 288 285 Yuan Qingqing

﻿Chapter 288: 285 Yuan Qingqing Chapter 288: 285 Yuan Qingqing To tell the truth,

Lu Wu was actually quite excited about this self-driving tour.

He was hoping to encounter some unexpected adventures along the way.

But he didn’t run into any.

From Jiangnan to Beijing, everything went smoothly without a hitch, and there were no waves whatsoever.

However, from the perspective of ‘touring,’ Lu Wu was quite satisfied.

He stayed overnight and picnicked in various places along the way.

It was an experience of different lifestyles.

Of course, during the journey, he didn’t forget about his studies and spent his free time learning about pharmacy.

By the time he arrived in Beijing, his level in pharmacy had basically reached professional standards, provided one doesn’t consider the operational aspect.

Such results made Lu Wu shake his head involuntarily.

“It took me a whole five days to reach professional standards.

I really have been slacking off recently.”

The old man beside him rolled his eyes, expressing his disdain for this show-off.

But Dudu and Li Kai next to him earnestly comforted Lu Wu,

suggesting that a little relaxation is also appropriate.

Seeing this scene, the old man couldn’t stand it any longer. Can’t you see this guy is just showing off?

Well, they really couldn’t see it.

In Dudu and Li Kai’s eyes, Lu Wu never needed to pretend; he was that awesome naturally.

When the car entered the territory of Beijing, Li Kai immediately asked, “Mr. Lu, where shall we go next?”

“Let’s report to the league’s venue first, get settled, see if Uncle Zhang and the others have arrived, and then make a trip to the Cultivation Center Headquarters.”

The university league was hosted by the Education Bureau.

They had prepared thoroughly in all aspects and even arranged accommodations for all participating schools.

When Lu Wu arrived to check in at the venue, he found that Zhang Wentao and the others had already arrived, and as for players like Zhao Li, they were still on their way.

After ascertaining that Zhao Li and the others would arrive by tomorrow, Lu Wu headed to the headquarters of the Cultivation Center.

He was planning to gather some materials.

Little Skeleton’s quality improvement lacked one Legendary Quality material.

Although the material Lu Wu needed was of Legendary Quality, it wasn’t that kind which is impossible to come by; he thought that he could probably find it in Beijing Cultivation Center Headquarters.

After all, this is the headquarters of Beijing Cultivation Center.

Here, masters were as common as clouds, and getting a Legendary Quality material shouldn’t be difficult.

In fact, that was indeed the case.

Lu Wu had asked Sun Kongkong for help before coming to Beijing.

As soon as Lu Wu arrived, Sun Kongkong gave him precise information.

“The material you’re looking for is available, and there are several sources, but I reckon you won’t be able to get it easily.”

With that, Sun Kongkong provided Lu Wu with a list of masters who had the material he needed.

The first on the list was none other than Gutian.

This could be dismissed without consideration.

Who was Lu Wu? A man of iron and steel, how could he possibly go beg Gutian?

Lu Wu directly turned the page and looked at the remaining two.

There were two more who had the material he needed, one named Yuan Qingqing and the other Liu Qingyuan.

Lu Wu’s lips curled slightly upon seeing the names were those of women.

Women were good; if the other party was a woman, then his average face could shine.

Just then, Moon Shadow, squatting on his heart, suddenly made a sound of surprise.

“These two names sound familiar; I think I’ve heard them before.”

At this, Lu Wu’s face darkened on the spot.

‘Could you not be familiar with them, please? Your familiarity gives me the creeps!’

Lu Wu covered his chest and checked the information on these two women.

Yuan Qingqing was a person from the Cultivation Center Headquarters.

A Master Level Cultivation Master, her brother was Yuan Hua, the overall person in charge of the Cultivation Center.

She was 48 years old and single.

Liu Qingyuan was a professor at Jingcheng University and also a Master Level big shot.

She was 51 years old and still single.

Their profiles contained photos of the two women.

Lu Wu looked and almost despaired; both were beauties, exceptionally beautiful, on the same level as Jiang Yuexing.

Just by looking at the information, Lu Wu didn’t need to see anything else to know that there must be some scumbag involved.

“Well, let’s forget the last two; suddenly, I feel that Gutian seems pretty good.”

Lu Wu quickly took out Gutian’s information.

He felt that there was no deep hatred between him and Gutian.

It was only a matter of Gutian lying in a hospital bed for a month or two, just causing Guzhentian to shut himself away, rumored to have given up cultivation after the Cultivation Master Competition.

And in the end, it was just about getting the Evolution plan for the Steel Armor Bull and outdoing it by a thin margin and slightly stealing some of his market.

Now Lu Wu thought these all seemed like trivial matters.

They could still sit down calmly and stab each other a couple of times, right?

Anyway, Lu Wu felt it was better than dealing with these two women.

However, just as Lu Wu was about to contact Gutian,

something particularly troublesome happened.

His phone suddenly rang with an unfamiliar number.

Wondering, a hand reached out, took Lu Wu’s phone, answered the call for him, and blurted out without preamble, “He’s asleep!”

Then, she hung up the phone and casually handed it back to a stunned Lu Wu beside her.

At that moment, Lu Wu had already recognized the woman who had suddenly appeared before him as Yuan Qingqing, the very woman Sun Kongkong had provided information about.

Looking at this woman, Lu Wu was already feeling a bit panicked.

Turning his head to seek help from Sun Kongkong, he realized that the guy had slipped away without him noticing.

Not only had Sun Kongkong vanished, but the bodyguard Lu Wu had paid for had also taken off, leaving the clueless Li Kai and Lu Wududu in front of this woman.

Yuan Qingqing hung up the phone and her eyes fell onto Lu Wu.

She sized him up from top to bottom.

It wasn’t just Lu Wu she was examining; she also took a good look at Dudu by his side.

Lu Wu wasn’t sure if it was just his imagination, but he felt that after the woman looked at Dudu, her gaze softened somewhat when it returned to him.

But there was still something in that gaze that made Lu Wu feel restless.

It was clear that she wasn’t just looking at him but seeing a jerk instead.

This really panicked Lu Wu; could it be that she had recognized him, knowing his connection to a certain jerk?

This wouldn’t do; Lu Wu definitely couldn’t take the fall for him.

“Master Yuan, hello, my name is Lu Wu, ‘Lu’ as in picked up by the roadside!

Just like my past, it’s quite meaningful.”

Lu Wu tried hard to convey that he had nothing to do with that certain jerk.

However, it appeared that she didn’t react much to this.

“I heard you wanted a Netherworld Flower?”

“Uhm, no, I don’t want it anymore!”

Lu Wu shook his head frantically.

“Hmm!” Yuan Qingqing frowned, and the warmth in her eyes cooled considerably, causing Lu Wu to shiver and nod like crazy, “Yes, I want it!”

“If you want it, then come with me.”

Saying this, Yuan Qingqing turned and walked away.

Now Lu Wu hesitated, wondering whether to follow her.

In the end, Lu Wu could only touch his heart, making sure he could still run away if needed, before carefully following her with Dudu in tow.

It very much felt like he was on his way to the execution grounds.

Following Yuan Qingqing, Lu Wu arrived at a research institute of the Cultivation Center.

Clearly, this was Yuan Qingqing’s research institute.

Upon arriving, Yuan Qingqing immediately brought out the Netherworld Flower that Lu Wu needed.

“Here, these enough for you?”

Lu Wu was extremely surprised; he hadn’t expected to get the flowers so easily, and nodded vigorously.

“Enough, definitely enough!”

But Lu Wu didn’t just take them; he first asked,

“What do I need to exchange with you for these?”

“I need you to help me with an experiment!”

Upon hearing this, Lu Wu instantly felt relieved.

What he feared most was her saying it was free or that she wanted to see Lu Haikong.

There was no need to mention the latter; Lu Wu would never let Lu Haikong meet his ex, that’d be too unfair to his mother.

And as for the former, Lu Wu dared not accept it.

The free stuff is often the most expensive.

Lu Wu still owed Jiang Yuexing a lot of favors, and to this day, he didn’t know how to repay them.

But now this matter of helping with an experiment was undoubtedly what Lu Wu was hoping for.

It’s better not to mix in any messy relationship and just keep it as a pure transactional one.

“What experiment do you want to do?

Can I read about the experiment plan before?”

Yuan Qingqing shook her head: “You just need to cooperate, or more precisely, let your Summoned Beast cooperate.”

Lu Wu felt a bit confused; at this moment, she handed him a file.

Lu Wu looked and saw it was silly Han’s information.

How did Yuan Qingqing have Han’s details?

Yuan Qingqing immediately offered an explanation: “You came here last time and went through the medical department; we checked your health and understand your conditions.

This data should be from that bird of yours, right?

It can indeed get stronger by taking hits, can’t it?”

“Uh, yes!” Lu Wu nodded dumbly.

“Then lend it to me!

You can come back for it in a few days!”

Lu Wu wanted to refuse, but Yuan Qingqing didn’t give him the chance. She stuffed the Netherworld Flower into his arms, then reached out her hand towards Lu Wu.

She was asking for the bird.

To give or not to give, that was the question.

After much hesitancy, Lu Wu decided to lend it.

Mainly because Lu Wu’s heart, Moon Shadow, mentioned ‘she’s quite nice.’

Lu Wu pulled out the balding bird squatting on his heart and handed over the still confused Han to Yuan Qingqing.

Yuan Qingqing took the bird, patted it and checked it over, then nodded in satisfaction.

“I’ll take this bird; you can go now, someone is looking for you.”

“Someone is looking for me?”

Lu Wu was a bit puzzled.

“Who?”

Yuan Qingqing didn’t respond, just hurried him on his way. Lu Wu managed to set up a Damage Sharing link between himself and Han before he was chased out.

Just as Lu Wu had been kicked out of Yuan Qingqing’s laboratory, a particularly over-familiar guy came walking over and slung an arm around his shoulder.

“Little junior brother, hello!”

# Chapter 289 - 289 286 Dragon Palace Secret Realm

﻿Chapter 289: 286 Dragon Palace Secret Realm Chapter 289: 286 Dragon Palace Secret Realm Lu Wu looked at this overly familiar guy who had taken it upon himself to sling an arm over his shoulder and felt somewhat baffled.

It’s not like he didn’t recognize the person.

Lu Wu never forgot a face; he immediately recognized the guy as the one who had made an appearance when he was collecting the little goldfish.

Seemed to be from Jingcheng University, called Liu Cheng if he remembered correctly.

But what did he mean by calling him junior brother?

However, before Lu Wu could figure out what was meant by that, Liu Cheng had already dragged him away.

“Let’s go, my mentor wants to see you.”

“Your mentor is?”

“Liu Qingyuan!”

Well, that name made Lu Wu wince.

“Is it possible not to go?”

Liu Cheng laughed, “What do you think?”

Just like that.

He had just come out from Yuan Qingqing’s place and was now being dragged by Liu Cheng to Jingcheng University, riding in Lu Wu’s own RV.

The moment he got on the vehicle, Liu Cheng was completely stunned by Lu Wu’s car.

Just like a little brother who hadn’t seen much of the world, he started wandering around inside, touching this and bumping into that.

“Dang, junior bro, your car is something else!

It’s unassuming on the outside, luxurious on the interior, and its overall performance is pretty impressive. Hook me up with one too, will ya?”

“Sure thing, but you’ll have to pay a deposit first.”

“How much?”

“For the deposit, just give 500,000 points to start!

For the actual car construction, we’ll customize it according to your preferences. I’ll give you a discount, and it should only come to a few million points in total.”

“Sorry to have bothered you!”

Yeah, not everyone can casually fork out a few million to get a car like Lu Wu.

Even Liu Cheng didn’t have that kind of backing.

And as a Pure Summoner, he couldn’t even see what was so great about the car.

A few million even with a discount? Old Liu felt like the kid was trying to rip him off.

Lu Wu didn’t bother to explain the car’s situation.

More than the car, Lu Wu was more concerned about the woman he was about to meet.

He tried to glean some information about Liu Qingyuan without being too direct.

As soon as Lu Wu asked, Liu Cheng responded with a carefree attitude, “Oh, you mean my mentor? She’s the ex of your cheap master-father from my end!”

“That… might there be a misunderstanding…

My dad is…”

“Don’t talk about misunderstandings, and don’t try to explain.

When your little goldfish led us to you, my teacher already knew who you are. That fish, to tell you the truth, was something your thrift-master-father nabbed from my mentor’s hands.”

Hearing this, Lu Wu’s expression darkened even more.

He had previously thought that his status as Lu Haikong’s son was quite a well-kept secret.

After all, except for Yan Ruxue, it seemed like no one else was coming out of the woodwork to do anything to him, and his last visit to Beijing had been quite peaceful. So why was it that now, everyone was seeking him out?

Could he even attend Jingcheng University anymore?

“Or maybe, I just won’t go…”

“Don’t panic, my mentor probably isn’t planning to do anything to you. She just wants to give you some gifts, just like Master Yuan did.”

“Gifts?”

Lu Wu was taken aback, about to say that Yuan Qingqing hadn’t given him any gifts.

But right then, an indescribable pain surged through him, making Lu Wu feel as if every pore on his body was being pricked with needles, an unbearable pain.

Under this excruciating pain, Lu Wu instinctively tried to sever the “Damage Sharing” with Han Han.

Thankfully, at that moment, the “Unyielding” skill activated and Lu Wu managed to regain some composure.

“What is that woman doing? Torturing Han Han for fun?”

But upon further thought, Lu Wu didn’t think that was it.

They probably didn’t have the time for such pettiness. Recalling his previous conversation with Yuan Qingqing and what Liu Cheng said about the gifts, Lu Wu had a rough guess.

Probably Yuan Qingqing was in the process of enhancing Han Han.

Now, Lu Wu was utterly confused.

What was going on?

This sort of favor to an ex’s son, Lu Wu admitted he didn’t get it.

After hesitating for a bit, Lu Wu still decided to bear with the pain and tactfully called Yuan Qingqing to express his wish to bring Han Han back.

Lu Wu could guess that the other side might have good intentions.

But he truly feared Han Han couldn’t keep up with the nutrition.

“Come and get him in three days!”

Yuan Qingqing on the other end didn’t agree to let Lu Wu take Han Han away, uttering just that sentence before hanging up the phone.

After the call ended, Yuan Qingqing’s eyes were fixed on Han Han who was soaked in a special container in front of her.

Based on Han Han’s reaction, she kept injecting various extremely expensive liquids into the container.

At the same time, her eyes were glued to the various data on the machine beside her.

Making sure the experiment had no accidents to the greatest extent.

…

Meanwhile, Lu Wu, upon being hung up on, was particularly troubled.

At the end of the day, should he go and bring Han Han back? If he went, would they actually let him take Han Han?

At this moment, Liu Cheng beside him spoke up.

“Stop worrying about it, just let them do their thing.

If they want to give you gifts, they have their reasons. It’s a kind gesture, and it might turn to malice if you don’t accept it, so just enjoy it.

Oh, and by the way, when you meet my mentor later, she’s likely to give you a bonus, so it’s probably best if you don’t reject it.”

Lu Wu just shook his head.

He couldn’t grasp these women’s logic.

Hesitating for a moment, Lu Wu eventually turned off “Damage Sharing”.

On the one hand, Lu Wu’s body couldn’t withstand such torment.

Although his body was indeed strengthening and his power was improving, his nutrition couldn’t keep up.

Besides, even if the nutrition could keep up, Lu Wu would still have to cut it off.

Because that kind of pain had already severely disrupted his daily life.

Once “Damage Sharing” was turned off, Lu Wu instantly felt much more relaxed, and he tossed aside the concerns about Han.

Let them do whatever they wanted, as long as they didn’t kill Han.

As for the pain? Lu Wu figured that guy was probably enjoying it.

Not long after Lu Wu turned off “Damage Sharing”, they arrived at Jingcheng University.

Curious about Hua District’s top university, it’s a pity that he didn’t have time to visit.

Liu Cheng directly asked Li Kai to drive to the research laboratory beneath Liu Qingyuan, and after they reached the destination, Liu Cheng told Lu Wu to send off Li Kai and Dudu.

“I reckon you’ll have to stay at Jingcheng University for quite a while, so better have them wait for you at the arena first.”

Lu Wu didn’t hesitate and nodded immediately.

He had Li Kai and the others go to the venue first, and then he himself walked into the research institute of Liu Qingyuan.

Yes, just him alone.

Liu Cheng had ran off before he even brought him here.

He planned to hide for a couple of days, because he felt that the coming days in Beijing might not be peaceful, especially for him, a cheap apprentice of Lu Haikong.

With his experience, it was better to flee as far as possible from such a chaotic scene.

As for Lu Wu.

He had no choice but to pray for his safety.

On Lu Wu’s side, just as he entered the research laboratory, he ran into Liu Qingyuan head on.

“Xiao Lu, you’re finally here. Come, come, let your Aunt Liu take a good look at you!

The last time you came to Beijing, Aunt Liu wanted to see you, but since you were unclear about the situation then, it wouldn’t have been right for me to meet you rashly.

Now, at last, we’ll be able to meet.”

Compared to Yuan Qingqing, Liu Qingyuan was much more enthusiastic.

She took Lu Wu’s hand and led him into the visitor’s lounge of the research laboratory, then sat him down and looked him over satisfactorily before nodding contentedly.

“Handsome indeed, a true child of theirs.”

This remark made Lu Wu startled.

Because there was something in Liu Qingyuan’s words.

“Do you know my mother?”

“Uh, I can’t say I know her entirely, but I am acquainted with half of her.”

This answer might be confusing to others, but Lu Wu understood instantly: “Which half do you know? The body or the soul?”

As soon as Lu Wu spoke, the corners of Liu Qingyuan’s mouth lifted.

“It seems you know much more than I expected!”

Lu Wu also snapped back to reality, feeling something was off; he realized he might have been led into talking by this woman in front of him, and his brow furrowed slightly.

The result was just this minute expression, and Liu Qingyuan across from him laughed.

“Quick reaction, much better than your dad. Back then he foolishly spilled everything before realizing he’d been tricked into talking.”

What a terrifying woman.

Lu Wu clearly understood that the other party had noticed his subtle emotional change.

Such a small move and she could detect it.

Lu Wu couldn’t comprehend how a woman like this had been tricked by the old man of the Lu family back in the day.

At this time, Liu Qingyuan across from him sighed, “Love is incomprehensible, isn’t it said that a woman in love has basically zero IQ?”

“Can you read minds?”

Lu Wu asked, breaking into a cold sweat.

Liu Qingyuan teased, “Yeah, so you better not harbor any bad thoughts in front of Aunt Liu.”

Lu Wu quickly sat up straight and silently recited the Eight Honors and Eight Disgraces in his mind.

Seeing Lu Wu like this, Liu Qingyuan couldn’t help but let out a light laugh: “Alright, I’m just teasing you. I can’t read minds at all.”

Lu Wu let out a sigh of relief.

But Liu Qingyuan continued, “I can only infer your general thoughts through your subtle facial expressions, that’s all.”

Uh, Lu Wu’s face changed and he sat up straight again, continuing his internal recital of the Eight Honors and Eight Disgraces.

“Are you that nervous? Seems like you do have many secrets you don’t want revealed?

Let me guess, are you like your father, secretly deceiving other girls?”

Lu Wu immediately raised his hand to pledge his loyalty, “No, no, no! I’m not the same as Old Lu from our family.

I am the most faithful man of the Lu family. In my life, I will marry only Dudu.”

“As far from what I know, your father has said the same to no less than 30 women.”

Lu Wu had no choice but to keep reciting his Eight Honors and Eight Disgraces.

Seeing his reaction, Liu Qingyuan didn’t tease him further.

“Alright, stop it now. The little goldfish, you’re keeping it inside, right? Call it out for me to see!”

Lu Wu was stunned.

He felt that the women in Beijing were all quite peculiar, one demanded his bird, and now this one wanted to see his little goldfish.

Lu Wu was reluctant.

After all, birds and fish are things not to be casually shown to others.

But in the end, Lu Wu compromised, and obediently summoned the little goldfish from his heart.

The moment the little goldfish appeared, Liu Qingyuan took it over, cradling the bewildered little creature and began to examine it thoroughly.

“Not bad, well-cared-for, plump and white, good enough for a plate of sashimi.”

Lu Wu was puzzled; what kind of evaluation was that?

At this moment, Liu Qingyuan pulled out a token and casually tossed it to Lu Wu.

Since Liu Cheng had mentioned it before, Lu Wu was somewhat prepared for Liu Qingyuan providing benefits.

Originally, Lu Wu was pondering whether to refuse, but then Liu Qingyuan spoke again.

“This is the key to the ‘Dragon Palace Secret Realm’ of Jingcheng University. There’s a Dragon Gate inside the ‘Dragon Palace Secret Realm’. Take it and try your luck jumping through it.”

Upon hearing this, Lu Wu’s grip on the token tightened.

# Chapter 290 - 290 287 Dragon Gate

﻿Chapter 290: 287 Dragon Gate Chapter 290: 287 Dragon Gate To be honest, since the day Lu Wu found out that Old Lu was a playboy,  
 Lu Wu had been prepared to encounter Old Lu’s ex-partners.

He just hadn’t expected that one day they would all show up together.

And even less did he expect that one by one, they would bring him benefits.

Yuan Qingqing had sent over two Netherworld Flowers and left Silly to be strengthened.

Liu Qingyuan, on the other hand, directly gave him a Token of the Dragon Palace Secret Realm and also handed over two Netherworld Flowers.

Lu Wu was still in a daze when Liu Qingyuan took him to a place.

By the time he realized what was happening, he had already arrived inside the Dragon Palace Secret Realm.

Looking at his surroundings, Lu Wu was somewhat dazed.

There was neither the grand and majestic palace he had expected nor any environment surrounded by an ethereal aura.

All there was, was a stretch of ruins, ruins that had become overgrown with moss and weeds.

The only thing that somewhat shocked Lu Wu was the sea water held at bay by an invisible force overhead.

“Is this supposed to be the Dragon Palace Secret Realm?”

Lu Wu felt it didn’t seem right, but his little goldfish livened up the moment it entered this secret realm.

It started swimming around him energetically.

Its small mouth opening and closing, as if it were doing something.

Lu Wu was puzzled when suddenly a crisp and childlike voice rang out.

“Lu Wu!”

“Who’s talking?”

Startled, Lu Wu looked all around, saw no one else, and hadn’t noticed the little goldfish, which made the little goldfish quite unhappy.

“Lu Wu! Lu Wu! Lu Wu! Lu Wu! Lu Wu!”

The little goldfish called out tirelessly, the name ‘Lu Wu’ resounding over and over.

Yet Lu Wu still didn’t pay any attention to it, and so the little goldfish became thoroughly unhappy and gave him a Slap. This finally caught Lu Wu’s full attention.

“The little goldfish can talk?”

With pride, the little goldfish nodded its head: “Lu Wu! Lu Wu!”

“That’s amazing, but say something else!”

The little goldfish appeared confused: “Lu Wu?”

Lu Wu had an ominous hunch: “Don’t tell me you can only say ‘Lu Wu’?”

“Lu Wu!”

The little goldfish struck a proud pose.

“What’s there to be proud of?”

Lu Wu was speechless; this was practically no different from being mute.

However, seeing the little goldfish calling out with such joy, Lu Wu didn’t have the heart to crush its spirit and even reached out to tease the little creature a few times.

He made the little goldfish call out ‘Lu Wu’ in all sorts of ways.

After playing around for a while, Lu Wu finally remembered that he hadn’t come here to play with fish.

“Right, what did I come to do?

Oh, I was thrown in here by Liu Qingyuan.”

Lu Wu was full of sorrow; his steely resolve as Lu Ritian would not have allowed him to come here.

He couldn’t just accept benefits because they were offered; he needed to maintain his dignity.

But now that he had been thrown in, Lu Wu felt he shouldn’t waste a token.

“Little goldfish, do you know where in this Dragon Palace there might be a Dragon Gate?”

“Lu Wu?” The little goldfish looked puzzled.

“I mean, do you feel attracted to a particular place?”

“Lu Wu!”

The little goldfish understood, it floated up and hovered, shouting “Lu Wu” endlessly in one direction.

“It seems you truly do feel something, so let’s go see this so-called Dragon Gate.”

The fish and the man began to make their way through the Dragon Palace Secret Realm.

As they moved, Lu Wu realized that the Dragon Palace Secret Realm wasn’t just ruins; it appeared there were no other Summoned Beasts in the secret realm.

Lu Wu’s eyes hadn’t scanned any attributes of other Summoned Beasts.

But he had scanned quite a few attributes of other things.

Lu Wu found that this Dragon Palace Secret Realm was really filled with treasures; a casual glance revealed that most of the things in view were materials of Black Iron level or higher.

The building ruins, various green plants, and even the roadside weeds turned out to be many materials.

Most of them were of Bronze level, at least Black Iron.

There were also quite a few of Silver and Gold.

“This secret realm is like a treasury!”

However, although the materials in this secret realm were abundant, Lu Wu did not start picking them.

Lu Wu’s moral baseline might be low, but he still had some limits.

Although he had entered the Dragon Palace Secret Realm, he was still an outsider; it wouldn’t be right to dig up everything, so it was best just to let the little goldfish attempt the Dragon Gate.

“You see, the most important thing in life is to be content, not to be too greedy. I won’t take a single thing from this Dragon Palace… Oh damn, Legendary Quality material!!!”

Lu Wu fell into a brief silence before scratching his head: “How about I just take one?”

It was clear that the Legendary Quality material was tempting him.

But he ultimately bit the bullet and refrained.

Mainly because the person who let him in was no ordinary person.

Liu Qingyuan was Old Lu’s ex-partner, and the benefits from her felt hot to the touch for Lu Wu.

If it was just a matter of jumping through the Dragon Gate, Lu Wu could still convince himself to go for it.

But if he started looting the place, Lu Wu would later not know how to face Liu Qingyuan.

What if she wanted him to tie up Lu Haikong and deliver him to her? What would Lu Wu do then?

So, Lu Wu felt it was better not to take anything from the secret realm if he could help it.

He felt a bit like wanting to have his cake and eat it too.

But then, people are generally like that; they do things to find peace of mind.

It might be slightly hypocritical, but it’s okay as long as it brings them comfort.

To avoid further discomfort, Lu Wu decided not to let his eyes wander aimlessly any longer and simply followed the little goldfish as it led the way through the Dragon Palace.

This ruin of the Dragon Palace was truly vast.

After walking for a full three hours, Lu Wu finally reached the destination following the little goldfish.

About 300 meters ahead of Lu Wu, there was a pond, and behind the pond, a waterfall flowed. Above that waterfall hovered an ethereal gate.

When Lu Wu saw that gate, a special attribute panel appeared before him.

…

Name: Dragon Gate  
 Grade: ???

Effect: Dragon Transformation, ???

Description: If your little goldfish can pass through that gate, it will shed its divine fish form and have the opportunity to transform into a dragon.

P.S.: Prepare yourself mentally, this gate isn’t so easy to leap through.

…

After glancing at the attribute panel, Lu Wu grabbed the little goldfish beside him.

“You’re it, my little goldfish! Go for it!”

With that, Lu Wu tossed the little goldfish into the air.

The little goldfish seemed to understand even better than Lu Wu what that Dragon Gate meant for it.

Its big eyes brimmed with excitement.

Crying out “Lu Wu,” it headed straight for the Dragon Gate.

However, before the little goldfish could get anywhere near the Dragon Gate, it dropped straight into the pond as soon as it entered the domain of the pond.

Leaping through the Dragon Gate required a sense of ritual.

It wasn’t as simple as just charging in.

One needed to swim from the pond to the waterfall, then leap upward from the waterfall and finally smash through the gate.

The process sounded simple enough, but performing it was far from easy.

Usually, for the little goldfish, swimming in water was instinctive and it could cross the 300-meter-long pond in a blink.

But now when the little goldfish fell into the water, it dashed out in a flash, shooting straight into Lu Wu’s arms.

“Lu Wu! Lu Wu! Lu Wu! Lu Wu!”

The little goldfish’s cries were filled with shock, resentment, and pain.

Although Lu Wu couldn’t understand the meaning of the little goldfish’s cries for Lu Wu, he could still see the state of the little goldfish.

Helpless (This water is poisonous, it hurts so much!)  
 “Does it hurt?”

Lu Wu was startled and quickly checked the body of the little goldfish.

He saw no injuries.

Lu Wu then glanced at the pond, and the attributes of the pond appeared before him.

…

Name: Transcendence Pond  
 Description: Part of the same system as the Dragon Gate, used for Transcendence, can fully activate one’s bloodline but the downside is the pain.

…

Having seen these attributes, Lu Wu understood what was happening.

He then looked at the little goldfish in his arms, who was frantically refusing to enter the water again, and felt even more helpless.

If only he could replace the little goldfish with Silly; that creature would probably not want to leave once it entered the Transcendence Pond.

Unfortunately, the little goldfish wasn’t Silly; it was particularly averse to pain.

But now, it had no choice but to brave the pain and go into the pond, for how else would it leap through the Dragon Gate?

Lu Wu had no other choice but to hold the little goldfish and try to prepare it mentally.

The little goldfish turned out to be fairly easy to trick.

Soon enough, it was swayed by Lu Wu to go into the water once more.

However, as easily as it was convinced to go in, it was just as easily pained enough to come back out.

Just as the little goldfish had managed to submerge, it emerged again, leaving Lu Wu bewildered.

“How about this, I’ll share the pain with you, okay?”

With no other options, Lu Wu had to play his trump card.

Once the pain was shared, the little goldfish’s ordeal in the water was halved. Lu Wu also felt the agony of the Transcendence Pond.

It was painful, but not nearly as much as Silly had experienced, and Lu Wu could bear it.

This time, the little goldfish endured longer than before, but it still failed to leap through the Dragon Gate, getting washed down by the waterfall.

Then it popped out of the water again to complain to Lu Wu.

“Lu Wu! Lu Wu! Lu Wu!”

(It hurts so much being battered by that nasty water.)  
 Lu Wu felt helpless as no amount of persuasion could convince the little goldfish to keep trying.

Eventually, Lu Wu got a bit impatient.

“Is leaping through the Dragon Gate really so difficult? Come on, I’ll take you through it myself.”

With those words, Lu Wu stripped off his clothes and dove headfirst into the pond.

“Lu Wu! Lu Wu!”

Seeing Lu Wu jump in, the little goldfish panicked. With a splash, it dived in too, intending to pull Lu Wu back out of the painful water.

But Lu Wu ignored it completely, and upon plunging into the water, he began racing toward the Dragon Gate.

Lu Wu had no other option.

The Summoned Beasts he raised were all spoiled.

Everything seemed to require a Lu Wu.

To help the little goldfish leap through the Dragon Gate, Lu Wu had to push ahead with all his might.

Seeing Lu Wu forging ahead, the little goldfish forgot its own pain and hurriedly followed, trying to pull Lu Wu out of the bad water that caused pain to fish.

However, because of the Transcendence Pond, the little goldfish actually couldn’t catch up with Lu Wu.

It could only bite at Lu Wu’s heels, following him through the Transcendence Pond, leaping up the waterfall, and then one after the other, they passed through the Dragon Gate.

“Done!”

Watching the little goldfish pass through the Dragon Gate, Lu Wu’s mouth curled into a smile of accomplishment. Just then, he suddenly felt an indescribable force acting on him and the little goldfish…

# Chapter 291 - 291 288 Dragon Transformation

﻿Chapter 291: 288 Dragon Transformation Chapter 291: 288 Dragon Transformation Beneath the Dragon Gate in the Dragon Palace Secret Realm,

Lu Wu was enveloped by a mysterious force.

Originally, the Dragon Transformation was none of a human’s business.

No matter how much Lu Wu charged or leaped, it shouldn’t have had anything to do with him.

But the troublesome part was that he shared damage with the little goldfish.

As he shared the damage, he also inadvertently shared the Transcendence.

Adding to that the contract with the little goldfish and its scent on him,

as well as the clever timing of their joint leap through the gate,

at the instant he leapt, the Dragon Gate mistook Lu Wu for another little goldfish.

Therefore, the power of Dragon Transformation descended upon both Lu Wu and the little goldfish.

The little goldfish was doing alright, its bloodline activated, and it directly began the Dragon Transformation process.

Lu Wu, on the other hand, was not so lucky, as the activation of the dragon bloodline is the most vital part of the transformation, and he had no dragon bloodline to speak of.

However, the Dragon Gate was clearly a discerning entity.

It had encountered sub-dragon species that had diluted bloodlines yet could leap through the Dragon Gate.

While Lu Wu’s bloodline was diluted, a little boost would suffice.

Consequently, a drop of golden blood fell from nowhere, landing right on Lu Wu’s heart.

As the golden blood touched down, his heart began to beat violently.

And as his heart underwent changes, Little Skeleton and Moon Shadow, originally nestled within Lu Wu’s heart, were expelled.

With the irrelevant Summoned Beasts out of the way, the beating of Lu Wu’s heart accelerated.

The golden blood rapidly integrated, and golden patterns began to emerge on Lu Wu’s heart.

His blood too started to reveal faint traces of gold.

As this pale golden blood appeared, that mysterious force began to surge into Lu Wu in vast amounts.

If the Dragon Transformation power of the Dragon Gate was 10 points, then 7 to 8 points were converging on Lu Wu, leaving the poor little goldfish with about 2 points.

This turned what should have been a straightforward evolution for the little goldfish into a process full of twists and turns.

And the real trouble was on Lu Wu’s side.

To Lu Wu at that moment, he was like a helpless child, with the Dragon Gate, acting as a mother, crazily stuffing food into his mouth.

Despite Lu Wu clearly being unable to take any more, the Dragon Gate kept forcefully feeding him,

asking as it did, “Is it enough? Is it enough, my child?”

The Gate kept pushing energy into Lu Wu’s body, rapidly bringing him to a critical threshold.

At that time, although Lu Wu’s heart was fiercely beating and absorbing the energy, it still couldn’t keep up.

Should this continue, Lu Wu feared he would be stuffed to death.

And just less than half a meter away from Lu Wu, the little goldfish looked baffled at the Dragon Gate.

It could sense the power it was being given by the Dragon Gate diminishing.

If this kept up, it might not even manage to shed its fish form.

So, love would disappear, was that it?

As the little goldfish wondered in bewilderment, beside it, Lu Wu grabbed the little goldfish and transferred all the unbearable power to it.

Well, now that’s how violently love arrived.

The little goldfish quickly absorbed the energy and entered the state of Evolution.

It had evolved, but the situation on Lu Wu’s side hadn’t improved much. With no other option, Lu Wu turned his attention to Little Skeleton and had it throw over the phone.

Little Skeleton obediently complied with the request.

Lu Wu caught Little Skeleton’s phone and poured all the excess power he couldn’t handle into it.

Then, Lu Wu fell into a deep sleep.

Unsure of how much time had passed when Lu Wu awoke from his slumber.

The first thing he saw was a strange little creature crouched in front of him.

The little guy was golden.

Roughly thirty centimeters long, with two small paws on the front segment, two tiny straight horns atop its head, and sharp teeth, although it should have been a fierce creature,

its small size made it look incredibly cute.

And upon seeing this little creature, Lu Wu also caught a glimpse of its attributes.

Name: Little Flood Dragon

Power: 3 stars (Leader)

Quality: ??? (You know, don’t ask)

Attributes: Dragon, Water

State: Happy (Lu Wu turned into a little goldfish!!!)

Weakness: None

Basic Skills: Tail Slap (Master), Glow (Master), Lighting (Master)

Advanced Skill: Slap Lu Wu (Master), A Mouthful of Salted Soda (Master)

Killing Move: Power of the Ocean (entry-level) (The advanced skill of Flood, capable of summoning the Ocean Land to change the environment and activate one’s own talent)

Jiao Long Roar (Unmastered)

Talent: Child of the Sea, Commander of the Water Clan

Jiao Long’s Body (Reduces physical and spell attacks by 50% from those below the rank of Lord, and by 20% from those above)

PS: Can grow.

Description: You’ve delayed its growth; if it wasn’t for you, it would probably already be a Lord by now.

Seeing the little guy’s attributes, Lu Wu realized that this was indeed his own little goldfish.

It had obviously succeeded in its Dragon Transformation.

Its power had greatly increased; however, what puzzled Lu Wu was that the little goldfish said he turned into a little goldfish—what did that mean?

As Lu Wu thought this, he looked down at himself and was startled.

Because when he looked down, he found that his hands had turned into dragon claws and his body into a dragon’s.

“What’s going on?”

Lu Wu hurriedly checked his own attributes.

Name: Lu Wu (In Jiao Long Form)

Power: Senior Summoner (Approximately the combat power of a Lord 2 Star)

Bloodline: Dragon

Mastered Skills: Slap Lu Wu (Master), Charging (Master), Flood (Master), Cold Ice Body (Master), Dragon Bone Power (Master)

Special Skill: Unyielding·Growth (Master)

Dragon Transformation (entry-level) (You’ve acquired the Jiao Long bloodline, which after activation allows you to transform into a Jiao Long for battle.

PS: Upon transforming into a Jiao Long, combat power greatly increases.)

Summoner Talent: Power of Inheritance (Unawakened)

Damage Sharing

Looking at his attribute panel, Lu Wu was stunned for a moment, quickly trying to recall the details of the “Dragon Transformation” skill in his mind.

Fortunately, Lu Wu had a good memory and quickly mastered the “Dragon Transformation” skill, easily canceling it.

It’s just that his original clothes had been torn during the transformation.

Now, after canceling “Dragon Transformation”, Lu Wu found himself in an especially awkward situation; the little goldfish—or rather, the Little Flood Dragon—and Little Skeleton were both curiously staring at a certain indescribable part of Lu Wu.

It seemed like Little Skeleton even wanted to reach out and touch it.

Lu Wu was startled and quickly kicked the little fellow away.

In the end, it was Moon Shadow who brought Lu Wu a set of clothes to resolve his predicament.

It was just that when Lu Wu walked out of the Secret Realm wearing Moon Shadow’s clothes, Liu Qingyuan who saw him was a bit dumbfounded.

She never expected that Lu Wu was into cross-dressing.

And honestly, Lu Wu did look quite handsome and pretty in women’s clothing…

Please subscribe, ask for Monthly Tickets, and follow.

# Chapter 292 - 292 289 Wang Jun Who Doubted Life

﻿Chapter 292: 289 Wang Jun, Who Doubted Life Chapter 292: 289 Wang Jun, Who Doubted Life “Not the case, I asked you to take the little goldfish to the Dragon Gate, but how did you end up jumping through it yourself?

And what’s with this outfit?

Hmm, don’t say, it does look pretty beautiful.

Bright red lips and white teeth, even prettier than young ladies!”

Liu Qingyuan looked at Lu Wu, who was dressed in the Moon Shadow Palace Dress, and couldn’t help but tease him.

Lu Wu wasn’t embarrassed about cross-dressing.

After all, it’s certainly better than being naked.

Besides, as long as he, Lu Wu, wasn’t embarrassed, the embarrassment could only belong to others.

So, he confidently twirled around.

“Looks good, right? You better take a good look; this might be the last time I wear it in my lifetime.”

Seeing Lu Wu’s generous manner, Liu Qingyuan’s lips curled upward.

“Is that so? How about Aunt Liu takes a photo for you to keep as a memento?

Then post it online with the headline ‘Shocking, the President of Jiangnan University’s Student Council, Lu Wu, has such a fetish’??”

It was a killer move, Lu Wu immediately chickened out.

“Well, let’s skip the photo.

Aunt Liu, I have something else to do, so I’ll be going now!”

In the end, Lu Wu fled from this woman.

His hasty departure wasn’t just about cross-dressing.

Primarily, it was because Liu Qingyuan, this woman, gave him a feeling that he had absolutely no secrets in front of her—this feeling was a bit too terrifying for Lu Wu, who did not enjoy staying around her.

Moreover, Lu Wu did indeed have urgent matters to attend to.

He checked Little Skeleton’s phone and realized that while he was in the Dragon Palace Secret Realm, though it seemed like he had merely blinked, two days had actually passed.

This made Lu Wu quite anxious.

He was anxious about the university league, as well as about Han the silly creature.

Especially the latter; the creature had been taken by Yuan Qingqing two days ago, and he had no clue how it was now.

In these two aspects, Lu Wu decided to first head to the competition venue to see what was happening.

Because if Lu Wu remembered correctly, the preliminaries were supposedly happening tomorrow.

He needed to check the schedule for the preliminaries.

While Lu Wu was rushing to the competition venue, he hadn’t noticed that at this very moment, many eyes at Jingcheng University were on him.

Mainly because Lu Wu’s looks were pretty striking to start with.

Moreover, having just activated the Divine Dragon Bloodline, his hair had grown a lot, reaching his shoulders, and his charm had increased as well.

Along with a palace dress, truly, the image was impeccable—a very fairy-like figure.

It stupefied the students of Jingcheng University.

Of course, most people just dared to look.

But some overconfident students felt that just looking wasn’t enough—they wanted to get to know him.

Therefore, while Lu Wu was hurrying to exit the school,

someone blocked his way.

“Miss, how about adding each other on WeChat?”

Lu Wu looked stunned at the person in front of him, but swiftly took out his phone for him to scan, then quickly walked away.

Leaving that guy swooning there.

He was actually just trying his luck and hadn’t expected it to be so easy.

“Indeed, it must be due to my irresistible charm!”

At that moment, Wang Jun had already decided where to hold his wedding with the stunning miss and what names their future children should have.

But when he eventually snapped out of his lengthy daydream and looked at his WeChat, Wang Jun was dumbfounded.

He realized he had already added the person as a friend.

Upon a closer look, damn, wasn’t this Lu Wu?

Recalling the face of the ‘miss’ he had just seen, Wang Jun completely collapsed.

Well, the sweet romance he thought had just begun, or rather hadn’t even started, had utterly come to an end in an instant.

Meanwhile, Lu Wu, with a somewhat wicked sense of humor, had captured the transition of Wang Jun from surprise to confusion, from confusion to shock, from shock to despair.

After that, Lu Wu left Jingcheng University.

He randomly found a clothing store nearby and bought himself some clothes.

Although cross-dressing didn’t embarrass Lu Wu, how could he, a well-known figure in the Summoner’s world, go to the competition in women’s clothing?

Lu Wu could guarantee that if he did, the news headlines that day—it wouldn’t even wait until the next day—would definitely feature that.

And Old Zhang’s heart might just explode on the spot.

Considering Old Zhang’s health, Lu Wu still changed into men’s clothing and got his long hair cut.

After changing into a completely new image, Lu Wu then rushed to the competition venue.

However, Lu Wu did not expect that as soon as he stepped outside, he happened to bump into Wang Jun, who was disheartened and wandering out of Jingcheng University for a breather.

Seeing Lu Wu, Wang Jun’s face showed an embarrassed expression.

Well, it’s like this.

As long as you’re not embarrassed, the embarrassment has to be someone else’s.

Unlike the embarrassed Wang Jun, Lu Wu was pretty calm, as if nothing had happened.

He greeted him casually.

“Old Wang, long time no see!”

Wang Jun was baffled, what do you mean, long time no see?

Didn’t we just meet?

Before Wang Jun could voice his confusion, Lu Wu waved his hand and walked away.

“I’ve got something to do, I’ll treat you to a drink next time.”

Now, Wang Jun was utterly bewildered.

“Could it be that what I saw just now wasn’t Lu Wu?”

“Come to think of it, that lady just now seemed a lot prettier than Lu Wu,

and had a much better temperament, with much longer hair too.

Hmm, that definitely wasn’t Lu Wu just now. Maybe that lady was Lu Wu’s sister or something!”

With this thought, Wang Jun’s eyes suddenly lit up.

He felt as if he had something to look forward to in life.

Maybe sweet love was about to descend upon him.

So, Wang Jun mustered up the courage to pick up his phone and was about to ask about Lu Wu’s sister or if it was his friend’s sister, but Lu Wu had already sent three messages.

The first was a text message.

“By the way, please keep the cross-dressing a secret.”

The next two were video messages, the first one captured Wang Jun’s transition from bewildered to despair when he saw Lu Wu’s friend.

The latter had just been recorded, capturing Wang Jun’s journey from desperate and bewildered to excited.

Wang Jun looked at these three messages and the hope and excitement on his face were instantly extinguished.

He felt terrible.

Seeing him like this made Lu Wu feel somewhat tender-hearted and ultimately decided not to continue sending the video that had just been recorded to avoid upsetting him further.

After all, Lu Wu wasn’t a devil.

“This way, I don’t have to worry about him spilling the beans about my cross-dressing.”

Lu Wu’s mouth curled into a smile, and he happily went back to the competition.

Leaving poor Wang Jun there, his face flushed with embarrassment, wishing he could find a hole to bury himself in.

He just couldn’t understand.

Why was it him who discovered Lu Wu cross-dressing,

but in the end, it was he who got caught by the short hairs.

…

While Wang Jun was sulking, Lu Wu had already returned to the competition venue.

However, Lu Wu didn’t stay long at the venue.

Mainly because Lu Wu only realized after arriving at the venue,

that there seemed to be nothing for him in tomorrow’s preliminary round.

As he was a seeded player in the university league, a seed among seeds, that type who could bypass the preliminaries directly and enter the top 32.

So, not only was there nothing for Lu Wu in tomorrow’s preliminaries,

but the top 64 competition also didn’t involve Lu Wu.

From the looks of the competition schedule, it would probably take another 7 days before Lu Wu needed to compete.

Seeing this good fortune, Lu Wu promptly called Li Kai over, asking him to take him and Dudu back to the Beijing Cultivation Center Headquarters.

He wanted to see how his bird was doing.

After all, it had been two days, and Lu Wu was still a bit worried about his bird.

Turns out, Lu Wu did get there.

But he couldn’t enter Yuan Qingqing’s lab nor could he see the bird.

Her lab was locked tight; no matter how much Lu Wu called out, no one responded.

It was inappropriate to force his way in.

In the end, it was Sun Kongkong who came out and took Lu Wu away.

“Don’t worry, your bird will be fine.

I assure you, in a day or two, you’ll see a bigger, stronger bird.”

These words from Sun Kongkong made Lu Wu feel as if he was being driven somewhere.

But at this moment, Lu Wu had no evidence and no other choice.

Unable to go in, what else could he do but wait?

However, Lu Wu wasn’t just waiting idly.

He rented a lab from Sun Kongkong, planning to take this time to enhance both the quality of Little Skeleton and Little Skeleton’s phone.

In this regard, Lu Wu had pretty much handled everything before coming to Beijing, missing only one critical material.

Now that he had the material, it was time to start enhancing Little Skeleton’s quality.

Up to this day,

Lu Wu’s cultivation level had reached an absolute Master Level.

His cultivation methods were continually innovating.

Injections, medications, training, etc., Lu Wu was masterful in all these plans.

However, in terms of cultivating Little Skeleton, the method Lu Wu used had never changed.

It was still the same old method; the pot was still for stewing.

The only change was the pot used for stewing and the ingredients used with Little Skeleton.

After all, as Little Skeleton’s power increased, the materials required for stewing it became more and more special, this time even using Legendary Quality materials.

An ordinary pot truly couldn’t handle it.

Fortunately, Lu Wu was at the Beijing Cultivation Center Headquarters.

The equipment and materials here were quite comprehensive.

At Sun Kongkong’s command, the pot Lu Wu needed was delivered.

After setting up the pot, Lu Wu added one prepared material after another.

Next, the process was something everyone was familiar with.

Little Skeleton, holding its phone and Bone Staff, jumped in adeptly.

Beside him, Tuantuan from Dudu’s family, drooling, waited skillfully by the side to feast once Little Skeleton was done stewing.

What Lu Wu hadn’t expected was that before Little Skeleton was done stewing,

a warm current surged toward his brain.

Lu Wu was quite familiar with this feeling; unless he was mistaken, it should be Han who had advanced…

……

Day-to-day requests.

# Chapter 293 - 293 290 Little Skeletons phone defying the heavens

﻿Chapter 293: 290 Little Skeleton’s phone defying the heavens Chapter 293: 290 Little Skeleton’s phone defying the heavens Little Skeleton hadn’t advanced long ago.

Lu Wu was still stewing Little Skeleton when someone brought over the bird from Lu Wu’s house.

To be honest, Lu Wu hardly recognized it when he saw the bird.

Mainly because his own bird had grown prettier.

It used to be about 1.3 meters tall, and now it had grown to about 1.8 meters, almost as tall as Lu Wu himself.

Covered in ice-blue feathers, with sharp claws and eyes that looked very distracting.

So handsome!

There were also significant changes in its attributes.

…

Name: Ice and Snow Skylark (Second Evolution)

Power: 3 Star (Leader)

Quality: Gold (Upgrade)???

Attribute: Ice and Snow

State: Annoyed (Feathers on body are such a nuisance, really want to pluck them out.)

Weakness: Fire (Typical)

Special Skill: Unyielding·Growth (Master)

Basic Skills: Defense (Master) Dodge (Master) Cold Aura (Master)…

Advanced Skill: Cold Ice Body (Master)

Killing Move: Absolute Freeze (Entry-level)

Talent: Enhanced Recovery (Advanced)

Thorny Shield (Passive) Capable of absorbing hit attacks, triggers the Thorny Shield passively when energy is full, during which the Thorny Shield reflects 120% of the attack damage.

Description: What are you looking at, it’s your silly bird.

…

As Lu Wu was checking out the bird’s attributes,

the silly bird had already started pecking at himself, almost about to pluck out its feathers, giving Lu Wu quite a scare.

“Think before you act!”

Lu Wu went up and gave it a smooth caress, twisting the silly bird’s head awry and forcing it to stop the plucking.

Lu Wu then held the silly bird’s head and warned it,

“Listen to me, silly, you have to keep this fur on you until after the competition, got it? I don’t want to show up with a bald bird on stage, you understand? If you dare pluck a single feather, I’ll find a place to lock you up, and no Summoned Beast will ever get to beat you up for the rest of your life!!”

Little Han was startled.

This was the most terrifying threat the bird had ever heard.

Its head nodded frantically, signaling that it understood.

After persuading Little Han with reasoning and emotion, Lu Wu turned his attention back to Little Skeleton’s stew.

Well, to be honest, there wasn’t much to worry about with Little Skeleton.

The preparations were almost done, the plan was perfect, the ingredients flawless, and there were unlikely to be any surprises. Just stew and it’s done.

And indeed, Little Skeleton’s stewing process went quite smoothly.

About five hours later, the results were ready.

Lu Wu glanced at Little Skeleton’s stats, his mouth almost curling up in a smile.

“Very good, pretty much exactly what I had anticipated.”

…

Name: Skeleton Commander with Control of Dragon Bone (Second Evolution)

Power: 3 Star (Leader)

Quality: Gold (Superior) (Upgrade) (1 Line)

Attributes: Undead, Netherworld Fire, Thunder, Dragon Bone

State: Swollen (Little Skeleton has become stronger again, Little Skeleton has become impressive again, Little Skeleton can now fight Tuantuan and Little Yin)

Weakness: Light (Typical)

Basic Skills: Brief

Advanced Skills: Thunder Spear (Master)

Advanced Spells: Ghost Fire Skill (Master) Thunder Strike (Master) Dragon Bone Magic (Master)

Killing Move: Dragon Bone Power (Mastered)

Special Skill: Charging (Master)

Talent: Control Dragon Bone (Basic), Commander Skeleton

Dual-tasking, Magic Enhancement (Advanced)

Companion Equipment:

Mysterious Bone Staff (Quality seems to have improved, it seems to have reached the condition to trigger a new form.)

Dragon Bone Armor (Silver) (Defense greatly increased, can now reduce attacks from beings below Lord level by 30%)

Bone Crown (Silver) (Still useless, just decorative)

Little Skeleton’s phone

Quality: Legend

Function: Energy Storage Enhancement (able to store the energy of 25 Little Skeletons)

Big phone sweep (able to store 30 little brothers.

PS: Can only store Skeleton Series little brothers, must defeat the opponent or obtain their consent.

PSS: Power cannot exceed Lord 3 Star.)

Phone space (added storage function, can store about 10 cubic space of items)

Electronic library (Knowledge Lu Wu knows is in the phone, knowledge Lu Wu doesn’t know is also there.)

…

Looking at the attributes of Han and Little Skeleton,

Lu Wu couldn’t help shaking his head, feeling particularly helpless.

“It seems that the college competition will be another dull affair for me.”

With the power of the Summoned Beasts under Lu Wu now,

even if the weakest, Han, were singled out, it could still take on a being of Lord level, not to mention little goldfish and Little Skeleton.

After transforming into a dragon, little goldfish became Little Flood Dragon, further strengthening its power and closely chasing after Loli Dragon’s trail.

As for Little Skeleton.

If we talk about its combat power as a single Skeleton, it might not be much less than that of little goldfish.

But if we include Little Skeleton’s phone, then little goldfish would probably find it tough.

If Little Skeleton could talk Loli Dragon into coming over, then there’s no need to say more, just Loli Dragon alone could thrash little goldfish.

“Right, Loli Dragon! Aunt Moon Shadow, call out Loli Dragon.”

Speaking of Loli Dragon, Lu Wu suddenly remembered that he hadn’t tricked her over yet, so he quickly had Moon Shadow release Loli Dragon.

After letting this little girl out, Lu Wu and Little Skeleton both teamed up.

They took turns, sweet-talking the child.

“Indeks, do you like Little Skeleton’s phone?”

“Indeks, do you want to live in the phone?”

“I’m telling you, the phone of Little Skeleton is super fun, full of movies and games, and also has many Little Skeletons who speak super nicely, I guarantee you’ll really like it inside.”

Lu Wu rubbed his hands, wheedling the dragon.

Fortunately, no one saw this scene.

Otherwise, just based on Lu Wu’s sleazy demeanor now, he reckoned he could win a free silver bracelet and a private single-room combo.

Loli Dragon also sensed something off about Lu Wu.

But it was still young, plus it lusted after Little Skeleton’s phone.

So, it couldn’t resist and was tricked by Lu Wu into signing a contract with Little Skeleton, effortlessly becoming Little Skeleton’s little brother.

“It’s done!”

Watching Little Skeleton and Loli Dragon sign the contract, Lu Wu was almost beaming with joy.

But he didn’t forget to ask Li Kai to get him some Skeleton Summon Beasts, planning to fill up all 30 slots in Little Skeleton’s phone.

And just as Lu Wu was giving the order, he suddenly came to his senses.

“Something’s not right!”

Saying so, Lu Wu glanced once more at the attribute panel of Little Skeleton’s phone.

Actually, with his memory, there was no need to look, but because he was so pleasantly surprised, he checked again.

With that look, Lu Wu’s happiness soared.

“Little Skeleton’s phone is defying the heavens!”

The advanced Little Skeleton’s phone can take in Skeleton Series little brothers, and as long as they don’t exceed Lord 3 Stars, it’s fine.

That is to say, if Lu Wu is willing, he could additionally take in 14 Lord level little brothers.

Even replace the previous 15 with Lord level little brothers.

By then, at a wave of Little Skeleton’s hand, there would be 30 Lord level little brothers.

“Oh crap, I seem to have struck it big!”

…

# Chapter 294 - 294 291 Everyone present is trash

﻿Chapter 294: 291 Everyone present is trash Chapter 294: 291 Everyone present is trash Beijing, Phoenix Nest Training Ground.

Just a few hours ago, Lu Wu, who had been dreaming sweetly, was now serving Indeks like a princess.

After signing a contract with Little Skeleton, this girl immediately realized she had been duped.

Upset, she grabbed Little Skeleton and Lu Wu and gave them a good beating.

It was such a scene that even Han, who was watching nearby, got overly excited and particularly wanted to join in.

Unfortunately, Indeks wasn’t interested in beating him up.

It was only after receiving that beating that Lu Wu understood.

Using Little Skeleton’s phone to contract with thirty Lord Level Summoned Beasts wasn’t impossible; it mainly depended on whether he and Little Skeleton could withstand the beating.

Under the circumstances where Little Skeleton’s power did not exceed the Summoned Beasts it contracted.

Little Skeleton couldn’t forcibly command what others did.

When Indeks was beating up Lu Wu, Little Skeleton tried to forcefully command the Loli Bone Dragon, only to have its skeleton dismantled.

After that thorough beating, Lu Wu had no choice but to put off contracting Lord Level underlings until after Little Skeleton reached the Lord Level.

However, even if the Loli Dragon didn’t beat him, contracting the underlings would still have to wait until after the university competition was over.

Just a few hours after Little Skeleton was strengthened, the preliminary round of the university competition began.

Although Lu Wu, being a seeded player, didn’t need to participate,

Dudu still had to participate in the preliminaries.

Not just Dudu, but the other four members from Jiangnan University had to participate as well.

So, after getting beaten up, Lu Wu drove to the venue with the Loli Dragon in tow.

When Lu Wu arrived at the venue,

it was almost 6 o’clock.

It was quite early, but there was already a long queue at the Phoenix Nest.

The contestants had mostly all arrived.

Lu Wu and his group were among the later arrivals.

When he got there, Zhang Wentao kept complaining, criticizing Lu Wu for not coming earlier.

“I told you yesterday that we shouldn’t have gone to the Cultivation Center. See, you almost overslept, didn’t you?”

“Overslept? We didn’t even get a good night’s sleep last night!”

When Lu Wu mentioned this, Old Zhang was immediately stunned.

His eyes wandered over Lu Wu and Dudu, finally shaking his head, “Young people are just young, totally unaware of moderation.

It doesn’t matter for you since you aren’t participating, but Dudu has to compete. You should let Dudu rest before the match starts.

The university competition isn’t like the high school competition; the Summoner has to go on stage with them.”

Lu Wu felt like this old man was throwing the blame onto him.

But he didn’t have evidence,

and he was too lazy to explain these things to the old man.

Although Lu Wu didn’t think the preliminaries would be challenging for Dudu, he still took Dudu to the resting area.

On one hand to let Dudu rest, and on the other hand to see how his teammates, who he had been training for over two months, were doing now, whether they had matured, and if they could fight the competition on their own.

However, just as Lu Wu reached the resting area and before he could even check on his teammates, someone from the Education Bureau came over.

They expressed their hope that Lu Wu could give a speech on stage as a representative of the contestants during the opening ceremony.

This made Lu Wu feel a bit embarrassed.

“This isn’t a great idea, is it?

Besides, this is pretty sudden. I haven’t prepared anything!”

“You can just say whatever comes to mind!”

“Can I really say whatever I want?”

Lu Wu’s eyes suddenly lit up, seeing as this wouldn’t be difficult for him.

That alarmed the other party, who quickly added a caveat,

“But you cannot give any advertisements!”

“How could I? What kind of person do you think Lu Wu is, to advertise at such an event?”

Lu Wu kept patting his chest while saying this, his earnest manner relieving the person from the Education Bureau.

However, even the rather simple-minded Han by Lu Wu’s side knew Lu Wu was definitely up to something.

After confirming the time to go on stage with the person from the Education Bureau and seeing them off,

Lu Wu turned to look at his own four teammates in the resting area.

Glancing over them, he nodded in satisfaction.

Not a bad improvement throughout the past three months.

The one who improved the least, Zhao Li, had risen from Leader One Star to Two Stars, and it seemed he wasn’t far from reaching Three Stars.

Wu Wei had seen the most significant progress. Three months ago, his Fire Monkey was just a Summoned Beast at the Elite 3 Stars.

Now it had reached Boss 3 Star.

Completing a jump in rank in just three months wasn’t just about having resources.

Seeing this kind of progress, Lu Wu knew he must have had his own unique experiences during the past two months.

The remaining Hengheng Monster and Su Lan had also reached Professional Level.

Their power was now at Boss 2 Star.

This progression was terrifying, but they were aware that their power was still considered lower-tier in this competition.

Moreover, with the news spreading that eighty percent of Jiangnan University’s contestants were freshmen,

the internet was especially focused on these three.

The students of Jiangnan University had placed their expectations and hopes squarely on them.

Under such circumstances, except for Zhao Li, the remaining three inevitably felt immense pressure.

As the competition approached, this pressure intensified, making them particularly nervous.

Seeing their pale faces and the slight sweat on their foreheads, Lu Wu approached them, patted their shoulders gently, and said, “Don’t be nervous, don’t put additional pressure on yourselves. It’s just a minor competition.

Just relax and show what you can do. Winning or losing isn’t important. As long as you gain something from the competition, that’s good enough.”

At this point, Lu Wu paused and casually added, “Besides, no one really has any expectations for your performance.”

That remark really set off the three Hengheng Monsters.

Especially the Hengheng Monster, who, like a cat whose tail had been stepped on, leaped up.

“What do you mean ‘no one has any expectations for our performance’?

Does ‘no one’ include you too?

Don’t forget, you spent hundreds of thousands of points on us!”

“But you guys don’t seem capable!”

“What do you mean ‘not capable’? We are very capable!

Just you watch, our next performance will definitely dazzle you!”

Seeing the Hengheng Monster jumping angrily, Lu Wu couldn’t help but smirk.

This girl was still as easily provoked as ever.

A little agitation, and she immediately got all riled up.

Instantly, her back stopped aching, her legs stopped hurting, and she wasn’t nervous anymore, all prepared to show Lu Wu what she could do.

Not only her, but Wu Wei and Su Lan also got motivated.

“Remember this state of yours, okay!”

At this moment, the Hengheng Monsters had no idea what they were about to face.

Time swiftly passed.

Two hours later, the university league’s opening ceremony officially commenced.

All the competitors and spectators had reached their assigned places.

The head of the Education Bureau personally presided over the opening ceremony.

One prominent figure after another went on stage to deliver speeches.

Until Lu Wu took the stage, the opening ceremony had been solemn and serious.

The competitors and audience below, watching one old man after another, listening to set piece after set piece of official jargon, were all yawning.

That was until the host said, “Next, please welcome the Master Level Cultivation Master, the president of Jiangnan University’s student council, the chairman of the board of the Lu Group, and the seeded player of this university league, our competitor representative Lu Wu, to speak!”

The spectators and competitors, stirred by this series of titles, refocused their attention.

Everyone perked up, curiously awaiting the step-by-step approach of Lu Wu.

They were all particularly curious whether this rising star of recent months could deliver an outstanding, distinctive performance on stage.

However, the situation was somewhat unexpected.

“Respected leaders, distinguished guests, dear audience friends, hello everyone, I am…”

Lu Wu started off with a speech that was excessively formal.

He first flattered the leadership of the Education Bureau, then praised the competition, and promoted the spirit of the competition…

His series of remarks were extremely official.

This was the old man’s speech preparation for Lu Wu.

Knowing that Lu Wu had such an opportunity to appear, he eagerly volunteered to write his speeches, and churned out this piece after more than an hour of effort.

Consequently, after this speech came out, the leaders listened with satisfaction.

Initially, they were somewhat worried about letting Lu Wu go on stage, fearing that the kid might disrupt the atmosphere with his uniqueness.

Now, seeing this, they thought the kid was quite sensible and steady.

However, while the leaders were pleased, the audience and competitors were not.

Watching Lu Wu speaking with such seriousness on stage.

Many spectators and competitors felt very disappointed.

They felt that Lu Wu’s appearance failed to meet their expectations.

The atmosphere below, which initially was excited and anticipatory, returned to its original state.

Just then, having finished speaking about the leaders and the competition, it was time to talk about the competitors.

Here at this point, Lu Wu casually threw away the old man’s script and began to improvise.

“That part about the significance of this competition, everyone knows.

And you might also know that, within this competition, six out of Jiangnan University’s team are freshmen.

Over eighty percent of our members are students, which might cause concerns among attendees about whether Jiangnan University can perform well.

Now, as the team leader of Jiangnan University, I can responsibly tell everyone that you needn’t worry about anything.

The reason we deployed five freshmen is partly to showcase our educational standards.

And the other, more helpless part is…

That is, in this competition, we have not seen any opponents worth sending anyone beyond our freshmen against.”

Upon hearing this, the facial expressions of the teachers and students from other schools darkened.

And at Jiangnan University, Old Zhang’s face turned pale in an instant.

Lu Wu’s teammates’ minds also went blank.

Bro, do you realize what you’re saying now?

A senior from another school stood up directly.

“Does student Lu Wu mean to say that our school’s students don’t meet your criteria?”

“No!”

Lu Wu shook his head vigorously, and in a rather melodramatic manner, he recited the line he had been longing to say for a long time: “I’m not targeting your school. I mean, all the participants here are trash!!!”

Instantly, the whole venue erupted.

# Chapter 295 - 295 292 The match starts

﻿Chapter 295: 292 The match starts Chapter 295: 292 The match starts Lu Wu stepped down from the stage after putting on his show.

He was pleased, but many were on the verge of tears.

The Education Bureau hadn’t expected Lu Wu to pull such a stunt.

The person who had suggested Lu Wu give a speech now wished they could find a hole to hide in.

But that person was one of the lucky ones.

The ones who truly felt like crying were the members of Lu Wu’s team.

To be precise, it was the Hengheng Monster Wu Wei and Su Lan.

From the moment Lu Wu declared everyone present as trash,  
 they had distinctly felt the change in how all the competitors looked at them.

Like they were all eagerly preparing to beat them up.

After all, Lu Wu was a seeded player, and he wouldn’t have to worry about anything until the top 32.

Many people were bound to never get the chance to take on Lu Wu, but their chances of beating up his team were quite high.

Under this atmosphere, Su Lan was the first to crumble.

“What do we do now? Is it too late to distance ourselves from Lu Wu?”

While Su Lan and his teammates were bewildered and worried,  
 Zhao Li from the Jiangnan School Team stood up immediately.

Seeing Zhao Li stand, Su Lan and Wu Wei were momentarily stunned, then joy appeared on their faces.

They thought that the mature and steady senior, Zhao Li, was about to step forward and clarify that they had nothing to do with Lu Wu’s grandstanding.

They completely missed the extreme flush of excitement on Zhao Li’s face.

This adolescent who thrived on such antics stood up and roared.

“Our captain is right, everyone seated here is trash.

If anyone disagrees, come on over, the Jiangnan University School Team will take you all on!”

As he spoke, Zhao Li even pulled up Su Lan and Wu Wei beside him.

The two young men were nearly in tears.

They frantically signalled Zhao Li with their eyes: ‘Big brother, are you sure we won’t get beaten to death with you acting so tough?’  
 Unfortunately, the excited Zhao Li had no time to notice their pleading looks.

To make matters worse for Wu Wei and Su Lan, the Hengheng Monster also stood up, patting her twin peaks and challenging the competitors to bring it on.

Who knows what was going on in that woman’s head.

She went from fear to excitement in an instant.

Dudu, seeing everyone standing up, also foolishly rose to her feet.

And so, the atmosphere in the entire arena was pushed to its peak.

All the competitors’ eyes were practically shooting fire at the Jiangnan University School Team.

Looking at those glares, Wu Wei and Su Lan were certain they were doomed, probably not even able to leave the wall they were leaning on for support.

On the other side, Lu Wu was quite pleased with the effect.

Even though this pose was somewhat forced and contradicted the modest, low-key, and polite nature of Lu Wu, he felt it was necessary for the development of Jiangnan University.

The power of the Hengheng Monster and the others was a bit lacking.

Without some special measures, they would struggle to get noticed.

Since they were meant to be showcased as a recruiting advertisement, they certainly needed exposure, and now, all eyes were on them.

Explosive attention!

As long as they could perform even slightly outstandingly, Jiangnan University’s enrollment for the year would be set!

“From now on, it’s up to you!

Do well!”

With Lu Wu’s expectations, the college competition preliminaries soon began.

A total of 66 universities were participating in the college competition.

This meant there were 66 teams and 396 contestants.

Minus Lu Wu, the sole seed player who could directly enter the top 32, there were 395 contestants left.

So, the preliminaries were about these 395 contestants vying for 127 spots.

With a near two-thirds elimination rate, this preliminary round is quite brutal.

Of course, whether it’s brutal or not is a matter for the contestants.

As for the audience, they only care whether the match is exciting or not.

And in this edition of the university league, they had an additional point of interest.

That was to see how far the all-showing-off Jiangnan University could get after their opening ceremony performance?

Soon after, the official website announced the match information.

Jiangnan University’s information was dug up and made public immediately.

First was Lu Wu, who got a bye directly into the top 32 to wait for battle.

Then came Dudu and Zhao Li, who also got byes in the first round.

This wasn’t some underhanded machination by the organizers.

In the first round of the preliminaries, all Senior Summoners had byes.

After all, there is a vast gap between Senior Summoners and ordinary Summoners; having them compete would simply be a steamrolling.

So the strategy was to weed out the strong first, let the “chickens” fight it out, and then have the “chickens” take on the stronger contestants.

There were about 112 students with a Senior Summoner-level (at least one Summoned Beast Boss) or higher.

The remaining 284 non-Senior Summoner-level contestants were drawn to compete.

Therefore, in the first round of the preliminaries, the most attention was on the matches of Wu Wei, Su Lan, and the Hengheng Monster.

The first to fight was the Hengheng Monster.

He was up against a university student whom Lu Wu wasn’t very familiar with.

Lu Wu didn’t remember his name, but he did glance at his power.

The opponent’s Boss was 3 Star power, which was one star higher than the Hengheng Monster.

Lu Wu watched their match, a typical scrap between weaklings.

After more than 100 rounds, the Hengheng Monster narrowly came out on top.

Wu Wei was next.

He provided Lu Wu with some surprises, securing victory in just five rounds, easily winning his match.

Finally, it was Su Lan.

He got lucky, his opponent was a Boss 2 Star.

On the same level as Su Lan, but the opponent had one less Summoned Beast, and Su Lan solved it with a two-against-one strategy using his bird and dog.

Jiangnan University, in the first round of matches, managed to advance in full.

But the audience was not satisfied with Jiangnan University’s performance.

Especially with the matches of the Hengheng Monster and Su Lan.

One with a tough win and the other with a numerical advantage, neither fought very cleanly.

With such strength, they couldn’t possibly live up to their own hype.

So after the first round of matches, there was much chirping and chattering.

Some even bluntly stated that the Hengheng Monster and Su Lan wouldn’t survive the second match.

And it was at this exact moment that the information for the second round of Jiangnan University’s match was released.

Seeing that match information, both the audience and the contestants pretty much wrote off the trio including the Hengheng Monster.

All three of them were unlucky.

Their opponents were all Senior Summoner-level.

Professionals vs Senior Summoners, defeat was certain.

While the outside audience and contestants saw the daunting matchup for the trio, Lu Wu’s side clearly realized that the real challenge had begun.

The next three matches were crucial for Jiangnan University.

What the university’s recruitment results would look like this year largely depended on how well these three matches went.

If these three matches were won well, this year’s recruitment for Jiangnan University would basically be settled.

If not… well, if not, it seemed there wouldn’t be much of an issue; they still had Lu Wu to show off.

But of course, it would be best if they did well!

…

I’ve been having some serious writer’s block recently, and I’ll burst update once I get the storyline sorted out, aiming to get into the top ten of the power rankings next week.

# Chapter 296 - 296 293 orchid mantis

﻿Chapter 296: 293 orchid mantis Chapter 296: 293 orchid mantis The second round of the competition took place the following day.

Jiangnan University’s first contestant, still Ye Ruhuo, the Hengheng Monster.

Her opponent was from Jiangning University.

At first, when the opponent found out they were facing someone from Jiangnan University, they were quite aggravated.

After all, they felt pressured by Jiangnan University’s reputation.

Now, every contestant wanted to beat the crap out of Jiangnan University.

He had already decided to seriously crush his opponent.

However, as soon as they entered the field, the opponent’s attitude did a complete 180 upon seeing the Hengheng Monster.

“Hey, pretty lady!

You’re really beautiful, wanna add me as a friend?”

“Nope!”

“Are you sure you don’t want to add me? If you don’t, I’ll have to go hard on you!”

The moment the opponent opened their mouth, what a sleazebag.

Hengheng Monster didn’t want to deal with him.

The opponent didn’t seem to mind, figuring girls needed to be flirted out of their shell.

If she wasn’t talking, just tease her into talking.

“How about this, pretty lady, let me add you as a friend, and during the match, I’ll let you attack first for five rounds, how about that?”

Hengheng Monster was naturally quick-tempered.

Upon hearing this, her face immediately darkened, and her eyes, round and fierce, glared at the guy across from her.

“Don’t look at me like that, you’ll make me think you’ve fallen for me. How about 10 rounds for a friend request?”

The spectators in the stands were watching this guy trying to flirt with disgust, each one wishing they could replace him.

After all, although Hengheng Monster was notoriously hot-tempered and had quite the attitude, she was undeniably attractive.

Her long legs and youthful appearance, along with her usually cold expression, stirred many a scoundrel’s desire to flirt with her.

Facing such a girl, the Jiangning contestant became more and more enthusiastic, nearly aggravating Hengheng Monster to death before the match even started.

“Referee! Can we start now?”

Finally, Hengheng Monster could only appeal to the referee.

The referee checked both sides and asked the Jiangning contestant if they were ready.

“I’m all set here, pretty lady. I’m ready to fight whenever you are!”

“Then let’s start!”

With the sound of a whistle, the match officially began!

Hengheng Monster, who had been seething, launched the first attack.

It had been over half a year, and compared to her summoned beast in the high school league, its attributes had changed significantly.

…

Name: Three-tailed Spirit Cat (Second Evolution)

Power: 2 stars (Boss)

Quality: Gold (upgraded)

Attribute: Fire

State: Angry (Mimi wants to defeat this annoying human)

Weakness: Water (normal) Wind (slight)

Basic Skills: Bite (Master) Cat Step (Master) Cat Claw (Master)…

Advanced Skill: Fire Cat State (Master)

Talent: Fire Cat Body (passive) Enhances fire attribute attacks and resistance.

When activated along with [Fire Cat State], it significantly boosts power for a short period.

Description: Well, Mimi is still young, it will grow bigger.

…

The incredibly agile cat, now far stronger, raced towards the opponent’s summoned beast as soon as the match started.

Facing the charging Three-tailed Spirit Cat, the opponent’s beast didn’t flinch, or rather, there was absolutely no reason to flinch.

He charged directly forward, his hand shaped like a scythe slicing toward the Three-tailed Spirit Cat.

As the opponent’s Summoned Beast attacked, Lu Wu’s eyes also caught its attribute.

…

Name: Orchid Mantis (Second Evolution)

Power: 1 Star (leader)

Quality: Silver (Promoted)

Attribute: Grass

State: Bored (weak opponents hardly pique its interest)

Weakness: Fire (Moderate)

Skill Talents: Basic

Description: This is a somewhat capable Summoned Beast.

Although its attribute is countered by the cat, the huge disparity in power between the two means this counter gives Mimi no advantage.

…

The description of the Orchid Mantis was entirely accurate.

While Lu Wu was checking its attribute, the fight between the Orchid Mantis and the Three-tailed Spirit Cat had already begun.

In terms of speed and agility, the mantis far surpassed the cat.

The cat had just approached with a Cat Step, only to be blocked by the mantis.

The Orchid Mantis executed an Orchid Slash, its hand-scythe tracing a beautiful curve, forcing the Three-tailed Spirit Cat to halt its attack stride and dodge.

The Orchid Mantis relentlessly pressed on, chasing forward with its dual scythe-like arms refining and chopping, forcing the Three-tailed Spirit Cat to continually retreat.

From the onset of the battle, the Three-tailed Spirit Cat was put on the defensive.

Anyone could see the Hengheng Monster’s defeat was imminent.

Her opponent teased with a smirk, “Miss, there’s still time to add me as a friend… oh, grass! What a fierce girl!”

Before he could finish speaking, the battle took a turn.

Atop the arena, the Hengheng Monster lunged forward with a Cat Step, lifting its leg and kicking towards the Orchid Mantis.

This move from the Hengheng Monster was utterly unexpected.

Even though Summoners also had to go on stage in college league matches,

Summoners on stage typically held defensive positions, and doing well simply by protecting themselves was already an achievement—they rarely joined the battle.

It wasn’t a wise choice.

There was still a gap between the power of a Summoner and their Summoned Beast.

Rashly joining in was merely courting misery.

Now, as the Hengheng Monster approached the Orchid Mantis, not having even attacked yet, it was met with a scythe strike, even though the Three-tailed Spirit Cat intervened immediately.

Nevertheless, the Hengheng Monster was heavily struck by the mantis’s scythe.

With a “chuck” sound, the scythe plunged into the Hengheng Monster’s shoulder, blood instantly spurting out.

Clearly, the Hengheng Monster paid the price for her recklessness.

However, just when everyone thought the Hengheng Monster had doomed herself, she grabbed the mantis’s scythe with both hands.

“Now! Mimi!”

As the Hengheng Monster cried out in pain,

The Three-tailed Spirit Cat instantly activated “Fire Cat Form,” transforming into a blaze of flames, and in the same moment, the “Flame Body” Talent was triggered.

The combat power of the Three-tailed Spirit Cat soared in that instant.

It then clawed at the Orchid Mantis.

The Orchid Mantis, feeling the crisis, instinctively tried to dodge.

Under normal circumstances, the Orchid Mantis would have been able to evade, but now one of its scythes was stuck by the Hengheng Monster, the added weight of around 180 pounds plus the Hengheng Monster pulling on it, dragged the Orchid Mantis into a halt.

Though this caused the Hengheng Monster’s wound to widen, it successfully held the Orchid Mantis in place.

The Three-tailed Spirit Cat seized the opportunity to unleash a barrage of attacks.

A burst of fury, and it completely incapacitated the Orchid Mantis.

After the tough challenge of taking down the Orchid Mantis, the Hengheng Monster, her shoulder still bleeding heavily, walked toward her opponent with the flames on her slowly extinguishing.

Looking at the previously adorable Miss in front of him, the guy who just wanted to be friends panicked utterly.

“Don’t come any closer!!”

# Chapter 297 - 297 294 pushes king Su Lan

Chapter 297: 294 pushes king Su Lan Chapter 297: 294 pushes king Su Lan He capitalized on the confusion of his opponent from the previous battle.

Summoners took the risk in person right from the start, restraining the opponent by paying the price with their own serious injuries.

Their Summoned Beasts, seizing the opportunity, would launch a Burst Skill that could only be sustained for a short duration to take down the opponent’s Summoned Beast,  
 and then they would turn around to deal with the only remaining Summoner on the other side.

By relying on this extremely risky strategy, Little Skeleton finally defeated the opponent, securing Jiangnan University’s first victory in the second round.

The audience below, watching Little Skeleton, her left side drenched in her own blood, proudly raised her hand in triumph after sweeping her opponent out of the ring, were deeply shocked.

They had seen players who played desperately before.

They had also seen players with high attractiveness.

Audiences had seen plenty of underdogs who won against the odds.

But they had truly never seen anyone who was both attractive and played with such desperation, ending with an underdog victory.

At this moment, the audience below was speechless for a long time.

Especially the young folks watching the game live on TV and computers, many were now solid fans of Little Skeleton at this moment.

In terms of publicity, this battle was undoubtedly a success.

Lu Wu was also very pleased with this battle.

As soon as the fight ended, he went up and hugged Little Skeleton, who had her right fist triumphantly raised in the air on the platform, bringing her down.

He wasn’t trying to take advantage of her.

As everyone knows, the Lu family has no scumbags!

The reason Lu Wu had to hug her was that he knew Little Skeleton couldn’t move at that moment; not helping her down would have left her in a very awkward position.

But Lu Wu’s hug sent a chill through many corners of the arena, like the cold glint of swords.

They were looking at him as if he were a scumbag.

Concerning this, Lu Wu didn’t care one bit, or rather, he was self-righteous.

‘My heart and my actions are as clear as a mirror, all that I do is righteous!’  
 Lu Wu carried Little Skeleton down off the stage like carrying a sack, and after getting off, he had the Green Cub administer a healing treatment.

Green Cub, being a King-level Quality Summoned Beast, had always been unparalleled in terms of power.

Especially after one trip to Dragon Island, its power surged greatly; a single healing from it restored Little Skeleton’s energy, and she snatched the Bone Staff from Little Skeleton and started chasing after Lu Wu to hit him.

This scene caused someone in a corner of the spectator’s stand to raise an eyebrow.

At the same time, he said to a girl beside him, “When you face that Lu surname, beat him to death for me!”

……

It was not long before Little Skeleton left the stage.

Jiangnan University’s second battle began shortly after.

The second match was Dudu’s.

She was lucky; her opponent was a professional-level Summoner.

The opponent’s main Summoned Beast was only at Boss 3 Star power.

This kind of strength was nothing in front of Dudu; Tuantuan used “Gravity” to directly crush the opponent and easily resolved the battle.

The third match after Dudu was Zhao Li’s.

He wasn’t as lucky as Dudu, but still quite fortunate. His opponent was a Senior Summoner, albeit one that had just been promoted recently, with power level similar to Zhao Li’s from a few months ago. Facing such an opponent, Zhao Li easily settled the battle.

Thus, Jiangnan University had three victories in the second round, their momentum unstoppable.

However, this momentum came to a halt in the fourth match.

The fourth to take the stage was Su Lan.

By this point, Jiangnan University’s luck had almost run out.

Her opponent was a contestant from Magic City University.

Magic City University was one of the top three universities in the Hua District, and each member of their team was not to be underestimated.

Coming up against a member of Magic City University, Su Lan could be said to have drawn the shortest straw.

Almost no one believed Su Lan could win the battle, including Lu Wu.

This was a battle destined to be lost!

All Lu Wu requested of Su Lan was to put as much technique into it as possible.

Su Lan’s face turned dark. The opponent was a Senior-level Summoner with a main Summoned Beast that was a Leader 2 stars. Facing such a rival, how could he possibly produce a splendid fight?

The opponent, knowing he was from Jiangnan University, was giving him a bizarre gaze, which put great pressure on Su Lan.

The rival jumped onto the stage energetically while Su Lan took each step on the stage with a turn back.

Looking back at Lu Wu, he proceeded with heavy steps.

As soon as Su Lan took to the stage, the opponent couldn’t wait and asked,  
 “Can we start now?”

Obviously, the opponent couldn’t wait.

This made Su Lan shiver, and he shook his head, “Could you wait for me a moment, I want to say a few words.”

The opponent was quite accommodating and nodded, “Say whatever you want to say!”

Su Lan’s face turned paler, but he still gathered his emotions and prepared himself before he finally spoke.

“I know, in this match no one holds out hope for me.

The disparity between our powers is too great, even our president doesn’t believe I can win.

My ending has already been set, this is a battle that is destined for defeat!

Almost an unalterable fact!”

“This world is just like that, many outcomes are unable to be changed.

The idea that effort will always yield gains is merely a beautiful fairy tale.

Many things cannot be achieved simply through effort.

For instance, with initial Summoned Beasts, no matter how hard you try, luck determines everything and what should be, will be.

Faced with something impossible to achieve, giving up might be the best option!”

Yeah, what Su Lan was serving up was a bowl of toxic chicken soup.

But it has to be said, surprisingly, this bowl of toxic chicken soup was quite resonant.

After all, this is a world where talent and power dictate everything.

Many people have been victims of some injustice or encountered insurmountable situations.

So, Su Lan’s words made the atmosphere at the venue slightly oppressive.

This made the organizers frown, as this negative energy went against their main theme and was something they didn’t want to see.

But just as the organizers wanted to do something about it, Su Lan’s tone changed sharply.

“But I am not content!

I know concession is the best choice, but I am not content to concede, not content to fail like this.

Some things, even if you know you’re bound to fail, how can you know if there won’t be a miracle unless you try?

Just like we can grow!

When he summoned Little Skeleton, if he just gave up without trying, the miracle we witness now would never have happened.

So, this battle I must fight, I’ll give it my all!

I will gather all of my strength for the first blow of the battle, and put everything I have on the line!

Don’t ask about victory or defeat, just seek the struggle!”

As Su Lan raised his arm and shouted, his opponent across from him was utterly confused, having no idea what this guy’s flamboyant move was all about, but indeed, there were quite a few on the field whose adolescent fantasies were ignited.

The entire stadium was seething with excitement.

In this atmosphere, the organizers nodded in satisfaction.

Positive energy is good, positive energy is good, they then signaled for the referees to start all the games.

Following the referee’s announcement, the competition began, with Su Lan’s two Summoned Beasts and the opponent’s one, a total of three creatures, assuming their stances.

…

Name: Steel Feather Eagle (Second Evolution)  
 Power: 2 stars (Boss)  
 Quality: Silver (Upgraded)  
 Attribute: Metal, Wind  
 State: Helpless (Big Dummy Su Lan is at it again)  
 Weakness: Fire (Moderate)  
 Skill Talents: Limited  
 …

Name: Silver Moon Wolf (Second Evolution)  
 Power: 2 stars (Boss)  
 Quality: Gold (Upgraded)  
 Attribute: Moon, Wind  
 State: Bored (wants to bite Big Dummy’s behind)  
 Weakness: Grass (Moderate)  
 Skill Talents: Limited  
 …

Name: Ogre (Second Evolution)  
 Power: 2 stars (Leader)  
 Quality: Gold (Upgraded)

Attribute: Blood  
 State: Brutality (Can I kill them now? I can kill them, right?)  
 Weakness: Fire (Moderate)  
 Skill Talents: Limited  
 …

One didn’t need to look at anything else, just these simple stats were enough for Lu Wu to see Su Lan’s fate.

However, at this moment, Su Lan seemed like a different person.

Before going on stage, he was scared to death, but now he was exuding an aura of someone who was ready to fight the opponent to the death. He stepped forward as the leader with his two Summoned Beasts behind him, both gathering energy.

“Is he going to take action personally?”

Summoners joining the fight was a foolish choice.

But given the previous performance of the Hengheng Monster, Su Lan’s opponents remained on their guard.

According to their original plan, they intended to take down their opponent with a dominant display right from the start, but after what Su Lan said, if they attacked now it would appear they were lacking in sportsmanship, so they could only watch as Su Lan powered up.

They were somewhat hoping Su Lan would surprise them.

And indeed there was a surprise.

“I’m going in, watch out!”

As Su Lan shouted and gestured grandly, the Steel Feather Eagle flew up.

“Go, Steel Feather Storm!”

In an instant, the Steel Feather Eagle soared into the air, beating its wings and releasing a fearsome Steel Feather Storm that rushed straight towards the opponent.

“Ogre!”

With a light call, the Ogre moved in front, stoutly resisting the incoming Steel Feather Storm.

However, the opponent didn’t relax their guard because the attack power of this wave of Steel Feather Storm was too weak; it didn’t seem like Su Lan’s finishing move at all. They were vigilant for Su Lan’s imminent burst, and sure enough, it came quickly.

“Now!

Gouzi, Silver Moon Roar!”

With Su Lan’s roaring command, his Silver Moon Wolf opened its mouth and unleashed an immensely terrifying and massive beam of light.

As the beam erupted, the opponent’s face changed, quickly ordering the Ogre to defend with all its might.

But when the Ogre’s full defense kicked in, and the beam hit, the opponent was somewhat baffled.

The power was off. It looked strong, but how could it be weaker than the previous Steel Feather Storm?

Could there be another finishing move?

This made the Modu competitor, who had originally planned to withstand two attacks before counterattacking, hesitate. And just then, Su Lan across from him raised an eyebrow, shaking his head ruefully.

“I didn’t expect that my full-powered attack, capable of annihilating a Leader 2 stars, would still be blocked by you.

It seems your strength far exceeds my expectations!”

The Modu competitor was taken aback.

What? Your two attacks, both flashy but lacking power, could annihilate a Leader 2 stars Summoned Beast?

Did you misspeak or did I mishear?

While they were still puzzled, Su Lan on the other side, who had appeared dejected, had already picked himself up.

“I’m a man of my word. If you can withstand my two attacks, then consider this your win.

But I won’t just accept defeat.

You’re a senior at Magic City University, and I just started at Jiangnan University last year. Give me three years, and in three years’ time, let’s have a rematch!”

After speaking, Su Lan turned around, gathered his hands, and walked straight down from the arena.

At that moment, the whole stadium erupted.

Echoing through it was the name of Su Lan.

Watching this scene unfold before his eyes, Lu Wu couldn’t help but sigh, “When it comes to showing off, I, Lu Wu, acknowledge Su Lan as the strongest!”

# Chapter 298 - 298 295 Skyward Stick

﻿Chapter 298: 295 Skyward Stick Chapter 298: 295 Skyward Stick Su Lan’s opponent was beginning to doubt life itself.

He didn’t quite understand.

Why, despite his own victory, were others’ names echoing through the arena?

He felt as though he couldn’t keep pace with the times anymore.

On Lu Wu’s side, he expressed a profound admiration for Su Lan’s ability to show off.

Admitting defeat while still appearing so skillful was something he could hardly believe.

Compared with this guy, Lu Wu’s concessions during his high school league competitions seemed technically naive.

Lu Wu pondered whether he should learn a move or two from this technique that allowed such a stylish capitulation.

Even though he probably wouldn’t need such skills in the future, there were still some valuable techniques worth contemplating.

However, when Lu Wu saw Su Lan returning to the resting room after stepping down—getting pecked by his own bird, bitten on the butt by his own Gouzi—Lu Wu closed the door silently, to prevent Little Skeleton and others behind him from seeing things they shouldn’t and picking up all sorts of bad habits.

Not long after Su Lan’s match,

The last battle of the second round for Jiangnan also commenced.

Wu Wei was up against a player from a not-so-famous university.

Although the player’s university was obscure, his strength was exceptional, reaching the level of a senior professional Summoner.

Lu Wu had a lasting impression of this player, mainly because of his Summoned Beast.

…

Name: Green Water Turtle (Second Evolution)

Power: 1 star (Leader)

Quality: Ordinary (Bronze) Upgraded

Attribute: Water

State: Stable (My master says to stay steady and secure the victory)

Weakness: Grass

Skill Talents: Vague

…

The opponent’s Summoned Beast was a rare turtle, and both in terms of attributes and tactics, it posed a considerable restraint against Wu Wei’s monkey.

…

Name: Fiery Flame Monkey (Second Evolution)

Power: 3 stars (Boss Level)

Quality: Ordinary (Silver) (Upgraded)

Attribute: Fire

State: Annoyed (I hate the guy in front of me)

Weakness: Water (Moderate)

Inheritance Skill: Skyward Stick (Master)

…

On one side was a nearly two-meter-tall green turtle.

On the other, a one-point-eight-meter-tall monkey, fiery red fur all over, wielding a stick.

As the two Summoned Beasts took their places on the stage, the audience started voicing their thoughts.

They felt Wu Wei was rather unlucky to encounter a counter to his beast.

However, having witnessed the battles with Hengheng Monster and the formidable Su Lan, a significant portion of the audience had considerable faith in Wu Wei, believing he should be able to secure the victory.

What the audience thought, Wu Wei didn’t know.

His opponent couldn’t care less either.

From the moment they stepped on stage, their gazes locked onto each other.

Both men, not the talkative type, introduced themselves briefly and then signaled to the judge that they were ready to fight.

“The battle begins!”

At the judge’s signal, Wu Wei was the first to launch an attack.

“Monkey, attack!”

With these four words, the Fiery Flame Monkey erupted with flames, darting toward the opponent’s Summoner like an arrow.

The opposing Summoner was not surprised in the least; without saying a word, he stepped forward, and a blue water screen shielded him and the Green Water Turtle.

The Fiery Flame Monkey arrived in an instant, a stick surrounded by light striking down with terrifying power, causing the water screen to tremble.

The trembling water screen suddenly surged with waves; an invisible force emerged, causing the Fiery Flame Monkey to shudder backward.

Yet, it didn’t push Monkey back. Instead, it only served to ignite Monkey’s ferocity even more, causing the flames on his body to burst forth.

At the same time, however, the mouth of the Green Water Turtle was cleared of the water screen, and a horrifying Water Cannon blasted out, aiming directly at Wu Wei—it was a swift transition from defense to offense.

Monkey could only turn around, smashing down with a powerful strike and easily shattering the Water Cannon.

But as Monkey destroyed the Water Cannon, another more fierce Water Cannon blasted through.

It turned out that the first Water Cannon was not launched by the Green Water Turtle but by the opposing Summoner.

The first Water Cannon distracted Monkey. Taking advantage of the moment, between Monkey’s spent old strength and not yet gathered new power, the Green Water Turtle struck directly.

Monkey had no chance to react and was blasted away by a surge of the Water Cannon.

This delighted the opposing Summoner.

However, the smile on his face didn’t last long before it froze.

Because a monkey had appeared beside them at some point, the stick in its hand swung violently and smashed onto the water screen with unprecedented force. This strike shattered the water screen in one hit, and the opponent’s Summoner was directly exposed.

Monkey took the opportunity and swung the stick toward the opponent’s Summoner.

At the critical moment, the Green Water Turtle slapped its two front limbs on the ground, and a ring of water surged out, directly hitting Monkey and sending it flying.

Seizing the chance, the opponent sent out two water columns, one after another, one blasting toward Wu Wei, the other toward Monkey.

Near Monkey, the stick in its hand blazed with flames, smashing down and shattering the Water Cannon, while on Wu Wei’s side, an avatar of the monkey appeared out of thin air to block the Water Cannon.

With this, the first round of the exchange between the two sides finally came to an end.

Wu Wei’s skill was revealed, he had obtained the “Fire Monkey Avatar” skill, which could summon an avatar of Monkey.

The opponent, too, revealed a “Water Cannon” skill, but as a seasoned Professional Summoner, he surely still had another skill up his sleeve despite having only one Summoned Beast.

So, although the round seemed evenly matched, Wu Wei was already at a clear disadvantage.

However, at this moment, whether it be the audience on the stands or the players below, no one had time to whine about anything.

Everyone’s eyes were glued to the arena, and their breathing tensed along with the rhythm of the battle.

Undoubtedly,

this battle was by far the most tense and most spectacular fight of this university league.

The fighters, eyeing their opponents, had fiery light blazing in their eyes.

At that moment, they only had each other in sight, and there was only one thing on their minds, which was to defeat their opponent.

The second round of the battle quickly ignited.

Wu Wei, who was at a disadvantage, continued to choose aggressive attacks in this round.

He was well aware of how much he lagged behind his opponent.

The skill difference, the power difference, even his attribute was at a disadvantage.

The only thing that could be considered an advantage was Monkey’s mobility.

Therefore, he had to use this to its fullest, attack madly, or rather, feint, to keep the opponent from having the time to target him, the Summoner.

Wu Wei had tactics and strategies.

His opponent had his own methods, choosing to meet any change with unchanging response.

Both sides exchanged moves and countered, providing a feast for the audience’s eyes with over a dozen rounds.

As time passed, however, the rhythm of the battle began to swing towards the Green Water Turtle.

Seeing Monkey’s energy gradually ebb,

and realizing the match might be lost if it continued, Wu Wei had no choice but to grit his teeth and go for a last-ditch effort.

He raised his hand to summon Monkey’s avatar, and then he himself also moved, following the Monkey avatar to draw lines left and right, restraining the opponent.

Alas, Wu Wei’s avatar only had a fifth of Monkey’s combat power, and he himself barely reached Boss Level combat power.

Their two feeble attempts were quickly dealt with by two Water Cannons, one after the other, nearly flushing Wu Wei off the stage.

However, Wu Wei’s efforts were not in vain, successfully granting Monkey a chance for a “Big Move.”

Almost the same moment Wu Wei was hit, Monkey’s true form leaped high, the stick in its hand lifted above its head, an incredible power gathering upon it.

The opponent’s face changed.

He quickly went on full defense, and in an instant, two layers of water screens and a tortoise shell phantom appeared out of nowhere, pushing the Defense Value to its maximum.

And, as the Defense Value reached its peak, Monkey’s “Skyward Stick” smashed down with violent force!

Monkey, with only Boss 3 Star power, conjured a strike with the impact of a Leader 3 Star’s limit.

Instantly breaking the dual layers of water screens, even the final tortoise shell phantom only managed to hold out for three seconds before collapsing.

Monkey’s final blow came crashing down.

The victor’s power burst forth, directly sending the Green Water Turtle and the opponent’s Summoner out of the ring.

And Monkey too collapsed thunderously after that single hit.

At that moment, the spectator stands fell eerily silent.

Nobody had recovered from the intense battle until the referee announced, “The match is over, the winner is Jiangnan Wu Wei!”

Deafening applause then erupted throughout the Phoenix Nest Training Ground.

Different from before, this applause was not only for Wu Wei but also for his opponent.

Everyone recognized it as an exceptionally thrilling fight.

With that, the second round of matches for Jiangnan University came to an end.

After the second round, all six members of Jiangnan University’s team, except for Su Lan, advanced to the top 128.

However, despite their advancement, it was evident that both Hengheng Monster and Wu Wei were at their limit.

With stronger enemies ahead, they were unlikely to continue as contenders.

Moreover, both had sustained serious injuries in today’s battle, especially Wu Wei’s Monkey, which was now exhausted, its combat power reduced to thirty percent or even less for the next few days.

Therefore, it was nearly impossible for them to advance further.

However, Lu Wu didn’t seem to care much about this, their performance had been good enough as it was.

Their achievements were sufficient for recruitment purposes, and it was now time for Lu Wu to step into the fight.

At the same time, someone else had come to a similar resolution.

“Up next, I should also get ready to make my move!”

It was time to reclaim what had been lost!

# Chapter 299 - 299 296 He Guzhentian is back

﻿Chapter 299: 296 He Guzhentian is back! Chapter 299: 296 He Guzhentian is back! In a presidential suite of a hotel not far from the Phoenix Nest Training Hall.

A young man cradled a glass of wine in his hand, taking a sip as he gazed in the direction of the nearby Phoenix Nest Training Hall and asked, “Is everything clear now?”

Behind him stood a person shrouded in shadows.

This shadowy figure responded instantly at the young man’s inquiry.

“It’s clear now; behind him should be that man.”

“That man? Which man?”

“Twenty-five years ago, Mountain and Sea Secret Realm.”

With just two key phrases, the young man instantly grasped the meaning.

“Oh, so it’s that scumbag. I heard this guy was pretty fierce back in the day!”

“The top Summoner of the Alliance Evil Path; none dared to confront him head-on!”

The person from the shadows spoke with a hint of fluctuation in their voice, a faint respect noticeable, but the young man in front of him simply scoffed.

“That was decades ago. Back then, he might have been a beast, but now, he’s just a dog locked up.”

The shadowed figure frowned slightly, sensing his companion might be too arrogant, but he said nothing more. After all, any suffering from this arrogance would not befall him.

The young man did not dwell on the topic further and instead shifted to a more relevant subject.

“Does he have any suspicions? Ah, not the locked-up one, the one that’s shouting loudly.”

“There are suspicions, but they’re not strong. Compared to him, others are more suspect.

Additionally, considering that man behind him, I suggest we put this line of investigation on hold for now.”

This advice caused the young man to frown.

“Since we’ve encountered it, let’s keep a slight watch on it.”

“This time, that’s not your goal. I hope you don’t act on your own, and certainly don’t complicate matters. It would be unfortunate to mistakenly expose yourself!”

“Don’t worry, I won’t overdo it. After all, while I’m not scared of a domesticated dog, I don’t have the leisure to tease one.”

……

At the same time, in a different room of another hotel.

A woman dressed in Sakura clothes stood looking out over the Phoenix Nest Training Ground.

Behind her was another person.

However, the person behind her was not standing but kneeling, donned in Sakura clothes with long black hair and a samurai sword placed beside her.

Her head was bowed so her face was not visible, but her figure suggested she was definitely a beauty.

“I’ve already spoken to the people from the Hua District Alliance; tomorrow, they will allow you to participate in the university league as an exchange student.

In this competition, I want you to focus on two individuals.”

While speaking, the woman handed two photos to the young girl.

The two people in the photos.

One was the young man from the other hotel.

The other was a man with a smug smirk.

As the girl looked at the two photos, the woman sharply said, “For the first one, just observe discreetly.

If you encounter the second one, I want you to beat him black and blue!”

The young girl looked at the smirking man and solemnly nodded her head.

……

While clandestine currents stirred outside,

the university league was in full swing.

In the first three days, the preliminary rounds had finished, narrowing the field to the top 128.

The fourth and fifth days were for the top 128 matches.

During these two days, Jiangnan University had lost two of its five remaining team members in elimination.

Both Hengheng Monster and Wu Wei were defeated.

Lu Wu had anticipated this, so he wasn’t surprised at all.

What did surprise him, however, was Dudu’s luck; he did not have to compete since Lu Wu was not participating in the top 128, leaving one less competitor—so Dudu advanced to the top 64 by a bye.

Then, in the top 64 matches, Dudu got another bye and moved on to the top 32.

Dudu’s luck made Lu Wu wonder if the organizers had favored him.

Compared to Dudu, Zhao Li was not so fortunate.

In the top 128, he faced a tough opponent from Jiangning University.

The match was evenly matched, and it was only after an exhaustive fight that he advanced to the top 64.

In the top 64 match, his luck was even worse, confronting the chief of Jingcheng University directly and being eliminated.

Consequently, out of the six members from Jiangnan University,

apart from Lu Wu, the only seeded player who advanced directly to the top 32, only Dudu remained, who had progressed through byes in both the top 128 and top 64.

Jiangnan University’s performance clearly did not do justice to the bold claims made during Lu Wu’s match.

But that was alright; it was Lu Wu’s turn to compete next.

Lu Wu felt it was time to bring the competition to an early close.

Coincidentally, someone shared almost the same idea as Lu Wu.

…..

In Beijing, the Gu Family.

Guzhentian’s application to become a judge for the university league went smoothly.

After all, the Gu Family held some clout.

Additionally, before Lu Wu’s meteoric rise, Guzhentian was recognized as a genius in not just Beijing but the entire 1st District.

However, when Guzhentian retrieved his judge’s application, all set to make a splash, an unexpected impediment arose.

His father, Gutian, intercepted him.

Gutian had been unaware of his son’s maneuvering.

In fact, he had isolated himself in his research lab before the university league started, claiming to be in seclusion to tackle a project.

Gutian did this mainly to avoid Lu Wu.

After an elder from the Elder Council spoke his piece,

Gutian had become much more cautious concerning Lu Wu.

His general plan of action switched to keeping a distance.

When someone came to Beijing, he would try his best to avoid contact with them.

Based on his analysis of Lu Wu’s character, he concluded that Lu Wu was petty and vengeful.

A slight offense could linger in the young man’s mind for a lifetime; without a clear understanding of his background and assurance from the Elder Council, Gutian felt it was best to keep a low profile.

Unexpectedly, while he became timid, his son became bold.

His heart nearly stopped when he learned from his subordinates about his son’s intention to be a judge in the university league.

He emerged from his shell without considering anything else and blocked Guzhentian.

“Tian’er, immediately, right now, resign from your university league judge position!”

Guzhentian was surprised by his father’s sudden appearance and unexpected words.

Nevertheless, he shook his head right away.

“I have reasons I must go!”

He spoke with firm resolve and a calm tone, quite the Grandmaster demeanor.

That aura was what Gutian had always been proud of, but right now, he could not feel any pride.

He was filled with concern.

With heartfelt persuasion, he said, “Tian’er, I know the impact of the Cultivation Master competition has been hard on you and made you deeply resent Lu Wu.

But the more you do, the more you must not act impulsively now.

The background of Lu Wu is a mystery, and the Elder Council’s recent attitude towards him is very odd, so for now, we better not provoke him!”

‘Playing it safe’ was Gutian’s way of survival.

But this was not Guzhentian’s way of survival, so Gutian’s words didn’t persuade him.

“Father, actually, about the Cultivation Master competition, I don’t hold any grudge against Lu Wu.

I have no reason, no logic to hold a grudge against him, because he only made me realize a truth.

I used to think that my talent was enough for me to go far in both summoning and cultivation.

It was he who made me realize that my talent, at least in the cultivation aspect, was not as outstanding as I thought.”

“He made me see the truth that had been previously invisible to me.

He made it clear to me how ordinary I am in cultivation and also made it clear that specializing in the summoner’s path is more suitable for me than trying to excel in both cultivation and summoning!

It is precisely because of this realization that I was able to reach Master Level in such a short time.”

“So, I don’t resent Lu Wu.

My participation as a judge in the Cultivation Master competition this time isn’t for revenge against Lu Wu.

I am simply determined to tell him, to tell everyone.

I, Guzhentian, am back!”

As Gutian reflected on Guzhentian’s calm words, a daze came over him, and there was a shimmer of tears in his eyes.

Back!

Gutian could feel that his son, who had walked out of the shadows after the Cultivation Master competition and who had the makings of a Grandmaster, had returned.

At that moment, the words Gutian wanted to use to stop his son got stuck in his throat and he couldn’t speak them.

As a father, what reason did he have to push his son, who had finally clawed his way out of the mire, back down?

In the end, Gutian, with tears in his eyes, patted Guzhentian on the shoulder and gently said, “Go!”

As Guzhentian walked towards the Phoenix Nest Training Ground with determined steps, Gutian voiced the latter half of what he hadn’t said before.

“Go and declare your return to the entire world!

As for any potential storms, I will bear them for you.

As a father, if I can’t shield my son who wants to spread his wings and soar from the storm, then I have failed in my duty!

I, Gutian, don’t seek trouble, but I am certainly not afraid of it!”

In the midst of speaking, Gutian stood up.

He had to meet a big shot, someone who could shield him and his son from the storm.

No matter how powerful Lu Wu’s background was, he would not let Lu Wu drag his son back into the darkness again.

…

April 10

Phoenix Nest Training Ground.

The University competition, after enduring a week-long contest, finally welcomed the matches for the top 32.

For Lu Wu, whether it was the top 32, top 16, or the finals, it was all the same.

During the week of the competition, Lu Wu had observed all the competitors.

Using the words Lu Wu had said at the opening ceremony.

All present here are trash.

There’s not a single one who can fight.

Lu Wu felt that even if he sent his weakest silly beast to compete, it would still sweep the competition.

Therefore, things like the top 32 really couldn’t raise much interest for him.

After all, that was just Lu Wu’s character, elegant and easy-going, never showboating.

Sweeping everyone in the competition, Lu Wu found it utterly dull.

After all, those present were the budding talents of the Federation, and it wouldn’t do to damage their confidence too much.

To Lu Wu’s surprise, today’s top 32 competition turned out to have so many events unfold.

As the top 32 competition began, the organizers called the competitors over and announced two changes regarding the event.

“We are now announcing two changes to the top 32 competition.

First, four exchange students from friendly districts will be joining the competition.

Please welcome the exchange students to enter the stage!”

Following the announcement by the staff on stage, three men and one woman entered the arena one after another.

With the entrance of the four on stage, the staff began their introductions.

“The first is Ryan Henry from the New Technology Summoner Alliance of Federation 2 District.

The second is Saint Engels from the 3rd District’s holy assembly.

The third is Zhao Futu from the 8th District.

The fourth is Maeshima Kaori from the 11th District.

These four are the exchange students joining the top 32.”

Looking at the four on stage, both the contestants and the audience below were somewhat bewildered.

For many, this was their first time seeing foreigners, no, rather, people from other districts.

After all, the entire world was now part of one Alliance.

Although, due to the presence of Summoned Beasts, the Alliance had been divided into many, over a dozen districts, each district autonomous. Aside from top-tier powerhouses, there was basically no exchange between districts. But nominally speaking, everyone was part of the same Alliance.

Ordinary people really didn’t travel much between regions.

Therefore, even in Jingcheng, over ninety percent of those present were seeing people from other districts for the first time.

But it cannot go without saying, they seemed quite attractive.

Ninety-nine percent of the people present had their attention captured by the girl from the 11th District with the long black hair.

Even Lu Wu was no exception.

Lu Wu had to admit, aside from Dudu, this girl was the prettiest he had ever seen.

She gave off a feeling of stepping right out of a two-dimensional world into three dimensions.

However, the way this girl looked at him gave Lu Wu some confusion, he always felt as though she seemed to recognize him, even having a sense that she might want to break his legs.

“What’s going on here? Could this girl be after Old Lu?

Doesn’t seem like it though?”

Lu Wu was puzzled, but quickly, he pushed those doubts to the back of his mind.

Because at that moment, another person stepped onto the stage.

This person was not from another district.

He was a born and bred person of District 1.

Yet his appearance pulled back the attention that had been drawn to the outsiders, back onto him.

In that moment, everyone’s eyes held no trace of the few who came from outside for a commotion, but only the figure of the young man who had the commanding presence of a dragon or tiger.

Although many spectators unconsciously glanced at Lu Wu with a mocking smile on their lips upon seeing this figure,

there were still many spectators, especially those from Jingcheng, who had tears in their eyes and excitement on their faces upon seeing this spirited figure.

And this individual, after getting on stage, fixed his eyes tightly on Lu Wu, firstly saluted Lu Wu, then straightened up and said,

“Fellow contestants, I am Guzhentian, the judge for today’s top 32 university league competition!

At the same time, I am also the examiner you will face today!

This year’s top 32 competition is different from past years, it won’t be team versus team, but you against me!”

As Guzhentian’s words came out, the audience was stunned.

This script seemed all too familiar!

Watching the dumbfounded audience and contestants below, Guzhentian gave a serene smile and enunciated the same words that once came out of Lu Wu’s mouth,

“Defeat me, and you will advance!”

# Chapter 300 - 300 297 Terror as such

﻿Chapter 300: 297 Terror as such Chapter 300: 297 Terror as such Phoenix Nest Training Ground!

As Guzhentian nonchalantly threw out that phrase, once tossed at him by Lu Wu, the entire arena erupted with excitement.

Many of Guzhentian’s fanboys had their eyes turning red at that moment.

It must be said that Guzhentian did have a certain charm about him.

Despite his defeat in the Cultivation Master competition and being beaten into seclusion by Lu Wu, there were still many of his fans waiting for his kingly return.

And now that moment seemed to have arrived.

Lu Wu, on the other hand, was completely dumbfounded.

He had never expected that what was originally a boring competition would suddenly have so many unexpected events.

He couldn’t understand, was Little Gu’s head really that hard?

Or did he, Lu Wu, appear so weak and easy to bully to others?

A helpless Lu Wu took a long drink of the milk tea Dudu passed him to soothe his feelings.

At the same time, he pondered whether he should eat barbecue or hot pot for lunch.

Meanwhile, the organizers were also busy getting things moving.

What needed to be announced had been announced, and it was time to start the competition.

The organizers thoughtfully explained the new rules of the top 32 match.

The rules were simple, with 32 players plus 4 exchange students drawing lots to determine the order.

Then they would challenge Guzhentian in that order.

If anyone defeated Guzhentian, well, no more needed to be said; they would advance directly, competing for the championship with others who had also defeated Guzhentian.

The rest could compete in a ranking match.

If no one could defeat Guzhentian, he would select 16 people from amongst them to advance to the top 16.

The setup was essentially identical to that of the Cultivation Master competition.

“Those are the rules of the top 32 match. Now for the drawing of lots.

Everyone, please look at the big screen as the order of challenge will be randomly generated!”

As soon as the staff finished speaking, the order of those challenging Guzhentian appeared on the big screen on stage.

Lu Wu paid attention for a moment.

His name was listed in ninth place, and Dudu’s was right after his, in tenth place.

The moment this order was announced, some of the audience felt uncomfortable.

They thought that Lu Wu’s placement was too early and that he should be at the very end to give a sense of destiny to the final battle.

Many of Guzhentian’s fanboys were asking the organizers to rig the match.

Such a scene was, in fact, a first for the organizers.

However, the voices in the arena were not unanimous, there were different opinions present.

“Being ninth is good, really. If he were put at the end, it would be awkward if Guzhentian couldn’t last that long.”

“They still think Guzhentian is the same as he was back in the day? Forget about the end, even if it’s just the ninth spot, I doubt Guzhentian can make it that far!”

“That’s true, after all. There are quite a few strong players at the front.

Liu Qiuyu, the leader from Jingcheng University, Fang Han, the leader from Magic City University, and there’s another guy from District 2. It’ll be tough for Guzhentian to get past these three.”

……

Clearly, the audience didn’t have much faith in the returning king, Guzhentian.

And that was natural, as he was considered a fallen genius.

The guy known for Qi Transformation had even had an arranged marriage called off, so it was normal for a prodigy like Guzhentian who had been crushed into seclusion to not be highly favored on his return.

On the organizers’ side, Guzhentian had anticipated this.

So, in response to the skepticism, Guzhentian merely smiled subtly amidst the doubts, “I’ll fight ten!”

What the heck?

Guzhentian’s offhand remark rendered the entire arena silent.

And he, quite calmly, repeated and explained his previous statement.

“I’ll fight ten, or rather, I can accept challenges from ten people at the same time!”

Well, he did indeed repeat it.

And he explained it, but the arena remained quiet.

Many people thought Guzhentian was crazy.

He was facing the top 32 of this college league, after all.

The 32 people standing before him represented the strongest of several hundred thousand college students from 66 universities in District 1. And he, by himself, was offering to take on ten challengers.

It didn’t make people feel that Guzhentian was incredibly proud and awe-inspiringly dominant; it just seemed like he was posturing rather stiffly.

Even personnel from the Education Bureau came out to smooth things over.

“Referee Gu means that he can accept challenges from ten contestants in one day….”

“No, what I meant is, I can accept challenges from ten contestants at the same time!”

Guzhentian calmly corrected the Education Bureau staff member’s words.

He kicked away the ladder himself.

Now, the staff member had no choice but to state,

“Referee Gu will be officiating this match. You have full responsibility for this event.”

They washed their hands of the matter.

‘Alright then, you’re the boss, do whatever you want, it’s not me who’s going to get beaten up anyway!’

With the staff having nothing more to say, Guzhentian directly looked towards the top 32 audience.

“The first ten contestants in the order of challenge, please step forward.”

There was no response.

This was normal since those who had made it this far were top-notch competitors. Everyone had their pride, and it was not likely that just because Guzhentian wanted to take on ten, they would let him.

Being one against ten, winning would bring no honor, and losing would be an even greater embarrassment.

So, naturally, no one paid him any attention.

The scene was somewhat awkward for a moment.

But Guzhentian didn’t find it embarrassing at all. With a casual wave of his hand, he summoned a beast from within himself.

As a monkey with golden fur, holding a golden staff, and dressed in golden battle armor appeared,

The monkey lightly tapped the ground with its staff.

An intimidating aura surged forth.

“Lord Level!”

Everyone present had a discerning eye.

The monkey’s display of power made it clear to the competitors, the staff, and even many of the audience members just how strong this monkey was.

Lu Wu, in particular, saw it very clearly.

…

Name: Golden Silk Martial Monkey (Second Evolution)

Power: 1 star (Lord)

Quality: Golden (Upgraded)

Attribute: Fire

State: Looking down on everything (Who wants to eat my stick?)

Weakness: Water (Moderate)

Companion Equipment: Jade Stick (Golden Quality) (Pretty similar to the mythical stick that can stretch and shrink.)

Golden Battle Armor (Golden Quality) (Greatly boosts defense)

Inheritance Skills: Skyward Strike (Master Level)

One Stick to Suppress the Sky (Entry Level)

Talent: Copper Skin Iron Bone (Active) (Dramatically increases spell and physical defense when activated)

Fur Transformation Avatar (Active) (Can use fur to summon avatars to fight,

The avatar can only have up to one-tenth of the original body’s combat power.)

Description: An enhanced clone of the monkey from Wuwei’s house, a knockoff version of the Great Sage Equalling Heaven.

…

Lu Wu’s face changed the moment he saw that attribute.

This shameless jerk actually cloned it!

Their team’s Old Wu was already low-profile enough, and now Guzhentian had even copied Monkey Brother over. How was Old Wu supposed to live with that?

Lu Wu’s fleeting change in expression was noted by many.

This included Guzhentian.

And the top 32 players—Lu Wu was recognized as a super cultivation genius, someone who could discern the reality and facade of a Summoned Beast—everyone knew this.

So, as soon as Guzhentian’s Monkey came out, everyone looked at Lu Wu.

Through Lu Wu’s expression, many were able to gauge the power of the cloned Monkey, causing some of those within the top ten challengers to panic.

At this moment, Guzhentian indifferently repeated what he’d just said.

“Those ranked in the top ten may now step up to challenge.”

Now, no one felt that Guzhentian’s earlier statement was contrived.

Everyone realized that this guy truly had power, so they all turned their attention toward Lu Wu.

“Why are you looking at me? It’s not my turn!”

Lu Wu didn’t plan on going up, and neither did the Capital Leader or the Magic City Leader, nor that guy from District 2.

Out of the top ten, five didn’t go up. As for the remaining five, after some hesitation, they finally gritted their teeth and went up together.

It was somewhat humiliating, but none of them had the confidence to single-handedly defeat Guzhentian.

Guzhentian looked at the five opponents before him with a detached gaze, “Is it just the five of you?”

“Just the five of us is enough!”

With more people, their courage bulged.

Besides, each of the top 32 was a favored child of heaven; their Summoned Beasts were at least of Silver Quality, with all being Leader 3 stars strength.

Taking down a Lord Level Summoned Beast on their own might be tight, but they felt they had a considerable chance of winning with a 5 to 1 ratio.

“You have made a foolish choice! I hope you won’t regret it!”

Guzhentian shook his head coldly.

“Begin the challenge!”

As Guzhentian’s calm voice sounded,

The five extras struck at the same time.

“Ice Speed Freeze!” “Destruction Ray!” “Tree World Descent!”

“Startling Roar!” “Infinite Fear!”

At the same time, the five launched five Killing Move level attacks.

In an instant, a forest miraculously appeared, trapping Guzhentian and his monkey within, while an attack aimed directly at Guzhentian, along with negative spells, were launched simultaneously.

Then, a cold aura spread, freezing the entire forest.

Finally, a terrifying beam of light pierced through the whole woodland.

This set of attacks was unleashed, and Guzhentian’s little fans on the scene couldn’t help but clench their fists, incredibly tense.

Those who were mocking Guzhentian were shaking their heads at this moment.

“It’s over!

These five Killing Moves, with both hard and soft controls, and the terrifying attack at the end—no Lord Level Summoned Beast can withstand this. Guzhentian is bound to kneel; he might even be seriously injured.”

“Serves him right, who told him to show off!

If he had fought them one by one, this wouldn’t have happened. Now facing ten, five of them—oh shit, what’s happening?!”

Before the on-stage mocker of Guzhentian could finish speaking, a loud bang came from within the frozen forest.

And then, an unforgettable scene unfolded.

A stick infinitely extended, then with a fierce sweep, a single strike directly flung the forest, the ice, and even those five challengers all off the stage.

Toughing out five Killing Moves, one swoop to strike down five of the top 32.

This sight made the audience present involuntarily inhale sharply.

Such was the horrifying extent of Guzhentian’s power.

After defeating the five challengers, Guzhentian’s expression remained unchanging as he casually called out to the audience stand, “Next batch!”

At this moment, his little fans, as well as those who were originally just bystanders, were all fired up by him.

“I’m back!”

That dominating figure of Guzhentian truly had returned.

Even the original trash-talking doubters were beginning to question themselves.

Could it be that Guzhentian was really making a dominant comeback, a king returning to his throne?

Sure enough, the doubters soon fell silent, as another group stepped onto the stage.

After Guzhentian knocked down five contestants with a single swing of his stick,

Jingcheng University’s Liu Qiuyu and Magic City University’s Fang Han exchanged looks before climbing onto the stage.

At the same time, a hesitant competitor from the second district also made his way up.

With the three of them on stage, Liu Qiuyu touched his nose, “I didn’t want to gang up on you, but after that last fight, you’ve shown me that my so-called ‘bullying’ was just my own arrogance.

So, please, teach me a lesson.”

Fang Han also cracked his neck, “Mr. Gu is truly worthy of respect, please guide us.”

The guy from the second district also looked towards Guzhentian, but because he couldn’t speak the language of the first district, he remained silent.

Yet, it was clear that everyone was looking forward to the battle with Guzhentian.

At this moment, Guzhentian’s gaze settled on Lu Wu.

“Aren’t you joining them in the challenge?”

“Me?”

Lu Wu, who was deliberating what to have for lunch, was startled, then shook his head, “You finish your fight with them first.”

Saying so, Lu Wu continued to ponder over the lunch dilemma with Dudu.

Ignored on stage, Guzhentian had no choice but to retract his gaze and focus on the three before him.

“Sorry, it looks like I need to get you off the stage quickly!”

This statement enraged the three on the stage.

They were to be dispatched quickly? Who did he think they were?

Were they the same as the five nobodies before them?

All three of them were elites among elites, alright?

They had faced Lord Level Summoned Beasts before, were they supposed to be scared of Guzhentian?

“If you can manage that, then go ahead and try!” Liu Qiuyu retorted as the three summoned their beasts, fully focused and ready for battle.

Everyone was now staring intently at the stage, so tense they barely dared to breathe.

Soon, the second round of challenges continued.

The pace of the battle was much the same as before.

As the fight began, those challenging made the first move.

Liu Qiuyu and Fang Han were no ordinary opponents.

Their Summoned Beasts were already nearly at Lord Level, and that machine Summoned Beast from District 2 was like nothing they had ever seen before.

Liu Qiuyu and Fang Han attacked from left and right, while the foreigner’s machine beast pulled out a no longer functioning firearm to launch a fierce attack on the Monkey.

There were only three of them, but their momentum was even more ferocious than the previous five.

However, faced with the attack of these three, Guzhentian remained indifferent.

“Sorry about this!”

As Guzhentian’s calm words sounded, his Monkey King slammed down the “Skyward Stick.”

With a single blow, the three challengers were sent flying off the stage.

Easily dealing with the three opponents, Guzhentian once again turned to Lu Wu.

“It’s your turn next!”

……

Recommendation for a book “Fox Immortal, Please Be Self-Respected”

Daily life of the old lordship, with sweet pampering and enough pet food to fill you up!

A fox’s gratitude… or perhaps, the domineering fox boss is in love with me.

PS: The author is a pretty girl!!

# Chapter 301 - 301 298 Mr. Lu is still Mr. Lu

﻿Chapter 301: 298, Mr. Lu is still Mr. Lu Chapter 301: 298, Mr. Lu is still Mr. Lu After the last two matches, the doubts about Guzhentian had completely vaporized.

Even the trolls had to admit it.

Guzhentian was confirmed to have truly made a king’s comeback.

At this moment, Guzhentian directed his spearhead right at Lu Wu.

“It’s your turn next!”

As Guzhentian’s voice rang out—his tone fiercely suppressed, striving to be calm, yet still revealing his uncontrollable excitement—the atmosphere in the entire stadium was driven to an absolute peak.

The drama that had unfolded at the Phoenix Nest Training Ground several months prior was being restaged.

It was the same pinnacle of competition, the same overwhelming authority of the referee.

The only difference was a swap in the roles of the protagonist.

The former competitor had become the referee, and the former referee had become the competitor.

Everyone was immensely looking forward to the coming match.

Would it be Guzhentian returning as a king, crushing Lu Wu?

Or would it be Lu Wu, the fearsome Demon King, suppressing everything?

The audience waited with bated breath.

Guzhentian’s side was also incredibly excited.

Meanwhile, Lu Wu seemed a bit helpless and negotiated with Guzhentian on stage, “I thought I could have lunch before the fight, but I didn’t expect the battle to start now.

Old Gu, you’ve already fought two matches, why not rest a bit and fight after lunch?”

“I don’t need to rest!”

Guzhentian cut in decisively with his answer.

He couldn’t wait any longer.

How long had it been?

Seven months and ten days.

It had been seven months and ten days since he last closed himself off at Phoenix Nest because of Lu Wu, and he had finally made it here.

Finally standing before Lu Wu once more, how could he possibly wait?

Seeing the situation, Lu Wu had no choice.

“Alright then, if we’re going to fight, let’s fight. But wait for me a second!”

Lu Wu turned his head and instructed Li Kai beside him.

Li Kai went down and busied himself with the task.

While Li Kai was busy, Lu Wu turned around, took Dudu’s hand from his home, and walked together towards the arena.

Seeing that Lu Wu was coming up with another person, everyone, including Guzhentian, was taken aback.

A wave of boos arose from the spectator seats.

They felt that Lu Wu bringing Dudu up with him was quite lacking in style.

The audience had been very much looking forward to this battle, a match with such a sense of destiny, and they felt it shouldn’t be diluted by adding someone else.

Some people shouted for Lu Wu to send Dudu down.

Even some fervent little fanboys of Guzhentian were already starting to sing Lu Wu’s defeat.

They believed that Lu Wu bringing someone on stage clearly showed he lacked the confidence to have a fair fight with Guzhentian.

This made Lu Wu quite unhappy.

“What are you all blindly shouting about? He himself said he wants to fight ten of them, and now you’re saying I can’t bring up two?”

As he spoke, Lu Wu turned his head to look towards Guzhentian, “Say something, Old Gu, come on!”

Guzhentian finally snapped back to reality.

And when he did, instead of immediately answering Lu Wu’s question, he solemnly looked at Lu Wu.

“First of all, there’s something I need to explain.

The reason I’m standing on this stage today is entirely for you.”

No one was surprised by these words; those who understood, understood. After all, Guzhentian had been so harshly defeated by Lu Wu last time, he had even become reclusive, so it was normal for him to come back seeking revenge.

But the words that followed were not so easy to comprehend.

He said, “However, don’t get me wrong.

Though I’ve come here because of you, I’m not here to defeat you, or to take revenge or anything of that sort.

I don’t harbor any hatred towards you, in fact, I’m somewhat grateful.

For a long time, I believed I was an all-rounder.

I thought I could handle both cultivation and summoning, but you made it clear to me that such a belief was nothing but arrogance.

My so-called talent in cultivation is merely a little better than the average person, not genius at all, otherwise, I wouldn’t have been crushed by you so easily.

Compared to my cultivation talent, summoning is where my true ability lies.

Thank you for helping me recognize my own skills and for preventing me from straying further down the wrong path.

And so, today I am here to showcase the new me in front of you.

To tell you that the destined-to-be-mediocre Cultivation Master Guzhentian is dead.

And now, I will return as the strongest future Summoner!”

As Guzhentian finished his last sentence, the entire arena echoed with thunderous applause from his fans.

But Lu Wu in front of him was utterly confused.

He didn’t quite understand Guzhentian’s words, let alone the reason for the audience’s applause.

Was this guy not just saying he had been beaten into a reclusive state in cultivation, that he had decided to switch tracks to show off?

How could such a miserable statement garner such massive applause?

With such clapping, didn’t Guzhentian seem even more pitiful?

Lu Wu didn’t know how to respond at this point and could only pat Guzhentian on the shoulder, “Work hard, I believe in you!”

And Lu Wu’s response made Guzhentian’s expression turn serious.

“It seems you still don’t understand me.

Indeed, mere words are not very useful, to make you see the brand-new me, I need to take action…”

“Sorry, just one moment!”

Guzhentian hadn’t finished speaking when Lu Wu suddenly interrupted him with a gesture and scurried over to the edge of the platform.

There, Li Kai had already brought over the things Lu Wu had ordered.

Two chairs, a table, a barbecue grill, a pot, a gas stove, and a big bag of ingredients.

These were all stored in the rest room.

Lu Wu had initially planned to eat them at noon, but now he had to move the meal to the platform since he was compelled to compete.

Within the confused gazes of Guzhentian and all the spectators, Lu Wu, accompanied by Little Skeleton and Dudu, set everything up in one corner of the platform.

After getting everything arranged, Lu Wu took inventory and noticed there were no bowls and chopsticks, so he quickly asked Li Kai to fetch some.

“Oh, right, Old Gu, do you want some? If you want some, I’ll get an extra set for you!”

Look at how polite Lu Wu was, even turning to invite Guzhentian, showing off the characteristic hospitality of inviting people to share a meal, typical of people from Area 1.

But clearly, Guzhentian was not in a good mood.

Despite Lu Wu’s kind invitation, Guzhentian got angry, his face as dark as the bottom of a pot.

He said word for word, “This is a competition!”

“Yeah, so I’m eating on the platform, sigh, this whole competing thing is really tiring.”

Lu Wu shook his head and sighed, while Dudu, already skilled at the task, started heating up the pot and began cooking.

At the same time, Li Kai brought over the bowls and chopsticks and also managed to get a few bottles of cola. They weren’t cold, but it was fine, Lu Wu stuck the cola to Hanhan, then slapped him to activate the “Cold Ice Body” passive, turning the drinks into ice-cold cola.

“Everything’s ready, we can start the meal.”

Lu Wu was particularly satisfied.

Just as he was busying himself, he suddenly noticed it had gone quiet on Guzhentian’s side. Wondering what was up, Lu Wu turned to see, “Old Gu, what are you up to? You don’t actually want to eat, do you?

I didn’t prepare a portion for you; you’d better focus on your own competition.”

“Are you sure you want to fight me like this?”

Guzhentian tried to keep his tone calm, but the anger in it was hard to suppress. But it was as if Lu Wu didn’t hear him at all.

“Of course, the body is the capital of revolution, no matter what, one must eat on time. Right, Dudu?”

Dudu at the side nodded his little head like crazy.

“Right, right, right, Lu Wu is absolutely correct!”

And Guzhentian’s fury had now reached its breaking point.

“Since that’s the case, I declare the challenge begins!”

With Guzhentian’s announcement, the challenge of the top 32 finally began.

Unlike the previous two rounds, where the opponent took the first action, this time it was Guzhentian who made the first move.

His household’s knockoff Monkey swung its stick, elongating it in an attempt to sweep away Lu Wu and company’s meal.

Could Tuantuan endure this?

The usually laziest pig, now reacting the fastest, easily took on the knockoff Monkey’s strike with a simple growth in size.

How could the knockoff Monkey’s attack just end there? Swinging once more to bring it down, but this time Little Skeleton with a Bone Staff in hand easily blocked the strike.

The knockoff Monkey’s stick technique was quite cunning, yet after being blocked by Little Skeleton, it managed to launch a third strike which Hanhan boldly withstood.

Guzhentian’s three continuous strikes with the staff did not inflict the slightest damage on Lu Wu’s food stall.

Lu Wu was quite satisfied.

While roasting the meat, he cheered Little Skeleton and the others on, “The next part is up to you guys, you all need to fight seriously, of course, I’ll save some food for you.”

Lu Wu’s carefree attitude deeply provoked Guzhentian.

He couldn’t forgive that Lu Wu took such a stance in a match that was so important to him.

If Lu Wu were allowed to continue like this, what difference would there be from the match seven months ago?

“It seems, I need to make you adopt the correct attitude and stance!”

As Guzhentian’s increasingly frosty voice rang out, the knockoff Monkey’s stick shrunk and was lifted overhead, setting up for a standard “Skyward Strike” stance.

Lu Wu, who was grilling meat, saw this and his eyes lit up in admiration.

“Old Gu, your family’s Monkey’s ‘Skyward Strike’ is pretty good!

Truly worthy of Master Level, just swung once and now ready for the second strike, looks like a third wouldn’t be a problem either, much stronger than our team’s Old Wu.”

While Lu Wu was evaluating the opponent’s stick technique, the opposing knockoff Monkey’s violent “Skyward Stick” came crashing down.

The formidable power of this strike was even more terrifying than the previous one.

Many in the audience, although numerous were Zhen Tian fans, felt a cold sweat on behalf of Lu Wu.

And yet, on Lu Wu’s side, there was not the slightest sense of nervousness.

“Oh, this piece of meat seems about right; let me try it. Delicious! Come, come, come, Dudu, open up.”

Lu Wu sweetly fed Dudu a bite of the grilled meat he had tried himself: “Tasty, isn’t it?”

“Mmm, delicious!”

Dudu at the side also nodded his little head, totally carefree.

To the audience, these two seemed not to be competing at all, but rather simply out for a casual trip, watching the excitement.

The audience didn’t know what gave them such confidence.

Well, the audience found out soon enough.

At the same time as the knockoff Monkey’s “Skyward Stick” swung down, there were only three Summoned Beasts on the field on Lu Wu’s side.

Tuantuan stared at the grilled meat drooling, Little Skeleton focused on Lu Wu feeding Dudu, and among the three Summoned Beasts, only Hanhan was excitedly watching the stick strike and timed its approach.

Taking hits was what it liked the most.

However, although it liked to take hits, Hanhan knew the terrifying power of this strike and, rarely, took a Defensive Stance.

As the knockoff Monkey’s stick came down, Hanhan’s Defensive Stance instantly shattered.

Hanhan’s Talent “Thorny Shield” passively triggered, frantically absorbing damage.

The damage from this stick was so fearsome that it instantly filled up the “Thorny Shield” energy store, and the Thorny Shield’s damage reflection triggered, sending back a surge of power reaching 120% of the “Skyward Stick’s” strength.

The two forces clashed, and the knockoff Monkey, caught off guard, stumbled several steps back, while Hanhan was smashed flying away, heading straight toward Lu Wu’s stall.

Just as this silly bird was about to smash into Lu Wu’s food stand, a Little Flood Dragon emerged from Lu Wu’s heart, its tail directly flicking Hanhan to the side.

Poor Hanhan, with feathers that were once splendid, were now a complete mess, and it even bled from the corner of its mouth.

Lu Wu was also startled.

“Phew, that was a close one; my livelihood was almost smashed to bits.”

Still, Lu Wu complained to the opposing Guzhentian.

“Old Gu, watch where you’re swinging, will you? It’s hard enough eating a meal during a match.”

“I was aiming for your livelihood!”

Guzhentian could no longer keep his cool, his outburst followed by a roar.

His Shanzhai Monkey, using the “Clone Talent,” pulled out a tuft of monkey hair and blew on it lightly, summoning hundreds of Shanzhai Monkey clones from thin air.

Although these Shanzhai Monkeys weren’t very strong, barely leader or even just boss level in power, their sheer numbers and the fact that they were making a beeline for Lu Wu’s food stall made them a threat.

This didn’t sit well with Lu Wu.

“That’s crossing the line!”

Immediately, he gave Little Skeleton a knowing look, but Little Skeleton was confused.

Helpless, Lu Wu had to spell it out: “What are you doing dazing about? Call for backup!”

Little Skeleton finally understood, took out his phone and summoned all his underlings.

Fifteen underlings formed a circle, encircling Lu Wu’s food stall for protection.

Along the way, they also called over the Loli Dragon.

When Loli Dragon showed up, she seemed a bit confused about the surroundings and wasn’t sure what was going on until she saw a bunch of chaotic monkeys rushing towards her, ready to breathe fire on them, only to be swiftly silenced by Lu Wu stuffing her mouth with roasted meat.

If she had unleashed her breath, the battle would have basically been over.

Poor Guzhentian, who had worked hard for half a year just to stand before Lu Wu to prove himself.

How cruel would it have been if the Loli Dragon had just torched them with one breath?

Lu Wu felt it was only fair to let him show off a bit.

Conveniently, all three of Lu Wu’s house summoned beasts were at the Leader 3-star Peak, potentially advancing to lord level at any moment; who knows, maybe they could advance by fighting him.

The Loli Dragon, initially vexed at being force-fed meat, found it delicious after one bite and promptly forgot about the monkeys, squatting by Lu Wu’s food stall waiting for more food.

Since the underlings from Little Skeleton had cut off the group of monkeys, they had no way to get close to the food stall.

And so, the most bizarre and unusual match in the history of the University League began to unfold.

The competition split into two parts,  
 On one side, two guys, a dragon, and a pig squatted down, eating barbecue and hotpot.

While eating, they observed the battle on the other side, with Lu Wu occasionally commenting and expressing his admiration.

When he saw a particularly good move, he even stopped barbecuing to clap enthusiastically.

Such a match reminded Guzhentian, serving as the referee, and those who had witnessed the Cultivation Master competition last September of that very event dominated by the great Demon King Lu Wu!

Those who had just harbored hope for Guzhentian.

Those who thought he could make a kingly comeback, those who thought he could teach Lu Wu a lesson, and those who believed Lu Wu brought Dudu to the fight because he lacked the confidence to face Guzhentian, were now pretty much clear on the situation.

Though seven months had passed,  
 Though Guzhentian had grown,  
 And even though the nature of the competition had changed, Mr. Lu was still Mr. Lu.

The same one who crushed everything, who dominated as the grand Demon King.

Guzhentian, in terms of cultivation, was merely a joke to Lu Wu seven months ago.

Now, the returning king Guzhentian, despite having proven himself with two overwhelming victories, was still a joke in front of Lu Wu.

Obviously, though, Guzhentian refused to accept that.

He didn’t believe he was inferior to Lu Wu, despite the fact that his Shanzhai Monkey was restrained by Little Skeleton and Han, his clones blocked by Little Skeleton’s underlings, and a Little Flood Dragon keeping a close watch on Little Skeleton’s defensive ring, all the while eyeing him.

The situation at hand was greatly disadvantageous for him, but Guzhentian was still assured of his victory.

“After seven months, you’re still as arrogant as ever!

It seems I must teach you a painful lesson!

Do you think you’re the only one with three summoned beasts?”

As he spoke, Guzhentian waved his hand, and another summoned beast emerged from his heart.

And then came the third summoned beast.

With the appearance of two Leader 3-star summoned beasts, Guzhentian was brimming with confidence: “Now, let the real match begin!”

# Chapter 302 - 302 299 advanced Lord Level

﻿Chapter 302: 299 advanced, Lord Level! Chapter 302: 299 advanced, Lord Level! Name: Thick Earth Pig King (Second Evolution)

Power: 3 Stars (Leader)

Quality: Gold (Promoted)

Attribute: Earth

State: Excited (“Monkey brother, your old pig is coming to help!”)

Weakness: Grass (Normal)

Skill Talents: Brief

…

Name: Double-winged Pegasus (Second Evolution)

Power: 3 Stars (Leader)

Quality: Gold (Promoted)

Attribute: Wind

State: Stable (“Master is calling me!”)

Weakness: Thunder (Normal)

Skill Talents: Brief

…

While barbecuing, Lu Wuyi watched as two more Summoned Beasts appeared for Guzhentian, and couldn’t help but twitch the corners of his mouth.

Monkeys, pigs, horses, this guy has almost collected the whole Journey to the West Team. He’s just one Sha Monk short.

What’s the deal? Does completing a set of the Journey to the West Team give you some kind of bond effect?

Lu Wu couldn’t figure it out and casually divided the freshly grilled meat into four portions.

He tossed one piece to Tuantuan, stuffed another into the Loli Dragon’s mouth, and fed one to Dudu.

Keeping the last piece for himself, Lu Wu stuffed it into his mouth, getting grease all over his face.

Dudu, particularly attentive, took a tissue and wiped Lu Wu’s face for him.

Yep, these two were still showing off their love, eating leisurely, with no urgency whatsoever.

Guzhentian frowned slightly and without any superfluous words, got straight down to business.

“Charge!”

At his command, the two newly added Summoned Beasts of his command charged straight for the Little Flood Dragon.

This pig and horse were both exceptional.

Not only was their quality above average, but their Combat Power was, too.

The pig started off with a “Hundred Times Gravity,” while the horse delivered a “Heavenly Horse Flying Kick.”

Both skills were advanced skills.

The Little Flood Dragon hadn’t even reacted before it felt an unbearable heaviness, and then the Pegasus kicked it, sending it flying.

“Now’s the moment!”

The two underlings succeeded in their strike, and Guzhentian seized the moment to launch his attack.

While the Little Flood Dragon was flung away, Guzhentian himself took action.

Though in the college leagues, it was generally only as a last resort that a Summoner would strike.

But that’s for Professional Summoners and Summoners with single Summoned Beasts.

Guzhentian was not among them.

Not only was he a Master-Level Summoner, his Summoned Beasts numbered three, and the skills he mastered were at least seven.

In terms of power, even if he hadn’t reached the Lord Level, he was definitely not far off.

With such power, he could not be taken lightly.

Sure enough, in an instant, Guzhentian covered hundreds of meters and entered Little Skeleton’s defensive circle.

He stomped the ground, and the pig-inherited “Hundred Times Gravity” burst forth instantly, sending the blocking trio of Little Skeleton’s minions flying with a “Barbaric Impact.”

Lu Wu, who was being protected, was now exposed in Guzhentian’s line of sight.

Seeing Lu Wu, who appeared ‘shocked’ and ‘frightened’, up close, Guzhentian’s mouth curved into a smile.

“I told you, I’d teach you a harsh lesson!”

With that, Guzhentian, wielding a stick from who-knows-where lifted high, readied to violently strike the already ‘scared silly’ Lu Wu.

A golden tail whipped out, and with a ‘pff’, Guzhentian was sent flying by the Little Flood Dragon.

Watching Guzhentian get knocked away, Lu Wu finally breathed a sigh of relief.

Lucky, lucky, that the Little Flood Dragon came back just in time. Otherwise, that blow from Guzhentian would have meant the end of the match.

Lu Wu had just begun eating and he didn’t want to change locations so soon.

With that in mind, Lu Wu quickly shouted to Little Skeleton and the rest.

“Give it your all, try to drag it out a bit longer!”

Meanwhile.

With a slight frown on his face and a hint of regret, Guzhentian, having been flung away by the Little Flood Dragon’s tail, had nearly managed to take down Lu Wu just now.

But it didn’t matter, he had roughly gauged Lu Wu’s capabilities.

He was confident he could defeat Lu Wu next time.

“Start with his outer Summoned Beasts, break them one by one, I don’t believe he can keep sitting still.”

Determined, Guzhentian charged towards the Little Flood Dragon, while his pig and monkey coordinated, intending to take down the Little Flood Dragon first!

But just as Guzhentian had barely approached, the Little Flood Dragon let out a dragon’s cry.

Simultaneously, an invisible force surged out.

This force wasn’t very strong, only causing a slight push for Guzhentian and his companions.

But after this invisible force, everyone on Guzhentian’s side was astonished to find that the surrounding environment subtly changed.

“A domain?”

Guzhentian’s first thought was this term, and he was quite startled.

A moment later, he realized that wasn’t it, it was just that the surroundings had taken on some deep-sea characteristics, not a domain.

Guzhentian let out half a sigh of relief for that discovery. The reason it was only half a sigh was that he did not have time to fully release the other half before the Little Flood Dragon’s “Child of the Sea” talent activated, increasing its aura rapidly, breaking through the Lord One Star level and tentatively reaching the edge of Lord Level 2.

“Roar!”

The moment its talent activated, the Little Flood Dragon roared, its terrifying power rippling out.

Guzhentian’s expression changed again, and he immediately issued an order.

“Pig, Thick Earth Defense; horse, Heavenly Horse Meteor!”

Following Guzhentian’s command, the pig activated its talent and unleashed the killing move-level “Thick Earth Defense,” managing to withstand the Little Flood Dragon’s partially-cooked “Jiao Long Roar.”

The horse, on the other hand, exhibited an unbelievable speed and charged straight ahead.

However, the horse’s charge was not directed at the Little Flood Dragon.

Charging at the Little Flood Dragon was meaningless, as Guzhentian realized that, in this special environment, the Little Flood Dragon’s power was greatly boosted. He’d be foolish to fight it here.

The horse’s “Heavenly Horse Meteor” headed straight for Lu Wu.

The Little Flood Dragon turned to chase and block the horse, giving Guzhentian the chance to break out of the “Power of the Ocean” range and head straight for the battlefield where Little Skeleton and Han were.

Clearly, Guzhentian had understood the reality of the Little Flood Dragon’s bluff and was now looking for an easier target to squeeze.

“The Heavenly Horse distracts the Little Flood Dragon, let’s take down Little Skeleton and this bird first!”

In the midst of speaking, Guzhentian had already charged behind Little Skeleton, raising the stick in his hand high to gather strength for the “Skyward Strike” initiation pose.

At the same time, Guzhentian’s two Summoned Beasts coordinated exceptionally well.

The Thick Earth Pig King’s “Hundred Times Gravity” Skill burst out again, its power affecting Little Skeleton and Han Han.

At the same time, the Shanzhai Monkey wildly swung its staff with all its might, firmly restraining Little Skeleton and Han Han.

“Skyward Stick!”

Having gathered enough power, Guzhentian seized the opportunity, and mercilessly swung the stick toward Little Skeleton.

If this strike hit, Little Skeleton’s bones would likely scatter on the spot, and even its skull might shatter.

At this critical moment, Lu Wu’s clever Little Skeleton grabbed Han Han’s staff.

With a “puff,” Han Han took another hit from the “Skyward Stick,” and the Thorny Shield burst out, repelling Guzhentian.

However, Han Han and Little Skeleton weren’t getting off easy either; Han Han spurted a mouthful of Blood, while Little Skeleton was half-frozen by Han Han’s “Cold Ice Body” passive, and the other half drilled into the ground by Guzhentian’s strike.

Seeing his chance, the Shanzhai Monkey’s staff ignited with golden Flames and whirled toward Little Skeleton.

At the brink of crisis, Little Skeleton immediately employed the “Skeleton Commander” Talent, instantly boosting its Power, and the ice encasing it shattered in an instant.

Following that, Little Skeleton unleashed the long-unused “Dragon Bone Power.”

With a roar that seemed barely there, the phantom of a Bone Dragon appeared behind Little Skeleton. Little Skeleton’s aura surged once more; with a light wave of its bone hand, it easily parried the Shanzhai Monkey’s staff with a flash of the Silver Spear.

At the same time, Little Skeleton swung its hand back, using Han Han as a weapon, and sent the approaching pig flying away.

All of this happened in the blink of an eye.

In an instant, Guzhentian’s almost certain ambush had been forcefully broken by Little Skeleton.

Guzhentian’s face changed.

This was completely unexpected.

It was one thing for the Jiao Long to be fearsome, as creatures of its race were unreasonably strong Summoned Beasts.

But for even Little Skeleton, a lowly Summoned Beast, to be this terrifying.

Considering Little Skeleton’s demonstrated Power, taking it down didn’t seem much easier than defeating the Little Flood Dragon.

This allowed Guzhentian to have a clear assessment of the current situation.

“The opposing bird has obviously lost its Combat Power. The remaining two Summoned Beasts are not much weaker than the monkey.

There are two ways to take them down.

A full-on assault or a mere delay.

The Power of these two Summoned Beasts clearly comes from their Talents and Skills, which surely have a time limit and won’t last long. Just waiting and dragging it out, victory will still be easy.”

Having made a quick judgment on the situation at hand, Guzhentian rapidly adjusted his tactics.

Instead of a fierce attack on Little Skeleton, it turned into a war of attrition.

Instead of striking at Little Skeleton and the Little Flood Dragon, the new focus was on Han Han, who had turned into Little Skeleton’s weapon.

He planned to either send Han Han off the platform for good or attack Han Han in a move to draw out Little Skeleton in a ploy that would force it to be wary of damaging its ally.

After all, the bird seemed on the verge of keeling over. Surely Little Skeleton wouldn’t actually let the bird perish, right?

It would have to protect it somewhat.

However, reality was the complete opposite of what Guzhentian expected. Little Skeleton used Han Han as a shield.

There was no intention at all to protect the bird; any danger, and it would hurl the bird at it.

And that bird was particularly strange; clearly on the brink of dropping dead, yet it seemed excited, even enjoying getting hit, giving off a rather twisted vibe.

However, even so, Guzhentian had no intention of stopping.

He must take this bird away first, its sheer attribute was quite troublesome.

Thus, Guzhentian focused his attacks even more on the bird.

But as he did so, he realized something was wrong, the more he attacked, the more it seemed like some power was about to surge within the battered bird.

As an experienced fighter, Guzhentian spotted right away that the bird was about to advance.

Actually, he should thank Yuan Qingqing for this.

In her so-called experiments with silly Dudu, she had fed the bird quite a lot of nutrition.

Now, many of these medicinal effects were still undigested in Dudu’s body, and this brutal beating had activated these forces, naturally setting Dudu on a path to advance to Lord level.

Totally unanticipated, and unable to comprehend why such a thing would happen, Guzhentian’s expression changed on the spot.

Being beaten so harshly without dying, and now advancing, was this bird a bit masochistic?

Now, a difficult choice lay before Guzhentian: to attack or not? Attacking would speed up its advancement, but if he didn’t, it would advance soon anyway.

By then, after having endured the burst skills of Little Skeleton and Little Flood Dragon, he wouldn’t stand a chance against the bird once it advanced.

In such a situation, Guzhentian was extremely conflicted, but at last, he clenched his teeth.

“We can’t continue like this. We’ll hold off Little Skeleton and Little Flood Dragon while Monkey breaks through and takes down Lu Wu!”

Left with no other choice, Guzhentian changed his strategy.

He prepared to execute a decapitation strike.

He charged at Little Skeleton with his stick raised high, assuming the posture of “Skyward Stick,” but instead of a direct attack, he launched a frenzied series of blows to keep Little Skeleton at bay.

Taking advantage of this, Shanzhai Monkey spat out a mouthful of fur and created countless clones that scattered.

Little Skeleton immediately lost sight of Shanzhai Monkey.

Little Flood Dragon noticed this right away, and as several clearly stronger Shanzhai Monkey clones headed straight for Lu Wu, Little Flood Dragon broke free from the horse’s entanglement and dove in, taking down these clones with combined long-range and close-combat tactics.

Just as the clones were dealt with, the real Shanzhai Monkey burst out, struck Little Flood Dragon away with a rod, and then dashed straight towards Lu Wu.

Little Skeleton’s junior did his duty in defense but couldn’t stop him; Shanzhai Monkey instantly broke through the defense and swung his stick down towards Lu Wu.

“I’ve got him!”

Guzhentian’s lips curled up, revealing a smile of hard-won victory.

However, this smile instantly stiffened.

Right beside Lu Wu, the seemingly harmless five or six-year-old Loli transformed into a fierce Bone Dragon, soared into the sky, and with a swing of her tail, sent the Shanzhai Monkey flying out of the ring, effortlessly killing him.

After the deed was done, the Bone Dragon reverted back to loli form and continued to eagerly watch Lu Wu barbecue meat.

The whole arena fell into a silence as dead as the grave.

So, it turned out Lu Wu had another big weapon hidden by his side all along?

The attack led by the shocked Guzhentian also came to a halt.

Lu Wu, who was grilling meat, was somewhat displeased with this development.

“Why stop? Keep fighting. I’ve only just grilled the meat halfway.

Keep on fighting!

Old Gu, put some more effort into it. I have faith in you. You will surely defeat me, the future’s strongest summoner!

Your monkey almost blew me away just now!”

As Lu Wu spoke, he distributed the grilled meat he held.

And almost at the same moment, a terrifying aura burst forth from the nearly dead, struggling Dudu next to Guzhentian.

That was the final straw for Guzhentian, who had already lost much of his fighting spirit, compelling him to completely shut down.

Fight my ass!

# Chapter 303 - 303 300 Master Level (please subscribe)

﻿Chapter 303: 300 Master Level (please subscribe) Chapter 303: 300 Master Level (please subscribe) Phoenix Nest Training Ground, top 32 tournament ring.

Perhaps the beating it had received earlier was almost forgotten.

Dudu’s advancement was going smoothly.

Under the watchful eyes of the audience, the wounds on Dudu’s body began to heal rapidly.

The few remaining feathers on its body started falling off quickly.

The bird became bald in no time.

But it did not stay bald for long.

Shortly after, new feathers began to grow back on Dudu’s body, and along with the growth of the feathers came an increase in Dudu’s size.

From an original height of around 1.8 meters, it shot up to 2.5 meters, with wingspan that extended nearly ten meters when spread.

This length was enough to consider riding it.

Lu Wu’s long-cherished dream of flying on the back of a bird was finally about to come true.

Besides, there were significant changes in Dudu’s attributes as well.

…

Name: Ice and Snow Skylark (Second Evolution)

Power: one star

Quality: Gold (Upgraded)???

Attribute: Ice and Snow

State: Excited (“Is anyone going to hit me? Is anyone going to hit me?!!”)

Weakness: Fire (Slight)

Special Skill: Unyielding·Growth (Master)

Advanced Skill: Cold Ice Body (Master) Frozen Heart (Master)

Killing Move: Absolute Freeze (Mastered) Frozen Ray (Mastered)

Talent: Little Strong Physique (Passive) (A passive talent awakened through numerous beatings, greatly enhancing life force and resistance to beatings, as well as recovery ability. As long as it doesn’t die, it can keep fighting!)

Thorny Shield (No changes, no explanation)

Domain: Ice and Snow Domain 0.1% (Basically useless, just a figure)

Description: Forget about its killing moves; They are powerful, but it’s not interested in using them. It just wants to take beatings.

…

These were Dudu’s current attributes.

On the other hand, there were also changes in Lu Wu’s attributes.

After all, Dudu was his bird, and when his bird advanced, Lu Wu naturally received feedback.

The feedback from this advancement to Lord wasn’t small. It took Lu Wu quite a while to recover from roasting meat, making the nearby Pang Duddu extremely anxious.

Once he recovered and looked at his own attributes, Lu Wu laughed.

…

Name: Lu Wu

Power: Master Level Cultivator (Lord 1 Star Combat Power)

Mastered Skills: Charging (Master) Cold Ice Body (Master) Frozen Ray (Mastered)

Flood (Master) Dragon Bone Power (Master) Slap Lu Wu (Master)

Special Skill: Unyielding·Growth (Master)

Dragon Transformation (Entry-Level)

Summoner Talent: Power of Inheritance (Awakening) (Analysis and inheritance-related power can accelerate awakening)

Damage Sharing

Description: If you go all out, you might be able to compete with Loli Dragon Indeks.

…

A new skill “Frozen Ray” was added, and “Power of Inheritance,” a skill that had been in an Unawakened state since acquired in the Inheritance Land, began to awaken.

This was a very nice surprise for Lu Wu.

Overall, he was quite satisfied with today’s battle.

But while he felt content, Guzhentian was not.

Or rather, he no longer knew what expression to make.

Just as he had said before,

he didn’t stand on this stage today to defeat Lu Wu.

He only came to prove himself.

Because from the start, he never took Lu Wu seriously.

After all, Lu Wu had been a Summoner for less than two years.

Guzhentian thought they were not on the same level, and defeating Lu Wu should have been an easy task for him.

But in the end, after suppressing eight others in the top 32, he was casually crushed by Lu Wu, who was leisurely eating roasted meat and singing songs.

During the entire match, Lu Wu hadn’t even begun to show his true power.

As Loli Dragon’s tail swept out, followed by Dudu’s advancement, Guzhentian became the butt of the joke.

Even though the arena was deathly quiet at that moment, he felt as if countless jeers and taunts were surging towards him like a tide.

At that moment, Guzhentian felt as though he had traveled through time, back to September 1 of the previous year.

He returned to the day he was crushed by Lu Wu, the day the ‘genius fell.’

Just as Guzhentian was about to fall back into darkness, about to shut himself away again, applause broke out from the previously silent stands.

“Congratulations to Lu Wu and Pang Duddu for advancing successfully.”

The applause shattered the deathly silence in the arena, as it echoed from everyone at once.

This match ended amidst the applause.

As the clapping died down, the staff of the College League stepped forward to announce the end of today’s competition.

The second round of the top 32 will take place tomorrow.

There was no helping it; all three of Guzhentian’s Summoned Beasts had been beaten up pretty badly, especially the Shanzhai Monkey which nearly got killed by Loli Dragon’s tail whip, and needed some time to recover.

More importantly, there was Guzhentian.

It was clear to anyone that Guzhentian was on the verge of a breakdown, in no condition to fight and needed to stop and regain his composure.

And as the match ended,

The person who had started the applause came forward to take Guzhentian away.

This person was no other than Gutian, who had been avoiding Lu Wu ever since he arrived in Beijing.

Originally, he had resolved not to show his face until Lu Wu left.

But for the sake of his son, he ultimately came out, grateful that he did. Otherwise, if he was absent at the moment his son needed him most, he would have been too unfit as a father.

And it was precisely because he showed up, Gutian was able to gently pull his son back from the edge of a dark abyss with a round of applause.

While that was the case, it was still not nearly enough.

After the competition ended, Gutian took Guzhentian to a rest room.

Inside the rest room,

Gutian passed a cup of water to his son, who had become silent and dispirited, a stark contrast from the pride and confidence he had that morning.

“Have some water.”

Guzhentian silently took the cup but didn’t drink it. He didn’t respond either and just sat there quietly.

This state was basically the same as it had been several months before.

Gutian felt a mix of helplessness, resentment for his son’s lack of competitiveness, but above all, heartache.

He squatted down to make eye contact with his son, who was deliberately avoiding his gaze.

Suddenly, Guzhentian saw panic in his father’s eyes and subconsciously wanted to look away, but Gutian held his head steady with both hands.

“Look at me!”

Guzhentian was shocked, but he eventually met his father’s gaze without resisting.

Only then did Gutian see his son’s eyes filled with confusion, despair, and defeatism.

“Look at the state you’re in!”

Gutian said with a bitter smile, rubbing Guzhentian’s head.

“Is a single loss worth this?”

“Father, it’s not just about losing one match.

The last Cultivator competition, my cultivation skills that I started learning at five, lost to his one year of learning.

This competition, my five years of effort since I was 18, lost to his less than two years of growth, I’ve thoroughly lost!

Everyone says Guzhentian is a genius, that I have the makings of a grandmaster.

But now I realize, whether it’s cultivation or summoning, I’m nothing but trash!”

Having always excelled at everything since memory, Guzhentian truly couldn’t accept being inferior to others, especially being treated like nothing in front of them.

“I could still lie to myself and say that my cultivation was crushed by him because my cultivation talent wasn’t up to par.

My strength is in summoning, so I’ve been working hard on that.

Do you know how I spent the past seven months?

Do you know what effort I put in?

But now, the result of seven months of hard work, standing before him again, I realize I’m still a joke. How can I continue lying to myself?

What should I do next?”

Gutian listened quietly to his son’s venting.

He didn’t interrupt him and just waited for him to finish. Then Gutian stood up, got two cups of wine in the resting room, returned to his son’s side, handed the son a cup, and took a gulp from his own before saying.

“The problem with you is everything goes too smoothly.

You can’t handle even a little setback.

You’re acting like it’s the end of the world because you’ve been pinned down by the same person twice. If everyone were like you, many would have hung themselves by now.”

Guzhentian was about to say something, but Gutian continued.

“You know about Yuan Hua, right?”

“Know him, the chairman of the Professional Cultivator Center headquarters.”

“And about Xing Zhanlong?”

“Know him, the chairman of the Professional Summoner Center headquarters.”

“What about Zhao Kuan?”

“Know him, the president of Jingcheng University.”

…

Gutian rattled off more than a dozen names in one breath—each one a top figure in today’s Federation.

By the end, Guzhentian was somewhat perplexed, unsure why Gutian was mentioning these names.

Then, Gutian dropped a bombshell.

“What if I tell you, the group of people I just mentioned, decades ago were continuously tormented by one person, crushed in every aspect, even had their childhood sweethearts, sisters, and fiancées taken away by the same person, would you believe it?”

“That’s impossible!”

“But it’s true!

Decades ago, there was such a person.

His talent was extremely terrifying. He alone suffocated all the geniuses of the Federation.”

Gutian recalled that person’s brilliance, his face showing complex emotions: “Compared with that person, Lu Wu of today is like comparing a firefly to the sun and moon.

During his prime, he was like a sun, when he shone brightly, no other star could emit light.”

Guzhentian wanted to call it a lie, but seeing the look on his father’s face, he vaguely felt what he was saying might be true.

So, after hesitating for a bit, Guzhentian finally spoke, following Gutian’s narrative: “Where is he now?”

Gutian shook his head: “Don’t know, he disappeared twenty or thirty years ago. No one knows where he went.

But that’s not important. Even if he is around now, do you think he would hold a higher status than those I just mentioned?”

At this point, Gutian seriously entered the motivational speech phase, looking solemnly at his son.

“I know you can’t accept this defeat now.

But you need to understand, temporary success or failure doesn’t really mean anything.

Even if he was as strong as that man, how many people remember him now?

On the contrary, the ones he suppressed are all emerging from the shadows.”

“And you don’t have to be too bothered about today’s match.

It’s true that no one can rival Lu Wu’s cultivation talent, but your summoner talent far surpasses his.

Before he came to Beijing, none of his summoned beasts were three-star lords.

After coming to Beijing, someone helped him cultivate his summoned beasts.

Otherwise, he would have never been a match for you. Remember the bone dragon by his side?

That bone dragon isn’t truly his. I’ve mentioned before, Lu Wu’s background is a mystery, and that bone dragon was likely arranged by someone behind him for his protection.

So, you didn’t really lose to Lu Wu, you just lost to the forces backing him.”

“Your summoner talent is still the strongest in the alliance. Look around, apart from Lu Wu, who among the top 32 in the university competition is your opponent?”

“So, you need to get a grip and finish this competition!

Let the world know who’s the real number one young summoner!”

With these words from Gutian, Guzhentian’s eyes lit up completely.

His defeatism was swept away.

At this moment, Guzhentian was revived!

…

Not giving a subscription or a vote, and won’t get up.

# Chapter 304 - 304 301 Steel Armor Hero 2nd Generation

﻿Chapter 304: 301 Steel Armor Hero 2nd Generation Chapter 304: 301 Steel Armor Hero 2nd Generation The match ended, and Guzhentian was called over to drink chicken soup, while Lu Wu also began to get busy.

He went to abduct Wu Wei’s Monkey from Wu Wei’s house.

Isn’t it said that to awaken the “Power of Inheritance” Talent, one must research Inheritance Skills?

Lu Wu had only seen two individuals who could “Master Inheritance Skills,” one was Guzhentian and the other was Wu Wei.

Guzhentian’s side was clearly not an option, so Lu Wu could only start by practicing on Wu Wei’s Monkey.

“Come on, make it snappy. Tell me everything you know about ‘Skyward Strike,’ make it easy on yourself, and don’t make me force you, got it?”

In the research room.

Though it was supposed to be a legitimate research undertaking for Lu Wu,

he insisted on making it look particularly shady and unserious.

Wu Wei’s Monkey was shivering in fear.

Its monkey head kept looking around, searching for its lovely and adorable owner.

But all it saw upon scanning the room were the seedy-looking Lu Wu and Little Skeleton, who was weighing a Bone Staff in his hands looking particularly streetwise.

In the end, the monkey, feeling utterly helpless, huddled in a corner, hugging its own shoulders. It shared the information it knew about “Skyward Strike” through its “Status Bar.”

After listening, Lu Wu injected the monkey with a syringe.

The injection contained a special potion, developed by the Cultivation Masters at Jiangnan University’s Cultivation Institute, which made the monkey’s body exceptionally sensitive.

Of course, Jiangnan University was a legitimate school, and its research rooms were staffed by serious researchers. The sensitivity referred to here involved a sensitivity to the flow and changes of Energy.

Once the monkey showed a reaction, Lu Wu cast “Damage Sharing” on it.

Then, he made the monkey charge up “Skyward Strike” repeatedly.

That’s right, merely charging the skill and not allowing it to release the attack.

While the monkey was in this state and charging “Skyward Strike,” Lu Wu could feel what it was like.

After repeating this several times, Lu Wu started to get a faint sense of it.

After about a dozen tries,

Lu Wu finally caught that sensation fully just as the monkey was about to collapse.

Almost at that same instant, Lu Wu’s attribute panel changed.

…

Power of Inheritance: Awakening in progress (Detected Inheritance Skill “Skyward Strike” information, completion of information 45%, Power of Inheritance taking effect, skill information being repaired.)

…

“What does this mean?”

Lu Wu couldn’t quite understand his attribute panel.

But he had a vague feeling that a mysterious power was at work inside him.

About half an hour later, Lu Wu felt a jolt throughout his body, followed by a surge of information that flooded his mind.

Undoubtedly, this surge of information was the Inheritance Skill “Skyward Stick.”

Simultaneously, Lu Wu’s attribute panel underwent another change.

“Skyward Stick” appeared as a Skill, and the Power of Inheritance Skill reverted to the dormant state of awakening in progress.

Looking at his attribute panel, Lu Wu always felt a sense of unreality.

He had extensively researched Inheritance Skills before, invested a lot of effort without much result, which led him to doubt whether his “system” was fake.

Yet now, he had learned the Skill “Skyward Stick” in less than an hour.

It also made Lu Wu wonder if he had inadvertently enabled some cheat.

Regardless, with this new Inheritance Skill, Lu Wu was itching to give it a try.

So, he set his doubts aside, along with the nearly broken monkey, and went to find a local training room with Dudu and his own Little Skeleton.

After more than a year, Lu Wu was opening a training room with Dudu again.

However, unlike before when the purpose of opening a training room was for Little Skeleton to take hits, this time Lu Wu wanted to play himself.

He picked up Little Skeleton’s Bone Staff and began to recall the information on “Skyward Strike.”

After about ten minutes, having almost mastered the Skill, Lu Wu raised the Bone Staff and brought it down with a heavy, forceful strike.

With one smash, three layers of Lu Wu’s Energy vanished instantly.

The target in front of him, which was reputed to withstand Lord Level attacks, was completely blown away, and not just that—the training room behind the target was reduced to ruins.

Seeing the destructive power of this single blow, even Lu Wu couldn’t help but gasp in astonishment.

The power of “Skyward Strike,” at its entry-level, was terrifying.

If he were to refine “Skyward Strike” to Master Level, how fearsome would the power be?

And furthermore,

“I remember Little Gu’s family had another Inheritance Skill on their Shanzhai Monkey.”

At that moment, Lu Wu suddenly felt that he and Little Gu hit it off well and seemed quite suitable to be friends.

Lu Wu was the kind of person who acted upon his words.

He immediately went looking for Little Gu.

During the university competition, the injured Summoned Beasts of the students and referees were taken care of by a professional medical team.

Lu Wu took Dudu and went to visit Little Gu under the guise of paying a visit.

However, when Lu Wu arrived, he found that Little Gu was not there; upon enquiry, he learned that Little Gu’s Monkey was almost healed and had taken it home.

“Sigh, why didn’t I let Indeks hit it harder back then?

If only Indeks hadn’t failed me, I could have made friends with Little Gu!”

Thankfully, Loli Dragon didn’t overhear this, otherwise she would have certainly bitten Lu Wu.

Although Lu Wu didn’t manage to make friends with Little Gu as he had hoped, he didn’t just leave.

With the mindset of a thief not leaving empty-handed, if he couldn’t make friends with Little Gu, Lu Wu figured he could make friends with someone else.

Lu Wu’s eyes scanned the Phoenix Nest Training Ground’s medical room and soon spotted a friend of interest.

…

Name: Steel Armor Hero II

Power: 3 Stars (Leader)

Quality: Silver (Enhanced)

Attribute: Mechanical

State: Slight malfunction

Weakness: Electricity (General)

Basic Skills: Rifle Shooting (Master), Infrared Scanning (Master), Thermal Tracking (Master)…

Advanced Skill: Gatling Machine Gun (Master)

Talent: Mechanical Life (Passive) (No sense of pain, capable of absolutely calm fighting, strong defense against physical attacks)

Mechanical Transformation (Active) (Can strengthen oneself through transformation)

Description: A product of technology and summoning combination, capable of breaking through the rules of thermal weapons.

Considered a rather good Summoned Beast, meets the conditions for mass production.

…

Upon seeing the attributes of this Summoned Beast, Lu Wu’s eyes lit up on the spot.

Looking at the foreign friend next to the Summoned Beast, Lu Wu approached with a warm smile on his face, this friendship was as good as settled!

However, in the end, Lu Wu failed to make friends with this foreigner.

For one, they couldn’t understand each other’s language, and for another, the foreigner seemed to be somewhat afraid of him.

Additionally, the way Lu Wu looked at Steel Armor Hero made him particularly nervous, so Lu Wu hadn’t talked to him for a few sentences before the guy ran away.

Failing to make friends, Lu Wu could only go back to training his staff movements with a sense of injustice.

Skyward Strike had a considerable consumption and backlash.

Even the Shanzhai Monkey from Guzhentian could only swing it three or four times, but it was different for Lu Wu.

On one hand, he had Little Skeleton’s phone which contained 30 energy points that were attribute-free and available for use at any time; he wasn’t afraid of running out.

As for the backlash,

Lu Wu’s “Unyielding·Growth” skill had already reached “Master Level”; a bit of backlash didn’t scare him.

Plus, with money at home, nutrition keeping up, and Green Cub from Dudu’s family by his side,

Lu Wu directly booked the highest-level Cultivation Room and swung 99 times from afternoon to evening.

While messing up the training ground, he took merely one day to feed the “Skyward Strike” from “entry-level” to “Master Level,” mastering it no less than the Shanzhai Monkey.

This frightening speed of progress, thank goodness Guzhentian didn’t witness it, or else he might’ve been depressed again.

Of course, such a speed of progress was normal for Lu Wu.

On one hand, his talent was freakishly strong.

On the other, the amount Lu Wu practiced in one day, 99 swings, would take Wu Wei over a year, and the Shanzhai Monkey a month.

When the quantity increased, the quality naturally followed, so it was normal for him to progress quickly.

It was just quite costly.

In one day, Lu Wu had spent nearly 200,000 points just on nutrition and destroying two training rooms.

Fortunately, Lu Wu’s house had a large enterprise, anyone else would have been crying.

…

Early the next morning.

Eager to become friends with Little Gu, Lu Wu arrived early at the Phoenix Nest Training Ground with Dudu.

He not only came, but also prepared a large batch of props to cheer for Little Gu.

The moment he arrived, Lu Wu started organizing everything.

With a silly expression and wings unfurled, he held a banner saying “Cheer for Guzhentian,” while Little Skeleton and Green Cub both waved flags. Lu Wu even took a megaphone and shouted from time to time, looking just like a fan club for Little Gu.

This nearly sent Guzhentian, who had finally adjusted his mindset, into self-seclusion again.

Seeing this, Gutian immediately came over to talk to Lu Wu.

After all, it took effort to boost Guzhentian’s morale; he couldn’t let Lu Wu disrupt Guzhentian’s state of mind again.

“Master Lu, what are you doing?”

“I’m cheering for Brother Zhen Tian, can’t you tell?”

Lu Wu looked puzzled and innocent, and Old Gu felt a surge of rage that almost made him spit blood.

Struggling to calm himself, his mind raced.

Ever since the Elder Council had warned Gutian, he had a deep understanding of Lu Wu; he knew this guy was definitely up to something for a profit, and today’s move had a purpose.

To solve this issue, Gutian had to figure out Lu Wu’s demands.

Thus, Gutian started beating around the bush, while Lu Wu got straight to the point.

“Old Gu, don’t overthink it. I’m not here to retaliate against Brother Zhen Tian.

I’m neither looking to extort anything!

Everyone knows what I, Lu Wu, am like. Broad-minded, and definitely not one to hold a grudge against you for pushing our Old Zhang to Beast Soul Burst, resenting your “Steel Bull Evolution” products’ price gouging, nor for Brother Zhen Tian’s actions yesterday.

I’m not that kind of person!

I just feel like I clicked with Brother Zhen Tian, want to be friends with him, and just want to invite his monkey to visit my Cultivation Room for ten days or a half month, that’s all.”

Upon hearing this, Gutian understood.

All this time, Lu Wu had been eyeing the Inheritance Skill of the Shanzhai Monkey.

Knowing this, Gutian also relaxed.

It was normal to be interested in an Inheritance Skill, any Summoned Beast or Cultivation Master would be.

It wasn’t odd for Lu Wu to be tempted.

If he wanted to study it, Gutian had no intention of stopping him.

It wasn’t necessary.

For one, researching Inheritance Skills is extremely difficult. The Alliance has spent hundreds of years with no successes; Lu Wu, despite his terrifying cultivation talent, would be no exception.

Moreover, Lu Wu himself also had a monkey; even if he refused, it wouldn’t make much difference.

Thus, Gutian eventually reached a friendly agreement with Lu Wu.

After the top 32 battles, Gutian would lend the Shanzhai Monkey to Lu Wu for three days.

Just like that, Lu Wu easily achieved his goal and cheerfully cleaned up all the props.

The second round of the top 32 battles finally officially began…

…

I, Nu Xiao, ask for your subscription

# Chapter 305 - 305 302 My son Zhen Tian has the makings of a

﻿Chapter 305: 302 My son Zhen Tian has the makings of a Grandmaster! Chapter 305: 302 My son Zhen Tian has the makings of a Grandmaster! Lu Wu finally made friends with Guzhentian as he wished.

Since he and Guzhentian were friends now, there was no need for those flamboyant tools of support between friends.

Lu Wu tossed aside all those messy tools.

The second round of the top 32 competition officially began.

Guzhentian, acting as the referee for this battle, seemed less composed and confident than yesterday, replaced by a sense of nervousness.

He hesitated momentarily when he would have normally strode confidently towards the stage.

“Don’t be nervous!”

“There’s nothing to be nervous about!”

“I was only defeated by the forces behind Lu Wu; I am still the strongest one!”

“The darkness before dawn is the deepest, but as long as I endure, I will see the light again!”

“Come on!”

As Guzhentian cheered himself up with these words,

his state gradually improved day by day.

He hadn’t recovered to the same level of dominance as yesterday, but at least his nervousness began to fade.

Ten minutes later, after trying his best to adjust his mindset, Guzhentian emerged from backstage.

After giving Lu Wu a bland glance,

Guzhentian began his duties.

“The second-round challenge of the top 32 will continue.

The rules are the same as yesterday. The contestants will challenge in the same order as yesterday, either individually or in groups of ten!”

Anyone could tell.

This speech was far from as imposing as yesterday’s.

Furthermore, following yesterday’s defeat, Guzhentian’s popularity had plummeted severely.

Some mocking voices could be faintly heard among the audience,

saying things like “acting tough again, be careful not to get slapped in the face.”

However, these were words that only the audience could say; almost none of the top 32 contestants dared to utter such remarks.

They had witnessed yesterday’s battle

and were well aware of Guzhentian’s power.

Although he was miserably defeated by Lu Wu and toyed with,

that was because his opponent was Lu Wu. If it were anyone else, at least among the current top 32, no one had the confidence to confront Guzhentian head-on.

So, after Guzhentian uttered the declaration with little confidence in himself,

one by one, ten people went up to the stage.

These ten were the contestants ordered from 11 to 20.

They tacitly chose to join forces against Guzhentian.

As the challengers entered the arena, Guzhentian called out his three Summoned Beasts.

After enduring a thrashing from Lu Wu the day before, Guzhentian spoke much less today.

After summoning his beasts, he calmly asked the ten contestants before him, “Are you all prepared?”

“Please enlighten us!” times ten

Upon their response, Guzhentian immediately announced,

“The challenge begins!”

Simple and to the point, the second round of the battle commenced.

The previously chattering audience fell silent at this moment, their eyes riveted on the stage.

As soon as the battle began, the contestants initiated the attack.

“Mist of Rain,” “Blinding Strike,” “Chaos,” “Weakness”…

The collaboration of these ten people from numbers 11 to 20 was not a spur-of-the-moment decision. The first wave of attacks was in perfect sync, focusing on control skills.

Moreover, the target was clear, as seven out of the ten control abilities were aimed directly at Guzhentian.

In an instant, the stage was shrouded in smoke and fog.

The audience lost all visibility, even unable to see where the contestants were.

The contestants, however, attacked the same spot amid the enveloping fog.

“Ice Cold Light,” “Fiery Flames Descent,” “Giant Stone Strike”…

Dozens of Advanced Skills bombarded one spot.

Clearly, there was someone among the contestants who was commanding the attack and that person had a clear vision.

Now, Guzhentian was in a passive state quite suddenly.

The arena where the contestants pointed was nearly demolished.

Seeing the terrifying momentum, many in the audience thought Guzhentian might fail again.

Even Gutian below the stage couldn’t help but clench his fists, his face pale as death.

At this moment, he was not the domineering Professional Center bigshot who had once given Lu Wu a hard time.

Instead, he was a father wholly concerned for his son’s well-being.

He had just managed to revive Guzhentian’s spirits, and if his son were to lose again, Gutian did not know what to do; Guzhentian might fall into decadence.

On Guzhentian’s side, as a contestant,

No one knew of Gutian’s concerns, and even if they did, it wouldn’t stop their attacks.

The decision to stand on this platform was made by Guzhentian himself.

Since he chose to stand here and wanted to suppress a generation alone, like Lu Wuyi, that pressure was his to bear.

No one was obliged to lay themselves at the feet of others as stepping stones.

Thus, they focused intently and gathered all their strength, relentlessly attacking Guzhentian.

Ten Senior Summoners, nearly attaining the power of Leader 3 stars, were crazily assaulting Guzhentian.

The might and the power were such that even regular Lord Level Summoned Beasts had to show their mettle, and it was a terrifying and powerful situation that, aside from the Han of Lu Wu’s house, nearly no Summoned Beasts would willingly withstand such an attack.

Naturally, Guzhentian was also unwilling.

But at that moment, he truly had no choice.

Yesterday’s defeat had somewhat affected his state today, and he had utterly failed to anticipate their coordination to be so perfect.

By the time he realized something was amiss, it was too late.

By now, it was too late for him to break free, and he could only barely hold on with the pig’s support.

But if this continued, it wouldn’t be long before he couldn’t hold on any longer.

At most, he could persist for another minute on his side, while his opponent wasn’t likely to relent after just a minute of bombardment.

Therefore, the situation at hand was almost certainly a lost cause for him.

“Am I really going to lose again?”

A deep sense of helplessness washed over him, and Guzhentian, unable to see any hope of victory, gradually started to entertain thoughts of giving up.

Having already lost twice, it seemed he no longer cared about losing once more.

However, just when Guzhentian was about to completely give up,

a roar filled with boundless pride resounded throughout the entire stadium.

“My son Zhen Tian has the makings of a Grandmaster!”

This sudden outburst made Guzhentian pause; he recognized the voice as that of his father,

the phrase he had been told countless times not to mention casually.

Normally, Gutian would avoid saying it in his presence, and to Guzhentian’s surprise, his father had shouted it out loud today in a public setting, especially under these circumstances, leaving Guzhentian feeling both embarrassed and annoyed.

Yet, it seemed as if Gutian was completely unaware of his son’s feelings.

Far from resting on his laurels, he repeated the phrase again and again without stopping.

“My son Zhen Tian has the makings of a Grandmaster!”

“My son Zhen Tian has the makings of a Grandmaster!”

Roar after roar, from full of pride, to full of perseverance, to stubbornness, and then filled with expectations…

Guzhentian could hear the emotional changes in his father’s voice.

He also gradually realized that for Gutian, who was always concerned with face, it must have taken a lot of courage to do such a thing in front of so many people.

“What a headache of a father.

How can you make me give up like this?”

Guzhentian chuckled and shook his head with a grim determination in his eyes as he gently stroked the pig beside him, whispering softly, “We need to step it up, I don’t want to lose face for the old man at home!”

With this murmur from Guzhentian,

he completely abandoned the thought of giving up and his body’s energy burst forth with full force, trying to violently open a defense to create space for his Shanzhai Monkey to counterattack at home.

This momentary burst may have been a return to the light, but it didn’t hold; even he himself was nearly overwhelmed by the backlash due to insufficient power.

Just as his defense was about to fail, at the same time, the bodies of both the pig and the horse beside him exuded the aura of Lord Level, and simultaneously, a powerful force surged into Guzhentian’s body.

The powerful force allowed Guzhentian’s defense to surge with an incredible strength. On the stage, the fighters and Summoned Beasts engrossed in their attack were caught off guard and were pushed back by this thrust.

At the same time, the Shanzhai Monkey had its limbs freed, and with an extended staff, it swept once again, clearing all the remaining competitors off the stage.

This sudden twist stunned everyone.

The audience on the stage and the fighters beneath it were all dumbfounded.

Even Lu Wu, who was drinking milk tea next to Dudu, spat out a mouthful of milk tea.

He looked at Gutian with an incredulous face.

Lu Wu, who knew the situation on the stage best, had thought Guzhentian was about to lose, but who could have foreseen that after Gutian’s shout, Guzhentian’s inner cosmos would erupt?

What kind of situation was this?

In web novels, such treatment is reserved for the protagonist.

Could it be that Guzhentian was actually the protagonist in a web novel?

If that were the case, Lu Wu felt his own situation seemed a bit precarious.

Anxious, Xiao Lu hurriedly took out his phone and anonymously posted a message.

‘What should I do if I accidentally bullied the protagonist of a web novel several times?

Urgent, waiting online!’

Before Lu Wu’s post could get a response,

the smoke on the stage had already cleared away.

Guzhentian stood proudly atop the stage with his pig, horse, and monkey.

At this moment, his face swept clean of any despondency or unease from before, replaced by a tranquility even greater than the day before.

The moment he appeared, he flatly said, “Contestants No. 11 to No. 20 have failed. I invite all remaining contestants to come up to the stage.

Please don’t harbor any false hopes because thanks to those ten contestants, both of my Summoned Beasts have advanced to Lord.”

With these casual words, among the audience, those who were fans of Guzhentian were reignited once more.

Indeed, Guzhentian was the strongest!

And the most excited was none other than Gutian below the stage.

He stood rooted to the spot for a long time before finally coming to his senses, once again saying with immense pride, “My son Zhen Tian has the makings of a Grandmaster!”

Thus, the university tournament’s top 32 battle witnessed its second comeback since the start of the competition.

Guzhentian, who was completely knocked down yesterday,

proved himself once again to the world today with this battle.

Some even believed that if Guzhentian, now with all Lord Level beasts, were to fight Lu Wu once more, the one to lose this time would definitely be Lu Wu.

Of course, there were those who disagreed.

But whether in agreement or not, everyone’s attention was now focused in one direction.

As for the so-called top 32 competition,

nobody cared about it anymore.

No one thought there could be any more twists in this fight.

Without Lu Wu making a move, Guzhentian was unbeatable, wasn’t he?

Right?

Today’s second battle quickly began, with Guzhentian effortlessly defeating 13 contestants, leaving only the three from other regions who hadn’t yet taken action.

And the audience didn’t believe that these three, who hadn’t even summoned their beasts, would be a match for Guzhentian.

If nothing unexpected happened, this year’s university tournament was probably going to end like this.

Jiangnan University would take both first and second place, while the rest fought for rankings below the third position.

However, just as everyone had settled on the script,

the plot made a complete 180-degree turn.

When Guzhentian faced these three people, this genius who had dominated everyone except Lu Wu suddenly knelt down!

One of the three outsiders stepped forward, placed a foot on Guzhentian’s head and shook his head, “Is this the pinnacle of the younger generation from District 1? How should I put it? It’s particularly disappointing!”

# Chapter 306 - 306 303 Four-winged Angel

﻿Chapter 306: 303 Four-winged Angel Chapter 306: 303 Four-winged Angel The university competition round of 32.

In a situation that no one had anticipated, another change occurred.

Guzhentian, who had experienced a sudden breakthrough in power and easily defeated 23 competitors, was expected to clinch the match, but instead, he knelt down.

It was the kind of kneeling that came without warning.

Caught off guard by everyone, he was effortlessly stepped on by an outsider.

The scene was perplexing and infuriating!

What angered them was that this outsider was just too arrogant.

To kill one needs only a nod, even if you are more skilled, is there a need to bully someone like this?

Stepping directly on the forehead.

And listening to his words, was he stepping on Guzhentian?

This was practically stepping on the heads of everyone in the first district.

The audience was furious, and the Summoned Beasts of Guzhentian on stage were equally incensed.

The three Summoned Beasts unleashed their aura with full force, a fearsome power surged forth, heading straight for that guy, wanting to tear him apart.

However, at that moment, the outsider from district eight, Zhao Futu, didn’t even spare them a glance.

Instead, he looked down at Guzhentian under his feet and said, “Referee, sir, would you say that I’ve passed the challenge?”

Almost simultaneously with Zhao Futu’s words, Guzhentian’s three Summoned Beasts collapsed without warning.

Undoubtedly, Guzhentian was defeated again, inexplicably so.

He still had no idea how he had lost.

At this point, he was completely drained of strength, and what made him even angrier was Zhao Futu standing on his head.

This made Guzhentian wish he could kill Zhao Futu, but he was powerless.

What’s more, he had to bow his head and grit his teeth to reply word for word, “Passed!”

When Guzhentian was forced to admit defeat, Zhao Futu glanced around the arena, the corners of his mouth lifting, “What’s that? Speak up, I didn’t hear you!”

At that moment, everyone in the arena was set ablaze by Zhao Futu.

His attitude infuriated the spectators on stage so much that they wished they could tear him apart.

Unfortunately, they could do nothing but watch as Guzhentian, in anger and helplessness, repeated what he had just said.

Zhao Futu’s mouth curved, he took a step back, and looking down at Guzhentian, he shook his head, “That’s it? I thought you’d struggle a bit more. Sigh, you really don’t know how to persist, when just a little more perseverance and the poison in you would have been resolved!”

Almost as soon as Zhao Futu finished speaking, Guzhentian and his Summoned Beasts all regained their vitality.

Strength rushed back to them, and Guzhentian’s pig, horse, and monkey pounced instantly, intent on tearing apart the one who had bullied their master.

In the face of the pig, horse, and monkey, Zhao Futu didn’t move an inch, watching Guzhentian with a mocking expression, completely unresisting.

“Referee, sir, you’re not one of those who, after showing off and losing the match, take revenge on the competitors, are you?”

A single sentence caused Guzhentian’s face to change, and he immediately called off his Summoned Beasts.

“That’s more like it. You have to accept defeat gracefully. You should stand up straight when you get hit. Who asked you to act tough without the skill?

I’m going down first. There are still two more. Have fun.”

Zhao Futu clapped his hands and walked away nonchalantly towards the edge of the arena. As he was about to step down, he suddenly stopped, turned his head toward Guzhentian, and said, “Oh, by the way, you better be psychologically prepared, don’t start crying later!”

With those words, he stepped down from the arena.

Leaving the stage to Guzhentian and the other two outsiders.

“Please!”

At almost the same moment, Saint Engels stood out.

Unlike the clearly Chinese Zhao Futu, this contender’s use of the first district’s language was not fluent, so his speech was straightforward and simple—a single word upon entering the fray.

At the same time, he summoned his own Summoned Beast.

The Human-shaped Summoned Beast with four wings.

When Lu Wu saw it, his jaw dropped in astonishment, “Dudu, come look, it’s an angel!”

His exclamation coincided with Lu Wu seeing the angel’s attributes.

…

Name: Four-winged Angel

Power: 2 stars (Lord)

Quality: King-level (Enhanced)

Attribute: Light

State: Disdain (There’s a strong presence of evil here.)

Weakness: Dark (Moderate)

Skill Talents: Brief

…

Upon seeing the attributes of the angel, Lu Wu vaguely felt sorry for Little Gu, who might just kneel again.

Yes, Lu Wu’s feeling was not wrong; something seemed off with Guzhentian’s state now.

Originally, because of his breakthrough in power, he had completely bought into the evil of Gutian, regaining his original mindset.

Calm, indifferent, he even thought he was at least more outstanding in summoning than Lu Wu, with a bit of disdain for the whole world.

But he hadn’t been boasting for long before he was defeated by Zhao Futu with a bewildering technique.

This was a blow to Guzhentian.

However, clear-eyed people could see that Zhao Futu had defeated him solely because Zhao Futu resorted to underhanded tactics.

Thus, in addition to feeling struck, Guzhentian felt more anger than a sense of inferiority to Zhao Futu.

Now, as Saint Engels from area 3 summoned an angel, Guzhentian suddenly tensed up.

An issue with his emotions arose, and he began to worry that he would lose to Engels.

So, when the opponent’s angel appeared, Guzhentian surprisingly launched an aggressive attack.

On Guzhentian’s side, three Summoned Beasts crazily attacked.

He joined the battle himself.

Intending to take down the opponent with the fastest and most powerful method, he wanted to prove to the audience, to his father, and to Lu Wu that he, Guzhentian, was the strongest.

There are two things that are the biggest taboos in battle.

One is having one’s full capabilities exposed.

The second is launching a hasty assault without a clear understanding of the opponent’s strengths and weaknesses.

Guzhentian, with his unstable mindset, ended up committing both errors.

Under such conditions, the outcome of his battle was almost foreseeable.

Guzhentian furiously attacked for three minutes and didn’t make a dent in breaking through the opponent’s defenses.

The other party gave Guzhentian a feeling of helplessness, like facing an immovable mountain.

This sense of powerlessness further aggravated Guzhentian’s fragile heart.

Gutian realized by now that his son had a mental problem, but there was nothing he could do at the moment.

He had tried, but he couldn’t bring him back.

In the end, he could only watch as Guzhentian was crushed bit by bit by the opponent.

In less than ten minutes, Guzhentian faced his second defeat of the day.

And this time, he was defeated fair and square, face to face.

This defeat hit Guzhentian harder than the last one.

At this moment, Guzhentian began to question his life and was close to reverting to the state he was in yesterday after being defeated by Lu Wu.

And it was far from over.

There was one last competitor on stage, Maeshima Kaori from area 11.

“Come!”

Guzhentian, looking at the remaining Maeshima Kaori with bloodshot eyes, had a somewhat hysterical air about him, clearly on the verge of collapse.

His opponent had clearly noticed something, too.

“Are you sure you want to fight me now?

I can give you time to adjust your state!”

Maeshima Kaori was kind-hearted, but the current Guzhentian in this state would not accept it.

“No need; even now, I can defeat you!”

As Guzhentian uttered these words,

almost everyone clearly knew that Guzhentian was probably going to lose again.

Sure enough, after receiving this reply, Maeshima Kaori said nothing more, calmly made a sealing gesture and bowed, “Please enlighten me!”

The next instant.

Maeshima Kaori vanished from her spot, and when she reappeared at another corner of the arena,

Guzhentian, who had already been pushed to his limits against Saint Engels of area 3, and his three Summoned Beasts all fell down, achieving today’s three consecutive defeats.

However, at this point, Guzhentian was relieved.

He fainted straight away.

So, the matter of the three consecutive defeats was temporarily irrelevant to him.

But the others present couldn’t just faint!

With Guzhentian’s fainting and the three defeats confirmed,

the atmosphere in the Wind Tide Training Ground was oppressively tense.

No one expected that what was supposed to be a joyous competition today would result in such an outcome.

Guzhentian, who was supposed to have had a breakthrough and returned to peak condition, ended up with three consecutive defeats, and all of them were against competitors from other areas.

Plus, with Zhao Futu’s behavior, the onlooking audience felt that Guzhentian had utterly disgraced area 1.

The applause that had been for Guzhentian now turned into cold stares.

In the midst of these endless cold stares, Gutian silently ascended the stage, picked up his son, collected the pig and the horse, left the monkey to nod at Lu Wu, and then strode away.

Gutian’s action drew the audience’s attention to Lu Wu.

That’s right, though Guzhentian had lost, there was still Lu Wu.

Lu Wu could surely defeat those three from the other areas and defend the honor of area 1.

As the audience’s eyes turned to Lu Wu, Zhao Futu, who had just stepped on Guzhentian’s head, approached Lu Wu.

“The two best of the younger generation in area 1, Guzhentian’s quality I have already tested, and it’s nothing remarkable!

As for you, up next I’ll have my test. I’m looking forward to being surprised by your performance; don’t disappoint me too much.

Even if you can’t defeat me, at least hold on longer, show some spine, and don’t kneel before me like the last one. That would put me in a difficult position!”

# Chapter 307 - 307 304 Education Bureau Treasure Trove

﻿Chapter 307: 304 Education Bureau Treasure Trove Chapter 307: 304 Education Bureau Treasure Trove Inside the Wind Tide Training Ground.

While Zhao Futu was showing off, Lu Wu’s eyes were on the Angel, pondering both the Angel’s attribute and gender, completely oblivious to what Zhao Futu, standing ten meters away, was saying.

By the time he snapped to attention, Zhao Futu had finished his act and run off, without giving Lu Wu any chance to respond.

This left Lu Wu feeling extremely frustrated and resentful.

Had he wronged anyone?

Was it simply because he was a little more handsome, a little more talented, a little stronger, a little richer?

Why did it seem like everyone wanted to pick on him for sport?

He was just trying to have a good match, yet Guzhentian had to butt in, and now Zhao Futu had emerged.

Moreover, that girl from District 11 seemed to have glanced back and glared at him as she left.

At this point, Lu Wu really wanted to ask the referee if he could now stop and kill these wretched souls.

Did these people have no decency, daring to glare at him and bully him?

No, wait, wasn’t that a bit too petty?

It should be said that these people were shameless, picking on Little Gu, who was so pitiful. Little Gu had been bullied so terribly yesterday, and just when he had managed to pull himself together today, these inhumane jerks made him retreat into his shell again.

Little Gu was his friend, Lu Wu. Even monkeys were willing to lend Lu Wu their friendship. How could he stand by while his friends were being bullied?

He should decisively kill them!

Unfortunately, as the referee, Guzhentian had already been knocked down by this bunch of wretched souls.

However, even though the referee was down, the staff were still present.

With such an incident occurring during the match, they naturally needed to clean up the aftermath.

Shortly after, someone stepped forward and announced the end of the top 32 competition.

The ones moving forward were Lu Wu, Pang Duddu, Zhao Futu, Saint Engels, and Maeshima Kaori.

The next event would be a fight among five contenders for the top five positions, to be held in three days.

Upon hearing this news, Lu Wu felt confused. Why would it be held three days later?

Couldn’t it be now? Couldn’t it be tomorrow? He was so eager to kill these wretched souls!

What Lu Wu didn’t know was that the Education Bureau had specifically scheduled the match three days later because of him.

The incident in the top 32 match was unexpected by anyone.

Now with Guzhentian kneeling three times in a row, this not only humiliated Guzhentian but also made District 1 lose face.

On their own turf, during such an important competition,  
 Guzhentian, who single-handedly suppressed 30 of District 1’s strongest young fighters, was repeatedly tormented by contenders from three different districts, effectively grinding District 1’s face into the dirt.

Didn’t you see the faces of the live audience turning as dark as the bottom of a pot?

Now, all of District 1’s hopes were pinned on Lu Wu.

They hoped Lu Wu would kill these wretched souls.

But precisely because their hopes were on Lu Wu, some were very anxious.

If Lu Wu could take down those three, District 1 could regain its dignity. But if Lu Wu lost as well, District 1 would truly lose face, and some officials could kiss their hats goodbye.

Therefore, as soon as the match ended, people from the Education Bureau found Lu Wu.

The person who approached seemed to be a leader. He immediately grasped Lu Wu’s hand and asked his most pressing question, “Xiao Lu, how confident are you of winning the competition?”

Lu Wu frowned. How confident? Who were they looking down on?

“I have…”

“This competition is very important to us, no, to our District 1. You must win it!”

Oh, Lu Wu had barely uttered two words before he was interrupted.

Annoyed by the interruption, Lu Wu slapped his chest, “This competition, I have…”

“If you need any help, just ask, and I’ll do my best to satisfy your needs!

I can even let you enter the Education Bureau’s treasury and choose three items to prepare for battle!”

Lu Wu’s words were interrupted again because the leader in front of him was nervous!

This exchange student participating in the competition was his approval. With such an incident happening, how could he not be anxious? In his nerves, he blurted out all his cards, and then he remembered to pay attention to Lu Wu’s thoughts.

“Right, Xiao Lu, what were you trying to say just now?”

Lu Wu was startled at this moment.

What had he just been about to say?

“I have full confidence in defeating my opponents?”

No, that’s not it!

Lu Wu tightly grasped the leader’s hand, looking tremendously agitated, “Leader, I can’t beat them, I need help!”

…

While Lu Wu grabbed the opportunity to freeload treasures from the Education Bureau,  
 elsewhere within Beijing, in the Summoner Professional Center, two people also met due to the day’s unexpected turn in the university competition.

These two were District 11’s young wife, Maeshima Kaori’s master Du Dao Hu Zi, and the highest leader of the Summoner Professional Center, Xing Zhanlong.

After learning about the incident that occurred during the university competition, Xing Zhanlong’s brows slightly furrowed, and he gently tapped the desk, “It seems that our opponent has realized that he has exposed himself, which is why he has made such a high-profile move.”

“Isn’t this perfect?” sniffed Du Dao Hu Zi, “Since he has exposed himself so blatantly, you can now take direct action against him.”

Hearing this, Xing Zhanlong shook his head repeatedly.

“It’s not that simple. The other party’s move is particularly clever.

Now that Guzhentian has been defeated and the public’s emotions have been stirred up by him, it’s not going to be easy for us to take him down.

Not to mention, we don’t have concrete evidence to prove his identity.

Even if we had concrete evidence, the people from the Education Bureau or the Alliance wouldn’t let us make a move.

And even if they did let me make a move, I’d hesitate for a long while.”

“After all, if we move against him now, it will come out that we in District 1 have no one, that we can’t beat him in a fair competition, and can only resort to such despicable methods.

Then, the reputation of District 1 would be completely lost.

So, even with conclusive evidence, we must wait for him to finish the competition before we make a move.

It’s even possible that we won’t be able to make a move after the competition!”

At this, Xing Zhanlong paused before continuing, “If the result of this match is that Lu Wu wins,  
 then there’s nothing to say; we’ll do what we need to do. But if the result is that Lu Wu loses, we’ll have to consider the impact before we do anything on our side.”

Hearing this, Du Dao Hu Zi frowned.

“From this perspective, he’s intentionally trying to draw high-profile attention, isn’t he?”

“Correct, without a doubt that must be the case. Furthermore…”

Xing Zhanlong tapped the table, pondered carefully, and continued, “On one hand, his move must be a risky one he’s resorted to because he realized he’d been exposed, and on the other, there must be something else behind it.

He deliberately came from another district, putting a lot of effort into participating in the university competition for a purpose, and his sudden high profile, apart from self-preservation, must also be related to his goal.

Although we still don’t know what his target is, if he’s planning something, it’s very likely that he will act during the finals, and there’s a high chance he will make a move against Lu Wu then.

To use Lu Wu as a leverage to achieve a certain goal.”

“What’s his objective?” Du Dao Hu Zi asked further, “Have you found any clues after all this investigation?”

“Nothing. That’s also one of the biggest reasons why I don’t want to act now.

This group of people wouldn’t normally enter District 1, let alone come to Beijing. If they’ve come, it definitely involves an incredible secret.”

And so, Xing Zhanlong was reluctant to act prematurely and scare them off.

He wanted to unearth that secret, or maybe that Thunder, as much as possible.

But with the current situation, they could only play it by ear.

…

Meanwhile.

In another hotel.

A young man was quietly savoring a glass of wine.

His eyes gazed at the Phoenix Nest Training Ground in the distance, the corners of his mouth curled slightly upwards.

In a dim shadow, a figure quietly stood and coldly said to the youth in front of him, “With the situation as it is, you can still smile?”

“Why shouldn’t I smile?”

“You’re playing with fire right now! You have no idea how dangerous District 1 is. One misstep, and you could die here!”

“Danger in District 1, huh?”

The young man looked at the scenery outside the window and drained his cup of wine.

A pleased smile gradually spread across his face, “I love danger the most. I do hope that, as the strongest district, it won’t disappoint me.”

The figure in the shadows, upon hearing this, shook their head at the expression on the face of the youth in front of them, unable to hold back a sigh.

They no longer bothered with this madman.

“Have it your way then but don’t expect me to save you if things go south. I won’t stick my neck out for you.”

With that said, the figure in the shadows disappeared into the darkness.

In the large room, only the figure by the window remained, gazing down with a face eerily flushed with excitement, whispering softly to himself, “Death is like the wind, always by my side!”

…

The outside world was turbulent with change.

But to Lu Wu, these whirlwinds didn’t seem to matter much.

He was an outsider, or rather, someone who had accidentally gotten caught up in the mess, ignorant of the whole situation.

Nor did he want to know; what he really wanted to find out was what the Education Bureau’s treasury contained.

Yes, thanks to the Education Bureau’s leaders’ maneuvering, Lu Wu suddenly felt that Zhao Futu and his group were quite adorable.

If it weren’t for them, even if Lu Wu had taken the championship in the university competition, he probably wouldn’t have had the chance to enter the Education Bureau’s treasury.

Not to mention having the choice of four items.

Yes, four items. Lu Wu bargained for an extra item.

So Lu Wu’s mood was exceptionally good at the moment.

On his way there, he was nearly hopping with joy, forming a striking contrast to the seriously mooded leader beside him.

Lu Wu glanced at Old Zhang’s nervousness and couldn’t help but feel for him; he patted the old man’s shoulder, “Old Zhang, relax. Once I get your items, I’ll make sure everything is taken care of!”

The other party responded with a smile uglier than crying.

At the same time, the old man opened the door to the treasure vault.

The moment the door opened, a vault full of light almost blinded Lu Wu’s eyes.

Tears of greed rolled uncontrollably down his cheeks…

# Chapter 308 - 308 305 Spiritual Fruit

﻿Chapter 308: 305 Spiritual Fruit Chapter 308: 305 Spiritual Fruit Speaking of treasure vaults, Lu Wu had once visited the vault at Jiangnan University.

However, the first time Lu Wu went there, practically everything valuable had been sold off by Old Zhang, leaving hardly any items.

Afterward, when Lu Wu took over Jiangnan University, he could easily access the vault.

But those inside were mostly earned by Lu Wu himself, and lacking legendary quality items, he didn’t get particularly emotional coming and going.

So it seems, browsing someone else’s treasure vault is the real thrill.

Like right now.

As soon as Lu Wu entered the Education Bureau’s vault, he was all excited.

In the entire vault, the lowest quality items were all at gold level, and there was no shortage of legendary quality stuff.

Gazing upon such a treasure trove, Lu Wu felt as if he were dreaming and couldn’t help asking a nearby leader, “I can just pick anything I want from here, right?”

“Yes, but you can only choose four items!”

The leader, a bit uneasy, added, “Would you like me to recommend a few things?”

Lu Wu shook his head decisively.

“No need, no need, there’s no need to be so polite. I’ll treat this place like my own home!”

I didn’t ask you to treat this place like your own home!

The leader was internally spewing blood, but at that moment, Lu Wu obviously had no time to care whether the leader was internally bleeding.

Now he really did treat the vault as if it were his own home.

He began to wander around inside it.

Hmm, this Education Bureau’s vault is evidently larger and more official than Jiangnan University’s.

Everything inside had a record.

The level of the items, their uses, quantities – there was a specific booklet for all of that.

Lu Wu took the booklet and cross-referenced everything in the vault, and by the time he finished, his eyes were bloodshot.

Standing at the entrance, he racked his brains.

How many years would robbing the Education Bureau’s vault get you?

If he were caught, could his family get him out? And with his physic, could he withstand a beating from Old Lu?

In the end, Lu Wu gave up the unrealistic idea.

He responsibly began selecting four items that belonged to him.

After making a round, he had some idea of what to pick for himself.

After going over it a few times in his head, Lu Wu finally made his choice and walked out with four items.

…

Item: Spiritual Fruit

Quality: Legendary

Effect: Contains extremely pure and gentle energy that can steadily and harmlessly enhance a person’s physical attributes.

…

Lu Wu had picked this fruit for Dudu.

Speaking of which, Dudu hadn’t slimmed down much since the last time.

Not sure whether it was harder to go from 140 to 120 or what, but it’s been almost a year, and the points equivalent Dudu has eaten is approaching a million without losing weight.

Lu Wu figured it might be an issue of energy purity.

If that’s the case, Dudu should be able to slim down after consuming this fruit.

Besides the Spiritual Fruit, Lu Wu also took three more items.

…

Item: Mysterious Iron Ore (500 pounds)

Quality: Legendary

Description: An excellent forging material, can be used to make equipment.

…

Item: Thunder Stone

Quality: Legendary

Description: A forging talent item that can imbue equipment with Thunder Attribute abilities.

…

Lu Wu had picked these two items together.

He planned to use these two materials as the main ingredients to forge a piece of equipment for himself.

Yes, for himself!

Lu Wu had learned Skyward Strike, and Little Gu’s Shanzhai Monkey was lying in the lab waiting for Lu Wu’s return and favor.

Without any hitches, Lu Wu should be able to learn another Inheritance Skill from the Shanzhai Monkey, called Sky Dominating Stick, in a short period.

In that case, what Lu Wu would be missing is a handy piece of equipment for himself.

Although it would be possible to use Little Skeleton’s Bone Staff, the staff was one-of-a-kind, and if Lu Wu took it, Little Skeleton would be left without.

Thus, Lu Wu seized this opportunity to get some materials and make some equipment for himself.

The last item left Lu Wu somewhat hesitant.

He wasn’t sure whether to get something for Dudu to patch him up, or to find some herbs or the like.

As Lu Wu hesitated, a leader came over and recommended an item to him.

…

Item: Mysterious Box

Quality: ???

Description: It cannot be opened due to a missing key. However, even without opening it, this box’s quality is priceless.

…

When Lu Wu saw the item, his eyes immediately brightened.

“Alright, let’s take this as the last one!”

With that, Lu Wu picked out four items and hurried back with Dudu.

After all, Lu Wu had a lot to do next.

He needed to help Dudu slim down, learn Sky Dominating Stick, and forge a piece of equipment.

He wasn’t sure if three days would be enough.

After returning to his lodging, Lu Wu fell into deep thought.

He wondered whether he should prioritize helping Dudu slim down. If he put that first, Lu Wu was worried that he might not have time for anything else.

But if not…

Having finally found a hope for Dudu to slim down, Lu Wu was itching to see it happen.

After all, it had been a long time since he saw his “beautiful wife.”

After some hesitation, Lu Wu finally fed the Spiritual Fruit to Dudu and then excitedly waited for him to slim down, rubbing his hands together.

Ten minutes passed.

Twenty minutes passed.

An hour went by in the blink of an eye, and Dudu showed no changes. Lu Wu was stunned.

“Even a ‘Legendary Level’ fruit doesn’t work?”

Lu Wu started to panic, wondering if he would ever see his “beautiful wife” again in his lifetime.

In his anxiety, Lu Wu took out Dudu’s attributes and studied them repeatedly.

…

Name: Pang Dudu

Power: Senior Summoner (Leader 3-star Combat Power)

Mastered Skills: Combat Form (Master Level), Gravity (Master Level) (Tuantuan)

Healing Skill (Master Level), Heart of Wood Spirit (Master Level) (Green Cub)

Special Skill: Bonds Growth (Charging Energy)

Summoner Talent: Unawakened

…

Lu Wu studied Dudu’s attributes until he was blue in the face, but still turned up with no results.

“Where did it go wrong?”

Lu Wu couldn’t figure it out.

But with no alternative, he temporarily set aside the matter with Dudu and, feeling dejected, left to go spoil Little Gu’s family’s Shanzhai Monkey.

Lu Wu’s research with the Shanzhai Monkey went much smoother than it had with Dudu.

Although the progress in learning Sky Dominating Stick was slower than Skyward Strike, it only took half a day for Lu Wu to easily handle it.

After mastering the skill, Lu Wu took Little Skeleton to a training room to test his hand.

Because last time Lu Wu had tried out Skyward Strike, the top training rooms in Beijing were about to blacklist him.

After all, no one’s training rooms can withstand that kind of turmoil.

But Lu Wu was about to head into battle for his district, wasn’t he?

Not wanting to hold Lu Wu back, a training field eventually let him in to try out his moves, holding their noses.

When Lu Wu came out of the highest-quality training room half a day later,

The owner had already braced for a complete overhaul. As it turned out, they entered and found the training room spotlessly clean, as if nothing had happened.

This made the owner suspect the true purpose of Lu Wu bringing Little Skeleton and the Loli Bone Dragon to the training field.

If Lu Wu wasn’t competing in a couple of days, the owner would likely have called the “police” then and there.

After returning from the training field, Lu Wu took Dudu to the Professional Center headquarters.

After acquiring a batch of items worth a million points, Lu Wu locked himself in the Cultivation Master lab and started to forge equipment.

As Lu Wu was forging his very first piece of equipment,

Elsewhere, at the Summoner Professional Center, Xing Zhanlong received news.

Lu Wu had taken a treasure chest from the Education Bureau’s treasury.

“Fox, you’ve finally shown your hand!”

…

Interlude.

Also, those gentlemen who called out to the senior sister in the last chapter, you know your stuff!!!

# Chapter 309 - 309 306 all of you go at once

﻿Chapter 309: 306 all of you go at once! Chapter 309: 306 all of you go at once! Three days flew by in a flash.

The top five matches of the university competition officially began.

Early in the morning, the Phoenix Nest Training Ground was packed with spectators.

These viewers were all carrying anger and expectation.

It was clear they were all frustrated by Zhao Futu three days prior and were hoping that today Lu Wu would put on a thrilling performance, crushing that group of wretched youths.

As for Lu Wu,

his mood was clearly not very good.

The past two days, he had been working on crafting equipment.

He planned to forge a piece of Legendary Level equipment for himself.

But after two days of effort, two core materials of Legendary Quality were put to use, and in the end, he had only managed to produce a piece of equipment of Golden Quality.

…

Equipment: Heaven Suppressing Stick

Quality: Gold

Effects: Flexible, extremely hard, highly conductive

Evaluation: Despite using the finest materials, the stick failed to reach Legendary status.

You should reflect on whether something went wrong somewhere.

…

This was the equipment Lu Wu managed to produce after two days, using up two Legendary Quality items.

For the first time, Lu Wu began to doubt his own abilities.

If it weren’t for today’s competition, he would really have liked to lock himself in the Cultivation Room to thoroughly investigate the stick.

Even upon arriving at the competition venue, Lu Wu didn’t forget to study the thing.

He really did figure out what the issue was.

“It must be a problem with the polishing time.

Two days was too hasty to polish this equipment properly. If I’d had two more days, this piece would most likely have become Legendary.

Instead of being stuck at Gold as it is now.”

Realizing this was the issue, Lu Wu was eager to return.

Now with the competition and all, Lu Wu had pushed it to one side; his mind was set on working on the stick.

While Lu Wu was constantly caressing the stick in his hands, the security system within the Phoenix Nest Training Ground was being quietly replaced.

The security work for the Phoenix Nest Training Ground should have been maintained by people from the Education Bureau.

Now, they had been replaced by staff from the Summoner Professional Center.

Not only that, but the Feng Chao also welcomed many big shots.

Xing Zhanlong from the Summoner Professional Center personally oversaw the proceedings, and a good number of the upper echelon from his Professional Center also arrived.

One could say half the strength of the Summoner Professional Center was deployed within the Phoenix Nest Training Ground.

This showed how much importance they placed on today’s match.

Or perhaps it would be more accurate to say, the importance they placed on a certain individual in today’s match.

“President, the preparations are complete!

They have also arrived.”

Half an hour before the start of the match, the Summoner Professional Center’s preparations were done ahead of time.

A huge net was constructed, ready to ensnare.

With everything in place, Xing Zhanlong’s side was now ready for the drama to unfold.

Beside Xing Zhanlong, a leader from the Education Bureau suggested.

“Do we need to give Lu Wu a heads-up, so he can be a bit more careful?”

“Let’s not, to avoid startling the snake in the grass,” Xing Zhanlong shook his head and rejected the suggestion.

Bait was always more tempting when it was unaware.

With Xing Zhanlong acting as the chief commander and stating no notification should be made, Lu Wu naturally wouldn’t receive any information.

And so, completely unaware and not understanding anything, he inexplicably became the so-called bait.

But that wasn’t the most inexplicable part.

What was truly baffling was that as Lu Wu sat in his seat playing with his stick, someone suddenly came up to him.

The person stood in front of him, looking down on him: “Kid, lift your head, don’t look so down and out. You’re representing District One in battle today; I expect you to buck up and not lose face for our district.”

At that moment, Lu Wu was stunned.

“Sorry, but who are you?”

Lu Wu was puzzled, and so was Xing Zhanlong.

“What’s going on? How did this dandy come over here?”

As the bait for today’s operation, Xing Zhanlong naturally kept a close watch; he needed to be aware of anyone appearing by Lu Wu’s side.

The man standing in front of Lu Wu at that moment was Fei Yun, whose father was a high-ranking official in the Education Bureau and whose grandfather was a member of the Elder Council.

With a distinguished background, the man was notorious for being a wastrel in Beijing, known for all kinds of bad behavior—nothing egregiously wicked, but plenty of petty evils nonetheless, like brazen bullying and stealing love through intimidation.

Seeing this man appear by Lu Wu’s side, Xing Zhanlong became incredibly tense.

He worried that this fool would provoke Lu Wu, bringing uncertainties to today’s operation.

Fortunately,

what Xing Zhanlong feared didn’t come to pass.

Fei Yun did not truly provoke Lu Wu; despite being a wastrel, he wasn’t stupid.

Knowing the kind of entity Lu Wu was, provoking him would mean a beating when he got home.

So he merely stood in front of Lu Wu to flaunt his presence and sense of superiority before quickly moving away.

Then he returned to his cronies to boast.

But his appearance as this little interlude couldn’t be ignored by Xing Zhanlong, who immediately ordered an investigation into why Fei Yun came over and why he had contact with Lu Wu.

The results came back quickly.

“Fei Yun came here because he was invited by Zhang Yunzhi, and the sudden visit to Lu Wu was also due to Zhang Yunzhi’s saying that Lu Wu looked downhearted. He wanted Fei Yun to go over and give Lu Wu a boost!”

“Is this what you call giving a boost?”

His subordinate didn’t speak, and Xing Zhanlong had thought that guy went over to pick a fight.

And, as his subordinate’s message was delivered,

Xing Zhanlong also had an idea of why Fei Yun had shown up out of the blue.

That Zhang Yunzhi was the grandson of the leader who brought Lu Wu into the Education Bureau’s treasure vault three days ago.

Obviously, that idiot was being used as a pawn by someone.

“If things go as expected, they must be using some method to test through Fei Yun whether that box is on Lu Wu.”

With this, Xing Zhanlong further confirmed the purpose of that group of people.

“I wondered why they would participate in the university league, and why they wouldn’t back down even after being exposed. It really is for that box.

It seems they’re very likely to act today.”

After further confirmation of the opponent’s purpose, Xing Zhanlong became more confident in his actions for the day.

At the same time, his evaluation of Lu Wu lowered somewhat.

“Looking at his track record of growth, I originally had some expectations for him.

Now it seems he’s indeed his father’s son.

Even if he has an astonishing talent for cultivation, it doesn’t keep him from having muscles for brains; he probably doesn’t even know how many people are using him as pawn right now.”

…

Over at Lu Wu’s side, he had just bewilderingly sent Fei Yun on his way.

Shortly after, another staff member came looking for him.

This time the staff member was quite polite, but they discussed topics that Lu Wu didn’t want to hear.

The person hinted very tactfully that today’s matches had already been arranged, asking Lu Wu to cooperate with them.

They also briefly explained to Lu Wu the arranged matchups.

It was Dudu against Maeshima Kaori, a foreigner from District 3 against Zhao Futu from District 8, and Lu Wu got a bye.

The whole match was clearly arranged by the leaders of the Education Bureau.

It was nice-sounding at first, saying that the match hoped for Lu Wu, the hope of District 1, but now he was simply reduced to being a tool.

“Do you really look down on me that much?”

“We’re doing this for the greater good, please cooperate, Master Lu.”

After saying this, the staff member left.

Leaving Lu Wu there, shaking his head for a while.

“What the hell is this?!”

…

The competition swiftly began.

The leader of the Education Bureau took the stage to deliver the opening speech.

Xing Zhanlong sat at the back, commanding the entire Phoenix Nest Training Ground from behind the scenes, including the match-fixing.

It could be said that everything was within his grasp.

He was advancing all according to his plan.

Soon, the Education Bureau leader finished speaking.

The top five competition referees took to the stage.

“The top five competition officially begins, and now we invite the five contestants to the stage.”

The referee’s words pushed the atmosphere of the match to its peak.

Lu Wu’s name echoed throughout the arena.

Amid the cheers from the audience, Lu Wu, accompanied by Dudu, stepped onto the stage, followed by the three contestants from outside districts.

However, they didn’t get to enjoy that kind of applause and cheer.

For the audience to remain silent was already quite polite.

With the top five contestants on stage,

Five spheres appeared on the virtual screen behind the arena.

“Now please choose a sphere from the screen behind you, and the upcoming matches will be assigned based on the numbers on the spheres.

Number 1 will fight against Number 2, while Number 3 will face Number 4. Number 5 gets a bye!

Please make your selections.”

After the referee finished explaining the rules,

The contestants from outside districts promptly reached out; Maeshima Kaori drew Number 2, while the other two got Number 3 and Number 4.

Five contestants were left, with only Lu Wu and Dudu yet to draw.

However, even though they hadn’t drawn yet, the audience already began to cheer.

Because no matter what they drew, this result in front of them was the best possible outcome.

Clearly, the contestants knew this too. Zhao Futu glanced at the screen with a smirk, then turned to Lu Wu, who hadn’t made his selection yet, and urged, “Kid, go for it. What are you hesitating for? Isn’t this all laid out clearly for you?

Don’t worry, no matter what you draw it’ll be a bye.”

Amidst the opponent’s mocking, Lu Wu reached out and tapped the screen, and indeed, as expected, out came the Number 5 bye sphere.

“See, I told you, it’s definitely a bye.”

Zhao Futu’s face was full of mockery as he jeered, “The District 1 competition is really fair, huh!”

As soon as Zhao Futu spoke, the arena immediately boiled over, with the audience filled with righteous indignation.

But when they actually wanted to say something, they found they were at a loss for words, because Lu Wu drawing a bye truly carried a strong scent of match-fixing.

They couldn’t refute it.

On the other hand, Lu Wu turned his head over to Zhao Futu, “Do you object to this draw?”

“I? No complaints. A bye is a bye. In the end, you’ll still kneel before me, let you stand a little longer…”

“Boom!”

Zhao Futu hadn’t finished speaking when a flash of lightning erupted with a thunderous noise, and the screen behind shattered into pieces.

The one who made the move was Lu Wu.

With a single strike that demolished the screen, Lu Wu said indifferently, “You have no issues with the draw, but I do. There’s no need for any drawing now, and no need for two or three rounds. All three of you, come up at once!”

# Chapter 310 - 310 307 Maeshima Kaoris Summoned Beast

﻿Chapter 310: 307 Maeshima Kaori’s Summoned Beast Chapter 310: 307 Maeshima Kaori’s Summoned Beast Phoenix Nest Training Ground.

As Lu Wu yelled, “All of you, come at me together.”

Different people present experienced different feelings at that moment.

Ordinary spectators, especially Lu Wu’s fans, thought Lu Wu’s words exuded an aggressive charm.

It made them feel uplifted and vindicated.

Some more rational spectators, as well as the Education Bureau, felt that Lu Wu’s actions were too rash.

Xing Zhanlong shook his head.

Further confirming the judgment that Lu Wu was all muscles in his head.

All of them at once?

What was he thinking?

Did he think he was facing ordinary contestants?

Were they top 32 contestants? Were they the same caliber as Guzhentian’s competitors?

Even if it were Guzhentian, once all of Guzhentian’s summoned beasts advanced to lords, Lu Wu might not even be able to defeat him, let alone these three, each capable of beating Guzhentian.

Lu Wu might stand a chance against one of them, but one against three?

Wasn’t this just seeking abuse?

“It seems he’s got a bit too big-headed!” Xing Zhanlong shook his head, quietly watching how the Education Bureau would handle the situation without any intention of intervening.

After all, for Xing Zhanlong,

his main objective was to grab someone, how this competition played out was Lu Wu and the Education Bureau’s business.

And naturally, the Education Bureau would not let Lu Wu wreak havoc.

On the stage, the referee immediately said, “Student Lu Wu, the competition has its rules and regulations, please respect them!”

Beside him, Zhao Futu chimed in, “Right, if you want to manipulate, just do some manipulation back stage, which is not disgraceful but just not honorable.

If it’s like that one three days ago, trying to act tough and getting slapped in the face instead, that would be a total disgrace!”

Zhao Futu was particularly good at fanning the flames, his insinuating comments worsened Lu Wu’s already sour mood, darkening his expression.

Seeing this, the referee quickly stepped closer and whispered by Lu Wu’s side, “Don’t get angry, consider the bigger picture…”

Unexpectedly, Lu Wu directly turned to ask him, “What bigger picture?”

The referee was stunned, and before he could organize his words, Lu Wu added another sentence.

“Either you go down, and the three of them fight me, or I go down, and you watch them fight, you decide!”

The first sentence, Lu Wu had lowered his voice so only the referee could hear.

But the volume of this sentence was enough for the entire stadium to hear clearly.

This left the referee utterly helpless, while Zhao Futu’s eyes lit up, seizing the opportunity to continue provoking, “Good, that’s imposing, I admire…”

“Can you please shut up?”

Lu Wu turned around and politely used the word ‘please’.

Unfortunately, Zhao Futu didn’t understand the word ‘polite’, and with a sneer, continued provocatively, “What, is district 1 this domineering that you don’t even let people talk…”

“Slap!”

Before Zhao Futu could finish his sentence, a flash of lightning and a slap violently struck his face.

The violent slap knocked him to the ground.

Only after being struck down did Zhao Futu realize what happened, his expression changed as he tried to get up, but then a foot, sparkling with lightning, stepped on his forehead, pressing him to the ground like a dead dog.

Simultaneously, Lu Wu’s ice-cold and utterly imposing voice rang out.

“You are right, this is how domineering district 1 is, this is how domineering I am; on this stage, without my permission, you cannot even speak.”

This sudden change silenced the entire stadium.

Nobody expected Lu Wu to suddenly explode.

nor did they expect Zhao Futu, who had easily made Guzhentian kneel three days ago, to be so simply and directly suppressed by Lu Wu’s strong presence.

At that moment, even Xing Zhanlong’s eyebrows involuntary twitched.

However, compared to Lu Wu, he was more concerned about the person beneath Lu Wu’s foot.

And for Zhao Futu, who was under Lu Wu’s foot, his face only showed humiliation, devoid of any other emotion.

Xing Zhanlong couldn’t help but praise, this man truly had good acting skills, such a good temperament and yet he didn’t show the slightest flaw.

Meanwhile, on Lu Wu’s side.

While standing on Zhao Futu’s foot, he turned to look at the referee.

“Can you go down now?”

The referee hesitated, but below the stage, the audience’s voices had already begun to rise.

“Go down!” “Go down!” “Go down!”

Evidently, Lu Wu’s actions had given the audience great confidence.

They now believed Lu Wu could take on three, naturally siding with him.

The referee had no choice but ultimately had to go down with Dudu, leaving the current stage to Lu Wu.

After the referee left, Lu Wu kicked Zhao Futu to the side.

And then stretched lazily.

Lu Wu was really suffocated today; he encountered various frustrations and mishaps.

First, there was equipment trouble.

Then out of nowhere came Fei Yun.

And then the murky issues with the Education Bureau…

…

Everything made Lu Wu exceptionally frustrated, but now it was a relief: “Finally, I can make a big scene unrestrained!”

While stretching lazily, Lu Wu waved to the three people opposite: “Come on, bring it on!”

Yet, although Lu Wu waved, the three opposite did not budge.

Maeshima Kaori didn’t move, neither did Saint Engels from Area 3, and even Zhao Futu, who had just been humiliated by Lu Wu, remained unusually silent. None of the three made a move this moment due to various reasons—some due to the complexity of the match, reluctance to join forces, or secrets they held; thus, at this moment, none of them took action.

“None of you will make a move, huh?

Fine, if you won’t, I will.”

Saying this, Lu Wu summoned all his beasts.

Instantly, three underlings from Lu Wu’s house plus sixteen from Little Skeleton’s crew were all in place, forming an almost twenty-person (beast) army in a moment.

“Attack!”

At Lu Wu’s command, Little Skeleton with his crew charged towards the one in Area 2.

Hanhan and Little Flood Dragon advanced towards Maeshima Kaori.

Lu Wu and Indeks did not move; they just stood by, watching the action, showing no intention of bothering Zhao Futu.

On the other side, perhaps due to the slap that changed his persona or something else, Zhao Futu also seemed remarkably low-profile at the moment.

Meanwhile, as Lu Wu launched his attack, Maeshima Kaori and the one from Area 2 also summoned their beasts.

There’s no need to mention the one from Area 2, as it was the Four-winged Angel, but the beast summoned by Maeshima Kaori was different, one that Lu Wu had never seen before.

Lu Wu wasn’t even sure if it should be called a beast, for the summoned creature was actually a blade.

…

Name: Demon Blade Blood Tears (Second Evolution)

Power: 1 Star (Lord)

Attribute: Blood, Demon Blade

State: Slaughter (Slaughter…)

Weakness: Divine Artifact (Moderately strong)

Basic Skills: Slaughter Sword Skill (Master)

Advanced Skill: Heart of Slaughter (Master)

Killing Move: Slaughter Intent (Mastered)

Talent: Slaughter Growth (Passive) (With every enemy killed, both the Summoned Beast and Summoner’s power increase, the more killed, the greater the boost.)

Devouring Master (Passive) (Every so often, it initiates a backlash against its summoner. If endured, the summoner’s power increases; if not, the summoner becomes a puppet of the summoned beast.)

…

When Lu Wu saw the attributes of this beast, he couldn’t help but squint his eyes.

It was his first time seeing such a wicked Summoned Beast, feeling even more wicked than Evil Summoners; yet, this type of Summoned Beast seemed to be highly sought-after in District 11; indeed, people in District 11 have fun in abundance.

Moreover, Lu Wu also noticed that Maeshima Kaori’s attributes were extraordinary.

…

Name: Maeshima Kaori

Power: Master Level Summoner (Lord 1 Star combat power)

Mastered Skills: Slaughter Sword Skill (Master), Heart of Slaughter (Master), Slaughter Intent (Master)

Poison Island Swordsmanship (Mastered)

Summoner Talent: Heart Lake Calm (Active) (Allows oneself or the Summoned Beast to remain absolutely calm)

…

Maeshima Kaori’s talent, which would be trash in others, in her it was a divine skill.

With this talent, this woman didn’t have to worry about being affected by the sword at all.

It ensured her absolute safety.

Her opponents, however, had to face a killer with an absolutely calm mind.

Lu Wu could already foresee how terrifying this woman’s combat power could be.

Right then, as Hanhan just reached this woman, he was immediately slashed by her, losing one wing.

While one might call others a one-armed hero.

Hanhan had become a one-winged bird.

But the danger didn’t end there for Hanhan; after Maeshima Kaori chopped off his wing, she followed with another slash, cutting open Hanhan’s neck.

Though this action left her half body frozen by Hanhan’s “Cold Ice Body” passive, it didn’t matter.

Less than a minute into the battle.

Lu Wu’s top combat power, Hanhan, lay defeated.

And Lu Wu didn’t just face a setback on Maeshima Kaori’s side.

On another front, Little Skeleton was also in a tough spot.

He had just charged into Engels when the Four-winged Angel spread its wings, sending out holy light like waves, which caused all of Little Skeleton Army other than Little Skeleton to emit black smoke, experiencing varying degrees of decay or, to put it another way, purification.

Even though Little Skeleton wasn’t purified, it, too, was clearly struggling, forced to halt its charge amidst the light.

Both fronts facing setbacks.

For the spectators watching, Lu Wu’s start to the battle was tension-filled!

# Chapter 311 - 311 308 Advanced (Subscription Request)

﻿Chapter 311: 308 Advanced (Subscription Request) Chapter 311: 308 Advanced (Subscription Request) Phoenix Nest Training Ground.

As soon as a battle was lost, the “Mouth King” appeared.

“Wrong, wrong!”

“Lu Wu made a mistake in this decision!”

“He shouldn’t have let Little Skeleton face the Four-winged Angel, and he shouldn’t have let Jiao Long and the bird face the woman from District 11; he should have switched their opponents!”

…

However, what they said wasn’t exactly wrong.

In terms of attribute suppression, Lu Wu definitely shouldn’t have let Little Skeleton face the Four-winged Angel.

It made Little Skeleton fight entirely in a passive state.

As soon as Little Skeleton went up with its minions, it was forced to call them back.

There was no choice; in the angel’s radiant light, if it didn’t call back its minions, there was no need to even fight—the Leader-Level minions would all kneel.

With the minions withdrawn, Little Skeleton’s “Skeleton Commander” talent couldn’t be used.

Without its burst skills, Little Skeleton was just a Leader 3-Star little guy. Asking it to fight a Lord 2-Star angel was just making things difficult for poor Little Skeleton.

Indeed, Lu Wu’s intention was to make things difficult for Little Skeleton.

These guys had always been unruly, picking up all sorts of bad habits.

For example, every time they burst forth, they needed to smash a cellphone or something similar as if Lu Wu’s existence affected their output.

Lu Wu could not stand it anymore.

So, when Little Skeleton could no longer fight, it immediately turned to look at Lu Wu.

The pleading look in its fiery eyes seemed to say, ‘Lu Wu, I can’t beat him, come over and die for me!’

Could Lu Wu endure this? He had to cure Little Skeleton and the others of this annoying habit.

“Little Skeleton, what are you standing there for? Get in there!”

(Little Skeleton can’t beat it, and it really hates getting close to it!)

This little guy was quite the charmer; pulling back its minions made Lu Wu come over, asking for comfort and protection. But all Lu Wu offered was a merciless kick.

“If you won’t fight, then who will? Get in there!”

Lu Wu’s kick was fierce, sending it crashing towards the opposing angel.

Little Skeleton hadn’t even recovered when the angel appeared right in front of it.

Startled, Little Skeleton instinctively pulled out its long spear, launching a “Thunder Spear.”

Truth be told, the flashing “Thunder Spear” looked quite impressive. Still, due to the vast difference in strength, Little Skeleton’s strike not only failed to cause any damage but was also seized by the angel’s hand.

In fact, at that moment, the angel could have easily slapped Little Skeleton to smithereens with a backhand slap.

But the angel did not.

Because the angel didn’t consider this so-called 1 versus 3 valid, there was simply no intention to strike.

Their strategy against Little Skeleton was to defend without attacking.

Just seizing Little Skeleton’s spear was enough.

But Little Skeleton didn’t know this!

This was the first time someone had caught its attack so handily, and the opponent was someone it greatly detested, one who suppressed it.

Additionally, it seemed that Lu Wu from its home had also turned bad.

Clearly unable to defeat its opponent, Lu Wu still wouldn’t let Indeks take action and even kicked it over.

Little Skeleton felt that Lu Wu must not love it anymore.

Fear, resentment, various emotions surged, triggering Little Skeleton, who was already on the brink of advancement, to suddenly ascend.

Terrifying thunder and lightning unexpectedly surged from Little Skeleton’s frame.

“Dragon Bone Power” was activated by Little Skeleton instantly.

The phantasm of the Bone Dragon appeared behind Little Skeleton, boosting its combat power in just a flash.

The angel, who had easily seized Little Skeleton’s spear, was forced to let go.

And as the angel released its hold, Little Skeleton unleashed its most ferocious attack.

After all, it felt wronged, it was angry.

Lu Wu had turned bad, but since it couldn’t attack Lu Wu, it could only vent its anger on the angel.

Consequently, the battle situation on Little Skeleton’s side marked a ‘turnaround’ thanks to its fierce attacks and the angel’s defensive strategy. This surprised and delighted the audience, prompting the “Mouth King” to start chattering.

“I was just saying, something simple like attribute suppression that even elementary students understand can’t possibly escape Lu Wu’s knowledge—he is the historically most freakish Master Level Cultivation Master. His battle assignment must certainly hold a deeper purpose.”

“There you go, Little Skeleton’s strength has evidently advanced.”

“Lu Wu was really playing a grand game. With this, does Maeshima Kaori’s situation coordinated by Lu Wu also hold more profound significance?”

“Probably not on this side, as Lu Wu’s house’s bird wings got chopped off and its neck was slashed open. Although it still seems alive, such severe injuries won’t heal quickly.”

Just when the audience mentioned this, the situation at Maeshima Kaori’s side changed.

With two slashes, Maeshima Kaori repressed her slaughter intent and withdrew.

Simultaneously, Han, who had just gotten his neck and wings severed, sat up and even managed to pick up his severed wings and reattached them to the wound.

The audience was dumbfounded at this scene.

“What is it doing? Does it think it can reattach its wings in the middle of the battle… Oh crap… it actually did!!!”

…

Amid the gasps from the audience on stage,

Silly pressed its wings back onto the wound, and the once severed wings were restored.

The bird then fearlessly rushed straight towards Maeshima Kaori again.

Maeshima Kaori, who had stopped attacking, saw Silly coming at her again, took a bow stance, bent her waist, and gently placed her hand on the hilt of her sword.

As Lu Wu who had seen countless battles in his previous life, he recognized at a glance that this was the stance for a Sword Draw Slash.

Under normal circumstances, the lower a swordsman from District 11 bent, the longer the charging time, the more terrifying the power of the slash.

With Maeshima Kaori’s power, this slash was likely to slice Silly in half.

In fact, by this time, Silly had already sensed the danger.

It was a feeling where every cell in its body trembled, a direct threat to its soul.

This was Maeshima Kaori’s “Slaughter Intent.”

Such a slaughter intent was extremely terrifying; any other summoned beast would have been scared off by now.

But Silly was different, the more danger it faced, the more excited it became.

Not only did it not slow down its charge, but it also sped up significantly.

Only Silly would be in such a hurry to throw itself into the line of fire.

However, Silly wasn’t really foolish; it enjoyed taking hits, but it also knew the difference between taking a hit occasionally and being beaten repeatedly.

If it really rushed on like this, it might only be able to take a beating once, so during the charge, Silly erupted with its killing moves for the first time.

“Shoo!”

With a cry resounding,

The running Silly spread its wings, and the skills “Absolute Freeze” and “Frozen Ray” burst forth immediately.

A terrifying chill spread faster than Silly, instantly turning the entire arena into an icy state.

At the same time, a blue icy ray shot straight towards Maeshima Kaori.

From top to bottom, the two killing moves reached her simultaneously, and Maeshima Kaori, surprisingly, didn’t dodge and was directly frozen into an ice sculpture.

This stunned both the audience and Silly.

Especially Silly, as it ran, the entire bird was bewildered.

It just wanted the opponent to hit lighter, not to make it so that she couldn’t even cut at it.

Could it be because it was too powerful?

At this moment, Silly felt particularly dejected; it would have been satisfying to have that slash come down.

Resentful at losing the opportunity to be slashed, Silly approached the ice sculpture of Maeshima Kaori and gently tapped it with its wings.

(Are you still alive? You must be alive, right? If you are, get up and slash Silly!)

Silly’s silly action made Lu Wu laugh.

Meanwhile, Little Flood Dragon, who had been standing by doing nothing, finally came down, perched on Silly’s head, and looked down at the ice sculpture in front of it.

Hmm, Silly and Little Flood Dragon were two extremes.

Silly didn’t know what fear was, while Little Flood Dragon was extremely sensitive to danger.

It had clearly sensed the danger this woman presented.

It was a kind of danger that could destroy it, so before the woman became an ice sculpture, Little Flood Dragon dared not get close.

Only now that she had turned into an ice sculpture and Little Flood Dragon didn’t sense any danger, did it dare to draw closer, blinking its little eyes at this woman.

Little Flood Dragon was particularly curious, the same humans, why its owner Lu Wu was so punchable, and this one so terrifying?

As Little Flood Dragon was curious, Lu Wu teasingly said,

“Little Goldfish, look at her eyes!”

(I am Little Golden Dragon, not Little Goldfish!)

Little Flood Dragon corrected Lu Wu unhappily, and then obediently looked at Maeshima Kaori’s eyes.

Almost at the same moment that Little Flood Dragon saw Maeshima Kaori’s eyes,

The frozen Maeshima Kaori opened her eyes, and a more terrifying “Slaughter Intent” burst forth.

This kind of sudden outbreak.

It was like in a group chat, someone unreliable posts a benefit video, you get excited watching it, then suddenly a hideous scary face pops up.

The already timid Little Flood Dragon’s heart stopped with fright, its mind went blank, and it screamed in shock.

At the same time, a terrifying power inside Little Flood Dragon was also frightened out by the shock.

Originally at the peak of Leader 3-star, Little Flood Dragon advanced to Lord at this moment.

However, Little Flood Dragon was not happy with this breakthrough in power.

Originally at the advanced level, “Slap Lu Wu” was now promoted to a killing move level.

If possible, it wanted to slap Lu Wu to death!

…

Subscribe please, otherwise Nu Xiao will die!!!

# Chapter 312 - 312 309 Epic

﻿Chapter 312: 309 Epic Chapter 312: 309 Epic Name: Little Flood Dragon

Power: 1 Star (Lord)

Quality: Epic (Yes, see?)

Attribute: Dragon, Water

State: Resentful, Angry (I want to slap Lu Wu!!!)

Weakness: None

Basic Skills: Tail Slapping (Master), Glow (Master), Lighting (Master)

Advanced Skills: A mouthful of salted soda (Master)

Killing Moves: Power of the Ocean (Skilled)

Jiao Long Roar (Master)

Slap Lu Wu (Master)

Domain: Sea Domain (50%)

Talent: Child of the Sea, Commander of the Water Clan

Jiao Long’s Body (Reduces physical and spell attacks by 80% for those below Lord level, and by 50% for those at Lord level or above)

Description: Be careful, it might slap you to death.

…

From Leader 3 Stars to Lord 1 Star.

With just one tier difference, Little Flood Dragon’s power had soared dramatically.

The Talent Jiao Long’s Body was terrifyingly enhanced, and the proficiency of its skills skyrocketed.

The most terrifying part was the “Slap Lu Wu” skill, which became a killer move, still at a Master’s level.

Lu Wu didn’t even need to look at anything else, just seeing this one skill from Little Flood Dragon, he could feel the little guy’s full resentment.

Fortunately, the little guy didn’t have time to deal with him yet.

At the moment of its advancement, Maeshima Kaori broke free, and the intense Slaughter Intent once again enveloped the little guy.

Already fuming, Little Flood Dragon now directed its anger at Maeshima Kaori.

“Power of the Ocean” activated.

After its advancement, this auxiliary skill originally matching “Child of the Sea” was sublimated.

Not only did its range of effect expand, covering the entire arena.

The expression of the skill also underwent a drastic change.

Originally, it only gave the environment ocean-like characteristics, now it directly had the characteristics of the deep sea.

Everyone in this environment felt like they were plunging into the deep sea.

An intangible pressure acted on everyone in the arena—yes, everyone, including Lu Wu.

At the same time, Little Flood Dragon’s power surged.

From Lord 1 Star, it surged to Lord 2 Stars.

Its aura was so strong that it could now confront Maeshima Kaori face to face.

On Maeshima Kaori’s side, the sudden surge in her opponent’s power made her battle intention incredibly intense.

She was somewhat impatient to go all out.

The killing intent throughout her body condensed into substance, and a terrifying silhouette seemed to appear behind her.

This change somewhat scared Little Flood Dragon, who wasn’t very brave.

However, just as Maeshima Kaori’s momentum reached its peak, she suddenly let go of the handle of her knife, turned around, and silently walked down from the arena, admitting defeat.

She couldn’t continue the fight; if it went on, she might not be able to restrain herself.

Today’s focus wasn’t on the match, so if she had to retreat, she needed to step back.

Her sudden concession caught everyone unexpectedly, making the audience members on the edge of their seats almost hurt their backs.

It felt a bit like watching a movie being cut off at the climax, which was quite frustrating.

However, the audience thought about it and realized that with Maeshima Kaori conceding, only two were left in the arena.

One of them, Zhao Futu, was still in a suspended state, suggesting that Lu Wu was virtually guaranteed to win.

Realizing this, the audience members were excited and anticipatory.

They looked forward to Lu Wu focusing his strength to defeat the contender in Zone 2 and securing the victory.

With the power displayed by Little Flood Dragon now and teamed up with Little Skeleton, they were sure to defeat that angel.

Yes, Little Flood Dragon thought the same.

This little guy, upon realizing that he had become particularly powerful after advancing and had even scared away that fierce woman, couldn’t help but feel inflated.

It turned its head to slap the remaining angel in the arena, but just as it was about to move, it was stopped by Lu Wu.

“Don’t go over, let Little Skeleton handle it!”

Lu Wu looked at Little Skeleton’s attributes and felt that this little guy should have a chance to defeat the opposing angel.

…

Name: Skeleton Commander controlling Dragon Bone (Second Evolution)

Power: 1 Star (Lord)

Quality: Gold (Improved) (One point)

Attribute: Undead, Netherworld Fire, Thunder, Dragon Bone

State: Resentful (Lu Wu turned bad again, Little Skeleton is very angry, Little Skeleton wants to kill this bad guy!)

Weakness: Light (Moderate)

Basic Skills: Omitted

Advanced Skills: Thunder Spear (Master)

Advanced Spells: Ghost Fire Skill (Master), Thunder Strike (Master), Dragon Bone Magic (Master)

Killing Moves: Dragon Bone Power (Master), Dragon Bone Thunderbolt Spear (Skilled)

Special Skill: Universal Charger (Entry-level) (Skill evolved from the Charging skill, inheriting the Charging Special Training, also seems to be able to merge into any skill to burst out more powerful strength!)

Talent: Dragon Bone Control (Basic)

Bone Chief (Advanced skill of Skeleton Commander, can use the power of subordinate Skeleton Series Summoned Beasts to enhance itself.)

Domain: ???

Companion Equipment:

Mysterious Bone Staff (Upon devouring Yan Ruxue and the core of the Personal Secret Realm, consuming large amounts of resources, it seems to have reached the edge of emerging into a new form.)

Dragon Bone Armor (Silver) (Defense greatly increased, can now reduce attacks by 30% from anyone below Lord level)

Bone Crown (Silver) (Still useless, just decorative)

Little Skeleton’s phone (Legend)

…

Advanced Lord Little Skeleton gained a new killer move, “Dragon Bone Thunderbolt Spear.”

“[Charging] Skill advanced to [Universal Charger], [Skeleton Commander] advanced to [Bone Chief],” and the bone staff in its hand also seemed to be on the verge of advancing.

There was no doubt that Little Skeleton’s power, just like Little Flood Dragon’s, had drastically ascended after advancing.

Their current power had basically caught up to that of Bone Dragon Lolita when she first appeared.

Extremely terrifying power.

With Little Skeleton’s current power, defeating the angel opposite was not impossible.

In addition, since Little Skeleton’s bone staff lacked a chance to evolve, Lu Wu didn’t let Little Flood Dragon interfere in the match.

While Lu Wu was preventing Little Flood Dragon from joining the match, Engels turned his head and glanced over.

His Chinese was poor, so he didn’t say anything, but with that glance, the rhythm of his side’s battle changed.

Before, it was because Maeshima Kaori was present.

Engels did not want to team up with others to fight against Lu Wu, so his side was basically in a defensive state.

Whether before or after Little Skeleton’s advancement, Engels’s side was all defense and no attack.

Now that Maeshima Kaori had stepped down, and both of Lu Wu’s summoned beasts had advanced, he felt it was about time to truly make his move.

“Counterattack!”

Following this sentence in the third zone’s language from Engels’s mouth,

The angel, who was defending against Little Skeleton’s attack, began to counterattack; coincidentally, Little Skeleton charged over, its long sword flickering with electric light, aimed directly at the angel’s face.

Facing this strike, the Four-winged Angel looked up to the sky as its wings and hands opened simultaneously.

A Holy Light Cross appeared out of thin air in front of it.

Blocking Little Skeleton’s spear.

At the same time, a strong sense of crisis surged in Little Skeleton’s mind.

A flash of electricity sparked on Little Skeleton, intending to dodge but it was already too late.

A powerful holy light burst from the Holy Light Cross in front of it,

Striking Little Skeleton with the force of a cannonball, smashing it directly onto the arena.

It didn’t end there; almost at the same instant Little Skeleton hit the arena, a Holy Light Cross fell, pinning Little Skeleton firmly to the ground.

Approaching it, the Four-winged Angel raised its hand, and a massive golden Warhammer’s phantom appeared above Little Skeleton’s head.

As soon as the Warhammer appeared, a pure light filled the entire arena and the training ground.

Bathed in Holy Light, the previously anxious and angry emotions of the spectators were calmed.

Even viewing Zhao Futu began to seem benevolent and kind.

Such Holy Light caused the face of a suspicious man wearing a hat and mask below the arena to drastically change.

Hmm, this suspicious man was none other than Guzhentian, who had lent his monkey for Lu Wu to play with.

He had hesitated for a long time but still came to watch today’s competition.

When he came, he was filled with reluctance and anger.

He believed his own strength was not inferior to those three foreigners, and even if facing Engels head-on, Guzhentian didn’t think he was lesser.

It was just bad form.

In a real fight, Guzhentian felt it would have been an even match.

But now, as the golden Warhammer appeared, Guzhentian realized that the opponent had not been fighting at full strength at all.

Otherwise, if the opponent had made this move at that time, he could have been finished instantly.

Such a terrifying strike was truly not something anyone could withstand.

Guzhentian was sure that no one of the Lord Level could withstand this strike; he couldn’t, and Lu Wu couldn’t either!

Lu Wu, on his part, the most rational course of action was to strike with all his might and interrupt the Big Move.

Engels’s purpose in launching the Big Move was precisely to force Lu Wu to give it his all.

He was not battling against a mere Little Skeleton but against the entirety of Lu Wu. Since Lu Wu was unwilling to utilize his full strength, Engels decided to compel him.

Even though Engels deployed his Big Move, Lu Wu seemed to have no intention of responding.

Little Skeleton had already turned to look at him, the Pupil Fire flickering intensely, even pleadingly.

(“Come on, Lu Wu, save Little Skeleton, Little Skeleton is going to die!”)

Lu Wu still had no intention of making a move.

“Come on, I believe you can do it!”

Lu Wu’s outright refusal deeply saddened Little Skeleton.

The terror faced from the Holy Attribute Killing Move was quickly overwhelmed by the resentment of not being saved by Lu Wu.

(“Lu Wu is no longer good, Lu Wu has turned bad, Lu Wu doesn’t want Little Skeleton anymore, he wants that bad guy to kill Little Skeleton and replace it with a new one!”)

Amidst the resentment, Little Skeleton burst forth with all his might.

[Bone Chief] Talent activated, directly borrowing power from Bone Dragon Lolita.

Followed by [Universal Charger] wrapped with [Dragon Bone Power], causing Little Skeleton’s skeleton to flicker with black thunder.

The Holy Light Cross on Little Skeleton shattered amidst the thunder, as Little Skeleton stood up from the bindings, simultaneously taking a step back with its hind legs and tightly grasping the silver spear in hand.

Little Skeleton’s phone energy pack was opened.

Dozens of Little Skeletons’ energy surged frantically, Little Skeleton compressed all this energy into the silver spear, activating the spear’s skill [Thunder Dragon Spear].

On top of [Thunder Dragon Spear], Little Skeleton also charged up the newly emerged skill [Dragon Bone Thunderbolt Spear].

It could be said that at that moment, Little Skeleton utilized almost all the power it could muster.

The terrifying power converged, causing a bone dragon phantom flickering with black electric light to form around Little Skeleton’s skeleton.

The terrifying electricity, profound blackness, and the slowly forming Warhammer above, glowing incessantly with Holy Light, contrasted starkly.

At that moment, everyone in the training ground watching this battle changed their color.

Anyone with eyes could see that the power of Little Skeleton’s strike was absolutely on par with the shimmering Holy Light phantom.

This kind of power had seemingly already surpassed the Lord Level.

“To have reached such a degree, he truly is worthy of being his son.”

Xing Zhanlong also expressed his admiration at that moment.

However, Guzhentian’s face below the arena completely lost all color.

Yet, at that time, nobody had the time to pay attention to him.

For at that moment, the arena stage underwent yet another change.

As Little Skeleton began to gather strength, Engels finally realized the skeleton’s power and no longer held back, personally joining the power accumulation.

Engels, joining the fray, caused the Warhammer above to rapidly take shape and its power multiplied.

“Divine Punishment·Holy Hammer!”

With a voice filled with a mysterious aura, the words emanated from the Four-winged Angel.

The Holy Hammer above Little Skeleton came crashing down.

At the same time, Little Skeleton also lunged forward with a spear thrust.

In the next moment, the entire arena was completely engulfed by golden and black brilliance.

To all observers, all they could see was a war between the black and golden lights.

# Chapter 313 - 313 310 Over-the-top acting

﻿Chapter 313: 310 Over-the-top acting Chapter 313: 310 Over-the-top acting Phoenix Nest Training Ground.

Throughout the arena, there was nothing but the sound of electricity, the noise of energy collisions,  
 and the teetering protection above the ring—no other sounds.

Everyone held their breath, fully engrossed in the clash of gold and black.

Of course, the audience was largely rooting for the black side.

Because black belonged to Little Skeleton, and Little Skeleton belonged to Lu Wu.

The audience naturally wanted Lu Wu to be victorious.

However, the collision between gold and black didn’t unfold as the audience wished.

Little Skeleton’s black was the result of a blow struck with all the power it could muster.

And its opponent’s gold had also gathered the power of the Four-winged Angel and Engels.

Moreover, the opponent’s skill, “Divine Punishment·Holy Hammer,” was an Inheritance Skill, ranking higher than Little Skeleton’s Killing Move.

Adding to that, the interaction of their attributes.

The result of the collision became evident shortly thereafter.

Little Skeleton managed to hold on for three minutes before gradually weakening.

To the audience, for the first three minutes gold and black seemed evenly matched, but afterward, black started to fade and gold began to dominate the audience’s entire view with a slow yet unyielding pressure.

From this contest of gold and black alone, the audience could faintly sense Little Skeleton’s feeling of helplessness.

Little Skeleton’s plight in facing this hammer blow goes without saying.

Exhausted, its defenses shattered.

The golden Warhammer struck down bit by bit.

Divine radiance began to shine upon Little Skeleton’s body, eliciting from the very depths of its soul a race-induced shudder of terror.

This became the last straw that broke the camel’s back, causing Little Skeleton’s resistance to collapse entirely.

The golden Warhammer finally fell upon Little Skeleton.

“Snap!”

In an instant, the sound of shattering glass rang out.

The utmost dazzling golden light burst forth in full.

Everyone’s heart skipped a beat.

They feared that under such an attack, Little Skeleton must be finished.

Hmm!

Little Skeleton felt the same.

But that was impossible.

Lu Wu was watching on the side, how could he possibly let Little Skeleton take a risk without being absolutely sure?

As the golden Warhammer hit Little Skeleton, Lu Wu had already activated his Talent.

A surge of power instantly connected Little Skeleton, Lu Wu, Silly, and Little Flood Dragon.

This was the reason Lu Wu dared to let Little Skeleton go up and fight.

His Damage Sharing had already been upgraded when Silly advanced to Lord, enabling him to establish four connections simultaneously.

In other words, everyone at Lu Wu’s house was sharing the force of this hammer blow together!

Unless the opponent could take down all four in one strike, how could Little Skeleton possibly die?

Lu Wu truly didn’t believe the opponent’s Angel could take down four at once.

If that Angel could, Lu Wu would admit defeat on the spot—how about that?

However, what followed was somewhat unexpected for Lu Wu; as the golden Warhammer fell, the anticipated damage didn’t come through.

This scared Lu Wu quite a bit.

What was happening?

Did he establish the connection too slowly, causing Little Skeleton to be doomed?

Or was the skill “Divine Punishment·Warhammer” targeted in such a way that it couldn’t be shared?

Hmm, soon enough, Lu Wu realized neither was the case!

The golden light began to dim at an incredible pace.

As the golden light gradually faded, Little Skeleton’s situation also became clearer.

Everyone watched, dumbstruck, as the Warhammer hitting Little Skeleton was being devoured by the Long Spear in its hands.

Even Lu Wu was baffled by this, not to mention Engels and his Angel.

By the time they snapped out of it, the golden Warhammer had been completely swallowed by Little Skeleton’s Long Spear.

After completely absorbing it, Little Skeleton’s Long Spear flashed with light, and then, unexpectedly to even Little Skeleton, it burrowed into Little Skeleton’s bones and disappeared, seemingly entering a dormant state for advancement.

Little Skeleton was left dumbfounded by this.

But it quickly stopped caring about it, as Lu Wu was somewhat worried due to his not utilizing the trump card skill effectively just now.

Although, looking at the attribute panel, Little Skeleton seemed unharmed, Lu Wu couldn’t help but come over and ask, “Little Skeleton, how are you? Are you alright?”

(Hmph, bad Lu Wu!

Little Skeleton was almost killed by that bad guy!

Little Skeleton is not on good terms with Lu Wu anymore!)  
 Little Skeleton indicated that it was angry, the kind that’s difficult to appease.

Regarding this, Lu Wu was not anxious, believing that nothing is unsolvable with a smartphone.

“Alright, alright, I know I was wrong. What if I let you play with the smartphone for three days when we get back?”

Little Skeleton turned its head away again.

It indicated that this matter couldn’t be settled by playing with a smartphone for three days—it was very angry!

One man and one Skeleton haggled there, and ultimately, Lu Wu managed to obtain Little Skeleton’s forgiveness with the promise of letting it play with the smartphone for five days.

“Oh right, we seem to be in a match.”

Having settled matters with Little Skeleton, Lu Wu suddenly remembered that their match was only half-finished, turning his head to continue the fight, only to find that the Four-winged Angel’s figure had vanished from the ring.

Lu Wu was stunned as Engels spoke in a not-so-fluent Region 1 language, “Divine Punishment, strongest, Ultimate Skill, you blocked it, I can’t beat you, you’ve won…”  
 It took Lu Wu quite an effort to understand what the other party was saying, and by then the opponent had already descended from the ring with a bow.

This left Lu Wu very confused.

“He’s leaving just like that? Won’t he fight again?”

To secure victory in this match, Lu Wu had even learned the “Sky Dominating Stick” and crafted a variable stick that could change length and thickness.

He’d made all the preparations.

He’d even written the script.

Little Skeleton and the others would go up, get utterly crushed, and just when the enemy thought they had defeated Little Skeleton and victory was secure, Lu Wu would swing his stick and show the opponent some decency.

Lu Wu even had his background music ready for when he swung his stick, and his emotions were almost fully brewed, but in the end, before he could even pull out his stick, the competition was about to end.

He couldn’t help shaking his head.

“This competition is somewhat dull!”

At that moment, a voice full of mocking irony rang out.

“Oh, really?”

The speaker was Zhao Futu, who, since being slapped down by Lu Wuyi at the beginning, had been cowering and acting submissive.

The fact that he could make such a comment clearly meant he had a different view of the competition.

Lu Wu was startled and turned his head to look, only to find that Zhao Futu, who had been acting submissive just a moment ago, now had a mocking smile on his lips.

“Here it comes! It’s starting!”

At this moment, Xing Zhanlong, who was secretly overseeing the event, also perked up. He ordered his subordinates to prepare to close the net at his command, while keeping a close watch on the platform.

But Lu Wu on the platform was unaware of all this, looking at Zhao Futu across from him with some helplessness.

“What’s the matter, the weather is clear and the rain has stopped, and you think you can do something now?”

“Now that Little Skeleton and little goldfish have advanced, I’m in a good mood, so I’ll give you a chance. Before I lose my temper, jump off the platform yourself.

Otherwise, you’ll probably be carried down lying on your back.”

No sooner had Lu Wu spoken than the mocking on Zhao Futu’s face grew deeper.

“Whether I have to lie down or not, I don’t know, but you are definitely going to be lying down!”

“My temper!”

Lu Wu couldn’t stand the other person’s sarcastic tone, and he immediately rolled up his sleeves to confront him.

However, as Lu Wu rolled up his sleeves and prepared to fight, Zhao Futu calmly started a countdown.

“Three, two…”

“One! I shouted for you, what can you do about it!”

Lu Wu, with his lips pursed, said as he approached. His demeanor caused Xing Zhanlong to shake his head.

“Lu Wu is going to kneel!”

Sure enough, almost simultaneously, the smile on Zhao Futu’s face bloomed completely: “Fall!”

The word “fall” from Zhao Futu.

Lu Wu, who was just now arrogantly wanting to beat up Zhao Futu, fell down with a smack.

Not only did Lu Wu fall, but all the Summoned Beasts from Lu Wu’s house were down too.

Even Little Loli Dragon lay on the ground, looking particularly unhappy.

Zhao Futu, looking at Lu Wu and his companions fallen before him, couldn’t contain his smile any longer.

“You think you’re capable? You think you’re tough? You think you’re awesome? Show some guts and get up if you can!”

“The guy with the surname Gu before was stupid, but you’re even stupider than him. At least he fell because he didn’t understand my moves. You, this fool, knew that Guzhentian was taken down by me, yet you just ate some antidote before the match and thought that was enough.

And you already tested at the start of the match that I wasn’t good at combat, yet you didn’t eliminate me right away, and you even gave me time to set things up.

Now, look what happened, it’s your turn to fall before me, isn’t it?”

Despite being the enemy, Zhao Futu’s words were indeed shared by almost everyone in the arena.

They all thought Lu Wu was really a bit too stupid.

Otherwise, he wouldn’t have ended up in such a plight.

However, Xing Zhanlong had a different opinion. He didn’t think Lu Wu was smart; he just knew more about Zhao Futu’s background, understood his tactics, and knew that if Zhao Futu targeted Lu Wu, even if Lu Wu was smarter, he wouldn’t be able to avoid it.

“Really just muscles in his brain!”

While Xing Zhanlong still had the mood to critique Lu Wu, the high officials from the Education Bureau next to him started to get anxious. They didn’t want Lu Wu to lose, so they quickly suggested.

“Hurry up and make a move!”

“No, there’s no rush yet!”

Xing Zhanlong shook his head and refused.

At the same time, Zhao Futu had already approached Lu Wu.

Seeing Lu Wu lying in front of him, Zhao Futu’s mood was indescribably uplifted.

“You just gave me a chance, right? Now I am giving you one. Call me ‘grandpa’, let me hear you say it.

If you call me ‘grandpa’, I will let you go.

If you don’t, you remember how you treated me just now, right?

I won’t just return all the humiliation I suffered back to you, but I will also kill all your Summoned Beasts.

The death of three Summoned Beasts is enough to turn you into an idiot.”

Saying this, Zhao Futu crouched down and mockingly said to Lu Wu word by word, “So, make a choice. Do you want to be an idiot, or do you want to be my grandson?”

“Don’t even think about it!”

Lu Wu firmly refused: “Lu Wu has an iron will, even if you kill all my Summoned Beasts, I will not submit to you.”

“Oh, really?”

Zhao Futu laughed upon hearing this: “You’ve got spine, I see. Well, let’s put that to the test!”

As Zhao Futu spoke, a black Fog appeared out of nowhere on the platform, which condensed into a black longsword.

“Let me introduce you, what you’re looking at now is my Summoned Beast ‘Poison Shadow Fog.’ It can silently release poison that seeps into humans and Summoned Beasts’ bodies, and given time, it can bring down even a god.

The sword it has condensed into now is a sword of extreme poison, one jab and even beings above the level of lords have the risk of perishing.”

Upon hearing this, Lu Wu’s face changed immediately.

Seeing that, Zhao Futu’s mouth curved up: “Scared now? Regretting it? Too bad it’s too late, I gave you a chance, but you didn’t take it.

Take a good look at the pitiful state of your Summoned Beasts.”

With a sinister smile, Zhao Futu, while Lu Wu was lamenting and screaming ‘no’ in endless regret, fiercely stabbed down with the black sword.

“Crack”  
 Hmm, Little Flood Dragon was fine. The sword broke before it pierced the defense.

“Pretty tough!”

Zhao Futu smiled and tried again with another sword, but with a ‘crack’ it broke again.

The scene became somewhat awkward.

Zhao Futu, with a stern face, tried another sword, but once again, it didn’t pierce through. Zhao Futu became somewhat flustered.

At that moment, a kind person handed over a stick.

“Your sword is venomous, but it’s a bit weak in physical damage. You need to make a cut to kill. Here, try this, it has high damage.”

“Oh, thanks!”

Zhao Futu didn’t react at first, he reached out for the stick reflexively, but when he got the heavy stick in hand, he was pressed to the ground by its hundreds of pounds, unable to get up.

Lu Wu on the other side didn’t care about him. After handing the stick to him, he continued to lie down, continuing to cry in pain, ‘Don’t, what do you want with me, don’t lay a hand on little goldfish!’  
 This acting was a bit too exaggerated…

# Chapter 314 - 314 311 Idiot

﻿Chapter 314: 311 Idiot Chapter 314: 311 Idiot If anyone paid attention to Zhao Futu’s facial expressions, they would definitely notice.

His complexion went through a heartbreaking cycle in an extremely short period of time.

From wild ecstasy and pride to bewildered confusion, and finally to sheer terror and despair.

His changes in expression were so spot-on that even Xing Zhanlong couldn’t help but admire him, thinking that this guy’s acting skills far surpassed Lu Wu’s.

“Stay alert; he’s probably about to make his move!”

Xing Zhanlong believed that this moment was likely when Zhao Futu would truly erupt.

Meanwhile, on the stage.

Lu Wu, who had been playing along for quite a while, was getting impatient and turned, propping his head with one hand. He spoke to Zhao Futu in front of him, who was still clutching his staff and sweating profusely, “I’ve been calling out for quite a while now. Are you going to make a move or not?

If you’re going to pull some stunt, at least be quick about it; don’t dawdle.”

Zhao Futu suddenly snapped out of it, turned his head to look at Lu Wu, his face unwilling to accept reality, “This can’t be, you’ve clearly been poisoned. I’ve already received feedback from it; you should be poisoned by now…”

“Smack!”

Before Zhao Futu could finish his sentence, Lu Wu casually tossed a small object over.

“The poison from your Summoned Beast is there, but it’s not very clever. It’s easy to fool with a little trick.

How to put it… I actually prepared quite a few things.

Because I thought that your power wouldn’t be as simple as it was three days ago.

Who would have thought, all that preparation was pretty much for nothing; your power is even more simplistic than it was three days ago.”

Lu Wu couldn’t be bothered to keep up the act anymore.

He stood up directly, clenched his fists, and began walking toward Zhao Futu.

“Since you’re not fighting, then it’s my turn.”

Zhao Futu had not yet recovered from the shock. Seeing Lu Wu approaching him, his face turned pale with fear.

“Don’t come any closer!”

“Keep shouting; it won’t do you any good to scream your throat out!”

In this moment, not only was Lu Wu grinning wickedly as he approached him, but the Summoned Beasts of Lu Wu’s house also got up and walked towards Zhao Futu in a particularly menacing manner.

The scene resembled a group of thugs surrounding a girl in a dark alley late at night.

Zhao Futu, the poor ‘girl,’ trembled with fear.

Trying to retreat and increase the distance, but finding no way out, he finally had no choice but to yell at Lu Wu, “I advise you not to come any closer. Don’t push me!

Otherwise, I’ll go down fighting with you!”

While talking, Zhao Futu reached into his bosom and pulled out a mysterious item.

As soon as he took out the item, Xing Zhanlong, who was secretly watching, turned completely pale, his scalp tingling.

“Damn it, how does he have that thing?”

His eyes were glued to the item in Zhao Futu’s hand, fearing that if Zhao Futu slipped up, the consequences would be unimaginable.

Xing Zhanlong was fearful on the sidelines, but Lu Wu was entirely unfazed.

He didn’t even notice what Zhao Futu was holding and didn’t stop walking.

“Going down fighting, huh? That sounds good. I was actually worried you wouldn’t resist. After all, I’ve already hit you once; if you don’t fight back, it’ll take away a lot of the fun for me.

Come on, I’m closing in.

Give me a ‘fight to the bitter end’ to watch!”

Watching Lu Wu’s face, which read ‘the more you resist, the more excited I get,’ both Zhao Futu and Xing Zhanlong’s faces turned dark.

Especially Zhao Futu, his hands trembling while holding that thing.

His face a mix of panic and anger.

“I’m going all out with you!”

Amidst a desperate and helpless roar, Zhao Futu was about to smash the item in his hand onto the ground when, at this critical juncture, a stern shout rang out.

“Stop!”

The sudden exclamation halted Zhao Futu, and at the same time, another person appeared on the stage.

This person was none other than Xing Zhanlong, who had been overseeing from the back.

He came up and patted Lu Wu’s shoulder: “You step down. Leave this to me!”

Lu Wu was immediately dumbfounded: “Uncle, who are you? This is my match; what are you doing up here?

Referee, isn’t anyone going to do something about this, referee?”

“Stop causing trouble!”

Xing Zhanlong casually waved his hand to create a soundproof space before saying, “Do you know what that thing in his hand is?”

“In his hand?” Lu Wu blinked.

Xing Zhanlong looked at Lu Wu’s bewildered face and was so irritated that he didn’t know where to begin.

“Typical muscle-brain, how did you even become a Cultivation Master.

The thing in his hand is called a Plague Heart, the heart of a Summoned Beast from the plague series above the Lord-level. If he breaks that thing, the consequences are beyond imagination.”

“What thing?”

Lu Wu was completely baffled upon hearing this.

Was he hearing incorrectly, or did this uncle in front of him speak incorrectly?

However, at this moment, Xing Zhanlong had no time to deal with him. After giving Lu Wu a quick response, he turned to look at Zhao Futu.

“Sure enough, it’s just like you to do something like this. I was extremely careful, and yet I still missed a step in the end. I didn’t expect you to have that kind of thing in your hand.

Alright, I concede, let’s talk terms!”

Lu Wu saw very clearly that Zhao Futu on the opposite side was dumbfounded for half a second, but soon his confusion turned into arrogance.

“It seems the tables have turned!

Since we’re going to talk terms, let’s start with a small one, have this guy kneel and apologize to me…”

“My explosive temper!”

Lu Wu became enraged in an instant, rolled up his sleeves, and was about to fight, but was held back by Xing Zhanlong next to him.

While suppressing Lu Wu, Xing Zhanlong looked towards Zhao Futu across from them.

“A person like you, coming across regions and bringing that thing, just to trouble a junior?

Your ambition can’t be that small, can it?”

“Regretfully, my ambition is exactly that small!”

Zhao Futu’s face twisted with madness: “Now I only have one condition, either he kneels and apologizes to me, or I’ll smash it!”

During his speech, Zhao Futu even turned to look at Lu Wu.

“Kid, you’ve successfully pissed me off. If I can’t make you kneel before me and sing ‘Conquer’ today, I, Zhao Futu will…”

“Looking for death!”

Before Zhao Futu could finish speaking, Lu Wu exploded with rage.

There was no warning when Lu Wu erupted, and even Xing Zhanlong hadn’t reacted before Lu Wu charged straight at Zhao Futu.

Xing Zhanlong’s face changed drastically.

“Don’t go, you’re not his match…”

“Smack!”

Before he could finish his sentence, Lu Wu slapped Zhao Futu down, and started stomping on his head over and over.

“You wanted face, didn’t you?”

“Did you want face or not!”

…

Luckily, Lu Wu held back; otherwise, his head might have exploded.

This scene left Xing Zhanlong’s jaw dropped in shock.

There’s no sense or reason in this!

Now at this point, there’s no reason for Zhao Futu to keep up the pretense. He should be erupting with all his might. With Zhao Futu at full power, not to mention Lu Wu, even Xing Zhanlong might not be able to defeat him. This situation should not be happening.

As Xing Zhanlong had a vague feeling something was wrong, the stomped Zhao Futu went completely mad.

“Alright, alright, since that’s how it is, let’s all go down together then!”

In a hysterical state, Zhao Futu was about to crush the Plague Heart in his hand.

Xing Zhanlong’s face changed: “Stop him quickly!”

Hmm, Lu Wu’s response was extremely quick; before Xing Zhanlong could shout, Lu Wu had moved, rushing ahead of Zhao Futu to crush the object—’splatch’—he stomped it flat before Zhao Futu could shatter it.

At this moment both Xing Zhanlong and Zhao Futu were dumbfounded.

Zhao Futu had just screamed; he hadn’t intended to actually do it, and Xing Zhanlong was scared into a cold sweat.

He wished he could slap Lu Wu dead.

Although he didn’t, he grabbed Lu Wu sharply.

“Do you realize the magnitude of the catastrophe you’ve caused? Do you know how many people could die from your single stomp?”

Yet faced with Xing Zhanlong’s interrogation, Lu Wu was exceptionally calm.

“First, what I crushed was just a fake, nothing would have happened.

Second, judging from your reaction, you must have been watching this guy for a long time. From the brazen way you showed up, you must be from the Alliance, and he must be a dangerous individual.

You let such a dangerous person come to the competition, and don’t even know what he brought. Even if what I crushed was real, the one who’s negligent and caused trouble would be you, not me.

Third, from your reaction just now, you seem to think he’s a big shot, but I need to tell you that this guy in front of you is just barely reached Master Level.

So, without a doubt, there’s something wrong with your information; you’ve been played.

And from the way you’re willing to take risks to fish for a bigger catch, you weren’t just wanting to catch him.

The person playing you isn’t just trying to get away.

In other words, what you should be doing now isn’t bickering with me, but you should go back and think about where exactly the issue in your operation lies.

Your real targets might be elsewhere!

Maybe, while you’re here bickering, they might have already had children…”

“Boom!”

Almost at the exact moment Lu Wu’s words fell, a huge booming sound erupted.

The terrifying explosion shook the whole Phoenix Nest Training Ground slightly.

Lu Wu spread his hands: “You see!”

The initially flustered Xing Zhanlong changed his expression and, in a flash, shot straight into the sky.

Standing at a high vantage point, Xing Zhanlong clearly saw the explosion had occurred at their Summoner Center headquarters, which meant while he was stationed here, his own stronghold had been taken out.

How could Xing Zhanlong stay seated after that? He rushed towards his headquarters.

Below, Lu Wu shook his head watching the scene: “What a muscle-brained idiot!”

# Chapter 315 - 315 312 King-level

﻿Chapter 315: 312 King-level Chapter 315: 312 King-level Looking at Xing Zhanlong speeding away, Lu Wu shook his head.

Although Lu Wu didn’t know what had gone wrong or where, he was certain that the guy was making a wasted trip.

This was Beijing.

In the core of District 1, even the dumbest person wouldn’t expose themselves while causing trouble.

What people were doing now was just creating chaos.

What Xing Zhanlong should have been doing was not to be led by the nose but to stabilize the current situation!

His going there now would only make the situation even more chaotic.

However, this was none of Lu Wu’s concern.

He was just a competitor; he just needed to focus on his own match.

“Referee, referee, are you still there? Get to work!”

Lu Wu called out for the referee, but before the referee arrived, a big group of people from the Summoner Professional Center came over.

They said they were there to protect Lu Wu.

Then a group of people, without further ado, took Lu Wu and Dudu to a rest room for protection.

Meanwhile, on Xing Zhanlong’s side.

He wasn’t as foolish as he appeared to be.

Not long after he burst out from the Phoenix Nest Training Ground, Xing Zhanlong stopped in his tracks and sneaked back into the training ground.

His initial dash was actually a tactic to confuse the opponent.

He wasn’t stupid and knew this might be a diversion, so he pretended to leave on purpose, to draw that guy into action.

“The situation hasn’t reached its worst point yet.

Even though Zhao Futu isn’t his true self and even though the Professional Center has been attacked, I still hold the most important chip.

The target is probably the box Lu Wu brought from the Education Bureau’s treasury.

That thing is still with Lu Wu, and the moment I leave, that guy will definitely make a move!”

Xing Zhanlong was quite confident in his own intellect.

At the same time, Lu Wu, who was under control, was not idle either.

His brain started to work at this moment.

He casually chatted with the staff protecting him and quickly figured out the general situation.

After understanding what was going on, Lu Wu had a new evaluation of Xing Zhanlong’s intelligence.

“That uncle’s head isn’t all muscle, after all.”

Xing Zhanlong, who had quietly snuck back, happened to hear this and his lips curled in a smirk, but before he could enjoy the moment, Lu Wu’s next sentence arrived.

“And paste!”

After saying this perplexing line, Lu Wu unapologetically began eating the snacks that the equally nonchalant Dudu passed him, while opening his attribute panel.

…

Name: Lu Wu

Power: Master Level Cultivation Master (Lord 2 Star Combat Power)

Mastered Skills:

Advanced Quality: Cold Ice Body (Master)

Killing Move: Power of the Ocean (Master) Dragon Bone Power (Master) Slap Lu Wu (Master)

Frozen Ray (Master) Dragon Bone Thunderbolt Spear (Master) Jiao Long Roar (Master)

Special Skill: Universal Charger (entry-level) Dragon Transformation (Master)

Unyielding·Growth (Master)

Inheritance Skills: Skyward Stick (Master) Sky Dominating Stick (Master)

Summoner Talent: Power of Inheritance (Awakening)

Damage Sharing (can establish four connections)

Description: Yep, you can be smug now!

…

With the successive advancements of Little Skeleton and little goldfish, Lu Wu received feedback and his power further increased.

Now, even if he were to face a being above a Lord, Lu Wu had the confidence to stand firm.

Of course, it was only against a being one level higher, at King Level 0 Star, and even against the most mediocre King Level 0 Star being, Lu Wu would at most have the courage to resist, but facing them head-on, Lu Wu had almost no chance of victory.

If Lu Wu encountered a King-level 1 star entity, he would undoubtedly be overwhelmed.

There’s no way around it, the gap between the stars above King-level is an absolute terror, and it wouldn’t be an exaggeration to describe it as a chasm.

Lu Wu was just an average Summoner, and overcoming tiers in battle or anything of that sort was something he felt he was unlikely to achieve.

However, that being said, if a King-level 3 star dared to taunt him to his face now, Lu Wu would still dare to slap him. His confidence stemmed from, uh, well, his father!

After advancing to the Master Level, Lu Wu’s system’s abilities had further improved.

He could now see the attributes of King-level beings. Existences Lu Wu couldn’t perceive before, their attributes which were previously invisible to him, were now vaguely detectable.

Like the Moon Shadow on his body.

He was now able to sense its presence, even though he still couldn’t see its attributes, so it was clear that Moon Shadow must be an existence above King-level.

It was also at this time that Lu Wu began to understand the extent of his old man’s power, realizing why the geezer was able to play around with so many ladies.

The thought made Lu Wu involuntarily emit a sigh.

“Indeed, once a man has money and power, he is bound to go bad. There’s no longer another man in this world as handsome, talented, powerful, and faithful as me!”

Xing Zhanlong, who was nearby, felt nauseated upon hearing this all-too-familiar line.

Like father, like son.

What Xing Zhanlong found unbearable was that Lu Wu’s shameless remarks actually received affirmation from Dudu at his side.

Dudu was nodding her little head vigorously.

In her eyes, her Lu Wu was indeed such a wonderful man.

Unable to stand the scene, Xing Zhanlong truly hoped someone would come out soon and teach Lu Wu a lesson.

However, the person Xing Zhanlong hoped for seemed not to have sensed his desire.

He watched for a ship that never came, waited for a person who never understood.

Yet, the person Xing Zhanlong was waiting for had already arrived and understood his intentions.

While Xing Zhanlong was anxiously waiting, Lu Wu casually took his own box from the Education Bureau headquarters and confidently walked towards Xing Zhanlong.

Xing Zhanlong was startled by Lu Wu’s sudden action.

“What’s going on? Have I been exposed? That shouldn’t be possible. I’m currently using invisibility; Lu Wu shouldn’t be able to see through it.”

Confident in his own abilities,

Xing Zhanlong discreetly moved a step to the side, but the moment he did, Lu Wu followed him.

Xing Zhanlong’s complexion changed, and he took another step, only for Lu Wu to abruptly overturn the table.

“Stop hiding, you’ve been exposed.”

“How could that be?”

Xing Zhanlong was full of disbelief, unsure whether Lu Wu was bluffing.

“You brought me here to lure someone into acting, right?

You must be certain that someone will target me, and the reason should be this box, right?”

As soon as Lu Wu said this, Xing Zhanlong was startled once again.

A question sprang to his mind, but before he could ask, Lu Wu spoke first: “Are you wondering how I knew about this?

It’s actually a simple logical deduction.

The earlier incident already proved that Zhao Futu is problematic, and you’ve had your eye on him for a while.

Since you are watching him, you must also be watching the Education Bureau leader who made him enter the competition—that man who led me to the treasury.

You must know about the incident in our treasury.

Naturally, you will suspect this box in my hands; you must think that the target is this box, and that they will surely come to snatch it!

So, you stationed me here, ostensibly to protect me, but really to use me as bait to draw out your opponent.”

With that outpour,

Xing Zhanlong’s mind went blank.

At that moment, he seriously wondered if Lu Wu had read the script in advance.

No, he even suspected that Lu Wu had some foreknowledge or was even involved in this matter; otherwise, it was impossible for him to know these things. Don’t tell him this was deduced by Lu Wu—Xing Zhanlong didn’t believe it.

And if Lu Wu was also involved in this matter, then things would become incredibly complicated.

The whole situation could likely involve that guy.

If that guy joined forces with that group, then the entire Alliance would be in danger.

Thus, Xing Zhanlong could no longer keep his calm and immediately came out of his invisibility, grabbing onto Lu Wu and demanding, “Tell me, what role do you play in this? What about Lu Haikong? Is that bastard going to cause trouble again?”

# Chapter 316 - 316 313 three-time evolution Little Skeleton

﻿Chapter 316: 313 three-time evolution Little Skeleton Chapter 316: 313 three-time evolution Little Skeleton Phoenix Nest Training Ground, Lu Wu was somewhat bewildered by Xing Zhanlong’s sudden outburst.

“Are we even talking about Old Lu’s problem?”

“Does this uncle even understand the main point?”

But seeing the fierce expression and resentful small eyes of the uncle before him, Lu Wu panicked immediately. Could it be that this guy was also screwed over by Old Lu?

Hmm, if it were someone else, their taste probably wouldn’t be so extreme, but if it was Old Lu, it’s hard to say.

After all, even if it’s not someone Old Lu screwed over.

That resentful “bastard” from Xing Zhanlong just now, you can’t really shout that out unless you’ve been tricked out of several wives.

Therefore, with a strong will to survive, Lu Wu frantically began shaking his head.

“What Lu Haikong?”

“Just by the name, he must be a scumbag, right? He wouldn’t spare sea, land, or air, definitely ultimate scum…”

Cursing Scumbag Lu caused Xing Zhanlong to resonate a lot.

“Yes! He’s an ultimate scumbag, that jerk. He didn’t even spare a friend’s sister and competed with him for women, leaving him still a bachelor. Such a scumbag should be struck by lightning!”

Upon hearing this, Lu Wu’s heart pounded even more violently.

He didn’t dare ask “That friend isn’t you, right?” and shook his head even more vigorously.

“How could I possibly know such a scumbag!”

To bolster his credibility, Lu Wu patted his chest and loudly declared, “I, Lu Wu, definitely do not have such a scumbag dad!”

Then smoothly, Lu Wu changed the topic.

“Well, actually, everything I just mentioned was deduced from existing clues.

Such matters, as long as you have the clues, boldly deduce and be careful to exclude, it’s easy to figure out.”

“After all, look, I, Lu Wu am handsome, amiable, and a loyal, good young man. Why would people despise me like some scumbag?

There must be a reason.

Moreover, I’m not dumb. If I were really involved in this, I wouldn’t be flaunting my deductions here, right?”

Hearing this, Xing Zhanlong felt like that made sense.

Lu Wu then pushed harder, “So, as I said, this matter has nothing to do with me, I’m just simply clever and kind-hearted.

Let’s get back to this box I have in my hands.

You must suspect this is the guy’s target, right?”

The tempo gradually got under Lu Wu’s control, and Xing Zhanlong hesitated for a moment, his head nodding subconsciously.

“Unfortunately, you’ve been played again, this thing is just a smoke bomb!”

Xing Zhanlong froze: “That’s impossible!”

“But it’s almost a fact. Let’s assume that this thing is what the guy wants; since he managed to have someone deliver it to me, he could certainly get it without my involvement.

It’s not hard at all, he wouldn’t need to make such a big deal.”

“The Education Bureau’s vault isn’t easy to enter… ”

“You can’t just enter, but can’t you find some pretext?

Rules can be broken, and methods are all made by people. Didn’t this time I get in because I relied on their favors?

So, this thing in my hands isn’t their real target, but just a smoke bomb they released.

Moreover, it’s from the same series as Zhao Futu’s smoke bombs, likely just to distract your attention.

After all, from Zhao Futu’s behavior just now, it’s not hard to see that the other party knew you were aware of his issues. It can even be said that Zhao Futu was intentionally tossed out as a sacrificial piece.

If you were that guy, would you entrust important matters to someone on a sacrificial line?

Certainly not!”

“Isn’t this just you throwing a smoke bomb?

So, waiting until death won’t do you any good, the person you’re waiting for definitely isn’t coming.”

Once Lu Wu said this,

Xing Zhanlong was completely dumbfounded.

Meanwhile, Lu Wu, seeing how Xing Zhanlong had been dumbfounded by just a few words, couldn’t help but shake his head.

Who knows who was so idle as to actually bully an idiot for fun.

Hmm, Lu Wu decided, he wanted in too!

“It seems like you’re in a tough spot, from any angle, you should be the one in control here.

After all, this is your home ground, and you definitely have far more power than your opponent.

You should be the one setting the trap, but as it looks right now, every move you make is being thwarted, completely led by the nose. It’s a very grim situation, a serious problem indeed!

Do you know where the problem lies?”

“Where does the problem lie?”

Xing Zhanlong, now spurred on by Lu Wu, immediately asked.

However, Lu Wu, who had brought him here, suddenly pursed his lips, turned around, went back to Dudu, and while watching TV with Little Skeleton and lying on Dudu’s plush thigh, he stopped talking and just ate the snacks Dudu handed him.

Xing Zhanlong nearly broke down from Lu Wu’s action.

Lu Wu’s current behavior was like a novelist reaching a climax and then suddenly castrating himself.

Under these circumstances, Xing Zhanlong’s emotions were completely led by Lu Wu.

“Keep talking, don’t just stop suddenly.”

“No, I suddenly remembered that all of this is just my speculation, it might not be the truth, after all, the information I have is limited, maybe my speculations are wrong, so I better not talk recklessly.”

“What kind of information do you need, I can share with you…”

“No, these matters of bigshots like you, are not something I, a poor, weak, and helpless person, can be involved in.

After all, whether my guess is true or false, from the moment I got that box, oh no, from the start of the competition, I was merely an insignificant pawn.

The bigshots knew it was dangerous yet they still planted it beside me.

They didn’t care about my life or how I felt.

It’s best for a small fry like me not to get involved in such terrifying matters.”

Once Lu Wu said this, even an idiot like Xing Zhanlong knew he had been waiting here just for him.

Xing Zhanlong gritted his teeth: “The reason I didn’t notify you is that I was confident you wouldn’t die…”

“You sure are confident, but now it seems like you’re the one being led by the nose, aren’t you?”

Is Lu Wu that kind of person?

He inexplicably became someone else’s pawn, there’s no way he could easily let it go.

How could Xing Zhanlong not pay a price?

Xing Zhanlong, also realizing this, bit down hard.

“About this matter, I will give you an explanation.”

Lu Wu silently smiled and didn’t respond, clearly uninterested in such empty promises.

Xing Zhanlong seemed already accustomed to being tricked, skillfully laid out all the benefits: “Aren’t you looking for a summoned beast that has evolved more than three times for Little Skeleton?

I know where you can find one, I can give you the location.

Additionally, this item, after things are settled, you can use it to enter the Summoner Professional Center headquarters’ Demon Supression Tower Secret Realm.”

It wasn’t just talk, he pulled out two things.

A map and a token.

I must say, the two items Xing Zhanlong presented were quite satisfying to Lu Wu.

The whereabouts of the three-time evolved Little Skeleton need not be mentioned; they were directly related to Little Skeleton’s future.

After all, once Little Skeleton had reached the Lord Level during its Second Evolution, its power was almost at its limit; without another evolution, there was no climbing higher.

Having a three-times evolved Little Skeleton was extremely important for Lu Wu.

And that so-called token from the Demon Suppression Tower Secret Realm was something Lu Wu was also aware of.

The Demon Suppression Tower Secret Realm is a unique challenge realm exclusive to the Summoner Professional Center, successful challengers gain many benefits.

So, after Xing Zhanlong presented these two items, Lu Wu nodded thoroughly satisfied.

“Our business here is considered settled!”

Seeing Lu Wu finally satisfied, Xing Zhanlong was overjoyed and hurriedly asked why.

Who knew Lu Wu would sweep everything under the rug and then renounce all accounts?

“Why? What reason? What are you talking about again?

Oh, you’re talking about why you are so passive? Please, you’re being manipulated, and you think I know anything? You big shots really, thinking about God knows what every day.”

Xing Zhanlong was furious right then; this guy was even worse than his dad, who at least had some semblance of morality.

After screwing someone over, at least his dad would give something in return.

This guy screwed him over and denied everything afterward.

Xing Zhanlong was both angry and resentful, but no matter how angry or resentful he was, it was of no use.

After all, he was the one who dragged Lu Wu into this mess.

Lu Wu was just taking part in a competition peacefully, didn’t provoke anyone, and was utilized by others; to whom could Lu Wu complain?

If he didn’t take it out on Xing Zhanlong, there would be no other place to vent his anger.

Also, there was a deeper truth behind this, with Lu Wu’s current enhancements, he could see Xing Zhanlong’s power.

Master 3 Star, King-level at its peak.

Messing with someone of that stature, Lu Wu felt it was better not to get involved.

In fact, if Lu Wu hadn’t seen how easy it was to bully Xing Zhanlong, he might have even held his nose and acknowledged it.

Now that he had screwed over Xing Zhanlong, Lu Wu felt that this matter should be ended here.

As for the pit he just dug, his policy was to “excavate without burying”; whoever has the ability, come and hit him!

Thinking like that, Lu Wu was utterly unrestrained.

However, it didn’t seem as simple as Lu Wu wished to end things.

Because at that point, someone spoke from Lu Wu’s heart,

“Um, the Master told me to tell you, maybe you should help him out!”

With Moon Shadow’s intervention, Lu Wu instantly understood; it looked like the guy in front of him had a deep connection with Old Lu, maybe he even had sisters or mistresses who were wrecked by Old Lu…

…

While Lu Wu was digging a pit for Xing Zhanlong.

Elsewhere, in the audience seats of the Phoenix Nest Training Ground.

Two spectators sat together.

One leaned toward the other and said, “Was it necessary to make such a big fuss? You just wanted to see me, couldn’t you have simply said something?”

The other one curled his lip and scoffed, “If seeing you were so easy, I obviously wouldn’t have gone through such trouble.

But it seems, you no longer want to maintain contact with us friends, right?”

“I know my identity, and it’s not convenient for me to have contact with you ‘Zero’, finding an opportunity can be a bit troublesome…”

“Sorry, but we really didn’t know your identity, you’ve hidden it too well. Currently, all we know is that you’re one of the twelve members of the Elder Council, but exactly which one, we truly have no clue.

Besides, if it’s inconvenient for you usually, isn’t it pretty convenient now?”

From his tone, it was evident that the one on the right held some grievances towards the one on the left, and there was even a hint of murderous intent.

No wonder, in his view, the person on the left had truly screwed them over.

The one on the left, even though he was reluctant to contact the other, still spoke soothingly, “The business with Kong Yi was truly an accident; I didn’t expect him to run into that guy’s son, blindly seeking out that guy’s son, getting killed by him, there’s nothing I could do.”

“An accident? How did you assure us that there wouldn’t be any problem?

You said there was no problem, but now it’s an issue, and it’s an accident; do you realize this accident has shaken ‘Zero’s’ century-long plans?

This has made our leader very angry.

You know what kind of people we are; we aren’t the ones to provoke…”

The one on the left immediately frowned and cut off his dialogue.

“You didn’t force me out here to speak this nonsense, right?

We only have five minutes out here, and you have three more left.”

He surely didn’t want to waste time on trivial matters.

The one on the right pursed his lips, but still suppressed his dissatisfaction and cut straight to the point, “We just want to know, is our partnership still in place?”

“It is!”

“What about the item?”

“After Kong Yi died, did he pass the item to someone else?”

“Who? Lu Wu?”

“Not him, the one who went in with Lu Wu.”

“Lin Jianying? But as far as I know, he’s already dead!”

Clearly, the one on the right came prepared, quite aware of what had happened at that time, and knew even more that Lin Jianying was a dead lead.

At that moment, the one on the left dropped a bombshell.

“He’s not dead!”

“Not dead?”

“Yes!” The one on the left nodded, “According to the Elder Council’s information, Lin Jianying has been monitored by the Elder Council since Inheritance Land.

However, when he died, the Elder Council’s forces were distracted by a Summoned Beast and lost him.

Therefore, the Elder Council suspects that Lin Jianying might not have died.”

“Any suspects?”

“Yes! Two people, Jiangnan’s Jiang Yuexing and Jiangbei’s Zhang Yunyi, both are highly suspicious.”

“I remember those two have a close relationship with that leashed dog, so some members of the Elder Council suspect he might be involved with this.

There were proposals for an investigation, but the president suppressed them.”

The one on the right curled his lip, “I thought your Elder Council was quite aggressive, how can you be so fearful of a leashed dog?”

To this, the one on the left meaningfully said, “The Elder Council has its reservations, but you don’t.

The people the Elder Council dare not touch, you can; the things the Elder Council daren’t do, you can!

I’m about out of time, I’ll take my leave; here’s the item, don’t cause such a big stir when you contact me next time.”

After saying this, the figure on the left vanished completely.

…

Um, the updates these past two days have been unstable because of a particularly odd match-making encounter.

I’ll post a chat screenshot for you to get a sense of it.

# Chapter 317 - 317 314 Zero (Major Section)

﻿Chapter 317: 314 Zero (Major Section) Chapter 317: 314 Zero (Major Section) Inside the Phoenix Nest Training Ground.

The individual on the right, upon witnessing the sudden disappearance of another, looked at the object in his hand with sheer mockery on his face.

Initially, he intended to leave the object at the scene.

But after pondering for a moment, he decided to keep it first.

Shortly after, the person on the right also left the Phoenix Nest Training Ground and headed to a hotel nearby.

In the hotel, he poured himself a glass of wine and quietly looked down at the Phoenix Nest Training Ground before him.

After about ten minutes.

A person suddenly appeared out of nowhere in the shadowy corner of the hotel.

The young man was startled, “That was fast? Lost track of him?”

“Mhm!”

“Such a sly fox. Anyway, he left something behind; take a look.”

As he spoke, the young man casually tossed what that fellow had left behind into the shadows.

“I initially planned to leave it as a clue for them so they could use their resources to help investigate, but considering Xing Zhanlong’s intelligence, I figured it wasn’t worth it.

Moreover, with that old guy’s tactics, he probably wouldn’t have left any flaws.”

“No, he did leave something!”

“Oh?” The young man was taken aback.

“There’s a mark on this thing, it belongs to the Fei Family!”

The young man’s eyes lit up, “The Fei Family? Are you saying that old fox is one of the twelve elders, Fei Yinghao?”

Immediately, he dismissed the idea without waiting for the other to respond, “No, that’s not like the old fox to leave such a glaring flaw.”

The person in the shadows threw the item back and asked, “Besides leaving this, did he say anything else?”

“He mentioned that Lin Jianying might not be dead, and pointed out two people with major suspicions, one being Jiang Yuexing and the other Zhang Yunyi.

He also mentioned that there might be the involvement of that abandoned dog.”

The person in the shadows scoffed, “He left one out—himself!

It’s obvious he’s trying to use us as pawns, intending to take them down, as well as us.

I’ve always said it; cooperating with such a sly fox is like seeking skin from a tiger!”

The young man gave a slight smile, “That may be true for us, but isn’t it the same for him?

He’s eager to use us, to take us down, and aren’t we just as eager to take him down, to use him?

Don’t you think this kind of cooperation, where both sides are fully aware of each other’s intentions and calculations, is good?

It’s certainly better than our relationship; at least I can clearly understand what he’s thinking but have no clue about yours.”

To this, the person in the shadows chose to ignore.

Changing the subject directly, “As for the trap, you’ve seen it, and you’ve set it; it’s about time for you to leave, right?

Your presence here makes me feel particularly insecure.”

“I’m about to leave. I just need to wrap up here and then I have some things to do, plus a trip to Jiangnan.”

“Going to see Jiang Yuexing? You know he’s plotting against you…”

“Well, I have to show some support when someone puts in so much effort, especially a partner.

Enough talk, I’m off. From here on, I’m leaving it to you.

We’ve caused him enough trouble; keep an eye out and see if we can flush out that old fox and take him down.”

With those words, the young man downed his glass of wine in one gulp, and then his figure gradually faded away.

Watching the young man disappear, the person hiding in the shadows frowned deeply before they too vanished without a trace.

…  
 Meanwhile, in the Phoenix Nest Training Ground.

Lu Wu, who initially didn’t plan to assist Xing Zhanlong, eventually decided to lend a hand.

It wasn’t because Old Lu had asked.

That scoundrel’s words carried little weight with Lu Wu.

The main reason was Moon Shadow secretly telling Lu Wu about the relationship between Xing Zhanlong and Lu Haikong.

It was said that they had been extremely close brothers.

Until one day, Xing Zhanlong learned that his sister and Lu Haikong had a fling, and the goddess he was pursuing nearly ran off with Lu Haikong. Even though Lu Haikong retained some humanity and pulled back at the last moment, Xing Zhanlong’s relationship with the goddess ended…  
 Upon hearing this, Lu Wu’s face turned dark.

He could not help but feel that Old Lu was despicable.

The actions of Old Lu were so embarrassing that even hearing about them made Lu Wu cringe.

Knowing what Lu Haikong had done to him, Lu Wu suddenly felt that being used as bait by him didn’t seem too unreasonable.

Of course, this was from Xing Zhanlong’s perspective.

When Lu Wu put himself in Xing Zhanlong’s shoes, he immediately felt that not being skinned and deboned by him was a sign of sainthood.

So, moved by sympathy, Lu Wu decided to help Xing Zhanlong.

“Old Xing, if you trust me, why don’t you tell me what happened, and I’ll help you analyze it?”

Lu Wu’s sudden change of attitude baffled the resentful and furious Xing Zhanlong, clearly not understanding why Lu Wu had changed his tune all of a sudden, but he quickly collected himself and explained the whole situation to Lu Wu from beginning to end.

“It’s like this, I have a friend I haven’t seen for many years who came to look for me recently.

She brought me news that a high-ranking member of the Zero Organization had infiltrated Beijing.”

Lu Wu noticed that Xing Zhanlong’s expression was a bit odd when he mentioned his friend.

He made a note of it but didn’t ask any questions. Instead, he moved on to another key point.

“What is the Zero Organization?”

“The Zero is an evil organization made up of Evil Summoners and top criminal summoners from the Alliance.”

“Evil organization? How evil?”

This was the first time Lu Wu had heard of such an organization, and he was curious, which Xing Zhanlong satisfied.

“They once slaughtered a city in District 11.

They released a plague that killed millions in District 5 and created a blood terror that kept everyone in District 6 up at night for half a month…”

Even prepared, Lu Wu was still taken aback by their achievements.

This was much more terrifying than any organization he had imagined from his past life.

“This is an organization of extreme madness and evil, where members would massacre entire families over slight discontent, the higher-ups being the most insane.

And this time in District 1, the one who came to Beijing is said to be one of the Five Ambassadors of the Zero Organization.”

Xing Zhanlong remembered that Lu Wu was a novice and took the opportunity to explain the structure of the Zero: “At the top of the Zero Organization is the leader, then the Five Ambassadors, followed by the Seventy-Two Apostles.

It’s said that all Apostles are at least at Master Level.

The Summoner Association encountered the Seventeenth Apostle, whose power had already reached King-level.

Moreover, that was just the level years ago.”

Xing Zhanlong clearly talked a bit too much.

He hadn’t mentioned it before, and now that he did, Lu Wu started to panic.

If Apostles were at King-level everywhere, what level were the Envoys?

What level was the leader?

Lu Wu suddenly wanted to ask if it was too late for him to back out now.

However, Xing Zhanlong had completely missed Lu Wu’s worry and was energetically explaining things to Lu Wu.

From the moment his friend found him, helped him identify the suspect, to devising a plan with him.

From start to finish, his friend was fully involved.

Lu Wu felt that after hearing this, it seemed unnecessary to continue listening.

“Sorry to interrupt, but may I rudely ask if your friend is male or female?”

“A woman!”

After answering instinctively, Xing Zhanlong’s face suddenly changed.

Lu Wu thought Xing Zhanlong had finally caught on, but then Xing Zhanlong’s face was filled with suspicion, “What are you planning to do? Look, I don’t care if you hit on others, but if you dare have any inappropriate thoughts about Miss Dushan, I swear I’ll castrate you!”

Lu Wu was speechless and covered his forehead, “Didn’t you say this to Old Lu in our family?”

“How did you know?”

Hearing Xing Zhanlong blurt out a response and the look of shock and suspicion on his face, Lu Wu really couldn’t understand, “May I ask rashly how you managed to compete against others to become the president of the Summoner Professional Center?”

“I didn’t have to compete with anyone, I inherited the presidency from the previous president.”

Now, even more puzzled, Lu Wu asked, “How did he choose you?”

“That was a bit too harsh,” Xing Zhanlong felt offended, but still answered honestly, “Because he was my dad!”

“Oh, all right, now it all makes sense!”

Seeing Lu Wu nodding his head as if he’d unraveled a century-old mystery, Xing Zhanlong no longer just felt offended, he was sure that Lu Wu had insulted him.

As Xing Zhanlong was contemplating whether to slap Lu Wu to death, Lu Wu started to discuss serious matters, “The situation is now quite clear, you’ve been deceived by your friend.

Moreover, in the Summoner Professional Center, it seems like there are people who want to mess with you…”

“That’s impossible!

Miss Dushan would never deceive me, she said she was ready to settle down with me and had even given me a token of our love!”

Xing Zhanlong’s intelligence wasn’t low, it could only be described as a bit blunt, but when it came to Du Dao Hu Zi, his otherwise normal IQ instantly plummeted into the negatives.

As soon as Lu Wu criticized Du Dao Hu Zi, the trust Xing Zhanlong had in Lu Wu vanished instantly.

On the spot, he even pulled out a hairpin and thrust it in front of Lu Wu, desperately trying to prove Du Dao Hu Zi’s innocence.

“This is the heirloom hairpin passed down through generations in her family, used for engagement and betrothal.

She gave me this hairpin, which from a certain perspective means she’s already my fiancée!

Do you think my wife would harm me?”

Facing Xing Zhanlong, Lu Wuyi saw the hairpin, then looked at the agitated and livid Xing Zhanlong, not knowing what to say.

Looking at Xing Zhanlong’s face, all he saw was sympathy and pity.

What on earth has happened to this world?

Is there something wrong with being honest?

Why is it that in every world, honest people are the ones who get hurt and bullied by the unscrupulous?

Shivering with anger!

When will honest people like them ever truly stand up?

In the end, although it pained him greatly, Lu Wu still had to reveal the harsh truth to Xing Zhanlong.

“Firstly, the item you’ve taken out is not a style from District 11.

It’s a traditional style from District 1.

Secondly, the item you’ve brought out, do you know what it is?

It’s a device with Golden Quality used for eavesdropping and surveillance. If I’m not mistaken, your beloved Miss Dushan has already run away. Try contacting her yourself and see.”

Xing Zhanlong’s face changed, and he immediately picked up the phone to call.

But no one answered.

Xing Zhanlong, still not giving up, called again, and this time the other party did pick up.

Xing Zhanlong was both shocked and delighted, looking at Lu Wu with pride. However, before he could even speak, the person on the other end spoke first.

“I heard your entire conversation just now, he’s not lying to you, it was me who used you!”

The words hit Xing Zhanlong like a bolt from the blue, leaving him utterly devastated.

Lu Wu, although somewhat surprised by Du Dao Hu Zi’s candidness, couldn’t help but think that Xing Zhanlong should give up by now, right?

But what happened next left Lu Wu speechless.

Xing Zhanlong stiffened for only a minute, then quickly recovered, asking with immense concern, “Miss Dushan, have you encountered any trouble?

Were you forced by them?

Tell me what the trouble is, I’ll help you solve it. I am, after all, your fiancé, don’t bear everything alone.”

“There’s no saving this guy, he’s completely hopeless!”

Lu Wu held his forehead in exasperation, finally understanding why such unscrupulous women loved to deceive honest men.

It wasn’t because they were too utterly heartless; it was because the honest ones were just too easy to deceive.

This self-sabotaging was truly lethal.

“Uncle, don’t you realize what kind of impact her actions can have on you?

You’ve been played by her, your base has been taken over, have you thought about the consequences?

Do you believe that your real troubles are yet to come, and whether you can keep your official hat on your head is still in question…”

“I never really wanted to be this president anyway, it’s no big deal if it’s gone!

As long as Miss Dushan is happy, I’ll do anything!”

Lu Wu had misunderstood one thing.

He thought that Xing Zhanlong was anxious because of himself.

In reality, this guy was doing it all for Du Dao Hu Zi from the beginning.

In fact, for Xing Zhanlong, the so-called ‘Zero’ organization didn’t matter to him at all, and this matter was not originally under the jurisdiction of the Summoner Professional Center.

He took over because of the appearance of Du Dao Hu Zi.

For her, even if it meant confronting ‘Zero’, he was willing to do so.

He even went out of his way to play the role of an all-powerful boss that wasn’t suited for him, not because he liked to pretend, but because he knew that was what Du Dao Hu Zi liked.

So, the situation was nothing like what Lu Wu imagined.

He thought he needed to help Xing Zhanlong unravel the conspiracy behind him, to take revenge for him, and to keep his current position.

What he actually needed to do was help Xing Zhanlong win Du Dao Hu Zi’s favor.

To this, Lu Wu admitted he couldn’t do it, not even a god could.

Moreover, Lu Wu felt that for a leader like Xing Zhanlong, it would be better to remove him from power.

Seated in that position, he feared that Xing Zhanlong might sell off District 1 without even realizing it.

“Well, if that’s the case, then there’s nothing here for me. I’ll be going now.”

Lu Wu wanted to slip away, but just as he said he would leave, Du Dao Hu Zi turned her head and focused her attention on him.

“Xing Jun, could you pass me my phone? I’d like to have a few words with Lu Wu,” she said.

“Sure, sure, sure!”

Xing Zhanlong was very easygoing, blocking Lu Wu and persistently pushing the phone toward him.

Lu Wu’s face was a clear rejection.

Who in the world would want to get involved in this mess?

Nevertheless, Xing Zhanlong was adamant. With the voice in his heart not interfering, Lu Wu had no choice but to take the phone, “I want to make it clear in advance that I have no relationship with my father. I’ve received no help from him as I’ve grown up.

I, Lu Wu, hereby declare that I sever all father-son ties with Lu Haikong. If anyone has any grievances related to him, please go to the ‘Kunlun Secret Realm’ to find him, thank you!”

Lu Wu cut off all ties with his father upfront and tossed out a fake address to block any potential revenge from the other party.

“My relationship with him is a thing of the past. To me now, he is nothing more than a stranger. I contacted you because I want to give you some news.”

“Speak, I’m listening.”

Lu Wu seemed particularly disinterested, but one sentence from the other party immediately made him alert.

“You have a friend named Lin Jianying, right?”

Lu Wu narrowed his eyes; he had not expected to hear Old Lin’s name from Du Dao Hu Zi’s mouth, which put him on high alert.

“He’s still…”

“Snap!”

Du Dao Hu Zi had just started speaking when Lu Wu abruptly hung up the phone.

“Why did you hang up the phone? I hadn’t clarified the situation with Miss Dushan yet.”

Seeing this, Xing Zhanlong next to him got anxious, looking as if he wanted to strangle Lu Wu on the spot.

At that moment, however, Lu Wu had no time to pay attention to Xing Zhanlong.

His mind was in total chaos.

Lu Wu had originally thought that this matter probably had little to do with him, but now it seemed that the trouble may be directed at him after all.

Even though the call had been disconnected, Lu Wu’s mind was still churning.

What was she trying to say?

Was it something about Old Lin’s body, or that Old Lin wasn’t dead?

Lu Wu felt there was a fifty-fifty chance. Old Lin’s body might hold some secret from that Inheritance Land.

And it was not difficult to deduce, given the evasive attitudes of both Jiang Yuexing and even Lu Haikong on the subject, that the secret must be significant.

And there was even the possibility that Old Lin had not died.

However, regardless of which possibility it was, Lu Wu thought the most sensible thing to do at the moment was to listen to nothing and pretend as if nothing had happened.

This was an ostrich mentality; as long as Lu Wu buried his head, he wouldn’t see anything, and then nothing had happened.

This approach might look foolish, but it was indeed the most rational choice for Lu Wu.

Hadn’t you noticed that even Old Lu was avoiding this matter?

If Old Lu, an existence above King-level, was avoiding it, wouldn’t it be suicidal for someone at Master Level like him to rush in?

Besides, Lu Wu didn’t believe Du Dao Hu Zi had good intentions.

This woman, capable of manipulating Xing Zhanlong so easily, didn’t seem to Lu Wu like she would genuinely want to help.

Providing him with information, her goal must be to drag him into a whirlpool he currently could not get involved in.

To use him to fight Lu Haikong.

Lu Wu saw this very clearly, which was why he would not fall for it.

“I can’t let others drag me down; what I need to do now is to hunker down and develop discreetly!

As sorry as I feel for Old Lin, there’s nothing I can do; after all, I still have Dudu to consider.”

Compared to Old Lin, who was most likely already dead,  
 Lu Wu was even less willing to see Dudu encounter any danger.

And while Lu Wu was hanging up the phone, determined to stay out of affairs he currently couldn’t meddle in at any cost,  
 Du Dao Hu Zi, on the other side, listened to the silence on the phone, her lips curving upward slightly.

“Is this child really his own?”

Although Lu Wu’s behavior and actions were almost identical to Lu Haikong’s, when it came to facing issues, Lu Wu’s decisions were the complete opposite of Lu Haikong’s.

One was extremely cautious, while the other was recklessly bold.

Compared to the latter, the former seemed a bit more difficult to deal with.

But it was just a bit. No amount of prudence would fend off trouble that came knocking at the door.

Suddenly, Du Dao Hu Zi began to look forward to what would happen next…

# Chapter 318 - 318 315 Feng Xiu

﻿Chapter 318: 315 Feng Xiu Chapter 318: 315 Feng Xiu Lu Wu felt that Beijing really didn’t mesh well with him.

The last time he came to Beijing, something happened.

And this time in Beijing, something happened as well.

Moreover, this time the incident was clearly bigger than the last one.

Even if Lu Wu hadn’t been fully involved, based on the information he knew, he could smell the stirring undercurrents and the brewing storms.

Add to that his experiences during this time and the people he had encountered.

Two women, both likely ex-lovers of Old Lu, had come to him with benefits as soon as he arrived.

One, Xing Zhanlong, who wasn’t very bright, suspected that his sister had been deceived by Old Lu and that he himself had been cuckolded by Old Lu.

And Du Dao Hu Zi, who explicitly harbored ill intentions towards him and was likely abandoned by Old Lu after starting something messy.

Lu Wu was pondering Old Lu’s character.

Suddenly, he felt that the vast expanse of Beijing was exceptionally cold.

Walking on the streets now, Lu Wu was terrified, dreading that some old lover or enemy of Old Lu might jump out and try to castrate him with a knife.

It’s safe to say that he felt extremely insecure.

Therefore, the day after the finals, Lu Wu proposed to leave Beijing.

He couldn’t stand this wretched place any longer; he didn’t even want to use the token Xing Zhanlong had given him. He just wanted to get as far away as possible.

Of course, it would be best if he could completely sever the father-son relationship with Old Lu.

But that wasn’t something he could decide on his own.

It wasn’t up to Old Lu either; his lovers and enemies would have to agree.

So, leaving Beijing was a more reliable choice, escaping this dangerous whirlpool to go back to Jiangnan and keep a low profile.

However, leaving Beijing turned out to be a bit troublesome for Lu Wu.

After all, he was the champion of the university league, and with the incident that occurred during the finals of the university league, even Xing Zhanlong had been detained for investigation afterward, so Lu Wu was somewhat implicated.

Further, with potential trouble brewing behind the scenes, Lu Wu felt it might be difficult to leave.

However, what Lu Wu didn’t expect was that

his departure request was approved very quickly as if someone was protecting him, allowing Lu Wu to leave Beijing.

Although Lu Wu didn’t know the situation or who exerted this influence,  
 being able to leave was naturally the best outcome.

Lu Wu happily packed his bags and, together with Dudu and Li Kai, pulled his bodyguard Tie Xiong—who had disappeared for some time—back into the fold.

A group of them happily drove back to Jiangnan in the same RV they had come in, leaving Old Zhang and the others to collect the awards.

The moment the RV drove out of Beijing,  
 Lu Wu felt as if he had shed a layer of heavy shackles, and his whole person relaxed.

He felt an exhilarating sense of freedom, as if he could roam the vast skies and seas.

However, Lu Wu’s happiness lasted only three hours before it was abruptly cut short.

Just three hours after they left Beijing, somebody appeared in front of their RV and blocked their way.

The blocker was a young man.

He appeared to be in his late twenties, dressed in a fitting suit, a black shirt and a white jacket, with a blood-red skull pin on his chest.

The man stopped the car, and politely said to the driver Li Kai, “Sorry, I’m lost. Could I possibly get a lift?”

“We’re sorry, our car is full!”

Before Li Kai could respond, Lu Wu, sensing something off and coming over to check, outright rejected them.

Even if he were senseless, he wouldn’t consider picking up someone dressed like that and blocking the road in such a remote area, especially not a man covered in question marks.

The man saw Lu Wu and smiled.

“I think we could squeeze in if we try.”

Lu Wu didn’t respond; there was no need to. He immediately instructed Li Kai to drive off.

He also ordered Tie Xiong and Yue Ying to be ready to strike without hesitation if this guy made any suspicious move.

Lu Wu’s decision was quite resolute, but it was still a step too late.

Before Li Kai could start the car, the man had already entered the vehicle.

The young man, whose entry method was unknown, took a look around the inside of Lu Wu’s RV and grinned, “See, I told you we could squeeze in.”

As he spoke, he sat down on the sofa in the vehicle, just two meters away from a confused Dudu who had no idea what was going on.

At this distance, Lu Wu couldn’t possibly make a move.

Dudu, still confused, was somewhat curious about this suddenly appearing stranger.

“Who is this guy, Lu Wu? How did he suddenly get in?”

“Me?” The young man’s mouth curled up. “Oh right, I seem to have forgotten to introduce myself.”

“Um, allow me to introduce myself, I’m Feng Xiu, 31 years old, one of the Five Ambassadors of the ‘Zero’ organization. I’m delighted to meet you, cute little girl.”

Feng Xiu said as he reached out to shake hands with Dudu, which startled her, causing her to run away holding Tuantuan, over to Lu Wu’s side.

Feng Xiu’s gaze followed Dudu, landing on Lu Wu, and he naturally extended his hand towards Lu Wu.

“Of course, I’m also pleased to meet you. I’ve long admired you.”

At that moment, Lu Wu was completely stunned by the man before him; he knew this fellow was no ordinary person, but he hadn’t expected he was the very person Xing Zhanlong had mentioned earlier.

He hadn’t expected this guy to have set his sights on him.

He thought he’d be safe after leaving Beijing, but trouble still followed him, causing Lu Wu considerable headaches.

Despite the headache, Lu Wu quickly calmed down.

“But I, on the other hand, am not so keen on seeing you. I wish you would leave!”

As Lu Wu spoke, Tie Xiong, standing beside him, stepped forward.

“Kid, do you want to leave on your own, or do you want my old man to beat you out?”

“Don’t be so agitated, I’m not a bad guy, nor do I have any ill intentions. I just wanted to come over, make friends, and chat.”

Feng Xiu was completely unfazed by the old man’s threats. He stood up, opened the fridge nearby, and started rummaging through it.

“Why is there only juice, no alcohol? Well, I’ll make do with this.”

This guy didn’t treat himself as an outsider at all, pulled out a bottle of pineapple beer from the fridge, opened it, took a sip, then sat back on the couch, enjoying the view outside the window.

Although Lu Wu was very displeased, considering the Power of the other party in this confined space, he didn’t dare let Tie Xiong and the others make their move rashly.

“What exactly do you want?”

“I’ve already told you, I just want to make friends and chat.

Oh, we haven’t started chatting yet, have we?

Hmm, let me think, what topic should we start with?

My purpose in coming to Beijing?

Hmm, that’s a good topic, I think it’s quite fitting for us to chat about.”

Feng Xiu didn’t give Lu Wu a chance to refuse, he just kept on talking: “I came to District 1 and entered Beijing to find a person, a not very honest partner.

He collaborated with us on a project, but then the project encountered some problems.

Oh yes, the project he collaborated on with us also involves you, remember Kong Yi?

The one you killed, he was our man, and he had clues to something very important.”

As Feng Xiu spoke of this, a sword light suddenly pierced through, striking Feng Xiu with deadly precision.

However, even though Feng Xiu was clearly stabbed, not a single drop of blood spilled. His lips even curled up into a sly smile at that moment: “So there is Power protecting it, huh?

It’s even Ghost Lady Yue Ying.

Lucky for me, I came prepared, and it’s not my real body, or I would be in real danger.”

As Feng Xiu spoke, his figure became an illusion, obviously damaged by Yue Ying’s sword.

At the same time, another sword light appeared, obliterating the duplicate.

Even though the duplicate was destroyed, intermittent voices still continued from the spot.

“Lucky I prepared, the duplicate’s gone but still can chat a bit.

You don’t want me to speak, but I insist.”

Another sword light appeared, striking at the source of the voice, but it couldn’t diminish the sound.

“Lu Wu listen well, first, that partner of ours is one of the Twelve Elders, he wants to use our blade to kill you guys.

Lin Jianying isn’t dead, he’s either in the hands of Jiang Yuexing, or in the hands of Zhang Yunyi, or possibly in the hands of our partner.

The item I was speaking about is the ‘Gate’, it can…”  
 The voice cut off before he could finish, disappearing entirely.

Inside Lu Wu’s RV, quietness returned once more.

But the ripples brought about by this single stone cast by Feng Xiu kept echoing.

Lu Wu fell into silence as well.

One by one, they are all desperate to drag him into the whirlpool.

Du Dao Hu Zi had done the same, and now this new guy popping up was no different.

This was considerably distressful for Lu Wu.

After a long, long silence, he finally spoke to Li Kai, “Uncle Li, please change our route.”

…

I’m thinking, maybe I should change the update timing, concentrate the daily updates between nine and ten at night.

Hmm, those in favor, raise your hands

# Chapter 319 - 319 316 Changping Secret Realm

﻿Chapter 319: 316 Changping Secret Realm Chapter 319: 316 Changping Secret Realm Lu Wu changed his route.

Originally, he had planned to head straight back to Jiangnan.

But Feng Xiu’s sudden visit had given Lu Wu a whiff of danger.

He could be one hundred percent certain that if he returned to Jiangnan now, trouble would follow relentlessly.

In such a scenario, Lu Wu had to face a choice.

Should he return to face the trouble or turn around to avoid it?

Given two options, Lu Wu chose to step back.

Focus on development first.

Because evasion is shameful yet useful.

The other party’s target was clearly him. As long as Lu Wu avoided stepping into the traps they had set, he at least could buy himself time to become stronger.

Thus, Lu Wu, who had originally planned to return to Jiangnan, took a different path.

“Ran away? Such a coward?

Is this kid really that guy’s son?”

On the other hand, seeing Lu Wu suddenly changing his route, Feng Xiu was somewhat astonished.

He hadn’t expected that Lu Haikong, known for his brashness, would have such a cowardly son.

“Seems like I miscalculated.”

Though he said this, Feng Xiu wasn’t too concerned about the situation.

On one hand, he was well aware that Lu Wu couldn’t escape.

On the other hand, during his brief interaction with Lu Wu, he had obtained what he wanted.

From Moon Shadow’s reactions.

It was clear that Lu Haikong didn’t want Lu Wu involved in matters related to the “Gate.”

This meant that the fearless Lu Haikong of the past had died completely, and he was now afraid.

The more frightened Lu Haikong was, the more reckless they on this side could become.

“It looks like we can really stir things up big time.”

Watching the departing RV, Feng Xiu’s eyes flickered as he began to secretly scheme.

Elsewhere, on Lu Wu’s side.

After changing his route, the RV left the highway and entered a mountain path.

Normal RVs certainly couldn’t navigate an unmanaged mountain path.

But Lu Wu’s vehicle was no ordinary one.

Every single part of this vehicle was a piece of individual equipment.

Among them, there were not a few pieces of Golden Quality equipment.

The cost invested by Lu Wu into this vehicle from start to finish exceeded a million points. If converted into money, this thing would at least be worth a hundred billion.

Put in the past, it would be worth the entire fortune of a high-target king.

With such a vehicle, driving up a mountain path was nothing.

It could even climb mountains with no problems.

Moreover, it wasn’t slow; even in the wilderness mountain paths, it could maintain a speed of a hundred kilometers per hour.

Whatever stood in its path, whether Summoned Beasts or trees and stones.

They were either destroyed or driven away.

If one were to look down from the sky, they would see a straight line being drawn as Lu Wu’s house’s RV advanced.

Such an aggressively dominant way of driving was truly overbearing!

A day later.

Inside the entrance and exit point of Changping Secret Realm.

A large group of Summoners just back from the realm were leisurely singing songs and drinking, when suddenly, an extremely grating alarm sound blared.

The alarm went off.

All the Summoners instantly became alert; even those who were tipsy were roused by their companions.

“What’s the situation? Did the Summoned Beasts in the realm go berserk again?”

Everyone almost immediately rushed towards the entrance.

However, they soon realized that the direction of the alarm sound was incorrect—this time, it wasn’t the entrance but outside the station.

The Summoners inside relaxed a bit at this moment.

“It seems that some foolish Summoned Beast has entered the alert zone.”

“Anyone interested in getting some exercise… Oh crap!”

The relaxed expressions on the Summoner’s faces didn’t last long before they were shattered by several massive figures.

A six-meter tall, Lord Level fierce tiger.

An eight-meter tall, Lord Level earth bear.

A several tens of meters long, Lord Level Green Flood Python.

Each one, a dominant force near the outpost, possessed terrifying power and viciousness.

Any one of them coming over could throw the outpost into chaos; with three together, the Summoners were somewhat worried whether the outpost could be preserved.

However, some who observed more closely noticed something unusual: “Wait, they don’t seem to be attacking.

They seem to be escaping…”

Before they could finish speaking, three sword lights flared up.

Immediately after, those three ferociously incomparable Lord Peak Level Summoned Beasts were all done for.

This sudden turn of events baffled the Summoners at the outpost.

Before they could react to what was happening, an RV plowed straight through.

As it passed the bodies of those three Summoned Beasts, the RV even threw out three ropes, tying them up and dragging them along.

At this moment, the Summoners inside the outpost saw that behind this vehicle were several more ropes being dragged along.

And as the car continued forward, Summoners inside the shop were stunned to discover that each rope behind the car was pulling a Summoned Beast, and each of these beasts was at least Lord Level.

Seeing this scene, the Summoners inside the base couldn’t help but suck in a breath of cold air.

In the astonished gaze of the Summoners,  
 Lu Wu’s RV eventually stopped just outside the outpost of Changping Secret Realm.

As the door opened, the Summoners inside couldn’t help but start to get curious and excited,  
 all wanting to see who the dominant and powerful owner of the car was.

Amid their anticipation and curiosity, Lu Wu casually stepped out.

Seeing the ordinary Lu Wu come out, the Summoners inside the base were taken aback.

“Who is this kid?”

Clearly, many of the Summoners inside the base didn’t recognize Lu Wu.

That was quite normal, as most of the Summoners here were professionals, many of whom were veterans.

Most had been fighting in Secret Realms for years and years.

Among them, very few paid attention to the news from Summoner University and college leagues, so naturally, few knew Lu Wu.

However, there were still those who recognized him.

“It’s actually this guy!” exclaimed a Summoner who had just returned from a trip recently, shocked.

“Whose kid is this?”

Seeing someone recognized him, the Summoners nearby quickly gathered around to listen to the gossip.

“With such a domineering stance, he must be the scion of a prominent family.”

“You guys are mistaken there.”

The only one who knew Lu Wu’s identity took the rare chance to show off, naturally inclined to boast about Lu Wu: “Let me tell you, this guy is no simple character!

His name is Lu Wu, 20 years old, he was last year’s champion of Jiangnan High School League.”

The people nearby were not pleased to hear this.

“What’s so great about being a high school league champion?

Stop beating around the bush, just say who his dad is!”

“Can you not interrupt? Besides, his achievements are his own, what does his dad have to do with it?

His dad is just an ordinary person, an unremarkable ordinary individual, though I heard the Governor of Jiangnan seems to be his stepmother, that’s it?”

Hearing this, the Summoners glanced back at Lu Wu’s ‘ordinary’ face, nodding, “Oh, I see!”

“You guys don’t know anything!”

“Do you think he is so domineering just because of the Governor of Jiangnan?

Let me tell you, his current identity and status are barely any lower than the Governor of Jiangnan.”

“Come on, what kind of achievements could a 20-year-old have?

Not much less than the Governor of Jiangnan?

Could he really be some kind of Cultivation Master?”

“You actually guessed right, this guy reached Master Level as a Cultivation Master last year, the youngest Cultivation Master in the Alliance.

Furthermore, he is widely recognized as definitely being able to reach Grandmaster Level.”

“If you say it like that, it seems like he really is something.”

“You think that’s all? You know about Jiangnan University, right?”

“The former strong school, the one that’s declined now?”

“Yes, Jiangnan University was almost falling apart, but this guy revived it in just less than three months with his abilities, and he also owns a company whose revenue is at least several tens of millions of points each month.

Moreover, he is also this year’s university league champion, and it seems his own power has also reached Master Level…”

In the enthusiastic praises of that Summoner.

His nearby Summoned Beasts were all stunned into wide-eyed silence.

Glancing back at Lu Wu, they almost wanted to kneel in reverence.

A kid from an ordinary background, achieving so much in less than two years.

This isn’t human.

This damn well is a deity, isn’t it?

Such a person, as long as he doesn’t fall, will definitely be a major figure in the future.

No, it should be said that Lu Wu is already a major figure in the eyes of many Summoners right now.

Indeed, while they were getting to know Lu Wu’s situation, the usually aloof manager of the outpost was already eagerly approaching.

The face that usually bore not a hint of excess emotion was now full of smiles.

So flattering!

“Master Lu, hello, I am Chen Pingping, the manager of the Changping Secret Realm outpost.

If you need anything, just order.”

“Hello, please help me prepare a few rooms, and also find a few people to take care of these, and by the way, I don’t care about the materials, but make sure to keep the edible meat for me.

I need to feed the pigs!

Also, keep the bones, I’ll use them for our dog Gouzi to gnaw on.”

Had anyone else said this, Chen Pingping would have rolled her eyes already.

Can’t you live without boasting?

But when Lu Wu said this, Chen Pingping felt that Master Lu was very generous.

“I will arrange for someone to handle it right away!”

“Thank you, also, I need a map of Changping Secret Realm and information related to Undead Type Summoned Beasts from Changping Secret Realm, please take extra effort to help me with that, and of course, I won’t let you help for free.

Uncle Li!”

Upon Lu Wu’s call, Li Kai directly pulled out a card and handed it to Chen Pingping.

“Master Lu, what are you doing, it’s my honor to serve you, there’s no reason to take your money…”

Chen Pingping initially flatly refused with a firm attitude of not accepting it.

But soon after hearing that there were 10,000 Jiangnan University academic points in the card, she quietly accepted the card.

Can’t help it, the amount Lu Wu gave was just too generous!

# Chapter 320 - 320 317 Skeleton General

﻿Chapter 320: 317 Skeleton General Chapter 320: 317 Skeleton General After receiving Lu Wu’s money, Chen Pingping’s face heated up with even more enthusiasm.

He went the extra mile, very methodically helping Lu Wu solve his problems.

First, he arranged a room for Lu Wu to rest, then found someone to deal with the corpses of the Summoned Beasts.

At the same time, he helped Lu Wu find a map of the Changping Secret Realm.

And he sent someone to watch over Lu Wu’s vehicle.

Speaking of watching the car, at first Chen Pingping just found a few Summoners to keep an eye on it and didn’t pay much attention.

After all, Lu Wu hadn’t instructed him to do so, which made Chen Pingping feel that Lu Wu didn’t seem to value the car much; he just stationed a few people to make a good impression that he was conscientious.

However, when Chen Pingping summoned the Summoners who dealt with the Summoned Beasts’ corpses, they discovered that the ropes that tied up the corpses seemed to be equipment.

And all of them were of Golden Quality.

This news shocked Chen Pingping on the spot.

After all, there were nine ropes, each spanning dozens to hundreds of meters; if these were indeed of Golden Quality, then their value would be downright terrifying.

This also made him take Lu Wu’s vehicle more seriously.

He even went to take another look, and that look nearly gave Chen Pingping a heart attack.

This motherfucker, he discovered that the entire vehicle, everything he could see, seemed to be made up of equipment and tools, and they were at least Bronze Level items.

What the hell is this, a car?

This fucking thing is just a pile of money, alright?

Just disassembling one piece from the car would be enough for an ordinary person to spend their entire life.

This motherfucker, is this what the world of the rich is like?

Chen Pingping sincerely expressed his envy.

And the task of watching the car, for Chen Pingping, had just leveled up.

In addition to increasing the number of guards, he even moved to live right next to Lu Wu’s trailer.

With the stance of watching a car for a big shot.

He was going all out.

Clearly, he was thinking of pleasing the big shot, maybe even mixing in some benefits for himself.

Of course, although Chen Pingping was single-mindedly thinking about winning Lu Wu’s favor, he still got things done.

Soon, he had finished arranging everything for Lu Wu.

The bodies of the nine Lord Level Summoned Beasts brought by Lu Wu had all been processed, bones and flesh separated, not a single material was touched.

Besides, the map of the Changping Secret Realm and related information that Lu Wu wanted had also been collected and sorted by Chen Pingping, who delivered them to Lu Wu at the first opportunity.

For Lu Wu’s part, compared to the materials of those Lord Level Summoned Beasts, he was more concerned about the map and information of the Changping Secret Realm.

The reason he changed his route and headed over to the Changping Secret Realm was twofold.

One was that the Summoned Beast, suspected of being a three-time evolution of Little Skeleton, was in the Secret Realm, as indicated by Xing Zhanlong.

Another was, wasn’t Little Skeleton’s power already at Lord Level?

Lu Wu felt that it was time to upgrade the abilities of Little Skeleton’s underlings.

As for the corpses of those Lord Level Summoners he brought along.

The flesh was indeed intended to be fed to the pigs.

Tuantuan’s power has been stuck at Leader Three Stars and hadn’t really increased; the nine Lord Level Summoned Beasts were prepared by Lu Wu to give Tuantuan a boost, to see if it could consume and grow.

As for the bones.

Lu Wu wanted to see if they could be undeadified.

After all, there seemed to be only one three-time evolution Little Skeleton in the Changping Secret Realm, and even if Lu Wu managed to subdue it, there would still be a huge gap in the quota for Little Skeleton’s underlings.

And there were not many of the Skeleton Series Summoned Beasts to start with, and they were hard to find.

Rather than wandering around aimlessly, Lu Wu figured it might be better to try producing his own.

However, that wasn’t urgent; it could wait until he had acquired the one three-time evolution Little Skeleton.

Lu Wu examined the map and information Chen Pingping had brought him.

Then he combined it with the clues provided by Xing Zhanlong, made some analysis, and got a rough idea of the target’s range of activity.

After clearing up the intel, Lu Wu didn’t dawdle; he left Dudu and Tie Xiong behind and entered the Changping Secret Realm with Little Skeleton and the others.

The environment of the Changping Secret Realm was somewhat similar to the Secret Realm [Big Cemetery] that Lu Wu had entered before.

The environment wasn’t pleasant; both were dark and terrifying, with an endless darkness overhead and bones strewn all over the ground.

This was also one of the reasons why Lu Wu didn’t bring Dudu.

The first time Lu Wu entered the [Big Cemetery], he was very uncomfortable; now, more than a year later, entering this kind of Secret Realm again, he felt quite more composed.

Upon entering the Secret Realm, Lu Wu immediately had Little Skeleton call out Indeks the loli.

The moment Indeks appeared, Lu Wu shoved a chicken leg into her mouth without a word.

“Transform for me!”

Well, of course, this command was shouted in his mind, and by the time it reached his lips, it was not expressed in the same way.

After all, getting smacked by her tail did hurt.

But Indeks was agreeable; once the chicken leg was stuffed in her mouth, and after Lu Wu gently said a few nice words, Indeks transformed.

It wasn’t the dragon turning into a loli, but the loli turning into a dragon, reverting to her Bone Dragon form.

Once in the Bone Dragon form, Lu Wu took out a prepared mat from Little Skeleton’s phone and placed it on the Bone Dragon’s back, then he and Little Skeleton climbed onto the mat, riding on Indeks’ back.

“Let’s go!”

With that call from Lu Wu to arms.

“”””

Indeks flapped its bony wings furiously, and while the Summoner gaped in astonishment, it took Lu Wu and his companions aloft and headed straight into the depths of the Changping Secret Realm.

Flying through the air, Lu Wu was able to look down upon the entire Secret Realm from a different perspective.

But to tell the truth, the scenery from this angle wasn’t particularly nice.

After all, the Secret Realm belonged to the Undead Type, and from any angle, it was all rot and bones, along with various oddly shaped Summoned Beasts.

Of course, every now and then Lu Wu could also see something else.

For instance, material items and the like, but most were below Golden Quality, and now that level of items no longer interested Lu Wu.

So he didn’t linger on his journey but headed straight for his destination.

They sped along rapidly, so fast that the riding experience wasn’t very pleasant.

After all, Indeks was a Bone Dragon, and sitting on it was somewhat uncomfortable, even with a cushion.

Of course, Lu Wu didn’t dare complain, since Indeks was born with such a shape to avoid being ridden. It was Lu Wu himself who was mad enough to insist on riding it.

Unpleasant as the ride was, Lu Wu could only endure it.

Fortunately, he didn’t have to endure for long.

About three hours later, Lu Wu reached his destination.

“Land of Burial, this is the place!”

Lu Wu cast his gaze below, where there lay a crimson plain.

It spanned roughly twenty to thirty kilometers, and the entire plain was engulfed in a blood-red fog. Lu Wu could see with his eyes that this kind of blood-colored fog was known as Evil Qi.

It was fused with the entire plain.

With this blood-colored Evil Qi present, all Lu Wu could see from above was a sea of blood.

Such a vast area would be difficult to find a Summoned Beast using ordinary methods.

But this was no challenge for Lu Wu.

“Indeks, it’s all up to you!

When we get back, I’ll have Dudu make you something delicious!”

Lured by the promise of tasty food, Indeks was quite obedient and cooperative, roaring down at the plain below almost immediately.

While roaring, Indeks activated its “Dragon Power” Talent.

The terrifying Dragon Power scattered across the plain below.

Immediately afterward, Indeks lowered its flying altitude, skimming just above the Evil Qi of the plain.

This brazen provocation angered whatever was hidden within the Evil Qi and chanting a spell.

Indeks had only flown less than a hundred meters when a blood-red Sword Qi slashed towards them.

As the Sword Qi approached, an overwhelming aura of slaughter surged forward, causing Lu Wu, who was riding on Indeks’s back, to shudder against his own will.

Facing this sword directly, Indeks was confronted by an even more terrifying aura of slaughter.

Lu Wu distinctly felt Indeks’s body stiffen in that moment, as it instinctively roared and spewed out a stream of black, fearsome flames to confront the blood-red sword light.

“Poof!”

The Bone Dragon Roar collided with the sword light and was almost immediately cleaved apart.

The blood-red sword light cut through the black flames and continued towards Indeks.

Both Lu Wu and Little Skeleton on Indeks’s back reacted quickly.

Little Skeleton immediately cast a spell, and three Bone Shields materialized out of thin air.

These Bone Shields, formed from Dragon Bone Magic, possessed extremely strong defenses—one shield could withstand a full-force blow from a Lord Level being.

But in front of a single blood-red sword light, it was as if the Bone Shields were made of paper, effortlessly cleaved in two.

After slicing through the Bone Shields, the blood-red sword light faced a silly bird, thrown out in total bewilderment.

Hanhan hadn’t quite grasped what was happening, when an intense sense of danger overwhelmed it, prompting an instinctive release of its two Killing Skills, “Absolute Ice Seal” and “Frozen Ray.” But they had no effect; the sword light still struck its body.

Fortunately, Lu Wu activated Damage Sharing at that moment, linking himself with Hanhan, Little Skeleton, and Little Flood Dragon.

Only by combining the strength of the four of them (beasts included) were they able to withstand that sword strike.

While Lu Wu struggled to withstand this sword strike, the Summoned Beast that unleashed it also revealed itself following the attack.

After all, as it struck with its sword, the sword light forced back the surrounding Evil Qi, creating a pathway through which Lu Wu could see its true form.

It was a Human-shaped Summoned Beast, about three meters tall.

Dressed in ancient battle armor and wielding a longsword, its eye sockets flickered with Pupil Fire, mysterious and imposing. What really caught Lu Wu’s attention was the attributes of this Summoned Beast.

…

Name: Skeleton General (three-time evolution)

Power: Zero stars (King-level)

Attributes: Undead, Skeleton

Quality: Ordinary (Gold) (Enhancement)

Weakness: Light

Basic Skills: Battlefield Swordsmanship (Grandmaster)

Advanced Skill: Enemy Killing Swordsmanship (Grandmaster)

Killing Skill: Slaughter Sword (Grandmaster)

Talent: Defeated Army Commander (a mutated talent of the Skeleton Commander, with similar properties.)

Active Skill: Formation Power (Activate to boost one’s own strength and that of the troops under one’s command, linking them together. Without breaking the formation, the general cannot die.)

Domain: Dead Army Domain (99%) (No need to worry unless it’s complete)

…

# Chapter 321 - 321 318 Grandmaster Level Skills

﻿Chapter 321: 318 Grandmaster Level Skills Chapter 321: 318 Grandmaster Level Skills Looking at the opponent’s attributes, Lu Wu frowned slightly.

“King-level, huh? It exceeds Little Skeleton’s phone’s capture limit.”

Lu Wu initially thought about capturing it.

Now, seeing the attributes, there was no hope.

However, even if there was no hope of capturing it, the fight still had to happen.

Although he could rely on Moon Shadow’s power to take it down, doing so would undoubtedly deprive Lu Wu of practical combat experience.

How could Lu Wu grow without fighting?

“Go on, we have more people, let’s gang up and kill it!”

With Lu Wu’s command, a battle instantly erupted.

Taking advantage of the Evil Qi not yet fully healed, Lu Wu and his group charged directly toward the Skeleton General.

Bone Dragon was the first to act, diving down with terrifying speed, almost throwing Lu Wu and the others off.

Lu Wu just managed to grab onto the Bone Dragon’s skeletal back to stabilize his figure.

The Bone Dragon had already reached the Skeleton General, its body abruptly stopping, and with a violent flick of its tail, it struck fiercely.

That mighty tail swing not only sent the Skeleton General retreating several meters but also flung Lu Wu and Little Skeleton off.

It was a close call; they almost got killed from the fall.

The flung Lu Wu didn’t have time to blame Indeks, as electricity flashed over his body. Mid-air, he corrected his posture, and the moment he landed, his feet kicked off with electric power.

Lu Wu and Little Skeleton moved in unison, almost at the same time charging at the Skeleton General.

From the left and right, they struck simultaneously, Little Skeleton unleashing the Thunder Spear.

Lu Wu attacked with the “Skyward Strike.”

If that hit, even a King-level Summoned Beast would suffer.

However, the opponent was after all a King-level Summoned Beast, and also a Summoner with skills at the Grandmaster Level proficiency.

Its close combat reaction speed was incredibly frightening.

Despite being repelled by the Bone Dragon, handling Lu Wu’s pincer attack seemed quite easy, its agile body swiftly dodging what Lu Wu thought was a sure-hit strike.

A counter sword swipe, a click, directly extinguished the Thunder Spear in Little Skeleton’s hand, even marking a centimeter-long crack on the Long Spear that Little Skeleton was using.

The Long Spear in Little Skeleton’s hands was not the Silver Spear transformed from the Bone Staff, which was still evolving and hadn’t appeared yet; what he used now was a Gold Level Long Spear temporarily prepared by Lu Wu.

However, being able to damage a Gold Level Long Spear with one strike implied that the sword in its hand was no ordinary sword either.

Lu Wu glanced over and realized that not only the Long Spear but also the Battle Armor on it was of Legendary Quality.

“A King-level 0 Star power Summoned Beast with two pieces of Legendary Quality Equipment, this battle is going to be tough, but luckily we have more people.”

Five against one, Lu Wu felt they could still fight.

However, his confidence didn’t last long and soon faltered.

Almost simultaneously, a rhythmic marching sound surrounded them.

“What’s going on?”

Lu Wu had a vague premonition of something ominous.

And soon enough, his premonition came true.

As the footsteps approached, the blood-like Evil Qi receded, and then the figures of a Summoned Beast’s army appeared behind the Skeleton General.

Lu Wu took a quick glance, did not see the end, but even the few he saw included at least several hundred.

The more troublesome part was not the number.

But the power level of this group of Summoned Beasts.

Among those Lu Wu saw, there were already twelve at the Lord Level, and the rest were all at the Leader Level.

“This is maddening!”

Lu Wu almost spat out blood.

Suddenly, they became the side with fewer numbers.

“Retreat, retreat, we can’t fight this!”

Lu Wu decisively ordered.

However, whether he could retreat or not depended on the enemy.

The Skeleton General waved its hand, and instantly a furious military force burst forth, hundreds of Skeleton Warriors led by the Skeleton General besieged them.

At the same time, Lu Wu distinctly felt the surrounding Evil Qi stirring.

There was a vague sense that they were about to be surrounded and killed here.

At that moment, Lu Wu’s heart’s Moon Shadow stirred as if it might intervene.

“No, I can handle this myself!”

Lu Wu firmly refused Moon Shadow.

Although he knew that if Moon Shadow intervened, the problem could be solved instantly, he simply did not want to rely on Moon Shadow’s power.

It wasn’t that he was being capricious.

But lately, he became increasingly aware that he should not develop a reliance on Moon Shadow.

This Summoned Beast, no matter how powerful, was not his own.

There were things he could rely on it for, but some things Lu Wu had to rely on himself.

After all, flying on someone else’s wings, one is bound to crash someday; it’s better to train one’s own wings to be reliable.

Having refused to let Moon Shadow act, Lu Wu quickly gathered Han, took Little Skeleton and Little Flood Dragon, and swiftly climbed onto the back of Bone Dragon.

Bone Dragon’s wings shook, ready to take off.

The Skeleton General across would not let them leave just like that, and another blood-colored sword Qi slashed their way again.

Along with it, twelve more sword Qis from skeleton commanders (Lord Level) Summoned Beasts came at them.

“Indeks, just take off!

We’ll handle this!”

Lu Wu, Little Skeleton, and Little Flood Dragon struck simultaneously.

Little Skeleton’s move was a simplified version of the attack from the college league.

He gathered energy from his phone, activated the Dragon Bone Power, and launched the “Dragon Bone Thunderbolt Spear”!

Little Flood Dragon, on the other hand, unleashed his strongest Jiao Long Roar.

The black electric light coupled with the golden roar barely withstood the twelve Lord Level attacks, but the Sword Qi from the Skeleton General remained.

And that Sword Qi was for Lu Wu to handle.

At the moment the opposing Sword Qi approached, he raised the long stick high in his hands.

“Dragon Bone Power” activated, a powerful force burst from Lu Wu’s heart.

At the same time, Han’s voice emerged.

Lu Wu burst his Beast Soul at this moment.

The so-called “Beast Soul Burst” was actually a capability that damages the Summoned Beast to gain power.

This capability, after awakening at the Master Level by summoners, was rarely used unless absolutely necessary.

Because this damage reached directly to the soul.

This kind of injury was difficult to heal, as Zhang Wentao and Zhao Kai Ming were still struggling.

But they are just ordinary people.

Lu Wu was different, his Han was different.

Others’ “Beast Soul Burst” would make their Summoned Beasts howl in pain, but Lu Wu’s Summoned Beasts would moan, the sounds embarrassingly restricted; Lu Wu himself felt awkward hearing them.

Yet, although the sounds were restricted, the power of the “Beast Soul Burst” was still terrifying.

Originally a Lord 2 Star in power, Lu Wu, with “Dragon Bone Power” activated and the addition of “Beast Soul Burst,” his combat power soared to the peak of 3 Stars, almost reaching King Level.

In that instant, Lu Wu seized the opportunity to activate “Universal Charger” and the “Sky Dominating Stick” that hadn’t been unleashed until now.

With a swing, he smashed down on the Skeleton General’s incoming Sword Qi.

A ‘crack’ resounded as this blood-colored Sword Qi was violently shattered.

Not only that, but the swing also spun out a golden phantom that struck directly at the Skeleton General.

At that moment, Lu Wu felt he could crush his opponent, yet as the Skeleton General reached out with his sword, with just a light tap, the golden stick phantom shattered piece by piece.

The superior party was instantly determined in that strike.

This Skeleton General was so potent it was terrifying.

However, Lu Wu was not panicked at all.

“This time you win, we’ll fight again next time.”

As Lu Wu’s words fell, the Bone Dragon flapped its wings, soared into the sky, and disappeared with Lu Wu and the others.

Underneath the Blood-colored Plain, the Skeleton General’s Pupil Fire flickered, but he did not pursue.

He quietly stood in his spot, watching Lu Wu leave until the waves of evil Qi surged back, engulfing him and his Skeleton Army.

On the other side, Lu Wu, who had emerged from the Land of Burial, was still overwhelmed with emotion.

Though the fight was brief, the fleeting clash left Lu Wu with endless recollection.

“That guy was so strong!”

Even though it was his army that pushed back, Lu Wu had to admit that the Skeleton General’s power was dreadfully immense.

Even if his army hadn’t shown up later, Lu Wu wasn’t too confident in defeating the opponent.

What gave Lu Wu the most direct sense of the opponent’s strength was not the blood-colored Sword Qi or the final light tap, but his reaction when facing the pincer strike between Lu Wu and Little Skeleton.

Only the Lu Wu from that moment could truly appreciate the opponent’s exquisitely subtle skills.

“Is that the prowess of a Grandmaster Level skill?

No, it must be more than just the power of a Grandmaster Level.”

On the dragon’s back, Lu Wu couldn’t help recalling another person’s attribute panel he had seen in the college league.

More precisely, a skill on that person’s attribute panel.

“Whether it’s this Skeleton General or the previous Maeshima Kaori, they both have swordsmanship on their attribute panels, which seems to have evolved from martial arts. It looks like there’s room for development here!”

“Right, I think there’s something about martial arts in my database?”

Lu Wu said as he intended to take Little Skeleton’s phone to check.

But just having finished the battle, the Little Skeleton playing with the phone was unyielding.

It had every right to be; Lu Wu had said the phone was for Little Skeleton to play with for five days, and the time wasn’t up, so Little Skeleton wasn’t handing it over.

“All you ever do is play with the phone, didn’t you see your Lu Wu almost got killed?

How can you be so heartless?

Don’t you care about me, your Lu Wu?

Sure enough, Little Skeleton has gone bad; it must be because of playing with the phone. The phone is confiscated, take some time to reflect!”

Little Skeleton still looked baffled while Lu Wu shamelessly took Little Skeleton away.

Even though it was because he broke a promise a few days ago to borrow the phone, the situation ended up looking like it was Little Skeleton’s fault, leaving poor Little Skeleton sitting on Indeks’s back, all confused.

With its little brain filled with big question marks.

Was it Little Skeleton’s fault? Had Little Skeleton really gone bad?

# Chapter 322 - 322 319 Undead Transformation

﻿Chapter 322: 319 Undead Transformation Chapter 322: 319 Undead Transformation Lu Wu was on his way back.

Through Little Skeleton’s phone, he had looked up quite a few martial arts stick techniques in the database.

All these martial arts were from before the great disaster.

These techniques weren’t as mystical as described in novels, capable of developing inner strength or hidden power.

After all, there was no revival of spiritual energy at that time.

Of course, Lu Wu didn’t have such expectations.

He simply used these as fighting techniques to learn.

In one go, Lu Wu finished watching all 17 stick techniques available on the phone.

After watching them, Lu Wu didn’t feel much different.

Stick techniques were just combinations of few basic movements, combined with combat skills. It might be hard for ordinary people to learn, but Lu Wu had a photographic memory and the strength of a Master Summoner.

After watching once, he easily mastered these stick techniques.

However, mastering these techniques didn’t mean Lu Wu had completely understood them.

After all, these were ordinary stick techniques; simply integrating them into Lu Wu’s current combat system wouldn’t work. Lu Wu needed some rigorous training.

Real combat training would be best.

For that matter, Lu Wu already had a real combatant in mind.

Wasn’t the Skeleton General a perfect candidate for real combat practice?

Lu Wu had no intention of letting it go easily.

However, Lu Wu also didn’t want to rely on Moon Shadow’s power to defeat it.

“Have decided to use it for stick practice.

Additionally, when I get back, I’ll study whether it’s possible to transform the bones of those Lord Level Summoned Beasts into Undead.”

If that was feasible, the number of Lord Level Summoned Beasts under Lu Wu’s command could reach 13. If he could bring Li Kai and Tuantuan into it, making a total of 15 Lord Level Summoned Beasts, there might be hope to compete against the adversary.

With this idea in mind, Lu Wu left the Secret Realm and returned to the base.

When Lu Wu returned, Dudu had already prepared the meal.

Oh, it was the roasted meat made from Lord Level Summoned Beasts.

And indeed, you can tell it’s Lord Level; the meat was incredibly savory.

It was also filling—Lu Wu had eaten about a kilogram and was full, then took Little Skeleton’s phone along with those Lord Level bones to study Undead Transformation.

Little Skeleton watched his own phone being taken away. He wanted to ask Lu Wu for it back but was also scared that Lu Wu would say Little Skeleton had gone bad, so in the end, he could only sulkily watch Lu Wu leave and then turned his gaze to Tuantuan, who was feasting happily, contemplating whether he should beat Tuantuan up to vent.

Well, Little Skeleton didn’t actually go through with it.

It wasn’t because he had a change of heart.

Mainly, he was afraid of being overpowered by Tuantuan.

This kind of thing had happened countless times to Little Skeleton; every time he felt inflated, he would want to fight Tuantuan, and every time he attacked Tuantuan, Tuantuan would explode in power, and then Little Skeleton would end up being beaten.

So after a few times, Little Skeleton learned his lesson—as Little Skeleton had his own pride, after all.

…

On Lu Wu’s end.

He had some experience in Undead Transformation before.

The Lin Family’s Gouzi was a product of his transformation, laying a foundation in this area for Lu Wu.

But transforming these Lord Level bones was obviously much more difficult than transforming Gouzi, due to the immense difference in power making the transformation more challenging.

However, for Lu Wu, it was merely a bit more difficult and would just take a little more time.

Thereafter, Lu Wu settled into a routine in the Changping Secret Realm.

Every morning, the first thing he did was, well, eat the breakfast prepared by Dudu and then lead his team into the Secret Realm, rushing toward the Land of Burial for three hours.

The three-hour journey was just for a three-minute battle.

Every time, they were beaten so badly that they had to flee.

Then they would return to the base to research Undead Transformation.

Lu Wu continued this routine for a week.

Over the course of the week, Lu Wu indeed made progress in various aspects.

Indeks became more familiar with the route, able to blast through two hours of travel in full force.

Lu Wu’s battles with the Skeleton General also lasted longer.

From the initial three minutes, he had increased to seven minutes. Although not reaching ten, it still was an improvement by more than double.

Moreover, the most important aspect was his research on Undead Transformation.

After a week’s work, Lu Wu had finally figured out the method for Undead Transformation.

Thus, on the eighth day since Lu Wu arrived in the Changping Secret Realm.

Lu Wu, for the first time, didn’t go to seek defeat from the Skeleton General but took those nine Lord Level bones into the Changping Secret Realm.

Today, he planned to transform these nine Lord Level bones into nine underlings for Little Skeleton.

There were three key points for this Undead Transformation.

Environment, ritual, materials!

In terms of environment, the Changping Secret Realm, being an Undead Secret Realm, was very suitable for Undead Transformation.

Furthermore, during the week, Lu Wu hadn’t just taken beatings; he had also surveyed the environment of the Changping Secret Realm and knew the most suitable place for Undead Transformation.

Of course, the best place would be the Land of Burial, but unless he utilized Moon Shadow, attempting Undead Transformation there was purely masochistic.

Thus, Lu Wu had to opt for the second best.

In the Changping Secret Realm, he found a black pool rich in negative energy as the place for Undead Transformation.

The process was actually quite simple.

Lu Wu placed the bones in the center of the pool.

He then took out materials that had been mailed from the outside world and set up a huge ritual altar around the pool.

Subsequently, he threw a large amount of materials into the dark water, and all the preparatory work was essentially completed; what was left was just to wait for the Undead to form.

Due to the need to tame them one by one, Lu Wu did not transform all the Undead at once; in the first round, he only put three Lord Level bones into the pool.

Three hours later, bubbles started emerging from the black pool.

Soon after, water churned, and three huge figures stood up.

But before Lu Wu could rejoice, there was a ‘crack’ sound, and the skeletons of the three figures that had stood up shattered.

“Failed?”

Lu Wu was somewhat stunned.

He didn’t expect his luck to be this bad, to hit the 72 percent failure rate.

Helplessly, Lu Wu tried three more times, using another batch of materials and another three hours of waiting.

After three hours, water splashed again, and three enormous figures emerged.

An overwhelming power spread out at that moment.

This time, the introduction was clearly much bigger than the last, and Lu Wu was particularly excited.

However, just when he thought it was going to be successful,

with a “crack,” those three summoned beasts also collapsed.

Lu Wu almost spat out a mouthful of blood.

“Failed again.”

Lu Wu’s forehead was throbbing. With a twenty-eight percent success rate, this was the first time he had experienced consecutive failures. After all, he was the type of man who could turn a seven percent chance into a certainty.

“That’s why I hate these uncontrollable rituals the most!”

Previously, Lu Wu could monitor nurturing processes closely.

But with these rituals, once they started, they were out of his hands; he couldn’t interfere in the process.

Interfering would cause the ritual to collapse.

Relying entirely on luck like this was something Lu Wu found truly disheartening.

He also felt a bit resentful. Wasn’t his luck usually better?

How could he possibly fail twice in a row?

“This is the last of the three corpses. I hope it works, otherwise my stock is gone.”

With those words, Lu Wu threw the last and most potent three corpses into the dark pool.

As the bones were cast in, another three-hour countdown began.

Time slowly passed as Lu Wu waited.

Three hours later,

the entire pool of dark water suddenly began to boil.

At the same time, three terrifying presences spread out.

Accompanied by a tiger’s roar, a bear’s growl, and a sound from the Jiao Python, that was like a chant.

“It worked!”

This time, Lu Wu was one hundred percent certain it had been a success.

Indeed, moments later, three massive figures burst from the pool, and Lu Wu saw the figures of three summoned beasts before him.

A three-meter tall, six-meter long black bone tiger whose bones connected like armor across its body.

A five-meter tall bone bear, its bones linked with bone armor, looking incredibly burly.

And a roughly twenty-meter long creature, its bones tinted with a blue hue, uncertain whether it was a Jiao or a Python.

…

Name: Netherworld Bone Tiger (three-time evolution)

Power: 3 stars (Lord)

Quality: Ordinary (Gold) (Enhanced)

Attribute: Undead, Netherworld

State: Excited (“I am alive again!”)

Weakness: Light (Strong)

Skill Talents: Brief

Domain: Black Wind Domain (Fifty percent)

…

Name: Corrosive Soil Bone Bear (three-time evolution)

Power: 3 stars (Lord)

Quality: Ordinary (Gold) (Enhanced)

Attribute: Undead, Earth

State: Confused (“I am alive again?”)

Weakness: Light (Strong)

Talent Skills: Brief

…

Name: Dried Wood Bone Jiao

Power: 3 stars (Lord)

Quality: Gold (King-level) (Enhanced)

Attribute: Undead, Wood

State: Calm (“I am alive again”)

Weakness: Light (Strong)

…

These three summoned beasts had all been close to King-level during their lifetimes.

Lu Wu and Moon Shadow had managed to slay them.

After the transformation, although their bodies had shrunk somewhat and their strength decreased slightly, they still possessed a Lord 3-star level.

“Not bad.”

Lu Wu was quite satisfied; although he had failed twice, the success of this last attempt made up for the previous failures.

“What are you waiting for? Attack, bring these guys down!”

At Lu Wu’s command, he took the lead, pulling out a large stick and charging directly at the giant bear.

Little Skeleton called out his minions, coordinating with Han to fight the tiger.

The last Jiao Dragon was tackled by the Bone Dragon and Little Flood Dragon together.

It must be said that these three bone dragons were quite strong.

Lu Wu had to resort to all his tricks to barely capture them.

One by one, they were subdued, and Lu Wu went over to cajole each with Little Skeleton.

Considering these summoned beasts were stronger than Little Skeleton, Little Skeleton couldn’t force them into submission; he had to rely on trickery, which was not a challenge for Lu Wu.

After all, he was a man titled as the Summoned Beast Playboy, able to clearly see their states and tailor his approach accordingly, making it easy to hoodwink these three big fellows.

Having dealt with these three big guys, Lu Wu’s power had greatly increased.

Now, he felt it was time to launch a full assault on those guys in the Land of Burial!

# Chapter 323 - 323 320 Tuantuan advanced

﻿Chapter 323: 320 Tuantuan advanced Chapter 323: 320 Tuantuan advanced Changping Secret Realm, Land of Burial.

Lu Wu had come here for the ninth time.

This time, he didn’t just bring his own Summoned Beasts.

Apart from his own family’s Summoned Beasts, he also brought Tuantuan from Dudu’s family and Xiong Da from Li Kai’s family.

These two, in addition to the seven Lord Level Summoned Beasts from Lu Wu’s side, along with himself, created a team of ten members, breaking into double figures for the first time.

Looking at the huge group behind him, Lu Wu could not help but feel a surge of bold enthusiasm.

Standing outside of the Land of Burial, Lu Wu yelled, “Old Bone, come out and fight!”

Lu Wu had been fighting with them for a week.

Both sides had developed a certain tacit understanding.

As soon as Lu Wu’s group arrived and he shouted, the blood-colored Evil Qi in the Land of Burial began to boil.

Approaching, a series of orderly footsteps sounded.

The Evil Qi gradually receded, revealing the formation of the opposing Undead Army.

Facing each other’s formations, Lu Wu’s side was clearly a notch lower in both numbers and momentum.

Compared to the tidy and unified presence of the Undead Army, Lu Wu’s side was a ragtag force.

But strangely, Lu Wu’s group felt good about it.

“How about that? I’ve got a lot more help today, my strength is more than double than usual, maybe this time you’ll be the ones to run away in panic.”

The Skeleton General on the opposite side couldn’t speak, but still responded to Lu Wu.

The calm raising of his longsword made the message clear.

Come and get us!

“We’re definitely going to fight, but let’s be clear before we start, I’m not here to slaughter and arson, I’m just here to negotiate with you.

Still the same condition as before.

If I win, you have to let me check your body.

And also, give me some minions.”

This was what Lu Wu had been repeating every time he came over the past week.

For Lu Wu.

He was bothering the Skeleton General only to help Little Skeleton achieve a three-time evolution and get some minions.

It wasn’t a case of wanting to obliterate the opposition.

So, before each battle, Lu Wu always made this speech first.

As for their reaction, it went from initially ignoring with a snap, to now, well, still not deigning to respond.

Of course, Lu Wu didn’t expect a response.

After saying this, he waved his hand simply.

“Attack!”

With Lu Wu’s command, Han Han excitedly burrowed into Lu Wu’s body.

As soon as Han Han was in, Lu Wu immediately activated “Beast Soul Burst” and “Dragon Bone Power.”

One week later, this burst of power had increased significantly, barely reaching to the level close to King-level.

After the burst, Lu Wu charged ahead, directly heading for the Skeleton General.

The two sides had been battling for more than a day or two.

Facing Lu Wu’s assault, the Skeleton General’s subordinates did not block him, allowing Lu Wu to rush at the Skeleton General.

They, instead, went to battle their familiar opponents.

“Eat my stick!”

In a flash of lightning, Lu Wu reached the Skeleton General and swung his long stick from above with a “Heavenly Strike.”

Rather than retreating, the Skeleton General advanced, stepping forward to skewer Lu Wu’s throat with his sword during the skill’s windup.

Lu Wu smirked as if he already knew the opponent would react this way; the stick, still in windup, smashed down suddenly, catching the Skeleton General somewhat off guard, forcing him to retract his sword to block.

“The chance has come!

Try out my recently developed ‘Heavenly Strike (Revised) Eighteen Consecutive Strikes'”

Seizing the chance, electricity burst from Lu Wu, and his long stick began a series of frenzied strikes.

This sequence of connected moves was something Lu Wu had developed in actual combat over the past half a month, combining seventeen different stick techniques he had mastered.

The rhythm of the hits he smashed out next was perfectly timed.

Initially caught off guard by Lu Wu, the Skeleton General found himself trapped in Lu Wu’s rhythm as the wave of attacks began.

He was repeatedly forced back by Lu Wu.

And each of Lu Wu’s eighteen strikes was a bit more powerful than the last.

For a while, the Skeleton General was like a small boat in a raging sea, passively enduring the continuous assault from Lu Wu.

Having barely endured the eighteen strokes, the Skeleton General hadn’t even caught his breath when

“Eighteen in One!”

Although there were supposed to be eighteen, the shameless Lu Wu burst out with a stick move even more terrifying than the previous eighteen, sending the unsuspecting Skeleton General flying.

“How about that? This set was specially modified against your sword technique, not bad right!”

Lu Wu mercilessly seized the opportunity while still bragging.

Meanwhile, as Lu Wu lunged over,

A killing intent erupted, and a blood-colored Sword Qi slashed over.

“Shatter!”

Lu Wu raised his hand with another stick, smashing the blood-colored Sword Qi directly, and during this, the Skeleton General already pounced back, wielding his longsword executing “Battlefield Swordsmanship.”

The Grandmaster Level “Battlefield Swordsmanship” brought out a subtle and intricate taste in its bold sword moves.

Three swords swept away the advantage Lu Wu had initially held.

“Another set of sword techniques?”

Lu Wu’s lips curled up, “Old Bone, I’ve fully grasped this set of techniques. Time to change it up!”

While speaking, the rhythm of the long stick in Lu Wu’s hand changed.

The originally fierce stick technique suddenly became as soft as seawater, perfectly countering the opponent’s “Battlefield Swordsmanship.”

This clearly surprised the Skeleton General.

Noticing the surprise, Lu Wu explained with a smile,

“After a week of sparring seven times, I’ve pretty much mastered your sword techniques and figured out your habits. With this information, targeted combat isn’t hard.”

Upon hearing this, the Skeleton General’s eyes, ablaze with pupil fire, flickered as his sword techniques changed.

The original “Battlefield Swordsmanship” switched to an advanced “Slaughter Sword Technique.”

This not only made the Skeleton General’s attacks more ferocious, but Lu Wu could faintly feel an endless murderous intent rushing towards his forehead.

Lu Wu was already in the “Beast Soul Burst” phase, and his spirit was constantly in agony.

Under these circumstances, the murderous intent from the “Slaughter Sword Technique” had a great effect on Lu Wu.

Under the influence of this murderous intent, Lu Wu’s reaction speed dropped significantly, and the advantage he had just built up was once again pulled back by his opponent.

Lu Wu was once again dominated in battle.

Lu Wu was being dominated.

On the other side, Lu Wu’s underlings were also in trouble.

Although the Skeleton General had not deployed any beings below a lord, the twelve Lord Level Skeleton Commanders were still quite terrifying.

Each possessed the power of a Lord 3 Star.

And on Lu Wu’s side, aside from those three newly acquired underlings, there was almost no entity with the strength of a Lord Three Stars, with one of them being a mere Leader Three Stars, Tuantuan.

This little guy was kicked far away by someone right at the beginning.

And the lazy creature, after being thrown away, rolled its eyes and simply lay on the ground pretending, ‘I’m done, I can’t fight.’

With Tuantuan avoiding the battle, and Han inside Lu Wu’s body.

This meant that Little Skeleton and his comrades had to face the opponent’s twelve beasts with just seven summoned beasts.

Little Skeleton’s recently acquired three underlings, along with Li Kai’s recently advanced Storm Giant Bear, could barely hold off three Skeleton Commanders.

This meant that Little Skeleton’s side needed to take on nine.

Bone Dragon activated “Dragon Power,” significantly boosting its strength from the original Lord 2 Star (which had increased by one star upon joining) to the peak of 3 Stars. With a flick of its tail, the dragon directly blocked four Skeleton Commanders.

Bone Dragon taking on four meant Little Skeleton and Little Flood Dragon had to take on five.

This was clearly a bit difficult for them.

After all, they only had the strength of Lord One Star each, and even when Little Flood Dragon activated “Power of the Ocean” with the “Child of the Sea” talent triggered, it could barely hold off one.

With the remaining four opponent beasts having no rivals, they clenched their fists and walked towards Little Skeleton.

No matter how strong it was, can a minor Lord One Star Little Skeleton handle four?

But now it had to fight, gnashing its teeth, it activated “Dragon Bone Power” and “Bone Chief,” a skill that borrowed strength from Bone Dragon and its other underlings, barely elevating its own power to a Lord Three Star level.

Then, Little Skeleton charged forward without looking back.

Three minutes later, Little Skeleton was smashed and sent flying by the opponent.

Coincidentally, the point where Little Skeleton landed was right towards the direction where the lazy pig was feigning death.

Even more coincidentally, Little Skeleton landed right in front of Tuantuan.

A skeleton and a pig, two beasts close in distance, awkwardly looked at each other.

Accurately speaking, it was Tuantuan who felt awkward. After a moment of stun, Little Skeleton’s eyes flickered with an unusual brilliance.

At that moment, a sense of crisis surged in Tuantuan, and it instinctively got up and ran.

(Run? Stinky Tuantuan, where are you running to?)

Little Skeleton’s skeletal hand stretched out, grabbing the particularly fierce pig and smashing it towards the four Skeleton Commanders pursuing them.

They seemed to have never seen such a pig-shaped hidden weapon, so they were particularly cautious, a skeleton cutting directly with a sword.

Four terrifying forces erupted, and an intense sense of crisis surged towards the pig.

At that moment,

After drinking countless bone soups and consuming numerous resources, Tuantuan’s heart burst, and the energy stored in its body fully exploded.

“Ow!”

Along with a resentful roar learned from Bone Dragon, Tuantuan evolved right on the spot.

Both its strength and size soared, instantly transforming into a ten-meter tall giant Cute Pig in the middle of the field. This left Lu Wu’s side stunned, prompting them to glance up at the pig’s new attributes.

…

Name: Swallowing Pig (three-time evolution)

Power: 2 Stars (Lord)

Quality: Ordinary (Gold) enhanced

Attribute: None

State: Angry (Little Skeleton is so annoying, I want to beat up Little Skeleton!!!)

Weakness: None

Basic Skills: Charge (Master), Defense (Grandmaster), Block (Grandmaster)

Advanced Skills: Gravity (Master), Cute Pig Trample (Master)

Killing Move: Extreme Gravity (Master), Terrifying Defense (Master)

Talent: Damage Absorption (passive) — all attacks below Lord level absorbed, 60% of attacks above Lord level absorbed.

Cute Pig’s Anger (active) — can use absorbed damage for skill bursts

PS: Although its talent is similar to Han’s, it’s undoubtedly much more terrifying. Be careful not to anger it.

…

# Chapter 324 - 324 321 Mad Demon Stick Technique

﻿Chapter 324: 321 Mad Demon Stick Technique Chapter 324: 321 Mad Demon Stick Technique Tuantuan, this pig, was truly ferocious when it burst forth.

It truly lived up to all that it had consumed.

At the moment of its burst, it soared directly from Leader 3 stars to Lord 2 stars without a word,  
 and even underwent its third-time evolution then and there.

As for its combat power, there was simply nothing negative to say.

The damage inflicted upon it by those four Skeleton Commanders was directly devoured by sixty percent due to its Talent, and the remaining forty percent of attack couldn’t breach the pig’s defense at all.

When this pig lifted its hoof and stomped, a “Cute Pig Trample” sent those four Skeleton Commanders flying.

This momentum was even fiercer than the neighboring Bone Dragon.

It left Lu Wu staring dumbfounded.

However, Lu Wu quickly had no time to concern himself with Tuantuan’s situation.

Because the Skeleton General in front of him was not pleased.

To be distracted during their battle?

Did Lu Wu hold it in such contempt?

An even more terrifying murderous aura erupted, a kind of spiritual attack that was extremely stimulating to the current Lu Wu.

“Ah!”

Lu Wu couldn’t even tell if he was howling or moaning.

In any case, after this cry, Lu Wu fully regained his senses.

“Sorry, sorry, I was distracted, my bad, I’ll go all out now!”

As he spoke, veins popped on Lu Wu’s forehead as terrifying electric light burst forth from his body.

The explosion of Dragon Bone Power and Beast Soul Burst, coupled with his now full-power assault, left Lu Wu’s body tingling with pain.

Of course, having the “Unyielding·Growth” Talent meant that beyond the pain, there was also pleasure.

Extreme pleasure.

“Come on, keep it going!”

Lu Wu’s current state was somewhat silly, even more so than silly.

His whole body crackled with electricity, astonishingly so.

The Skeleton General opposite him was undaunted, tightening its attacks with the Longsword in hand, wielding the “Slaughter Sword Technique” with even greater ferocity.

In their next exchange, it only took ten moves to leave eight wounds on Lu Wu’s body.

This battle achievement, however, made the Skeleton General’s Pupil Fire flutter uncertainly.

It wasn’t that it suspected Lu Wu of deceit, but rather it was somewhat disappointed in Lu Wu’s performance.

A Summoned Beast of the Skeleton General’s level possessed no shortage of intelligence.

At least, it wasn’t lower than that of an ordinary person.

It had its own thoughts, its own personality, and this particular Skeleton General was clearly a combat-obsessed Summoned Beast.

Although it was very dissatisfied with Lu Wu’s intrusion at first,  
 it had come to enjoy their daily battles recently. While Lu Wu’s power was nothing impressive, his resilience was decent, and his strength would improve with every battle.

Even though he was still far from its level, he had added some joy to its otherwise tedious, bound life.

Just that the joy was a little too short-lived.

Given Lu Wu’s current performance, without any surprises, it would probably end with another sword strike.

However, at the moment when the Skeleton General raised its hand for another sword strike, preparing to end the battle, the corner of Lu Wu’s mouth lifted.

“I’ve finally almost completely understood your sword technique; now it’s my turn!”

Lu Wu, covered in blood, flashed a freely delighted smile, took a light step forward, swung his stick that directly bashed apart the Skeleton General’s Longsword, blocking what the Skeleton General thought was its final strike.

This caused the Skeleton General’s Pupil Fire to flicker. Advancing to continue the slaughter, the Lu Wu opposite it did not back down but advanced, swinging his stick at the head of the Skeleton General as it thrust its sword.

The sudden strike, precisely timed, disrupted the rhythm of the Skeleton General’s combo, forcing the Skeleton General to withdraw its sword and dodge.

And Lu Wu seized this opportunity, his body crackling with electric light, as he wildly brandished his stick.

A series of seemingly mad yet methodical combo moves burst forth from Lu Wu’s hands.

The original prototype of this set of combos in his hands was the pre-apocalyptic martial art “Mad Demon Stick Technique,” which surely was just an ordinary fighting skill.

Lu Wu had absorbed only the fighting technique of the Mad Demon Stick, taking that storm-like attack technique as a base, combining the energy techniques from both Inheritance Skills “Skyward Strike” and “One Stick to Heaven.”

Plus his recent combat experiences and the current state of painful yet joyful spirit,  
 a combination of all these factors gradually evolved a stick technique uniquely Lu Wu’s.

And was this stick technique powerful? Only the Skeleton General standing opposite Lu Wu could clearly know.

Initially, the Mad Demon Stick Technique was merely more ferocious in its attack.

After all, there was only a framework back then.

The rhythm in the beginning was also extremely sporadic, and the Skeleton General could have easily disrupted Lu Wu’s rhythm without much effort if it wanted to.

But it noticed an abnormal state in Lu Wu.

Whether out of its absolute confidence in its own strength or the lonely high-level master’s yearning for battle, the Skeleton General did not interrupt Lu Wu’s development of the combo moves, instead allowing Lu Wu to evolve the Mad Demon Stick Technique to completion rather than disrupting it.

Under the Skeleton General’s tacit allowance, or even guidance,  
 Lu Wu, who was already in a state akin to enlightenment, saw his Mad Demon Stick Technique continuously make effective progress.

In the rhythm of the attack, in the energy of the strikes, this whole series was continuously perfected.

And even more astonishing was that, along with the perfecting attack rhythm and energy.

Lu Wu’s attacks also faintly carried a kind of spiritual influence similar to that which the Skeleton General and Maeshima Kaori had during their assaults.

The difference was that the Skeleton General and Maeshima Kaori’s was an intent to kill, while on Lu Wu’s side, it was an extreme mental realm of madness.

This realm of madness appeared, and the Skeleton General began to be subtly influenced.

The power he had been holding back also began to release gradually.

The Skeleton General in this moment sounded the horn of counterattack, and a terror greater than before in the intent to kill burst forth.

Lu Wu, who had been doing as he wished until then, suffered a setback in his attack at this moment.

And at this time, Lu Wu’s Mad Demon Stick Technique had gradually taken shape.

The setback in his attack not only failed to knock Lu Wu out of his state but further stimulated him, making him subconsciously increase the intensity of his “Beast Soul Burst.”

As a voice that sounded both pained and not echoed within Lu Wu’s body.

Lu Wu, invigorated by battle, surged in momentum and actually temporarily broke through the limits between Lord and King level, reaching the level of King Level 0 Star, putting him on the same level as the opposing Skeleton General.

At the same level, Lu Wu’s attacks became even more fierce.

The energy inside his body continuously burst forth, clashing furiously with the Skeleton General through the long stick in his hands.

Each direct confrontation produced an impact that shook both Lu Wu and the Skeleton General, and also the long stick in Lu Wu’s hands.

What Lu Wu, in his frenzied state, failed to notice was.

The long stick in his hands grew brighter with each impact due to the continuous and close bonding of substances within.

Lu Wu’s long stick was originally aimed at Legendary quality, only falling to Gold Level due to issues during forging.

Now, in this furious battle.

The long stick was continuously undergoing a metamorphosis, and its transforming rhythm perfectly matched the forming Mad Demon Stick Technique of Lu Wu.

This caused every strike from Lu Wu to make the Skeleton General acutely aware that Lu Wu’s power was incessantly strengthening, and the pressure he was under also crazily escalated.

This was an unprecedented experience for the Skeleton General.

Under immense pressure, the Skeleton General felt extremely exhilarated and directly took out a kill-level “Slaughter Sword” to engage Lu Wu head-on.

Long sword against long stick, the Skeleton General was not at a disadvantage.

Their momentum continuously escalated at this moment, and their battle also upgraded and expanded.

The crushing intent to kill and the collision of mad will spread out, affecting the Summoned Beasts nearby that were also engaged in battle.

The previously dominating Skeleton Commanders and Lu Wu’s side’s Summoned Beasts all stopped.

Each focused their gaze on the battle between Lu Wu and the Skeleton General.

Under their watchful eyes, Lu Wu and the Skeleton General’s battle reached its climax.

Lu Wu’s Mad Demon Stick Technique underwent a stunning transformation, completely demonizing the “Sky Dominating Stick” Inheritance Skill he received from Shanzhai Monkey.

Creating a unique attacking Skill exclusive to Lu Wu.

“Sky Dominating Stick!”

With a furious roar from Lu Wu, the crazed Sky Dominating Stick ferociously smashed down.

Simultaneously, the Skeleton General opposite Lu Wu also thrust out a dense, indissoluble blood-red sword strike, the Slaughter Sword’s technique, “One Sword Slaughter Ten Thousand.”

These two terrifying strikes collided.

Electric light and frenzy, blood-hue and killing intent.

Two powers, two wills, their ultimate collision in this moment detonated.

The violent forces exploded at their point of impact, instantly sweeping outwards, directly pushing all Summoned Beasts within a hundred meters outside the radius.

Evil Qi within a radius of five miles was pushed away, and all Summoned Beasts within this range, except those under the Skeleton General’s command, were scared off.

The Summoners within this area also broke out in a cold sweat.

Those with lower strength even lay on the ground, not daring to rise.

Even beings at the Lord Level felt their hearts skip a beat.

It took quite a while for them to recover from this disheveled state.

And after everything had passed, in addition to being shaken, they were more curious.

Curious about what had just happened, and in what situation?

“Was that the Land of Burial? Among those two forces that just clashed, one should be the power of that Skeleton General, right?

That’s a King-level Summoned Beast; who inside the stronghold has the ability to clash with it?”

“I’ve heard that Master Lu Wu frequently visits that place recently; could it be Master Lu Wu?”

“Master Lu Wu? Unlikely, right?”

“Although Master Lu Wu is a genius, he’s only just advanced to Master; such King-level power should still be too soon for him.”

“If it’s not Master Lu Wu, then who could it be?

Could it be that elderly man with Master Lu Wu?”

“Hmm, that’s possible, he’s Master Lu Wu’s bodyguard and it’s normal for him to have King-level power.”

“I’m not curious about who it was; I’m more interested in who won that clash just now!”

…

# Chapter 325 - 325 322 Heaven Suppressing Stick

﻿Chapter 325: 322 Heaven Suppressing Stick Chapter 325: 322 Heaven Suppressing Stick Changping Secret Realm, Land of Burial.

After being struck by a stick, Lu Wu lay on the ground barely breathing, seemingly on the brink of death.

On the other side, the Skeleton General still stood proudly.

It was clear who the victor was in the battle.

In fact, the Skeleton General hadn’t used his full strength from the beginning.

Neither the talents of “Skeleton Commander” nor the Military Formation had been deployed.

He simply fought Lu Wu with his King-level power, only activating his talent to block the final blow.

If he hadn’t activated his talent, it would have been a draw, but once he did, Lu Wu was undoubtedly the loser.

However, it was quite an achievement for Lu Wu to fight on par with a King-level while only being a Master-level Summoner.

This battle was thrilling for the Skeleton General.

Pupil Fire flickered with satisfaction as it approached Lu Wu, who lay on the ground.

This movement terrified Little Skeleton and Moon Shadow inside Lu Wu.

Moon Shadow instinctively wanted to strike with a sword, but Lu Wu managed to say “Don’t” painfully.

He knew that the figure before him hadn’t come to kill him.

True enough, the Skeleton General took a few steps forward, planted his longsword into the ground, removed his helmet, and extended a skeletal hand toward Lu Wu.

Lu Wu grinned and firmly grasped the extended hand of the Skeleton General.

Their hands clasped, and the Skeleton General pulled Lu Wu up.

The two, a man and a skeleton, shared a smile, and Lu Wu grimaced through his pain, “You win this time, but next time, I’ll win!”

The Skeleton General nodded his head.

(See you then!)

Clearly, they had built some rapport through the fight.

Therefore, for the first time ever, Lu Wu didn’t flee in defeat.

Of course, his current state was more disheveled than if he had run away.

Every muscle ached intensely, and mentally he was in severe pain. His inner self, Han, was also feeling listless.

Despite the dire situation, Lu Wu had gained quite a lot from this battle.

…

Name: Lu Wu

Power: Master Summoner (Lord 2 Star)

Mastered Skills:

Advanced Quality: Cold Ice Body (Master)

Killing Move: Power of the Ocean (Master), Dragon Bone Power (Master), Slap Lu Wu (Master)

Frozen Ray (Master), Dragon Bone Thunderbolt Spear (Master), Jiao Long Roar (Mastered)

Special Skill: Universal Charger (Mastered), Dragon Transformation (Mastered)

Unyielding·Growth (Master)

Mad Demon Stick Technique (Master)

Inheritance Skills: Skyward Stick (Master), Sky Dominating Stick (Master)

Summoner Talent: Power of Inheritance (Awakening)

Damage Sharing

…

Equipment: Heaven Suppressing Stick

Quality: Legend

Function: Size at will, extremely tough, enhanced by Thunder

Description: After advancing to legend, the Thunder enhancement significantly boosts the attack power, tripling the attack power from the gold period.

…

These two attribute panels provided Lu Wu a clear and intuitive understanding of his gains.

From this battle, Lu Wu’s biggest gains were undoubtedly the advancements of the Mad Demon Stick Technique and the Sky Suppressing Stick.

His combat power had soared significantly.

Aside from these, another significant gain was the friendship with the Skeleton General.

After all, they had bonded through the fight.

As men do, the relationship had become much more amicable after a fight.

Lu Wu and the Skeleton General were no different.

After the fight, they sat down and talked, specifically about the battle just fought.

Mainly, it was Lu Wu asking, or rather, seeking advice.

During that fight, he had managed to use the Mad Demon Stick Technique.

But at that moment, his proficiency in the Mad Demon Stick Technique was only at the Master Level, not the Grandmaster Level like the Skeleton General’s attribute panel.

This surprised Lu Wu.

He thought his Mad Demon Stick Technique was strong; he just couldn’t figure out what the issue was.

But there was the Skeleton General right beside him.

Naturally, Lu Wu sought advice from this newly made friend about the problems he couldn’t understand by himself.

And since the Skeleton General was a martial fanatic.

Talking about other things with him might have been awkward, but discussing this was definitely not.

Thus, the two who had just been fiercely fighting now came together for a chat.

While they were having a heated discussion on one side, the situation with the underlings became a bit awkward.

The boss had gone off to chat after the fight; what about them? Were they still fighting or not?

On this issue, the Bone Dragon Indeks gave the strongest answer.

Fight!

It was provoked.

Remember when she first joined, her power was so incredible that all of Lu Wu’s team, except Moon Shadow, put together weren’t even a match for one Indeks.

And now, how much time has passed?

Lu Wu’s little team began overtaking on the curves, one by one.

The first was Little Skeleton.

Now in pure combat power, Little Skeleton hardly lost to her anymore and had even been tricked into becoming Little Skeleton’s follower, naturally appearing weaker in front of Little Skeleton.

That was already enough to infuriate and depress the Bone Dragon.

Who knew Lu Wu would fight so fiercely?

The combat power that had just erupted was something the Little Bone Dragon didn’t even have the courage to confront directly.

That being said, after all, Lu Wu was a Summoner.

What the Little Bone Dragon couldn’t stand the most was Tuantuan.

This lazy, good-for-nothing pig, who knew nothing but eating all day, turned out to be nothing but a silly pig and now, it had evolved and its combat power had soared, vaguely surpassing the Little Bone Dragon.

How could the highly competitive Little Bone Dragon bear this?

Thus, it grabbed its opponent and started frantically honing its combat power.

It, the Little Bone Dragon, swore to take back its title as the strongest big sister chief.

While the Bone Dragon’s side was heated with fight, the good-for-nothing Tuantuan also unexpectedly got motivated, attacking and confronting fiercely.

But unlike the Little Bone Dragon.

The Little Bone Dragon fought the Skeleton Commander, while this good-for-nothing pig was furiously dishing out on Little Skeleton.

Hmm, it was basically Tuantuan’s routine, needing to confront Little Skeleton each time it evolved.

Who made Little Skeleton so annoyingly provoking every time, and look, the skeleton frame got dismantled by a pig again.

……

In the days that followed.

Lu Wu basically lived in the Land of Burial.

He had the Little Bone Dragon take Xiong Da out to spread the word, and had Dudu and the others drive the RV in.

Lu Wu lived right in the Land of Burial.

And Lu Wu, every day for no reason, would hang out with the Skeleton General, getting along famously, which made Little Skeleton’s pupil fire flicker.

Little Skeleton was worried, wondering if bad Lu Wu had taken a liking to this great skeleton?

Could it be that later, bad Lu Wu wouldn’t want him anymore?

Seeing the close bond between Lu Wu and the Skeleton General, Little Skeleton felt it was very likely.

This gave Little Skeleton a strong sense of crisis.

So, taking advantage of Lu Wu’s sleep, it called over its little brothers and went to negotiate with the Skeleton General.

Hands on hips, Little Skeleton was fiercely menacing.

(“Bad Lu Wu belongs to Little Skeleton, and Little Skeleton is the one for bad Lu Wu; you big skeleton, there’s no good ending for you with bad Lu Wu!”)

(“Leave the Lu Wu without Little Skeleton; it’s better for both you and Lu Wu.”)

This was clearly a tactic Little Skeleton had picked up from TV.

Luckily, Little Skeleton had no money; otherwise, it would have thrown money at the Skeleton General, urging him to take the money and stay away from Lu Wu.

The Skeleton General, who had never seen such a display, was utterly confused, not knowing what scene Little Skeleton was setting up.

In the end, it was Lu Wu, who got up to pee, who saw this, and after coming over and understanding the situation, the awkwardly ill Lu Wu grabbed Little Skeleton and gave it a pounding.

Unfortunately, Little Skeleton didn’t feel the beating.

Lu Wu thrashed it, and the little guy still clung to Lu Wu and showed defiance to the Skeleton General across.

(“See, Lu Wu is Little Skeleton’s Lu Wu, his favorite is only one skeleton, Little Skeleton; you should give up.”)

“I still can’t fix you, can I?”

Seeing the situation, Lu Wu immediately got fired up, dragging Little Skeleton towards the RV.

Then he pulled out Little Skeleton’s phone for him.

At first, Little Skeleton was a bit scared seeing how angry Lu Wu looked, but as soon as Lu Wu took out Little Skeleton’s phone, Little Skeleton wasn’t scared anymore.

It felt that Lu Wu indeed loved Little Skeleton.

But soon, Little Skeleton understood just how deep Lu Wu’s love was.

“This is a basic language course for Zone 1, you better study it well, I’ll test you tomorrow morning. If you don’t learn 100 words from Zone 1 by tomorrow, I’m going to explode that little head of yours filled with nonsense.”

Hmm, in Lu Wu’s view, this little guy was obviously too idle.

It was quite simple to cure it: teach it to read and write, assign it heavy homework, and keep it busy.

Lu Wu wanted to see if this little guy could still afford misadventures under the domination of various learning materials.

Thus began Little Skeleton’s life, which was agonizing like through deep waters and scorching fires.

At first, Little Skeleton didn’t think it was a big deal.

After all, Little Skeleton came from a Mage background, had watched so many TV dramas, anime, played so many games, and had a certain understanding of Zone 1’s culture and language.

Added to that its clever little brain, 100 words in one night?

Isn’t that underestimating Little Skeleton?!

The next morning, it presented Lu Wu with 1322 words.

At that moment, it hadn’t realized the severe consequences this show-off would bring; it was quite proud, with its little head held high and its pupils filled with anticipation.

Anticipating that Lu Wu would praise it.

Hmm, Lu Wu indeed praised it, stroking its little head and squinting meaningfully, “I didn’t expect you, Little Skeleton, to be so smart.

Come on, I have an online novel written by the infamous bad writer Nu Xiao, ‘Crossing from Bandit,’ not too many words, just over three million.

You read it from beginning to end, and for each chapter, you have to write a reflection of not less than 500 words based on the author’s description; oh, and you must analyze what the author wanted to convey.”

# Chapter 326 - 326 323 Dragon Knight Concept

﻿Chapter 326: 323 Dragon Knight Concept Chapter 326: 323 Dragon Knight Concept “Crossing from Bandit” is a fantasy game web novel written by Nu Xiao.

The novel mainly tells the story of a guy named Lu Haikong who travels to a game-based Three Kingdoms world. Starting as a mountain bandit, he gradually grows to dominate the world.

Although the early stages of the plot are somewhat indescribable, once you get past that and connect to the brainwaves, it’s still an acceptable book.

At least Lu Wu liked it.

However, when Lu Wu got the reading impressions from Little Skeleton about this book, he was dumbfounded.

“Come, come, come, tell me, what does ‘in conclusion’ mean? That the author, Nu Xiao, is as handsome and awesome as Lu Wuyi?”

“Tell me, what is your ‘in conclusion’ concluding?

How come I didn’t see you write anything earlier?

And how is Nu Xiao as handsome as me?

Is that written in his book? Did you see it? What kind of joke is that!”

Lu Wu was so angry he was nearly bald!

“Nu Xiao is definitely handsomer than me, alright.

Go back and rewrite this mess.

This time change the subject to an essay, a character description.

Yes, write about Nu Xiao, from the outside to the inside, praise him from head to tail in a hundred and eighty thousand words.”

Clearly, Lu Wu was making it difficult for Little Skeleton.

What kind of person is Nu Xiao?

With so many merits, can it be done in a mere hundred and eighty thousand words?

Alas, poor Little Skeleton finally started to experience the horror known as “homework.”

After shackling Little Skeleton with homework.

Without the interference of Little Skeleton, Lu Wu continued to live that close and fulfilling life with the Skeleton General.

Their life together was incredibly fulfilling.

Every day consisted of three things: battles, discussing Skills, or martial techniques, and performing serious physical examinations on the Skeleton General.

The Skeleton General was quite cooperative with Lu Wu in all aspects.

Be it in battle, discussing martial techniques, or physical exams.

Once they got familiar, the Skeleton General basically let Lu Wu do whatever he wanted.

With the Skeleton General’s cooperation, everything proceeded very smoothly on Lu Wu’s side.

Half a month passed in a blink of an eye, and Lu Wu made significant breakthroughs in various aspects.

First was the physical examination.

Lu Wu examined the Skeleton General’s body, with a simple goal of finding a way for Little Skeleton’s third evolution from him.

In this area, Lu Wu proceeded very smoothly, and within half a month, he already had an idea for Little Skeleton’s third evolution.

And he even came up with a plan.

Although the success rate of this plan seemed somewhat low, according to the system’s information, if the plan succeeded, Little Skeleton’s combat power would terrifyingly skyrocket.

Apart from the evolution plan for Little Skeleton, there was also the combat aspect with the Skeleton General.

During this half-month.

Lu Wu would end up fighting the Skeleton General every single day.

Even if they couldn’t have a big fight, they’d still have a small one.

Although after each fight, both Lu Wu and silly Han would be as tired as dogs, covered in wounds all over.

But because on one hand they had the “Unyielding·Growth” Skill, and on the other hand, they had the Green Cub from Dudu’s family—a King-level Quality Healing Summon Beast.

Plus the money from Lu Wu’s house, they were able to continuously replenish various resources for themselves and Han.

So, Lu Wu’s injuries were always quickly healed.

At first it took three days, but later, within a day’s time, Lu Wu could fully recover.

No matter how beat up he was the previous day, the next day Lu Wu would still come out lively, indicating that he, Lu Wu, could still take a beating.

Besides being more resilient, Lu Wu’s power also greatly increased after half a month.

Silly Han’s power directly reached Lord 2 Star, stepping ahead of Little Skeleton and Little Flood Dragon.

On Lu Wu’s side, his “Mad Demon Stick Technique” had reached the peak of Master Level, barely touching the boundaries of Grandmaster Level.

Additionally, the Skeleton General also passed on his two sets of Sword Skills, “Battlefield” and “Slaughter,” to Lu Wu,

but he just wouldn’t teach Lu Wu the final “Slaughter” no matter what.

However, even without “Slaughter,” just “Battlefield” and “Slaughter” alone made Lu Wu’s combat style much more diverse, indirectly boosting his combat power. Now, he was more than 50% stronger than half a month ago.

He could almost trounce the version of himself from half a month ago.

Unfortunately, Lu Wu was still unable to defeat the Skeleton General.

This wasn’t because the Skeleton General was holding back his Big Move, but because the Skeleton General was keeping a grip on three Grandmaster Skills.

Over the past half month, Lu Wu had come to realize that when he previously engaged with the Skeleton General, the latter had not been fighting at full strength—the opponent had not fully unleashed his Grandmaster-level Sword Skills.

Once the opponent unleashed Grandmaster-level Sword Skills, even now, Lu Wu couldn’t withstand even 10 strikes from him, and that was when the opponent wasn’t even using their Big Move.

If the Skeleton General did use his Big Move, Lu Wu felt he might not withstand even a single strike.

Grandmaster-level Sword Skills, terrifying indeed!

It was precisely because of the terrifying nature of the Grandmaster-level sword skill that Lu Wu had been struggling for over half a month and still hadn’t achieved a breakthrough.

For Lu Wu, who was essentially “cheating,” this was a moderately frustrating setback.

Changping Secret Realm, Land of Burial.

After yet another failure to master the Mad Demon Stick Technique, Lu Wu lay on the ground, looking utterly dejected.

The Skeleton General beside him extended a hand and comforted him,

“You needn’t be too anxious. Your Mad Demon Stick Technique is about to undergo a metamorphosis, just give it some time and it will naturally advance.”

Lu Wu grabbed the skeletal hand and stood up, “I know, it’s just that I feel somewhat reluctant not to break through and defeat you before I leave. But it’s okay, since you can’t leave anyway, I’ll just come back and thrash you once I’ve made my breakthrough.”

“Are you leaving?”

The Skeleton General’s Pupil Fire flickered slightly.

“Yes, I’m leaving in a couple of days. Oh, I have something for you.”

Lu Wu took out a smartphone from his pocket and handed it to the Skeleton General.

“A smartphone?”

“You were curious about Little Skeleton’s smartphone, right? I got you one, with a massive battery life. Although you can’t connect to the internet due to the realm, there are plenty of movies and apps installed. You can watch TV or play with it when you’re bored.

Consider it a parting gift, thanks for looking after me these past weeks.”

The Skeleton General looked at the smartphone in his hand, fell silent for a moment, then suddenly raised his longsword.

He lifted the sword, and a series of orderly footsteps arose; shortly after, the Skeleton General’s Undead Army had assembled.

“Old Bone, what’s this about?”

Lu Wu’s eyes lit up upon seeing this.

“Don’t you want to pick some minions for Little Skeleton? Go ahead!

Oh, and don’t choose any Lords, I can’t give them to you anyway since they can’t leave just like I can’t!”

“I figured as much!”

During his stay, Lu Wu had checked the Skeleton General’s condition, not just for nothing. He had discovered early on that the Skeleton General and this Land of Burial seemed to be closely linked and that it couldn’t leave this area.

If it weren’t for that, Lu Wu would’ve even thought about taking Old Bone away.

However, though he couldn’t select Old Bone or any Lord-level skeletons, there were still many promising candidates within the Undead Army.

Lu Wu quickly picked out 30 three-star Leader Skeleton Elites from the ranks of the Skeleton General’s command.

Name: Skeleton Elite (Second Evolution)

Power: 3 stars (Leader)

Quality: Silver (Upgraded)

Attribute: Undead, Skeleton

State: Confused (Are we leaving the Land of Burial?)

Weakness: Light (Strong)

Talent Skill details omitted.

Lu Wu did not immediately bind these thirty Skeleton Elites to Little Skeleton.

Partly because Little Skeleton hadn’t yet established connections with the previous dozen or so minions, and partly because Lu Wu had other plans for them.

In fact, regarding Little Skeleton’s minions,

Lu Wu’s original plan was like before, to directly transform these undead into thirty Lord-level minions for Little Skeleton.

Over the past half-month, Lu Wu had also been bringing in Lord-level Summoned Beast corpses from outside, but those attempts had mostly failed.

Lu Wu discerned a pattern: at the very least, it required Lord Peak-Level specimens to succeed in the transformation.

Moreover, even if the transformation was successful, the Undead’s power was essentially locked at that level, with no possibility of further increase.

Not only that, even their power might continuously decline.

During this half-month, Lu Wu clearly felt the power of those three new minions declining.

Hence, Lu Wu ultimately abandoned the route of transforming Undead to provide minions for Little Skeleton.

Since Old Bone was generous in giving out minions, Lu Wu decided, like he did with the Steel Armor Skeleton Knights before, to create a batch of Skeleton Knights to replace Little Skeleton’s current minions.

Now that the knights were sorted, all that was left was to sort out mounts, and Lu Wu was confident he could provide a Lord-level cavalry minion for Little Skeleton.

Regarding the mounts, Lu Wu already had an idea in mind.

Hadn’t he excavated a Dragon Tomb on Dragon Island?

That was Bone Dragon’s old home. Although many of the dragon bones there were incomplete, with a bit of extra stuff, combined with this group of Skeleton Elites in tow, Lu Wu felt there was hope to concoct a group of Dragon Knights.

Thinking about it, the scene of thirty Dragon Knights soaring up at his command exhilarated Lu Wu.

Besides, Lu Wu was also quietly mulling over, why not throw Indeks and Little Skeleton together and turn his Little Skeleton into a Dragon Knight as well.

Well, that was one of the plans for Little Skeleton’s third Evolution that Lu Wu had recently come up with.

This was also one of the reasons why he was in such a rush to leave.

Little Skeleton’s power had reached Lord 1 Star, which was nearly the limit of its growth; if Lu Wu didn’t finalize its third Evolution soon, Little Skeleton’s power would not be able to advance.

# Chapter 327 - 327 324 Price

﻿Chapter 327: 324 Price Chapter 327: 324 Price May 15.

Lu Wu, who had stayed in the Changping Secret Realm for a month, finally set out on his journey back to Jiangnan after his farewell battle with the Skeleton General, Old Bone.

In fact, if possible, Lu Wu really wanted to stay a few more days.

Even wishing to linger until he became unmatched before leaving.

But Lu Wu could no longer delay.

On one hand, Little Skeleton’s evolution needed to be handled as soon as possible.

On the other hand, he had already delayed for a month.

Old Zhang and the others, who had left Beijing later than him, had already returned to Jiangnan, and yet he, who had left earlier, hadn’t arrived, worrying Zhang Wentao immensely.

After all, this year’s high school competition had already begun.

If Lu Wu didn’t return soon, he would miss this year’s recruitment.

Furthermore, Lu Wu couldn’t explain the affairs related to “Zero” and Old Lin to Zhang Wentao.

Therefore, Old Zhang particularly couldn’t understand Lu Wu’s absence from home; during this period, Zhang Wentao almost called him three times a day, urging him continuously.

Lu Wu really had no other option.

Upon reevaluating, he had hidden for a month, and it seemed like there was no trouble in Jiangnan.

There were also no messages of “Zero” wreaking havoc in District 1.

This situation only had two possibilities.

Either “Zero” had been driven out of District 1, or they were waiting for him.

No matter which possibility it was, remaining in the Changping Secret Realm wasn’t advisable.

Given his current identity, he really wasn’t suitable to stay too long.

If he stayed for long, others would develop an undue curiosity about the Changping Secret Realm, which Lu Wu feared might cause trouble for Old Bone.

Under these various reasons, Lu Wu finally decided to start his journey back to Jiangnan.

Compared to when Lu Wu arrived, his departure was much more spectacular.

Bone Tiger, Bone Bear, Bone Flood Dragon  
 Three fierce giant beasts led the way, with Lu Wu’s house’s RV in the middle, followed by thirty Skeleton Elites clothed in mysterious robes.

A huge caravan crossed the entire Changping Secret Realm, grandiosely leaving the stronghold.

As everyone knows, Lu Wu is a low-profile person.

Under normal circumstances, he wouldn’t make such a big scene.

This grand departure was also to let people know that Lu Wu’s purpose in visiting the Changping Secret Realm was to transform these three Summoned Beasts, to divert people’s attention away to the maximum extent, so they wouldn’t trouble Old Bone.

After all, not everyone could get along with Old Bone as he did.

Sending a few lives carelessly would be troublesome.

Watching as the stronghold of the Changping Secret Realm slowly disappeared from his presence, Lu Wu’s expression was somewhat complex.

There was reluctance and also regret.

“It’s a pity that Old Bone can’t leave the Land of Burial, otherwise, I would definitely have spirited him away.”

Compared to Lu Wu’s regret, Little Skeleton beside him was obviously much happier.

(Finally leaving this place, never to let bad Lu Wu come here again, lest bad Lu Wu gets tricked by bad skeletons!

Only one Little Skeleton should be by Lu Wu’s side!)  
 Little Skeleton was quite jealous in this regard.

Seeing Little Skeleton’s state, the face of Lu Wu, already mixed with reluctance and regret, instantly darkened.

“Write, write out your reflections on Nu Xiao’s ‘Undead Evolution System’ and ‘Undead Shepherd’.

One book with five hundred thousand words!!”

Poor Little Skeleton, barely happy for long, fell into the fear of being dominated by homework.

…

Meanwhile, elsewhere.

At the Land of Burial.

After seeing off Lu Wu, the Skeleton General silently returned to the depths of the Land of Burial.

He settled back down on a small blood-colored mound deep within.

Watching the surging blood-red evil Qi around him, the Skeleton General felt somewhat bewildered and even suddenly experienced an unprecedented sense of loneliness.

This feeling struck the Skeleton General as very strange.

The Skeleton General had never felt lonely in the decades he had stayed here before.

But now, less than half a day after Lu Wuyi had left, he was overwhelmed by a sense of loneliness like never before.

He couldn’t even explain why himself.

Yet, the reason was actually quite simple: he had experienced companionship.

Before Lu Wuyi had arrived, guarding this place meant nothing special to the Skeleton General; it seemed as though he was born to stand here, never thinking of leaving or finding the life here boring.

Because for him, this was normal.

But with Lu Wuyi’s arrival, his normality was disrupted.

His plain days were interrupted with conversations, battles, and sharing some bizarre things.

Although the Skeleton General was initially uncomfortable, he had come to enjoy it after a fortnight.

However, once the Skeleton General got used to having someone around, that person suddenly left.

He returned to the normality he had known for decades.

Under these circumstances, it was natural to feel a bit lonely.

However, since Lu Wuyi had just left, the sense of loneliness was bearable and didn’t severely affect him, but the seed of loneliness had been planted. Once planted, that seed was bound to sprout and eventually grow into a towering tree.

He still had a long life ahead of him.

However, there seemed to be no future for him here.

Right after Lu Wuyi left the Changping Secret Realm, a figure appeared inside the base and, after obtaining the information he desired from someone inside, strode into the Secret Realm, heading directly for the Land of Burial.

The moment this person set foot on the Land of Burial, the Skeleton General’s Pupil Fire flickered,  
 “Yo, found you, is it you?”

At the same time, Feng Xiu’s figure appeared in front of the Skeleton General, his lips slightly curling as he looked at the Skeleton General before him.

The Skeleton General’s Pupil Fire flickered, puzzled and not understanding the situation of the person before him. If this had been before Lu Wuyi’s arrival, he might have just chopped at him directly, but now, he was much gentler, with curiosity and confusion flickering in his Pupil Fire.

At that moment, the other party said, “I heard you got along quite well with Lu Wuyi over the past month?”

Hearing Lu Wuyi’s name mentioned, the Skeleton General thought it was Lu Wuyi’s friend and his Pupil Fire brightened, nodding in response.

Seeing this, Feng Xiu’s smile widened.

“It seems you got along quite well, that’s good. So, I would like to borrow something from you, would you mind parting with it?”

The Skeleton General’s Pupil Fire flickered, filled with confusion.

Feng Xiu did not explain, instead, he reached straight toward the Skeleton General’s head.

At that moment, feeling an unprecedented threat, the Skeleton General’s Pupil Fire went cold, and he immediately activated his “Skeleton Commander” and “Military Formation” Talents, causing his Combat Power to soar straight from King Level 0 Star to King Level 2 Star.

Simultaneously, the Skeleton General’s Longsword was raised.

His Grandmaster Level “Slaughter Sword” charged up, unleashing a terrifying surge of killing intent, which like unstoppable waves, struck at Feng Xiu.

“Hmm, quite impressive, pity, there’s still a gap between us, though.”

As soon as he finished speaking, Feng Xiu’s hand landed on the nape of the Skeleton General’s neck and a soft ‘snap’ was heard.

In an instant, the Skeleton General’s overwhelming killing intent and momentum dissipated completely.

His head was also quickly scooped up by Feng Xiu.

The Skeleton General, whom Lu Wuyi had failed to defeat even after half a month at 0 Star state, was thus beheaded in one blow.

Playing with the skull in his hand, Feng Xiu said profoundly, “There are some things you have to face. You will eventually have to face them.

Avoidance can’t solve problems, it only exacerbates them, making the price you must pay heavier and heavier.

The cost that has been brewing for a month, I wonder if you can bear it.”

With these words, Feng Xiu disappeared from the spot, vanishing with the Skeleton General’s skeleton and equipment.

Moments later, a series of orderly footsteps arose.

The Skeleton General’s Army surrounded the site from all sides,  
 Among them, a Lord Level Skeleton Commander walked up to where the Skeleton General had been slain, scooped up a handful of earth, and placed this handful of earth on a small bloody mound.

Then, the entire Skeleton Army fell into a deep slumber.

…

# Chapter 328 - 328 325 High School League

﻿Chapter 328: 325 High School League Chapter 328: 325 High School League Although Lu Wu had started to head back, there was still a distance between Changping and Jiangnan.

Furthermore, with Lu Wu’s grand and public return, the larger convoy naturally moved much slower.

By the time Lu Wu arrived back in Fucheng, it was already May 18th.

And on this day, it just so happened to be the date of this year’s high school competition quarter-finals.

Well, okay, it wasn’t exactly a coincidence, as Zhang Wentao, who knew yesterday that Lu Wu would be home today, specifically moved the event to the 18th.

The reason was to ensure that Lu Wu could make it to the opening of today’s finals.

Lu Wu felt helpless about this.

“Uncle Zhang, we really don’t need to engage in such formalism.”

“Whether I’m there or not, the finals opening will be the same.”

Hmm, he says this, yet his actions are quite honest—he had actively prepared his speech for the stage on the way back.

And on the other side, at the competition venue.

When it was heard that Lu Wu would personally give the opening speech on the day of the finals,  
 Fucheng’s primary training ground became much more lively.

Many who had not initially planned to watch the finals made a special trip today, just to catch a glimpse of Lu Wuyi.

And Lu Wu did not let them make the trip in vain.

As the finals began,  
 his three huge Skeletons led the way, he sat atop a Bone Dragon, with Dudu and Little Skeleton at his side, followed by thirty Skeleton Elites.

The procession was magnificent.

Just this spectacle alone made the audience feel that their tickets were well worth it.

The key was the reaction from the competitors.

Many of them were already fans of Lu Wu.

Seeing their idol make such an entrance, many of them got fired up.

Even the original neutral bystanders were now boiling with excitement.

The entire venue erupted the moment Lu Wu arrived.

The only ones feeling a bit awkward at the scene were the three groups of outsiders.

Yes, that’s right, this edition of the high school league still had external contestants.

After all, Jiangnan’s decline wasn’t an issue of just one or two years, nor was it the case that, with Lu Wu last year, Jiangnan could suddenly produce some other genius this year.

Even if there were, for those external prodigies, advancing into the top three would be quite effortless.

And the benefits for making it to the top three were simply too good, so, as expected, there were still teams from outside looking to snag easy wins, and they had all made it into this final round, likely to sweep the top three once again.

This was also why many people didn’t want to come to watch the finals this year.

After all, Lu Wu had just won the championship last year, giving the Jiangnan people a rare chance to hold their heads high, who could bear to see them beaten back to their original state this year?

At the same time, Old Zhang incessantly urged and pushed Lu Wu to return for this very reason.

It was yet another blow to the face of Jiangnan.

Helpless, they could only rely on Lu Wu to come back and save face.

In fact, Lu Wu’s return did indeed restore a lot of Jiangnan’s pride.

Many who weren’t planning to come now did.

Because they knew, even if the competition ended in defeat, they still had Lu Wu.

Lu Wu alone, could suppress the entire young generation of the Alliance and carry the banner for the revival of Jiangnan.

As long as Lu Wu was there, the face of the Jiangnan people would never hit rock bottom.

In such a scenario, the return of Lu Wu naturally spurred cheers from the Jiangnan people, while those small teams from outside and those maneuvering behind them felt somewhat embarrassed.

The cheering was for the Jiangnan people, the revelry belonged to the Jiangnan people.

All of which had nothing to do with them.

What they had was only the championship.

Yes, that’s correct; although it was a bit awkward, thinking that the embarrassment was temporary and the rewards were plentiful, the hearts of the forces behind these external teams felt much better.

As long as they did not feel embarrassed, the Jiangnan people would be the ones left feeling awkward.

Of course, although this was their mindset,  
 no one dared to stir trouble, acting very well-behaved and quietly laying low, ready to make a silent fortune.

After all, it was well known that Lu Wu was particularly trick—not someone to offend lightly.

Crossing him likely meant no good end.

They were even prepared to act submissive and cowardly if Lu Wu decided to give them trouble.

However, contrary to their expectations, Lu Wu showed no intention of causing them trouble.

He proceeded with the opening ceremony’s speech as naturally as could be.

He encouraged the competitors in a rather normal manner.

Again, ahem, it wasn’t quite normal to chat with the top four players of the league for a bit.

And chat we did, issues were raised.

The players from those three outside teams went up all nervous and came down all excited with flushed faces.

Their gazes towards Lu Wu also carried an unprecedented fervor.

This made the people who had already recruited them feel uneasy about the situation.

However, upon second thought, they felt there was probably nothing to worry about.

If Lu Wu had returned earlier, they would have been afraid that Lu Wu might train a few teams to win the competition.

But now, the situation was clear; they didn’t believe Lu Wu’s return could lead to the Jiangnan teams winning the championship.

Impossible, the victory was surely theirs.

Indeed, after the competition ended.

The rankings were announced, and the top three from the Jiangnan High School League were taken by those three outside teams.

Jiangnan’s teams only managed to get fourth place.

The venue was awkward for a moment.

Silence fell upon the field, and the competitors lowered their heads, afraid to raise them lest they see Lu Wu’s disappointed look.

On the contrary, there was nothing unusual on Lu Wu’s side.

He was the first to stand up and applaud, “066, 077, 088 congratulations on taking the top three spots in this high school league competition.”

Lu Wu’s congratulations made the heads of those three teams’ nine players too shy to lift up.

Their faces were red, seemingly feeling guilty for seemingly disrespecting their idol.

“Lift your heads, everyone. I saw your performance in the competition, and you all did very well.

The top three spots are well deserved; you won this fair and square with your power, and there’s no need for you to feel ashamed.”

“Of course, those of you who didn’t do well shouldn’t be disheartened either. Although you are temporarily behind here.

One competition does not determine your future.

You saw this year’s university league competition, right?

Our Jiangnan University team, eh, Ye Ruhuo, Su Lan, and Wu Wei, like me, are all freshmen.

Last year, some of them didn’t even make the top eight, but they shined in the university league this year.

If you haven’t discounted yourselves, then I welcome you to Jiangnan University, where I will grow alongside you.”

“Of course, you guys too!

Jiangnan University isn’t just for the people of Jiangnan; it’s also the Jiangnan University for the Alliance. If you’re interested in Jiangnan University, our doors are open to you too!”

Public speaking.

One part is language organization skills, mood control on the spot, another part is personal charm.

Sometimes, the same speech, spoken by different people, has a completely different effect.

If Zhang Wentao had said these words, probably no bird would care.

But when Lu Wu spoke, the situation was entirely different. The whole field erupted, and the previously dejected atmosphere was swept away.

These students were incredibly excited.

Even those three outside teams looked at Lu Wu with even more passion.

Lu Wu seized this opportunity to strike while the iron was hot.

He personally took charge of the awards, and while he presented them to those three outside teams, he also took the chance to poach some talent.

What was Lu Wu’s status now?

When he picked up his hoe, it was very difficult for anyone to resist.

Two of the teams stated on the spot that they wanted to join Jiangnan University.

This excited the Jiangnan people. Even though the top three were not from Jiangnan, their joining Jiangnan University salvaged some face for them.

Although those teams’ backers looked extremely displeased, they were helpless and had no choice but to endure, as they couldn’t provoke Lu Wu.

Only now did they truly understand what it means for others to revel in joy.

Watching the excited audience and players, and then looking at their own students who had been swayed by Lu Wu, the two teachers felt incredibly isolated.

However, just when everyone thought that this high school league competition was about to draw to a close.

A frivolous voice unexpectedly appeared in the first training ground.

“Yo, the atmosphere’s so good here? Do you mind if I join the fun too?”

This voice bewildered the audience.

Almost at the same time, a figure appeared on the award platform.

A white hat, a black shirt, a white jacket, and a skeleton brooch on the chest, this sudden arrival was none other than the Feng Xiu, one of the Organization Zero’s Five Ambassadors, who had just killed the Skeleton General.

This guy, upon his arrival, took off his hat and gave a slight bow to Lu Wu, “We meet again.”

…

Ask for a subscription!

# Chapter 329 - 329 326 Lu Haikong Missing

﻿Chapter 329: 326 Lu Haikong Missing Chapter 329: 326 Lu Haikong Missing Jiangnan, the first training ground in Fucheng.

Lu Wu’s originally cheerful expression darkened as Feng Xiu arrived.

Jiang Yuexing, who stood beside Lu Wu, also furrowed her brow slightly; however, her face only showed surprise, not solemnity, which was an obvious sign that she did not know Feng Xiu.

This was quite normal.

Feng Xiu, as one of the Five Ambassadors of the “Zero Organization,”

was mostly active outside the region and rarely entered Sector 1.

Few people had seen him; Lu Wu had met him only because he had sought him out, so it was normal for Jiang Yuexing not to know him.

But although Jiang Yuexing didn’t recognize him, she could vaguely sense the power of the man before her.

“Who is this gentleman?”

Feng Xiu grinned, “Me? I guess you could say I’m a friend of Lu Wu’s, a friend from a brief encounter.

Hearing that Lu Wu had finally returned to Jiangnan, I specifically brought him a gift.”

As he spoke, an exquisitely crafted wooden box appeared at his side.

It looked as if he really intended to give Lu Wu a gift.

However, Jiang Yuexing saw through the ruse; Lu Wu’s expression had changed the moment he saw Feng Xiu, and her intuition told her there was something wrong with this man.

Thus, Jiang Yuexing turned her head towards Lu Wu.

“So, this gentleman is really your friend?”

Meanwhile, on Lu Wu’s end,

his dark expression, after several changes, returned to calm.

Lu Wu had many strengths, among which his greatest was his ability to adjust his mindset.

Although Feng Xiu’s appearance was unexpected,

Lu Wu also understood what his arrival implied, but at this moment, Lu Wu was especially quick to calm himself down.

He glanced at the item in Feng Xiu’s hand, then back at Feng Xiu, and coldly said, “I have indeed met this gentleman once, but it’s inaccurate to call us friends. We don’t get along in many respects.

As for your so-called gift, I have even less reason to accept it.

If you genuinely wish to give me a gift, then the best gift would be for you to leave Jiangnan and Sector 1.”

Feng Xiu’s lips slightly curved, “Oh, that’s the gift you want?

That’s a bit troublesome; I have no plans to leave Sector 1 any time soon.

Can’t help it then, I’ll just have to give you this one for now. Just make do with it.”

Having said that, Feng Xiu flicked his wrist, and the wooden box smoothly flew towards Lu Wu.

“Sorry, I’m not one to just ‘make do’!”

Lu Wu coldly swung his hand, directly pushing the box back into Feng Xiu’s hands.

He would not accept anything from Feng Xiu.

Although Lu Wu didn’t know what was inside, he was very clear that it definitely wasn’t anything good.

Looking at the rejected box, Feng Xiu squinted his eyes, “This puts me in a difficult position, as this gift was specifically prepared for you. Since you don’t like it, then I have no choice but to destroy it.”

With these words, Feng Xiu squeezed his grip on the box, and the delicate box was crushed, revealing a skull that was familiar yet strange in Feng Xiu’s hand.

Lu Wu’s face changed.

He recognized it immediately; the object in Feng Xiu’s hand was unmistakably the skull of Old Bone.

Lu Wu had never expected to encounter Old Bone again so soon, especially not in this manner.

At that moment, an uncontrollable fury surged in Lu Wu’s heart.

“Aunt Yue Xing!

Help me kill him!”

This was the first time Lu Wu had actively asked Yue Xing to help him kill someone. However, while Lu Wu’s killing intent surged, the Yue Xing inside him did not stir at all.

There was no response, nor a flash of a sword.

This pause baffled Lu Wu.

At the same time, a smirk tugged at Feng Xiu’s lips.

“It seems I guessed right, thank you for helping me test yet another piece of information I wanted. As a thank you, I’ll leave you with this!”

Saying this, Feng Xiu threw Old Bone’s skull towards Lu Wu.

Lu Wu instinctively reached out to catch Old Bone’s skull, when Feng Xiu’s lips curled at the other end.

“Burst!”

With a “pop”, the skull that was about to land in front of Lu Wu exploded like a balloon.

The explosion wasn’t powerful, but it was enough to reduce the skull to dust.

This act further infuriated Lu Wu.

But the infuriated Lu Wu became even more collected, not yelling to kill his opponent, but instead gazing coldly at Feng Xiu across from him.

It wasn’t just Lu Wu who was angered.

The entire audience as well.

Initially, they were unaware of what was happening, but now, anyone who didn’t realize that Feng Xiu was bullying Lu Wu would be a fool.

The audience in Jiangnan instantly erupted in anger, and Jiang Yuexing was the first to step forward to defend Lu Wu but was immediately pulled back by him.

Jiang Yuexing’s King Level 2 Star combat power offered little resistance in front of Feng Xiu.

Seeing this, Feng Xiu laughed heartily, “I love seeing you frustrated like this, unable to kill me.

Take a breath, don’t upset yourself too much; we still have long days ahead.”

Feng Xiu finished speaking and left with a hearty laugh.

Throughout, Lu Wu held tightly onto Jiang Yuexing, preventing her from taking action, and didn’t utter a word more.

After watching Feng Xiu leave, Lu Wu took Jiang Yuexing and left as well.

Feng Xiu’s disturbance had directly ruined the good atmosphere of the arena.

The audience left disappointed.

Everyone felt that Lu Wu’s performance today was too weak; many even said that if it were them, they would have dealt with Feng Xiu long ago.

Little did these critics know, if Lu Wu wasn’t worried about affecting them, he would have acted much sooner.

…

On the other side, by Lu Wu.

After Feng Xiu left, he and Jiang Yuexing entered a rest room. As soon as the worried Zhang Wentao left, Jiang Yuexing immediately asked, “Who was that person just now?”

Lu Wu didn’t hide it, and tried to calmly respond, “One of the Five Ambassadors of the ‘Zero Organization,’ Feng Xiu!”

“What?”

Jiang Yuexing’s eyes widened in shock, clearly startled by this title, “Is that true? How could he have come here?”

Lu Wu looked at this woman he hadn’t seen in over a month.

He said sharply, “Whether it’s true or not, I don’t know. That’s what he told me. As for why he came back, what do you think?”

After saying this, Lu Wu directed his gaze to his own chest.

“Aunt Yue Xing, perhaps it’s time for us to have a word?”

On Jiang Yuexing’s end, who was still bewildered, upon hearing Lu Wu call for Aunt Yue Xing, her eyes fixed on Lu Wu’s chest.

Under the watchful eyes of Lu Wu and Jiang Yuexing, Yue Xing slowly emerged from Lu Wu’s heart.

Seeing Yue Xing again, Jiang Yuexing was obviously more excited than Lu Wu.

On Lu Wu’s side, he wasn’t excited, he was only angry, but his anger wasn’t because Yue Xing hadn’t taken action just now, nor was it directed at Yue Xing.

He knew very well that it must have been some jerk’s command, so his anger was directed at that jerk.

“Doesn’t that guy have anything he wants to say to me?”

“He should have known about this a month ago, right?”

“I thought he had settled this matter since there hasn’t been any movement for a month. Doesn’t he have anything to say now?”

Hmm, Lu Wu had hidden for a month.

On one hand, he didn’t want to cause trouble, and on the other, it was actually out of trust for Lu Haikong.

He believed the old man should be able to solve this matter.

When he returned, the old man should have known through Yue Xing, and his not stopping him gave Lu Wu the illusion that the old man had already resolved the issue.

This was also the reason why Lu Wu had confidently returned.

But who knew, as soon as he returned, he immediately encountered this situation.

Lu Wu was now so mad he could burst a lung.

“This kind of thing, if he was capable of resolving it, he wouldn’t need to tell me anything, and there’d be no problem.

If he wants to keep something from me, let him. I won’t probe or investigate him, or be curious about him—this is the trust I gave him.

But now I feel like I threw my trust away for nothing.

If he couldn’t handle it, couldn’t he have just told me? I could hide for a lifetime if necessary, what does his silence mean?

Am I overthinking this, or is his intelligence just not up to understanding this kind of tacit agreement?”

Facing an infuriated Lu Wu, Yue Xing was somewhat timid.

“Um, I informed the master a month ago, he said he would resolve this matter…”

This made Lu Wu even angrier.

“Is this his so-called resolution?”

“No…”

“Alright, alright, Aunt Yue Xing, no need to say more. I don’t want, and can’t, lose my temper at you. Please call that old tortoise over here, I need to talk to him face-to-face!”

Lu Wu was clearly beside himself with rage.

He didn’t even consider what exactly that made him if Lu Haikong was an old tortoise.

However, right now, whether or not he’s an old tortoise isn’t the point, the important thing is to see Lu Haikong.

Still, wanting to see Lu Haikong wasn’t so easy at the moment.

“Um, I just tried to contact the master, but I couldn’t reach him!”

“Couldn’t reach him? How is that possible?”

Lu Wu was stunned, this kind of situation was typically impossible because, after advancing to Master Level, Summoners and Summoned Beasts could communicate remotely, which could cross distances and Secret Realms.

Normally, unless the other party was dead, Yue Xing should be able to reach him wherever he was.

This made Lu Wu feel unavoidably nervous while he was frowning, Jiang Yuexing next to him was already eagerly asking Yue Xing, “He hasn’t had an accident, has he? Try contacting him again, he absolutely mustn’t come to harm!”

Jiang Yuexing’s anxious demeanor baffled Lu Wu.

At that moment, he saw Xing Zhanlong’s image on Jiang Yuexing.

Lu Wu just couldn’t understand it, could such a scumbag really have that much charm?

But now wasn’t the time to quibble over this, Lu Wu’s gaze was fixed on Yue Xing as well.

“It’s no use, I can’t contact the master. He must have gone to that place.”

“What place? Isn’t it dangerous? Shouldn’t we go rescue him?”

Jiang Yuexing urged anxiously.

But Yue Xing didn’t respond to her, instead looking at Lu Wu, and communicated the situation via a special method of transmission.

“The master should have gone to a special Secret Realm to find the energy needed to heal the little master.

You know the little master’s condition, it requires special energy for treatment, just like your situation a few years ago.

Once the master enters that place, I can no longer contact him.”

Hearing this answer, Lu Wu had mixed feelings.

On one hand, he was relieved, but on the other hand, he vaguely felt something was off.

“Does the old man often need to go to that place?”

“He used to go every month, but less frequently recently. Since the little master’s condition stabilized, it’s been nearly a year since he last went.”

Getting this response made Lu Wu furrow his brow even more.

Wasn’t this timing a bit too coincidental?

Not going earlier or later but just now—was the old man scheming against him, or was someone else scheming against the old man?

This, Lu Wu couldn’t be sure about, but what he was clear about was that his current situation was very bad.

“Lu Wu, he’s alright, isn’t he?”

While Lu Wu was worried about his own precarious situation, Jiang Yuexing by his side was worried about the old man, which really messed with Lu Wu’s mindset, he replied irritably, “He’s definitely better off than us.

He’s probably not going to die, but we can’t be so sure about ourselves.”

It was now very clear that a huge net was closing in on them.

Lu Wu had no idea who was casting the net, or rather, aside from “Zero,” who else might be involved.

He didn’t even know the other party’s purpose.

With the information completely unclear, Lu Wu had no idea how to respond.

He wasn’t even sure if he should try to gather more information.

Because whether it was Du Dao Hu Zi or the Envoy Feng Xiu, it was evident that they were trying to drag him into a pit.

This gave Lu Wu a feeling that once he stepped into this quagmire, trying to understand the situation, he would fall right into their trap.

If he didn’t seek to understand the situation, he wouldn’t even know who the enemy was, much less how to deal with it.

Lu Wu felt trapped, but he wasn’t completely out of options.

“The old scumbag isn’t here, so I can only use this method.”

“Jiang Ma, please immediately request assistance from the Alliance in your name, saying that the Envoys from the Evil Organization “Zero” have appeared in Jiangnan, suspected of planning a terrorist attack on Jiangnan, requesting Alliance support for Jiangnan.”

“Additionally, spread another piece of information.

Say that a Summoning Beast Baby of Epic quality or higher is about to be born in Jiangnan, and the Evil Organization “Zero” has come specifically for this Summoning Beast Baby.”

At that moment, although Jiang Yuexing was worried about Lu Haikong, she still rationalized upon hearing this and changed her expression, “Lu Wu, this will plunge the entire Jiangnan into chaos.”

“Let it be chaotic then, I’ll just make sure to protect my own turf. Let it be as chaotic as it wants to be.”

Lu Wu was indeed out of options.

With Lu Haikong not around, and unable to safely step into the trap,

the best he could do now was to leverage the power of the Alliance to solve the problem.

Lu Wu was betting that the Alliance would absolutely not allow “Zero” to run rampant in District 1.

If he bet correctly, he could use the power of the Alliance to drive “Zero” away.

If he bet wrong, Lu Wu really wouldn’t be much worse off than he was now; the situation could hardly deteriorate further.

…

An explosion occurred at midnight.

Also, it seems like mass updates aren’t very effective; it feels like the popularity has decreased quite a bit. It’s better to spread them out.

# Chapter 330 - 330 327 Unbearable

﻿Chapter 330: 327 Unbearable Chapter 330: 327 Unbearable Jiang Yuexing reported Feng Xiu’s information to the Alliance.

The Alliance expressed significant “concern” over the matter.

That very day, they dispatched a team to the scene.

This team was from the Demon Suppression Bureau, tasked with combating organizations like the Zero Organization, a source of terror and evil.

So, the ones who came could be considered professionals.

At first, Lu Wu was quite pleased.

But as soon as this group of professionals arrived, Lu Wu immediately realized just how “professional” these so-called professionals really were.

Weren’t going to delve into what use this group of people, who were collectively at Master Level in power, could possibly be against Feng Xiu.

But their behavior upon arrival made Lu Wu feel that they weren’t here to deal with Feng Xiu, but to investigate him instead.

Upon arrival, they first sought out Lu Wu.

“According to our information, you were the one who provided the intelligence on Feng Xiu, one of the Five Ambassadors of the Zero Organization?”

Asked the leader of the five-person team, An Lan, as he met with Lu Wu.

“It was me!” Lu Wu frowned slightly, nodding while counterasking, “The Demon Suppression Bureau only sent the few of you?”

“The Demon Suppression Bureau is preoccupied with numerous affairs; King-level powerhouses cannot be easily mobilized without precise intelligence.”

An Lan responded, with neither warmth nor frost.

“What do you mean by no precise evidence? Are the tens of thousands of eyewitnesses at the high school alliance matches not enough…”

“They did indeed see someone, but whether that person is Feng Xiu is debatable.”

An Lan brushed off Lu Wu with this comment before pressing further: “How did you know the identity of the person in question?”

Lu Wu, with furrowed brows: “He stopped me on the way back from Beijing and told me.”

This response from Lu Wu gave An Lan an opening: “On your way back from Beijing? He stopped you and told you?”

“Is there a problem?”

“There is, indeed. Let’s set aside the veracity of this incident for the moment.

Let’s talk about why you knew this information a month ago but chose not to report it immediately, instead keeping it hidden until now.

Furthermore, I hope you’ll explain.

Why did you suddenly detour from heading back to Jiangnan to instead go to the Changping Secret Realm, and why did you stay there for a whole month?

Lastly, according to your statement, he’s been in District 1 since a month ago; why has there been no news of him over the past month, but as soon as you return to Jiangnan, he promptly appears?”

An Lan fixed his gaze upon Lu Wu’s eyes, word by word, sharp as a series of knives.

And faced with An Lan’s interrogation, Lu Wu looked even more displeased.

“Are you here to inquire about the situation or are you interrogating me?”

An Lan pushed up his glasses: “Mr. Lu jests, of course we are here to inquire information. After all, this concerns one of the Five Ambassadors, so being cautious is quite normal.”

“Is that so, well, your so-called caution makes me quite uncomfortable.”

“I’m afraid there’s nothing I can do about that; we, too, must follow protocol and can only ask for your patience.”

“Sorry, patience is exactly what I lack the most!”

Lu Wu was out of patience for these utterly useless people and stood up to leave.

An Lan, however, blocked his way: “Mr. Lu Wu, you are our only available lead at the moment. If you do not cooperate with us, our investigation will be hard-pressed to proceed.”

“That might not be a bad thing for you!”

After making his point, Lu Wu pushed An Lan aside and left with long strides. He simply had no patience left to deal with this group.

However, as Lu Wu attempted to leave, An Lan’s party was not willing to let him.

“What do you mean by that?”

An Lan took offense at the disdain he heard in Lu Wu’s tone and blocked his way again. However, at the moment he reached out his hand, an extreme and wild will enveloped all members of the squad.

This terrifying will caused the faces of An Lan’s five-person group to go pale.

Those of lesser strength were already prostrated.

“What do I mean? This is what I mean!”

After speaking, Lu Wu kicked An Lan aside and walked away with large strides.

As he left An Lan and his group, Lu Wu’s expression became even uglier.

An Lan and his team’s entrance made it painfully clear to Lu Wu that his situation might be more dangerous than he had anticipated.

One of the Five Ambassadors of Zero Organization.

The Alliance should have sent more than just a team of Master-level professionals.

As soon as this team arrived, Lu Wu immediately knew he couldn’t expect much from the Alliance.

It wasn’t just the Alliance where he found no hope.

Lu Wu had also misjudged in seeking assistance.

As soon as the news from Jiangnan came out, other related organizations immediately started spreading counter-information.

On one hand, they denied the appearance of the Zero Organization and also denied the existence of the so-called Epic Summoning Beast Baby, while the Alliance criticized the Jiangnan media through official channels.

They accused the media of releasing false information aiming to cause public panic.

Please request a rectification from the Jiangnan side.

After all this, not only did Lu Wu’s response fail to solve the problem, but it also caused trouble for Jiang Yuexing.

Moreover, the team from the Demon Suppression Bureau was not subdued by Lu Wu’s show of force, and they continued to investigate.

But the direction of their investigation was not the Zero Organization, but Lu Wu himself.

They learned their lesson and dared not approach Lu Wu.

Without them making a move, Lu Wu couldn’t be bothered to deal with them, or rather, he truly had no time to spare.

“How many enemies has that old man made!”

Even without delving deep, Lu Wu could sense there were quite a few people exerting their influence from the shadows.

In a situation where the circumstances were completely unclear, hiding seemed like the best option.

Yet, they didn’t give Lu Wu the chance to hide at all.

Lu Wu returned to Jiangnan on the first day, and Feng Xiu appeared.

Lu Wu returned to Jiangnan on the second day, and An Lan’s Team arrived.

Then, another incident occurred.

That day, while Lu Wu was busy, Li Kai urgently called him to inform him that Lu’s Ranch had a problem.

Hmm, the so-called Lu’s Ranch was where Lu Wu’s family raised the Iron Armor Bull and Steel Armor Bull.

It was said that just moments ago, a terrifying evil energy erupted within the ranch, and afterward, the staff found a horrifying pit of corpses in the direction of the evil energy.

Furthermore, after the outbreak at the necrotic pit, the condition of many cattle in the ranch started declining, and several had already died.

One could say that the ranch was Lu Wu’s gold mine. With such a problem occurring there, how could Lu Wu sit still?

He rushed to the ranch with his people at the first opportunity.

When Lu Wu arrived at the ranch, he found that someone had reached there before him: a squad from the Demon Suppression Bureau.

As soon as Lu Wu saw this group, his brow furrowed instantly.

“Who let them in?”

An Lan stepped forward immediately and said, “We’re from the Demon Suppression Bureau. We have the right to intervene and investigate anything related to summoners’ crimes!

Mr. Lu, you’ve come just in time. Please explain why there are so many corpses in your ranch?”

Following An Lan’s pointing hand, Lu Wu saw a pit of corpses in his own ranch.

The pit was filled with human corpses, and these bodies were anything but ordinary.

…

Name: Evil-transformed corpses

Description: Bodies killed by an Evil Summoner, they seem to contain extremely strong evil energy and pose a risk of spreading.

…

Lu Wu looked at these corpses, his gaze icy.

Ignoring An Lan’s questioning, he turned to the ranch manager and said, “Show me the cattle.”

Perhaps because he had been intimidated by Lu Wu before, although An Lan was displeased with Lu Wu’s disregard, he didn’t say anything.

Under the manager’s arrangement, Lu Wu saw the condition of the cattle.

As expected, about fifty percent of the cattle in his ranch had been evil-transformed.

And it was rapidly spreading.

Then Lu Wu checked the milk, and fortunately, there didn’t seem to be any issue with the milk for now.

“Separate the healthy cattle, keep twenty of the evil-transformed ones and send them to my Cultivation Room, dispose of the rest.”

At the same time, Lu Wu had Zhang Wentao and his team stop all sales of the “Steel Armor Bull Evolution Gift Pack.”

Lu Wu’s emergency measures were fairly effective.

But this was just the beginning.

Though the ranch incident led to direct and indirect losses worth millions of points for Lu Wu, not to mention the impact on Jiangnan Mall and his customers, it was secondary.

What was truly critical was the Demon Suppression Bureau’s stance.

After waiting for Lu Wu to deal with everything, An Lan approached him again.

“Mr. Lu’s handling is done, do you now have time for an investigation?

I hope you can answer truthfully, why are there so many bodies infected with evil energy in your ranch?”

“Additionally, I received information that Lin Jianying, who participated in the high school league with you last year, is an Evil Summoner. It’s said that his death last year was actually a faked death escape with someone’s help; do you have anything to explain about that?”

When An Lan put forward these two questions,

He suddenly discovered that Lu Wu’s face looked very unpleasant, with a ferocious gaze fixed on him, as if he wanted to devour him.

This terrifying look made An Lan’s heart skip a beat.

By the time he realized it, Lu Wu had already walked away.

Soon after, the Lu Group made a statement regarding Lu’s Ranch.

They gave a detailed explanation about the incident at the ranch.

And after throwing the blame on the Zero Organization and Feng Xiu,

Lu Wu hid away on Dragon Island and didn’t come out.

He used the evasion technique once again.

…

Jiangnan, at the accommodation site of An Lan’s Team from the Demon Suppression Bureau.

Learning that Lu Wu was hiding under the pretext of being in seclusion, An Lan disdainfully said, “The youngest and most demonic genius in history?

I thought he had some ability, but the moment something goes wrong, he hides like a turtle, not even daring to face it. He’s just another piece of trash.”

As soon as An Lan spoke, someone immediately expressed agreement.

“Yes, absolutely, I think so too.”

This flattery was friendly, but it made An Lan’s face darken.

Because he didn’t recognize the person who spoke.

Looking at the person who suddenly appeared, shrouded in a black robe, An Lan instinctively took a step back and adopted a defensive stance.

“Who are you?”

“Me?”

While the person replied, their hand extended and grabbed An Lan, who wanted to resist but was unable to move, pulling him closer and revealing the face beneath the hood to An Lan, “Let me introduce myself. I am one of the Five Ambassadors of the Zero Organization, Feng Xiu!”

An Lan’s face drastically changed when he clearly saw the face under the hood.

“No, you’re not Feng Xiu!”

“No, I am!”

…

Ten minutes later, when that mysterious person walked out of the accommodation site,

The place was set ablaze.

Amidst the fire, the mysterious person cloaked in a black cloak lifted the corners of their mouth.

“You want to play, right? Okay, I will happily play with you!”

# Chapter 331 - 331 The killer is Feng Xiu

﻿Chapter 331: The killer is Feng Xiu Chapter 331: The killer is Feng Xiu May 18th.

On the very night that trouble arose at Lu’s Ranch, another incident, neither too big nor too small, occurred.

The investigation squad from the Demon Suppression Bureau was ambushed, and the team leader, An Lan, was killed.

The assailant claimed to be Feng Xiu of the Zero Organization.

This event caught many people by surprise.

However, they soon discovered that it was only the beginning.

Not long after An Lan’s death, another bloodbath happened.

The Jiangnan Jin Family, Li Family, Chen Family, and Huang Family.

These four families were among the major families in Jiangnan that rose after the great disaster.

In the hundred plus years following the great disaster, these families developed rapidly, extending their influence into all aspects of Jiangnan.

The most representative figures were the Jin brothers, Jin Lihai and Jin Lailai.

One was the Tower Master of the Sea Suppression Tower, and the other was the head of the tower’s logistics department.

While they had power, they even dared to provoke Lu Wu.

Although provoking the brothers ended badly, their deaths didn’t cause the Jin Family to decline, thanks in part to support from other families; the Jin Family was not significantly affected.

They still lorded over their own territory.

Jiang Yuexing wished to move against them but couldn’t due to the entangled influence of various families.

And today, someone did what Jiang Yuexing wanted to do but couldn’t.

May 19th.

The Jin Family massacre took place.

Feng Xiu, one of the Five Ambassadors from the evil Zero Organization, brutally killed 18 members of the Jin Family.

May 20th, the Li Family massacre.

May 21st, the Chen Family massacre, the Huang Family massacre.

In just three days, a total of 77 people from the four major families of Jiangnan were killed.

All victims had their necks crushed to death, and at each scene, the words “Murderer Feng Xiu” were left behind.

Not only that, this ‘Feng Xiu’ was considerate enough to write down the reasons for the killings.

He presented all the evidence of the crimes committed by each person who was killed.

As the media began reporting, the spectators found out that every one of these victims had it coming—each one of them scum.

With the reports coming out, the spectators started to feel a change in the situation.

What was originally a terror attack seemed to have become a quest for human justice.

The supposed arch-fiend had seemingly become a hero who removed harm from the people.

Of course, this was just how the spectators saw it.

In reality, anyone with half a brain and a bit more understanding could guess who was behind all this just using their toes to think.

On the evening of May 21st, the Alliance headquarters convened a meeting about the situation.

The meeting was chaired by Fei Yinghao, one of the twelve elders of the Elder Council.

It’s necessary to introduce the Alliance here.

The full name of the Alliance is actually the Summoner Human Civilization Reconstruction Alliance.

The Alliance consists of 15 districts.

Communications between each district were basically cut off, with each district governing itself autonomously.

The only link between them is the Elder Council.

The first generation Elder Council was actually comprised of 12 top powerhouses from the time of the great disaster, who because of their terrifying power and contributions in quelling the disaster, reclaiming human territory from Summoned Beasts.

And then, because of the need to integrate human forces, these 12 powerhouses founded the Elder Council.

With their formidable strength and personal charisma, they unified the hundreds of human factions into one Alliance.

The reason it’s an Alliance and not a Federation is because from the very beginning, the Alliance has always just been an Alliance, a force integrated from various powers after the apocalypse, and not a nation.

Although after a century of development, the Alliance has moved toward regularizing and resembling a country more closely,  
 it is still unable to change the fact that the Alliance is a giant ‘patchwork monster’ made up of various forces from the world after the disaster.

That’s why there are so many oddities within the Alliance.

Summoner Center can have hereditary succession, Zhang Yunyi can control the entirety of Jiangbei single-handedly, and the Alliance doesn’t even have titles like president or prime minister.

The workings of the Alliance in District 1, the Education Bureau, Demon Suppression Bureau, Government Affairs Bureau, Summoners, Cultivation Masters, and so on, are highly autonomous, with the Elder Council overseeing the coordination of these departments.

So, under normal circumstances, any meeting involving multiple departments requires an elder from the Elder Council to preside.

Like today’s meeting initiated by the Demon Suppression Bureau and the Government Affairs Bureau.

The first one who couldn’t sit still at the meeting was the representative from the Government Affairs Bureau.

The attending Deputy Director slammed the table, “Fine, fine, fine, what a Jiang Yuexing. At this time, she still has the leisure to eliminate her rivals. I suggest we arrest Jiang Yuexing!”

The Government Affairs Bureau was particularly agitated because they would absolutely not want to see another Zhang Yunyi emerge.

Since Jiang Yuexing had become Governor, she certainly had her own network of connections.

The representative of the Education Bureau sneered: “Now you’re not being fair. The one who acted was the Zero Organization, Feng Xiu. What does this have to do with Governor Jiang?

If there is anyone to blame, it should be the Demon Suppression Bureau!

The matter of the Zero Organization had been reported by Jiangnan early on; it was the Demon Suppression Bureau that didn’t take it seriously and only dispatched a Master Level squad, leading to this outcome.

The Demon Suppression Bureau should be responsible for this!”

Hearing this, the Deputy Director of the Government Affairs Bureau became furious, “What Zero Organization, What Feng Xiu? When have you ever seen the Zero Organization carry out such a mild crime?

“Differentiate who deserves to die, and even write down the evidence?

This is obviously a move to eliminate dissenters!

Jiang Yuexing has been so brazen, we cannot let this slide; severe punishment is a must!

Otherwise, today it’s Jiang Yuexing, tomorrow it could be Li Yuexing. If every province starts doing this, can the Alliance even function?”

“You’re aware that they documented the evidence.

Even the Zero Organization, a terrorist group, pays attention to evidence. How can you, as a Deputy Director of the Government Affairs Bureau, just spout accusations?

If you truly want to frame someone, shouldn’t you at least fabricate some evidence first?”

“You’re slandering me!”

“You’re the one slandering!”

…

The Deputy Director of the Government Affairs Bureau and the Education Bureau Spokesperson clashed word for word, thoroughly enjoying their heated exchange.

At first, both sides had some reasonable points, but soon their argument devolved, barely distinguishable from a quarrel typical of street vendors. It almost escalated to physical confrontation.

From how things looked, the Education Bureau held the upper hand.

The main issue was that the Government Affairs Bureau truly lacked evidence, but as the matter involved their core interests, they were not going to back down easily.

Just as the situation looked like it would come to blows, Fei Yinghao, who was presiding at the head of the table, forcefully slapped the desk.

“Enough, enough, what’s the use of arguing over such trivial matters.

Zhou An, this is a matter for the Demon Suppression Bureau. I’m putting you in charge. Go to Jiangnan yourself. I’ll give you five days. Whether it’s a true evil demon or a false one, I expect you to give me an explanation. That’s all, meeting adjourned!”

As one of the twelve elders, Fei Yinghao certainly had this authority.

“Yes!”

Deputy Director Zhou An of the Demon Suppression Bureau nodded and accepted the order.

With Zhou An’s nod, the meeting came to an end.

The outcome of this meeting quickly spread through various channels.

And with this message out, it brought joy to some families, sorrow to others.

Jiang Yuexing was someone who felt both emotions.

She was pleased that with Zhou An coming, the threat from the Zero Organization should be resolved, or at least alleviated. Her worry was how to deal with those several murder cases.

Although she truly wasn’t behind those incidents, she had a vague idea of who might be.

But Zhou An of the Demon Suppression Bureau wasn’t easy to fool. If he started investigating, it was uncertain whether they could keep things hidden. If something came out, things would get really messy.

…

Meanwhile.

“Can’t hold back anymore, huh? This move of his is quite clever. By acting like this, those guys won’t be able to sit still anymore. I reckon someone will be coming down here soon.”

In a certain manor in Jiangnan, Feng Xiu still stood by the window, holding a glass of wine. He took a small sip and a teasing smile appeared on his lips: “But I wonder if he has considered that the person he managed to summon with great difficulty might also be coming for him?”

Feng Xiu said this not because he had explicit knowledge of the identity of the person who was about to come.

But one thing he knew well.

It wasn’t just him exerting force against Lu Wu, or against Lu Haikong. It wasn’t just that one ally who was exerting force.

There seemed to be countless forces at work, giving off a sense of synchronicity in their efforts.

Mainly because Lu Haikong had made many enemies.

Back when Lu Haikong dominated, he was even more arrogant than Lu Wu.

Who knows how many were suppressed and bullied by him and how many’s goddesses were deceived by this scoundrel.

The list of resentments and vendettas was endless.

These had been shaded over because of Lu Wu’s disappearance, but now, as Lu Wu became more active and his identity as Lu Haikong’s son became clearer, those who couldn’t find the man himself began to direct their hatred towards Lu Wu.

Think about it, a character from decades ago who stole one’s wife or beat one’s father.

Suddenly after disappearing for decades, a son emerges who seems to be even more talented and extraordinary than his father.

Just when people had barely emerged from being dominated by the fear of Lu Haikong, along comes Lu Wu — who could tolerate this?

Of course, these people would never dare to confront him on their own during regular times.

But now isn’t there someone charging ahead?

Since someone else is leading the charge, they naturally can hide behind and seek revenge for old grievances.

And on the topic of Zhou An.

Feng Xiu had actually hit the mark.

Not long after Feng Xiu made this judgment, someone sent him a piece of intelligence.

The intelligence clarified Zhou An’s grudge against Lu Haikong.

He was one whose childhood sweetheart, fiancée, and sister were all deceived by Lu Haikong.

For decades, his hatred for Lu Haikong penetrated deep into his bones.

The reluctance of the Demon Suppression Bureau to dispatch strong forces to resolve issues swiftly could be attributed to his behind-the-scenes manipulation.

Now that he was personally coming, the likelihood of him not troubling Lu Wu was next to nil.

“It seems this hope might turn into despair!”

Looking at the intelligence, Feng Xiu’s lips curled slightly.

# Chapter 332 - 332 329 Dark currents surging

﻿Chapter 332: 329 Dark currents surging Chapter 332: 329 Dark currents surging Zhou An received the command of the twelve elders.

So he did not delay or dawdle; he set out as soon as the meeting ended.

He arrived in Jiangnan that same day.

Just like An Lan, as soon as Zhou An arrived in Jiangnan, he immediately requested to see Lu Wu.

“Sorry, Lu Wu is conducting research on Dragon Island and it is currently inconvenient for him to meet with visitors!”

Zhang Wentao, wiping the sweat from his forehead, refused the request of the big shot before him without much firmness.

Zhou An, however, proved to be quite reasonable.

“If he’s inconvenient to come out, that’s fine; I’ll go see him!”

With such a top-tier existence, a Deputy Director of the Demon Suppression Bureau, taking a step back, what could Zhang Wentao do?

He had no choice but to lead the big shot into Dragon Island to see Lu Wu.

And their meeting wasn’t going to be that easy to arrange.

It required entry into Dragon Island, and after entering, they had to traverse dozens of miles before finally reaching Lu Wu’s location.

Lu Wu was in the “Dragon Tomb” on Dragon Island.

This tomb had now been transformed by Lu Wu into a huge Cultivation Room.

Zhou An arrived while Lu Wu was conducting research on “Dragon Knights.”

Lu Wu noticed his arrival but did not even give him a proper look.

Zhou An was about to speak, furrowing his brows, when Lu Wu spoke first.

“I don’t care who you are or why you’ve come here, but let me say one thing — go find my dad Lu Haikong if you have any issues.

If you manage to kill him, I’ll be whatever you say I am.

Say I had an indecent relationship with a woman in your family, say I’m your dad, I’ll own up to it.

If you can’t kill him, then fuck off!

I don’t want to say a single word to you pieces of trash!”

As soon as Lu Wu spoke these words, Zhang Wentao felt his heart stop beating.

He was terrified that Zhou An would be enraged and slap Lu Wu to death.

However, that did not happen; even though Zhou An’s face looked terrible after Lu Wu’s declaration, he did not say anything.

Or perhaps he had no chance to say anything.

Because at that moment, the most incompetent bodyguard at Lu Wu’s house, the one who could never accomplish anything and never left anything uneaten, finally did his job properly.

“Go, go, go, all of you get out! My boss makes tens of millions in a minute; don’t distract him from his work.

You can turn the outside world upside down all you want, just don’t bother my boss.”

Thus, Zhou An, the Deputy Director of the Demon Suppression Bureau, a big shot on par with Xing Zhanlong, had run thousands of kilometers and made a great effort to see Lu Wu, only to be chased out of Dragon Island without having said a word.

Zhou An was almost about to explode.

But upon considering the disparity in martial power between himself and Tie Xiong, he ultimately left quietly.

However, although Zhou An’s departure was peaceful,  
 his subsequent actions were not.

He immediately started a comprehensive investigation into An Lan’s death, Lu’s Ranch, and the tragic incidents at those four families.

Moreover, he summoned everyone around Lu Wu for questioning.

Lu Wu had a deadbeat dad and Tie Xiong by his side, which allowed him to be so defiant in front of Zhou An, but others did not have such strength.

Li Kai, Wang Dashan, and even Jiang Yuexing were all called in by Zhou An for questioning.

And all that was still manageable.

They had basically prepared themselves mentally.

But some who had not prepared psychologically were also summoned from Quan City.

Li Kai’s nephew, Lu Wu’s teacher Li Chun.

Dudu’s parents, and Lu Wu’s neighbors.

All these people were interrogated, and they were all baffled by the questioning; Dudu’s mother was particularly frightened.

Yet all this, Lu Wu could endure.

What he couldn’t tolerate was that this son of a bitch actually wanted to question Dudu.

Lu Wu almost couldn’t hold back the urge to tell Tie Xiong to twist the guy’s head off.

But in the end, Lu Wu endured.

He summoned Dudu to Dragon Island and challenged the guy to dare to come in for questioning.

If he dared to enter Dragon Island, Lu Wu dared to twist his head off.

Of course, Zhou An did not dare to enter, so the matter of questioning Dudu fizzled out.

But in his report, he wrote that Lu Wu and Dudu resisted the investigation and appeared to have unspeakable secrets.

Clearly, Zhou An’s visit not only failed to improve Lu Wu’s situation but made it even more difficult.

…

“What did I say?

Summoning people is useless!”

It was the same manor, the same window, and the same glass of wine.

The difference was that this time, Feng Xiu had several people behind him.

Judging by their very respectful standing posture, they were undoubtedly Feng Xiu’s subordinates.

“Envoy, that one is asking when we are going to take action,”  
 one of them said.

“He’s getting impatient?”

Lu Wu’s lips curved into a slight smile, “Then let’s wait a bit longer.”

Lu Wu was well aware that the other party wanted to use someone else to do their dirty work, and his side also wanted to take this opportunity to root out that guy.

So at this point, the mindset of both parties was quite similar.

Basically, it was a test of patience to see who would make the first move out of desperation.

If Lu Wu’s side lost patience and acted rashly, they would have to face Lu Haikong’s wrath.

“Although I’m not afraid of that guy, I also don’t want to be a pawn for that old fox.

If the old fox won’t make a move, then let’s just wait. I really want to see who can’t hold on and loses their cool first!”

In this respect, Lu Wu still had confidence.

After all, regarding this matter, the old fox had expended no small effort, and the longer it dragged on the greater the risk of exposure for him, so time was on Lu Wu’s side.

He just needed to sit back and watch.

At this moment, Lu Wu wasn’t the only one tucked away in Jiangnan, watching the show.

On the rooftop of a hotel near Jiangnan University.

Two women dressed in Sakura clothes, with katana hanging at their waist, looked down over Jiangnan University.

On the other side, a sycophant with the surname Xing also pursued all the way to Jiangnan.

Inside the Governor Mansion, several uninvited guests had arrived recently as well.

It could be said that undercurrents were swirling within Jiangnan.

And as the source of this dark tide, Lu Wu seemed particularly calm at this moment.

Ever since Zhou An’s arrival, he had truly holed up in the Great Tomb on Dragon Island, pouring all his time into researching “Dragon Knight,” as if he’s unaware of the world outside.

Regarding the research on “Dragon Knight,” Lu Wu had actually drafted the initial plan when he was checking on the Skeleton General’s body at the Changping Secret Realm.

It was just that the operational tactics and plan hadn’t been refined.

Now back on Dragon Island, with 30 Skeleton Elites at his side, Lu Wu had 30 chances each day to use at will.

Under the relentless application of these 30 opportunities, Lu Wu’s research quickly bore fruit.

The plan for “Dragon Knight” was successfully developed by Lu Wu on the third day after Zhou An’s arrival.

…

Evolution Scheme: Skeleton Dragon Knight  
 Description: Utilize the Skeleton Elite as the main body, refining them along with the bones of beings from the Dragon Clan through extensive hammering and concocting, while incorporating the Undead Transformation Ceremony, with a one-third chance of successfully transforming into Dragon Knights.

…

A one-third chance.

This was not a high likelihood.

Moreover, due to the Undead Ceremony, Lu Wu couldn’t control the risks. Basically, if the attribute panel suggested one-third, it would genuinely be one-third, or possibly even less, but certainly no more.

Should it fail, these Skeleton Elites would likely perish.

He would be gambling with their lives.

Lu Wu hesitated, for these 30 Skeleton Elites were not mere corpses or unfamiliar Summoned Beasts, but a gift from Old Bone.

If possible, Lu Wu did not wish to gamble with them.

But with no other choice, Lu Wu had to leave this decision to them.

Lu Wu gathered the 30 Skeleton Elites and asked, “If given the choice, with a high probability of death, but if you survive, you would be dozens of times stronger than you are right now, would you be willing to take the risk?”

Lu Wu tried to describe the situation as objectively as possible.

The 30 Skeleton Elites had a muted reaction.

Their Pupil Fires flickered slightly, and without speaking or making a sound, they simply looked at Lu Wu.

At this moment, Lu Wu, like someone flipping a coin to decide on a matter, already knew his true intentions the moment the coin was tossed.

Similarly, although he tried to be objective, by posing the question, he realized what he truly wanted.

So, looking at the 30 glowing Pupil Fires, Lu Wu paused, then spoke up.

“I apologize, I misspoke earlier, sorry. In fact, deep down, I didn’t really want to give you this choice.

I need you to take this risk.

I need you to become powerful, even if it means all of you die, because I will need your strength afterwards.

Only if you become strong enough can I use your power to avenge Old Bone. So prepare yourselves!

What awaits you next will either be power or death!”

Lu Wu kicked aside any pretense, directly confronting his true heart and openly stating his intentions.

To Lu Wu’s surprise, however, this speech seemed to stir the 30 Skeleton Elites even more.

Following Lu Wu’s words, he clearly saw a shift in the Skeleton Elites’ state.

Their aura changed.

It was a state of readiness to embrace death if not endowed with power.

Obviously, as soldiers of Old Bone, they were not cowards.

As long as they had a reason to take the risk, they would face death head-on!

In this state, Lu Wu began the preparations.

A massive pit formed in the Dragon Tomb, consisting of two concentric circles, large and small.

The outer, larger circle contained the 30 Skeleton Elites and thirty temporarily assembled Dragon Skeletons.

In the center, were Little Skeleton and Indeks, whom Lu Wu had tricked into participation.

Once all the skeletons and Bone Dragons were in place, Lu Wu began adding materials to both pits, with ingredients worth tens of millions of points by conservative estimates.

The Skeleton Elites were in position, the Dragon Skeletons were ready, and Lu Wu directly commenced the ceremony…

# Chapter 333 - 333 330 low-end version Bone Dragon Knight

﻿Chapter 333: 330 low-end version Bone Dragon Knight Chapter 333: 330 low-end version Bone Dragon Knight Lu Wu managed to coax both Little Skeleton and Indeks into it.

But in reality, when the ritual began, it had no effect on them.

The ritual was simply intended to initiate the advanced Evolution of the Skeleton Elite.

Little Skeleton and the others would have to wait until the Skeleton Elite had finished evolving.

So, when the ritual commenced, there was no reaction in the inner circle where Little Skeleton and the others were, but in the outer circle where the Skeleton Elite were, energy fluctuations started occurring.

The blood covering the Skeleton Elite began to boil.

As bubbles of blood appeared, a blood-colored fog began to emerge.

This type of fog resembled the Evil Qi from the Land of Burial, well, in shape at least.

Both were red and foggy.

But their actual cores appeared somewhat different.

The fog at this moment was more blood-scented, while the Evil Qi of the Land of Burial was nearly devoid of blood smell, all that could be felt was an atmosphere mixed with Slaughter Intent and military cohesion.

However, Lu Wu was not in the mood to care about the differences between the blood energy and Evil Qi at this time.

Even if he did care, once the ritual began, there was nothing he could do.

So, having experienced several Undead Transformations before, Lu Wu started practicing swordsmanship to the side immediately after the ritual started instead of watching the proceedings.

The swordsmanship Lu Wu practiced was one of the two sets Old Bone had taught him, the Slaughter Sword Technique.

The reason for practicing this was partly because Lu Wu’s Slaughter Swordsmanship was close to reaching the Master Level.

Another reason was that this was the only way Lu Wu could influence those Skeleton Elite during the ritual.

They were Old Bone’s soldiers, and it was believed that Old Bone’s swordsmanship and momentum should be able to give them an advantage.

Of course, this was under the premise that Lu Wu’s swordsmanship had to be of a certain standard.

Not necessarily reaching Old Bone’s level, but at least the Master Level, so he could perform Old Bone’s sword technique convincingly.

“Slaughter Swordsmanship from Old Bone focuses primarily on killing intent.

My command of the sword skill is flawless in terms of moves.

As long as I master the killing intent, I can elevate the Slaughter Sword Technique to Master Level.”

To master the killing intent was not difficult for Lu Wu now.

He only needed to recall what happened a few days ago at the high school league event.

Just by reflecting a little on Feng Xiu’s expression at that time, the killing intent naturally erupted within him.

This was also why Lu Wu’s Slaughter Swordsmanship was advancing faster than his Battlefield Swordsmanship.

Standing in the midst of the Dragon Tomb,

Lu Wu brandished an ordinary longsword.

At first, there was no energy involved, just pure sword moves.

As the ritual continued, energy began to infuse Lu Wu’s sword moves, and the originally intense Sword Skill began to take on the demeanor of a Skeleton General.

Then, the ritual gradually reached its climax.

The blood-colored fog enveloped the Skeleton Elite and Bone Dragons; they had reached the critical moment of life and death.

And at that moment, Lu Wu ignited the killing intent in his heart.

As the killing intent in his heart ignited, Lu Wu’s Slaughter Sword Technique, which was already on the verge of Master Level, underwent a complete metamorphosis.

A terrifying Slaughter momentum burst forth, drawing the attention of the Skeleton Elite, who were at the brink of life and death.

In a daze, it seemed as if they saw Old Bone’s figure.

Then, a light shout resounded.

“Slay!”

This light shout, filled with killing intent, caused a resonance among the Skeleton Elite.

At the same time, the air vibrated, and faintly, there seemed to be an echoing ‘slay’.

Within this ‘slay’, the Skeleton Elite underwent a metamorphosis akin to a butterfly emerging from its cocoon.

Each Skeleton Elite and Dragon Bone were enveloped in blood-colored cocoons.

Half an hour later, with a series of light snaps, the blood cocoons cracked open.

From the broken blood cocoons, Summoned Beasts emerged.

There were eighteen in total, each about four meters in height, and atop each was a Skeleton Elite seated about a meter high with a ferocious Bone Dragon below.

Clearly, Lu Wu had succeeded.

Thirty Skeleton Elite: twelve lost forever, eighteen had transformed.

…

Name: Budget Skeleton Dragon Knight (three-time evolution)

Power: One Star (Lord)

Quality: Ordinary (Gold) Upgrade

Attributes: Undead, Dragon

State: Excitement (Slaughter)

Weakness: Light (Strong)

Basic Skills: Battlefield Swordsmanship (Master)

Advanced Skills: Slaughter Sword Technique (Master)

Killing Skills: Slaughter Sword (Master), Dragon Rider Slash (Master)

Talents: Dragon Rider Warrior (Passive) – While mounted on a dragon, the individual and Bone Dragon’s power increases by one star.

Warrior Bond (Passive) – When fighting with warriors from the same legion, bonding effects can enhance overall Combat Power.

Description: Hmm, you’ve succeeded.

…

Name: Budget Bone Dragon

Power: Zero Star (Lord)

Quality: Ordinary (Gold) Upgrade

Attributes: Undead, Dragon

State: Confused (Having just been born, they possessed little wisdom.)

Weakness: Light (Strong)

Basic Skills: Brief

Talents: Brief

Description: The undead transformed from the bones of bone dragons possess slightly inferior power and wisdom. However, unlike other transformed undead, they have significant room to grow.

…

This Dragon Knight is both a whole and can be seen as two parts.

Individually, the knight isn’t impressive, and the dragon is even less so. But when combined, this unit becomes terrifying.

At least, their attributes were a pleasant surprise for Lu Wu.

However, Lu Wu didn’t linger in his excitement, and he didn’t even have time to check the changes in his “Slaughter Sword Technique” at the Master Level, because the events of the day were far from over; they had only just begun.

After the formation of a basic version of the Dragon Knight.

Lu Wu immediately had Little Skeleton contract with these 18 Dragon Knights.

They showed no resistance and obediently formed a contractual relationship with Little Skeleton.

Having contracted with the 18 Dragon Knights, Lu Wu officially began the evolution of Little Skeleton and Indeks.

This time, Lu Wu could get involved.

But, in truth, there wasn’t much need for him to step in.

After all, the preparations for Little Skeleton’s evolution were already quite comprehensive.

Little Skeleton’s quality was “Gold” (Superior) and infinitely close to King-level, while Indeks was directly at King-level. They, or rather Little Skeleton, already met the conditions to advance, lacking only the method.

Now, Lu Wu had filled in the method.

The soup enveloping them began to boil. Little Skeleton’s framework was stimulated, and the auras of the 18 subordinates that had just been acquired were pouring in reversal.

With their stimulation and the effect of the soup, the auras of Little Skeleton and Indeks connected.

In less than an hour, Little Skeleton smoothly completed this evolution, and there were slight changes in attributes.

…

Name: Riding Bone Dragon Skeleton General (Three-time Evolution)

Power: Two stars (Lord)

Quality: Ordinary (Gold Superior) Improved

Attributes: Undead, Netherworld Fire, Thunder, Dragon Bone

State: Baffled (Little Skeleton doesn’t seem to have become that much stronger)

Weakness: Light (Weak)

Companion Equipment: Mysterious Bone Staff (Advancing)

Dragon Bone Armor (Silver) Bone Crown (Silver) Little Skeleton’s Phone (Legend)

Skills, Talents: Brief

Description: Well, this time it has evolved by depleting potential, other than a one-star increase in power, there aren’t many other significant changes.

…

Compared to the less altered Little Skeleton, Indeks’s attributes had increased quite a bit.

…

Name: Bone Dragon Mastering Death Energy

Power: Three stars (Lord)

Quality: King-level (Improved)

Attributes: Dragon, Undead

State: Excited (Have I become stronger?!!)

Weakness: Light (Moderate)

Basic Skills: Brief

Advanced Skills: Dragon Power (Master), Dragon Clan Fighting (Grandmaster), Dragon Language Magic (Master)

Killing Move: Dragon Breath (Master)

Talents: Dragon Power (Passive)

Dragon Body (Passive), Dragon Power (Active)

Bone Dragon Leader (Active), can increase the power of subordinate bone dragons when activated.

Death Energy Domain: 50%

Description: Well, it has become stronger!

…

Bone Dragon Lolita has four changes compared to before: she has reached the Grandmaster level in fighting, gained a new talent, a Death Energy Domain, and increased her combat power from two to three stars, significantly boosting her combat effectiveness.

Her improvement wasn’t due to the benefits of evolution.

In reality, it’s mainly because of her own efforts.

Previously in the Changping Secret Realm, when she realized she might lose her position as the boss, she trained every day with the Skeleton Commander.

She had made substantial gains in all areas, and now she’s merely unleashing the accumulation of those gains.

“Eighteen Dragon Knights, eighteen bone dragons, Little Skeleton’s three-time evolution complete, and Little Lolita’s power has further increased.”

Overall, Lu Wu was quite satisfied with this round of evolution in all aspects.

Although Little Skeleton’s power didn’t leap forward, with so many new subordinates, its combat power could be much stronger when unleashed.

With this wave of evolution completed, there was no need for Lu Wu to continue staying on Dragon Island.

“They want to play, huh? Let’s play, then!”

Lu Wu swore he would absolutely make these bastards cry!!!

…

A new week, various requests,

Well, I’ve erupted like this, do you guys confirm next time for sure?

# Chapter 334 - 334 331 Wind Rises (Subscribe Please)

﻿Chapter 334: 331 Wind Rises (Subscribe Please) Chapter 334: 331 Wind Rises (Subscribe Please) May 19th.

The day after Lu Wu’s house released a low-tier Dragon Knight.

On this day, Lu Wu, who was staying on Dragon Island, did something. He sent Tie Xiong to invite Zhou An.

Old Tie went immediately upon receiving the task.

He kicked open the door of the Demon Suppression Bureau’s Jiangnan office and shouted, “Zhou, my boss is calling for you!

Hurry up, my boss rarely has free time. Get ready and come to meet my boss.

Don’t waste my boss’s time; he deals with tens of millions every minute!”

Hmm, this tone was more like giving orders than making a polite request.

Hearing Tie Xiong’s words and seeing the expression on his face that urged people to hurry and get ready to meet his boss, everyone in the Demon Suppression Bureau’s Jiangnan office looked displeased.

Of course, this included Zhou An.

Though his face looked bad and he was unhappy, given Old Tie’s power, Zhou An didn’t dare show any disrespect towards Tie Xiong.

He placated him briefly,  
 saying he had some unfinished business here and would visit Lu Wu after sorting things out.

But as soon as he said this, Tie Xiong became displeased.

“Nonsense, you’ve been messing around for days without producing anything substantial. You do nothing substantial all day, just confronting my boss, and now when you’re asked to meet him, you suddenly become busy?”

These words completely infuriated Zhou An.

“Old Tie, I respect you as a senior and I’ve been polite, but I hope you’ll respect your status.

Don’t get involved in things you don’t want to or can’t handle.

Don’t be someone else’s tool!”

“And since you’re here, I’d like you to take something to Lu Wu on my behalf.”

As he spoke, Zhou An pulled a document from his drawer.

“I now suspect that Lu Wu’s involvement with Lu’s Ranch and An Lan’s murder case, as well as the tragic incident of the four families, has important connections.

I’ve gathered relevant evidence. Take this to him and have him explain himself before the day ends.

Otherwise, I’ll apprehend everyone involved in this case and shut down all related businesses!”

At Zhou An’s words, Tie Xiong was the first to panic.

“You dare!”

Tie Xiong glared angrily as Zhou An rose from his seat, showing his strength for the first time in front of Tie Xiong, “Are you joking? I am the deputy director of the Demon Suppression Bureau. What I’m doing is within my responsibilities. What’s there not to dare? The Alliance has granted me this power.

Old Tie, if you think I wouldn’t dare, feel free to test me!”

It turns out, the approach of being tough or soft is often relative.

When Zhou An acted tough, Tie Xiong softened.

Eventually, the old man could only glare hatefully at Zhou An, then took the documents and left.

Now, the dark undercurrents in Jiangnan were stirring. The interactions of various powers created ripples at the smallest disturbances, and though the surface quickly returned to eerie calm, those underwater could swiftly sense any change.

Tie Xiong had only just returned to Dragon Island after his trip to the Demon Suppression Bureau’s office.

Everyone knew what Tie Xiong had done there.

“Unexpectedly, he is the first to lose his composure,” Feng Xiu chuckled.

“But it’s normal; the unknown is always more terrifying.

He’s been avoiding facing it from the start, almost ignorant and caught in the whirlpool. It’s surprising that he’s managed to evade it this long.”

Feng Xiu was now curious.

What exactly was the agitated Lu Wu planning?

“He’s completely ignorant, which means he can act without cognitive restraints.

That makes it hard to guess his intentions.”

“However, whatever his motives, he seems to be in trouble now.

Who knows if this might be his chance to break free.

If he does break out, that cunning old fox won’t let this go, will he?”

Feng Xiu clearly placed himself in the position of an observer.

After showing up to create a diversion, he did practically nothing but watch.

Waiting for those who wanted to act first to make their move.

He would first see the only ones flying, then make his moves based on their actions.

From a certain perspective, Feng Xiu was placing himself in the position of the flag-bearer.

For him, the current Jiangnan was like a chessboard in his hands.

Lu Wu or Zhou An were merely pieces on the board.

His ultimate goal was to identify another sly fox playing the game amid this chaotic chessboard.

So, the more Lu Wu couldn’t stay calm and the more chaotic the situation, the happier he became.

…

But very soon,  
 Feng Xiu couldn’t be happy anymore.

As soon as Tie Xiong returned to Dragon Island, it took less than half an hour before Lu Wu left Dragon Island and found the Demon Suppression Bureau’s office.

Then, another hour passed.

Suddenly, news came from the Demon Suppression Bureau.

The case in Jiangnan was resolved.

Lu Wu had confessed during Zhou An’s interrogation.

The bodies at Lu’s Ranch, An Lan’s murder, and the massacre of the four families were all his doing.

Moreover, there was no such character as “Zero” or anyone named Feng Xiu in Jiangnan; all fabricated by Lu Wu himself, all fake.

Lu Wu just wanted an excuse to kill someone.

With Lu Wu’s confession, the situation in Jiangnan had been resolved.

That same day, Zhou An planned to bring Lu Wu back to Beijing for a retrial.

This news stirred up the already turbulent undercurrents in Jiangnan completely.

They had come all this way to tackle Lu Wu, only for him to self-destruct?

Many people were bewildered, but Feng Xiu immediately realized.

“That’s not right; he did this on purpose!”

Feng Xiu quickly guessed Lu Wu’s intention.

“Although Zhou An is capable, Lu Wu is no simple character.

In front of Zhou An, even if he couldn’t get away completely, he wouldn’t have been subdued so easily.”

“This situation is obviously intentional by Lu Wu.

His admitting to these matters is a deep calculation.

One is to leave the whirlpool of Jiangnan.

Saying it’s for a retrial in Beijing, once in Beijing, he could deny everything he had admitted before, and nobody could do anything to him.

By then, he can procrastinate in Beijing, which would be completely out of my control.

Under these circumstances, if I don’t want him to go, I’d have to stand up and claim responsibility for those matters.

Once we step forward, the Alliance will have to start dealing with us.”

Feng Xiu had essentially guessed Lu Wu’s motive.

But knowing didn’t help, as he now had only two choices.

Either step forward to stop Lu Wu or just watch him go!

“Not bad, at least he’s better than his father, in such a situation, he still managed to trap me.

Since that’s the case, let’s play a big one then!

An unruly piece should learn to stay in line!”

# Chapter 335 - 335 332 Summoning Beast Army

﻿Chapter 335: 332 Summoning Beast Army Chapter 335: 332 Summoning Beast Army Fucheng seascape.

On a massive ship.

People from the Demon Suppression Bureau were bustling around, their faces alight with excitement, exuding a sense of triumph.

After all, they had had a hard few days.

There was no helping it.

Jiangnan was, after all, the Jiangnan of Jiang Yuexing and Lu Wu.

Not to mention Jiang Yuexing, just the power that Lu Wu himself held in Jiangnan was formidable.

The people from the Demon Suppression Bureau faced predictable pressures while investigating Lu Wu in Jiangnan.

Now, at last, relief had come.

The case had finally been resolved, and Lu Wu had ultimately been apprehended.

Were they not entitled to feel triumphant?

With these subordinates feeling triumphant, the leader Zhou An also felt good at this moment.

Although he hadn’t anticipated that Lu Wu would be so easily subdued, feeling vaguely that there was something unusual about the situation, it didn’t matter.

Whether Lu Wu was genuinely naive or had intended to use him to overturn the charges, it did not matter.

He had accomplished his mission.

Moreover, once they reached Beijing, it wasn’t as if Lu Wu could just overturn the case.

After all, countless forces were covertly exerting their influence now.

If Lu Wu tried to speak out, he would not be permitted.

If things went badly, Lu Wu might pay a hefty price for this matter.

Thinking of the misfortune befalling the son of Lu Haikong, Zhou An’s mood improved even more, and a smile appeared on his lips, but it quickly froze.

He saw Lu Wu, who should have been locked in the cabin, inexplicably lounging on the deck in a recliner, holding a fishing rod in one hand and a cup of goji berry water in the other, epitomizing wellness.

Upon seeing this, Zhou An’s face darkened instantly as he approached.

“Who allowed you on deck?”

Lu Wu sipped his goji berry tea and said, “The cabin was too stuffy. I needed some fresh air!”

Zhou An nearly burst out laughing from frustration.

“Do you not understand the situation you’re in now?

You are a criminal, a criminal under my escort. Have you ever seen an escorted criminal with the freedom to come out for fresh air?”

He took a step forward and added ominously, “And don’t forget, you boarded the ship alone!”

Indeed, Lu Wu had boarded alone, leaving Tie Xiong back at Jiangnan University, changing his task from protecting himself to protecting Dudu.

Now that Tie Xiong wasn’t by Lu Wu’s side, Zhou An straightened up.

“Remember, you are just a criminal now.

Where you stay and what you do all require my approval, without which you aren’t allowed out of that cabin.”

As he spoke, Zhou An stared into Lu Wu’s eyes.

“Do you understand?”

After a moment of eye contact, Lu Wu cowered: “Understood, whatever you say.”

Then, Lu Wu got up and walked back into the cabin.

This scene was quite satisfying for the staff of the Demon Suppression Bureau.

The arrogant Lu Wu had finally been forced to lower his proud head.

This was a victory for the Demon Suppression Bureau.

However, just then, a mocking voice rang out.

“Are you really going to indulge him like that? That doesn’t seem like your style.”

“Who is it!”

The voice caused a change in the expressions of everyone from the Demon Suppression Bureau on the ship.

Zhou An immediately turned towards the source of the voice and his pupils contracted involuntarily at the sight of the speaker.

A white top hat, white coat, black shirt.

This classic black and white outfit, if not Feng Xiu then who?

Although Zhou An had never met Feng Xiu, he had appeared in a previous high school league match and there were photos of him.

Hence, he recognized this guy now, which unsettled Zhou An somewhat.

After all, although he was the deputy director of the Demon Suppression Bureau, he was nonetheless slightly less powerful than this one of the Five Ambassadors.

Considering the other’s mad antics, Zhou An really was somewhat panicky.

But adhering to the principle of not losing face, Zhou An tried to calm himself and responded with a smile, “He may be a criminal, but he does have some talent, so giving him some privileges is appropriate.”

The awkward part was that he realized only after responding that Feng Xiu hadn’t been looking at him at all.

His gaze had remained fixed on Lu Wu.

As it turned out, Feng Xiu’s earlier words had been directed at Lu Wu.

At this moment, Lu Wu also stopped and turned around: “What do you mean by indulging him? Director Zhou and I are partners!”

This confused Zhou An.

Partners? What had he ever cooperated with Lu Wu on?

What exactly was Lu Wu saying?

At this point, neither Lu Wu nor Feng Xiu paid any mind to the panicked Zhou An; they started chatting like old friends.

After Lu Wu offered that response, the smile on Feng Xiu’s face grew even brighter: “Partners? The kind where one lives, the other dies?

At first, I thought you were either planning to hide out in Beijing or trying to lure me out.

After some thought, given your personality, you probably wouldn’t go to Beijing.

So if I hadn’t shown up, you would kill him and then pin the blame on me.

You would take it easy returning to Jiangnan to hide, or just run away, allowing this issue to escalate, right?”

“What?”

Zhou An’s expression drastically changed.

He turned his head in astonishment to look at Lu Wu.

But at this moment, Lu Wu had no time to look at him; his eyes were fixated on Feng Xiu.

After confirming in his mind that the true body had indeed arrived, Lu Wu’s lips curled up: “Don’t talk nonsense; I do not harbor such a vicious and insane thought.

I admit that the so-called purpose of my crime was simple: to lure you out to kill you, this murderer, to eliminate a menace for the people!”

To this, Feng Xiu actually nodded in admiration, saying, “Hmm, not a bad strategy. If you can’t solve the problem, just eliminate what’s causing you the problem. This solution is a bit simpler and more straightforward, but it’s indeed effective.”

“But are you so sure you can kill me?

Who gave you that confidence? Is it that the Summoned Beast inside you that belongs to Lu Haikong?”

“It does have its merits, but its limitations are plenty. Relying on it alone won’t be enough to kill me!”

“Not enough?”

Lu Wu’s lips curled into a smile, and he snapped his fingers.

With the snap of Lu Wu’s fingers, the previously calm sea surface began to bubble intensely.

One after another, Summoned Beasts emerged. Within a mere ten minutes, the area for dozens of miles around was surrounded by the Summoning Beast Army, with Little Flood Dragon from Lu Wu’s house leading the pack.

As the Little Flood Dragon brought its subordinates out,  
 Little Skeleton emerged from within Lu Wu along with 18 new and three old subordinates.

An immensely vast Summoning Beast Army was formed in an instant.

# Chapter 336 - 336 333 Prey

﻿Chapter 336: 333 Prey Chapter 336: 333 Prey From the moment Feng Xiu brandished Old Bone’s skull, Lu Wu had resolved to kill him.

And Lu Wu’s determination was, at this moment, vividly displayed through the Summoning Beast Army.

In the sky led Little Skeleton, commanding eighteen low-end versions of the Skeleton Dragon Knights.

Aboard the ship there were three, the Bone Tiger, Bone Flood Dragon, and Bone Bear.

In the sea were Summoned Beasts covering dozens of kilometers.

Yet at this moment, the most eye-catching presence was neither Lu Wu nor the Skeleton Dragon Knight Army led by Little Skeleton, but the Little Flood Dragon.

This little fellow was the highest quality and potential among all the Summoned Beasts under Lu Wu’s command.

And the strongest among them, in truth, had never had the opportunity to unleash its true power since the moment it first met Lu Wu.

Either there was no sea, or there were no underlings.

For the Little Flood Dragon, which inherently belonged to the sea and was naturally a leader,  
 Without the sea and without underlings, it was incomplete, soulless.

This was also why, despite being of Epic quality, the Little Flood Dragon’s power was, astonishingly, less than that of the Bone Dragon.

But once it returned to its home field and had summoned all its underlings, it shone the brightest at this moment!

The sea’s favor.

The will of dozens of miles of Summoned Beast underlings coalesced into the Little Flood Dragon.

This normally pain-averse, timid and somewhat delicate little one revealed a completely different side.

A natural Dragon Power exuded from its bones and spread out.

Now, its presence was not the slightest bit inferior to that of a King-Level 1 Star Summoned Beast in terms of momentum.

Its formidable power left many who were watching in the shadows utterly shocked.

Zhou An, standing by Lu Wu’s side, was scared stiff.

He never knew that Lu Wu had already grown to this extent.

This made Zhou An involuntarily recall Feng Xiu’s recent words.

If Lu Wu truly harbored the intent to kill him in this vast sea, even with King-level Peak power, it would be doubtful if he could win against Lu Wu.

After all, he knew very well how much of his own power was inflated.

Fortunately, Lu Wu wasn’t after him.

Such a massive force was directed at Feng Xiu across the way.

Lu Wu narrowed his eyes. “How about it? Is this force sufficient?”

Hearing this, Feng Xiu across from him just laughed.

“Do you know what I’m feeling right now?

It feels like a toddler wielding a wooden sword the size of a pair of chopsticks is threatening to kill me.

Isn’t that laughable?”

“Laughable? I hope you can still laugh later!”

A spark flashed in Lu Wu’s eyes, and a Longsword somehow appeared in his hand, his body wrapped in lightning as he charged directly at Feng Xiu.

In an instant, he arrived in front of Feng Xiu and thrust out with a terrifying murderous intent.

The fierce strike, the dreadful intent, caused a bone-chilling cold in the Master Level Summoners aboard the ship.

However, this strike failed to achieve anything.

Feng Xiu lightly extended a fingertip, effortlessly blocking Lu Wu’s sword.

With a slightly raised corner of his mouth, he taunted. “Nice swordsmanship, and the Sword Intent isn’t bad either; looks a bit familiar, must have been learned from that Summoned Beast in Changping Secret Realm, right?

You are nowhere close to its level, though. When it attacked full force, I had to exert a tenth of my strength to kill it.”

“Die!”

This phrase directly roiled the already surging killing intent in Lu Wu.

His entire being became enveloped in an even more terrifying murderous aura as he thrust out with another sword.

At the same time, Little Skeleton was already on the move.

With full power unleashed, it thrust its spear at Feng Xiu’s forehead, and the Bone Dragon beneath it clawed at Feng Xiu.

The Little Flood Dragon on the sea surface also surged forth, tail-slapping with a “Slap Lu Wu.”

The family of four attacked simultaneously, their offensive incredibly ferocious, yet even such an attack couldn’t breach Feng Xiu’s defense.

“Do you feel it now? This is the absolute gap between us.

If that Summoned Beast inside you won’t take action, even if I just stand here, you won’t break through my Defense.

And I’ve pretty much figured out the limitations of the Summoned Beast in your body.”

“As long as we are in public, unless we discuss restricted topics or you are in danger, she would never lay a hand on me.”

At this moment, Lu Wu’s so-called preparations, his plans to besiege Feng Xiu, seemed to become a joke.

Lu Wu, with a flushed face and red eyes, continued to attack Feng Xiu with his Summoned Beasts in a frenzy.

But it was all futile, no matter how he attacked, he couldn’t breach Feng Xiu’s defense.

As he watched Lu Wu’s futile effort from the sidelines, Feng Xiu shook his head and said, “What an embarrassing sight, witnessing you emerge from Dragon Island and seeing all your unforeseen actions, I thought… you might give me more surprises.

But it turns out to be such a farce in the end.”

“Farce?”

Lu Wu, caught up in his relentless assault, didn’t stop his actions, speaking in a low voice as he attacked, “Is that how you are defining my actions this time?”

“Isn’t it?”

“It does seem like a farce now.”

“Now? Are you suggesting you have another trick up your sleeve?”

Feng Xiu became slightly interested, but at that moment, Lu Wu suddenly changed the subject.

“Frankly, initially, I had no interest in dealing with the mess between you and my father.

After all, he didn’t prepare me to handle it, and I didn’t have the power to do so, which is why the first time I met you, I chose to leave it to him to handle.

I thought he would be capable of dealing with it, but to my disappointment, he not only failed to resolve it but also caused the death of a friend of mine.”

Feng Xiu’s brow furrowed, “Why are you suddenly telling me all this? Sharing your life’s trials and tribulations? I’m not interested!”

Lu Wu didn’t care whether he was interested or not, continuing, “I’m quite a cold-blooded person, actually, with not many friends—Dudu, Old Lin, and Old Bone.

Old Lin’s death had various reasons, which I had to temporarily overlook.

I didn’t think I was fit to address it yet because I lacked the power. So, I put it aside, I endured it, assuring myself it was okay. Everyone’s been at disadvantage at some point.

Biding time now, to gain the upper hand later.

But this endurance came with a condition—that my friends would not get harmed, and unfortunately, you killed Old Bone!”

As he said this, Lu Wu’s head lifted, and his eyes were filled with an undeniable intent to kill.

That killing intent made even Feng Xiu tremble.

An ominous feeling arose within him, and at that moment Lu Wu continued, “The moment you killed Old Bone, I had no intention of holding back any longer.

If forbearance meant sacrificing the lives of friends, then I would stand my ground without yielding an inch.

I wouldn’t just stand my ground; I’d take revenge, on anyone who caused my friend’s death, whether it was those who killed Old Lin or Old Bone, I’d ensure they’d pay a heavy price.

Though I am currently unsure of who caused Old Lin’s death, you are my starting point, as I claim vengeance for Old Bone!”

Each word boiled with killing intent, chilling to the core, but the Feng Xiu that Lu Wu faced was a madman. The more intense Lu Wu’s words, the brighter Feng Xiu’s smile grew.

Seeing Lu Wu expending all his efforts in vain before him, Feng Xiu taunted him with a full grin, “You think you can kill me like this?”

At that moment, Lu Wu’s face blossomed with a smile, “Killing just you? How would that suffice? There are 37 members from ‘Zero’ who entered Jiangnan this time, aren’t there?

Aside from you, an Envoy, there are 5 Angel Envoys.

They will die first, then you!”

At these words, Feng Xiu’s expression changed drastically.

Just as he was about to speak, a surge of energy came from the direction of Fucheng.

“Die!”

A voice tinged with the breath of ages rang out faintly, and then, Feng Xiu felt a power surpassing that of King-level erupt from within Fucheng. Beneath that power, agonized wails were heard.

At that moment, Zhou An’s entire body shuddered.

As a being at the King-level Peak, he acutely sensed that, at that very moment, no less than three King-levels within Fucheng had been slain.

Lu Wu smiled at this moment.

It was a smile that tore off the pretense, revealing a ferocious delight.

In his heart, the moment Old Bone died, he had already been strategizing against Feng Xiu.

Whether it was allowing people from the Demon Suppression Bureau to enter or intentionally leaking information, the real intention was just one—to create an illusion that Lu Wu would still act like a cowardly turtle.

“It’s simple to hunt a prey that thinks itself the hunter—just retract your sharp edges and tremble on the ground.

Foolish creatures would think the prey remains prey, but the so-called prey has already become the hunter.

Well, your subordinates should be cooling off by now… it’s your turn next!”

Almost simultaneously with Lu Wu’s words, in the direction of Fucheng, Tie Xiong, leading Jiang Yuexing, Zhang Yunyi, and Zhang Yuechu, began their assault…

# Chapter 337 - 337 334 Extreme Burst

﻿Chapter 337: 334 Extreme Burst Chapter 337: 334 Extreme Burst Jiangnan, atop the Fucheng Sea.

With the arrival of Tie Xiong and others, the current situation had become clear.

Self-proclaimed flag-bearer, Feng Xiu, now found himself the prey of an encirclement.

However, facing the imminent siege, Feng Xiu did not seem overly panicked.

The expression on his face quickly returned to calmness.

There was even a hint of admiration.

“Very good, well done, quite beyond my expectations.

You’ve taught me a lesson.

Such a profound lesson, it seems I must pay some tuition!”

As Feng Xiu emphatically stressed the word “tuition,” he, who had only been on the defensive, finally made his first move.

But it wasn’t against Lu Wu; instead, it was aimed at the Little Flood Dragon of Lu Wu’s house.

As one of the Five Ambassadors, Feng Xiu’s combat power was fearsome.

With a single hand stretched out, even Old Bone was easily subdued, and though the Little Flood Dragon’s power had significantly improved, it was still far from Old Bone’s, let alone comparable to Feng Xiu.

With a mere extension of his hand, the Little Flood Dragon had no room to struggle and was directly grasped in his grip.

“I don’t have any money on me, so let this little creature’s life substitute for the tuition!”

As he spoke, Feng Xiu’s hand, clutching the Little Flood Dragon, was about to squeeze when a strong sense of crisis surged up to his heart, causing Feng Xiu to subconsciously stop his squeezing hand.

Lu Wu squinted his eyes and said, “Squeeze it, why have you stopped squeezing?”

At this moment, he had activated “Damage Sharing.”

If Feng Xiu squeezed the Little Flood Dragon, it would be the same as attacking Lu Wu.

To prevent Lu Wu from causing trouble with Moon Shadow, Lu Haikong had placed restrictions on Moon Shadow. In the presence of others, Moon Shadow could not take action unless Lu Wu was in grave danger.

If Feng Xiu squeezed, Lu Wu would be in peril, allowing Moon Shadow to act immediately.

Feng Xiu evidently realized this critical point at the last minute and pulled back just in time.

“It seems you really have prepared well for today. A slight misstep and I would have fallen into your trap; in this case, I’m left with no choice but to owe the tuition for now.”

Saying this, Feng Xiu waved his hand to throw the Little Flood Dragon aside and tried to leave, but Lu Wu recklessly charged forward.

He clung stubbornly to Feng Xiu, with an attitude of ‘if you dare, strike me down’.

Little Skeleton, along with the Little Flood Dragon who had just been thrown aside, also came rushing over.

Their family had one goal: to hold on to this guy and not let him escape no matter what.

To stop Feng Xiu, Lu Wu directly activated “Beast Soul Burst.”

A terrifying aura surged from within him, making Lu Wu appear incredibly furious.

The aura of fury, the horror of the killing intent, Lu Wu’s burst in that moment sent shivers down one’s spine.

While speaking, he and the Little Flood Dragon simultaneously unleashed the “Power of the Ocean.”

The overwhelming gravity of two deep-sea forces combined fell upon Feng Xiu, greatly slowing him down.

“I told you, you must die today!”

Looking at Lu Wu, whose killing intent was boiling over, Feng Xiu, originally prepared to retreat, quickly assessed the situation and prepared to fight to the end after leapfrogging conclusions.

“Such a fine resolve, if that’s the case, then let it be a life-or-death battle between us!”

As he spoke, Feng Xiu exploded with all his might.

A mysterious and terrifying power, with an intent that drove one to madness, pushed forward and in an instant, the double “Power of the Ocean” from Lu Wu and the Little Flood Dragon was shattered.

At the same time, Feng Xiu reached out to strike at Lu Wu.

A death threat, like none Lu Wu had ever experienced before, fell upon him.

It was a feeling of powerlessness and horror, like plummeting into the Abyss.

This terror rendered Lu Wu’s mind a blank, as if he had been frightened silly.

His body could only instinctively thrust out that void sword strike.

And as Lu Wu’s brain went blank, the sword he thrust unleashed a powerful force. In the midst of it, there seemed to be the sound of something pierced by that one sword.

Lu Wu soon realized that the threat of death had vanished.

Clearly, Moon Shadow had made her move.

When Moon Shadow struck, she was extraordinary, not only piercing through Feng Xiu’s offense with a single sword thrust but also slashing out an astonishing sword light that forced him to defend with all his might.

As Feng Xiu blocked that sword strike, a fierce shout erupted.

“You demon spawn of ‘Zero’, die for your granddad!”

Then, from out of nowhere, that unreliable bodyguard from Lu Wu’s house burst forth, smashing a fist directly toward Feng Xiu’s forehead.

Just as the punch was about to explode Feng Xiu’s head, a flash of light from the skull emblem on his chest summoned a spectral skeleton that shielded him, withstanding the old man’s punch with great difficulty.

“Boom!”

The old man’s fist collided with the spectral skeleton, unleashing terrifying fluctuations that pushed away everything nearby, including Lu Wu and even the boat.

Within hundreds of meters around the old man and Feng Xiu, no one else could stand, not even King-level powerhouses like Zhou An and Jiang Yuexing.

The beings above King-level weren’t something these King-levelstrong could meddle with.

And yet, at this time, there was someone who wasn’t even at King-level who wanted to join in the fray.

That person was, of course, Lu Wu.

After Moon Shadow made her sword strike, she remained still.

Lu Wu urged her to act, but she refused.

Unless Lu Wu was in danger, she absolutely could not intervene, a restriction placed on her by Lu Haikong, which was in turn a restriction someone had placed on him.

So, if Lu Wu wanted Moon Shadow to join the fight, he had to get involved himself.

Thus, to everyone’s amazement, this Master Level guy, wielding a ragged longsword, plunged headfirst into the battlefield that even King-level powerful avoided.

“I told you, you must die today!”

With a roar, Lu Wu’s power fully erupted, thrusting out another sword strike.

The sword technique Lu Wu thrust out this time was no longer the Slaughter Sword Technique, but a technique a level higher – the Slaughter Sword.

Lu Wu realized only after mastering the Slaughter Sword Technique that Old Bone’s real reason for not teaching him the Slaughter Sword was that he had, in fact, already taught him.

After mastering the Slaughter Sword Technique, Lu Wu naturally learned the Slaughter Sword Skill.

At that moment, in a state of Fury, he directly employed the killer move of the Slaughter Sword, “One Sword Slaughter Ten Thousand.”

With the sword thrust, a terrible intent to kill erupted.

It was a strike laced with Thunder Attribute, yet when thrust, it exuded a bloody and chilling light.

From a distance, Maeshima Kaori, who was watching, couldn’t help but squint her eyes.

She was obviously impressed by that sword strike.

However, such a sword strike couldn’t even break through Feng Xiu’s defenses. He didn’t bother with him, and Lu Wu’s sword strike against the skeletal phantom was directly shattered, breaking the longsword in Lu Wu’s hand as well.

The chasm between their Power was despairingly wide—a two-grade difference.

“You’ve caused enough trouble; it’s about time you took a rest.”

As Feng Xiu spoke, he pointed a finger without any attack, just a simple binding Skill.

With a flick of his finger, a black rope bound Lu Wu tightly.

Lu Wu, now bound, was safe and could no longer meddle in the fight, while the battle between Feng Xiu and Old Tie was evenly matched.

Without Lu Wu’s interference, it was unlikely that Feng Xiu would die today.

Yet just as someone made this judgment, Lu Wu started to do something desperate.

An extremely terrifying aura burst from within him.

It pushed his Power from Lord 3 Star straight to King-level.

And it didn’t stop there; the power kept soaring, hitting King Level 1 Star.

Clearly, Lu Wu was in a state where the Beast Soul Burst was pushed to its limit.

This shocked everyone watching.

“Has this kid gone mad?”

# Chapter 338 - 338 335 You all must die

﻿Chapter 338: 335 You all must die! Chapter 338: 335 You all must die! [Beast Soul Burst]Itself is a move that kills a thousand enemies at the expense of inflicting similar damage upon oneself.

However, the so-called extreme burst was even more deadly for oneself.

Under normal circumstances, unless certain death was inevitable, nobody would use it.

But Lu Wu now was indeed using it, which revealed how strong his resolve was to kill Feng Xiu.

“It seems that today this one of the Five Ambassadors, if not dead, will definitely be skinned!”

Some people secretly observing made such a judgment.

However, nobody really pitied Feng Xiu or the like.

After all, this guy was ultimately a devil from the Zero Organization, no one would pity him.

Nor would anyone care about the life or death of Feng Xiu; what they cared about was Lu Wu.

There were actually two types of people secretly observing.

One hated Lu Haikong, the other both hated Lu Haikong and Lu Wu; well, there could be those siding with Lu Wu and his father, but they were very few.

Lu Haikong initially didn’t assist Lu Wu much on the path of becoming a Summoner.

For he knew himself well.

Though he was prominent in his active days, he also attracted a significant amount of trouble and made countless enemies.

Who knows how many people day and night wished for his end.

Yes, they were intent on killing him!

Thus, at first Lu Haikong entirely adopted a laissez-faire attitude on the path of Lu Wu becoming a Summoner.

If Lu Wu succeeded, good; if not, that was it.

After all, being the son of Lu Haikong, it might not be a good thing to stand out too much.

A slight carelessness might easily cause a situation where the whole world was against them, just like the present.

Those hidden in the shadows, watching this scene, had eyes filled with chilling coldness.

Also hidden in the shadows, Du Dao Hu Zi laughed.

“After today, both Lu Wu and Lu Haikong will be in trouble.

No one knows how many people dread Lu Haikong and what compromises he had to make to reach the current situation; this battle has almost completely ruined it.”

“Previously, just Lu Haikong alone made those guys anxious, now there is an additional Lu Wu.

Those guys will probably be unable to sit still!”

Almost immediately after Du Dao Hu Zi made this conjecture,  
 In a courtyard in Beijing, several old men were gathered watching television.

What was being shown on television was the battle currently erupting on the seas of Fucheng.

“One Tie Xiong, one Jiangnan Jiang Yuexing, one Jiangbei Zhang Yunyi.

If not for today’s battle, who would have believed it?”

The old man sitting in the center softly sighed, the one to his left spoke, “Additionally, as far as I know, when Lu Wu came to Beijing to participate in the university competition,  
 Yuan Qingqing from the Cultivation Center, Liu Qingyuan from Jingcheng University both helped him, and those two girls’ backgrounds—one from Yuan Hua and the other from the Dragon Clan—are not simple.

Also, there is Liu Cheng, who is a student of Lu Haikong.

That’s a force capable of disturbing the entire Alliance!”

This statement turned the faces of the old men present gray, and the one on the right coldly said, “What did I say before?

Lu Haikong is not as docile as that one said; his son is just a vanguard he pushed to the forefront.

In such a short time, this son has already gathered such energy.”

This force had already become comparable to any of them, even more terrifying than some of their powers.

The one on the left said coldly, “That’s only the visible forces; how terrifying the invisible forces are, who can know?

Additionally, according to the intelligence we mastered, Zero Organization contacted Lu Wu probably for ‘Gate’.

Lu Wu’s childhood friend became a key player in Gate after Kong Yi.

And on this matter, Jiang Yuexing and Zhang Yunyi both had some interactions…”

These words caused the five present even more anxiety.

“It won’t do, we can’t keep letting this go. If we keep letting this go, the force led by Lu Haikong might just overturn the entire Alliance.”

“For the stability of the Alliance, for its future, we must contain this force from further growth!”

The five quickly reached a consensus.

However, speaking of containment, due to various reasons, they presently had no way to act overtly.

While they agonized over how to contain the rise of Lu Haikong’s force, someone ominously said, “Why should we act ourselves? Isn’t there a good knife available?”

This statement rang out sharply, enlivening the five who then raised their heads towards the television showing that Feng Xiu.

They subsequently shook their heads.

“Evil is hard to eliminate!”

Simultaneously, order after order was issued in rapid succession.

In Fucheng, countless people secretly lurking received orders at the same time, instructing them to intervene at the right moment to aid Lu Wu and not let Feng Xiu, this evil being, escape.

Even Du Dao Hu Zi received the same message.

After receiving this news, their expressions underwent subtle changes.

“It seems, if nothing goes wrong, Feng Xiu won’t die today!”

Those changes, those orders, those surging undercurrents, Lu Wu was completely unaware of them.

At this moment, he was erupting to his utmost.

Beneath that ultimate eruption, the energy trapped on his body began to shatter.

This was after all the restraint drawn out from Feng Xiu’s busy schedule, and not aimed to provoke Moon Shadow. The restraining force was only about King Level 1 Star, so it was normal for Lu Wu to shatter it.

As the restraint shattered, Feng Xiu reacted immediately, turned around, raised his hand to further restrain Lu Wu, but at this moment Lu Wu had discarded his sword for a stick.

“Go to hell!”

Amidst the roar, his will of extreme madness erupted.

A stick move carrying intense chaos gathered powerfully on Lu Wu’s stick.

“Sky Dominating Stick!”

At this moment, Lu Wu bet all his strength, all his consciousness on this single stick.

Relying on an ultimate burst that pushed his power to King 1 Star, his terrifying power fully erupted at this moment and the threat of death once again loomed over Lu Wu.

Lu Wu, reckless and relentless, delivered a most terrifying strike with his stick at this moment.

This stroke pushed the “Mad Demon Stick Technique” to the Grandmaster Level.

The power of the strike was far beyond anyone’s imagination, yet, still, Lu Wu couldn’t shatter Feng Xiu’s restraint.

This was the gap under absolute power.

This terrifying gap, even with monstrous talent and desperate efforts, was too much to bridge.

But no matter, the risk Lu Wu faced in that moment allowed Moon Shadow to make her move.

And it wasn’t just any move.

It was clear she had been holding it back for a very long time, and when she finally acted, she unleashed her fury and killing intent towards Feng Xiu.

The moment her longsword struck, the entire sea went silent.

Faced with this sword, Feng Xiu’s face drastically changed, energy madly surged within him, and the skeleton brooch on his chest lit up with unbearably bright light, using all his skills just barely managed to fend off the strike.

But resisting this strike didn’t mean the end.

In this moment, Moon Shadow had already charged out, brandishing the blue longsword towards Feng Xiu.

The hate-driven Moon Shadow was terrifying.

Feng Xiu, who had just fought vibrantly against Tie Xiong, now suffered two wounds in less than three rounds under Moon Shadow.

With Tie Xiong also reacting and joining the fight,  
 It wasn’t long before Feng Xiu was driven into a corner.

Seeing the opportunity, Tie Xiong seized it, grabbed Feng Xiu tightly with both hands, and as Moon Shadow swung her sword, it looked as though she was about to decapitate Feng Xiu.

Many hidden figures were about to take action at that time.

However, at that moment, a shocking change occurred.

On the boat, Zhou An, who had been irrelevant up to this point, suddenly burst forth, raising his hand and striking violently towards Lu Wu.

“Die!”

This sudden turn of events shocked everyone.

Those at Lu Wu’s side reacted the fastest.

Jiang Yuxing, Zhang Yunyi, and Zhang Yuechu were the first to strike towards Zhou An, and Little Flood Dragon immediately rushed towards Lu Wu, but it was already too late.

Zhou An’s strike was too fast for anyone to react.

Although Jiang Yuxing and the others managed to injure Zhou An, they couldn’t stop his attack.

Little Flood Dragon could only drag the critically wounded, dying Lu Wu to the bottom of the sea, while the strike carrying the terrifying power of King-level Three Stars had already struck Lu Wu.

With a ‘Puff’, a blossom of blood erupted on the sea surface.

The next moment, a tragic dragon cry echoed, and a badly wounded Jiao Long holding a tattered piece of clothing emerged from the sea surface.

Just as it was about to pounce at Zhou An, it fell onto the water with a mournful cry.

In that moment, not just the Little Flood Dragon, the Little Bone Dragon also wailed, obviously suffering from the backlash of their master’s death.

Seeing this scene, everyone present was dumbfounded.

Including the five old men far away in Jingcheng.

Nobody had expected Zhou An to suddenly make a move at that time, nor did anybody think that Lu Wu would die under that strike.

This was a sight nobody wanted to see.

It wasn’t that they didn’t hope for Lu Wu’s death, but he couldn’t die like this, as no one could disassociate themselves from it.

And just as they were dumbfounded, a bone-chilling cold spread, freezing the sea within tens of miles.

Those hidden within this range were forced out by the biting cold.

But before they could react, an even colder voice rang out.

“You all must die!”

# Chapter 339 - 339 336 Terror Moon Shadow

﻿Chapter 339: 336 Terror Moon Shadow Chapter 339: 336 Terror Moon Shadow “You must all die!”

With that bone-chilling voice echoing, Moon Shadow unleashed a despairingly powerful aura without restraint.

At that moment, the space around Moon Shadow twisted.

The terrifying aura turned even Tie Xiong and Feng Xiu pale.

Far away in Beijing, those five elders turned utterly pale.

Feng Xiu, pale-faced, muttered, “Is this your true power?”

Moon Shadow ignored him completely, raising her hand and slashing Feng Xiu in half with a single sword strike, freezing him into two halves of an ice sculpture.

One of the Five Ambassadors of the Zero Organization, a fearsome being above King-level, was thus easily slain, and this was just the beginning.

After Feng Xiu’s death, the next to enter the underworld was Zhou An.

With a distant stab, Zhou An and the boat he was on turned directly into ice sculptures, chilling everyone on board.

These two sword strikes drove people around into a cold sweat.

At this moment.

Some begged for mercy.

Some made excuses.

Some turned and ran.

But Moon Shadow, whose killing intent had already exploded, didn’t care at all, her figure flashed behind the one who ran the furthest and slashed him with her sword, slaying another King-level being.

Her figure flashed, she raised her hand and struck with another sword, killing yet another King-level strength.

Regardless of their status or what they pleaded, Moon Shadow showed no mercy and killed them all.

Soon, of the nine forced out, only Du Dao Hu Zi and her disciple, Maeshima Kaori, remained.

Moon Shadow recognized Du Dao Hu Zi but it didn’t stop her from striking.

“Die!”

She raised her hand and thrust another sword.

This sword was even more terrifying than the previous ones.

As the longsword thrust out, fine ice crystals formed in the surrounding space, trapping Du Dao Hu Zi and her disciple with no escape even before the sword struck.

Du Dao Hu Zi tried to draw her sword in resistance, but at that moment, she realized she couldn’t even make the motion to draw.

As this woman was about to be slain by Moon Shadow, a heart-wrenchingly pitiful cry rang out.

“Don’t!”

It was the heartrending voice of the late-arriving Xing Zhanlong.

Moon Shadow didn’t care at all, about to continue killing Du Dao Hu Zi, when Xing Zhanlong roared, “If you stop, Lu Haikong’s debt to me is canceled!”

Xing Zhanlong’s roar ultimately saved Du Dao Hu Zi’s life.

A flicker of light flashed in Moon Shadow’s cold eyes, and the longsword in her hand stopped at the moment it was about to strike Du Dao Hu Zi.

This allowed Xing Zhanlong and the life-spared Du Dao Hu Zi to breathe a sigh of relief.

However, just when they thought the matter was over, Moon Shadow unexpectedly slapped Du Dao Hu Zi without any sign.

With one slap, Du Dao Hu Zi was enveloped in an icy blue aura.

“Lady Du Dao!!!”

Seeing this, Xing Zhanlong went completely mad, his King-level Peak strength erupting as he rushed towards Moon Shadow, only to get slapped down by Moon Shadow’s swift hand.

After that slap sent Xing Zhanlong sprawling, Moon Shadow tossed Du Dao Hu Zi, who was limp like a dead dog, onto him.

It was then that Xing Zhanlong realized, Moon Shadow hadn’t killed Du Dao Hu Zi, but hadn’t made it easy for her either.

At that moment, Du Dao Hu Zi was covered in a chilling aura, practically crippled, and what’s more dangerous,  
 the longsword in her hand began to backfire as she got hurt.

In such a state, whether she could survive was really hard to say.

Realizing this, Xing Zhanlong picked up Du Dao Hu Zi and turned to leave, needing to treat her urgently.

Moon Shadow did not stop him.

After watching Xing Zhanlong and Du Dao Hu Zi leave, Du Dao Hu Zi’s gaze turned towards the sky.

“She’s found it!”

The few in Beijing changed expressions.

Suddenly, Moon Shadow raised her hand and slashed with her sword, a blue ice eye fell, and the TV screens before those in Beijing plunged into darkness.

The few in Beijing fell into silence.

But in their silence, they weren’t inactive.

Very quickly, each began to act, trying their own means of monitoring the situation in Fucheng.

They were all desperate to know if Lu Wu was really dead?

At this moment, they fervently hoped Lu Wu was alive.

If their verification concludes that Lu Wu is alive, then trouble will be big for Lu Haikong and his son.

But if Lu Wu is really dead, then the trouble will be even greater for everyone present.

If Lu Wu is not dead, some people intend to kill him, and if Lu Wu is truly dead, then countless people will have to join him in death.

The slaughter Moon Shadow enacted was just the beginning; once Lu Haikong returned, there would definitely be more deaths, and some of the people present might die.

The Elder Council was helpless.

Even to appease Lu Haikong’s fury and the potential fury of that one, among the five present, someone would definitely have to be thrown under the bus to face the Thunder.

Therefore, at this moment, the five also stopped concealing their methods, each revealing all their surveillance means.

They each tried and each failed.

It almost caused their mental states to explode.

“I’ve got it, I got it, I got it!”

In an old man’s ecstatic discovery, he found a product that could be used.

This was a recent invention by an organization, a pseudo-satellite capable of monitoring energy fluctuations in a certain direction from high altitude.

This satellite had just drifted near Fucheng.

After finding it, the old man immediately had the pseudo-satellite target the battlefield in Fucheng and took a reconnaissance photo.

At the same time the satellite took that photo, Moon Shadow was startled again and with a raise of her hand, the satellite was destroyed.

However, thankfully, the satellite completed its final shot.

The photo was being transmitted.

At this moment, a few elders still believed there was a chance it would show proof that Lu Wu wasn’t dead.

Despite everything, they couldn’t see anything unusual except Zhou An’s sudden idiocy, but they always felt that Lu Wu wouldn’t die so easily.

They always felt this was all Lu Wu’s trap.

As long as they had proof in their hands that Lu Wu wasn’t dead, all five of them would be safe.

Very soon, this photo was transmitted, and the five elders anxiously gathered to view it, their hopes dashed in despair upon seeing it.

In the clear energy photo,  
 beside Moon Shadow was just a severely wounded, dying Flood Dragon, Lu Wu’s energy was utterly absent.

That meant that, unless something unexpected occurred, Lu Wu was truly dead.

At this moment, the gazes the five elders exchanged became strange.

Their eyes were filled with tension, vigilance, and scheming!

…

Meanwhile, in Fucheng,  
 after Moon Shadow had killed everyone, she turned back to Little Flood Dragon.

Although her senses confirmed that Lu Wu was dead, she couldn’t give up and repeatedly searched carefully.

But no matter how she searched, it was futile; Lu Wu was still dead.

This made Moon Shadow cast her icy gaze onto Jiang Yuexing and the other two, her grip on her longsword tightened.

At that moment, the trio felt a chill run down their spines.

But the three of them, including Tie Xiong nearby, dared not utter any unnecessary words.

Everyone could feel the current mood of Moon Shadow.

It was a mix of anger and self-blame, and speaking out at this moment could likely result in being cut down by her sword.

Fortunately, Moon Shadow finally managed her emotions.

She took a while to stabilize before pointing at the corpses on the ground and told Jiang Yuexing, “I’m going to find Lu Haikong and bring him back. You handle things here. I want to know the identities of these people and who they are affiliated with as soon as I return.”

The death of Lu Wu left Moon Shadow quite resentful towards Lu Haikong, not even calling him master anymore and directly addressing him as Lu Haikong.

After all, Moon Shadow had watched Lu Wu grow up; her affection for him was almost as deep as for Lu Haikong.

As for Jiang Yuexing, her time spent with Lu Wu wasn’t as long as Moon Shadow’s, but she had treated him like a son for quite a while, and with her personality, Lu Wu’s death was a great shock to her.

So much so that she was now dazed, not even listening to what Moon Shadow was saying.

Moon Shadow frowned, “Did you hear me?”

“I… I heard you!”

Upon receiving Jiang Yuexing’s response, Moon Shadow then turned to Tie Xiong, “I’ll be away for a while, Dudu will be in your care. If she gets hurt, I’ll twist your head off when I return, understand?”

“Leave it to me!”

Tie Xiong responded by thumping his chest.

Moon Shadow then directed her gaze at Zhang Yunyi.

Seeing Zhang Yunyi, her hand on the longsword shook again, barely holding back from slashing the woman.

Her instincts told her this woman was connected to Lu Wu’s death, but upon glancing at Zhang Yuechu, Moon Shadow eventually did not strike.

With great effort, Moon Shadow shifted her gaze away from Zhang Yunyi to see Little Flood Dragon and Little Skeleton lying on the ground; then she soared into the air, fueled by endless rage, speeding towards the direction where Lu Haikong was.

Were Moon Shadow passed, the temperature plummeted, transforming an early summer congregation into a heavy snowfall over nearly half of District 1.

Back in Fucheng, watching Moon Shadow depart, Zhang Yunyi, who had been exceptionally well-behaved from the beginning without any notable actions, slightly curved the corners of her mouth.

At the same time, the silently lying Little Flood Dragon on the ice also flickered with helplessness in his pupils.

He hadn’t expected that, having saved his Big Move for so long, the first appearance he made would be used like this.

At this moment, Little Skeleton across from him was still blinking Pupil Fire at him.

(Is Little Skeleton doing a good job?)

# Chapter 340 - 340 337 Stay or Leave

﻿Chapter 340: 337 Stay or Leave Chapter 340: 337 Stay or Leave Hmm, it’s quite clear, Lu Wu had feigned death.

The routine of feigning death, when spoken of, is actually quite simple.

In the moment Zhou An bombarded him, he followed Little Flood Dragon into the sea.

Under the cover of Zhou An’s bombardment, Little Flood Dragon entered Lu Wu’s body, while Lu Wu activated the Dragon Transformation skill.

With this skill, Lu Wu easily disguised himself as Little Flood Dragon, creating the illusion that he was dead.

Of course, Lu Wu’s feigning of death was not something he planned alone.

At first, he hadn’t even thought in that direction.

Initially, Lu Wu was simply unable to contain his anger due to Old Bone’s death, wanting to lash out and kill Feng Xiu in a full confrontation.

Thinking of faking his own death? Lu Wu really hadn’t considered it at first.

The one who led him to consider this option, to carry out this plan, was Zhang Yunyi.

Let’s rewind time to three days ago.

That was when Zhou An, the deputy director of the Demon Suppression Bureau, hmm, the same unlucky guy who just died, had just arrived in Jiangnan.

Right after his arrival, Zhang Yunyi also came.

The first thing this woman did upon arriving in Jiangnan was to seek out Jiang Yuexing.

She told Jiang Yuexing that she was sent by Lu Haikong to help.

The name Lu Haikong was particularly effective; Jiang Yuexing was easily manipulated by Zhang Yunyi.

Then, through Jiang Yuexing, Zhang Yunyi met Lu Wu.

It was the first time Lu Wu had seen this woman.

At first glance at Zhang Yunyi, Lu Wu knew she was not a simple woman.

Lu Wu’s judgment was not based on Zhang Yunyi’s temperament or appearance, but on her attributes.

Lu Wu had thought that, as the Governor of Jiangbei, her strength should be similar to Jiang Yuexing’s, but when he saw her attributes filled with question marks, it made him realize her strength was beyond his imagination.

And it was not just Zhang Yunyi’s strength that exceeded Lu Wu’s expectations, but also her schemes.

This woman was actually able to discuss a feigned death plan with Lu Wu right in front of Moon Shadow, a plan so secretive that even Moon Shadow should be kept in the dark.

Not only did she manage to deceive Moon Shadow right in front of her eyes, but she also persuaded Lu Wu.

After hesitating for a day, Lu Wu ultimately agreed to cooperate with Zhang Yunyi.

It was precisely because Zhang Yunyi was acting behind the scenes that Zhou An attacked Lu Wu without any warning.

It was why Moon Shadow couldn’t detect that Lu Wu was still alive.

It was why some existences unknown to Lu Wu could be fooled.

It was how Lu Wu managed to so smoothly fake his own death.

Her skills and capabilities were clear for all to see.

And the reason why Lu Wu was willing to cooperate with someone to fake his own death was partly due to his current situation, but also because of a phrase that moved him, spoken by Zhang Yunyi.

She said, “As long as you’re alive, you’ll forever be in the spotlight, with countless people staring dead at you, constantly wishing for your death, and the troubles you face today will keep repeating. People will die for you, preventing your smooth progress.

But if you’re dead, not only will today’s troubles stop abruptly, but you’ll also have countless people sent to their graves for your sake!”

To back oneself into a corner before emerging victorious was the best solution for Lu Wu’s current circumstances.

However, this solution had one drawback.

From today onwards.

Until Lu Wu had enough power in his grasp, he would have to live in the shadows.

Besides him and Zhang Yunyi, there could not and would not be a third person who knew he was alive.

Lu Wu himself might also need to leave for a while; he had to completely disappear, even temporarily severing his contracts with Little Skeleton and Little Flood Dragon to completely erase his existence.

From a certain perspective.

The person “Lu Wu” could be said to have truly died; at least for the near future, Lu Wu could not appear under that identity.

Of course, Lu Wu was well aware of this.

Not long after Moon Shadow left, he found an opportunity under Zhang Yunyi’s cover, released Little Flood Dragon, took a look around by himself, and rested quietly on a small island more than 50 kilometers from the battlefield while waiting for his partner to arrive.

To be honest, Lu Wu was feeling somewhat anxious right now.

After all, aside from Little Skeleton and Little Flood Dragon, the only one who knows he’s alive is Zhang Yunyi.

With her strength clear for all to see, if she ever turned cold-hearted, it seemed that Lu Wu could only let her have her way.

Of course, that’s only how it seemed.

Lu Wu was never the type to trust his life entirely to someone else’s hands.

Even with Dudu, he was afraid the girl’s carelessness might accidentally kill him, let alone Zhang Yunyi.

So, Lu Wu had prepared a backup plan early on as a threat.

Just in case Zhang Yunyi really craved his body, Lu Wu would have a way to fight back.

Of course, Lu Wu hoped he wouldn’t need to use his backup plan, or his situation would be quite dire.

With a nervous heart, Lu Wu anxiously waited for a day, and finally, Zhang Yunyi came.

“Sorry, because you died, there were many things to handle, and to avoid exposing anything, I could only make you wait a bit longer.”

Zhang Yunyi started with an explanation.

At the same time, she casually handed Lu Wu a bag.

“This is for you.”

Lu Wu opened it to find a bag of fruits.

Name: Replenishing Essence Fruit  
 Quality: Legendary  
 Effect: Can replenish essence to the greatest extent, extremely effective for healing and recovery, and, of course, it would be even better if made into medicine.

There were probably about ten fruits in the bag, quite a valuable gift.

“Thanks!”

Lu Wu didn’t stand on ceremony this time, as his current condition was truly pitiable, and these ten fruits might just save his life.

He called out Han and shared the fruits, the man and bird devouring them clean.

Seeing this, Zhang Yunyi nearby chuckled lightly, “Aren’t you afraid I’ve poisoned them?”

Lu Wu, having eaten five Legendary Quality fruits, didn’t show much change, but Han, who was just called out and nearly done for, instantly became full of energy and his power soared significantly, seemingly on the verge of reaching Lord 3 Star.

Lu Wu’s condition also improved greatly, and his voice grew stronger.

“Not afraid.”

Now feeling much better, Lu Wu’s tone was quite sweet, “The moment I see Aunt Zhang, I feel a closeness, as if she were my own mother. I absolutely trust you, and when you asked me to deceive Moon Shadow, I didn’t hesitate at all!”

“Really? I’ve heard more than once that you were going to settle accounts with me because of Zhao Kai Ming’s incident.”

“How could that be? Who’s spreading such rumors?

Uncle Zhao’s issue was done by Jin Lihai, what does it have to do with Aunt Zhang?

Besides, when I was captured by Yan Ruxue, it was Ms. Yue Chu who saved me. My heart for Aunt Zhang is as clear as the sun and the moon!”

Lu Wu fell short of swearing an oath to the sky.

Zhang Yunyi looked at Lu Wu and laughed lightly, “Alright, enough of that. I can’t spare much time, so we can’t waste it chatting.

Let’s talk about serious matters.”

“Okay!”

“The news of your death should have reached some interested parties by now, and after a day of fermentation, the news of your death is spreading, becoming an established fact.

This means our fake death plan was a success.

It’s time for the next step.”

Zhang Yunyi paused for a moment, and then said seriously, looking at Lu Wu, “Now, you need to make a choice, whether to stay in Zone 1 or to leave Zone 1.”

“What’s the difference?”

Zhang Yunyi explained, “Staying in Zone 1, your actions will be severely limited.

Your power has already reached the Lord Level, and to ascend further, you need Legendary Level resources. It’s difficult to acquire resources effectively through points, and you have to enter Secret Realms to do so.

But the Secret Realm resources in Zone 1 have mostly been exploited, and what’s left is controlled by the Alliance.

In other words, it’s hard for you to grow in Zone 1, and there’s even a risk of being exposed.

On the other hand, outside of Zone 1, the situation is different.

The Alliance’s influence isn’t strong beyond Zone 1, many Secret Realm resources are undeveloped, and fewer people recognize you, so you can be active and grow rapidly in a short time.

Of course, the dangers will relatively be higher.

So, whether to stay or leave, how do you choose?”

# Chapter 341 - 341 338 Gate

﻿Chapter 341: 338 Gate Chapter 341: 338 Gate Stay or leave, the choice wasn’t too difficult.

At the moment Lu Wu decided to fake his death, he was ready.

“Aunt Zhang can make the decision.”

“Then leave, where you go is up to you.”

While nodding, Zhang Yunyi handed Lu Wu a cell phone and a necklace.

“The phone contains a map of the current world, how to travel to different areas, and some resource points I know of.

Furthermore, it also contains the information I promised you.

This necklace is a random teleportation necklace, with only three activations left, so use it sparingly.

Also, from now on, we should try not to contact each other.”

After handing over the items, Zhang Yunyi didn’t stay long.

She left quickly.

After Zhang Yunyi left, Lu Wu focused his attention on the two items in his hand.

After confirming there were no issues with either item, Lu Wu first unlocked the phone.

At this time, Lu Wu didn’t look at the map, but instead reviewed the additional information Zhang Yunyi had provided.

The so-called information was actually about Old Lin, Lu Haikong’s past, and the Gate.

Initially, Lu Wu had not intended to delve into these matters.

But now that things had come this far, Lu Wu could no longer ignore them.

He ought to know how he ended up in a situation where he needed to fake death and escape?

The first piece of information given by Zhang Yunyi was about Lu Haikong’s past.

“Lu Haikong, male, 67 years old, from Jiangnan Quancheng.

At 18, he summoned his first Summoned Beast, Little Skeleton, becoming a Summoner…

…..”

What surprised Lu Wu was.

It turns out his old man also started off as an underachiever.

From 18 to 20 years old, he was unremarkable, with no intention of developing in the direction of a Summoner.

It wasn’t until a massive Summoned Beast disaster struck Quan City when he was 20 that Lu Haikong’s life trajectory was completely altered.

He lost his Summoned Beast and his partner in that disaster, but he seemed to have gained some sort of serendipity.

From then on, Lu Haikong’s fortunes soared.

A month later, Jiangning University headhunted him. At that time, Jiangning University was still a fourth-tier school. It was Lu Haikong who pioneered the ‘study tour’ model, defeating all Summoner Universities in District 1.

This triumph earned Lu Haikong the reputation of the first genius and lifted Jiangning University to the status of a first-tier university.

Zhang Yunyi also noted here that at this stage, Lu Haikong was a steadfast straight male.

After gaining power, Lu Haikong focused on investigating the Quan City beast disaster, and after much difficulty, he uncovered the truth behind the disaster.

He then tried to single-handedly destroy the Summoned Beast power behind the disaster, but at the time, he lacked a bit in power and nearly got killed. In the end, Xing Zhanlong had to call upon his father to save Lu Wuyi’s life.

Zhang Yunyi noted here again, ‘Lu Haikong was very moved at the time and slept with Xing Zhanlong’s sister a few years later.’  
 Lu Wu blushed at this.

His own father was no more than a beast.

Looking further, it was the Long Aotian plot. Lu Haikong went into seclusion for several years, and after his Divine Skill was fully developed, he emerged just as that Summoned Beast force was wreaking havoc, launching a beast tide to attack the coastal cities of District 1.

At the critical moment, the old man made a powerful appearance, single-handedly wiping out the entire beast tide.

This battle was the pinnacle of his career.

With that battle, he was hailed as a hero of the time.

But it was after this battle that he changed into a completely different person. The steadfast straight male was gone, replaced by a womanizer who flirted at the sight of any lady.

For three to five years, no one knows how many women he flirted with or how many times he was cut.

Just when everyone thought he would either remain a womanizer for life or get cut to death, this guy suddenly disappeared 23 years ago.

He never surfaced again, and it seemed as though someone was quietly erasing all traces of his existence.

This situation continued until Lu Wu appeared.

The information Zhang Yunyi provided to Lu Wu was quite objective.

Just like that, she described his life straightforwardly in a couple of thousand words.

She didn’t make any evaluation on Lu Haikong’s life nor did she make any unnecessary speculation.

On Lu Wu’s side, after reading the information on Lu Haikong, his eyebrows slightly furrowed.

“Why did the old man change from a steadfast straight male to womanizer?

Could it be that he didn’t lie to me before?

Did he use sleeping with 99 women as a price to resurrect my mother?”

Lu Wu found it hard to believe.

Could there really be a method to save people by womanizing in this world?

“No matter if the old man’s method is true or false, it’s clear that my mother was resurrected.

He definitely used some method to do it.

And judging from his recent behavior, he certainly paid a certain price to bring my mother back.

Right now, I really want to know, how did he resurrect my mom and what was the price he paid?

Furthermore, how did this guy offend so many people?

It feels like both the underworld and the legitimate paths want him dead!”

Lu Wu’s puzzlement lay in the information about Old Lin and the Gate left by Zhang Yunyi.

On the side of Old Lin, Zhang Yunyi roughly mentioned the intelligence she knew.

It was basically the same as what Lu Wu had gathered himself.

Old Lin had a secret about the Gate, which originally belonged to Kong Yi and the “Zero” organization behind him, and it seemed that an elder from the Elder Council had also gotten involved.

From the current situation, it seemed likely that Old Lin had not died but had, unsurprisingly, left District 1.

This was what Zhang Yunyi knew about Old Lin.

That wasn’t too shocking, as Lu Wu also basically knew what Zhang Yunyi had under her control; he wasn’t too startled. But the information about the Gate left by Zhang Yunyi really blew Lu Wu’s mind.

In Zhang Yunyi’s briefing.

The Gate was the true secret behind the great cataclysm, a power that could change the world!

The first record of the Gate was before the cataclysm when the complete and abrupt appearance of the Gate was on top of the first peak.

The strong energy drew the attention of all parties.

Research groups from various organizations carried out comprehensive investigations of the Gate, but for years, nothing came of it.

Just as the nations were about to forget about this thing, the Gate was accidentally activated by a researcher.

The activated Gate granted the researcher three wishes.

Thinking it was a joke at the time, the researcher casually made three wishes to the Gate.

The first wish was for the world to be without lethal firearms so that peace could prevail.

The second wish was for the world to have more fantasy, with incredible angels, monsters, and powers, like in myths.

The third wish was for more small worlds and more land area to alleviate potential future population pressures.

Once the three wishes were made, the Gate glowed.

The outermost stones shattered, and the inner Jade Gate disappeared.

Since then, the world has turned upside down!

# Chapter 342 - 342 339 Awakening

﻿Chapter 342: 339 Awakening Chapter 342: 339 Awakening Looking at the document,  
 Lu Wu felt as if his entire worldview had been shattered.

He could never have imagined that the world before him had changed solely because someone had made three wishes at a gate.

Below the legend of the gate, Zhang Yunyi had written another paragraph.

“This is one of several versions of the legend about the gate.

Its authenticity is unknown, but one thing is certain, the gate indeed possesses the power to change the world.

Even the fragments of the gate that shattered, the outer door fragments, have the ability to fulfill wishes and grant those who obtain them Fragment Rule-level abilities.

However, as they are outer door fragments, fulfilling a wish requires a corresponding price.

The harder the wish is to achieve, the greater and more bizarre the price.”

When Lu Wu read this passage, he instinctively thought of Li Ruyu.

He recalled what Lu Haikong had told him about chasing after 99 girls.

“Could this old man be telling the truth? Did he really use an outer door fragment to make a wish, saving my mom as a price for chasing after 99 girls?”

Lu Wu’s face was filled with disbelief.

If this was true, the image of the old man at home as a scumbag seemed hardly sustainable.

“No, no, even if it’s true, it doesn’t change the fact that this old man is a scumbag.”

Lu Wu shook his head in denial.

At the same time, he set down his phone and began to think.

He linked all the information he had just received.

“If the gate’s function is real, then whether it’s Zero or someone from the Elder Council trying to mess with me would make sense.

However, this is obviously just one of the reasons.

The main reason is still Old Lu’s fault.

I’m sure, during the time that old man was active, he must have wiped out quite a few families completely. These Dragon Arrogant Sky types all behave this way—giving them a glance might make them annihilate your whole family without understanding the benefit of leaving a line for future goodwill.

That’s why such a good young man like me is implicated.

Plus, the reason they clung to me so tightly was because Old Lin had secrets of the gate.”

Lu Wu was almost able to deduce the truth.

But it was still a vague truth.

At this moment, Lu Wu still had many questions.

Whose body does Li Ruyu have?

Why are Moon Shadow’s abilities subjected to various restrictions?

And so on…

But he had no time to ponder these anymore.

He was about to leave as well.

The event of his death should start to ferment soon, and the Alliance would soon come to investigate. He couldn’t stay in this place too long; he must leave soon.

Aware of this, Lu Wu glanced at the map briefly, then brought Han into his body.

Then, temporarily severing his connection with Little Skeleton and Little Flood Dragon, he took a deep look at Fucheng. Finally, transforming into a gold Jiao Long, he identified the direction and sped toward the area far from District 1.

Lu Wu was very clear that once he left, it would probably take three to five years before he could return!

…

Lu Wu embarked on a far-reaching voyage at sea.

Meanwhile, District 1 was in chaos.

The news of Lu Wu’s death spread throughout the entire District 1 on the same day.

Everyone’s first reaction upon hearing the news was disbelief.

How could such a brilliant talent as Lu Wu just perish suddenly like that?

It must be fake.

However, shortly after, the Jiangnan Governor’s Mansion issued an official statement, confirming the news of Lu Wu’s death and disclosing the details.

It was announced that Lu Wu was killed by Zhou An, the Deputy Director of the Demon Suppression Bureau, while they were suppressing one of the Five Ambassadors of the organization “Zero.”

And furthermore, they disclosed the 32 corpses from “Zero” organization, as well as the seven King-level powerhouses who were killed in a fit of rage by Moon Shadow, along with the bodies of many members from the Demon Suppression Bureau.

This announcement sent shockwaves through the Alliance.

The ordinary people were filled with regret.

They regretted the loss of an exceptional genius like Lu Wu, who had ultimately passed away so quietly.

They were also especially dissatisfied with the Alliance’s upper echelons.

The matter of the “Zero” organization had been reported to the Alliance’s higher-ups by Lu Wu more than once.

But not only did the Alliance’s leaders not take it seriously, the people they sent also caused various troubles for Lu Wu.

Even at a crucial moment, the Deputy Director of the Demon Suppression Bureau turned against him and killed Lu Wu.

These critical details were disclosed, causing the public to become particularly unhappy with the Alliance.

However, the reaction from the upper management of the Alliance was exceptionally swift.

On the day of Lu Wu’s death, the entire Elder Council publicly stepped forward to handle the matter.

The Elder Council took three actions.

First, they acknowledged that Lu Wu was dead, and he had died at the hands of Zhou An.

Second, they announced a serious investigation of the Demon Suppression Bureau—the entire upper echelon of the Bureau would be scrutinized, including the Director of the Bureau.

A special team was formed to investigate the matter, vowing that anyone who had caused Lu Wu’s death would not be spared and that justice for Lu Wu would be attained.

Third, they established a “Demon Extermination Bureau,” with the Elder Council’s Chairman, Li Tianyi personally leading the charge to eradicate any Evil Summoners and criminal summoners still active in District 1, ensuring such incidents would not occur again.

The response from the Alliance was unexpected by the public.

However, this approach did quell some of the public anger.

What the public did not realize, however, was that the series of actions taken by the Alliance was not merely to pacify their anger.

In a world of summoners, the efforts of the global populace pale in comparison to the wrath of a powerful individual.

Ordinary people might express their anger by venting or raging impotently.

But when certain individuals get angry, the consequences can be deadly.

As the news spread, more and more people learned of Lu Wu’s death, including some special individuals.

Yuan Qingqing of the Jingcheng Cultivation Center.

Liu Qingyuan from Jingcheng University, Yan Ruxue who had once kidnapped Lu Wuyi, etc.

Upon hearing the news, these individuals expressed their dissatisfaction in their ways.

On that day, countless sub-divisions of the Demon Suppression Bureau within District 1 were vandalized, and numerous organizations of Evil Summoners were slaughtered.

Additionally, the forces behind the exposed corpses faced retaliation.

Most directly affected was Liu Cheng.

As a disciple of Lu Haikong, upon learning of Lu Wu’s death, he, along with his Summoned Beast, forcibly stormed into the headquarters of the Demon Suppression Bureau.

With his own power, he overturned the entire headquarters, even injuring the Director of the Bureau.

Other forces also stepped forward to cause disturbances.

Among these forces and individuals, some were genuinely angry, some were stirring up trouble, and others were trying to clear themselves of any suspicion, signaling that they had nothing to do with the incident.

Regardless of the reason,  
 the entire Alliance was thrown into chaos due to Lu Wu’s death.

And this was only just the beginning.

After all, those who were currently in turmoil were relatively easy to handle; the real storm would come from those consumed by boundless rage, like the one who had made half of District 1 experience a snowstorm.

The one who was still unaware of Lu Wu’s death.

Once Lu Haikong learned of Lu Wu’s death, once that individual returned, that’s when the real storm would break.

Then, who knew how many would die because of it!

This is the world of this era.

Where the strong rules, and the joys and sorrows of a terrifying powerful individual can even influence the workings of an Alliance.

This also explains why so many pursue the Gate.

With power, one can stand at the pinnacle of the world, but in mastering the Gate, one becomes a true god of this world!

However, no one knew what kind of existence Lu Wu’s death would unleash.

Before Lu Haikong’s return, an existence which in some aspect was even more terrifying than Lu Haikong was awakening in Jiangnan…

# Chapter 343 - 343 340 Dudu explodes

﻿Chapter 343: 340 Dudu explodes Chapter 343: 340 Dudu explodes After several days of fermenting,

The verification from all parties had nearly solidified Lu Wu’s death as an established fact.

But, even so,

There were still people who didn’t believe that Lu Wu could just die like that.

Of course, among them were certainly those who worshipped Lu Wu immensely and couldn’t believe he would die just like that.

Likewise, there were those with ulterior motives, and they weren’t few in number.

For that segment of people,

If Lu Wu were truly dead, that would be good news, but if he faked his death, that would be a different story.

Therefore, in the past few days, people from all sides used various excuses to come to Jiangnan to investigate this matter.

And in this respect,

Zhang Yunyi handled it very well.

No one was able to uncover any leads.

With no clues found at the scene, some started to have different thoughts in mind.

If the battlefield yielded no clues, then perhaps they should start looking from a human perspective.

And if they were to start from the human aspect, there was one person who, in everyone’s view, was undoubtedly the most suitable.

This person was none other than Dudu from Lu Wu’s house.

To outsiders, Dudu was always seen as the ditsy girl adopted by Lu Wu’s family,

Raised and advanced under Lu Wu’s wing.

Though her power wasn’t bad under Lu Wu’s lead,

Her disposition was soft, naïve, kind, and a bit simple.

There had even been an incident where she was almost duped and wound up counting out money for someone.

Such a girl was definitely a major breakthrough point for investigation.

Especially after the official team had been repeatedly denied requests to see Dudu, many people set their sights squarely on her.

They felt that the more something was hidden, the more there was something fishy.

Within just a few short days,

Whether openly or in secret, the number of people trying to contact Dudu to extract information from her, that had been discovered, was already at eight, not to mention how many more there could be who hadn’t yet taken action or gone unnoticed.

Under these circumstances,

Jiang Yuexing figured it was better to disperse than to block completely.

It would be better to arrange an official investigation team to see Dudu.

Thus, under Jiang Yuexing’s arrangement, an official investigation team entered Jiangnan University on the fourth day after Lu Wu’s death and met Dudu in his research institute.

…

Lin Yue was the leader of this official investigation team.

To meet with Dudu, the investigation team had made quite a few compromises with Jiang Yuexing.

They were required to meet under the supervision of Tie Xiong, not to say anything provocative during the exchange, and the person having the conversation had to be a woman, among other conditions…

After untold effort, Lin Yue finally met the Dudu of legend.

At first glance, Lin Yue was somewhat astonished.

Because the Dudu she saw didn’t seem sad, as if she didn’t care about Lu Wu’s death at all.

As for Dudu,

She obviously knew early on that Lin Yue was coming and had even prepared some desserts for her, waiting outside the institute early on.

Upon seeing Lin Yue, her eyes immediately lit up, and she briskly ran over, “Are you Miss Lin Yue?”

“Yes, I am!” Lin Yue was somewhat puzzled.

Dudu quickly handed over the desserts she was holding and clumsily tried to please her, “Hello, you… you’re really pretty. Oh, I knew you were coming, so I made some desserts especially for you. Please have a taste.”

“Thank you.” Lin Yue was even more puzzled.

It was unclear what Dudu’s situation was, but Dudu clearly wasn’t the sort of person who could hide things well.

She quickly revealed what was on her mind, full of expectation while looking at Lin Yue: “Aunt Jiang said that you all came to find Lu Wu, have you found him?

Do you have any clues about him?”

Lin Yue was taken aback.

Looking for Lu Wu? What do you mean looking for Lu Wu?

Her eyes narrowed, “Are you saying Lu Wu isn’t dead?”

“Right, Lu Wu wouldn’t die!”

Dudu nodded vigorously, “He certainly wouldn’t die, he must have been swept away by the water, he definitely won’t die.

But, sometimes Lu Wu can be very mischievous; he might be hiding, so you can’t find him.

But no matter what, Lu Wu definitely won’t die!”

Dudu’s tone was absolutely firm.

But Lin Yue’s brow furrowed, this reply was clearly different from what she had expected; however, she wasn’t disappointed. After all, this was just the beginning.

Intuition told her that she could have a sizeable harvest from Dudu, so she reached out, took a dessert from the plate Dudu offered, and gobbled it down, winning over Dudu’s favor through this gesture.

With a graceful smile, Lin Yue said, “That’s exactly why I’m here, to look for Lu Wu. There are some things I’d like to understand from you.”

Dudu’s eyes lit up, and she nodded emphatically, “Mhm, I’ll tell you everything I know!”

Following that, Dudu and Lin Yue entered the research facility.

In the reception room, Lin Yue guided the conversation quietly and skillfully through her superb communication skills.

Before Dudu could even react, Lin Yue had steered the topic in the direction she desired.

In fact, Lin Yue didn’t need to go to such lengths.

Dudu was incredibly cooperative at the moment.

As long as Lin Yue asked, as long as it could bring Lu Wu back, Dudu would say anything.

But if it were that easy, Lin Yue might not believe Dudu’s words.

That’s how people are; they don’t trust what comes too readily to them and find more value in things they’ve striven for.

And Lin Yue’s efforts ultimately led her to information she could have obtained without any effort.

However, when she did obtain it, she was very disappointed.

She didn’t get any of the information she wanted because Dudu really didn’t know anything. Had Dudu known, she definitely would have told, and even if she tried to keep a secret, her naive mind would have easily been read by others.

That was precisely why Lu Wu didn’t let Dudu know.

On Lin Yue’s side, after about half an hour of conversation, she had a clear grasp of Dudu’s personality.

Having figured out Dudu’s character and intelligence, Lin Yue was even more certain that the girl truly knew nothing. With her level of intellect, she wouldn’t be trusted with any secrets.

“It looks like this breakthrough is a dead end!”

After realizing this, Lin Yue was ready to leave.

Of course, had she really just left, that would have been the end of it.

However, just as she was about to take her leave, Dudu grabbed her, bashfully pulling out a card to give to Lin Yue.

“Um, that, that, this is the pocket money Lu Wu usually gives me. I haven’t spent it, and I was planning to give it to Lu Wu…

Ah, no, I mean, anyway, I… I’ll give it all to you now, please, could you carefully look for Lu Wu?

He hasn’t come back for several days, and I really miss him so much!”

Dudu was naive, but she knew that asking for favors required tact, so she forcibly pushed the card Lu Wu had given her onto Lin Yue, clumsily trying to win her favor.

Lin Yue initially wanted to refuse.

But Dudu insisted, and after thinking it over, Lin Yue didn’t think Dudu’s pocket money would amount to much, so she finally accepted the card reluctantly.

It was only after Lin Yue left that she discovered the card Dudu had given her contained several tens of millions of points.

This was because the card contained dividends from Lu Company that Lu Wu had given to Dudu.

Now, the matter should have ended here.

If Lin Yue had kept the card, that would have been that. Yet Lin Yue had principles; her conscience wouldn’t allow her to accept the money. Besides, she knew that taking such things could be life-threatening, so she returned the money the very same day.

This was the first time Dudu had tried to navigate human relations.

She felt happy for a while after giving away the card, believing that Lin Yue would put more effort into finding Lu Wu, and that Lu Wu would soon return.

But she didn’t expect Lin Yue to come back so soon to return the card.

This threw Dudu into a panic, grabbing Lin Yue’s hand, “Do you think it’s too little?

No… no worries, I still have shares in Lu Wu’s company that I can give to you.

I also have Lu Wu’s RV and many, many other things. I’ll give you all of them, please help me find Lu Wu, okay?”

Lin Yue looked at Dudu in front of her, her heart softening as she gently stroked Dudu’s hair and said, “He’s already dead, you need to grieve properly.”

What Lin Yue didn’t know was

Her words to Dudu were extremely hurtful.

In recent days, the whole world had been saying Lu Wu was dead, except for her and the investigators, who believed Lu Wu was still alive.

So, Dudu thought that Lin Yue and their investigative team were the good guys and they would definitely help her find Lu Wu.

But now, the leader of the investigation team personally denied any news that Lu Wu was alive.

What did this mean for Dudu? Did it mean that Lu Wu was indeed dead?

No, it meant that the people from the investigation team were also bad!

After a moment of silence, Dudu slowly lifted her head.

“Why, why do you all have to say that Lu Wu is dead?

He’s clearly not dead!

Why do you say he’s dead, you bunch of bad people, you must have hidden Lu Wu somewhere.

Give my Lu Wu back to me!”

As she uttered these words, one by one, the energy accumulated inside her body burst forth.

Dudu visibly slimmed down at a noticeable rate, a terrifying aura surged towards the sky, and in an instant, Dudu and Tuantuan ascended straight to King-level.

What was even more terrifying was that, during this process, Dudu’s temperament underwent an earth-shaking transformation.

The originally clumsy and somewhat foolish Dudu showed signs of becoming a queen.

Because Lin Yue had turned bad!

Dudu had no one to rely on anymore; she had to grow on her own to find Lu Wu!

…

Hmm, why not just kill off Lu Wu and make Dudu the main character instead.

# Chapter 344 - 344 341 District 11

﻿Chapter 344: 341 District 11 Chapter 344: 341 District 11 Heading to the Shallow Sea Layer of Zone 11.

Transformed into Jiao Long, Lu Wu swam forward while his mind was filled with worries.

“I wonder how Dudu is doing after hearing the news of my death.”

This girl had been by his side since the moment he had arrived in this world, and the longest they had ever been apart was just half a month when he went to the Big Cemetery.

Over the past two years, Lu Wu had completely grown accustomed to her presence.

Suddenly having to leave her, Lu Wu himself was quite reluctant.

What worried Lu Wu more was Dudu’s current state.

He knew with even his toes that the girl probably wouldn’t believe for a second that he was dead.

Although Dudu could be silly and naive, she was sometimes stubbornly persistent.

If she didn’t want to believe something, she definitely wouldn’t believe it.

“It’s better this way, she probably won’t be too sad.

Yeah, but after a while, when the rumors subside, I still need to go back quietly and check on her, and maybe bring some food for her.

It looks like in the end I might still have to solve the issue with her Bonds Skill.

So, I need to work harder, aim to boost her up, and when I return, help her reach King-level!”

Harboring the thought of helping Dudu soar.

Lu Wu’s swimming speed increased even more.

Eager to reach his destination quickly and start making an effort to take off.

His terrifying speed scared the surrounding Summoning Beast Babies.

Little did he know, the way to make Dudu take off was actually quite simple; he wouldn’t have to struggle so much.

If he just died a few more times or truly died, Dudu could perhaps become invincible.

Hmm, Lu Wu, who couldn’t bear the thought of actually dying, would never know what he was missing out on.

So, this guy could only keep himself busy in vain.

His current destination lay in the direction of Zone 11.

Zone 11 was situated near the previous world’s Island Country.

Lu Wu chose Zone 11 as his first stop partly due to its special circumstances.

According to information from Zhang Yunyi, the situation in Zone 11 was different from that in Zone 1.

Societal order in several areas, including Zone 1, had been rebuilt after the great calamity, and Zone 1’s society even gave Lu Wuyi an impression of a modernized metropolis at first glance.

However, in areas like Zone 11, order hadn’t really been restored after the great disaster.

Although nominally belonging to the Alliance, in reality, Zone 11 was in a state similar to post-feudal or post-warring states.

In a not too large area, countless power families were entrenched.

Such chaos was not suitable for ordinary people to live in, but for Lu Wu, it was a great place for recuperation.

Another reason was Lu Wu’s interest in Zone 11’s special summoned beasts, like the Demon Blade that Maeshima Kaori had summoned during the college league.

According to the information Zhang Yunyi gave Lu Wu,  
 There were two possible routes to enter Zone 11.

The first was to fly over,  
 The second was to swim.

Hmm, it sounds simple and rudimentary, but in practice, it’s anything but simple.

Covering thousands of kilometers of distance, whether in the sky or in the sea, was home to countless living Summoned Beasts.

To cross carelessly without regard, one would need at least the power of a King-level Peak.

Without King-level Peak power, crossing would require following a specific route.

These so-called specific routes were actually explored by the Alliance, avoiding routes with powerful Summoned Beast groups.

The water route that Lu Wu was taking was one of these routes.

His journey had been going rather smoothly so far.

In three days, he had covered three-quarters of the distance, and the destination was within sight.

That’s when problems suddenly arose.

Lu Wu’s system alerted him to something on the sea surface ahead.

…

Item: Sea Surface Detector  
 Quality: Silver  
 Description: A device forged from the combination of technology and cultivation methods, capable of monitoring a sea area within 20 meters.

…

Lu Wu’s brows furrowed slightly as he viewed the myriad tiny detectors disguised as swimming fish ahead in the sea area.

Otherwise, without the system, he might not have noticed these things.

“How come there are detectors on this route? And it seems like they were just placed not long ago.”

His intuition told Lu Wu that these detectors might very well be aimed at him.

Of course, others might not know whether Lu Wu was still alive or if he would pass by here, simply setting a casual trap by chance, reaping a surprise if there was a gain, and no loss if there wasn’t.

“If it really is targeting me, then the connection between Zone 11 and Zone 1 might be much deeper than I thought.”

Lu Wu narrowed his eyes, “It seems I need to be even more cautious.”

Saying this, Lu Wu sank another one hundred to two hundred meters.

It was fortunate that he was now in Jiao Long’s body, otherwise even the pressure would be enough to trouble Lu Wu.

Reliant on Jiao Long’s body and the system’s detection capability, Lu Wu passed through the detection zone smoothly.

That detection zone was set on a critical point in Lu Wu’s route; after passing it, he would be heading towards Zone 11.

Due to its proximity to Zone 11, there were fewer Summoned Beast groups, and thus Lu Wu found the paths he could take to be wider.

Lu Wu avoided the crowds, landing at a secluded spot where he was certain there would be no surveillance.

Once landed, Lu Wu immediately retracted Jiao Long’s body.

“Now that I have safely arrived, the next step is to understand the surrounding environment and blend in like a drop of water.”

Lu Wu, having watched his fair share of spy dramas, movies, and novels, knew even if he hadn’t seen pork, he had at least seen pigs run.

He was clear on what to do after arriving in Zone 11 and even reminded himself.

“Always remember your identity as a dead man, keep a low profile in all your actions for the next period.

Mind your own business.

Don’t show your sanctity in front of others, avoid conflicts with people at will, and don’t show off unnecessarily…”

After mentally reinforcing these points several times, he began to take action.

His first task was to find the nearest human settlement.

This wasn’t difficult; Lu Wu quickly discovered a small town.

Upon discovering the town, Lu Wu didn’t enter immediately, but wandered silently through it.

As a Master Level existence, his power was top-notch in Zone 1, and even more so in Zone 11. If he wanted to hide himself, no one in this small town, which had only Boss Level strength at most, could detect him.

Thus, Lu Wu comfortably took a day to master the language of Zone 11 and got a rough understanding of the small town.

This understanding somewhat shattered Lu Wu’s worldview.

He discovered that this small town was actually a Summoner family’s territory.

Yes, a territory of that strongest Boss Level Summoner family.

A Boss Level Summoner could stake out several square kilometers to establish a small town of ten to twenty thousand people and play the role of a local tyrant.

In this small town, that Summoner family was the law.

It was only after observing this town that Lu Wu understood why Zhang Yunyi’s files indicated that Zone 11 was in a state of partial feudal and Warring States.

And such small towns were scattered throughout Zone 11.

In Zone 11, the Summoners’ world’s law of the jungle was even more apparent.

Summoners unapologetically established a hierarchy among themselves and ordinary people, based on the strength and classification of power.

Of course, all this had nothing to do with Lu Wu at the moment.

He was well aware of his own situation, so he had no intention of meddling in affairs to change the order of Zone 11.

Right now, he was only thinking about how to establish himself in Zone 11!

# Chapter 345 - 345 342 Swordsmanship Genius

﻿Chapter 345: 342 Swordsmanship Genius Chapter 345: 342 Swordsmanship Genius In the blink of an eye, Lu Wu had already spent a week in District 11.

A week is neither long nor short, but it was enough time for Lu Wu to obtain a general understanding of the situation in District 11.

It had to be said, there were some issues with the information Zhang Yunyi provided to Lu Wu about District 11.

Of course, it wasn’t that Zhang Yunyi had set him up.

It was just that Zhang Yunyi’s intelligence was somewhat one-sided.

In Zhang Yunyi’s report, all she had was that District 11 was chaotic and post-feudal.

It gave Lu Wu the impression that he could cause some trouble there without any problems.

However, after a week of investigation, Lu Wu discovered that the situation in District 11 was not as simple as he had thought.

It was indeed much more chaotic than in District 1 and definitely in a post-feudal state.

But after all, the great catastrophe had occurred over a century ago.

Over the past hundred years, even amidst this chaos and post-feudalism, District 11 had developed a relatively stable structure.

Every small town in District 11 had a summoner’s value, and behind every summoner family, there was a force known as “Fan.”

These powers fought against one another but also supported each other.

The whole of District 11 was interwoven tightly into a whole.

In this whole, if Lu Wu wanted to blend in as an ordinary man, he could fit right in without any issues.

He was sure that even Zhang Yunyi would not be able to find him if he so wished.

But if he wanted to mix in as a Master Level powerful figure in District 11, that would be too conspicuous.

At this level, the powers knew everything about each other.

All were well-followed, and even relations could be traced among them.

So, if Lu Wu wanted to mingle in District 11 as a Master Level expert and gain enough resources for himself, it would be quite challenging.

After all, District 11 was only so large and in those hundred years, most of the secret realms that had to be discovered and explored were almost exhausted.

Even those that weren’t fully tapped were tightly controlled; it wouldn’t be easy for Lu Wu to infiltrate them.

Without access to the secret realms, Lu Wu couldn’t harvest resources and couldn’t grow.

“So, it seems that District 11 isn’t really suitable for me to come here.”

Lu Wu came to this somewhat disheartening conclusion.

While Lu Wu was feeling disheartened and pondering if he should leave this broken place, a crisp voice arrived.

“Illuminated Lord, are you here? Great, I’ve finally found you!”

Behind Lu Wu, a girl clad in a kimono and wearing wooden clogs, carrying a longsword at her waist, came hopping over.

This girl, named Sakuragi Hanakazuki, was the youngest daughter of the city lord of the small city where Lu Wu was.

Four days ago, to further gather information about District 11,

Lu Wu met this girl through the cliché method of playing the hero saving the beauty.

Of course, Lu Wu seriously doubted that his meeting with this girl had much to do with playing the hero.

This girl seemed mainly interested in his body.

His heroic rescue plan barely got started before she saw the half of his masked face, and then it was mostly about her taking the initiative.

Lu Wu hardly had to exert himself to gather intelligence about District 11 from her.

Despite her craving for his body, as an informant, Sakuragi Hanakazuki was still quite competent.

Thus, Lu Wu’s attitude towards this girl was quite favorable.

He steadied the breathless hopping Sakuragi Hanakazuki and casually handed her a cup of water, “Slow down, Hanakazuki, there’s no rush. I’m not running away—have some water.”

“Thank you, Enlightened Lord!”

Sakuragi Hanakazuki, her face flushed, took the cup from Lu Wu, thinking it belonged to the Enlightened Lord, and drank it with a delighted and dizzy heart.

Thinking she had indirectly kissed the Enlightened Lord, her head suddenly started to steam.

At this moment, Lu Wu casually mentioned,

“I haven’t drunk from this cup yet.”

A single sentence cooled down Hanakazuki and reminded her of her original purpose.

As the steam started rising again, she said softly, “Enlightened… Enlightened Lord, my father wishes to see you!”

…

Regarding the matter of Sakuragi Hanakazuki wanting to meet him,

Lu Wu wasn’t too surprised.

After all, since entering this small city, he had moved from covert to overt activities and even got involved with the city lord’s daughter. It was quite normal for her family to notice him.

Lu Wu wasn’t flustered; he had a rough idea of what it might be about.

He figured it must be a typical scenario of beating mandarin ducks.

After all, the background Lu Wu set for himself was quite bleak.

Zhengdaguangming, male, 24 years old, originally a Summoner of Boss Level or, by District 11’s term, professional level.

The reason it was “originally” was because in Lu Wu’s set-up, his Summoned Beast was a Demon Blade that had been damaged in battle, and now he was barely at Elite Level strength.

Also being of commoner origin and likely disfigured in battle on one side of the face.

With such a shoddy character setup, Lu Wu felt that not just a poverty-stricken feudal lord, but even if placed in his own previous life, he would be unwanted.

With such a character getting close to someone’s daughter, a bell would surely warrant a beating away.

But Lu Wu had no pretensions of showing off or counter-attacking.

It seemed pointless since he was planning to leave anyway. Why bother showing off or retaliating?

“Meeting them and being driven away by a stick, it’s quite a unique way to part.”

Yes, Lu Wu had already prepared himself to be driven away by a stick.

However, Lu Wu forgot one thing: reality usually doesn’t follow his plan.

He had even prepared to throw out phrases like “Give me five hundred thousand, and I’ll leave your daughter immediately” or “Fortunes change, don’t oppress the young when poor.”

But they didn’t follow his script.

Upon arriving at the City Lord’s mansion, what awaited him wasn’t scrutiny or cold looks but warm hands and eager eyes.

“Lord of Light, I entrust my daughter to you!”

Lu Wu was stunned at that moment.

His mind was filled with big question marks.

‘What’s going on, has this old man lost his mind? Or did something go wrong?’

No, it wasn’t the elder named Sakuragi Hanamichi in front of him who had gone crazy; it was him!

More precisely, it was the character setup Lu Wu had made for himself.

He thought the persona he had created was already pitiful enough.

At 24, still only at Boss Level, Summoned Beast also down, when he saved Sakuragi Hanakazuki, his mastery of Battlefield Swordsmanship was just at a master level.

He was also of common origin and had half his face disfigured. Such a character, in Lu Wu’s view, who had risen to Master Level in just two years, was simply unbearable to look at.

He thought, a summoner’s life can’t be more miserable than this.

“But placed in front of Sakuragi Hanamichi, this dude is definitely a genius bestowed by the heavens.

At just 24 years old, he had already reached Boss Level.

Though his Summoned Beast had died unexpectedly, his mastery-level swordsmanship was undeniably real.

Coming from an ordinary background, to have such power and swordsmanship at this age.

Such talent made Sakuragi Hanamichi especially envious!

After all, he couldn’t find such a genius within his forces no matter how hard he searched.

And now, such a genius had shown up at his doorstep—wasn’t this a gift from heaven?

Of course, Sakuragi Hanamichi also noticed that Lu Wu’s encounter with his daughter seemed a bit deliberate.

But that was fine, it was understandable. Lu Wu, being a commoner genius, must have had a tough life after losing his Summoned Beast.

Getting close to Sakuragi Hanakazuki was certainly for his own future, which was completely understandable.

If it were him, he would have made the same choice.

After all, what’s wrong with using some schemes to grow?

Those who don’t use schemes are the real losers!

What Sakuragi Hanamichi admired more was that, over these few days, Lu Wu never deliberately hid this fact, earning Sakuragi Hanamichi’s favor to the greatest extent.

Thus, after only observing for four days, he decided to meet Lu Wu.

Such a talented, scheming, and Zhengdaguangming-like child, Sakuragi Hanamichi didn’t want to miss.

“Bright Lord, I know your goal, and I will fulfill it!

Don’t worry, I will use all my available energy to get the most suitable Divine Artifact. With my help, you will definitely return to the peak, or even reach a higher peak,” said Sakuragi Hanamichi, throwing out his promise right from the start.

Apart from being genuinely excited, it was also because he ‘understood’ Lu Wu.

Zhengdaguangming Lu Wu, though he used schemes, disdained from hiding it. Such a person deserved sincere treatment.

Sakuragi Hanamichi believed that his sincerity would definitely be felt by the Bright Lord.

As for Lu Wu’s side.

He didn’t know about sincerity or whatever. All he knew was that this old man must have something wrong with his brain!

But no matter if the old man had something messed up in his head, the impression the old man left on him during their first meeting was nevertheless quite good.

Treating him very kindly, considering him in every aspect of their conversation.

Never bringing up topics that might make Lu Wu uncomfortable, and if ever touched upon accidentally, the old man would skillfully shift the topic.

In short, the old man left a successful first impression on Lu Wu, seeming benevolent and eager to hand over both his daughter and his estate to him—or else he was deeply shrewd or had something wrong with his brain.

And this trip to the City Lord Mansion also successfully resulted in Lu Wu moving in.

Even though Lu Wu initially hesitated a bit, when the old man brought out a box of Swordsmanship Secret Manuals, Lu Wu delightfully decided to stay.

…

Late at night.

Sakuragi City, within the City Lord Mansion in District 11.

Lu Wu had just managed to send away the maid who was to attend him at bed and lay dazedly in bed, his gaze empty.

“What now? This old man really seems keen on keeping me here.

The way he spoke, he doesn’t just want to be my father-in-law, but also my father.”

Yeah, Sakuragi Hanamichi had casually mentioned adopting him as a son at the dinner table, noticed Lu Wu’s displeasure, and didn’t bring it up again, but the intention was clear.

“Forget it, doesn’t matter. Staying here is not an option. Once I’ve mastered these dozen or so Swordsmanship Secret Manuals, I’ll just pack up and prepare to leave.”

With this mindset, Lu Wu re-engaged in intense study mode.

He spent the whole night reading through the dozen or so sword techniques Sakuragi Hanamichi gave him.

The old man had given him a total of 14 Swordsmanship Secret Manuals, among which 12 had a sword technique level comparable to the ‘Battlefield Sword Technique’, and the remaining two he had specifically collected for Lu Wu in the past few days, were almost at the ‘Slaughter Sword Technique’ level.

Clearly, the old man had gone to great lengths to keep Lu Wu.

By around 5 AM, having not slept all night, Lu Wu finished reading all 14 Swordsmanship Secret Manuals.

Fortunately, Lu Wu got up and began practicing swordsmanship.

On the other side of the City Lord Mansion, Sakuragi Hanamichi also hadn’t slept all night.

While Lu Wu was focused on studying, he was excited.

Their Sakuragi family, in their heyday, had produced a King-level expert, but since his grandfather died, they had declined generation by generation.

By his generation, they only barely reached Lord Level in power, and his children’s talents were even worse. Before Lu Wu appeared, he often worried that upon his death, the Sakuragi family might fade into oblivion.

Now, with Lu Wu, he felt there was still hope for the Sakuragi family.

Even if Lu Wu didn’t marry into the family, his son might still be considered.

Of course, this all was predicated on Lu Wu truly rising to power; if not, all would be mere wishful thinking.

While the old man was daydreaming,

his maid came to tell him that Lu Wu had started practicing swordsmanship.

Upon hearing this news, the old man hurriedly got up to observe Lu Wu’s talent.

Lu Wu’s talent would determine his investment in him.

Very quickly, the old man stealthily arrived at the pavilion near the courtyard where Lu Wu was exercising, catching him in the middle of practicing one of the sword techniques he had given him that day.

Watching him, the old man was a bit stunned.

“Strange, has Bright Lord practiced this sword technique before? Why does he seem so proficient?”

While the old man was perplexed, Lu Wu repeated the sword technique.

On the second attempt, the old man’s jaw dropped.

He clearly noticed, the huge gap between Lu Wu’s first and second attempt indicated rapid progress!

And that was not all; then came the third time, fourth time, fifth time…

The old man continuously watched Lu Wu practice that technique ten times, witnessing how Lu Wu’s proficiency in sword technique swiftly went from entry-level to mastery.

And that was just one set.

After finishing the first set, Lu Wu switched to a second set.

Again, ten times, the second set going directly from “entry-level” to “mastery”!

Then came the third set, fourth set, fifth set…

Sakuragi Hanamichi’s mouth went from slightly open to widely agape, his eyes shifting from doubt to confusion, then to burning passion.

He had finally fully confirmed Lu Wu’s talent.

Was this what they called a genius?

This was simply monstrous!

At that moment, Sakuragi Hanamichi made a decision.

“To nurture, to go all out and bankrupt his family to cultivate him!

All the glory of my Sakuragi family now depends on the Bright Lord!”

…

Hmm, after a week of idleness, I will strive to get back on track and update starting tomorrow!”

# Chapter 346 - 346 343 Divine Blade Tower

﻿Chapter 346: 343 Divine Blade Tower Chapter 346: 343 Divine Blade Tower Old Man Sakuragi had given Lu Wu fourteen sword skills.

Lu Wu mastered all of them in just three days.

He was holding back, or else achieving the Master level wouldn’t have been impossible.

As Lu Wu’s Talent revealed itself, Old Man Sakuragi’s gaze towards him grew increasingly fervent.

He treated him better and better, even bringing all of his unmarried, and even some married, daughters to his home, parading them in front of Lu Wu all the time.

Old Man Sakuragi’s intentions were as clear as day!

Of course, these past few days the old man had been occupied with other matters as well—or rather, the daughters were just a minor detail. His main focus had been on preparing a Divine Artifact for Lu Wu, or to be more precise, on the matter of Summoning Beasts.

Old Man Sakuragi had originally planned to prepare a Silver Quality Divine Artifact for Lu Wu.

But after witnessing Lu Wu’s Talent, he felt that a Silver Quality Divine Artifact was unworthy of Lu Wu.

Lu Wu’s talent deserved better!

Gold!

Only a Golden Quality Divine Artifact was worthy of Lu Wu!

For the past three days, Old Man Sakuragi had been preoccupied with the matter of a Golden Quality Divine Artifact.

However, Divine Artifacts of the Summoned Beast kind were rare in District 11, even though they were unique to it, and Golden Quality Divine Artifacts were extremely scarce.

Even with his own Power of Lord Level, Old Man Sakuragi couldn’t get his hands on such a high-Level Artifact; even if he somehow managed to find one, his family fortune would not be sufficient to acquire it.

Alas, after three days of busyness, he came up with nothing.

In such circumstances, Old Man Sakuragi started to feel tormented.

Should he settle for a Silver Quality Artifact for Lu Wu, or should he pour everything he had into acquiring one that surpassed Silver Quality?

In the end, the gambling nature inherited from the bloodline of District 11 overcame his reason.

He clenched his teeth and stamped his foot, “I’ll gamble!

The future glory of the Sakuragi Family hinges on this!”

…

On the fourth night after Lu Wu moved into the City Lord Mansion,

Lu Wu was still practicing swordsmanship when Old Man Sakuragi, tired and dusty from his trip, returned with a face full of weariness.

Upon his return, he immediately sought out Lu Wu.

Seeing Lu Wu still diligently practicing the sword, with skill that was on the verge of breaking through to Master Level, Old Man Sakuragi seemed as if he had been injected with chicken blood.

His travel-weariness vanished, and his entire demeanor became spirited as he approached and gripped Lu Wu’s hand, “Bright Lord, your Divine Artifact has been arranged!”

“What?”

Lu Wu was stunned, and Old Man Sakuragi continued, “In three days, it will be the opening day of the Divine Blade Tower Secret Realm. I have secured an opportunity for you to enter.”

Lu Wu was still a bit dazed.

It was only after Old Man Sakuragi’s explanation that Lu Wu understood that the Divine Blade Tower Secret Realm was one of the best Secret Realms in District 11 regarding Divine Artifacts.

It opened only once a year, admitting only 64 people each time.

Upon entering the Secret Realm, everyone’s Power would be suppressed to Ordinary human standards.

Then, the Secret Realm would conduct a series of trials for the entrants. Failure could mean direct death, while success in passing the trials would grant Divine Artifacts of varying Quality depending on the number of challenges overcome.

Simply put, it was a sort of instance for farming weapons.

Considering that only 64 people could enter this instance each year, and from the weary look of the old man, Lu Wu knew in his heart that Old Man Sakuragi must have gone through great troubles to secure this slot for him.

This gave Lu Wu hope for establishing himself in District 11.

Originally, his decision to leave District 11 was due to unresolved identity issues, and as an external Master Level powerhouse making a clamor as he barged into a small pond, he was bound to stand out.

But now, with Old Man Sakuragi’s help, Lu Wu suddenly found that establishing himself in District 11 seemed possible!

If he could get a Divine Artifact next, he would be able to blend into District 11 using the identity of Zhengdaguangming and harvest its strategic resources to strengthen himself.

In that case, it seemed like he might not need to leave at all, right?

For Lu Wu, this was naturally good news, as leaving District 11 would not necessarily mean a better situation in other districts.

Thus, this seemed like the best option for Lu Wu.

However, Lu Wu couldn’t help but sigh as he looked over at Sakuragi Hanakazuki sitting on a bench with a sword in her arms, watching him practice swordsmanship all day until she fell asleep, exuding a deep aura of Dudu.

“If I, Lu Wu, were to do this, wouldn’t I become a scumbag who plays with a sweet girl’s feelings and lives off her kindness?

How would I, Lu Wu, be any different from Lu Haikong?!”

With that thought, Lu Wu stood up straight, his gaze firm.

The Lu Family didn’t raise scumbags!!!

…

Two days later, outside the Sakuragi City Lord Mansion.

Sakuragi Hanakazuki grasped Lu Wu’s hand, reluctant to let go, and gave him a series of instructions and farewells.

“Bright Lord, I’ve heard those people can be very fierce. Don’t get into conflicts with them; if they fight, just hide and don’t get hurt.”

“Also, this is an Amulet I’ve gotten for you, Bright Lord. Wear it, and be sure to come back safely.”

“I wish for Bright Lord’s fortune in war to prosper, and for Bright Lord to return safely!”

Amidst Sakuragi Hanakazuki’s deep bows, Lu Wu sighed softly, ruffling the young girl’s hair.

“I’ll come back as soon as possible!”

And in his heart, he added, ‘if possible.’

“Come on, it’s getting late. We need to hurry over!”

Watching Lu Wu and Sakuragi Hanakazuki part with deep affection, Old Man Sakuragi joyfully pulled Lu Wu onto the back of an ox.

The two of them rode a Leader-Level bull, charging toward the Divine Blade Tower.

Sakuragi City was over a thousand kilometers away from the Divine Blade Tower; without roads, even the Leader-Level bull needed almost a day of tireless running to cover the distance.

During that day’s time, Old Man Sakuragi imparted much experience to Lu Wu.

And this so-called experience was, in fact, less about being a Summoner and more about lessons in living, teaching Lu Wu how to survive in the cracks of great powers.

“I had not plan on teaching Bright Lord these things!

Bright Lord wouldn’t need these matters, as long as Bright Lord has time, Bright Lord’s future won’t need to concern itself with anyone’s opinion.

But in the upcoming Divine Blade Tower, Bright Lord will face many strong opponents.

I’m sorry, in that kind of environment, I might not be able to protect Bright Lord securely, therefore Bright Lord needs to understand these things!”

“Before Bright Lord becomes strong, patience, and maintaining a low profile are the best qualities.

They will let Bright Lord circumvent many unnecessary troubles.

But sometimes, no matter how hard you try to avoid them, unavoidable troubles might still find their way to you, and then, Bright Lord needs to know how to take advantage of the situation…”

…

It must be said, Old Man Sakuragi truly had the intention of raising Lu Wu as his own son.

All along the way, he poured out his heart and soul, sharing everything he could teach to Lu Wu.

He taught Lu Wu how to keep a low profile, how to avoid troubles.

How to deal smoothly with troubles when they occur.

And if troubles can’t be managed, how to cope with them.

In Old Man Sakuragi’s words, these were the petty tricks of the weak, yet Lu Wu was utterly fascinated.

Because no one had ever taught him these things before.

After all, ever since Lu Wu had crossed over, he’d been on a winning streak.

In just short of two years, he had become an important figure in District 1, with a scumbag father behind him.

Although it could be said he grew up under pressure, Lu Wu never truly felt like a minor character, nor did he possess this kind of wisdom.

And after they talked it through, Lu Wu realized it wasn’t the trivial tricks Old Man Sakuragi spoke of but rather a profound wisdom.

Had he possessed this kind of profound wisdom before, Lu Wu felt he wouldn’t have been led by the nose by everyone and forced to the point of faking his own death to escape.

So, Lu Wu listened very seriously and was very grateful to the old man.

After all, no matter the reason, the old man had genuinely been kind to him.

The two shared a bull, covering a thousand miles, and their affection for each other gradually warmed.

From an initial unease to a harmonious coexistence.

And as their feelings for each other warmed, the journey seemed to shrink as well; in 17 hours, Lu Wu and Old Man Sakuragi arrived at the residence of the Divine Blade Tower.

When they arrived, the entrance to the Divine Blade Tower was already crowded with people.

Lu Wu took a look.

Most of these people were either a middle-aged man with a few young people, or a young man with a group of attendants and maids.

And those middle-aged men mostly had the power of Lords.

The attendants were mostly at the strength of Bosses, even reaching up to Leader Level.

It was evident that each of these individuals represented a force; in terms of a combination like Lu Wu and Old Man Sakuragi, he had only seen them so far.

Upon their arrival, Old Man Sakuragi pulled him over to a group of people and bowed to the leader, a middle-aged man.

“Greetings to Lord Liu Chuan!

We appreciate all the trouble you are taking for us this time!”

As Lu Wu followed with a bow, he discreetly checked the other party’s attributes.

…

Name: Liu Chuan Feng

Power: Lord 3 Star

Summoned Beast: Demon Blade Sakura (Golden Quality) (Lord 3 Star Power)

Skills: Liu Chuan’s Basic Swordsmanship (Master), Liu Chuan Advanced Swordsmanship (Master), Liu Chuan’s Killing Sword Skill (Master)

Description: The kind that can slay a group with a single cut.

Summoner Talent: None

…

Pretty weak, but a big deal. Facing Lu Wu and the others, he responded with a heavy nasal sound.

Old Man Sakuragi wasn’t embarrassed; he just stood with Lu Wu among the Liu Chuan family attendants, being extremely discreet.

Nevertheless, they still attracted the attention of others.

Two young men and one young girl around Liu Chuan all cast their glances toward Lu Wu.

They had all heard that this year, the Liu Chuan family had sold a spot to a small family, and they were curious to see what kind of prodigy was willing to pay such a price to buy the spot.

Looking at Lu Wu, both young men thought he seemed pretty ordinary.

It was the girl who stared intensely at the half of Lu Wu’s face beneath the mask, her eyes filled with curiosity.

She seemed keen to know what kind of face lay beneath Lu Wu’s mask.

Hmm, there were quite a few people just like the girl.

This made Lu Wu feel helpless.

He already covered his face, and still, so many people coveted his body?

Ah, his damn, uncontainable charm!

# Chapter 347 - 347 344 Princess Cimu

﻿Chapter 347: 344 Princess Cimu Chapter 347: 344 Princess Cimu While waiting for it to open, Lu Wu’s eyes never stopped moving.

He looked around at the people nearby, then at the entrance of the “Divine Blade Tower” instance before him. Oh no, it’s the entrance to a Secret Realm.

The entrance to the Divine Blade Tower Secret Realm is in fact a tower.

A tower about thirty meters high with twelve levels.

It looked quite ordinary, but its attribute told Lu Wu that this instance was extraordinary.

…

Name: Divine Blade Tower  
 Quality: ???

Description: Special inheritance Secret Realm, accessible to those under the age of 25.

A total of 64 spots are open each year.

Those who pass the final Trial will receive the Divine Blade inheritance.

…

The attribute matched what Old Man Sakuragi had described.

It was the Quality that made Lu Wu slightly startled.

He was now at the Lord Level Power, could see King-level attributes, and could also recognize Epic Level, but the tower still hanging a question mark clearly indicated its existence above Epic.

It could be said to be quite complicated.

He had also heard about the weapon production chart of this tower.

The first and second levels Black Iron, the third and fourth Bronze, the fifth and sixth Silver, the seventh and eighth Gold, the ninth and tenth King-level (Legend), and eleventh and above unknown.

Because the highest anyone had ever challenged was the tenth level, obtaining a Legendary Quality sword,  
 the tenth level had Legendary Quality Divine Artifacts, and the eleventh and twelfth levels were probably Epic!

This news once drove Area 11 crazy for a while as they had gathered all the talents from the area and spent ten years attempting the challenge.

As a result, over those ten years, all the talents from Area 11 who tried to break through the eleventh floor died without exception.

This also led to a decade of decline for Area 11.

Since then, no one has dared to challenge the eleventh floor, let alone beyond the ninth level.

Though everyone coveted the rewards of clearing it, the bloody lessons taught them well.

Life or sword, which was more important, they could still distinguish.

But Lu Wu seemed a bit confused, still eagerly looking forward to passing it.

Of course, it wasn’t just Lu Wu who held this anticipation.

Youngsters present were all eagerly looking forward, practically all dreaming of clearing the Divine Blade Tower and gaining the ultimate inheritance like Lu Wu.

After all, they are young, who doesn’t see themselves as the chosen one?

Furthermore, dreaming doesn’t cost a tax, why hold back?

Most challengers entered with this mentality, but once inside, the Divine Blade Tower taught them what reality was!

What they say about passing the Trial is valuable, little life is even more so!

…

Amidst the attention of the crowd, the Divine Blade Tower finally opened amid a burst of Light.

The tower door opened automatically.

The challenge for this Secret Realm officially began.

The youths outside the Divine Blade Tower also started moving, not rushing into the tower all at once, but entering one by one based on their family rankings.

Affiliated with the Liu Chuan family, Lu Wu was the 23rd in line, which was a relatively forward position, showing that the Liu Chuan family had some influence.

Lu Wu noted while they were lining up that the first person to go in and challenge had already come out.

He lasted less than five minutes, seemed to have made it to the sixth level, and when he came out, Lu Wu noticed that he had obtained a Silver Quality sword in his hand.

Lu Wu found it pretty mediocre.

But people around him seemed to think he was pretty impressive.

Following the first challenger was the second.

This one was more tragic, stayed inside for eight minutes, fought from the first to the sixth level, and attempted to Charge to the seventh, but shortly after the light reached the seventh level, it went out; he obviously had perished inside.

Then came the third, the fourth…  
 This instance’s challenges were especially quick.

The shortest may take about three minutes to come out, while the longest couldn’t last ten minutes.

It took just over two hours for Liu Chuan’s family to get their turn.

By the time it was Liu Chuan’s turn, out of the first nineteen challengers, the strongest one only made it through the seventh level.

He had even lost an arm in the process; after coming out, his family’s attitude toward him did a complete 180-degree turn.

Before he entered, everyone was indifferent; after he came out, the family leader treated him as though basking in the spring breeze.

Even the looks from other families grew envious; quite a few young ladies who were initially looking at Lu Wu turned their attention to him.

It was like witnessing a real-life underdog story.

Twenty minutes later, the three people from Liu Chuan’s family lined before Lu Wu also completed their challenge.

Two young men got to the fifth level, and the young woman reached the sixth level — averaging Silver Quality made for a very good result.

After they finished their challenges, it was then Lu Wu’s turn.

After a long journey and waiting, along with watching the performances of those before him, Lu Wu’s expectations for the Divine Blade Tower reached the ultimate peak.

However, just as Lu Wu was about to enter the Divine Blade Tower carrying Old Man Sakuragi, a beastly roar erupted.

Accompanied by the roar, a Lord Peak Level beast landed in front of the Divine Blade Tower.

Seeing this beast, the faces of everyone present changed.

“The Cimu family!

Why would someone from the Cimu family come this year?”

The Cimu family is a true top-tier family in District 11 and had previously been one of the main families researching the Divine Blade Tower. However, since losing several of their top geniuses in attempts to conquer the tower, the Cimu family hadn’t approached the Divine Blade Tower in nearly ten years.

Unexpectedly, someone from the Cimu family had come today.

And this time, it seemed to be the princess of the Cimu family.

As the beast landed, three people alighted from its back: a middle-aged woman with an air of age about her, a haughty and noble girl around her twenties, and an ordinary-looking young man.

Their arrival caught everyone’s attention.

Yet, they completely disregarded everyone around them.

Upon touching the ground, that young girl, who was the Princess Qingzi of the Cimu family, said to the young man, “Go, if you pass the tenth floor you will be my husband!”

The young man nodded indifferently, holding a ragged longsword in his hand, he walked toward the entrance of the Divine Blade Tower, ignoring Lu Wu at the doorway and striding towards the gate.

This blatant act of cutting in line would, had it been before, been stopped by Lu Wu.

But having just learned to keep a low profile and to adopt ‘Weakness Thinking’, Lu Wu moved aside to let them enter first.

Didn’t you see that no one in the whole place dared to breathe loudly?

He was quite curious whether this young man could make it to the tenth floor.

Not only Lu Wu, everyone present was curious.

After all, their entrance wasn’t ordinary.

Moreover, their purpose was different; while the others struggled for a sword, happy to obtain one of Gold quality, these newcomers spoke of legends, and passing meant also gaining a beautiful potential wife.

What’s crucial is that this young woman was the Princess of the Cimu family, a true rich woman!

Marrying her could propel someone directly to the peak of life, making many young men envious, jealous, and resentful.

They all wanted to see what this young man was capable of.

And frankly, this young man’s abilities were really not small.

After he entered, in less than a minute, the light had reached the second floor, and in about three minutes, he had passed the sixth floor.

He took only five minutes to reach the seventh floor, slightly delayed at the eighth, and passed it in another five minutes.

Around ten minutes later, he had reached a height never before achieved, and soon the light reached the ninth floor.

This time, everyone held their breath.

This was the ninth floor, which hadn’t been passed in many years. Passing it meant obtaining a Legendary Quality Divine Artifact, and if this young man succeeded, he would undoubtedly become a future powerhouse.

Although he might not entirely match the Cimu family’s princess, he would still be an unattainable figure for many.

During a tense wait from everyone, the young man took exactly ten minutes to successfully conquer the ninth floor.

Then, the light of the tenth floor lit up.

This time the light turned on quickly but went out even quicker.

“Did he fail?”

Many people sighed.

“What a pity for such a talented young man!”

Almost all families felt sorry for the Cimu family, losing such a genius.

But the Princess of the Cimu family seemed not to be too distressed.

She just indifferently uttered ‘useless’ and stood up to prepare to leave on the back of the beast.

However, just as she turned to leave, the sound of a door pushing open rang out, and a young man missing an arm and a leg, holding a blood-red longsword, walked out of the tower.

Though the Divine Blade Tower had treated him after the challenge, his missing limbs vividly displayed the severity and brutality of his battle.

Nevertheless, he came out, he had completed his challenge, and he walked out holding a Legendary-tier Divine Artifact.

“Very well, from now on, you are my husband!”

Facing the young man who had completed a grueling challenge, Qingzi remained arrogant and casually threw a vial of potion toward the young man, “But my husband cannot be disabled. This is a Divine Elixir from District 1, capable of reattaching limbs within half an hour, you find someone to chop off your limbs and reattach them.”

The young man picked up the potion and turned to look at the young men lining up.

His glance made the young men shiver, as no one wanted their limbs unexpectedly chopped off.

Each of them looked to their family elders for help, but it was useless; their elders didn’t dare make a sound!

This was the Princess of the Cimu family, a young man capable of passing 10 floors, and a future leading figure; who would dare say anything?

If their own family members were selected, they would just have to accept their bad luck.

As for the young man, after scanning the crowd, he finally locked his gaze on Lu Wu standing by the entrance of the Divine Blade Tower.

He had checked around, and Lu Wu’s limbs were the most suitable for him.

Similar in length and thickness.

After identifying his target, he prepared to approach and chop off Lu Wu’s limbs.

This relieved the other young men, but for Lu Wu, it was a cause for panic. He hadn’t expected to face such a situation and without a second thought, opened the door to the Divine Blade Tower and charged inside.

……

A new week, seeking tickets

# Chapter 348 - 348 345 Challenge

﻿Chapter 348: 345 Challenge Chapter 348: 345 Challenge Lu Wu “swooshed” into the Divine Blade Tower, leaving everyone present dumbfounded.

The fiancé of Princess Cimu wanted his hands and legs, and he still dared to run?

Did he naively think that hiding in the Divine Blade Tower for a while would mean he wouldn’t have to have his limbs severed afterward?

What a joke! You can’t hide in the Divine Blade Tower forever, and the longest anyone has stayed was a young man who lasted 21 minutes. Could Lu Wu possibly surpass him?

Even if he deliberately stalled for time longer than him, did he plan never to come out?

Once he came out, his consequences would be even worse!

Didn’t they see how the face of the Cimu family’s princess had darkened by now?

“Whose man is he?”

Cimu Qingzi spoke to the people around her for the first time.

Everyone’s gaze turned towards the Rukawa Family. Rukawa Feng quickly stood up and pulled out Sakuragi Hanamichi as well.

“He’s not from my Rukawa Family. He’s from the Sakuragi Family. We only gave him this slot because we received something from the Sakuragi Family!”

Sakuragi Hanamichi, who was pulled out, clenched his teeth and prostrated on the ground: “Your Highness Princess, Zheng Dajun is a child from a commoner background, unaware of the Cimu family’s renown and he has offended you. I am willing to exchange an arm and a leg for your forgiveness!”

This statement made Cimu Qingzi, who originally only had an offended anger, raise her eyebrows slightly with some interest.

“From commoner origins? For such a person, you’re willing to buy him this slot and even sacrifice an arm and a leg to atone. It seems you really value him!”

“Yes, he is a genius!”

Sakuragi Hanamichi was prostrated on the ground, not daring to get up or look up, but when mentioning Lu Wu’s talent, his voice got slightly more vehement.

“A genius, huh?”

Cimu Qingzi’s lips curled up slightly, “Then let me see how this ‘genius’ proves himself!”

Meanwhile, on Lu Wu’s side.

He pushed the door and entered the Divine Blade Tower.

This Divine Blade Tower was somewhat similar to the Inheritance Tower Lu Wu had visited before.

Both had interiors that appeared much larger than what they seemed from the outside.

From outside, one floor seemed to be at most about a hundred square meters, yet once inside, it appeared to be tens of thousands of square meters.

Moreover, the environment wasn’t that of inside the tower, but a vast plain.

As soon as Lu Wu entered the Divine Blade Tower, the tower had roughly informed him through data about the challenge.

The challenge was simple: combat, and defeating the opponent would allow advancement.

The first-floor opponent was a puppet wielding a sword.

Lu Wu glanced at the opponent’s attribute:

Name: Sword Slave

Power: 1 Star (Ordinary)

Skill: None

Such terribly poor attributes, Lu Wu could crush countless such beings with just one hand.

Even now, as he couldn’t use his energy due to being inside the Divine Blade Tower, his physical strength remained intact, and with his bodily power alone, Lu Wu had the strength almost of a Boss 3 Star, making this battle seem like child’s play.

With one sword stroke, the Sword Slave was slashed, and a Black Iron long sword appeared in front of Lu Wu.

Taking it, Lu Wu could leave; not taking it meant going to the next level.

Naturally, Lu Wu didn’t take it and ‘whooshed’ straight to the second floor.

The second floor hosted an Ordinary 2 Star Sword Slave, still defeated with a direct sword strike.

Then came the Ordinary 3 Star Swordman on the third floor, and the Elite 1 Star Swordman on the fourth floor.

Similarly, Lu Wu passed these levels without much effort.

The fifth floor housed an Elite 2 Star Swordman, and the sixth floor an Elite 3 Star Swordman.

Lu Wu didn’t exert much effort and directly advanced to the seventh floor.

From the first to the seventh floor, Lu Wu only took two minutes, much faster than the previous young man.

This caused a stir among the people outside the tower.

Cimu Qingzi’s eyes shimmered with distinctive light.

However, just when everyone thought that a genius who could possibly match or even surpass that young man was about to emerge,

something unexpected occurred: Lu Wu’s progress halted at the seventh floor.

He stayed there for almost twenty minutes before moving to the eighth floor.

This, while causing the people outside the tower to look sideways, also gave them a faint hint of the truth.

Perhaps Lu Wu was not a genius after all, or at least not one who could match that young man.

His earlier rapid progress was the result of him exerting his utmost effort, and after reaching the seventh floor, he realized he couldn’t breakthrough to the ninth and tenth floors, so he opted to stall.

Lu Wu probably thought that if he could stall past half an hour, his limbs would be spared.

In this respect, indeed, Lu Wu succeeded.

That young man couldn’t wait for half an hour, and once he confirmed that Lu Wu couldn’t come out shortly, he chose another unfortunate person to transfer his arms and legs onto himself.

Meanwhile, inside the Divine Blade Tower, Lu Wu also encountered trouble.

After breezing through six floors, Lu Wu thought he could easily clear the Divine Blade Tower, but then problems arose on the seventh floor.

This type of Divine Blade Tower held an extremely high Secret Realm level.

The internal challenge levels weren’t stagnant.

They adjusted according to the power of the person entering.

After Lu Wuyi passed the sixth layer, the Divine Blade Tower had a detailed understanding of Lu Wu’s strength.

It also detected Lu Wu’s vaguely “cheating” circumstances.

So, starting from the seventh layer, the Divine Blade Tower increased the difficulty of the challenges.

What should have been a Boss 1 Star opponent was raised to Boss Level 3 Star, and an additional skill of a Master Level basic swordsmanship was added.

The puppet’s strength on the seventh floor was already very close to Lu Wu, and it took him over a dozen minutes to defeat it.

After taking down the seventh floor, the opponent for the eighth floor immediately appeared.

…

Name: Swordsman

Power: Boss Level 3 Star

Basic Sword Techniques: Willow Style (Master)

Advanced Sword Techniques: White Willow Style (Master)

Description: His strength is already not far behind yours now.

…

This Swordsman was far more formidable by many orders of magnitude than the one the youth had faced on the tenth floor.

Seeing the opponent’s attributes made Lu Wu very uncomfortable.

Because, if the upgrade pattern continued as before, it’s not just the tenth level in question, but even passing the ninth floor was uncertain for Lu Wu.

This meant he was far inferior to that youth.

How could Lu Wu accept that?

Go to District 1 and ask, who has he ever lost to in his life?

Well, those few high school league matches don’t count.

In short, Lu Wu’s pride wouldn’t allow him to accept this outcome.

Then he had only one option, to fight back!

“Each layer of challenge in the Divine Blade Tower has healing afterward, right?”

Lu Wu asked, his eyes already blazing with a nameless fire: “Then I’ll give it my all!”

As he spoke, Lu Wu and his eighth-floor opponent were already clashing.

At this moment, Lu Wu was not merely trying to defeat his opponent but was treating him as a whetstone to sharpen the 14 types of swordsmanship he recently acquired.

Moreover, Lu Wu was not stingy in taking hits.

As long as it didn’t cripple him, Lu Wu could bear any injury.

With the goal of tempering himself, Lu Wu’s battle on the eighth floor lasted a full two hours.

Only when he was covered in wounds and could barely squeeze out any more strength did he finally defeat his opponent.

And with Lu Wu taking down the eighth-floor opponent with a single strike,

the Divine Blade Tower activated, and the healing and energy replenishing powers surged into Lu Wu’s body.

That influx of energy made Lu Wu’s parched body open every pore, greedily devouring the energy.

The Unyielding·Growth skill operated to its limit.

Lu Wu’s injuries healed in just ten minutes.

His physical strength also broke through, from the initial Boss Level Star 3 approximately, up to Leader Level.

At the same time, outside the Divine Blade Tower, the eighth floor’s light dimmed.

At that moment, everyone who had waited for Lu Wu for two hours was taken aback.

Then, everyone sighed heavily.

Clearly, Lu Wu, who had held on for two hours, ultimately couldn’t survive the eighth-floor battle.

Old Man Sakuragi’s face also lost all its color at that moment.

However, the next instant, everyone saw the ninth floor’s light light up.

Old Man Sakuragi, shocked, became excited: “He’s not dead, Bright Lord isn’t dead! He passed the eighth floor! He’s challenging the ninth…”

He paused midway.

He suddenly remembered that Lu Wu was challenging the ninth floor, with the eighth already so tough. How could he have dared to attempt the ninth?

Wasn’t he afraid of dying inside?

Another tense wait began.

This time it was quicker than the eighth floor but still took an hour and a half.

An hour and a half later, the ninth-floor light dimmed.

Everyone held their breath, eyes tightly fixed on the tenth floor.

Moments later, the light of the tenth floor began to flicker.

And this time, the tenth floor’s light continued for nearly three hours before it went out.

After the light was extinguished, everyone’s faces flushed—could today witness the rise of a second successful challenger?

Everyone fixated their gaze on the exit of the Divine Blade Tower, anticipating the return of another prodigy, but after several minutes, they realized the door wasn’t opening. Just as they assumed Lu Wu was finished, they suddenly saw the light of the eleventh floor, which hadn’t been lit for ten years, turn on.

At this moment, Old Man Sakuragi completely despaired.

He hadn’t imagined Lu Wu could break past the tenth floor, let alone attempt the eleventh layer. Now, it seemed Lu Wu might never come out!

# Chapter 349 - 349 346 Grandmaster (Subscription Requested)

﻿Chapter 349: 346 Grandmaster (Subscription Requested) Chapter 349: 346 Grandmaster (Subscription Requested) In the Divine Blade Tower, Lu Wu spent half a day to reach the eleventh floor.

At this moment, standing before him was a terrifyingly powerful being.

…

Name: Sword Master

Power: Leader 2 stars

Skills:

Basic Sword Skills 126 types (Grandmaster Level)

Advanced Sword Skills 47 types (Grandmaster Level)

Killing Sword Skills 12 types (Grandmaster Level)

Description: Well, how do you want to die?

…

The moment Lu Wu saw this guy’s attributes, he finally understood why the people in Area 11 hadn’t managed to clear the eleventh floor in ten years.

Is this even something a human can challenge?

Although this guy’s power is merely Leader 2 stars, just on par with Lu Wu’s current level, the skills he mastered were terrifying!

Even Old Bone only had three sets of Grandmaster Level swordsmanship, yet here, Grandmaster Level sword skills seemed to be worthless.

All added up, there were almost two hundred sets of Grandmaster Level proficiency in swordsmanship.

Even though Lu Wu had made significant advancements in power and swordsmanship after clearing levels 8, 9, and 10, facing such a being, he still felt an enormous pressure; after all, his highest proficiency in Sword Intent of the Slaughter Sword Technique was only nearing Grandmaster Level.

But there was no turning back once the bow was drawn.

Since he had already come this far, Lu Wu could only fight.

“Kill!”

With an angry shout, killing intent erupted.

Lu Wu took the initiative to attack, his longsword aimed straight at the opponent’s face with a murderous aura.

Facing Lu Wu’s sword infused with killing intent, the opponent merely swept it aside with ease, blocking Lu Wu’s strike and, in a counter-move, slashed down at Lu Wu’s head with what could be called a sword.

As the sword slashed down, the longsword hadn’t even reached him yet when multiple Grandmaster Level Sword Intents exploded forth.

The horrifying Sword Intent enveloped Lu Wu, causing him to shudder and just as he was about to be split in two by the sword, a Man Demon Mental Realm unfolded; Lu Wu broke free from the opponent’s Mental Realm to block the sword, barely managing to hold off the attack.

In their first exchange, Lu Wu was at an absolute disadvantage.

He barely survived by relying on the Mental Realm of the Grandmaster Level Mad Demon Stick Technique, which was particularly difficult to watch.

After that round of exchange, the roles switched to attack and defense!

The Sword Master, or rather the Sword Master, launched an attack.

The opponent closed in and executed a set of Basic Level Willow Sword Technique.

The Grandmaster Level Willow Sword Technique, in the opponent’s hands, no longer appeared to be basic; it was like a divine spectacle.

With one thrust of the sword, Lu Wu felt as though he was surrounded by a lush willow forest.

In this willow forest, whether it was branches, leaves stirred by the wind, or even the drifting pollen, everything was deadly.

The endless Sword Intent enshrouded Lu Wu, leaving him in dire straits, unable to extricate himself.

Facing this kind of Grandmaster Level swordsmanship, Lu Wu’s Slaughter Sword Technique was no longer sufficient; he had to include the eruption of the Mad Demon Stick Technique’s Grandmaster Mental Realm.

But ultimately, the Mad Demon Stick was a Stick Technique, and the essence of the Mad Demon Mental Realm lay in the words “mad” and “demon.”

Lu Wu, who was not using a stick nor in a mad demon state, found the Mental Realm to be quite weak; it was barely sustaining him.

Yet Lu Wu’s talent was also horrifyingly strong.

In such a situation, not only was Lu Wu holding his ground, but he was also absorbing the essence of the opponent’s swordsmanship, much like a sponge.

He knew very clearly that relying on his current power would not be enough to defeat this foe.

He had to grow stronger, and at the very least bring his swordsmanship up to the Grandmaster Level.

Right now, this was the best opportunity to temper his sword skills.

It wasn’t always that one had a Grandmaster to practice techniques with.

Three minutes in, Lu Wu withstood the Willow Sword Technique.

As the Willow Sword Technique ended, the opponent switched to the next set, the Hundred Herbs Sword.

The essence was similar, the swordsmanship alike, yet still existing at the Grandmaster Level.

It was tougher than the previous Willow Sword Technique, with an added sense of resilience and the power of accumulating strength over time.

The biggest difference was that in the Hundred Herbs Sword’s final move, there was an explosive buildup; despite being prepared, Lu Wu was still thrown into disarray.

However, fortunately, he managed to persevere.

After getting through the second set, then came the third set, the fourth set…

Lu Wu realized that this so-called Sword Master did not seem to be focused on killing him, but rather on tempering him.

As long as Lu Wu did not attack, did not aim to defeat him, the Sword Master would not unleash the combined Sword Intents of that first strike, but would continue practicing sets of sword techniques against Lu Wu.

Though each set was stronger than the last, Lu Wu noticed the opponent was always holding back; without holding back, Lu Wu truly wouldn’t be able to last this long.

After realizing this,

Lu Wu simply stopped thinking about how to defeat this opponent and immersed himself wholly in learning and absorption.

He took advantage of the opponent’s successive Grandmaster Quality sword techniques and various Sword Intents to temper his own sword skills.

Under these circumstances, Lu Wu’s swordsmanship progressed so swiftly it could almost be described as soaring.

After the opponent performed twenty sets of sword techniques, Lu Wu’s Slaughter Sword Technique was infinitely close to the Grandmaster Level.

However, just as he was about to make a breakthrough with this technique, Lu Wu suddenly retracted his Slaughter Sword Technique.

Because Lu Wu realized that the Slaughter Sword Technique was actually not suited for him.

The essence of the Slaughter Sword Technique is slaughter, is the intent to kill; only endless slaughter can bring the sword technique and Sword Intent to completion.

But while Lu Wu did not shy away from using slaughter as a means to resolve disputes, he was ultimately not a person who indulged in killing, which is why the technique didn’t suit him. This was also why Old Bone had initially been reluctant to teach him or even to disclose that the Slaughter Sword Technique required mastery of “Slaughter Sword Technique” before one could grasp it.

Of course, Lu Wu could have broken through first with the “Slaughter Sword Technique,” but once he did, his power would surge, and the true decisive battle with the opponent would commence; Lu Wu would also lose this chance to temper himself.

Therefore, Lu Wu ultimately chose to abandon the “Slaughter Sword Technique.”

As he was about to ascend to the Grandmaster level with that set of techniques, Lu Wu switched to the most basic sword skills.

Well, what he practiced could not even be called sword skills anymore, but rather was a combination of basic sword technique movements.

Using the most basic sword movements against the enemy, he continuously absorbed the opponent’s techniques into his own swordplay framework.

With sword techniques at the Grandmaster level to temper his own, Lu Wu’s training environment was incomparably luxurious.

Under these conditions, the progress in this set of techniques was truly terrifying.

After enduring three sets of techniques, he had already reached the Master Level standard and had even faintly touched the bottleneck to Grandmaster Level once more.

At this point, Lu Wu only needed perseverance, and perhaps he could break through at any minute.

But he deliberately refrained from pushing himself. He even suppressed his own breakthrough because he wanted to witness all of the Grandmaster’s sword techniques.

A set of Basic Level techniques took two minutes, 126 sets amounted to more than two hours.

Add to that 47 sets of Advanced Sword Skills and 12 sets of Killing Sword Skill.

Lu Wu gritted his teeth and persisted for a full eight hours, refining his sword skills for eight entire hours.

Eventually, Lu Wu made it to the last set of the opponent’s techniques.

He made it to the opponent’s final move.

As the opponent thrust out the final strike, after more than eight hours of endurance, Lu Wu finally launched a counterattack with the first and also the last sword thrust.

“Break for me!”

As Lu Wu let out a light shout, he thrust out his longsword.

The eight hours of absorption and tempering erupted completely at that moment.

Lu Wu’s set of sword skills attained the Grandmaster level at that moment, and the grade of his swordsmanship was also sublimated in that instant.

The originally simple and basic sword techniques,

after absorbing the essence of nearly two hundred sets of Grandmaster Level techniques, had forcefully risen to Kill Level, and even seemed to be slightly surpassing that boundary.

And with Lu Wu’s thrust, it seemed as though hundreds of Sword Intents converged into one.

With one thrust, the Sword Master’s sword light was crushed.

At the same time, outside the Divine Blade Tower, those who had waited nearly a full day suddenly saw the light that had shone for eight hours on the 11th floor abruptly extinguish.

Under these circumstances, in such an environment,

no one spoke a word, not even a breath was drawn.

If the light on the 11th floor had extinguished as soon as it had lit up or even within an hour, no one present would have held any illusion about Lu Wu’s success.

But this was not the case. The light on the 11th floor had persisted for over eight hours, which unwittingly raised the spectators’ expectations.

Could it be that the 11th floor, which no one had overcome in a century, had been breached just like that?

At that moment, everyone was extremely tense,

including the imperious and bratty Princess Cimu.

They all awaited an outcome, and this wait was obviously going to be much longer.

For a full half-hour, the doors of the Divine Blade Tower did not open, and the light on the 12th floor did not turn on.

“Did he fail?”

In their numbed waiting, Old Man Sakuragi could only mutter softly.

At this, Princess Cimu’s face showed evident displeasure.

“You made me wait a day for this result? Kill the one who wasted my time!”

As her chilly voice rang out, the old woman behind her had already reached Old Man Sakuragi, grasping his neck as if ready to snap it.

But at this moment, the 12th floor of the Divine Blade Tower, a level that had never been lit before, was thoroughly illuminated.

Simultaneously, a Sword Intent shot straight into the sky.

Within a hundred miles, all Divine Artifacts began to tremble slightly, even the sword of legendary quality belonging to that one youth was trembling at this moment.

As the owners of the swords, they all sensed the fear and submission of their Divine Artifacts.

At that moment, without anyone saying so, they all knew that a king among Divine Artifacts was about to be born.

“Crack!”

A thunderclap sounded, and the light on the 12th floor of the Divine Blade Tower dimmed, illuminating the darkness behind it.

In the arc light of the thunder, people saw a figure standing at the pinnacle of the Divine Blade Tower, a longsword in hand, standing with folded arms like a deity!

…

You guys need to reflect on yourselves every day!

Have you subscribed? Voted? Sent a gift?

# Chapter 350 - 350 347 Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword

﻿Chapter 350: 347 Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword Chapter 350: 347 Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword From below the Divine Blade Tower.

Everyone gazed upward at the figure atop the Sword Tower, which appeared almost divine; for a moment, no one could utter a single word.

No one had expected that today, someone would pass the final trial of the Divine Blade Tower, a feat unaccomplished for over a century.

Even Old Man Sakuragi, who had accompanied Lu Wu, had not envisioned this scene.

In his view, it was already good enough that Lu Wu could break through the eighth level; he never anticipated that Lu Wu would clear the entire tower.

The divine artifacts up to the 10th level were all of Legendary Level. What level must an artifact that subdued all others within a hundred miles be, after dominating the entire Divine Blade Tower?

With this thought, everyone’s gaze instantly converged on the longsword in Lu Wu’s hand, brimming with a kingly aura.

At that moment, Lu Wu slowly descended from the Divine Blade Tower and approached Old Taoist Yingmu in a few steps, politely addressing the old woman who was pinching Old Man Sakuragi.

“Could you please let him go?”

“Yes!”

The reply to Lu Wu came not from the old woman but from Princess Cimu.

At this moment, she walked briskly toward Lu Wu with sparkling eyes, staring intently at him, “But I have one condition!”

Princess Cimu’s words caused the nearby youth, who had just reattached his limbs, to shudder.

It seemed he had guessed what Princess Cimu wanted.

Indeed, when Lu Wu asked what the condition was, Princess Cimu decisively responded,

“I want you to be my husband!”

At these words, the color drained from the young man’s face.

The pallor of Old Man Sakuragi matched that of the young man.

He had invested the Sakuragi Family’s fortune and was even willing to sacrifice an arm and a leg for Lu Wu—was it not all for the sake of Lu Wu, or rather, the future of the Sakuragi Family?

Now that Lu Wu had finally passed through the Divine Blade Tower, the glory of the Sakuragi Family’s future was within reach. But now, to have their fruits picked by another, Old Man Sakuragi’s feelings were evident.

Of course, at this moment, he dared not utter any superfluous words.

He could only cling to that sliver of hope, waiting for Lu Wu’s response.

At this moment, Lu Wu looked at Princess Cimu in front of him. She was indeed proud and also genuinely beautiful.

However,

“It seems you already have a husband!”

As soon as Lu Wu uttered these words, Princess Cimu, without a second word, turned and approached the youth, drew the longsword from her waist, and decapitated him before he could react.

A flurry of enchanting blood blossomed.

Princess Cimu turned back, a smile blooming amid the blood, “Not anymore!”

That smile was incredibly stunning.

Lu Wu cracked a smile, “No, you have one now!”

Three minutes later, after passing through the Divine Blade Tower, Lu Wu showed the despicable talent inherited from the Lu Family.

After kicking the Sakuragi Family aside, he left with the princess of the Cimu family riding a giant beast.

Leaving behind the body of a genius who had cleared 10 stages, an envious and jealous crowd, and an Old Man Sakuragi, who seemed twenty years older with his pale face and exhaustion.

But even so, Old Man Sakuragi did not hold too much of a grudge against Lu Wu.

Because the old man knew.

Just as he had taught Lu Wu all along, this was the wisdom of the weak to survive.

Right now, Lu Wu’s approach was indeed the most correct one.

Having passed through the Divine Blade Tower, Lu Wu obtained a divine artifact of top-grade quality, becoming the first in District 11 in over a hundred years to do so.

While he gained unimaginable benefits, he also faced unimaginable envy and danger.

In such a state, Lu Wu could not be protected by the Sakuragi Family.

Staying with the Sakuragi Family would only bring great danger to them.

For the current Lu Wu, moving to the Cimu family was the best choice.

If anything, it was the weakness of the Sakuragi Family to blame, for even when facing a real dragon, they could not keep it.

In the end, Old Man Sakuragi could only leave, burdened with fatigue and dejection.

He still did not know how he would face his daughter when he returned!

…

On Lu Wu’s side.

Sitting on the back of the giant beast, he gently caressed the longsword in his hand.

This longsword was one of the rewards for clearing the Divine Blade Tower.

…

Name: Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword

Power: 1 star (Leader)

Quality: Epic

Attribute: Divine Artifact

State: Inducing (“Kid, worship me, believe in me, and you will receive unimaginable power!”)

Skill: (Unlocked)

Secret Skill: Divine Sword Skill (Unmastered)

Talent: King of Divine Artifacts (Passive) (As the strongest of divine artifacts, it can manipulate and influence other divine artifacts; in its presence, the owners of weaker divine artifacts can’t even use their artifacts)

??? (Unlocked)

??? (Unlocked)

Description: It seems to want to make you its sword slave, its underling!

Quality-wise, the sword is pretty good.

But Lu Wu doesn’t like it.

He thinks it’s better to find an opportunity to melt this rebellious thing down and forge it into equipment.

Apart from this sword, Lu Wu made other gains in the Divine Blade Tower, which were indeed significant.

One was in swordsmanship.

After a day of fierce battle, Lu Wu created a set of sword skills named “Lu’s Swordsmanship” which reached the Grandmaster Level, greatly boosting his combat power.

Another gain was in power.

A day of being thrashed meant that Lu Wu’s physical strength reached the Leader 3 Star Level.

After coming out of the Divine Blade Tower, Lu Wu found that his and silly’s power had broken through again, reaching the Lord 3 Star Level.

A trip to the Divine Blade Tower had brought him remarkable gains.

Now, he could easily defeat three of his former selves.

Of course, big rewards came with big troubles.

Clearing an instance that no one had cleared in over a hundred years certainly caught the attention of the entire 11th district.

Lu Wu now found himself in the spotlight.

This was why Lu Wu decided to leave with Cimu Qingzi on the spot, acting like a scoundrel.

It wasn’t really that he wanted to be a scoundrel, but that the Sakuragi Family simply couldn’t protect him.

He couldn’t run either; if he ran, the Sakuragi Family would definitely be doomed.

But with the Cimu family, the situation was different.

According to what Lu Wu knew, there were several factions in the 11th district, and among them, the Cimu family was one of the top seven.

One-tenth of the 11th district’s territory was either directly or indirectly controlled by them, making them one of the dominant forces in the district.

And Cimu Qingzi was the princess of the Cimu family, their third in line for succession.

She had the ability to protect Lu Wu.

Even if she couldn’t, Lu Wu could still run.

By then, if Lu Wu fled, it would be the Cimu family’s problem, not his.

Anyway, these people from the Cimu family didn’t look like good folks.

Especially this Princess Cimu, willing to break limbs, take lives, or even kill her fiancé without hesitation. Lu Wu felt entirely justified in tricking her.

However, Lu Wu quickly realized that he had underestimated Princess Cimu.

“Zheng Dajun, we are about to arrive at the Cimu family’s place. There are some things I would like to clarify with you first,” she said.

As Lu Wu touched the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword in his hands, Princess Cimu spoke.

Her tone was no longer arrogant but cool and gentle, which made Lu Wu look at her sideways.

“You may speak,” he said.

Princess Cimu turned to look into Lu Wu’s eyes, her previous haughty attitude gone, replaced by a demeanor gentle as a Yamato Nadeshiko, which completely disconcerted Lu Wu.

“That man just now was recommended to the family by my uncle. I never intended to marry him.

So even without Zheng Dajun, I wouldn’t have let him live.

Also, both you and I know why you chose me. I am willing to protect you, and if you worry about Miss Sakuragi, I can allow you to take her as a concubine and protect the Sakuragi Family’s due honor.”

Lu Wu was stunned.

He had to admit, this woman was full of surprises.

Facing a flabbergasted Lu Wu, Princess Cimu gave a slight bow, looking pitifully sincere: “I just want to make it clear to Zheng Dajun that we are not adversaries.

I hope Zheng Dajun does not see me as an enemy.

I am willing to do everything I can to help Zheng Dajun grow and become the strongest in the 11th district!”

Ah, the impact of the current Cimu Qingzi was tremendous.

Discarding her previous arrogance and adopting the pure aura of a Yamato Nadeshiko, Cimu Qingzi, whose beauty was already considerable, gained an added charm.

On top of this, such a girl confessing her feelings so passionately—what a devastating impact!

Luckily it was Lu Wu; if it had been someone inexperienced, they might have been completely manipulated by this woman right then and there.

Still, having seen much of the world, Lu Wu wasn’t easily manipulated.

This move made him even more wary of her.

Meanwhile, Princess Cimu’s words made Lu Wu realize that the situation with the Cimu family, or rather, the situation he would face by following her back, might be even more complex than he had anticipated.

Sure enough, as soon as Lu Wu and his party arrived at the Cimu family,

they were surrounded by a group of people, led by a middle-aged man with a scar on his face.

The man was clearly already aware of what had happened at the Sword Tower, so he wasn’t surprised about the young man who hadn’t come back and was heading straight for Lu Wu.

“Princess, we just received word that this man named Zhengdaguangming is from the ‘Zero’ organization. Please let us take him away for investigation!”

As he spoke, countless guards closed in to capture Lu Wu.

At that moment, Princess Cimu reverted to her haughty demeanor.

“Who dares!”

Her eyes wide with fury, she was like an angry lioness, protectively placing Lu Wu behind her: “Zheng Dajun is no spy; he is my husband. Whoever dares to touch him, I will kill his entire family!”

# Chapter 351 - 351 348 Cimu family

﻿Chapter 351: 348 Cimu family Chapter 351: 348 Cimu family The 11th district recently had two major events.

One was the conquering of the “Divine Blade Tower”, which had remained unconquered for a century.

The other was the Princess of the Cimu family was to marry a commoner.

The protagonist of both incidents was the same man, who called himself Zhengdaguangming.

This caused the whole 11th district to become curious about this person known as Zhengdaguangming.

They wondered what kind of person he was to conquer the “Divine Blade Tower” that for over a hundred years, countless families and countless talented individuals had spent their lives trying, yet failed to conquer.

They were also curious to see his demeanor, as he had somehow made the Princess of the Cimu family prefer to kill a talent who could make it to the 10th floor rather than marry anyone else.

However, their curiosity was not satisfied.

Since the man entered the Cimu family, he had not made any public appearances.

Despite his lack of public appearances, the legends of him spread widely throughout the 11th district.

It was said that Zhengdaguangming, having conquered the “Divine Blade Tower”, kicked away the Sakuragi Family that had supported him and abandoned the daughter of the Sakuragi Family to be with the Princess of the Cimu family.

Even more incredibly, since he was with Princess Cimu.

The Princess, who was known throughout the 11th district for her spoiled and brutal demeanor, seemed to have transformed into a completely different person, becoming gentle and polite like a true Yamato Nadeshiko.

She was courteous and friendly to everyone.

Of course, as long as nobody spoke ill of Zhengdaguangming or attempted anything against him.

If you did, sorry, she would be even more brutal than before!

It was said that on the day Lu Wu was brought back to the Cimu family by Princess Cimu,

the head butler of the Cimu family wanted to capture and interrogate Lu Wu under the pretext he was a spy from the “Zero” organization.

Eventually, Princess Cimu went into a rage and summoned the ancestors of the Cimu family to ensure justice for Lu Wu.

After clearing the crisis around Lu Wu, Princess Cimu started to take revenge on the butler.

When she said she would kill his entire family, she did exactly that.

She even spared no mercy for the crying infants.

Not just that one butler—everyone involved that day was spared no mercy by her, all killed by her ruthless methods, her actions even more terrifying than before.

However, in front of Zhengdaguangming, she would retract all her sharpness and acted as docile as a cat.

The immense contrast made almost everyone realize.

This time, Princess Cimu had truly fallen in love.

Even Qingzi’s uncles and brothers thought so too, but Lu Wu was the exception.

Through the days they spent together, Lu Wu figured out what kind of person Qingzi was.

She was cunning and ambitious.

In love with Lu Wu? That was just a laughable notion.

For her, Lu Wu was merely a convenient tool.

Her brutal actions against the people who surrounded him that day were simply because the butler was not her person, and she took the chance to eliminate a rival.

Yet, despite all this, Lu Wu was quite satisfied with Qingzi.

At least her acting skills were excellent, and she was deeply immersed in her role; even in private, Qingzi’s persona never faltered.

She also didn’t hesitate to secure resources for him.

On Lu Wu’s first day in the Cimu family, Princess Cimu brought all the Swordsmanship Secret Manuals of the Cimu family for him.

Knowing that Lu Wu’s Summoned Beast had died causing backlash, she also prepared Spirit Fruits and Potions for him to recover his spirit and heal his injuries, all of which were of Legendary Quality.

It must be said, this easy life that Lu Wu was living was really very pleasant.

While Lu Wu enjoyed his comfortable life, others found it quite unbearable.

…

In the Cimu family, within a certain courtyard.

A middle-aged man sat cross-legged in a quiet room, his face showing neither happiness nor sorrow.

This man was Izumikawa Yan, the current Family Head of the Cimu family and the uncle of Cimu Qingzi.

The genius youth he had arranged intercept both Lu Wu and Cimu Qingzi upon their return had also been his doing.

He did this for a simple reason, to remove Cimu Qingzi from the line of succession.

Although Izumikawa Yan was currently the Family Head of the Cimu family,  
 in fact, his position was only temporary.

It was because of the unexpected demise of Cimu Qingzi’s father that he had been made a substitute.

He had held this position for ten years, yet he had not yet been able to officially take over.

Everyone knew that in the eyes of the old ancestor, Izumikawa Yan was just a transitional figure.

As for the position of Family Head, the old ancestor would rather break the tradition and let a woman, Cimu Qingzi, take over rather than let him.

He naturally was not reconciled.

However, his actions against Cimu Qingzi were not truly aimed at killing her.

In Izumikawa Yan’s view, this willful and cruel niece could not pose any threat to him.

He targeted Cimu Qingzi merely to show to that old ancestor or rather the undying one.

He was well aware that the one the undying old man truly favored was not Cimu Qingzi.

By progressively promoting Cimu Qingzi to the rightful heir and even making her Princess Cimu, he merely wanted to make Izumikawa Yan believe he favored Cimu Qingzi.

In fact, Cimu Qingzi was merely a human shield.

The person the old man truly cared about was Cimu Qingzi’s brother, the future heir of the Cimu family whom the old man had personally groomed.

Izumikawa Yan did not act against him because he could not, and he knew that this boy was the apple of the old man’s eye.

As long as he did not touch the boy, he could do whatever he wanted; if he touched the boy, the old man would kill him without hesitation.

So, he pretended to be unaware, bullying Cimu Qingzi to lower the old man’s guard while secretly building up his strength waiting for a chance to completely free himself from the old man.

As for Cimu Qingzi, he had not really taken her seriously before.

However, he had to take Cimu Qingzi seriously now.

Because of Lu Wu!

This was the only man who had cleared the Divine Blade Tower in over a hundred years.

Regardless of his talent, the gains he made in the Divine Blade Tower alone certainly provided him with the potential to become a top-level fighter.

The intelligence in his hands clearly told him.

The moment Lu Wu emerged from the Divine Blade Tower, all the Divine Artifacts within a hundred miles knelt before his sword.

With such a level of Divine Artifact in hand, the future of this man named Zhengdaguangming was boundless.

If this man grew before he had accumulated enough strength, he would pose an unimaginable threat to him.

This was also why he had wanted to make the first move even before Lu Wu entered the door.

Since he was a threat, he must be dealt with early!

However, he had underestimated how much Cimu Qingzi valued Lu Wu, thinking that this willful stupid woman was merely infatuated due to a hunting thrill and could easily be manipulated to take Lu Wu away and dispose of him.

Unexpectantly, this foolish woman had been so mesmerized by Lu Wu that she risked calling out the old man and even threatened her own life for his sake.

This led to the failure of his first attempt.

Now, with Lu Wu having caught the old man’s attention, killing him had become a bit more difficult.

But it was only a bit more difficult.

“He will eventually grow up, and he can’t stay in the Cimu family forever. There will still be an opportunity to kill him!”

# Chapter 352 - 352 349 Divine Wrath

﻿Chapter 352: 349 Divine Wrath Chapter 352: 349 Divine Wrath Cimu family.

Within Princess Cimu’s courtyard.

Lu Wu was holding a swordsmanship secret manual, reclined on a couch and reading it.

Cimu Qingzi was attending to him at his side.

Pouring tea, providing water, playing the zither, and kneading his shoulders.

Every movement gentle and delicate, every furrow of the brow and smile brimming with unmeltable affection.

At first, Lu Wu was somewhat uncomfortable with this situation.

But humans have a strong capacity for adaptation, especially scoundrels, whose adaptability is particularly formidable.

After a few days, Lu Wu began to enjoy all this quite righteously.

It was just pretending for the occasion, who didn’t know how to do that?

Of course, he didn’t indulge in it.

Because he knew clearly that all of this was fake.

So, in the past few days, he’d invested most of his energy in the Cimu family’s swordsmanship secret manuals and that Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword.

First were the Cimu family’s swordsmanship secret manuals.

As one of the seven big factions of District 11.

The foundation of the Cimu family was very solid, and their swordsmanship secret manuals were countless.

Just in these past few days, Lu Wu had seen 543 swordsmanship secret manuals.

Among them, 421 were basic, 101 were advanced, and the remaining 21 were of the kill level.

After reading these swordsmanship secret manuals once, Lu Wu memorized them all.

And, taking them as nourishment, he absorbed the parts that were useful to him, enriching “Lu’s Swordsmanship.”

Over 500 swordsmanship secret manuals as nourishment allowed “Lu’s Swordsmanship” to surge forward greatly these days.

If one were to quantify it.

Today’s “Lu’s Swordsmanship” should be almost twice as strong as it was a few days ago.

But for some reason, the level of this swordsmanship remained at the “kill” level without stepping further upwards.

It was as if there was an invisible ceiling blocking the way.

For this, aside from accumulation, Lu Wu had no better method at present.

There were still many swordsmanship secret manuals from the Cimu family left to read, just continue reading, and with enough accumulation, he would eventually break through.

Hmm, regarding the breakthrough of swordsmanship levels, Lu Wu’s state of mind was still quite calm.

But his attitude towards the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword wasn’t as calm.

These past few days, Lu Wu continuously tempered that haughty divine artifact.

As for the results, it wasn’t clear yet, but they should be quite good.

“It’s about time.”

After looking through another secret manual, Lu Wu casually set it down, rose to his feet, and walked toward the courtyard with Cimu Qingzi following behind like a dutiful wife. They reached the courtyard when a putrid stench wafted over.

In Cimu Qignzi’s elegantly arranged courtyard, several chamber pots were surprisingly piled up.

It was well-known that Princess Cimu detested such indecent items the most; in normal times, forget about such indecencies appearing in the courtyard, even an accidental glimpse by Princess Cimu could bring someone misfortune.

Yet now, such indecencies did not only appear in front of Princess Cimu but were placed brazenly in the courtyard arranged by Princess Cimu herself.

Under such circumstances, Princess Cimu showed not even the slightest displeasure, solely because these items were placed by Lu Wu’s order.

And Lu Wu wasn’t being idly mischievous, he placed these items there as a part of the tempering process for that proud artifact.

Now, the “Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword” was set amid these night pots.

To make the artifact that prides itself on being noble lie amongst the filthiest of items, such a feat was probably something only Lu Wu could accomplish.

“How about it? Are you going to submit, or do you plan to stubbornly resist?”

Lu Wu approached the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword and squinted his eyes as he asked.

The Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword trembled slightly, its state changed.

Fury (Despicable human, this is blasphemy, you will surely receive the most severe divine punishment!)

“It seems that I still haven’t done enough. How’s this, I won’t put you beside the chamber pot anymore, I’ll put you inside it instead.”

Saying this, Lu Wu picked up the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword and reached out to thrust it into the chamber pot.

At this moment, the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword quivered violently.

Lu Wu finally saw the desire to submit from the “Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword.”

As proud as it was, it would never allow itself to touch something so unclean.

But its willingness to submit didn’t cause Lu Wu to stop; his hand holding the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword still headed toward the cesspit, which infuriated the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword.

Astonishing power erupted from within the divine sword.

It wanted to resist!

And at this moment, Lu Wu also erupted.

An all-encompassing and terrifying Sword Intent burst forth from Lu Wu’s body.

The terrifying Sword Intent not only suppressed the “Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword” in an instant, but it also spread out in a flash, covering much of the Cimu family.

At that moment, all the sword weapons of the Cimu family trembled.

All members of the Cimu family turned their heads simultaneously to look towards Princess Cimu’s courtyard.

This was the first time Lu Wu had revealed his edge since entering the Cimu family.

The people of the Cimu family also realized for the first time why Lu Wu was able to pass through the “Divine Blade Tower” that no one had breached in over a hundred years.

Such an entity was not just a future big shot; he was already a boss now.

Merely with this burst of Sword Intent, even if Lu Wu only had Leader-Level or even Boss-Level power, he could cross levels and slay beings at the Lord-Level.

Moreover, with a weapon that is above Epic-Level, this individual’s power was truly terrifying.

And once he advanced to the Lord-Level, even those at the King-Level may not be able to get the better of him.

No wonder Princess Cimu was utterly captivated by such an entity.

The outburst of Sword Intent came suddenly and also vanished quickly.

In about five seconds, it had completely disappeared.

At the same time, within Princess Cimu Qingzi’s courtyard, the longsword in Lu Wu’s hand was also trembling nonstop, sending messages of submission and even somewhat flattering Lu Wu.

Faced with the sword he had subdued, Lu Wu did not show much kindness.

“Remember, I am your master.

If you dare to have any improper thoughts again, I’ll make sure you spend your life in a dung pit, understand?!”

The Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword trembled, signifying its understanding.

Lu Wu couldn’t be bothered to continue intimidating it and directly demanded, “Show me the information on the Divine Sword Skill!”

That was actually the main reason why Lu Wu was messing with the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword.

Since obtaining the sword, Lu Wu had been quite interested in the so-called Divine Sword Skill.

But when he initially expressed his desire to witness the Divine Sword Skill, the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword was not cooperative.

It demanded that Lu Wu worship it and grovel before it would teach him.

That’s what angered Lu Wu, leading to the incident just now.

Now, after a bout of disciplining by Lu Wu, the sword became obedient and humbly displayed the so-called “Divine Sword Skill” with Lu Wu.

Once Lu Wu released control of the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword, allowing it to demonstrate its full potential,

The next moment,

A Sword Intent far more terrifying than the previous one erupted from Lu Wu.

If Lu Wu’s previous Sword Intent was an All Things encompassing myriad possibilities,

Then this Sword Intent was pure and absolute,

A rage of the gods seated high above in the clouds.

This burst of Sword Intent caused Divine Artifacts within a ten-mile radius to tremble wildly, and unspeakable fear weighed on the hearts of everyone in the area.

The previously clear skies began to darken with dense clouds.

The surging black clouds intensified the fear within everyone in the vicinity.

This type of fear could only be resisted by those above the Lord-Level; beings below the Lord-Level were all brought to their knees.

“Is this the power a Leader-Level being should have?”

At this moment, not a single person in the Cimu family could stay calm.

Whether it was Izumikawa Yan, who had previously wanted to kill Lu Wu, or the elder deep within the Cimu estate,

Apart from deep astonishment and fear, nothing else remained in their hearts.

Despite their reluctance to believe it, they had to admit that at this instant, the entity unleashing this terrifying sword seemed to have only tapped into Leader-Level power.

If Leader-Level power was this terrifying, then who in the vast Cimu family could confidently block his sword if Lu Wu advanced further?

Under their astonished eyes, a figure like a deity shot into the sky.

“Divine Wrath!”

Along with a murmuring voice akin to that of a deity,

That figure unleashed a strike of the sword.

Dazzling sword light illuminated the entire world.

Moments later, the dust settled, and calm returned.

Everything reverted to its original state, and the oppressive power that weighed on everyone’s hearts disappeared.

The god-like being was nowhere to be seen, and everything seemed as if nothing had happened.

But when the people of the Cimu family ascended, witnessing the mountain that was struck by that sword, they couldn’t help but gasp in shock.

They saw a hundreds of meters long and over a dozen meters deep rift cut into the back mountain of the Cimu estate.

The traces, like those of Divine Punishment, communicated the horrifying power of that strike.

Under such a hit, even those at the King-Level might fall, right?

Meanwhile, back in Princess Cimu’s courtyard,

Lu Wu, who had struck with his sword, entered a state of weakness and soon fell into a coma, while the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword in his hand dimmed.

Clearly, the price for that terrifying strike was not small.

Of course, the weakness was feigned, for Lu Wu had only used Leader-Level power, and the coma was also fake; he simply needed to rapidly absorb the enlightenment from that strike.

As for the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword, its situation was truly pitiful.

Its power was nearly exhausted, and it would likely take a month or two to recover.

But Lu Wu’s gains from that sword strike were immense.

With his photographic memory and terrifying talent, he obtained the complete understanding of the “Divine Sword Skill·Divine Wrath” and, given time, he could deduce this strike on his own and transform it into his possession.

Another point was that this sword strike settled the restless elements.

And the resources of the Cimu family were bound to lean further towards him.

Lu Wu came to the 11th District to gather resources and grow, and now that he had risen to prominence, he didn’t mind being even more high-profile for the sake of resources.

And after Lu Wu fell into his ‘coma,’ Cimu Qingzi reached out to hold him, bringing him into her boudoir…

# Chapter 353 - 353 350 Assassination (Please Subscribe)

﻿Chapter 353: 350 Assassination (Please Subscribe) Chapter 353: 350 Assassination (Please Subscribe) In the “coma,” Lu Wu was carried into the boudoir in a princess carry by Cimu Qingzi.

Um, how should I put this, Lu Wu being carried by someone in a princess carry was still a first for him.

Not to mention, being carried by a woman, and directly into her room at that.

At that moment, Lu Wu was truly panicked.

He worried the girl might lose control of her beastly impulses, or that she was so into her role that she might actually sully his pure and jade-like body.

He, Lu Wuke, was not the scumbag like Lu Haikong.

He had Dudu at home, and would not mess around with other girls.

Fortunately, Cimu Qingzi simply carried him to bed, straightened him up a bit, then sat by the bed watching him infatuatedly, at most just holding Lu Wu’s hand without making any excessive actions.

Lu Wu couldn’t help but admire her acting skills once more.

What’s professional?

This is professionalism!

Even after having entered the room, even without anyone else around, she didn’t let her acting slip.

At that moment, even Lu Wu couldn’t help feeling the illusion that the girl was perhaps too engrossed in her role.

But then, upon second thought.

He felt it unlikely; a girl who easily kills an entire family, no matter how good her acting, can’t change her ruthless nature.

Such an extremely self-centered person would never be trusted by Lu Wu to develop true feelings.

Instead, her behavior made Lu Wu even more wary.

He simply pretended to know nothing and immersed himself completely in absorbing the Skill “Divine Wrath” from just before.

It had to be said that Lu Wu previously hadn’t thought much of that broken sword.

But after unleashing “Divine Wrath,” Lu Wu realized that he had truly underestimated that broken sword.

That Skill “Divine Wrath” was definitely the most terrifying one Lu Wu had ever seen.

A Leader Level Power bursting forth with an attack that could seriously injure or even slay those around King Level 1 Star, such a Skill was undoubtedly a must-kill presence.

Even the Inheritance Skill “One Stick to Suppress the Sky” that Lu Wu Mastered paled in comparison to it.

Just by that one move, the “Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword” lived up to its name as the King of Divine Artifacts.

If Lu Wu could master this move, his Combat Power would absolutely soar by a large margin, even smoothing his path to advancing to King-level.

Therefore, Lu Wu was putting in a tremendous effort to learn this Skill.

However, precisely because of the powerful nature of this Skill, the difficulty of learning it was also terrifyingly high.

With Lu Wu’s Talent, having mastered all the information and used the Skill once, he should have understood it fairly well.

At most, it would generally take him two or three attempts to Master a Skill.

Even with the powerful “Sky Dominating Stick,” it took Lu Wu three tries to Master, but he had personally experienced that Skill.

It took him half a day and all his energy to digest it.

But in the end, his gains weren’t as significant, and he only managed to integrate a faint impression of Sword Intent into his own “Lu’s Swordsmanship.”

However, even just a hint of Sword Intent was also making “Lu’s Swordsmanship” show signs of breaking through to Must Kill level.

Lu Wu believed that if he used “Divine Wrath” just once,  
 then, mastering “Divine Wrath” might be a bit far-fetched, but advancing “Lu’s Swordsmanship” should be no problem.

The only issue was that the “Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword” was completely spent after that one strike, and it was feared it wouldn’t recover for a month or two.

Still, there should be a way to speed up the recovery of the “Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword.”

Lu Wu was just about to “wake up” to research methods for this aspect when his brows suddenly furrowed.

“What’s the situation?”

Almost simultaneously, a figure appeared out of thin air by Lu Wu’s bed.

The glint of a blade flashed.

A shuriken aimed at Lu Wu’s throat!

Assassination?!!

Lu Wu was startled, but at that moment, Cimu Qingzi, who was guarding his side, opened her eyes, and her longsword was drawn from her waist.

With a flash of the sword, the Lord Level assassin attacking Lu Wu was repelled with a single strike!

At this time, several figures appeared behind Cimu Qingzi, launching their attacks at once.

A flurry of shuriken aimed directly at Cimu Qingzi’s back.

At the same moment, the assassin repelled by Cimu Qingzi burst forth with all his strength, throwing the shuriken in his hand, his target being the comatose Lu Wu.

Now, Cimu Qingzi faced a choice.

Save herself or save Lu Wu?

At this critical juncture, Cimu Qingzi didn’t hesitate to choose Lu Wu.

With one sword sweep, she deflected the attack aimed at Lu Wu, and immediately threw her longsword, piercing through the assassin in front of her.

Lu Wu was successfully saved, but as a result, Cimu Qingzi took the full brunt of the attacks.

With twelve shuriken sticking out of her back, her aura instantly dropped to a chilling low, obviously with serious injuries.

The three assassins behind her didn’t let up, charging at her immediately!

“Damn it!”

Almost at the same time, an old voice filled with boundless anger rang out.

The old woman arrived just in time, her power at King-level Peak fully unleashed, striking out with a palm that brutally killed the three assassins.

And with that, an attack targeting Lu Wu came to an unceremonious end.

Throughout the whole process, Lu Wu had kept up the appearance of a comatose salted fish, never showing any sign of stirring from start to finish.

Nor did he wake up afterward to check on Cimu Qingzi.

He acted as if he knew nothing at all.

It was Cimu Qingzi who, after everything ended, immediately checked on Lu Wu, only breathing a sigh of relief once she confirmed he was unharmed.

This unwavering commitment to her role, this deeply convincing acting, left Lu Wu in awe.

His own Little Skeleton’s meager acting skills paled in comparison, virtually dust in the wind next to hers.

Thinking of the little guy showing off his acting to him, Lu Wu shook his head in resignation, ‘pathetic Little Skeleton!’  
 After his comments about Little Skeleton, Lu Wu continued to sleep without a care in the world.

On Cimu Qingzi’s side, once she was sure Lu Wu was alright, she forcefully expelled the shuriken from her back, casually tearing a strip of cloth from her clothing to tie up her long hair.

In that moment, Cimu Qingzi’s demeanor underwent a drastic transformation.

She became a majestic, fearsome deity of slaughter.

“Granny, I entrust the Bright Lord to you!”

Cimu Qingzi uttered these words to the old woman, grasping her longsword and striding out of her boudoir without hesitation.

The old woman watched Cimu Qingzi, now emanating an intense killing aura, and sighed lightly.

She knew that this time, Princess Cimu was truly enraged, and the Cimu household was about to witness a bloodbath.

That night.

Cimu Qingzi killed all the guards on duty in her courtyard.

She marched, covered in blood, into Izumikawa Yan’s courtyard, pointing her longsword at his nose, word for word she said,  
 “If you dare to lay a finger on my man again, I swear I will slaughter your entire family!”

Izumikawa Yan trembled with rage, but he was also baffled, clueless about what he had done.

In the end, the intervention of the Cimu family’s ancient progenitor resolved the matter.

This elder, as always, favored Cimu Qingzi.

Firmly standing on Cimu Qingzi’s side,  
 on the grounds that Izumikawa Yan had failed to fulfill his duties as the Family Head, allowing assassins to infiltrate the Cimu household, the elder reprimanded Izumikawa Yan’s faction, seizing control of the Guard Team previously under Izumikawa Yan’s command and handing it over to Cimu Qingzi.

This matter thus came to a close.

After the dust had settled and Cimu Qingzi returned to her courtyard to treat her injuries, Lu Wu had already ‘woken’ up.

He silently got up and took from the maid the medicine meant for Cimu Qingzi, sighing softly at the twelve hideous wounds on her otherwise pure and jade-like back.

Then, he personally commenced applying the ointment to Cimu Qingzi.

The moment Lu Wu touched her, Cimu Qingzi suddenly jerked awake, her formidable killing intent erupting.

Yet as soon as she realized it was Lu Wu, she instantly retracted it, and became as meek as a kitten, her fair face flushing with a shy and timid expression.

This made Lu Wu shake his head and say, “Isn’t this tiring for you?”

Cimu Qingzi was taken aback.

As he spoke, Lu Wu carefully applied the ointment.

“Aren’t you tired of acting all the time? It’s just the two of us here; even if you don’t act, nobody else will see. Wouldn’t it be better to let yourself rest?”

Upon hearing this, Cimu Qingzi’s eyes instantly reddened, “Does the Bright Lord think I am just acting?”

The resentment and helplessness of being misunderstood was heart-wrenching.

But Lu Wu’s expression remained unchanged, his hands continued their work, and he didn’t stop talking.

“Isn’t it? You don’t like me; you’re only using me as a tool to achieve your purposes.

Killing your former fiancé was your goal, and this incident was also part of your plan.”

“Do you think I orchestrated this attack?”

“The issue isn’t what I think, but that your uncle will certainly see it that way.

I’ve spent a few days in the Cimu household and know a bit about what’s going on. I’ve met your uncle; he isn’t foolish, so he wouldn’t have taken such a reckless action.

If he wanted to kill me, he would find a better opportunity rather than being so impulsive.

Moreover, if he were to act recklessly, he wouldn’t just send four at the Lord Level to do the job; if he was determined, he would go all out!

So this wasn’t his doing!”

“If it wasn’t him, then who do you think was responsible?

Or rather, if you were in your uncle’s shoes, who would you think did it, and who would stand to gain the most from it?”

With that question, Cimu Qingzi was stunned.

She turned to look at Lu Wu as if she were seeing him for the first time.

“Don’t look at me like that; we’re partners after all. I just don’t want my partner to do something foolish,” Lu Wu said, ruffling Cimu Qingzi’s hair.

“You’ve been holding back for so long, don’t lose your patience now.

Alright, I’ve finished treating your wounds. Next time don’t push yourself too hard, it’s a good thing it’s just your back hurt; if it had been the front, no one would have wanted you.”

After saying this, Lu Wu put down the medicine bottle, ignoring Cimu Qingzi’s tears that were about to fall, and got ready to leave. But halfway through, he stopped and added, “If possible, I would still like you to open up to me a bit more.

I’d really like our relationship to progress, to become your friend, rather than just your tool.”

# Chapter 354 - 354 351 Domain (Please subscribe)

﻿Chapter 354: 351 Domain (Please subscribe) Chapter 354: 351 Domain (Please subscribe) Lu Wu had originally wanted to keep silent about the matter, as if he knew nothing.

But after careful consideration, he felt it wasn’t right.

He definitely didn’t want to stir up trouble recently.

Nor did he hope that Cimu Qingzi would cause trouble!

After all, he was someone who had fought with Feng Xiu.

He was acutely aware of the terror of those above King-level.

Facing Feng Xiu, Lu Wu had gathered all his strength and gave it everything he had, but in the end, he hadn’t even broken through the man’s defense, and the battle had been quite difficult.

Now, even though Lu Wu’s power had greatly improved, if he were to face Feng Xiu again, he still wouldn’t have any confidence at all.

The level of suppression that came with that kind of rank was not easy to catch up with.

He even felt that, without ascending to King-level, he might not stand a chance against someone above King-level.

And the old ancestor of the Cimu family was a being above King-level.

Lu Wu had seen him, and although he was sure the guy wasn’t as strong as Feng Xiu, squashing him, Lu Wu, would likely be quite effortless.

So, Lu Wu definitely hoped that Cimu Qingzi would keep a low profile and give him some time to grow quietly, after all, he was actually very close to reaching King-level.

Both Lu Wu and Han had reached Lord 3 Star in strength.

And with the resources gained through dependence, Lu Wu was truly only a step away from King-level.

And this so-called step was the “Domain”!

The gap between King-level and non-King-level was the “Domain”!

Having a “Domain” was essential to advance to King-level!

Of course, the simple word “Domain” trapped countless Lord-level powerhouses.

After all, it was easy to talk about, but awakening and mastering it was incredibly difficult!

A so-called Domain is actually a highly condensed product of power and mental realm that one controls.

When this power is concentrated to the extreme, the “Domain” will naturally be born.

The birth of the “Domain” will feedback to the host, helping him reach the standard of King-level.

Of course, there are those who break through directly without a Domain.

And they are not in the minority.

But that kind of King-level is usually weaker, and after the breakthrough, the path upward becomes difficult, with many getting stuck at King-level.

Of course, it’s not absolute, some bypass the Domain and break through directly, and after the breakthrough, their strength and combat power increases terrifyingly fast, many times stronger than those who break through with a Domain.

For example, Dudu!

But Dudu is the protagonist, while Lu Wu is just a side character.

He definitely couldn’t compare with Dudu, so he had to follow the proper steps.

To break through, he had to establish a Domain first.

Not just for himself, but for Han too.

Though he might have forgotten, he indeed was a Summoner. To breakthrough, he couldn’t rely just on his own improvement; his Summoned Beasts also needed to become stronger.

Lu Wu currently had four Summoned Beasts.

Little Skeleton and Little Flood Dragon were not by his side.

And the “Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword” was only at Leader Level in power, still quite far from King, so this strenuous task could only be entrusted to Han.

“For Han’s Domain, it inevitably has to follow the Cold Ice path. Its attribute is Cold Ice, and it has a natural affinity for it. The progress in the Frost Domain would be faster.”

To help Han comprehend the Frost Domain as soon as possible, Lu Wu had devised a series of training plans for it.

This had truly put Han through the wringer.

Among the four Summoned Beasts at Lu Wu’s house, all of them were brutes, with Han being the most brute-like of the brutes.

It wouldn’t mind getting hit, its limbs could be chopped off and still reattach and continue to take a beating, but to make it think, that was even more unbearable than not getting hit.

Now it felt like a student being forced to do homework by his parents every day, suffering immensely every day.

It couldn’t help feeling somewhat envious of Little Skeleton and the others.

They had it so good, without having to be by Lu Wu’s side, without having to endure this devilish learning.

Silly had no idea.

At this very moment, across the ocean, its two other little friends were living a life in dire straits.

In Dudu’s view, the reason why Lu Wu had gone missing after being beaten up was that Little Skeleton and Little Flood Dragon didn’t train hard enough.

Especially Little Skeleton!

All day it just played with a phone, shaking it around.

Even thinking of warming the bed for Lu Wu.

Not striving or working hard at all, hence, at a critical moment, it failed to protect Lu Wu.

Thus, Dudu devised a brutal training method for Little Skeleton and Little Flood Dragon.

Well, to speak of it, it was quite simple, just to let the now King-level Tuantuan abuse them!

Now Little Skeleton gets dismantled ten times on average every day, and Little Flood Dragon is even worse, getting beaten so badly its whole body is swollen.

While Silly envied them for not having to learn, those two poor little guys were also envying Silly for being able to enjoy good food and drink by Lu Wu’s side without getting beaten up.

Indeed, a good life is always in someone else’s eyes!

While getting Silly to research Domains, Lu Wu himself wasn’t idle either.

He was also pondering his own Domain.

It was only when Lu Wu was contemplating his own Domain that he deeply understood why people usually have only two or three Summoned Beasts, or why some people keep only one for their entire lives.

Ordinary people simply can’t afford to keep so many because they’re poor!

But the extraordinary ones with potential for growth all have the future in mind.

For those who have many Summoned Beasts, the feedback is also more substantial.

The Skills they gain become more varied.

This situation is naturally beneficial for those below King-level, as it maximises the enhancement of Combat Power, but it becomes a problem when advancing to King-level.

Take Lu Wu’s case, for instance.

Among his four Summoned Beasts, Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword was a bit special, as it didn’t feedback any Skills to Lu Wu.

But the other three did.

Those three gave Lu Wu nine Skills!

Add that to the Skills Lu Wu learned himself, the Skills from Awakenings, and there was now a mess of different things on him.

Anyone looking at Lu Wu’s attribute board would be totally confused.

Here was “Universal Charger,” “Dragon Bone Burst,” “Power of the Ocean,” and so on…

How was he supposed to consolidate all this clutter into a whole and Awaken a Domain?

Faced with such a situation, Lu Wu had two choices.

One was to forsake some Skills, select one he was most proficient in, diminish the rest, and persistently consolidate it into a Domain.

The other option was to keep them all!

Pick one Skill and expand it to encompass all the other Skills, eventually developing it into a Domain.

Faced with these two choices, Lu Wu didn’t hesitate for long and quickly settled on the second.

Lu Wu decided to use “Universal Charger” as the core and “Lu’s Swordsmanship” as the framework, starting to slowly consolidate all his power together.

When Lu Wu fused all his Skills together, “Lu’s Swordsmanship” would be sublimated, and Lu Wu’s Domain would naturally be born; his Power would then reach a King-level breakthrough effortlessly.

However, this would be a lengthy process, taking at least a few months.

So, in recent months, Lu Wu still hoped that Cimu Qingzi would behave herself.

“If it’s necessary, I may just have to sacrifice my charm to appease this girl.” Lu Wu thought to himself.

As for those who think this approach of his is somewhat despicable from a certain angle, Lu Wu wouldn’t readily agree.

Can you call it being despicable when it comes to matters of the Lu Family?

Of course, Lu Wu didn’t really believe he could captivate that one woman.

He felt that someone as extremely cruel and self-centered as Cimu Qingzi would definitely not fall in love with him.

Thus, to really appease her, he could only do so as a cooperative partner.

“Anyway, I hope she settles down!”

…

It was unclear whether Cimu Qingzi could be tamed, but it was obvious that some people would definitely not be tamed.

On Izumikawa Yan’s side.

He now felt incredibly wronged.

As Lu Wu had said, the assassination attempt against him had nothing to do with Izumikawa Yan.

He wasn’t that stupid, and if he were to take action, he wouldn’t have given Lu Wu any chance to survive.

So now he was quite furious.

After all, nobody could tolerate being wrongly accused.

What made Izumikawa Yan even more unbearable was that, in this affair, he saw the very thing he least wanted to see.

If it wasn’t his doing, then who else could have been behind it?

It was obviously Cimu Qingzi playing the thief shouting ‘catch the thief!’  
 Her motives were two-fold: one was that Cimu Qingzi was using this opportunity to seize power, and the other was to make Izumikawa Yan hesitant to act against Lu Wu in the short term.

And as far as Izumikawa Yan could see, Cimu Qingzi had clearly achieved both objectives.

But that wasn’t what made Izumikawa Yan most nervous.

What made him most tense was that through this incident, he saw a side of Cimu Qingzi that he had not seen before.

“My niece has been hiding her capabilities very well!

I had always thought she was cruel and foolish, posing no threat to me, but I never expected under that foolish façade she was hiding such scheming.

It seems having an unofficial fiancé has given her a boost in confidence!”

This gave Izumikawa Yan a deep sense of crisis.

The old fogey’s shadow atop his head hadn’t cleared yet, and now there was Cimu Qingzi. Izumikawa Yan was truly in a precarious situation.

He felt it was time for him to make a move as well.

He absolutely couldn’t let Cimu Qingzi, nor Lu Wu continue their rise.

…

Meanwhile, as Izumikawa Yan was filled with a sense of crisis, in a courtyard of the Cimu family,  
 a thirteen or fourteen-year-old boy was preparing tea.

It was evident that the boy had received excellent training in the art of tea, his every move was graceful, elegant, and aesthetically pleasing.

However, to Ibaraki Gangyan, the Cimu family’s old patriarch, what pleased him the most was the boy’s calm state of mind.

Ibaraki Gangyan, who had just dealt with the matter of Lu Wu being attacked, was now appearing in this courtyard.

And this boy seemed to have known ahead of time that he would be coming back, even timing his arrival perfectly so that as soon as Ibaraki Gangyan arrived, he had a cup of tea ready for him.

Ibaraki Gangyan didn’t hesitate to sit down across from the boy, picking up the cup of tea and taking a light sip.

Then he finally turned his attention to the boy in front of him.

“You did this!”

It wasn’t a question; Ibaraki Gangyan was certain that the assassination attempt against Lu Wu had been orchestrated by this young man.

The young man didn’t hide it and honestly nodded his head.

Ibaraki Gangyan’s face remained impassive as he spoke, “Tell me what you were thinking.”

“Although big sister hides it well, I know she’s not content to be a mere pawn.

She’s not as cruel and foolish as she appears; that’s just a disguise.

Beneath that facade lies a restless ambition.

This ambition, fueled by the emergence of Zheng Dajun, will swell and ultimately consume her.

To prevent such a tragic end for big sister, I decided to lend her a hand.”

At this point, Ibaraki Gangyan had a pretty good idea of what his grandson was up to.

“So, your goal this time was to further intensify their conflict and escalate their struggle?”

The young man first nodded, then shook his head. “The forces under big sister’s covert control are still significantly inferior to uncle’s, and in terms of methods and abilities, she’s no match for uncle. Her only advantage is perseverance, but now that she’s been exposed, she definitely can’t beat uncle!”

This surprised Ibaraki Gangyan.

Knowing that Qingzi couldn’t beat Izumikawa Yan, why would he take this approach?

And just as Ibaraki Gangyan was about to voice this question, a thought struck him.

“Zhengdaguangming? You’re doing this for Zhengdaguangming?”

The young man nodded: “Yes, a prodigy like Zheng Dajun, given time, will surely become one of the top powerhouses.”

Ibaraki Gangyan finally understood. The young man planned to use Izumikawa Yan to deal with Qingzi and Lu Wu.

Even to sow discord between Qingzi and Lu Wu.

He would sit behind the scenes and wait for Izumikawa Yan to bully Qingzi and the others enough; then he would come out as the good guy, pull Lu Wu out from the depths of despair to gain his friendship, and perhaps even raise Lu Wu as his own dog.

That was the true purpose behind the young man’s actions.

However, Ibaraki Gangyan had one more question, “Are you sure you can control Zhengdaguangming?”

“I haven’t made contact with him yet, so I’m not sure if I can win him over, but no matter, with you here, if I can’t control him, I can always kill him!”

The young man stretched his mouth into a smile, a pure and clear smile spreading across his delicate features.

Staring at the young man’s smile, Ibaraki Gangyan was momentarily stunned and then smiled broadly.

Once again, he felt proud of his grandson, proud of the successor he had chosen for the Cimu family, and proud of the education he had provided.

In fact, as long as Ibaraki Gangyan was present, the Cimu family would stand strong.

What Izumikawa Yan and Qingzi were, were but jokes; he could suppress any storm and ensure his most beloved grandson became the head of the Cimu family.

Still, Ibaraki Gangyan chose to let his grandson, Cimu Tongzi, strive on his own.

Or rather, he viewed Izumikawa Yan and Qingzi as the whetstones for his grandson’s talents.

Since Cimu Tongzi was eight, Ibaraki Gangyan gradually taught him various means, letting him grasp his own situation and slowly start to master the power that belonged to him, to sharpen both his claws and mind.

After five years, Cimu Tongzi had grown.

Although still a distance from the realm Ibaraki Gangyan envisioned, Cimu Tongzi already had his edge and methods.

And he had begun to bare his fangs.

This left Ibaraki Gangyan especially eager, looking forward to the performance his grandson had honed over five years.

As for Zhengdaguangming?

What did it matter, prodigy or not, if he served his grandson like a dog, then keep him; if not, kill him!

The Cimu family was already at their zenith; they needed no outsider to vie for glory on their behalf.

…

Today’s National Day, can I take the day off? I want to have a barbecue!

Lastly, I wish everyone a happy double holiday!

# Chapter 355 - 355 352 King of Divine Artifacts

﻿Chapter 355: 352 King of Divine Artifacts Chapter 355: 352 King of Divine Artifacts Although internal power struggles surged within the Cimu family.

Members Izumikawa Yan and Cimu Tongzi showed great interest in Lu Wu and were accumulating strength, preparing to hit him hard.

It was either to utterly subdue Lu Wu or to completely annihilate him.

But due to various operational issues, Lu Wu still managed to live through a period of consolation as he wished.

This period lasted for a whole half month.

During these half months, Lu Wu had a good time.

Yes, in all respects.

In terms of his personal growth.

He had gradually made significant progress in his research on Domains; under Lu Wu’s strong pressure, Han had also attained deeper control over his innate “Ice Attribute,” making strides towards mastering his Domain.

Additionally, there was the recovery and growth of the “Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword.”

In this aspect, Lu Wu had reaped considerable benefits over the past half month.

Among them, the greatest achievement was that Lu Wu had discovered a method to charge the “Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword.”

Since triggering “Divine Wrath” once.

Lu Wu had discovered another use of the “King of Divine Artifacts” talent within the “Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword,” which was that it could restore itself and even grow by absorbing the power of other Divine Artifacts.

This kind of absorption had a cooling effect, could only be used once a week, and only on Divine Artifacts that were not much more powerful than it.

It was also because of discovering this use of the “King of Divine Artifacts.”

The energy of Lu Wu’s “Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword,” originally estimated by Lu Wu to take one to two months to recover, had mostly restored itself in just half a month.

That is to say, if Lu Wu was willing, he could unleash another “Divine Wrath” at any time.

However, Lu Wu didn’t rush to unleash that strike.

After all, the impact of the last strike was significant, and he was genuinely worried that the situation could become uncontrollable if he did it again so soon.

Another reason was that Lu Wu also planned to let the “Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword” grow first.

If it could grow to the Lord Level, the increase it could bring to Lu Wu’s combat power would be immensely terrifying.

This would give Lu Wu more ability to protect himself.

According to the devouring pace of the “Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword,” a few more times should bring it to the Lord Level.

As for the Divine Artifacts to be devoured?

Lu Wu did not have to worry about that aspect, after all, he was a man being provided for by a rich woman.

Speaking of the rich woman, aside from the increase in personal strength over the past half month, another gain for Lu Wu was in terms of friendship with the rich woman.

To appease Cimu Qingzi, Lu Wu had, besides advancing his own skills, also taken an hour or two each evening to prepare dinner for Cimu Qingzi.

What’s that saying?

To secure a woman, you must first secure her stomach.

In this regard, Lu Wu felt he had done quite well; the friendship between them had notably improved over the half month.

At the very least, Lu Wu himself felt that their relationship could now roughly be considered ordinary friends of a Friend A, B, C type.

“Hmm, looking at the time, my Friend A should be back soon, let’s prepare dinner for her, what shall we make today? Suddenly feel like having hot pot, let’s make Sukiyaki!”

Lu Wu said and began to get busy.

Not long after Lu Wu started getting busy, Cimu Qingzi returned to her courtyard.

In the recent half month, with the ‘aid’ of someone, Cimu Qingzi’s control over the Cimu family’s power had grown heavier, and her work increasingly busy.

Often busy until late at night.

But no matter how busy she was, she would return to the courtyard around 18:00 every day because she knew there was a man waiting for her to come back for dinner.

Of course, she initially resisted Lu Wu cooking for her.

How could she let her husband do such a thing?

But ultimately she couldn’t persuade Lu Wu.

Of course, her heart was persuaded too!

She had to admit that this time around 18:00 had almost become her most anticipated part of the day.

No matter how tiring the affairs outside the court, or how many troubles Izumikawa Yan brought to her, she would involuntarily have a smile on her lips when she returned to the courtyard.

“Delicious!”

Entering the courtyard and approaching the area exclusive to her and Lu Wu, smelling the aroma wafting out from there, Cimu Qingzi’s lips curved upward, and her steps involuntarily quickened as she pushed open the door to see Lu Wu busy at work, her smile fully blooming on her face.

“Zheng Dajun, what are we having tonight? Sukiyaki?”

“Yes! I suddenly felt like having it today, so I made it. Don’t say it’s inappropriate for summer, or I’ll get mad!”

“Of course not, whatever Zheng Dajun makes is the best!”

“That’s right, come sit down, it will be ready to eat very soon!”

Cimu Qingzi smiled and came to sit down, while Lu Wu, amid his busyness, took a scarf to help Cimu Qingzi put it on.

Cimu Qingzi’s cheeks went slightly red.

“Thank you!”

“No need to be polite, who are we to each other anyway?”

Lu Wu thought, isn’t it normal for friends to tie a scarf for each other?

“Here, give it a try!”

Soon the sukiyaki was ready, and Lu Wu served Cimu Qingzi a bowl full, filled with all her favorite ingredients.

“Thank you!”

Cimu Qingzi pressed her hands together and said a little prayer of ‘let’s eat’ before she began.

Lu Wu, on the other hand, focused his gaze on the girl’s face as she ate.

Lu Wu had to admit, although Cimu Qingzi was cruel and ruthless, she was still very beautiful, especially while eating.

Lu Wu always felt that during these moments, she seemed to let down her guards and shackles, possessing a charm even purer than usual.

This made Lu Wu could not help but exclaim, “Indeed, watching Miss Qingzi eat is never enough!”

This type of exclamation was clearly not the first time Lu Wu had made it, but its impact remained unchanged, as each utterance always made Cimu Qingzi’s ears turn bright red, her shy demeanor making her even more captivating.

But whenever this happened, Lu Wu would shake his head, thinking that this girl was not being honest.

At first, he might have been fooled by this act, but after several times, Lu Wu started to feel that she was just playing him.

After all, this was the woman who could kill her fiancé without blinking an eye, and who could endure twelve shurikens for her goals—how could she possibly be so shy? Her act was overdone.

However, as an insignificant pretty boy, Lu Wu felt he shouldn’t ask for too much.

Let her act if she must, as long as she provided him a secure and comforting life, sincerity was not really that important.

The meal ended in a warm atmosphere.

After dinner, both Lu Wu and Cimu Qingzi had their own matters to attend to.

One was busy researching his Domain, and the other had to deal with a multitude of affairs for the Cimu family.

So typically, after dining, they would go about their separate ways.

But today was different.

After they should have gotten up to leave, Cimu Qingzi suddenly hesitated and then, cautiously, asked Lu Wu, “Is Zheng Dajun really his real name?”

After posing this question, Cimu Qingzi’s eyes were fixed intently on Lu Wu, her fingers slightly whitening, clearly very anxious about Lu Wu’s forthcoming response.

Looking at Cimu Qingzi, Lu Wu almost instinctively replied.

“No!”

After giving that answer, Lu Wu waited for Cimu Qingzi’s further questioning.

The persona of Zhengdaguangming was not flawless.

After all, he had initially created this persona merely to gather intelligence.

He had not planned on using it long-term and hadn’t carefully crafted it, so it really wouldn’t withstand a thorough investigation. The Cimu family would have certainly found some inconsistencies by now, and Lu Wu had prepared a complete set of responses.

He was confident he could handle it.

It was also for this reason that Lu Wu had promptly replied ‘no’ the moment Cimu Qingzi asked.

However, Lu Wu noticed that, after his reply, a smile of genuine, unstoppable joy suddenly bloomed on Cimu Qingzi’s face.

Before Lu Wu could even understand the situation, Cimu Qingzi turned and left with light steps.

She seemed very happy.

This left Lu Wu baffled; he couldn’t comprehend why Cimu Qingzi reacted like that.

And why did she not continue questioning him?

Even with Lu Wu’s exceptionally brilliant mind, it took him a full five minutes to sort out the logic behind Cimu Qingzi’s behavior.

“Undoubtedly, she must know that I was prepared with an explanation and that she probably wouldn’t spot any flaws.

Furthermore, she’s even more aware that even if she unveiled that I wasn’t really Zhengdaguangming, it would bring no benefits to her.

Thus, she simply didn’t continue questioning, and instead, exploded with her superb acting skills to put on a show for me.

Her aim, undoubtedly, was to make me believe she truly fell for me, thereby lowering my guard. If I truly let my guard down, the consequences would be unimaginable.”

Thinking this, Lu Wu couldn’t help but shiver.

“No wonder she can effortlessly kill her own fiancé. Cimu Qingzi’s scheming is terrifying!

Such a woman could never truly have feelings for me; I must be extremely cautious in dealing with her!”

Meanwhile, Cimu Qingzi, who hurried out of the courtyard, laughed like a simpleton.

“Zheng Dajun didn’t hesitate on such a critical question, nor did he deceive me.”

In her view, that was Lu Wu’s display of complete trust toward her.

(Well, it’s proven that love indeed muddles the brain, causing irreversible effects, so for the health of everyone’s brain, please follow me, Nu Xiao, and take this pledge.

Reject love, protect the brain!!!)  
 Elated by such absurd thoughts, Cimu Qingzi cheerily returned to her workstation.

However, as soon as Cimu Qingzi got back to her workstation, her smile froze.

Because at that moment, she received a piece of news…

…

# Chapter 356 - 356 353 Sickly Cute

﻿Chapter 356: 353 Sickly Cute Chapter 356: 353 Sickly Cute Lu Wu had thought his tranquil days would continue.

But he hadn’t expected them to end so abruptly and suddenly.

The day after he and Cimu Qingzi had finished their sukiyaki, he received a message from her.

Disaster had struck the Sakuragi Family!

Last night, a formidable intruder had attacked Old Man Sakuragi and kidnapped Sakuragi Hanakazuki.

When Lu Wu heard this news, his heart skipped a beat.

He worried not only for the naïve and easily embarrassed girl but also for the peace and stability on his side that was about to be irrevocably lost.

Clearly, the incident was targeted at him.

The Sakuragi Family was implicated because of him, and likely, this was just the beginning.

“Zheng Dajun might as well go and see if you can help with anything. I’ll have Granny go with you,” suggested Cimu Qingzi as Lu Wu frowned.

After hesitating for a moment, Lu Wu eventually nodded.

Thus, on his 19th day at the Cimu family’s residence, Lu Wu stepped out of the Cimu family’s gate for the first time.

Accompanying him was the granny that Cimu Qingzi had mentioned.

She was an elder exuding an aura of approaching end-of-life.

This woman, whose power peaked at the king level, was Cimu Qingzi’s strongest support within the Cimu family.

Cimu Qingzi’s decision to send her with Lu Wu showed how much she valued him.

Of course, Lu Wu saw it not so much as protection, but as surveillance to prevent him from escaping.

After all, the ruthless Cimu Qingzi wouldn’t be so kind-hearted.

Even when saying goodbye, Cimu Qingzi held his hand tightly, her eyes slightly red, as if they were parting in life and death.

Lu Wu wasn’t fooled.

In his view, she acted out of fear that he would escape!

What Lu Wu didn’t know was that almost at the moment he left the Cimu residence, a campaign against him and Cimu Qingzi officially commenced.

As the mastermind behind the scenes began to make moves, the entire operation started to unfold.

First, the Yueqian Family, which similarly trailed the seven major factions in District 11, sent an invitation to the ancient elder of the Cimu family.

This old fellow, who had stayed within the family for a decade, rare as it was, stepped out of his home.

Simultaneously, inside the Cimu family, personnel were shuffled frequently.

The undercurrents surging within the Cimu family began to roar towards the surface.

Meanwhile, as Lu Wu had been sent off, Cimu Qingzi’s expression remained unprecedentedly serene.

Seated like the eye of a raging storm, she watched the tumultuous winds and rising clouds with a cold eye.

Only when someone rudely pushed open her room door did Cimu Qingzi open her eyes and look icily at the uninvited group before her.

Her ice-cold gaze made the intruders shiver.

But quickly they straightened their backs.

After all, the woman before them was completely undone.

The Family Head had decided to strike against her, and after today she would fall from grace, no longer feared by anyone.

With this thought, a trace of mockery and ridicule formed on the lips of the group.

“The Family Head summons you!”

Cimu Qingzi responded not, retracting her cold gaze as she stood with an indifferent expression.

The group didn’t waste words. They surrounded Cimu Qingzi and escorted her out of her courtyard.

Throughout the process, Cimu Qingzi remained silent, incredibly cooperative, and was escorted through the Cimu residence towards the courtyard where Izumikawa Yan resided.

Along the way, everyone felt an unusual atmosphere.

Seeing the once high and mighty Princess Cimu now resembling a prisoner, many spectating eyes showed mockery and ridicule.

This cruel woman was finally facing her downfall.

Amidst the jeers and derogatory stares of the onlookers, Cimu Qingzi arrived at Izumikawa Yan’s courtyard.

At that moment, Izumikawa Yan, dressed in Bai Yi, sat in the middle of his courtyard making tea without looking up. With great presence, he pointed to a spot in front of him.

“Sit!”

In a manner befitting a prisoner, Cimu Qingzi took a seat before Izumikawa Yan without a word.

As the victor, Izumikawa Yan graciously filled a cup of tea for Cimu Qingzi.

…….

“It’s finally starting!”

As Izumikawa Yan made tea,  
 in another courtyard of the Cimu family, Cimu Tongzi was also preparing tea.

A careful observer would notice that Cimu Tongzi’s tea-making technique was almost identical to that of Izumikawa Yan, if not a tad less skilled.

Clearly, both had learned from the same master.

For them, the way of tea was not merely a means to boast but also a habit to steady emotions at crucial moments.

Today was a significant day for them both.

The more crucial the day, the more one needed a calm heart.

On this front, Izumikawa Yan did much better than Cimu Tongzi.

Despite both making tea, Cimu Tongzi’s emotions were noticeably unsettled.

He was excited; this was his first time orchestrating a plan as a flag-bearer.

Now, at the most critical moment, he really couldn’t contain his excitement.

Because if everything went as expected, it would be today.

Today, he would make his official debut, crushing two stepping stones to assert his formidable entrance, and taking the talent that had traversed Divine Blade Tower, Zhengdaguangming, into his hands, ushering in a new era for the Cimu family – an era belonging to him.

The mere thought of this scene made Cimu Tongzi tremble with exhilaration.

However, as Cimu Tongzi struggled to compose his emotions, a clamor suddenly erupted in his courtyard, and before he could react, a crowd barged in.

Seeing these people, Cimu Tongzi’s face darkened, realizing that an unexpected variable had occurred.

Yet the young man had truly remarkable composure and exhibited no flaws.

He calmly gazed at the group that had just taken Cimu Qingzi to Izumikawa Yan.

These people, when addressing Cimu Tongzi, were significantly more respectful than they had been to Cimu Qingzi, with the leader bowing slightly, “Young master, the Family Head invites you.”

Ten minutes later.

In the courtyard of Izumikawa Yan.

Izumikawa Yan couldn’t help but shake his head at the sibling pair before him.

Truly a pair of siblings who wouldn’t give peace of mind!

While lamenting, Izumikawa Yan’s gaze fell on his nephew.

At this moment, Cimu Tongzi appeared calm and collected, holding a cup of tea, sipping slowly, devoid of a loser’s dejection or a prisoner’s anxiety.

Lu Wu looked at Izumikawa Yan, Cimu Tongzi greeted him with a particularly pure and innocent smile, “Uncle, you truly are remarkable!”

A double entendre.

It was unclear if the praise was for Izumikawa Yan’s tactics or his tea ceremony skills.

“If you like, I can teach you.”

Izumikawa Yan chuckled as he poured more tea for Cimu Tongzi.

“Would Uncle really be willing?”

“You are the future of the Cimu family. What wouldn’t I be willing to give!

When you grow up, the entire Cimu family will be yours!”

Together, the pair initiated a second round of strategic negotiation at the tea table.

There were three seated, but in reality, only two were equals.

One stood with the mightiest battle force of the Cimu family behind him, the other in command of the family’s absolute resources.

One represented the future of the Cimu family, the other its present. As for Cimu Qingzi, in their eyes, she had always been nothing more than a pawn unfit for the light of day.

In the past, when Cimu Tongzi was younger and not yet in the public eye, there was no need for a Cimu Qingzi pawn.

Now that he had revealed himself, he too would step from behind the scenes into the spotlight.

In this situation, the existence of Cimu Qingzi held little significance.

Hence, both men tacitly ignored the other at the tea ceremony, focusing their energies on each other, on their impending game of wit.

Izumikawa Yan had never considered killing Cimu Tongzi, with that old guy backing him up.

He couldn’t kill him, nor did he dare to.

So what Izumikawa Yan could do, was to use this opportunity, to achieve a few goals.

Cimu Tongzi was also keenly aware of this.

Thus, both parties bluntly exchanged a few words before Cimu Tongzi spoke up directly.

“I’ve lost this round. Uncle, whatever you want, just name it.”

Izumikawa Yan wasn’t shy about his request and glanced at Cimu Qingzi before saying indifferently, “She has already sent Zheng Dajun out of the Cimu family. Since he’s gone, let’s not have him return!”

This was Izumikawa Yan’s core demand!

For him, Lu Wu absolutely could not live, his talent was too terrifying, and his existence posed a great threat to Izumikawa Yan.

He had to die.

So, in presenting his demands, Izumikawa Yan wasn’t asking, he was decreeing.

“And the same goes for the one who left with him; do not return either.

Furthermore, Tongzi, I hope you understand that the future of the Cimu family is yours, and no one can change that, but that future is ten years away.

I hope that before that future arrives, you will focus on honing yourself and not interfere with the affairs of the Cimu family.

As for Qingzi, I’ve arranged another marriage for you, with the third son of the Yueqian Family. I hope you will marry promptly and then move out of the Cimu family!”

Izumikawa Yan had laid out all his intentions.

He wanted a Cimu family that spanned ten years—all his own.

Or, to put it another way, he wanted the Cimu family to revert to the state it was before the advent of Lu Wu.

As for whether he would truly hand over the Cimu family after ten years, that remained unknown.

Regardless, Cimu Tongzi had no choice but to accept.

Defeat was defeat, and the price had to be paid. Cimu Tongzi wasn’t about to hesitate in this regard, nodding his head without delay.

Cimu Tongzi’s nod brought a smile to Izumikawa Yan’s face; he knew his objective had been achieved.

He was well aware of Cimu Tongzi’s character; once he nodded in agreement, he would not go back on his word.

Proud as he was, he would only contemplate how to defeat others with his own strength, rather than relying on Ibaraki Gangyan’s power.

As long as Cimu Tongzi didn’t rely on Ibaraki Gangyan’s power, Izumikawa Yan was willing to be the whetstone for him.

After all, given ten years, it was hard to say who would be the stone and who would be the blade after that time.

Thus, the two relatives came to a pleasant compromise, and Izumikawa Yan started to prepare tea to see off his guest; as for Cimu Qingzi, who had remained silent throughout, neither of them gave her a second thought.

They didn’t feel there was anything about her worth paying attention to.

She was nothing more than a useless chess piece after all.

However, just as Izumikawa Yan was about to serve tea and see off his guest, they noticed something was off with Cimu Qingzi.

Cimu Qingzi, who had remained silent up until now, finally spoke her first words since arriving.

Her gaze, cold as ice, was fixed on Izumikawa Yan in front of her, and she said slowly and clearly, “What are you going to do with Zheng Dajun?”

His slow, tens of beats behind reaction, this impotent rage on her face, left Izumikawa Yan somewhat speechless.

“I’ve already said, I’ve arranged another marriage for you…”

“Do you remember, I said something to you before?”

Cimu Qingzi interrupted Izumikawa Yan in an increasingly calm tone.

Izumikawa Yan, unwilling to bother with this woman, stood up intending to have his men see the guest out.

That’s when Cimu Qingzi finished her sentence, “I’ve said that if anyone lays a finger on my man, I will kill his entire family!”

As she spoke, a terrifying killing intent exploded from Cimu Qingzi’s body.

“King-level, how is this possible!”

Izumikawa Yan’s face turned pale, before he could recover from Cimu Qingzi’s sudden burst of aura, something even more horrifying occurred.

The moment Cimu Qingzi’s aura unleashed, she made her move, striking her younger brother beside her to death with a palm strike.

“Have you gone mad!”

Izumikawa Yan was petrified by the sudden turn of events.

He knew Cimu Qingzi was cruel, as did the entire Cimu family and even all of District 11, but Izumikawa Yan had never expected her to be cruel to the extent of daring to kill her own brother.

And Cimu Qingzi’s intended killing was not limited to just her brother; as Izumikawa Yan stood in shock, commotion arose in the courtyard of his residence.

“What’s going on?”

A bad premonition bubbled up inside Izumikawa Yan.

His premonition soon came true; a group burst forth, led by his own confidant, the person in charge of his courtyard’s security, and now, this confidant was holding his wife and children.

“It was you!”

Izumikawa Yan suddenly woke up, turning to look at Cimu Qingzi.

At this moment, Cimu Qingzi had just pulled her hand out from her brother’s, her gaze colder than ever before.

“I have captured his wife, children, and family,” Cimu Qingzi’s response sent shivers down Izumikawa Yan’s spine.

Only now did Izumikawa Yan realize that he had always underestimated Cimu Qingzi.

He had underestimated both her methods and her cruelty, but it was all too late.

Minutes later, Izumikawa Yan’s courtyard was a river of blood.

Izumikawa Yan’s family, from him to his wife and children, none were spared by Cimu Qingzi; they were all slaughtered.

In the vast Cimu family, only she remained as the direct descendant.

Almost at the moment Cimu Qingzi killed Izumikawa Yan, a cry full of anger and despair from an old man echoed; the elder of the Cimu family had returned…

# Chapter 357 - 357 354 Fury

﻿Chapter 357: 354 Fury Chapter 357: 354 Fury On the other side, on the way to the Sakuragi Family.

Lu Wu’s brow furrowed slightly.

He had already realized that their route was off—this wasn’t the way to the Sakuragi Family.

“Almost there!”

At the same moment Lu Wu noticed, Granny stopped in her tracks.

“I can only take you this far.”

“Ah?”

Lu Wu was stunned.

“She asked me to get you out of the Eleventh District, but I think she needs me more than you do, so I’ll leave you here. You should continue on your own from now on.

There’s no need to go to the Sakuragi Family anymore. There’s nothing happening there, and you might actually cause trouble if you go.

Just walk in this direction and keep going.”

As soon as these words were spoken, Lu Wu was truly bewildered.

“What’s the actual situation?”

Granny glanced at Lu Wu and said flatly, “For your sake, she’s planning to kill Izumikawa Yan and Cimu Tongzi today.”

This matter-of-fact statement shook Lu Wu to the core.

“Don’t joke around, how is that possible!”

After all, he had stayed with the Cimu family for nearly half a month and was very aware of who the two people Granny mentioned were.

One was Qingzi’s own uncle, and the other was Qingzi’s own brother—how could Qingzi possibly kill them?

No, wait!

Lu Wu suddenly woke up.

He suddenly recalled that, given Qingzi’s personality, such an act wasn’t impossible for her.

After all, he had witnessed the extent of this woman’s cruelty.

If necessary, he could be positive she would be capable of it.

However, Lu Wu felt that even if she did do it, it would be for her own sake, definitely not because of him.

Lu Wu was very self-aware.

Although he was of average appearance, he truly didn’t want to be like some scumbag who maxed out his flirting skills.

And he had only been with Qingzi for less than a month.

It was impossible for her to have fallen for him, much less to kill her uncle and brother for his sake.

So, this was a strategy of hers.

And at that moment, the Granny standing nearby, watching the Lu Wu before her who steadfastly refused to believe, couldn’t help but feel a surge of nameless fury, causing Lu Wu’s scalp to tingle as he vaguely sensed that he might get beaten up.

However, that beating didn’t come Lu Wu’s way.

Granny didn’t hit him.

She just looked at him with a face full of indignant resentment and then turned and left, heading toward the Cimu family.

Watching Granny’s retreating figure fade into the distance, Lu Wu fell into thought.

He was in a dilemma and hesitant. What should he do now—just dust himself off and leave, or go back to see what was happening?

“Maybe I should just go. Regardless of whether Qingzi is killing for my sake, whether she has succeeded in killing or not.

She’s undoubtedly stirring up trouble now, and it might not be minor.

If things go as expected, this mess is definitely going to be pinned on me.

The crazed old folks at the Cimu family will surely think I’m behind it, and if I go back now, I might lose my life, yeah, better scram.

Safety first!”

As he spoke, Lu Wu turned and made a break for it.

What Lu Wu didn’t know was that, at the same moment he turned and fled,

the Granny who had just left reappeared out of nowhere, watching the fading figure of Lu Wu, her eyes filled with an icy coldness.

An irresistible desire to kill erupted.

She really couldn’t restrain herself and wanted to kill Lu Wu right there and then.

But at the very moment she was about to strike, Granny held back.

Because killing him would drive Cimu Qingzi to despair, so in the end, she could only glare at Lu Wu and then turn to leave, hurrying in the direction of the Cimu family.

…

On the other side, within the Cimu family’s headquarters.

With a desolate and desperate roar, an old member of the Cimu family returned to their home.

The moment he got home, the old man clearly knew what had befallen the Cimu family.

Through his senses, he discovered that of the 67 direct members of the Cimu family, 65 had been killed.

Now, only two were left alive, one was himself and the other was the standing amid a pool of blood, Cimu Qingzi.

Beside Cimu Qingzi was the successor he had painstakingly cultivated over a whole decade as the next leader of the Cimu family.

Looking at his favorite.

The once buoyant and clever young man now lay gutted and pitiful like a dead dog, Ibaraki Gangyan lost control of his emotions, and his king-level terrifying aura burst forth completely.

This rage and murderous intent spread, causing everyone within the Cimu family to prostrate.

Of course, there was one exception, that was Cimu Qingzi.

At that moment, she stood proudly amidst the mountain of corpses and sea of blood, looking up at the elder above her, a smile on her face.

That was a smile of breaking free from shackles, filled with madness.

“Kneel before me!”

Endless fury surged as the old man pressed his aged arm on Cimu Qingzi’s head, smashing her into the ground like a nail.

“Why? Why would you do this?”

Ibaraki Gangyan couldn’t fathom, for the life of him, why Cimu Qingzi would do such a thing.

“The Cimu family has given you everything you have now, why would you betray the Cimu family? Why would you kill your uncle, your brother, and destroy the entire Cimu family?”

Amid Ibaraki Gangyan’s storm of rage, Cimu Qingzi remained unusually calm: “I did not betray the Cimu family, now all direct members of the Cimu family are dead, except for me, I am the Cimu family!”

This utter lack of remorse further enraged Ibaraki Gangyan, but Cimu Qingzi was indifferent, continuing: “Isn’t this all a consequence of your choices? You used my uncle and me as whetstones for him; you should have foreseen this day coming.

Why should I be the whetstone? Why can’t I be the blade?

Since you wouldn’t grant me what I desire, I had to take it myself.”

At these words from Cimu Qingzi, Ibaraki Gangyan trembled: “Do you think by doing this, you can have the Cimu family? Become the master of the Cimu family?”

Cimu Qingzi looked at him calmly: “Then you might as well kill me and completely extinguish the Cimu family!”

“I would rather let the Cimu family perish than allow it to fall into your hands.”

In a rage, Ibaraki Gangyan raised his hand to strike, intending to kill Cimu Qingzi on the spot.

As his palm descended, the whole world seemed to lose its color, and Cimu Qingzi was completely enveloped by the fear and despair of death, yet she appeared to have long been prepared to face this.

She knew that her ancestor wouldn’t be fazed by such a threat.

The most important thing to him in the whole Cimu family had been the carefully nurtured successor, Cimu Tongzi, whom he had lost. Killing him would mean she had to pay the corresponding price.

In other words, she had been prepared to face death the moment she killed Cimu Tongzi.

Thus, at this time, she seemed exceptionally calm, closing her eyes and quietly awaiting the arrival of her death.

However, her death did not come at that moment; Granny, who had started to head back half an hour ago, finally arrived in time.

As Ibaraki Gangyan’s palm struck out, Granny exploded with all her power to save Cimu Qingzi.

“I’ve got this!”

After barely blocking a strike from Ibaraki Gangyan, Granny pulled Cimu Qingzi up.

“Run!”

“Run? Can we even escape?”

In another surge of fury, Ibaraki Gangyan waved his hand, a force spreading out, sealing off the entire Cimu family estate.

“Oh no!”

Granny’s face changed.

She was well aware that this was Ibaraki Gangyan’s domain; escaping within this domain was almost an impossible task.

Meanwhile, at the same time, Cimu Qingzi, who had not died, opened her eyes and saw Granny, clearly displeased between her brows.

“Why have you come back? I didn’t ask you to come back! What will he do now that you’re here?”

The woman who wasn’t afraid to face death panicked for the first time.

This panic reminded Granny of Lu Wu, who had just turned and walked away without looking back, instantly infuriating her. “If I hadn’t come back, you would have died!”

“But your return is useless, he is still in great danger right now…”

“He?”

As Cimu Qingzi grew anxious,  
 Meanwhile, Ibaraki Gangyan’s eyebrows slightly raised.

A murderous intention once again ferociously erupted.

“I was wondering why you took such an extreme course of action all of a sudden, it turns out it was that man called Zhengdaguangming who incited you.

Very well, very well, a fine Zhengdaguangming indeed.

To think he could make the Cimu family’s princess slaughter her own Cimu family, how splendid!”

Snarling with a grim laugh, Ibaraki Gangyan fixed his gaze on Granny. “Speak, where is he?”

“I can’t tell!”

Cimu Qingzi was in a panic.

But Granny ignored her and turned her attention to Ibaraki Gangyan across from her.

“If I give you his location, can you spare Miss Qingzi?”

“Yes!”

Ibaraki Gangyan nodded his head without hesitation, but Granny didn’t believe him. “Let Miss Qingzi leave first.”

“Alright!”

Ibaraki Gangyan was particularly amenable, opening his Domain without a second word. Seeing this, Granny was overjoyed and turned around to tell Cimu Qingzi to flee for her life, but as she turned, she saw Cimu Qingzi coldly pulling out a dagger.

“Miss…”

Granny was startled, and at the same moment, the dagger flashed, with Cimu Qingzi’s blade aiming straight for Granny’s throat.

The brutal and sudden attack stunned Granny, but just as the dagger was about to slit Granny’s throat, Cimu Qingzi’s face struggled, and the blade turned, stabbing herself instead.

Clearly, this woman wasn’t utterly heartless; there were some people she couldn’t bring herself to harm.

She was more willing to die herself to save Lu Wu than to kill Granny.

As Cimu Qingzi turned the blade on herself, Granny also snapped awake, her first instinct was to save her, but it was too late. Fortunately, someone was in time. When Cimu Qingzi’s blade was about to pierce her own throat, her hand froze.

Someone had taken control of her, and it was Ibaraki Gangyan.

Although he wanted to kill Cimu Qingzi, she couldn’t die at this moment.

Cimu Qingzi’s recent actions confirmed further for him that she had killed her own family for Lu Wu.

So now, his hatred was more focused on Lu Wu.

Until he had news of Lu Wu, Cimu Qingzi could not die.

On Granny’s part, she was shaken by Cimu Qingzi’s actions, sweating coldly as she looked at the firm-faced Cimu Qingzi, her neck pierced and bleeding, Granny was filled with immense pity and immediately grabbed the dagger from Cimu Qingzi’s hand.

“Why are you so foolish? What about him makes it worth sacrificing so much for?”

In Granny’s eyes, Lu Wu was just a jerk.

A jerk who knew Cimu Qingzi was in danger and still turned to run.

It was ridiculous that Cimu Qingzi had killed her uncle and brother for such a jerk, even ready to give up her own life.

“He’s not worth it!”

“He is worth it!”

Cimu Qingzi looked at Granny in front of her.

Knowing that neither killing Granny nor herself would save Lu Wu, she could only try to convince Granny, to let her know that all she had done for Lu Wu was worth it.

To convince Granny, Cimu Qingzi first had to convince herself.

So at this moment, she asked herself when had she fallen in love with Lu Wu?

“Zheng Dajun would cook for me, tie my scarf, serve me my favorite dishes, watch me eat earnestly, and help me tuck the hair that fell in front of my eyes…

Zheng Dajun didn’t do anything earth-shattering for me.”

“But the days spent by his side were the happiest and most relaxed of my life.

By his side, I was no longer a pawn for anyone, nor an enemy. I didn’t need to don layers of armor and disguise.

I could laugh when I felt like laughing and cry when I felt like crying.

I even started to feel that being alive was a beautiful thing.”

For Cimu Qingzi, who had been thrust into the limelight since childhood, deliberately suppressed and bullied, Lu Wu was like a ray of light shining into her dark life.

That beam of light was one of the few warmth in her life.

It was the most precious thing to her.

For him, she could do anything.

But Granny couldn’t understand this sentiment of hers, let alone Granny, even Ibaraki Gangyan, or even Lu Wu couldn’t understand it.

Especially Lu Wu.

At this moment, Lu Wu, still lurking in the shadows, remained vigilant and confused.

He even wondered if this girl knew he couldn’t stand it and had sneaked back quietly, knowing he was near and deliberately spoke this way?

Yes, that must be it. Cimu Qingzi’s schemes were that terrifying.

Meanwhile, Granny, looking at the pitiful figure of Cimu Qingzi before her, shook her head, filled with reluctance, but ultimately had to shatter Cimu Qingzi’s illusions, “You’ve been deceived by him; he’s nothing but a scoundrel. When he knew you were in danger, he didn’t hesitate to turn around and run.”

Granny thought these words would shatter Cimu Qingzi’s fantasies.

Even Lu Wu thought so, but to his surprise, Cimu Qingzi laughed upon hearing this.

“He ran? That really does sound like his style.”

“You’re not angry?” Granny was astonished.

“Why should I be angry? I’m barely able to feel happy.

It’s better that he ran than to come back and face death, right?”

“But you, for him…”

“What I do for him is my business. It’s unreasonable to expect him to reciprocate just because I gave something, right? That would be too selfish!”

Cimu Qingzi’s words caused a violent emotional upheaval in the hidden Lu Wuqing.

He had to admit that at this moment his heart was pounding violently, blood was spurting, and his rationality was on the verge of shutting down.

He could only keep reminding himself.

It’s fake, all fake, it must be fake!

But while Lu Wu struggled and was distracted, he didn’t notice someone near death behind him made a sudden burst of effort. This unexpected episode startled Lu Wu and also exposed him.

“Who?”

Ibaraki Gangyan frowned and waved his hand, flinging Lu Wu out of hiding.

“Zhengdaguangming?!!”

As Lu Wu’s figure was exposed, Ibaraki Gangyan was slightly stunned, then reacted, an endless fury bursting forth as he roared.

“Die, old man!”

The enraged old man struck with his palm, and the fear of death enveloped Lu Wu completely.

In that moment, Lu Wu, acting on instinct, reached for his sword, preparing to battle. At the same moment, the controlled Cimu Qingzi seized the opportunity to break free and, without hesitation, threw herself out to shield Lu Wu from the blow.

“Puchi,” a sound.

The palm that struck Cimu Qingzi went right through her abdomen; half of her body was obliterated, leaving only her head relatively intact.

Facing Lu Wu as she lost consciousness, she opened her mouth to speak though no words came out; but Lu Wu could make out the shape of her lips forming the words ‘run quickly’.

At this moment, Lu Wu was completely dumbfounded.

Subconsciously wanting to convince himself this was fake, a feint, he immediately dismissed that thought as it came to his lips.

“Fake my arse! Fake or not, I’m accepting it, Ibaraki Gangyan, I will have you dead!”

At that moment, Lu Wu erupted in fury as the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword left its sheath and a terrifying Divine Sword Skill slashed forth…

……

Asking for subscriptions, asking for votes.

Things have been busy for the past few days, so updates have been scarce, please forgive me; I will make it up once I’m through this busy period.

# Chapter 358 - 358 355 utterly destroys the will

﻿Chapter 358: 355 utterly destroys the will Chapter 358: 355 utterly destroys the will “Die, you bastard!”

With Lu Wu’s furious roar.

The Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword was drawn!

The Divine Sword Skill slashed forth.

In an instant, the sky above the Cimu family was covered with dark clouds, a scene like the end of the world appeared.

In this changing of heaven and earth, Lu Wu’s sword struck Ibaraki Gangyan.

The power of the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword and Lu Wu’s nearly King-level power fully erupted, making this sword even more terrifying than it was half a month ago.

When the sword fell, Ibaraki Gangyan shuddered in his mind.

A look of shock briefly crossed his face.

What shocked him was not the power of Lu Wu’s sword—though strong, it was merely at the King-level tier, nothing to someone of his level.

What shocked Ibaraki Gangyan was what Lu Wu’s sword contained.

It was a special mental realm, a special power, something that even those above King-level deeply coveted.

This caused Ibaraki Gangyan, who had initially planned to crush Lu Wu with a palm strike, to withhold his force and abandon retaliation, choosing instead to endure Lu Wu’s sword.

“Zi zi zi!”

Lu Wu’s Divine Sword Skill struck Ibaraki Gangyan.

The fearsome attack caused no harm to Ibaraki Gangyan, the sword’s light continuously extinguished in front of him, emitting a piercing sound.

Simultaneously, Ibaraki Gangyan closed his eyes, his face tinted with color and revealing ecstasy, obviously comprehending something from Lu Wu’s sword.

When Ibaraki Gangyan opened his eyes again, his gaze toward Lu Wu not only held hatred and murderous intent but also a deeper covetousness.

At this moment, Lu Wu, who had already struck, should have been fully aware of the other’s strength.

Undoubtedly, even if he might not be on par with Feng Xiu, Ibaraki Gangyan’s terrifying power was not something he could confront.

According to Lu Wu’s normal character, he should have turned and fled.

But at this moment, Lu Wu clenched the longsword in his hand, making a choice completely different from his usual self.

Despite breaking his head trying to understand why the vicious Cimu Qingzi would change so drastically, as though she’d become a different person, and why she’d go to such lengths for him.

But the scene just now was too much for Lu Wu to bear.

Even the usually cautious Lu Wu was completely incited and wanted to kill Ibaraki Gangyan despite knowing he couldn’t possibly be the opponent.

The enraged Lu Wu was about to lunge at Ibaraki Gangyan again but was suddenly grabbed by someone.

Granny had complex feelings about the sudden arrival of Lu Wu.

On one hand, she was relieved that at least Lu Wu could come back.

But this relief quickly turned into anger due to Cimu Qingzi’s plight.

She felt that Lu Wu was indirectly responsible for harming Cimu Qingzi.

Even so, Granny still chose to protect Lu Wu at this moment.

She grabbed the headstrong Lu Wu and passed the severely injured Qingzi into his arms.

“Take the young lady and go!”

As she spoke, she lunged herself towards Ibaraki Gangyan.

As she lunged forward, a mournful cry of a great beast burst from within her, indicating that she had unleashed her Beast Soul and was prepared to fight to the death to stop Ibaraki Gangyan.

At the same time, on Lu Wu’s side.

He, in the midst of his fury, was about to pounce again, but his expression suddenly changed.

Because when he held Cimu Qingzi, he discovered there was a problem with the lady’s attribute.

…

Name: Cimu Qingzi  
 Power: King Level 1 Star  
 Summoned Beast: Ghost Cut (Evil Artifact) (King Level 1 Star) (Severely injured and in a coma)  
 Skills: Omitted  
 Summoner Talent: Life towards death (When dealt a fatal attack, forcibly keeps blood locked for a period of time, if sufficient energy can be replenished within a certain time there’s a hope of survival.)  
 …

Staring at Cimu Qingzi’s attribute, Lu Wu was stunned, she wasn’t dead?

Indeed, thanks to Cimu Qingzi’s Talent, she was in a horrific state, and her life force was rapidly draining away, but she was indeed still alive.

This pulled Lu Wu out of his state of fury.

His attention shifted from the impossible task of killing Ibaraki Gangyan, to taking Cimu Qingzi and leaving to find a way to save her.

In this regard, Lu Wu did have an ace up his sleeve.

He immediately took out the random teleportation item Zhang Yunyi had given him to prepare for escape.

However, Ibaraki Gangyan was not to be taken lightly.

As Lu Wu took out the item, Ibaraki Gangyan expanded his Domain again.

The instant the Domain was expanded, Lu Wu found his item malfunctioning; usage was possible, but the casting time increased, and during the cast, it was clear Ibaraki Gangyan had noticed what he was attempting.

“Escaping? Can you really escape?!”

With a cold snort from Ibaraki Gangyan, his Domain trembled, and Lu Wu’s casting was interrupted.

At the same time, Ibaraki Gangyan repelled Granny, who was entangling him, freeing his hand to reach out towards Lu Wu.

The force from the full-blown strike of someone above King-level was terrifying, not aimed to kill Lu Wu, yet the pressure was immense.

Lu Wu felt as though the air around him had solidified.

He struggled with all his might to resist but found he couldn’t move at all.

At this moment, Granny still had the strength to struggle.

A more miserable beast’s cry rang out, Granny’s power surged wildly, instantly reaching the ceiling of King-level, barely brushing the threshold above King-level.

“Break!”

Granny gave her all to break open Ibaraki Gangyan’s Domain, but her efforts proved futile.

Beings below King-level, no matter how hard they tried, could not match an opponent above that level.

Granny’s forceful outburst resulted in Ibaraki Gangyan suppressing her with a palm.

Not only was Granny suppressed, Lu Wu was also seized by Ibaraki Gangyan.

As he grabbed Lu Wu, Ibaraki Gangyan immediately focused on the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword in Lu Wu’s hand.

With a motion, the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword passed from Lu Wu’s hands into his.

At this moment, he seemed to have forgotten his own grandson, even the tragic death of 65 members of the Cimu family, his eyes only had room for the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword.

Ibaraki Gangyan had advanced to a level above King-level eighty years ago.

Eighty years ago, he broke through during an unusual occurrence, full of youthful vigor with aspirations of taking a step further above King-level, reaching the realms spoken of in legend.

But he quickly realized that the path above King-level was much harder than he anticipated.

Since his advancement, for decades, he had not made even a single step forward.

While just moments ago, as Lu Wu unleashed the “Divine Sword Skill,” he discovered that his power, stagnant for decades, seemed to have shifted, allowing him to see hope for advancement.

The elation even allowed him to temporarily set aside his hatred for his beloved grandson’s murder and not kill Lu Wu on the spot.

At this very moment, Lu Wu observed the expression on Ibaraki Gangyan’s face and, without saying another word, activated “Beast Soul Burst.” But this time, what burst forth was not Han but the “Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword.”

“Clang!”

The sound of a sword’s mournful cry shook the air, and the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword trembled so vigorously it pained Ibaraki Gangyan’s heart.

“Stop it! Do you want to die?”

Furious, Ibaraki Gangyan grabbed Lu Wu by the throat, and the more he did so, the more at ease Lu Wu became.

It seemed he would not die just yet.

Lu Wu ceased the “Beast Soul Burst,” his eyes fixed on the old man before him.

“Whatever you want, I’ll cooperate, but before that, could you please save Qingzi first? It’s a precondition for our cooperation!”

Ibaraki Gangyan narrowed his eyes and asked coldly, “Are you threatening me?”

“Yes,” Lu Wu nodded.

Ibaraki Gangyan looked at Lu Wu, hesitated for a moment, and finally extended his hand to draw away the energy in Qingzi’s wounds belonging to him and poured a bottle of green potion over her injuries.

Lu Wu glanced at it, and the potion was of no small potency. After one bottle, Lu Wu could clearly feel Qingzi’s breath growing stronger and her wounds healing slowly.

The other party’s decisiveness and generosity took him by surprise.

But the actions did not stop there. After administering the potion to Qingzi, he struck Granny with the back of his hand—a single slap causing her feeble body to collapse on one side.

This move caused Lu Wu’s pupils to contract sharply.

Then, Ibaraki Gangyan remarked, “I hear the Sakuragi Family is on good terms with you?”

That statement turned Lu Wu’s face an iron shade of blue.

Ibaraki Gangyan, as the true master behind the Cimu family, now demonstrated the strength and tactics he should possess.

Saving Qingzi meant grasping Lu Wu’s bottom line, ensuring he would not take any radical actions that Ibaraki Gangyan would not want to see.

Striking Granny was to show Lu Wu the price of a threat, and mentioning the Sakuragi Family was to make clear who truly had the upper hand.

In just a few moves, Lu Wu was completely under his thumb.

And after securing Lu Wu, Ibaraki Gangyan’s gaze returned to the “Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword.”

“This sword had only erupted half a month ago, right?

How is it that you can make it erupt again now?

And more so, to unleash a might and power not present during the last eruption half a month ago?”

Ibaraki Gangyan was particularly interested in this, as he had witnessed the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword’s previous eruption—potent in strength and aura, but lacking the divine essence that could stimulate the advancement of his power.

Curious, Ibaraki Gangyan pressed on.

“It is capable of absorbing the power of other Divine Artifacts to enhance its own strength!”

Lu Wu did not conceal this aspect and answered honestly.

“How does it absorb power? Are there any restrictions?”

“Direct absorption, once a week, not exceeding one major level of its own strength.”

…

Ibaraki Gangyan inquired in great detail about all aspects of the “Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword.”

Lu Wu answered seriously.

Their exchange was so amiable that one could hardly tell these two had just been bitter enemies locked in a life-or-death struggle.

In this absurd world, anything is possible.

After roughly understanding the situation of the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword, Ibaraki Gangyan found a Lord Level Divine Artifact among the still-warm corpses of the Cimu family and handed it to Lu Wu, asking him to demonstrate how the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword absorbed energy on the spot.

Lu Wu cooperated honestly, activated his Summoner Talent called “King of Divine Artifacts,” and spent half an hour draining the energy from the Lord Level Divine Artifact.

Ibaraki Gangyan watched as the state of the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword improved continuously with the absorption, eventually not only returning to its pre-Divine Wrath condition but even surpassing it.

Seeing the restoration of the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword, Ibaraki Gangyan couldn’t wait to have Lu Wu hit him with another blast.

After another bout of chaos.

Ibaraki Gangyan received something satisfactory.

This time, he felt a clearer enhancement of his power.

The Divine Wrath of the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword indeed could help him increase his strength.

Once this effect was confirmed, it meant that for the time being, both Lu Wu’s life and Cimu Qingzi’s life were spared.

Ibaraki Gangyan wouldn’t let Lu Wu die easily until he had fully exploited Lu Wu’s value.

But not letting Lu Wu die didn’t mean he would let Lu Wu off easily.

After Lu Wu used the second Divine Wrath, Ibaraki Gangyan took away everything from Lu Wu, including the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword.

Then, Lu Wu’s power was sealed, and he was taken into the dungeons of the Cimu family.

“Give him the cruelest punishment of the Cimu family every day, and don’t let him die!”

After dropping such a line, Lu Wu fell into the Cimu family’s dungeon.

On the first day of his entry into the Cimu family, Lu Wu experienced the cruelest punishment of the Cimu family.

It was a punishment that seemed gentle at a glance.

A punishment that left no visible marks on the surface.

They would inject a special liquid into the veins of the punished, which coursed through the body with the blood and caused unimaginable pain during its flow.

Even the resilient Lu Wu and Han, experiencing it for the first time, couldn’t bear it.

Lu Wu lasted only half an hour before fainting.

When he fainted, no one cared. The executioner would wake him up and make him endure the entire punishment consciously.

Ibaraki Gangyan wanted Lu Wu to suffer this kind of punishment to break his spirit before using various methods to tame him into an obedient dog.

This process wouldn’t take long.

Even the strongest person lasted at most seven days; Ibaraki Gangyan didn’t think Lu Wu could endure any longer than the previous one. Even if Lu Wu could withstand more than the previous man, it didn’t matter.

He had plenty of time.

If not in 7 days, then in 14 days; if not in 14 days, then in 28 days.

Ibaraki Gangyan believed that one day he would tame Lu Wu into the most obedient dog.

While he was tormenting Lu Wu, he was also making every effort to save Cimu Qingzi.

He wasn’t fully dedicated to saving Cimu Qingzi just because she was the last direct descendant of the Cimu family.

He just suddenly felt that letting Cimu Qingzi die so easily was too lenient for her.

To kill a person, you must crush their heart!

Didn’t she slaughter the entire Cimu family for Lu Wu?

Ibaraki Gangyan planned to nurse her back to health and then have her kill Lu Wu, or have Lu Wu kill her.

In short, he would do whatever it took to make them miserable.

# Chapter 359 - 359 356 Imprisoned Lu Wu

﻿Chapter 359: 356 Imprisoned Lu Wu Chapter 359: 356 Imprisoned Lu Wu the dungeon of the Cimu family.

In the dim environment, Lu Wu lay in the corner, twitching and trembling slightly.

He looked quite miserable and pitiable.

In fact, he indeed was rather pitiful.

He had just experienced an unprecedented pain in his life.

That kind of experience, as if thousands of insects and ants were biting all over one’s body, not to mention him; even for Han, it was a bit too much.

After enduring a round of torture, the little guy suddenly felt that all the beatings he had taken before were in vain. How pointless!

He kept asking Lu Wu when the next round would come.

With a spirit as if saying, if you’re a bird, you have to endure the most poisonous beating.

This had infuriated Lu Wu so much that, if the conditions had allowed, he would have dragged this silly bird out and beaten it up.

This was the Cimu family’s most terrifying punishment. Couldn’t you show some respect?

Also, did you realize they were now prisoners? Could you show some respect for this status?

Alas!

Lu Wu never would have imagined that his peaceful days would disappear so abruptly.

He had not expected to end up in such a situation.

Putting aside the silly bird, he wondered what was the cause of all this?

After careful consideration, Lu Wu had to conclude that it was probably because he was too outstanding.

If he had been more ordinary, he wouldn’t have caught Old Man Sakuragi’s eye.

He wouldn’t have ventured into Divine Blade Tower, nor encountered Cimu Qingzi, and then none of the subsequent events would have happened.

But now that everything had happened, there was no use complaining about his excellence. What he needed to do, what he should do now, was to find a way to get out of this situation.

His current situation was really wretched.

“My power has been sealed off, the old Cimu guy’s energy is constantly suppressing my energy inside my body.

Any changes in my energy, whether it suddenly increases or decreases, he knows it all too well.

Under these circumstances, trying to pull any sneaky move is harder than reaching the sky.”

“Moreover, even if I manage to pull some sneaky moves and enhance my power without him noticing, his power remains formidable. I doubt I could defeat him in a year and a half.

Given the level of attention he’s paying to me now, escaping probably wouldn’t be much easier than defeating him.”

“My mask has been removed and the old guy has seen my face, and took away something from me.

Under these circumstances, the chances of my identity being exposed are quite high, and it’s hard to say what would happen if it gets exposed.”

……

Lu Wu pondered for a long time and realized he didn’t have any means to free himself.

Even in the best-case scenario, where he could escape the old man’s energy monitoring and enhance his power, he’d have to stay in this dreadful place for a year and a half.

And with that, Lu Wu still had to be extremely cautious.

If the old man discovered his identity, or mastered the Divine Sword Skill of the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword and didn’t need him anymore, he could be done for in minutes.

It could be said that his life was completely out of his own hands now.

This kind of insecurity, coupled with being powerless, was something Lu Wu had never encountered since his transmigration.

“I’ve shown off, I’ve been beaten, I’ve been incarcerated.

I guess this makes a complete life, huh?”

While complaining, a deep sense of helplessness surged in his heart, making Lu Wu sigh heavily.

“Was I kicked by a donkey back then? If I hadn’t come back, none of this would have happened.”

Although he said it, Lu Wu didn’t actually regret his impulsive decision much.

After all, the scene where Cimu Qingzi blocked a blow for him had a huge impact and shock on him.

“Although I still feel that this girl might be playing me, and couldn’t possibly fall for me so easily, if she can act to this extent, it’s worth it for me to go to jail for her.

Yeah, I’ve already gone to prison for her; I might as well help her take down the old man next time and save her, then we’ll be even.

I’m not that kind of scumbag like Lu Haikong; I have a wife, and I definitely won’t mess around outside, absolutely not!

But, what if she insists on requiting me with her body in the future?”

Obviously, this guy wasn’t really nervous; even in such circumstances, he could still think about these messy things.

“Let’s stop thinking about these things for now and think about what else I can do. If I can’t get out, I won’t have to worry about anything else.”

Lu Wu shook his head, pulling his attention back from the messy thoughts to focus on his current situation and think about what he could do.

“There’s not much I can do now, but there are still a few options.

One is to study that old guy’s energy; I have to do that.

If I don’t thoroughly understand it, I can’t enhance my strength, and anything else I do is useless.

The other is ‘Unyielding·Growth’; I’m subjected to one punishment session a day, and the power feedback from it is not small.

Before I figure out the old guy’s energy, I need to find a way to focus the feedback on strengthening my body.

And then there’s Divine Sword Skill!”

“Divine Sword Skill, this thing.

Initially, Lu Wuyi just thought it was not much different from the ‘Sky Dominating Stick’ skill, maybe just a level higher.

But after this experience, Lu Wuyi realized he might have underestimated Divine Sword Skill.

The power contained within Divine Sword Skill, which made that old thing temporarily give up on revenge, was definitely much more terrifying than Lu Wuyi had imagined.

This might be Lu Wuyi’s chance to escape.

So, Lu Wuyi decided to devote more effort into researching Divine Sword Skill.

And in the study of Divine Sword Skill, he who had just used it twice consecutively had advanced a step further.

During the previous punishment, to divert his own attention, he concentrated on the insights gained from using Divine Sword Skill twice in succession.

As usual, based on his own ‘Lu’s Swordsmanship’, he absorbed those two insights.

The absorption of these insights greatly advanced Lu Wuyi’s ‘Lu Wu Swordsmanship.’

In terms of mastery level and skill level of swordsmanship, both had advanced significantly.

Lu Wuyi even had the confidence that with the greatly advanced ‘Lu Wu Swordsmanship’, he could integrate his own power and break through to King-level within half a month.

But with the old man’s energy watching inside his body, Lu Wuyi didn’t dare to act recklessly.

After all, even if his power broke through to King-level, he was definitely no match for that old man; if he stirred up trouble out of this, Lu Wuyi was worried he wouldn’t spare his life.

‘I should first study the old guy’s energy!’

After a deep sigh, Lu Wuyi started to get busy, kicking off his life in prison.

Well, the days Lu Wuyi was imprisoned were not too bad.

Of course, that is if one ignores the dim environment of the dungeon and the bullying by the jail staff.

Now, Lu Wuyi was like a tiger fallen to the plains.

The miserable him could even be bullied by minor jailers.

Partly because Qingzi Cimu had killed not a few, and many in the dungeon bore grudges against Qingzi Cimu and wanted to take it out on Lu Wuyi since they couldn’t find Qingzi.

After all, wasn’t Lu Wuyi Qingzi’s man?

Living on someone’s charity meant suffering for their actions.

That wasn’t a big deal; it was just punishment, and Lu Wuyi was quite accustomed and skilled at getting beaten.

But what Lu Wuyi couldn’t stand was the strange and somewhat aggressive look in some people’s eyes.

That made Lu Wuyi very vigilant.

However, during the half month that Lu Wuyi was imprisoned, those guys who seemed to have bad intentions didn’t dare to do much to him; at most, they just verbally teased Lu Wuyi, so his days were relatively comfortable.

Every day, he would just get beaten up and then focus his energy on studying the old man’s energy.

Additionally, in this half-month, Lu Wuyi went out twice and met the old man twice.

As a tool for the old man’s training, he had to deliver a ‘Divine Wrath.’

Every two weeks twice, the old man made some progress, but Lu Wuyi himself made even greater progress.

The consecutive use of Divine Sword Skill twice elevated Lu Wuyi’s understanding of Divine Sword Skill to a certain level and also skyrocketed the ‘Lu’s Swordsmanship’ to a certain level.

Now, the skill level of ‘Lu’s Swordsmanship’ had broken through the ‘Must Kill’ level, reaching the ‘Ultimate Skill’ level.

In terms of skill mastery, it slightly decreased with the rise in skill level, but it still stabilized at the ‘Grandmaster’ level.

Also, in the realm aspect, after half a month of grinding.

Using ‘Divine Wrath’ twice consecutively, Lu Wuyi’s ‘Domain’ had already consolidated to a point where, if he wished, he could activate it at any time.

It could be said that in the past half-month, although the quality of Lu Wuyi’s life had greatly declined, his power had soared significantly.

But over the past half-month, Lu Wuyi hadn’t been able to find a way to enhance his power without being noticed by the old man’s energy surveillance.

He did find a way to break free from the old man’s restrictions.

But it wasn’t very useful.

One reason was that he hadn’t really used it and didn’t know what the effect would be like, and the system couldn’t provide data in this regard either.

Another reason was that even if it were useful, once Lu Wuyi broke free, the other party would immediately notice, and then Lu Wuyi …

‘Wait a minute!’

Lu Wuyi suddenly woke up.

‘So what if the old guy notices? He definitely won’t kill me for the time being. If I forcefully break his energy confinement, he would just increase the intensity of the confinement.

And moreover, if I fail, he wouldn’t react too drastically. A little resistance might actually lower his guard.’

After pondering it over again, Lu Wuyi thought it might be feasible.

Thus, Lu Wuyi started his action.

He first called over that guy with bad intentions towards him.

‘What’s up, calling me over so boldly, have you thought it through? Don’t worry, I’ll treat you well…’

‘Treat my foot, die for all I care!’

Lu Wuyi grabbed that guy all at once, directly erupted, triggered the old man’s energy, and temporarily burst out his own power managing to kill that man.

And the moment that person was killed, the old man’s power fiercely surged inside Lu Wuyi’s body, Lu Wuyi was seriously injured and directly spurted out a mouthful of blood…”

# Chapter 360 - 360 Method of breaking through 367

﻿Chapter 360: Method of breaking through 367 Chapter 360: Method of breaking through 367 The Cimu family.

Old Thief Cimu had just completed a new round of cultivation.

His complexion suddenly changed.

With a flash, he descended into the dungeon of the Cimu family at a terrifying speed.

Upon arriving at the dungeon, what he saw were two bodies drenched in blood.

One was Lu Wu’s, and the other was that of the man Lu Wu had killed.

The man who had been violently killed by Lu Wu didn’t need mentioning, his end was pitiful, and Lu Wu wasn’t much better off.

His resistance had provoked a backlash of energy from Old Thief Cimu.

The power above King-level was terrifying, not to mention Lu Wu, who was below King-level, even those at the King-level Peak would be severely injured by it.

Watching Lu Wu’s breath rapidly weaken, the expression on Old Thief Cimu’s face was extremely ugly.

After all, he still couldn’t allow Lu Wu, his tool, to die.

With no other choice, he had to rescue Lu Wu immediately.

Old Thief Cimu truly lived up to the name of the real master of the Cimu family, with a wealth that was incredibly abundant, and he casually took out several bottles of Legendary Level potions to administer to Lu Wu.

After a few potions, Lu Wu’s injuries began to slowly heal.

At this point, Old Thief Cimu conducted an investigation of the situation.

After asking the warden responsible for overseeing Lu Wu, Old Thief Cimu basically understood what had happened.

After understanding the reason for Lu Wu’s sudden outburst, Old Thief Cimu didn’t say anything more, since he still needed to use Lu Wu, his tool.

Moreover, Lu Wu’s outbreak had made him aware that Lu Wu’s current state was probably on the verge of mental collapse.

Coupled with severe injuries, if pushed further, it was possible that Lu Wu would end his own life.

He had to give Lu Wu a glimmer of hope and slowly domesticate him.

Under these circumstances, Lu Wu’s outburst had also significantly improved his own treatment.

When Lu Wu woke up again, he found that the cell he was in had changed.

It went from the originally dark and damp dungeon to a standard small single room, and the attitudes of the guards towards him had improved a lot.

The leading guard, upon seeing Lu Wu wake up, clearly indicated to him.

This was because of Lu Wu’s performance over the past half-month, which had cleansed a little bit of sin, so the benevolent Old Thief Cimu had granted him this favor.

He told Lu Wu to continue working hard, to earnestly serve Old Thief Cimu, and to strive to cleanse the sins on him as soon as possible. Perhaps then, Old Thief Cimu might release him.

This was the warden’s routine brainwashing tactic.

Whether it was during torture, feeding, or any other time, they would always come up with similar rhetoric.

The aim was to subtly influence Lu Wu’s spirit.

To brainwash Lu Wu into becoming Old Thief Cimu’s dog.

This routine might have been effective on others, but it was completely useless on Lu Wu.

He didn’t listen to the warden’s words at all, waking up and, after glancing at his environment, closing his eyes to check his own condition.

“The energy within my body has become more concentrated, obviously replenished by Old Thief Cimu.”

Regarding this, Lu Wu had already anticipated.

And he didn’t care too much.

What Lu Wu cared about now was the result of his recent struggle.

Overall, the gains weren’t small.

Aside from the improved living environment he had already seen, Lu Wu felt his physical strength had significantly increased, and he had reached the Lord Level of power.

That is to say, without unleashing energy, he should be able to nearly unleash Lord Level combat power.

Of course, this level of combat power wasn’t very useful to him now.

The most important gain for Lu Wu was that his struggle confirmed his previously contemplated method of breaking free from Old Thief Cimu’s energy control was effective.

A full burst of power would definitely be able to break free.

But the cost would be considerable injury, and the other party would detect it immediately, so using it to escape was practically impossible.

However, this breakout attempt gave Lu Wu a deeper understanding of Old Thief Cimu’s energy structure.

“The energy of Old Thief Cimu in my body is like a safety switch. As soon as the energy in my body bursts to a certain level, he can sense it instantly, and the energy he left in my body will also react.

Therefore, I can’t use energy without his permission, let alone advancing my strength. My energy must be kept below a certain threshold.”

“However, on the other hand, as long as my energy is maintained below a threshold, and remains in a specific calm state, the switch can be left untouched.

It seems that I’ve got room to maneuver!”

A spark of inspiration flashed in Lu Wu’s mind, and he immediately began to wholly invest himself in verifying his conjecture.

Lu Wu started with the “Universal Charger” and “Lu Family Swordsmanship” as the core, beginning to fuse the power of the “Power of the Ocean” Skill.

While fusing, Lu Wu began to spread his own power, striving to keep it within a certain threshold.

This task required extremely careful operation.

Fortunately, the progress of “Lu Family Swordsmanship” over the past half-month provided Lu Wu with the resources to operate.

After a full three hours, Lu Wu successfully fused the power of the “Power of the Ocean” Skill without triggering Old Thief Cimu’s energy switch.

Having achieved this, Lu Wu was both startled and overjoyed.

“My conjecture is not wrong; this is doable!

As long as the energy is maintained at a certain threshold, even if I break through to King-level, Old Thief Cimu won’t notice.”

Even under this state, Lu Wu realized that his strength wouldn’t increase significantly upon breaking through.

He also didn’t dare to increase it too much.

But as long as Lu Wu could break through to King-level, the system of Lu Wu’s house would update, and he would be able to see Old Thief Cimu’s attributes.

This was extremely important for Lu Wu.

Perhaps, it would become the key for Lu Wu to free himself.

Lu Wu was well aware of this, so he began to focus on breaking through to King-level as his goal.

This was still quite challenging.

While Lu Wu had successfully fused the “Power of the Ocean”, he still had nearly ten other skills. “Power of the Ocean” was relatively mild and easier to fuse, while other skills presented a much greater challenge for Lu Wu, and even the slightest carelessness could lead to problems.

If any exposure occurred due to an issue, Lu Wu’s situation would become dangerous.

Therefore, Lu Wu had to be extremely careful.

He could only fuse one skill per day or even less, giving himself more time to adapt to the new power and avoid issues while integrating other powers.

In Lu Wu’s tense efforts, another week quickly passed.

On that day, it was time for Lu Wu to serve as a tool again.

Coincidentally, it was also on this day that a visitor from District 1 arrived at the Cimu house, and moreover, it was a visitor who had come for Lu Wu…

# Chapter 361 - 361 358 Attack King-level

Chapter 361: 358 Attack King-level Chapter 361: 358 Attack King-level District 11, inside the Cimu family residence.

A guest from District 1 was settled in the reception room.

If Lu Wu were in the reception room at that moment, he would have recognized the guest from District 1 as his grandfather’s friend, Xing Zhanlong.

The main reason Xing Zhanlong had come to the Cimu family was because of Lu Wu.

Of course, he didn’t know Lu Wu was Lu Wu.

He had only heard that someone in the Cimu family had passed through the Divine Blade Tower and obtained a Divine Artifact that could command obedience from tens of thousands of swords within hundreds of kilometers.

He wanted to meet that person and see that Divine Artifact.

Because that person, or rather that Divine Artifact, might be the key to curing Du Dao Hu Zi.

In truth, Xing Zhanlong’s visit was still for Du Dao Hu Zi.

Previously in Fucheng, Moon Shadow struck with resentment. Though she spared the life of Du Dao Hu Zi, the injuries were severe and she had not yet fully escaped danger.

Despite Xing Zhanlong’s efforts over the past month, using every method at his disposal, Du Dao Hu Zi remained in a coma.

The reason lay in Du Dao Hu Zi’s blade.

The Demon Blade turned on its owner after her injuries, becoming the biggest obstacle to her recovery.

So, during this time, Xing Zhanlong had been seeking ways to suppress the Demon Blade.

Now, he pinned his hopes on the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword.

Of course, Ibaraki Gangyan was still unaware of his purpose.

He didn’t even know someone was waiting to meet him.

This was because when Xing Zhanlong arrived, it was precisely when Lu Wu’s role was being played.

In the reception room, Xing Zhanlong anxiously awaited.

Suddenly, his expression changed and he quickly stepped out of the reception room and looked up. In an instant, the sky above the Cimu family turned dark with clouds, resembling an apocalyptic scene.

At the same time, a terrifying presence spread.

Feeling this presence, Xing Zhanlong’s eyes brightened, “Is this the power of the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword?”

At that moment, he was both shocked and pleased.

From this eruption, he clearly felt the power of the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword.

This power indeed had the potential to suppress the Demon Blade that afflicted Du Dao Hu Zi.

He was so excited that, had he not retained a shred of rationality, he might have rushed over on the spot.

Fortunately, he managed to restrain himself.

He did not make such reckless actions and honestly squatted in the reception room, waiting for an audience with Ibaraki Gangyan.

As for Ibaraki Gangyan,  
 he was refreshed after receiving a strike from Lu Wu.

He was ready to close off and digest the understanding from that strike when his subordinate reported that a VIP from District 1 sought an audience.

The timing, though annoying for Ibaraki Gangyan, prompted him to come immediately.

Ten minutes after Lu Wu’s strike, Ibaraki Gangyan met with Xing Zhanlong in the reception room.

“Xing Zhanlong pays his respects to Old Master Cimu.”

As the requesting party, Xing Zhanlong promptly stood up and respectfully paid his respects.

On the other hand, Ibaraki Gangyan’s mood worsened a bit and his attitude cooled down as he saw Xing Zhanlong.

“Is it you?”

Ibaraki Gangyan and Xing Zhanlong knew each other, and their past interactions were not pleasant due to someone.

“I apologize for my bold visit, please forgive me, old master.”

Being the supplicant, Xing Zhanlong kept his demeanor very proper and humble, Ibaraki Gangyan spared him a word, weighed the two people behind him, especially one with whom he had an unpleasant conflict, someone he now could not afford to provoke.

Eventually, he had to manage his emotions.

Of course, he wasn’t in the mood to waste words with Xing Zhanlong and went straight to the point, “Your sudden visit, what brings you here?”

“It’s like this, Mr. Xing heard that there is a young man in the Cimu family who has passed through the Divine Blade Tower…”  
 Xing Zhanlong bravely explained his purpose.

On hearing this, Ibaraki Gangyan’s attitude turned even colder.

After all, the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword was his taboo. No matter who it was or for what reason, he would not lend it out.

When Xing Zhanlong mentioned borrowing the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword, Ibaraki Gangyan even thought of killing Xing Zhanlong.

But ultimately, Ibaraki Gangyan suppressed this thought.

After all, there were beings above King-level backing Xing Zhanlong, his own father being one, not to mention that existence that still made him shudder to this day.

Ibaraki Gangyan truly did not dare provoke that person.

However, not provoking that person and not lending the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword to Xing Zhanlong were two different matters.

Killing Xing Zhanlong might draw those two people here.

But just not lending the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword to Xing Zhanlong wouldn’t be a big problem.

Old Thief Cimu truly didn’t believe that those two people behind Xing Zhanlong would come for a Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword.

Those two were not ones to move easily.

Thus, Ibaraki Gangyan unhesitatingly refused.

“That sword does not have the functions you hope for, you should think of some other way.

Come! Send off the guest!”

Having just felt the power of the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword, how could Xing Zhanlong be so easily dismissed by Ibaraki Gangyan?

“No, no, no, Old Mr. Cimu, was the sword that erupted just now the one?

I can feel that this sword has the power to suppress the Demon Blade. Please, I beg Old Mr. Cimu to help me this once.

No matter the cost, I, Xing Zhanlong, am willing to pay.”

Saying this, Xing Zhanlong even knelt down to Ibaraki Gangyan on the spot: “I know that my brother indeed offended Old Mr. Cimu years ago. I can apologize on his behalf and I am willing to compensate the Cimu family. Please, Old Sir, you must help me this time.

If Old Mr. Cimu can help me this time, Xing Zhanlong will never forget it!”

For the sake of Du Dao Hu Zi, Xing Zhanlong was willing to give up anything, including his dignity.

However, Ibaraki Gangyan clearly was not someone who would take pity just because someone bowed to him.

Xing Zhanlong was aware of this, so while he begged, and as Ibaraki Gangyan hesitated, he also raised his head and said firmly, “Of course, if Old Mr. Cimu does not even wish to lend a hand in this trivial matter, I, Xing Zhanlong, will also remember you for the rest of my life.”

This statement was evidently more effective than the previous ones.

As these words were thrown out, Ibaraki Gangyan’s brows tightened, and his killing intent erupted once more.

The chilling killing intent even reached the point of being outwardly visible, which Xing Zhanlong could feel, but he was not in the least bit afraid.

After all, that was his stance.

This favor, you, Ibaraki Gangyan, must help, whether you want to or not!

Ultimately, it was Ibaraki Gangyan who gave in.

“I’ll allow you to try, but the sword and the person must not leave the Cimu family. If you want to save someone, bring them to the Cimu home!”

That was Ibaraki Gangyan’s bottom line.

“Fine!”

Xing Zhanlong nodded without a moment’s hesitation.

On the other side, Lu Wu.

At this time, Lu Wu was unaware that Xing Zhanlong had already arrived at the Cimu family’s residence.

If he had known, he probably wouldn’t have been able to sleep.

Fortunately, he was unaware of this, so he was in a good mood.

Using Divine Wrath once more provided Lu Wu with a deeper understanding of this Skill.

After returning to his own dungeon, Lu Wu immediately began to meditate.

He integrated his new understanding of Divine Wrath into the Lu Family Swordsmanship.

Although this integration did not greatly improve the swordsmanship level and skill level of Lu Family Swordsmanship, it further accelerated Lu Wu’s integration of his own power.

Over the past week, Lu Wu had already integrated seven skills, including Power of the Ocean, Cold Ice Body, and Slap Lu Wu.

Except for Unyielding·Growth, which Lu Wu dared not touch.

Only Dragon Bone Power, Dragon Transformation, and Sky Dominating Stick were left unmerged.

Once these three skills were merged, Lu Wu’s power would formally break through to King-level.

“Feeling good right now, let’s push and see if I can merge these three skills today.”

Buoyed by the activation of Divine Wrath, Lu Wu struck while the iron was hot.

First was the Skill of Sky Dominating Stick, the integration of this Inheritance Skill went quite smoothly, and Lu Wu swiftly incorporated it into the system of Lu Family Swordsmanship.

Transforming Sky Dominating Stick into a new sword maneuver.

But after completing the integration of Sky Dominating Stick, Lu Wu encountered problems.

No matter how hard he tried, he simply could not integrate Dragon Bone Power and Dragon Transformation into Lu Family Swordsmanship.

This was a tough situation.

Finally, Lu Wu gritted his teeth and merged Dragon Bone Power and Dragon Transformation together.

He was preparing to abandon integrating all his power together and was instead building a triangular system.

The core would be the Skill Universal Charger, with Lu Family Swordsmanship and the newly merged Skill of Dragon Bone Power and Dragon Transformation acting as the fulcrums to break through to King-level.

This idea was out of the box, but not impossible to execute.

Moreover, as Lu Wu was starting to merge Dragon Bone Power and Dragon Transformation, he found the process unexpectedly smooth.

In just a moment, these two skills were merged into one.

Following this, Lu Wu set up an Energy structure with Universal Charger as the core.

Once this structure was established, Lu Wu noticed that the Skill Unyielding·Growth, which he hadn’t approached before, suddenly began to activate.

At the same time, a burst of power naturally erupted from inside Lu Wu’s body.

This power was incredibly formidable; even though Lu Wu was prepared and had already dissipated 95% of his internal energy beforehand, the energy burst still directly stimulated Ibaraki Gangyan’s energy.

Consequently, this terrifying energy burst into action.

The terrifying energy explosion instantly scattered the newly born energy structure of Lu Wu, causing him severe injuries and even shattering the surroundings within dozens of meters.

At that moment, Ibaraki Gangyan’s face changed.

His figure flashed, and he arrived back in the dungeon at terrifying speed.

“This is bad!”

Seeing this old thief arrive at that moment, Lu Wu panicked and then passed out…

Is anyone there?

Ah…

# Chapter 362: 359 Good Person Ibaraki

Chapter 362: 359 Good Person Ibaraki

The dungeon of the Cimu family.

At this moment, the heart of Cimu Gangyan was on the verge of explosion.

One reason was that he had just been threatened by Xing Zhanlong.

Another was that Lu Wu was being restless again.

There had been an incident just a week ago, and now here was another one, worse than the last.

The energy he had left inside Lu Wu’s body had completely detonated.

Lu Wu had been blown up even more miserably.

And he was evenly mangled all over, his body a horribly bloody mess.

What made Cimu Gangyan even more troubled was that he sensed that the energy structure inside Lu Wu’s body seemed to have shattered, meaning Lu Wu might accidentally become a cripple.

Naturally, Cimu Gangyan should be happy about such an ending for someone like Lu Wu, who instigated his granddaughter to kill his own family.

But this was precisely what Cimu Gangyan couldn’t bear.

At this point, not only could he not be happy, but he was even worried that Lu Wu might just become useless?

If Lu Wu were to become useless, his hopes for enhancing his own power would probably vanish as well.

Also, that Xing from outside would likely not let him go.

That meant, despite hating Lu Wu to death, seeing Lu Wu in this state meant he had no choice but to save him.

How could this not frustrate Cimu Gangyan?

“Old Man Cimu, who is this?”

Ah, speaking of Xing, here comes Xing Zhanlong.

This time, because Cimu Gangyan left in a hurry, Xing Zhanlong was a bit anxious and subconsciously followed.

Seeing the unrecognizable Lu Wu in front of Cimu Gangyan, Xing Zhanlong clearly couldn’t recognize Lu Wu.

Cimu Gangyan glanced at Xing Zhanlong with an ashen face, articulating each word, “Zhengdaguangming!”

Xing Zhanlong was startled at first, but then quickly remembered—wasn’t this the name of the young man who had crossed the Divine Blade Tower? He became nervous at once.

“How could he be so severely injured? What are you dawdling for? Save him quickly!

He can’t die!”

Although dissatisfied with Xing Zhanlong’s tone, this was not the time for Cimu Gangyan to fuss over such things. With a dark face, he took out a bottle of legendary grade potion from his bosom and fed it to Lu Wu.

But it was of no use at all, Lu Wu’s condition continued to deteriorate.

This caused Cimu Gangyan to frown deeply.

The anxious Xing Zhanlong urged, “Isn’t there anything else? Use it on him, quick!”

Cimu Gangyan didn’t hesitate this time, pulling Lu Wu straight toward the Cimu family’s treasure vault.

There was no choice; Lu Wu couldn’t die yet, so he had to save him.

Xing Zhanlong followed closely, wanting to enter but was blocked.

After all, it was someone else’s treasure vault, and Xing Zhanlong could only wait outside.

Entering the treasure vault of the Cimu family, Cimu Gangyan took out all the medical-related items.

There were dozens of them, all of legendary quality or higher.

Wither tools, potions, or fruits…

After these items were taken out, Cimu Gangyan applied them one by one to Lu Wu’s body.

These were all his, Cimu Gangyan’s, ancestral wealth.

The Cimu family’s fortune, accumulated over dozens to hundreds of years, expending untold amounts of effort and experience.

Using these items on Lu Wu, Cimu Gangyan felt his heart bleeding continuously.

Using his hard-earned wealth to save the murderer of his grandson, what kind of affair was this?

What made Cimu Gangyan even more aggrieved was that after using a dozen or so legendary items, Lu Wu’s condition still did not improve.

It seemed like Lu Wu might truly be beyond help.

Seeing this situation, Cimu Gangyan even thought about giving up, letting Lu Wu die, and somehow finding someone else to inherit the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword.

It was at this moment, from outside the vault, that Xing Zhanlong’s voice came, desperate and furious.

“Cimu Gangyan, I don’t care why he happens to be injured at this time. Let me tell you one thing.

He is now the only hope for Lady Saeko.

If he dies, resulting in Lady Saeko’s death, then I, Xing Zhanlong, will die in your Cimu house.

By that time, a man will come across the sea to take your dog’s life!”

This screaming with all his might caused Cimu Gangyan’s face to twist with murderous intent that nearly solidified into substance.

He could hardly restrain himself from bursting out and killing Xing Zhanlong.

But he didn’t dare!

Because he clearly knew there was indeed such a man behind Xing Zhanlong.

He also knew how terrifying that man was.

Once he crossed the sea and came over, even if he, Ibaraki Gangyan, hid inside a mouse hole, he would be caught and killed.

No matter what, Ibaraki Gangyan didn’t want to face that guy again.

Another point was that he couldn’t bear to give up this hard-earned opportunity to enhance his own power.

So, in the end, Ibaraki Gangyan gritted his teeth, glared at the unconscious Lu Wuyi, and spat out harshly, “Kid, after I save you, I’ll definitely make you wish for death!”

After spitting out these harsh words, Ibaraki Gangyan pulled Lu Wu along and opened the deepest part of the treasury, taking out an item from inside.

If Lu Wu were not unconscious at this moment, he would probably see a big question mark over this thing.

Clearly, this thing was of Legendary quality or more.

Yes, this was an item of Legendary quality or more, the true treasure of Ibaraki Gangyan’s heart.

It was something he had obtained years ago, after spending countless efforts and even nearly losing his life.

He had never been willing to use it himself.

But now there was no other way; he had to use this treasure of his heart that he had not been willing to touch for decades.

Moreover, it was being used to save someone he had wanted to kill.

Ibaraki Gangyan’s feelings at this moment were probably incomprehensible to most.

However, Ibaraki Gangyan’s feelings didn’t matter; what was important was that this treasure of his heart seemed quite effective.

As soon as Ibaraki Gangyan crushed this heart-like thing, golden blood mixed with the Dragon Clan’s scent dripped onto Lu Wu’s heart. The remnants were directly stuffed into Lu Wu’s mouth.

As soon as it was used on Lu Wu, his body began to emit a faint golden light, and a vague golden Divine Dragon shadow appeared outside his body.

At the same time, Lu Wu’s breath began to circulate again, and his wounds slowly stopped bleeding.

It appeared that Lu Wu’s life had been saved.

Seeing this, Ibaraki Gangyan let out a long sigh of relief.

Then, he provided Lu Wu with all sorts of items of Legendary quality, to completely pull Lu Wu back from the brink of death.

After a series of actions, Ibaraki Gangyan spent a total of 2 hours and 31 minutes to treat Lu Wuyi, using one item of unknown grade above Legendary Level.

He used 31 Legendary Items.

If Lu Wu had been awake, he probably would have felt too embarrassed to hate Ibaraki Gangyan ever again.

Look at what Ibaraki Gangyan had given in just one day – it was more than the rich woman Lu Wu had known before or even what Lu Wu’s own father had given him.

What kind of enemy was this?

He was practically family.

If Lu Wu could have foreseen this scene, he would probably not have tried to escape from Ibaraki Gangyan’s grasp if he had the chance.

Where else could he find such fortune?

With the resources he received today alone, Lu Wu himself couldn’t have obtained them even if he ventured through the Secret Realm for several years.

Under this ‘family member’s’ bankrupting and attentive care, Lu Wu’s breath gradually stabilized, and his injuries began to slowly heal.

In order to speed up Lu Wu’s recovery, Old Man Cimu returned the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword to Lu Wu.

He also left a bit more energy inside Lu Wu’s body.

Of course, this time Ibaraki Gangyan didn’t dare to leave too much energy.

If Lu Wu pulled this off again, Ibaraki Gangyan might not have enough resources to save him.

So, he only left an amount of energy as a restraint, to keep an eye on Lu Wu and to prevent any trouble or escape.

After all these arrangements were concluded, Ibaraki Gangyan left the Cimu family’s treasury with Lu Wu, gave Xing Zhanlong a cold glance, and without saying much, handed over Lu Wu directly to Xing Zhanlong.

“I’m handing the person over to you, don’t let him leave the Cimu family, and don’t threaten me with those words again. If this happens one more time, I won’t mind killing you. If I can’t fight the Cimu family, I don’t want it!”

After saying this, Ibaraki Gangyan immediately turned and left.

He had to go heal his wounds.

The expenditure this time was enough to depress him for a while.

Additionally, Ibaraki Gangyan also had some preparations to make.

The moment he left the treasury, Ibaraki Gangyan immediately issued an order to have his subordinates bring the entire Sakuragi family to the Cimu household.

He also ordered the acceleration of Cimu Qingzi’s treatment.

Since monitoring with energy wasn’t working, he had to impose other shackles on Lu Wu.

Another point was that Lu Wu’s recent troubles had thoroughly angered Ibaraki Gangyan, and he was determined to properly discipline Lu Wu and make him understand his situation…

# Chapter 363: 360 King-level

Chapter 363: 360 King-level

The Cimu family, Lu Wu awoke from his deep slumber.

Opening his eyes, what he saw was a face that looked exceptionally honest.

At the time, Lu Wu was a bit confused, thinking he wasn’t fully awake yet, or perhaps he hadn’t opened his eyes correctly. He quickly closed them and opened them again.

Indeed, it was still the same face.

Now, Lu Wu was thoroughly baffled. Why was this honest man here?

Xing Zhanlong, on the other hand, was both shocked and overjoyed to see Lu Wu wake up.

“Mr. Zheng Da, you’re awake. How are you feeling? Is your body okay? No serious issues, I hope.”

Mr. Zheng Da?

Lu Wu was stunned. Did this fellow not recognize him, or was he pretending not to know?

In his confusion, he could only play dumb: “Who are you?”

“Oh, my last name is Xing, named Xing Zhanlong from District 1. I’ve come to the Cimu family to seek Mr. Zheng Da’s assistance with a matter.”

Following that, Xing Zhanlong repeated the specifics of the issue.

Lu Wu narrowed his eyes and indirectly extracted some information.

In no time, Lu Wu had a general understanding of the situation.

This guy had come to save Du Dao Hu Zi.

Just then, when Lu Wu encountered problems with his breakthrough and nearly blew himself up, it was Ibaraki Gangyan who saved him.

Having roughly clarified the situation, Lu Wu began to contemplate the man before him.

Undoubtedly, Xing Zhanlong’s arrival was a definite opportunity for Lu Wu.

If he could use him to send a message to that unreliable scumbag from Lu’s house, his current crisis could be resolved.

But upon further thought, Lu Wu realized this seemed unreliable.

Not to mention whether this fellow could find Old Lu, even if he could, based on what Old Lu had done to him, it was questionable whether he would be willing to pass along a message for Lu Wu.

Even if, by a long shot, he was willing, Lu Wu was not confident in this man’s intelligence.

The guy hadn’t recognized who Lu Wu was after watching over him for nearly a day and had spilled all his secrets in just a few words, coupled with his earlier performance.

Lu Wu was certain.

If he let this man know his identity, it would likely be exposed within minutes.

Hmm, this was not distrust of the man’s character, but rather of his intelligence.

So, even though the opportunity was right in front of him, Lu Wu restrained himself. After chatting briefly, he used his weariness as an excuse to send Xing Zhanlong away and shifted his focus back to himself.

Once he did, Lu Wu’s head buzzed.

He was struggling to tolerate his own body now.

That wave of incidents left fracture injuries in every tiny blood vessel throughout his body.

However, those injuries were healing at the moment.

And yet, accustomed as Lu Wu was to seeing the world and enduring severe beatings, such damage didn’t shock him.

What truly astonished him was the immense energy clogging every corner of his body.

If someone with the ability to see auras looked at Lu Wu, they would see his body shining gold throughout, filled with energy above Legendary level, especially terrifying around his heart.

Lu Wu felt as if his heart was stuffed with something about to burst at any moment, constantly on the verge of frantic operation.

It was only because of the condition of his body that his heart did not dare to start pumping.

“What the heck did Old Thief Cimu feed me?”

Lu Wu couldn’t help but let out a long sigh.

He even started to wonder if he had misjudged Old Thief Cimu – perhaps this generous Old Thief Cimu was actually a good person.

If Lu Wu were to complete the digestion of the energy within him, his power would experience an immensely terrifying boost.

However, when it came to the process of digesting this energy, Lu Wu found that he seemingly no longer had the ability to do so.

The explosion from before had shattered his energy system.

Lu Wu was now completely powerless.

The idea of absorbing these energies was downright impossible.

In fact, if it wasn’t for Old Thief Cimu’s energy acting like a gate locking them inside Lu Wu’s body, they might have already dissipated.

Therefore, the most important thing for Lu Wu at present was to restructure his energy core, allowing him to master and absorb these energies within his body.

This shouldn’t be hard, Lu Wu himself had no power, but his Summoned Beasts did.

Lu Wu was about to ask Han for assistance, when he realized that the Han inside him also seemed to have been affected by the previous wave.

Han was now in a deep sleep state, and Lu Wu simply couldn’t command it.

Sigh, with no other choice, since the obedient Han couldn’t be commanded, Lu Wu could only try to direct the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword.

But this toy was even less reliable.

Originally, Lu Wu had subdued it through coercion, and now that Lu Wu was powerless, it decisively stated that lending its power was possible, but it wanted to switch positions with Lu Wu.

From now on, it would be on top, and Lu Wu would be below.

Regarding the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword’s behavior of taking advantage of the situation, Lu Wu thought, well, he was already lying down, so the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword could do as it pleased.

When facing danger, Lu Wu’s spine had always been this flexible.

The naive Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword had no idea about the wickedness of human nature and society. Once Lu Wu lay down, it happily climbed on and lent its power to him.

Having received power from the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword, Lu Wu started returning to his own body.

At the Lord Level, a Summoner’s body had already awakened an Energy Space.

Lu Wu’s previous Energy Core and the current one he returned to were within his Energy Space.

His consciousness entered the space.

What Lu Wu saw was a space full of cracks and on the verge of falling apart.

And within this space drifted various kinds of messy energy.

To restore his power and repair this near-collapsing space, Lu Wu had to gather these scattered energies back together.

This was a huge project!

And to undertake this massive project, the first thing Lu Wu needed to do was find a qualified ‘Contractor’.

This ‘Contractor’ wasn’t the energy from the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword; it wasn’t up for the task as it had been suppressed at the peak of being a leader-level entity. Moreover, even if it could do the job, Lu Wu wouldn’t let it.

Such private affairs, of course, needed to be handled by his own people.

He borrowed power from the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword only to find back the ones that had strayed from Lu Wu’s house.

With Lu Wu’s efforts, the ones who had gone missing from his house were found one after another.

A strand of Origin Energy from the fusion of Dragon Transformation and Dragon Bone Power.

A strand of Origin Energy from Universal Charger.

A strand of Origin Energy from the Lu Family Swordsmanship that integrated various skills.

And a somewhat dazed strand of Origin Energy from Unyielding·Growth.

The first three were okay, but the last one made Lu Wu frown.

Should he keep it?

If he kept it, the original triangular structure Lu Wu had planned would be gone, but if he didn’t, the darn thing was quite appealing.

In the end, Lu Wuyi clenched his teeth and decided to keep it.

Then, with these four cores, Lu Wu began to assemble a Contractor team.

During the process of forming this team, two more individuals emerged.

They both were quite interested in this new team and clung to it as soon as they saw it.

One of them came from the heart and upon entry immediately buddied up with the strand from Dragon Transformation.

Lu Wu took a look at another strand and discovered it was energy from Old Thief Cimu.

However, it belonged to some energy that had gone missing during the explosion.

Although this energy was lost, it still retained some of the sly characteristics of Old Thief Cimu. Seeing the group band together, it couldn’t help but get involved and boss the new team around, and that really angered Lu Wu.

I can’t bully Old Thief Cimu, but can’t I bully you, his little brother?

Right away, Lu Wu commanded the new team to swarm and beat up the energy from Old Thief Cimu.

The energy of Old Thief Cimu was formidable, being two levels higher than Lu Wu with strong Combat Power. It could fight against five and hold for a while, but since it had no master, after a few minutes, it was beaten down. The new team then recruited it, becoming an extra enforcer for the team.

With that, Lu Wu’s Contractor team was officially in place.

Universal Charger became the leader of the team, with Lu Family Swordsmanship in charge of personnel, specifically recruiting various little brothers. Dragon Transformation served as the main force of the demolition squad, usually not moving a muscle unless it was to Demolition or fight someone.

Unyielding·Growth, on the other hand, acted as finance, single-mindedly focusing on making money.

After such a team was formed, their ‘company’ (Domain) naturally emerged as well.

And in this wave, Lu Wu’s Level also reached King-level.

# Chapter 364: 361 Dragon Essence Blood

Chapter 364: 361 Dragon Essence Blood

Name: Lu Wu

Power: King Level 0 Star (Actual combat power is Lord Level)

Summoned Beasts: Little Skeleton (Gray) Little Flood Dragon (Gray) Han (Advancing) Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword (Leader 3 Stars)

Skills:

Universal Enhancement (Special) (Master)

Lu Family Swordsmanship (Ultimate Skill) (Grandmaster) (Contains multiple skill changes)

Jiao Long State (Special) (Master)

Unyielding·Powerful (Special) (Master)

Domain: Wanxiang Domain (Mastered 90%)

Once the domain is opened, you can directly duplicate and use the power within your domain, and there is a certain likelihood of directly mastering it.

It’s more of an auxiliary domain.

Summoner Talent: Power of Inheritance (Awakening)

Damage Sharing (The quantity shared has further increased, even extending to those who have not signed a contract with you.

Ps: This kind of sharing has a high potential for failure when facing entities stronger than oneself.)

Description: According to the attribute panel, he is quite strong, but his actual state is not good.

You are currently heavily injured, and not much energy has been concentrated in your energy core. It’s quite impressive to have a Lord Level combat power when fully unleashed.

…

This is the current attribute of Lu Wu.

His skills have been cleansed.

Most of the skills have been consumed by “Lu Family Swordsmanship”.

Lu Wu himself has also gained a Wanxiang Domain with 90% mastery progress.

The gains can be said to be quite substantial.

For Lu Wu, there is another gain that cannot be seen on the attribute panel, that is, the system upgrade.

The presence of his family’s shoddy Golden Finger is not prominent.

Many times, Lu Wu himself forgets he has such a thing, feeling that his achievements are entirely due to his own efforts without anyone’s help.

But in fact, this thing has played an important role in Lu Wu’s growth process and has been a great help to him.

After Lu Wu advanced to King Level, the new functions that came with the system upgrade also pleasantly surprised him.

The old system’s dead increase allowed for long-distance viewing of attributes, and this time another feature was added that allows you to view the opponent’s attributes through energy.

For example, the current Lu Wu can observe some attributes of Ibaraki Gangyan based on the energy left in his body by Ibaraki Gangyan without seeing him.

…

Item: Ibaraki Gangyan’s Energy

Level: Epic Level

Description: The energy of the Epic Strongman Ibaraki Gangyan.

The main energy attribute is fire, and the controlled amount is roughly at Leader 1 Star Level.

The lethality is not high, but it is very sensitive and can detect the movement of energy within you.

If your energy increases further, there is a risk of it being detected.

Ps: You can deduce the opponent’s attributes through energy, but there can be significant discrepancies. For details, please see below.

…

Name: Ibaraki Gangyan

Power: Epic Level 0 Star

Mastered Skills: ???

Summoner Talent: ???

Domain: ??? (Suspected to be a Fire attribute Domain)

Description: Although only a 0 Star Epic Strongman, he is still not someone you can defeat now.

If you recklessly rush up to him, you may carelessly be slapped to death.

…

Hmm, this attribute has disappointed Lu Wu.

Other than knowing that above King Level is Epic, it’s of no use.

Lu Wu could only console himself, perhaps because he had not seen the person himself. If he had seen Ibaraki in person, he might have gained more.

Afterward, Lu Wu began to calm down and focus inward on his own body.

Dozens of types of energy currently fill Lu Wu’s body.

These energies are chaotically crammed within him, and he needs to clarify what these things are, their effects, and how he should assimilate them.

Lu Wu must be clear in his heart to better handle his current state.

After Lu Wu surveyed the energies within his body, the most eye-catching was undoubtedly the energy coiling around his heart.

…

Item: Dragon Essence Blood

Level: Epic Level

Description: This is the essence blood extracted from the heart of an Epic-level Dragon Summoning Beast. It has the effect of prolonging life and increasing power. Absorbing all of it would be of great benefit to you.

…

Seeing this attribute, Lu Wu couldn’t help but take a sharp breath of cold air.

His perception of Ibaraki Gangyan improved further.

To give away such good items, Ibaraki Gangyan was practically a living Buddha!

Of course, Lu Wu’s perception was wrong.

It seemed as if to correct Lu Wu’s mistaken understanding, Ibaraki Gangyan came over not long after Lu Wu woke up.

As soon as the man came over, his eyes fixed on Lu Wu without speaking and with a blank expression.

But the cold aura emanating from his whole body clearly conveyed to Lu Wu the other party’s anger and murderous intent.

Especially when his gaze landed on Lu Wu’s heart, Lu Wu even had the illusion that the other wanted to dig out his heart.

Well, it wasn’t an illusion; the other really had this idea.

Of course, he’d only take action after Lu Wu completely lost his value.

What he needed to do now was to properly train Lu Wu.

To make Lu Wu realize his current predicament and obediently become a mere tool.

“It seems I’ve been too kind to you, which has led you to repeatedly make such foolish decisions.

So, it’s time I made you understand the price of making a mistake.”

As Ibaraki Gangyan spoke, several people came in, ready to forcefully take Lu Wu away.

Instead, Lu Wu simply closed his eyes and rested, “Old man, I advise you not to bother. I can’t withstand your torment right now.

I’m covered in wounds, all of them severe. If you cause any trouble and something happens, I’ll lose my life.

All those things you used to save me before would effectively be thrown into the water.”

Ibaraki Gangyan’s face darkened.

Just as he was about to say something, Lu Wu spoke first.

“Don’t say anything else, you’ve saved me twice in a row and spent so much on me.

You’ve already exposed your inner thoughts.

You don’t want, and are even more worried than anyone else, about me dying.

You’re willing to spend Epic-level items to save my life, do you think you have any intimidation power over me now?”

As he spoke, Lu Wu opened his eyes, looking directly at Ibaraki Gangyan, “I can clearly tell you that if you mess with me now, whatever way you do it, I’ll do myself in.

Although I don’t want to die, I dare to live half-dead.

A half-dead me holds no value for you, yet you can’t bring yourself to kill me and still have to spend a lot of resources on me.

Tell me, in such a situation, who would be more uncomfortable and at a disadvantage?”

“You dare to threaten me?”

Ibaraki Gangyan erupted in fury.

A terrifying presence belonging to an Epic-level exploded, causing Lu Wu’s complexion to turn pale.

Yet, he was not the least bit intimidated.

“Old man, what kind of joke is this? In my current state? I’m not even afraid of death, let alone threatening you?

I do threaten you, indeed. What can you do about it? Kill me? Or harm Qingzi and others?

Come on, let’s all do it.

If you move a finger, I’ll harm myself!”

A barefoot person is not afraid of wearing shoes.

As Lu Wu acted defiantly, there was nothing Ibaraki Gangyan, with his ugly face, could do.

Of course, Lu Wu didn’t become too arrogant and knew when to stop.

As Ibaraki Gangyan’s face turned livid, Lu Wu spoke, “Old man, what you want is just a tool.

And all I want is a bit of dignity and better treatment.

How about we both step back a little?

You don’t mess with me, and I’ll comply obediently, striving to heal my injuries and be a qualified tool!

That’s good for both you and me, isn’t it?”

Was this proposal any good?

For Ibaraki Gangyan, it was terrible.

He couldn’t accept it, nor did he want to witness Lu Wu’s brazen, outspoken attitude, the readiness to die together if necessary.

In his eyes, Lu Wu was his tool and had no right to negotiate terms with him.

But now, he had no choice.

The more he invested in Lu Wu, the less he could afford to let Lu Wu die.

So, in the end, Ibaraki Gangyan, despite being full of rage, had no choice but to leave with a cold snort, taking his people with him.

Watching Ibaraki Gangyan leave, Lu Wu’s light also cooled down, and his cold gaze was filled with murderous intent.

Clearly, he too resented Ibaraki Gangyan and wanted to kill him.

“Just wait, old man, your end is coming soon.”

Looking at the attributes of the old Thief Cimu, Lu Wu said coldly in his heart.

# Chapter 365: 362 Act (Request for Subscription)

Chapter 365: 362 Act (Request for Subscription)

Name: Ibaraki Gangyan

Power: Epic 0 Star

Summoned Beast: Flowing Blade Fire (Epic 0 Star) (Divine Artifact)

Mastered Skills: Flowing Blade Technique (Must Kill) (Grandmaster)

Fire God Blade (Ultimate Skill) (Grandmaster)

Domain: Flowing Fire Domain (Within the domain, it is possible to fully suppress opponents below the epic level.

Additionally, it enhances the summoner’s fire attribute attack power by three hundred percent.

It seems there are other effects as well.)

Summoner Talent: Double Attack (Once triggered, it can turn one attack into two)

…

Name: Flowing Blade Fire (Divine Artifact)

Power: 0 Star (Epic)

Quality: (Epic) (False) (Enhanced)

Attribute: Fire, Divine Artifact

State: Asleep (Originally only of Legendary Quality, after being forcibly advanced to Epic, it remains asleep unless actively awakened)

Weakness: Water, Ice (General)

Skills: Flowing Blade (Must Kill) (Passive) (Its attacks come with a scorching effect, extremely terrifying so please be cautious.)

Talent: Mobile Volcano (The blade contains the power of a volcano, but it cannot be used because the artifact is asleep)

Description: This is a terrifying divine artifact.

…

These two, were the attributes Lu Wu observed after seeing Ibaraki Gangyan in person.

This information was much more detailed and comprehensive than before.

It also gave Lu Wu a clearer understanding of Ibaraki Gangyan’s power, or rather, the power of the Epic Level.

Undoubtedly.

This guy’s power is absolutely terrifying.

It was only now that Lu Wu realized that he also had a blade.

The fact that Ibaraki Gangyan had been so dreadful without using his blade made Lu Wu seriously doubt whether he could confront him directly.

Of course, Lu Wu never thought about facing him alone.

He couldn’t handle it alone, but wasn’t there Xing Zhanlong?

Lu Wu was aware of Xing’s capabilities.

Even though he had not reached the Epic Level, he was at the peak of King-level, his combat power immensely terrifying and much stronger than Qingzi’s granny.

Moreover, Lu Wu felt he should have some trump cards, as this guy seemed particularly confident when facing Ibaraki Gangyan.

Additionally, there was Saeko Dushan.

Didn’t Xing ask him to treat Saeko Dushan?

If Saeko Dushan could also be treated, Lu Wu believed that Xing Zhanlong, combined with Saeko Dushan and himself, should be able to match Ibaraki Gangyan.

Even if they couldn’t kill him, escaping should not be a big problem.

Now, Lu Wu’s problem was how to convince Xing Zhanlong and the others to help.

Well, there was another more important issue.

“Anyway, try not to reveal my identity in front of Xing Zhanlong, and definitely not in front of Saeko Dushan.”

Lu Wu was distrustful of Xing’s intelligence.

As for Saeko Dushan, Lu Wu didn’t trust her character either.

After all, he knew what this woman had done before.

Saeko Dushan harbored deep hostility towards him and Lu Haikong.

Thus, Lu Wu felt it was best not to expose himself; if he carelessly did, whom she would help was truly uncertain.

“Neither revealing my identity nor still needing their help, this is somewhat difficult!”

…

Xing Zhanlong had moved quickly.

The day after he arrived at the Cimu family, Saeko Dushan was brought there.

Apart from Saeko, there was also Maeshima Kaori as well as one of the best Medical Masters from District 11.

Well, so-called Medical Masters are actually a branch of Cultivation Masters.

Unlike typical Cultivation Masters specializing in cultivating beasts and tools, they focus on medical treatments.

Effectively, they were professional Medical Masters for summoners and beasts.

Lu Wu also had some studies in this area.

But not much.

It only took two or three days.

His proficiency in this area was only at a professional level.

Hearing that a Master Level Medical Master was coming, Lu Wu was quite interested.

And that Medical Master, upon arriving at the Cimu family, visited Lu Wu immediately.

Not because she knew Lu Wu was interested in her, but because Xing had just brought her over.

After all, Lu Wu was key to treating Saeko Dushan, and the treatment depended on Lu getting healthy first.

However, Lu narrowed his eyes when he saw that Medical Master.

Her attributes clearly told him that the Medical Master in front of him was an Evil Summoner.

This type of attribute, Lu had seen among Feng Xiu’s subordinates.

Clearly, the identity of this Medical Master was not simple.

This added a headache for Lu.

It was literally trouble coming wave after wave.

He wasn’t even out of the wolf’s den, and another ferocious hound had arrived, undoubtedly making Lu’s already difficult situation even harder.

But what could Lu Wu do?

He could only pretend to know nothing.

Luckily, this Medical Master did not seem to have come specifically for him.

At least during the medical examination, she showed no abnormalities and was extremely careful and meticulous in checking his health, offering a detailed and reasonable method of medical care.

According to her, by following her method,

Lu Wu would initially recover enough to master the “Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword” within half a month.

Then they could start treating Saeko Dushan.

Xing Zhanlong was both surprised and delighted when he heard this news, while Lu Wu watched in a daze as the sliver of pure black energy she had sneaked into his body during the examination.

If he wasn’t mistaken,

This energy seemed to be called Evil Energy, a terrifying substance that could corrupt a summoner’s energy.

Lu Wu wasn’t sure why she had injected this into his body, but he knew for sure that his previous assumption was wrong; she had indeed come for him.

This made Lu Wu quite uncomfortable.

But simultaneously, a bold idea formed in Lu Wu’s mind.

Lu Wu, wanting to expose this Medical Master, fell silent and pretended to know nothing.

He pretended not to know the Medical Master’s true identity or the energy within his body.

Of course, he could act ignorant, but he couldn’t truly act as if nothing had happened, especially regarding the sliver of “Evil Energy” inside him; this was something Lu Wu had to address.

Fortunately, the Evil Energy that the Medical Master had injected wasn’t much, just a little sliver, and it was only Lord Level energy.

For someone with Lu Wu’s power, it was quite easy to get rid of it.

After the Medical Master left, Lu Wu began to get busy, letting his own little “company” within his energy space start working against this outsider.

The first to enter the fray was the energy of the subdued Old Thief Cimu.

This strand of energy was of Epic Level and extremely high quality, and its attribute was Fire which greatly restrained Evil Energy. It almost defeated the Evil Energy in one wave.

But at the last moment, Lu Wu held back.

He had a sudden idea—he wanted to try if he could subdue this Evil Energy.

“Evil Energy is also a form of energy, and in theory, it should also be possible to subdue it.”

With this thought in mind, Lu Wu started to act, still using the “Lu Family Swordmanship” as the basis to gather this defeated Evil Energy, subduing it like he did with Ibaraki Gangyan’s energy and making it his subordinate.

The process was surprisingly smooth.

While doing it, Lu Wu was prepared for any worst-case scenario where he might have to cut losses to survive, but no accidents happened.

Lu Wu subdued the Evil Energy with ease.

Once the Evil Energy was subdued, another subordinate was added to Lu Wu’s little company in his energy space.

And Lu Wu’s “Lu Family Swordsmanship” also gained a new variation.

Just like when he had subdued Ibaraki Gangyan’s energy.

However, these changes and such, Lu Wu had basically never tried them out, he didn’t have the condition.

Well, nor was there a necessity.

After absorbing the Evil Energy, Lu Wu completely set aside the business with the Medical Master.

In the following days, Lu Wu earnestly played the role he was supposed to play.

Externally, he honestly cooperated with the Medical Master’s various treatments.

Internally, however, he busied himself with his own affairs.

He gathered the energy within his energy space, expanded his little company, and repaired his own energy space.

All of these actions were very discreet.

Given that he had the energy of Old Thief Cimu inside him and a Medical Master outside, possibly from the [Zero] organization, Lu Wu couldn’t afford any conspicuous movements.

He had to sync with the pace of the medical room.

Whatever level the Medical Master thought he could recover to, Lu Wu would recover to that level.

Even slower.

The Medical Master believed Lu Wu could reach Lord Level in half a month, so Lu Wu deliberately took three extra days.

He spent that time repairing his energy space.

After more than half a month, although Lu Wu had only restored his energy to Lord 0 Star level, he had completely repaired his energy space.

The structure of his “little company” was built perfectly, and the energy within the energy space was thoroughly organized by him.

The accumulated energy from various medications inside his body was also moved into his energy space.

Now, if Lu Wu wished, he could instantly absorb one-tenth of all the energy in his energy space.

While it might seem like only one-tenth, instantly absorbing it could elevate Lu Wu’s power to King Level 1 Star or even more terrifying levels.

With this trump card, Lu Wu’s security had significantly increased.

Moreover, over the past half-month, Ibaraki Gangyan had also allowed the [Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword] to absorb the power of a Divine Artifact once.

That absorption elevated the [Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword] to Lord Level, further enhancing Lu Wu’s combat power.

Of course, Ibaraki Gangyan wasn’t being kind.

He just wanted to resolve the matter with Xing Zhanlong as soon as possible.

In that aspect, Ibaraki Gangyan got his wish.

On the 19th day since Xing Zhanlong’s group arrived at the Cimu family, Lu Wu had finally recovered to a nearly optimal state, and the official treatment for Miss Dushan was about to begin.

…

“Zheng Dajun, do you understand everything you need to do?”

Inside the Cimu family’s residence.

Before starting the treatment, Xing Zhanlong nervously confirmed with Lu Wu once again.

After over half a month, Lu Wu, still wrapped up like a mummy, nodded and said hoarsely, “I know, I’ll work with you to suppress that demon blade with the force of the sword.

“I’ll be extra careful not to harm Miss Dushan.”

Xing Zhanlong was still not reassured and repeatedly confirmed with Lu Wu.

Only when he was certain that Lu Wu truly understood how to do it and that there would be no issues did Xing Zhanlong decide it was time to act.

At the same time, Lu Wu officially started getting busy.

His task was to suppress the Summoned Beast of Dushan Huzi, the demon blade named Village Justice.

…

Name: Village Justice

Power: 3-star (King-level)

Quality: Legendary (upgraded)

State: Severely wounded, Devouring Master (Despite its severely wounded state reducing it to Lord Level power, this doesn’t prevent it from Devouring its Master)

Skill Talents: Slight

Description: Be careful, suppressing it might cause you to be influenced.

…

It was indeed a powerful blade.

But, Lu Wu didn’t see suppressing it as a big issue.

As the suppression began, Lu Wu silently held the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword and activated the Divine Sword Skill.

The Divine Sword Skill accumulated power, belongs to an Epic Level aura, so when the aura of King of Divine Artifacts spread, the demon blade of Dushan Huzi was easily suppressed.

“Great, it worked!”,

Xing Zhanlong exclaimed with joy.

“Quick, quick, quick, take advantage of this opportunity.”

Under Xing Zhanlong’s command, a Medical Master injected various potions into Dushan Huzi who had been in a coma for over a month.

With the continuous injection of the potions, Dushan Huzi’s condition visibly improved quickly and her vitality steadily restored.

In just half an hour, most of the injuries on Dushan Huzi were healed.

Just as Dushan Huzi was about to recover, at that moment,

Lu Wu, who was supposed to be suppressing the Village Justice, suddenly changed his expression and shouted in anger, “Old Thief Cimu!”

Then, Lu Wu’s face turned red, and a surge of power belonging to Ibaraki Gangyan suddenly went berserk; the well-suppressed Village Justice also broke free.

This wouldn’t have been a major issue.

Dushan Huzi’s injuries had been almost healed and the rampage of Village Justice wouldn’t affect her.

But at that moment, the explosive energy of Ibaraki Gangyan inside Lu Wu caused him to involuntarily execute a charged Divine Sword Skill.

This sudden strike hit the Medical Master and with only Lord 3 Star strength, the unprepared Medical Master was powerless to resist and was killed on the spot by Lu Wu’s sword.

With the death of the Medical Master.

The situation for Dushan Huzi turned dire.

She was severely wounded by the backlash from both medical treatment and Village Justice, spewing out a mouthful of blood.

This was after she had been treated for a while; had she not, that blow might have been fatal.

At the sight of Dushan Huzi spitting blood, Xing Zhanlong’s eyes immediately reddened, and he fixed his gaze on Lu Wu.

But by then, Lu Wu had already passed out.

And just then, sensing the anomaly, Ibaraki Gangyan rushed over.

Seeing Ibaraki Gangyan and recalling Lu Wu’s exhausted cries of ‘Old Thief Cimu’, Xing Zhanlong’s brain buzzed, and he exploded.

“Old Thief Cimu, I want you dead!”

Amidst Old Xing’s hysterical roar, he pulled out something from his bosom and threw it at Ibaraki Gangyan.

Instantly, a terrifying power of Epic Level burst forth, aimed directly at Ibaraki Gangyan…

# Chapter 366: 363 Iron-eating Beast

Chapter 366: 363 Iron-eating Beast

“Old Thief Cimu, I want you dead!”

Accompanied by a hysterical, heart-wrenching roar of rage.

Xing Zhanlong threw something, and in the next instant, an epic-level power burst forth.

A supreme sword light slashed out.

At that moment, both Ibaraki Gangyan and Lu Wuyi were dumbfounded.

Especially on Lu Wu’s side.

His reason for this move was partly because he was worried that after healing Saeko Dushan, Xing Zhanlong and his group would just leave, or that Saeko Dushan would wake up and he wouldn’t be able to manipulate Xing Zhanlong anymore.

On the other hand, he had vaguely sensed that Xing Zhanlong had an ace up his sleeve, but Lu Wu had never imagined Xing Zhanlong’s trump card would be from Lu Haikong, originating from Moon Shadow.

Seeing that terrifyingly blue sword light, which instantaneously froze half of the Cimu family estate, whose could it be if not from Moon Shadow?

Lu Wu also caught a glimpse of the item in Xing Zhanlong’s hand in that fleeting moment.

…

Name: Moon Shadow Sword

Quality: Epic

Description: A consumable item that internally stores three Moon Shadow attacks.

…

Upon seeing this attribute, Lu Wu immediately exclaimed in his heart.

“Damn, why does he have this thing and I don’t? Who the hell is his son?”

Well, he said this forgetting that although Lu Wu didn’t give him this item, he had sent the entire Moon Shadow over.

Meanwhile, at Ibaraki Gangyan’s side.

Completely baffled by Lu Wu’s trick, he was.

He had just come out to watch the excitement; how did he end up getting slashed by a sword?

Moreover, by the time he recognized the aura of the sword, his expression had already darkened.

Wasn’t this that guy’s aura?

Before he could sort out his thoughts, the threat of death enveloped him.

“Flowing Blade Fire!”

Ibaraki Gangyan’s expression changed, and he immediately drew his Divine Artifact to meet the attack with a sword slash.

In an instant, icy blue sword light collided with crimson blade light.

A terrifying burst of energy erupted, almost overturning the entire Cimu family estate.

It was Ibaraki Gangyan’s quick reaction, opening his field to take the brunt of the damage, or the Cimu family would have likely suffered extensive destruction.

Of course, Ibaraki Gangyan, who took this attack head-on, wasn’t feeling great either, his face alternately paling and flushing.

Clearly, he was injured.

Hit unexpectedly like this, Ibaraki Gangyan couldn’t express how infuriated he was.

“Xing Zhanlong, do you have a death wish?”

At the same time, over at Xing Zhanlong’s side.

After the sword strike, Xing Zhanlong’s mind also cleared, realizing that his previous action had indeed been rash.

Ibaraki Gangyan shouldn’t have had reason to attack at this time.

However, his realization came a bit late.

“Kill him!”

The recently ‘comatose’ Lu Wu, having assessed the situation, immediately issued a chilling command.

“Is it really you?”

As Lu Wu spoke, he drew Ibaraki Gangyan’s attention to him immediately.

Already harboring resentment toward Lu Wu, Ibaraki Gangyan completely lost his temper.

“Kneel down!”

With a furious shout, Ibaraki Gangyan swung a hand towards Lu Wu, who didn’t give a damn and immediately picked up the Demon Sword Muramasa that belonged to Saeko Dushan, giving Xing Zhanlong an order.

“Kill him!

Otherwise, I’ll activate it, and Saeko Dushan can’t withstand this turmoil now!”

Xing Zhanlong’s expression changed.

“Despicable!”

After cursing angrily, he turned and roared at Ibaraki Gangyan.

Though in human form, his roar was terrifyingly akin to a bear’s, causing Ibaraki Gangyan’s approaching hand to tremble.

At the same time, a giant beast burst forth from Xing Zhanlong.

For the first time, Lu Wu saw the Summoned Beast of the Xing family.

It was a huge black and white Dumpling.

As the giant beast emerged, its chubby paw slammed down, instantly shattering Ibaraki Gangyan’s approaching crimson hand.

The power of this epic-level attack demonstrated the giant beast’s strength.

Upon seeing its attack and attributes, Lu Wu’s face lit up even more.

…

Name: Iron-eating Beast (Mature stage)

Power: 3 stars (King-level)

Quality: Epic (Enhanced)

Attribute: Metal

State: Excited (“Is it mealtime again? Is it mealtime again?”)

Weakness: Fire (Slight)

Basic Skills: Slap (Grandmaster), Defense (Grandmaster), Charge (Grandmaster)…

Advanced Skill: Adorable Beast Slap (Grandmaster)

Killing Skill: Fierce Slap (Grandmaster)

Ultimate Skill: Ultra Fierce Slap (Grandmaster)

Talent: Iron-Eating (Passive) (Able to devour metal and enhance its own power)

Absolut…

Without a doubt,

this was a super meat shield.

Not only was it thick-skinned, but its attack was also terrifying. Despite being at the King-level Power, even those of the Epic Level had difficulty penetrating its defense.

With this big guy around, coupled with the Moon Shadow Sword in Xing Zhanlong’s hands, Lu Wu felt that he still had hope to kill the opponent.

On the side of Ibaraki Gangyan, his face turned extremely ugly upon seeing the appearance of the ten-meter-tall giant dumpling.

His words also softened, “Zhanlong, don’t be swayed by him, he…”

“Muramasa, explode for me!”

Ibaraki Gangyan had not finished speaking, and Lu Wu shouted directly.

“No!”

Xing Zhanlong was particularly good at seizing the moment, grabbing control through Du Dao Hu Zi.

But he was no fool and did not want to be used by Lu Wu just like that, so he tried to negotiate with Lu Wu.

“Zheng Dajun, I am not Mr. Cimu’s match, what you’re asking is almost impossible for me, how about this, you tell me any other requirements you have?

I will discuss it with Mr. Cimu and try to satisfy you.

I believe Mr. Cimu would be willing to grant me this favor, wouldn’t you agree, Mr. Cimu?”

Ibaraki Gangyan’s face was livid, yet he could only nod indicating there was no problem.

On Lu Wu’s side, after looking at Xing Zhanlong and then at Ibaraki Gangyan, he also seemed to feel it was unlikely for Xing Zhanlong to kill anyone.

So he hesitated for a moment before biting his teeth.

“Mr. Xing, I actually don’t want this either.

But I really have no other choice.

He has captured Miss Qingzi and is using her as a threat to force me to be his tool.

With no other choice, I can only resort to this strategy, and I’m really sorry for bringing such trouble to you.

Let him return Miss Qingzi and my belongings to me, let us go, and I promise not to lay a hand on Miss Dushan.

And, Old Thief Cimu, don’t try to use the energy you left inside me against me, or I will fight you.

If I can’t rescue Miss Qingzi, I’d rather die together with Miss Dushan.

Sorry, but for Miss Qingzi’s sake, I am willing to do anything!”

Well.

With these words from Lu Wu, an image of a madly-in-love, honest man was fully enriched.

Xing Zhanlong’s anger and killing intent towards Lu Wu had diminished greatly.

After all, both were the honest kind, and when he turned to look at Ibaraki Gangyan again, his eyes bore a chill.

Everyone being honest folk, naturally harbored a shared animosity towards those who would break an honest man’s heart.

“Impossible!”

Ibaraki Gangyan outright refused.

This tool of Lu Wu, he absolutely could not let go.

And Lu Wu’s words also reminded him, right, he still had energy within Lu Wu’s body, why waste time talking?

“Kneel down!”

Ibaraki Gangyan stared coldly at Lu Wu, with a cold snort, the Cimu energy inside Lu Wu erupted.

About to lock down Lu Wu.

And on Lu Wu’s side, his eyes turned red and his complexion changed, spurting out a mouthful of blood.

The light of the Demon Sword Muramasa in his hand flashed insanely, erupting violently, making Du Dao Hu Zi’s face turn pale.

Fortunately, Lu Wu managed to suppress Muramasa with a struggle, erupting the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword.

This sudden turn of events further agitated Xing Zhanlong.

Now he saw clearly, gambling with Du Dao Hu Zi’s life, Old Thief Cimu deserves to die!

“Gun Gun!”

Sensing Xing Zhanlong’s fury, the round and plump black and white Dumpling charged up, delivering a slap to Ibaraki Gangyan.

At this moment, although Ibaraki Gangyan was surprised he had not taken down Lu Wu, he had no time to concern himself with that.

Failing to capture Lu Wu through energy, he had to subdue Xing Zhanlong first.

Facing the slap from the black and white Dumpling, Ibaraki Gangyan didn’t resist and was directly slapped into a burst of fire by the palm.

But also at the moment of dispersing, he immediately gathered behind the black and white Dumpling.

With the Flowing Blade Fire in his hand, a red streak flashed across the neck of the black and white Dumpling.

The next moment, a beautiful splash of blood bloomed.

With one strike successful, Ibaraki Gangyan’s lips raised, his face full of pride!

“Below the Epic, all are ants!”

“Pfft!”

As soon as he finished speaking, the black and white Dumpling instantly turned around, its terrifying aura locking onto Ibaraki Gangyan and with an extremely vicious slap, again turned Ibaraki Gangyan into a burst of fire.

At the same time, the bleeding at its neck stopped, the wound rapidly healing in a short time.

This scene once again darkened the expression of Ibaraki Gangyan now re-formed into human shape.

Clearly, he had only then realized the terrifying defensive power of this black and white Dumpling.

His strike just now, had probably only cut a wound of one or two centimeters.

At the same time, Lu Wu on the side had noticed another attribute of Ibaraki Gangyan’s domain.

“In his domain, he seems able to transform into flames to mitigate damage, though not completely, but enough to offset most of it, making it a bit troublesome for Old Xing to take down Ibaraki Gangyan!”

Indeed, the following situation on Xing Zhanlong’s side turned into a tough battle.

Ibaraki Gangyan’s domain power was difficult to deal with, as the black and white Dumpling’s several strikes didn’t manage to cause him much harm.

Xing Zhanlong’s Moon Shadow Sword could injure him, but Xing Zhanlong never got the chance, thus the black and white Dumpling was kept at bay.

In less than a few minutes, the black and white Dumpling had already received several wounds.

Three minutes later, Ibaraki Gangyan appeared in front of the black and white Dumpling, admiringly saying, “To withstand this long with King-level Power, you are indeed quite outstanding, but this is as far as you go!”

As he spoke, the Divine Artifact in Ibaraki Gangyan’s hand shone brightly.

“Fire God Slash!”

Accompanied by a dignified cry, the entire Cimu family was covered in a red light.

Xing Zhanlong was startled and quickly instructed Gun Gun to defend with full strength.

He was aware that the Fire God Slash was Ibaraki Gangyan’s famous Ultimate Skill, terribly formidable, difficult even for those of the Epic Level to handle.

However, just as Gun Gun set up the Defensive Stance, that promised “Fire God Slash” did not come.

Instead, Lu Wu heard Ibaraki Gangyan’s low and endlessly angry voice in his ear, “Caught you now!”

# Chapter 367: 364 Slays Old Thief Cimu

Chapter 367: 364 Slays Old Thief Cimu

“I’ve caught you!”

With the chilling voice of Ibaraki Gangyan rising.

A crimson longsword was placed on Lu Wu’s neck.

At the same time, a terrifying pressure also descended upon Lu Wu.

It was an epic level pressure, rendering Lu Wu, who now had only Lord 0 Star energy, unable to move.

“This farce should come to an end now.”

Ibaraki Gangyan spoke and snatched away Village Justice from Lu Wu’s embrace.

This move made Xing Zhanlong, who wanted to rush over, stop in his tracks.

Though he considered Lu Wu as honest as himself,

between an honest man and Du Dao Hu Zi, he knew how to choose.

Once Ibaraki Gangyan had the sword, the crisis for Du Dao Hu Zi was resolved, giving him no reason to act.

With Xing Zhanlong calming down, Ibaraki Gangyan no longer paid him any heed and turned his attention back to Lu Wu.

“It seems I have given you too much freedom lately, which has made you increasingly presumptuous.

It is time for you to pay a price!”

“Come on, I’m done living, let’s see what you can do to me!”

Hmm, facing Ibaraki Gangyan, Lu Wu responded defiantly.

Without a second word, he triggered his energy to clash with the energy Ibaraki Gangyan had left in his body, preparing for self-harm.

Unfortunately, it seemed Ibaraki Gangyan had anticipated this.

As Lu Wu erupted, the energy belonging to Ibaraki Gangyan inside Lu Wu was immediately withdrawn by him.

Without Ibaraki Gangyan’s energy, Lu Wu’s impact naturally had no effect of self-harm.

“You think the sins you’ve committed can be settled by just dying?”

Ibaraki Gangyan said, grabbing Lu Wu in front of him and spoke word by word, “Lately, you have thoroughly enraged me.

I will make you experience what it means to be unable to live or die!”

“I’m not afraid of death, what more of being unable to live or die!”

Lu Wu’s face showed defiance without fear.

This was what Ibaraki Gangyan couldn’t stand the most.

Hearing this, his face turned cold and his tone sinister, “You really think I have no way to deal with you?

I have plenty of ways to handle you.

You like Qingzi Cimu, right?

I’ll just find the ugliest, filthiest person to possess her right in front of you…”

“How dare you!”

Lu Wu erupted in rage, and the angrier he became, the more excited Ibaraki Gangyan got.

“I’ve done it already, what can you do?

Kill yourself? In my presence, you can’t even die.

Just wait, I’ll make you endure the darkest moments of your life.”

That perverse expression wasn’t just unbearable for Lu Wu; even Xing Zhanlong on the side couldn’t stand to watch, but he dared not speak out while under Ibaraki Gangyan’s control.

And Lu Wu, held in Ibaraki Gangyan’s grip, completely lost it.

“How can I allow, how can I allow you to do such a thing.”

A mixture of anger, madness, and unyielding emotions spread.

Lu Wu, bound, trembled, his aura soaring, and the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword in his hand trembled at this moment.

Seeing this scene, Ibaraki Gangyan narrowed his eyes, preparing to suppress Lu Wu.

However, he noticed something was off with Lu Wu, who seemed to have entered a special state, emanating an aura of “Divine Sword Skill.”

The aura was richer and more terrifying than any time before.

This surprisingly pleased Ibaraki Gangyan.

After all, to him, Lu Wu’s outburst was his nourishment, a substantial aid to enhance his power.

Thus, at this moment, he not only did not restrict Lu Wu or forcibly suppress him, but he even slightly relaxed his hold on Lu Wu while continuously provoking him mentally.

“Right, besides Qingzi Cimu, you seem to have a good friend named Sakuragi Hanakazuki?

She can’t be spared either!

And that old man named Sakuragi Hanamichi, he seems to have helped you a lot, right?

Don’t worry, I’ll let you properly thank him.

As for the method of thanking, how about you personally behead him?”

…

This statement from Ibaraki Gangyan was like pouring oil on a fire.

It caused Lu Wu’s killing intent to further erupt.

“Old Thief Cimu, you’re going to die!”

As Lu Wu’s angry shout thundered, the aura around him surged, instantly reaching the power of a Lord 1 Star.

The aura of the Divine Sword Skill reached an unprecedented height.

In an instant, the skies above the Cimu family were shrouded in dark clouds.

A subtle yet heavy pressure enveloped the entire Cimu family compound.

This scene made Ibaraki Gangyan’s mouth split into a grin.

Yes, that was it. The stronger Lu Wu’s strike, the happier he became.

“Come on, kill me! If you don’t kill me, everything I just said will happen, and it’ll be even more brutal. Get ready to enjoy it!”

“I will kill you, and I must kill you.

I can do it, I must kill you to save Miss Qingzi, to save Mr. Sakuragi!”

Stimulated, Lu Wu muttered under his breath and slashed down with his sword.

An unprecedentedly terrifying strike from the Divine Sword Skill landed on the non-resisting and even reveling Ibaraki Gangyan.

Yes, yes, yes, that’s the kind of attack.

This attack, infused with a divine aura, felt very right to him, boosting his power and making him forget he was in battle.

“Come, let the slashes be even more fierce!”

During the sword strike, Ibaraki Gangyan closed his eyes and softly murmured.

“Pfff!”

Almost simultaneously with Ibaraki Gangyan’s murmur, a piercing sound resounded.

At the same time, Ibaraki Gangyan opened his eyes, incredulously looking at Lu Wu in front of him who had just thrust his sword through his chest.

At that moment, gone was Lu Wu’s previous hysteria, replaced only by a mocking grin.

“Is that so?

Is this the kind of slash you wanted?

Is this sword strike enough for you, or do you want a bit more?”

As he spoke, the aura on Lu Wu’s body burst forth, and his terrifying power as a King Level 1 Star fully exploded, and at the same time, the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword thrust into his heart unleashed its might.

Ibaraki Gangyan’s face changed color. Just as he was about to transform into flames to dodge the sword strike, he realized he was no longer in his own domain.

But that wasn’t the worst part; he discovered that his energy had gone berserk in that instant.

It seemed like something inside him had been released, causing his energy circulation to stall.

That was the energy he had absorbed from Lu Wu’s body just now.

However, what he absorbed was not just his energy, but also some that belonged to him but had been refined by Lu Wu.

That alone was not much of a concern.

After all, he could easily suppress that bit of energy.

The real trouble was, along with that bit of energy, Lu Wu had mixed in something else.

That was the evil energy Lu Wu had acquired from a Medical Master half a month ago.

This evil energy, enshrouded within the energy Lu Wu had refined from Ibaraki Gangyan, had entered Ibaraki Gangyan’s body through his absorption and erupted at that moment.

Evil energy itself carried a strong corruptive power, and most Summoners could not easily suppress it.

Although Ibaraki Gangyan was an Epic level powerhouse, this sudden attack caused him significant trouble, holding him back from releasing his energy freely.

Lu Wu seized this opportunity.

“Lu Family Swordsmanship’s Frost Ice Sword Style!”

As Lu Wu softly murmured, the transformation gained from absorbing the Cold Ice Body and Frozen Ray skills was exhibited by him.

Instantly, an extreme cold rushed through the wound into Ibaraki Gangyan’s body, triggering the injuries that had just withstood the Moon Shadow Sword, and directly froze Ibaraki Gangyan’s blood.

Seizing the moment, Lu Wu pulled out the longsword in his hand.

He swung again.

“Heaven Suppressing Sword Technique!”

Powered by the Inheritance Skills from Skyward Strike and Sky Dominating Stick, the sword technique burst forth.

This sword strike, almost the limit of Lu Wu’s current power aside from the Divine Sword Skill, was extremely fast and came with a suppressing effect.

Struggling against the uprising internal energy and wounds, Ibaraki Gangyan had no time to react and was swiftly disarmed by Lu Wu, who slashed off his arm holding the Village Justice.

Taking the Village Justice, Lu Wu delivered a fierce kick, sending Ibaraki Gangyan flying, and grabbing the Village Justice, he shouted at Xing Zhanlong.

“What are you waiting for? Blast him! You want Du Dao Hu Zi to die, right?”

At Lu Wu’s words, Xing Zhanlong shuddered, instinctively pulling out the Moon Shadow Sword and launching the remaining two attacks together.

Though considerably weaker than the full-power Moon Shadow Sword, these attacks were still of Epic level.

Both attacks launched together, and the defenseless Ibaraki Gangyan was cleaved into four pieces.

In his face filled with shock, confusion, anger, and reluctance, he was brutally cut down.

An Epic level powerhouse was cunningly killed like that.

Finally, Lu Wu’s crisis was resolved.

# Chapter 368: 365 Scraping Treasure Vault

Chapter 368: 365 Scraping Treasure Vault

The Cimu family.

With Ibaraki Gangyan being slain by Moon Shadow’s two strikes, Lu Wuyi finally felt at ease, but he couldn’t help but exclaim, “Damn, that was not easy!”

It truly wasn’t easy.

Even though it appeared that Lu Wu had calculated and killed Ibaraki Gangyan in just a moment.

In reality, it was filled with luck.

Had it not been for Lu Wu’s chance encounter with a member of the Zero Organization half a month earlier, from whom he had collected a large amount of Evil Energy.

Had it not been for Xing Zhanlong having an item that stored the three strikes from Moon Shadow.

Had it not been for Ibaraki Gangyan’s overconfidence and his obsession with the Divine Sword Skill, it would have been difficult to say whether Lu Wu could have defeated him.

After all, Lu Wu had seen his opponent’s attribute panel.

There were many things about him that made Lu Wu extremely wary.

Such as the Fire God Slash, his talent to deliver two strikes at once, and that slumbering Divine Artifact.

If all of these were to erupt.

Lu Wu really didn’t have much confidence he could win.

Even with Xing Zhanlong’s help at his side.

Hmm, speaking of Xing Zhanlong, at this moment, Xing Zhanlong was staring at Lu Wu.

Lu Wuyi had just had his heart settled, but Xing Zhanlong’s hadn’t yet.

After all, Village Justice was still in Lu Wu’s hands, and Du Dao Saeko’s injuries had not yet healed.

Under such circumstances, how could his heart possibly be at ease?

Moreover, the schemes and methods Lu Wu had just displayed made him particularly vigilant.

After all, he did have some self-awareness and knew very clearly.

Such a person who could even calculate and kill the Epic Level Ibaraki Gangyan, if he were to calculate against him, he might just help count the money after being sold.

But, fortunately,

Lu Wu had no intention of selling him out.

“Thank you, I’ll resolve this matter for you right away.”

Having dealt with Ibaraki Gangyan, Lu Wu turned his attention to the Village Justice in his hand.

Meanwhile, he pressed the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword against it.

The King of Divine Artifacts skill burst forth, slowly absorbing the power of Village Justice into the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword.

During this process, the aura of Village Justice visibly weakened at an observable pace.

In less than half an hour, Village Justice’s aura had decreased to Elite Level, while the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword in Lu Wu’s hand, which had just executed the Divine Sword Skill and suffered a significant drop in energy and aura, had recovered.

And it had made a breakthrough on its original foundation, reaching the standard of a Lord 2 Star.

“Now it’s settled, it’s completely powerless to struggle anymore, and your goddess will no longer be at risk of backlash.”

After taking care of this, Lu Wu nonchalantly tossed Village Justice to Xing Zhanlong.

His series of decisive actions left Xing Zhanlong somewhat bewildered.

It seemed he had not expected Lu Wu to resolve his problem so easily. Watching as Lu Wu threw Village Justice to him and then started busying himself with his own matters, the easily swayed Xing Zhanlong forgot about being used by Lu Wu just moments ago.

He couldn’t help but think again, perhaps Lu Wu wasn’t a bad person after all.

On Lu Wu’s side, after dealing with Village Justice, he first collected the corpse of Ibaraki Gangyan, chopped into four pieces, as well as his Flowing Blade Fire.

To Lu Wu, these were treasures.

There was still a large amount of energy within Ibaraki Gangyan’s corpse, which Lu Wu could refine into his own body.

And that Flowing Blade Fire was an even more Epic Divine Artifact.

It was already in a state of slumber, and now because of Ibaraki Gangyan’s death, it had been further weakened and had almost no resistance left.

This item, for the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword, was the best kind of nourishment.

Catching it, Lu Wu might be able to upgrade the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword to King-level, at which point his power would see further improvement.

After stowing these two items away,

Lu Wu grabbed one of the surviving members of the Cimu family to lead him to Cimu Qingzi.

The old thief Cimu didn’t hide Cimu Qingzi too thoroughly.

So, Lu Wu quickly found Cimu Qingzi.

But her state was not very good.

Lu Wu saw her within an Ice Coffin.

Beside Cimu Qingzi, there was an old man who was even more severely injured than she was, protecting her; this person was Granny.

Upon seeing Lu Wu approaching, Granny’s face changed.

“How did you get here? What happened outside just now…”

“It was me who calculated against the old thief Cimu, hmm, fortunately successful, he’s dead,” Lu Wu casually responded.

While startling Granny, he stepped forward and came before the Ice Coffin where Cimu Qingzi lay.

Through the Ice Coffin, Lu Wu could see Cimu Qingzi’s current condition.

After a month or two, her injuries had mostly healed, at least they appeared to have mostly healed; the massive piercing injury to her abdomen was gone, and half of her body had been fully restored.

The entire person didn’t have a single wound, but she had never woken up, and Lu Wu didn’t feel much of the breath of life from her.

In her attribute panel, Lu Wu saw that her state was that of coma and deep sleep.

This made Lu Wu’s eyebrows furrow slightly.

“What’s wrong with her?”

Lu Wu’s inquiry pulled Granny back from her shock.

Looking at Lu Wu, she opened her mouth several times, wanting to ask if what Lu Wu said was true, but in the end, she laid her gaze on Cimu Qingzi, “Miss’s injuries had been mostly healed in the past one or two months, but she just couldn’t wake up.

For this reason, Ibaraki Gangyan specifically asked Master Han to examine Her Highness, and Master Han said it was not a physical issue that kept Her Highness in a coma but a spiritual one.”

Master Han was the Evil Summoner that Lu Wuyi had just slashed.

Although that guy was an Evil Summoner, he still had some expertise in this area.

Unfortunately, he was cut down by Lu Wu.

Lu Wu regretted acting too harshly; had he known about Cimu Qingzi’s condition, he would’ve spared his life.

“Didn’t he mention any solution?”

Granny replied, “He said that for this kind of problem, others can’t do much; it is all up to Miss herself and her fate.”

Great, keeping him would’ve been useless then; slashing him wasn’t unjustified after all.

Lu Wu shook his head, casting aside these messy thoughts.

He said to Granny, “Let’s put Qingzi’s coma issue aside for later.

Just now, with the help of Xing Zhanlong from District 1, I managed to kill Ibaraki Gangyan by a fluke.

The commotion just now wasn’t small, and we can’t keep this news under wraps.

Once this gets out, the Cimu family will surely plunge into chaos; I don’t know how many people will come over, so we have to leave the Cimu family before they arrive.”

After all, the ones who might come next could be Epic-level powerhouses.

Lu Wuke didn’t want to be a captive again.

Granny nodded her head vigorously.

“I’ll pack up, and let’s leave right away!”

“Don’t rush; we’ve still got a bit of time. Before we leave, let’s move the Cimu family’s treasury first.”

Lu Wuke hadn’t forgotten about this.

Granny also didn’t see anything wrong with that; it was natural for the treasury of the Cimu family to belong to Cimu Qingzi, and taking it when leaving was only normal.

The two immediately sprang into action, with Lu Wu carrying the Ice Coffin of Cimu Qingzi, heading straight for the Cimu family’s treasury.

Lu Wu had been to this place before; even though he had been in a coma, it didn’t matter because Granny knew where it was.

With Granny’s lead, Lu Wu found the Cimu family’s treasury with ease.

The key to opening the Cimu family’s treasury was on Ibaraki Gangyan.

Lu Wu took some effort to search Ibaraki Gangyan’s body for the key, and after they unlocked the treasury, he and Granny charged in.

Because time was pressing,

Lu Wu didn’t look around, but directly grabbed a few sheets upon entering the treasury and started frantically looting.

After packing up everything in the treasury that was above the level of Legend, Lu Wu and Granny fled the Cimu family with Cimu Qingzi.

As they left, Lu Wu conveniently destroyed the Cimu family’s dungeons.

He released the people of the Sakuragi Family who were imprisoned.

Originally, Lu Wu wanted to escort them home.

But on second thought, with Ibaraki Gangyan’s death, the entire Cimu family was essentially scattered and no one would bother with the Sakuragi Family’s affairs.

On the contrary, it was quite dangerous for Lu Wu himself.

If the Sakuragi Family didn’t make contact with him, it might have been okay, but if they did, it was unclear what would happen.

Thus, Lu Wu decided not to meet with the Sakuragi Family.

After leaving the Cimu family, Lu Wu, without saying another word, directly took Granny and Cimu Qingzi along with the Cimu family’s centuries worth of resources and ran wildly, escaping from District 11 at the fastest speed.

Lu Wu didn’t want to spend another moment in this wretched place.

Lu Wu’s escape was rather smooth.

Mainly because the news about the Cimu family spread quite slowly.

Despite the fierce fight, few knew of Ibaraki Gangyan’s death.

Another reason was that Lu Wu had someone to take the fall.

After returning the Village Justice to Xing Zhanlong, Xing Zhanlong’s entire focus was on Du Dao Hu Zi.

He totally ignored what was happening with Lu Wu or the Cimu family’s affairs.

It was only after he had attended to Du Dao Hu Zi’s injuries that he realized Lu Wu had fled, and the entire Cimu family was in chaos.

The news of Ibaraki Gangyan’s death spread, and people from the remaining six forces in District 11 also showed up.

Poor Xing Zhanlong was blocked by the people from the six forces without any preparation.

When he was cornered by people from the six forces and questioned why he killed Ibaraki Gangyan as well as about the Cimu family’s resources,

Only then did Xing Zhanlong realize what kind of ‘good person’ Lu Wu was…

…

Please subscribe; I’m nearly starving.

# Chapter 369: 366 Settling Down (Seeking Subscriptions)

Chapter 369: 366 Settling Down (Seeking Subscriptions)

After dealing with Ibaraki Gangyan,

Lu Wu took Qingzi and Granny, loaded with big and small packages, and left the Cimu family.

Moreover, it took them a week to leave Eleventh District and settle down at the edge of Twelfth District, which was approximately the area of a certain Korean before Lu Wu crossed over.

Upon arriving in a completely new district, everything had to start from scratch.

Fortunately, Lu Wu had done this once before, so doing it again was much easier.

In just two days, he had a good understanding of the situation in Zone 12 and had mastered its language.

Without much effort, he and his companions settled in a city in Zone 12.

Everything went rather smoothly.

After sorting all this out, Lu Wu finally had time to organize his gains.

He was quite excited about the items he had scavenged from the Cimu family’s treasury.

However, upon organizing them, Lu Wu felt a bit disappointed.

He found that the items he brought from the Cimu family were rather pitiful in number.

Only 27 items in total.

Mostly just some Legendary materials.

There were hardly any potions or fruits.

After picking and choosing for a long time, he couldn’t find anything that truly satisfied him.

“Pah, pauper!

And to think it dared to be one of the seven major powers in Eleventh District?”

He had apparently forgotten that to save him, Ibaraki Gangyan had used one Epic and thirty-one Legendary items.

Most of the resources were already on him; what good could the remaining items possibly be?

Of course, these materials weren’t bad.

They were all decent materials, and given time and resources, Lu Wu could turn them into tools or equipment.

But he simply didn’t have those resources right now.

After all, he had yet to absorb 90% of the energy on him.

Besides, there was also the body of Ibaraki Gangyan and the energy of “Flowing Blade Fire” that needed absorbing.

Just these three would take Lu Wu several months; where would he find the time for anything else?

So, Lu Wu finally packed these items and gave them to Granny.

Originally intending to use Granny as a dumping ground, this gesture made her view him differently.

Granny had initially thought Lu Wu was just a mooch, a good-for-nothing man.

While heavily reliant on Qingzi, the moment he heard Qingzi was in danger, he would cowardly turn his head and walk away.

Now, looking at Lu Wu again,

not only did he return at the crucial moment to kill Ibaraki Gangyan,

he was now unreservedly offering all the items he took from the Cimu treasury to Qingzi.

This clearly showed Lu Wu’s nature and quality.

He was definitely a man worthy of a lifetime’s trust.

Thus, after hesitating a while as she looked at those items, Granny finally took something out of her bosom and handed it to Lu Wu.

“Here, this is for you.”

Lu Wu was startled, “What is this?”

His eyes glanced at the item, and they immediately widened.

…

Item: Substitute Puppet

Quality: Legendary Item (single-use)

Effect: A life-saving, single-use item that can take a fatal attack for the host once when the host faces mortal danger, and can randomly teleport the host to a location a hundred kilometers away.

ps: Unaffected by Domain influences.

…

Seeing the attributes of this item, Lu Wu’s eyes widened.

Especially the last line.

This item was far more useful than the random teleportation ring that Zhang Yunyi had given him; had he had this item before, he wouldn’t have had to suffer so much.

“I found this in the Cimu treasury, take it!”

Lu Wu looked at the Substitute Puppet Granny was handing him.

He opened his mouth to refuse, but he couldn’t bring himself to say it.

After all, he was truly too tempted by this item…

With this Substitute Puppet, Lu Wu suddenly felt a surge of safety.

However, having gone through the ordeal with Ibaraki Gangyan,

Lu Wu also understood that this kind of external item was ultimately just that, an external item.

He couldn’t depend too much on it; otherwise, he could end up in trouble just like before.

Moreover, Lu Wu felt that there might not be much use for this item in the short term, as he did not plan to go wandering.

At least, not until he had absorbed the energy within his body, as well as the energy from Ibaraki Gangyan and “Flowing Blade Fire.”

“Once I absorb all of these, my power should also experience a qualitative leap, and even if it doesn’t reach the Epic Level, it should be around King Level 3 stars.

Although it’s still not enough, it barely qualifies me to step outside.”

Listen to what he’s saying.

According to him, it seems like most people in the Alliance who are at least nine-tenths of the way there don’t qualify to go outside.

After experiencing imprisonment, Lu Wu’s sense of security has really plummeted.

However, given his current circumstances, this seems to be the most rational approach.

If he could just safely continue for a while, digesting all he now possesses would naturally be best.

So, after settling down,

Lu Wu began his closed-door cultivation.

Among the energies of Ibaraki Gangyan, Flowing Blade Fire, and his own, Lu Wu started with his own energy.

Although he could have started devouring “Flowing Blade Fire” as well,

the problem is that the “Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword” had already reached Lord 2 Star, and once it devoured or rather absorbed “Flowing Blade Fire,” it could definitely reach King Level.

Given the characteristics of the “Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword,” the scene would likely not be minor.

And right now, what Lu Wu wanted was to keep a low profile, so he had no choice but to put that issue aside first and deal with the energy within his own energy space.

The energy in his energy space was about 90% intact; absorbing it all should give him a chance to push Lu Wu to King Level 2 Star.

“First, deal with the internal energy, then with Old Thief Cimu’s, and finally with Flowing Blade Fire.”

This whole process had already been planned out by Lu Wu himself.

What else is there to say?

Naturally, it’s time to get started.

The progress in absorbing the energy within Lu Wu’s own body was quite smooth.

After all, this energy had initially been inside his own body, and he had come into contact with it when drawing it into his energy space.

Moreover, as Lu Wu’s power improved, the ‘small company’ within his energy space also continued to grow.

As the company grew, the speed of energy absorption significantly increased.

Thus, the energy absorption speed increased the further along it went.

Lu Wu took just three days to absorb all the remaining energy in his body.

However, after absorbing all this energy, something troubling happened.

His power had not broken through as a result.

He was still at King 1 Star.

And the reason lay in the Domain.

From King Level onwards, the improvement in power was not just about energy anymore, the critical factor was the Domain.

To elevate his power, in addition to energy increase, Lu Wu also needed to improve his control over his Domain.

He would need at least 30% control of his Domain to reach 2 Stars.

This made Lu Wu very troubled, as his current control over his Domain was only about 11%.

What troubled Lu Wu even more was

his Domain was the Senluo Wanxiang Domain.

For this Domain, Lu Wu had so far discovered only one way to improve it, which was to fuse different skills and abilities.

The more skills he merged, the higher the control Lu Wu had over his Domain.

The faster his power would improve.

This type of Domain is actually quite good; if he really let go and worked on it, Lu Wu could improve rapidly.

But the problem is, Lu Wu isn’t going out and adventuring now, which has caused his Domain improvement to stagnate. Lu Wu is now caught in a closed loop.

He feels his power is too weak, so he does not adventure.

And his family’s Domain can only improve its strength through adventuring, so without venturing out, he cannot improve his power.

So, what should Lu Wu do now?

Well, Lu Wu’s choice is to first digest all the resources that can be digested.

After all, he has just absorbed his body’s energy, and there’s still the energy from Ibaraki Gangyan and “Flowing Blade Fire” that hasn’t been absorbed.

Once he dealt with the energy inside his body, Lu Wu took out the corpse of Ibaraki Gangyan.

However, just as Lu Wu was about to thaw out Ibaraki Gangyan’s body to start absorbing the energy within it, a being in Zone 12 raised its head, looked in Lu Wu’s direction, and murmured, “Such a rich evil energy!”

…

Today, I suddenly had a whim to treat myself to a Silver Miao.

Once the idea occurred, I actually did it and got myself a Silver Miao.

Partly because it’s been so long since I last recommended anything, and I’m losing followers heavily.

Partly because my recent state of mind has been off.

With the urge to wield a ‘knife’ constantly arising, and to protect my younger brother, I finally decided to do this for myself.

Yep, that feels better. With ten thousand of Silver Miao spent, I can get back 5000 even after some taxes, and spending over five thousand, I can finally settle down to write.

No more dwelling on this and that.

Alright, no more nonsense. I better honestly get on with writing.

The bald Nu Xiao

# Chapter 370: 367 67 and 71

Chapter 370: 367 67 and 71

Ibaraki Gangyan, as an Epic Level powerhouse,

had an immense amount of energy, both in quantity and quality, which was terrifying.

Even after more than half a month, the energy inside his body had naturally dissipated some, but the remaining energy was still over ten times that of Lu Wu himself.

Generally speaking, this kind of energy should not be touched.

It was like a bomb,

and no one knew when it might explode.

The best way to deal with it was to leave it alone and let time slowly eradicate this energy. As for absorbing it, one should not even think about it.

However, Lu Wu’s situation was unusual because he had refined Ibaraki Gangyan’s energy within his body.

With this energy, it was easy for Lu Wu to do something.

By inputting his refined energy into Ibaraki Gangyan’s corpse, he could lure out the energy inside and then upload it to the “company.”

In just two or three moves, Ibaraki Gangyan’s energy could be cleaned up and transformed into his own.

However, when Lu Wu began to take action, he found that the energy structure within Ibaraki Gangyan’s corpse had changed significantly during the couple of weeks he had stored it.

Nearly half of the energy had already been eroded by Evil Energy, turning into Evil Energy.

This was somewhat troublesome as, although Lu Wu could handle Evil Energy, it was much more difficult to deal with than ordinary energy.

Thus, after discovering this situation,

Lu Wu quickly thawed all four parts of Ibaraki Gangyan’s body.

Then he began to sort through the energy in these bodies, separating the Evil Energy from the ordinary energy.

To prevent the Evil Energy from corrupting all the ordinary energy during the absorption process.

It took a bit of effort, but once the two energies were completely separated,

Lu Wu started with the ordinary energy.

It took three days to transfer all the energy from Ibaraki Gangyan into his own Energy Space.

Transferring it into Lu Wu’s Energy Space wasn’t too late, but Lu Wu still had to refine it before the energy truly became his.

However, this was a massive project and probably would not be finished for several months.

“It needs a lot of time, but no matter, I’m not short on time right now!”

Lu Wu touched his nose, ready to begin.

At that moment, a necklace on his chest lit up.

“Is there a situation?”

Lu Wu’s face subtly changed.

This necklace, which he had created out of materials from the Cimu family treasure vault after arriving in district 12,

looked like an ordinary necklace but was actually the hub of the alert system he had set up.

Its glowing indicated that someone had entered Lu Wu’s alert area.

Lu Wu quickly picked up the necklace and checked it, his face sinking again, “Two King-level, 12 Lord Level presences.

Heading this way.

They’re coming quickly!”

Lu Wu hadn’t finished speaking when 14 figures had already landed on the edge of the small courtyard where Lu Wu was staying.

Undoubtedly, these people were coming for him.

However, they did not attack immediately.

The group watched from outside the courtyard.

…

“Two Angel Envoys, this is the place!”

The fourteen stopped, and one of the Lord 3 Star beings respectfully said to the two King-level.

“Do you know the identity and power of the person inside?”

The leader, who was wearing a mask and whose back bore the number 67, asked.

“Not sure, only know that the people living inside moved in about ten days ago.

Two people are living there, an old man with a limp and a young man wearing a mask; their exact power is unknown.”

“Your performance is somewhat lacking!”

71, next to 67, sneered, “Since that’s the case, just go in then.

All of you, go ahead!”

At 71’s command, the 12 Lord Level beings hesitated for no moment and slipped into Lu Wu’s courtyard.

They knew they were considered cannon fodder, but no one dared to speak out of line.

All they could do upon entering was to be extremely vigilant.

And secretly pray that the beings inside were not too powerful.

Otherwise, no matter how cautious or careful they were, it wouldn’t matter.

And whether it was luck or misfortune, these 12 found nothing after searching around the courtyard.

They found neither people nor anything else.

“There’s nothing?”

67 and 71 exchanged a glance.

Without a word, they floated up, one with black lightning flashing in one hand and the other with black flames, directly smashing down toward the courtyard where Lu Wu was.

Lu Wu, hiding in the courtyard, saw the two attack without hesitation, furrowed his brows, and immediately opened the Senluo Wanxiang Domain.

At the same time, he grasped the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword in his hand.

“Frost Ice Sword Style!”

A slash sent out icy blue Sword Qi, which directly extinguished the falling black flames and thunder.

67 and 71’s lips curled up.

“Who says there’s nothing? Isn’t this something?”

As they spoke, Lu Wu’s figure also revealed itself.

Their gazes fell on Lu Wu, their Pupil Fire flickering with black light, seemingly probing Lu Wu’s strength.

“King Level 1 Star Summoner, the sword in your hand is a Divine Artifact unique to district 11, Grade Lord 2 Star.

If the artifact is only Lord 2 Star, but your power has reached King Level 1 Star, it seems you have other Summoned Beasts.”

71 said this, glancing at 67, “Will you go or should I?”

“Don’t take it lightly, there’s still another person, isn’t there?”

“Right, kid, didn’t you say there’s an old woman too? Call her out, you alone can’t withstand us.”

Lu Wuyi tightened the grip on his longsword, and a trace of barely concealed panic crossed his face.

“Who are you? What do you want? I don’t recall offending you.”

Seeing Lu Wu’s anxious demeanor, Number 71 quickly tried to reassure him, “Don’t be nervous, we’re not the good guys.

Rest assured, we’re not going to do anything good.

Just as long as…oh crap…”

Number 71 hadn’t finished speaking when suddenly, a domain opened, unleashing a terrifying gravity that weighed down on Number 67 and Number 71.

This domain came from Granny.

She ambushed them.

Lu Wuyi then seized the opportunity.

He pounced forward, brandishing the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword, and slashed towards the panicking Numbers 67 and 71.

However, just as Lu Wuyi pounced in front of them, these panicking fellows suddenly cracked a smile.

“We played our part well, didn’t we?”

Clearly, they had seen through Lu Wuyi’s scheme right from the start.

Their panic was merely to lure Lu Wuyi into action and, as Lu Wuyi approached, they boldly attacked.

Two black summoned beasts emerged from their bodies.

One a long snake wrapped in black thunder, and the other a lizard wrapped in black flames.

Lu Wuyi also identified their attributes at that moment.

…

Name: Thunder Snake (Evil)

Power: 1 Star (King-level)

Quality: Legend (Improved)

Attribute: Thunder, Evil

Weakness: Light (Strong)

Core Basic Skills: Thunder Strike (Grandmaster)

Core Advanced Skills: Thunder Fall (Grandmaster)

Core Killing Move: Five Thunders Fall (Grandmaster)

Ultimate Skill: Five Thunders Bombarding (Master)

Talent Review…

Description: A summoned beast of an Evil Summoner, eroded by evil energy, devoid of consciousness, retaining only the instinct and ferocity for battle.

…

Name: Blast Fire Lizard (Evil)

Power: 1 Star (King-level)

Quality: Gold (Improved)

Attribute: Fire, Evil

Weakness: Light (Strong)

Core Ultimate Skill: Blast Fire Break (Master)

Talent Review…

…

In an instant, two King-level summoned beasts entered the scene and unleashed their power simultaneously.

“Five Thunders Bombarding!” “Blast Fire Break!”

“Evil Thunder Domain!” “Evil Fire Domain!”

At the same time, two ultimate skills, two domains were unleashed.

Though just King Level 1 Star, their collective unleashing began to crack Granny’s domain, leaving Lu Wuyi alone to face the full assault of two King-level adversaries.

Seeing Lu Wuyi close at hand, Numbers 67 and 71 showed a cold smirk.

Both were King Level 1 Star.

Caught off guard, with them ready to strike, Lu Wuyi was undoubtedly doomed.

However, facing their barrage, Lu Wuyi was not in the slightest panic.

A mocking smile even surfaced on his lips.

“You think I couldn’t see through your ruse?”

With these slightly convoluted words spoken,

Lu Wuyi narrowed his eyes as the Senluo Wanxiang Domain he had yet to release, opened.

The moment it opened, a surge of extensive information flooded into Lu Wuyi’s mind.

It was about “Five Thunders Bombarding” and “Blast Fire Break.”

At this time, Lu Wuyi didn’t have time to pay attention to those details, his grip tightened on the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword, energy madly surging within him.

His eyes instantly reddened, unfolding a crazed, demonic mindset.

“Mad Demon Sword Style!”

With a soft chant, Lu Wuyi slashed forward, a mysterious line casually slashed through Number 71’s domain, effortlessly decapitating the lizard shielding him.

In one strike, a King-level 1-star summoned beast and a King level powerhouse were slaughtered.

This severely shook Number 67, who instinctively tried to flee, fortunately.

At the same time.

Both “Five Thunders Bombarding” and “Blast Fire Break” struck Lu Wuyi.

Watching Lu Wuyi swallowed by black flames and thunder, Number 67 let out a sigh of relief.

“Taking those two hits, he must be dead…”

“Pfft!”

Before Number 67 could finish, a longsword shot out, piercing his chest.

At the same time, Lu Wuyi tore through the thunder and flames, stepping out…

# Chapter 371: 368 Ninth Apostle

Chapter 371: 368 Ninth Apostle

“All King-level, but why do I feel like you guys are a bit weak?”

Lu Wu emerged from the flames,

muttering to himself as he moved toward Number 67.

Number 67, pinned down by the “Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword,” couldn’t move, but the Thunder Snake beside him seemed almost unaffected.

“Retreat!”

At this command, knowing he couldn’t beat his opponent, Number 67 prepared to ride the Thunder Snake to escape, but he was too late.

“Since you’re here, don’t leave now, huh!”

Lu Wu pounced with a sinister smile, grabbed the Thunder Snake by its tail, and gave it a violent twist,

smashing the ten-meter-long Thunder Snake heavily onto the ground.

The scene was as shocking as it could get.

And Lu Wu was as ferocious as they come, charging forward, violently stepping on the snake’s head, fists clenched with sparks of electricity, punching the King-level Summoned Beast to death.

As the Thunder Snake was killed, Number 67’s face turned pale, obviously suffering from the backlash.

And while the Thunder Snake was killed, the people who came along with Number 67 and 71 were also suppressed by Granny.

With that, this sudden attack came to an end.

Having dealt with the Thunder Snake and covered in snake blood, Lu Wu stood up and slowly walked toward Number 67,

as if a demon god from hell himself.

Lu Wu couldn’t for the life of him understand.

Was he not cautious enough?

Or was it because his good looks were to no avail?

Even if he just sat at home, his handsomeness would break through the heavens, and would people still come after him because he was good-looking?

Why, having been in District 12 for less than half a month, did someone come to kick down his door?

Today, he must have these people give him an explanation!

“Come on, let’s have a good talk.”

Looking at the man in front of him, resembling a demon god, Number 67 couldn’t help swallowing his saliva, his face showing complete submission and flattery compared to before.

“It’s a misunderstanding, all of this is a misunderstanding. We’re not bad guys; in fact, we came here without any ill intentions!

Just now, it was just a little joke we played on you.”

“That’s not what you said a moment ago. The one lying down over there said you weren’t good people, that you didn’t come here to do anything good.

Also, by your account, am I someone without a sense of humor who can’t take a joke?

Do I, lacking any sense of humor, owe you an apology?”

Lu Wu sneered as he approached Number 67, grabbed his neck in one hand, and hoisted him up.

“Cut the crap with me, and speak—who are you guys, and what do you want?

I advise you to be honest and cooperative. After all, I’m not a nice guy, either. I’ve learned more forms of punishment than you can imagine.

And I believe you wouldn’t want to try them all, would you?”

“Stop, stop, stop… I’ll talk, I’ll tell you everything!”

Number 67 seemed to be a lot softer than Lu Wu had expected; a slight scare and he immediately confessed.

“Well, we are from the Zero Organization.

I am the 67th Apostle, and the one you killed was the 71st Apostle.

We were here on a mission.

We received a task because there was a strong reaction of evil energy here, and our superiors sent us to check it out.

If it’s an item, we’re to retrieve it; if it’s a person, we’re to recruit them, to bring them into our fold.”

Upon hearing this, Lu Wuyi’s eyes narrowed.

The look he gave Agent 67 grew several degrees more dangerous.

Although Lu Wu could guess that these people were likely involved with “Zero”, hearing him admit it outright still sparked an impulse in Lu Wu to kill him.

After all, a significant reason for Lu Wu’s downfall to the 12th district was due to the Zero organization.

However, what was pressing now was not venting anger, but solving the problem.

“You’re trying to recruit me? Your methods are quite unique, aren’t they?”

“It’s not deliberate, really, it’s a misunderstanding…”

“Cut the crap, tell me, who assigned you this task?”

“The Ninth Apostle!”

Agent 67 was spineless, responding immediately and even preemptively answering questions Lu Wu hadn’t asked.

“The Ninth Apostle is the one in charge of the Zero organization in the 12th district, and is extremely powerful. It’s said that she has almost reached Half-step Epic status.

She was supposed to come herself, but got held up at the last minute, so she delegated the task to us.

But the Ninth Lord takes this task very seriously.

She instructed us to communicate with her as soon as the mission was complete. If I didn’t report back to the Ninth Lord immediately, she would come over in no time.”

Lu Wu gave him a glance.

Agent 67’s little schemes were all too obvious.

As Lu Wu was eyeing Agent 67, Granny approached, her eyebrows tightly furrowed—it was clear she had heard what Agent 67 had just said.

For Lu Wu and his party, Agent 67’s words were undoubtedly very bad news.

They had never imagined that they would attract the attention of the Zero organization just days after arriving in the 12th district.

It really was one trouble after another, a real headache.

But no matter how much of a headache it was, the problem had to be resolved. Granny quickly suggested, “They must want that item, right? Let’s leave the item and go.”

Granny didn’t specify, but Lu Wu knew she was referring to the corpse of Old Thief Cimu.

The very thing these people had come for.

Given the current situation, Granny’s suggestion seemed to be the best option.

Even Agent 67, whom Lu Wu had captured, praised the idea, “Right, right, the Ninth Lord wants that item imbued with Evil Energy. If you just leave the item and our lives, the Ninth Lord won’t pursue the matter.”

Lu Wu scoffed, “Really? Your Zero organization is so reasonable? An Apostle’s life is worth so little?”

“That’s why you should spare my life. As long as you let me live, I can report to the Ninth Lord and buy some time, so by the time she arrives, you all would have already fled, and she won’t pursue it.”

Agent 67 was indeed fighting for his life.

Conveniently, as Agent 67 made this plea, the necklace around his neck flashed.

Lu Wu frowned, while Agent 67’s eyes lit up with excitement, eagerly making a suggestion to Lu Wu, “It’s the Ninth Lord! She must be checking on the progress of the mission. Let me take the call and handle it for you.”

Lu Wu and Granny exchanged a glance, and finally, Lu Wu nodded.

“Go ahead.”

With Lu Wu’s permission, Agent 67 then proceeded to answer the communication device.

“Ninth Lord!”

“How’s the mission going?”

A seductive female voice came from the necklace, to which Agent 67 respectfully replied, “My Lord, we were delayed on the road, it will take some more time to reach the destination. Please give your servant 60 minutes, and I assure you the mission will be accomplished.”

“Hmm!”

After giving a nasal affirmation, the other party hung up.

Agent 67 lifted his head, a sycophantic look on his face, “See, just give her another report in 60 minutes, and I can help you get through this completely!”

Lu Wu and Granny looked at each other, and Granny was the first to speak, “You take her away, I’ll watch him here!”

“Wait another sixty minutes before leaving!”

Lu Wu shook his head and refused.

“No, I’ll do it!”

Although Granny was a King-level Peak existence, she was already old and her combat power was much worse than a typical King-level Peak.

Moreover, given the serious injuries she had suffered before, her current combat power was unknown, but likely not even at the level of King Level 1 Star. Leaving her to buy time was akin to sending her to death, so Lu Wu rejected the idea without hesitation.

Agent 67 really wanted to say, “You all go, I’ll definitely be honest.”

But now was not his turn to speak.

So, he obediently squatted in a corner like part of the scenery.

Granny wanted to argue, knowing the risk of staying behind was high.

But Lu Wu didn’t give her the chance, nor did he discuss with her, “Don’t talk anymore, there isn’t much time left.

Take her to District 11, it’s relatively safe there, this is the map to District 11.

Once you get to District 11, find a place to hide. I will come and find you once I’m done here.”

Lu Wu said, fishing out a map to District 1 from his embrace and handed it to Granny.

Granny was still Granny, after all.

She was nearly a hundred years old.

Her experience was vast; she had seen big events.

Faced with the current situation, she knew arguing further was futile, so after a deep glance at Lu Wu, she took the map he passed to her. After packing up for a while, she hefted Cimu Qingzi’s Ice Coffin, and after Lu Wu thoroughly checked to ensure they were not carrying any tracking items, he allowed them to leave.

Once Granny left,

Lu Wu walked over to Agent 67.

Since he had to wait for sixty minutes anyway, he might as well do something.

Lu Wu casually took out Old Thief Cimu’s corpse and began to absorb and refine the Evil Energy within, while chatting with Agent 67.

He was quite interested in the Zero Organization.

Although his interest was more in how to destroy it, he had to understand it in order to obliterate it.

Now that such a great opportunity was before him, Lu Wu was certainly going to seize it well.

On Agent 67’s part,

To hold onto his dear life, he chatted with Lu Wu with utmost sincerity.

Whatever Lu Wu asked, he answered; he even shared things Lu Wu hadn’t asked about.

From the organizational structure of Zero to the distribution of their power, and even some of their secrets he knew.

It could be said that this guy really surrendered all the information he had.

Thanks to him, Lu Wu gained a certain understanding of the Zero Organization.

Externally, the impression of the Zero Organization was primarily one of madness and cruelty.

They often did things that went against humanity.

And the reason — Lu Wu found out from chatting with Agent 67.

The reason the Zero Organization acted like this was because it was established with the goal of destroying the current world.

Hmm, an organization founded with the aim to destroy the world.

But their destruction was different from the usual sense.

Or maybe, using the word ‘destruction’ is somewhat inappropriate; the word ‘reset’ might be more apt.

The core goal of Zero was to take control of the “Gate” and reset the current world.

To return the world to a state without Summoned Beasts.

This was the original intent behind the creation of Zero by its leader, and it’s something that had been etched onto the doctrine of Zero, something every member must be clear about.

“The leader says, it’s because of the existence of Summoned Beasts that this world has become the distorted form it is now.

As long as Summoned Beasts exist in this world for even one day,

this world will always be one where the strong prey on the weak, a dog-eat-dog world.

Countless people are doomed to live at the bottom of the world, with no hope for their entire lives.

This is not the world he wants, nor should the world be like this.

So, we of Zero are to find the ‘Gate’ and reset this world, to bring it back to the era without Summoned Beasts.

To completely free people from this dog-eat-dog world.”

Agent 67 spoke without a hint of emotion.

Clearly, even he, as an Angel Envoy, did not agree with such doctrine.

One could say, probably ninety-nine percent of Zero, possibly even that leader, never took this so-called doctrine seriously.

But once the doctrine was established, it justified any heinous act the organization carried out.

After all, they were going to reset the world.

What burden is there in doing anything if the world is going to be reset?

On Lu Wu’s side, he just smirked upon hearing such doctrine, not taking such nonsense to heart.

He was concerned not with the doctrine, but with the structure of the Zero Organization.

How to join, how it operated,

the extent of its power, the details of their bases, and such.

Agent 67 didn’t really love to talk about these, but he spilled the details.

Joining Zero was simple. If you were an Evil Summoner and could recite the doctrine, you could join.

You didn’t have to go looking for the organization; once you made a name for yourself, they would come to find you.

And once in the organization, climbing up the ranks was even simpler; push the person above you down, and you take his place.

Choose whom you wish to challenge.

If you win, the position is yours; if you lose, well, you end up below them.

How the organization operated was more complex.

Agent 67 only talked about District 12 with him.

In District 12, which had a smaller territory, the highest leader of Zero had just been the Ninth Envoy.

She was the boss in this area; everything operated under her commands.

Her word was law.

Agent 67 obviously avoided delving into the operation, but he seemed quite willing to talk about bases.

He told Lu Wu about nearly all bases in District 12.

He even disclosed where their stronghold was, embodying the notion of leaving no stone unturned.

In their conversation, Lu Wu enjoyed himself immensely.

With their chat, the sixty minutes passed unnoticed.

Seeing that it was about time, Lu Wu asked Agent 67 to report in to his superiors.

With that, Lu Wu had nearly completed his delaying mission. As soon as Agent 67 sent his status report, Lu Wu could simply slap him dead and walk away.

However, just as Lu Wu told Agent 67 to report in, Agent 67’s mouth curled upward, “Seems like there’s no need to report.”

“Why?” Lu Wu was startled.

“Because I’ve already arrived!”

A beguiling voice rang out from nearby.

The next moment, a terrifying aura exploded, bearing down on Lu Wu like a mountain…

# Chapter 372: 369 Fire God Slash

Chapter 372: 369 Fire God Slash

As that enchanting voice resounded, a terrifying pressure suddenly descended.

Lu Wu, struggling against the pressure, looked up to see a woman appearing in the sky, nearly 1.8 meters tall, with long legs, and, despite it being summer, wrapped in a gray fur coat.

This woman was clearly the Ninth Apostle.

The moment Lu Wu saw her, he could perceive her attributes entirely.

…

Name: Ninth Apostle

Power: 3 stars (King-level)

Summoned Beasts: Earth Bear (3-star King-level), Enchanting Demon Queen (3-star King-level)

Mastered Skills: Power of Earth (Ultimate Skill) (Grandmaster), Charming Heart (Ultimate Skill) (Grandmaster)

Summoner Domain: Earth Domain (99%), Charming Domain (99%)

Other skills, omitted

Summoner Talent: Position Transfer (Able to instantly switch places with a target)

Description: A terrifying woman.

…

The instant he saw her attributes, Lu Wu’s face slightly changed.

He subconsciously tried to put some distance between himself and Agent 67, but it was a step too late.

The moment Lu Wu tried to push away, the person in front of him had already turned into the Ninth Apostle.

As she switched positions, she reached out and slapped down with her hand.

Even though Lu Wu had already seen her attributes, being suddenly assaulted like this was unpleasant, and he only managed to withstand the blow with his longsword before being sent flying by her slap.

Seeing Lu Wu sent flying, the Ninth Apostle frowned, evidently realizing that something was off—Lu Wu was far more resilient than she had expected.

However, her response was quick, immediately summoning the Earth Bear she carried with her.

Before Lu Wu could even land, a massive figure appeared out of nowhere.

Its attributes also appeared before Lu Wu.

…

Name: Earth Bear (Evil)

Power: 3 stars (King-level)

Quality: Legend (Enhanced)

Attributes: Earth, Evil

Weakness: Light (Strong)

Core Basic Skills: Bear Roar (Grandmaster)

Core Advanced Skills: Roar (Grandmaster)

Core Killing Skills: Earth Slap (Grandmaster), Barbarian Bear Roar (Grandmaster)

Core Ultimate Skill: Earth’s Wrath (Grandmaster)

Talent: Earth Favored (Passive) (As long as it stands on the ground, it can continuously receive power, never exhausting strength, and injuries will heal after a short period.)

(Active) (Once activated, combat power soars threefold.)

Earth Body (Passive) (Significantly increases physical and magic defense, immune to 70% of attacks from the same tier.)

Domain: Earth Domain (99%)

Description: An exceedingly fierce Earth Bear.

…

Almost simultaneously as Lu Wu perceived the bear’s attributes, it launched an attack on him.

With a roar, the Killing Skill (Barbarian Bear Roar) burst forth, causing Lu Wu’s head to buzz.

It then seized the opportunity to pounce towards Lu Wu, raising its heavy bear paw and smacking down with brutal force.

Despite its size, the bear’s paw moved incredibly fast, creating a sonic boom.

Agent 67,

watching this scene unfold,

suddenly changed his expression from flattering to something else.

“Bet you didn’t expect this, eh? These 60 minutes weren’t for me to report to the Ninth Lord, but for the Ninth Lord’s arrival.

I was just stringing you along earlier, and now that the Ninth Lord is here, it’s soon going to be your turn to be out of luck.”

No sooner had the words left his mouth than the Earth Bear slapped down.

With a “boom,”

the ground within a radius of dozens of meters was depressed by ten meters, and the land within hundreds of meters trembled; the terror of this strike was evident.

Seeing this, Agent 67 shook his head.

With such a violent slap, Lu Wu was done for.

“To die like this, it’s a bit too easy for him,” he said.

No sooner had Agent 67 spoken than an unexpected event occurred at the Earth Bear’s location.

In an instant, dark clouds filled the skies, and a darkness as if heralding the end of the world spread, a terror of the utmost extreme.

“Holy shit!”

Facing this situation, the uncultured Agent 67 managed only to swear in shock.

The Ninth Apostle on the side didn’t even have much chance to speak.

That repressed power burst forth.

A sword light, as if it were the force of a deity, surged from underground, cutting off the bear’s paw and heading straight for the Earth Bear’s forehead; a strong sense of crisis caused the Earth Bear to retreat too late, and it was sliced open by the sword light, leaving a ghastly gash on its body.

The entire bear toppled backwards, and as the Earth Bear fell, in the depressed land it had smacked down, Lu Wu surged forth.

In his hand, he held the now dim Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword, hovering in the air. Just then, the dark clouds above him dispersed, and a golden moonlight shone down, illuminating Lu Wu.

This scene was possessed of a formidable atmosphere.

Under the moonlight, Lu Wu appeared like a banished deity.

Even Agent 67 couldn’t help but swallow his saliva.

Well, it wasn’t out of craving, but out of shock.

Only now did he realize how terrifying Lu Wu’s power truly was.

At this moment, Lu Wu had no time to care about Agent 67’s astonishment; his gaze, under the moonlight, was fixed on the Ninth Apostle, “Let’s make a deal, alright? I’ll give you the item, and you take it and we’re even, okay?

This is good for both you and me!”

Faced with Lu Wu’s suggestion, the Ninth Apostle gently shook her head, “No good!

I was only interested in that mass of evil energy at first, but now I find you much more intriguing.”

As she spoke, the Ninth Apostle’s eyes fixed upon the longsword in Lu Wu’s hand, her gaze and expression as if it were already her own possession.

This made Lu Wu quite helpless.

“Are you really sure about this? This is not a wise choice. How about I give you another chance to choose?”

Lu Wu’s words made the Ninth Apostle laugh.

Her smile was full of charm and mockery, “Have you misunderstood something?”

As her words fell, the Earth Bear that had just been brought down by Lu Wu’s sword had already stood up.

And the huge wound that had been inflicted by the Divine Sword Skill on its body was rapidly healing as it rose to its feet.

Clearly, Lu Wu’s sword just now hadn’t really harmed the bear.

And in delivering that blow, he had already used up a great deal of energy, and his Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword no longer possessed another burst of power.

The situation was quite obvious now.

Thus, the Ninth Apostle mocked Lu Wu, “How about we make a deal? I won’t kill you, and you just give up quietly, sound good?”

“Are you really sure about this?”

Lu Wu frowned deeply, feeling especially helpless.

The other party did not respond, but her expression said it all.

And now, the Earth Bear that had stood back up was making its way towards Lu Wu.

Seeing this, Lu Wu could only let out a long sigh.

“Since you’ve made the most foolish choice, you can’t blame me!”

As he spoke, Lu Wu put away the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword and drew another blade from his waist.

The longsword unsheathed.

The Ninth Apostle was slightly startled.

She recognized the blade; if she wasn’t wrong, it should be a Divine Weapon belonging to someone from the Cimu family in District 11. How could it appear in the hands of the young man before her?

Wasn’t it said that he had died?

“Wait, what’s going on?”

What shocked the Ninth Apostle even more happened.

As Lu Wu gripped the blade, the Divine Artifact, supposedly lifeless and unresponsive without its master, unexpectedly lit up.

“What’s happening? How is this possible?”

The Ninth Apostle’s face changed dramatically.

She could faintly feel a force acting upon her, she was utterly locked in place, and a strong sense of crisis surged over her, making her realize she indeed had made an incredibly foolish decision.

“Wait, stop! Just leave the item, and I’ll let you go.”

Lu Wu did not heed her.

This made the Ninth Apostle somewhat frantic, “No, you don’t have to give me anything, you can just walk away, no problem.”

But it was useless.

Lu Wu sneered, “Talking like this now, where were you earlier?”

His energy had already been channeled into the Flowing Blade Fire.

After all, this Divine Artifact was not his; he could only activate it using the energy of Ibaraki Gangyan, and there was no way for Lu Wu to master it.

With the energy poured in, all the remnants of Ibaraki Gangyan’s power that he had yet to fully absorb surged in, and Lu Wu couldn’t even control it. All he could do now was wait for the Flowing Blade Fire to be satiated before slashing out.

The Ninth Apostle could clearly see that something was wrong.

Without a word, she turned to run.

But where in the world is there such a thing as provoking someone and then being able to run away?

The Flowing Blade Fire firmly locked on to her, and she couldn’t move at all at this moment.

No burst of power or Talent transformation was of use.

It was an Epic Level lock-on; although she was infinitely close, she was ultimately not an Epic, and therefore had no way to dodge; in other words, she was bound to face this slash.

At this moment, the Ninth Apostle truly regretted her actions.

Had she known about this terrifying ace up his sleeve, she would never have provoked him.

But it was now too late for regrets, and all she could do was struggle.

At this moment, the Ninth Apostle pulled out everything she had been saving. Meanwhile, Lu Wu, while channeling the energy, also activated the Senluo Wanxiang Domain with a flood of information pouring into his mind.

Lu Wu unleashed the Flowing Blade Fire, absorbing all the energy of Ibaraki Gangyan in his body.

He swung the sword.

The Fire God Slash, which Ibaraki Gangyan himself had never managed to unleash, exploded with power in Lu Wu’s hands.

Its power was even more terrifying than Ibaraki Gangyan’s own strike.

After all, he could never release all of his energy in one go.

The Flowing Blade swung.

The entire sky was covered with a dazzling crimson light, and the Earth Bear, which only lasted ten seconds under the sword’s glow, was annihilated.

After shattering the Earth Bear, the blade’s light fell upon the Ninth Apostle, engulfing this woman completely in an instant…

…

Please consider subscribing, I believe you will do so.

# Chapter 373: 370 Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword Advanced

Chapter 373: 370 Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword Advanced

Red knife light erupted from the courtyard where Lu Wu had landed.

It slashed a kilometer away, dyeing the sky within a dozen or so kilometers crimson.

After the light of that slash dimmed, the Earth Bear and that Ninth Envoy that were in its path had been completely obliterated.

The might of a single slash was terrifying indeed!

Of course, such a fearsome slash wasn’t without its cost.

The cost was that the energy Lu Wu had extracted from Ibaraki Gangyan’s body was nearly depleted.

And this was someone else’s energy, unless there’s another Ibaraki Gangyan for him to drain, Lu Wu couldn’t regenerate it himself.

In other words,

Such a terrifying slash is basically impossible for Lu Wu to perform again.

But to Lu Wu, this deal was quite worthwhile.

Using Ibaraki Gangyan’s energy in exchange for taking out two King-level Peaks was pretty good.

The only thing that Lu Wu regretted was that

the Ninth Envoy died too cleanly, leaving nothing behind.

Spending such a great cost for such a strong monster without dropping any equipment made Lu Wu somewhat upset.

“Eh, that’s not right, this lady was the top leader of Sector 12.

Now that I’ve slashed her, it means there should be no stronger existence than her in Sector 12, so that means…”

Lu Wu’s eyes lit up.

Does this mean he could do whatever he wanted in Sector 12?

Thinking of this, Lu Wu immediately turned his head and started to look around.

Quickly, Lu Wu fixed his sights on number 67, who was trembling with the intent to flee for his life.

Upon realizing he had been targeted again, number 67 shivered and displayed a smile uglier than crying.

He never dreamt that

he would have finally waited for the Ninth Lord to come, only for them to be slashed by Lu Wu upon arrival.

Now great, his freedom didn’t last long before he was once again in the hands of Lu Wu.

Lu Wu, who had recaptured number 67, couldn’t be bothered to waste words with him.

He killed everyone around except for 67 and then grabbed him.

“Let’s go, take me to your Sector 12 headquarters to have a look.”

What could number 67, at this moment, dare to say or even be able to say?

He obediently led Lu Wu to the Zero organization’s base in Sector 12.

On the way there, number 67, trying to preserve his little life, put on that flattering and sycophantic face towards Lu Wu again,

Offering his flattery to Lu Wu in spades.

“My Lord is invincible. I knew from the start that that old hag from the Ninth wasn’t a match for you.

You can easily slay even a half-step Epic being like the Ninth old hag, it seems you’re not far from reaching the Epic Level yourself.”

“However, there are a number of Epic Level warriors within the Zero organization too. Not to mention the Five Ambassadors, all Epic Level warriors, even among the Angels, there are a number of Epic beings.

Killing that old hag from the Ninth, if the news gets out, it might be a bit troublesome.

You might need my help.

I know the communication method between the Ninth old hag and the headquarters; I am willing to buy time for my Lord.”

…

Hmm, this guy has brought out that routine once again.

And Lu Wu, who had already been tricked once, still had a big smile on his face and agreed to everything.

This gave number 67 a feeling of security, and he worked for Lu Wu with even more enthusiasm,

Turning into the most qualified guide.

He led Lu Wu in a mad dash for six hours straight to the Zero organization’s headquarters in Sector 12 and easily got Lu Wu through the layers of security into Sector 12’s headquarters, to the office of the Ninth Envoy.

“My Lord, this is the den of that old hag from the Ninth; she usually works and cultivates here, and she hardly ever leaves unless there’s some other matter.”

Number 67 said respectfully.

Lu Wu nodded, with number 67 in tow, he walked in.

Upon entering the lair, Lu Wu was dumbfounded.

He was dumbfounded not only by the decorations of the lair but also by what he saw inside it.

From the looks of the decor,

This place didn’t seem like the lair of a bigwig from an Evil Path organization, but more like a young girl’s love nest.

The place wasn’t big, but it was arranged warmly and elegantly,

Making it exceptionally comfortable.

Not just Lu Wu, even number 67 was dumbfounded upon entering, as it was also his first time in there, and he was also surprised by the Ninth Envoy’s tender side behind her fierce and ruthless facade.

But what surprised Lu Wu even more was a group photo hanging on the wall of the lair.

Lu Wu recognized both people in the photo.

The woman goes without saying, it was the Ninth Apostle who had just been slashed by Lu Wu, not even a hair left.

The other one Lu Wu was even more familiar with.

Although he looked much younger in the photo, more handsome, with eyes that seemed especially profound and always carrying a hint of unresolved sorrow, even a faint sense of apology.

Needless to say, this was Old Lu, the deadbeat of Lu Wu’s family.

When Lu Wu saw this photo, his head buzzed.

“What should I do? It seems I’ve inadvertently slain my dad’s old flame?”

Lu Wu was somewhat panicked and also worried about what to do if the old man found out.

But upon reflection,

That’s wrong, how could this be his fault? As far as Lu Wu was concerned, he was the victim, right?

It was that woman who made the first move.

“Anyway,” Lu Wu tried to console himself, “a predecessor from way back when… what, like several terms ago probably doesn’t matter as much as a son, right?”

Lu Wu felt somewhat uneasy despite his self-reassurance, so he went ahead and took down that photograph.

In case something happened in the future, this thing might just save his life.

Yep, the first reward from exploring Old Lu’s lair.

Evidence of Old Lu’s dark romantic history increased by one!

After taking the photo, Lu Wuyi started scanning the whole lair meticulously with his eyes.

As a man with skills at his disposal.

Lu Wu’s eyes were the best treasure-hunting divine artifact, nothing could escape his sight.

Thanks to these eyes, Lu Wu quickly found a secret chamber inside the Ninth Envoy’s lair.

This chamber seemed to be used both for storing treasure and for working.

Inside, Lu Wu found some treasures cherished by the Ninth Envoy and some secret documents of the Zero organization.

“Not a bad haul!”

It has to be said, as the main person in charge of District 12, the Ninth Envoy had quite a rich collection.

The treasures hidden in this secret chamber numbered over a dozen, but disappointingly for Lu Wu, most were related to evil energy, with only two items unrelated to it.

A bone and a ring.

…

Name: Unknown Skeleton

Quality: Epic

Description: Likely the energy-concentrated skeleton from an epic Summoned Beast, an excellent material, might be useful for your Little Skeleton.

…

“Right, I have a Little Skeleton at home.”

It was only upon seeing this attribute that Lu Wu remembered having a Little Skeleton at Lu Wu’s house.

“Don’t mention it, I actually kind of missed it after so long.”

Lu Wu, who had long forgotten about it, spoke these words without a hint of embarrassment.

Tucking the bone into his embrace, Lu Wu checked the attributes of the ring.

…

Name: Broken Space Ring

Grade: Gold

Description: A broken space ring that can no longer be used, with extremely high repair difficulty, practically a piece of junk.

…

This was somewhat disheartening for Lu Wu.

The Ninth Envoy had treasured this ring, and Lu Wu had expected it to be a precious item, only to find out it was mere Golden Quality junk.

“Why was she hoarding this junk?”

As Lu Wu questioned this, the system provided an answer.

Ps: The ring seems wrapped in the aura of Lu Haikong.

Ah, Lu Wu reckoned he knew what was up.

“Scumbag!”

Lu Wu spat out contemptuously and casually took out the ring to examine it.

He happened to be needing a space ring and decided to see if it was repairable, and if so, to fix it while he was at it.

“It’s a bit tricky, but not impossible.”

Speaking, Lu Wu selected a metal piece from among those dozen or so evil-infused items and, to his astonishment, absorbed the evil energy from it. He then employed a tool refinement Skill he had acquired from Sun Kongkong a long time ago and hadn’t used in a while.

In about half an hour, Lu Wu repaired the ring and even managed to enhance its Grade significantly.

“Done!”

After fixing it, Lu Wu loaded everything from the secret chamber, as well as his personal belongings, into the space ring, concluding his exploration of the Ninth Envoy’s lair.

After finishing everything, Lu Wu turned his eyes toward number 67.

That unimpassioned gaze sent a shiver down 67’s spine.

“Boss, don’t kill me, you still need…”

“Phew!”

Before 67 could finish his sentence, Lu Wu beheaded him with a single sword strike.

“Sorry, you just knew too much.”

After beheading number 67, Lu Wu did not leave the base immediately but instead took out two divine weapons, the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword and Flowing Blade Fire.

“Now that the situation has escalated to this point, I don’t mind stirring up some more trouble,” Lu Wu said as he began to busy himself.

He began urging the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword to absorb the energy of Flowing Blade Fire.

This was quite challenging, considering Flowing Blade Fire was an Epic Divine Artifact.

Although its master had perished and it lay in a comatose State, being an Epic Divine Artifact, it was still two levels above the Lord Level Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword.

Upon contact, Lu Wu felt enormous pressure.

If previously, the Divine Artifact’s absorption was like sucking vigorously through a large straw,

Now it was like sucking through a pinched straw, incredibly laborious.

Fortunately, Lu Wu had an ace up his sleeve, the energy of Ibaraki Gangyan.

Though much of Ibaraki Gangyan’s energy was spent in the previous sword attack, a little was still left.

Drawing on this last bit of energy, Lu Wu successfully deceived Flowing Blade Fire, convincing it to open up and allow the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword to absorb its energy.

Once Flowing Blade Fire yielded, copious amounts of energy began flooding into the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword.

The once-dim Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword began to regain its brilliance…

# Chapter 374: 371 King-level Feedback

Chapter 374: 371 King-level Feedback

12th District, Organization “Zero” base.

With the help of Lu Wu, the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword greedily absorbed the energy from “Flowing Blade Fire.”

Large amounts of energy surged in, causing the brilliance of the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword to continuously bloom.

Around three minutes later, the brilliance had already returned to its state before the use of “Divine Sword Skill.”

Lu Wu could once again deliver that terrifying strike capable of injuring a King-level 3 stars.

And this was just the beginning.

As time passed, the brilliance on the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword began to gradually flourish.

Ten minutes.

The power of the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword, originally at Lord 2 Star, soared to Lord 3 Star and further advanced towards King-level.

As a Divine Artifact class Summoned Beast.

And it was a peak existence among the Divine Artifacts.

The Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword was different from ordinary Summoned Beasts.

As long as it had enough energy, it could enhance, there really was no calm for it.

The gap from Lord 3 Star to King-level, which was a vast gulf for others, was merely a slightly larger ditch for the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword, which it could easily cross once the ditch was filled with water.

Sure enough, in less than twenty minutes.

The radiance of the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword’s blade became further enriched.

The entire sword trembled slightly, conveying a joyous emotion to Lu Wu.

It was about to break through to King-level.

Just as Lu Wu had anticipated before.

The breakthrough of the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword to King-level was tremendously grand.

As it advanced towards King-level, outside the base where Lu Wu was located, astonishing changes began to occur.

Countless dark clouds instantly gathered, causing the sky, which had already lightened in the early morning, to rapidly darken.

At the same time, fierce winds suddenly arose.

The sky’s layered dark clouds began to rub against each other, generating terrifying flashes of lightning, and the thunder that seemed to explode right beside the ear numbed the scalps of people within dozens of miles.

“What’s going on? What happened?”

The people inside the base were utterly baffled.

They began searching for the reason behind all this.

When they discovered that the source of everything seemed to be the lair of the Ninth Apostle, their initial concern immediately eased.

“So it’s caused by Lord Ninth Apostle, that’s normal then.”

“Such a grand spectacle, Lord Ninth Apostle must be breaking through to Epic level.”

All the members of the base were excited.

After all, they were direct subordinates of the Ninth Apostle.

Once the Ninth Apostle broke through, they would naturally rise with him.

But their joy did not last long before some quickly realized something was amiss.

“Do you see that? Is there a figure in the sky?”

“It seems there is, and he seems to be holding a sword?”

“He’s raising his sword, and thunder and lightning are gathering on his sword, what is he doing!”

“Is he going to strike us? Not good, hurry…”

Before the word “run” could escape, Lu Wu, floating in the sky, swung his sword.

A circular Sword Qi instantly spread out.

Terrifying thunder and lightning cascaded down like rain along with the sword light, followed by explosive thunder.

The base where Lu Wu was located was instantly submerged.

Ten minutes later, when the lightning ceased, this substantial base was left with only the lair of the Ninth Apostle still relatively intact.

And Lu Wu who had caused all this then focused his gaze on the still radiantly divine Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword in his hand, beholding the attribute after its ascension to King-level.

…

Name: Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword

Power: 1 Star (King-level)

Quality: Epic (Enhanced)

Attribute: Divine Artifact

State: Pleased (My servant is indeed the best, I am very satisfied!)

Secret Skill: Divine Sword Skill

Divine Sword Skill: Divine Wrath (Mastered)

Divine Sword Skill: Divine Judgment (Unmastered)

Talent: King of Divine Artifacts

Faith Collection (Inactive)

??? (Unsealed)

Description: It got a bit cheeky again

…

Lu Wu had absorbed the Flowing Blade Fire, allowing the Flowing Blade Fire to completely enter into a dormant state as the price for upgrading the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword to King-level.

The King-level Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword granted Lu Wu the skill “Divine Sword Skill·Divine Wrath” and awakened the “Divine Judgment” skill and faith collection.

The latter talent was still unknown to Lu Wu, but he was well aware that “Divine Judgment” was incredibly terrifying, even stronger than the previous “Divine Wrath.”

The appearance of this new ultimate skill greatly enhanced Lu Wu’s combat power.

Initially, before the upgrade of the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword, Lu Wu’s combat power was about at King Level 2 Star, and activating “Divine Wrath” could injure a three-star unit.

Now, with the activation of “Divine Judgment,” Lu Wu was confident he could evenly match the fully-powered Ninth Apostle.

Of course, if he couldn’t kill his opponent in one strike, Lu Wu would then be at their mercy.

And his even chances were only limited to battling one, if they summoned the bear and the Enchanting Demon Queen together, Lu Wu wouldn’t possibly be a match for them.

“Already quite good.

I still have some skills acquired from sectors 67, 71, and the Ninth Apostle, once I’ve digested all these skills, I should be able to push my power to King Level 2 Star, and then further enhance my combat power.”

Overall, Lu Wu was quite satisfied with his current power.

After admiring the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword in his hand, Lu Wu left the base.

After all, with the situation made this large, if he didn’t flee now, when Zero’s men arrived, he wouldn’t be able to escape.

Unbeknownst to Lu Wu.

He had hardly left the base when

a woman emerged from the ruins. If Lu Wu had still been there, he would recognize this woman as the Ninth Apostle, whom he thought was completely dead.

In reality, she hadn’t truly died.

During the confrontation, she had used an item to teleport back to the base just before being killed; though severely injured, she had managed to save her life.

But unexpectedly, Lu Wu had persistently followed her, and she had just been hit again, adding injury to injury, now in a particularly miserable state.

After watching Lu Wu leave, the Ninth Apostle immediately returned to her own lair.

The moment she entered her lair, the Ninth Apostle froze.

She discovered her most precious photo was missing.

“Was it him? Did he take my photo?”

The disappearance of the photo made the Ninth Apostle forget her own injuries, as she was particularly anxious and angry, even wanting to chase after him to retrieve her photo.

“Wait, why would he want that particular photo?”

The Ninth Apostle suddenly realized.

To her, the photo was precious, but it was just that, to her—others shouldn’t care about it.

“Unless!”

The Ninth Apostle’s eyes lit up, thinking of a possibility.

Just then, a necklace around her neck lit up, clearly another communication device. The Ninth Apostle paused briefly before answering.

“Ninth, I’ve received news that something seems to have happened on your end, there was an epic level of energy fluctuation, and your base also had a high-energy response. Was there a powerful enemy invasion? Do you need my help?”

The Ninth Apostle glanced at the spot where the photo used to hang, without much hesitation, she flatly rejected: “No need, I can handle it myself!”

Then, the Ninth Apostle hung up the communication, staring at the spot where the photo had hung, lost in thought.

Who knows what she was thinking…

…

Always asking for subscriptions, today I ask for something else.

Well, I ask for two hundred Golden Cuties.

# Chapter 375: 372 silly advanced

Chapter 375: 372 silly advanced

1st District, Jiangnan University, inside Lu Wu Research Institute.

Just after being beaten up, Little Skeleton and Little Flood Dragon looked pitiful as they sat in a corner.

Both little fellows were in a sorry state.

Little Flood Dragon had many cracks in its scales.

Little Skeleton was in even worse shape, as it was currently piecing its own skeleton back together.

And, its most beloved phone had also been stolen by the bad guy who hit it.

(Can’t go on like this!)

As it pieced its skeleton together, Little Skeleton grew angrier and said to its companion.

(We can’t let Tuantuan and the wicked Lu Wu bully us like this, we have to do something!)

Little Flood Dragon glanced at it and continued to lie down, not bothering much.

This situation had happened countless times.

At first, Little Flood Dragon eagerly joined Little Skeleton to figure out how to resist.

After being suppressed forcefully several times, Little Flood Dragon had given up.

Resisting was impossible; they couldn’t win in a fight, so what was the point of resisting?

Seeing Little Flood Dragon so dispirited, Little Skeleton felt even angrier; it was because of its lack of spirit that they were bullied by Tuantuan.

However, this time, Little Skeleton didn’t try to persuade Little Flood Dragon to resist again, because it had a better idea.

(Let’s run away from home!)

(What?)

Little Flood Dragon was stunned and looked up at Little Skeleton.

(Let’s run away from home!)

Little Skeleton repeated its plan.

(Let’s go find our Lu Wu!)

Little Flood Dragon’s eyes lit up.

Finding Lu Wu was something it was familiar with; its head eagerly bobbed in agreement, but then it seemed to hesitate remembering something.

(Lu Wu told us not to look for him! What if he gets angry when we find him?)

(I don’t care about him! Lu Wu, that big liar, he said he would come back very soon, but it’s been a very long time already. I don’t care; I just want to find him!)

Little Skeleton felt particularly resentful.

It just wanted to find Lu Wu now, it wanted to complain to Lu Wu about the pig that bullied Little Skeleton!

(Are you coming? If you’re not, I’m going on my own!)

Little Flood Dragon hesitated for a moment but eventually nodded its head.

After all, it had been almost half a year since it had seen Lu Wu, and even Little Flood Dragon missed him.

The two little fellows quickly reached a consensus.

They wouldn’t stay in this broken home; they were going to run away, they were going to find their Lu Wu to seek justice.

The two little fellows acted immediately.

First, they had to retrieve Little Skeleton’s phone.

The phone was with Tuantuan, and Little Skeleton had to trick him into handing it over.

(Tuantuan is so silly, it’s easy to trick!)

Facing Tuantuan, Little Skeleton felt a sense of intellectual superiority.

With Little Flood Dragon, they first made a trip to the kitchen, stole a huge pile of roast meat and came back.

They threw the roast meat in front of the pig, easily distracting it from the phone.

Seizing the opportunity, Little Skeleton and Little Flood Dragon picked up the phone and prepared to make a run for it.

At that moment, a problem arose.

The research institute was guarded on all sides, so how could the two little fellows escape?

Little Flood Dragon indicated it had a clear idea about the issue!

Just follow it, and it could easily solve this problem.

Seeing how confident Little Flood Dragon looked, Little Skeleton believed in its mischief and followed Little Flood Dragon to a bathroom.

As soon as they entered the bathroom, Little Flood Dragon skillfully lifted the toilet seat, shrank its body, and with a ‘plop,’ jumped straight into the toilet.

Little Skeleton, standing beside, was dumbfounded.

Is this even a thing?

(“What are you staring for? Jump in!”)

When Little Flood Dragon saw Little Skeleton didn’t move for a while, it raised its head and urged.

Little Skeleton looked troubled, this wasn’t something it knew how to do!

(Little Skeleton is so silly! Can’t even dive into a toilet, watch!)

Little Flood Dragon, a bit helpless but also a bit proud, jumped out of the toilet and demonstrated again for Little Skeleton.

(Got it this time?)

Little Skeleton shook its head, indicating it still didn’t understand the maneuver.

Finally, having no other choice, Little Flood Dragon opened its gaping maw, and with an ‘Ah woo,’ swallowed Little Skeleton, then turned around and leapt into the toilet, disappearing from sight.

What Little Flood Dragon and Little Skeleton didn’t know was,

at the moment they jumped out of the toilet and ran away from home, in the student council president’s office of Jiangnan University,

a woman dressed in a women’s suit, wearing glasses, and exuding a chilly queenly aura turned and looked toward Lu Wu’s research office.

Her lips curved into a stunning, radiant smile.

…

Region 12, somewhere deep in the mountains.

After stirring up some trouble at the Zero Organization base in Region 12, Lu Wu quickly left.

He didn’t chase after Qingzi and the others after sorting everything out.

In fact, from the moment he gave Qingzi and the others a map to Region 1, Lu Wu wasn’t planning to meet up with them so soon.

On one hand, he was still not ready to return to Region 1.

On the other hand, it was also not suitable for him to be around Qingzi right now.

Lately, Lu Wu felt more and more like he was in a vast net.

Though he had left Region 1, that pervasive net around him never truly disappeared.

It was only a bit further away from him.

Thus, it was not suitable for Qingzi to be by his side.

After all, one never knew when trouble might arise around him.

Additionally, as his power gradually increased,

Lu Wu’s attitude towards many things had changed too.

He was slowly shedding his ostrich mentality because he knew very well that the ostrich strategy was a weakling’s battle tactic, used only when absolutely necessary.

It could not truly solve problems.

To solve problems, the best choice was always to confront them.

This was also why Lu Wu took the chance to pass the confidential files from the Ninth Apostle from the Zero Organization.

Now, after finding a resting place, Lu Wu began to go through those confidential files once again,

reading them gave him quite the shock.

The files primarily detailed the specific affairs of the Zero Organization.

Like evilizing certain places and people, controlling regions, even controlling summoned beast groups to create beast surges.

Each and every task was marked with the word ‘ferocious.’

“These matters, none seem to be specifically targeting the Gate, huh?

So, their doctrine is just a slogan, isn’t it?”

Lu Wu curled his lips.

Both disdainful and somewhat bewildered, if they needed a slogan, there were plenty of messy ones available; why did Zero Organization choose the least convincing?

“They might as well have outright said they want to evilize the entire world, right?

No, wait, it seems like that’s exactly what they are doing.”

Lu Wu suddenly snapped back to reality and carefully examined the secret documents, discovering that the Zero Organization truly intended to evilize the entire world.

Moreover, they had already made significant progress.

“Evilization, although it allows Summoned Beasts to possess greater power and even erases some of the limits set by their talents to an extent,

once evilized, Summoners can generally reach Lord Level and even have a chance to advance to King Level, which is much higher achievement than normal Summoners.

But this comes at the cost of erasing the consciousness of the Summoned Beasts.

Moreover, Summoners will also experience some mental effects after evilization.

Over time, they gradually become biased, irritable, brutal, and even slowly lose their humanity.

If the whole world were evilized, it would truly become hell.”

Thinking of that scenario, Lu Wu couldn’t help but shudder.

“Indeed, the Zero Organization should be wiped out.”

As Lu Wu spoke, he continued to flip through the secret documents.

When he reached the last two documents, his eyes narrowed.

It seemed both were related to him.

The first document was from District 11, an intelligence report.

The person described in the report was known as Zhengdaguangming, which was Lu Wu’s alias in District 11.

This report was issued by the Zero Organization in District 11.

It detailed information about Lu Wu’s activities there, beginning with the Sakuragi Family and ending with his killing of Ibaraki Gangyan and then leaving, in great detail.

It even contained several interrogations records.

When Lu Wu saw the names of the interrogated, his anger surged.

For he saw the names of Sakuragi Hanamichi and Sakuragi Hanakazuki.

The detailed process of the interrogation was also recorded.

Just reading the text, Lu Wu found it hard to continue.

“Damn it! Every person in the Zero Organization deserves to die!”

Lu Wu gritted his teeth, noting down the person who had interrogated Sakuragi Hanamichi and Sakuragi Hanakazuki.

“Eighth Apostle, huh? You better pray you don’t fall into my hands.”

Suppressing his murderous intent, Lu Wu finished reading this report.

The end of the report speculated about Lu Wu’s identity, ambiguously linking Zhengdaguangming with Lu Wu.

Moreover, the adversary had speculated about Lu Wu’s escape route, asking for assistance from District 12 to capture him.

As stated at the end of the document.

“Whether Zhengdaguangming is Lu Wu or not, his ability to kill Ibaraki Gangyan proves his value; it is recommended to capture and evilize him, turning him into a blade for the organization.”

Seeing this, and recalling the strike he himself had executed, as well as the outbreak at the District 12 base, Lu Wu’s brow furrowed deeply.

Without a doubt, he had been targeted once again.

But Lu Wu wasn’t too panicked.

All he felt now was anger.

Striving to calm himself down, Lu Wu redirected his attention to the last document.

This document made Lu Wu even angrier.

The last document came from the Zero Organization’s headquarters, a resource and manpower mobilization order signed by Feng Xiu.

Yes, that Feng Xiu, whom Lu Wu had personally witnessed being slain by Moon Shadow in Fucheng.

Lu Wu couldn’t understand—wasn’t he dead?

How was he still alive and signing documents?

This puzzling aspect for Lu Wu was addressed in the document.

Feng Xiu was indeed still alive, but his condition was not good.

He had apparently used a secret technique unique to the Zero Organization, sacrificing a Summoned Beast to escape death. Although he survived, he was severely injured and his power had apparently dropped to King Level.

His reason for issuing this document was to gather the strength of the Zero Organization to help him recover his power.

“How can I possibly let you recover?”

Lu Wu carefully examined a document.

After noting down the time and location, Lu Wu murmured as he destroyed the document.

“Two more months, huh?

Alright, I’ll go take a look when the time comes. If there’s a chance, I don’t mind lending a hand.”

Having said that, Lu Wu closed his eyes and got busy.

Reading these secret documents filled Lu Wu with a murderous intent and a deeper desire for power, so he needed to make the most of the time to assimilate the skills he had acquired.

He had previously opened the Senluo Wanxiang Domain twice, acquiring the “Five Thunders Bombarding” from No. 67 and the “Blast Fire Break” from No. 71.

During the battle with the Ninth Apostle, he gained the skills “Earth’s Wrath” and “Barbarian Bear Roar” from her, and obtained the “Fire God Slash” from “Flowing Blade Fire.”

Additionally, with the advancement of the “Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword,” Lu Wu acquired the skill “Divine Wrath.”

Currently, Lu Wu had six unassimilated skills.

Once Lu Wu fully assimilated these six skills, his power was set to rise even further.

He might even surge directly to King-Level 2 Star.

However, what Lu Wu did not expect was that while he was struggling to assimilate these skills, a strange alteration occurred within his body.

Mainly because the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword had somewhat inflated after advancing.

Idle and curious, it wanted to explore the mysteries of Lu Wu’s body, and in doing so, it discovered a powerful energy at the location of Lu Wu’s heart.

The reckless Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword touched it, and this touch directly awakened the dormant entity in Lu Wu’s heart.

The awakened entity burst forth, a terrifying power surged out, turning Lu Wu’s surroundings within a hundred meters into a world of ice and snow.

At the same time, a feedback force drained the energy within Lu Wu’s body, further enhancing his strength, and it seemed that within this burst of feedback, he had acquired a new skill.

Lu Wu was stunned for a moment and, without hesitation, opened the attribute panels for himself and Han.

…

Name: Lu Wu

Power: King-Level 1 Star

Summoned Beasts: Little Skeleton (Gray), Little Flood Dragon (Gray), Han (King-Level 1 Star), Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword (King-Level 1 Star)

Skills:

Universal Enhancement (Special) (Master)

Lu Family Swordsmanship (Ultimate Skill) (Grandmaster) (Contains various skill alterations)

Jiao Long State (Special) (Master)

Unyielding·Powerful (Special) (Master)

Domain: Wanxiang Domain (Mastery thirteen percent)

Unmastered Skills: Five Thunders Bombarding, Blast Fire Break, Earth’s Wrath, Barbarian Bear Roar, Fire God Slash, Divine Wrath, Absolute Ice Seal

Summoner Talent: Power of Inheritance (Awakening)

Damage Sharing

Description: You can now consider yourself as a summoned beast. Well, protect your summoned beasts; they need it more than you.

…

Name: Ice and Snow Skylark

Power: 1 Star (King-Level)

Quality: Legend (Enhanced) (Improved by enduring attacks)

Attribute: Ice

Weakness: Besides not being very smart and liking to be hit, it seems to have no other weaknesses.

New Secret Skill: Absolute Freeze (Master) (An extremely terrifying burst skill, it’s unclear how this attack-prone creature awakened such a skill.)

Talent: Thorny Shield

Undying Little Strong

Domain: Frozen Domain (Mastery thirty percent)

…

# Chapter 376: 373 Return to District 11

Chapter 376: 373 Return to District 11

Little Flood Dragon managed to escape from Jiangnan University with Little Skeleton through the toilet, entering the sea area outside of Fucheng to initiate the second search for Lu Wu.

However, just after leaving, Little Flood Dragon and Little Skeleton were completely at a loss.

Because the situation this time was different from the last time Little Flood Dragon searched for him.

Last time, Lu Wu and Little Flood Dragon had a contract between them.

Little Flood Dragon could pinpoint Lu Wu’s location, making searching very simple and easy.

But this time, the contract between Little Flood Dragon and Lu Wu had been temporarily severed by Lu Wu.

The gap in their powers was also quite significant.

Lu Wu was already nearing King Level 2 Star.

Little Flood Dragon and Little Skeleton were merely at Lord 3 Star power.

Naturally, they had no way of breaking through Lu Wu’s lockdown, so they didn’t know where to start looking for him.

(You said you were good at finding Lu Wu, right?)

Little Skeleton looked at the confused Little Flood Dragon with some discontent.

(Liar, you’re just like Lu Wu, a liar!)

Little Flood Dragon couldn’t stand it.

Who is like Lu Wu?

He, Little Flood Dragon, was nothing like Lu Wu at all!

Angered, Little Flood Dragon let out a roar in the sea.

With Little Flood Dragon’s roar, waves surged around them, and a large number of Little Flood Dragon’s “brothers” rushed over, quickly filling the sea area they were in.

(Little Flood Dragon might not know where to find Lu Wu, but Little Flood Dragon knows how to find him. We’ll find our little brothers, then let our little brothers search for Lu Wu. As long as we have enough little brothers, we’re sure to find Lu Wu.)

Ah, look at what Little Flood Dragon said.

There’s nothing wrong with those words at all!

As long as he could turn all the summoned beasts on Earth into his little brothers, finding Lu Wu should be an easy task, shouldn’t it?

Little Skeleton also felt that it made sense.

So, these two simpletons, on their first day out, naturally shifted from searching for Lu Wu to recruiting little brothers.

The two, leading a large group of little brothers, directly launched an attack on the summoned beast groups in the nearby sea area, starting a massive brawl.

Their behavior had been closely monitored by someone at Jiangnan University, who was quite displeased.

She had let these two rascals out because she had guessed they were going to look for Lu Wu.

She had thought that keeping an eye on them would lead her to Lu Wu, but to her surprise, as soon as they left, they started fighting with their little brothers, giving her a strong urge to fetch them back and discipline them a hundred times over.

But in the end, she didn’t intervene and just watched as these two rascals unified the sea area thousands of kilometers outside Fucheng in just one week.

……

In the Fucheng Sea Area, Little Flood Dragon and Little Skeleton ruled supreme.

With a week’s effort, they secured a vast territory.

On the other side, for Lu Wu.

He also spent a week integrating the skills he had acquired into the Lu Family Swordsmanship, excluding Divine Wrath and Fire God Slash.

The integration of one Must Kill and three Ultimate Skills allowed the Lu Family Swordsmanship to progress slightly.

But it was still classified as Ultimate Skill, just shy of the Secret Skill level.

Of course, if Lu Wu could integrate the Ultimate Level skill, Fire God Slash, then the Lu Family Swordsmanship might reach the Secret Skill level.

But since Fire God Slash was an Ultimate Level skill, integrating it would require more time and effort; seven days was a bit too short.

“Without a couple of months, merging Fire God Slash is definitely not possible. The time is a bit too long.”

If it had been before, Lu Wu wouldn’t mind spending a couple of months, but now he was reluctant to take that time.

Because time waits for no one.

“In another two months, Feng Xiu’s recovery ceremony will start. If I want to help him, I need to start preparing early, plus there’s…”

Lu Wu paused, his eyes glancing towards District 11.

“I might need to make a trip back to District 11.”

Ever since Lu Wu saw those two reports, there has been a fire pressing on his heart. He couldn’t let go of the issue regarding District 11 and the incident with the Eighth Angel and Sakuragi Hanakazuki.

So, after hesitating for seven days, Lu Wu finally decided he had to return to District 11.

“I need to go back, but I can’t go back openly as Zhengdaguangming, nor can I use the identity of Lu Wu.”

To go back, Lu Wu would have to assume another identity.

In this regard, Lu Wu had a rather good idea.

With a swing of his longsword in hand, his aura began to change, his body exuding an evil presence like that of an Evil Cultivator.

This state, induced by the merging of evil energy, was called by Lu Wu as the Evil Cultivator state.

“With this state, I should be able to infiltrate the ‘Zero’ organization in District 11. However, I’ll have to change my sword; the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword is too recognizable and can’t be used!”

This wasn’t a difficult issue.

Once in District 11, Lu Wu could simply acquire a Divine Artifact.

Since District 11 lacked nothing but had many Divine Artifacts, the talent of the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword had given Lu Wu the ability to control Divine Artifacts.

After reconsidering a bit and confirming it should be feasible, Lu Wu set off.

Lu Wu, remembering all the routes from District 12 to District 11, made the journey quickly.

Transforming into a dragon to travel through the sea, he covered great distances in just one day and once again returned to District 11.

Lu Wu, having seen certain confidential documents related to District 11 from the Ninth Apostle, had a decent understanding of the ‘Zero’ organization there.

Before entering District 11, he had already planned how to infiltrate the organization.

Joining the organization was simple: as long as one was an Evil Summoner, powerful and crazy enough, it was easy to get recruited.

So, what Lu Wu needed to do was simple—he just had to start slaughtering.

When choosing targets for his slaughter upon returning to District 11, Lu Wu had already made his choice.

The Liu Chuan Family!

This family was Lu Wu’s chosen target.

The reason for choosing the Liu Chuan Family was that they had initiated the capture of the Sakuragi Family, seized the opportunity, and successfully usurped the Sakuragi Family’s assets.

Having done such a thing, when it came time to kill, they naturally came to mind first for Lu Wu.

……

Sakuragi City, or perhaps it should be said, the city that once was Sakuragi City.

After several months,

Lu Wu returned to this place, and everything had changed.

Sakuragi City had already been renamed Liu Chuan City, and the original Sakuragi family’s City Lord Mansion had become someone else’s property now.

There was a bit of irony in this.

Instead of declining because of the change in leadership, the city seemed even more prosperous.

The population of the city had increased significantly.

The streets of the city had become busier.

Moreover, the decades-old City Lord Mansion of the Sakuragi family had been renovated by the current leaders.

The entire city, inside and out, presented a thriving scene.

And this was the scene that Rukawa Feng enjoyed the most.

Every time he stood at the peak of Liu Chuan City, looking down at the bustling city now belonging to him, his heart swelled with pride.

Then he murmured to himself, “Indeed, I was right, I am more suited to be the lord of this city than the Sakuragi family.”

“The Rukawa family indeed understands management better than the Sakuragi family.”

Lu Wu, upon entering the city, made such a comment as well.

From the perspective of city construction, there was no denying Rukawa Feng was right.

He indeed did a better job than the Sakuragi family.

Lu Wu acknowledged this, but it did not prevent him from taking action against the Rukawa family.

However, to take action, he needed a reason; he couldn’t just find someone and start a fight without saying anything – Lu Wu was a person who cared about propriety, and such impoliteness was not his style.

Just as Lu Wu was contemplating the reason to cause trouble for the Rukawa family, the street where he was suddenly erupted into commotion.

Lu Wu looked up and saw a well-dressed youth riding a recently summoned Summoned Beast, strutting through the town with a group of bodyguards.

Quite the spectacle.

Observing the attributes of the opponent’s Summoned Beast, the corners of Lu Wu’s mouth curled slightly as he got an idea.

With that, Lu Wu walked toward that unlucky youth and stopped right in front of the youth’s procession.

This youth, named Liu Chuancheng, was the son of the current city lord, arguably the city’s biggest second-generation. Although he was indeed a second-generation, his personality was surprisingly soft.

When Lu Wu blocked his path right in the middle of the road, Liu Chuancheng, after making eye contact with Lu Wu, surprisingly said nothing and tried to avoid him.

Lu Wu was startled, touched his nose, and moved a few steps in the direction Liu Chuancheng was avoiding to block him again.

Such bold actions made the surrounding people gasp.

However, Liu Chuancheng was not provoked.

Instead, after the third time, he stopped and looked pitifully at Lu Wu amidst the gaping crowd, “Excuse me, do you need anything?

If there’s something I can help with, please tell me, and I’ll do my best to accommodate you!”

Lu Wu sneered, though the youth was not following his script, as a professional actor, Lu Wu continued with his own plot.

Standing with hands on hips, he said in a particularly societal manner to the meek second-generation, “Your Summoned Beast just glared at me. I was quite frightened. You need to compensate me with money!”

Liu Chuancheng, giving a deep bow and noticing his particularly innocent Summoned Beast whose teary eyes were almost falling out, replied profoundly.

“I am terribly sorry, it is my lack of discipline. Please tell me how much you need, I will provide it without hesitation.

Absolutely no second words!”

Liu Chuancheng’s statement stunned everyone.

Everyone looked at him as if discovering a new continent.

‘Is that even possible?’ They thought.

The bold-hearted ones already had their eyes spinning, they felt like they had stumbled upon a new way to make money.

Maybe if they tried this on Liu Chuancheng as well, they could make a fortune.

Lu Wuke, however, did not care what the people around him thought; his eyes continuously surveyed Liu Chuancheng.

Lu Wuke could feel the trembling of this guy.

Lu Wuke also knew why he was behaving this way, it was clearly because he had discovered his identity.

Of course, this identity was not that of a respectable person or Lu Wuke, but that of an Evil Summoner.

From the moment Lu Wuke entered this city, he had activated the Evil Summoner state; ordinary people might not notice, but Liu Chuancheng’s bodyguards could feel the evil energy emanating from Lu Wuke.

This was the real reason behind Liu Chuancheng’s cowardice.

This also gave Lu Wuke a deeper understanding of “Zero”‘s terrifying influence in Zone 11.

Just with the evil energy, he made a second-generation rich kid bow and submit, “Zero”‘s power was terrifying like this.

But this gave Lu Wuke a bit of a headache.

With them submitting so meekly, his script could hardly continue.

He had originally planned to play the fool to catch the wise, allowing them to bully him and then erupt with a slap that would kill the younger one. Then draw in the elder one and kill the elder, subsequently luring out the oldest to kill the oldest.

Yet his perfect plan failed right from the start.

Helplessly, Lu Wuke could only rub his nose.

“Forget it, I’m not really a bad person.”

As soon as Lu Wuke said this, Liu Chuancheng breathed a sigh of relief, inwardly praising his own extreme cowardice, but then, Lu Wuke continued.

“Just casually compensate me with about ten to twenty legendary quality items, and we can let this matter go.”

“What?”

Liu Chuancheng almost spewed a mouthful of old blood.

Legendary quality items? And ten to twenty of them? Was Lu Wuke planning a robbery?

Oh no, wrong, Lu Wuke was actually robbing.

“What? Do you have a problem?”

Lu Wuke became furious, “I was so frightened by your summoned beast that I almost had a heart attack, and I’m only asking for ten to twenty legendary quality items, and you dare to have an opinion?

Are you looking down on my real estate business too much?”

Look at how angry Lu Wuke was, the evil energy around him almost materializing. This terrifying energy made Liu Chuancheng, who had a bit of an objection initially, completely give in as he kneeled and continually begged for mercy.

“Your Honor, I have no objections, I have no objections. I will immediately send someone home to fetch them.”

Liu Chuancheng said, giving a meaningful glance to his bodyguard behind him.

The bodyguard, exceptionally sharp and intuitively aligned with his young master’s thoughts, rushed home at the first opportunity to report the situation to the current master of this city, Rukawa Feng.

He was currently meeting with a mysterious person.

Upon hearing that a suspected Lord Level Evil Summoner had come to his city, blocked his son, and demanded ten to twenty legendary items, Rukawa Feng immediately turned his attention to the mysterious person beside him.

That person picked up a teacup and gently took a sip.

“Don’t look at me; not my man.

Likely not “Zero”‘s either, probably just a freshly evilized rookie. Handle him however you need to. Once you’re done, bring him over. I could use more people, and if he fits, I’ll take him.”

“Yes!”

Rukawa Feng bowed respectfully to the mysterious person and then ordered his subordinates to get to work.

The terror of an Evil Summoner lay in “Zero”; since he was not “Zero”‘s person, there was nothing to fear…

# Chapter 377: 374 47 Angel Envoy

Chapter 377: 374 47 Angel Envoy

Fucheng Sea Area, Zone 1.

Little Skeleton and Little Flood Dragon stared at each other, both somewhat dumbfounded.

Things weren’t going according to their script.

They had thought that by having a lot of minions, their minions could go far and wide to find the deeply hidden Lu Wu.

But after they had conquered the seas within thousands of miles around Fucheng, they realized their minions couldn’t leave.

To the east, there was a group of big sharks; to the south, a group of big whales; and to the west, a group of big turtles…

Bad guys surrounded them from all directions, preventing their minions from venturing beyond a thousand miles of the Fucheng Sea Area.

(What should we do?)

The two little guys were at a loss.

At that moment, Bone Dragon Lolita from Little Skeleton’s phone popped up, full of fighting spirit and said, “Just take care of them all! Turn them into minions too!”

Little Skeleton and Little Flood Dragon thought that made perfect sense.

Thus, having just taken over the Fucheng Sea Area, Little Skeleton and their group, along with countless minions, grandly charged eastward, ready to tackle the ugliest big shark first.

Their lineup was spectacular.

Little Skeleton, Little Flood Dragon, and Little Bone Dragon were all Lord Three Stars, all capable of challenging King-level entities.

Behind them were eighteen lower-grade Bone Dragon Knights.

Plus the minions of Little Flood Dragon, dozens of Lord-level various Summoned Beasts, thousands of Leader-level, and tens of thousands of Boss-level minions.

Such a massive Summoning Beast Army deployed.

The sea area for ten miles around was filled, their majestic presence shaking all directions.

Little Flood Dragon turned and looked at this grand spectacle, feeling a surge of intense pride.

It, Little Flood Dragon, was invincible!

With this strong confidence, Little Flood Dragon led the army into the territory of that group of big sharks.

Today, Little Flood Dragon would show these big sharks who was the king!

(Fucheng Sea Area, ask around who’s the boss!)

In the big sharks’ territory, Little Flood Dragon arrogantly taunted the opposing Lord 3 Star big shark.

The opposing big shark glanced at Little Flood Dragon’s forces, then turned to see its side only had about a hundred minions, the fearsome fish face showing a human-like hint of fear, before turning around and calling its boss.

When a creature hundreds of meters long, with an aura of terror pulsing over its body, came out.

The proud and pleased Little Flood Dragon was stunned.

The next moment, a huge roar resounded, the terrifying sound creating massive waves, instantly scattering Little Flood Dragon and its massive troop formation with a single roar.

The creature lashed out with its tail.

The terrifying waves surged, scattering the Lord-level beings like Little Flood Dragon and Little Skeleton.

Their first wave of attack on the group of sharks ended just like that.

Several hours later.

Hundreds of kilometers away.

The scattered Little Skeleton was reorganizing its troops, checking the number of its team members.

(Little Yin, Peppa, Xiong Da, Xiong Er, Baldy Qiang…)

After carefully counting once, Little Skeleton’s Pupil Fire flickered—it seemed like Big Big Wolf was missing.

Little Skeleton counted again; yes, indeed, Big Big Wolf was missing.

Also, Little Flood Dragon was nowhere to be seen.

This made Little Skeleton very anxious. It had only been a few days since it left the door without Lu Wu; how could it not be worried with Big Big Wolf and Little Flood Dragon both missing?

Anxious and flustered, Little Skeleton began to track “Big Big Wolf” using Little Skeleton’s phone.

Fortunately, Little Skeleton’s phone was powerful, and Little Skeleton successfully sensed the location of “Big Big Wolf” and quickly took his followers there.

Following Little Skeleton’s phone, Little Skeleton and his followers found a small island emitting death energy, devoid of any signs of life.

(Big Big Wolf, Big Big Wolf, where are you Big Big Wolf?)

Little Skeleton called out as he landed with Indeks.

However, the moment they touched down, a force pulled Little Skeleton and his group straight onto the island, ‘swoosh’ and they appeared in a land of the Undead filled with death energy.

At the same time,

Little Flood Dragon also appeared in a ruined underwater palace…

…

District 11, Liu Chuan City,

When Liuchuan Tie Mu came out of the City Lord Mansion with affirmation from that mysterious individual, he strode toward the street where Lu Wu was scrounging and saw Lu Wu, who was idly waiting.

“Father!”

As Liuchuan Tie Mu approached,

Liu Chuancheng, who was shivering from fear due to Lu Wu, found his backbone and straightened up, hurrying over.

Meanwhile, the idle Lu Wu turned his head at the shout and scrutinized the approaching Liuchuan Tie Mu.

The power of a Lord Three Stars peak, much stronger than Old Man Sakuragi.

Of course, Lu Wu definitely wouldn’t take him seriously.

“Seeing as you’re empty-handed, you don’t seem like you’re bringing anything, huh?

What’s this? Are you intending to bully me, a poor common man?

Let me tell you, my real estate agency won’t bow to tyranny.”

Lu Wu wore a stubborn and resolute expression, almost choking the nearby onlookers.

Liuchuan Tie Mu’s brow also furrowed.

But he didn’t confront Lu Wu right then.

Even though he had received permission from that mysterious figure to discipline Lu Wu, if possible, Liuchuan Tie Mu really didn’t want to make a move.

Because that figure had specified, he wanted him alive, to take him under his wing.

Observing Lu Wu, though his face was masked, it was evident that he was quite young.

Yet, his presence gave Liuchuan Tie Mu a subtle sense of threat.

Undoubtedly, this real estate agent had to be at least of Lord level in strength.

To have such strength at such a young age, and being an Evil Cultivator, Liuchuan Tie Mu, with his sensible mind, would not offend Lu Wu.

Of course, he wouldn’t let Lu Wu fleece him either.

Not wanting to offend anyone nor to be taken advantage of, this was a true test of Liuchuan Tie Mu’s skills.

“Sir, it’s true that my son was at fault for bumping into you, Liuchuan Tie Mu requests the opportunity to apologize.”

“An apology and that’s it?

I was scared into a heart condition by that Summoned Beast; I might even live a few years less because of this. If you don’t offer me a satisfactory explanation, I’m not letting this go today!”

Look at Lu Wu, naturally talented and quick to learn anything.

Even though he had only recently started learning how to scam, his proficiency soared. If not for his faulty system not strengthening, the system prompts for increasing scamming proficiency might be flooding his screen by now.

And Liuchuan Tie Mu, truly a pillar of the Liu Chuan Family,

managing Liu Chuan City, his power, and methods were undoubtedly robust, facing Lu Wu’s entanglement with swift and decisive reactions.

“Mr. Real Estate, don’t worry, I will provide you with a satisfactory explanation right away!”

During the conversation, Liuchuan Tie Mu kicked out suddenly, not at Lu Wu, but at Liu Chuancheng’s Summoned Beast, breaking its hind leg with one kick.

This abrupt kick startled Lu Wu and the onlookers.

Liu Chuancheng was utterly dumbfounded, holding his injured Summoned Beast, his face a mix of confusion and resentment.

“Father!”

Yet, Liuchuan Tie Mu’s gaze was not on his son but fixed on Lu Wu.

“Mr. House, this beast charged at you, so I broke its leg as an apology.

Furthermore, I’ll give you a Golden Quality item as compensation.

Do you find this settlement satisfactory?”

During the conversation, Liuchuan Tie Mu took off a jade pendant from his waist and handed it to Lu Wu.

Lu Wu glanced and immediately identified its main attributes: it was indeed of Golden Quality.

Witnessing the man’s respectful posture as he bent over to offer the item.

Fairly speaking, this gesture was impeccably executed; one would find no fault.

If it were anyone else, they probably would have felt too embarrassed to persist in troubling him.

But Lu Wu had come today to stir up trouble.

Staring at the bowing Liuchuan Tie Mu, Lu Wu’s expression barely changed, and the latter realized that Lu Wu was not intending to let the matter rest. With a soft sigh, he added more.

“Additionally, Liu Chuan would like to introduce you to a gentleman, whom I believe Mr. House will find most intriguing. Please, no matter what, accompany me to the Liu Chuan residence.”

At these words, Lu Wu, who had been preparing to make a scene, raised an eyebrow.

He vaguely guessed who the other party intended for him to meet.

Without declining,

“Sure, let’s go. Let’s discuss this at your home.”

Seeing Lu Wu agreeing so readily, Liuchuan Tie Mu breathed a sigh of relief, extending his hand, “Please!”

Subsequently, Lu Wu followed Liuchuan Tie Mu to the Liu Chuan residence.

This sudden change of venue disappointed the onlookers who had been enjoying the spectacle, but no one dared to say anything. They could only watch Lu Wu and the others leave.

Watching Lu Wu’s departing figure, someone shook their head incessantly.

“He’s still too young; this guy probably won’t make it out of the Liu Chuan residence.”

To some onlookers, it clearly seemed like a trick to lure Lu Wu into a trap.

Yet, on Lu Wu’s part, there was no sense of nervous tension about walking into a lion’s den.

He entered the City Lord Mansion with Liuchuan Tie Mu.

Months since his last visit, the City Lord Mansion remained the same, yet it had changed hands.

Seeing this place where different people now dwelled, Lu Wu’s eyes instantly narrowed.

“Indeed, I still can’t forgive the pain you caused me.”

Without warning, he threw out those words and, without a second thought, reached out to grab the pitiable Summoned Beast cowering behind Liu Chuancheng.

“Stop!”

Lu Wu’s sudden move nearly gave Liuchuan Tie Mu a heart attack — after all, that was his son.

Not caring about anything else, Liuchuan Tie Mu immediately drew the longsword from his waist and slashed toward Lu Wu’s arm.

The force of a Lord Three Stars pinnacle was terrifying, yet it amounted to nothing in front of Lu Wu.

He did not even draw his sword, simply reversing his hand with a slap.

The evil energy was chilling!

With great power, he knocked Liuchuan Tie Mu away and reached out again toward Liu Chuancheng.

At that moment, Liuchuan Tie Mu could care for nothing else and shouted, “Lord 47!”

Almost as the words left Liuchuan Tie Mu’s lips, a figure appeared out of nowhere, standing directly in front of Lu Wu and Liu Chuancheng. With a single hand, he easily stopped Lu Wu’s claw.

“King Level 1 Star standard, very good, quite impressive!”

The mysterious person, holding off Lu Wu’s attack, looked him up and down with a face full of approval.

“As soon as I arrived, you started causing trouble. You must have been targeting me, right?

Very well, I’m pleased with your power level. From now on, you’ll work for me.”

After saying this, the mysterious person didn’t wait for Lu Wu to respond, and turned his head towards Liuchuan Tie Mu, speaking indifferently, “Clean up what needs to be cleaned. Let’s end this matter here.”

“Yes!”

Liuchuan Tie Mu respectfully saluted and sighed in relief.

Meanwhile, he quickly signaled his son with his eyes, telling him to retreat promptly.

Perceptive, Liu Chuancheng, having caught the signal, was about to leave when Lu Wu sneered, “Did I say you could go?”

This statement made Liuchuan Tie Mu and his son shiver, and also caused the mysterious person to frown as he rebuked Lu Wu, “The Rukawa family is useful to me, I said this matter ends here…”

“You decide it ends here? Who do you think you are?”

At those words, Liuchuan Tie Mu felt a chill from his feet to his head, making his scalp tingle.

He knew that the so-called real estate agent was likely in trouble.

Indeed, after a moment of astonishment, the mysterious person let out a crackling laugh.

“What am I? What am I?

Very well, you’ve asked a good question. I originally thought you knew who I was when you came to the Rukawa family, but it seems that’s not the case?

You really don’t seem to know who I am. In that case, let me tell you exactly who I am and what I am!”

As he spoke, a terrifyingly evil energy burst forth.

An utterly malevolent Domain completely shrouded the City Lord Mansion. Outsiders vaguely felt the temperature drop but could see nothing inside.

Inside the City Lord Mansion,

The mysterious person expelling the Domain rose into the air.

Dark, thick evil energy emerged from his body, its chilling presence exploding with terrifying power, causing everyone present, except for Lu Wu, to kneel as if he were a devil incarnate.

“You ask what I am?

Let me tell you: I am the threat that frightens and slaughters hundreds of thousand across the entire eleventh district, a symbol of despair, the ruler over countless lives and deaths.

I am the 47th Apostle of the Zero Organization. That is my identity!

Do you understand now, you lowlife!”

As he spoke, a terrifying pressure descended as a gigantic skeleton head pressed down on Lu Wu.

“I originally saw a bit of strength in you and showed you extraordinary mercy. Now, it seems necessary for me to retract that mercy.

Lowlife, kneel down and thoroughly feel the dignity of my true self!”

During the sinister laughter of the 47, the immense black skeleton head fell down, completely engulfing Lu Wu.

Watching Lu Wu shrouded by the terrifying black skeleton head, Liuchuan Tie Mu’s eyes narrowed.

It’s over!

That so-called real estate agent is definitely doomed!

Under such a terrifying attack, there was no way he could survive…

…

Subscribe please, although my recent updates have been lacking, subscription is still requested, after all, I am a shameless man.

# Chapter 378: 375 Gate of the Dead

Chapter 378: 375 Gate of the Dead

Name: 47th Apostle (Zhang Yun Chu)

Power: 2 Stars (King Level)

Summoned Beast: Evilized Skeleton King (King Level 2 Stars)

Mastered Skills: Undead Curse (Ultimate Skill) (Grandmaster)

Undead Magic (Killing Skill) (Grandmaster)

Mastered Domain: Realm of the Dead (Mastery Degree 45%)

Special Items: Gate of the Dead (Legendary Quality) (A special item that the 47th Apostle devoted tremendous effort to align with the talents of the Evilized Skeleton King, linking it to the Skeleton King and enabling the summoning of the Skeleton King and its minions from elsewhere when used.)

…

This, then, was the attribute panel of the 47th Apostle.

The skeleton head that roared towards Lu Wu was part of the system of Undead Magic.

As the skeleton head descended, Lu Wu felt his frenzied and suppressed emotions erupt in his heart, his surroundings beginning to corrode.

Clearly, this was a spell carrying both a spiritual attack and a corrosive attack.

Had the attack landed solidly, even a King Level 1 Star existence, if not killed, would be severely damaged.

However, Lu Wu also noticed that the opponent’s attack seemed restrained, clearly indicating a desire to capture him alive.

To this, Lu Wu responded with a slight smile.

He unfurled the Senluo Wanxiang Domain.

While analyzing the spell on one hand, a surge of sword intent imbued with the aura of evil flames welled up from within him.

This was the evilized version of the Sword Style derived from absorbing the Ultimate Skill “Blast Fire Break” of the 71st Apostle. However, Lu Wu did not unleash this sword strike; instead, he used it as a defensive tactic against the skeleton head’s attack, buying time to analyze the opponent’s skill.

“Sword intent, huh? You’ve got some skills, kid!”

As Lu Wu’s “Evil Fire Sword Intent” emerged, the 47th Apostle’s eyebrows lifted and the corners of his mouth curled upwards.

“Let’s see how many of my attacks your pitiful sword intent can withstand!”

As he spoke, the 47th Apostle raised his hand and instantly, another black skeleton head fell.

The new skeleton head, even more terrifying than the previous, made Lu Wu’s sword intent waver.

The 47th Apostle did not stop there, intensifying his attacks.

Next came a rain of black bone spears, black bone hammers, black long spears…

One after another, dreadful spells rained down.

Each spell that fell caused Lu Wu’s sword intent to waver even more.

And it was not just Lu Wu’s sword intent wavering; the City Lord Mansion, engulfed by the 47th Apostle, also shook with each spell, the shockwaves toppling many of the mansion’s buildings.

Those within the domain faced even worse luck, with quite a few dying from the collateral damage.

Even City Lord Liuchuan Tie Mu could only huddle with his son, shivering on the sidelines.

His son, looking up at the 47th Apostle relentlessly assaulting the skies, seemed to regard him as a deity.

Seeing Lu Wu under attack by such a powerful “deity,” Liu Chuancheng thought that the arrogant swindler from earlier must now be left without even a hair.

Liuchuan Tie Mu seized the opportunity to impart a lesson to his son.

“Son, remember, when the weak face the strong, they must maintain sufficient respect.

To be overly arrogant is a foolish path to courting death.

Just like that real estate agent!”

Liu Chuan became nodded his head solemnly.

“Don’t worry, I definitely won’t become a real estate agent, and I certainly won’t be as foolish as him!”

As Liu Chuan became nodded seriously, above his head, the attack of the 47th Apostle underwent a different change.

Each of his attacks made Lu Wu’s Sword Intent waver, but he could never take Lu Wu down, and this was starting to annoy him.

He was now preparing to hit Lu Wu hard and take him down completely.

“Be alert, the 47th is unleashing his power, that real estate agent’s downfall is coming with this strike.”

Liuchuan Tie Mu whispered, sensing the situation.

As he spoke, the 47th Apostle spread his hands, and a deep gray aura coiled around them.

This was the aura of a curse, the 47th’s Ultimate Skill “Undead Curse.”

“Taste despair!”

The low chant of the 47th, the curse descended, and the moment the curse fell, the air seemed to freeze. Liu Chuan father and son felt breathless, their eyes fixed on that gray aura.

Watching it slowly fall towards Lu Wu below.

At this moment, on Lu Wu’s side, the evil energy surrounding him dispersed as the curse fell, exposing his figure.

At this glance, Lu Wu appeared so weak, pitiable, and helpless in the eyes of the Liu Chuan father and son.

This was a man destined to be crushed!

However, just when they were certain Lu Wu was done for, Lu Wu suddenly raised his head and thrust out his finger as if it were a sword.

With this strike, Lu Wu unleashed his full power with “Universal Enhancement,” released the “Evil Energy Transformation” and fused the skills “Cold Ice Body,” “Frozen Ray,” “Absolute Freeze,” and the “Power of the Ocean” in one mighty blow.

The sword thrust sent a surge of evil-tinged, icy Sword Qi skyward.

The sharp Sword Qi, carrying the essence of the ocean and extreme cold, instantly covered dozens of meters around Lu Wu in a thin layer of ice, freezing the curse’s aura where Lu Wu’s finger pointed.

“Impossible!”

Color drained from the 47th’s face as he showed an expression of disbelief.

Then, the remnants of the extreme cold Sword Qi, having frozen the curse’s aura, surged forward. This Sword Qi was so sudden that the 47th had no time to react; he was immediately pierced through the left shoulder.

Blood blossomed, and a bone-chilling pain spread with the cold.

This being, who appeared like a demon god in Liu Chuan’s eyes, let out a pained wail.

The sight stunned Liu Chuan and his son.

Clearly, they had not expected the 47th Apostle, strong as a demon god, not only to fail in taking Lu Wu down after using his ultimate skill but to be wounded by Lu Wu instead.

After this sword strike, the situation was suddenly reversed.

Just moments ago, the 47th who was bombarding from high above and held the absolute upper hand was now brought low, clutching his frozen half-body and howling in pain.

And Lu Wu, who was just receiving blows, was now stepping forward on ice, his presence commanding and overwhelmingly majestic.

“So this is your strength as the 47th Apostle.

If this is all the strength you have, you might die here today, and I will take your place!”

Hearing these words, the 47th Apostle’s body trembled.

He struggled to stand up straight.

“Father!”

On the other side, Liu Chuan Cheng looked nervously at his own father. If Lu Wu killed that presence, it seemed that they would be next.

“Don’t worry, the 47th won’t lose.”

Liuchuan Tie Mu patted his son, offering reassurance.

But Liu Chuancheng’s gaze remained fixed on the 47th Apostle, his face full of panic, clearly disbelieving.

At the same time, the 47th Apostle, standing before Lu Wu with a pierced shoulder, clutched at his wound and, trembling, a burst of evil energy shook away the ice encasing half of his body.

The pain on his face gradually faded, and his expression slowly calmed as he looked directly at Lu Wu opposite him.

“It seems I have underestimated you, after all.

Judging by that last sword, you should possess power between 60 and 50. No wonder you are so arrogant with such strength, but it’s not enough in front of me!”

While speaking, the 47th Apostle gradually released the hand pressing on his shoulder and began to stand upright bit by bit.

“I had thought about sparing your life so that you could work under me, but since you aim to defeat, even kill me, and take over the glory of the 47th Apostle, I can only grant you death.

Boy, pay for your foolishness!”

“Blah, blah, blah!”

Lu Wu raised his hand and sent another sword qi slashing out.

Facing this sword qi, the 47th Apostle didn’t offer any resistance, even spreading his arms to welcome it.

And as he spread his arms, at the same moment Lu Wu’s sword qi slashed out, a necklace with a tiny gate pendant on the 47th Apostle’s chest lit up, and a black gate appeared before him. A bone hand extended from the gate, grabbed the incoming sword qi, and with a gentle squeeze and a ‘crack,’ shattered it.

Immediately after, the owner of the bone hand emerged from the black gate.

A terrifying and powerful aura surged forth.

This was an extremely rare Summoned Beast from the Undead Type Bone Series, the very one Lu Wu had seen from his attribute panel, the “Evilized Skeleton King.”

As it appeared, Lu Wu seriously observed its attributes.

…

Name: Evilized Skeleton King

Power: 2 Stars (King Level)

Quality: Legendary (Enhanced)

Attributes: Undead, Skeleton, Evil

State: Confused (Evil energy is eliminating its final shred of rationality; it has practically become senseless.)

Weakness: Light (Strong)

Companion Weapon: Bone Staff (Legendary) (The inherent weapon of the Skeleton King, capable of increasing the combat power of its Undead forces.)

Killing Skill: Soldier Enhancement (Grandmaster)

Ultimate Skill: Undead Army Might (Grandmaster)

Secret Skill: King’s Will (Master)

Summoned Beast Domain: King’s Domain (Bone) (Mastery 47%)

Summoned Beast Talent: King of Skeletons (An advanced version of your Little Skeleton’s Skeleton Commander, able to strengthen subordinates in the name of the king, enhancing its own power.)

Description: This is a Summoned Beast oriented towards command; on its own it may be average at King Level 2 Stars, but with its forces, it becomes terrifyingly formidable.

…

As Lu Wu scrutinized the attributes of this Summoned Beast,

The corrupted Skeleton King raised the bone staff in its hand high, and in an instant, its “King’s Domain” sprang open.

King’s Domain is among the most dominant of domains.

As it opened, other domains began to collapse, even its master’s Realm of the Dead could only be overridden. However, Lu Wu’s “Senluo Wanxiang Domain” was barely affected.

Because his domain was auxiliary in nature, silent and unnoticed, it wasn’t detected or repelled by the other party.

As the “King’s Domain” unfolded, wave after wave of Summoned Beasts began to emerge from that black Gate.

Leading them were eighteen Bone Dragons at the peak of Lord 3 Stars followed by hundreds of Skeleton Generals of Lord Level.

These guys, once they appeared, packed the City Lord Mansion to the brim.

The terrifying and powerful Skeleton Army spread their might, and the 47th Apostle, who had been cut by Lu Wu, returned to his original position, hovering in mid-air, overseeing the encircled Lu Wu.

A look of utter confidence, a smile that seemed to control everything, graced his face.

Looking down at Lu Wu, whose face showed shock at the sight of the Skeleton King’s minions, he proudly said,

“Kid, the battle, oh no, the massacre, is just beginning now!

Savor what true despair feels like!

Attack, kill him for me!”

At the 47th Apostle’s command, the hand wielding the Bone Staff by the Evilized Skeleton King swiped, and the massive Skeleton Army immediately sprang into action.

At the same time, a myriad of Skills erupted.

“Soldier Enhancement” descended, bolstering the Skeleton Army’s might.

“Undead Army Might” descended, consolidating the Skeleton Army into a whole, their power soaring even further.

Hundreds of Lord-Level Undead erupted with a terror surpassing that of Lords and even King-Level beings. With unstoppable divine might, they converged on Lu Wu.

It was a scene of utter despair.

Seeing this, Liuchuan Tie Mu, whose heart had been secretly suspended, finally relaxed and said to his son, “See, this is the true power of the 47th.

In front of his vast Undead Army, a mere house agent counts for nothing.

Even someone as strong as the 47th keeps such a low profile. We should be even more modest and humble, remember, don’t be too much of a house agent!”

“The 47th is indeed powerful!

Father, rest assured, I will never be a house agent!” responded Liu Chuan Cheng, accepting his father’s teachings while his eyes remained fixed on the eighteen Bone Dragons of the Undead Army.

“Father, why aren’t those Bone Dragons moving?” he asked.

Liuchuan Tie Mu glanced over with some confusion as well, “Perhaps to deal with just a mere house agent, they’re not needed!”

Meanwhile, the 47th Apostle was also somewhat perplexed upon seeing the eighteen additional Bone Dragons.

He, too, was wondering when these Bone Dragon minions had joined the ranks of the Skeleton King.

“Uh, it seems it’s not just the Bone Dragons that have increased in number, but also some Lord-Level subordinates.”

However, the 47th Apostle did not suspect anything.

After all, he usually kept his Undead Army in a Secret Realm only he knew about.

That Secret Realm was immensely vast, and from time to time, a few new minions would appear under the Skeleton King’s command. Although there were a bit more new minions this time, and they were a bit more powerful, it still seemed normal.

Besides, there weren’t just the powerful Bone Dragon troops that increased in number, but also some rather silly creatures.

The 47th Apostle even noticed that among the Skeleton Army, a clueless Little Skeleton holding a mobile phone had slipped in.

That fellow was incredibly dim-witted. As everyone charged forward, it just stood there, holding a mobile phone, blinking at Lu Wu on the other side, not knowing what to watch.

“Is this Little Skeleton also at Lord Level? How can it be so dumb if it hasn’t been Evilized? And what’s with the mobile phone in its hand?”

The 47th Apostle was a bit curious.

But first, he set his curiosity aside, focusing his attention on Lu Wu.

He wanted to watch this foolish man die!!!

# Chapter 379: 376 Breakthrough (Seeking Subscription)

Chapter 379: 376 Breakthrough (Seeking Subscription)

Little Skeleton was somewhat confused.

No, rather quite confused.

Because it seemed that it was supposed to be looking for Big Big Wolf, yet somehow, it ended up finding Lu Wu?

But was that really Lu Wu on the other side?

This Lu Wu looked dirty, just like the big bad guy Lu Wu described earlier, all grimy.

Such a dirty Lu Wu was obviously broken.

Then, the question arose.

Could a broken Lu Wu still be of use?

Little Skeleton looked at Lu Wu with some disdain.

(It’s already this dirty, and it let Tuantuan beat Little Skeleton at home for so long. The good Lu Wu has completely turned into a bad Lu Wu. Maybe it’s better to just give up on him.)

On the other side, Lu Wu, whose attention had been on Little Skeleton from the start, almost spat out a mouthful of old blood upon seeing this state.

Who’s dirty? You’re the dirty one, your whole family is dirty!

If it weren’t for the wrong time and place, Lu Wu would definitely make Little Skeleton vividly remember the fear of being dominated by him.

Lu Wu’s changing expressions were observed by Agent 47, who felt particularly delighted inside.

“What’s the matter? Are you nervous now? Are you scared now?

We are nowhere near the end, there are even more desperate and terrifying things waiting for you!

I will take good care of you!”

Saying this, the Undead Army surrounding Lu Wu launched an attack on him.

With various enhancements from the Skeleton King, hundreds of undead combined into one entity, their combat power was terrifyingly formidable.

Although they swarmed over mindlessly, their attacks were not chaotic but unified under the “Undead Army Might” into a concerted force.

The hundreds of undead simultaneously unleashed the same skill.

It began with “Dead Pressure.”

“Dead Pressure,” a kill-level Undead Type deterrence skill, could spiritually intimidate the opponent; upon successful intimidation, it could throw the opponent’s spirit into chaos, lose control of their energy, or even directly kill them.

Hundreds of Lord Level Summoned Beasts used this skill simultaneously.

The scene was quite terrifying.

A giant skeleton apparition appeared out of nowhere above the Undead Army, its daunting pressure bearing down like a collapsing mountain aiming directly at Lu Wu.

The power of this skill far exceeded the ultimate skill “Undead Curse” used by Agent 47 earlier.

At that moment, not to mention the stunned Liu Chuan father and son nearby, even Lu Wu himself was shocked.

Whoever said that realm was absolute?

These hundreds of Lord Level Summoned Beasts, under the integration by the Skeleton King, had erupted with power far beyond their own capabilities, hadn’t they?

Of course, however strong they were, Lu Wu was not about to resign himself to fate.

And he certainly wasn’t about to be captured without a fight.

As the pressure descended, the “Frost Ice Sword Style” Sword Intent Lu Wu had used once before burst forth again.

The Ice Sword Intent, entwined with Evil Energy, struggled hard against the pressure above his head.

On the other side, concerning Little Skeleton.

Though it disdained the dirty and broken Lu Wu, it was still unhappy seeing someone attacking its Lu Wu.

After all, Lu Wu was its Lu Wu, whether good or bad, he belonged to Little Skeleton.

Besides, a dirty and broken Lu Wu shouldn’t be discarded; maybe washing and repairing it might make it usable again.

So, Little Skeleton was about to pull out a gun to join the fray, but then it saw Lu Wu giving it a look.

What was the relationship between Little Skeleton and Lu Wu?

It was a relationship where a single look could convey everything!

“Don’t make a move, this skill is good, let me analyze and absorb it,” Lu Wu conveyed.

(Don’t hit the small fries, go for that filthy human?) Little Skeleton understood.

“Just watch from the side, I’ll tell you when to make a move!”

(Should I sneak up close to that filthy human and take the chance to blow his head off with one thrust?)

“Got it?”

(Got it, got it!!)

Three glances, and finally, the last one was on the same frequency.

Little Skeleton’s head began nodding frantically.

On Lu Wu’s side, watching Little Skeleton nod emphatically, he couldn’t help but smile.

Just look at that.

This was his Little Skeleton, whom he had been raising for over two years; the tacit understanding between them as main pets was simply indescribable—even when their contract was unilaterally closed by Lu Wu, they could still communicate through eye contact.

Such an understanding was unparalleled in the world.

Having settled Little Skeleton, Lu Wu’s heart calmed down, and he started to put all his effort into resisting while continuously analyzing the “King’s Suppression”, as well as the “Soldier Gun Skill” and “Undead Dominance” skills falling upon his Undead Army.

These skills were treasures, especially after Little Skeleton arrived, Lu Wu was even more determined to stealthily learn them.

Because this Undead Army was very strong, so Lu Wu wanted to make it his own.

“Arrogant, huh? Where did that arrogance go just now?!”

Angel Envoy 47 here was clueless about what Lu Wu was frantically absorbing.

He also didn’t notice that after receiving the ‘order’ from the filthy and deranged Lu Wu, Little Skeleton’s eyes, ablaze with Pupil Fire, were watching him.

And cautiously, sneakily making his way towards him.

It seemed he was preparing to seize an opportunity, whip out his long spear, and deliver a deadly thrust.

Yeah, Angel Envoy 47 knew nothing.

All he knew was that Lu Wu looked very disheveled right now.

That terrifyingly intense Ice Sword Intent had been suppressed by the “Dead Pressure” to a position about half a meter around Lu Wu.

The sharp sword intent continued to swirl, and large beads of sweat emerged from Lu Wu’s tensed and bulging forehead.

Anyone could see how uncomfortable and disheveled Lu Wu was.

And the more uncomfortable Lu Wu was, the happier he became.

After all, Evil Summoners, due to evil energy, were somewhat mentally disturbed.

Kong Yi before, Feng Xiu before, and now this Angel Envoy 47 were the same.

All of them had issues that a normal person wouldn’t have, or were a bit more outrageous than normal people.

He enjoyed watching his enemies being crushed little by little.

It gave him great pleasure.

So he was in no rush to kill Lu Wu.

Besides, why rush?

His side still had more than a dozen Bone Dragons, more than a dozen Lord 3 Star Skeleton Warriors, and the Skeleton King who had yet to make a move. Lu Wu was already being tormented like this.

In such a situation, Lu Wu was doomed not to turn the tide.

So, of course, he would play however he felt like.

“Enjoy it, relish in this pain because this is the last thing you can feel before you die.

You should thank me for being so kind to let you experience this.

Come on, Skeleton King, up the firepower a bit!

Make it a bit more unforgettable.

Just a little, just don’t kill him too quickly; that would be too boring.”

Under the bizarre commands of the 47th Angel Envoy,

the pressure weighing on Lu Wu intensified, compressing the sword intent surrounding him to about thirty centimeters.

Sweat wasn’t the only thing that appeared on Lu Wu’s face now; tiny droplets of blood began to form.

He wasn’t pretending,

he was truly in pain.

After all, he was genuinely unable to defeat this horde of the Undead Army.

If Lu Wu had burst forth with all his might, his combat power could have reached the standard of King-level 3 stars.

But that was at full power, without fully unleashing, and not even using the “Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword,” Lu Wu’s combat power was at most at the peak of King Level 1 Star.

This standard was sufficient to combat an Angel Envoy like the 47th, whose own combat strength wasn’t particularly strong as a King Level 2 Star summoner, but genuinely contending with a King Level 2 Star was challenging.

And now, he was facing an Undead Army enhanced and converged with various boosts.

With their skill taking effect, the current power had reached the peak of King Level 2 Star; battling against it was incredibly difficult for Lu Wu.

His brain trembled.

Every pore in his body opened gradually, blood forcibly seeping out.

At this moment, his head felt like it was splitting, and his entire body was in extreme pain as if being sliced by knives.

Of course, this kind of pain was nothing to Lu Wu.

After all, he was a man who had seen major crises and endured the harshest beatings; this pain was merely a drizzle, but he looked miserable.

This made the 47th Angel Envoy feel particularly delighted.

What he didn’t know was that this satisfying spectacle came at a cost.

As Lu Wu suffered,

this intense pressure greatly stimulated the core skill “Unyielding,” causing Lu Wu’s trembling brain to operate frantically.

His brain, already highly efficient, was now functioning at its peak,

making Lu Wu’s mind clearer than ever before.

This allowed Lu Wu’s “All Things” domain to operate at its utmost, easily gaining the group skills “Dead Pressure,” “Soldier Enhancement,” and “Undead Army Might” amidst his pain.

Together with the previously acquired “Undead Magic” and “Undead Curse,”

Lu Wu now had five more skills in hand. If he could integrate these five skills into the “Lu Family Swordsmanship,” Lu Wu could potentially break through to King Level 2 Star instantly.

However, at this critical moment, Lu Wu didn’t try to combine these five skills, but instead focused on the “Fire God Slash” skill.

He had a bold idea.

Under this pressure, he wanted to use his current special state to integrate “Fire God Slash” into the “Lu Family Swordsmanship.”

‘If it’s now, I should be able to do it!’

With this thought in mind, Lu Wu started to fiercely grapple with “Fire God Slash.”

As Lu Wu struggled with the Fire God Slash, the sword intent outside his body also began to collapse, making it increasingly difficult for him to resist.

Anyone could see that all the 47th Angel Envoy had to do was squeeze slightly, and Lu Wu would die, yet he defiantly chose to be reckless.

This confused Liu Chuancheng watching by the side.

“Father, didn’t you always say that when striking an enemy, we should either not act at all or act without mercy and not drag things out?

What is the 47th doing…?”

Torn between his revered father and a person he worshipped like a god,

Liu Chuancheng doubted his father’s teachings for the first time—should he trust his father’s lessons or what he was seeing with his own eyes?

This gave Liuchuan Tie Mu a headache.

Now, under the domain of the 47th Angel Envoy, what could he say?

Could he call this guy a lunatic or an idiot?

Wasn’t that courting death?

Naturally, all he could do was to fawn over the 47th Angel Envoy.

“I told you, that’s how you treat enemies!

In battle, it’s a matter of life and death!”

Liuchuan Tie Mu glanced at his son and continued, “Do you think this real estate agent constitutes Lord 47’s enemy?

Is this a battle right now?

Don’t joke around; this is merely a one-sided slaughter.

Lord 47, as a powerful being, is giving a weakling the pain and death he deserves, making him pay for his foolish actions.”

Look at these words from Liuchuan Tie Mu.

He even deliberately raised his voice a bit to make sure that Envoy 47 noticed.

This sycophantic stance was perfectly timed.

Envoy 47’s brows relaxed instantly, and a smile appeared on his face; it was clear he was pleased by the flattery.

Liuchuan Tie Mu, naturally, noticed this.

So, he felt particularly elated.

By clinging to such a powerful thigh, he, Liuchuan Tie Mu, would surely rise another step.

However, his son, watching Lu Wu stand unyieldingly covered in blood, shivering, felt inexplicably uneasy.

Especially when he saw Lu Wu open his eyes, witnessing the burst of Sword Intent in them, he couldn’t help but mutter softly, “He seems to have grown stronger. If this goes on, could Lord 47 be overturned?”

As soon as these words came out, Liuchuan Tie Mu’s face changed.

He immediately wanted to slap his son but found he couldn’t move at all.

Liuchuan Tie Mu immediately knew something was wrong; it was the doing of Envoy 47.

Just as he was about to kneel and beg for his indiscreet son’s forgiveness, he found his son walking toward Envoy 47.

Liuchuan Tie Mu was inwardly frantic, wanting to shout and plead but finding himself incapable of doing anything.

Meanwhile, Envoy 47, who had casually summoned Liu Chuan over, looked at the young man in front of him and smiled.

“Think he can turn the tables?”

Liu Chuan, already petrified by this sudden development, shivered and dared not speak.

“Answer me!”

A single sentence from Envoy 47 made Liu Chuan tremble all over, mustering his courage to cautiously say, “I… I think I saw him getting stronger…”

“He has gotten stronger, quite a bit too. Seems like he’s about to break through to King Level 2 Stars, right?

His talent isn’t bad; it just seems to lack a bit of pressure. Let me give him some pressure then.”

As Envoy 47 spoke, the pressure on Lu Wu increased once more.

Under the terrifying pressure, Lu Wu’s already crumbling “Ice Sword Intent” snapped and collapsed completely.

With “Ice Sword Intent” collapsed, the dreadfully overwhelming “Undead Pressure,” like floodgates opening, poured down, seemingly about to drown Lu Wu.

At that moment, another surge of Sword Intent wrapped in Evil Energy, the Flame Sword Intent, emerged from Lu Wu’s body.

This Sword Intent, derived from Lu Wu’s continuous absorption of the “Fire God Slash,” wasn’t strong, even weaker than the Ice Sword Intent but purer.

Envoy 47’s lips curled, and he increased the strength again.

A resounding creak echoed, and the Flame Sword Intent trembled once more.

Blood surged from Lu Wu.

Seeing this scene, Liu Chuan felt like he understood.

Envoy 47, while verbally stating he was giving Lu Wu a bit of pressure to help him break through, seemed instead to be determined to kill Lu Wu completely.

Nonetheless, the lord had finally heeded his suggestion.

However, at that moment, Envoy 47’s lips curled again.

He intensified the pressure slightly, and with this added force,

Lu Wu, as if reaching a breaking point, exploded…

# Chapter 380: 377 King Level 2 Star (Seeking Subscriptions)

Chapter 380: 377 King Level 2 Star (Seeking Subscriptions)

District 11, inside the Liuchuan City Lord Mansion.

Under the oppressive force of the “Undead Pressure,” Lu Wu’s brain trembled as he frantically absorbed and digested “Fire God Slash” in an enhanced state.

He was trying hard, and his condition was quite good, but there was always something lacking.

Yes, Lu Wu knew that he wasn’t suffering enough.

The blows he received were still not cruel enough!

At this moment, Lu Wu really wanted his opponent to exert more strength, to hit him even harder.

And it seemed the opponent understood Lu Wu’s desire and graciously added a bit more force.

As this perfectly timed force arrived,

Lu Wu’s forehead ‘boomed,’ as if a breach had exploded open.

Inspiration struck!

Lu Wu smoothly absorbed “Fire God Slash,” integrating it as a sword style in the “Lu Family Swordsmanship.”

With the successful absorption of “Fire God Slash,” Lu Wu’s power experienced a terrifying boost.

The skill level of “Lu Family Swordsmanship” transformed directly from “Ultimate Skill” level to “Secret Skill” level.

Lu Wu’s control over his “All Things” domain skyrocketed to thirty percent.

His power also advanced from King Level 1 Star to King Level 2 Star.

The breakthrough caused the sword intent outside Lu Wu’s body to burst forth instantaneously.

The sword intent, which had been squeezed to a few centimeters from Lu Wu’s body, shot up instantly.

From a few centimeters, it burst forth several meters and continued to soar.

This surge of sword intent, as if the Fire God himself had descended, terrified the Angel Envoy No. 47 beside Liu Chuancheng.

“How can this be?”

He clearly saw Lord No. 47 exert force, and Lu Wu was about to be crushed to death, wasn’t he?

How could it burst forth now?

Could it really be that Lu Wu was turning the tables as he said?

What should they do now? If it really turned around, and Lord No. 47 fell, could he and his son survive?

As Liu Chuancheng panicked, Angel Envoy No. 47 beside him remained unusually calm, even showing a hint of mockery.

“I just said I was going to put some pressure on him to help him break through, you thought I was joking, right?”

Liu Chuancheng was stunned, looking up at Lord No. 47 by his side for the first time.

“Did you do it on purpose?”

“Yes, I intentionally helped him.

He wanted to break through, so I helped him break through. Right now, his heart is probably filled with joy.

He must think that with his breakthrough, he could definitely defeat me.

At the very least, he could escape from my hands and save his little life.”

Lord No. 47 said this, his eyes watching the pleasantly surprised Lu Wu, his mouth’s mockery even more pronounced.

“He would never expect that his breakthrough was deliberately orchestrated by me.”

“Why would you do that?”

Liu Chuancheng was completely baffled, unable to keep up with the twisted logic.

“Why? What I want is to give him hope.

And then destroy that hope.

I want him to realize that his breakthrough is of no help to the current situation, that if I want him dead, he still has to die!

The expression he shows at the moment when his hope is shattered is the beautiful scene I most look forward to!”

As Angel Envoy No. 47 revealed his twisted thoughts and intentions,

the Evilized Skeleton King beside him had already raised the scepter in his hand.

With the raising of the Skeleton King’s scepter, the ultimate skill “King’s Will” which he commanded, was finally unleashed.

“Wherever the king points, the army marches!”

The secret skill-level technique was terrifying!

The will of the king erupted, and the momentum of the undead army under his command climbed to its peak.

About a dozen skeleton warriors temporarily broke through to king-level, while the rest soared to the Lord 3 Star Level.

The most terrifying, most powerful change was the “Undead Pressure.”

This skill, which had been topped off after Lu Wu’s breakthrough, ferociously fell again at this moment.

The intimidation was even more terrifying than before.

The newly formed “Fire God Sword Intent” of Lu Wu shattered again, and the empowered Lu Wu was once again suppressed by the 47th Angel Envoy.

This astonishing change stunned Liu Chuancheng.

He could not help but reveal a look of shock and admiration on his face.

So this was the true power of Angel Envoy 47.

He liked his expression very much, but what he liked more, or rather what he anticipated more, was the current expression on Lu Wu’s face.

He kept his gaze fixed on Lu Wu, wanting to see.

The expression on Lu Wu’s face now that he had fallen from the Peak of Hope to the Valley of Despair.

However, to his disappointment, Lu Wu had no superfluous expressions at that moment.

Or rather, he did not have the kind of panic, despair, or disbelief that the 47th Angel Envoy had expected.

There was only calmness.

“Still holding on? I want to see how much longer you can last!”

The more Lu Wu was like this, the more the 47th Angel Envoy wanted to torment him.

To make Lu Wu show the expression he was supposed to have.

“It will happen, with this next strike, he should start crying!”

The 47th Angel Envoy had absolute confidence in his strike.

After all, this was almost his strongest attack. Not even a being at the king-level peak would dare to confront it directly, and Lu Wu certainly couldn’t resist it.

Indeed, Lu Wu was very clear about the strength of this attack; he absolutely couldn’t block it with his bare hands.

So, looking up at the sky, Lu Wu narrowed his eyes slightly and waved his hand.

He took out the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword.

The 47th Angel Envoy’s mouth twitched upward as he saw this.

“So you’re finally summoning your beast, ready to fight to the death, huh? Too bad, it’s too late. Even with an additional King Level 1 Star summon, it’s impossible…”

Before the 47th Angel Envoy could finish speaking, a silly sound, very familiar to Little Skeleton and similar to the moans humans make in some incomprehensible movies starting with “Royal Casino,” erupted from within Lu Wu’s body.

Lu Wu’s aura skyrocketed.

It shot directly from King Level 2 Star to King Level 3 Star.

“What?”

The face of the 47th Angel Envoy changed, becoming extremely unpleasant.

Clearly, he realized that the situation was now somewhat beyond his control, but it was already too late.

At that moment, Lu Wu raised his hand and slashed with his sword.

The evilized version of Fire God Slash fully erupted.

A secret skill-level sword technique, combined with Lu Wu’s now King-level 3 Star power, and the addition of the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword in his hand.

Lu Wu slashed with his sword.

A phantom, wrapped in black aura and resembling a demon god, appeared suddenly behind Lu Wu, spreading an unimaginable majesty and will. The whole domain seemed to ignite.

A fear stemming from the soul spread, causing even the Liu family and the 47th Angel Envoy difficulty in breathing.

Then, the black longsword built of black flames that the phantom held was slashed out simultaneously with Lu Wu’s sword.

Terrifying flames mixed with the sword light were unleashed.

The extreme burst spread instantly and the “Undead Pressure” that had forcefully pressed down on the top of Lu Wu’s head was actually shattered.

Although the black longsword dimmed slightly from shattering the Undead Pressure, it still resolutely slashed toward the 47th Angel Envoy.

This scene left Liu Chuancheng dumbstruck, causing him to instinctively look towards the No. 47 Angel Envoy by his side.

It was as if this demon-like figure was the cornerstone of his existence.

However, when Liu Chuancheng turned his head, he was stunned.

Because he saw that the No. 47 Angel Envoy, who in his eyes was like a demonic figure that playfully manipulated Lu Wu as a clown, had a hint of panic on his face.

He was indeed a bit panicked now.

He had not anticipated that Lu Wu could unleash such a terrifying burst of power.

At this moment, he had no time to care about Liu Chuancheng and hysterically shouted, “Skeleton King!”

At his call, he waved his hand, and the evilized version of the Skeleton King immediately stepped forward.

Although it was not the best at individual combat, that did not mean it was incapable.

It could fight, and the moment it stepped forward, its innate talent reversed.

The power originally bestowed upon the Undead Army now surged within it, causing the Skeleton King’s power to skyrocket, its bone staff bracing, and a black Bone Shield magically appearing in front of it.

This somewhat fragile and even slightly decrepit Bone Shield, which gave an insecure feeling, incredibly blocked Lu Wu’s strike, the Fire God Slash.

Watching that terrifying strike being blocked,

Then looking back down at Lu Wu, who, after making that slash, had seven and a half layers of power drained from him and was gasping for breath like an ox,

The panic on the face of the No. 47 Angel Envoy finally disappeared, not only disappearing but also revealing a smirk filled with mockery and pride.

“I guessed you had an ace up your sleeve, but I didn’t expect it to be so deep, actually hiding two Summoned Beasts.

Such an explosive attack could be considered nearly unreachable even by a peak King-level being.

No wonder you had such confidence to challenge me.

Unfortunately, you still lost.

So now, you need to pay for your foolishness!

Come, feel the pain!”

As the No. 47 Angel Envoy spoke, he was about to let his Summoned Beasts give Lu Wu a proper treatment.

At this moment, Lu Wu, panting, said, “Who… who told you that I only have two Summoned Beasts…”

“What?”

The No. 47 Angel Envoy was startled, his face full of confusion.

Then, with a ‘puth’ sound,

A long spear wrapped in electric light emerged from below behind him, and under the completely unexpected circumstances, it struck into his body through a Thousand-year Kill entry point.

The unimaginable pain and humiliation instantly overwhelmed the poor No. 47 Angel Envoy.

And he, in his pain and humiliation, turned back to look down, wanting to see who had dealt him the fatal blow.

Who else could it be?

Of course, it was Little Skeleton, who had secretly circled around for quite a while.

Seeing the bad guy above looking down at it, Little Skeleton instinctively jerked the spear, then shoved again.

“How can this be?”

The No. 47 Angel Envoy was baffled, never having expected his own Undead Army to turn against him.

“It is mine, so what do you think, surprising or not, delightful or not!”

At that moment, Lu Wu’s voice was particularly irritating.

But at this moment, the No. 47 Angel Envoy no longer had time to care whether Lu Wu was irritating or not.

He could only struggle in his shock, fiercely soaring upwards to yank the spear out, while simultaneously commanding the Skeleton King to kill Little Skeleton.

“Kill, kill for me, kill this damn skeleton, and everyone in that building agency too, I want them dead!”

The lower body of the No. 47 Angel Envoy, covered in blood, was particularly ferocious at this time, issuing a hysterical roar at his own Skeleton King.

His subordinate’s reaction was also quick.

The Skeleton King immediately charged towards Little Skeleton, while at the same time, the Undead Army pressed down on Lu Wu.

Watching his own Undead Army launch the attack, the No. 47 Angel Envoy was filled with a fierce pleasure.

Even though he took a shot in a particularly embarrassing place, victory ultimately belonged to him; the real estate agent was bound to die.

He wanted to watch that damned real estate agent and that even more damned Little Skeleton die.

At that moment, both Lu Wu and Little Skeleton were indeed facing a crisis.

Especially Little Skeleton.

By this time, the Skeleton King’s power had reached King-level 3 stars, a whole major level stronger than Little Skeleton’s Lord 3 Star.

With a casual strike, Little Skeleton was smashed deep into the ground by an immense evil energy, life or death unknown.

The exhilarating sensation of the strike was particularly satisfying for Agent 47, who was still holding onto his wounded area.

But more than Little Skeleton, he hated Lu Wu more.

After suppressing Little Skeleton with one strike, Agent 47 immediately ordered the Evilized Skeleton King to kill Lu Wu.

“Don’t hold back, pummel him to death. I want him dead, dead!”

In Agent 47’s hysterical roar, the Evilized Skeleton King pounced forward, arriving instantly in front of Lu Wu, and violently smashed down with a Bone Staff.

Lu Wu, along with his sword, was smashed deep into the ground.

This scene left Agent 47’s face flushed with excitement.

“This is the price! I am invincible, victory will ultimately be mine, you must die no… ah!”

While he was arrogantly enjoying his moment.

A fearsome roar, both thick and thin, composed of eighteen trails, crashed down.

Combined into one, the roar instantly pierced through Agent 47, who lacked the protection of the Evilized Skeleton King, blasting his body into pieces, leaving only his head intact.

His eyes wide open, he stared in confusion at the eighteen Bone Dragons led by Indeks.

He opened his mouth as if wanting to say something, but he couldn’t speak, and in that instant, his life force completely vanished, he, ranked 47 in the Zero Organization, potentially among the top thirty in actual combat power, was taken down just like that.

He died without understanding how he could be killed by a subordinate’s subordinate.

With Agent 47’s death, as the master of the Skeleton King.

The Skeleton King was instantly backfired.

The brains of these evil Summoned Beasts weren’t good to begin with, and just like that, the Skeleton King battling Lu Wu malfunctioned.

Lu Wu seized this opportunity, getting severely harsh, he directly thrust his Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword through its eye socket, instantly obliterating its Soul Fire, decisively killing the Evilized Skeleton King.

The entire process happened in a flash, completed in a blink of an eye.

Liuchuan Tie Mu, utterly unprepared, saw his absolutely dominant Agent 47 suddenly die.

He then saw his own son get killed by the roar of the Bone Dragons, and Liuchuan Tie Mu collapsed on the spot.

On Lu Wu’s side.

He didn’t have time to worry about Liuchuan Tie Mu; after killing the Skeleton King with one sword strike, his first move was to rush to Little Skeleton.

He had just seen his own Little Skeleton get hit, not knowing the extent of the injury, which made Lu Wu extremely anxious.

“Little Skeleton, how are you doing, Little Skeleton? Are you hurt? Let me see, let me see!”

As Lu Wu anxiously rushed over, Little Skeleton was holding its Bone Staff and spacing out, and seeing Lu Wu coming over, kept moving closer to itself.

Little Skeleton became unhappy right away.

(Don’t come over, Lu Wu is dirty, Little Skeleton won’t let dirty Lu Wu hug!)

Seeing Little Skeleton’s state,

Lu Wu’s anxiety was cast aside right then, and instead, he pulled out his belt.

No one should try to stop him, today Lu Wu was determined to thrash this little brat.

…

Recently, the updates indeed have not been great.

But because there are issues in my life, I couldn’t help it.

Sigh, I don’t know what to say as an apology.

Anyway, garbage Nu Xiao, long and short of it.

# Chapter 381: 378 Little Skeleton Breakthrough

Chapter 381: 378 Little Skeleton Breakthrough

Zone 11, Liuchuan City Lord Mansion.

The battle had finished, and while Liuchuan City hadn’t suffered much, the entire City Lord Mansion was essentially in ruins.

All the buildings had collapsed, and the only living person left was Liuchuan Tie Mu.

Er, no, he was dead too.

It was mainly because Lu Wu only remembered that his Little Skeleton didn’t feel pain when he started whipping it with a belt.

Furious, he casually slapped Liuchuan Tie Mu, who had run over in a grief-stricken rage after his son’s death, killing him with a single blow.

After killing Liuchuan Tie Mu with a slap,

Lu Wu didn’t leave Liu Chuan City.

Normally, after killing an Angel Envoy of the “Zero” organization, one would be running all over the place, heaven and earth.

After all, the members of this organization were notoriously perverse and extremely vengeful.

Daring to kill their Envoy, they would dare to do anything in retaliation.

But Lu Wu was different, not because he was handsomer—although that was true—but the real reason he feared nothing was that he was now an Evil Summoner.

Having killed Envoy 47, he could replace him, so Lu Wu didn’t need to run.

He just needed to wait for someone to come and show him the ropes.

Of course, before the folks from the “Zero” organization showed up, Lu Wu needed to take care of some business.

Deal with some guys, like Little Skeleton.

Hmm, just mentioning this little guy got him riled up.

This little rascal was his initial Summoned Beast, the one he had painstakingly raised from scratch.

And in the end, it even scorned him for being dirty—how could Lu Wu stand for that?

Lu Wu, grinding his teeth, waved at Little Skeleton: “Come here, you come to me!”

Little Skeleton shook his head, and even the fires in his eyes formed the shape of refusal.

Too bad, it was no use; Lu Wu went straight over and pulled him into his embrace.

Little Skeleton found him dirty and didn’t want him to get close, but Lu Wu insisted on doing just that—not only getting close but also hugging him.

If it weren’t for the little guy resisting so much, Lu Wu wouldn’t have bothered hugging its bony frame.

However, once Lu Wu had pulled the little one into his arms, he suddenly discovered that Little Skeleton didn’t seem to resist that much?

It even wrapped its arms around his waist and rubbed its head against his chest as if it were acting coy.

Seeing this, Lu Wu was taken aback and found it hard to believe.

“Have I been played by Little Skeleton?”

Lu Wu felt like his intelligence was being insulted. Could the evilized state really lower one’s IQ?

He felt a bit distressed, but seeing Little Skeleton’s antics, Lu Wu touched his nose.

“Whatever, being played is better than being disliked, I guess.”

And just as they embraced in a warm yet eerie scene, a head popped out of Lu Wu’s chest.

Um, that was Hanhan, who had sensed Little Skeleton’s presence and came out to find its buddy to play.

Seeing Little Skeleton, Hanhan was especially excited and happy.

But Little Skeleton was clearly not pleased.

Because as soon as it came out, it squeezed between Little Skeleton and Lu Wu.

Little Skeleton was furious; it had finally gotten a hug, and there was Hanhan, cluelessly burrowing into Little Skeleton, which kindled Little Skeleton’s ire to a blaze.

And since it was already annoyed by Hanhan’s new, shiny feathers, it started plucking at the silly bird.

The moment plucking commenced, Hanhan became even more excited, leading to a tussle between the bird and the skeleton.

Watching the disruptive scene, Lu Wu’s lips couldn’t help but curl into a smile, his heart warmed by the tender affection he felt.

Just then, Indeks came over. Lu Wu instinctively reached out to hug Indeks, who had just reverted to her loli form, but Indeks transformed into a Bone Dragon and let out a roar at Lu Wuyi.

“Loli lover, pervert!”

She looked very, very fierce!

However, when Lu Wuyi began to stroke her head, the little creature calmed down.

Clearly, another tsundere had arrived on the scene.

The Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword watched this entire scene.

It felt confused, unsure about what the sudden appearance of Little Skeleton and the Bone Dragon meant.

But as it watched Lu Wu’s interactions, the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword felt somewhat envious, yet too proud to join in. Instead, its blade flickered with light.

(They’re all my servants. As if I would care to play with them…)

Before Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword could finish its thought, Han, who was being beaten up, suddenly remembered their recent ally. He rushed over, dragging the sword to Little Skeleton, and introduced it.

(Little Skeleton, Little Skeleton, this is the new little brother Lu Wu brought in, it’s called Little Tian, and it’s really strong. It hurts a lot when hit!)

Being suddenly dragged into the fray, the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword was a bit stunned and pleasantly surprised, but it still put on a very cool demeanor.

(I’m not called Little Tian, my name is Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword, the King of Divine Artifacts. Moreover, I’m not Lu Wu’s little brother, I’m Lu Wu’s master as well as your master. You should call me Lord Great Sky, understand?)

Ah, with just one sentence, Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword successfully annoyed Little Skeleton.

Just when Lu Wu, intending to stop their interaction and make Little Skeleton focus on real work, saw that Little Skeleton was upset, he immediately stopped.

Lu Wu thought that next, Little Skeleton would certainly rebuke Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword to defend him.

He loved this kind of drama the most.

After all, who wouldn’t want their own pets to be loyal to them?

And as Lu Wu expected, the following scene unfolded just as he thought—Little Skeleton exploded on the spot.

(Shut up! I, Little Skeleton, am Lu Wu’s master!

You… )

Slap!

Lu Wu smacked his forehead without hesitation, rushed in, and started beating up Little Skeleton.

It didn’t matter if the little guy was afraid of pain; it was more important to discipline him first.

He had raised Little Skeleton like a son, and this creature actually wanted to become his master.

After beating up Little Skeleton, Lu Wu didn’t give them any more time to cause trouble. He pulled Little Skeleton over to start proper work.

After all, the 47th Angel Envoy and the Evilized Skeleton King were dead, and there was still the Undead Army left to deal with.

Lu Wu needed to hurry up and sort out the Undead Army.

They were currently subdued due to the backlash from their king’s death, and temporarily pacified by Little Skeleton’s subordinates. If he didn’t take care of them now, it would become a lot more troublesome once they started rioting.

“I remember that after your evolution, the number of followers you can collect increased significantly, right?”

Even though the spots available in Little Skeleton’s phone were still only 30, Little Skeleton could collect more than 30 followers.

“Go ahead and take all of these!”

(Not that one, that one, or that one. Little Skeleton doesn’t want those!)

Little Skeleton looked around, particularly rejecting the undead that were tainted by evil.

Lu Wu could wash and repair dirty things and still use them, but dirty followers were unacceptable.

In this regard, Lu Wu wasn’t too hard on Little Skeleton.

If you don’t want the tainted ones, don’t take them. Let’s just collect the untainted ones first.

With Lu Wu’s help, Little Skeleton successfully collected all the untainted undead, amassing over a hundred new subordinates, all at the Lord Level.

With this group of followers, not only did Little Skeleton’s combat power surge.

But Little Skeleton’s state also underwent a change.

Lu Wu noticed that Little Skeleton had collected the last minion, and his Pupil Fire flickered unusually.

Not only him, but Indeks, the Loli Dragon, was also flickering with Pupil Fire.

Upon checking Little Skeleton’s attribute panel, Lu Wu realized that this little guy and Indeks were about to advance.

Lu Wu narrowed his eyes and immediately released the Contract suppression between himself and Little Skeleton.

It was almost at the instant that the Contract with Little Skeleton was restored,

Little Skeleton and Indeks began their breakthrough, a surge of power flowed through the Contract into Lu Wu’s body, along with a stream of information.

This was Skill feedback.

Of course, with Lu Wu’s current power, this feedback was not something he highly valued.

Rather than focusing on what Little Skeleton was feeding back to him, Lu Wu was more concerned about whether he could send some of the things he knew over to Little Skeleton.

After all, many of the things Lu Wu had mastered were quite impressive.

Especially the Skills he acquired from the Skeleton King, which were extremely practical for Little Skeleton.

If he could pass them on to Little Skeleton, it would greatly enhance its power.

And just as Lu Wu had this thought, he felt a rush of energy being released in his mind.

Then, another wave of information poured in.

At the same time, on Lu Wu’s attribute panel, the Talent “Inheritance,” which had perpetually shown “Awakening,” was finally completely activated at this moment.

“Is this how the Talent is supposed to be used?” Lu Wu was dumbfounded as he read the description of “Inheritance.”

Simply put, “Inheritance” is the ability to pass on what one has mastered to a target individual through the power of “Inheritance.”

This Inheritance could be energy, information, or even mental realm.

As soon as Lu Wu read the introduction to this Talent, how could he resist?

Without a second thought, he got to work.

Taking advantage of Little Skeleton’s Evolution, Lu Wu started transferring all the things he had mastered to Little Skeleton.

The Skills “Soldier Enhancement,” “Undead Magic,” “Undead Army Might,” “Group Undead Suppression,” a bit of “King’s Will” that Lu Wu had replicated, and even an Ultimate Move Level “Five Thunders Bombarding,”

Besides giving them to Little Skeleton, Lu Wu also gave a bit to Indeks.

This was because of their previous connection established by Lu Wu.

Now Little Skeleton and Indeks were considered one entity.

As Little Skeleton advanced, so could Indeks, meaning if Little Skeleton accepted the Inheritance, so could Indeks.

Lu Wu passed on the Ultimate Moves “Blast Fire Break” and “Fire God Slash” among other Skills he acquired from Angel Envoy 71 to Indeks.

After that, Lu Wu still felt unsatisfied and set his sights on “Divine Wrath,” the strongest Skill he possessed at the time.

He activated Inheritance and flung “Divine Wrath” toward Little Skeleton and Indeks.

But that’s when a problem arose; only half-transferred, the connection of Inheritance between him and Little Skeleton abruptly broke.

Clearly, there were limits to this type of Inheritance.

One couldn’t accept Inheritance endlessly.

The Skills Lu Wu passed on had reached Little Skeleton’s limit, and after that barrage of actions, Lu Wu’s newly awakened Talent “Inheritance” turned grey once more.

The “Awakening” behind it had been replaced by the word “Cooling” in large letters.

It was uncertain when Lu Wu would be able to use this Skill again.

As for Little Skeleton, their Evolution was nearly complete.

But Lu Wu’s actions greatly slowed down their progress.

Moreover, the energy required for the Evolution had dramatically increased, and it was evident their bodies didn’t have enough energy. As a result, Lu Wu saw Little Skeleton and Indeks flickering, and their Evolution seemed on the verge of failure.

This gave Lu Wu quite a fright.

“Will this advancement mess things up for Little Skeleton and the others?”

As he was frantically trying to replenish Little Skeleton’s energy and nutrients, a force dispersed.

Then an invisible network formed.

The minions under Little Skeleton’s command started to transfer energy to Little Skeleton through the contract nodes.

The energy from over two hundred minions was infused into Little Skeleton and Indeks, the two summoned beasts, providing them with ample energy for their advancement and restoring the brightness of the light enveloping them.

After about thirty minutes, with a ‘click,’ two auras and two domains spread out. The two little guys had completed their advancement.

Lu Wu finally let out a sigh of relief and hurriedly opened the attribute panel for these two minions to check.

…

Name: Bone Dragon Knight’s Skeleton King

Power: 1 Star (King-level)

Quality: Ordinary (Legend) (Enhanced)

Attributes: Undead, Netherworld Fire, Thunder, Dragon Bone, Light (Gray)

State: Proud (Little Skeleton got stronger again, Little Skeleton is now so strong, Little Skeleton wants to go back and fight Tuantuan!!!)

Weakness: None (The original weakness from the Light Attribute seems to have disappeared)

Companion Equipment: Mysterious Bone Staff (Legend) (Has three forms: Bone Staff, Long Spear, and Warhammer)

Dragon Bone Armor (Gold), Bone Crown (Gold), Little Skeleton’s phone (Legend)

New Ultimate Skills: Skeleton Army (Unmastered), Five Thunder Dragon Bone Spear (Master)

New Secret Skills: King’s Will (Unawakened)

Talent: King of Skeletons (Passive) (Subjugating skeleton-type Undead can enhance one’s own and the army’s power)

(Active) Once activated, it can comprehensively enhance one’s own and the army’s power

Bone Dragon Bond (Talent of Bond) (Passive) (When fighting alongside Indeks, Dragon Bone Power is automatically activated, significantly enhancing attack power)

(Active) (Once activated, significantly enhances one’s own and the Bone Dragon’s power)

Domain: King’s Domain (Mastery 21%)

Description: Although it likes to play with its phone, enjoys playing BGM during fights, and likes to sneakily cover you with a blanket, and often gets beaten up by Tuantuan, it is indeed a King.

…

Name: Bone Dragon Possessing Fire God Power

Power: 1 Star (King-level)

Quality: Legend (Enhanced)

Attributes: Undead, Dragon, Fire

State: Happy (Although Lu Wu is annoying and a creep, he’s still quite capable in certain aspects)

Weakness: Light (Extremely slight)

New Secret Skills: Bone Dragon’s Fire God Roar (Entry-Level) (A terrifying new skill born from the fusion of its [Bone Dragon Roar], [Blast Fire Break], and [Fire God Slash].

If you get hit by it, you’ll understand what it’s like to have a volcano erupt on you)

New Talent: Skeleton Bond (The Bone Dragon’s version of Indeks bond, attributes are basically the same, but more inclined to enhance defense)

Mastered Domain: Its domain is merged with Little Skeleton’s domain and does not have one of its own, but it doesn’t need a domain. For it, roaring is everything.

Description: Warning, being a creep is dangerous. Don’t try to invite her out to watch goldfish because you wouldn’t want her to breathe fire on you.

…

Lu Wu’s face darkened as he looked at Indeks’s attributes.

“Damn system, who the heck says I’m a creep? If you don’t clear this up for me today, I’ll uninstall your broken system, believe it or not!”

# Chapter 382: 379 72 Angel Envoy

Chapter 382: 379 72 Angel Envoy

“This 47 is really a good guy!”

Lu Wu sized up the item in his hand and couldn’t help singing praises about Apostle 47.

Indeed, not only did he summon Little Skeleton and the others, but by sacrificing his own tiny life, he provided Lu Wu with the ticket to enter “Zero” and gave Little Skeleton his Undead Army, helping Little Skeleton and Indeks make the breakthrough to King-level.

And now this Gate of the Undead in Lu Wu’s hands.

When Apostle 47 created this thing, he spent over a decade and an immeasurable amount of effort and energy.

Lu Wu took a look.

Although it was of Legendary Quality, it was at least a top-grade existence among items of Legendary Quality.

Its function might be singular, but you can’t beat its great performance.

This thing could establish a transmission connection by setting a predetermined target and coordinates.

Previously, Apostle 47’s designated target was none other than the Evilized Undead King that Lu Wu had taken down.

As for the coordinates, Lu Wu wasn’t clear on them at the moment.

However, as Little Skeleton had mentioned, it should be an Undead Secret Realm.

“Such an item is pretty awesome. With this, I can carry an Undead Army with me just like Apostle 47.

I wonder if the Zero Organization holds any person of the year awards; if so, I’ll have to give him my vote no matter what.”

As Lu Wu spoke, he started fiddling with the item.

Being a Summon Beast Cultivator himself, he had substantial skill in both Summoned Beast Cultivation and equipment forging.

Once the item was in his hands, it quickly altered to match his form.

“There we go, it should be usable now. Here, Little Skeleton, you take this.”

Lu Wu handed Little Skeleton a bone he had removed from the Evilized Skeleton King and then activated the Gate of the Undead smoothly.

A black gate appeared before Lu Wu’s eyes.

Curiously, he peeked inside.

He found an ancient, ruined camp on the other side.

Lu Wu was about to explore the world behind the gate when he slightly raised an eyebrow, sensing something was amiss.

“They’re here quickly, Little Skeleton, you go in first.”

(No!)

Little Skeleton was throwing a little tantrum.

It had just found Lu Wu after so much trouble, and now it was being asked to leave?

That was absolutely not happening!

Lu Wu frowned, “Stop fussing, get in, I’ve got something to deal with. I’ll find you afterwards!”

Little Skeleton looked at Lu Wu with resentful eyes, and after making sure that Lu Wu really wanted it to go, it reluctantly left.

It didn’t forget to remind Lu Wu before leaving.

(Don’t forget to look for Little Skeleton, okay? Otherwise, Little Skeleton won’t bother with bad Lu Wu in the future!)

“Off you go, I won’t forget.”

Under Lu Wu’s coaxing and deceiving, Little Skeleton led the Undead Army into the Gate of the Undead.

“What’s it to you? Stand right there!”

Lu Wu grabbed Han, who was getting ready to follow Little Skeleton, promptly closed the King Spirit Gate, and then withdrew the evil-infused domain while looking outside.

That one glance almost gave someone outside a heart attack.

When the individual saw the domain retracted and the person inside wasn’t Apostle 47, he instinctively turned and bolted.

But before he got far, a hand landed on his shoulder.

“Why run?”

Lu Wu casually waved and threw the fellow to the ground, pinning him down with his foot.

Looking at the 72 on the cape of the man beneath him, the corner of his mouth lifted.

“The 72nd Apostle?”

“Yes!”

The 72nd Apostle, hard-headed, touched his head thinking. Lu Wu shook his head as he watched the timid display.

He couldn’t quite understand it, the disparity among the Apostles was so huge.

The 71st, with King Level 1 Star power, was sly and vicious.

And this 72nd Apostle only had Lord 3 Star power, and was so cowardly, Lu Wu couldn’t fathom how he became an Apostle.

But this wasn’t what Lu Wu was most concerned about.

“What are you here for? To avenge the 47th or to help?”

“I… I…”

The 72nd Apostle stuttered for quite some time without spitting anything out. Surely he couldn’t admit that he came along with the 47th Apostle, got sent away while the 47th was doing his business, and now he had sensed strong evil energy fluctuations here and waited until the battle was over before he mustered the courage to come over and check, right?

Under Lu Wu’s gaze, the timid Apostle nearly broke into tears.

“Alright, alright, no more stalling.”

Lu Wu stepped forward and let the guy go. There was no need to kill such a coward.

Besides, killing him would change things.

Lu Wu could argue that killing the 47th Apostle was an accidental death during a challenge, but killing this 72nd Apostle would mean crossing the Zero Organization.

Then, instead of joining, Lu Wu would be the one being hunted.

This was a scenario he had read about in the files of the Ninth Apostle.

So, he didn’t give this coward a hard time.

“Doesn’t your organization have a challenge mechanism? Whoever defeats an Apostle of a certain level can directly inherit everything they had. Now that I’ve dealt with the 47th, does that mean I can take his place as the 47th Apostle?”

Although he had somewhat expected the fate of the 47th Apostle upon seeing Lu Wu, hearing of the 47th Apostle’s death still made the 72nd Apostle’s heart thump violently. Meanwhile, he nodded like mad, afraid that if he was too slow, Lu Wu might smack his head off in retaliation.

He thought for a moment, then added,

“But you still have to meet with the Eighth Angel and get his approval!”

Hearing the mention of the Eighth Angel, Lu Wu’s brows twitched involuntarily. His face remained expressionless, but in that instant, the 72nd Apostle felt a chill run down his spine, almost as if he were about to meet his own demise.

However, the feeling was fleeting, and Lu Wu quickly composed himself.

“Well, what are you waiting for? Let’s go already!”

“Yes, yes, yes!”

The timid 72nd Apostle wiped the sweat from his forehead, got up, and led the way for Lu Wu.

Under the guidance of the 72nd Apostle, after more than five hours and traversing several hundred kilometers, Lu Wu came to a halt at a deserted mountain in District 11.

Just as Lu Wu was frowning at the desolate mountain before him, the 72nd Apostle took out a black token.

Energy flowed, and the black token was activated.

At the same moment, a black gateway appeared out of thin air, and its attributes were displayed to Lu Wu.

Name: Artificial Secret Realm Gate

Grade: Legendary

Description: The Artificial Secret Realm Gate of the Zero Organization, access to the headquarters of Zero Organization located in District 11.

“There’s something to it! Using a secret realm as the headquarters, pretty slick!”

Lu Wu sighed in appreciation, noting that District 11 seemed much wealthier than the previous District 12 just by this gate alone.

“Please!”

The 72nd Apostle opened the gate respectfully for Lu Wu.

Lu Wu didn’t hesitate to walk through, but just as he stepped through the gate, his footsteps paused suddenly. Because he saw someone there who shouldn’t have been…

# Chapter 383: 380 Blood Princes

Chapter 383: 380 Blood Princes

Lu Wu stepped into the Secret Realm headquarters of District 11 at that moment.

What he saw was a woman dressed in a black dress and holding a black umbrella, her whole being radiating a captivating charm.

It must be said that she was an extremely beautiful and seductive woman.

However, when Lu Wu saw her, he felt a chill run down his spine.

Because the woman before him was none other than the Ninth Apostle, who was supposedly slain by him in District 12.

Lu Wu hadn’t expected this woman to be alive.

What surprised him even more was that he would encounter her here.

Moreover, by the look of things, she was clearly waiting for him.

This meant that his plan to infiltrate the “Zero” organization was likely to fall apart.

Feeling his scalp tingle, Lu Wu immediately prepared to flee.

There was no helping it; now that he had been exposed, if he didn’t run, he might very well lose his life.

“It seems,” Lu Wu sighed softly as he prepared to run away, “I’ll have to devise a long-term plan to infiltrate the ‘Zero’ organization.”

Yet, since she was already waiting for him here, it was probably too late to run now.

She surely wouldn’t be unprepared.

And indeed, just as Lu Wu was preparing to flee, a figure appeared out of nowhere behind him, blocking his path.

Hmm, what appeared this time was not a human, but a Summoned Beast.

It was an evilized version, a Summoned Beast shrouded with evil and noble aura.

…

Name: Blood Prince (Evilized)

Power: 3 stars (King-level Peak)

Quality: Legend (Upgraded)

Attributes: Blood, Evilized

State: Brutality (I smell the sweetest scent of blood)

Weakness: Light (Strong)

Skill Talents: Brief

Description: One of the Eighth Apostle’s Summoned Beasts, its formidable power allows it to maintain a degree of sanity even when evilized; be careful, it seems to have set its sights on you.

…

“Damn system, can you stop talking nonsense!”

Upon seeing this Summoned Beast, Lu Wu knew that escaping today wasn’t going to be easy.

As expected, while the Blood Prince blocked Lu Wu’s escape route, another figure materialized beside the Ninth Apostle.

This person was dressed in a black robe with gold trim, the character for ‘eight’ embroidered in a bloody hue over the chest, and a smirk of mockery and coldness played upon his lips.

He scrutinized Lu Wu, now trapped within their encirclement.

Tauntingly, he said, “Should I call you a real estate agent, or should I call you Bright Lord?”

Without a doubt, Lu Wu’s identity had been exposed.

It must have been the Ninth Apostle who revealed his identity.

And the one before him was undoubtedly the chief person in charge of District 11, the Eighth Apostle; Lu Wu’s attribute panel also provided confirmation.

…

Name: Eighth Apostle

Power: 3 stars (King-level)

Summoned Beasts: Evilized Vampire Prince (King-level 3 stars), Evilized Grasscutter Sword (King-level 3 stars)

Mastered Skills: Grass Cutter Swordsmanship (Ultimate Move) (Grandmaster)

Blood Ghost Technique (Ultimate Move) (Grandmaster)

Ghost God Slash (Secret Skill) (Master)

Summoner Talent: Undead (Unless physiological functions are 90% destroyed, he won’t easily die)

Summoner Domain: Ghost God Domain (99%)

Description: This is an existence infinitely close to Epic.

…

The opponent’s attributes made it very clear to Lu Wu the predicament he was in.

Without a doubt, it was exceedingly grim.

Facing the King-level Three Stars Vampire Prince, Lu Wu had little confidence in his ability to withstand a battle, let alone the two Angel Envoys ahead.

What gave Lu Wu an even bigger headache was the appearance of the Ninth Apostle, which left him no room for luck.

After all, he was the one who had almost killed her once; fooling her was clearly impossible.

In such a situation, it seemed Lu Wu had no choice but to fight to the death.

With this in mind, Lu Wu bit down hard and drew his Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword.

As Lu Wu drew his Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword, the smile on the face of the Eighth Angel became even more twisted.

Those eyes were filled with undisguised fervor.

“No more hiding, eh? Bright Lord!”

“There’s nothing left to hide, now that I’ve been discovered, I might as well get it over with!”

Just as Lu Wu had said, his reaction was straightforward and direct!

Opening the Senluo Wanxiang Domain, he turned and slashed with the Frost Ice Sword Style.

As the sword slashed, the extreme cold of Sword Intent erupted, and the icy blue Sword Qi covered Lu Wu’s body with frost that shot toward the Evilized Vampire Prince.

The Eighth Apostle’s eyes lit up at Lu Wu’s sudden burst of power.

“King 2 Stars’ power, Ultimate Move Level Skill, Grandmaster Level proficiency—interesting.

But that alone is not enough!”

The Eighth Apostle didn’t make a move; on the one hand, he wanted to watch a bit longer, and on the other hand, there was no need.

The Vampire Prince could handle this level of strength from Lu Wu.

Indeed, as Lu Wu thrust his sword, a blood mist burst forth around the Vampire Prince.

The sudden explosion of blood mist easily deflected the spreading cold ice, but it couldn’t stop the Sword Qi carrying the extreme cold of Sword Intent.

The icy blue Sword Qi instantly shattered the Vampire Prince’s blood mist, and the sword landed on the Vampire Prince.

As the blow struck, Lu Wu felt no surprise.

He knew too well that the sword wouldn’t defeat his opponent.

Almost at the same moment the intense cold Sword Qi hit the Vampire Prince, he transformed into Blood Bats, using only a few that were frozen to dodge Lu Wu’s sword.

The same blood bats then swooped toward Lu Wu.

Lu Wu swung his sword again in return.

The Sword Intent, a fusion of One Stick to Heaven and Zhen Tian Stick, spread forth, locking onto the approaching blood bats.

With one swing, all the blood bats were obliterated.

However, at the same moment the bats were destroyed, a figure appeared out of nowhere beside Lu Wu and struck with a claw, leaving a scratch on Lu Wu’s body.

And this was only the beginning.

The figure continuously flickered around Lu Wu, attacking relentlessly with claws.

Each strike aimed for Lu Wu’s weak points.

This was the first time Lu Wu faced such a foe—their speed was incredibly faster than his, and their attacks were vicious.

Facing this onslaught, Lu Wu had little ability to defend; he could only protect his vital points from being injured.

In just a few exchanges, Lu Wu’s body had already been covered in wounds.

“This won’t do; I can’t go on like this.”

Under such pressure, Lu Wu gritted his teeth and unleashed his trump card.

As Lu Wu made the movement for Divine Wrath, a unique Sword Intent spread, catching the Eighth Apostle’s interest.

“That’s it!

That’s definitely it!

This is the presence I sensed at the Cimu family, I must have this sword!”

Clearly, this was the real reason the Eighth Apostle had captured Old Man Sakuragi and Sakuragi Hanakazuki.

As the Eighth Apostle was absorbed in Lu Wu’s sword, a ‘puchi’ sound of a blade piercing flesh suddenly rang out.

The Eighth Apostle felt an intense pain that seemed to penetrate his skull.

At that moment, behind him, the Ninth Apostle withdrew their Longsword and swiftly sliced several times, cutting the Eighth Angel into several pieces.

This sudden turn of events shocked not only the Eighth Angel but also Lu Wu, who was getting thrashed by the Vampire Prince.

“What just happened?”

…

Subscribe, please

# Chapter 384: 381 Charming Queen

Chapter 384: 381 Charming Queen

The Ninth Apostle’s hand rose, and with a swift chop, the Eighth Apostle was slain.

Seeing the Eighth Apostle whom she had pierced and chopped into sections, she heaved a sigh of relief.

From the moment she learned of Lu Wu’s identity,

She had guessed that Lu Wu might very well come to seek revenge against the Eighth Apostle.

So after some simple healing, she made her way to District 11.

The purpose was to prevent Lu Wu from acting rashly.

As it turned out, her worries were not unwarranted.

Lu Wu had directly forcefully obliterated the 47th Apostle, intending to infiltrate the “Zero” organization in District 11.

When the Ninth Apostle received this news, she became restless.

Lu Wu’s understanding of the “Zero” organization was too superficial.

It was indeed an organization with a challenge mechanism,

But just like her District 12, District 11 was also dominated by the word of the Eighth Apostle.

The 47th Apostle was the right-hand man that the Eighth Apostle had personally promoted; killing him meant the Eighth Apostle would not let Lu Wu off easily.

Moreover, the Ninth Apostle also knew

That once Lu Wu met the Eighth Apostle, his identity would very likely be exposed, and at that time, Lu Wu would find himself in an extremely dangerous situation.

So, she took the initiative and exposed Lu Wu’s identity first.

Then seizing this opportunity, she ambushed and killed the Eighth Apostle.

“Now that should be safe!”

The Ninth Apostle let out a long breath, and at that moment, Lu Wu from the opposite side shouted,

“Be careful!”

“What?” The Ninth Apostle was startled.

“He said, watch out!”

A deep voice echoed in the Ninth Apostle’s ears, followed by a “puchi” sound, as a blade pierced through the Ninth Apostle’s abdomen.

“How is this possible?”

The Ninth Apostle’s complexion changed drastically; she had not expected that someone who should be thoroughly dismembered could still be alive?

“It’s unexpected, huh, that you two are actually together. This really surprises me.

But this is a pleasant surprise. Since you struck first, no one can blame me for what I do to you next, can they?”

The Eighth Apostle sneered, about to twist the longsword in his hand when the head of the heart of the Ninth Apostle peeked out to lock eyes with him.

Just one look, and it froze the Eighth Apostle’s movements.

Seizing the chance, the Enchanting Demon Queen who emerged from the Ninth Apostle’s heart rescued her from the Eighth Apostle’s grasp.

“Take him, and let’s go!”

Though startled by the resurrection of the Eighth Apostle, the Ninth Apostle quickly regained her composure.

She commanded the Enchanting Demon Queen to go rescue Lu Wu who was on the other side.

The Enchanting Demon Queen cast another seductive glance, immobilizing the Vampire Prince.

Lu Wu seized the opportunity, glancing at the Summoned Beast Attribute before him with purple skin, delicate features, and a curvaceous figure.

…

Name: Enchanting Demon Queen

Power: 3 stars (King-level)

Quality: Legend (Upgraded)

Attribute: Demon

Weakness: Light (Slight)

State: Annoyed (This woman has done something silly again)

Skills: Charming Eye (Must Kill) (Grandmaster) (Can put targets into a charmed state

Ps: Once attacking a target in a charmed state, it will cause the target to quickly wake up)

Desire Blood Boiling (Ultimate Skill) (Master) (Whoever whoever feels passion)

Domain: Charming Domain (Mastery: 99%)

Talent: Charming Heart (passive) (significantly increase charming power)

(active) (can charm targets to fight for oneself.)

Description: It seems not to be corrupted.

Pss: LSP, stop looking, this one’s reproductively isolated.

…

Hmm, the system has really become cheekier lately.

And while Lu Wu was looking at the attributes of the Charming Queen,

the Ninth Angel had already arrived.

“Now’s our chance, let’s go!”

But just as the Ninth Angel was signaling Lu Wu to make a break for it, a mocking voice rang out.

“Go? Where to? I’ve been craving a piece of you for a long time, Ninth! Now that you’re here, you’re all staying!”

The Eighth Apostle had, at some point, broken free from the control of the Enchanting Demon Queen’s seductive gaze and appeared at the entrance of the Secret Realm, blocking Lu Wu’s way out with a sword at the ready.

Seeing this, the Ninth Apostle reacted quickly.

“I’ll hold him off, you run!”

With that, she didn’t give Lu Wu a chance to respond and immediately attacked fiercely.

Already severely injured by Lu Wu’s “Fire God Slash”, the Ninth Apostle and her Enchanting Demon Queen launched a powerful assault on the Eighth Apostle.

The Ninth Apostle unleashed a “Power of Earth”, violently throwing her sword.

At the same time, the Enchanting Demon Queen turned to look at the Vampire Prince.

The Talent Charming Heart erupted with full force.

The killing power of “Charming Heart” was still quite shocking, especially against an Angel Envoy like the Playful Prince, who had been corrupted and had weaker willpower than average King-level 3-star Summoned Beasts. It was an unrivaled weapon.

The Charming Queen just glanced, and the Vampire Prince’s eyes turned into the shape of hearts. Under the command of the Charming Queen, the Vampire Prince attacked the Eighth Apostle.

This sudden full-on assault caught the Eighth Apostle off guard.

Just as he had managed to intercept the Ninth Apostle’s violently thrown Longsword, the Vampire Prince had already arrived.

Under the control of the Enchanting Demon Queen, the Vampire Prince struck with vicious speed, instantly appearing before the Eighth Apostle and exploding the Eighth Apostle’s brotherhood with a swipe of his blood claw.

“Now’s our chance, run!”

Seizing this opportunity, the Ninth Apostle kicked the Eighth Apostle away and called for Lu Wu to escape quickly.

However, she didn’t see Lu Wu making a move.

This made the Ninth Apostle frantic.

Despite their current advantage, it could only last for a moment.

If Lu Wu didn’t seize the opportunity, escaping would be almost impossible. Wouldn’t the Ninth Apostle be in a hurry?

“Run already!”

As the Ninth Apostle screamed hysterically, Lu Wu still didn’t budge. Instead, the Eighth Apostle, who had been kicked away, had already recalled the charmed Vampire Prince and got back on his feet.

Mockingly, smirking, he walked step by step toward the Ninth Apostle.

“Darling doesn’t want to leave; why force her to go?”

As the Eighth Apostle approached,

his aura surged and his already King-level Peak power rose again, almost reaching the threshold of Epic Level.

Watching the erupting figure before her, the Ninth Apostle’s face was extremely ugly.

She knew clearly that the Eighth Apostle had unleashed the Vampire Prince’s power.

Now without the Vampire Prince, the fighting power of the Charming Queen significantly reduced as she lost her charm target. Combined with her own serious injuries, their situation was becoming perilous.

This infuriated the Ninth Apostle, who retreated next to Lu Wu.

“Why aren’t you running?”

At this moment, Lu Wu scoffed, “Why run? We’re not losing!”

As he spoke, the silly moan inside Lu Wu began, and his power soared to the standard of a King-level 3-star Water…

# Chapter 385: 382 Kusanagi Sword

Chapter 385: 382 Kusanagi Sword

Lu Wu was utterly unprepared for the sudden appearance of the Ninth Apostle.

Her sudden outburst of murder left Lu Wuyi utterly stunned.

But after the initial shock, Lu Wu quickly regained his senses and fully understood the reasoning behind her actions.

It was clearly because he had exposed his identity by taking Old Lu’s dark past.

All her actions were due to their family’s old scumbag.

Although Lu Wu couldn’t for the life of him understand what kind of charm that old man of his possessed to make the Ninth Apostle act this way, Lu Wu knew very well that, at this moment, he couldn’t just walk away.

If he were to leave like this, let alone whether he could explain himself to the old man, he wouldn’t be able to get over it himself.

And another point was, Lu Wu didn’t want to just run away.

If it was just an Eighth Angel, he felt he could handle it!

The same old mantra, just do it!

The Beast Soul erupted directly.

Lu Wu’s power soared to 3 stars, and although he was still a bit short of his opponent, it was not to the extent that he couldn’t fight at all.

“Die, you bastard!”

With a shout, Lu Wuyi didn’t hesitate to release his Evil Energy state.

Revealing his complete state.

The Universal Charger exploded, and Lu Wu’s body flickered with electricity, the flashing light dramatically increasing his speed and nearly catching up with the Vampire Prince before he instantly appeared in front of the Eighth Envoy, thrusting a sword toward the lower route.

This attack, nearly identical to the Vampire Prince’s, reminded the Eighth Apostle of the previous agony, and his eyes narrowed slightly.

“You don’t think the same attack will work on me, do you?”

As he spoke, he had already made a bold move, his speed clearly faster than before, his Kusanagi Sword easily blocking Lu Wu’s Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword, and with a backhand slap aimed at Lu Wu’s forehead.

On Lu Wu’s side, his other hand formed a sword, and he thrust a sword upwards.

The Ice Sword Intent erupted, a surge of Sword Qi stabbing directly at the Eighth Apostle’s palm.

But as Lu Wu’s Sword Intent erupted, he suddenly felt a terrifying force burst forth from the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword.

To be precise, it was the fearsome force of the Kusanagi Sword exerted upon the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword.

The immense power deflected Lu Wu’s figure, veered his Sword Qi, and he took a slap from the Eighth Apostle, sending him flying.

On the Eighth Apostle’s side.

He was clearly different from the 47th Apostle, with no intention of toying with his opponent.

Clearly aware of what it means to kick someone when they’re down.

After a successful strike, he quickly followed up.

A flash of blood with Evil Energy on his body, he surged in speed and pounced toward Lu Wu, raising his sword to slash at Lu Wu’s head.

This sword was incredibly fierce. Despite Lu Wu’s quick reaction, he only managed to erect the defensive posture of Ice Sword Intent before being struck.

The opponent shattered Lu Wu’s Ice Sword Intent with a single blow and smashed through Lu Wu’s open guard.

Another sword thrust aimed to pierce Lu Wu’s throat, but at that moment, the Enchanting Demon Queen gave a Charming Heart. Although it didn’t succeed in controlling the Eighth Apostle, it still successfully diffused the crisis for Lu Wu.

Lu Wu, saved by the Enchanting Demon Queen, focused his eyes on the Kusanagi Sword in the hands of the Eighth Apostle.

…

Name: Kusanagi Sword

Power: King Level 3 Star

Attribute: Divine Artifact, Evil Infusion

Quality: Epic (Enhanced) (Quality slightly reduced due to Evil Infusion)

Weakness: Strong Light

Core Skills: Divine Sword Power (Ultimate Skill) (Grandmaster) (A rare passive skill that can bless the owner’s attacks, allowing each of the owner’s attacks to include the power of the Divine Sword)

Ghost Slayer (Sealing)

Talent: (Sealing)

Description: Due to evil influence, a considerable number of powers have been sealed, but it remains terrifying.

Be careful, as the opponent might be holding the ability to temporarily unseal the seal.

…

In the few brief exchanges before, the sword had caused Lu Wu a lot of trouble.

During the clash with it, Lu Wu had to withstand two attacks: one from the Eighth Angel and one from the Kusanagi Sword, each more terrifying than the last.

It was as if Lu Wu was facing two King-level 3 stars at the same time, or even a more dreadful entity.

Such an attack was something that even the stronger Lu Wu could not withstand.

“This won’t do; I can’t confront him head-on.”

Just as Lu Wu decided to avoid the sharp edge, his family’s Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword became discontent.

(Lu Wu, keep fighting it!)

Lu Wu was taken aback, and at that moment, the Eighth Angel broke free from the “Charming Heart.”

“Charming Heart? Is that all? It feels less effective than if you simply took off your clothes.”

While scornfully commenting on the Enchanting Demon Queen’s talent, the Eighth Angel charged towards her.

Taking out the controller is common sense in team fights.

The erupting Eighth Angel was extremely terrifying.

He arrived in front of the Enchanting Demon Queen in an instant, and with a raised hand, the “Grasshopper Swordsmanship” unleashed a lethal move.

A sword intent that seemed to embody divine power to exterminate everything burst forth, and the Enchanting Demon Queen, with her lower combat strength, had her spirit captivated, further slowing her already slower reactions.

It seemed that the Enchanting Demon Queen was about to be slain with a single strike.

Just then, a flash of lightning, and Lu Wu appeared in front of the Enchanting Demon Queen, swinging his sword to block.

This action caused the corner of the Eighth Angel’s mouth to lift slightly.

“Block? My attack is twice as powerful as my own, what can you block with, being a forcefully leveled King Level 2 Star trying to act like a 3 Star?

Since you want to block, let her die under your sword!”

As he spoke, the aura of the Eighth Angel surged further.

With a sinister smile, his sword furiously descended, aiming to overpower Lu Wu’s and slay the Enchanting Demon Queen.

However, just as his sword came crashing down, the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword in Lu Wu’s hand lit up, and the force of the Eighth Angel’s sword was suddenly halved.

(See, it is I, Lord Great Sky, who am the most impressive, isn’t it?)

The Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword was quite pleased with itself for dealing with the situation, but Lu Wu had no time to respond.

Seizing the opportunity, he raised his sword and successfully parried the Eighth Angel’s strike.

Although he did manage to block it, the power of the strike still smashed Lu Wu into the Enchanting Demon Queen, knocking them both to the ground.

On the other side, the Eighth Angel, rather than being alarmed, was pleased by this scene, his gaze towards the sword in Lu Wu’s hand burning with intensity.

“This sword, I must have it!”

With it, the Kusanagi Sword could break free from its current state.

Then the power of the Eighth Angel could be further enhanced, breaking through directly to Epic, and perhaps he could even become the Sixth Messenger.

Thinking of that bright future, the Eighth Angel was full of motivation.

With the Kusanagi Sword in hand, he promptly unleashed a Big Move.

A presence like that of a Ghost God spread forth, with an overwhelmingly terrifying Sword Intent enveloping Lu Wu from below.

Encased in this Sword Intent, Lu Wu could not help but get goosebumps.

“There’s no escape; I have to withstand it!”

At that moment, he finally understood the feeling when the Ninth Apostle was locked in by his “Fire God Slash.”

With no other options, Lu Wu gritted his teeth and stomped his foot, and with a swing of his longsword in the next moment, the sky of the Secret Realm dimmed…

# Chapter 386: Jiao Long form 383

Chapter 386: Jiao Long form 383

District 11, within the Secret Realm of Organization Zero.

As the Eighth Angel and Lu Wu began to gather strength,

two terrifying Sword Intents spread out.

On one side was a Ghost God emerging as if from the Abyss,

while on the other, the darkening sky brimmed with clouds as if the end of the world was upon them.

“Ghost God Slash!”

“Divine Wrath!”

With one roaring cry after another,

the attacks from both sides exploded simultaneously.

The Eighth Angel wielded the Kusanagi Sword, and as he swung, a huge Ghost God apparition towering to the heavens emerged, wielding a giant sword wrapped in black aura, slashing toward Lu Wu.

Lu Wu swung his sword,

and the dark clouds above erupted in a blaze of thunder.

Endless thunder fell, and within this thunder, a sword light imbued with the Will of the Gods slashed out.

The two Sword Qi collided.

A sound sharp enough to pierce eardrums rang out,

and an unimaginable shockwave surged forth.

Under this force, even the Enchanting Demon Queen behind Lu Wu was pushed back.

Within a kilometer radius, the impact leveled everything into ruins.

The scene stunned everyone watching.

The mere aftershocks caused such terrifying destruction, the attacks of these two must have surpassed the limits of King-level.

“Who do you think will win?”

The Ninth Apostle, watching this clash of big moves, steadied the Enchanting Demon Queen who had been pushed back, and whispered the question.

The Enchanting Demon Queen did not respond, nor did she need to.

Because by now, the outcome of the confrontation between Lu Wu and the Eighth Angel was already apparent.

Amidst the endless thunder, the massive Ghost God apparition gradually faded.

Eventually, following Lu Wu’s sword light, it collapsed thunderously.

The sword light shattered the apparition and did not stop there; it continued towards the Eighth Angel and decapitated him with one stroke.

“We won!”

The Ninth Apostle saw this and was both shocked and elated.

However, Lu Wu couldn’t bring himself to smile.

On the surface, it looked like he had indeed won, his sword shattering the opponent’s attack, even decapitating the enemy’s head. But in reality, Lu Wu didn’t consider it a win at all.

The opponent had merely unleashed his own power in that strike, hardly invoking the power of the Vampire Prince.

While on Lu Wu’s side, it took the combined explosion of his own power, Han’s, and that of the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword.

Only the combination of the three had defeated the Eighth Angel.

The only battle result was the chopping off of the opponent’s head, which was hardly a victory.

After all, the opponent possessed the “Undead” Talent.

As expected, the decapitated Eighth Angel caught his own head, pressing it back onto his neck, while he looked at Lu Wu and his longsword with burning intensity.

“Very well, I have now set my sights on that sword!”

As he spoke, the Eighth Angel burst forth in an instant.

A flash of blood and he was immediately before Lu Wu, slashing his sword toward him.

At this moment, his speed erupted further.

His attack was extremely fast.

Lu Wu was caught off guard and, even though he dodged at the last moment, a cut opened up on his neck.

Lu Wu felt incredibly fortunate that he had used “Divine Wrath” instead of “Divine Judgment.”

If he had used the latter, not only would he have failed to kill his opponent, but he also would have been completely at their mercy. Of course, his current situation wasn’t much different from being at their mercy.

After a burst of energy, the Eighth Angel Envoy was neither red-faced nor breathless, moving even faster and striking with greater ferocity.

On the other hand, there was Lu Wu.

Though he had used “Divine Wrath,” which consumed relatively less energy, he was still somewhat affected.

With a decrease in combat power on one side and an increase on the other, Lu Wu was once again in the same predicament as when he was being bloodily tormented by the Vampire Prince.

In just a few exchanges, Lu Wu had already received more than a dozen cuts on his body.

That was still only because the Ninth Apostle and the Enchanting Demon Queen were restraining the enemy from behind. Otherwise, Lu Wu guessed he would have been chopped to pieces by now.

“This won’t do, I can’t keep going on like this!”

If this continued, Lu Wu felt he would be finished.

“Aunt Nine, can you buy me some time?

Not much, just one minute!”

It was Aunt Nine who called out these words.

That made the Ninth Apostle who had just been covering her belly with a pale face instantly flush with color, nodding her head without a second thought.

“Yes!”

(Yes, my ass, don’t you realize the state you’re in?)

The Enchanting Demon Queen nearby was infuriated by the foolish woman.

She wanted to stop her, but she couldn’t!

The moment the Eighth Angel heard Aunt Nine’s declaration, he got fired up, absorbed the Enchanting Demon Queen into his body, and without a second word, activated “Beast Soul Burst.”

The Ninth Apostle, now bursting with Beast Soul, surged in momentum and charged forward with her sword, blocking the Eighth Angel’s strike.

“Leave it to me!”

Lu Wu didn’t dawdle; seizing the opportunity, he retreated from the battlefield to prepare.

The Eighth Angel Envoy, meanwhile, watched the pale-faced Ninth Apostle forcefully charging toward him and sneered.

“You’re taking over? Can you even withstand this?”

He swung his sword backward; without Lu Wu’s “Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword” to suppress him, the Kusanagi Sword burst forth, unleashing a dual attack that made both the Ninth Apostle and the Enchanting Demon Queen within her cry out in pain.

Yet, she gritted her teeth and held on.

She had promised to hold off the enemy for a minute for Lu Wu, and she was determined to do so.

Biting back the pain, she pushed “Beast Soul Burst” even further.

The Enchanting Demon Queen was crying out in pain, and the aura around her soared, nearly reaching epic levels.

The Eighth Angel Envoy narrowed his eyes at this sight.

“Have you gone mad, woman?

Do you realize you’re going to die this way?”

The Ninth Apostle paid him no heed. She could not spare the energy to respond.

The pain from her wounds and the torment of “Beast Soul Burst” left her unwilling to speak. Her only focus was to hold him off for one minute.

Lu Wu took this chance to back away and sprint out of the Secret Realm.

The face of the Eighth Angel Envoy changed dramatically at this sight. He was determined to capture Lu Wu and absolutely could not let him escape.

Seeing Lu Wu break free from the Secret Realm, he was ready to explode with energy and pursue him. However, the Ninth Apostle blocked his way at that moment.

This completely infuriated the Eighth Angel Envoy.

“Are you an idiot? Can’t you see he’s using you?”

“What one minute? He never intended to come back, don’t you realize you’ve been betrayed?”

“If you don’t move aside, you’re going to die!”

The Eighth Angel Envoy ranted, but the Ninth Apostle wouldn’t budge.

This thoroughly enraged the Eighth Angel Envoy.

“Since you’re so stubborn, then go to hell!”

During the conversation, the Eighth Apostle erupted once again.

The Ghost God Slash was unleashed again, but this time, it wasn’t just his own effort.

He channeled his own power in unison with that of the Vampire Prince, along with the power of the Kusanagi Sword.

The might of this sword strike was even more terrifying than the previous one.

Like the consciousness of a malevolent spirit, it locked onto the Ninth Apostle, giving her the illusion that it was just like when she faced the Fire God Slash.

Although this slash was far inferior to the Ghost God Slash, the Ninth Apostle had already reached the point of exhaustion.

Facing this descending strike, the Ninth Apostle had nothing left to resist with.

“Am I going to die?”

At the brink of life and death, the Ninth Apostle’s expression remained calm.

At this moment, she wasn’t thinking about whether she had been betrayed by Lu Wu.

She didn’t even have Lu Wu in her sights.

In the final moment of her life, all that filled her mind was the image of that scumbag turning to leave, the back that went from hesitant to resolutely determined.

“Will he ever know what I did for him? Will he remember me?”

…

…

“Ah, who knows, the Enchanting Demon was right, I really am a foolish woman.”

Mumbling to herself, the Ninth Apostle gave up resisting and prepared to calmly face her death.

But at that moment,

“Roar!”

A heaven-shaking dragon’s roar reverberated.

An unimaginable dragon breath blasted from the entrance of the Secret Realm, smashing against the Eighth Apostle’s Ghost God Slash.

This breath of dragon destroyed much of the Ghost God Slash and then a golden Jiao Long darted in, slapping its tail out.

It had fused the essence of “Slap Lu Wu.”

Carrying the might of “Dragon Transformation,” along with the Epic Level heart provided by Ibaraki Gangyan’s goodwill.

The might of this tail slap was truly terrifying.

A single tail slap shattered the Ghost God Slash on the spot and left the Eighth Apostle bewildered.

The upright and open exit, but a Jiao Long entered? What situation was this?

As he stood bewildered, Lu Wu launched his most ferocious attack immediately.

Speaking of which, this was the first time Lu Wu fought someone using Jiao Long’s Body.

Last time, he had used it to flee for his life.

So, Lu Wu didn’t have a thorough understanding of the power of his Jiao Long State.

Only in this eruption did he realize how incredibly strong he was in this state, even beyond his own belief.

Although he lacked Big Moves, both his speed and defense were extremely terrifying. Along with an enhanced “Slap Lu Wu,” from the moment he entered, the rhythm of the battle was completely under his control.

The Eighth Apostle was slapped around by Lu Wu like a ball several times.

And under Lu Wu’s fierce slapping, the Eighth Apostle gradually steadied his position and slowly figured out what was going on.

“Ding!”

In a light clink, the Eighth Apostle blocked Lu Wu’s tail with his sword, lifting his head and fixing his eyes firmly on Lu Wu.

“I was wondering from the start why I couldn’t discover your origin, no matter how much I investigated.

I thought perhaps the Sakuragi Family or the Cimu family had obscured your background early, and marveled at how efficiently they handled things. Now that you’ve revealed this form, I understand.

I’d been wondering why the Ninth went all out for you, why a genius capable of conquering the Divine Blade Tower suddenly appeared in District 11.

So it turns out the so-called Zhengdaguangming is actually the son of Lu Haikong, Lu Wu.

You faked your own death by transforming into a Jiao Long, didn’t you?”

At this point, a flicker of insight sparked in the Eighth Apostle’s eyes: “This ruse is not bad, but too bad it has been exposed.”

“If you dare to run away, I can guarantee that within three days the news of your feigned death will spread throughout the entire Alliance.”

At that moment, the other party’s shouting out Lu Wu’s identity was clearly out of fear that Lu Wu might escape.

Lu Wu didn’t care in the slightest.

“What’s that saying?

The best stealth is to kill all the witnesses.

By the same logic, as long as I kill you, my identity isn’t really exposed.”

During the conversation, Lu Wu let out a growl, further unleashing his fury and attacking the Eighth Angel Envoy with the ferocity of one intent on tearing him to shreds and swallowing him whole.

In the state of Jiao Long, Lu Wu’s combat power was extremely terrifying.

Despite the Eighth Angel Envoy recovering his strength, he was still beaten into a sorry state.

After a few rounds, several wounds had already been inflicted upon him.

Lu Wu began to control the rhythm of the fight, and it looked as if he was about to kill the Eighth Angel Envoy on the spot.

At that moment, the corner of the Eighth Angel Envoy’s mouth lifted, who was being suppressed in the fight.

“Enough!”

He suddenly seized an opportunity, further activating the burst from the Vampire Prince within him, simultaneously operating his energy to crush the sealing of the Kusanagi Sword.

At this point, the Eighth Angel Envoy went full throttle, pulling out all the stops.

And all of this was done under the radar.

He was sure that Lu Wu had absolutely no idea that his power had increased several times over.

He was just waiting for an opportunity, the moment Lu Wu charged at him to give him a chance to slash off Lu Wu’s dog’s head.

Closer, almost there, the opportunity was about to come.

The Eighth Angel Envoy, anticipating to strike as Lu Wu drew near, saw the charging Lu Wu suddenly halt, spin around, and sweep his tail, generating a massive wave that instantly surged towards the Eighth Angel Envoy.

The Eighth Angel Envoy took no heed, splitting the giant wave with a slash, but his expression changed at the next glance.

Lu Wu, who had just said he would kill him, was now biting the Ninth Apostle and turning to run towards the Secret Realm.

“Is this what you meant by killing me? By running away like this, have you considered the consequences it will bring upon you?”

“Who the hell would believe the word of a demon like you,” Lu Wu retorted without turning back.

The Eighth Angel Envoy’s expression darkened.

“What about the people from the Sakuragi Family? If you leave now, I’ll immediately slaughter them all.”

“Then kill them; they’re just a bunch of strangers to me anyway.”

Saying this, Lu Wu directly rushed out of the Secret Realm.

Completely unforeseen was Lu Wu’s reaction; the two trump cards meant to restrain Lu Wu had failed one after another.

The Eighth Angel Envoy had no other choice but to take up his sword and give chase.

In an instant, the Eighth Angel Envoy was right behind Lu Wu, rushing out of the Secret Realm.

But at the moment he emerged from the Secret Realm, he froze, for what he saw outside the Secret Realm was not a disheveled Lu Wu in flight, but a terrifying Undead Army.

“Surprise, aren’t you surprised?”

As the Eighth Angel Envoy stood dumbfounded, Lu Wu, who was hiding at the entrance of the Secret Realm waiting for him, lashed out with his tail, striking the Eighth Angel Envoy right into the midst of the Undead Army.

At the same time, Little Skeleton and the others who had been charging up for a long time finally erupted.

Before he came out, Little Skeleton had utilized all the Skill Talents he could.

“Skeleton Army,” “Undead Army,” “Soldier Enhancement,” “Skeleton King,” “King’s Will.”

Both its own and the Undead Army’s momentum built up to the peak, and the moment the Eighth Angel Envoy emerged, Little Skeleton exploded.

In an instant, unimaginable attacks struck the Eighth Angel Envoy.

The group skill “Undead Pressure” began.

The Secret Skill newly added by Indeks, “Bone Dragon’s Fire God Roar,” followed.

Behind, Lu Wu also opened his mouth to release one as well.

The horrifying attack instantly submerged the Eighth Angel Envoy…

# Chapter 387: 384 Warhammer Form

Chapter 387: 384 Warhammer Form

Actually, Lu Wu’s transformation hardly required any effort at all.

He had staged the previous act to have the Ninth Apostle help delay time, run outside the secret realm to transform, but his true aim was to release Little Skeleton and the rest.

Using the army of the Undead, he was to cook a pot large enough to stew the Eighth Apostle.

Then invite the lord into the pot!

The plan went quite smoothly.

The Eighth Apostle, anxious to take down Lu Wu, had never anticipated Lu Wu’s trick and had fallen into Lu Wu’s trap, becoming a turtle in a jar.

At that moment, three terrifying attacks descended, and the Eighth Apostle faced an unprecedented assault.

The first was the skill “Group Undead Pressure.”

Even though Little Skeleton’s power was one star less than the Evilized Skeleton King and his Undead Army was reduced by more than a third compared to the Skeleton King.

Little Skeleton also had its advantages. It possessed seventeen pairs of lower tier Bone Dragon Knights and a King Level 1 Star Bone Dragon.

Moreover, after advancing, Little Skeleton’s talent and power were much stronger than the Evilized King.

The “Group Undead Pressure” it unleashed was every bit as powerful as the previous onslaught by the Evilized Skeleton King, perhaps even more formidable.

And this wave of attack was only supplementary.

The truly deadly assaults were from Indeks and Lu Wu’s twin roars.

Both roars were of Ultimate Level, terrifyingly powerful.

Moreover, at that time the Eighth Apostle had unlocked the sealing of the Kusanagi Sword, but the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword was outside.

It fully unleashed the “King of Divine Artifacts” to reseal the Kusanagi Sword.

Without the power burst from the Kusanagi Sword, the Eighth Apostle was instantly dazed.

The terrifying Undead Pressure struck, the Eighth Apostle trembled under the blow, barely managing to put up a defense when Indeks’ roar came.

Mixed with flames and Death Energy Dragon Power, the roar pierced straight through the Eighth Apostle’s defenses and struck his chest.

“Ah!!”

An unimaginable agony made the Eighth Apostle involuntarily roar out.

His face became exceedingly fierce.

“Lu Wu, don’t think such a small trick can kill me. Wait and see, I will gradually shatter your bones, making you wish you could neither live nor die.

Ah…”

The Eighth Apostle couldn’t finish his threatening speech when Lu Wu’s roar came.

Together with Indeks’s roar, they pincered from front and back, this roar directly penetrating the chest of the Eighth Apostle.

Utterly drowning the Eighth Apostle in the assault.

The Eighth Apostle’s roar, his moan, was also submerged.

It seemed this formidable man was already reduced to ashes under this tide-like onslaught.

Watching this fiercely overpowering attack, even the Ninth Apostle, saved by Lu Wu, gasped in shock.

If she faced such an attack, she probably wouldn’t last a minute, right?

On Lu Wu’s side, they pounded the Eighth Apostle for a good fifteen minutes.

Only when the Eighth Apostle in the center was utterly silent and their energy on this side was almost spent did they stop their assault.

When all the attacks ceased.

The oppressive roar and dust dispersed.

The spot where the Eighth Apostle had just been now had nothing.

Seeing this, the Ninth Apostle sighed with relief.

“Finally dead…”

“Who said I’m dead?”

Just as the Ninth Apostle thought they had completely taken down the Eighth Apostle, a cold, low voice filled with boundless anger rang out.

Immediately after, from the ground where the Eighth Apostle was located, a severed hand clutching a sword emerged.

The one who had just spoken was this severed hand.

The extremely formidable Eighth Apostle, in the end, all that remained was only this one hand.

However, the Eighth Apostle, despite his tragic state, was unexpectedly arrogant.

“Is the fight finally over? Are you out of strength? Then, it’s my turn now, isn’t it?”

As the Ninth Apostle wondered how he could still be so arrogant in such a condition,

the severed hand lit up with a bloody red glow, and to the Ninth Apostle’s horror, the once maimed Eighth Apostle began to recover at a terrifying speed.

In less than ten seconds, the Eighth Apostle had completely recovered.

“Surprised? Shocked?”

The recovered Eighth Apostle looked at Lu Wu with a triumphant expression on his face.

“That was really dangerous just now, I even had to sacrifice most of my body to save one arm.

To be honest, it was very tough for me. If you had persisted in bombarding me for another hour or two, I might have actually died!

But unfortunately, you won’t get that chance anymore.

Now it’s my turn, have you thought about how you want to die?”

During the speech, the Eighth Apostle pointed the Kusanagi Sword at Lu Wu.

The corner of his mouth was filled with extreme disdain and murderous intent.

It must be said, this scene was indeed quite frustrating.

Even the battle-hardened Ninth Apostle felt like crumbling when he saw the current Eighth Apostle.

How do you fight such an opponent?

Strong and highly durable, an opponent who can’t be killed no matter how you attack is simply unbeatable.

This made the Ninth Apostle couldn’t help but suggest to Lu Wu,

“Lu Wu, maybe we should retreat for now.”

At that moment, however, Lu Wu just laughed, “Retreat? Why?”

Saying that, Lu Wu’s shape shifted as he reverted from his Jiao Long state to human form.

“Little Skeleton, give me your Bone Staff.”

(Oh!)

The obedient Little Skeleton handed over the Bone Staff to Lu Wu.

A pair of Pupil Fires fixed intently on Lu Wu.

(Indeed, the clean Lu Wu is the most beautiful Lu Wu, Little Skeleton likes Lu Wu the most.)

Lu Wu caught the Bone Staff in one hand, ignoring the adoring Little Skeleton, and boldly walked towards the excessively arrogant Eighth Apostle.

Surprisingly, the previously ferocious and arrogant Eighth Apostle, upon seeing Lu Wu approaching, had a pair of eyes flickering and a faint hint of panic appeared on his face.

As Lu Wu stepped forward, the Bone Staff in his hand underwent a transformation.

The Bone Staff shifted to its third form.

This evolution of the Bone Staff had already begun before Lu Wu and Little Skeleton separated.

Back then, the Bone Staff possessed two forms: the Silver Spear and the Bone Staff form.

And when Lu Wu reunited with Little Skeleton, the Bone Staff had acquired yet another form, that is the Warhammer Form.

And now, what Lu Wu was using was the Warhammer Form.

…

Item: Bone Staff (Warhammer Form)

Quality: Legend

Description: The Warhammer form is a transformation derived from the Light Energy absorbed by Little Skeleton during the University Alliance competition; it primarily uses Light Energy for attacks, which aren’t very powerful against enemies of other attributes, but are a veritable nightmare for Evil Summoners and those with Undead Attributes.

…

Little Skeleton had previously been able to resist the attacks from an Evilized Undead King bursting into King-level 3 stars strength because of this item.

And now, Lu Wu had brought out this form.

The Eighth Apostle, who had been merely bluffing, completely panicked.

He turned to run, but where could he go?

In this pot-like enclosure, he could only be cornered by Lu Wu.

“Unexpected, right?”

“Surprising, right?”

“Undead, right?”

“Let me think about how to die, right?”

Lu Wu, blocking the Eighth Apostle, swung his warhammer in a relentless barrage.

The Eighth Apostle, who had sustained a fierce onslaught for fifteen minutes and barely recovered, had no strength left to resist Lu Wu’s assault.

Every hammer strike from Lu Wu delivered a fatal, irreversible blow.

He was about to die!

If he didn’t do something now, he would truly die.

Fear of death enveloped the Eighth Apostle, triggering his intense desire to survive, making his brain frantically brainstorm various pleas for mercy.

“Don’t kill me. If you kill me, the Sakuragi family won’t survive either.”

“Kill me, and Lord Fourth Envoy will not let you go.”

“I have secrets about the Gate. Just let me live, and I’ll tell you everything!”

…

All pleas from the Eighth Apostle were in vain as Lu Wu’s hammer continued to pound down until only the apostle’s head remained.

One more strike and he would be dead.

At this critical moment, the Eighth Apostle shouted his final hope.

“Somebody is targeting Pang Duddu!”

At this last shout, Lu Wu’s warhammer trembled, but it did not stop and slammed down.

With a “plop,” the Eighth Apostle’s head was smashed to pieces.

A top-tier leader of the Zero Organization, controlling District 11, died just like that.

As for the last words of the Eighth Apostle, Lu Wu didn’t believe them at all.

After all, his Dudu was such an obedient and cute girl.

Silly and foolish—who would bully her for no reason?

Besides, did they really think Lu Haikong was dead?

Having already lost one Lu Wu, if they targeted Dudu, wouldn’t that be digging their own grave?

Thus, Lu Wu was utterly skeptical.

“He just said that to deceive me, right?”

Well then, since it concerned Dudu, Lu Wu was still a bit anxious.

After dealing with the Eighth Apostle, he immediately turned to ask the Ninth Apostle.

The Ninth Apostle furrowed his brows instantly, which made Lu Wu even more nervous: “Could someone really be foolish enough to target my Dudu?”

“It’s hard to say, especially since Pang Duddu has been very high-profile lately.”

“What has she done to warrant such attention?”

Lu Wu was even more baffled.

What could his Dudu possibly have done?

He quickly called Little Skeleton and asked about Dudu’s recent situation.

He was fine not asking, but once he did, Little Skeleton couldn’t hold back anymore.

Crying while hugging Lu Wu.

(Tuantuan’s Lu Wu has become so terrible, so mean to Little Skeleton and Little Flood Dragon, always making stinky Tuantuan hit us.

Can we stop being good with Tuantuan’s Lu Wu from now on?

We don’t need her anymore, she can’t even cook or do laundry, she’s useless!

In the future, Little Skeleton will cook and do laundry for Lu Wu!)

“What are you talking about?”

Lu Wu pushed Little Skeleton away and called Indeks to inquire about Dudu’s situation.

Indeks didn’t understand either.

Lu Wu could only know so much from this side; at most, he knew that Dudu seemed to have slimmed down and Tuantuan had gotten stronger.

Moreover, Dudu seemed like a completely different person.

Beyond that, it was beyond Indeks’ concern and comprehension.

In the end, Lu Wu could only focus his attention on the Ninth Apostle.

Then, Lu Wu got an unbelievable piece of news from the Ninth Apostle.

“You’re saying Dudu replaced me and became the student council president of Jiangnan University?”

“You’re saying Dudu integrated Jiangnan University and absorbed Dong University and Jiangbei University?”

“You’re saying Dudu is planning to create the Southern University Alliance, and once successful, she’ll completely become the queen of District 1 Jiangnan, even the whole southern region?”

“You’re not joking with me, are you?”

Lu Wu found it hard to imagine.

In just a few months, his Dudu, the silly, foolish girl he thought he could deceive into having pregnancies for him without even needing sweets, had become a decisive big shot who reigned supreme.

“It’s fake, it must be fake!”

Although Lu Wu said this, he also knew that the Ninth Apostle had no reason to lie to him.

This made Lu Wu quite uncomfortable.

When he was around, how had he not realized that Dudu was such an incredible person?

Was it because she hid her capabilities too well?

Or was it his presence that had hindered Dudu’s performance?

Unable to figure it out, Lu Wu was scratching his head in confusion.

“It seems I must make a trip back to District 1.”

Fake or real, he had to go back and see Dudu.

However, before heading back, Lu Wu still had some matters to attend to.

Now that the Eighth Angel had died, it was time for the enjoyable segment.

First, Lu Wu took the possessed Kusanagi Sword from the Eighth Angel.

It happened to be a feast for the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword, which was out of food.

Lu Wu cleaned up the evil energy from the Kusanagi Sword, then tossed it to the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword for it to handle.

Although this sword was of a higher level than the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword, because it had been eroded by evil energy for a long time and its master had been killed, it was left with little resistance, which the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword could do as it wished with.

Afterward, Lu Wu sent Little Skeleton and the others back to the Gate of the Undead, switched back to his Evil Cultivator state, and re-entered the secret realm headquarters of Sector 11.

Since the Eighth Apostle had died, Lu Wu naturally should also take over the Eighth Apostle’s property.

What surprised Lu Wu was.

When he re-entered the secret realm, the 72nd Apostle was still there.

He was guarding the entrance to the secret realm, shivering all over, but respectfully waiting.

When he spotted Lu Wu and the Ninth Apostle entering, though his face showed some surprise, he immediately bowed his head.

“Greetings to Lord Eighth Apostle.”

Look at this posture, this reaction.

The perfect representation of a tumbleweed, rolling wherever it should without dragging or delaying.

Lu Wu glanced at the 72nd Apostle in front of him, contemplating whether or not to kill this fellow, since he seemed to have discovered Lu Wu’s identity.

After hesitating for a moment, Lu Wu decided not to act yet.

Yet he casually threw a stream of energy into this one’s energy space.

With that energy, Lu Wu could kill him at any moment.

After dealing with that, Lu Wu patted the 72nd Apostle’s shoulder and said, “Let’s go, lead me to where the Sakuragi Family is being held.”

……

Handsome, charming readers.

Are you sure you won’t give your handsome counterpart, Nu Xiao, some votes?

# Chapter 388: 385 Dudu

Chapter 388: 385 Dudu

District 1, Jiangnan, Jiangnan University.

A woman wearing gold-rimmed glasses and a neat little suit sat at the head seat.

Below her were the recently integrated senior members from Jiangbei University and Dong University.

These bigwigs, usually so arrogant, now were all meek and dared not even breathe too heavily.

After all, the woman on the stage was the one who overwhelmed the entire southern part of the Alliance.

Was Jiang Yuexing of Jiangnan strong?

She governed Jiangnan Province and even the local high officials dared not breathe heavily in her presence.

Was Zhang Yuechu of Jiangbei formidable?

She had swept through all the universities in the Alliance.

She had become the most powerful in the entire Alliance, reputedly close to the Epic Level.

She couldn’t last three moves in front of this woman.

Even the Governor of Jiangbei, who had turned Jiangbei into her own territory, was polite in her presence.

The might of this woman was evident.

Some had even started to secretly call her Emperor Pang.

In the southern part of the Alliance, she was the uncrowned queen.

Even if someone from the Alliance headquarters were to come over, whether they could stand or had to kneel would depend on her mood.

Faced with such a presence, one can imagine the immense pressure.

Compared to others, Zhang Wentao and Zhao Kai Ming felt an additional sense of unreality.

Looking at the figure on the stage.

They couldn’t help but think again.

Was this really the naive girl who once stood behind Lu Wu, knew nothing, almost got tricked by Wu Mei into being sold?

When Lu Wu had died.

Zhang Wentao and the others thought Jiangnan University was finished.

Without Lu Wu, Jiangnan University could have no future.

What they didn’t expect, however, was.

Although Lu Wu was gone, Dudu had emerged.

She burst forth with King-level Power, strongly taking over Jiangnan University.

Under her leadership, Jiangnan University not only didn’t decline but actually became even more prosperous.

Now, it had even merged with Jiangbei University and Dong University, and she had launched a plan for a University Alliance.

Once this plan succeeded.

Not only would Jiangnan University leap to become the top university in District 1, but Dudu’s own status would also undergo an earth-shattering change.

By then, even the Education Bureau would be inferior to her.

Thinking about Dudu’s actions over the past few months, Zhang Wentao and the others felt like they were dreaming.

Dudu, on her part, ignored the emotions below and methodically arranged one task after another.

“The construction of the new school needs to be accelerated.

Also, the matters of the Alliance need to be implemented.

I’m giving you three months to complete the tasks I’ve assigned.

Do you understand?”

“Understood!”

“Good, meeting adjourned!”

After Dudu declared the meeting adjourned, she stood up and left.

Throughout the entire process, no one dared to move, and all bowed their heads respectfully to see Dudu off.

Only when Dudu had left the conference room did they dare to raise their heads.

On Dudu’s part.

After leaving the conference room, she returned to the Lu Wu Research Institute.

Nowadays, every corner of Jiangnan University was being renovated and expanded, but she allowed no one to touch even a flower or a blade of grass here.

She wanted everything in this research institute to remain the same when Lu Wu returned.

At the Lu Wu Research Institute.

Ever since Little Skeleton and Little Flood Dragon had run away from home, the place had become a lot quieter.

Without the two companions, Tuantuan could only eat till full, sleep, and then eat again, utterly bored.

Seeing Dudu return, Tuantuan was especially overjoyed and rushed to greet him.

Constantly trying to snuggle into Dudu’s arms, Dudu picked up Tuantuan and strode into Lu Wu’s cultivation room.

Inside this cultivation room, there was a huge mirror.

Dudu stepped in front of the mirror. Instead of reflecting Dudu’s image, it showed the image of a small flood dragon.

It seemed trapped at the bottom of the sea, surrounded by huge pillars locked in chains.

Each pillar seemed to bear the shadow of a flood dragon.

At that moment, Little Flood Dragon was cowering in a corner, trembling.

Dudu, looking at Little Flood Dragon’s disappointing state, couldn’t help but frown, waved his hand to turn off the image of Little Flood Dragon, and then switched to Little Skeleton’s side.

Dudu was taken aback by all this.

For the mirror had gone dark.

Dudu frowned, picked up the phone, and made a call.

The other side quickly answered, “What’s up?”

“Your mirror, why did the image go dark?”

“It’s probably beyond the tracking range, or the tracking device was destroyed. Or the signal is unstable; try again later. By the way, how’s everything on your end?”

“So far so good, I should have it handled in no more than three months.”

“That’s great. Once you have control over the University Alliance, Power will naturally be able to return in full grace.”

The corner of the mouth on the other end curled up, but Dudu’s brow furrowed, “Things are okay for now, but you better not be using me, or I’ll snap your neck.”

With that, Dudu hung up the phone, turned, and stared blankly at the mirror.

His eyes were ice-cold.

“Elder Council, Zero Organization, and Lu Haikong, you just wait!”

He wouldn’t let anyone who bullied Lu Wu get away with it.

Even Lu Wu’s father was no exception.

To Dudu, if it weren’t for his incompetence, why would Lu Wu have been forced to flee so far from home?

…

In District 11, at the headquarters of the Eighth Apostle.

Lu Wu had made a decision that left him feeling down for a long time.

Led by No.72, he arrived at the place where the Sakuragi Family was imprisoned.

He had come merrily, hoping to rescue the people of the Sakuragi Family, only to find a scene of corpses upon arrival.

Out of the hundreds of members of the Sakuragi Family, less than thirty were still alive when Lu Wu arrived.

Among these thirty, neither Old Man Sakuragi nor Sakuragi Hanakazuki were present.

“They say Sakuragi Hanamichi died from severe injuries and old age during interrogation. As for Sakuragi Hanakazuki, it was because she refused to divulge your information and was tortured to death.”

Listening to the report from No.72, Lu Wu remained silent for a long time.

He couldn’t help but think of that girl who was as naive as Dudu.

He couldn’t help but feel somewhat self-blaming.

Perhaps, he should have never entered that girl’s life.

If he hadn’t appeared, that naïve and cheerful girl would still be living a carefree life.

Instead of, like now, having wilted in her prime, enduring such pain before death.

“By the way, this is something of Miss Sakuragi’s, it seems to be for you.”

No. 72 was particularly tactless at that moment.

Failing to see Lu Wu’s low spirits, he handed over a protective bracelet at that time.

When Lu Wu saw the protective bracelet embroidered with “Zheng Dajun, may your martial fortune flourish,” he couldn’t help but feel a twinge in his nose.

For the first time, he realized that he was indeed a scumbag.

His chest, too, felt blocked by that protective bracelet.

He didn’t know where to direct his anger.

The Eighth Angel? He was already dead, so who else could he blame?

It seemed he could only blame himself.

He remained silent for a long time before he finally lifted his head and patted No. 72 on the shoulder.

“Help me with two things. Gather all the personnel involved in the interrogations and let them thoroughly enjoy the same torment the Sakuragi Family endured until their death.

And another thing, help me annihilate the Rukawa Family.”

After issuing these two commands in a fit of displaced anger, Lu Wu fled from that dungeon.

He emerged from that dungeon.

Lu Wu’s mood was more dismal than ever.

At that moment, he even lost interest in scavenging the possessions of the Eighth Angel.

He found a place to quietly lick his wounds.

Only then did Lu Wu realize that some pains were truly more excruciating than being hacked a thousand times, and some affairs were indeed eternally regrettable.

The Ninth Apostle watched Lu Wu at that moment.

She was somewhat worried and wanted to offer him some comfort, but she opened her mouth and didn’t know what to say.

After all, strictly speaking, she wasn’t very familiar with Lu Wu.

She wasn’t certain she could console Lu Wu properly, so she ultimately chose not to disturb him.

During his time of low spirits and suffering, she went to clean up the aftermath.

With the death of the Eighth Apostle,

the Ninth Apostle became the most powerful presence here.

Even though she was severely injured, there was still no one in the Secret Realm of District 11 who could challenge her authority.

The Ninth Apostle herself was a domain ruler.

She had her own methods of management and operation.

She took over, and in no time at all, she had the headquarters, now without the Eighth Apostle, under control.

Her methods were quite straightforward.

Suppress the Eighth Apostle’s confidants, promote some previously marginal figures.

With the Ninth Apostle’s authority, as well as the achievement of having killed the Eighth Apostle, all of this was an effortless task.

It took less than a day for her to complete.

After settling everything, she returned to Lu Wu.

When she came back,

Lu Wu had already improved significantly.

At least, it seemed like Lu Wu had adjusted his mindset and temporarily put aside the matter of Sakuragi Hanakazuki.

There was also a smile on his face when he saw her.

However, the Ninth Apostle, looking at the bracelet on Lu Wu’s hand, knew that this hurdle was probably not so easily overcome.

But this was Lu Wu’s own issue, beyond anyone else’s help.

What the Ninth Apostle could do was to divert Lu Wu’s attention.

“Aunt Nine.”

“Here!”

The Ninth Apostle, approaching Lu Wu, handed him a package.

“What’s this?”

“Some secret information controlled by the Eighth Apostle, and some other items from his treasure trove that should be useful to you.

Also, the first file is about Pang Duddu.”

Upon hearing this, Lu Wu immediately straightened up and took out the file about Dudu.

Looking at this specific file, Lu Wu’s eyes narrowed.

This file was, in essence, a command.

The signatory of this command was the Fourth Envoy.

The content of the order was to mobilize elite members of the Zero Organization from District 11 to enter District 1, preparing for the upcoming action.

However, what the action specifically entails was not mentioned in the intelligence.

But the target and timing were specified.

The first goal was to disrupt the University Alliance action that Pang Duddu was planning to hold next.

The second goal was to capture Pang Duddu.

The time was set for three months later.

Looking at this piece of intelligence, Lu Wu fell into deep thought.

Without a doubt, Dudu had fallen into a huge vortex.

This matter couldn’t simply be the doing of the Zero Organization, as Lu Wu couldn’t fathom any reason why Zero would target Dudu.

Moreover, Lu Wu had seen in this piece of intelligence

that the Zero Organization in the past seemed to align with actions of others.

This implied that those wanting to target Dudu were likely someone else, and Zero Organization was merely a tool being used.

This made Lu Wu involuntarily recall the elder from the Elder Council that Feng Xiu had mentioned.

“Clearly, Dudu’s University Alliance must have affected someone else’s interests. They didn’t want to see the formation of a University Alliance, so this action was initiated.

Furthermore, there is another point.”

Lu Wu’s eyes narrowed sharply.

“The presence of Zhang Yunyi cannot be absent from the backdrop of this matter.”

Lu Wu deduced this because he had personally seen Zhang Yunyi and knew she was not as simple as she appeared.

Another reason was that he knew what his Dudu was like.

A silly one.

Without him, she couldn’t accomplish anything.

Now, suddenly being told that in just a few months, this girl had swallowed up Dong University and even Jiangbei University, and was planning to form a University Alliance.

Lu Wu could hardly believe that his Dudu could do something like this on her own.

So, Lu Wu naturally shifted his focus onto Zhang Yunyi.

Without a doubt, Zhang Yunyi must be the one driving all this.

Otherwise, Dudu couldn’t possibly have such power and means.

This enraged Lu Wu.

What had been his purpose in leaving District 1 to begin with?

Wasn’t it to settle the vortex and provide himself time to grow, so that Dudu wouldn’t face any dangers?

For this, he had agreed to Zhang Yunyi’s plan to fake her death and escape.

Now, however, she turned around and thrust Dudu into the spotlight, pushing her into the eyes of the storm. How could Lu Wu not be furious, not be filled with a killing intent?

“No, I must return as soon as possible.”

At this moment, Lu Wu was truly burning with anxiety.

He couldn’t even imagine.

Without him by her side, Dudu, now thrust into the limelight, must be feeling extremely nervous and helpless.

He now wished he could immediately return to District 1 to protect Dudu.

However, Lu Wu also knew.

Now was not the time for him to go back.

Although he currently possessed near-epic-level power, it was still not quite enough.

Going back now wouldn’t be very useful.

His appearance might even push the situation in a worse direction.

Another point was that the actions targeting Dudu were scheduled for three months later, so there wasn’t much point in rushing back now.

So, instead of rushing back now and being at a loss, it would be better to make use of these months.

“Right now, my energy level is actually not lacking much, the only thing restraining my progress is the mastery of my domain. As long as I can improve the mastery of my domain, my power can also be elevated.

With three months’ time, if used well, my power could at least reach a king-level 3 stars.

With some luck, I might be able to break through to the epic level.”

Only by reaching the epic level could Lu Wu initially possess the power to change the situation, and protect Dudu properly!

# Chapter 389: 386 three Epic items

Chapter 389: 386 three Epic items

The Ninth Apostle had included among the items given to Lu Wu.

Apart from the intelligence report on Dudu, there were other confidential reports and some items that might be useful to Lu Wu, plundered from the Eighth Apostle’s treasury.

After finishing reading the information on Dudu, Lu Wu casually read through the other related reports.

The perusal of these reports caused a slight furrow in Lu Wu’s brow.

Through the reports, Lu Wu discovered that the Eighth Apostle had someone supporting him from behind.

The Zero Organization’s backing was a tangled web of complex relationships.

Whether it was the Ninth or Eighth Apostle,

Their positions as bigwigs in District 1 were secured not just by their personal power but also by the organizational support behind them.

Take the Eighth Apostle, for example, behind him was a heavy hitter,

The very Fourth Apostle he had mentioned before, when begging Lu Wu for mercy.

By killing him, Lu Wu had touched the interests and challenged the authority of the Fourth Apostle.

Meaning, setting District 1’s matters aside, his own side was bound to encounter trouble soon.

This made Lu Wu’s brows furrow involuntarily.

At this moment, the Ninth Apostle casually mentioned, “The Fourth Apostle is Feng Xiu!”

Lu Wu was taken aback, then the corner of his mouth lifted, and he let out a sigh of relief.

“So it’s him, then there probably isn’t anything to worry about for the time being.”

After all, Feng Xiu had been struck by Moon Shadow’s sword and was in pretty bad shape.

At this time, his attention should be on recovering in two months.

Even if he received news of the Eighth Apostle’s death, he likely wouldn’t have time to deal with it.

He would have to wait until his injuries were sufficiently healed before he could take action.

“However, this seems to have given me another reason to kill him.”

Lu Wu’s eyes narrowed.

If Feng Xiu were to survive and recover, then start investigating the situation surrounding the Eighth Apostle, he would inevitably cause major trouble for Lu Wu.

This made Lu Wu even more determined to sabotage Feng Xiu’s healing process, to ensure he was fully put to rest.

“By the way,”

Lu Wu said, suddenly remembering something, and turned to look at the Ninth Apostle: “Aunt Nine, the Eighth Apostle has Feng Xiu behind him, but who backs you…”

“The leader!”

“Huh?”

The Ninth Apostle repeated, “My backer is the chief of the Zero Organization.”

This brief statement made Lu Wu involuntarily gasp, “The leader of the Zero Organization?”

But soon, Lu Wu felt something was off.

If the Ninth Apostle was backed by the leader, she should have a strong support, but why did he sense that the Eighth Apostle didn’t treat her with much respect?

The Ninth Apostle saw Lu Wu’s confusion and provided an explanation.

“Because the leader has been absent for a very long time.”

“???”

“Our organization’s leader hasn’t shown his face for over twenty years, and a large reason why the Zero Organization is what it is today is due to this.”

“Hasn’t shown his face for over twenty years?”

Lu Wu was dumbfounded.

A leader of an organization who hasn’t appeared for over twenty years still manages to retain his position

And his subordinates still control territory in District 1. Were the other districts just too weak, or was the leader’s influence extremely terrifying?

“This incident… it won’t cause trouble for Aunt Nine, right?”

“Not likely, as long as there’s no one who can prove the leader is dead, no one will dare to touch me.

Even if the Eighth had captured me before, Feng Xiu would have made him release me.”

Lu Wu found this hard to believe.

Could a person who possibly had been gone for over twenty years still wield such influence?

“You don’t understand the leader.

Or rather, many people nowadays don’t understand the leader.

Only the Five Ambassadors and those of us who are the leader’s direct subordinates know what kind of person the leader is.”

“Can you tell me about it?”

Lu Wu was interested in this legendary figure, the chief of the Zero Organization.

The Ninth Apostle didn’t seem opposed to discussing it.

She gave Lu Wu a brief introduction to the leader of the Zero Organization.

She said that he was a man from before the great catastrophe.

The original and mightiest Summoner.

Nearly a hundred years ago, he was already of Epic Level, and it is said that he might have even surpassed the epic realm.

A large part of humanity’s success in reclaiming dominance over Summoned Beasts was due to his efforts.

In the Ninth Apostle’s description, he seemed like a godlike figure.

Lu Wu held deep skepticism,

Feeling that the Ninth Apostle might have embellished the story, but he didn’t voice his doubts.

Instead, he took the opportunity to dig deeper into the background of the leader.

But the more he dug, the less he found; the Ninth Apostle knew not much more about the leader.

After listening for a while, Lu Wu ended up with only a few unsubstantial pieces of intelligence.

One was that the leader had been missing for over twenty years.

Another was that although missing, he still had a terrifying influence within the Zero Organization, but beyond that, not much else.

In effect, Lu Wu listened in vain.

…

“Although I listened in vain.

There are some gains after all, according to Aunt Nine, currently, by aligning with her, I am tagged under the leader’s lineage.

Plus, considering Feng Xiu’s current situation, the matter of taking down the Eighth Apostle shouldn’t raise any questions within the Zero Organization, except perhaps from those of the leader’s faction.”

This was good news for Lu Wu.

With his mood slightly relaxed, Lu Wu proceeded to examine the items the Ninth Apostle had passed on to him.

He had pretty much finished going through the intelligence information; what remained were the items from the Eighth Apostle’s treasury.

In this regard, the Ninth Apostle had almost brought Lu Wu every unbewitched item from the Eighth Apostle’s treasury.

It must be said, the Eighth Apostle had a rich foundation to begin with.

Among the items that ended up in Lu Wu’s hands were 37 of Legendary Quality.

Twelve of those were various fruits and potions.

And there were three Epic Level items.

But they were all materials.

Furthermore, they were all of a vigorous nature.

…

Item: Burning Heart

Quality: Epic

Description: Material extracted from the depths of the Fire Attribute Secret Realm, can be used to practice Fire Attribute Skills or enhance Fire Attribute Divine Artifacts.

…

Item: Thunder Juice

Quality: Epic

Description: Extract from the Thunder Abyss, can be taken orally, used in crafting.

PS: Before taking orally, please be sure to have a coffin ready.

…

Item: Bright Wings

Quality: Epic

Description: The core wings of an Epic Level Summoned Beast, possessing strong lethal power against Evil Cultivators and those with the Undead Attribute.

…

Lu Wu’s eyes turned red immediately when he looked at the attributes of these three items.

Initially, after being beaten and suffering so much at the Cimu family, he had only managed to get his hands on an Epic item.

But now, by killing just the Eighth Apostle, he somehow ended up with three such Epic items at once.

How could Lu Wu not be thrilled?

“Indeed, committing murder and arson nets a golden belt; when it comes to wealth, it must be these kinds of Evil Organizations.”

Lu Wu had already thought of how to use these three items the moment he saw their attributes.

First up was the “Burning Heart,” which could restore the Essence of “Flowing Blade Fire,” allowing the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword to absorb once again.

As for the “Thunder Juice” and “Bright Wings,” Lu Wu decided to give them to Little Skeleton.

To be precise, to Little Skeleton’s Bone Staff.

Its third form, the Warhammer Form, caused significant damage to Evil Cultivators and was very useful to Lu Wu; now that he had the chance, of course, he would strengthen it.

“In this case, for the coming period, my focus should be on powering up the ‘Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword’ and the ‘Bone Staff.’

Additionally, I’ve acquired a fair number of skills in my previous battles.

The 47th Apostle’s ‘Soldier Enhancement,’ ‘King’s Will,’ ‘Undead Pressure,’ and so on…

The Eighth Apostle’s ‘Ghost God Slash,’ ‘Grasshopper Swordsmanship’…

And skills like the Enchanting Demon Queen from Aunt Nine’s House’s ‘Charming Eye,’ ‘Desire Blood Boiling,’ and so on.

After integrating all these skills into ‘Lu Family Swordsmanship,’ the mastery of ‘All Things’ should be further enhanced, and with a bit of luck, maybe I could directly break through to King 3 Stars.”

Lu Wu was different from others.

His foundations were incredibly profound.

After all, someone kindhearted from the Cimu family had previously spent the majority of his life’s savings on him.

Just considering energy alone, Lu Wu was already at the standard of King-level Three Stars, and that was before the power in his heart had been fully digested.

If he included it, Lu Wu’s energy could be considered on the verge of the Epic standard.

And his combat power was first-tier, just below Epic.

With such profound foundations and a clear method to enhance his power, it would be much easier for Lu Wu to become stronger than others.

If he was successful, Lu Wu could more or less digest his current gains within a month.

By that time, his power would have further increased.

And by then, Feng Xiu’s operations would also be ready to commence.

At that point, Lu Wu would also be able to seize the opportunity to join in the fray.

Having determined what he had to do and could do next, Lu Wu then began to devote all his energy into these tasks.

Starting with the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword.

With Lu Wu’s help,

the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword successfully absorbed the energy of the Kusanagi Sword.

Leveraging the energy of the Kusanagi Sword, the power of the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword advanced further, just a step away from reaching King Level 2 Star.

And looking at the Kusanagi Sword, which had its energy absorbed by the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword,

the blade entered a dormant state after such absorption.

From here on, it would either take several decades or even a hundred years of slumber to recover its Essence, and as it originally took several decades to smooth over the mark of the Eighth Apostle and find a new master to regain its strength.

This is the difference between Divine Artifact Summoned Beasts and Ordinary Summoned Beasts.

Ordinary Summoned Beasts have only one master in their lifetime and do not switch, but Divine Artifacts are different; they go through several decades or even hundreds of years of sleep after their master’s death, during which they wear away their original master’s mark.

Then, they find a new master and continue to grow.

But regardless of how the Kusanagi Sword recovers its Essence, those decades of cycles lie ahead.

This thing basically had no fate with Lu Wu.

If nothing unexpected happened, Lu Wu would have no chance to reuse it.

But Flowing Blade Fire could be reused.

After absorbing the Kusanagi Sword, Lu Wu began to focus on restoring Flowing Blade Fire.

This kind of thing was not difficult for Lu Wu.

After all, he was a Genius Cultivator.

Although this identity had been offline for a while, his skills were still there.

Lu Wu, while digesting various skills, while planning Little Skeleton’s Bone Staff enhancement, while pondering the whim projects of recent times, and while messing with Flowing Blade Fire in such a multitasking state,

Only took a week to restore Flowing Blade Fire in the Cultivation Room in District 11.

The efficiency was terrifying.

“It has recovered. Not only has the old man recovered, but it is even stronger than before.

Now, the old man is the strongest Divine Artifact!”

Inside the Cultivation Room of the Zero Organization in District 11.

Flowing Blade Fire, having absorbed the Burning Heart and restored its essence, let out a voice that was aged yet full of sharpness.

A tide of an Epic Level aura surged forth.

At this moment, Flowing Blade Fire was like a Divine Sword reigning supreme over the world.

However, its prestige did not last long; with a gentle utterance of the word “explode” from Lu Wu, he directly stunned the poor Divine Sword.

This sword, that had slept for who knows how long,

Had barely woken up before suffering a grievous blow.

Then the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword, drooling at the side, pounced and began to crazily absorb it.

With this, Lu Wu had completed one project.

Leaving this Cultivation Room to the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword to absorb, Lu Wu then turned and went to another Cultivation Room to launch a charge on the second project.

Lu Wu, in his second week of taking down District 11,

Also landed his second project.

However, his second project was not Little Skeleton’s Bone Staff enhancement.

This project proved to be far more difficult than Lu Wu had anticipated.

And it was not just difficult but also severely lacking materials.

If he used only the current Thunder Juice and Bright Wings, it would cause Little Skeleton’s Bone Staff to collapse, so Lu Wu had to put Little Skeleton’s Bone Staff enhancement plan on hold for now.

And the second project he was researching was one specifically for Evil Cultivators.

This project was something that had come to him on a whim recently.

However, though it was a whim, should this project succeed, it would be of immense help to Lu Wu.

So Lu Wu, in the past week, had spent a great deal of effort, pausing all other ventures to focus solely on this project.

Diligence is rewarded, and Lu Wu finally succeeded in completing the project.

Now it was only missing clinical trials.

For the clinical trials, Lu Wu chose 72, this timid fellow.

“Sir, could you switch to someone else? I’m scared!”

Inside a research lab in District 11.

Apostle 72 sat on the bed, cowering, looking at Lu Wu with terror.

Lu Wu, holding an injection syringe, reassured as he approached 72: “Don’t worry, there’s nothing to fear, I’m just going to give you a shot.

After you sleep, once you wake up, everything will be fine.

You’ll feel like you are reborn from the brink of death.”

“But I’m still scared. Maybe we should just forget it…”

“Forget your head, come here for me!”

Seeing he couldn’t persuade him, Lu Wu resorted to force, grabbed hold of 72, treating him like a piglet, and violently jabbed the needle down…

# Chapter 390: 387 Fallen Holy Light

Chapter 390: 387 Fallen Holy Light

8th District, somewhere within a base roughly at the location of Ao State in Lu Wu’s previous life.

Feng Xiu woke up once again from his prolonged closed-door cultivation, his face pale as death.

“Damn Lu Haikong, damn Moon Shadow!”

Hmm.

Since the last time he was seriously injured and almost killed, these words had almost become Feng Xiu’s catchphrase.

After all, thanks to Moon Shadow.

One of his core Summoned Beasts, which he had nurtured for about twenty years, had died.

He himself had been severely injured in that battle and hadn’t fully recovered for over half a year.

At this moment, his body hair was entirely blue.

His face was pale, making him look eerie and weak.

This was because his body and Energy Space had been severely eroded by the ice.

“Someone!”

After going through the usual routine and cursing Lu Wu once, Feng Xiu began to call for attendants.

With a gentle call, someone appeared outside his secret chamber, waiting respectfully.

The person outside remained silent, but Feng Xiu knew he was there.

“How are all the preparations? Can the ritual be carried out on schedule?”

The person outside went straight to the point, “There’s a problem in the 11th District, the Angel Wings haven’t been delivered.”

Feng Xiu burst into a rage upon hearing this, “What went wrong again? What mischief is the Eighth up to now? Can he do it or not? If he can’t do it, he might as well die!”

The person outside briefly explained, “23 days ago, the Ninth Apostle led an attack on the 11th District. The Eighth Apostle was killed, and now the Ninth Apostle has taken over the 11th District. The Angel Wings are also in her hands.”

“What?”

Feng Xiu’s eyebrows rose, surprised that the Eighth actually died, then he exploded in anger, “Has the Ninth gone mad? Why is she messing with my people for no reason?

Does she really think I wouldn’t dare touch her?

I’m so angry I could flay her alive right now!”

Feng Xiu raged inside the room.

The person outside did not bow respectfully; there was no response or agreement.

After Feng Xiu vented his fury, he calmed down.

He fell into silence for several minutes before speaking, “Contact the Third Apostle for me, have him retrieve the Angel Wings.

It’s crucial for the ritual, there can be no failures.

As long as we get that item, he can name his conditions.

If he wants that item, I can give it to him!”

“Yes!”

After responding, the person outside disappeared.

Inside, Feng Xiu squinted his eyes, “I knew something would happen when the tiger falls flat, but I didn’t expect them to be the first to act.

Is the Third Apostle being so reckless an indication of something?”

Thinking about the possibility of someone emboldening the leader of his faction, Feng Xiu’s brows furrowed deeply. However, he decided to put that aside for now.

“Anyway, let’s focus on recovering myself first.

As for settling scores with the leader’s faction… we’ll see later. If that person returns, I’ll endure it; if not…”

Feng Xiu did not continue, but his expression said it all.

…

Meanwhile, in a small city within the 11th District.

A middle-aged man dressed in short-sleeved beach shorts, wearing flip-flops and holding a fishing rod, was strolling on the beach when his lips suddenly curled into a smile.

He reached out, and a black Skull mobile phone appeared in his hand.

“Hey, 13, what’s up?”

“Oh, this matter? I don’t know about it? No, no, no. I didn’t mean it. I have immense respect for Lord Feng Xiu, how could I make a move against Lord Feng Xiu’s people? This was entirely the Ninth’s personal action, she doesn’t represent our faction.”

“Such modesty, Master Feng Xiu, but since that’s the case, I’ll gladly take on the duty.”

“Rest assured, I will handle this matter and give Master Feng Xiu a proper explanation.”

…

After a short while, the uncle hung up the phone, a smug smile spreading across his lips.

“I knew it, this matter is an opportunity for me.”

The man in front of him is the Third Apostle of the Zero Organization.

He is also currently the leading figure among the leaders.

In fact, he knew what happened on the first day when the Ninth Apostle and Lu Wu wiped out the Eighth.

The leaders under his command continuously advised him to take down the Ninth Apostle as an explanation to Feng Xiu.

After all, their leader had not shown his face for over twenty years.

Although the power of the leader still existed, their faction within the Zero Organization was inevitably declining.

Without the leader’s support, facing those backed by envoys, they always ended up as the enemy’s target.

For the leaders, the Ninth Apostle’s actions were akin to slapping a tiger’s butt—punishing the Ninth Apostle and giving Feng Xiu an explanation was absolutely necessary.

After all, the remaining authority of the leader was dwindling, and no one dared to stir up more trouble.

At this critical moment, the Third Apostle made a completely different decision.

He withstood the internal pressure from the leaders and chose not to move against the Ninth Apostle.

Of course, he wasn’t doing this to protect the Ninth Apostle.

He was betting on an opportunity.

He bet that Feng Xiu wouldn’t dare to act against them at this time.

He bet that Feng Xiu would compromise, bow down to him, and give him what he wanted.

If his bet was correct, he could seize this opportunity to soar.

Of course, such a gamble was not guaranteed to win.

Thus, the Third Apostle also prepared for the possibility of losing the bet, which merely meant selling out the Ninth Apostle.

This outcome was the best.

He won the bet—Feng Xiu backed down, and he got what he wanted, making this the best possible outcome.

“Since that’s settled, it’s time for me to start taking action.”

The Third Apostle spoke, casually tossing aside his fishing rod, stretching lazily, and then, with a wave of his hand, summoned a black bat wrapped in evil energy from his chest.

The Third Apostle leaped onto the bat.

The bat took flight and headed for the Zero Organization’s Secret Realm in District 11.

They promised benefits on their end, so naturally, he began to take action on his side.

While he did receive benefits, he was surely going to give Feng Xiu a proper explanation.

The Ninth Apostle and Zhengdaguangming taking action would serve as the best explanation.

Using their lives to slightly quench Feng Xiu’s fury.

He himself would acquire what he desired, making this transaction advantageous no matter how one looked at it.

And this was clearly a plan the Third Apostle had devised early on.

This was no coincidence; his location was not far from the Secret Realm in District 11.

Taking to the sky, in less than fifteen minutes, the Third Apostle arrived inside the Secret Realm of District 11.

Controlling the Evil Spirit Bat, the Third Apostle forcefully barged into the Secret Realm.

The guards responsible for the Secret Realm immediately surrounded them, but as they moved, a terrifying power descended, instantly stunning the group of underlings, making them unable to react.

Under this overwhelming power, the only one still able to move was Apostle 72, recently responsible for guarding the gate.

As soon as he made a move, the Third Apostle’s gaze landed on him.

“Have the Ninth Apostle and Zhengdaguangming come to see me.”

“Yes!”

The frightened Apostle 72 immediately fled, turning around to call people.

And just as Apostle 72 turned around, the Ninth and Lu Wu had already arrived at the scene.

After all, the arrival of the Third Apostle was unmistakably overt.

Such big movements, such formidable power, Lu Wu and his companions were not blind; it was impossible for them not to notice.

As soon as Lu Wu arrived, his eyes fell on the Third Apostle and the bats beside him, discerning their attributes.

…

Name: Third Apostle

Power: 0 Star (Epic)

Summoned Beasts: Devil Bat King (Evolved) (Epic 0 Star), Fallen Holy Warrior (Evolved) (Epic 0 Star)

Core Skills: Kiss of Death (Secret Skill) (Master), Fallen Holy Light (Secret Skill) (Master), Fallen Tactics (Ultimate Skill) (Grandmaster)…

Summoner Talent: Fusion (Can temporarily fuse with summoned beasts to fight)

Epic Power: Unawakened (Domain Evolving)

Description: Considered an Epic-level powerhouse, somewhat terrifying, please be cautious.

…

Name: Devil Bat King

Power: 0 Star (Epic)

Quality: Legend (Upgraded)

Attribute: Abyss, Evil

Weakness: Light (Strong)

Basic Skills: Bite (Grandmaster), Flying (Grandmaster), Charge (Grandmaster)…

Advanced Skills: Blood Sucking (Grandmaster), Battle Flight (Grandmaster)…

Killing Skills: Source of Virus (Grandmaster), Virus Fog (Grandmaster), Moving Through Fog (Grandmaster)

Ultimate Skill: Death Plague (Grandmaster)

Secret Skill: Kiss of Death (Master)

Epic Power: Unawakened (Domain Evolving)

Description: This is a summoning beast that is a half-step into the Epic level, filled with extremely terrifying poisons. Ordinary beings, let alone being bitten, even getting close poses a deadly threat.

…

Observing the attributes before him, Lu Wu’s eyes narrowed.

Worthy of being the Third Apostle, his power seems almost as strong as Old Thief Cimu.

However, what Lu Wu was most concerned about was not his power but his attitude at the moment.

His aggressive approach clearly was not for a friendly visit.

Right then, as soon as Lu Wu and the Ninth Apostle appeared, he fixed his gaze on Lu Wu and the Ninth Apostle.

“You two are quite bold, daring to act under our leader’s banner like this.

Now I command you, hand over the Angel Wings immediately and come with me to apologize to Lord Feng Xiu!”

There were no roundabout talks, he went straight to the point.

This assertive attitude caused the Ninth Apostle’s face to change.

“Third…”

“Shut up, I don’t care what your reasons are, wrong is wrong, and mistakes must be paid for.”

The Third Apostle interrupted the Ninth Apostle, his stance firm.

“Today, no matter what, you are coming with me, the only difference is whether you come willingly or I have to drag you after taking you down!”

For the Third Apostle, taking Lu Wu and the others in exchange for what he wanted was already a predetermined goal.

At that point, no matter what Lu Wu and his team said, it was futile.

Faced with the sudden and tough stance of the Third Apostle, the Ninth Apostle and Lu Wu’s faces darkened.

They looked at him without speaking.

“So, you are planning to choose the latter, huh?

Fine, I’ll grant you that wish!”

The Third Apostle, eager for his reward, moved swiftly and differently from others.

Others might start with cautious probing, but he did not; he launched a powerful move right away.

“Fallen Holy Light!”

A black cross appeared out of nowhere and, without warning, smashed towards Lu Wu and the Ninth Apostle.

“Shit!”

Lu Wu’s face drastically changed.

The opponent was utterly despicable.

Despite having absolute power, he still resorted to such dirty tricks.

From the sudden appearance, sudden drop, and sudden explosion, it was clear that the Third Apostle had been powering this skill for a long time.

The Third Apostle clearly intended to surprise Lu Wu and his team, catching them off guard and quickly subduing them.

Fortunately, Lu Wu and his team were on guard from the start, and their reaction was not slow.

“Earth Domain!” “Beast Soul Burst!”

“All Things!”

Both domains of the Ninth Apostle and Lu Wu were activated.

The Ninth Apostle stepped forward in front of Lu Wu, simultaneously activating the “Power of Earth” and aimed to block the massive attack with his fists.

But how could the Ninth Apostle possibly block such a powerful attack?

“Fallen Holy Light” was a Secret Skill-level skill.

“Power of Earth” was only at Ultimate Move level.

The opponent was 0 Star Epic, and the Ninth Apostle was merely a King-level Three Stars, and with the opponent charging up, the outcome was decided in the moment he struck.

“Like trying to stop a car with one’s arm!”

Amid the Third Apostle’s disdainful sneer,

the yellow energy fists of the Ninth Apostle and the burst domain shattered in an instant.

The Ninth Apostle spat out blood and was struck downward.

“One down!”

Easily taking down the Ninth Apostle, the Third Apostle was particularly satisfied.

Seeing the Ninth Apostle smashed on the ground, his life and death unknown, he raised his eyebrows in a sorrowful expression.

“Don’t blame me, blame yourself for being so foolish as to raise a hand against Lord Feng Xiu.

Mistakes must be paid for.

If I don’t get rid of you, your actions could affect our entire faction, so for the sake of our leader’s faction, please die!”

“You really are shameless.”

Lu Wu, standing nearby, couldn’t help but retort sarcastically: “You should have known what we did in District 11.

As the helmsman of our leader’s faction, if you wanted to handle it, you would have stepped forward long ago.

After nearly half a month of silence, acting as if nothing had happened, now you suddenly come forward to resolve this issue.

Tell me, are you here to solve the problem?

It’s obvious that you’ve coordinated with Feng Xiu to sell us for a good price.

To sell your own faction for gain and still speak so self-righteously, your skin is really extraordinarily thick.”

Lu Wu’s piercing tirade hit the Third Apostle hard.

It was a stinging truth that darkened the Third Apostle’s face.

“Nonsense, the Ninth is down, now it’s your turn!”

With that, the black cross descended again toward Lu Wu.

Facing the strike, Lu Wu showed no fear: “If you can do it, then come at it!”

With that, Lu Wu raised his sword and slashed upwards.

“Divine Wrath!”

# Chapter 391: 388 Fusion

Chapter 391: 388 Fusion

In Zone 11, within the Secret Realm of Organization Zero,

under the command of the Third Apostle, a black cross bore down oppressively.

Even though it had already overwhelmed the Ninth Apostle,

the power of the cross at that moment was still terrifying.

Black, tainted with the essence of corruption, the sanctified light filled the entire sky, stirring the emotions of those enveloped in the holy light within the area, irresistibly drawing them towards evil and darkness.

And just as the corrupted aura shrouded the heavens,

a sudden clap of thunder roared.

Above their heads, the skies, now thickly overcast, sparked with friction, as endless bolts of lightning struck down upon the black cross.

Simultaneously, Lu Wuyi’s sword also came slashing down.

With the breath of Divine Sword Intent, the sword light burst forth, striking the black cross.

The combined force of thunder and sword light shattered the black cross in an instant.

“How is this possible?”

The Third Apostle’s face shifted, revealing an expression of horror.

He couldn’t fathom how Lu Wuyi, a mere King-level being, could shatter his ultimate move.

What he didn’t know was that, just before he arrived, not long ago,

Lu Wuyi had successfully integrated the skills obtained from earlier battles into “All Things,” increasing his domain control to sixty-one percent, and his power had smoothly advanced to King-level 3 stars.

With the strength of a King-level 3 stars, coupled with the explosive force within him,

and the sword in his hand, which had just devoured “Flowing Blade Fire” and had further advanced to King-level 2 stars, the “Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword,” accompanied by “Divine Wrath,” a skill level vaguely surpassing even “Secret Skill,”

Lu Wuyi’s eruption was firmly at an epic level, making shattering a mere cross no challenge at all.

And what Lu Wuyi intended to shatter was not just that cross.

“Are you ready to embrace death?”

As a low chant resonated, electrical light burst forth from Lu Wuyi.

Instantaneously, he appeared beside the Third Apostle from the ground, raising his sword and slashing directly towards the neck of the Third Apostle.

The sword stroke came exceedingly fast.

The Third Apostle had no time to react.

Fortunately for him, he was not alone.

He might not have reacted, but his bat did.

As Lu Wuyi’s sword slashed towards the Third Apostle, the bat, bursting with speed, lunged forward, biting at Lu Wuyi.

This bite was that of the “Deadly Object,” of ultimate move level.

If this had connected, it would have meant certain death.

But, incredibly, the bat was swifter than the vampire speed previously demonstrated by the Eighth Apostle; Lu Wuyi couldn’t react in time.

Just as the bat was about to bite into Lu Wuyi’s neck,

the Third Apostle couldn’t help but smile smugly, confidently declaring, “The battle is over!”

However, at that moment, a terrifying chill exploded from Lu Wuyi.

Caught off guard, the bat was directly struck by the bone-piercing cold of the Ice Sword Intent.

Lu Wuyi wouldn’t make the same mistake twice.

Previously, he had suffered from being slower than his opponent.

Since then, he had been studying methods to counter those vastly quicker than himself.

His efforts were not in vain, and he successfully found a method of suppression.

This method was the “Ice Sword Intent,” precisely speaking, the “Ice Sword Intent” redesigned mainly around “Cold Ice Body.”

[Cold Ice Body]was originally a passive skill, used to counterattack attacking enemies.

Lu Wu delved deep into the research of [Cold Ice Body], integrating various Ice system and even [Power of the Ocean]skills, ultimately creating a passive sword style called [Frost Guardian Sword Style].

He was always charging up.

The moment he faced an external attack, this skill would be passively triggered, instantly unleashing terrifying output, catching the opponent off guard.

An unsuspecting bat took the brunt of this damage.

The burst of Frost Guardian Sword Style nearly froze it solid.

Lu Wu seized this opportunity, took a step backward, and swung his sword in a counterattack.

However, Lu Wu was not easy to deal with, and the Third Apostle was equally difficult to handle.

At the same time that Lu Wu swung his sword, that bat unleashed its burst skill,

“Virus Fog”

The black fog, carrying endless viruses, exploded instantly, and the bat Lu Wu aimed at disappeared without a trace.

And within a very short period of time, the toxic fog had completely enveloped hundreds of meters around Lu Wu.

Enveloped in the toxic fog, Lu Wu lost all visibility, and more troubling was the fact that this fog was highly corrosive and aggressive—if Lu Wu inhaled it, the consequences would be unimaginable.

Within this terrifying fog, Lu Wu could only muster his Sword Intent to ward off the fog’s corrosion.

And that was no easy task.

“Can’t fight in the fog!”

Lu Wu, being exceptionally rational, flashed with electricity and pinpointed a direction to break out.

However, just as Lu Wu started to move forward, a longsword swung across, and Lu Wu, raising an eyebrow, raised his [Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword] to block it.

As Lu Wu blocked this strike, a new attribute panel appeared in front of him.

…

Name: Fallen Knight

Power: Level 0 (Epic)

Quality: Legendary (Upgrade)

Attributes: Dark, Evil

Weakness: Light (Weak)

Skill Talents brief

Epic Power: Unawakened

Description: A summoning beast on the verge of the Epic level, although just a step away from divinity, it is much stronger than any ordinary King-level being.

…

Lu Wu looked at the attribute panel in front of him, frowning slightly, and it was clear that the Third Apostle had brought out his most powerful reserve.

As Lu Wu frowned, the voice of the Third Apostle sinisterly rang out.

“I must admit, your power has surpassed my expectations.

Though you are of King-level presence, your combat power hardly falls short of mine, so you are fortunate to witness its action.”

While LYB spoke, drawing Lu Wu’s attention, he forcefully launched an attack.

A special toxic gas silently pounced toward Lu Wu.

This was the bat’s ultimate move, [Death Plague].

As it approached, it further activated the [Frost Protection]sword style on top of Lu Wu’s body surface.

While [Frost Guardian Sword Style] was activated,

The Third Apostle and the Fallen Knight simultaneously attacked from front and back, both using ultimate move-level Holy Knight combat techniques.

With two swords from different angles, almost at the same time, they struck towards Lu Wu.

Facing this kind of attack, Lu Wu could only raise his hand with the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword to block the Third Apostle’s sword, while simultaneously kicking to block the Fallen Knight’s sword.

This kind of extreme response, although it allowed Lu Wu to barely withstand those two swords.

But it also left Lu Wu’s center wide open, and at that moment, the bat dove in again, biting towards Lu Wu’s neck.

At that time, Lu Wu could neither dodge nor had any skills left to use, completely unable to block this wave of attacks.

The Third Apostle squinted his eyes, “Now, you should finally be dead, right?

However, a mere King-level being able to hold on so long under the joint efforts of three Quasi-Epic Level beings, you do have some skill.

But mind you, don’t blame me for the number advantage, if there’s anyone to blame, it’s only yourself for being outnumbered.”

Lu Wu’s lips curved up.

“Who told you I was outnumbered?”

The Third Apostle was stunned, not yet understanding what Lu Wu meant by that.

Suddenly, from Lu Wu’s chest burst out a Little Skeleton holding a warhammer; it emerged at the perfect moment, exactly when the bat swooped in.

The two forces collided head-on, and Little Skeleton savagely swung its hammer.

At that moment, the Holy Light burst forth.

The intense Holy Light immediately scared the bat away, and with the bat having missed, Little Skeleton turned to slam the warhammer towards the Third Apostle in front of Lu Wu.

Although Little Skeleton’s power was only at King Level 1 Star, and its attack wasn’t particularly strong, the warhammer it wielded indeed possessed the Light Attribute.

The Third Apostle dared not take such a blow and withdrew his hand, retreating even before the warhammer could strike.

Standing far back, ten meters away, he watched the skeleton holding the Holy Light warhammer with extreme wariness.

“An Undead Summoned Beast wielding a weapon of Light Attribute? Am I going blind?”

The Third Apostle felt as if all his values were shattered.

Meanwhile, Lu Wu, having escaped from dire straits just moments before, lightly stretched his muscles and bones.

He casually stroked the Little Skeleton next to him holding the warhammer, its pupil fire flickering as it stared fiercely at the enemy ahead.

“Unexpected, isn’t it? Surprising, isn’t it? You can shake up the numbers, so can I!”

“Hmph, it’s just an extra Little Skeleton, although the weapon in its hand might be a bit troublesome, it’s not much, and at most it can only tie up one of our people, it’s still two against three.”

Upon hearing this, Lu Wu immediately laughed.

“Who told you I could only shake up this much?”

While speaking, Lu Wu’s longsword flicked upwards, stabbing towards the sky.

Sword Intent erupted, sword light soared, carrying endless sword wind, which directly carried the surrounding poison fog into the sky.

With no more poison fog, the surroundings were truly revealed.

Revealed as well, was an Undead Army that had at some unknown point completely surrounded the area.

Looking at the Undead Army around him, Lu Wu’s lips slightly curved.

“Now it seems I’m the one with more people, right?”

On the Third Apostle’s side, his complexion drastically changed, realizing he had severely underestimated his opponent’s strength, his first instinct was to run.

However, by this time, it was already too late to run.

“Since you’re already here, why not stay awhile!

Little Skeleton, do take good care of our guest!”

As Lu Wu spoke, Little Skeleton directly erupted.

[King’s Will][Undead Army Might][King of Skeletons]Talent…

Various skills burst forth at once, the Undead Army before Little Skeleton condensed into a whole, and Little Skeleton channelled that collective power into its arms, raising the warhammer high.

Then, it smashed the warhammer down towards the Third Apostle.

As the warhammer fell, endless power transformed into a burst of Holy Light.

And because the surroundings were all Little Skeleton’s subordinates, all afraid of the Holy Light, the Holy Light coalesced into a fist-sized Holy Light warhammer that hammered towards the Third Apostle.

In terms of pure power, Little Skeleton’s hammer wasn’t considered very strong.

At the apex of King-level 3 stars.

After all, Little Skeleton, despite his growth over the past half month, still hadn’t reached the standards of King Level 2 Star, and the sudden surge of temporarily mobilized power wasn’t fully unleashed.

But the warhammer in Little Skeleton’s hand possessed the attribute of light.

Under the severe attribute suppression, if this hammer struck, it would cost the Third Apostle half his life, even if it didn’t kill him.

In this situation, the Third Apostle decisively pulled nearby bats and the Fallen Knight towards himself, immediately activating the Summoner Talent “Fusion.”

As soon as this talent was triggered, the two Summoned Beasts rapidly merged into the body of the Third Apostle, allowing him to transform instantly.

Amidst a surge of black light,

the man who was originally wearing shorts and a T-shirt transformed into a being with bat wings on his back, fangs in his mouth, his body covered in black runes, and a black aura circling above his head.

At the same time, his attributes also changed.

…

Name: The Third Apostle (Fusion Form)

Power: 1 Star (Epic)

Epic Power: Fallen Holy Light (Temporarily Activated)

Description: Although it is just an increase of one star, this one star represents a chasm between heaven and earth.

Be careful, you might just get instantly killed by him.

Of course, he can’t maintain this state for long. If you can last three minutes, he will be the one to die.

…

As Lu Wu observed these attributes,

The Third Apostle murmured,

“I never expected that the day would come when a King-level Summoner would force me to fuse. Very good, Zhengdaguangming, very good!”

As he spoke, he casually swung his longsword, a black yet unexpectedly holy light flowed, directly shattering the Holy Light Warhammer that was falling towards his head.

Then, he lifted his longsword high and rushed straight towards Lu Wu, with little time left.

He had to kill Lu Wu within three minutes.

As he charged toward Lu Wu, Lu Wu gently waved his hand, and instantly a rain of arrows flew out from the Undead Army.

Facing this barrage of arrow attacks, the Third Apostle didn’t even glance at them.

The invisible force annihilated the arrows before they could get closer, turning the rain of arrows into a cloud of black mist.

At this moment, the Third Apostle didn’t notice the existence of this black mist; his gaze was still fixed on Lu Wu.

At this time, Lu Wu had also undergone a transformation.

He raised the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword high in his hand, closed his eyes, and a sword intent more terrifying than Divine Wrath surged out from his body.

At the same time, the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword in Lu Wu’s hand burst forth with intense light.

This was the starting stance of “Divine Judgment,” a move associated with the awakened Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword which Lu Wu had never used since its awakening.

Today was the first time Lu Wu was using it.

As Lu Wu’s ultimate sword move, “Divine Judgment” did not disappoint.

Its commencement immediately caused the Third Apostle’s face to drastically change, subconsciously halting his charging steps.

“How is this possible? You’re merely a King-level Summoner. How can you master such a terrifying skill?”

A profound sense of dread filled him.

He instinctively knew the terror of this move.

Facing it directly might mean death.

But at that moment, he was already targeted, and the Third Apostle had no chance to retreat; he could only grip his longsword tightly, unleashing “Fallen Holy Light” to clash fiercely with Lu Wu.

The next moment, two terrifyingly powerful skills burst forth simultaneously, and at that moment, only two streaks of light flickered across the heavens…

# Chapter 392: 389 secured

Chapter 392: 389 secured

Zone 11, within the Secret Realm.

Time seemed to have reversed.

After a complete rotation and a round of battle, they were back to the moment of the ultimate showdown between Lu Wu and the Third Apostle’s Big Moves.

However, the power erupted by both sides in this round was incomparable to the first.

On the side of the Third Apostle,

after the Fusion of two Summoned Beasts, his Power soared to its peak, truly reaching the standard of Epic Level.

The Ultimate Level “Fallen Holy Light,” unlike the first eruption, lacked the grand spectacle, not covering the entire sky, without that soul-shattering black Holy Light.

But as the spectacle shrank, the Power grew.

The Power became more inward, focusing in a swirling black cross that held a force not seen before.

That was the Power of Epic Level.

The combination of Epic Power and Secret Skills made this Big Move unfold with unprecedented lethality.

On the side of Lu Wu,

by this time, he was clearly going all out.

The silly voice within him resonated continuously, his aura soaring upward, with the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword in his hand flickering.

At this moment, Lu Wu pushed all the Power he could muster to its limit.

“Divine Judgment” erupted.

A blade with a holy aura, the shadow of the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword, fell from the sky and smashed onto the black cross.

The instant the two forces clashed,

signs of defeat appeared on the black cross.

Because Lu Wu’s Divine Judgment Skill carried a holy aura, it intrinsically repressed the opposing attribute.

The Third Apostle distinctly felt the Fallen Holy Light he commanded rebelling.

But that wasn’t the most dangerous aspect.

The most dangerous part was that, at the moment the Light Sword descended, the Third Apostle’s sight blurred.

“Daddy!”

In a daze, the Third Apostle seemed to see a chubby child standing before him, reaching out his plump hand, with a face full of joy and happiness, softening the Third Apostle’s soul at that moment.

“Will you hug me?”

This scene also brought forth an involuntary surge of shame within the Third Apostle.

Out of instinct, he stopped his attack and retreated several steps, trying to avoid the child coming toward him.

Although it was the son he longed for day and night, the present him dared not and could not bear to touch him.

With his hands covered in Blood and his body tainted with filth, he didn’t want to face his son in such a state, as a father he wanted to show his son his best side.

This was a passive effect of “Holy Judgment”, capable of triggering the softest spot in the opponent’s heart, robbing them of the will to resist.

The Third Apostle was clearly afflicted.

The black cross began showing signs of energy interruptions, with faint indications of collapse.

However, just as the black cross was about to shatter,

the Third Apostle’s heart skipped a beat, and the scene in front of him changed.

The plump child’s steps halted before him, the innocent and cute chubby little face visibly withered away, turning into a ghastly pale and hideous Blood-covered face, his heart torn open, his eyes full of pain and helplessness, staring dead at the Third Apostle, murmuring,

“Daddy, it hurts so much, save me, it hurts…”

At that moment, the Third Apostle’s sealed memories were unleashed.

The scene of his son being cruelly cut out of his heart replayed unceasingly before his eyes, a torrent of hatred surged forth, and he himself broke free from the “Holy Judgment”.

But at this moment, his black cross was on the brink of collapse.

The light of the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword already bathed him.

The extremely sharp Sword Intent was about to pierce through him; if nothing unexpected happened, this place would be his end.

At this moment, the Third Apostle erupted.

“How can this be? How can I die here? I haven’t avenged my baby yet, how can I die here?!!”

With a hysterical roar, the previously near-shattering black cross burst forth with unprecedented light.

The power of epicness circulated.

A terrifying force erupted, the black cross was reborn from the ashes, and directly shattered the shadow of the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword falling from the sky of Lu Wu.

His Big Move was shattered, and Lu Wu spat out a mouthful of blood due to a severe backlash.

At the same time, the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword in Lu Wu’s hands also became incredibly dim.

Clearly, at this moment, Lu Wu had suffered greatly, his combat power reduced to a fraction of what it once was.

At this moment, the Third Apostle had secured the ultimate victory in this struggle.

And perhaps due to the illusions he experienced earlier, the current state of the Third Apostle seemed somewhat different from before.

Having defeated Lu Wu, his face did not show much triumph or ecstasy.

Instead, he approached Lu Wu with the sword in hand and murmured softly, “You were right, I indeed sold you and the Ninth out.

Because Feng Xiu offered me an offer I couldn’t refuse.

I chose to sell you out for that chip.

Because I have a reason to get that thing, a reason that necessitates my becoming stronger.

Also, the reason you all ended up like this today is entirely your own doing.

However, I can promise you, if the opportunity arises, I will help you kill Feng Xiu to avenge you.”

The Third Apostle’s sudden monologue was clearly due to the previous illusion.

The recent illusion made him unable to resist the urge to justify his actions.

However, Lu Wu on the other side laughed upon hearing these words.

“Do you think you’ve won?”

The Third Apostle’s face changed.

Ordinary people would be stunned and doubtful in this situation; he was too, but he wasn’t going to ask like the others.

Upon hearing Lu Wu’s words, the Third Apostle’s first response was to strike him down immediately.

The phrase ‘the night breeds dreams’ is clearly understood by the Third Apostle.

However, just as he was about to make his move, the Third Apostle found that he could no longer move.

The evil energy in his body surged uncontrollably; the moment he moved, he would explode before he could do anything to Lu Wu.

“What’s going on? How could this be? What did you do to me?”

“Nothing much, just slipped you a little potion.”

Lu Wu, looking at the Third Apostle now under his control, let a smirk play upon his lips and found a comfortable position to sit down.

Then he explained to the Third Apostle before him: “Some time ago, when I was researching evil cultivators, I found that the Evil Summoners’ control over the evil energy within their bodies is actually very low.

In many subtle operations, they are unable to manipulate it as they would their limbs.

If not careful, there’s even a risk of the evil energy running wild.”

“Then it struck me, is it possible that I could develop something, something that could control the evil energy in an Evil Summoner’s body.

Me? I’m a man of action. If I have an idea, I do it. Spending roughly a week, I successfully developed something that can control the evil energy inside an Evil Summoner.”

“You don’t need to know the specifics.”

“All you need to know is that you’ve been poisoned by me, and without the suppressant potion I provided, you could burst open and die within minutes.”

This was the project Lu Wu had been working on recently.

The rain of arrows he released earlier was to poison the Third Apostle.

When the Third Apostle shattered the arrow rain, the potion covered that area, and it was then that Lu Wu unleashed his Big Move.

The purpose wasn’t to kill the opponent with his Big Move, but rather to draw his attention and deplete his energy.

Lu Wu’s plan was a success.

“Divine Judgment” captured his attention, and the Third Apostle completely failed to notice that he had inhaled the potion.

And with the unleashing of Lu Wu’s Big Move, it accelerated the consumption of energy and also sped up the time it took for the potion to take effect.

The Third Apostle had been poisoned without any realization.

Of course, the cost for Lu Wu was not small.

The potion he used on the Third Apostle was the highest-level potion he had developed to date, it took a considerable amount of legendary quality materials to research, and now it had all been used on the Third Apostle.

Fortunately, these costs were worth it.

Now, the life and death of the Third Apostle were entirely under his control.

By controlling the life and death of the Third Apostle, Lu Wu had managed to grab hold of a critically important chess piece.

Seizing the absolute initiative, Lu Wu stood up, smiling, and approached the Third Apostle, resting the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword on the Apostle’s neck.

“Do you want to live, or do you prefer to die? Make a choice.”

…

Zone 8.

Inside Feng Xiu’s Secret Realm.

Ever since waking up the last time, Feng Xiu had not entered the state of cultivation.

On one hand, the ritual was approaching; on the other, the situation in Zone 11 was unstable, and the most crucial materials he needed had yet to arrive. Under such circumstances, how could he cultivate in peace?

Luckily, the efficiency of the Third Apostle was quite commendable.

In less than half a day, Feng Xiu received news.

The Third Apostle had successfully captured the Ninth Apostle and Zhengdaguangming, reclaiming the Angel Wings.

“The Third has asked us to give him the items first, and then he can bring the Ninth, Zhengdaguangming, and the Angel Wings to you,”

Thirteen conveyed the Third Apostle’s conditions in front of Feng Xiu.

Upon hearing these conditions, Feng Xiu’s attention was severely skewed.

“Who is Zhengdaguangming?”

This was a name unfamiliar to him, and Thirteen responded immediately, “He’s a newly emerged prodigy in Zone 11, a few months ago he cleared Divine Blade Tower and obtained a Divine Artifact of epic level.

Afterward, he joined the Cimu family under Princess Cimu’s recruitment.

But after joining, a catastrophe struck the Cimu family; the Princess killed all the direct descendants for him, and he was imprisoned by Ibaraki Gangyan for some time.

Not long after, with the help of Xing Zhanlong, he killed Ibaraki Gangyan and fled from Zone 11 to Zone 12.

Upon reaching Zone 12, he had an altercation with the Ninth Apostle, and it seems their base was even destroyed.

Later, he returned to Zone 11, and with the Ninth Apostle’s aid, he killed the Eighth…”

Thirteen briefly reported Lu Wu’s recent actions to Feng Xiu.

And as Feng Xiu listened to the report, his eyes involuntarily narrowed.

The more he heard, the more he felt there was a trick to this Zhengdaguangming.

“Clearing Divine Blade Tower? Killing Ibaraki Gangyan? Killing the Eighth Apostle?”

Then, a flash of inspiration struck him, “When did he first appear in Zone 11?”

“The exact date is unclear, but it should have been around June or July.”

“June or July, is it?”

Upon hearing this period, Feng Xiu couldn’t help but show a cold grin.

“What a coincidence!”

Intuition told Feng Xiu that Zhengdaguangming and Lu Wu were inextricably linked; these two might very well be the same person.

There was no evidence for this deduction, but Feng Xiu was firmly convinced that his assumption was correct.

He always thought Lu Wu’s death at that time was too strange.

The most bizarre point was the unexpected intervention of the Demon Suppression Bureau.

That was the biggest flaw.

Feng Xiu could not fathom the reason for their intervention at that time; had they gone insane?

“If this Zhengdaguangming really is Lu Wu, then everything makes sense – did he fake his own death to escape?”

With this thought, Feng Xiu’s eyes couldn’t help but widen.

“If my guess is correct, then has Lu Wu really been taken care of by the Third this time?”

Suddenly, Feng Xiu thought of a possibility – could Lu Wu be targeting him this time?

This speculation ignited anger within Feng Xiu, “Tell the Third to send over Zhengdaguangming’s head first.”

“Yes!”

Thirteen nodded and was about to proceed, but then Feng Xiu changed his mind.

“Wait, never mind.”

This wasn’t because Feng Xiu had a change of heart; he had realized something.

If Zhengdaguangming truly was Lu Wu and he indeed targeted him, then the Third Apostle surely hadn’t genuinely subdued Lu Wu.

Whether the Third Apostle was controlled by Lu Wu or used by him, at this moment, the initiative was definitely in Lu Wu’s hands.

By putting forward such conditions, there would surely be no outcome; instead, it would startle the snake and potentially alert Lu Wu that his identity might be exposed.

For Feng Xiu, that would mean losing an advantage.

So Feng Xiu promptly retracted the order he had just issued, bowed his head in thought for a moment, and then, after repeated deliberation, finally lifted his head to address Thirteen beside him.

“First, give the Third what he wants, let him bring the items and people here.

In addition, expedite the ritual procedures, there are some things I need you to prepare, and also contact Lao Wu for me…”

Feng Xiu issued one order after another.

Under his command, a net after net began to take form.

He was about to give Lu Wu a surprise.

Lu Wu wanted to target him, did he?

Lu Wu wanted to play games with him, did he?

Well, he would give Lu Wu that chance; if Lu Wu dared to come over, he was confident that Lu Wu would definitely not leave alive.

After setting up all the orders, Feng Xiu stared in the direction of Zone 11 with narrowed eyes, “Faking death, huh? Setting your sights on me, huh?

This time I’ll see if you can die for real!”

…

The stylish Nu Xiao requests your subscription.

# Chapter 393: 390 Dark

Chapter 393: 390 Dark

Feng Xiu was clearly very eager to get his hands on the “Angel Wings.”

Just after the Third Apostle had sent him a message about capturing the Ninth Apostle, his people arrived in District 11 the very next day.

“This is what you wanted.”

A person shrouded in a black cloak handed a delicate leather case to the Third Apostle.

The Third Apostle opened it and saw exactly what he had been longing for.

It was an epic material known as the “Fallen Heart.”

This was something he had coveted for a long time, which might help improve the “Fallen Knight’s” quality.

To ascend to epic status, quality was a significant hurdle.

If the quality did not reach epic level, then no matter how much effort was put in, it was impossible to truly ascend to epic status and master epic power.

This was why the Third Apostle was only an Epic 0 Star.

Now that he finally had the item in his possession, there was hope of cultivating the “Fallen Knight” to a legendary quality, and he might have a chance to become a genuine epic-level powerhouse.

But he just couldn’t feel happy right now.

After all, his very life was no longer in his own hands.

Whether this item could be his was even more uncertain.

As the Third Apostle looked at the “Fallen Heart” with a mixture of complexity and melancholy, the delivery person beside him was particularly insensitive.

“We’ve fulfilled your requirements, now it’s your turn to uphold your promise.

Please immediately bring your people and this item with you to District 8.

Lord Feng Xiu has been waiting for you for a long time.”

As soon as the other party spoke, the Third Apostle immediately looked up, his eyes dull as he stared at the person before him without saying a word, but his gaze made the man feel nervous.

He took an involuntary step back.

“What are you trying to do?

I am Lord Feng Xiu’s man!”

The Third Apostle didn’t respond and instead took out a syringe filled with black liquid from his chest, slowly approaching the man.

This scared the man terribly, and he kept retreating.

“Don’t come any closer, don’t come any closer, don’t come any closer… Ah…”

…

More than an hour later.

The person who had just delivered the “Fallen Heart” to the Third Apostle walked out of the Secret Realm of District 11, clutching the spot where he had just received an injection, his eyes full of terror.

Yes, in the past hour, he had lived through what might be the darkest moment of his life.

So much so that now, just thinking about the person he had just seen, he couldn’t help but shudder all over.

“That man is simply the devil!”

Before coming, he could never have imagined that his life would change so drastically because of a delivery.

If he had known what was going to happen, he definitely would not have chosen to come.

But now, it was too late to say anything.

There was already something of that devil inside him; whether he liked it or not, he belonged to that devil, unless he wished to die, otherwise, he could only obediently do the bidding of that person.

He sighed deeply.

This cross-district delivery person, carrying a case with “Angel Wings” inside, made his way back to District 8.

Upon his return, he immediately met with Feng Xiu.

Unsurprisingly, Feng Xiu took this visit very seriously and after meeting, inquired about many details from the messenger.

The delivery person answered respectfully and honestly, but his intelligence was not extensive.

He could only report that the Third Apostle would bring the Ninth and Zhengdaguangming to apologize after some time.

Feng Xiu asked a couple more questions, and when the delivery person could not answer, Feng Xiu turned his attention to the “Angel Wings” that had been brought back.

Immediately, he summoned the most outstanding Cultivation Master in District 8 to appraise the “Angel Wings.”

The Cultivation Master spent a full two hours to thoroughly examine the “Angel Wings” using over a dozen methods and ultimately concluded that the item seemed to be problem-free.

This should have been reassuring for Feng Xiu.

However, upon hearing this verdict, Feng Xiu became even more anxious.

“It’s impossible for there to be no issues!”

If Zhengdaguangming was indeed Lu Wu, then there was absolutely no way these Angel Wings were without problems.

As the best possible tool that the other side could use against him, Feng Xiu simply did not believe that the item was problem-free. Upon his insistence, the Cultivation Master conducted another five-hour inspection.

This time, a different result was obtained.

The “Angel Wings” might have an issue.

“My lord, after a thorough examination, I’ve found that these Angel Wings appear to have been subtly refined. This level of refinement is minimal and wouldn’t be detected without deep inspection,” reported the subordinate Cultivation Master.

“What impact does this kind of refinement have on its future use?” Feng Xiu asked, getting straight to the point.

“Under normal circumstances, there would be no impact. However, if the refined item makes an appearance when the ‘Angel Wings’ are outputting energy at a high frequency, it could likely cause an interruption or chaos in the energy output, which might incur incalculable damage to the ceremony.”

Hearing his subordinate’s words, a smile appeared on Feng Xiu’s lips.

Indeed, his suspicions had not been wrong.

The “Angel Wings” did have an issue, and for someone to employ such a discreet method, one that even the best Cultivation Master in District 8 took half a day and great effort to detect, it was clear that the opponent’s expertise in cultivation was far from simple.

This further confirmed Feng Xiu’s previous speculation that Zhengdaguangming was Lu Wu, and Lu Wu was Zhengdaguangming.

At the same time, it also confirmed that Lu Wu would definitely be present at the upcoming ceremony.

“This makes me look forward to the upcoming ceremony even more!” Feng Xiu murmured, unaware of the complex emotions on the face of the delivery person beside him.

…

While Feng Xiu was making all sorts of preparations and spreading his nets wide to catch Lu Wu, he couldn’t have imagined that his net had already been pierced with a nail the day it was cast, and the news about his big net had already been leaked.

Inside the Secret Realm of the Zero Organization in District 11,

Lu Wu raised his eyebrows slightly as he read the message brought by the delivery person.

Receiving the message did indeed startle him.

“This guy figured out it was me?

And he’s also preparing a big net for me?”

Fortunately, he had decided on a whim to take action against that delivery person; otherwise, foolishly stepping into the trap might have been a one-way trip.

This also made Lu Wu grateful that he had developed that potion.

“It’s a pity that this type of potion isn’t very useful against epic-level powerhouses, and even controlling a king-level powerhouse requires a massive amount of legendary-quality materials.”

Otherwise, dealing with “Zero” would be very simple for Lu Wu. He just needed to mass-produce potions, give every member of the Zero Organization an injection, and he could gain complete control over the Zero Organization.

However, it was currently impossible for him to gain complete control over the Zero Organization.

But it was still possible for him to develop a force that belonged to him within the “Zero Organization.”

The incident where he controlled the Third Apostle and the courier made Lu Wu taste the sweetness of power.

He began to wonder if he could use potions as a means to covertly expand his own influence within the “Zero Organization”?

Hmm, the reason he had such a thought wasn’t because his manipulative attribute had surged, wanting to be the behind-the-scenes boss. Instead, he realized that having a force of his own would be very convenient.

Whether it was for resources or intelligence gathering, it would be of great help.

Thus, after much consideration, Lu Wu decided to go for it.

While Feng Xiu was busy setting up a trap for Lu Wu, Lu Wu was also busy on his end.

He collected materials in large quantities and produced a large amount of Black Potions and the corresponding suppression medicine.

At the same time, Lu Wu found Number 72.

Lu Wu wanted to create a force behind the scenes, which definitely required helpers, people to help manage the trivial matters.

And at the moment, Lu Wu didn’t have many people he could use.

Lu Wu calculated it himself.

The Ninth Apostle was good to him because her father was Lu Haikong, so there was not much emotional foundation between them, and she hadn’t taken the potion.

Therefore, he couldn’t possibly hand this task over to her unless he fed her the potion.

But considering his own self-interest and conscience, Lu Wu ultimately gave up on the Ninth Apostle.

Then there was the Third Apostle.

Lu Wu had some understanding of this newly acquired underling.

With formidable power, and being so cautious as to be a bit cowardly, he should be an ideal candidate.

But because he was too powerful, Lu Wu eventually gave up on choosing him.

After all, the Third Apostle was almost at Lu Wu’s limit of control. If he advanced further, Lu Wu wouldn’t be able to control him.

Moreover, even if he didn’t advance further, the potion in his body was only effective for a limited time.

After two or three months, it would dissipate, making the cost of controlling him too high and the risk of betrayal too great, so Lu Wu had to give him up as well.

In the end, Lu Wu had no choice but to pick Number 72.

This guy had average power, was quite cowardly and easy to manipulate, but most importantly, he was clever enough for Lu Wu’s purposes.

As it turned out, Number 72 was indeed up to the task.

After Lu Wu took him in and assigned him a few tasks, he indeed delivered a performance that was quite satisfactory to Lu Wu.

With his help, in just a few short days, relying on the “Black Potion,” the organizational framework of “Dark” was roughly established.

However, time was something that Lu Wu felt he had less and less of.

He had only just set up the “Dark” organization framework with Number 72.

Then news arrived from Feng Xiu’s side.

His preparations were basically complete, and the ritual was set to start in five days.

With this message, Lu Wu faced a choice.

The trap had been set for him; now the question was whether or not to go.

Faced with this choice, Lu Wu didn’t hesitate for long before he made a decision.

“Go, they’ve been preparing for so long; it’s only proper to join in and play along.”

……

The date reached November 23rd.

There were just two days left until the ritual began.

On this day, the Third Apostle brought Zhengdaguangming (Righteous Light) to the base in District 8.

Greeting him was Feng Xiu’s right-hand man, the thirteenth Apostle.

“Why only one?”

Number 13 looked at the individual brought by the Third Apostle, who was so battered that even his mother wouldn’t recognize him, and frowned.

“The Ninth Apostle is part of our faction, after all. If I hand her over to Lord Feng Xiu, I’ll have a hard time explaining it to the leader when he returns.”

With one sentence, the Third Apostle blocked Number 13’s protest.

He looked at the Third Apostle, glanced at the Zhengdaguangming (Righteous Light), said no more, waved his hand to direct his men to take away the person from the Third Apostle, and invited the Third Apostle into the base.

While the Third Apostle had just been welcomed into the base,

Feng Xiu’s side had already received the news.

In addition to learning about the Third Apostle’s arrival, they had also received the results of the Righteous Light identity check.

“His entire body’s energy has been destroyed, nine-tenths of his physical functions are ruined, and his face is disfigured. The only thing that could prove his identity is a Divine Artifact that appears to be of Legendary Quality.”

Feng Xiu’s mouth twitched when he heard the results.

“A self-harming deception? Or a body double?”

He didn’t know which it was, but it didn’t matter.

Whatever the situation, everything would be clear during the ritual.

Later, Feng Xiu, as if he had really forgotten about the Third Apostle, threw himself wholeheartedly into the preparations for the ritual.

November 25th.

The day the ritual was scheduled to begin.

Feng Xiu smoothly completed all the preparations for the ritual and began it as scheduled on that day.

The ritual wasn’t conducted at his base, but in a city within District 8.

Yes, in a city.

And what’s more, it was a city with a population of over a million people.

Over the past half a year, he had secretly transformed the target city into various forms.

It had now been turned into a gigantic altar.

Once the ritual began, the entire city would come to life, at which point the city with its population of over a million would become his sacrifice.

He would use the lives of these millions of people to repair his injuries and possibly even augment his power.

After the ritual, the population of this city would not die.

However, they would gradually be eroded by Evil Energy and slowly turn into mindless monsters within a month.

Such was the method of the “Zero Organization.”

Utterly cruel, devoid of humanity.

“Wouldn’t any righteous person want to stop this sort of ritual?”

Standing in the central altar of the city, Feng Xiu smiled slightly as he surveyed his surroundings.

Although he couldn’t see Lu Wu, he knew Lu Wu must be present.

Based on his understanding of these naïve young people living in District 1, Lu Wu was bound to have a severe case of hero syndrome. Lu Wu would definitely not just stand by and watch these millions of people being sacrificed.

Not to mention, after the sacrifice of these millions of people, his nemesis, Lu Wu, was set to recover from his injuries.

So, he was sure that Lu Wu would make a move.

“Come on, don’t you want to kill me? Here’s your chance to kill me and be the hero!”

As he spoke, Feng Xiu spread his arms wide, and the ritual beneath him officially began to operate…

# Chapter 394: 391 Base

Chapter 394: 391 Base

8th District.

The city where Feng Xiu was located.

As the gigantic ritual began to operate,

the entire city started to undergo a transformation.

A black, evil presence enveloped the whole city.

The people in the city began to feel panic, nausea, and even experience hallucinations.

Such widespread changes caused panic throughout the city.

And the panic of the entire city further stimulated the ritual, making it operate even more fiercely.

During this process, a force descended upon Feng Xiu,

beginning to purge the extreme cold of the sword intent within his body.

The start of it all could be said to be quite smooth, but Feng Xiu remained vigilant throughout.

He knew that there would definitely be complications with the ritual.

Lu Wu was certainly about to make his move.

He had even roughly guessed the timing of Lu Wu’s intervention.

If everything went as expected, Lu Wu would take action at the moment the “Angel Wings” were activated.

And everything proceeded just as he had anticipated.

As time passed, the ritual soon reached the moment when it was necessary to activate the “Angel Wings.”

Feng Xiu murmured, “It’s about time for him to show up.”

Almost as soon as these words were spoken, there was a problem with the “Angel Wings.”

The “Angel Wings,” which had been operating at their limit, suddenly came to a halt.

This kind of sudden stoppage was a significant issue; it could cause extremely serious damage to the ritual.

Of course, that was under the condition of being unaware and unprepared.

“Good thing I was prepared.”

With a slight upturn of his lips, Feng Xiu’s contingency plan, specifically designed for this situation, was activated.

The backup plan kicked in, and the effects brought by the “Angel Wings” instantly dissipated into nothingness.

At the same time, the one behind the scenes making his move was also exposed.

“Got you!”

With another upturn of his lips,

a well-prepared net was cast down.

His forces moved into action and in an instant located the young man lurking at the center of the ritual.

The man’s expression shifted drastically; he tried to run but it was already too late, and Feng Xiu’s subordinates easily captured him and brought him before Feng Xiu.

Seeing that his subordinates had succeeded, Feng Xiu’s lips curled, just about to break into a smile.

But then, unexpectedly, something happened.

During the ritual, the “Angel Wings” suddenly erupted, emitting a strong burst of holy light.

The “Angel Wings” were an important component in his ritual,

which served to suppress and purify the evil energy.

According to a normal ritual, they were neither supposed to nor allowed to burst forth, yet they erupted at this moment.

With this eruption, Feng Xiu was in trouble.

Within the incredibly dense evil energy, the outburst of holy light was akin to lighting a spark in a room filled with gas.

The evil energy that Feng Xiu had gathered through the ritual went berserk on the spot,

what was once healing his evil energy now became the poison that turned against him.

Feng Xiu, caught off guard, was gravely injured, and a mouthful of blood spilled out immediately.

And it didn’t end there.

Just then,

the man who had just been captured broke free of his restraints, snatched the “Angel Wings,” and with a murderous intent, approached Feng Xiu and grinned at him.

Looking at that face,

“Lu Wu!”

Indescribable rage surged through him, and Feng Xiu exploded with anger on the spot.

He raised his hand and swiped at Lu Wu.

Being one of the five ambassadors of the Zero Organization and an epic-level existence, his attack, filled with bitterness, was, of course, extraordinary.

Waves of evil energy churned forth.

Terrifying white bone chains materialized out of nowhere, tightly binding Lu Wu, forcing him to withstand the blow.

The palm struck Lu Wu.

Feng Xiu and Lu Wu both laughed.

Feng Xiu smiled because he had finally made Lu Wu pay the price he deserved.

Lu Wu, on the other hand, did so because he had gained another skill, and as for the damage from Feng Xiu’s palm, he didn’t care, having a “Substitute Puppet” item.

Sure enough, as Feng Xiu’s palm struck, the Lu Wu held by the bone chains turned into a puppet, and the man himself disappeared without a trace.

Paying merely with an item, Lu Wu not only saved his life and gained a skill, but also successfully escaped from danger.

Almost at the same moment as Lu Wu vanished, another epic-level aura descended.

That was the backup Feng Xiu had found early, the “Fifth Messenger” from the Zero Organization.

Feng Xiu had, indeed, made thorough preparations to capture Lu Wu.

Unfortunately, these preparations were all in vain, and Lu Wu ultimately escaped.

Feng Xiu also paid a heavy price for this operation.

Not only was the “Angel Wings” taken by Lu Wu, but he was also severely injured due to the ritual.

Far from being healed, his injuries had gotten much worse.

Having prepared such a meticulous trap for so long, only for it to end with such an outcome, Feng Xiu’s heart was about to burst from anger.

“Lu Wu, I want you dead!

I will make sure you die!”

…

At that moment, Feng Xiu raged in impotence.

He had no idea that his stronghold had been stolen.

In fact, Lu Wu’s main target this time was not him.

Or, it should be said, from the moment Lu Wu received the news that Feng Xiu had brought in the Fifth Messenger for help, he didn’t hold much hope for capturing Feng Xiu.

It mainly came down to a matter of power.

Despite the fact that Lu Wu could take down an epic 0-star Third Apostle, it didn’t mean that epic-level opponents were nothing to him.

In reality, Lu Wu’s actual combat power was only around epic 0-star; he couldn’t defeat a higher level.

If it had just been a severely injured Feng Xiu, Lu Wu might have had some chance of success.

But adding the Fifth Messenger into the mix, Lu Wu didn’t have much confidence.

Therefore, he eventually chose to give up on killing Feng Xiu.

Shifting his objective for this operation to disrupting Feng Xiu’s ritual and raiding Feng Xiu’s lair.

On one side, Lu Wu personally interfered with the ritual to draw Feng Xiu’s attention, while on the other side, the Third and Ninth Apostles jointly made their move on Feng Xiu’s lair, easily breaching his stronghold.

After all, the core forces under Feng Xiu’s command were all at the ritual site.

Not many were left to defend the lair, and with an insider planted in Feng Xiu’s stronghold by Lu Wu, it was quite easy to carry out.

Almost at the same moment as Lu Wu disrupted Feng Xiu’s ritual,

the Third and Ninth Apostles had already succeeded.

When Lu Wu disentangled himself from the ritual and arrived at the agreed meeting place, the Third and Ninth Apostles were already waiting for him.

“Here’s what you asked for.”

The Third Apostle’s expression became complicated upon seeing Lu Wu approaching, as if he was looking at a madman.

At the same time, he respectfully handed over a ring.

Lu Wu took it, examined it briefly, and nodded with satisfaction.

He then pulled out two items from his bosom.

A potion and a black heart with a sinister aura.

The Third Apostle felt his heart skip a beat when he saw the two items.

“The potion will last you a year. As for this heart, it indeed might enhance the quality of your Summoned Beast, but it’s not a sure thing. You’d better gather some more materials.”

As he spoke, Lu Wu handed over a piece of paper to the Third Apostle.

“Once you have gathered the items on this list, come find me and I’ll help you elevate your Summoned Beast to Epic level.”

The Third Apostle was taken aback, clearly not expecting Lu Wu to give him the Fallen Heart, much less helping him compile a material list.

By now, he had a vague idea of Lu Wu’s identity.

He was also aware of the significance of the list in Lu Wu’s hand and the weight of the words he had spoken.

It was exactly because he understood this that the Third Apostle was even more astonished.

After taking a deep look at Lu Wu, he finally accepted the Fallen Heart and the list solemnly from Lu Wu’s hands.

The reason Lu Wu gave the Fallen Heart to the Third Apostle was that he knew about the Third Apostle’s past.

Of course, his gesture was not out of sympathy.

It was a tactic to win him over.

The potion capable of controlling the Third Apostle wouldn’t last long.

In a few months at most, he would break free from control, and the Third might become Lu Wu’s enemy again.

But now, the situation was quite different.

Even if the potion wore off, Lu Wu would have a way to keep hold of the Third Apostle.

Of course, Lu Wu wasn’t trying to deceive him.

If the Third Apostle gathered the materials, Lu Wu would indeed help him enhance his Summoned Beast’s quality and become a true Epic warrior.

Of course, this was provided that Lu Wu had the power to control him.

Hmm, since Lu Wu had started managing the Dark organization, he seemed to be evolving more and more towards becoming a schemer.

Of course, this wasn’t a bad thing.

Better to outmaneuver others than to be outmaneuvered, right?

After briefly instructing the Third and the Ninth to remain covert, the three of them parted ways.

This action against Feng Xiu had come to a temporary closure.

After parting ways with the Third and the Ninth, Lu Wu immediately opened the Gate of the Undead and entered the Undead Secret Realm where Little Skeleton and the others were.

Upon Lu Wu’s arrival, Little Skeleton was leading its minions in a flurry of activity.

Standing on the construction site with a large safety helmet on its head, it held a blueprint in its hand, directing while looking over it.

Under its command, its subordinates were constructing various buildings.

Hmm, evidently, this powerful Undead Army had changed professions to become an Undead Construction Team.

And believe it or not, the transition was quite smooth.

The undead, normally wielding weapons, now handled various tools without any sense of incongruity and were even surprisingly adorable.

Moreover, they were not just for show.

They not only looked good but were also very efficient at their tasks.

When Lu Wu came in, several buildings in the secret realm were already completed.

And these buildings were more exquisite one than the other, at least in Lu Wu’s own satisfied view.

The sudden career change for Little Skeleton and its minions was due to Lu Wu’s command.

As the Dark organization developed, Lu Wu needed a secret base.

A base where members of the organization could communicate.

This base had to meet two conditions.

One was secrecy, and the other was ease of ingress and egress.

After thinking for a long time, Lu Wu finally decided to place the base within this Undead Secret Tome.

It met the condition of secrecy.

As for convenience, Lu Wu was also able to solve that issue.

Don’t forget, he himself was the most outstanding Cultivation Master, and moreover, an all-rounder.

He could develop an Item based on the “Gate of the Undead” that would allow free entry and exit from the Secret Realm, and distribute this Item to his subordinates, so they would be able to come and go from this base as they pleased.

However, so far, this Item was still just a concept.

Given Lu Wu’s capabilities, it was estimated that it would take several days to realize it.

But as Lu Wu counted on his fingers, he realized he had more than that to busy himself with.

There were things to be done with Potions, as well as the development layout for the “Dark”.

Moreover, his Power was gradually becoming stronger, his wings more fully-fledged; some matters he hadn’t touched before were now within his reach.

Such as the news of Old Lin’s life or death.

Such as the person who had stabbed him in the back originally.

Or, for instance, the person who was now planning to attack Dudu.

Hmm, the last point was the key.

After all, Dudu was the person Lu Wu valued the most, and moreover, the activities on Dudu’s side were about to begin.

So now, Lu Wu was focusing all his efforts on Dudu.

He nearly allocated all of the current developing “Dark” forces to this end.

Even, the reason he had still chosen to charge in, knowing that Feng Xiu had set a big net for him, was to plunder Feng Xiu’s lair and see if there was any information on this matter.

And here he was, back in the Undead Secret Realm.

Lu Wu began to check the things that the Third Apostle had brought from Feng Xiu’s lair.

Lu Wu directly skipped over a large number of materials and Items, focusing his attention on the documents.

And these documents indeed brought Lu Wu a huge surprise…

…

As Lu Wu examined the documents he had acquired from Feng Xiu,

Feng Xiu, who had been played by Lu Wu, finally received the news that his lair had been ransacked, with a large amount of materials and confidential documents stolen.

Feng Xiu, already in a bad mood, felt his heart nearly explode with anger upon hearing the news.

“Very well, very well. What a grand surprise you’ve given me, Lu Wu.

Fine, you just wait, I will settle both this and the previous account with you in one go.”

Listening to Feng Xiu’s impotent Fury,

the Fifth Messenger at his side curled his lip.

“Give it up. Your injuries have worsened further, and with your current condition, it will probably take three to five years to recover. Considering the pace of that kid’s growth, by the time you’ve healed, he will likely be at the Epic Level. Then, it will be questionable who’s settling accounts with whom.”

These words further irritated Feng Xiu.

His face turned pale as he clearly became furiously angry.

But he also knew it was true; if they allowed Lu Wu to continue growing, it really wasn’t certain who would be dealing with whom.

After a moment of contemplation, Feng Xiu gritted his teeth and said coldly, “Then we won’t give him the chance to grow.”

“Hmm??”

“That little girlfriend of his is in danger. If he will definitely return to District 1 after some time.

This time, I will make sure he has nowhere to be buried!”

Feng Xiu bellowed in Fury; and though he was in a frantic state, that confidence was the same as when he had set the net for Lu Wu…

# Chapter 395: 392 Trapped Dragon

Chapter 395: 392 Trapped Dragon

December 20th.

Nearly a month had passed since the disruption of the Feng Xiu ceremony.

During this time, Lu Wu had been relatively busy.

Every day, from the moment he opened his eyes, he was busy until he closed them.

He could only rest for an hour or two each day.

Fortunately, Lu Wu’s power had already reached the peak King-level standard; his body was both resilient and tough. Otherwise, given the extent of his exertions, he probably would have died suddenly without any need for others to intervene.

However, nearly a month of hard work had yielded good results for Lu Wu.

The “Dark Organization” had already formed a certain scale.

The organization’s base had been preliminarily completed.

Lu Wu had also finished setting up the portal for the organization’s higher-ups to enter the base.

He had basically finished with all the tasks he had to busy himself with.

Next, Lu Wu could temporarily let go of the “Dark Organization” and leave it to Number 72 to handle.

Over the past month, Number 72 had displayed talents that really put Lu Wu at ease.

In him, Lu Wu saw a caution that ran deep to the bone.

With the organization in his hands, Lu Wu didn’t need to worry about the risk of exposure.

The guy was hundreds of times more cautious than Lu Wu.

Now that the organization could operate normally without Lu Wu worrying, he could shift his focus onto himself.

To be precise, he would focus on enhancing his own power.

Over the past nearly a month.

While busy with organizational matters, Lu Wu had not forgotten to strengthen himself.

Although he hadn’t been able to fully commit due to the various affairs of the organization, he had used the month to collect a large number of skills.

This wasn’t difficult for the current Lu Wu.

He had simply added a screening process when recruiting for the “Dark Organization” and, once “All Things” was activated, asked new members to display their skills.

Using this procedure, Lu Wu had nearly copied all the skills of everyone in the “Dark Organization.”

Lu Wu had tallied them up.

Currently, he had several hundred skills that he hadn’t digested.

Digesting all these skills could push his control of the “All Things” Domain directly to 100 percent, which wasn’t impossible.

“Okay, next, I need to focus on absorbing these skills.”

Lu Wu patted his face, regathered his spirits, and began to digest these skills.

This wasn’t difficult for Lu Wu.

Since he had already gained a certain proficiency in the skills copied by “All Things,” he could digest them quickly.

“Advanced Level” skills could be transformed into “Lu Family Swordsmanship” sword styles in just a few minutes.

“Must Kill Level” took only about a dozen minutes.

“Ultimate Move Level” was slower, but it was still a matter of one or two hours.

Moreover, if Lu Wu was harsh on himself and gave himself a few slaps to trigger the “Unyielding” skill, his efficiency could be further increased.

Getting hit sometimes could really become addictive.

Especially since getting hit could enhance his power and speed up skill digestion—compared to the gains, the pain was truly negligible.

With accelerated digestion through being hit, in just 7 days, Lu Wu had digested several hundred skills and successfully pushed his control of the “All Things” Domain to 100 percent.

100 percent control of the “All Things” Domain further enhanced Lu Wu’s strength, taking him to the peak of King-level 3 stars.

He was at the same realm as the Ninth Apostle, which was a Pseudo-Epic Level.

Although both were at the Pseudo-Epic Level, the difference in combat power between Lu Wu and the Ninth Apostle was vast.

Not to mention the Ninth Apostle, even the Third Apostle couldn’t compare to Lu Wu now.

If Lu Wu were to face the Third Apostle again at this time, he was confident that he could swiftly slay the Third Apostle using only his own strength.

Even if the Third Apostle used Fusion, Lu Wu was confident he could easily handle him.

Even against an entity at Epic 1 Star, Lu Wu was confident that he could hold his own for a few moves.

This was the extent of Lu Wu’s current power, making him an absolute powerhouse in the entire Alliance.

However, Lu Wu had also nearly maxed out his potential for self-improvement.

It was hard for him to enhance his power further in a short period.

It wasn’t a personal issue, but rather an issue with his Summoned Beasts.

As Lu Wu’s own power improved, he often forgot that he was a Summoner who relied on his Summoned Beasts for his output.

But it was a fact.

An unchangeable fact.

Despite Lu Wu’s current combat power being strong enough to face his own Summoned Beasts straightforwardly, it still couldn’t change the fact that he was a Summoner.

This led to a very frustrating result.

That was, if his Summoned Beasts didn’t increase in strength, he couldn’t enhance his own power further.

Simply put, if he wanted to advance to Epic Level, he first needed to cultivate one of his Summoned Beasts to Epic.

Looking around at his Summoned Beasts, Lu Wu saw that Silly was growing rather quickly.

Although Silly had played the role of Lu Wu’s accessory for a long time, it had, after all, accompanied Lu Wu through many fights and consumed plenty of supplements.

As Lu Wu’s strength increased, Silly’s power steadily improved, making it the only Summoned Beast closely following Lu Wu’s pace.

Lu Wu was at King-level 3 stars, and Silly’s power had also reached King-level Three Stars.

It was the Summoned Beast closest to Epic under Lu Wu’s command.

But the closest step was also the hardest to take.

Even if getting hit could strengthen Silly, it would still require a significant amount of resources.

At the very least, one or two pieces of Ice Attribute Epic Level materials were necessary.

If it was hard for Silly, it was even harder for the others.

The “Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword” had no nutrients recently, and its strength hadn’t improved much in the past month, remaining at King Level 2 Star.

Little Skeleton had recruited many subordinates recently, and its power had improved a bit, but it was still at the level of King Level 2 Star.

They were both far from Epic Level, and it would likely take a couple of years to reach it.

“It seems I can only rely on Silly now. I need to find a way to get it one or two Epic Ice Attribute materials and take a solid beating with it.

Wait a minute, am I forgetting something?

Oh right, I still have another Summoned Beast!”

Hmm, after nearly half a year, Lu Wu finally remembered the little Flood Dragon he had neglected when taking stock of his followers.

Thinking about it, Little Skeleton had been by his side for a month or two already, and he felt somewhat embarrassed for neglecting the little Flood Dragon for such a long time.

“Does it have some kind of Talent like an innate absence of presence?

Otherwise, with my never-forgetting eyes, how could I have completely forgotten about it?”

As Lu Wu lamely made excuses for himself, he casually found his Contract with the little Flood Dragon and reestablished the connection that had been severed for nearly half a year.

The moment the Contract between Lu Wu and the little Flood Dragon was renewed,

A hysterical, heart-wrenching cry came through from the other side of the Contract.

A power transmitted from afar, along with a surge of strength from the contract, arrived.

This surge of power was so unprecedentedly overwhelming that it almost sent Lu Wu straight to Epic Level when it bolstered him.

However, as this power arrived, the contract between Lu Wu and the Little Flood Dragon had been severed by a mysterious force.

Just like that, Lu Wu’s chance to advance to the Epic had been cut off.

At this moment, Lu Wu’s eyes bulged round with shock.

Hmm, he suddenly missed his family’s Little Flood Dragon.

Missed it terribly.

How could he let Little Flood Dragon wander alone? He, Lu Wu, needed to bring Little Flood Dragon back home.

At the same time.

Beneath the Mysterious Sea Domain.

On a giant pillar, the Little Flood Dragon was miserably bound.

It had been tied there for some time now.

After it was separated from Little Skeleton, it got washed into this sea domain.

The Little Flood Dragon, although it appeared mighty and valiant, was actually the most timid among all of Lu Wu’s summoned beasts, and particularly afraid of pain. Compared to the silly Han Han, they were at two extremes.

After being washed here, it huddled trembling in a corner for some time.

Back then, it had hoped for Lu Wu to descend like a divine soldier and rescue it from this pitch-dark place.

But after waiting for several days, it never saw Lu Wu appear.

So, it had to muster the courage to leave the corner, venturing out on its own to find a way out.

It had barely stepped out when it was scared witless.

Because after coming out, it discovered it was at the darkest seabed.

This seabed was filled with countless stone pillars, each with a massive Jiao Long tangled upon it.

As the Little Flood Dragon stepped into that area, all the Jiao Long on the pillars woke up, with pairs of eyes staring at it, their dragon chants merged into one sentence.

Leave!

Leave quickly!

The Little Flood Dragon had never seen such a scene, its mind went blank for a moment, and it instinctively ran backward, only to slam into a giant pillar. And that’s how the poor creature ended up bound to it.

And it had been bound there for a full two months.

No one knew how the Little Flood Dragon had endured those two months.

Being tied up, it was passively receIVing the wails coming from all the Jiao Long in the area every day.

Their desperate and anguished howls constantly battered the Little Flood Dragon’s mind, tormenting it greatly.

Although during this process, the Little Flood Dragon had become much stronger, it could not feel happy about it.

Because no matter how much it grew, it couldn’t break free from this binding.

There was even a vague sense that the stronger it became, the more it struggled, the more firm the bindings became.

This drove the Little Flood Dragon to complete despair.

It felt it might never leave this place in its life.

Extremely fearful, it began to pin its hopes on the contract with Lu Wu.

Desperately trying to reconnect the contract with Lu Wu, to have Lu Wu come to its rescue.

But as Lu Wu’s power increased, the contract between them was locked tightly, and no matter how hard Little Flood Dragon tried, it couldn’t break through.

This thoroughly infuriated Little Flood Dragon.

Its resentment towards Lu Wu escalated endlessly.

In just a mere two months, Little Flood Dragon’s skill “Slap Lu Wu” had continuously improved.

Originally a “Must Kill” level skill, in two months it had broken through to the “Ultimate Skill” level, and its proficiency reached the Grandmaster Level.

At the current level of “Slap Lu Wu,” as long as Lu Wu dared to show up in front of it, it could definitely smack Lu Wu’s head crooked with a flick of its tail.

But what of it?

It still couldn’t make contact with Lu Wu.

It might even never get to slap Lu Wu again.

Thinking of this, the little dragon would burst into uncontrollable sobs.

And just when it was about to completely give up hope, it suddenly sensed that its contract with Lu Wu was reconnected.

At that moment, an immense surprise pierced through Little Flood Dragon’s heart, so much that it couldn’t help but bawl its eyes out, crying its heart out.

It thought it was finally saved, that Lu Wu was finally going to rescue it.

However, it had only gotten halfway through its crying and hadn’t even had the chance to rejoice when, with a ‘crack,’ the contractual relationship with Lu Wu was severed.

The connection between Little Flood Dragon and Lu Wu disappeared once again.

This sudden plummet from elation to despair left Little Flood Dragon completely dumbfounded.

What was going on here?

Could it be that Lu Wu no longer wanted it?

Thinking about it, that seemed very likely to Little Flood Dragon.

So, in that instant, Little Flood Dragon’s skill “Slap Lu Wu” skyrocketed once again, soaring to the “Secret Skill” level in a flash.

It vowed that it must escape this place, find Lu Wu, and beat the crap out of that bastard.

…

On Lu Wu’s side.

After sensing the situation of Little Flood Dragon, he immediately took action.

Using “Gate of the Undead” as a transfer station, he arrived at the place where Little Skeleton and Little Flood Dragon had been separated.

(It was that one, that one that summoned a particularly large fish. The fish swished through the water with a ‘splash,’ creating a huge wave, and then Little Flood Dragon disappeared.

They’re so mean.)

Little Skeleton, bringing Lu Wu to the group of sharks that had scattered them, pointed to the biggest shark in the group and told Lu Wu about their grievances.

While complaining, Little Skeleton rushed into the midst of the sharks and caught the leader, giving it a thorough beating.

(Call out that big fish of yours, I, Little Skeleton, am going to cook it today!)

Hmm, with its own strength increased and having Lu Wu as a backing, Little Skeleton was acting very societal, grabbing the Lord Level shark leader and giving it a good thrashing.

Despite being beaten, the Lord Level shark leader wasn’t scared at all.

It stubbornly taunted Little Skeleton, boasting that its grandfather was extremely formidable, and threatened to avenge it soon, swearing to send both Little Skeleton and Lu Wu flying with a flick of its tail.

Lu Wu found its unsophisticated demeanor amusing.

How formidable could the grandfather of a Lord Level shark be?

At most, it would be a King Level 2 Star or 3 Stars standard; Lu Wu could easily suppress it with one hand.

“Just a Lord Level shark, it’s not like its grandfather could be Epic Level…”

“Splash”

Before Lu Wu could finish speaking, a huge wave parted the sea, and from beneath, a massive figure emerged. Catching sight of it, Lu Wu’s words caught in his throat and he broke into a cold sweat on the spot…

In the next moment, a terror-inducing giant wave surged, sweeping Lu Wu and Little Skeleton away in an instant…

# Chapter 396: 393 Slaughter of Living Beings

Chapter 396: 393 Slaughter of Living Beings

On the surface of the sea.

Lu Wu spread his arms and legs wide, his body forming a big “X” as he lay there, gazing blankly at the sky with a confused and vacant look on his face.

At this moment, he racked his brains but couldn’t understand why this had happened.

Which step had gone wrong?

Why would a bunch of shark leaders that were only at the Lord Level turn out to have a grandpa at the Epic Level?

And it wasn’t the Fake Epic kind like the Third Apostle, but the genuine Epic Level kind that could smack Lu Wu a great distance with a flick of its tail.

After being smacked by that tail, Lu Wu had no idea where he was anymore.

While Lu Wu was in a daze, there was a sudden commotion on the sea’s surface.

Lu Wu looked askance and noticed that Little Skeleton, who had also fallen into the sea, was running toward him.

Stopping in front of Lu Wu, the little guy first checked on him.

Seeing that Lu Wu was only a bit dazed and not injured, Little Skeleton let out a sigh of relief. Then its expression changed; one hand on its hip and the other pointing at Lu Wu, it wore a look that was a mix of resentful, angry, and extremely disappointed.

(Lu Wu has really let Little Skeleton down!)

Little Skeleton was known to hold grudges.

After being smacked once before, it remembered that grievance.

Night and day, it thought of getting its revenge.

Finally seizing the chance to bring Lu Wu to that enemy,

it thought it, Little Skeleton, had grown stronger, and with Lu Wu there too, it was sure they could succeed in their revenge this time.

They would surely beat those big fish until they were searching teeth all over the ground; Little Skeleton was brimming with arrogance, happy beyond measure, and spouted a lot of fierce words.

But just as it finished talking tough, the big fish that had smacked them away last time showed up.

And then, with one swipe of its tail, both it and Lu Wu were sent flying just like before.

For the increasingly savvy Little Skeleton, this was just too embarrassing.

(Hmph, Little Skeleton’s reputation is all gone because of you, the useless Lu Wu!

Little Skeleton actually thought you were so powerful, but you still couldn’t beat that big fish.

Lu Wu is so useless!)

Little Skeleton muttered and vented, all while looking at Lu Wu.

Seeing that Lu Wu had no reaction and was still looking dumb, Little Skeleton grew worried.

Could it be that Lu Wu’s brains were messed up by the big fish?

Or perhaps he was too heartbroken for not being able to beat the big fish?

Little Skeleton quickly patted Lu Wu’s head to comfort him.

(Don’t worry, Little Skeleton isn’t that angry actually.

But, Lu Wu, you need to strive to become stronger.

Little Skeleton will also try hard to become stronger, and next time we’ll beat that big fish!

Yes, and Tuantuan too, Tuantuan is also really bad, let’s beat it up next time as well.)

Lu Wu didn’t know where Little Skeleton learned to be so dramatic. While he was still in a daze, the little guy had already started comforting him.

Shaking his head, Lu Wu pulled Little Skeleton away from his side and took out a map item from his embrace.

He wanted to see where he had been smacked to by that shark’s tail.

Upon looking at the map, Lu Wu’s face darkened.

That tail swipe from the shark had actually sent him and Little Skeleton flying right out of the boundary of Fucheng.

“That tail of its was way too fierce, wasn’t it?”

This must be over a thousand kilometers away, right?

It seems impossible to resolve this with force; I’ll have to find another way to find the Little Flood Dragon.

But Dudu’s event is about to start. It looks like the hope of advancing to Epic Level before Dudu’s event begins is somewhat slim.

This made Lu Wu couldn’t help but sigh.

However, he did not give up and handed this task to Dark to deal with.

Let No. 72 send people to search for the Little Flood Dragon. As for him, he couldn’t go there now. He needed to set up early at Dudu’s place.

He would move out once there was news about the Little Flood Dragon.

“Let’s go, let’s go home.”

Saying this, Lu Wu was about to put away the map and hurry back to Jiangnan, but he stopped in the moment of folding the map.

Because while he was folding it, he inadvertently caught sight of a place name on the map.

It was none other than Changping, where Lu Wu had stayed for a while to avoid Feng Xiu.

“Changping isn’t too far from here. Should we take a look?”

Lu Wu hesitated but eventually decided to make the trip.

After all, it was on the way, and he could pay tribute to Old Bone.

Even though that guy was just a Summoned Beast and had only spent a little over a month with Lu Wu, it held the weight of both a mentor and a friend in his heart.

Having decided to make the trip, Lu Wu didn’t delay.

He took Little Skeleton directly and hurried to the Changping Secret Realm.

With Lu Wu’s current power, traveling at full speed was quite fast.

And Lu Wu appeared in the Changping Secret Realm.

Without alarming anyone, Lu Wu silently entered the Secret Realm and familiarly headed to the Land of Burial.

Coming to this patch shrouded in blood-red evil Qi again, Lu Wu felt somewhat complex and lost.

On a whim, he had wanted to come and see Old Bone.

Only upon arriving did Lu Wu realize he didn’t know how to conduct the tribute.

He had not prepared any offerings, nor did he know what form of tribute to give.

Scratching his head and pondering for a while, Lu Wu eventually took something out from his spatial ring.

“Old Bone, I just came here without much thought, and I didn’t prepare anything.

Digging around, I’ve only got this thing on me.

This thing is the skull of the Summoned Beast that killed you. I’ll use his as a placeholder for now.

As for that guy’s head, I’ll bring it to you next time I come over.

Don’t worry, I will definitely avenge you.”

Lu Wu muttered to himself while burying the Summoned Beast’s head into the Land of Burial.

He then took out a few bottles of wine from the spatial ring to pour in offering to Old Bone and also cracked one open for himself to gulp down.

Lu Wu usually didn’t touch a drop of alcohol.

The few rare times were due to Lu Haikong’s coaxing, and today was a special occasion.

However, his tolerance for alcohol was quite average, and coupled with the environment, his mood, and the quality of the wine,

after one bottle, Lu Wu actually felt a bit lightheaded.

The tipsy Lu Wu looked around and, recalling the times he practiced swordsmanship with Old Bone, couldn’t help but summon the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword and started practicing with it in hand.

The swordsmanship he practiced was Old Bone’s Basic Battlefield Sword Skills.

This broad and powerful swordsmanship was now almost as good in Lu Wu’s hands as it had been in Old Bone’s.

However, the swordsmanship Lu Wu used bore deep traces of Old Bone’s style and could even be said to have been copied from Old Bone.

Starting with “Battlefield Swordsmanship.”

Lu Wu’s sword dance flowed from one form to the next.

“Slaughter Swordsmanship,” “Slaughter Sword.”

The sword skills Lu Wu had acquired from Old Bone were executed one after another.

At that moment, Lu Wu’s state was exceptionally good. After finishing “Slaughter Sword,” he still felt unfulfilled, so he performed his own “Lu Family Swordsmanship.”

This dance lasted several hours.

Strictly speaking, “Lu Family Swordsmanship” wasn’t a single technique but the sum of all the skills that Lu Wu had cultivated.

To date, the skills Lu Wu had mastered had to be counted by the hundreds.

The more techniques there were, the more sword styles.

And these sword styles varied greatly. Now, when Lu Wu performed them, it felt indescribably odd, lacking the smoothness of when he previously practiced forms like “Slaughter Swordsmanship.”

This displeased Lu Wu.

Frowning, he danced through the moves, refining the entire sword style as he went.

He didn’t know if it was thanks to Old Bone or his intoxicated state, but Lu Wu found the integration and organization of his sword styles to be exceptionally fluid.

He easily found inspiration amidst his sword dance and successfully combed through his sword styles.

After reorganizing his sword styles, they might not have changed much, but as Lu Wu danced, there was no more awkwardness or strangeness, only an indescribable sense of exhilaration and liberation.

After the dance, the exhilarating experience made Lu Wu’s pores open, giving him a feeling of merging with heaven and earth.

And it was in that instant that his mind flashed with inspiration.

He unconsciously raised his Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword.

At the moment when he lifted his Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword, countless bits of information surged into his brain.

Each strand of information involved a sword style, with well over a hundred in total.

These pieces of information quickly coalesced and poured into the information about “Slaughter Sword.”

The collision of dozens of strands of information made Lu Wu’s head reel, as if something had exploded.

And in that instant, as Lu Wu raised his hand, he slowly swung it down.

The longsword fell without a trace of dazzling sword light nor an eruption of Sword Intent.

Everything was as light as the wind and as carefree as the clouds, as if nothing had happened under that stroke.

Yet it was this unremarkable strike that drained nine-tenths of Lu Wu’s strength.

Even someone as strong as Lu Wu felt weak at the knees after the slash; veins bulged on his forehead, and large beads of sweat rolled down, making him look particularly disheveled.

Despite this, Lu Wu’s face was filled with joy.

He had not expected that a tribute performed on a whim would lead him to realize such a strike.

The sword strike that had just merged dozens of skills could almost be considered Lu Wu’s most powerful attack to date. Even if he were to unleash “Divine Judgment” with the full power of his Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword, he felt it wouldn’t match the pure single-target destructive force of that strike.

Lu Wu even had the confidence that with that strike, he could kill an unprepared Epic Level warrior.

“I suppose I’ve learned a lesson from you.”

In the end, Lu Wu credited the accomplishment of understanding this strike to Old Bone.

He casually named this strike “Slaughter of Living Beings,” as it primarily utilized Old Bone’s “Slaughter Sword Technique.”

After that, Lu Wu didn’t stay long.

Having poured the last few bottles of wine for Old Bone, Lu Wu collected his emotions and left the Changping Secret Realm with Little Skeleton.

What Lu Wu didn’t know, however,

was that as he stepped out of the Land of Burial, the large mound at the heart of the burial ground shifted.

It was as if something was trying to break through the soil.

But after several struggles, it finally returned to calmness.

……

1 District, Jiangnan.

From January onwards, the atmosphere in Fucheng had become increasingly lively.

On one hand, it was due to the completion of Jiangnan University’s new campus, which would continue to celebrate its inauguration.

On the other hand, during the grand ceremony, Pang Duddu, the vice president of the student council at Jiangnan University, was planning to do something significant.

Once accomplished, this act would have profound effects on the Alliance.

Therefore, many people were paying close attention to this matter.

Whether it was those standing with Pang Duddu, wanting to be involved from various universities, or those who did not wish for this project to succeed, many parties had recently begun to arrive in Jiangnan.

Compared to those from the universities, those opposing the project warranted more attention; their backgrounds were incredibly diverse and nearly unfathomable.

The most vehement opposition came from the Education Bureau.

After all, this was tantamount to Duddu stealing their livelihood.

If Duddu were to establish the University Alliance, the Education Bureau would be all but obsolete.

Hence, they were the most vehement and loud critics of this initiative.

The deputy director of the Education Bureau had already arrived, and it was said the director general would also arrive soon.

They made it clear to everyone that they disagreed with the plan, and that the Education Bureau would do everything in its power to prevent it from happening.

However, though the Education Bureau was the most visible opponent, it was the least threatening in terms of the actual danger posed.

After all, it was the Education Bureau, and the range of measures it could employ was limited. The most deterrent action had already been countered by Duddu. Otherwise, she wouldn’t have dared to take on such an endeavour.

Therefore, their dissatisfaction and resistance might ultimately only be verbal dissent and some interference within the rules.

Compared to them, those hidden in the shadows posed a greater danger.

Their most significant threat was that they operated from the dark.

These people lurked in the deepest corners, watching intently like venomous snakes.

No one knew their identities, when they would strike, or what methods they would use.

Such a group represented the biggest challenge Duddu would face next.

Until they emerged, no one knew the extent of the terrifying power they could unleash.

With one misstep, Duddu could be blown to oblivion by this formidable force.

Such a dreadful prospect made Jiang Yuexing extremely anxious.

Despite the event’s imminent commencement, she was still incessantly trying to persuade Duddu.

“Dudu, this matter is too risky. Let’s just focus on the celebration this time, and push back your University Alliance project. Can’t we take it slow, and plan it carefully? You’re still so young; there’s no hurry even if we wait a few more years.”

In the office at Jiangnan University, Jiang Yuexing was pleading earnestly.

However, her words fell on deaf ears for Duddu.

At that moment, she stood in front of the office’s large floor-to-ceiling windows, silently smiling as she looked out at the newly built Jiangnan University.

But Jiang Yuexing couldn’t fathom what this girl was thinking.

In fact, it wasn’t just Duddu’s current thoughts that Jiang Yuexing couldn’t understand, but also the transformation Duddu had undergone over the past few months.

Even though it all occurred right under her nose.

But to this day, Jiang Yuexing couldn’t help but wonder.

Was this woman truly the same naive Dudu from before?

That naive girl who would become ecstatic at the mention of Lu Wu, who would beam with joy when someone praised Lu Wu, that silly girl whose head would continuously nod in agreement – how did she transform into a queen, more regal than even herself?

Could it be she was replaced by someone else, or had her body been taken over by another?

# Chapter 397: 394 Fei Yun

Chapter 397: 394 Fei Yun

District 1, Jiangnan, Fucheng.

After more than seven months,

Lu Wu, who had been wandering outside, finally returned.

Of course, at this juncture, he definitely did not return as Lu Wu.

It was not yet time for him to reveal himself.

Therefore, his return was quite low-profile.

However, now he was different from before; with an organization in his hands, even a low-profile return meant people were there to handle the miscellaneous matters for him.

Before he arrived in Fucheng, a lodging place had already been arranged for him, and there were people specifically waiting for him.

“Greetings, leader.”

Inside an ordinary district in Fucheng, a particularly average-looking young man gave Lu Wu a very respectful bow.

Lu Wu had grown quite accustomed to this by now.

“Rise.

Have you prepared the things I asked for?”

“This is the information you requested.”

The young man handed over a set of documents, which Lu Wu took and began to flip through.

This set of documents he held contained information about various forces currently in Fucheng.

More precisely, these were the forces in Fucheng that might harbor ill intentions towards Dudu.

“Quite a lot of people.”

Lu Wu skimmed through them and narrowed his eyes slightly.

“By the way, any movement on Zhang Yunyi’s side?”

“People from Jiangbei have not entered Jiangnan for the time being, but it is said that during the Jiangnan University celebration, Zhang Yunyi might personally attend.”

“So basically you haven’t found out anything significant?”

“My incompetence, please punish me, leader.”

“Forget it, it’s not your fault, I gave you too little time. Continue with your tasks; I’ll call for you when needed.”

“Yes!”

The young man bowed to Lu Wu respectfully and cautiously retreated.

Throughout the whole process, Lu Wu didn’t lift an eyelid, the spitting image of a villainous Demon King.

After sending off the young man, Lu Wu’s eyes returned to the stack of documents as his fingers tapped lightly on the tabletop, and his brain began to work.

“The Education Bureau, Fei Yun, the grandson of the twelve elders, Fei Yinghao, the Demon Suppression Bureau, the Cultivation Master Professional Center, the Summoner Professional Center…

Dozens of forces, big and small.

Looks like the current situation is much more complicated than I thought.”

It was quite a challenge to fully recite the names of those forces, let alone analyze the motivations, objectives, and methods of each one.

A sensible person would normally focus on analyzing one or two sensitive key points, rather than strain their brain by analyzing every single force.

Of course, Lu Wu was different!

He relied on his photographic memory, smarter than others, so he used the most laborious method, carefully analyzing each of the forces listed in the documents one by one.

Well, it proved.

Hard labor might not necessarily be wise.

Lu Wu’s hard work analyzing those forces only enabled him to more accurately identify a few sensitive, key forces.

“Most of these forces are either joining the fray for excitement or being influenced to come.

They are basically pawns; the ones truly worth paying attention to are three and a half.

The first is Zhang Yunyi!”

There was no need to mention her, as Lu Wu had suspected her even before his return.

Lu Wu even suspected that the current situation had been covertly instigated by her.

His Dudu was undoubtedly being used by her.

Only, Lu Wu really couldn’t figure out what exactly Zhang Yunyi was preparing to do.

Well, it’s not like he couldn’t guess at all; he could surmise a bit.

Based on the intelligence Lu Wu had, she seemed to want to use Dudu to leverage the power of Lu Haikong and engage in a power struggle with someone else.

This was the most plausible explanation at the moment.

And the one she wanted to deal with, or rather, her opponent in the struggle, should be the same person who, months ago, alongside Feng Xiu, had pulled strings in the shadows, ultimately leading to Lu Wu having to feign death to escape.

Lu Wu remembered that Feng Xiu had provided a piece of intelligence.

The person cooperating with him was supposed to be one of the twelve elders from the Elder Council, and at present, it seemed Fucheng had been visited by someone related to the twelve elders—Fei Yinghao’s grandson, Fei Yun.

With this in mind, Lu Wu flipped to the section about Fei Yun.

Despite the document showing that Fei Yun was a standard profligate heir,

living an enviable—oh no, a contemptible life of pleasure every day.

This time, he seemed to have come just for the excitement, bringing only a bodyguard with him.

Logically, he was an individual that could be ignored, but Lu Wu still took note of him.

It wasn’t that Lu Wu saw anything unusual about this man,

but rather, Lu Wu noticed that his file indicated he had expressed his intention to pursue Dudu more than once.

Because of this alone, Lu Wu felt compelled to be wary of him.

With the background of an elder and designs on Dudu, Lu Wu even considered finding an opportunity to make him disappear from the Mortal World.

However, Lu Wu’s wariness was not due to jealousy,

Certainly not.

Lu Wu simply felt that Fei Yun could become a pawn for others to use, and so he paid extra attention to him.

One Zhang Yunyi, one Fei Yun, these two were in plain sight.

Another was lurking in the shadows, someone Lu Wu had no clarity about, the only clue being the possibility that this person was a high-ranking member of the Alliance or even one of the twelve elders.

These three were Lu Wu’s key focus.

There was also a half, Feng Xiu.

But the reason Lu Wu only counted Feng Xiu as a half was that he was someone Lu Wu had led here himself.

After learning that Feng Xiu might have guessed his identity, Lu Wu made his move against him,

with a simple purpose: to draw him in.

Sometimes the intervention of “Zero” at the right time wasn’t necessarily a bad thing for Lu Wu.

Besides, Lu Wu had already been suspected.

Even if he hadn’t made a move, Feng Xiu likely wouldn’t have missed this opportunity.

So Lu Wu played his hand to gain a bit and obtain some intelligence, giving him a more comprehensive understanding of the current situation.

Still, Lu Wu’s understanding was still too little.

So, the situation before him gave him a headache.

Looking at the pile of documents, Lu Wu only wished he could be stronger.

If only he were stronger and had absolute power, he wouldn’t have such a headache; he could just go ahead and take down Zhang Yunyi, and then everything would become clear.

Or simply stand by Dudu’s side.

If anyone dare cause trouble, smack them dead with a slap.

“Indeed, it all comes down to an issue of strength!

But seeking strength now is too late; there’s no time for that.

Besides, no matter what, I am certainly stronger than Dudu, who is caught in the midst of this whirlpool.

She needs my protection…”

“Boom!”

Well, as Lu Wu was saying this, Fucheng suddenly erupted with a massive sound.

Immediately following was a terrifying wave of energy that spread out.

Lu Wu frowned.

“What’s going on? Is there already a commotion?”

Lu Wu could sense that the noise was caused by the clash of two energies; and upon a brief sensing, he discovered they were at least of King-level existence.

Two beings of at least King-level were clashing in the center of Fucheng.

Isn’t this getting a bit too out of hand?

It’s practically lawlessness!

Lu Wu hesitated for a moment before standing up and heading towards the direction where the energy fluctuations were coming from.

He wasn’t planning to stop them.

It wasn’t time for him to reveal himself just yet; he was only going to assess the situation.

Besides, this was also an opportunity. A scene like this was bound to draw many people out, providing Lu Wu a chance to observe the various forces.

The location of the energy outburst wasn’t far from Lu Wu.

Very soon, Lu Wu arrived near the scene of the incident, and as he approached, he could see the two clashing parties.

Both were old men.

One was a middle-aged man dressed in traditional Chinese attire, wearing gold-rimmed glasses, holding a pen, exuding an air of scholarly grace, with a dissatisfied expression on his face, standing behind him was a Griffon.

The other wore a tailcoat, gold-rimmed glasses, had neatly combed silver hair, and behind him was an old man with a Power Ape-like Summoned Beast.

When Lu Wu saw the attributes of their Summoned Beasts, his eyebrows slightly raised.

…

Name: Gold Griffon

Power: 3 stars (King-level)

Quality: Legend (Quality) (Upgraded)

Attribute: Wind, Fire, Gold Bloodline

State: Angry

Weakness: Thunder (Ordinary)

Skill Talents: Omitted

…

Name: Violent Thunder Ape

Power: 0 level (Epic)

Quality: Legend (Upgraded)

Attribute: Thunder

State: Smug

Weakness: Ice (Slight)

Skill Talents: Omitted

…

One was a King-level 3 stars, the other an Epic 0 Star; both were very powerful Summoned Beasts.

And as Lu Wu noted the attributes of these two Summoned Beasts, he also learned the identity of the two clashing men.

That middle-aged man should be the Deputy Director of the Education Bureau, Wang Yuanming.

As for the old man, well, he should be Fei Yun’s bodyguard, apparently named Fei Bao.

“Why are these two fighting?”

Lu Wu was somewhat surprised.

At the same time, he found a suitable spot to hide and watch the battle from the shadows.

Lu Wu had just concealed himself when he noticed that people kept popping up around him.

Most of these people did just like Lu Wu; upon arrival, they found a suitable spot to hide and watch the drama unfold.

Of course, where there were spectators, there were also people trying to break up the fight.

And those trying to mediate arrived quickly; Lu Wu had only just hidden himself when someone came to mediate.

This person was none other than Lu Wu’s godmother, Jiang Yuexing.

“What are you two doing?”

As the Governor of Jiangnan, when someone caused trouble on her turf, Jiang Yuexing was certainly the first to step in.

With a stern expression, she intervened between Wang Yuanming and Fei Bao.

“This is the city area. Isn’t it a bit too disrespectful to start a fight here without regard for the Alliance’s laws?”

Jiang Yuexing did not offer these two a kind face.

Nor could she offer any kindness, as their fighting in Fucheng was a direct affront to her, Jiang Yuexing. It would have been strange if she had been amiable.

Facing the stern-faced Jiang Yuexing, Wang Yuanming appeared even more resentful.

“Governor Jiang, you can’t blame me for this. Mr. Fei over here started by forcibly trying to expel us.

He attacked without warning, and I was merely defending myself passively.”

Faced with the aggrieved Wang Yuanming, Jiang Yuexing didn’t even lift an eyelid: “I don’t care for your reasons or quarrels, if you want to fight, get out of Fucheng and do it.

Don’t make a fuss in Fucheng, or you’ll have no one to blame but yourselves for my lack of courtesy.”

Her purpose in coming was to prevent them from starting a fight in Fucheng.

She didn’t want to inquire into the reasons or mediate anything.

That was their own business, and Jiang Yuexing would have to be insane to get involved.

However, Jiang Yuexing’s words seemed to have little effect.

Wang Yuanming was somewhat cooperative, indicating that as long as Fei Bao did not attack him, he would definitely behave.

But Fei Bao, on the other hand, was quite unyielding and said decisively: “It’s possible for me not to act, but they must leave Fucheng!”

This uncompromising tone made Jiang Yuexing frown intensely.

Wang Yuanming felt even more aggrieved.

“Mr. Fei, our Education Bureau hasn’t offended you, have we?

Why do you treat us so?”

“You haven’t offended me, and frankly, whether you’ve offended me or not isn’t important. What’s important is that my young master doesn’t want you to stay in Fucheng.”

As Fei Bao spoke, those onlooking deduced how this farce had come about.

“My young master has said, with the upcoming celebrations at Jiangnan University, it’s a time for joy. Your group of people wouldn’t contribute to the cheer and would only be an eyesore to Lady Pang, so please leave Fucheng.”

When Wang Yuanming heard this, his complexion went dark.

He had heard that Fei Yun was recently chasing after Pang Duddu but hadn’t expected him to go to such lengths, directly ordering his bodyguard to expel people from the Education Bureau.

This was no minor matter: if it blew up within the Alliance, Fei Yun would probably be in for a scolding.

“Does Elder Fei know about this?”

Wang Yuanming had no other choice but to bring up Fei Yinghao, hoping to suppress the capricious Fei Yun.

But the effect was surprisingly poor.

No sooner had he finished speaking than a voice brimming with arrogance and pleasure rang out: “Of course, my grandfather knows. He said that it’s excellent for a young man to go wild for love once in his lifetime, and told me to go ahead and make trouble; he’d take care of anything for me.”

Alongside these words that shattered conventional wisdom, Fei Yun, who had once encountered Lu Wu during university competitions, emerged from the shadows.

Seeing Fei Yun, Wang Yuanming’s expression darkened even more.

“I don’t believe Elder Fei would say such words…”

“Believe it or not, that’s your business. But today, you must leave Fucheng, and not just you,”

said Fei Yun, pausing for a moment, then turning to look around. His gaze swept the places where others were easily hidden, the corners of his mouth lifting slightly: “And all of you hiding in the dark, I know there are surely many observers out there now.

Among you must be those who harbor ill intentions towards Lady Pang.

Let me make it clear, Lady Pang is my goddess. You’d better behave yourselves, for if anyone dares to touch her, they’re going against me, Fei Yun.

I will use every connection I have in my life to ensure they live a life worse than death!”

With those words, the entire place was taken aback.

Hiding in the dark, Lu Wu’s eyes flared up with fire right then and there.

This guy was so brazen in his attempts to poach.

“Nobody stop me, I’m gonna kill him!”

# Chapter 398: 395 Dudu

Chapter 398: 395 Dudu

When Fei Yun arrogantly uttered his threats.

The faces of those present all changed slightly.

No one had expected such an incident to occur before the celebration even started.

Needless to say, the most embarrassed among them was Lu Wu.

After all, Fei Yun was blatantly trying to undermine him.

If conditions had allowed, he would have already gone down and killed this guy coveting his Dudu.

Next to Lu Wu in terms of dismay was Wang Yuanming.

After all, others merely heard the threat and laughed it off, but for the Education Bureau, they were Fei Yun’s direct target.

On Fei Yun’s side.

He looked around with a demeanor that suggested everyone else was worthless.

“I’ve said my piece today, you can try me if you don’t believe it.”

Then, he fixed his gaze on Wang Yuanming, “As for you, get out of Fucheng immediately!”

Faced with such a forceful Fei Yun.

Wang Yuanming’s face changed colors several times, but in the end, he had no choice but to lower his head.

The plan was to first withdraw from Fucheng and discuss it further once their director arrived.

Wang Yuanming’s act of submission was, naturally, noticed by many observers in hiding, which turned their looks into ones of amusement.

“Some knew that she had the power and means to deal with the Education Bureau, yet didn’t expect her to use such methods.”

“Using her charm to cling to the Fei Family, her plan for the University Alliance seems set to proceed smoothly.”

“I thought she was someone remarkable, but it turns out she’s just like this, somewhat disappointing!”

“How can you say that? It’s also a strategy. Once she reaches the peak, who would remember, and who would dare to?”

…

Off to the side, in the darkness.

Spectators watching the unfolding scene had already formed their conclusions about the causes and consequences of the event.

No need for investigation, they could guess what they believed to be the true reason.

Many among this group thought that Fei Yun, the playboy, had gone through with this act because he had been manipulated by Dudu.

Lu Wu, listening to the sporadic discussions nearby, tensed and immediately took out a notebook, jotting down everyone he had observed nearby.

It didn’t matter whether they had spoken or not; the names in this book were certainly going to receive his hospitality.

Of course, the one he most wanted to entertain was that Fei Yun.

Lu Wu had already written his name in the most prominent place in the book, just imagining one approach after another to deal with him.

Meanwhile, as Lu Wu frenziedly took notes,

At that moment, with Wang Yuanming leading the Education Bureau staff to leave amidst the surrounding chatter,

With Fei Yun looking utterly pleased with himself, and Jiang Yuexing wearing a complex expression on her face, a voice rang out.

“Who dares to make a move in Fucheng?”

This voice was as crisp and pleasant as ice pearls shattering, yet filled with an endless cold aura; everyone present couldn’t help but shiver.

The one who trembled the most was Lu Wu.

His hurriedly writing hand couldn’t help but shake, causing his pen to scribble askew; however, at that moment, Lu Wu didn’t care at all, his gaze fixed intensely on the sky.

In the sky appeared a figure both familiar and strange to Lu Wu.

A goddess, dressed in a women’s suit, her hair in a ponytail, exuding a competent and chill aura, stood there.

At the sight of her, Lu Wu was stunned.

Despite having a suspect in mind, he still couldn’t believe the figure standing above him was his own Dudu.

Not only was Lu Wu shocked.

The moment Dudu appeared, hardly anyone on the scene could catch their breath.

Everyone stared dumbfounded at the woman above their heads.

At that moment, those who had just mocked Fei Yun and Dudu couldn’t help but feel turmoil inside.

Although they despised Dudu’s methods and scorned Fei Yun for his fawning, they would willingly trade places, even if it meant living several decades less.

Someone beside Lu Wu sighed,

“This lady indeed possesses peerless grace, worthy of being called the most beautiful woman in the world. It’s a pity that Lu Wu died young.

Such a beauty is beyond his enjoyment.

Now, it seems she will belong to someone else.”

This remark was rather loud, causing Lu Wu’s face to darken further, and he glared fiercely, about to etch this bastard’s name deeper into his memory.

At that moment, there was a “pop.”

The mouth of the person who had just spoken shattered on the spot.

It shattered without warning, but everyone knew who had acted.

Dudu, in the sky, casually withdrew her hand, not even glancing at the person she had casually punished, but instead fixed her gaze on Wang Yuanming and Fei Bao.

“Was it you who made a move inside Fucheng just now?”

Dudu’s cold, calm gaze fell on these two men, making even these powerful figures somewhat uneasy.

Of course, Fei Bao felt much more comfortable compared to Wang Yuanming.

After all, he considered himself on Dudu’s side.

Thus, he stood up straight to face Dudu’s gaze, giving a symbolic bow, “Lady Pang, I was ordered by my young master to help clear up some…”

Dudu cut off Fei Bao’s rambling, “So, it was you who acted?”

Fei Bao frowned, feeling that Dudu was unappreciative.

He was helping Dudu, and yet she displayed this attitude, which annoyed him.

“I did act. What are you going to do about it?”

Before Dudu could respond, Fei Yun couldn’t sit still.

“Mr. Fei, how can you speak to Lady Pang like that?

Apologize to Lady Pang quickly.”

Fei Bao’s face soured, seemingly not expecting his young master to grovel to this extent. He kept a stern face, neither responding nor apologizing.

Although he was Fei Yun’s bodyguard, his status within the Fei Family was not low, after all, he was an Epic Level 0 Star powerful figure.

He had his pride; he could not just bow and apologize just because Fei Yun said so.

Seeing Fei Bao refuse to apologize, Fei Yun’s expression also turned ugly, but he had no leverage over Fei Bao and could only turn to Dudu with a fawning face, “Lady Pang, on behalf of Mr. Fei, I apologize to you.

Also, it was under my direction that Mr. Fei acted. You see, the celebration is starting soon, isn’t it?

These troublesome folks, it’s not convenient for you to act, so I asked him to take care of it for you.

Not just them, but anyone who disrespects you, just give me the word, and I assure you I’ll take care of them all.”

Fei Yun’s excessive bowing and scraping made Fei Bao shake his head, unable to bear watching, he turned away with a look of disdain.

And the people around were even more astounded.

They all knew Fei Yun.

They knew what sort of character he was—an untamed and fearless rogue.

Even towards his grandfather, one of the twelve elders, Fei Yinghao, he had never shown such an attitude. Now, seeing him act like this towards Dudu showed that he indeed had fallen deep this time.

From Fei Yun’s current behavior, it seemed that if Dudu asked for the stars, he would even try to pluck them from the sky.

However, Dudu’s reaction to Fei Yun’s attitude surprised everyone.

“So, it was you who instructed him to act?”

The voice was harsh, opening directly with an accusation.

Fei Yun was taken aback by the question, seemingly not expecting this turn of events.

This also infuriated Fei Bao, who was already displeased with the submissive demeanor of his young master toward Lady Pang.

“Lady Pang, one must know gratitude.

My young master’s kindness toward you was not meant to be repaid by…”

“Mr. Fei!” Fei Yun’s face changed, and he quickly grabbed Fei Bao, fearful that he would charge at Pang Duddu.

But it was already too late, as the charge had taken place.

In mid-air, Dudu ignored the drama unfolding between the two men and spoke indifferently, “I roughly understand the situation now. Two engaged in fighting, and one incited it, causing casualties and property damage in Fucheng. Based on the extent of the casualties and property damage, criminals will be charged.

If no damage to property ensued, detention from three to fifteen days will be enforced. The three of you should visit the dungeon at Jiangnan University.”

With that statement, Fei Bao was completely enraged.

“Ignorant! Truly ignorant!

Just a student council president from Jiangnan University, dare you charge me with a crime…”

“Boom!”

Before Fei Bao could finish, Dudu’s palm struck downward from mid-air.

With the impact, Fei Bao’s face paled, and, forsaking further words, he exploded forth with full power, attempting to block Dudu’s palm strike with the Summoned Beast beside him.

“Fierce Ape Heaven!”

“Sky-reaching!”

Two Epic 0 Star beings were executing moves simultaneously.

Two Defensive Skills of the “Secret Skill” level unfolded, presenting extremely formidable defenses.

Although Lu Wu did not confront these two defenses directly, he could still judge that, without using the “Slaughter of Living Beings” ability, he had almost no chance of penetrating them.

This made Lu Wu somewhat concerned about how Dudu would wind things up.

“Wait, did I just overlook something?”

In his concern, Lu Wu suddenly realized he hadn’t seen Dudu’s attribute initially.

And just as Lu Wu was surprised by this, Dudu’s palm strike had already descended.

A casually executed palm strike, directly penetrating Fei Bao’s two layers of defense and simultaneously injuring both Fei Bao and his Summoned Beast.

“Oh crap!”

Lu Wu was completely stunned by Dudu’s palm strike.

Staring blankly at Dudu in the sky, whose expression seemed as cold and divine as a deity, Lu Wu couldn’t recover his senses for a long while.

He found it difficult to believe.

Was this girl really Dudu?

Really the same silly girl in his family who could do nothing right and left nothing uneaten?

Lu Wu almost didn’t dare recognize her.

And Lu Wu wasn’t the only one incredulous; Fei Yun, Wang Yuanming, and Jiang Yuexing, well, perhaps it would be simpler to say all present were.

Before this palm strike, no one could have imagined Dudley being so powerful.

She had knocked down Fei Bao, someone close to an Epic level, with one slap. Did this imply she had reached close to an Epic level, or could even confront an Epic being head-on now?

Another confusing aspect was why Dudu had acted at all.

From any rational standpoint, this was the least logical action to take.

Given her situation, shouldn’t she seek as much power as possible to assist her?

By striking, she had metaphorically slapped Fei Yun’s face in front of everyone, turning Fei Yun into a laughingstock.

Wouldn’t Fei Yun just turn completely dark now?

Well, perhaps that concern was unnecessary.

People saw that following Dudu’s slap down of Fei Bao, Fei Yun’s first response wasn’t rage or embarrassment but an anxious explanation to Dudu.

Even promising to take Fei Bao to prison in hopes of receiving Dudu’s forgiveness.

This made the onlookers shake their heads, humiliated yet still behaving like this.

This guy was beyond help.

As the crowd shook their heads, only Lu Wu’s gaze was fixed intensely on him.

This was a guy he had to eliminate.

And just as Lu Wu was contemplating taking down Fei Yun, he suddenly felt a gaze fall on him.

Lu Wu paused and looked up to find Dudu staring at him.

Their eyes met at that moment.

In that instant, Lu Wu’s mind went blank.

The expression on Dudu’s face across from him remained cold, and after a glance at Lu Wu, she looked away.

This made things quite uncomfortable for Lu Wu.

It felt like his heart had been stabbed, painfully throbbing and making even breathing difficult.

He now strongly suspected that the Dudu before him was an impostor, not really his Dudu.

His Dudu wouldn’t be so cold to him.

How should it be put? Those favored are always fearless.

When Lu Wu had been by Dudu’s side in the past, he had not cherished those moments. Now, a single glance, a mere expression from her could unsettle Lu Wu profoundly.

In contrast, Dudu seemed quite composed.

After turning away her gaze, she simply instructed for Fei Yun, Fei Bao, and Wang Yuanming to be thrown into the dungeon, before she rose and left.

Lu Wu watched Dudu leave with a listless gaze.

Only when Dudu’s figure had completely vanished did Lu Wu, disheartened, prepare to head back.

But his mood was extremely agitated and tangled.

So much so, he almost lost his way back.

“Damn it!”

The agitated Lu Wu knew that if he went back in this state, he wouldn’t be able to sleep well tonight.

So, he took out a small notebook.

Reviewing it, he located a few key names he had highlighted.

After engaging in a few actions to vent, his mood improved a bit though not completely.

Then, adjusting his spirits, he headed back home.

But even upon reaching his stopping point, Lu Wu was still terribly irate.

He sat for a while before getting up, “Can’t stand it, I really can’t stand it. No, I must go find her today!”

Saying this, Lu Wu was about to head to Jiangnan University when suddenly, he heard a silly giggle.

Lu Wu started, turning his head sharply only to be dumbfounded on the spot.

Behind him, unbeknownst to him, there was a girl giggling at him.

Seeing that giggling girl, Lu Wu’s agitated heart suddenly calmed down, and he couldn’t help but smile.

But remembering Dudu’s earlier demeanor, Lu Wu held back his smile, set his face sternly, prepared to question the girl.

But then the girl threw herself at him.

Unprepared, Lu Wu was pushed down onto the bed…

# Chapter 399: 396 Dual Personality

Chapter 399: 396 Dual Personality

“Lu Wu, I’ve missed you so much!”

As an exuberant and somewhat silly voice rang out, a figure pounced over, tackling Lu Wu onto the bed.

“Uh oh!”

Pinned down on the bed, Lu Wu was first baffled.

Then came the pain.

That kind of overwhelming anguish from deep within—was his pure and immaculate self really going to be vanquished by Little Skeleton like this?

He wasn’t ready for this!

But as much as he wanted to push Little Skeleton away, he could not bring himself to do it.

After all, Little Skeleton had become really beautiful, and being embraced by her soft, warm fragrant body significantly lessened Lu Wu’s sense of being tainted.

Just looking at her face, flushed with excitement, made him suddenly realize that he might not actually mind.

However, just as Lu Wu was about to open his arms and let Little Skeleton have her way,

“Isn’t this enough? If it’s not yet time, you’ll have to hold back. I’ll come out after discussing the important matters with him.”

A crisp voice, cool as bursting beads of ice, once again rang out.

This was followed by a soft, sweet voice.

“Oh, okay!

But you’d better make it quick.”

“I’ll try my best!”

Both voices of varying tones and expressions came from Little Skeleton, leaving Lu Wu utterly confused.

“What’s happening? Little Skeleton, why are you talking to yourself?”

What confused Lu Wu even more was that as the sweet, soft voice fell, Little Skeleton’s eyes also closed, and after a moment, they opened again. Then, the girl hugging Lu Wu underwent a dramatic change in demeanor, from sweet and silly to a cool, commanding presence—from within her radiated an aura that seemed to be admired only from a distance.

This instantaneous transformation left Lu Wu’s brain crashing, and after staring in shock for a while, he cautiously ventured, “Dual… dual personalities?”

“Something like that.”

The now cool Little Skeleton replied calmly.

At the same time, she pushed herself up from Lu Wu’s embrace and looked straight into his eyes as his expressions shifted from baffled to astonished. Hers, however, was surprisingly placid.

Despite this confirmation by the cool Little Skeleton, Lu Wu’s heart was still riddled with doubt.

After all, in his eyes, Little Skeleton had always been fine, and especially docile; how could she suddenly have developed dual personalities?

More than the concern for dual personalities, Lu Wu was more worried that this version of Little Skeleton might be something else entirely.

This made him increasingly wary of Little Skeleton at this moment.

Little Skeleton seemed to notice Lu Wu’s doubt and wariness. Her face, void of unnecessary expressions, simply offered an explanation.

“You are her support, and your departure made her lose her pillar, causing her to collapse mentally.

At that time, she needed a support to help her find you, and she couldn’t seek it from outside—it had to come from within. Thus, I appeared.”

“This…”

The explanation from the cool Little Skeleton clenched Lu Wu’s heart.

His gaze softened significantly as he instinctively reached out his hand to caress the cool Little Skeleton’s hair.

“You must have had a tough time during this period, right?”

This sudden gesture of affection made the cool Little Skeleton visibly uncomfortable. She shook her head and wriggled free from Lu Wu’s ‘devilish grasp.’

“I… I didn’t come today to talk about this.

I came for two reasons.

One is that she wanted to see you, and… and the other is that I wanted to see you.”

It was clear that Leng Duddu wasn’t as cold as she made herself appear.

A single head pat from Lu Wu left her flustered for a while, and it took her significant effort to calm down.

She struck Lu Wu’s cute spot like that.

Dealing a cute critical hit.

However, Leng Duddu’s ability to adjust her emotions was strong, and she soon got her emotions under control to discuss serious matters with Lu Wu.

Starting with taking out a document from her bosom and handing it over to Lu Wu.

“This is what I’ve done since I was born, take a look first!”

When Leng Duddu got serious, Lu Wu, too, took a deep breath to adjust his emotions and focused on the document in his hands.

What Lu Wu didn’t notice,

as he read the document, the expression and gaze on Leng Duddu’s face often changed.

That familiar silliness of his resurfaced on Leng Duddu from time to time.

It was as if she was peeking out from behind a corner, glancing out briefly before retreating again.

After several cycles, Leng Duddu got annoyed, thumped her own head, and only then did the silliness subside and she hid away obediently.

“What’s with your forehead?”

After reading the document, Lu Wu looked up and immediately saw the red mark on Leng Duddu’s pristine forehead, instinctively reaching out to rub it.

This sudden act of intimacy made Leng Duddu uncomfortable, and she pushed Lu Wu away.

“I’m fine; have you finished reading?”

“Finished.”

Pushed away, Lu Wu could only reluctantly withdraw his hand, refocusing his attention on the documents.

Remembering the contents within, his face filled with shock.

The past few months of actions from this girl had stunned Lu Wu.

Not long after he left, Leng Duddu came out, and Dudu gained an additional personality.

What double personalities were like in others, Lu Wu didn’t know.

What double personalities were like in others, Lu Wu didn’t know.

But after reading the documents, Lu Wu knew that his Dudu’s double personality seemed to be like finding herself a mother.

Leng Duddu seemed to know her own origin from the start.

Even clearer was the purpose of her existence.

To find Lu Wu, to protect Lu Wu!

This was the meaning behind Leng Duddu’s existence.

Thus, after she came forth, she got to grips with her environment and related affairs at a terrifying pace, quickly maturing.

The grown Leng Duddu swiftly stepped into her role and started her mission.

Her first step was to take over Jiangnan University from Lu Wu.

This step was quite effortless for her.

After all, her relationship with Lu Wu and her power were there for all to see, and she also held a significant portion of Lu Group’s shares.

For her, taking over Jiangnan University was an easy task.

Not only did she take over Jiangnan University, but she also brought it back to its peak in just one month.

And while she was developing Jiangnan University, she didn’t forget to use her power to investigate the incident that caused Lu Wu’s feigned death.

In the investigation, one person caught her attention.

That person was none other than Zhang Yunyi, who had helped with Lu Wu’s faked death.

As Leng Duddu investigated Zhang Yunyi, it seemed the latter noticed and reacted first.

Before Leng Duddu could find her, she sought out Leng Duddu first.

As soon as they met, Zhang Yunyi directly spilled the beans about Lu Wu’s feigned death.

After that, Leng Duddu and Zhang Yunyi began to cooperate.

The merger of Jiangnan and Jiangbei, along with Dong University, certainly involved Leng Duddu’s thunderous tactics, but it was also Zhang Yunyi who helped things along.

And now, the University Alliance that is about to be formed is utterly and completely under the influence of Zhang Yunyi.

All of this was within Lu Wu’s expectations.

However, despite having access to the information and understanding how Dudu and Zhang Yunyi communicated and worked together, Lu Wu still couldn’t figure out what Zhang Yunyi wanted to do.

Dudu’s own demands, on the other hand, were relatively straightforward,

just two points.

One was to find Lu Wu.

The other was to find the person who had attacked Lu Wu from behind.

In Leng Duddu’s view, the best way to solve a problem was to eliminate the source of the problem.

To protect Lu Wu, they needed to find the culprit behind the incident that forced Lu Wu to fake his death.

And the best way to catch him was to force him into a situation where he had no choice but to make a move.

The current University Alliance was the perfect opportunity.

Although Leng Duddu still couldn’t be sure who had secretly targeted Lu Wu last time, she was certain that the person did not want to see Lu Wu grow stronger.

Or rather, they did not want to see the power behind Lu Haikong, which supported Lu Wu, expand.

That was why they had previously taken action against Lu Wu.

If they had targeted Lu Wu before, they certainly wouldn’t sit idly by while Dudu, also from Lu Haikong’s camp, gained control of such a vast power as the University Alliance.

Therefore, unless something unexpected happened, they would definitely make a move this time.

What Dudu had to do was to lure the snake out of its hole, catch it, and kill it once and for all.

After fully understanding the situation, Lu Wu felt that Leng Duddu’s plan was a bit too bold and dangerous.

“You know this is very dangerous, right?”

Lu Wu disapproved of this plan.

“We don’t have to rush this. We can wait a year or two until I reach the Epic level, and it won’t be too late to deal with it then.”

Leng Duddu shook her head, “We don’t have that kind of time.”

Lu Wu paused for a moment then also realized,

“Yeah, it’s useless to say anything now; we’ve already come this far.”

It’s impossible to unshoot an arrow already released from the bow.

Now that the University Alliance has been in the works for so long,

even announcing a halt at this point would be futile.

“We need to carefully consider our next steps on this matter.”

Lu Wu quickly adjusted his mindset from evasion to confrontation. He began to share his past experiences and the power he held with Leng Duddu.

In this regard, Lu Wu had no intention of hiding anything from Dudu.

Whether it was Silly or Leng Duddu in front of him,

Lu Wu explained everything he could and should explain.

“So, my current personal power is roughly at the Epic 0 Star level, but if I combine forces with Little Skeleton and the others, I should just about manage to fight against an Epic 1 Star.

Also, I have a group of Evil Summoner forces under my control. They might not be great in battle, but they are capable in intelligence gathering.

Moreover, Feng Xiu of the Zero Organization knows my identity, and I suppose he’ll come to join the fun this time.”

After meticulously finishing his explanation, Lu Wu looked up at Leng Duddu, ready to delve into a deeper discussion about what their next steps should be, only to raise his head and be met with a pair of cold, resentful eyes.

“What’s the situation with Cimu Qingzi?”

“What?”

Lu Wu’s head buzzed.

Previously, Dudu didn’t have such a jealous streak, or at least he had never shown it.

So Lu Wu didn’t give it much thought and went ahead and told her about Cimu Qingzi.

However, he didn’t expect Leng Dudu’s attention to suddenly shift to this issue, making him feel quite uncomfortable.

“Can we not talk about this topic right now?

Doesn’t this topic have nothing to do with the current situation?”

“If you dare to wrong that girl, I will definitely castrate you!”

After Leng Dudu’s fierce threats, she then shifted her focus back to the present and discussed with Lu Wu how they should face the upcoming celebration.

On this matter.

Lu Wu originally thought that with Leng Dudu’s confident demeanor, she must have a solution or some clever strategy in place.

But when he asked, Leng Dudu had nothing.

She had one word, wait!

She planned on sitting back, letting them make a fuss, and then picking off those who jumped out.

When Lu Wu heard this, his head started to buzz.

Are you not being a bit too, you know?

Are you sure you can really control the situation if they start making trouble?

In response to Lu Wu’s doubts, Leng Dudu confidently nodded, giving Lu Wu an unequivocal answer, “I can!”

Lu Wu scratched his head: “Even if a true epic-level powerhouse makes a move?”

“Even if a true epic-level powerhouse makes a move!”

Leng Dudu firmly nodded, radiating an extreme, blinding confidence from within.

For some reason, seeing her confidence settled Lu Wu’s heart.

It seemed like there was a power within Leng Dudu that could calm hearts.

Lu Wu recalled the moment when Leng Dudu casually defeated Fei Bao with a single strike, as well as Dudu’s invisible attribute panel, and couldn’t help asking, “Dudu, what level is your power at now? Have you reached the epic level?”

Leng Dudu nodded her head.

Lu Wu was taken aback, and immediately couldn’t help showing a look of ecstatic joy at clinging to the thighs of a rich woman, coupled with the melancholy of having a silly girl of his own growing up, while not forgetting to further confirm Leng Dudu’s power.

“Epic 1 Star?”

Leng Dudu shook her head, and Lu Wu was once again astounded, the delight on his face deepening.

“Epic 2 Stars?”

Dudu’s head shook again.

Now, Lu Wu’s head buzzed as if it had crashed, followed by an unstoppable sense of swelling pride.

Although he didn’t understand how Dudu’s power had grown, now that Dudu had the power of Epic 3 Stars, Lu Wu felt there was no need for them to be timid. They could completely make waves and get pumped up.

After all, Epic 3 Stars was almost the ceiling of this world.

No one had reached the realm above that.

Since Dudu was already at Epic 3 Stars, what was there to fear?

What Zhang Yunyi, what Zero Organization, what Elder Council, just kick them all away.

However, just as Lu Wu swelled to the point of wanting to violently solve all problems, Leng Dudu at his side couldn’t stand it anymore and blandly reported her actual power level.

“Epic 0 Star!”

With one sentence, Dudu sent Lu Wu from heaven back to hell.

Epic 0 Star, huh?

It seems it’s better to keep a low profile.

# Chapter 400: 397 Prisoner Dragon Secret Realm

Chapter 400: 397 Prisoner Dragon Secret Realm

Epic 0 Star power was actually considered very strong.

At least it was much more than Lu Wu had now.

If Lu Wu had to fight with Dudu now, he reckoned he probably couldn’t beat Dudu.

After all, he had seen Dudu make a move.

With a casual wave of her hand, she shattered two Ultimate Level defense skills.

The only hope for Lu Wu to beat Dudu was “Slaughter of Living Beings,” but the skill was too deadly, and Lu Wu couldn’t control it himself, so it was impossible for Lu Wu to use it against Dudu, right?

This led to the conclusion that if Lu Wu genuinely faced Dudu, he would definitely be at an absolute disadvantage.

This really puzzled Lu Wu.

He had been pushing his limits to the extreme for several months, encountering all sorts of dangers and adventures, yet in the end, he still wasn’t a patch on Dudu calling out for Mom.

It left Lu Wu somewhat autistic, doubting his own cheat.

The only consolation for Lu Wu was that Dudu was his.

He might not be able to beat Dudu, but he could cling to Dudu’s thigh, although he guessed that with the current cold Dudu’s state, if he dared to actually reach out and grab her thigh, he might get hit. But no matter what, that thigh was his.

Moreover, although ‘Leng Dudu’ hadn’t actually offered her leg for Lu Wu to hold, she had prepared a surprise for him.

“Here, take this!”

“What’s this?”

Lu Wu took the token handed over by Dudu and, while he asked casually, he had already seen the attributes of the item.

…

Item: Prisoner Dragon Secret Realm Token

Level: Epic

Description: Well, there’s no description. It’s just an instance token.

…

Upon seeing the attributes of the token, Lu Wu narrowed his eyes slightly, vaguely guessing what it was about.

Leng Dudu’s subsequent explanation also confirmed his guess.

“Little Flood Dragon is in there. Its power should have broken through to the Epic Level by now. You go and bring it out.”

So it was Little Flood Dragon!

Lu Wu was both shocked and delighted; he had thought that before the celebration, he wouldn’t be able to advance to Epic Level, but unexpectedly, another opportunity had come his way.

Surprised and delighted, Lu Wu still had some doubts, “But, your celebration seems to be starting in a couple of days. Can I make it in time?”

Dudu turned her head slightly, “The Prisoner Dragon Secret Realm isn’t that far from Fucheng. Two days should be enough. If really necessary, I can still delay the celebration a bit.

You’d better move fast, though, postponing isn’t easy.”

“I’ll head over in a moment. I’ll come back as soon as I can.

By the way, about the Prisoner Dragon Secret Realm, how did you…”

“I can’t be away for too long now. I must go back first. We’ll talk after you return.”

Lu Wu originally wanted to ask about the Prisoner Dragon Secret Realm.

But Dudu checked the time, interrupted Lu Wu’s questioning, and then got up to leave.

This made Lu Wu quite melancholic.

The feelings have faded, haven’t they?

This girl now even interrupts him.

Is it like with men who become bad when they get money, women become bad when they have power?

Lu Wu felt sour in his heart, when the departing Dudu suddenly changed her expression; Leng Dudu turned into Silly Dudu, and with her signature silly smile, she turned back and ‘gnawed’ at Lu Wu’s face.

That bite left Lu Wu’s mind blank.

By the time he came around, Dudu had already run off.

Watching Dudu, who had disappeared from sight, and covering the gnawed side of his face, Lu Wu could only shake his head: “Really can’t deal with you.”

Following that, Lu Wu began to take action. Carrying the token for the Prisoner Dragon Secret Realm, he got up and left Fucheng, heading toward the sea area Dudu had told him about.

At that moment, Lu Wu’s mind was consumed with finding the Little Flood Dragon as quickly as possible, breaking through to the Epic level as quickly as possible, and returning as quickly as possible.

Beyond that, there was nothing else in Lu Wu’s head.

He hadn’t given much thought to many things.

He hadn’t even considered whether Dudu was giving him the Prisoner Dragon Secret Realm token at this time to send him away.

It wasn’t that his head wasn’t working or that he lacked sufficient caution.

It was because the other person was Dudu.

In fact, Lu Wu was always very cautious, even to the point of having a bit of a persecution complex.

This was most severe when he was forced to fake his death and leave Area 1.

Back then, he saw everyone as a troublemaker, and he thought anyone might harm him.

Even facing Cimu Qingzi, he remained fully vigilant.

Despite Cimu Qingzi having died once for him, Lu Wu never let his guard down. The only one who could make Lu Wu drop his guard was Dudu.

Dudu could be said to be the person Lu Wu trusted the most in this world.

His trust in Dudu was almost without reservation.

Even when Dudu developed a second personality, an exceptionally bizarre and ridiculous situation, Lu Wu trusted him without reserve.

Not to mention the Prisoner Dragon Secret Realm token that Dudu took out at this time.

When Lu Wu had briefly established a connection with the Little Flood Dragon, he indeed felt a powerful force emanating from it, so Lu Wu had no doubt about it in this regard.

He had not even questioned Dudu about where the Prisoner Dragon Secret Realm token came from.

As soon as Dudu left, he rushed off to the Prisoner Dragon Secret Realm like a simpleton with the token, without any clear direction.

He hadn’t noticed at all that when he left, a figure stood under the moonlight, watching him depart.

“Is this the last time I’ll see him?”

With a soft sigh, the figure in the moonlight vanished from sight.

…

Jiangnan, Fucheng.

In a certain villa, a few figures gathered together.

Someone took the initiative to ask, “What’s so urgent that you called us here?”

“Take a look at this first.”

The convenor passed down an item, and as the people present frowned and examined it, their expressions changed.

One person even tore up the item on the spot: “This is utter nonsense, a frame-up by the Education Bureau. These bastards are willing to resort to anything to prevent the formation of the University Alliance. I absolutely refuse to believe this narrative.”

No one paid attention to his fury.

All eyes were focused on the item in their hands, their eyes shining with various kinds of light, their expressions fluctuating.

Finally, a second person raised their head.

“This is no longer a matter we can deal with impulsively.”

“What do you mean by that?” the one who had torn up the item glared menacingly, as if ready to pounce and devour the other. At this point, another person stood up to calm him down.

“Old Zhang, don’t get agitated.

Now is not the time to be agitated. We should think about what we are going to do next, how to deal with this thing.”

“What do you mean, deal with this thing?

Burn this piece of rubbish and be done with it.”

At this point, a fourth person spoke up: “Burn it? That’s easy for you to say. We can burn it, but can others? Old Zhang, this isn’t an issue we can solve by evasion. We have to face it!”

“Confront? How are we supposed to confront?” Old Zhang’s eyebrows raised in question.

At this moment, the convener spoke, “Just let that person give everyone an explanation, right during the celebration!”

As these words were uttered, Old Zhang’s expression changed.

“No, absolutely not, this will disrupt the celebration. I will not allow you to do this.”

Another person began to persuade, “Old Zhang, considering the circumstances, do we have any other choice?

This is the best solution at the moment. It’s better for us to take action than to let others detonate the situation.”

“Shut up, I see now that you lot have been bought by the Education Bureau, you’re betraying Jiangnan University. I will not allow you to do this. I’m going to inform Dudu right now…”

Old Zhang didn’t get to finish his sentence when someone beside him pressed an item against his waist. A flash of electricity followed, and the light from the electricity revealed Old Zhang’s face.

This Old Zhang was none other than Zhang Wentao, the president of Jiangnan University.

Apart from Zhang Wentao, those present were also the higher-ups of Jiangnan University.

As the flash of electricity vanished, Zhang Wentao fell. The faint light failed to illuminate the faces of those few people.

…

At the same time Zhang Wentao fell during the flash of electricity,

On the other side, at the Jiangnan Governor’s Mansion,

Jiang Yuexing was welcoming an unexpected visitor.

Similarly, she received a document just like the one Zhang Wentao saw before he fell.

Looking at the document, Jiang Yuexing’s brow furrowed deeply.

“Isn’t this a bit too much? To use such despicable means.”

“Governor Jiang, what do you mean by that?

Don’t tell me you think we’re framing her?

Take a good look at this document and recall her actions over the past few months. Do you think we’re framing her?”

The person opposite her made a comment that left Jiang Yuexing at a loss for words,

After struggling for a long time, she could only say, “I want evidence. If you don’t have proof, I will never allow you to touch her.”

“As for evidence, we do have some. It’s just that we don’t need to provide it to you. Furthermore,”

At this point, the person opposite Jiang Yuexing paused, a mocking smile playing on their lips, “You must understand one thing, I’m not here to ask for your opinion, I’m here on the orders of the Elder Council.

This operation is authorized by the Elder Council. If you want to keep your seat as Governor, it would be best not to do anything irrational.”

Having said that, the person in front of Jiang Yuexing stood up and left, disregarding the changing expression on her face.

As she watched the person leave, Jiang Yuexing’s fists clenched tightly, veins on her pale forehead bulging time and again, but ultimately, she had to unclench her hands.

Then, Jiang Yuexing hesitated for a moment before taking out her phone to call Dudu.

“They…”

Jiang Yuexing had barely uttered a word when she was interrupted.

“I know, don’t worry about anything. Just watch.”

The call was then hung up, and listening to the dial tone, a deep feeling of powerlessness surged in Jiang Yuexing’s heart.

She felt as if she couldn’t catch her breath, the weight pressing down on her chest.

What to do? What should she do? What could she do?

Lost and helpless, Jiang Yuexing somehow thought of Lu Wu, who was supposed to be dead by now, and subconsciously dialed his number.

The moment she made the call, Jiang Yuexing remembered Lu Wu was already dead.

“Yes, he’s already dead.

Besides, even if he were still alive, what could he do in this situation?”

Thinking so, Jiang Yuexing was about to hang up the phone in her hand.

At that moment, the call was suddenly answered.

From the other end of the phone came the sound of a small Skeleton’s teeth clacking.

(Someone finally phoned Little Skeleton. Who are you, and what do you want?)

…

Off the coast of Fucheng.

After obtaining the Prisoner Dragon Secret Realm Token, Lu Wu immediately rushed to the location, taking a little over two hours to find his destination.

“This should be the place, right?”

Lu Wu glanced around, double-checking to confirm there shouldn’t be any issues.

He then took out the token.

“How is this thing supposed to be used? Directly charge it?”

Mmm, when he got the thing from Dudu, Lu Wu’s caution and IQ had both dropped, and he hadn’t asked then. Now, taking it out, he was a bit clueless.

Luckily, as a professional Cultivation Master, Lu Wu quickly figured out how to use it.

“There we go.”

While speaking, the token in Lu Wu’s hand burst into a brilliant light.

Then, a dragon’s roar full of resentment and hatred that sent shivers down his spine echoed, and a black Dragon Gate appeared out of nowhere.

“It’s open!”

Looking at the black Dragon Gate, a smile spread across Lu Wu’s face.

However, the most excited wasn’t Lu Wu.

It was probably the Little Flood Dragon inside the Prisoner Dragon Secret Realm.

The very moment this black Dragon Gate was opened, the Little Flood Dragon, imprisoned in the deepest part, sensed Lu Wu’s aura.

In that instant, the Little Flood Dragon, which had almost fallen into complete despair after being trapped for several months, burst with a strong sense of hope. It, from the deepest imprisonment, let out a joyous dragon roar.

The sound traveled from the deepest part of the Secret Realm to where the black Dragon Gate was.

“Yo, quite spirited, aren’t you?”

Recognizing it as his own Little Flood Dragon from the roar, Lu Wu’s face showed a smile, preparing to step through the black Dragon Gate and rescue the little guy.

However, just as Lu Wu was about to step through, the Contract with Little Skeleton deeply embedded in his soul suddenly trembled.

Consequently, a rush of information was transmitted through the Contract.

This unexpected transmission of information confused Lu Wu, who didn’t remember to look, and he stepped into the black Dragon Gate.

With that step, Lu Wu immediately felt a terrifying power working on his foot, pulling him in.

Caught off guard, half of Lu Wu’s body was already pulled into it.

Normally, this wouldn’t be problematic; he was planning on going in anyway.

But at that moment, Lu Wu saw the information passed from Little Skeleton, which caused his face to change. Instinctively reaching out, he grabbed the edge of the Dragon Gate, forcefully stopping himself from entering the Secret Realm.

Then, with explosive strength, Lu Wu yanked his entire body out.

This scene was sensed by the imprisoned Little Flood Dragon underground. The little creature blinked in shock, then let out a series of roars, urging Lu Wu to come in and save it.

Lu Wu understood but he couldn’t go in.

“Sorry, I can’t go in right now.”

As he spoke, Lu Wu pulled himself entirely out of the Secret Realm. Sensing Lu Wu had left, the Little Flood Dragon felt abandoned, that Lu Wu didn’t want it anymore. In utter despair, it let out a hysterical wail, with large tears rolling down.

And just as the Little Flood Dragon felt hopeless, an arm stained with blood reached into the Secret Realm again.

“Dudu needs me, so I can’t come in, but I won’t give up on you. Take this, hopefully, it can help you escape. I need you on my side too.”

Saying this, Lu Wu opened his hand, and a drop of golden blood fell down.

That was the essence of the Epic Dragon Heart Lu Wu had devoured. He had opened his own heart and extracted the most quintessential unrefined essence of blood he had yet to refine for the Little Flood Dragon…

…

Is there no one left?

I haven’t talked about this chapter recently; if there’s no one around, I guess it’s time to let myself go.

# Chapter 401: 398 Celebration

Chapter 401: 398 Celebration

In the Prisoner Dragon Secret Realm.

When Lu Wu opened his hand,

a drop of golden blood fell.

This blood, which should have had no life force, seemed to come alive.

Golden substance flowed within the blood, Dragon Power emerged, and a faint illusion of a golden Divine Dragon enveloped the golden blood.

Then, the golden blood locked onto its target, swiftly swimming towards the Little Flood Dragon tied to the Prisoner Dragon Pillar below in the Secret Realm, and quickly arrived in front of the Little Flood Dragon.

The Little Flood Dragon, despite knowing the power within the golden blood could strengthen it, was still very upset.

After all, the place it was in was terrifying.

It felt more secure with Lu Wu coming to rescue it than relying on the golden blood.

Moreover, Lu Wu had just been outside and could have come in to save it, but his not entering was a huge blow to the Little Flood Dragon.

Someone surnamed Zhou had once said,

Human emotions are difficult to empathize with, and similarly, the emotions between humans and Flood Dragons are hard to align.

The Little Flood Dragon didn’t know what had happened when someone was about to enter.

Nor did it know the pain Lu Wu endured when excavating the golden blood.

It was just very displeased.

It felt abandoned by Lu Wu.

So, in a fit of rage, it swallowed the golden blood.

The moment it swallowed the golden blood, golden light burst forth from its body, illuminating the ghostly and gloomy Prisoner Dragon Secret Realm.

…

Meanwhile, outside the Secret Realm.

After placing the golden blood down and pulling his hand away from the Prisoner Dragon Secret Realm, Lu Wu’s attention wasn’t on the Secret Realm anymore.

His focus was on the message he had just received.

It was conveyed by Little Skeleton from Jiang Yuexing, regarding the challenges Dudu was about to face.

After roughly understanding the situation, Lu Wu’s expression turned somewhat grim.

It was because of the situation Dudu was about to face, and also because at that moment, he realized Dudu’s intention in giving him the Prisoner Dragon Secret Realm Token.

Its purpose wasn’t to boost his power.

Or rather, the real purpose wasn’t to enhance his power to help Dudu through a tough time, but to send him away.

As soon as the Prisoner Dragon Secret Realm opened, Lu Wu realized, once he entered the Secret Realm, coming out shortly thereafter would be almost impossible.

“Looks like that girl has turned bad, eh!”

Lu Wu grit his teeth.

His old Dudu never used to deceive him.

So, what to do if Dudu is being naughty?

“What else can I do? Give her a beating!”

Lu Wu wiped the blood from the corner of his mouth, clenched his fist, and prepared to rush back to Fucheng.

However, the moment Lu Wu made his move, a figure appeared before him, stopping Lu Wu and waving at him: “Yo, long time no see.”

On Lu Wu’s side, looking at the sudden woman before him, his eyes couldn’t help but narrow…

…

Jiangnan, Fucheng.

Time passed quickly amidst various undercurrents.

Two days flashed by, and the celebration at Jiangnan University commenced as scheduled.

On the day the celebration started, the 10000-acre campus welcomed various forces that had flooded into Fucheng recently.

Celebrating the completion of Jiangnan University’s new campus, prepared to participate in the upcoming University Alliance teams.

The commercial groups associated with Jiangnan University due to various interests,

and the Summoner and Cultivation Master teams dependent on the development of Jiangnan University.

These three parts were clearly inclined towards Jiangnan University’s forces, arriving earlier, but a careful observation would reveal that many from these forces looked troubled.

They appeared deep in thought as if they had received some troubling news.

In stark contrast were the spirited individuals from the Education Bureau, apparently eager to stir trouble, already brimming with a winning attitude.

Elsewhere within Jiangnan University, the vast majority were diligently busy.

Busy hosting guests, maintaining order, and explaining various things to visitors.

They were doing their utmost with their power to make this celebration successful.

Their hearts filled with hope and pride.

At the same time, another group was gathering to discuss the next course of action.

Like the others, they too were trying their best, doing what they believed was the right thing.

At this moment, every corner of Jiangnan University’s campus was bustling with a variety of people.

Scenes of stark contrasts continually unfolded.

Above all these, sitting in the student council president’s office was Dudu.

She looked out the window obliquely, overseeing various scenes within the campus, her beautiful face filled with calmness.

This calmness did not come from ignorance.

In fact, she knew what was happening in every corner of the school.

She even knew about many events that were unfolding and even had the power to prevent many of these events.

But she did nothing.

Not because she couldn’t, but because she didn’t want to.

What she wanted was to let them act recklessly.

To catch the rats, you must let the rats jump out, right?

After an unknown period, as Dudu gazed out the window lost in thought, the office door was knocked on, and long legs walked in.

If Lu Wu were here at this moment, he would definitely recognize that the person who appeared in this office was none other than the Hengheng Monster, who had signed a decades-long indenture with him.

At this time, she had become Dudu’s assistant, specifically helping Dudu handle miscellaneous tasks.

“President, it’s almost time for your appearance!”

“Hmm!”

Dudu nodded her head, rose from her position, and took a final look at the photograph with Lu Wu on her desk before walking out of the office.

With Dudu stepping out of her office, today’s celebration officially ended, and for another group, another celebration formally began.

…

Jiangnan University Auditorium.

“Next, please welcome Vice President of the Student Council, Miss Pang Dudu, to speak.”

Upon hearing the announcement from a beautiful lady on the stage, ninety-nine percent of the people in the auditorium straightened their posture.

Everyone knew that a major drama was about to unfold.

Some were nervous, some were eager, some were worried…

Under the watchful eyes of the crowd, the sound of high heels clacking against the wooden floor echoed.

Following that, Dudu, dressed in a suit and donning high heels, with a height of 1.8 meters but a presence that seemed to stretch for 5 meters, emerged from backstage.

Dudu took the stage formally.

She took the microphone from the lady and instead of saying something that would shock everyone, she began reading from a speech written by the Hengheng Monster.

“I am delighted that everyone could join us for the opening celebration of the new campus of Jiangnan University…”

Dudu’s speech was very formal.

But from the moment she started speaking, an indescribable atmosphere began to brew among the audience.

Pairs of eyes filled with various emotions stared at Lu Wu on stage, all waiting for someone to take the lead.

Dudu on stage was well aware, but she ignored it and continued to read her prepared script as if she knew nothing.

She had the patience.

“On behalf of all students at Jiangnan University, I sincerely thank everyone who took time out of their busy schedules to join this celebration!”

With that, Dudu bowed to the audience.

At the same time, rhythmic applause rang throughout the venue, the scene was harmoniously amiable yet ludicrously false.

And this pretense was soon shattered.

Dudu discarded the finished script to the side and started the real agenda of today’s celebration.

“Additionally, at this celebration, I would like to announce that Jiangnan University will be joining hands with Jiangning University, Ze University, and a total of 32 Summoner Universities for deep collaborations in education, business, and resources. We will also form a University Alliance.

Upon formation, I will serve as the inaugural chairman of the University Alliance!”

As Dudu dropped this somewhat stale bombshell.

The atmosphere within the auditorium reached its peak.

Jiangnan University’s students, some faculty members of Jiangnan University, certain involved parties from those 32 Summoner Universities mentioned by Dudu, and entities with business dealings with Jiangnan University cheered at this moment.

Obviously, everyone was waiting for this announcement.

Especially the students of Jiangnan University.

After all, once the University Alliance was established, Jiangnan University would become the top institution within the Alliance, directly benefitting them.

However, amidst the cheers, many couldn’t help but reveal sardonic cold smiles.

At the same moment, some of those associated with the 32 Summoner Universities named by Dudu also wore unsightly expressions.

Then, the lady on stage announced,

“Next, please welcome the Vice-Chancellor of Jiangning University to give an important speech.”

With her words, the spotlight in the auditorium illuminated a middle-aged man, as the focus of the entire hall shifted to him.

At this moment, the Vice-Chancellor’s countenance looked particularly grim as it shifted through various changes.

He had to stand up but didn’t head towards the stage, instead, he stood and said,

“Well, regarding the matter of the University Alliance, our Jiangning University might need to reconsider.”

“Boom!”

That statement struck like thunder, leaving the students of Jiangnan University dazed.

“What’s happening? Is this a change of heart?”

“What went wrong? What’s with Jiangning University? Why would they suddenly back out?”

“Is the Education Bureau playing tricks?”

Jiangnan University, unaware of the truth, was surprisingly angry, feeling they had been betrayed.

However, this was just the beginning.

After the vice chancellor of Jiangning University declared they needed to reconsider matters of the University Alliance, the vice chancellor from Ze University quickly stood up.

“And us, we still have some doubts about certain details of the cooperation within the University Alliance; we need to discuss and clear them up.”

“Another one!”

The students of Jiangnan University were seething with anger, and soon after, the third, fourth, fifth…

One after another, representatives from the universities, within fifteen minutes, all 32 representatives who had originally signed the intent of the University Alliance stood up and expressed their need to reconsider.

This was tantamount to tearing up Dudu’s plan for the University Alliance on the spot.

On the first day of the new campus celebration, this group of people slapped Jiangnan University in the face like this, which was intolerable for the people of Jiangnan University.

“How can they do this? Are they playing with us?”

Someone with a fiery temper immediately stood up.

Zhao Kai Ming pointed at the face of the vice chancellor of Jiangning University and cursed, “It was you who begged us initially, and now that everything that needed to be done has been done, you say you won’t do it at a critical time, where is your honor?

No, you better give me an explanation for this, or I won’t let this go!”

The person Zhao Kai Ming pointed at and scolded looked resentful and helpless.

They didn’t want this, but what could they do.

Facing the furious Zhao Kai Ming, all he could do was keep his head down and not respond.

Zhao Kai Ming grew even more furious at this behavior, “Speak up, why aren’t you speaking now!

You clearly betrayed us, how dare you act so damned resentful?”

At the moment when the other party was being publicly criticized to the point of doubting their life, someone finally spoke up.

“In this matter, you really can’t blame them!”

At these words, Zhao Kai Ming was stunned, turning his head with a look of disbelief.

What caused him to react in this way was the problem with the speaker.

If it had been someone from the Education Bureau speaking at this time, Zhao Kai Ming would unquestionably have retorted fiercely, but the problem was that it was one of their own, Old Fang from Jiangnan University.

Old Fang was a veteran at Jiangnan University.

Previously, his position was only below Zhang Wentao and Li Mingrui, and he had always been very low-key. After Li Mingrui was dismissed, he naturally became the vice chancellor of Jiangnan University, and during this period, he had made considerable contributions to Jiangnan University.

However, it was such a person who had now stabbed Jiangnan University in the back.

This left Zhao Kai Ming utterly perplexed and speechless.

“Old Fang, are you out of your mind? Do you realize what you are saying?”

“Of course, I know what I am saying. The reason the respective chancellors wanted to delay the matter of the alliance is not their fault but ours, and to be exact, it lies with a certain individual from our Jiangnan University!”

With that, Old Fang paused, his eyes landing on Dudu who was on the stage.

At that moment, he became the center of attention, and his slight gesture was naturally captured by everyone present.

This made the students and most of the faculty of Jiangnan University absolutely furious.

Good grief, not only did he betray Jiangnan University, but he even dared to point the finger at Dudu—what was he trying to do?

At that moment, those with ulterior motives in the audience couldn’t help but smirk.

They knew the real show was about to begin.

A conspiracy against Pang Dudu was about to unfold, and they were quite looking forward to seeing how Dudu would handle this next wave…

# Chapter 402: 399 causes trouble

Chapter 402: 399 causes trouble

Jiangnan University, the auditorium.

At this moment, the students of Jiangnan University inside the auditorium were somewhat doubting the meaning of life.

With the announcement of the formation of the University Alliance by Dudu,

it began with successive betrayals by the alliance schools, followed by a sudden thrust from Jiangnan University’s Vice President Fang Jin.

Each strike was a heavy blow to the students of Jiangnan University.

Especially the second blow, this kind of direct slander against Dudu, was seen as a direct strike at their vulnerable spot.

However, just as they were about to explode and Zhao Kai Ming was preparing to take action against Fang Jin, a calm voice sounded.

“Let him speak!”

This statement drew everyone’s attention back to Dudu.

At this point, some noticed that in the face of these successive betrayals, Dudu on the stage remained unusually calm.

There was no reaction when betrayed by the alliance schools, and even when Fang Jin stood up, Dudu didn’t even lift an eyelid.

This calmed the furious students of Jiangnan University, and their hearts settled down as well.

After all, by this time, Dudu had already replaced Lu Wu and had become the new pillar of Jiangnan University.

Their confidence in Dudu was even stronger than in Lu Wu.

After all, during the time Dudu took over Jiangnan University, her achievements far exceeded those of Lu Wu.

The students of Jiangnan University naturally had more confidence in her than in Lu Wu.

Since Dudu had spoken, Zhao Kai Ming and the others naturally stopped to watch what was about to unfold.

They wanted to see what kind of slander Fang Jin could spew about Dudu.

Even Fang Jin, who had originally stood up, felt a tremble in his heart when he heard Dudu’s words and saw her calm gaze.

But he had already stood up.

There is no going back in shooting an arrow; it was basically impossible for him to just sit back down.

Nobody would act as if nothing had happened, so he had no choice but to forge ahead, facing whatever came.

Besides, if nothing unexpected happened, Dudu was doomed today; he felt no need to fear Dudu.

So, clenching his teeth, he directly threw out his prepared bombshell.

“The reason the various universities introduced the University Alliance is entirely due to personal reasons of Chairman Pang.

Because they all received a piece of news about Chairman Pang.

A shocking piece of news that has a major impact on the entire Alliance.”

At this, he even paused.

At this point, the suspense only angered everyone further.

Zhao Kai Ming and others snapped instantly.

“What nonsense are you talking about, just spit it out!”

“Don’t use such despicable tactics, slander openly and straightforwardly!”

……

Meanwhile, Fang Jin was unusually calm.

Ignoring Zhao Kai Ming and the others, he turned to face the auditorium and shifted his tone.

“Ladies and gentlemen, do you remember when you first knew Chairman Pang?

I believe most of you here got to know Chairman Pang after she took over Jiangnan University.

Of course, some might have noticed her earlier, perhaps during the University League, when she was behind President Lu Wu then.

Or even earlier, some of you might have noticed her during the High School League.”

As Fang Jin made these head-scratching remarks, a large screen suddenly appeared behind the stage, displaying three photographs of Dudu.

They were pictures of Dudu from her high school, university, and after taking over Jiangnan University respectively.

“What are you going to do with these photos?”

Zhao Kai Ming’s brow furrowed, sensing something.

Fang Jin continued ignoring him, pointing at the three photos and said, “These are photos of Chairman Pang from three different periods. What do you see from these photos?

You see three completely different Chairman Pangs, right?

And the differences in Chairman Pang during these periods aren’t just physical appearances, but more importantly, in her personality.

During her high school and university years, although Chairman Pang’s weight was slightly different, from some of her actions, it is not hard to see that she was just a gentle and timid ordinary girl to the bone.”

“But after President Lu Wu’s demise and Chairman Pang took over Jiangnan University, the personality she showed was completely different from before.

Don’t you find this very strange?”

Zhao Kai Ming’s expression changed, and he was the first to stand up, “What’s so strange about that? Everyone knows that due to the shock of President Lu’s incident, Chairman Pang underwent a great change, don’t they?”

Zhao Kai Ming was trying to defend Dudu.

But he forgot, he was never a good teammate.

His statement not only didn’t help Dudu but successfully gave Fang Jin an opening.

Hearing this, Fang Jin narrowed his eyes, “It’s indeed something everyone knows, but the question is, who did this information come from?

Undoubtedly, these words, these so-called facts, came from Chairman Pang herself.

But is it really the truth?

Don’t you think that these so-called facts seem more like deliberately fabricated lies?”

“You!”

“Another point, I admit, the death of President Lu Wu might have stimulated Chairman Pang, possibly causing some changes in her personality, but it surely wouldn’t cause changes to her power and intelligence, right?

In terms of power, when President Lu died, Chairman Pang was only at Lord Level.

But as soon as President Lu died, Chairman Pang’s power broke through to King-level.

If you say that President Lu’s death stimulated Chairman Pang and prompted her power breakthrough, I might reluctantly believe it, but the problem is her power didn’t just break through to King-level that simply.

In just over half a year, up until a few days ago, Chairman Pang already had the power to defeat the Fei Family’s Epic Zero-star strength with a single palm.

What do you say to that kind of power increase?”

“Couldn’t Chairman Pang just have high talent?”

“Sure, Chairman Pang has high talent, but no matter how high her talent is, she can’t surpass that one, right? That one couldn’t achieve such a terrifying improvement in just over half a year.

Well, let’s set aside the matter of power for now, let’s talk about intelligence.”

Chairman Pang, when President Lu Wu was still here, was known for her wit. Her academic performance was barely passable, and she relied entirely on her Summoned Beast for battle, even once nearly being deceived out of her energy despite heavy protection.

In terms of intelligence, she couldn’t be called mentally deficient, but overall her performance was average or even slightly below.

However, after she took control of Jiangnan University, Chairman Pang changed.

She became astute and decisive, transforming Jiangnan University into its current state in just a few months, even to the point of wanting to form a University Alliance. This level of intelligence and capability was simply monstrous.

So the question arises, what kind of mental stimulus could transform a timid and foolish girl into the queen we see today?”

Fang Jin’s words left Zhao Kai Ming speechless.

Being slow-witted, he struggled to think of a retort.

At this moment, someone took over his task. The Deputy Director of the Education Bureau, Wang Yuanming, adjusted his glasses, “This is indeed somewhat baffling.”

“This isn’t just baffling; it’s downright unbelievable!

Is it possible for the death of a person to transform someone like this?”

“Really, can the death of a companion elevate someone to the pinnacle of their life? So, the reason I haven’t achieved anything significant in life is that my brothers refuse to die?”

“Among the Summoners present, those who have some experience, who hasn’t lost a few companions? Which of them could transform like Chairman Pang following the death of a companion?”

…

Inside the great hall, various discussions sparked off under the influence of some interested parties.

This made Zhao Kai Ming and others turn extremely dark-faced, but it made Fang Jin’s eyebrows lift, as this was exactly what he wanted. He seized the moment to strike while the iron was hot.

“Merely dying cannot transform a person like this, but what if it were two people?”

Fang Jin’s words initially confounded the listeners.

However, those present either knew the script already or were cunning enough to immediately grasp the implication of Fang Jin’s words.

Fang Jin looked at Dudu, who still maintained a calm facade, and smirked, launching his final assault.

“If Chairman Pang is Chairman Pang, her transformation seems extraordinary.

But what if Chairman Pang is not Pang Duddu?”

“Is it possible that Pang Duddu actually died over half a year ago?

At that time, members of the Zero Organization together with the Demon Suppression Bureau Director not only killed Lu Wu but also Pang Duddu. However, Pang Duddu’s death was never disclosed.

They concealed the secret of Pang Duddu’s death, arranging for someone to impersonate Pang Duddu.

Then, this impostor, using Lu Wu’s death as a pretext, boldly changed her image and personality before taking control of Jiangnan University.”

Dudu’s supporters, such as Zhao Kai Ming, could no longer bear to listen.

“You’re spouting slander!”

“If not so, how do you explain such a vast change in Chairman Pang?

How do you explain the development of Jiangnan University over the past several months?

Especially the latter, it’s clear there’s a force pushing from behind.

If this isn’t the case, even if she had extraordinary talent, she couldn’t have developed Jiangnan University into what it is now, and even considered forming a University Alliance, in just half a year.

Don’t you see through this grand scheme?

The so-called Chairman Pang in front of us is not Pang Duddu at all, but an Evil Summoner disguised in the skin of Pang Duddu.

“She is a chess piece that the Zero Organization embedded within the Alliance, Jiangnan University, the University Alliance. Can’t you see that the Zero Organization is playing a major game here?

If we hadn’t discovered this early, the consequences would have been unimaginable once they succeeded, the entire Alliance might even have fallen into their hands.”

Fang Jin’s desperate shouting stunned everyone present.

The clueless audience was brainwashed by his speech, their faces filled with panic when they looked at Dudu, some even breaking out in a cold sweat.

Even the students of Jiangnan University wore expressions of shock and suspicion.

At this point, individuals from the Education Bureau and other forces couldn’t sit still any longer.

“Such a thing has happened! Chairman Pang, you must give us an explanation for this.”

“Yes, this matter is of great importance. We must investigate carefully. Next, please accompany us to Beijing for an inquiry, Chairman Pang.”

“Evil People of the Zero Organization harm the natural order. We absolutely cannot allow them to do whatever they want on our turf!”

……

At this point, the groundwork was sufficiently laid; those who wanted to act did so, arrogantly demanding an explanation from Pang Duddu.

Instantly, the entire auditorium was filled with their denunciations.

Of course, at this time, there were still many supporters of Dudu on Jiangnan University’s side.

They stood up to defend Dudu, but compared to the denouncers, they had no advantage other than slightly greater numbers.

Among the denunciation of these big shots, these supporters’ voices were like small ripples under a towering wave, completely ignored by everyone.

Meanwhile, amidst the denunciations, two individuals in the auditorium sat in a corner, watching the scene unfold with bewildered faces.

Well, if they weren’t Evil Cultivators, if they weren’t the top-tier of the Zero Organization, under this atmosphere, they might have actually believed that Dudu was an Evil Summoner.

As the commotion escalated, with some even wanting to rush up and seize Dudu, one of them quirked the corner of his mouth and said, “See, these are their tactics.

We kill by taking action; they accomplish their goals just by using their mouths.

With just a few flaps of their lips, they can easily bring about someone’s demise, without even needing any evidence.”

“In terms of killing, they may not have as many methods as we do, but when it comes to scheming, all of us combined aren’t as dirty as any one of them alone. However, such dirty tactics probably came from that one person. If it weren’t for the timing being off, I really would have dug him out to take a look.”

The other one smirked while scanning the auditorium, seemingly searching for something.

“Have you not found him yet?”

“Not yet, no sightings so far, but he’s bound to show up!”

At the mention of ‘he,’ the looker grimaced with teeth clenched, his hatred almost taking on a visible form. If Lu Wu were here, he would definitely recognize him; it was none other than Feng Xiu, whom he had tricked recently.

And the one beside him was the Fifth Messenger of the Zero Organization.

“Yes, with that guy’s personality, he definitely won’t just stand by. Unless something unexpected happens, it’s about time for his dramatic entrance to turn the tide.”

At this, the Fifth Messenger smiled smugly.

Beside him, Feng Xiu also laughed, a smile full of boundless murderous intent: “Turn the tide, huh? I’m really looking forward to his performance.”

Almost at the same moment that Feng Xiu finished speaking, the door of the auditorium was violently kicked open.

A figure, exuding murderous intent and authority, stormed into the auditorium.

The sudden kick and the loud noise it generated attracted everyone’s attention, and when they clearly saw who the newcomer was, they were all stunned by his identity.

At that moment, the newcomer didn’t care about the astonishment of the crowd. He stormed in, his face furious, and roared through the auditorium, “Whoever dares touch her, I will kill his entire family!”

# Chapter 403: 400 They are right

Chapter 403: 400 They are right

Jiangnan University, the Grand Auditorium.

Everyone’s gaze at this moment concentrated on the entrance, fixating on the youth who burst through an abraded door, his face twisted as if choosing someone to devour.

Many recognized the identity of this guy, especially since Wang Yuanming, the vice commissioner of the Education Bureau, saw him and instantly his brows furrowed into the shape of a river.

It was Fei Yun who had just been humiliatingly slapped in the face by Pang Duddu a couple of days ago.

Wang Yuanming had not expected that, after being publicly humiliated and even locked up by Pang Duddu, this guy would still show up, and in such a manner at that, starting off with such harsh language—had this guy been kicked in the head by a donkey?

Even being a pathetic sycophant isn’t done this way, right?

While Wang Yuanming nursed a headache, many looked at Fei Yun with eyes full of diverse expressions.

Of course, most could not escape a mix of ridicule and mockery.

However, at this moment, Fei Yun completely disregarded these.

After he pushed open the giants doors and let out a hysterical roar, his eyes fell upon Dudu on stage, his face revealing a profound happiness.

“Lady Pang, I have understood your intentions!”

What the hell?

What intentions?

Fei Yun’s nonsensical words completely baffled everyone present.

Especially Wang Yuanming and others, as far as they knew, there was seemingly no interaction between Pang Duddu and Fei Yun, right?

The only interaction seemed to be a few days ago when Pang Duddu injured Fei Yun’s bodyguards and threw them into prison. Could that be what Pang Duddu considered her intentions?

“Yes, that’s right, Lady Pang sending me to prison, injuring Mr. Fei is the biggest sign of her intentions.

Don’t think I cannot see it, Lady Pang, you are actually protecting me, aren’t you?”

This was the reason Fei Yun had come up with during the two days and nights in prison for why Dudu treated him this way.

“Yes, it must be like this.

Lady Pang, you knew early on that the despicable scoundrels of the Education Bureau had hatched this plan to deal with you.

Lady Pang, knowing your upcoming situation would be dangerous, you didn’t want me to also fall into danger because of you, which is why you treated me like that before, right?”

As he said this, Fei Yun’s face nearly burst with happiness.

The Dudu on stage shook her head indifferently: “No, I didn’t think that at all!”

She really hadn’t thought that; she simply found him repulsive.

But now, Fei Yun completely refused to believe it.

“No, that’s what you’re thinking!

I know, saying these things now, showing this attitude is to make me leave, to keep me out of this whirlpool.

This is your kindness, I know it!

But I won’t go!”

At this moment, Fei Yun clenched his fists, facing all those in the Grand Auditorium, his expression gradually resolute.

“Even though I, Fei Yun, know that I am a wastrel without power, without talent, and with a terrible personality.

Even though I know I do not deserve Lady Pang.

But today, at this moment, I will do everything in my power to protect Lady Pang.

Now, I, Fei Yun, declare here that if anyone dares touch Lady Pang, I will kill their entire family, and if I can’t, I will commit suicide in their home!”

Fei Yun, roaring, rushed to the front of the stage, arms wide in a gesture of single-handedly protecting Dudu.

Looking at this guy’s antics, the brains of everyone present really buzzed.

Even Feng Xiu, who had been enjoying the spectacle from the side, was astounded.

“Did a man like Fei Yinghao really have such a grandson?

Could it be that he accidentally raised the placenta instead of the child?”

Anyone could see that Dudu’s disdain for Fei Yun was heartfelt, wasn’t it?

How could he keep up the self-deceiving gambit after being so despised by someone else?

And to have deceived himself to the point of ruin; isn’t such a guy a bit too pitiable?

While Feng Xiu and his group still had the mood to make comments, Wang Yuanming’s side was in no mood for that.

No matter if this guy was brain dead or not, his charging out had now become a big problem for them.

The guy obviously had gone crazy, and without subduing him, it was impossible to continue troubling Dudu. Of course, it was very simple to subdue him since Fei Yun had no bodyguards with him at the moment.

The problem was, his identity was clear as day.

Fei Yunghao’s grandson!

What status did Fei Yinghao hold? One of the twelve elders.

Nobody dared to offend him lightly, and anyone who messed with Fei Yun now would likely be hated by Fei Yinghao for a lifetime.

No one wanted to be hated for a lifetime by such a crazed and debauched scion.

That’s what caused the situation, which had been going smoothly, to suddenly freeze.

Just as the standoff was dragging on, a commanding voice sounded in the auditorium.

“Have you caused enough trouble?”

The sound of this voice made the entire auditorium shake.

Everyone looked up and saw two old men who had appeared in the auditorium at some point.

The one on the left was an old man wearing a black Tang suit, gold-rimmed glasses, and full of white hair. This man, named Lu Zheng, was the head of the Education Bureau.

And the one to his right, dressed in coarse clothes and with a rough appearance, looked like an old farmer.

This person was the one who had just spoken, also the one who stunned the whole audience.

Even Feng Xiu and the others were shocked: “Fei Yinghao? Why did he come?”

The Fifth Messenger glanced once: “It’s not the main body; it’s probably just an avatar.”

“An avatar, huh? Then there’s nothing worth caring about.”

The two of them re-entered the mode of watching the drama unfold.

Meanwhile, on Fei Yun’s side.

Seeing his grandfather appear, he too was startled at first, but his reaction after the shock was joy.

“Grandfather, your timing is perfect. These people are shameless, throwing Dirty Water on Lady Pang. Please stand up for Lady Pang!”

Hearing this, Fei Yinghao’s face darkened.

While others were creating chaos for their fathers, this kid was creating chaos for his grandfather, pulling him into the vortex he had started; was he really not afraid of drowning his grandfather?

Fei Yinghao’s avatar glanced at Lu Zheng, who followed the “see no evil” principle, implying that the matter of his grandson should be managed by himself.

They also didn’t want Fei Yinghao to muddle in these troubled waters, and Lu Zheng wasn’t going to delay for two extra days just to bring Fei Yinghao’s avatar here.

Since the others were being sensible, Fei Yinghao naturally wouldn’t let his grandson fool around.

“Regarding this matter, whether it’s true or false, whether there’s defamation involved, the Alliance will investigate thoroughly, and the Elder Council will conduct a thorough investigation.

You are to come back to Beijing with me immediately!”

Fei Yinghao gestured for someone to bring Fei Yun, but Fei Yun refused.

“No way! Today, if you don’t stand up for Lady Pang, I will absolutely not leave. Not only will I not leave, but I will also renounce you as my grandfather!”

Fei Yinghao’s face turned even darker.

Although this grandson usually didn’t give him much peace of mind, today he was clearly even more troublesome.

“Rebellious, aren’t you!”

“Try to force me, and you’ll have no grandson!”

Fei Yinghao was about to drag Fei Yun away without any further explanation when the guy actually pulled out a short knife and held it against his own neck.

Fei Yun put the knife to his neck, and the situation was once again at a standoff.

Fei Yinghao understood his troublesome grandson all too well.

At a glance, he knew that the boy was serious this time.

This gave Fei Yinghao a particularly big headache.

He couldn’t figure out what was so special about that Pang Duddu on stage…

Okay, she truly was very impressive.

In terms of looks, power, and methods, she was among the most top-notch in the world.

Indeed, any man would be crazy for such a woman, willing to do anything for her. It seemed that Fei Yun’s actions for her weren’t so foolish after all.

But the problem was, she simply didn’t take notice of his grandson Fei Yun.

She couldn’t even be bothered to give him a proper look, so why was Fei Yun going through all this trouble for her?

Fei Yinghao let out a long sigh and said to his grandson, “All this mischief is pointless, even if you want me to be fair, you must have evidence to prove her innocence!”

“Evidence?” As soon as Fei Yun heard his grandfather’s tone, his eyes lit up, “Of course I have evidence!

Lady Pang is definitely not an Evil Summoner, she bears no Evil Energy.”

As soon as Fei Yun’s words landed, Wang Yuanming threw out a report.

“This is an inspection report from Master Gutian of the Cultivation Center, conducted on some of Pang Duddu’s personal items we’ve collected.

The report shows traces of extremely subtle Evil Energy on those items.

This proves that Lady Pang indeed possesses Evil Energy within her.”

Of course, if someone was planning something, they would’ve prepared thoroughly for all aspects.

Fei Yun’s face turned ashen as he looked at the report.

“That’s fake, it must be fake.

Right, Summoned Beasts, if you say Lady Pang is an imposter, then why haven’t her Summoned Beasts…”

He didn’t get to finish his sentence when Fang Jin threw out another file, “This is the behavior diary of both of Lady Pang’s Summoned Beasts.

The diaries show that after Lu Wu’s fall, both of Lady Pang’s Summoned Beasts exhibited various degrees of personality and power changes.

The one called Tuantuan, a pig, evolved immediately, changing in appearance, strength, and temperament.

Initially lazy, it began dominating Lu Wu’s two left-behind Summoned Beasts every day.

By the way, Lu Wu’s two Summoned Beasts also vanished recently, and we have evidence to suggest that they might have sensed something and were silenced.

Lady Pang’s other Summoned Beast, the one with King-level Quality, disappeared without a trace after Lu Wu’s fall.”

“You’re spreading rumors!

Her parents, what about Lady Pang’s parents? Can’t they even recognize their own daughter?”

“It’s unfortunate but they really can’t tell, after all, they are just Ordinary people.

Plus, and this is the most important point, they have also disappeared recently. We can’t find any trace of them at all.

All signs suggest that they were probably silenced too!”

…

Fei Yun racked his brain, trying to come up with evidence to prove that Dudu was indeed Dudu.

But how could his hastily thought-up evidence compare to the carefully prepared one?

Every piece of “evidence” he proposed was eventually overturned and proven wrong.

By the end of it, not only had Fei Yun failed to prove that Dudu was Dudu, but he had also inadvertently helped those who wanted to frame Dudu by proving that she was not Dudu.

Finally, Fei Yun despaired.

Turning to look at the Dudu behind him, his face betrayed deep remorse.

“I’m sorry, I’m just too useless.

I’ve let you down!”

“But rest assured, no matter what, I will protect you, even if it costs me my life. I won’t hesitate!”

As he spoke, Fei Yun pushed the knife a bit further into his own neck, and blood spurted out.

“Xiaoyun!”

This startled Fei Yinghao, and he instinctively moved to snatch the knife from Fei Yun’s hand.

“Stay back, if you come any closer, I’ll show you my death. If you can’t save Lady Pang today, I’ll die in front of you!”

Watching Fei Yun, whose body was now half-covered in blood, Fei Yinghao felt such a headache his temples throbbed.

During his headache, Dudu, who had been calmly sitting and watching everything unfold on the stage, finally reacted.

As if finally moved by Fei Yun’s actions, she stood up and walked towards Fei Yun, snatching the knife held against his neck.

“Lady Pang?”

Only then did Fei Yun realize Dudu was behind him.

This was the first time he was so close to Dudu; he froze, his heart pounding uncontrollably, blood rushing to his forehead.

At that moment, an indescribable happiness filled him.

Fei Yun’s mind was full of thoughts: Dudu had come over, Dudu was right behind him, Dudu was holding the knife, Dudu didn’t want him to die.

Fei Yinghao and Lu Zheng on the other side also breathed a sigh of relief at this point.

They thought Dudu was sensible.

Although she held no affection for Fei Yun, his sacrifices must have moved her to some extent.

Otherwise, she wouldn’t have come forward at this moment.

As for whether she would harm Fei Yun, they weren’t too worried; after all, they knew that Dudu was indeed Dudu and she wasn’t a real Evil Summoner, so she probably wouldn’t hurt Fei Yun.

Moreover, harming Fei Yun would definitely not be a rational action for the current Dudu.

The most sensible thing would be to further gain Fei Yun’s affection.

And now, Dudu had already snatched away the knife that Fei Yun held to his neck.

This completely relieved Fei Yinghao and the others.

It also made the Fifth Messenger’s gaze turn playful.

“What’s the situation? Moved?

This kid isn’t too bad; if he tries a bit harder, maybe he really has a chance to cuckold Lu Wu. Should I help him out?

Hmm, Lu Wu’s face would definitely be a sight to see.”

However, at this moment, the Fifth Messenger next to Feng Xiu did not share the same sense of amusement, his eyes fixed on Dudu, frowning slightly, “Looks like things are about to spiral out of control!”

“What are you talking about?”

Feng Xiu paused, turning his head towards the Fifth Messenger.

At the same time, on Fei Yun’s side, when he realized his knife had been taken, he turned and looked deeply at Dudu, “I know you care about me, but this is all I can do now.

Without the knife, I can’t protect you.

Don’t worry, I definitely will, I will prove your innocence…”

Dudu shook her head interrupting Fei Yun’s words.

“You can’t prove my innocence.”

“You have to believe in me, I can do it…”

“No, you can’t, because they are right!”

Fei Yun was stunned, not yet understanding the situation.

“Thud.”

The knife in Dudu’s hand plunged straight into his heart…

# Chapter 404: 401, kill them all.

Chapter 404: 401, kill them all.

In suppressing Pang Dudu, many people thought it would be quite easy and simple.

Although the moves they released were not particularly ingenious, even simple and crude, they were effective.

In Lu Haikong’s absence, it was very easy for them to take down Dudu.

Having this dirty water poured on her and pinned to her, she would never be able to wash it off.

Because, in this matter,

it wasn’t just one party exerting their power.

After all, suppressing Dudu, or rather suppressing the development of Lu Haikong’s forces, was a consensus of the entire Alliance.

Thus, behind this affair, nearly the entire Alliance stood.

With the entire Alliance’s high-level united front,

even if Dudu found any irrefutable evidence to prove her innocence,

even if Lu Wu came out to testify that Dudu was indeed Dudu, it would be completely useless.

Dudu couldn’t possibly wash off this layer of dirty water!!!

Because, at this time, what she was against wasn’t one lie but an Alliance.

Facing such a situation, what should Dudu do?

She opted for the simplest, most direct, and also the most brute force response.

She outright flipped the table!

At Jiangnan University, inside the auditorium.

There was a “pfft” sound.

Dudu plunged the knife into Fei Yun’s heart.

The blade pierced through the heart; Fei Yun’s face, which was a mix of surprise and joy, froze, as he slowly lowered his head and looked at the long knife in his chest, his face filled with disbelief.

At the same time, everyone witnessing this scene was completely dumbstruck.

No one had anticipated that Dudu would be so ruthless, stabbing Fei Yun right from the get-go.

“What are you doing?”

Fei Yinghao was furious and instantly tried to rush over to save his grandson.

“I advise you best not to move.”

Dudu’s chilling voice sounded, and at the same time, she slightly twisted the knife in her hand. The stabbing pain from the heart caused Fei Yun to cry out in agony. Fei Yun’s cry forced Fei Yinghao to stop.

After all, his grandson, although useless, still held Leader Level power.

Being stabbed in the heart doesn’t guarantee death, but if the heart is torn apart, then there is indeed no saving him.

So at that moment, he truly dared not move forward and could only stand rooted to the spot.

His eyes bore into Dudu’s expressionless face, filled with anger yet hesitating to act rashly.

At the same time, the heart-struck Fei Yun also stared at Dudu. Although he couldn’t speak, his eyes clearly questioned why Dudu did this.

The director of the Education Bureau, Lu Zheng, could no longer maintain his composure and frowning, he stood up and said, “Miss Pang, Fei has paid so much for you.

He even willingly risked his life to help you, showing deep affection. Even if you look down on him, there was no need for you to strike such a lethal blow.”

Dudu glanced over the bewildered Fei Yun, the angry Fei Yinghao, and the frowning director Lu Zheng, among others.

“Didn’t you all say that I’m a fake Pang Dudu?

Didn’t you all say that I’m an Evil Summoner from the Zero Organization?

Didn’t you say that my taking over Jiangnan was to execute a huge conspiracy?”

“There could be some misunderstanding here, just let my grandson go, and I promise to help you investigate thoroughly.”

Fei Yinghao, intent on saving his grandson, spoke without hesitation.

However, it was of no use.

The Dudu on stage gently shook her head, “You don’t need to bother with that, you’re right!

I admit everything you said; I am indeed from the Zero Organization!”

As soon as Dudu uttered these words, Fei Yinghao and Lu Zheng below, instead of feeling relieved, broke out in a cold sweat.

Dudu’s reaction was not at all what they had expected.

They vaguely felt that this matter was heading in a direction they could not control.

Especially Lu Zheng.

As the overall person in charge of this operation, he had made many preparations beforehand.

He was confident that he could cope with any of Dudu’s reactions, but he had never anticipated that Dudu would take on the dirty water.

This would undoubtedly cause the situation they were in control of to spin out of control. What pained him even more was that Dudu still had Fei Yun in her hands, and with a single tremble of her hand, the consequences would be unimaginable.

“Miss Pang, no, you need to be rational, there must be some misunderstanding in your situation…”

“First, let him go, and we can slowly clear up the misunderstanding…”

Fei Yinghao and Lu Zheng at this moment were desperately trying to appease Dudu, but it was of no use.

Before the two could finish their conciliatory words, they were interrupted by Dudu.

“Don’t be like this, it’s not nice.

If we’re going to play, let’s play big. Whatever you say, I will let it be, and you bear the consequences!”

As soon as Dudu spoke, Fei Yinghao and the others couldn’t sit still any longer, immediately trying to rush forward to save him. But it was already too late.

Fei Yinghao hadn’t even moved.

A “pfft” sounded; it was Dudu turning the knife. The sound of Fei Yun’s heart being shredded.

Poor Fei Yun, he had given so much for Dudu, only to have his heart torn apart by her hands in the end.

And as the life force dissipated from Fei Yun’s body, countless faces within the auditorium turned ghostly pale, knowing that this time they had played too far and made a mess.

This wouldn’t do!

Fei Yinghao, watching his most beloved grandson die before his very eyes, could no longer contain his boundless rage and erupted completely.

“Die, old man!”

With a roar,

terrifying golden thunder crashed down towards Dudu from the sky.

Although Fei Yinghao’s presence at the scene was only an avatar, as one of the Twelve Elders, his power was unquestionably top-notch.

Even as an avatar, his strength was definitely of the Epic 1-star level.

The golden thunder exploded, tearing apart the ceiling of the entire auditorium.

“Hiss!”

Such a terrifying attack made Feng Xiu and others inhale sharply.

Clearly, an attack of this caliber was something even they couldn’t withstand, let alone Pang Dudu.

If this strike landed, Pang Dudu was almost sure to die.

This made Feng Xiu very uncomfortable, after all, he came here for Lu Wu.

And he hadn’t expected that after watching the drama for so long, Lu Wu has yet to appear.

It now seemed like the play would end without Lu Wu even making an appearance.

“Why don’t you go and try to catch it? Maybe you can hold on until Lu Wu arrives?”

suggested the Fifth Messenger beside him.

Feng Xiu rolled his eyes in response.

Was he crazy or stupid? Could something like this even be caught?

Even with his injuries from Feng Xiu not yet healed, it would have been a struggle for him to withstand such a blow even at his prime, let alone the most troublesome part of the matter was not whether he could withstand it or not.

The most troublesome thing was that Fei Yinghao was clearly insane now. If he dared get involved at this time, he would definitely incur Fei Yinghao’s resentment.

Feng Xiu was already in a miserable state, and he certainly did not want to be crazily hunted by a member of the Twelve Elders.

Thus, in the end, neither Feng Xiu nor the Fifth Messenger took action. They simply watched as that gold thunderbolt fell upon Dudu in silence.

When the golden thunder erupted, completely engulfing Dudu, several sighs echoed within the auditorium.

Had a person of remarkable grace fallen just like that?

“Wait, what’s that situation?”

There were sharp-eyed individuals present who noticed that the light following the fall of the golden thunder seemed to be unusual.

Moreover, the expression on Fei Yinghao’s clone at that time also seemed very wrong.

It was not the expression of someone who had resolved their opponent, but more like someone who had encountered a tough opponent and was feeling very troubled.

Indeed, that was the case.

“Humph humph!”

With an angry pig-like snort, a massive Cute Pig Illusion appeared out of nowhere and woofed down the golden thunderbolt in one gulp.

“How is this possible?”

This sudden development shocked many.

Especially people like Feng Xiu, who could feel the power of the golden thunder, knew better than anyone the improbability of what was happening.

While others were exclaiming impossibilities, Fei Yinghao had already charged forward.

As someone who had clashed with Dudu, he knew the strength of the girl before him better than anyone.

In the blink of an eye, Fei Yinghao had reached Dudu, and his fist, sparkling with a dazzling golden thunder, was smashed toward Dudu’s forehead.

“Slap”

The fist that Fei Yinghao had just brought down was directly caught by Dudu’s hand.

Fei Yinghao tried to withdraw his fist with force but found it wouldn’t budge. His face changed, but as one of the Twelve Elders, his reaction was still quite fast.

When he couldn’t pull his fist free, he swung his leg over directly, aiming a kick at Dudu’s stunning face.

Dudu didn’t dodge or burst with energy, she just took the kick, carrying lightning and power comparable to Lu Wu’s strongest strike, with her face.

To the surprise of all, the lightning dimmed and Dudu’s face was unscathed.

“How can this be?”

Even Fei Yinghao was unsettled by the situation.

Yet his attack didn’t cease. Despite his right hand being caught, his legs and left fist remained mobile, continuously unleashing golden lightning in a frenzied assault on Dudu.

However, the more Fei Yinghao attacked, the more he felt the terror of Dudu’s defense, and his heart grew colder.

Although his avatar now possessed Epic 1-star power, and he mastered Thunder Power to match the attack power of an Epic 2-star, he couldn’t injure Dudu.

Such defensive power was beyond terrifying— it was downright bizarre!

Fei Yinghao racked his brains but couldn’t figure out how Dudu could have such terrifying defense.

“There must be a secret to her,” he confirmed to himself.

And as he confirmed this, Dudu appeared to tire of Fei Yinghao’s assaults, squeezing his hand with force; Fei Yinghao’s caught right hand was crushed to bits.

“What is this!”

In the instant his right hand was crushed, Fei Yinghao sensed a breath and looked into Dudu’s eyes, which were suddenly wide with astonishment.

At this moment, he seemed to have realized Dudu’s secret.

“You really are crazy…”

Fei Yinghao barely started speaking when Dudu launched another punch, blasting Fei Yinghao’s avatar into oblivion.

And all these events, though tardily told, actually took place in less than two minutes, from the murder of Fei Yun to the offensive launched by Fei Yinghao, and finally to his being blown apart by Dudu.

In less than two minutes, Fei Yinghao, one of the Twelve Elders, a towering presence in the Alliance, was blasted to death.

This cast a three-room, one-living-room-sized shadow over those unaware that the Fei Yinghao who had just died was but a clone.

And the death of Fei Yinghao was just the beginning.

Having easily slain Fei Yinghao, Dudu turned her gaze towards Lu Zheng.

Lu Zheng’s face paled.

Without a word, he turned and ran.

This old guy was quite astute, very clear on the fact that there was nothing to be said to the current Dudu, that talking was useless, that running was the only choice if he wanted to survive.

But the only choice wasn’t necessarily the correct one.

No sooner had Lu Zheng made his move than Dudu had already captured him.

Caught, Lu Zheng had no recourse but to plead with Dudu.

“Lady Pang, please don’t kill me, Lady Pang, I’m the Director of the Education Bureau, if you kill me, you’ll have no way back…”

“Wasn’t it you who said I’m an Evil Summoner?”

“An Evil Summoner, what way back could I possibly have to take!”

“No no no, you’re not an Evil Summoner, I can prove it, really I can prove it, you were framed…”

“Thank you, but there’s no need, I’ve discovered that being an Evil Summoner is quite nice!”

As Dudu spoke, a slap came down, and another Epic 1-star level powerhouse was blasted to death like this.

At this very moment.

The people inside the auditorium, after having witnessed the disintegration of Fei Yinghao’s clone and the crushing death of Lu Zheng, were all scared out of their wits.

Especially the likes of Fang Jin and Wang Yuanming, who had just stepped forward to falsely accuse Dudu, were now turning tail and fleeing.

However, Dudu had no intention of letting them escape.

Before they could even start their escape, Dudu had already spread her Domain.

The current Dudu was unbelievably powerful, with no one able to break through the borders of her Domain.

Unable to flee, they could only beg for mercy.

“Chairman Pang, don’t kill me, I was deceived by them, please don’t kill me!”

“Miss Pang, we know you have been wronged, and we can understand that, but you must remain logical and not let the darkness within consume you.”

…

At this moment, it wasn’t just Fang Jin and those others begging for mercy.

Those who had betrayed Dudu and announced their withdrawal from the University Alliance were begging for mercy as well.

Even Zhao Kai Ming was persuading Dudu, urging her to stop: “Dudu, don’t do this, Lu Wu wouldn’t want to see you like this!”

Of all the words spoken, it was Zhao Kai Ming’s that caused some fluctuations in Dudu’s emotions.

But it was just a slight fluctuation.

She did not stop her movements, in fact, she sped them up a bit.

With just a slight pinch, the Domain shattered, and many within the Domain met their end.

Of course, some managed to flee.

This included Feng Xiu and others who fled in a sorry state.

But at this time, Dudu wasn’t focusing her attention on Feng Xiu and the rest, and after pinching Feng Xiu to death, she turned her gaze to the direction of Beijing.

She didn’t have much time left.

She had to resolve all the troubles for Lu Wu to the best of her ability within the limited time.

“Is it one of those twelve?”

“Doesn’t matter, just kill them all!”

# Chapter 405: 402 Dudu's Terrifying Power

Chapter 405: 402 Dudu’s Terrifying Power

As Dudu slaughtered Fei Yinghao and crushed the entire auditorium,

on a small island outside the sea area of Jiangnan,

Lu Wu glared ferociously at the woman in front of him.

“Let me go!

Hurry up and let me go? I don’t have time to waste here with you!”

In his roar, Lu Wu swung his fists, hammering away at the blue light screen that surrounded him.

It was evident that Lu Wu was exerting all his strength, his body sparking with electricity, the electric light from his fists especially dazzling.

But despite this, he couldn’t break through the light screen; his hammering didn’t even cause a ripple on it.

Just like the expression on the face of the woman outside the light screen, utterly calm.

“I promised her that I wouldn’t let you out for the next few days!

So, this is her intention, which means she doesn’t want you there.

You should listen to her, don’t make it difficult for me.

Besides, with your current power, even if I let you out, there’s nothing you could do.

Being there would just make you feel worse.”

The woman in front of him, or rather, the words from Zhang Yunyi, made Lu Wu even more anxious.

With both hands hammering on the light screen, he demanded, “What is she planning to do?

What exactly is that girl up to?”

Various signs indicated that it wasn’t as simple as something related to the University Alliance.

Zhang Yunyi did not dodge Lu Wu’s question.

“Either kill the twelve elders or be killed by them!”

“What did you say?” Zhang Yunyi’s words struck Lu Wu like thunder, turning his face pale as he propped himself against the light screen with wide eyes.

“You must have heard right; it’s what you heard, and besides, counting the time, she’s probably already on her way to Elder Mountain by now,” Zhang Yunyi said calmly.

“Has she gone mad?”

At this point, Lu Wu was nearly driven to tears by that girl’s actions.

He knew full well how terrifying the Elder Council was, not an entity Dudu could overcome.

“She’s not going to kill, she’s not going to solve problems; she’s going to her death!

Tell her to stop immediately, you can’t let her continue this madness, tell her if she keeps this up, I’m done with her…”

Zhang Yunyi calmly interrupted Lu Wu, “It’s too late!”

“It’s not too late, you can still make her stop now…”

Zhang Yunyi suddenly looked directly into Lu Wu’s eyes. Her calm, eerie gaze made Lu Wu flinch, and what scared him even more were her words now.

“No, it’s already too late!

Even if you stop her, it’s no use; everything is too late!”

This eerie attitude, these words, made Lu Wu’s heart beat violently.

He began to panic, to fear.

But Lu Wu didn’t allow these emotions to brew at that moment, knowing they were utterly useless now.

I must break out!

Dudu needed him!

“No matter what, I have to get out!”

Lu Wu, with his head lowered, became more resolute in his tone. As he bowed his head, his hand reached for his heart again.

The next moment, the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword was pulled from his heart.

The moment the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword was drawn, Zhang Yunyi’s eyebrows slightly raised, and the corners of her mouth curled up: “It seems your outing wasn’t without significant gains!”

Clearly, Zhang Yunyi had either recognized this sword or noticed its extraordinary nature.

This was also why Lu Wu had previously kept it hidden.

Once the sword was exposed, his experiences over the past six months would almost certainly be revealed.

But now, Lu Wu couldn’t worry about that anymore.

Drawing the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword, Lu Wu burst forth.

The silly energy inside him moaned again, transforming into a power amplifier for Lu Wu.

Originally King Level 3 Star, Lu Wu’s power surged to Epic 0 Star in that instant.

At the same time, Lu Wu raised the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword in his hand. The power burst from the King Level 2 Star longsword increased his strength and momentum further.

This surge of power from Lu Wu made Zhang Yunyi give him a sidelong glance, but that was all.

“Compared to half a year ago, you’ve indeed grown much stronger, but this alone still makes it difficult for you to escape…”

“Slaughter of Living Beings!”

Before Zhang Yunyi could finish, Lu Wu’s Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword had already slashed down.

This sword, infused with the energies of Lu Wu, silly energy, and the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword, fell plainly, yet burst with incredible power upon touching the blue screen.

With a single slash, the blue light screen was cut open.

The instant the blue light screen was sliced, Lu Wu immediately used the “Gate of the Undead” and escaped the scene before Zhang Yunyi could react.

All these events happened in the blink of an eye, just a few seconds in total.

Zhang Yunyi stared, dumbfounded.

However, as Lu Wu completely vanished, the shock on her face turned into a faint smile, and she immediately turned and left.

…

Meanwhile, at another location, within the Undead Base,

Lu Wu’s figure appeared out of nowhere.

Having escaped back from the island, he couldn’t afford to catch his breath and immediately started summoning people.

“72 people? Where the hell are you 72? Come out now!”

This was the first time Lu Wu was so disheveled and anxious.

72 from within the base hurried out upon hearing this voice.

“Leader, what’s wrong?”

“Immediately issue the order, have them activate our originally planned S Plan now!”

“S Plan?”

72’s face changed upon hearing this.

He knew exactly what the so-called S Plan entailed.

Among the various plans Lu Wu had previously devised to aid Dudu, the S Plan was the most effective and the most radical, and also the one 72 pleaded with Lu Wu never to use.

Once this plan was implemented, the newly-formed organization of Lu Wu might accidentally destroy itself.

The members of the organization might even die without a proper burial.

“Leader, didn’t we agree not to use this…”

72 wanted to dissuade Lu Wu, but barely started speaking when Lu Wu raised his head and glared at him.

Those eyes, bloodshot and filled with boundless intent to kill, made 72 swallow his words and solemnly nod, “I’ll arrange it right away!”

72 obediently backed down, and Lu Wu,

after briefly calming himself, used the “Gate of the Undead” to leave the base once again.

The original “Gate of the Undead” did not have this function.

It was originally just a fixed-point transport tool, which could only transport to the base.

In building the “Dark” base, Lu Wu had optimized and upgraded the “Gate of the Undead.”

Now, the “Gate of the Undead” has an additional set of “Sub Gates.”

These “Sub Gates” allowed the members of the “Dark” faction to freely enter the base, and Lu Wu could also use these “Sub Gates” to position and teleport for his purposes.

At that moment, he had located the “Sub Gate” closest to Fucheng and directly teleported from the base, arriving near Jiangnan University.

As soon as he arrived, Lu Wu’s expression changed.

“I’m too late!”

This newly constructed university was now in total disarray, with twenty to thirty percent of the buildings destroyed.

The most thorough destruction was the auditorium.

The location of the entire auditorium was now just a deep pit.

And from within that pit, Lu Wu sensed several extremely terrifying energies.

Whether it was Fei Yinghao’s clone’s energy, the energy burst from Feng Xiu’s Fifth Messenger during his escape, or even the energy burst from Lu Zheng, the head of the Education Bureau, these made Lu Wu’s heart skip in terror.

But what terrified Lu Wu the most was the energy belonging to Dudu.

That residual energy chilled Lu Wu to the bone.

Yet, what made Lu Wu even more panicked wasn’t just Dudu’s energies but the scene in front of him and the words Zhang Yunyi had just spoken.

“Did that girl really go to Elder Mountain?”

At this moment, Lu Wu was both angry and anxious.

And it wasn’t only Lu Wu who was anxious.

Besides Lu Wu, there was also a group of people who were equally worried.

This group was none other than the group of elders from Elder Mountain.

It had been half an hour since Dudu’s burst in the auditorium.

Half an hour was neither too long nor too short, enough for the Elder Mountain faction to learn what had happened at Jiangnan University.

After all, many among them had been watching Jiangnan University from the start, not to mention there was also the clone destroyed by Fei Yinghao.

After the incident,

the Elder Council of Elder Mountain had been urgently convened.

Twelve elders, except for the absent head of the council, all the remaining 11 were present, including Fei Yinghao whose grandson had just been killed by the destroyed clone.

Eleven people took their seats, and the second speaker directly addressed the issue.

“As everyone is aware, Pang Duddu revealed her Evil Summoner identity, killed Old Fei’s grandson, and slaughtered hundreds on the spot. What should be done about this matter?”

The second speaker got straight to the point; the response from below was equally straightforward, with one of the elders at the end of the table slamming his hand on the desk as he stood.

“What to do?

Don’t ask me about such matters.

We said at the start not to engage in such acts, that we shouldn’t do this, but you didn’t believe it and insisted that we must clear up this problem before Lu Haikong and the head return.

Otherwise, it would be hard to deal with when they return.

Without waiting for our agreement or discussing with us, you acted, and now look, you’ve indeed created trouble.

Now you want us to discuss?

Are you asking us to take the blame?

Don’t even think about it, we’re leaving!”

As he spoke, this person turned to leave, and at the same moment, three other elders at the table also stood up, prepared to leave.

However, a golden thunderbolt struck down in front of these four, blocking their escape.

The one who acted was not the second speaker but Fei Yinghao, who sat in the center with a face as dark as the bottom of a pot.

“Zhang Mingge, if you dare step out, it’ll be a fight to the death between us!”

“Old Fei, I understand how you feel, but this was originally Zhao Xue’en’s doing, it has nothing to do with us…”

“Don’t give me that crap. They proposed it, and if you had truly been firmly opposed, would the deed have been done?

Your so-called ‘opposition’ was just setting up a façade to hide the truth.

So, you all bear responsibility for today’s incident, and none of you are allowed to leave until Pang Duddu is dealt with!”

Fei Yinghao roared, slamming his hand on the table.

This was his first time showing such fury at a council meeting.

However, the reason was clear to everyone; his most beloved grandson had died because of this incident, and in his current state, he was like a volatile keg of dynamite, and no one dared provoke him at the scene.

Led by Zhang Mingge, the four elders, originally planning to cleverly exit, could only sheepishly retake their seats.

As for Zhao Xue’en in the second seat, he acted as though he had seen nothing from beginning to end, simply treating it as if it hadn’t occurred, and repeated the question he had originally asked.

“Tell me, how do you think we should handle this matter!”

“No need to beat around the bush!”

Fei Yinghao stood up abruptly: “You don’t need to shirk your responsibilities. I put it plainly here, today Pang Duddu must die!”

“Old Fei, we understand how you feel…”

“Understand my ass! Whoever the fuck talks about understanding to me, I’ll kill his grandson.

I’ll show you what it feels like!”

At this moment, Fei Yinghao was like a ferocious beast picking its prey, incredibly fierce and terrifying.

Fei Yinghao’s fierceness immediately shifted the tone of the other elders.

“Alright, it’s just Pang Duddu, right? Killing her and it’s over.

What’s with all the fuss?

She’s already erupted, killed so many people; even if we kill her, the head won’t have anything to say.

As for Lu Haikong?

Actually, as long as the head is on our side, he won’t be able to stir up any trouble!”

“Well, since that’s the case, let’s just kill her first!

Old Fei, since she killed your grandson, how about we leave her to you to deal with?”

…

These people weren’t truly cowed by Fei Yinghao.

It was almost a consensus among them that Dudu must die.

Or perhaps it should be said that what they were wary of in holding this meeting was not really Pang Duddu, but those who were not present.

No one could tell whether Lu Haikong would seek revenge after returning, or to what extent, so they all wanted to pass off responsibility.

Now, good, Fei Yinghao had stood up himself, so just let him do the killing.

After all, it was his grandson who died, and even if Lu Haikong comes back, he wouldn’t have a case against it—Fei Yinghao would bear the brunt if there were any repercussions.

However, when all the elders agreed to let Fei Yinghao carry out the killing, his face did not show much joy.

It wasn’t that he saw through these fellows’ schemes; rather, he lacked confidence.

“Just by myself, I might not be able to kill him.”

As soon as Fei Yinghao said this, the elders disbelieved it.

Some sneered, some chuckled lightly, some shook their heads, but none responded.

This annoyed Fei Yinghao greatly.

“What? You don’t believe it?”

“Indeed, we don’t believe it!”

Zhang Mingge, who had just been stopped by him, responded: “Old Fei, that’s not fair. Who are you?

The Thunder Lord, one of the top combat powers among the twelve elders.

In front of you, envoys below the second of the Zero Organization are like children. With your power, you’re saying you might not be able to kill her?

Who would believe that?

What, is Pang Duddu’s power really great enough to reach the sky…?”

“Boom!”

Before Zhang Mingge could finish, an extremely powerful force struck the Elder Mountain Secret Realm.

This force changed the expressions of everyone present…

# Chapter 406: 403 Gate Fragments

Chapter 406: 403 Gate Fragments

Elder Mountain Secret Realm is in Zone 1, and could even be said to be the highest-level Artificial Secret Realm within the entire Alliance.

It was created using seven Natural Secret Realms, the efforts of hundreds of Cultivation Masters, and several decades of time.

This is the headquarters of the Elder Council and the facade for the Alliance.

It is touted as the fortress least likely to be breached in this world, even sturdier and tougher to chew through than the headquarters of Zero Organization.

Of course, this claim had yet to be verified to this day.

After all, neither Elder Mountain nor the headquarters of Zero Organization, known as the Land of Returning to Zero, had been attacked in the past decades.

But today, finally, someone made a move against one of them.

On Dudu’s side,

after slaughtering the group from Jiangnan, she headed straight for Elder Mountain.

In less than an hour, she had arrived at Elder Mountain and went straight to deliver a blow to the hundred-meter-high mountain gate.

Dudu’s palm strike unleashed a Cute Pig Illusion that roared into existence and slammed into the gate.

Her palm strike caused the gate to fissure.

Despite the crack, the gate still stood erect.

Dudu, with a backhand slap, vowed to shatter this mountain gate and demolish the facade of Elder Mountain.

“Roar”

Tuantuan’s illusion appeared once more, charging in an even more domineering manner than before.

Just as this teetering gate was about to be shattered, a light snort sounded.

“Insolence!”

“Boom!”

Accompanied by this light reprimand, a hundred-meter-tall Bimong Giant Beast descended from the sky, smashing onto Tuantuan’s illusion, and a violent strike completely shattered the illusion of Tuantuan.

At the same time, the figures of eleven elders appeared out of thin air above the gate, and Dudu’s gaze followed, her eyebrows slightly furrowing.

At this moment, the leading Zhao Xue’en pointed at Dudu and angrily scolded, “Are you Pang Dudu?

First, you slaughtered hundreds of summoners in Jiangnan, now you dare to strike at Elder Mountain, what audacity you have!

It seems today…”

Zhao Xue’en’s words were cut off by Dudu.

“Only eleven? Where’s the last one?

Nevermind, asking is useless, I’ll kill you first then find the last one!”

As she spoke, Dudu raised her hand and struck another palm blow, the Cute Pig Illusion reappearing and directly targeting the eleven elders.

This move made those opposite eleven laugh.

“Attacking Elder Mountain and challenging all eleven of us simultaneously? Such arrogance, not even Lu Haikong or the guy from Zero Organization would dare do such a thing.”

“She must be the first in centuries to do so!”

“But this kind of first isn’t something to be proud of.”

“To think she’s invincible just because she acquired temporary power through crooked and evil means? How preposterous!”

…

None of the eleven elders moved, watching coldly as the towering Tuantuan’s illusion charged toward them.

At that moment, the Bimong Giant Beast that had just appeared roared, raising its arms and striking towards Tuantuan’s illusion.

“Boom!”

The two gigantic creatures collided.

Though one was real and the other an illusion, the impact of the collision was indeed substantial.

The invisible shockwave pushed out for thousands of meters, sending dust flying and dirt swirling through the air.

While the dust had not yet settled, all those present were of epic caliber and could instantly see the outcome of this exchange.

The Bimong Giant Beast barely held its ground against the assault of the Cute Pig Illusion, managing to match its strength.

“Being able to withstand Old Zhang’s Bimong Giant Beast, this Pang Duddu really has something going for her.”

“She’s almost at the Epic 2 Star level, which shows some power, but does she actually think she can challenge Elder Mountain with just that? What is she thinking?”

“More than what’s on her mind, I want to know how she attained such a level of power.”

Someone asked a critical question.

On this matter, Fei Yinghao seemed to have some understanding.

When his avatar was shattered, he sensed something but chose not to speak at that moment.

“Want to know? Why not capture her and study her?”

“That’s right, let’s take her down first!”

…

And just when these eleven elders casually expressed their intention to capture Duddu.

Amidst the battlefield’s rising dust, a grunt from a pig echoed.

The next moment, an extremely terrifying aura erupted.

Following that, the tusks at the corner of the Cute Pig Illusion’s mouth burst into an earth-yellow divine light; its head forcefully thrust upwards, the tusks piercing directly into the heart of the Bimong Giant Beast, sending it flying towards the Eleven Elders.

The Eleven Elders were momentarily stunned, but their expressions quickly relaxed.

“Interesting!

She’s actually enhanced herself to the peak of the Epic 2 Star level. It seems the secrets on this young girl are substantial.

It’s even very likely that they have something to do with the secrets of Lu Haikong.”

As Zhang Mingge spoke, the expressions of the Eleven Elders slightly changed, and their gaze towards Duddu shifted.

“Looks like we shouldn’t delay any longer. Let’s all take action and suppress her!”

“Alright!”

The Eleven Elders quickly reached a consensus.

Following that, ten Summoned Beasts appeared simultaneously.

Although these ten Summoned Beasts were of different forms, they shared one thing in common: their immense power, none being below the Epic 2 Star.

Each one was at least as formidable as the previously encountered Bimong Giant Beast.

This was the power of the Elder Council!

Moreover, the creatures that appeared were not even the main Summoned Beasts of these elders.

One can imagine just how powerful the Elder Council is.

This is also why they remain calm in the face of Duddu, who has clearly brought an unusual situation to their doorstep.

Because they truly do not need to panic.

They are the pinnacle of this world, and there is nothing yet that could make them flustered.

“No matter what purpose or reason you had, from the moment you killed those hundreds of Summoners and made your way to Elder Mountain, you left yourself no way back.

Now, your hands are stained with blood, and you wield a power you should not have. Keeping you alive is a great threat to the Alliance, so regrettably, you must die today!”

While the Eleven Elders said this, they seemed not to consider that they were the ones who created this situation.

Clearly, it was their relentless pressure that forced Lu Haikong to live in anonymity, pushed Lu Wu to feign death to escape, and various suppressions on Duddu that led to this result.

Or perhaps, they were well aware that all of it was caused by them.

But they never thought they were in the wrong.

After all, they were the Elder Council, standing at the summit of the world, at the pinnacle of the Alliance.

They believed they represented humanity, and that their actions were for the development of humankind, taken from the perspective of the greater good.

Thus, in their eyes, the error could never be theirs—it could only be those who disturb the peace.

In their view, restless beings like Duddu must be forcefully suppressed to prevent her from becoming a future threat to the Alliance.

So amid these righteous and grandiose declarations, the Eleven Elders launched their attack.

Eleven epic-level Summoned Beasts lunged toward Dudu, who had been expressionless from the start.

“Roar!”

Among the eleven Summoned Beasts, a rat ran the fastest and instantly arrived behind Dudu, scratching open a rift in the space behind him.

As soon as that rift appeared, the remaining ten Summoned Beasts erupted.

The Bimong Giant Beast took the lead and slammed into Dudu, knocking him to the edge of the rift.

“Boom!”

The second Summoned Beast then crashed into the Bimong Giant Beast, followed by the third, the fourth…

Ten Summoned Beasts attacked simultaneously.

After ten consecutive strikes, Dudu was knocked directly into the rift.

As soon as Dudu was knocked inside, the eleven Summoned Beasts followed closely behind him. When the eleven beasts entered the rift, it sealed shut, and the side of the Eleven Elders heaved a sigh of relief.

Dudu had the power of an epic 2-star at this point.

Along with the eleven Summoned Beasts, which were also epic 2-stars.

A battle of this caliber naturally required a suitable location.

Otherwise, Elder Mountain might require extensive repairs after the battle.

By using the rat’s spatial Skill to pull Dudu into the Secret Realm, they maximally avoided the need for major repairs to Elder Mountain and prevented damage to the surrounding environment.

Well, from this aspect, it seemed that the Eleven Elders indeed shattered their hearts for humanity.

After sending Dudu into the rift, the Eleven Elders started to chat together.

“What do you think, how long can this girl last?”

“With epic 2-star power, one against eleven, maybe three minutes, at most three minutes.”

“I think she might last a bit longer; five minutes should be possible.”

“I don’t care about three or five minutes; I’m just asking who gets her corpse after it’s finished?”

…

As soon as this was said, the atmosphere momentarily solidified before Fei Yinghao immediately stood up resolutely, “Of course it’s mine, I need her corpse to honor my grandson!

You guys wouldn’t fight me over this, right?”

At that moment, Fei Yinghao’s eyes were wide, his whole body exuded a confrontational aura.

As if anyone who dared to contradict him would face his fierce rebuttal.

His demeanor had been quite effective before, but now it was clearly somewhat futile.

From the side, Zhang Mingge spoke in a tone neither cold nor warm, “She’s already dead, what’s the use of a memorial?

Moreover, if you really want to honor him, a skull should be enough, why do you need the whole body?

Could it be that at your age, you still have designs on a corpse?”

Fei Yinghao erupted in fury, “Zhang Mingge, are you seeking death?”

“If you think you can kill me, you can try!”

This time, Zhang Mingge did not show any weakness.

The two faced off fiercely and immediately locked horns.

Then, Zhao Xue’en spoke, “Enough, Old Fei, you can drop the pretense, you’re not good at this.”

“What do you mean?” Fei Yinghao’s expression shifted slightly, but he quickly composed himself.

But it was too late.

He was quite powerful among the Eleven Elders, but his scheming was somewhat lacking.

“Although you try hard to hide it, even using your grandson’s death as a cover, we have known each other for centuries, who here isn’t more familiar with you than you are with yourself?

You know something about the secrets on Pang Duddu’s body, right?”

Fei Yinghao’s expression darkened, and he was about to speak when Zhang Mingge intervened.

“The kind of secret that requires such effort to conceal, to this extent, isn’t hard to guess. The power on Pang Duddu comes from the ‘Gate’, right?”

Once Zhang Mingge brought this up, Fei Yinghao no longer struggled.

“Yes, when she crushed my avatar, I felt the power of the Gate on her!

She definitely has a fragment of the Gate on her, and it’s definitely not just a piece from the frame.”

This revelation caused Zhang Mingge and others to gasp in astonishment.

“Are you sure?”

“Positive!”

The Eleven Elders once again looked toward the direction where the rift had disappeared, their eyes filled with unmistakable covetousness.

However, observing their peers, their covetousness eventually turned to helplessness.

Twelve against eleven, no one could monopolize this item.

It looked like another artifact meant for the vault.

Realizing this, the enthusiasm of the eleven greatly diminished.

While some people shifted their focus.

“Wait, how did Pang Duddu obtain the Gate Fragment?

To our knowledge, she hasn’t left Jiangnan recently.

She couldn’t have acquired it through exploration…”

“Who said she had to get it herself through exploration?

Can’t it be given to her by someone else?

You know, there are quite a few people around her who could give her this thing.”

Zhao Xue’en’s remark made the Eleven Elders think of the people around Dudu.

The first to contact one of the fragments and gain a rule-level Skill from it, Tie Xiong.

Lu Haikong, who used the fragment to save a woman completely.

And Zhang Yunyi, as mysterious as a cloud, and Lu Wu who was clearly not dead.

“That makes four, so who actually gave her the fragment?”

“The fragment couldn’t have come from Lu Haikong; he would have used it to completely revive that woman.”

“Tie Xiong is also unlikely; that old fox is particularly slippery, he runs faster than anyone if things go south, have you seen him around lately?

He would definitely not get involved with the Gate.”

“Lu Wu is even less likely. From what we know about him, he would definitely not give Dudu the fragment to use her as a pawn.”

“Three impossibles, so the answer is quite obvious, Zhang Yunyi?”

Zhao Xue’en and Zhang Mingge both pondered a moment and shook their heads.

“Zhang Yunyi doesn’t seem right either, this isn’t her style.

If she had a fragment of the Gate, she wouldn’t use it this way, that’s just sending the Gate Fragment our way.”

“If not Zhang Yunyi, then who could it be?

Wait, I think I may have thought of someone.”

Zhang Mingge’s eyes narrowed immediately, Fei Yinghao and the others looked at him in surprise, and Zhao Xue’en answered for him.

“You don’t mean Lin Jianying, do you?”

“Lin Jianying?”

Fei Yinghao and the others were momentarily taken aback but soon recalled.

It seemed there was such a minor figure.

Zhang Mingge nodded, “Right, if not the first four, then it must be Lin Jianying!”

# Chapter 407: 404 powerful

Chapter 407: 404 powerful

Lin Jianying was mentioned.

The Eleven Elders, whose interest had originally faded, were now intrigued once more.

The glint in their eyes also grew more pronounced.

However, this also made the atmosphere among the eleven people present somewhat strange.

They began sizing each other up quietly.

Their gazes were filled with scrutiny and caution.

Someone spoke up immediately, getting straight to the point,

“Didn’t Feng Xiu recently make a fuss, claiming that the matter with Lin Jianying was orchestrated by him in collaboration with someone among us?

Even saying that Lin Jianying is now in the hands of one of us?

Whoever pulled it off, speak up, will you? Is it Old Zhang or Old Zhao?

Out of all of us, you two are the most cunning.

With such a big matter about the Gate, don’t hide it!”

This statement directed the fire towards Zhang Mingge and Zhao Xue’en.

The Eleven Elders’ gazes suddenly focused on these two, to which Zhang Mingge retorted with a sneer, “For you to say this at this time, you’re not lacking in cunning either!

Don’t be a thief crying ‘stop thief!'”

“Don’t falsely accuse me…”

“Enough, enough, anyone with eyes can see that it was Zero’s doing. We’ve worked together for over a hundred years and understand each other well.

We are people who would risk our lives for the Alliance; how could we possibly collaborate with Zero?

It’s a trampling on our century of effort!”

In comparison to Zhang Mingge, Zhao Xue’en’s words were much more palatable.

With his statement, the instigator could only touch his nose and change the subject.

“If it might relate to Lin Jianying, then we should be more cautious in our approach.

We can’t just simply kill the person.”

“Yeah, let those old buddies hold back and spare her life!”

After all, although Lin Jianying was an insignificant figure, he had clues that led directly to the Gate.

The Eleven Elders still placed considerable importance on him.

Whether to kill Dudu or not, they would wait until they obtained the information they wanted from Dudu.

Meanwhile, the Eleven Elders were also watching each other at this moment.

Although they didn’t say it aloud, they still harbored suspicions about the veteran group around them.

At this time, anyone who dealt a heavy blow to kill Dudu would be under great suspicion.

Thus, the Eleven Elders silently communicated with their Summoned Beasts, signaling them to hold back and not kill the person.

“Not good!”

Just then, the first one to make contact changed his expression, which caught the attention of those nearby.

“What? Too late with the notification? Is the person already dead?”

This sinister statement put the spotlight on that individual.

However, it was at that moment that everyone’s complexion changed.

“What’s going on?”

“What happened?”

…

The Eleven Elders showed a look of shock, and their faces whitened at that moment, with some even bleeding from their mouths.

Everyone’s gaze at that moment focused on the spot originally marked by cracks, and almost simultaneously as they looked, the gap that had just been closed was opened again.

A supremely graceful figure, dragging the corpse of a Bimong Giant Beast came out calmly from the gap.

Behind her was the ruined Secret Realm and the corpses of ten Summoned Beasts, almost reduced to ashes.

Looking at the figure in front of them and the gruesome battlefield behind her, the Eleven Elders felt a sense of panic when they saw the cold gaze Dudu directed at them for the first time.

“How is this possible? How could she possess such terrifying power?”

“To instantly kill eleven Epic 2 Star Summoned Beasts; that’s simply beyond human capability, even those few couldn’t achieve this!”

“The Gate! It must be the power of the Gate!

The Gate Fragment on her must be one of the core components, not as simple as we imagined!”

“This item is too dangerous; it absolutely cannot be left outside; we must retrieve it!”

…

After a brief panic, the Eleven Elders’ faces again showed an undeniable covetousness.

They coveted the potential Gate Fragment on Dudu.

At this moment, they still hadn’t realized the severity of the situation, their minds full of thoughts of reclaiming the Gate Fragment from Dudu.

Thus, the eleven Elders did what they believed to be the most correct thing in the first moment.

“Roar!” “Howl!”…

Another series of roaring sounds emanated.

The next moment, dozens of terrifying giant beasts descended again.

This time, the Eleven Elders brought out all their trump cards.

They definitely would not make the same mistake twice, having already sent a wave of troops to Dudu, they would not send a second wave.

To kill, they would exert all their strength.

Nearly twenty Epic Level Summoned Beasts appeared simultaneously.

The Eleven Elders’ full power erupted.

This was almost the peak power of this world, the most showcased in the recent decades.

The incredible aura burst forth from Elder Mountain.

To ordinary people, these levels of Summoners already seemed like deities.

At this moment, just the presence of these Summoned Beasts and their unintentionally revealed auras began to visibly affect ordinary people within a hundred miles.

To ordinary people, they felt as if they were experiencing an apocalyptic wrath of gods.

Their hearts were oppressed by endless fear, living in perpetual unease.

However, at this time, no one cared about the ordinary people.

Including those eleven Elders who talked of the Alliance and ignored humans; their focus was entirely on Dudu.

They dreaded the strength Dudu displayed and coveted the Gate Fragment that definitely existed on her.

On the other hand, Feng Xiu and the Fifth Messenger, who had barely escaped from Dudu’s hands not long ago, sensed it and looked up at Elder Mountain with a change in expression.

“Has this woman really made her way to Elder Mountain?”

“Crazy! She’s a madwoman, but I like this kind of craziness, actually pulling off such a mad act!”

“I wonder where she got the power to push these old fossils to this extent?”

“More than where her power came from, I want to know if any of those old fossils can die this time? If a few die, the world will be much more interesting going forward!”

Feng Xiu said madly, a smile on his face.

At the same time, not far from Elder Mountain, Zhang Yunyi’s lips also curled up.

“Although it’s not in my planned scenario, I’m still pleased to see it escalate like this. Let it get even bigger.

It’s better if a few old fossils die.

They’ve kept the Alliance waters too calm; a few deaths would stir things up.”

District 2, 3, 4…

At this time, who knows how many people in the Alliance were watching, directly or indirectly, the situation at Elder Mountain.

The Alliance had developed over a hundred years.

In that hundred years, countless prodigies had emerged, both openly and secretly.

Some of them shone as brightly as Lu Wu, but most could only conceal their own radiance, lurking at the roadside like stones or like weeds.

Because above their heads loomed a mountain, a mountain in the truest sense, named “Elder.”

To these people, this decaying mountain suppressed many things.

Indeed, many in the Alliance had thought of shattering this mountain, but thoughts were just thoughts, and actions were actions.

Everyone knew the terror of this mountain.

Or rather, no one truly knew its terror.

Thus, for the past decades, no one had challenged it.

No one dared, because what they would be challenging were the supremely powerful beings who had survived from the previous era.

Moreover, the cost of such a challenge was immense.

Should one fail, the price to pay would be one’s life.

But now, the first dragon slayer had appeared, and people were still very eager to see an excellent performance from Pang Duddu.

They didn’t need Dudu to completely shatter this mountain; they just wanted to glimpse the true face of this mountain, so these long-suppressed beings might emerge.

Of course, Dudu definitely knew nothing and cared nothing about these things.

She just wanted to kill the eleven elders in front of her.

On Lu Wu’s side, he also neither knew nor cared.

At this moment, upon sensing the eruption from Elder Mountain, he likewise erupted.

He rarely did so, but he called forth his Han out from within himself and, casting all caution to the wind, he rushed towards Elder Mountain.

“We must, we must catch up!”

…

At Elder Mountain.

Eleven elders, fully unleashed, surrounded Dudu.

However, they didn’t attack right away.

Uncertain of Dudu’s power and strategies, no one wanted to be the first to strike.

They were old beings who had lived for centuries and when it came to cherishing their lives, they indeed had much say.

So, while surrounding Dudu, they said, “Miss Pang, hand over what you have on you. Keeping those items in your hands is too dangerous for both the Alliance and humanity!”

“And hand over Lin Jianying as well!”

“He’s been corrupted by evil, and now he’s become a nuisance. We can’t let him roam free!”

“We admit that our previous actions were a bit extreme, but everything was for the Alliance and humanity. It was a necessary evil.

Can’t you see by now? You’ve been completely used by Lin Jianying.

The power of that thing is great, but there’s a price to pay for using it, right?

Hand it over to us…”

…

These elders were still very adept at their rhetoric.

They spoke from a grand perspective, touching deeply into human emotions. Their pleas were earnest and immensely moving but ultimately futile.

“Is this your last word?”

Dudu looked at the people in front of her, her gaze as steady as if she were looking at dead men.

The calm tone and gaze made the Eleven Elders instantly realize that Dudu’s resolve to kill them was unshakable, rendering further discussion pointless.

“So much talk, it seems we have to resort to action after all!”

“Young lady, you’ve made the worst choice. I hope you won’t regret this decision of yours!”

“Since it’s like this, then you better be prepared!”

…

The Eleven Elders shook their heads while speaking and exerted their power, their aura continually rising.

An overpowering momentum further erupted.

This burst not only failed to harm Dudu but also caused deeper injury to the ordinary people within a hundred li.

Those who were already anxious were now suffering from splitting headaches, and some with preexisting poor heart conditions or poor health even fell into a coma at this moment.

The Eleven Elders still didn’t care.

“Charge!”

As Zhao Xue’en shouted the command, the Eleven Elders and their summoned beasts unleashed their power instantly.

At that moment, at least thirty skills, whose skill levels were above Lu Wu’s “Slaughter of Living Beings,” exploded.

The terrifying power, enough to destroy heaven and earth, all smashed down on Dudu simultaneously.

These attacks were also highly methodical, handling control, damage, sealing, and destruction.

A complete damage system precisely hit Dudu, instantly overwhelming her.

The aftermath of this outbreak was even more terrifying, causing heavy damage even to Elder Mountain within a ten li radius.

People within a hundred li suffered heavy casualties, and even those farther away, within two hundred li, were not spared.

This wave of attack inevitably caused irreversible damage to the ordinary people within the affected area.

Yet the Eleven Elders, who often spoke of the Alliance and humanity, still did not care.

Caring would weaken their power to some extent and might also allow Dudu to seize an opportunity.

Faced with the Dudu who could instantly kill eleven epic 2-star beings, they dared not be careless.

For them, sacrificing some ordinary people was worthwhile to capture Dudu.

After all, this was for the Alliance and humanity!

In their view, the sacrifice of ordinary people was also worth it.

Watching Dudu being overwhelmed by attacks, the Eleven Elders finally breathed a sigh of relief.

“We’ve finally captured her!”

“It’s a pity, in that situation, we couldn’t afford to hold back; otherwise, we could have spared her life to find out Lin Jianying’s whereabouts.”

“But it doesn’t matter, as long as we get the Gate Fragment, Lin Jianying won’t be able to stir up much trouble!”

…

In the eyes of the Eleven Elders, Dudu was almost certainly dead.

She couldn’t possibly survive.

After all, such a wave of attack, which even the leader of the Zero Organization, deemed the closest being to a god recently, couldn’t withstand, let alone Dudu, who forcibly erupted power through a fragment.

At that moment, hundreds of li away, Lu Wu froze on the spot.

Though he was hundreds of li away, he still profoundly felt the terror of that wave of attack.

That recent burst of attack, let alone thirty strikes together, even one-tenth of one of those strikes would have been too much for Lu Wu to bear.

Facing so many attacks, could Dudu still be alive?

Lu Wu had no confidence in his heart!

And those secretly watching also changed their expressions.

This was also the first time they clearly saw the power of Elder Mountain, a terrifying force that discouraged any thoughts of resistance.

“It seems we had better behave from now on.”

“Endure it, hoping to outlast these elders; maybe then there might be a glimmer of hope to come out on top.”

…

While these people were losing heart, the attack from Elder Mountain that made the whole world despair instantly vanished without any sign or trace.

At the same moment, Dudu, who was in the center of that attack, reappeared, and with her, a piece of pure, jade-like gate fragment…

# Chapter 408: 405 Lin Jianying

Chapter 408: 405 Lin Jianying

“Vanished?”

“How is that possible?”

“How could such a tremendous power simply vanish in an instant?”

…

The disappearance of that attack from Elder Mountain stunned all the onlookers.

Almost instantly, two words emerged in everyone’s minds.

“Is it the Gate?”

Along with the appearance of the “Gate,” came an insatiable greed that could not be suppressed.

“Yes, it must be. Only the Gate could have neutralized such a terrifying attack!”

“Pang Duddu must possess a fragment of the Gate!”

“And it’s not just any ordinary fragment of the Gate!”

At that moment, countless hearts were stirred into madness.

They were desperate to rush into Elder Mountain and snatch the Gate Fragment for themselves.

Seeing the power displayed by just the fragment, possessing it would virtually make them invincible.

But as tempted as they were, hardly anyone took action.

After all, that was Elder Mountain.

The mountain had not fallen, and nobody dared to act recklessly.

Of course, this included Lu Wu.

Upon realizing what was happening, he was stunned at first, then a wild joy spread across his face.

But the look of elation did not last long, as he couldn’t help but feel panicked.

After all, the commotion that girl had caused had far exceeded his imagination. It was big enough to make him lose his senses.

Normally, Lu Wu would maintain his rationality regardless of the situation.

If it were someone else, say Lu Haikong, rampaging through Elder Mountain, Lu Wu would not have bothered to look.

A wise man does not court danger, which he understood.

But with Duddu involved, Lu Wu couldn’t sit still.

Even though he knew that his current power would be of little use even if he went there,

he still couldn’t control himself.

Throwing caution to the wind, he rushed towards Elder Mountain.

However, as soon as Lu Wu moved, a mysterious force erupted within Elder Mountain.

It was a powerful force that Lu Wu had never encountered before.

This force enveloped the whole of Elder Mountain.

Simultaneously, a strong premonition of fear surged within him.

His instinct told him not to go any closer to Elder Mountain.

If he did, he might carelessly lose his life.

This baseless fear grew stronger as Lu Wu drew nearer.

From a hundred miles away, his heart began to race.

Within a hundred miles, he felt his blood rushing faster.

Within fifty miles, his scalp tingled.

Within twenty miles, his body stiffened, and as he approached Elder Mountain, Lu Wu found himself completely unable to move.

“Move, move, why are you stopping? Move!” he mentally urged himself.

But it was to no avail; an immense fear took control of his body, rendering him immobile.

The overpowering sense of fear firmly pinned Lu Wu down, ten miles away from the mountain.

While Lu Wu was engulfed by fear, the condition of the elders within Elder Mountain was not much better at this moment.

They had been panicking since their attack got absorbed.

And as Duddu’s fragment above her head erupted, enveloping all of Elder Mountain,

a fear many times more intense than Lu Wu’s afflicted the Eleven Elders.

They realized that what they faced was not just Duddu alone, but the power of the Gate, a vast force capable of changing the world.

Though they were only facing a fragment, its power was definitely not something they could resist.

They would die, facing this force they would truly die.

Under this realization, the elders were incredibly fearful.

“Lady Pang, don’t kill us, the earlier hostility towards you was Chairman Li’s idea—it has nothing to do with us. Please, don’t kill us!”

“Lady Pang, you can’t kill us, we are the Elder Council, the pillars of the Alliance. For dozens of years, it has been us who have held the Alliance steady. Without us, the Alliance will descend into chaos.”

“Yes, Lady Pang, once we die, countless unruly individuals will take the stage.

Beyond District 1, openly lies the ‘Zero Organization.’

In the shadows, there’s the ‘Science Alliance’ of District 2, the ‘Holy Sect Alliance’ of District 3, and the Chaos Alliance of District 4, along with countless more power groups buried even deeper.

Without our suppression, these forces will emerge.

They will fight against each other for benefits, for the terrifying power shown by the fragment today.

Then, the situation we have painstakingly maintained will be broken, and the Alliance will fall into chaos.

Would you truly be indifferent to seeing the hard-won peace shattered?

Would you truly be indifferent to watching a happy and peaceful humanity being again destroyed by war and chaos?”

“For the sake of the Alliance, for the sake of countless humans, please stop!”

…

Standing opposite the Eleven Elders, Duddu watched with cold eyes as these eleven old men frantically performed and pleaded with her.

In fact, with Duddu’s current knowledge, she was able to make her own judgments.

She clearly understood that not everything these eleven elders were saying was false.

Indeed, if they died, the Alliance would likely fall into chaos.

Their words could become reality.

But what did any of this have to do with her?

Duddu glanced at Lu Wuyi ten miles away, who was still struggling persistently, trying hard to get closer, and muttered softly, “Wouldn’t it be better if things were a bit more chaotic?

With a bit more chaos, his future environment might improve.”

Duddu’s words caused the faces of the Eleven Elders opposite her to change.

At the same time, it caused the fragment behind her to suddenly dim.

The moment the fragment faded, the force enveloping Elder Mountain vanished, and the fear that had gripped Lu Wu disappeared instantly.

Without the suppression, Lu Wu’s face lit up with joy, and he frantically headed towards Duddu’s location.

At the same time, things were moving with the Eleven Elders.

They too broke free from their constraints the moment the fragment dimmed.

These old foxes instantly realized that Duddu was having problems controlling the fragment.

“Quick, while we can!”

“Take this chance!”

The eleven old men seized the opportunity to attack Duddu, hoping to take her down and seize the fragment while she lost control of it.

The aura belonging to the Eleven Elders erupted once again.

This put Lu Wu, who was rushing in, under tremendous pressure again, but compared to the previous suppressive force of the fragment, this was something he could withstand; gritting his teeth, he continued to charge in.

At the same time, by Duddu’s side,

She didn’t seem surprised by the loss of control over the fragment.

“So you really left a backdoor to take back control, huh? But I’m sorry, I was prepared as well,” she murmured softly.

In the midst of her whispers,

The dimmed fragment once again burst into a bright and dazzling light.

In an instant, the power of the fragment was completely unleashed.

It was an indescribable force, as if the gods themselves reached directly into the world’s rules.

“Not good…”

“Quick…”

The Eleven Elders’ faces changed drastically, instinctively trying to retreat, but it was already too late.

That surge of power rippled down, and the Eleven Elders’ Summoned Beasts, including these eleven beings at the pinnacle of the world, disintegrated inch by inch, and in a blink, they were erased from this world.

Lu Wu, who had just barged in from outside, witnessed this scene.

He was stunned by this unbelievable sight, but the shock didn’t last long before his gaze shifted to Dudu beside him.

Seeing Dudu, Lu Wu finally let out a sigh of relief.

Although he still couldn’t see Dudu’s attributes, at least from the outside, from the spirit and vigor, Dudu seemed to be doing fine.

A look at Dudu appeared to be fine.

The worry Lu Wu had been holding on to was immediately let go, but his anger erupted uncontrollably.

He now wished he could pin this girl down and spank her until her butt was broken.

“Really too reckless…”

“Pfft!”

Just as Lu Wu started to voice his complaint, a tearing sound interrupted him.

In the midst of this tearing noise, a seductive spray of blood blossomed at Dudu’s throat.

This scene occurred so abruptly, striking Lu Wu’s vision and psyche so forcefully that the world before his eyes seemed to freeze instantly.

But reality did not stop because of Lu Wu’s shock.

At the same time that Lu Wu was frozen by the scene before him, an extremely dazzling golden thunderbolt, a supremely oppressive dark longsword, and a fist radiating with extreme golden light smashed into Dudu’s body.

The instant burst of three attacks blew Dudu apart right before Lu Wu’s eyes.

And the three who struck were none other than Fei Yinghao, Zhang Mingge, and Zhao Xue’en of the Elder Council, who had seemingly completely disintegrated moments ago.

These people, who should have been dead, not only survived but also managed to counterattack and kill Dudu.

This was, in a way, expected.

After all, each of the eleven had lived from the previous era, suppressing the entire era for over a hundred years.

Each one was cunning and profound beyond measure—how could they be so easily killed off completely?

Dudu’s recent attack had only killed about half of them; the remaining were gravely weakened but alive.

Of course, at this moment, Lu Wu didn’t care to ponder why they were alive.

Or rather, from the moment Dudu died before him, Lu Wu had already lost the ability to think.

Boundless rage and killing intent took control of Lu Wu.

He instinctively drew the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword and slashed towards the few old men, reemerging with injuries all over, facing him.

The boundless rage allowed Lu Wu to unleash an unprecedented strike.

Elder Mountain became instantly covered with dark clouds, and a force as indescribable and seemingly like Divine Punishment descended.

Divine Judgment struck down on those old men before Lu Wu.

However, at this moment, their attention was entirely on the fragment left by Dudu, completely disregarding Lu Wu.

And nobody cared about Lu Wu’s attack.

Under their total disregard, Lu Wu’s “Divine Judgment” crashed down on them.

The result.

That group of old men, who looked as if they were all out of oil and on the verge of death, managed to withstand Lu Wu’s attack merely by relying on their passives.

This scene made Lu Wu realize for the first time how weak he was.

“Power!”

“I need power!”

Lu Wu desperately sought to trigger the ultimate “Beast Soul Burst” to gain strength.

But at that moment, on Dudu’s end.

A drop of blood from her shattered body dripped onto that fragment.

The next instant, the fragment that had already unleashed a burst of power erupted again.

The faces of the Eleven Elders changed instantly.

“What’s going on?”

“Didn’t she die?”

…

The remaining elders subconsciously burst out with various Skills to fend off the forces re-emerging from the Fragment.

At this moment, Lu Wu’s eyes were blood-red; he didn’t care about any resistance and directly activated the Senluo Wanxiang Domain.

“Boom”

As Lu Wu’s Senluo Wanxiang Domain opened, an unimaginable torrent rushed into Lu Wu’s brain.

Lu Wu only held on for a few seconds before being overwhelmed and knocked unconscious by the torrent.

Almost at the moment Lu Wu passed out, a person appeared out of nowhere and grabbed him.

Taking advantage of the elders’ distraction with resisting the Fragment, he disappeared with Lu Wu.

Not long after this person vanished, the erupting Fragment also disappeared.

With the Fragment gone and the explosion over, the remaining elders had narrowly escaped disaster, but their complexions were extremely unsightly.

“It’s gone? How did it disappear?”

“Lu Wu is gone too!”

“Who rescued Lu Wu? And what’s the connection between the person who saved Lu Wu and the Fragment?”

“Wait!”

At this moment, a name simultaneously surfaced in the minds of the remaining old men.

Lin Jianying!

“Is it him? Did he save the person and retrieve the Fragment?”

“So far, that seems to be the only explanation!”

Realizing this, the elders’ expressions grew very ugly.

“What’s going on here?

First, a Pang Duddu suddenly went mad, charged to Elder Mountain with the Fragment, and killed half of us.

We finally got rid of Pang Duddu, and now Lin Jianying shows up? And he even took the Fragment?

Does this mean that what happened today might happen again?

Can we old bones survive another ordeal like this?”

“No, we must capture Lin Jianying and Lu Wu; we must retrieve that Fragment!

Chase them, they can’t have gotten far!”

The remaining ones, clearly frightened by the previous explosion of the Fragment, and focused entirely on it, were about to move.

At this moment, Zhao Xue’en had deeper concerns: “It’s not just about Lin Jianying and the Fragment anymore.

Pang Duddu was clearly being used.

Her role was to deal a heavy blow to us, and now she has done it.

After her rampage, our group is dead or injured, and Chairman Li is not here; Elder Mountain is now at its weakest in history. If someone were to strike at us now…”

Zhao Xue’en spoke up, and the remaining elders shivered all over.

The chase they had prepared was forcibly halted.

Everyone withdrew into Elder Mountain.

That battered Elder Mountain activated its highest security alert.

This scene was witnessed by those watching in the shadows, including Zhang Yunyi.

She looked in the direction of Elder Mountain with a slight smile on her lips.

“Well done, it’s time for me to go back and check on that girl.”

As she spoke, Zhang Yunyi’s figure disappeared in a flash.

The next moment, Zhang Yunyi’s silhouette appeared inside a secret base in Jiangbei.

Deep within the base was a massive Crystal Coffin with a chubby girl inside.

Almost the instant Zhang Yunyi appeared, the girl in the Crystal Coffin opened her blurry eyes…

# Chapter 409: 406 Eye of Truth

Chapter 409: 406 Eye of Truth

The day after the Jiangnan University celebration, the related matters were reported.

Former Vice President of Jiangnan University, Pang Duddu, had betrayed the Alliance to the extreme, killing a total of 281 people at Jiangnan University’s auditorium, including the head of the Education Bureau, Lu Zheng.

Subsequently, she carried the terror tools of the Evil Organization “Zero” and attacked Elder Mountain in a suicide attack.

The attack caused substantial damage to the Elder Mountain Secret Realm and inflicted immeasurable harm on the people within a two hundred-mile radius of Elder Mountain.

According to estimates, at least several thousand people died in the wave of attacks launched by Pang Duddu.

The report also noted,

Pang Duddu had perished in this attack, but her two accomplices, the former President of the Jiangnan University Student Council, Lu Wu, and Lin Jianying, who had become a high-ranking member of the Evil Organization, were still alive.

Not only were they alive, but they had also taken the terrifying tool with them.

Subsequently, measures were taken by the Alliance regarding this incident.

This included issuing a warrant for Lu Wu and Lin Jianying, shutting down Jiangnan University, investigating and holding accountable those from Jiangnan University who belonged to Pang Duddu’s faction, among other measures.

Jiang Yuexing was the most affected among them.

She had been detained immediately after the incident occurred.

Given her relationship with both Pang Duddu and Lu Wu, it was likely her position as Governor would now be unstable.

However, it’s interesting to note.

In the continuous reaction and measures by the Alliance, there seemed to be no action against the Jiangbei group.

Despite plenty of direct and indirect evidence suggesting that Zhang Yunyi played a significant role in this incident, the Alliance still had no intention of reprimanding her.

She even managed to withdraw the teaching resources originally sent to Jiangnan and brought back Jiangnan University’s resources to rebuild Jiangbei University as if the Alliance was oblivious to these actions.

This allowed some people to recognize the extraordinariness of Zhang Yunyi, and at the same time, it allowed some to clearly see the current state of the Elder Council.

Near Elder Mountain,

Feng Xiu, who hadn’t departed yet, squinted at the report: “They actually didn’t take action against Zhang Yunyi; they didn’t even signal a warning. It seems that group of elders is in a bad way!”

The Fifth Messenger, who had just returned from out of town bringing back intelligence, glanced towards Elder Mountain,

“It may not necessarily be a bad situation, those old cunning folks might be deliberately inactive.

After all, they have survived from the previous era.

Though the Gate Fragment’s eruption was horrifying, it might not be enough to seriously impact them, so I think we should probably stay low for a while.”

Hearing this, Feng Xiu laughed out loud,

“Lao Wu, does that sound like something a messenger from our Zero Organization should say?

Since when has our Zero Organization ever been so cautious and constrained?

You should learn from me, to be high-profile and do as we desire, that’s how a messenger of our Zero Organization should be.”

“And end up like you, beaten so badly your mother wouldn’t recognize you?”

“You!”

Feng Xiu wanted to react angrily but considering his weakness had to shake his head, “The young people nowadays really aren’t lovable!”

The Fifth Messenger ignored all that: “Now it’s already come to this, what’s your plan next?”

“I’m actually quite interested in that fragment, and also the growth of Lu Wu is unsettling to me, but you know my current condition.

At this point, as the situation has developed to this, the Alliance might be chaotic for a while.

Some forces that normally wouldn’t act might emerge.

Anyway, I should probably go back and heal my injuries first.

What about you?”

“Me? I guess I’ll wander around, try my luck, see if I can find Lu Wu and Lin Jianying!”

“Alright then, go and try your luck.”

Feng Xiu and the Fifth Messenger waved to each other and without further ado, they parted ways on the spot.

The Fifth Messenger chose a direction and left without hesitation, while Feng Xiu stood motionlessly, watching the departing Fifth Messenger, his expression somewhat intriguing.

……

District 2.

Each district of the Alliance has its own actual controlling power.

District 1 is the Alliance, the Elder Council.

District 11 is the Four Great Tribes.

District 12 is the northern and southern families.

But in District 2, the actual control of the entire area is held by the “Science Alliance.”

This “Science Alliance” or rather, before this, everyone’s powers were rather inconspicuous.

Not to mention the District 1 side, even ordinary people among the districts had little idea that there were forces other than the Alliance in their district.

It was even less likely for them to know that a power outside the Alliance was quietly controlling their lives.

In District 2, the “Science Alliance” not only controls the lives of the people in District 2 but also the summoners and their Summoned Beasts.

Summoned Beasts outside District 2 are generally naturally summoned.

A significant portion of the Summoned Beasts in District 2 are artificially synthesized.

District 2 has already developed a mature technology in this aspect.

The “Iron Man” Summoned Beast that Lu Wu encountered in the university competition was an artificially synthesized creature from District 2, a product of the “Science Alliance.”

It can be said, the artificially synthesized mechanical Summoned Beast is a hallmark of the District 2 “Science Alliance.”

But what little known is, the highest achievement of the “Science Alliance” is not the artificially synthesized mechanical Summoned Beast.

But an Artificial Secret Realm called “New World.”

This Secret Realm is the culmination of over a hundred years of the “Science Alliance.”

It serves not only as the secret headquarters of the “Science Alliance” but also as a crystallization of various technologies developed by the “Science Alliance” over a hundred years.

Inside the New World, there exists a function that the “Science Alliance” prides itself on, named the “Eye of Truth.”

This function sounds impressive.

In reality, it is a surveillance system.

But this is a powerful surveillance system composed of a satellite setup of Legendary Quality, made using 72 combined scientific artifacts.

In theory, if this system operates at full capacity, it can observe every corner of the Alliance.

The head of this system had proudly claimed more than once that within this system, there are no secrets in the entire Alliance.

This is also why this system is called the “Eye of Truth.”

Of course, in actual operation, it naturally doesn’t achieve such terrifying effects.

There are many areas it cannot surveil, and its operation is limited.

Nevertheless, this doesn’t cover up its impressiveness.

Relying on it, the Science Alliance has still obtained quite a lot of information.

For instance, during this incident at Elder Mountain.

Although the “Eye of Truth” could not see the entire process, it still saw a great deal of intelligence.

This included the real casualty numbers of the elders at Elder Mountain.

The whereabouts of the Gate Fragment.

And Lu Wu’s whereabouts.

At this time, the project leader of the “Eye of Truth” was reporting the situation to various leaders of the “Science Alliance.”

“According to the data sent back by the Eye of Truth, we can see that the Elder Mountain incident has caused unprecedented heavy losses to Elder Mountain.

A total of 27 epic-level Summoners died in this incident.

Even five elders lost their lives.

It was a tremendous loss that even the recovery battle had not witnessed.

Moreover, even the elders and Summoned Beasts who survived were mostly severely injured.

It is estimated that at least half of them will need six months or even longer to possibly recover.

You could say that Elder Mountain is at its weakest state ever.”

“Additionally, the fragments of the Gate did indeed not end up in the hands of Elder Mountain.

During the last outbreak, someone took the opportunity when the elders were resisting the outbreak and took Lu Wu away.

After that person left, the Gate fragments also disappeared one after another.

Based on the analysis of the elders’ statements, the person who took Lu Wu was likely someone named Lin Jianying.

We also tracked Lin Jianying and Lu Wu, but unfortunately, we ultimately lost their trail. However, we locked onto the direction in which they disappeared.

Barring any accidents, there should be a Secret Realm at the place they vanished into.”

……

After the person in charge of the Eye of Truth reported the related intelligence.

The high-level executives of the Science Alliance fell into contemplation.

This intelligence made some high-ups in the Science Alliance restless.

They were tempted both by the unprecedentedly weak state of Elder Mountain and the fragment that was suspected to be with Lu Wu.

After all, the fragment possessed a power almost capable of annihilating Elder Mountain.

And Elder Mountain, on the other hand, had a century’s worth of foundation for the Alliance.

Some among the more radical members were eager to seize control of both, in one fell swoop, allowing the Science Alliance to replace Elder Mountain in overseeing the whole Alliance.

However, not only did the Science Alliance have radicals, it also had conservatives.

They did not believe this was an important moment for the Alliance to take action, as both Elder Mountain and Lu Wu had someone standing behind them who had not yet emerged.

Acting now was not rational.

The radicals argued that by capturing both Elder Mountain and the fragment, the remaining chairman and Lu Haikong would pose no threat at all.

The two sides were thus at an impasse.

In the end, a decision from the Alliance’s head was needed.

This head decided to share this intelligence.

“Although taking risks can yield great benefits, they can also bring unimaginable disasters.

Therefore, we should be cautious.

Of course, if we don’t have the courage to take risks, others might!”

Shortly after this meaningful statement by the head, the worst intelligence leak since the establishment of the Science Alliance occurred.

The existence of [New World] and the [Eye of Truth] was leaked.

Also leaked were the full details about the Elder Mountain incident obtained by the [Eye of Truth].

This leak intensified the already turbulent situation within the Alliance.

Countless forces and individuals started to get restless.

At the place where Lu Wu ultimately disappeared, a large number of unidentified people began to appear.

Meanwhile, in Jiangnan, various affairs related to people and enterprises connected to Lu Wu also began to arise.

At this time, Lu Wu was completely oblivious to the outside world.

Currently, he lay in an extremely cold environment.

He had been there for three days.

When Lu Wu woke up again, he found himself frozen in a thick block of ice.

“Where am I?

And what’s wrong with me, why does my head hurt so much?”

Lu Wu hadn’t figured out where he was when a severe headache surged, leaving his head swimming.

His mental state was extremely poor.

Ordinarily, he had a photographic memory, but he couldn’t even recall what had happened before he was frozen.

All he could feel was the intense pain, which was so severe it made him, who had become immune to suffering after enduring countless tortures, feel particularly uncomfortable.

There was also the grief and anger at the bottom of his heart, suppressed and unexpressed.

Tears involuntarily streamed down.

But Lu Wu didn’t know why he was crying.

“What exactly happened?”

“Wasn’t I on my way to save Dudu? How did I end up here? Where’s Dudu?”

Lu Wu struggled to recall what had happened before he fell into a coma, but the harder he tried, the more his head hurt and the deeper his sadness grew.

The tears just wouldn’t stop.

In this cold Secret Realm, his tears instantly froze.

The tears turned into ice, stinging his eyeballs.

But the pain in his eyes and head was nothing compared to the heartache Lu Wu had dug out himself recently.

It was a suffocating pain that felt as if his chest had been hollowed out.

Despite not remembering anything, Lu Wu seemed to have grasped what had happened.

But he couldn’t accept that reality.

From the time Lu Wu transmigrated, until his faked death to escape, Dudu had always been by his side.

To him, Dudu had already become part of his life and even his existence.

He couldn’t accept the reality that Dudu might be gone.

So he tried even harder to remember, wanting to recall exactly what had happened, wanting confirmation that his Dudu was still alive.

Even though remembering might make him more sad, he still refused to give up.

This put Lu Wu into a vicious cycle.

And just as Lu Wu was submerged in it and couldn’t extricate himself, a voice urgently called out in his mind—it was Han Han.

Danger!

There was an extremely dangerous presence approaching, and Han Han wanted to warn Lu Wu.

Ordinarily, Lu Wu wouldn’t need Han Han’s reminder, but now, even with Han Han’s warning, he couldn’t react.

He was still clutching his head, caught in the painful and sad cycle of trying to remember.

At that moment, a giant Ice Giant, over ten meters tall and covered in long white fur, dragging a huge wooden club, approached Lu Wu.

The Ice Giant had clearly noticed Lu Wu and had already sees him as food—a small, yet extremely energy-rich existence.

After locking on its target, it pounced violently, swinging its massive club down furiously at Lu Wu.

At that moment, Lu Wu was still unable to move, showing no response.

Realizing that Lu Wu was effectively incapacitated, Han Han gritted his teeth, leaped out from Lu Wu’s body, and transformed into a giant beast. With a flap of its wings, it shielded Lu Wu from the blow…

# Chapter 410: 407 Extreme Cold Hell

Chapter 410: 407 Extreme Cold Hell

Extreme Cold Hell.

The Ice Giant swung down his club.

In an instant, endless cold air burst forth, and a blizzard suddenly erupted within dozens of meters around the club.

The club in its hand also transformed into an ice form in an instant, and many fine and sharp spikes appeared on the club, making it look both fierce and terrifying.

With one swing, wouldn’t that be a bloodbath and riddled with holes?

But Silly didn’t fear at all, it was just as fearless as Lu Wu, what kind of brutal beatings hadn’t it experienced? To take a step back would mean admitting defeat!

Han didn’t dodge or evade, it swung its wings and bravely resisted the club.

Ah, commendable courage, but its power was slightly lacking.

“Crack!”

When the Ice Giant swung down, a clear, crisp sound of bones shattering echoed.

Silly’s wings were directly broken by the club, and the piercing cold ice surged into Silly’s body, freezing half of this bird.

It’s fair to say, the Ice Giant grievously wounded this silly bird in one strike.

However, this was normal since there was a significant difference in power between them.

Silly was only King Level 3 Stars, while this Ice Giant had reached Epic 0 Star.

This silly bird using its flesh to fend off attacks, being defeated in one strike was to be expected.

The club breaking Silly’s wings, the Ice Giant swung another kick that swept the obstructive bird out of the way.

Clearing the obstructions, the Ice Giant once again stretched its devilish claws towards Lu Wu.

At this moment, Lu Wu was still unable to react, remaining immersed in his inconsolable sobbing.

“Troublesome servant, in the end, it looks like it’s up to me!”

An incredibly arrogant voice sounded at this moment.

Simultaneously, the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword inside Lu Wu’s heart thrust forth, stabbing straight at the Ice Giant.

While shooting, the sword arrogantly declared,

“Foolish beast, who allowed you to lay hands on my master?

Go to hell…ah, it hurts…”

Before the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword could finish its sentence, another swing of the club from the Ice Giant sent it flying.

This grandiose entrance ended in a disgraceful manner, not appearing mighty at all.

But, that was normal, for the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword was a Divine Artifact type Summoned Beast, with all its energies focused on buffing its master; without its master, its power was severely diminished, let alone the vast difference it had with the Ice Giant.

If Silly couldn’t defeat the creature, how could it?

And with the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword sent flying, Lu Wu’s last barrier was gone.

After repelling both Silly and the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword, the entire creature became excited.

He thought he was about to capture Lu Wu, but just as he reached out, a blue figure flashed by, and the Lu Wu in front of the Ice Giant was whisked away.

The one who rescued Lu Wu was none other than Han!

Then, with those wings that healed in an instant, it grabbed Lu Wu with one claw and the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword with the other, speeding away.

How to put it.

Silly’s behavior at that moment was different from usual.

If it were a normal situation with someone hitting it, it would definitely enjoy fighting the Ice Giant.

The more fiercely the Ice Giant fought, the happier it became.

But now it was impossible, if they fought now, Lu Wu would be eaten.

It had to first take the injured Lu Wu and run!

Such an act of running with someone was not only something Tuantuan was reluctant to do, the Ice Giant was even less happy about it.

Seeing its prey, which was just about to reach its mouth, attempting to escape, the Ice Giant roared in anger and swung its wooden club towards Tuantuan.

The Ice Giant, being of Epic 0 Star stature, produced a terrifying power with a simple throw.

The club flew, accompanied by a series of sonic booms, and struck Tuantuan in an instant.

Unable to dodge, Tuantuan could only hold Lu Wu to his chest to protect him while maximally activating his defenses, and his “Thorny Shield” talent activated.

“Poof!”

The club struck Tuantuan’s back; the Thorny Shield erupted and repelled the club, blocking the blow.

But Tuantuan suffered as well; his back was crushed, and blood sprayed from his sharp eyes and ears, clearly indicating severe injuries. His claws, clutching the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword, were broken, and the sword fell down.

Tuantuan noticed the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword falling, but he couldn’t stop; if he did, both he and Lu Wu would be done for.

So, he had to retreat with Lu Wu, leaving the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword behind.

This Ice Giant, after much effort, still let the prey, Lu Wu, slip away and ended up with only a broken sword.

This Ice Giant furiously picked up the broken sword, smashing and biting it with its wooden club trying to destroy it in a fit of rage.

After much struggle, the Ice Giant didn’t manage to damage the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword, instead it ended up with a mouth full of blood.

In a rage, the Ice Giant threw the sword far away with a backhand toss.

It turns out that throw was a bit too strong.

How does the saying go? Great strength brings miracles!

With the Ice Giant’s great strength, combined with the sharpness of the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword, the throw pierced through a nearby ice mountain, embedding deep within it.

As the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword penetrated, the whole ice mountain began to light up.

This sight dumbfounded the nearby Ice Giant.

…

On the other hand, Tuantuan, after escaping with Lu Wu from the Ice Giant, was not yet safe.

They had only just left the Ice Giant’s area by a few dozen miles when new Summoned Beasts set their sights on them.

This time, it was a flock of Cold Ice Vultures.

Specifically, the flock of Cold Ice Vultures had their eyes set on Lu Wu as well.

As soon as Tuantuan entered their territory, the Cold Ice Vultures noticed Lu Wu.

Like the Ice Giant, they too sensed a power on Lu Wu that could strengthen them, even transform them.

This power fascinated them, so without a second thought, they launched an attack on Tuantuan.

In terms of power, the flock of Cold Ice Vultures was much weaker than the Ice Giant, even weaker than Tuantuan at his peak.

The leader had only the strength of a King Level 2 Star, whom Tuantuan could usually easily thrash.

But the issue was that Tuantuan was currently in a bad state, and there were simply too many Cold Ice Vultures.

The entire flock numbered over a hundred.

Most of them were of King-level stature.

And they fought dishonorably!

They didn’t attack Tuantuan one by one but in groups.

As soon as Tuantuan entered, the Cold Ice Vultures swarmed him, their fervor resembling that of supermarket grannies rushing for discounted eggs.

Initially, Tuantuan was shocked by their aggressiveness, and by the time he thought of escaping, it was already too late.

This group of old ladies, oh no, this group of Cold Ice Vultures had surrounded Lu Wu and Han from all sides.

Adding to that, Han had just taken a brutal hit from an Ice Giant’s club, even breaking a claw on its back wing, which greatly reduced its power and speed. Han tried several times but couldn’t break out of the Cold Ice Vulture’s encirclement.

After a few attempts, both Han and Lu Wu had accumulated some injuries.

This completely unleashed Han’s ferocity.

It’s so unethical, it wasn’t even dodging anymore, and these birds were still attacking Lu Wu?

It didn’t matter if they attacked Han, but attacking Lu Wu was not okay.

Lu Wu was already severely damaged, if they continued to attack, he would be completely destroyed, then Han would have no Lu Wu anymore, nor could it enjoy being beaten up.

Initially, Han’s battle strategy was all about taking hits, rarely showing any desire to attack actively.

Its core combat philosophy was, to endure the most poisonous blows and exhaust the opponent!

But today, it realized simply taking hits wasn’t enough, so Han exploded in rage, changing its fighting style.

“Screech!”

With a long cry, Han flapped its wings and sent several of the Cold Ice Vultures that were attacking again flying away.

While repelling the attack, Han kept its eyes on a target and suddenly lunged forward, pecking fiercely with its beak, piercing through a King Level 1 Star Cold Ice Vulture.

At the same time, it unleashed the “Extreme Cold Beam” from its mouth, a burst of energy exploding outwards, taking away that King Level 1 Star Cold Ice Vulture.

It wasn’t over yet.

Han then bit the body of the fallen Cold Ice Vulture again, swiftly pecking out and swallowing the heart where the energy was concentrated.

The sudden ferocity and surge from Han startled the Cold Ice Vultures.

But this single wave wasn’t enough to deter the flock of Cold Ice Vultures.

After a brief moment of confusion, their ferocity was also fully unleashed.

Under the command of the Ice Vulture King, hundreds of Cold Ice Vultures attacked Han again.

This flock of vultures was smart, knowing the tactic of attacking the wounded.

They aimed their strikes vitally.

They either targeted Lu Wu or hit the wounds that the Ice Giant had inflicted on Han.

Under this shameless and unethical assault, Han was battered quite disgracefully for a while.

But its ferocity was gradually ignited.

From the moment it killed the first Cold Ice Vulture, Han kept a tight watch on the attacks from this group of Cold Ice Vultures.

Whenever these Cold Ice Vultures showed any vulnerability, Han would go in with a combination of moves, targeting the vitals, killing the bird, and consuming the heart.

Initially, it was a bit rusty, but after a few times, it became very skilled.

The entire process was incredibly fluid, not sloppy or sluggish at all.

Every strike Han delivered ensured the death of a Cold Ice Vulture.

In just twenty minutes, Han had annihilated ten King Level 1 Star Cold Ice Vultures, causing tremendous loss to this clan.

Typically, such a level of losses would be enough for the flock of Cold Ice Vultures to give up hunting.

But the current situation was clearly not normal.

Despite the heavy losses, the Cold Ice Vultures continued to focus on Lu Wu without any sign of giving up.

They seemed to think there was no need to give up, as Han was also close to its limit.

After all, Han had already been heavily wounded before fighting for over twenty minutes. The silly bird should have been nearly exhausted by now, they thought they were close to reducing it to death.

However, the truth was that Han hadn’t only not been exhausted to death but came out even more spirited.

After all, it possessed the “Unyielding” talent.

Talent included the “Undying Little Strong,” a special talent capable of regenerating even from a severed arm.

Coupled with Tuantuan continuously devouring the hearts of Cold Ice Vultures to replenish its nourishment, its state was not as bad as the Cold Ice Vultures had imagined.

Over twenty minutes, although it and Lu Wu sustained several minor injuries, there were basically no severe injuries.

The significant injury left by the Ice Giant also healed rapidly during the battle, and Tuantuan’s state was improving as the fight progressed.

It became increasingly fierce, and the frequency of its counterattacks grew.

Thirty minutes later, the flock of Cold Ice Vultures finally realized something was wrong—they came to find that this silly bird might indeed be indestructible, and if the fight continued, they would be the ones to perish.

But it was already too late.

Tuantuan’s wounds had almost completely healed, and its ferocity had been fully unleashed.

By this time, it was too late for the Cold Ice Vultures to retreat, and Tuantuan would not let them.

Finally, after an hour of battle, the fight concluded.

Tuantuan, who had entered the battle with severe injuries, not only recovered after an hour but also increased its power, vaguely approaching the Epic 0 Star level.

On the other hand, the Cold Ice Vultures.

An hour ago, they had a King Level 2 Star leader and hundreds in their tribe; after an hour, Tuantuan had devoured half of them, including the leader, and the remaining Cold Ice Vultures fled and dispersed.

This great battle ended with a complete victory for Tuantuan.

However, the battle had greatly drained Tuantuan’s vitality.

After the fight, although Tuantuan’s body was full of excitement and energy, it was somewhat weary in spirit.

Thus, it settled temporarily in the old nest of the Cold Ice Vultures along with Lu Wu.

The nest of this flock of Cold Ice Vultures was built on an enormous ice-blue tree.

At the highest point of the tree, there was a nest constructed from various materials, and in the very center of the nest was an ice-blue ice block on which Tuantuan landed and placed Lu Wu.

That ice block seemed to have a soul-soothing, sleep-inducing effect.

Amid his intense pain, Lu Wu’s facial expression slightly softened when placed on the ice block.

Noticing this scene, Tuantuan immediately became excited.

Believing that the broken Lu Wu was on the mend, it looked at him expectantly with both eyes.

However, Lu Wu didn’t seem to live up to Tuantuan’s expectations.

Although Lu Wu on the ice block was not as agonized as before, he was still in pain.

Tuantuan watched over Lu Wu for over an hour, and Lu Wu still showed no signs of waking up.

Additionally, Tuantuan noticed something else—the ice block beneath Lu Wu seemed to be rapidly absorbed by his body while he lay there.

In just about an hour, the ice block had noticeably shrunk.

At this rate, the ice block would soon be gone!

What to do?

Tuantuan tilted its head, pondering for a moment.

(Is finding this kind of ice what Lu Wu needs to recover?)

Tuantuan felt that it might be!

(It’s decided, Tuantuan will take Lu Wu to find more ice!)

Lu Wu would never have expected that his silliest, least reliable Summoned Beast would turn out to be the most dependable one when he was in his worst state.

Having resolved to find the healing ice and fix the ailing Lu Wu, Tuantuan sprang into action.

It first opened its vast mouth, devouring all the stored food in the Cold Ice Vulture’s nest, filling itself to the brim, and then stretched out its newly grown claws to grab Lu Wu and the ice block. With a flap of its wings, Tuantuan took to the skies once more, beginning its journey to find the ice block that could heal Lu Wu…

# Chapter 411: 408 Epic 0 Star

Chapter 411: 408 Epic 0 Star

Zone 1.

After the attack incident involving Pang Duddu, Elder Mountain was immediately sealed off.

The closure of Elder Mountain, along with the leakage of intelligence from the Science Alliance, led to a large influx of unidentified people into Zone 1 recently.

The goals of these people entering Zone 1 were quite clear.

Either they lingered outside Elder Mountain, or they were in Jiangnan, or they were in the last place where Lu Wu disappeared.

Of these three destinations, the third was relatively much more hectic.

Many individuals entered Zone 1 and headed straight for this place.

These people overtly and covertly began a carpet search of the area where Lu Wu had disappeared, causing quite a stir.

In just a few short days, several bloody incidents had already occurred.

There were even a few king-level confrontations.

Normally, the Alliance would have intervened early on to suppress it; however, this time, the Alliance acted as if it had not seen and directly forgotten about this area, allowing these people to do as they pleased here.

“It seems that Elder Mountain really is no good anymore!”

In the skies above the area where Lu Wu disappeared, a hundred-meter-long warship was hovering.

Inside the warship, a young man dressed in military attire akin to that before the great catastrophe gazed down at the land below, squinting his eyes.

“It might not be that they aren’t capable, maybe they just simply don’t want to intervene,” replied a young man in a clergy robe from some church standing behind the military-clad young man.

This clergyman’s response elicited scoffing from a girl dressed in tight leather that accentuated every curve of her devilish figure on the other side: “What do you mean they don’t want to intervene? It’s more like they don’t dare to intervene. I think they were scared off by that last encounter!”

It was clear that this girl’s scorn was aimed more at the clergyman than at the Elder Council.

To this, the young clergyman responded with a gentle smile, “Perhaps. After all, the force that attacked them last time was indeed terrifying.”

“Hmph!”

The clergyman was clearly agreeing with the girl, but she still wasn’t pleased and suddenly shifted her tone.

“Those old undying aren’t so easily defeated. They’re lying low now, definitely scheming something else.”

Within two sentences, this girl turned her evaluation of the Elder Council a full one hundred and eighty degrees.

The implications were heavy.

In response, the clergyman always faced her with a smile, a look that said ‘you’re right about everything’.

The more he did so, the angrier the girl became, her eyes fixated on the clergyman as if she was suppressing some bad thoughts.

The military-clad young man, not liking the way this was going, forcefully inserted himself to break up their ‘exchange of looks’.

“We have others here, so both of you could be a bit more discreet.

Also, where’s that kid from the Chaos Alliance? Hasn’t he arrived yet?

Does he have no sense of time, or is he really that incompetent to be this late?

Forget waiting for him!

I’ll just send him the information later!”

Saying this, the military-clad young man snapped his fingers decisively.

“Siwei Armor, open the map!”

Following the military-clad young man’s voice command, a sound that carried spiritual energy yet was filled with a mechanical texture rang out.

“Understood, I’ll open the map for Pimis, the Five-star Admiral right now!”

The clergy youth and the leather jacket girl heard the words ‘Five-star Admiral.’ The former still maintained a smile, while the latter immediately pursed her lips in discontent.

She really couldn’t understand why this fellow, clearly the most outstanding and talented Scientific Cultivator of the Technology Alliance, favored things like armies, warships, and generals.

However, it seemed the girl had known Pismi for a while and had grown accustomed to his peculiar hobby, shifting her focus instead to the holographic map that had appeared out of nowhere, filled with various energy points.

“This map you see now is from an area my Siwei Armor warship detected over three days.

Through this map, we can clearly see that there are 87 areas with abnormal energy reactions within this region, all of which are secret realms.

However, most of these secret realms have already been developed. Lu Wu couldn’t possibly be hiding in them, so let’s first eliminate the developed ones that have already been investigated.”

Pismi spoke, and the light points on the holographic map began to rapidly disappear.

Of the 87 locations, only 13 remained.

“Right, these are the unrevealed secret realms. However, more than half of them have low energy reactions, and the scale of these secret realms is absolutely not large. The possibility of Lu Wu hiding there is slim.

The most likely place he could be hiding is here!”

Pismi said, as the holographic map now showed only a single icy blue light point.

“This place is roughly twenty-three miles plus two hundred and twenty meters and thirty-five centimeters from our current location!

The energy reaction ceiling is about 7821 units, and the energy reaction is ice.

Oh, you illiterates, you wouldn’t understand if I explained it this way. Let me just speak in terms of levels; this secret realm’s level should be an Ice Attribute Epic Level.

Also, at the entrance to the secret realm, someone has installed facilities with very low energy reactions, but various signs indicate that these facilities have very high explosive power, probably also at an Epic Level…”

The leather jacket girl couldn’t stand his rambling and interrupted directly, “Why all this pointless talk? Just say he’s hiding in this secret realm, right?”

“I can only say there’s a ninety-nine percent chance Lu Wu is in this secret realm. Can’t confirm he’s inside?”

“What’s the difference?”

“There still is one…”

Pismi pressed down his military cap, ready to explain properly to the leather jacket girl, but he was abruptly interrupted.

“Shut up. Skip the nonsense and directly tell me what we are going to do next. Are we just going to storm in, eliminate Lu Wu, and seize the fragment?”

“I wouldn’t recommend that approach.

Not to mention the installations outside the secret realm, not to mention the possible presence of Lin Jianying, and the explosive power of the Gate Fragment might manifest.

Dealing with Lu Wu alone will be difficult.”

As he spoke, Pismi snapped his fingers again, “Siwei Armor, pull up Lu Wu’s data.”

“At your command!”

Inside the warship, a holographic image of Lu Wu appeared.

“Lu Wu, 20 years old, former chairman of the Lu Group, president of the Student Union at Jiangnan University, actual controller of Jiangnan University.

Former foster son of the Governor of Jiangnan, childhood friend of Pang Duddu from the Elder Mountain incident, and also rumored to have an alias called Zhengdaguangming…”

Listening to Pismi recite well-known information, the clergy youth kept a smile, but the leather jacket girl beside him clenched her fists.

Yet, Pismi remained oblivious to the danger.

“This individual, who emerged just two years ago, not only became the youngest person recognized as most likely to become a Grandmaster Cultivator but also reached a power level close to Epic from King-level Peak.

His power and talent are both top-notch; compared to him, the three of us are nothing.

Although we currently have a slight edge over him in power, it’s only temporary.”

And whether he’s truly leading now is also hard to say.

From what I know, one of Lu Wu’s summoned beasts is of the ice attribute, and the secret realm he’s currently in is also an ice attribute secret realm. It’s hard for people to think of this as a coincidence.

Either someone wants to help him and push him to the epic level,

or he prepared it himself, wanting to break through to the epic level in this particular secret realm.

Once he reaches the epic level, the gap between us and him will be gone.

By then, even though we have three people, whether we can defeat him or not is uncertain.

Furthermore, even if we can defeat him.

Behind him is Lin Jianying, the gate fragment, and a father who hasn’t shown up for a long time. It’s said that he suppressed an entire era, and even the Elder Council at its peak was extremely wary of him.

Go after him? Are you tired of living?”

“Isn’t the task we received to take down Lu Wu and seize the fragment?”

“Then you can go. As for me, I won’t. I’m young and I want to live longer.

The mission is from the organization, but my life is my own; just going through the motions is enough.

If those guys themselves don’t dare come out, why should I exhaust myself to death for them? Just make it look good.

They shouldn’t kill me just for going through the motions, right?

Besides, I am working quite hard here; look, didn’t I find the guy for you?”

Pismi firmly insisted that slacking off and being laid-back was fine, but going up to fight desperately was out of the question.

However, the two people in front of him were not as lazy as he was.

Hearing his remarks, the leather jacket girl literally exploded with anger.

Her current anger was stronger than Pismi’s previous rambling, or it might be said that her previous and current anger were on completely different levels.

“Is this the awareness you have as a leading figure of the younger generation in the Science Alliance?

Don’t you know how dangerous Lu Wu is?

Pang Duddu died on Elder Mountain. Given the relationship between Lu Wu and her, it’s absolutely impossible for Lu Wu to act as if nothing happened afterward.

Pang Duddu, a girl with mediocre talent and no special features, managed to unleash such terrifying power by mastering the fragment. Once Lu Wu breaks through to the epic level and masters the fragment, do you have any idea what the consequences could be?

He will definitely seek revenge on the Elder Mountain and the entire alliance.

This alone would be a huge disaster for the alliance.

Not to mention, this matter is not so simple.

With your intelligence, can’t you see that there’s a huge, hidden hand behind this?

Although I don’t know what the other party is planning, from their ability to manipulate a fragment for their schemes, we can see their power and plans.

If he succeeds, the consequences would be unimaginable.

Our backers are aware of the severity of the situation, but various circumstances prevent them from taking the field themselves, so it’s up to us to investigate and stop this conspiracy.

In a way, we are now carrying the lives of all humanity in the alliance.

Shouldn’t you have already known all this when you accepted the mission?

Weren’t you supposed to undertake this mission with the resolve to face death?”

The earthshaking roar from the leather jacket girl left Pismi somewhat dumbfounded. It took him a while to come to his senses before he turned to the clergy youth beside him.

“Has she always been this naive?”

“You! Hopeless case!”

The leather jacket girl got even more angered by Pismi, stomped her foot, and turned to leave.

As the leather jacket girl left, the clergy youth also made a bow to Pismi before turning to leave.

“Wait, don’t tell me you are just as naive?”

“Some things, someone has to do!”

The clergy youth left without looking back.

Watching the two of them leave, Pismi sneered.

“These two, either someone screwed up their brains, or they’re scheming something. Let them be; I’m certainly not going to throw my life away.

Siwei Armor, engage entertainment mode.”

Following Pismi’s command, the interior environment of the warship changed.

Various entertainment facilities were set up, and Pismi directly threw the clergy youth and leather jacket girl out of his mind.

“Come on, play the music, continue dancing!”

However, just as Pismi’s warship had started to liven up, a ‘boom’ sounded, and his warship fiercely trembled.

“What the hell? Did that woman smash my warship?”

“Alert, alert, the warship is under epic-level attack, warship defense is estimated to collapse… um, it has been breached!”

Following the alert, a gash was ripped open in Pismi’s warship, and an elderly man crawled in through the rift.

“Holy shit…”

The moment he saw the old man’s face, Pismi’s expression immediately darkened.

…

Extreme Cold Hell.

Outside the secret realm, while countless people were causing trouble for Lu Wu, inside the secret realm, Lu Wu was currently flying in the sky.

It had been five days since Lu Wu entered this secret realm.

Han had been flying with Lu Wu in the realm for five days.

These past five days were simply not the life a beast should live.

The summoned beasts in the secret realm seemed to have a particular fondness for Lu Wu. Whenever Han flew with Lu Wu, entering another summoned beast’s domain would definitely result in a beating for Han.

In just five days, Han had fought a total of 17 large and small battles.

The smallest battle involved fighting twenty to thirty king-level summoned beasts, and the largest involved thousands of summoned beasts led by an epic 0 star-level beast.

If not for Han’s fast running, and if the tribe wasn’t of the water element, both he and Lu Wu would have been doomed.

Consecutive battles left Han and Lu Wu covered in numerous wounds.

Hanhadan

# Chapter 412: 409 Sword Saint

Chapter 412: 409 Sword Saint

After leaving Pismi’s warship.

The leather jacket girl and the clerical youth arrived at the entrance to the Extreme Cold Secret Realm one after another.

Standing a few dozen meters away from the entrance, the leather jacket girl Eliya turned and looked at the clerical youth.

“Do you feel it? The entrance facility that guy mentioned!”

“I can’t feel anything, but it should be there. He wouldn’t lie to us about this kind of thing!”

The clerical youth, Wang Yase, said as he raised his hand and fired at the entrance opposite him.

A pure gold cross crashed down, smashing towards the entrance and exit of the Secret Realm.

At the same time the cross fell, an extremely intense black unfolded and directly shattered the cross.

“Is it really there? Or is it an Evil Energy defense?

Can the Evil Energy defense block your attack so easily?”

Eliya was startled and launched an attack herself.

A crescent moon slammed down towards the black protection, just like the previous cross, both Epic 0 Star-level attacks, but still unable to cause any damage to the black protection.

“It’s very strong; it must be at the Epic 1-star level, and possibly even higher. This is going to be troublesome!”

They didn’t have much confidence that they could break through this level of defense.

But it had to be done!

Without breaking this open, they wouldn’t even be able to enter the Secret Realm, let alone anything else.

Eliya and Wang Yase looked at each other and simultaneously summoned their beasts.

As two beams of light flared, two Summoned Beasts appeared out of nowhere.

On Eliya’s side, the Summoned Beast was a Dark Moon Elf with double wings on its back and dark purple skin.

On Wang Yase’s side, the Summoned Beast was an Angel that Lu Wu had seen once during the university league.

What was different was that the Angel Lu Wu saw back then was a Six-winged Angel, while the one that Wang Yase had now had an additional two pairs of wings, reaching the Ten-wing Level.

“Let’s get started!”

After summoning their beasts, the two didn’t waste words and got straight to it!

The Dark Moon Elf levitated, back facing the sky, hands stretching forth as a Dark Moon Longbow appeared out of thin air. As the Dark Moon Elf drew the bow and nocked an arrow, a crescent moon appeared behind her.

The Ten-winged Angel spread its wings, eyes fixed on the black barrier, and a burst of Holy Light erupted from behind, with a massive Light Warhammer, full of a sense of divinity and majesty, materializing out of nothing.

“Dark Moon Arrow!”

“Holy Light Judgment!”

Two skills of the same level as Lu Wu’s “Divine Judgment” exploded in an instant.

One of the utmost Dark, the other of the utmost Light.

The two forces erupted at a cleverly timed moment and location, surprisingly not only not negating each other but also amplifying the power to a certain extent.

This round of attack was almost the limit of what the two could unleash.

Starting with their Big Moves, it was clear to see how determined they were to break through the dark defense.

But this determination went unanswered.

The wave of attack crashed into the dark defense, not to mention shattering it; it barely caused a ripple.

“How is this possible? When we join forces in this move, not even an Epic 1-star being can withstand it; how could there be no effect at all?”

“What do we do now? If we can’t even break this, how are we going to get in? What about completing the mission…”

“Is this the place?”

Just when Eliya and Wang Yase were frowning, an elderly voice came into question?

“Who?”

Eliya and Wang Yase were startled and looked up together to find two people had appeared above them without their knowledge.

One of them even showed a smile sadder than crying.

“Hi, we meet again!”

If this guy wasn’t Pismi, who could it be?

However, Eliya and the others weren’t focused on Pismi at the moment, their attention was on the old man beside him wearing the unique attire of the 11th District, with a longsword at his waist and exuding an aura of old age.

When they saw him, Eliya and Wang Yase’s pupils contracted.

Being rising stars in their respective organizations who had stepped into the Epic level, they had a very detailed understanding of the Epic-level powerhouses in the Alliance, which also included this old man.

If they hadn’t seen wrongly, this old man in front of them should be the Sword Saint of the 11th District, Sword-drawing Master Yukawa Ryuzo, who was said to have died of old age over twenty years ago.

“He was supposed to be dead, right? How could he be here? And with Pismi?”

Eliya and the others were filled with questions, yet Yukawa Ryuzo didn’t pay attention to them.

“Evil Energy Shield, it seems he really is inside!”

He walked forward and slowly drew the longsword from his waist, the sword point quivering as he stabbed towards the black protection weakly.

The sword had no aura of might to speak of, even making one worry if the old man would die before he could stab out.

But as the sword pierced forward and gently touched the barrier, the previously unbreakable protection Eliya and Wang Yase had attacked showed a point.

Subsequently, a light crackling sound arose, and cracks began to spread endlessly.

Immediately after, the black protection simply shattered in front of a dumbstruck Eliya and Wang Yase.

“Let’s go!”

Yukawa Ryuzo sheathed his sword and, along with an unwilling-looking Pismi at his side, entered Ice Hell.

He didn’t glance at Eliya and the others from beginning to end.

The two of them didn’t dare breathe heavily until after Yukawa Ryuzo had entered.

“What a terrifying presence!

This man truly deserves to be called the Sword Saint; despite being heavily injured and encumbered by old age, his strength is still so fearsome. A defense of this level was easily shattered; for beings like us, just one sword stroke from him would probably suffice, right?”

“He must be after Lu Wu and the Fragment!”

This wasn’t good news for Eliya and the others.

It meant that an already challenging mission now faced a significant new variable. They were supposed to wrest it from Lu Wu, but now they might have to confront Yukawa Ryuzo directly, with the difficulty of the mission greatly increased.

Despite this, Eliya and Wang Yase did not back down, following closely into Ice Hell.

No matter what or who they faced and whatever the difficulties, they had to complete this mission!

In comparison, Pismi’s resolve was lacking by a great deal.

He had no intention of undertaking the mission.

If possible, he would have preferred to stay on the warship, for although he was a military enthusiast, he was a faux enthusiast.

Not one who took command and service as a sacred duty or fought for humanity.

What he yearned for was a bit more retrograde—a King.

A King he could admire and serve wholeheartedly.

If there was a king who was willing to give his all in battle, he would have found such struggles comfortable before the king’s birth.

Like the current situation, he absolutely didn’t want to get involved.

Sadly, fate liked to toy with him, and whether he wanted to or not, he had to get involved.

“Where is the person?”

Upon entering Ice Hell, Yukawa Ryuzo immediately turned to Pismi, his sword already at his throat before asking again, clearly understanding Pismi’s uncooperative nature unless faced with violence.

This tactic worked well on Pismi, who, with a sword at his throat, immediately became energetic.

“Just wait for me, I’ll check for you right away!”

As he spoke, Pismi took out a set of equipment from his space ring and with a slight motion, thirteen bird-shaped robots took to the sky, and he quickly set up the central command system in a very short time.

In less than three minutes, a scouting system was built and began operating.

Around two hours later, the first wave of scouting had findings.

But Pismi wasn’t ready to disclose them.

On one hand, he didn’t know if revealing the information would leave him valueless and lead to his death.

On the other hand, he didn’t want to get involved in this matter.

If he revealed the location and Yukawa Ryuzo killed Lu Wu, he certainly couldn’t escape retaliation from Lu Wu’s father and the conspirators behind Lu Wu.

If Yukawa Ryuzo failed and was killed by Lu Wu instead, he wouldn’t fare any better.

Pismi, who had reviewed Lu Wu’s profile and analyzed it, knew quite well that the guy held grudges.

He definitely wouldn’t be let off!

So he wanted to delay, not wishing to get involved.

But just as he had this thought, Yukawa Ryuzo’s sword was at his throat.

“Have you found something?”

“No…” Pismi subconsciously shook his head, but as Yukawa Ryuzo’s eyebrows lifted, the pressure of the sword increased, and Pismi’s scalp felt like exploding. He immediately nodded, “Yes, yes, yes!”

Only then did Yukawa Ryuzo lower his sword.

“Speak!”

With the sword no longer at his neck, Pismi grew bolder, “Let’s make a deal. I’ll tell you the location, and you go by yourself, okay… I’ll take you, I’ll take you, isn’t this better? Can you not always threaten with a sword? I get scared easily!”

In the end, Pismi had no choice but to reluctantly stand up and lead Yukawa Ryuzo to the location he had discovered.

“Let’s go, follow them!”

As Pismi and his party left, Eliya, who had been secretly watching them for two hours from the shadows, was about to lead Wang Yase to follow when she noticed Wang Yase hadn’t moved.

“What are you waiting for, let’s go!”

“Look over there!”

Eliya was startled and followed the direction Wang Yase pointed to, noticing that a mechanical rat had appeared there out of nowhere.

At that moment, the mechanical rat started running in the opposite direction to Pismi and his group.

“What’s this?”

“It’s from Pismi, follow the mechanical rat!”

Eliya then realized, “Pismi kept a trick up his sleeve, did he give us Lu Wu’s real location?

It seems we wrongly accused him before. Maybe he’s not as indifferent as he appears; he actually cares about this mission, about the safety of all humanity, so that’s why he did this!”

No, you’re overthinking it!

Pismi wasn’t here, but if he were, he would surely have responded this way.

Of course, his reaction wasn’t snobbishness; he truly wasn’t that noble.

He deliberately left Eliya and the others a clue, not out of high-mindedness, but simply because he didn’t want to face Lu Wu.

He felt that if he had to face Lu Wu, his life would certainly be at risk.

So he reported Lu Wu’s location to Eliya and the rest, letting them go after Lu Wu.

These two definitely wouldn’t be able to take down Lu Wu, but they could scare him off and force him to reveal himself.

Once Lu Wu was exposed, Yukawa Ryuzo on Pismi’s side would surely chase after him immediately, and with no time to pay attention to him, Pismi would be able to smoothly extract himself from the vortex and return to his battleship to resume his music and dance.

…

On Eliya’s side.

Following the mechanical mouse, they ran fifty miles north towards the entrance of Extreme Cold Hell.

The further they went, the more confident Eliya and his people became.

Because along the way, they saw many ruins from fierce battles and Summoned Beast corpses left by the roadside.

From both the ruins and those corpses, they could tell there were signs of bird-like combat.

And as far as they knew, Lu Wu had such a bird among his Summoned Beasts.

“Turns out Pismi was right; Lu Wu entered this Secret Realm indeed seeking to break through to the Epic Level.

Judging by these ruins and corpses, he and his Summoned Beast are undergoing rigorous and cruel training, and the results are quite impressive; that bird has made great progress, and the last few ruins already possess an aura close to the Epic Level.”

This gave Eliya and Wang Yase a strong sense of urgency.

They had to find Lu Wu before he made the breakthrough to the Epic Level and take him down before Yukawa Ryuzo on the other side noticed.

Otherwise, both they and Pismi on Yukawa Ryuzo’s side would be in danger.

“The moment we see Lu Wu, we go all out immediately!”

“Understood!”

Just as the two nodded in agreement, a violent fluctuation suddenly came from ahead, and they knew they had found Lu Wu.

Sure enough, not far in front of them, an ice-blue bird was battling a group of Frost Giants.

When they arrived, the battle was nearing its end.

The ice-blue bird delivered a violent peck, piercing through the largest Frost Giant Bear’s heart; the Extreme Cold Beam erupted, instantly shattering the Frost Giant Bear, and the ice-blue bird swallowed its heart in one gulp.

This burst of action made Eliya and his companions involuntarily gasp in shock.

With a move that instantly killed a King-level, 3 stars peak Frost Giant Bear, the ice-blue bird’s power had definitely reached Epic 0 Star level.

But that was also okay.

The ice-blue bird was only at Epic 0 Star level, still within their capability to handle.

Moreover, they noticed something unusual about Lu Wu’s state, as he was frozen throughout the fight and continuously held by the ice-blue bird, never joining the battle.

“Lu Wu must also be absorbing energy in preparation for his breakthrough, and it seems they haven’t noticed us, which is an opportunity for us.

Let’s wait until that bird completely finishes the fight and lowers its guard before we attack.

Concentrate the attack on Lu Wu and ensure we take him down with one strike!”

At this moment, Han truly hadn’t realized he was being targeted.

After settling the battle, he contentedly placed Lu Wu in the cold pool of the Frost Giant’s territory, and as soon as Han let go of Lu Wu, the attack came…

# Chapter 413: 410 Breakthrough

Chapter 413: 410 Breakthrough

The Dark Organization’s base was stationed in an Undead Secret Realm.

More precisely, it was situated on Little Skeleton’s side.

Coincidentally enough.

While Lu Wu was engulfed in the Extreme Cold Hell and in a special state, Little Skeleton also experienced an accident on his end.

That day, as he was scanning around with his large phone in the Undead Secret Realm, a figure suddenly appeared out of nowhere. Upon making eye contact with Little Skeleton, the figure snatched Little Skeleton’s phone and turned to flee.

It was a blatant, rough ploy to bait someone.

With Little Skeleton’s smart head, it was impossible for him not to see through it.

But seeing through it was one thing, and pursuing was another matter entirely.

To Little Skeleton, the phone was second only to—or even to some extent, even better than—Lu Wu; anything could be stolen except for his phone!

If they stole Lu Wu, he would get angry, but if they stole his phone, he would fight to the death.

So, without a word, Little Skeleton burst forth with lightning speed, chasing after the phone thief.

As a being of King Level 2 Star, Little Skeleton excelled in the Thunder system. When he burst forth at full speed, his pace was unbelievably fast—so much so that even some at King-level 3 stars and even Epic 0 Star might not match his velocity.

Yet, the speed of the pursuer was even more terrifying.

Even as Little Skeleton pushed his speed to the limit, he couldn’t catch up with the one who had snatched his phone.

The pursuer maintained a constant distance, not too close and not too far.

This frustrated Little Skeleton to no end.

He tried every trick in the book.

Slowing down suddenly to force the other to descend, then surging ahead in a stealthy assault.

Unleashing all sorts of Skills in a wild bombardment,

Even remotely controlling his phone to call for Indek’s assistance,

But to no avail; the other was like an aloof goddess, keeping the same unapproachable distance.

At this point, Little Skeleton started to feel scared and worried. He even tried to contact Lu Wu for some help, to think of a way to retrieve his phone. But the timing was too coincidental, almost as if someone had deliberately arranged it.

When Little Skeleton tried to reach Lu Wu, Lu Wu was in a coma, unreachable.

This made Little Skeleton even more anxious.

But he couldn’t stop; his phone was still in the thief’s possession, so he continued the chase, grinding his teeth.

This chase lasted for a good half of the day.

Little Skeleton didn’t know where he’d ended up, how far he’d chased, or how much longer he’d have to chase.

But all things must come to an end.

As Little Skeleton chased into a valley, the long pursuit finally concluded.

The one who had stolen Little Skeleton’s phone had vanished completely. Fortunately, while the person was gone, the phone remained.

Right there in the center of the valley.

There was an altar with a black scythe standing upon it, and Little Skeleton’s phone was hanging on a massive scythe.

The phone was right before his eyes, but whether to take it or not, that was the question.

After all, the situation reeked of eeriness, and even someone as Silly as Dudu could tell there was a problem, let alone Little Skeleton.

But it seemed Little Skeleton had no room for contemplation. Just as he was wrestling with the decision, a force surged behind him and pushed him unsteadily towards the altar.

In the panic, Little Skeleton reached out and ‘snap’—his hand landed right on the huge black scythe.

Little Skeleton paused, not yet having processed what was happening.

A tremendous force, accompanied by a torrent of massive information, rushed into Little Skeleton’s brain.

At the same time, a powerful and mysterious energy enveloped Little Skeleton, transforming it into a black egg.

…

And almost simultaneously with Little Skeleton’s transformation into a black egg.

On the other side, within the Prisoner Dragon Secret Realm.

Little Flood Dragon was earnestly absorbing the power of the gold blood that Lu Wu had left for it, which was of Dragon Clan origin and of Epic Quality, very high quality and very pure, making it quite difficult for Lu Wu to absorb.

But it was different for Little Flood Dragon, although it couldn’t leave, its power had reached Epic 0 Star, and being of the Dragon Clan, it was somewhat kin, so it absorbed more easily.

Very quickly, Little Flood Dragon had absorbed all the power from the gold blood.

However, just as it absorbed the power of the gold blood and made it its own, within the Prisoner Dragon Secret Realm, a pair of gigantic eyes suddenly opened in the depths, fixing on Little Flood Dragon.

Immediately after, a deep, ancient roar that seemed to travel through endless years erupted.

“Roar!”

The roar carried with it sorrowful desolation and a hint of hope.

As soon as the roar faded, the pair of eyes that had opened closed again.

This time, they seemed to close for good, as the mystical creature appeared to be defeated by time, losing its life without any trace of breath left.

And with its demise, it seemed to initiate a cycle of rebirth.

A force burst forth from Little Flood Dragon’s bloodline.

With intense and dazzling light accompanying the force, the Little Flood Dragon quickly became a golden glowing creature.

At the same time, the chains that bound it began to shatter continuously, causing the entire Prisoner Dragon Secret Realm to tremble slightly.

The timing of the changes in Little Skeleton and Little Flood Dragon was impeccably synchronized with Lu Wu’s slumber, almost as if someone had deliberately arranged and meticulously prepared it.

…

Back in Extreme Cold Hell, where they returned to Lu Wu’s side.

Just as Han released Lu Wu, preparing to place him in the icy pool, Eliya and Wang Yase, who had been charging their powers, attacked simultaneously.

“Dark Moon Arrow!” \*2

“Holy Light Judgment!” \*2

At the same time, two Dark Moon Arrows from the Dark Moon Elf and Eliya.

And two Holy Light Judgments from Wang Yase and the Ten-winged Angel descended, striking Lu Wu with incredible precision.

They truly adhered to their previous directive; they didn’t make a move until they could unleash their full power, their strength even greater than their initial assault on the black barrier, absolutely not giving Lu Wu any chance to struggle or counterattack.

Such a sudden onslaught could easily inflict serious injury or possibly kill an Epic 1 Star being.

Killing Lu Wu, who was still King Level 3 Star and in a unique state, should have been even easier.

But after striking, Eliya and the others did not allow themselves any carelessness, knowing full well that what Pismi said was correct – Lu Wu wouldn’t go down so easily.

As it turned out, their unease and concern were not unfounded.

Lu Wu indeed wasn’t that easy to kill!

Even though Lu Wu was in a special state and completely unable to resist at the moment, wasn’t there still Han?

Their unexpected attack had startled Han, but after several days of intense battle, its combat instincts had dramatically intensified, it reacted even before its brain did.

It spread its wings wide, turning itself into a large shield descending from above, using its body to block this wave of attacks for Lu Wu.

“Thud!”

Two Dark Moon Arrows struck Silly first, instantly triggering Silly’s innate Thorny Shield talent.

Even after reaching Epic 0 Star, the Thorny Shield, though passive, could reflect seventy percent of the damage.

A formidable defensive Talent indeed.

The two Dark Moon Arrows penetrated only a third of the way before their energy faltered, and the rebounded force shielded against them.

However, at that moment, two Holy Light Warhammers slammed down on the Dark Moon Arrows, hammering with brute force, like driving in nails, and shattered Silly’s defense, driving the arrows deep into Silly’s body.

After all, they were four Epic 0 Star powerhouses, unleashing four Divine Judgment level skills.

Though the Thorny Shield was strong, it had done well to withstand one or two hits; four simultaneous attacks caused the Shield to shatter instantly.

As the Dark Moon Arrows pierced Silly’s body, the dark and light energies burst forth, blowing apart both Silly’s wings and the majority of its body.

When the assault was over, only Silly’s brain and spine remained relatively intact.

Silly appeared to be dead beyond any doubt.

Anyone else might have charged forward directly, and indeed, Eliya was about to rush over but was grabbed by Wang Yase.

“Continue!”

“Continue what?”

Eliya was still stunned, but Wang Yase had already resumed the frenzied bombardment.

Seeing this, Eliya hurriedly joined the attack.

Together, they unleashed another wave of explosive attacks, bombarding the area where Silly and Lu Wu were.

Within a brief minute, they depleted their inner energy to just three layers and turned Silly’s location into complete ruins; only then did Wang Yase take the lead and pounce over.

“Grab the person and leave immediately, do not linger in this Secret Realm!”

“Understood!”

As they spoke, the two charged into the ruins, heading in the direction they remembered Lu Wu to be, but they found nothing.

“Nothing!”

“Lu Wu and that bird are both gone!

How could this be?”

Eliya and Wang Yase were astounded, seeing that the once twenty to thirty square meter Ice Pool was now a crater.

It seemed impossible for anyone to hide there now.

But they saw nothing, which only served to deepen their astonishment.

“Wait, below!”

Wang Yase was the first to notice something odd and rushed towards the abnormal crater bottom.

Just as he moved, a force surged up from the bottom of the pit.

The moment this force emerged, it rapidly transformed into an extreme cold blue Ice Shield, which sent the dust from the bottom of the pit, along with the diving Wang Yase, flying upwards.

At that moment, trailing two steps behind Wang Yase, Eliya saw the situation below and his face drastically changed.

“How is this possible? How could it still be alive?”

Beneath the icy blue shield was a small area of just about ten square meters.

This small space was covered in blue ice blocks exuding terrifying coldness.

Above the chilling air, lay Lu Wu, who appeared to be in a deep sleep.

And above Lu Wu’s head was Silly.

At this moment, it looked pitiful beyond words.

His flesh had been stripped away by ninety percent, his head unable to remain intact—resembling a mutilated corpse.

Yet, in that mangled body, Eliya sensed an unbelievably potent life force.

This life force erupted as Eliya exclaimed in shock.

Streams of extreme cold energy surged into Han’s shattered body from the land of bitter frost below, and as this energy poured in, Han’s body visibly began to regenerate at a notable pace.

“Not good, stop it quickly!”

Eliya and Wang Yase’s complexions changed drastically, and they immediately struck out with full force, bombarding the ice-blue protective barrier before them.

However it was futile.

The barrier’s defense was terrifyingly impervious.

No matter how Eliya and Wang Yase attacked, it was to no avail.

They couldn’t shatter or even shake the barrier, and within it, Han steadily recuperated under their offensive and despairing gazes.

Bones, muscles, blood vessels, organs, hair…

Eliya and the others witnessed the entire process of a bird reconstructing from a battered skull back to wholeness.

The process was devastatingly quick.

What was even more disheartening was that the very moment Han’s rejuvenation was complete, its power underwent a metamorphosis.

From an Epic 0 Star, it directly soared, reaching the standard of an Epic 1 Star.

The moment Han achieved this breakthrough, the seemingly indestructible barrier shattered from within, releasing an unbelievable power and aura, which spread out like a tidal wave with Han as the epicenter.

“No…”

The unprepared Wang Yase and Eliya were blasted dozens of kilometers away by this force.

Meanwhile, hundreds of kilometers from where Lu Wu and his group were, Yukawa Ryuzo suddenly halted in his tracks.

Pismi, guiding him, also narrowed his eyes at that moment.

A slight furrow creased his brow, aware that the opportunity he long awaited was finally arriving.

He silently prepared himself—the instant Yukawa Ryuzo leaped into the air, he would turn and flee, rush back to the battleship, resume the music, and dance once more.

“Whoosh!”

In anticipation, Yukawa Ryuzo took flight.

Pismi, overjoyed and ready to burst into an escape, found himself lifted off the ground too.

Pismi was stunned and then could only muster a smile more tragic than crying before disappearing, whisked alongside Yukawa Ryuzo through hundreds of kilometers to precisely arrive where Lu Wu was, encountering Eliya and Wang Yase looking even more disheveled than himself.

The sight of the two darkened Pismi’s expression, and their faces turned even sourer at the sight of him.

They knew all too well that they were likely out of the picture now.

Indeed, upon Yukawa Ryuzo’s arrival, he set down Pismi and headed straight towards Lu Wu.

Seeing this wretched old man approach, the newly advanced Han immediately turned hostile.

It wasn’t the adorably fierce kind typical of other cute beasts but an aggression that was intensely ferocious.

It signified that it, Han, had grown stronger, had become invincible.

It advised the old man to keep his distance lest it be painful when Han struck.

Yet Yukawa Ryuzo paid no heed to the threat, his gaze void of any recognition of this silly bird, he advanced steadily towards Lu Wu.

Han grew displeased, prepared to teach the old man a lesson, but as it moved, it realized it couldn’t—the bird, now an Epic 1 Star, stood immobile as if a statue.

Yukawa Ryuzo then approached Lu Wu directly, drew his longsword, and struck towards Lu Wu’s forehead…

# Chapter 414: Memory 411

Chapter 414: Memory 411

Jiangbei, within a certain secret base.

Zhang Yunyi, clad in her robe, pinched the chubby girl’s cheeks as she focused on gnawing at a chicken drumstick, while casting her gaze toward the direction of the Extreme Cold Hell.

“He should be almost there by now, right?”

“I wonder what the outcome will be.”

Murmuring to herself, an unusual hint of nervousness appeared on Zhang Yunyi’s face.

She loathed this feeling of powerlessness, of being able to do nothing but gamble with fate.

But she had no choice.

The decision was not hers to make; she was powerless to resist.

Zhang Yunyi’s worry caught the attention of the plump girl beside her. After a moment of hesitation, she pulled the half-eaten chicken drumstick from her mouth and offered it to Zhang Yunyi.

“Auntie, don’t cry, eat!”

Zhang Yunyi did not mind the mess; she smiled warmly and, with a loud chomp, bit down hard, devouring the drumstick until only the bone was left.

The silly plump girl was completely baffled by this act, staring at the drumstick for a long time. Her big eyes filled with tears before she finally burst into crying.

Amused by the sight, Zhang Yunyi, far from comforting her, laughed with delight.

While laughing, Zhang Yunyi suddenly grew serious.

She reached out and caressed the girl’s head.

“Girl, do you know? If you’re not careful, your ‘partner’ will be gone!”

The chubby girl paused, her crying ceased, and she tilted her head, looking at Zhang Yunyi as if asking,

What’s a ‘partner’? Is it tasty?

“It’s not tasty, it’s stinky!”

…

Extreme Cold Hell.

The area where Lu Wu was.

As Yukawa Ryuzo thrust out with his sword, complex expressions appeared on the faces of Eliya and Wang Yase.

It’s over.

Lu Wu is finished!

There was no way he could survive that sword attack.

Forget about Lu Wu, not even one of the twelve elders from Elder Mountain could have withstood that sword under such a state.

On the side of Eliya and Wang Yase, it was slightly better.

Their emotions were just a bit complex.

Yet, some people had completely lost control of their emotions under that sword.

Of course, it wasn’t Arthur Pismi, although he had always been seeking a King suited for him, Lu Wu was clearly not to his taste.

He felt no particular way about Lu Wu; seeing Lu Wu being killed didn’t make him nervous, he just felt like running away.

The one who lost control of his emotions was someone who had always stayed hidden in the dark.

At the moment when Yukawa Ryuzo’s sword thrust out, he was ready to burst forth but realized, like a dummy, he was unable to move.

Desperate, he tried to activate the Gate Fragment, hoping to rely on its power to save Lu Wu.

If he could successfully trigger the Gate Fragment, it might be possible.

The Gate Fragment could unleash enough power to save Lu Wu, but it wasn’t something just anyone could activate.

It too was selective.

Dudu could do it; the one presently in control of the Gate Fragment could not.

The shard had no reaction to his fervent activation, so he was still unable to save Lu Wu.

He had fallen into despair, believing Lu Wu had been completely beyond salvation.

Then, suddenly, Lu Wu opened his eyes, looking directly at the sword thrusting towards him.

The moment Lu Wu opened his eyes, Yukawa Ryuzo’s sword seemed to stop as if it had hit an invisible steel plate.

At the same time, everyone’s attention was drawn to Lu Wu’s eyes.

They were eyes that appeared calm but hid turbulent waves, exhibiting an intense obsession alongside an unimaginably compelling allure.

They were also eyes that Lu Wu could not possibly possess.

Looking into these eyes, even Arthur Pismi, the King of Ilya, was left speechless by the shadow hidden within, obviously taken aback.

However, the aged face of Yukawa Ryuzo directly facing him did not show any sign of surprise.

“Is it really you? Is this young man the one you have chosen?”

‘Lu Wu’ didn’t respond but slowly reached out his hand. The instant he extended his hand, an indescribable, terrifying phantom emerged from behind him, enveloping everyone present with an oppressive and fearful sensation.

They felt like they would be crushed!

Anyone standing before him would surely be crushed!

That was the feeling surging in the hearts of Pismi and the others.

It was almost a sensation of being consumed by suppression and fear.

And the situation was even more dire for Yukawa Ryuzo in front of him.

As the terrible phantom appeared, Yukawa Ryuzo’s aged body began to crack.

Exquisite blossoms of blood unfurled one after another.

With the blooming of these blood flowers, Yukawa Ryuzo’s life was rapidly fading away.

Everyone could sense that this legendary being was about to die in this moment, mysteriously in front of ‘Lu Wu’.

Yet at this time, a difficult smile spread across his aged face.

“An unconscious avatar, with only the instinct to counterattack and annihilate?

She bet correctly!

Now it’s my turn to wager!”

As Yukawa Ryuzo’s words fell, his body exploded in an instant, and the sword that had been blocked erupted with an unimaginable radiance at the moment of his explosion.

The longsword, which had been difficult to move, surged forward several centimeters in that moment, only to be stopped again.

The longsword cracked the instant it was halted, and a sword intent filled with vitality pierced through the protection and into Lu Wu’s skull.

However, Lu Wu’s head did not shatter under this sword.

One of the main reasons this sword intent was able to touch Lu Wu was because it posed no threat to him.

This was not a sword meant to kill Lu Wu, but one meant to help him.

As the sword pierced Lu Wu’s head, the sleeping Lu Wu felt as if something had been shattered inside him. His intense headache suddenly disappeared, and shortly after, Lu Wu found himself pulled into a surreal space.

It was a pink space filled with cherry blossoms.

In the center of this space was a colossal cherry blossom tree.

At this moment, the tree was in full bloom.

A gentle breeze brought pink petals slowly falling down, creating an intoxicatingly beautiful scene.

One of the petals drifted in front of Lu Wu, and he instinctively reached out for it. The petal landed in his hand.

As the petal fell, an unexpected event occurred.

The space before him transformed once again as the world spun around.

When Lu Wu regained his senses, he found that the surrounding environment had changed, and he seemed to have appeared in a world before a great catastrophe, having transformed into a youth.

Hmm, saying he turned into a young boy or that it’s a bit inappropriate, it should be said he entered the body of this young boy and existed as a third-person perspective.

This young boy seemed to be called Yukawa Ryuzo, by the sound of his name, he was from District 11.

At this moment in time, it appeared to be before the great disaster.

In this world, there weren’t yet things like Summoned Beasts, and this Yukawa Ryuzo’s dream was not to become a Summoner.

This child was somewhat mischievous, although he was the child of the Swordsmanship Hall’s master, his dream was not to become a Sword Master or a Dance Master.

When Lu Wu arrived, this young boy was secretly studying manga.

He wanted to become a manga artist.

Because his most admired idol was a certain manga artist.

Under Lu Wu’s watchful eye, this young boy began striving toward his goal of becoming a manga artist.

The boy was not a prodigy.

Initially, his artwork was so bad that Lu Wu could barely stand to look at it, not to mention the storytelling, which was a complete mess, comparable to a failed artist Lu Wu knew.

But this boy was more diligent than the failed one.

If talent was insufficient, hard work would make up for it; he studied masterful comics, imitated the masters’ styles, analyzed their plot designs, and often practiced alone until the wee hours of the morning.

This kind of effort did bear fruit.

With Lu Wu paying attention, he improved rapidly.

In just a year and a half, he had created his debut work, a shonen manga with a monkey as the protagonist.

How should one put it, even though it was quite ordinary, after all, it was completed under Lu Wu’s scrutiny.

Lu Wu knew clearly how much effort this young boy had put into this manga, so when his maiden work came out and was recognized by the publishing house, Lu Wu’s mood was as beautiful as that of the young boy.

He felt that now, finally, the boy could hold his head high.

Finally, he could openly tell his father that he wanted to study manga.

However, just as the boy was walking home with this sentiment, the sky, originally at dusk, suddenly brightened, and Lu Wu, along with the boy, looked up at the sky.

The moment they looked up, Lu Wu and the boy were frozen in their tracks.

A column of light so impossibly huge appeared in the sky, seemingly linking the earth and heavens.

The moment Lu Wu looked at the column of light, it shattered thunderously, and an invisible force pushed out at that instant.

If one were standing tens of thousands of meters in the sky at that time looking down, they would see a mysterious wave gushing out from the world’s highest peak.

This wave instantly covered the entire world.

And everywhere the wave swept across began to undergo incredible transformations.

The original landscapes were being invisibly altered, one secret realm entrance after another appeared out of thin air, the world was like it had been rebooted, fundamentally rewritten.

And by Lu Wu’s side, he watched as the originally harmless animals around him instantly underwent ferocious transformations.

The whole world began to descend into chaos.

At the same time, not far in front of Lu Wu, or rather, in front of Yukawa Ryuzo, the Swordsmanship Hall was suddenly split in two.

Then, the scene before Lu Wu distorted again, and before he could react, he was once again in that space full of cherry blossoms.

Lu Wu was startled and subconsciously touched a petal in front of him again.

As Lu Wu touched the petal again, the world in front of him altered once more, and he found himself back inside the body of Yukawa Ryuzo.

But it wasn’t a continuation of the moment when the dojo was split.

Time had skipped quite a bit, and now Yukawa Ryuzo had grown from a sixteen or seventeen-year-old into a twenty-two or twenty-three-year-old.

Years had passed, and he had not become a manga artist.

Because by now, there was no longer the profession of a manga artist in this world.

From that pillar of light, this world changed.

The entire world entered an era of great catastrophe.

Human society was destroyed, and Summoned Beasts began to dominate this world.

To survive in this world, Yukawa Ryuzo was forced to take up the sword he originally disliked and became a Swordsman more outstanding than his father.

After all, in this world, not only could a manga artist not save the world, but he also could not keep himself alive.

But even though he took up the sword and became a more outstanding Swordsman than his father, Yukawa Ryuzo’s safety was still not guaranteed.

Human Swordsmen were far too inferior to Summoned Beasts.

Despite demonstrating astonishing Talent after taking up the sword, becoming the most outstanding Swordsman in just a few years, he still could not defeat a Boss Level Summoned Beast.

The shelter he had worked so hard to build was breached by an attack from a Boss Level Summoned Beast.

The people he cherished were killed one by one before his eyes.

On that terrible night, he lost almost everything.

After that night, all he had left was the sword in his hands and his daughter, whom he held in his arms.

Regarding his daughter, Lu Wu did not see how he acquired a daughter in those years.

Lu Wu was not clear on where this daughter had come from.

However, Lu Wu knew that after that night, this daughter, not yet three years old, seemed to have become Ryuzo Yukawa’s everything.

He started wandering with his daughter, struggling to survive in this terrifying and desperate world.

But he was too weak.

And with a burden to bear, it was too difficult to survive in this world.

No matter how hard it was, he never let go of the child.

Because that was his only motivation to keep living.

If not for that child, he might not have been able to survive even a day.

But fate was not always tormenting him; sometimes it showed him pity.

Among the cherry blossoms, the last scene Lu Wu saw was Ryuzo Yukawa finding a Divine Artifact, an ordinary-looking Divine Artifact in Lu Wu’s eyes.

…

The third cherry blossom followed.

This cherry blossom’s timeline had jumped forward ten years.

That year, Ryuzo Yukawa was thirty-three years old, and his daughter was thirteen.

His Power had also improved significantly, reaching the level of Lord 3 Star in ten years.

This Power was nothing in front of Lu Wu, but in Ryuzo Yukawa’s circumstances at the time, he seemed to be the strongest presence, and he had built another shelter.

He protected the shelter single-handedly with his sword, becoming the guardian deity of this shelter and his daughter.

He even met a new love in these ten years, and although they did not come together because of his daughter, their interactions were enough to sate Lu Wu.

Lu Wu could tell that he was very happy at that time.

He was full of hope for the future, for life.

However, fate did not spare him.

During this memory, a person came to his shelter.

That was a mysterious and powerful man.

It wasn’t until much later that Ryuzo Yukawa found out that this man had created an organization called “Zero,” and he was the leader of the Zero organization.

The appearance of this man destroyed all of Ryuzo Yukawa’s hopes…

# Chapter 415: 411 Inheritance

Chapter 415: 411 Inheritance

Lu Wu was still very curious about that leader of the Zero Organization.

But in the third cherry blossom memory, he failed to see the true face of that legendary existence.

What he saw was only a figure, against the light, one hand lifting Yukawa Ryuzo’s daughter.

And finally, the moment that person waved his hand, the shelter Yukawa Ryuzo spent ten years pouring his heart into was destroyed in an instant.

Then, that piece of memory ended.

Lu Wu returned to the Sakura Space once more.

He was about to touch the cherry blossoms again when this time, the blossoms actively approached him.

Behind the flurry of cherry blossoms, Lu Wu entered Yukawa Ryuzo’s memories for the fourth time.

This time was longer than the previous three.

It was also the first seamless continuation of memory.

After that being arrived…

Yukawa Ryuzo’s daughter was taken away, his shelter was destroyed, his beloved died in this event, and he himself paid the price of an arm and a leg.

Yukawa Ryuzo went back to ten years ago.

Even more tragic than ten years earlier.

This time he lost his daughter too, and he was crippled.

More importantly, the display of strength by that person led him to despair.

He knew he had no hope of taking revenge or rescuing his daughter in this lifetime unless something unexpected happened.

However, just when he was about to sink into this despair, he suddenly heard about the legend of the Gate Fragment.

This ethereal legend gave him boundless hope.

Yukawa Ryuzo started to pull himself together, with the goal of finding the Gate to gain the power to rescue his daughter, and began a decade-long adventure, dragging his broken body.

Lu Wu, from a third-person perspective, watched or participated in his ten-year-long adventure in a fast-forward manner.

This decade-long adventure showed Lu Wu what an adventurer’s life was like.

It was not pleasant, in fact, it was particularly grueling.

He went in and out of countless Secret Realms, defeated various Summoned Beasts, endured dozens of tests of humanity, and countless near-death experiences. But more despairing than all.

For ten years, a full decade, Yukawa Ryuzo’s power did not improve at all.

Despite his frantic training and diligent study of the Sword Dao.

It was as though there was an invisible barrier on him, preventing his power from advancing even a step.

It was a situation that nearly drove one to despair and breakdown.

Fortunately, fate finally looked upon the old man.

In the tenth year after losing his daughter, he finally found a fragment of the Gate in the outskirts of an Underground Palace Secret Realm.

Although the moment he held the fragment, it whisked him out of the Underground Palace.

But from the moment he acquired that fragment, Yukawa Ryuzo’s cheats started.

That very day, the arm and leg he had lost for ten years grew back.

His power, stagnant for ten years, showed signs of breakthrough, and with just a little effort, Yukawa Ryuzo advanced to King-level.

His once ordinary Divine Artifact also transformed into an Epic Level Divine Artifact.

Moreover, Yukawa Ryuzo gained the ability to borrow the power of the fragment.

This gave Yukawa Ryuzo hope of rescuing his daughter as he began to investigate the Zero Organization.

Seeing this, Lu Wu guessed that the old man was done for.

But, he was powerless to stop any of it, after all, it was a memory that had already happened.

So, Lu Wu could only watch as the old man stubbornly sought out the Zero Organization, only to realize he couldn’t even face the leader.

He hadn’t even met the leader when one of the Five Ambassadors beat him up. If it hadn’t been for the fragment powers in the end, he would have died at their hands.

In the following decades, the old man began an endless entanglement with that one envoy.

Yukawa Ryuzo kept getting stronger, constantly challenging that one envoy.

With the help of the fragment, Yukawa Ryuzo’s power rose rapidly.

In just over a decade, he had reached the Epic 1-star level.

(Yes, rapidly by ordinary people’s standards.)

When he made this breakthrough, he immediately challenged the rival he’d been entangled with for over a decade.

That battle was incredibly tough for Yukawa Ryuzo.

The opponent was very strong, and it was during the fiercest part of the fight that Yukawa Ryuzo discovered the opponent also possessed a Gate Fragment.

This discovery nearly drove Yukawa Ryuzo to despair.

He wanted to save his daughter, but he couldn’t even defeat a subordinate of theirs.

Moreover, the only thing he relied upon was already in the hands of a mere henchman. Did he still have any hope of revenge or saving his daughter?

In despair, Yukawa Ryuzo exposed a weakness.

It was an opening his foe could have used to kill him in one strike. The opponent moved instinctively, but upon realizing that Yukawa Ryuzo hadn’t resisted, they changed their expression and forcefully stopped their attack.

However, Yukawa Ryuzo didn’t notice this.

When he came to his senses, he spotted an opportunity.

Without any hesitation, he raised his longsword and seized the chance to pierce through the opponent he had been entangled with for more than a decade.

To ensure a fatal blow, he even tapped into the fragment’s power.

The opponent reacted, also utilizing the fragment’s power, but it was a step too late.

As the longsword shattered the opponent’s mask and pierced into their skull, Yukawa Ryuzo felt an unspeakable sense of triumph.

After so many years, he had finally killed this adversary.

He was one step closer to his revenge.

But his surprise and pleasure quickly turned into disbelief and despair.

Because in that moment, he saw for the first time the face beneath the mask of the foe he had been entangled with for over ten years.

It was a mature, stunningly beautiful face, full of shock and seemingly trying to say something.

But the key point wasn’t the beauty; this face was that of his daughter.

Despite not having seen her for over twenty years, he recognized her at a glance. This person before him was the one he had desperately longed to save without any regard.

At that moment, he remembered every detail he hadn’t noticed before.

Whether it was the first strike or the numerous clashes over the decade.

He had survived each time because his daughter had deliberately held back. If she had not repeatedly spared him, he would never have lived to this day.

And, many details during their battles could have, and should have, been noticed by him.

His daughter had hinted over and over again, trying to persuade him to let go.

But blinded by hatred, he hadn’t noticed any of it until now, until his sword had pierced his daughter’s skull.

But it was all too late!

As Yukawa Ryuzo was engulfed in total despair and breakdown, a calm voice sounded.

“Very well refined!

Thank you for your efforts over the years, father and daughter.”

A figure emerged against the light, and as this person appeared, the Gate Fragments from both Yukawa Ryuzo and his daughter’s bodies rose up and fell into their hands.

The appearance of this one man deeply stabbed Yukawa Ryuzo.

It made him, who was originally in utter despair and collapse, lock all his hatred value onto the man before him.

Everything was because of this man, his life’s tragedy was all because of this man, and he wanted to kill this man.

He wanted to avenge himself, and his daughter.

But he couldn’t budge, the two men’s power was not on the same level at all.

Facing the man before him, Yukawa Ryuzo couldn’t even think about revenge, he didn’t even have the ability to move.

After taking the two fragments, this man didn’t give Yukawa Ryuzo another glance.

Instead, he turned to look at the corpse of Yukawa Ryuzo’s daughter.

“I once promised her that if you could recognize her under specific conditions, I would set her free.

She was delighted, confident that you would definitely be able to do it.

Unfortunately, after more than a decade, she ultimately failed to make you do it.

However, I will keep my promise, I promised not to kill you, so you get to live.

Live well.”

With that said, this being disappeared right under Lu Wu’s eyelids.

And Yukawa Ryuzo fell into the boundless hell under Lu Wu’s gaze.

For the following decades, he lived in a world of self-blame and regret.

Until about twenty years ago, when he gathered unprecedented courage to attack that man again.

This time, although Yukawa Ryuzo lacked the fragments,

With decades of accumulation, combined with the boost from an epic level Divine Artifact, he reached the epic 2-star level.

Within the entire Alliance, he was among the top rank, with power reaching elder level.

Moreover, he had grasped an extremely powerful sword technique.

With a host of trump cards and the resolve to succeed or die trying, he went.

As an observer, Lu Wu was supposed to know the outcome.

But having heard from Zero Organization that the man had disappeared for over two decades, Lu Wu couldn’t help but harbor some expectation.

Hoping for a miracle to occur.

Perhaps it was Yukawa Ryuzo who had seriously injured or even killed that man, causing him not to show his face for over twenty years.

However, reality swiftly slapped Lu Wu in the face.

And it slapped Yukawa Ryuzo as well.

Yukawa Ryuzo found that being in a small city in Area 1 South.

“You finally came.”

The other party was not surprised to see Yukawa Ryuzo arrive.

“I should have come earlier!”

As Yukawa Ryuzo drew his longsword, the other kindly gave a reminder.

“If you strike, I will defend myself, and although I won’t deliberately deliver a killing blow, if you die, it won’t be considered breaking my promise.”

Yukawa Ryuzo didn’t care, he had come with a resolution to die.

Without another word, he drew his Divine Artifact and thrust his sword at the being.

This thrust was identical to the one he had used to fatally stab his own daughter decades ago.

For the past decades, this thrust had haunted Yukawa Ryuzo like a nightmare.

And Yukawa Ryuzo dared not forget it, integrating this thrust within his very bones, within his spiritual power.

Over the past decades, he had infused all his regret within it.

At this moment, decades of regret erupted, elevating this thrust to incredible heights.

Witnessed by Lu Wu as a third party, Yukawa Ryuzo appeared to elicit shock on the other’s face as he thrust his sword.

Although Lu Wu couldn’t see the other’s face clearly, he did sense that flicker of shock.

Subsequently, the thrust truly exploded.

Next, Lu Wu saw Yukawa Ryuzo, originally looking well at over a hundred years of age, turn into a decrepit old man after that thrust.

And the being across from him had been pierced through the chest by a sword.

This thrust went straight through the other’s chest, blood gushed out in great spurts.

This made both Yukawa Ryuzo and Lu Wu wear expressions of hope.

Did they succeed? Was this guy finally dead?

Amidst their infinite expectation, the other raised his head and cracked a smile.

“That’s quite good, a very tasteful thrust, it made me reluctant to dodge.”

With that, the being casually pulled the sword from his chest.

As the longsword was withdrawn, his spilled blood reversed, and his wound healed instantaneously.

Then, as he was about to speak, his expression changed abruptly, and he turned to look down at the small city below.

Lu Wu followed his gaze, and his expression changed as well.

Because down in that small city, he saw a figure that was both familiar and strange to him.

Before Lu Wu could take a closer look, a strong force came, sending Yukawa Ryuzo flying, and at the same time, Lu Wu also left Yukawa Ryuzo’s memory world and returned to that moment when the world was blooming with cherry blossoms.

However, at this time, the previously beautiful world of blooming cherry blossoms had changed.

The once-vibrant cherry blossom trees had withered.

The cherry blossoms floating in the air had turned into a muddy mess.

Beneath the cherry trees, there was an additional figure.

A figure of an old man so frail that he might die at any moment.

As Lu Wu looked at him, he extended his hand, offering his sword, and with his last bit of strength said,

“You must, you must defeat him!”

With these final words, Yukawa Ryuzo died completely.

The entire cherry blossom world where Lu Wu was situated began to collapse, leaving behind only Lu Wu and the sword handed over by Yukawa Ryuzo.

Lu Wu instinctively reached out and grasped the sword.

As Lu Wu held the sword, it sprang to life, with a huge surge of energy and information flooding into his body.

At the same time,

Within Extreme Cold Hell, the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword, which Lu Wu suspected of since entering the Secret Realm, soared into the sky, instantaneously landing in front of Lu Wu.

With a roar, it absorbed the sword in Lu Wu’s hand.

As Yukawa Ryuzo’s sword was absorbed by the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword, the blade instantly broke through to the epic 1-star level.

At the same time, in the Undead Secret Realm, Little Skeleton emerged from its cocoon, wielding a large scythe.

In the Prisoner Dragon Secret Realm, Little Flood Dragon awakened mysterious powers after absorbing golden blood, and broke free from the realm with a roar.

And not to mention Hanhan, who had just broken through to the epic level 1 star at Lu Wu’s side.

Four streams of power poured into Lu Wu’s body all at once, instantly elevating Lu Wu, who was originally at king-level 3 stars, to the epic level.

In that instant, just the energy and the might bursting forth from Lu Wu’s body

made the Pismi trio standing before Lu Wu struggle to stay upright, using all their strength just not to kneel…

# Chapter 416: 413 Upgraded System

Chapter 416: 413 Upgraded System

Extreme Cold Hell.

Endless energy surged through Lu Wu’s body.

From the extreme cold of Han,

From the mysterious majesty and utmost sharpness of the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword,

From the death and thunder of Little Skeleton,

From the dragon power of Little Flood Dragon,

Each stream of power was of epic caliber, each one enough to shape Lu Wu into an epic-level powerhouse.

Now, all four powers converged at once.

Adding to that was the inheritance left to Lu Wu by Yukawa Ryuzo.

The feedback and foundations now within Lu Wu were terrifyingly powerful.

The threshold of epic level was as thin as paper before Lu Wu.

Lu Wu instantly achieved breakthroughs from king-level to epic-level.

However, this breakthrough wasn’t an end for Lu Wu but a beginning.

He needed to digest and integrate these powers, lest they become a deadly poison threatening his life.

This is why others would only form contracts with one or two summoned beasts.

The difficulty of cultivation was one aspect; whether they could digest the feedback from the summoned beasts was another.

Fortunately, Lu Wu didn’t face this issue.

His forte was integration and absorption.

With “All Things” activated and Lu Family Swordsmanship employed, Lu Wu began to digest these five powers.

The power from Yukawa Ryuzo was the easiest to resolve.

For one, Lu Wu had witnessed his entire life’s memories and was very clear about the sources of his power, knowing how to assimilate it.

When Yukawa Ryuzo transferred his power, he also processed it, allowing Lu Wu to assimilate it quite easily.

Among the powers Yukawa Ryuzo transferred to Lu Wu, the most important part for Lu Wu was the last sword thrust at the Zero Leader.

To deliver that thrust, he had concentrated decades of regret and lived for decades in hell.

That extremity of refinement in the sword technique inspired Lu Wu greatly.

Using that move as a foundation, he combined it with All Things and conceptualized a new sword technique.

This new technique significantly helped Lu Wu in absorbing and transforming energy.

He first incorporated the feedback from the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword into this sword technique, and then gradually merged the powers of Han, Little Skeleton, and Little Flood Dragon.

Finally, he integrated his original sword techniques.

Everything from “Slaughter of Living Beings” to “Divine Sword Skill” was merged.

All fused sword techniques ultimately formed a multicolored longsword shackled by countless chains in Lu Wu’s energy space.

Thus, the initial integration of Lu Wu’s energy and sword techniques was completed, and Lu Wu officially completed his own breakthrough.

It all sounds slow, but it happened in an instant; to an outsider, it seemed Lu Wu had done it all in the blink of an eye.

As Lu Wu opened his eyes, three new attribute panels appeared in front of him.

…

Name: Ice Phoenix (Han)

Power: Epic 1 Star

Quality: Epic (Lower Quality) (Enhanced)

Epic Power: Undying Body (Enhanced),

Skill Talents: Omitted

…

Name: Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword

Power: Epic 1 Star

Quality: Epic (Mid Quality) (Enhanced)

Epic Power: Divine Sword Power (Enhanced)

Skill Talents: Omitted

…

Name: Lu Wu

Power: Epic 1 Star

Summoned Beasts: Ice Phoenix (Han), Death Monarch (Little Skeleton), Five-Clawed Golden Dragon (Little Skeleton), Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword

Epic Power: All Things (Enhanced)

Summoner Talent: Power of Inheritance (Enhanced)

Skills Omitted

…

The attribute panels were much simpler than before.

Skills and talents weren’t shown, though Lu Wu sensed they could be displayed if desired.

But it seemed the system deemed it unnecessary to display talents and skills.

This made Lu Wu realize, post-epic level, skills might not be as crucial anymore.

Well, that might be misleading—skills are still important, heavily relied upon for output.

But it seems that the core element should be Epic Power.

This probably directly correlates with the enhancement of strength.

Additionally, Lu Wu noticed that the “Enhancements” on his and his summoned beasts’ attributes seemed different from before.

Clearly, it was because Lu Wu’s strength had broken through to epic-level, prompting another system upgrade.

However, this time the system upgrade seemed a bit confusing to Lu Wu.

He tried using it the old way, only to find it didn’t work anymore.

“What’s going on? Did the strength enhancement mess up the system update, breaking it completely? This damn thing’s totally unusable now?”

Lu Wu was initially surprised, then thought it over.

His family’s crappy system seemed useless anyway, and a breakdown seemed no great loss.

Plus, now didn’t seem the time to delve into the system.

There were more important matters to study,

Like the memories of Yukawa Ryuzo, like the person who had appeared next to him at this moment.

With this thought, Lu Wu set aside the issues with the attribute panel and turned to look at the person who had just made their presence known but was now trying to hide.

Lu Wu’s sudden movement caused the person’s color to change, and instinctively, they tried to flee, but Lu Wu’s figure had mysteriously arrived in front of them.

The person was pinned in place.

Revealing their figure and face, which was one Lu Wu recognized quite well.

“It really is you.

Back at Elder Mountain, it was you who saved me, wasn’t it?

Should I say thanks?”

Lu Wu sized up the person who had stepped forward when Yukawa Ryuzo thrust his sword, his eyes narrowing slightly.

Although his lips curled upwards, there was no joy of an old friend’s reunion; it was more of a bone-chilling coldness.

“Lu… Lu Wu…”

The person in front of Lu Wu, despite a year or two passing and substantial improvements in power, still projected a demeanor as feeble as Dudu, so weak that even his goblin couldn’t bear to look.

The goblin burst out from its heart, standing in front of Lu Wu with a fierce demeanor, warning Lu Wu.

Telling Lu Wu to keep away from its master, claiming it was now much stronger than before, promising to knock Lu Wu’s head crooked if he dared to touch it or bully its master again.

All the while, it gestured threateningly at Lu Wu.

Seeing this suddenly emerging goblin still as silly as ever, the icy coldness and hidden murderous intent on Lu Wu’s face faded a bit, though not completely.

“About Dudu, about the gate, you owe me an explanation.

Don’t have one? Then you might as well stay here.”

Thanks to Yukawa Ryuzo’s blessing,

Lu Wu not only successfully broke through, but also shattered the shackles left by the leader, cured his headache, and now clearly remembered what happened before entering the Extreme Cold Hell.

He remembered how Dudu died in front of him, so his mood was anything but beautiful.

Not to mention, behind the sudden appearance of Dudu with the Gate Fragment at Elder Mountain, Lin Jianying clearly played a dubious role.

If it weren’t for Lu Wu having just viewed Yukawa Ryuzo’s memories, memories that spanned decades providing him a long time to buffer his emotions, he would have taken action already.

When confronted by Lu Wu, Lin Jianying opened his mouth, and after a while, said with a hint of resentment, “The Gate Fragment of Dudu wasn’t given by me!”

“If it wasn’t you, who else could it be?”

“It was Tie Xiong!”

“Hmm?” Lu Wu raised an eyebrow.

“Really, Tie Xiong’s real identity is the Third Messenger of the Zero Organization, and the fragment given to Dudu was from him!”

This statement made Lu Wu’s brow furrow.

Lu Wu’s first reaction was that Lin Jianying was spouting nonsense.

Tie Xiong is the Third Messenger of the Zero Organization?

Is that even possible, that guy an Evil Summoner?

Wait a second!

At that moment, Lu Wu suddenly recalled the last memory of Yukawa Ryuzo—Lu had seen a figure in a southern town.

If Lu Wu wasn’t mistaken, that figure should be his utterly despicable father.

If Yukawa Ryuzo’s memories were true, not tampered with, then it meant Lu Haikong was targeted by the leader of the Zero Organization long before he rose to power, about twenty or thirty years ago.

And according to what Lu Wu pointed out, Lu Haikong seemed to have started his rise only after that.

So now, his despicable dad might also have become a plaything or a pawn of that guy, just like Yukawa Ryuzo.

Considering that person’s last act,

It seems he was manipulating Yukawa Ryuzo his whole life aiming to refine the Gate Fragment.

Looking at it now, the incident with Dudu indeed appeared to bear his hallmark.

Speaking of Tie Xiong’s side,

That guy really was odd when you think about it.

Joining Lu Wu’s side was due to a misunderstanding, believing Lu Wu was Lu Haikong.

Although laughable, it was somewhat plausible.

However, the problem was that after joining, the guy never did any substantial work.

Yan Ruxue kidnapped Lu Wu, and he pretended not to see.

Feng Xiu messed with him previously, and he didn’t make a move, and during the episode with Dudu, he was nowhere to be seen.

Seeing these details, it seemed he indeed had issues.

This made Lu Wu suspect Tie Xiong.

Indeed, Dudu’s death had greatly shocked Lu Wu, and now, no matter who was involved in Dudu’s death, he intended to find out and investigate. If he found even a hint of foul play, he certainly wouldn’t hesitate to act.

“Explain, what’s going on?”

Just as Lin Jianying was about to speak, a weak voice came from the side.

“Uh, big brother, you forgot to clear the area.”

Lu Wu raised an eyebrow and turned to see a man in a military uniform weakly raising his hand.

His behavior made Eliya and Wang Yase glare fiercely.

Everyone was about to discuss secrets, why are you interrupting?

Pismi simply ignored the two fools.

Could such secrets be spread? If you knew, wouldn’t others be destroyed by divine retribution?

Better to request to leave before the secrets are spoken.

“Big brother, I have an eighty-year-old mother at home and a daughter who relies on me, could you perhaps let me go?

I still know the rules, see, I didn’t listen to anything that I shouldn’t have, right?”

“Also, the old man just now was brought over by me, so I’ve actually done you a huge favor, will you consider letting me go?”

Lu Wu turned his head to ask Lin Jianying.

“Who is this clown?”

“He is Pismi, the rising star from Technology Alliance’s District 2.

The other two, one is Wang Yase from the Holy Sect Alliance and the other is Eliya from the Dark Conference.

They’re both younger leaders, and they came here this time for you and the Gate Fragment.”

“Leaders? You’re kidding, right?”

Lu Wu looked at Pismi, who was acting cute and begging for mercy, and felt his reputation was not merited.

Oddly enough, he did seem to have some luck.

“Right, right, right, I got in through the back door, I’m actually not up to par at all.

Whatever I do turns out bad, whatever I eat leaves nothing leftover.”

“Okay, he’s pretty thick-skinned.

And speaking of the Gate Fragment, where is the fragment?”

Lu Wu suddenly shifted his focus by a sharp 180 degrees, and his gaze landed back on Lin Jianying, his hand reaching out.

“Give me that fragment!”

“This…”

Lin Jianying was startled, clutching the fragment, hesitating for a moment.

“What? You’re not going to give it?”

Lu Wu frowned slightly, his tone slightly deepening.

Lin Jianying shivered and hesitated for a moment, but ultimately took out a fragment from his chest.

As he took out the fragment, everyone held their breath, all eyes fixed on that fragment.

But when the fragment appeared, everyone’s expression turned off.

“No, not this one!”

Lu Wu recognized that Lin Jianying’s fragment was much smaller than the one Dudu had before; Dudu’s was the size of a basketball, while this one was only as big as an egg, and even the material was wrong.

Additionally, when Lu Wu saw the Gate Fragment, he noticed some things on it that he had not expected.

…

Item: Gate Fragment (Outer Door)

Quality: ???

State: Refinement in process (Lin Jianying)

Description: A fragment in the process of refinement cannot be absorbed by the system; refinement must be terminated or completed for system absorption.

Ps: Do not forcibly interrupt the refinement state; forcing it may cause the Gate Fragment to disappear and the refiner will be rebounded upon and die.

…

Lu Wu looked at this attribute panel, lost in thought.

This attribute panel revealed a lot of information, the most critical of which was that the system now seemed to have the ability to absorb Gate Fragments.

This was beyond Lu Wu’s expectations.

The help that his family’s broken system had provided him so far had been very limited.

Lu Wu had reached this point today, with the system accounting for only about one percent of the credit; the rest was all due to his own talents.

This system could be said to be the worst one Lu Wu had ever seen.

And now, Lu Wu suddenly discovered that the system seemed to have the energy to absorb Gate Fragments, which greatly pleased him.

Does this mean the system was going to become powerful?

Was he, Lu Wu, also going to rise?

Yet, Lu Wu thought of Dudu, and his mood plummeted again; what good was becoming powerful if it was too late?

“No, not right, the Gate Fragment seems to have the power to resurrect people!”

Suddenly, Lu Wu recollected Li Ruyu, and his gaze towards that fragment burst forth with an intense fiery light…

# Chapter 417: 414 Lin Jianying's experience

Chapter 417: 414 Lin Jianying’s experience

Dudu’s death, along with Yukawa Ryuzo’s memories, made Lu Wu realize he was caught up in a tremendous vortex.

Unbeknownst to him, several forces were gambling over him.

His current situation was certainly very dangerous.

But Lu Wu disregarded this danger.

Because he suddenly understood that in this world, death seemed reversible.

His mother was one example.

With a Gate Fragment, he should have the power to resurrect Dudu.

Thinking this, Lu Wu temporarily ignored all other chaotic matters.

What he wanted to know now was whether Dudu could still be saved or not.

“Right, the Gate can resurrect Dudu, can’t it?”

Lu Wu looked at Lin Jianying’s Gate Fragment, full of anticipation.

“Mm!” Lin Jianying nodded slightly: “In theory, the Gate Fragment indeed possesses the ability to resurrect Dudu, but you need a refined Gate Fragment.

And it must be one that hasn’t been used before.”

“What do you mean?”

“There are two types of Gate Fragments: those that have been discovered but not refined and those that have not been discovered nor refined.

The unrefined fragments don’t have the wish-granting function.

They only have some attached features, and extracting its power is something ordinary people can’t do.

To truly possess a piece of the Gate Fragment, one must figure out a way to refine it.

Only a fully refined fragment has the wish-granting ability, and the fragment’s power can be smoothly utilized.

Moreover, after being used once, the fragment reverts to its original state and needs to be refined again.”

“Is using a Gate Fragment this troublesome?” Lu Wu was unsatisfied. Couldn’t they find one that could instantly resurrect Dudu?

Regarding the resurrection of Dudu, Lu Wu truly couldn’t wait a moment longer.

But remembering how his family’s old man had some difficulty resurrecting his mother, Lu Wu could only patiently ask: “How do you refine this thing?”

“The only known method so far is to place it into the Energy Space and continuously flush it with energy.

It’s an extremely time-consuming process.

Typically, it takes decades or even hundreds of years to successfully refine a fragment.

Additionally, during the refinement process, specific emotional fluctuations or performing certain special actions can speed up the refinement.

Some do it through killing,

others through saving people, and others by…”

Lin Jianying paused, glanced at Lu Wu and then said: “Some do it through falling in love!”

Lu Wu knew who he was referring to, but he didn’t want to pay attention to it.

“What else? There aren’t any restrictions on its use after refinement, are there?”

“The Gate Fragment is, after all, just a fragment; it’s not omnipotent and can’t grant every wish.

Some desires that exceed its limit might not be fulfilled.

The matter of resurrection is not trivial; ordinary fragments might not be capable of accomplishing it.”

“So, you’re saying there is indeed hope that it can be done, right?”

Hearing this, Lu Wu’s heart settled down slightly.

“As long as there’s hope for resurrection, that’s good.

As long as resurrection is possible, that’s good!”

Immediately, Lu Wu’s brows furrowed again. He had already begun to ponder where to find the fragment that could resurrect Dudu.

“How much longer will it take to complete the refinement of this fragment?”

“After it’s refined, will it be able to resurrect Dudu?”

“This piece will probably take another decade or so, and because the fragment is too small, I doubt it can resurrect Dudu,” Lin Jianying replied, looking down.

Lu Wu glanced at the small fragment and indeed felt that it seemed quite uncertain.

“Right, what about the fragment that Dudu used before? If that one is refined, it should have the power to resurrect Dudu, shouldn’t it?”

Lu Wu immediately focused his attention on that fragment.

The completeness of Dudu’s fragment was much higher than the one in Lin Jianying’s hands, and its quality was better as well.

By relying on it, Dudu had almost taken down Elder Mountain.

Once its refinement was completed, it should have the power to resurrect Dudu, right?

“Yes!

But that fragment has now disappeared; it’s hard to say whether it’s still in Elder Mountain or has been taken back by Tie Xiong.”

“Couldn’t we just find it and be done with it?”

Lu Wu was full of drive when it came to this matter.

No matter what lay ahead, no one could stop him from resurrecting Dudu.

Meanwhile, Pismi, who was quite active to the side, interjected, “That’s not the point right now, bro. Isn’t it too soon for you to be reviving Lady Pang?”

“Hmm?”

Lu Wu raised an eyebrow and turned to look at the person across from him, making his presence felt once more.

Pismi shuddered under Lu Wu’s gaze, but he still mustered the courage to continue, “Bro, whether it’s Lady Pang’s matter or the consciousness that appeared in your body before, it all suggests that you’re being targeted.

Shouldn’t you prioritize resolving this issue first?

If this problem isn’t solved, even if you revive Lady Pang, she’ll still have to face these dangers, won’t she?

Bro, I think we should hide away, avoiding everyone’s eyes.

We can grow stronger in secret, thoroughly investigate everything, and then strike down these bastards with a thunderous move.

After that, you can save Lady Pang and find a beautiful, secluded place to live out your days together, or you could just take over the world; wouldn’t that be wonderful?”

“Also, when it comes to investigation, I do have some skills in this area.”

Pismi was getting more and more obsequious, inching closer and closer to Lu Wu.

“I not only have a mobile network for collecting information but also possess a certain authority of the ‘Eye of Truth.’ Just tell me what you need, and I guarantee to complete it perfectly for you.”

He was practically ready to run over and cling to Lu Wu’s thigh.

To be fair, his suggestion was somewhat viable; at least it sounded plausible.

Clearly, Pismi was seriously thinking on behalf of Lu Wu, but in actuality, he was also considering his own safety.

After all, his life was still firmly in Lu Wu’s hands. If he didn’t quickly show his loyalty and demonstrate his usefulness, what would he do if Lu Wu casually disposed of him later?

He didn’t want to end up like those two beside him.

Standing there like a wooden stake, all they could do was use their ears to eavesdrop and nothing else.

Being so passive, they definitely wouldn’t end up well.

Lu Wu would surely extinguish them, but someone like him, Pismi, who was capable and adept at seeking opportunities, might just survive until the end.

And look, Lu Wu’s gaze towards him had changed.

Especially after understanding what the “Eye of Truth” was, Lu Wu seemed to regard him with new respect.

“So it turns out you do have something of worth. Not bad at all!”

With that, Lu Wu turned his head to look at Eliya and Wang Yase: “What about you two? What can you do to help me?”

When Lu Wu asked this question, the atmosphere instantly became somewhat tense.

Eliya and Wang Yase’s brows were tightly furrowed, while Pismi’s emotions were somewhat complex. She felt fortunate for her own cleverness yet was also somewhat worried for the other two.

“Looks like you guys can’t be of any help to me, huh?”

Lu Wu looked at them as they remained silent for a long time, raising an eyebrow slightly.

His words once again brought tension and stillness to the atmosphere. Pismi even hesitated, considering whether to plead for mercy on behalf of the two men.

Before she could make up her mind, Lu Wu casually waved his hand: “If you’re no help to me, then off you go, do whatever you were doing!”

“What the hell?”

Pismi was stunned.

“Ah, I was planning on letting all three of you go, but since you’re so useful, you can stay with me for a while.

Let these two useless ones go first!”

As soon as Lu Wu said this, Pismi’s facial expression twisted.

Damn it, after all the efforts to show her importance, did she just end up showcasing herself?

Watching the two being dismissed by Lu Wu, Pismi was filled with envious pain and shamelessly said, “Big brother, why don’t you let me go too? I can work remotely.”

“No way, it’s more convenient to have someone like you by my side!”

Lu Wu refused without hesitation.

Pismi’s face was the picture of utter despair.

Done for, seriously done for, ruined!

…

After Lu Wu sent Eliya and Wang Yase away,

He swiftly grabbed Pismi by the neck and with a flick of his hand, precisely injected a Sword Intent into Pismi’s Energy Space.

This move was identical to the way Ibaraki Gangyan had controlled him before.

After subduing her, Lu Wu knocked Pismi out, and then his gaze once again fell on Lin Jianying.

His arms crossed over his chest.

“Spill it.”

“What do you want to know?”

“Start from after you died. Tell me, how did you come back to life?

What have you been through during this time?

Also, everything you know about Dudu’s recent situation, as well as the role you’ve played in it.”

Lu Wu asked these questions with a subtle chill that continually wrapped around Lin Jianying.

This made Lin Jianying realize.

Now, the moment to decide his fate had arrived.

If there was any part of his answer that Lu Wu found suspicious, Lu Wu would definitely not let him off.

Dudu’s death had caused a significant change in Lu Wu’s psyche.

He now trusted no one, including Lin Jianying!

Realizing this, Lin Jianying lowered his head even further and slowly began to divulge everything Lu Wu wanted to know.

Beginning with his own death, he spoke for over an hour until the present.

According to Lin Jianying, after being betrayed by Wu Yong and his family, he didn’t die; someone saved him.

He was unclear about who exactly had saved him.

When he woke up, he was no longer in the Demon Cave Secret Realm.

Soon after, the memories belonging to Kong Yi in his mind suddenly revived, and somewhere an elusive voice was guiding him to a place.

At that time, after going through betrayal and resurrection and not being able to go back to Lu Wu, Lin Jianying was in a state of confusion and emptiness, so he subconsciously followed that voice.

Then, he found a Secret Realm, and in that Secret Realm, Lin Jianying discovered a Fragment like the one he had produced.

Although trapped in that Secret Realm, the power the fragment bestowed upon him upon acquisition allowed his Power to advance leaps and bounds, reaching Epic Level within just one year.

Afterward, the Secret Realm he was in shattered, and he was randomly transmitted out.

He happened to be teleported into a base of the Zero Organization, and his sudden appearance led to the Zero Organization’s people ambushing him. He fought back, killing the leader, and then he became the Fifth Envoy of the Zero Organization.

Later, when he heard that Lu Wu had been killed by the Fourth Envoy, Feng Xiu, he made plans to get close to Feng Xiu in order to kill him and avenge Lu Wu.

But shortly after he got close to Feng Xiu, he received news from Feng Xiu that Lu Wu was still alive.

After that came the disruption of Feng Xiu’s ceremony by Lu Wu.

And then the situation at Jiangnan University.

“So you’re saying, my smooth sabotage of Feng Xiu’s ceremony was thanks to your efforts from behind the scenes?”

“Yes!”

“And back to Dudu, how did you find out that her Gate Fragment was given by Tie Xiong?”

“When Feng Xiu and I came to Jiangnan, Tie Xiong came out to meet us once, revealing his identity as the Third Messenger.

He also mentioned that the fragment was indeed from him.”

“What was his purpose? Why did he do that?”

“He didn’t explicitly state it, but the implications felt related to the leader.

Also, I’ve seen Dudu once, trying to stop her, but it was to no avail. She was very determined.

She said she had her reasons for having to do so.

As for what the reasons were, she didn’t say. She only mentioned that she wouldn’t live much longer even without doing this.

Then I conducted an investigation into this matter, but couldn’t unearth any clues. It just felt to me like it was related to Zhang Yunyi.

Then you know what happened next.

Dudu first erupted at Jiangnan University, then ascended Elder Mountain…”

Lin Jianying relayed everything in one breath.

After hearing this, Lu Wu narrowed his eyes, remaining silent as if pondering something.

He didn’t believe a word of Lin Jianying’s story.

He didn’t trust anyone now.

He was simply collecting all these words as intelligence.

Then, he would combine this intelligence with what he knew to analyze and verify the truth of Lin Jianying’s words.

After a round of verification, Lu Wu could somewhat confirm that it seemed true except for one detail, which was Lin Jianying’s claim about his identity as the Fifth Messenger.

When he disrupted Feng Xiu’s ceremony, it had indeed felt unusually smooth.

If it was true that Lin Jianying had assisted behind the scenes, then it would make sense.

However, even so, Lu Wu did not fully trust him.

After much deliberation, Lu Wu looked up at Lin Jianying: “So, you can contact Feng Xiu now?”

“I can!”

Lin Jianying nodded.

“Then bring him to me!

It’s time to settle my grievances with him.”

Lin Jianying was not surprised by Lu Wu’s request and showed no intention to refuse, nodding immediately.

“Alright!”

Subsequently, right in front of Lu Wu, Lin Jianying used the communication tool of the Zero Organization to get in touch with Feng Xiu, learning his current whereabouts…

…

# Chapter 418: 415 Destructive Spear

Chapter 418: 415 Destructive Spear

After the incident at Elder Mountain,

Feng Xiu left District 1 and returned to his lair.

When Lin Jianying contacted him, Feng Xiu didn’t hesitate at all and immediately revealed his location to Lin Jianying.

He also asked Lin Jianying to bring some materials if he was coming over,

saying that his recovery ritual was still short of some supplies.

He even urged Lin Jianying to hurry, not to delay his ritual.

He seemed to trust Lin Jianying implicitly.

But no sooner had he hung up the communication with Lin Jianying than Feng Xiu immediately contacted someone else, and his first words were, “Lao Wu is a problem!”

Extreme Cold Hell.

After hanging up the call, Lin Jianying looked up at Lu Wu.

“Found it, it’s in the same city where you disrupted his ritual last time.

Shall we go now?”

“No, you go ahead. I have some matters to deal with here and after I’m done, I’ll also pick up my little one from home, then join you.”

Lu Wu’s eyes narrowed.

He had not forgotten who had held him up for most of the day at Elder Mountain.

And Zhang Yunyi had not only blocked him but also spoke lots of incomprehensible things during the process.

Like “it’s too late,” “unchangeable,” and the like.

From those words to her involvement in this affair,

Her role in this event was definitely more complex than Lin Jianying’s, and she surely knew more than Lin Jianying.

Thus, at this moment, Lu Wu definitely needed to see her.

He needed her to give him an explanation.

If she couldn’t provide a satisfactory explanation, Lu Wu wouldn’t mind killing.

Even if she did, Lu Wu might still kill.

After all, he hadn’t vent out any of the resentment that had accumulated due to Dudu’s death.

So, he truly was going over with the intention of killing.

With a surge of Evil Qi, Lu Wu and Lin Jianying parted ways in Extreme Cold Hell.

One left District 1 directly for Feng Xiu’s location, while the other went towards Jiangbei.

At this time, Jiangbei was experiencing the most chaotic period in twenty years.

From the moment Zhang Yunyi took charge of Jiangbei, it had always been tightly under her control.

As long as she was in Jiangbei, chaos was not possible.

What about when she wasn’t around?

This had never been contemplated before by anyone in Jiangbei, not even by the Alliance who had never thought there would be a day in Jiangbei without Zhang Yunyi.

Even Elder Mountain had not taken action against Zhang Yunyi after the incident with Dudu.

This spoke volumes of Zhang Yunyi’s abilities and influence.

However, such a figure was no more.

Her absence wasn’t due to disappearance but murder, executed blatantly in front of all the senior officials of Jiangbei.

Zhang Yunyi had been in a meeting at the time.

Midway through the meeting, an unimaginably terrifying aura burst forth.

The entire Jiangbei sky turned black, and at the same moment, a pair of enormous eyes appeared above the Jiangbei Governor’s Mansion.

Those eyes fixed their gaze on Zhang Yunyi,

filled with anger and hatred, followed immediately by a voice as if coming from hell.

“Die!”

Simultaneously, a black Fog quickly condensed.

Moments later, a black spear carrying a destructive aura descended, targeting Zhang Yunyi.

Facing this sudden adversary and unexpected attack, Zhang Yunyi, though caught off guard, didn’t just sit back, but reacted explosively, using every trick in her arsenal.

She summoned all her Summoned Beasts, even smashing down many precious Legendary items like money was no object, trying to fend off the black spear, but to no avail.

The spear descended, piercing through all of Zhang Yunyi’s Summoned Beasts.

Those Legendary items, whether activated or not, were all cleanly pierced by this strike.

Eventually, she herself also died under that spear.

This person, who had ruled Jiangbei for twenty years with immense power and influence that even the Alliance and Elder Mountain dared not casually provoke, died in a most miserable and pathetic manner.

The spear pierced through her skull, pinning her body upright!

Black Flames burst out from the spear, incinerating her to ash.

After these actions, the eyes in the sky above the Governor’s Mansion, filled with endless rage, slowly closed, and the sky of Jiangbei gradually regained its Light.

However, although the sky of Jiangbei had regained its Light, the entire Jiangbei was shrouded in darkness.

Many recognized those eyes and the black spear.

The owner of those eyes was supposed to be that Legendary figure.

The one who founded the Zero Organization, proclaimed as the strongest Summoner and the closest existence to a god.

That spear was the infamous Destructive Spear!

That being had not appeared for twenty to thirty years, and surprisingly, his first appearance was such.

It was clear that Zhang Yunyi, this foolish woman, had done something to infuriate him, bringing about her own death.

However, few were interested in what exactly Zhang Yunyi had done to incite this deadly fate.

Nor did they dare to be interested.

After all, they didn’t know if this undue curiosity could bring them a similar fate.

What they were most interested in was what Zhang Yunyi left behind after her death.

Who would inherit such vast assets of Jiangbei, as well as twenty years of Zhang Yunyi’s savings and property?

Zhang Yuechu?

Many who had been as tame and obedient as dogs during Zhang Yunyi’s reign suddenly felt that this young lady might not be up to such a heavy responsibility.

Conveniently, the Alliance was of the same opinion.

Jiangbei had been such a thorn for the Alliance for so long,

\_Parms

Some wanted Zhang Yuechu to leave, while others hoped she would stay.

“Leave for what? Should we in Jiangbei even bother with such trifles?

And to let the Secret Realm Bureau be privy to the information?

Do they deserve it? When did we in Jiangbei ever need to cooperate with the Secret Realm Bureau?

Since when did such minor roles in the Secret Realm Bureau have the right to interrogate our young lady?

Absolutely not, we won’t go!”

The statement was firm, but someone immediately responded with a sarcastic tone, “Young Lady, today’s events were too sudden, the Governor suddenly left!

With the Governor not around, Jiangbei is no longer the same as before. Times have changed, Young Lady should recognize the overall situation as the most important.”

“Yes, Young Lady…”

In an instant, the entire Governor’s Mansion was thrown into chaos.

Zhang Yuechu looked around indifferently, only to see loyally served dogs, once freed from their collars and the owners who held their leashes, instantly transform into ravenous wolves ready to attack anyone.

Watching this scene, Zhang Yuechu couldn’t help but sneer with a mocking smile.

Her sarcasm and mocking were not directed at the pack of wolf-dogs before her, but rather at her mother who had just tragically died before her eyes.

In the midst of this chaotic scene, she turned to look at what was now ashes of Zhang Yunyi and mockingly said, “This is the Jiangbei you spent over two decades cultivating, these are the people you’ve trained.

One by one, what great loyalty indeed!”

Her words struck everyone present like a slap in the face, causing the previously noisy room to fall silent.

Zhang Yuechu did not even look at them as she continued, “I have no interest in Jiangbei, and I will go to Beijing too, but not now.

At least, not until I have taken care of her funeral.”

With that, she turned around, placed her hands on the table, and slightly bowed her head, glancing at the group of old men before her.

“So, could you please give me a few days?”

Her words added a touch of oppression to the already silent conference room.

The group of wolf-dogs exchanged glances.

Eventually, a voice spoke up.

“Young Lady, perhaps we should handle the Governor’s funeral instead.”

“Yes, the Alliance’s matters are more urgent, and you needn’t worry about the funeral arrangements for the Governor. We have served her for twenty or thirty years without ever disappointing her. This time too, we will make her satisfied.”

“We promise to arrange a grand funeral for the Governor. Young Lady, you should head to Beijing sooner.”

“What if I insist on staying?”

Zhang Yuechu’s words immediately froze the atmosphere, and the expressions on the faces of the loyal dogs grew somber.

One by one, Summoned Beasts began to materialize behind several individuals.

The already oppressive atmosphere was beginning to take on a scent of gunpowder; it was clear that the group was ready to resort to violence to solve the problem.

Zhang Yuechu raised an eyebrow, “It seems clear now, if I don’t leave, I won’t be able to depart, right?”

A middle-aged man, adjusting his glasses, replied, “No, even if you decided to leave now, you wouldn’t be able to!”

After all, they were dogs raised by Zhang Yunyi.

Extremely vicious, and for them, such matters if undertaken, had to be carried out ruthlessly.

One Zhang Yunyi had already died, and they did not mind another death of Zhang Yuechu.

Although Zhang Yuechu was Lu Haikong’s daughter, Lu Haikong wasn’t unfamiliar with losing a son, and he hadn’t reacted much before.

At worst, if Lu Haikong was particularly fond of his daughter and sought revenge, they would just push the blame on to the head of Zero Organization.

With this in mind, the Summoned Beasts that had appeared suddenly circled Zhang Yuechu.

Beside her, brows furrowed tightly, yet no one acted or even spoke up to mediate.

Just as Zhang Yuechu was about to be attacked, she was about to summon her own Summoned Beast when suddenly, a roar filled with anger and resentment echoed, followed by a series of placating and soothing voices.

“No, listen to me explain…”

“Ow!”

“Stop, don’t wag your tail…”

“Puff!”

A loud noise, as if the air had burst, resounded in the mid-air of the Governor’s Mansion. Immediately after, a figure smashed down, landing right in the middle of a conference room, completely collapsing the already ravaged room due to the Destructive Spear.

“Who is that?”

Inside the conference room, the brows of the Devouring Master’s evil hounds wrinkled, and they quickly reacted, with the middle-aged man commanding first,

“Keep an eye on Zhang Yuechu, don’t let her leave, and check on that guy…”

Before the middle-aged man could finish his order, the sound of a dragon’s roar resounded again. A Five-Clawed Golden Dragon descended from the sky, its tail sweeping across, instantly exploding a Summoned Beast that was about to inspect the falling Lu Wu.

After exploding the Summoned Beast, the Golden Dragon headed straight for Lu Wu, hovering in mid-air with its tail whipping frenzy.

The dragon’s tail even caused frightening phantoms to appear.

With each strike, the ground trembled, shaking the whole Jiangbei Governor’s Mansion.

In just a few minutes, before the Governor’s Mansion could react to the initial strikes, it was already collapsing from the aftershocks.

“Ow!”

After a series of consecutive lashes, the Golden Dragon finally seemed to have released its anger.

After a relieving roar, the little creature directly dove into Lu Wu’s heart and disappeared.

Only then did Lu Wu, who had been lashed repeatedly, manage to crawl up from the ground.

“What the hell was that supposed to be?”

Lu Wu hadn’t expected that his first battle after breaking through to the Epic Level would be him getting thrashed by his own pet.

And the worst part was that he couldn’t fight back.

After all, he really did owe that creature an apology.

There was no choice but to take a solid beating.

Fortunately, the little creature knew its own strength and didn’t strike fatally. Additionally, unaware of Lu Wu’s significant power breakthrough and not controlling its force,

Lu Wu endured it all without any injury.

Rather than saying he took a beating, it felt more like enjoying a round of dragon tail massage.

And surprisingly, it was quite comfortable.

So when Lu Wu got up and stretched a satisfying stretch, those around him were stunned.

And when they clearly saw Lu Wu’s face, it was not just astonishment; the pack of evil hounds furrowed their brows with cold sweat streaming down.

Lu Wu didn’t pay attention to this.

After he stood up, he immediately looked towards Zhang Yuechu.

“Where is Zhang Yunyi?”

Zhang Yuechu stared at Lu Wu, stunned for a good while, before finally pointing to a scorched patch of ground in front.

Lu Wu was about to say something when suddenly his expression changed.

He sensed an extremely dense evil energy coming from that scorched ground, a level of evil energy he had only seen in one person before—the leader of the Zero Organization, as remembered by Yukawa Ryuzo.

“What’s going on? Did that guy come here?”

Zhang Yuechu nodded, “Yeah, he was here a few hours ago, and he killed my mom!”

“That’s impossible!”

Lu Wu refused to believe that woman could be killed so easily.

Even if the one who made the move was him, Zhang Yunyi would never die that easily!

# Chapter 419: 416 Golden Thunder

Chapter 419: 416 Golden Thunder

“She can’t possibly be dead!”

Lu Wu was absolutely certain about this.

Although his understanding of Zhang Yunyi was not vast, he was very clear that this woman was shrouded in layers of veils that were difficult to peel away.

She was definitely a BOSS-level character who operated behind the scenes, stirring up chaos in the world.

When someone suddenly told Lu Wu that she had died, there was no way Lu Wu would believe it, not even if he were beaten to death.

To Zhang Yunyi’s subordinates, it appeared that Lu Wu was somewhat unwilling to accept reality.

Or perhaps, Lu Wu had never witnessed the fall of the Destructive Spear.

Had Lu Wu arrived a few hours earlier and personally witnessed the scene where the spear capable of erasing everything fell, he would not have uttered such naïve words.

Of course, at that moment, no one dared to correct Lu Wu.

After all, his power lay openly before them.

Not knowing where Lu Wu stood, they each did not want to provoke him.

They simply hoped that Lu Wu would leave soon.

However, Lu Wu showed no intention of leaving.

After murmuring to himself that it was impossible, he strode to the spot where Zhang Yunyi had been pierced through, gently extending his hand to touch it, hoping to collect some clues.

But he had arrived a bit too late, and the power of the Destructive Spear had been too strong.

All he could now touch was an extreme evil energy.

“It seems impossible to confirm from this whether she is truly dead or not,” he concluded.

After a bout of searching, Lu Wu could only stand up regretfully and look towards Zhang Yuechu nearby.

“You know where her office, research institute, or her treasure vault or secret base might be, right?”

From the moment Lu Wu had arrived, Zhang Yuechu, whose eyes had been fixed on Lu Wu without shifting, immediately nodded her head, “I know!”

“Good, then take me there!”

Lu Wu’s words made the expressions of Zhang Yunyi’s subordinates present change.

Especially the middle-aged man who had just taken the lead against Zhang Yuechu, his face became extremely somber at this moment.

He even clenched his fists, seeming to gather his emotions, ready to say something.

But remembering the golden dragon’s insane assault and seeing the entire Governor Mansion collapse after Lu Wu’s descent, the middle-aged man ultimately said nothing, stiff as a wooden statue, and watched as Lu Wu and Zhang Yuechu left.

“What do we do now?”

As soon as Lu Wu and his group had left, those who had just been with the middle-aged man crowded together.

“What were all our previous efforts for, if not for Zhang Yunyi’s treasure vault?

Now that he has arrived, haven’t all our hopes been dashed?”

“What else can we do? Can you defeat him? We can only let it go!”

“Well, after all our trouble, not only did we gain nothing, but we’ve also offended Zhang Yuechu.

No, this won’t do; we cannot just let this go.

If we do, won’t we have suffered for nothing? In the future, we’ll have to face Zhang Yuechu’s vengeance.”

“Contact the Alliance!”

The middle-aged man finally bit down hard on his words, “Isn’t the Alliance offering a reward for Lu Wu? Contact the Alliance, they won’t remain indifferent, this is our only chance…”

The middle-aged man hadn’t finished speaking when suddenly he felt the light above his head dim.

They instinctively looked up, their faces turning pale.

Above them, a massive blue bird had appeared, and the moment they looked up, the blue bird above their heads let out a breath.

In the next instant, the entire conference room was completely frozen.

All the high-ranking officials of Jiangbei died within this icy enclosure.

The extreme coldness lowered the temperature by twenty degrees around the Jiangbei Governor’s Mansion, and within this small range, it even started to snow.

Lu Wu did not even turn his head back.

Having experienced Dudu dying in front of him once, Lu Wu’s character underwent a tremendous transformation.

His heart gradually became cold, and he began to hold a dismissive attitude towards other lives.

To Lu Wu now, killing a few people felt no different from crushing a few ants.

Not to mention, these were a bunch of annoying ants.

Zhang Yuechu, on the other hand, glanced back once, but she didn’t care much about the lives and deaths of that group either.

After all, she hadn’t forgotten how those people had just treated her.

Under Zhang Yuechu’s guidance, Lu Wu first went to Zhang Yunyi’s office.

Upon arriving at the office, Lu Wu began a thorough search, however, after one round, Lu Wu really didn’t gain much.

Her office was filled with affairs and documents related to Jiangbei, and the most suspicious item was a photograph tucked in a drawer.

Lu Wu picked it up and saw it was a group photo of two girls.

One was Zhang Yunyi, and the other was Jiang Yuexing.

They did not differ much in appearance, but their temperaments were worlds apart.

Whether it was Jiang Yuexing’s vibrant essence or Zhang Yunyi’s quiet elegance, Lu Wu found it hard to reconcile their past and present as one.

However, it was clear that the relationship between Zhang Yunyi and Jiang Yuexing must have been good.

At least, it was good when the photo was taken.

As for now, that was harder to say.

After casually putting the photo back, Lu Wu left the office, ready to move on to the next location.

Halfway through, Lu Wu suddenly returned, opened the Gate of the Undead casually, and with a wave of his hand let several Sword Qi fall neatly, cutting out the entire hundred-square-meter office. He then threw the whole office into his base.

Simultaneously, he notified the 72 in the base to check it again.

Seeing Lu Wu’s actions, Zhang Yuechu watched, but didn’t say anything.

It seemed she didn’t care much; she appeared more interested in Lu Wu than his actions.

Her eyes kept lingering on Lu Wu, to the point that it made him feel somewhat uncomfortable.

After moving Zhang Yunyi’s office, Lu Wu sequentially went to Zhang Yunyi’s bedroom and what was both Zhang Yunyi’s and Jiangbei’s treasure vault.

This time, Lu Wu didn’t bother to investigate on his own but directly moved both locations, tasking the 72 with the search.

Because what he wanted at that moment wasn’t materials, but bits of intelligence.

Such intelligence-gathering work would be done better by the 72 than by Lu Wu himself.

After emptying out those three places, Lu Wu turned to look at Zhang Yuechu, who had been watching him all this time.

“Is there any other place?”

Zhang Yuechu tilted her head and thought for a moment.

“She seems to have another base, but I’m not quite sure where it is—it will take some time to investigate.”

Lu Wu’s brows raised as he squinted and pondered for a moment.

“Then, may I entrust this matter to you?”

“Yes!” Zhang Yuechu nodded her head.

Following that, the meeting between the siblings came to an end.

Lu Wu promptly turned and left.

Leaving Jiangbei behind, Lu Wu returned to Jiangnan.

He had two reasons for returning to Jiangnan. One was to see Jiang Yuexing.

He wanted to gather some information from Jiang Yuexing, and the other was to move his research institute.

That place had been his residence, and after he faked his death, it had been occupied solely by Dudu. So, it wasn’t just filled with his and Dudu’s memories; it might even contain clues about why Dudu had climbed Elder Mountain.

Coincidentally, Lu Wu wasn’t the only one who thought this.

When he arrived at his research institute, his brow immediately furrowed.

He discovered that his research institute had been sealed off.

Just this alone didn’t make Lu Wu frown. What really made him frown was the discovery that a large number of people were inside the institute who shouldn’t have been there.

At that moment, this group of people was working tirelessly both day and night.

They were investigating every inch of Lu Wu’s institute.

People had entered Lu Wu’s study, the Cultivation Room, and even Dudu’s bedroom, which were not open to the public, more than once to rummage through them.

This sight provoked Lu Wu, souring his already grim mood further.

Suppressing his rage, Lu Wu entered his institute.

“Who’s there?”

As soon as Lu Wu entered, he was immediately stopped.

“This is a restricted area, no one may enter without the Governor’s authorization!”

“Governor? Authorization? No one may enter?”

Upon hearing this, Lu Wu couldn’t help but laugh.

“What great authority Jiang Yuexing wields!”

The faces of the two guards who had stopped Lu Wu changed; they were about to say something when Lu Wu looked up, and as the guards recognized his face and were about to speak again, an unimaginable pressure descended upon them.

More precisely, it fell on everyone present within Lu Wu’s institute.

Inside Lu Wu’s study, a King-level powerhouse who had been overseeing operations was instantly forced to kneel by this pressure.

“You have half an hour to restore my research institute to its original state and then all of you get out,” Lu Wu’s voice echoed in everyone’s ears.

The pressure on them disappeared immediately.

With their freedom restored but their hearts filled with that recent fear, the group outperformed themselves out of terror.

Within twenty minutes, they had restored Lu Wu’s research institute to its original condition.

Everyone trembled as they walked out of Lu Wu’s institute, and throughout the entire process, including the leading King-level powerhouse, none dared to make any rash moves.

After coming out, the King-level powerhouse knelt before Lu Wu.

Following his lead, everyone else knelt down, prostrating at Lu Wu’s feet.

“Mr. Lu Wu, please forgive us; we were only following orders…”

“Did I say you could speak?”

Lu Wu’s icy words turned the King-level powerhouse’s face pale, his whole body trembling. He lowered his head in honest submission, not daring to utter another unnecessary word.

Lu Wu then walked into the institute and thoroughly went through it.

After completing the round, his expression had slightly improved.

Although these people had been investigating, they had not damaged anything, and the institute was mostly kept as it was, sparing their lives.

After coming out, Lu Wu gestured casually, and the group fell unconscious.

Then he carefully moved the research institute back to the Undead Base. After sorting these matters, Lu Wu went straight to the Jiangnan Governor’s Mansion.

He wanted to see what Jiang Yuexing was up to,

Daring to take such an action.

However, as soon as Lu Wu arrived at the Governor Mansion, his brow furrowed again.

He discovered that the Jiangnan Governor’s Mansion seemed to be without Jiang Yuexing; there appeared to be a new master in charge.

“So, there’s a change in person? That explains it.”

Lu Wu’s frown relaxed as he stepped into the Governor’s Mansion, which was guarded with even more vigilance than when Jiang Yuexing was present.

Of course, with Lu Wu’s current power,

So-called tight security at the Governor’s Mansion was a joke.

Lu Wu effortlessly passed through the layers of guards and entered the mansion study.

In this study sat a middle-aged man busy dealing with various official duties.

This middle-aged man, named Huang Song, was the new Governor of Jiangnan Province.

Lu Wu took one look and thought he looked decent enough, but the dominance and sharpness that radiated from him were not to Lu Wu’s liking.

“Was it you who ordered my research institute to be sealed off?”

As Lu Wu spoke suddenly, the busy Huang Song came to and realized someone was in front of him. Upon closer inspection, his brow furrowed.

“Lu Wu? It’s you? I didn’t expect you to actually come?”

Huang Song’s words piqued Lu Wu’s curiosity, “Actually? Really come here?

You knew I would come?”

Huang Song remained calm, casually saying, “The Alliance is already aware of the incidents in Jiangbei.

The Alliance has confirmed that after the Zeroer took action, you were spotted in Jiangbei, and it was you who destroyed the Jiangbei Governor’s Mansion.

Therefore, the Alliance surmised that after leaving Jiangbei, you might come to Jiangnan.”

Lu Wu walked around the study while replying, “That’s a pretty accurate guess. Then you should also know why I came, right?”

“It’s probably concerning Lady Pang’s matter.

Regarding this, I can offer you help. I have a document here that I think you would be interested in.”

Huang Song said as he reached into a drawer to pull out a document, handing it over to Lu Wu.

Lu Wu’s eyebrows raised, and he stepped forward, reaching out to grab the document.

That’s when the unexpected happened.

The document from Huang Song’s hand suddenly disintegrated, turning into white liquid that swiftly coiled around Lu Wu.

At the same time, Huang Song slapped the table with both hands.

The seemingly ordinary desk in front of him disassembled, transforming into stakes that trapped Lu Wu, who was enshrouded by the white liquid.

Despite all this precaution, Huang Song leaped forward, exiting the study.

As soon as Huang Song left the study, it rapidly contracted into a massive prison, locking Lu Wu inside.

After doing all this, Huang Song wiped the cold sweat from his forehead and heaved a sigh of relief.

“Tricking an Epic powerhouse really isn’t easy. Luckily, he lacks experience; otherwise, it wouldn’t have been so easy to catch him.

But these three layers probably won’t hold for long; I hope they can hurry over from their end…”

Before Huang Song could finish speaking, a calm voice reached his ears.

“Are there any others?”

Huang Song’s face changed because it was Lu Wu’s voice.

“How is that possible, aren’t you trapped in…”

“Pff!”

Before Huang Song could finish speaking, Lu Wu grabbed his throat.

In the moment that Lu Wu grabbed Huang Song, the latter’s lips curled up, and gold thunder erupted instantly.

“Youngster, I’ve been waiting for a long time…”

# Chapter 420: 417 Return to Zeroer

Chapter 420: 417 Return to Zeroer

Jiangnan, Governor Mansion.

At this very moment, Lu Wu gazed at the being before him.

Huang Song’s visage, the aged tone of his voice, the gold thunder.

Despite it being the first time they’d met, Lu Wu instantly recognized the other party.

…

Name: Huang Song (Fei Yinghao)

Power: Epic 2 Star

Epic Power: Thunder

Description: In a unique avatar state, combat power is only half, or even less, of Fei Yinghao’s original; however, it is equally terrifying.

…

On seeing the name Fei Yinghao, the warmth in Lu Wu’s eyes plummeted.

After Dudu’s incident, he held no fondness for the Twelve Elders, let alone the one who had struck Dudu with that gold thunder.

It could be said that Fei Yinghao was one of the primary culprits behind Dudu’s death.

Therefore, faced with Fei Yinghao, Lu Wu completely failed to suppress his urge to kill.

Lu Wu seethed with killing intent, and Fei Yinghao was no calmer on his side.

Upon seeing Lu Wu, he thought of his pitiable grandson.

He had invested so much for Pang Duddu, licked boots till they broke, only for the latter to end up dead at the hands of Pang Duddu.

The ocean-deep blood feud involved Pang Duddu’s part, just as much as Lu Wu’s.

This was also one reason why, despite the opposition from Elder Mountain, he still insisted on coming to kill Lu Wu.

“Brat, die for this old man!”

With a roar, Fei Yinghao launched his attack.

With a “crack”, gold thunder descended.

Fei Yinghao made his move ruthlessly, and Lu Wu swiftly reacted on his side.

“Sword Shield!”

With a light shout, above Lu Wu’s head appeared a sword qi with thorns, forming into a Sword Shield out of thin air.

This was a defense Sword Shield Lu Wu had modified from Han’s Thorny Shield.

It could defend and counterattack, a very powerful skill indeed.

Yet under the gold thunder, Lu Wu’s Thorny Sword Shield shattered in less than a second.

Lu Wu’s brow twitched, the other’s attack far exceeding his expectations. He was preparing to respond anew, but it was already too late.

The shattering of the Thorny Sword Shield was just the beginning; the subsequent burst from his opponent was the real threat.

Lu Wu had just enough time to slash out ice-blue Sword Qi to defend against the aftermath of the gold thunder when Huang Song, wrapped in gold thunder, arrived in front of Lu Wu.

“Die for this old man!”

Amidst a bellow.

Fei Yinghao’s hand turned into a claw of gold thunder, grabbed Lu Wu’s face, caught him as they plummeted from the sky, and violently smashed him into the ground with great force.

“Boom!”

The moment Lu Wu hit the ground, a surge of gold thunder erupted from underground, piercing the entire sky from below.

Illuminating the whole Fucheng thoroughly.

In the blinding gold light, Lu Wu, who had just been smashed into the ground, was again seized by Fei Yinghao and flung towards the sky.

In the instant Lu Wu was overhead, Fei Yinghao below took a deep breath, made a grasping motion with his left hand, and violently pulled.

Suddenly a chain of gold thunder twisted into existence around Lu Wu, the chain rigidly snapping straight and halting Lu Wu mid-air.

Fei Yinghao narrowed his eyes, speaking faintly.

“Thunder Burial!”

The next moment, the sky where Lu Wu was turned utterly golden.

Gold clouds enshrouded Lu Wu, layer upon layer.

Immediately, unimaginable and boundless Thunder fell like rain, completely enveloping Lu Wu within it.

Fortunately, Fei Yinghao still had some sense, and this wave erupted when he had blasted Lu Wu thousands of meters into the sky.

If he had done it directly on the ground, the whole of Fucheng would probably have been destroyed.

Even now, with the explosion happening thousands of meters high in the sky, the impact on Fucheng was still immense.

The mere explosion of Thunder had caused the entire city’s power grid to collapse, and the sound shattered over ninety percent of all the glass in the city.

An Epic Level fighter was indeed terrifying.

And Fei Yinghao was truly fearsome, a fact that Lu Wu was really feeling now.

That “Thunder Burial” was a power so great it was like a natural disaster, no, it was even beyond a natural disaster.

Within this Thunder Burial, Lu Wu’s body was pierced with holes everywhere.

In less than five minutes, when the Thunder scattered, there was hardly a spot on Lu Wu’s body that was intact.

Fei Yinghao’s figure flashed, and he appeared directly in front of Lu Wu.

With a wave of his hand, golden Thunder appeared again, firmly binding Lu Wu.

Having captured Lu Wu, there was no look of triumph on Fei Yinghao’s face.

To him, this did not seem worth boasting about; although Lu Wu was an Epic 1 Star being, the gap between him and the Twelve Elders was worlds apart.

Capturing Lu Wu was naturally not something he took pride in.

While Lu Wu was firmly bound, he looked up and said something nonsensical to Fei Yinghao, “So, this is the sort of existence that Dudu was facing before?”

Fei Yinghao was taken aback and responded indifferently, “She faced a stronger me than now!

Honestly, you are far behind compared to her.

Even without using the power of the Fragment, she has the strength to contend with this avatar of mine. As for you?

You’re far too lacking!”

“I know, but that’s okay, I will grow!

The person she failed to kill, I will kill!”

Fei Yinghao tightened the chains on Lu Wu, “I’m afraid you won’t have that chance!”

“No, I still have that chance!”

A smile suddenly appeared on the charred corners of Lu Wu’s mouth, and in the next moment, the Undead aura belonging to Han circulated within Lu Wu, allowing his body, which had been riddled with holes, to begin to heal at a visible rate.

Fei Yinghao’s expression darkened, “Did I allow you to recover?”

As the golden Thunder was about to burst forth again, Lu Wu chillingly said, “Did I permit you to run wild?”

This left Fei Yinghao completely baffled.

Was Lu Wu not seeing the situation clearly?

Was this the time for him to say such things? Did he not realize his life…

“No, wait!”

Fei Yinghao’s expression changed suddenly, unbelieving as he looked up at Lu Wu, feeling his power being pulled back.

“Don’t look at me like that, after all, I am the strongest Cultivation Master. It’s quite normal for me to detect the medium of your avatar’s arrival.

And it’s even more normal to send your avatar packing.”

As Lu Wu spoke, the necklace around Fei Yinghao’s neck suddenly shattered amid the golden Thunder.

“Oh, and by the way, it’s quite normal for a genius like me to learn a bit of your Skill.

Using your Skill to destroy your talisman when it’s not your true self is just standard procedure.”

As he said this, Lu Wu’s expression suddenly turned icy cold.

“So, please go back where you came from!”

As Lu Wu’s words hit the ground, the necklace around Fei Yinghao’s neck fell, and his strength was rapidly retracted.

As his power and consciousness were being pulled back, Lu Wu’s gaze coldly delivered the final threat.

“Keep your neck clean, I might come to twist off your dog head at any time.”

The next moment, the golden Thunder disappeared, and the Fei Yinghao in front of Lu Wu turned back into Huang Song.

Huang Song’s face changed, and he subconsciously wanted to say something.

“Shut up, then go to die!”

As Lu Wu’s voice tinged with anger rose, the golden thunder erupted, and the newly appointed Governor of Jiangnan just died under the golden thunder replicated from Fei Yinghao by Lu Wu.

Casually squashing Huang Song, as if he was squishing an ant.

Lu Wu landed back in the Governor Mansion, randomly grabbed a person, and forced him to divulge Jiang Yuexing’s whereabouts.

Fortunately, Jiang Yuexing’s whereabouts were not a secret.

Almost everyone knew that after the arrival of the new Governor, the former one had been thrown into prison.

She was currently being held in the Sea Suppression Tower.

After learning of Jiang Yuexing’s location, Lu Wu made his way immediately to the Sea Suppression Tower.

At that moment, the Sea Suppression Tower was on high alert.

After all, they had all witnessed the commotion in Fucheng.

Of course, their alertness was nothing in the eyes of Lu Wu.

Originally, Lu Wu had no intention of doing anything special; he was just planning to go in and take Jiang Yuexing away.

However, as soon as he arrived at the Sea Suppression Tower, his brows instantly furrowed, and boundless anger erupted.

At the same time.

Inside the Sea Suppression Tower, deep within the prison.

This was the first time Jiang Yuexing had been taken out of her cell since her incarceration.

Prior to this, she had been treated well in the Sea Suppression Tower, because Zhang Yunyi had been protecting her in the shadows.

As soon as Zhang Yunyi died, some people became restless.

Now, leading the group that took Jiang Yuexing out were the investigators from the Alliance who had come to look into Pang Duddu’s incident.

They had talked to Jiang Yuexing a few times before, but never got any useful information.

Due to the presence of Zhang Yunyi and Lu Haikong, they hadn’t employed any special measures against Jiang Yuexing.

Now that Zhang Yunyi was dead, they felt free to act, and directly took out Jiang Yuexing.

In the dim prison, several well-dressed men surrounded Jiang Yuexing, whose powers were restrained.

The leader stepped forward and gave Jiang Yuexing a thunderous shout, “Jiang Yuexing, let me tell you something, your dear friend.

The Governor of Jiangbei, Zhang Yunyi, was killed not long ago.”

“That’s impossible!” Jiang Yuexing shook her head without hesitation.

Despite her disputes with that woman, she knew her better than anyone else, and it was impossible for her to die.

“I know this is one of your tactics, but you’ve made an error.

Not to mention that woman couldn’t die, even if she did, it has nothing to do with me.

Also, I really don’t have the information you want, don’t waste your time on me…”

“Slap!”

Before Jiang Yuexing could finish speaking, the leader suddenly erupted and slapped her across the face.

“No, you are wrong, her death is of great significance to you.

She was alive, and we dared not touch you, but now she’s gone, we can do whatever we want.

So, you better cooperate with us, or I will make you wish you were dead.

Don’t doubt this, after all, I am a professional in this regard.”

Jiang Yuexing’s face paled.

Just as she was about to speak, a chilling voice rang out.

“Oh? How professional?”

“Who?”

The sudden appearance of this unfamiliar voice caused everyone in the prison to change their faces, and the leader reacted the most.

He didn’t bother to look at who was speaking, and at the moment he heard the voice, his first action was to pounce at Jiang Yuexing, his blade aiming for her neck, as if to take Jiang Yuexing hostage or to kill her.

However, as soon as he moved, a flash of Sword Qi passed by, and the man in front of them was directly cleaved in two.

At the same time, Lu Wu’s figure appeared out of nowhere, his foot stomping on the upper half of the man’s body.

“Tell me, who’s behind you?”

“Lu Wu, you…”

“Forget it, there’s no need to say it, your identity as an Alliance investigator, carrying strong Evil Energy, I’ll just chalk this up to the Alliance and ‘Zero’er,’ you can die now!”

As Lu Wu spoke, he stepped down, and the man was instantly frozen into an ice block, and then shattered into pieces, dead beyond doubt.

Just as this person was reduced to icy debris, something on his body lit up.

Lu Wu glanced at it and saw it was a communication device.

With a slight smile, Lu Wu hooked his finger, and the device floated in the air as he casually activated it.

“Hello, Number 36, immediately extract Jiang Yuexing from Jiangnan and converge with me here!

Jiang Yuexing is a fine chess piece, potentially very effective against Lu Wu.”

Lu Wu recognized the voice; it was Feng Xiu, and he couldn’t help but smile.

How very coincidental, meeting this ‘old friend’ again.

Meanwhile, Feng Xiu on the other end hadn’t realized anything was amiss and continued, “Also, don’t forget about Cimu Qingzi; she’s also a fine chess piece, try to find her if possible!”

Upon hearing this, Lu Wu’s smile broadened.

But within his tranquil smile lurked a spine-chilling intent to kill.

At the same time, Feng Xiu noticed something was wrong and stopped talking.

“Who are you?”

“You can guess,” Lu Wu said flatly.

“Lu Wu? Is that you!”

Feng Xiu immediately recognized the voice and his tone dropped several degrees, as if there was a roar stuck in his throat.

“It seems like you’re as fixated on me as I am on you,

Your concern, is quite revolting!”

“Lu Wu…”

“I advise you to hide well in your rat hole so you might live a little longer.”

After finishing, Lu Wu didn’t wait for a response from Feng Xiu and hung up. At the same moment, he stomped his foot, and the extreme cold completely froze the entire prison.

As the prison became encased in ice, Lu Wu extended his hand to Jiang Yuexing: “Godmother, long time no see!”

…

At the same time.

Inside Elder Mountain, Fei Yinghao suddenly opened his eyes.

His current state in Elder Mountain was dire, with one arm and one leg severed, along with various degrees of injuries elsewhere.

These were all leftovers from Dudu.

And in such a state, he still had to split his attention to deal with Lu Wu.

“Got sent back, eh? Happy? Congratulations, you’ve just become a bit more notable in someone’s little black book.

I told you to watch and wait, why wouldn’t you listen?

He might have that guy’s presence on him, acting against him is akin to seeking death.”

The old man beside him spoke half in jest and half earnestly.

Then Fei Yinghao couldn’t care less to listen.

“You lot are too cowardly, why not all of us attack together and kill him? What’s the worst that can happen?

Even if he was strong, didn’t he end up like that back then?

After that incident, how much power could he possibly have left?”

“Even if he has a fraction of his power left, killing one or two of us would be easy for him.”

“Then we fight…”

As Fei Yinghao spoke, the other elders withdrew their gazes; no one wanted to respond to this madman.

Fight the Zeroer to the death? What a joke.

They certainly didn’t wish to die yet…

# Chapter 421: 418 Death Scythe

Chapter 421: 418 Death Scythe

Undead Secret Realm.

After rescuing Jiang Yuexing in Jiangnan, Lu Wu opened the Gate of the Undead and took Jiang Yuexing back to the Undead Secret Realm.

“What is this?”

Jiang Yuexing looked at Lu Wu’s Undead Secret Realm with a puzzled expression.

Lu Wu was about to answer when suddenly a dragon roar sounded. Immediately after, a golden dragon emerged from Lu Wu’s body and, giving Lu Wu a tail whip along the way, headed towards the sensed position of Little Skeleton.

Following closely, Silly also poked its head out and called out to Lu Wu before joining the golden dragon.

Inside Lu Wu were three Summoned Beasts, only the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword remained still.

Hmm, it disliked the atmosphere of the Undead Secret Realm.

On the other side, Lu Wu, who had been whipped by a tail, stood up as if nothing had happened and answered Jiang Yuexing’s question.

“My foothold, you can stay there for now.

If you have any requests, you can talk to me.”

After making arrangements for Jiang Yuexing, Lu Wu flashed to his feet and chased after Little Golden Dragon.

He wasn’t going to retaliate for the tail whip; he was going to check on Little Golden Dragon and Little Skeleton.

Speaking of which, he had yet to take a good look at the attributes of Little Golden Dragon and Little Skeleton.

Additionally, Lu Wu wanted to understand their advancement situation.

How did these two little fellows, along with Silly and Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword, coincidentally break through at the same time?

One or two might be a coincidence, but four together was definitely not coincidence.

There must be something fishy going on.

Following Little Golden Dragon, Lu Wu quickly saw Little Golden Dragon and Little Skeleton, and also their current attributes before his eyes.

…

Name: Five-Clawed Golden Dragon

Power: 1 star (Epic)

Quality: Top-Grade Epic (Upgraded)

Epic Power: Divine Dragon Bloodline (Upgraded)

Talent Skill: Omitted

Description: Well, there’s not much to explain. Research it yourself.

…

Name: Death Monarch

Power: 1 star (Epic)

Quality: Lower-grade Epic (Upgraded)

Epic Power: Death Thunder (Upgraded)

Companion Equipment: Mysterious Bone Staff (Legend), Little Skeleton’s phone (Legend), Death Scythe (Epic)

Talent Skill: Omitted

…

After checking the attributes of the two little fellows, Lu Wu immediately focused on the Death Scythe.

“Where did this thing come from?”

Lu Wu came forward to inquire about the origin of the scythe.

His appearance made Little Golden Dragon turn its head, looking very unhappy and reluctant to see Lu Wu.

On the other hand, Little Skeleton was especially happy, and upon seeing Lu Wu approach, it threw aside its two companions and with a ‘pap,’ jumped onto Lu Wu.

(Lu Wu, Little Skeleton has become really powerful!

Little Skeleton feels that Little Skeleton can beat smelly Tuantuan!)

Hmm, this little fellow with a single sentence successfully brought down Lu Wu’s mood.

Lu Wu didn’t respond to this remark and calmed his emotions before continuing to question Little Skeleton about where the scythe came from.

(This thing?)

Little Skeleton turned its head to look at the scythe in its hand and then explained the origin of the scythe in detail.

After listening, Lu Wu’s brow immediately furrowed.

“People are getting pretty bold, aren’t they!”

It was almost as if they were openly telling Lu Wu that someone was helping increase Little Skeleton’s power.

As for who was helping, Lu Wu had suspects in mind.

It could be that legendary “Zeroer” or Zhang Yunyi.

Lu Wu felt the latter was more likely.

Thinking carefully, since Little Skeleton and Little Flood Dragon had escaped from Dudu’s side, Dudu couldn’t have failed to notice.

She hadn’t done anything, and there even seemed to be a deliberate intention to let things take their course; this one reason couldn’t be ruled out.

Regarding Dudu’s side, Lu Wu was increasingly sure there must be deep cooperation between her and Zhang Yunyi.

“So why did she choose to die now, neither earlier nor later?”

Lu Wu felt that the woman seemed to be avoiding him.

But to what end?

This was hard to guess without enough information.

“Now I can only hope that 72 has made some progress!”

Lu Wu had talked to Jiang Yuexing before coming back.

She knew virtually nothing.

If it were someone else, they might think Jiang Yuexing was playing dumb, since both Pang Duddu and Zhang Yunyi, one grew up under her watch with a lot of close cooperation, and Zhang Yunyi was even eyeing her.

With Jiang Yuexing’s position, she shouldn’t have been completely clueless; she was not so foolish!

But Lu Wu didn’t have much suspicion about Jiang Yuexing’s side, because he knew his own godmother was foolish.

So now, Lu Wu could only hope for some results from 72 and Zhang Yuechu.

“Additionally, while I wanted to bring Qingzi back and settle her into this Secret Realm, since someone could lead Little Skeleton out from this Secret Realm, it proved it wasn’t absolutely safe.

With this in mind, there’s no need to look for Qingzi for the time being.

I currently don’t have the energy to look after her, plus the Undead Secret Realm also needs a tight security and boundary system.”

This was Lu Wu’s current stronghold, and security had to be a priority no matter what.

Speaking of which, Lu Wu suddenly remembered the fellow named Pismi he had captured not long ago.

That guy seemed to have some skills in surveillance.

“Let 72 give it a try, and if he’s really capable, have him design a plan, and I’ll modify it later.”

Afterward, Lu Wu took Little Skeleton and the others back to the base.

He asked 72 about the progress, dealt with some Dark Organization matters, and after giving 72 some tasks, Lu Wu opened the Gate of the Undead and left the Undead Secret Realm.

He hadn’t forgotten that there was still someone waiting for him to come and kill.

…

District 8.

Feng Xiu’s stronghold.

Feng Xiu looked especially awful at this moment.

On one hand, it was because his injuries had not been resolved.

On the other hand, it was also because recently, all kinds of things on his side were going awfully wrong.

The ritual to heal his injuries, the encirclement against Lu Wu, and the mess he had joined in Jiangnan recently, plus the phone call not long ago.

Every single thing was displeasing to him.

Especially the last one.

Those 36 Angel Envoys were one of the few cards he had in his hand.

He had seized the opportunity of Zhang Yunyi being killed by the leader to use this card, hoping it would serve some purpose to bring Jiang Yuexing back, only to encounter the ‘good fortune’ of running into Lu Wu. Now, not only had he lost the 36, but he himself was also humiliated by Lu Wu.

Thinking of what Lu Wu had said, Feng Xiu felt like his heart was stuffed with a bomb, and he was about to explode.

“A year ago, the ant that was beneath my notice has grown enough to humiliate me?

Very well, very well indeed!”

“Ding!”

As Feng Xiu raged, a token at his waist began to tremble.

Feng Xiu raised his eyebrows and quickly adjusted his emotions, shifting from boundless anger to an appearance of calm within an extremely short span of time.

“Lao Wu, have you arrived?

My ritual is almost ready, now just missing that one ingredient of yours. You’d better hurry up with it.”

“I’ve almost gotten everything you need.

I can be there soon, are you still at the base?”

“Yes, still here!”

“Alright, I’m on my way!”

After the brief exchange ended, the expressions on both sides changed to varying degrees.

Lin Jianying was slightly frowning, while Feng Xiu’s expression turned from sunny to savagely menacing.

Additionally, both men sent two messages each after hanging up.

“Lao Wu is coming over, you should also get ready to come over.”

“He’s still in the base, I’m going now to confirm the situation.”

“Good!” \*2

Both sides responded simultaneously and began to execute their respective plans.

Half an hour later, Lin Jianying’s figure appeared in Feng Xiu’s base.

“Diwu Your Excellency!”

The 13th Angel Envoy under Feng Xiu’s command immediately greeted him.

Lin Jianying glanced behind the 13th and furrowed his brows.

“Where’s Lao Si?”

“The fourth lord’s old injury flared up. It’s inconvenient for him to welcome you from afar, please forgive him, Diwu Your Excellency.”

“It seems his injury is severe!

Who knows if he’s close to death already.”

Lin Jianying said coldly, expressing his dissatisfaction. The Angel Envoy before him didn’t dare utter a word, silently standing there as if he were a piece of decoration.

“Let’s go, take me to him!”

“Yes, follow me!”

The 13th Angel Envoy bowed respectfully and then led Lin Jianying deeper into the base.

They hadn’t gone far before Lin Jianying’s brows furrowed.

“This isn’t the right way, is it? It’s not the same as last time, and the surroundings, how come they’re different from before?”

“The base underwent a major repair, remember the ritual got disrupted last time? The fourth lord, after reflecting deeply on the pain, thought it was not very wise to hold the ritual outside, so he planned to do it inside the base.”

“Just because he was bitten by a snake one morning, it doesn’t mean Lao Si’s courage has shrunk that much, right?”

“Diwu Your Excellency jests.”

The 13th Angel Envoy appeared too frightened to engage in such a topic, bowing his head and silently leading the way for Lin Jianying.

As for Lin Jianying, after briefly furrowing his brows as he surveyed the surrounding environment, he didn’t say anything further. Following the 13th, they quickly arrived at the central point of the base, which was also Feng Xiu’s location.

The moment he saw Feng Xiu approaching, his eyes lit up, and he came forward with a particularly excited demeanor.

“Lao Wu, you’ve finally arrived, I really have to thank you for coming through this time!”

“It was indeed a bit of trouble, but not unacceptable. After all, it’s no more now!”

Lin Jianying also approached with a smile.

“What do you mean?”

Feng Xiu was taken aback.

“Pfft!”

A light sound, a surge of excruciating pain, and Feng Xiu foolishly looked down to see a hand had pierced through his heart.

“Lao Wu… what are you…”

In these past few years, Lin Jianying had clearly experienced society’s harsh beatings; he was no longer the naive young man cheated of love in a tree hollow years ago.

He was now extremely shrewd, resolute to an impeccable degree.

When it was time to make a move, he didn’t hesitate to listen to what Feng Xiu had to say; with a twist of his hand, he brutally tore Feng Xiu’s body to shreds.

This scene stunned the onlookers, Number 13 included.

Fortunately, this person had seen tumultuous times before and reacted swiftly, quickly retreating to escape. As soon as he moved, however, he found a goblin blocking his path.

At the same time, Lin Jianying turned his head around and, with a casual swing, the arm stained with Feng Xiu’s blood pierced Number 13’s heart.

Lin Jianying’s hands bulged with veins as he prepared to twist and kill the Number 13 before him, just like Feng Xiu, when his expression suddenly changed as he rotated his arm.

“What’s going on?”

Lin Jianying was taken aback and tried to pull his arm back, only to discover that the Angel Envoy 13 before him had turned into a black magical chain that restrained his hand.

At the same time, the recently shredded Feng Xiu also transformed into black chains, entangling his left leg.

Immediately after, both chains pulled hard, and Lin Jianying was drawn and quartered.

“Gurgle gurgle!”

The goblin nearby saw this and quickly pulled out a blood-colored longsword, ready to save his ally.

Then, an impatient voice sounded.

“Stop getting in the way, hey!”

A black skeleton skull appeared out of nowhere, biting the goblin and freezing it in place.

Simultaneously, Feng Xiu, who had supposedly been killed just moments before, reappeared not far from Lin Jianying and snapped his fingers at him.

In an instant, countless black skeleton heads appeared, raining down on Lin Jianying like droplets.

Lin Jianying, right hand and left leg constrained, hindered in his movements, could only burst forth energy and prop up a black Evil Energy Shield to fend off the onslaught of skeletons.

But Feng Xiu let out a cold laugh.

“Don’t underestimate my preparation!”

The next moment, the chains binding Lin Jianying shook, releasing energy that disrupted Lin Jianying’s energy output, causing the Evil Energy Shield around him to shatter from the inside out.

Caught off guard by this unexpected move, Lin Jianying was bombarded by the rain-like skeleton heads.

After one round of attacks, Lin Jianying was left battered and bruised.

Feng Xiu’s mouth curled up in a smile as he casually snapped his fingers, and three black chains appeared again, binding toward Lin Jianying’s left hand, right leg, and head.

But Lin Jianying, despite his wounds, had no intention of surrendering.

With a clench of his teeth, he violently rotated his body and managed to break off his own limbs to escape the chains.

Freed of physical and energy restraints, Lin Jianying, like a dragon diving into the sea, he was completely liberated and his first action was to head straight for Feng Xiu.

With his remaining hand, he reached for Feng Xiu’s head.

“Die for me!”

Feng Xiu’s face changed as he snapped his fingers and a huge skeleton skull appeared out of thin air to block Lin Jianying.

However, Lin Jianying’s body erupted with special energy and with a single claw, he tore through the skull, reaching the unsuspecting Feng Xiu, ready to strike him down.

At that moment, when Feng Xiu seemed panicked, he suddenly smirked.

An overbearing voice then rang out.

“Sit down!”

A figure appeared out of nowhere in front of Feng Xiu and with a punch sent Lin Jianying sprawling…

# Chapter \_\_auto\_\_ 422 - \_\_auto\_\_ 422: 419 Strong

Chapter 422: 419 Strong

Feng Xiu’s Base, District 8.

With an incredibly violent punch, Lin Jianying, who had amputated his own limbs to reach Feng Xiu, was smashed to the ground.

It was an epic-level attack, and surprisingly, it didn’t cause any damage to the surrounding buildings.

This wasn’t because the combatants controlled their strength.

Rather, it was because this space had long been linked with the domain of Feng Xiu.

As long as Feng Xiu’s domain remained intact, the base would not suffer any damage.

Of course, Lin Jianying was in no state to notice that now.

First, he was tricked by Feng Xiu, forced to sever his limbs to escape.

He had activated the power of the Fragment and desperately fought his way to Feng Xiu, thinking he could defeat him, only to be interrupted by a sudden ‘Cheng Yaojin’.

And this ‘Cheng Yaojin’ was someone Lin Jianying recognized.

It was none other than the 13th Apostle, who had just died.

However, the 13th Apostle now was entirely different from before.

Previously, he’d been obsequious, but now he was overwhelmingly dominant in both appearance and demeanor, his actions exuding an imposing air.

His power had inexplicably reached the epic 1-star level.

He slammed down Lin Jianying with a punch. He quickly caught up again, grabbed Lin Jianying’s head, and smashed it violently against the ground.

The power of the 13th Apostle collided with Feng Xiu’s domain, nearly knocking the breath out of Lin Jianying.

The 13th Apostle, seizing the advantage, was relentless. He grabbed again, breaking Lin Jianying’s remaining limbs, skillfully extracted the Fragment from Lin Jianying’s body with a pat, and then casually threw Lin Jianying aside.

At this moment, Feng Xiu took over and snapped his fingers.

Black chains attacked again, firmly trapping Lin Jianying, whose limbs were all severed.

“Settled down now?”

With Lin Jianying captured, Feng Xiu’s mouth curled up, and he sighed in relief.

He was clearly in a good mood, even leisurely walking up to Lin Jianying.

“Should I call you Lao Wu? Or should I address you as Lin Jianying?”

Lin Jianying glared back in silence, his stubborn and enraged expression causing Feng Xiu to slap him uncontrollably.

“You’re just as foolish as the intelligence reports suggested, but even an idiot should recognize the situation now.”

“Kill or maim me, just do it. I’m not afraid!”

Lin Jianying had grown somewhat over the years.

Facing adversity, he had become a lot braver and tougher, no longer trembling as before. But to Feng Xiu, this just seemed even more foolish.

“Killing and maiming will definitely happen, but before that, there’s something else I need to do.”

Feng Xiu said as he moved closer and began searching Lin Jianying’s body.

“What are you doing?”

Lin Jianying’s face changed, and he struggled mightily, but to no avail.

“Stop struggling; you won’t break free. I don’t plan to kill you yet. I’m looking for something.

Ah, it seems I’ve found it. This must be it.”

Feng Xiu said, pulling an item from Lin Jianying.

Lin Jianying’s face changed upon seeing the item, but recalling something, he tried to stabilize his feelings, attempting to keep his expression as neutral as possible.

“What do you want with that trinket?”

“No more ridiculous attempts or schemes now; since I’ve taken it out, I know what it’s for.”

Feng Xiu said as he turned the evil energy in his hand, and the jade-like item he had taken from Lin Jianying lit up.

At this, Lin Jianying completely lost his composure.

What unsettled him even more was that soon, Lu Wu’s voice came through the prop.

“Hey! How’s it going?”

Lin Jianying’s eyes bulged, about to shout loudly, but the black chains tightened, causing intense pain that made Lin Jianying open his mouth.

Then, the black chains were stuffed directly into it, rendering Lin Jianying unable to speak.

At the same time, Feng Xiu spoke, but it was in Lin Jianying’s voice,

“I have successfully arrived at Feng Xiu’s base. He’s preparing the restoration ceremony, and I’ve received a message that Tie Xiong has just visited this base!

You need to be careful.”

Lin Jianying’s face changed, and what terrified him even more was that Lu Wu seemed to have no suspicion.

“I understand. It will take me about two more hours to get there. Prepare yourself, and once I arrive, we will attack together and take down Feng Xiu’s lair, eliminating Feng Xiu!”

Feng Xiu’s mouth curved up, his face full of mockery, “Good, I’ll wait for you!”

Having said that, Feng Xiu abruptly ended the communication, looked up at Lin Jianying with a mocking face, “Guess if he caught onto the trick just now?”

Lin Jianying struggled, but couldn’t speak.

“Oh, I forgot you can’t talk now, but that’s okay. You keeping your mouth shut is pretty good.

As for him, I guess he must have sensed something fishy.

After all, while I can mimic your voice, I can’t imitate your tone and attitude. With that kid’s cunning, he must have guessed that something’s wrong on your end.

Now let’s speculate further, do you think he will come knowing something might be wrong here?”

Feng Xiu looked at Lin Jianying, seemingly anticipating his response.

However, he had no intention of freeing Lin Jianying.

Seeing the helpless fury on the other side, but unable to utter a word, Feng Xiu felt particularly delighted, slapped Lin Jianying’s face, and continued, “Don’t worry, he will definitely come.

He thinks he holds the winning card!

Even if you are captured by me, he still has moves to play because you are actually a useless card in his hand.”

“Do you really think that the last time he caused trouble here went smoothly because you were helping him from behind?

If so, you are vastly underestimating him.

Even without you, he could stir up some trouble. The guy does have some tricks.”

At this point, Feng Xiu’s face grew colder.

“However, the same trick, once used here, won’t work on me again.”

After saying this, Feng Xiu stayed quiet, silently waiting for Lu Wu’s arrival.

On Lu Wu’s end.

He was extremely punctual. When he said two hours, it meant exactly two hours.

As soon as the two hours were up, the prop in Feng Xiu’s hand lit up again.

“I’m here!”

“I am with Feng Xiu at the center of the base, come on in.”

As he said this, Feng Xiu paused, a mocking and playful smile appearing on his lips.

“Do you need me to come and get you?”

The prop fell silent for a moment, then a calm voice came through.

“No need, I’m already here!”

This time, the voice didn’t come from the prop, but from behind Feng Xiu.

Accompanying the voice was also a surge of sword qi.

The fierce sword qi surged forward; Feng Xiu remained unmoved, while the 13th Apostle beside him moved, blocking the sword with both hands.

After blocking the sword, Feng Xiu turned around and looked at Lu Wu, who had appeared behind him at some unknown moment, the corner of his mouth lifted.

“Yo, it’s been a while. We finally meet face-to-face again!”

“You shouldn’t be smiling; you should be crying because this isn’t a meeting that should make you happy.”

Lu Wu cast a dismissive glance at him and said faintly.

As those words were uttered, a more rampant smile spread across Feng Xiu’s face.

“So confident?

No wonder, after all, you have a ace up your sleeve.

Look, is this your ace!”

As Feng Xiu spoke, he lightly snapped his fingers.

The next moment, a series of footsteps sounded, and Lu Wu’s eyebrows raised, only to see a group of people being escorted out from Feng Xiu’s base.

This scene left Lin Jianying utterly confused.

Lu Wu glanced briefly, his face showing little emotion, while Feng Xiu’s smile brightened even more, “I have to say, you do have quite some tactics. In such a short time, with so many incidents, and so busy as you are, you still managed to establish a dark organization.

Moreover, you’ve planted so many spies in my base, I must admit, these tactics are truly astonishing.

Though these spies might not be much use in actual combat, they can influence my base’s facilities and ceremonies, providing you unimaginable help at crucial moments.

This card is indeed good, too bad it’s gone!”

With that, Feng Xiu waved his hand.

His men immediately took action, and those captured were beheaded right in front of Lu Wu.

In an instant, a dozen or so heads fell, yet Lu Wu didn’t even raise his eyebrows, prompting a sigh from Feng Xiu.

“I must say, you’ve grown a lot.

So many pawns dead, and yet you don’t even frown, you didn’t have this state of mind a year ago.

Indeed, only a woman can make a man grow quickly.

Once Pang Duddu died…”

As Feng Xiu mentioned Pang Duddu, Lu Wu, who had been expressionless, suddenly frowned, “Shut up!”

This was the first time his emotions fluctuated.

This pleased Feng Xiu.

He was about to say something when a sudden indescribable fear erupted, causing Feng Xiu’s complexion to change.

“How could…”

Before he could finish his sentence, Feng Xiu stiffened, unable to move a muscle.

The 13th Apostle besides him also froze.

“You were right, I do indeed have confidence and an ace, but my ace and confidence are not hiding in the shadows, but in my own power.

There’s something you might not be aware of, now let me make you understand.”

As Lu Wu spoke, he walked toward Feng Xiu.

With each step he took, a stronger, deeper pressure bore down on Feng Xiu, hammering at his soul and striking his domain.

With each trembling step, Lu Wu appeared to Feng Xiu like a god or demon.

Finally, Lu Wu stood in front of Feng Xiu.

“Now you should have realized, you don’t even have the qualification to stand before me.

Kneel!”

Lu Wu’s plain words unleashed unimaginable pressure, turning Feng Xiu’s face pale as blood slowly dripped from his mouth.

Clearly, he was severely injured.

But more than the physical injuries, it was the psychological blow that was severe for Feng Xiu.

He couldn’t imagine, nor accept the scene before him.

Lu Wu had advanced to the Epic 1 Star level, which he knew.

He even knew that Lu Wu had once fought a clone of Fei Yinghao in Jiangnan.

He also knew how Lu Wu managed to escape from Fei Yinghao’s clone.

His intelligence gathering was meticulous.

Thus, he confidently believed that by himself, using the power of the Second Envoy’s 13 Apostles and his modified base, he could capture Lu Wu.

However, now, just a few steps from Lu Wu, Feng Xiu felt Lu Wu’s power.

But he still could not believe it.

“How can you be so strong? It’s impossible!

You’ve just advanced to the Epic level.

Moreover, if you were this strong, how could you have struggled so much against Fei Yinghao’s clone with only a layer of strength?”

“Who told you that Fei Yinghao’s clone only had one layer of strength?”

Feng Xiu’s face changed.

Normally, a clone should only possess a strength close to that of the original.

Additionally, considering Lu Wu had just advanced, and that Fei Yinghao had said during their battle that Lu Wu was not as strong as Pang Duddu,

Feng Xiu based his estimation of Lu Wu’s ability on this.

He thought Lu Wu was at most just at the threshold of the Epic 1-star level, and in a situation like ‘springing the trap’, it should be easy.

But now, the strength displayed by Lu Wu, no longer just at the threshold of the Epic 1-star, was vaguely nearing the Epic 2-star level.

This terrifying power was already sufficient to break Feng Xiu’s trap.

After all, Feng Xiu, due to severe injuries, was barely at the Epic 1-star level, and his 13 Apostles, though they borrowed power from the Second Envoy, were barely as strong as Feng Xiu.

They managed to capture Lin Jianying solely because of his lack of experience.

Even then they wasted many tricks, and to think they could tackle Lu Wu was quite overestimating their capability.

In the face of absolute power, all his previous preparations and calculations turned into a joke.

The once arrogant Feng Xiu now faced being pressed into the dust, kneeling before Lu Wu.

“Any more tricks left? Or any last words you wish to say?”

Lu Wu looked down at Feng Xiu, who he was gradually pressing down, “I’m quite humane, I can allow you a chance to wail before you die.”

These words enraged the shocked Feng Xiu.

“Lu Wu, don’t get too proud, Lin Jianying is still in my…”

“Spurt!”

Feng Xiu hadn’t finished speaking when Lu Wu’s hand twitched, a flash of sword light, and one of Feng Xiu’s arms was forever severed.

“Was it this one?” Lu Wu mocked.

“You…”

“Then it seems it was this one!”

Before Feng Xiu could finish, another flash of sword light passed, severing his other arm.

With both arms cut off, Feng Xiu’s face turned deathly pale.

Lu Wu then looked toward Lin Jianying, his eyebrows raised, “He hasn’t been let down yet? Then it must not have been in those two arms.

Let’s try chopping the legs!”

Feng Xiu’s face changed greatly, he struggled to dodge, but it was too late.

Two flashes of sword light passed, and his two legs were also ruined.

Lin Jianying remained bound there.

“This is making me very troubled, all limbs cut off and still haven’t rescued the person, then we shall sever the fifth limb!”

As he spoke, another flash of sword light from Lu Wu thrust directly at Feng Xiu’s fifth limb.

Just as Feng Xiu’s ‘bird nest’ was about to be destroyed, a hand stretched out grabbing the sword light.

Simultaneously, a deep voice rang out.

“Kid, leave a line in life, it’s good to meet in the future!”

# Chapter \_\_auto\_\_ 423: 420 Second Envoy\_\_auto\_\_

Chapter 423: 420 Second Envoy

“Kid, leave a line in everything you do so we can meet again on good terms!”

Feng Xiu’s Base.

In this deep voice, a hand reached out, seizing the sword light that Lu Wu slashed towards the Sealing Bird Nest.

The one who made the move was the thirteenth Apostle standing beside Feng Xiu.

Well, to be precise, it was another being who took over the body of the thirteenth Apostle and acted.

This person was the Second Envoy of the Zero Organization.

Currently, one of the only Epic 2 Star existences of the Zero Organization.

And also the one who had previously lent his power to the thirteenth Apostle.

Now, seeing that the being who borrowed his power couldn’t handle it, he increased his effort and took matters into his own hands.

As expected of a powerful being, the situation changed immediately as he made his move.

Not only did he easily break through Lu Wu’s suppression, he grabbed Lu Wu’s sword light with one hand, and even allowed Feng Xiu to break free from Lu Wu’s suppression.

It could be said that as soon as he acted, he demonstrated a spectacular operation.

His intervention caused Lu Wu’s eyebrows to furrow.

After the move, he gave Lu Wu a quick look-over and proposed a solution to the current situation.

“Here’s the deal, kid. Leave the Gate Fragment behind, take the person with you, and let’s call it even for today, what do you say?”

As soon as the Second Envoy spoke, there was no expression on Lu Wu’s side, but Feng Xiu immediately objected.

How could this be? How could they just let Lu Wu go?

“Second Envoy…”

“What? Are you questioning me?”

“I wouldn’t dare!”

With one sentence, the Second Envoy made Feng Xiu tremble all over, silencing him.

“Kid, your little girlfriend was killed by the Elder Council, which has little to do with us, the Zero Organization. I think you should be able to distinguish who your real enemy is, right?

Take him and go. Go confront the Elder Council.

We won’t just avoid meddling, we might even become an asset to you…”

“Are you trying to tell me what to do?”

Before the Second Envoy could finish, Lu Wu raised his head and looked at him with a cold gaze.

The tone was icy, the attitude strong; this was not the demeanour of a weakling towards a stronger foe.

This posture immediately angered the Second Envoy.

“What’s with the youth these days? Getting so arrogant, thinking just a bit of adventure makes them invincible?

It seems I need to give you a harsh lesson from society to teach you the value of modesty and humility!”

As the Second Envoy spoke, the Epic Power began to flow through him.

The Second Envoy held himself high, but he indeed had the capability to do so.

As his Epic Power surged, everything Lu Wu had put Feng Xiu through began to replay on him, as an immense pressure burst forth, threatening to crush Lu Wu completely.

However, just as his Epic Power flared, a hint of disdain appeared on Lu Wu’s lips.

“If it were your true self, I might have feared you a bit, but a mere avatar? You better roll back to where you came from!”

Saying this, Lu Wu slapped him with a dismissive gesture.

“Scram!”

At the same time, a power inside the thirteenth Apostle’s body was triggered, and the Second Envoy’s face changed as he felt his power being pulled back.

“How can this be?”

“Why can’t it be? If I can send Fei Yinghao’s avatar back, I can certainly send yours back too!”

“You’ve made a foolish decision, and you will pay for it…”

Before he could finish the word ‘price,’ the Second Envoy’s avatar was sent back to his original body, and the thirteenth Apostle collapsed into a coma due to the loss of the Second Envoy’s avatar.

Of course, compared to Feng Xiu, the thirteenth Apostle who directly fell into a coma was obviously the fortunate one.

Feng Xiu’s situation was much more tragic.

Just as the Second Envoy had unleashed his power, he’d thought he could make a comeback, and his attitude became arrogant.

Who would have thought that the Second Envoy’s avatar would be sent packing by Lu Wu in a blink of an eye?

These instantaneous bursts of power were like digging a pit for him, weren’t they?

“Lu Wu, don’t kill me; our enmity isn’t that big when you think about it!”

“I haven’t caused you any substantial harm; there’s really no need for you to kill me. A dead Fourth Apostle is worthless to you, but it’s different if I’m alive.”

“Really, I can be your subordinate, I can provide all sorts of information and help you with things.

I have great value, please don’t kill me!”

It seemed as if the only utterly fair thing in this world is death itself.

No matter whether you’re poor or rich, handsome or ordinary, death clings to you unfailingly.

And in the face of death, even a being as strong as Feng Xiu could feel fear and appear utterly pathetic in his pleas.

But he was a bit more rational than most; he kept indicating to Lu Wu how important and useful he was, telling Lu Wu that he was a complete loser in the battle between them.

He had not only failed to take advantage but had been dominated throughout.

As the victor, couldn’t Lu Wu find another way to humiliate him, to turn a once powerful enemy into an obedient dog? Wouldn’t that be better than killing him outright?

To this, Lu Wu’s answer was, it wouldn’t.

“Do you remember the Changping Secret Realm?

It’s the secret realm I escaped to after our first encounter.”

Suddenly bringing up this topic, Feng Xiu immediately had a bad feeling.

Sure enough, Lu Wu had no intention of giving him a chance to speak.

“In that secret realm, I made my first and only Summoned Beast friend.

Thanks to you, that friend is no longer with me.

And I once swore by his grave that I would bring your head to his memorial.

A man should keep his word!”

“No…”

Feng Xiu desperately wanted to say something, but Lu Wu did not give him the chance, beheading him with a reverse sword strike.

The Longsword sliced through his neck, and at that moment, Feng Xiu, the Fourth Envoy of the Zero Organization, met his end.

Just before dying, he couldn’t help but wonder if things would be different had he not foolishly decided to kill Old Bone—would he not have to die now?

There was no answer to that question, but the more he dwelled on it, the more regret grew like wild grass, engulfing his entire being.

With one sword strike, Lu Wu had avenged his enemy.

At this moment, Lu Wu’s feelings were complex: he wasn’t very joyful,

Since Dudu died in front of Lu Wu, happiness had been difficult to come by.

It felt as though his heart was weighed down by a stone.

But Feng Xiu’s death gave him a slight sense of relief.

He took Feng Xiu’s head and planned to visit Old Bone’s resting place later to pay tribute. Then, Lu Wu cut free Lin Jianying with another stroke of his sword.

At the same time, he retrieved Lin Jianying’s Fragment to return to him.

Looking at Lin Jianying, whose limbs were severed, and especially wretched in appearance, Lu Wu shook his head.

“It’s been years, and yet you haven’t made any progress.

Can’t you see such an obvious trap?”

Saying this, he placed his hand on Lin Jianying’s head, where the silly force of the Epic Power flowed, and Lin Jianying’s severed limbs regenerated at a speed visible to the naked eye.

Lin Jianying maintained his signature silly smile and didn’t respond.

Instead, it was his goblin, which came closer, watching its master’s limbs regrow and looking at Lu Wu with a different gaze.

It seemed to suddenly find this weirdo useful!

Lu Wu slapped the goblin on the head with the back of his hand, resulting in a bump.

After enabling Lin Jianying’s limbs to grow back, Lu Wu turned to face the thirteenth Apostle, gently hooked his finger, and the lifeless thirteenth Apostle stood up as Lu Wu flicked a finger.

A sword light pierced through the body of the thirteenth Apostle.

Awakening the thirteenth Apostle from his coma.

“I ask one question, you answer one!”

The thirteenth Apostle was still dazed, and Lu Wu immediately began to interrogate.

“Has Tie Xiong been here…”

Mmm, what Lu Wu most wanted to investigate now was Tie Xiong. With Zhang Yunyi dead, the trail on that end had gone cold, leaving only Tie Xiong.

Whether it was to avenge Dudu or to unearth the truth, or even to get the Fragment to avenge Dudu, Lu Wu needed to find Tie Xiong.

However, the thirteenth Apostle knew next to nothing about Tie Xiong.

According to the intelligence Lu Wu mastered, that guy seemed to have no contact with Feng Xiu either.

“Lu Wu, there’s probably no news about Tie Xiong here. The last time he met with us, it was just on a whim. He doesn’t really have much of a connection with us or Feng Xiu.

He doesn’t have a reason to come here or even contact Feng Xiu.”

Lin Jianying’s words further confirmed that this base likely had nothing Lu Wu wanted.

Lu Wu was slightly disappointed, while Lin Jianying became somewhat anxious.

“Also, we might need to leave.

You just expelled the Second Envoy; he might be on his way here.

The Second Envoy has Epic 2 Star Power, able to stand against the twelve elders. We’re certainly no match for him, better to retreat now!”

“Why the rush? I just asked, the Second Apostle’s base is in Zone 5, a distance from here, and he won’t get here soon, besides, he won’t come!”

Lin Jianying was stunned, “Why not?”

Lu Wu didn’t answer this question. What a hassle!

He immediately got busy!

What he was busy with now was gathering all the Evil Summoners from Feng Xiu’s base, then administering drugs to them in batches.

The drugs were from the Dark Organization.

Once drugged, these people’s lives and deaths were under Lu Wu’s control, and they became his people.

Then, Lu Wu had these people turn the whole base inside out.

All the resources of the base were moved away, and all relevant information was sent over to the 72 side.

All this took almost one day.

During this time, Lin Jianying was trembling with fear, dreading the Second Envoy’s arrival.

Fortunately, as if Lu Wu was correct, the Second Envoy did not come by the time Lu Wu had finished his work.

“Alright, that should be enough, time for us to go!”

Seeing Lu Wu finish and the Second Envoy not appearing, Lin Jianying exhaled a long sigh of relief.

“Where to now?”

Lu Wu raised an eyebrow and casually mentioned a place…

……

Elsewhere, in a Secret Realm of Zone 5.

The Second Envoy, sitting on his own throne, had a somewhat unpleasant expression. After all, not long ago, he’d just been sent packing.

Dismissed as easily as swatting a fly.

For how long had he not been treated this way?

It seemed since twenty or thirty years ago, with the disappearance of their leader, he became an existence within the Zero Organization, second only to one but above tens of thousands.

From that time on, nobody inside or outside the organization dared to treat him with that attitude.

Being treated this way, even if just once in a while, disturbed his mood.

However, although he had issued harsh words in the end, he didn’t really intend to seek out Lu Wu.

He didn’t dare!

Not because of Lu Wu.

In his eyes, Lu Wu was nothing more than a pathetic worm.

After the incident with Pang Duddu, the appearance of Yukawa Ryuzo, the emergence of their leader, the Zeroer, and the death of Zhang Yunyi.

All these things made the Second Envoy understand.

Lu Wu was just a pawn in the Zeroer’s hands; his so-called genius, his astounding growth, everything was propelled by the Zeroer.

Even Lu Wu’s life was designed by the Zeroer.

Thus, the Second Envoy was more afraid of the Zeroer than Lu Wu.

He had promised Feng Xiu to confront Lu Wu, even descending in a clone, but his real intention was not Lu Wu.

He just wanted to collect Lin Jianying’s Gate Fragment on the side and further verify whether Lu Wu was the Zeroer’s pawn or not.

The result was, he sensed the residual aura of the Zeroer on Lu Wu.

Meaning, Lu Wu truly was the Zeroer’s pawn.

This made the Second Envoy hesitant.

Even with hundreds of guts, he wouldn’t dare seek out Lu Wu.

Going after Lu Wu, he couldn’t kill him, and merely fighting him wouldn’t appease his frustration but would further embitter Lu Wu against him.

Although Lu Wu was a pawn, he was still functioning. Who knew to what extent the Zeroer planned to develop him?

What if Lu Wu became stronger and held grudges, searching him out for revenge? What then?

So, that grudge, the Second Envoy had to endure, whether he could or not.

“Forget it, just endure a bit. If it’s unbearable, change the perspective, and looking at it is over.

Has anyone monitored by the leader ever had a good ending?

The ordeal has barely begun, and Pang Duddu is already dead. What follows will certainly be more tragic than now.”

Well, thinking like this made the Second Envoy feel a lot better.

Right, such an existence as his, why bother with Lu Wu, a tragedy-bound wretch?

Why not let him go just this once?

Think of it as giving some warmth to a wretch, so he won’t die before the more bone-chilling ice cold arrives.

This mentality, how to say it, the spirit of Ah Q is immortal.

However, just as this Envoy had persuaded himself and prepared to watch Lu Wu’s tragic fate, his expression suddenly changed, and he sharply raised his head.

The moment he looked up, a sword light imbued with extreme coldness descended.

The Second Envoy couldn’t smile anymore.

He had spared Lu Wu, but Lu Wu had no intention of sparing him!

# Chapter 423: 420 Second Envoy

Chapter 423: 420 Second Envoy

“Kid, leave a line in everything you do so we can meet again on good terms!”

Feng Xiu’s Base.

In this deep voice, a hand reached out, seizing the sword light that Lu Wu slashed towards the Sealing Bird Nest.

The one who made the move was the thirteenth Apostle standing beside Feng Xiu.

Well, to be precise, it was another being who took over the body of the thirteenth Apostle and acted.

This person was the Second Envoy of the Zero Organization.

Currently, one of the only Epic 2 Star existences of the Zero Organization.

And also the one who had previously lent his power to the thirteenth Apostle.

Now, seeing that the being who borrowed his power couldn’t handle it, he increased his effort and took matters into his own hands.

As expected of a powerful being, the situation changed immediately as he made his move.

Not only did he easily break through Lu Wu’s suppression, he grabbed Lu Wu’s sword light with one hand, and even allowed Feng Xiu to break free from Lu Wu’s suppression.

It could be said that as soon as he acted, he demonstrated a spectacular operation.

His intervention caused Lu Wu’s eyebrows to furrow.

After the move, he gave Lu Wu a quick look-over and proposed a solution to the current situation.

“Here’s the deal, kid. Leave the Gate Fragment behind, take the person with you, and let’s call it even for today, what do you say?”

As soon as the Second Envoy spoke, there was no expression on Lu Wu’s side, but Feng Xiu immediately objected.

How could this be? How could they just let Lu Wu go?

“Second Envoy…”

“What? Are you questioning me?”

“I wouldn’t dare!”

With one sentence, the Second Envoy made Feng Xiu tremble all over, silencing him.

“Kid, your little girlfriend was killed by the Elder Council, which has little to do with us, the Zero Organization. I think you should be able to distinguish who your real enemy is, right?

Take him and go. Go confront the Elder Council.

We won’t just avoid meddling, we might even become an asset to you…”

“Are you trying to tell me what to do?”

Before the Second Envoy could finish, Lu Wu raised his head and looked at him with a cold gaze.

The tone was icy, the attitude strong; this was not the demeanour of a weakling towards a stronger foe.

This posture immediately angered the Second Envoy.

“What’s with the youth these days? Getting so arrogant, thinking just a bit of adventure makes them invincible?

It seems I need to give you a harsh lesson from society to teach you the value of modesty and humility!”

As the Second Envoy spoke, the Epic Power began to flow through him.

The Second Envoy held himself high, but he indeed had the capability to do so.

As his Epic Power surged, everything Lu Wu had put Feng Xiu through began to replay on him, as an immense pressure burst forth, threatening to crush Lu Wu completely.

However, just as his Epic Power flared, a hint of disdain appeared on Lu Wu’s lips.

“If it were your true self, I might have feared you a bit, but a mere avatar? You better roll back to where you came from!”

Saying this, Lu Wu slapped him with a dismissive gesture.

“Scram!”

At the same time, a power inside the thirteenth Apostle’s body was triggered, and the Second Envoy’s face changed as he felt his power being pulled back.

“How can this be?”

“Why can’t it be? If I can send Fei Yinghao’s avatar back, I can certainly send yours back too!”

“You’ve made a foolish decision, and you will pay for it…”

Before he could finish the word ‘price,’ the Second Envoy’s avatar was sent back to his original body, and the thirteenth Apostle collapsed into a coma due to the loss of the Second Envoy’s avatar.

Of course, compared to Feng Xiu, the thirteenth Apostle who directly fell into a coma was obviously the fortunate one.

Feng Xiu’s situation was much more tragic.

Just as the Second Envoy had unleashed his power, he’d thought he could make a comeback, and his attitude became arrogant.

Who would have thought that the Second Envoy’s avatar would be sent packing by Lu Wu in a blink of an eye?

These instantaneous bursts of power were like digging a pit for him, weren’t they?

“Lu Wu, don’t kill me; our enmity isn’t that big when you think about it!”

“I haven’t caused you any substantial harm; there’s really no need for you to kill me. A dead Fourth Apostle is worthless to you, but it’s different if I’m alive.”

“Really, I can be your subordinate, I can provide all sorts of information and help you with things.

I have great value, please don’t kill me!”

It seemed as if the only utterly fair thing in this world is death itself.

No matter whether you’re poor or rich, handsome or ordinary, death clings to you unfailingly.

And in the face of death, even a being as strong as Feng Xiu could feel fear and appear utterly pathetic in his pleas.

But he was a bit more rational than most; he kept indicating to Lu Wu how important and useful he was, telling Lu Wu that he was a complete loser in the battle between them.

He had not only failed to take advantage but had been dominated throughout.

As the victor, couldn’t Lu Wu find another way to humiliate him, to turn a once powerful enemy into an obedient dog? Wouldn’t that be better than killing him outright?

To this, Lu Wu’s answer was, it wouldn’t.

“Do you remember the Changping Secret Realm?

It’s the secret realm I escaped to after our first encounter.”

Suddenly bringing up this topic, Feng Xiu immediately had a bad feeling.

Sure enough, Lu Wu had no intention of giving him a chance to speak.

“In that secret realm, I made my first and only Summoned Beast friend.

Thanks to you, that friend is no longer with me.

And I once swore by his grave that I would bring your head to his memorial.

A man should keep his word!”

“No…”

Feng Xiu desperately wanted to say something, but Lu Wu did not give him the chance, beheading him with a reverse sword strike.

The Longsword sliced through his neck, and at that moment, Feng Xiu, the Fourth Envoy of the Zero Organization, met his end.

Just before dying, he couldn’t help but wonder if things would be different had he not foolishly decided to kill Old Bone—would he not have to die now?

There was no answer to that question, but the more he dwelled on it, the more regret grew like wild grass, engulfing his entire being.

With one sword strike, Lu Wu had avenged his enemy.

At this moment, Lu Wu’s feelings were complex: he wasn’t very joyful,

Since Dudu died in front of Lu Wu, happiness had been difficult to come by.

It felt as though his heart was weighed down by a stone.

But Feng Xiu’s death gave him a slight sense of relief.

He took Feng Xiu’s head and planned to visit Old Bone’s resting place later to pay tribute. Then, Lu Wu cut free Lin Jianying with another stroke of his sword.

At the same time, he retrieved Lin Jianying’s Fragment to return to him.

Looking at Lin Jianying, whose limbs were severed, and especially wretched in appearance, Lu Wu shook his head.

“It’s been years, and yet you haven’t made any progress.

Can’t you see such an obvious trap?”

Saying this, he placed his hand on Lin Jianying’s head, where the silly force of the Epic Power flowed, and Lin Jianying’s severed limbs regenerated at a speed visible to the naked eye.

Lin Jianying maintained his signature silly smile and didn’t respond.

Instead, it was his goblin, which came closer, watching its master’s limbs regrow and looking at Lu Wu with a different gaze.

It seemed to suddenly find this weirdo useful!

Lu Wu slapped the goblin on the head with the back of his hand, resulting in a bump.

After enabling Lin Jianying’s limbs to grow back, Lu Wu turned to face the thirteenth Apostle, gently hooked his finger, and the lifeless thirteenth Apostle stood up as Lu Wu flicked a finger.

A sword light pierced through the body of the thirteenth Apostle.

Awakening the thirteenth Apostle from his coma.

“I ask one question, you answer one!”

The thirteenth Apostle was still dazed, and Lu Wu immediately began to interrogate.

“Has Tie Xiong been here…”

Mmm, what Lu Wu most wanted to investigate now was Tie Xiong. With Zhang Yunyi dead, the trail on that end had gone cold, leaving only Tie Xiong.

Whether it was to avenge Dudu or to unearth the truth, or even to get the Fragment to avenge Dudu, Lu Wu needed to find Tie Xiong.

However, the thirteenth Apostle knew next to nothing about Tie Xiong.

According to the intelligence Lu Wu mastered, that guy seemed to have no contact with Feng Xiu either.

“Lu Wu, there’s probably no news about Tie Xiong here. The last time he met with us, it was just on a whim. He doesn’t really have much of a connection with us or Feng Xiu.

He doesn’t have a reason to come here or even contact Feng Xiu.”

Lin Jianying’s words further confirmed that this base likely had nothing Lu Wu wanted.

Lu Wu was slightly disappointed, while Lin Jianying became somewhat anxious.

“Also, we might need to leave.

You just expelled the Second Envoy; he might be on his way here.

The Second Envoy has Epic 2 Star Power, able to stand against the twelve elders. We’re certainly no match for him, better to retreat now!”

“Why the rush? I just asked, the Second Apostle’s base is in Zone 5, a distance from here, and he won’t get here soon, besides, he won’t come!”

Lin Jianying was stunned, “Why not?”

Lu Wu didn’t answer this question. What a hassle!

He immediately got busy!

What he was busy with now was gathering all the Evil Summoners from Feng Xiu’s base, then administering drugs to them in batches.

The drugs were from the Dark Organization.

Once drugged, these people’s lives and deaths were under Lu Wu’s control, and they became his people.

Then, Lu Wu had these people turn the whole base inside out.

All the resources of the base were moved away, and all relevant information was sent over to the 72 side.

All this took almost one day.

During this time, Lin Jianying was trembling with fear, dreading the Second Envoy’s arrival.

Fortunately, as if Lu Wu was correct, the Second Envoy did not come by the time Lu Wu had finished his work.

“Alright, that should be enough, time for us to go!”

Seeing Lu Wu finish and the Second Envoy not appearing, Lin Jianying exhaled a long sigh of relief.

“Where to now?”

Lu Wu raised an eyebrow and casually mentioned a place…

……

Elsewhere, in a Secret Realm of Zone 5.

The Second Envoy, sitting on his own throne, had a somewhat unpleasant expression. After all, not long ago, he’d just been sent packing.

Dismissed as easily as swatting a fly.

For how long had he not been treated this way?

It seemed since twenty or thirty years ago, with the disappearance of their leader, he became an existence within the Zero Organization, second only to one but above tens of thousands.

From that time on, nobody inside or outside the organization dared to treat him with that attitude.

Being treated this way, even if just once in a while, disturbed his mood.

However, although he had issued harsh words in the end, he didn’t really intend to seek out Lu Wu.

He didn’t dare!

Not because of Lu Wu.

In his eyes, Lu Wu was nothing more than a pathetic worm.

After the incident with Pang Duddu, the appearance of Yukawa Ryuzo, the emergence of their leader, the Zeroer, and the death of Zhang Yunyi.

All these things made the Second Envoy understand.

Lu Wu was just a pawn in the Zeroer’s hands; his so-called genius, his astounding growth, everything was propelled by the Zeroer.

Even Lu Wu’s life was designed by the Zeroer.

Thus, the Second Envoy was more afraid of the Zeroer than Lu Wu.

He had promised Feng Xiu to confront Lu Wu, even descending in a clone, but his real intention was not Lu Wu.

He just wanted to collect Lin Jianying’s Gate Fragment on the side and further verify whether Lu Wu was the Zeroer’s pawn or not.

The result was, he sensed the residual aura of the Zeroer on Lu Wu.

Meaning, Lu Wu truly was the Zeroer’s pawn.

This made the Second Envoy hesitant.

Even with hundreds of guts, he wouldn’t dare seek out Lu Wu.

Going after Lu Wu, he couldn’t kill him, and merely fighting him wouldn’t appease his frustration but would further embitter Lu Wu against him.

Although Lu Wu was a pawn, he was still functioning. Who knew to what extent the Zeroer planned to develop him?

What if Lu Wu became stronger and held grudges, searching him out for revenge? What then?

So, that grudge, the Second Envoy had to endure, whether he could or not.

“Forget it, just endure a bit. If it’s unbearable, change the perspective, and looking at it is over.

Has anyone monitored by the leader ever had a good ending?

The ordeal has barely begun, and Pang Duddu is already dead. What follows will certainly be more tragic than now.”

Well, thinking like this made the Second Envoy feel a lot better.

Right, such an existence as his, why bother with Lu Wu, a tragedy-bound wretch?

Why not let him go just this once?

Think of it as giving some warmth to a wretch, so he won’t die before the more bone-chilling ice cold arrives.

This mentality, how to say it, the spirit of Ah Q is immortal.

However, just as this Envoy had persuaded himself and prepared to watch Lu Wu’s tragic fate, his expression suddenly changed, and he sharply raised his head.

The moment he looked up, a sword light imbued with extreme coldness descended.

The Second Envoy couldn’t smile anymore.

He had spared Lu Wu, but Lu Wu had no intention of sparing him!

# Chapter 424: 421 Fierce Battle

Chapter 424: 421 Fierce Battle

5th District, the base of the Second Envoy.

Since this base was established, it had never suffered any attacks.

From the standpoint of an evil organization, this base should have been incomplete.

But today, someone filled in that incompleteness.

Completing the lifetime of this base.

As an extreme cold sword light descended from the sky, a terrifying chill burst forth.

The base, spanning tens of thousands of acres and modified from a secret realm, began to freeze inch by inch.

The spread of this freezing was incredibly fast.

If no one intervened, the entire base could be completely frozen in a matter of minutes.

But with Lu Wu already at their doorstep, how could there possibly be no one to intervene?

“Dispel!”

As the Second Envoy’s frustrated voice rang out, the spread of ice halting across the base momentarily, the ice began to melt away inch by inch.

In a short time, there wasn’t even a speck of ice left at the Second Envoy’s base.

At the same moment, the Second Envoy appeared in the sky above his own base, with Lu Wu also there; the two finally came face to face.

Of course, not all encounters make one’s heart race.

Not all meetings are filled with poetry, at least not the encounter between Lu Wu and the Second Envoy.

The first thing they did upon meeting was size each other up.

This examination only made their impressions of each other worsen.

In Lu Wu’s eyes, the Second Envoy, dressed in a suit, wearing a hat, and holding a cane, looked all too similar to Feng Xiu—a clear sign of not being trustworthy.

On the Second Envoy’s side, just looking at Lu Wu’s appearance made him itch with irritation.

Not to mention how Lu Wu had dared to invade his territory.

If it weren’t inconvenient, he would kill Lu Wu right there and then.

“You’ve got some nerve. I haven’t even come for you yet, and you’re delivering yourself to my doorstep. Are you that eager to die?”

Although he didn’t dare to kill Lu Wu for fear of interfering with his own leader’s plans, he still had the guts to intimidate Lu Wu.

As he spoke, the power belonging to an Epic 2 Star burst forth from the Second Envoy.

The Epic Power circulated, and Lu Wu, while feeling the immense pressure, also saw the other’s attribute.

…

Name: Second Envoy

Power: 2 Stars (Epic)

Summoned Beast: Fear Demon (Epic 2 Stars), Tongue Pulling Warden (Epic 1 Star)

Epic Power: Power of Fear (Evil)

Description: Be cautious, this is no simple character.

…

Almost simultaneously with Lu Wu seeing the Second Envoy’s attributes, two figures emerged from within him.

One was dressed in the uniform of a prison director, holding chains in one hand and a pair of pliers in the other, exuding the aura of hell.

The other was shrouded in a mass of black fog, its true form unseen, but the fog itself carried an endless terror.

The Second Envoy had directly summoned his two beasts.

As they appeared, Lu Wu also saw their attributes.

…

Name: Fear Demon

Power: 2 Stars (Epic)

Quality: Mid-Epic

Epic Power: Power of Fear

Weakness: Light (Weak)

Description: Facing fear doesn’t always mean confronting it directly!

…

Name: Tongue Pulling Warden

Power: 1 Star (Epic)

Quality: Lower-grade Epic

Epic Power: Tongue-pulling Power

Weakness: Thunder (Weak)

Description: Don’t lie in its presence.

…

As Lu Wu looked at the attributes of the two summoned beasts, they had already split apart, forming a triangular formation with the Second Envoy, encircling Lu Wu.

With the beasts in position, the expression on the Second Envoy’s face grew even more icy and savage.

“You had your chance to walk the path to heaven, but you did not take it. Hell has no gates, yet you bring yourself here!

Since you’ve come, you might as well stay!”

As he spoke, the Second Envoy boldly made his move.

Of course, he did not intend, nor did he dare, to kill Lu Wu—who was the pawn of the Zeroer—but he dared to teach Lu Wu a lesson.

Since he had been offended, a price had to be paid!

So, his first move was an Ultimate Level Skill called “Despair Abyss.”

This was a psychological attack skill, which, combined with his Epic Power “Fear,” could drag people into an abyss of despair, causing them to die in hopelessness.

The Second Envoy would control the skill to ensure that Lu Wu would not perish in hopelessness, but experiencing despair was necessary.

It must be said, the Second Envoy chose his first skill very well.

This type of psychological skill was almost irresistible.

Unless Lu Wu had a specific skill to counter it or could escape before the skill took effect, he would definitely be affected.

But Lu Wu did not have a specific skill to counter this type, nor did he escape in time before the skill went off. Thus, when the Second Envoy’s skill erupted, Lu Wu was instantly pulled into the “Despair Abyss.”

On Lu Wu’s side, he had been staring straight at the Second Envoy when everything abruptly changed.

Suddenly, he found himself back at Elder Mountain, back at the moment Dudu was killed.

Dudu’s death played out in front of him again.

For Lu Wu, who entirely did not anticipate this scenario, it was an unimaginably painful blow. His heart clenched at that moment.

Plagued by a sensation of utter helplessness and irredeemable despair, he doubled over, clutching his chest.

It took a long time before he could catch his breath, and when he finally looked up, the same scene played out again.

Once, twice, three times…

Dudu died before Lu Wu’s eyes over and over, the deepest despair completely engulfing him.

It made even breathing difficult.

It has to be said, defeating a person is indeed simple, especially defeating someone with a weakness.

A light touch upon a weakness can completely strip a person of their ability to resist.

The same was true for Lu Wu at that moment; he had wholly lost the capacity to fight back, and with a single strike, the Second Envoy could take him away.

He didn’t want to, or perhaps it would be more accurate to say that he didn’t dare.

“You swagger over here all high and mighty. I thought you had some real skills, but in the end, is this all you’ve got? You should be grateful, grateful that you’re his chess piece, otherwise, you’d already be dead.”

“But, though you’re spared death, you won’t escape punishment so easily. Let’s have you taste a deeper level of despair!”

In truth, if the Second Envoy had stopped there, had withdrawn his hand at that point, everything would have been fine, perfect even.

He had sent Lu Wu, who had barged in, packing.

He had vented his frustration, and the blow to Lu Wu’s spirit would take months, if not longer, to recover from.

Such an outcome would have been good, but the Second Envoy was not satisfied with just that. He wanted Lu Wu to suffer even more.

Thus, the scene before Lu Wu changed.

This time, the scene of Dudu dying in front of him did not replay; instead, it quickly moved to the next.

This scene showed Lu Wu finally collecting the “Gate Fragment”.

In this scene, Lu Wu, after arduous efforts, had finally completed the collection of the “Gate Fragment” and was about to resurrect Dudu.

At that moment, Lu Wu’s heart was filled with anticipation.

However, just as the “Gate Fragment” was about to take effect, and Dudu was about to be revived, a hand reached out and stole the purified fragment from Lu Wu.

This was a blow that plunged Lu Wu into the abyss of hell.

The experience of being thrust into hell right before the moment of hope was simply more torturous than death.

In reality, Lu Wu dropped to his knees on the spot, his entire being filled with the essence of utmost despair.

This pleased the Second Envoy immensely.

“Excellent. After this, the kid will tremble at the sight of me for the rest of his life! This serves as the price for his impudence and recklessness! Get out of my sight!”

With that, the Second Envoy waved his hand, ready to fling Lu Wu out.

However, as his hand swiped through the air, he suddenly felt something was amiss.

The Lu Wu who had just been kneeling on the ground slowly stood up, emitting an aura of madness that seemed intent on annihilating everything.

The palm wind that the Second Envoy had sent out dissipated as it approached Lu Wu, scattered by the sword wind outside of his body.

“So, you still wish to resist?”

The Second Envoy couldn’t help but laugh at this absurd turn of events.

At that moment, Lu Wu’s deep voice resounded, “I want you dead, I want all those old bastards on Elder Mountain dead, I want every Zeroer dead, I want everyone associated with this to die with no grave to call their own!”

The Second Envoy was startled by these words and then shook his head, “Such a state is indeed not unprecedented. The Despair Abyss can indeed drive its victims into nerve-wracking mental collapse. It seems that I have overstimulated you to this pathetic state. Well, it is only fitting that I reveal the truth to you. Tongue Pull!”

At the Second Envoy’s indifferent command, one of his two Summoned Beasts, the Tongue Pulling Warden, took action immediately.

The chains in its hand lashed out at Lu Wu.

A single flick of the chain seemed to create a net that ensnared Lu Wu completely.

The Tongue Pulling Warden pulled the chains tight, binding Lu Wu into a bundle.

At the same time, it stretched out the pincers of its right hand towards Lu Wu’s face, or more accurately, towards Lu Wu’s tongue.

The Tongue Pulling Warden’s ability was indeed to pull out tongues, a remarkably overpowered skill that, upon detecting a lie, allowed it to ignore the opponent’s armor skills to forcibly pull out the tongue.

And it wasn’t just the tongue that was pulled out; talent skills and even Epic Power could also be sealed for a period of time.

The Tongue Pulling Warden extended his pincers, and the Second Envoy was certain that Lu Wu’s tongue was as good as gone.

After all, he had just uttered a bold declaration.

Based on that statement which called for the Zeroer’s death, pulling out Lu Wu’s tongue should have been an effortless task.

However, the situation defied the Second Envoy’s expectations. The Warden’s pincers stopped in front of Lu Wu because the statement he had just made was not a bluff.

He truly did intend to kill the Zeroer and everyone related to them.

Therefore, the Tongue Pulling Warden’s power couldn’t be activated.

This left the Second Envoy somewhat disappointed, but it didn’t matter; if the ability couldn’t be activated, they could simply pull it out by brute force—no big deal.

With Lu Wu now bound, what was so difficult about prying open his mouth and pulling it out directly?

At the Second Envoy’s command, the Tongue Pulling Warden’s chains tightened, ready to force Lu Wu to open his mouth to extract his tongue.

But as the chains clenched, a faint clink sounded, and the chains that bound Lu Wu were sliced through.

“How can this be?”

Before the Second Envoy could react, a longsword burst forth from Lu Wu’s heart and shot directly at the Tongue Pulling Warden on the opposite side.

“Block it!”

The Second Envoy’s face changed, and he gave the order. The Fear Demon by his side stirred, but just as it moved, a giant ice-blue figure appeared in front of it and exhaled, freezing the entire space.

Although the freeze didn’t damage the Fear Demon much, it was enough to prevent it from aiding the Tongue Pulling Warden.

The Second Envoy was quick to react. Seeing the Fear Demon obstructed, he took action immediately, about to summon something from the Despair Abyss.

A roar emerged as a golden Divine Dragon appeared, its tail swipe sending the Second Apostle flying.

While both the Second Envoy and the Fear Demon were prevented from intervening, the Tongue Pulling Warden attempted to save himself.

He raised his pincers, emitting a bright light that just managed to block a direct strike from the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword.

However, as it blocked the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword, a silver longsword pierced its chest, followed by an unimaginable explosion of thunder.

The Tongue Pulling Warden was instantly rigidified by the electric shock, and at that moment, Lu Wu grasped the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword and swung, decapitating the Warden.

In a blink of an eye, one of the Second Envoy’s Summoned Beasts had perished.

This was not something the Second Envoy had foreseen.

“Lu Wu, you’re courting death!”

Beside himself with anger, the Second Envoy watched Lu Wu, who, after slaying the Tongue Pulling Warden with a single stroke, regained his cool and calm demeanor.

He regarded the Second Envoy indifferently.

“Feng Xiu knows I’ve fought with Fei Yinghao’s avatar; he knows I was beaten up by Fei Yinghao’s avatar and only escaped by dispelling it. You should be aware of that too, right?”

The Second Envoy was taken aback, not understanding why Lu Wu suddenly mentioned this.

But he had a vague sense of foreboding.

In fact, the Second Envoy now realized he had seriously underestimated Lu Wu’s power.

Previously, he had no idea that Lu Wu possessed four Summoned Beasts, all of Epic status.

Especially that dragon and that Little Skeleton, their very presence was chilling to the bone.

What terrified the Second Envoy the most was that if Lu Wu indeed had four Epic 1 Star Summoned Beasts at his disposal, his power could not be as simple as it seemed.

Moreover, he had heard that Yukawa Ryuzo had met him too.

If Yukawa Ryuzo had seen Lu Wu and not killed him, he must have imparted some Inheritance to Lu Wu.

Under such circumstances, with so much power converging, even if Lu Wu was a fool, he should have possessed power close to Epic 2 Star.

Realizing this, panic set in for the Second Envoy.

“Fear, let’s go!”

Saying so, he prepared to retreat, but Lu Wu paid him no mind, calmly watching the Second Envoy’s retreating figure, slowly raising the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword in his hand…

# Chapter 425: 422 Slay

Chapter 425: 422 Slay

In District 5, as Lu Wu raised the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword in his hand.

Lu Wu was getting serious.

He hadn’t been truly serious against Fei Yinghao or the Second Envoy’s avatar because Lu Wu’s battle system had changed.

His core of battle had become the final blow Yukawa Ryuzo had aimed at the Zeroer.

All of Lu Wu’s sword styles were nourished by that one intense strike.

You could say that his nine layers of combat power were all within it.

Without using that sword technique, Lu Wu’s combat power was only about one layer.

And now, Lu Wu was unleashing that technique.

An intense sense of crisis completely enveloped the Second Envoy, who was certainly too shrewd to want to take on Lu Wu’s sword head-on.

Before Lu Wu’s sword was even raised, he had already begun to plan his escape.

But whether he could leave was up to Lu Wu.

“Ao!”

Just as the Second Envoy took a step back, a roar confronted him.

Accompanying the roar was a terrifying blast of dark Dragon Breath, as the huge form of a Bone Dragon emerged.

Who else could it be but Little Skeleton’s Indeks?

As an entity unified with Little Skeleton, after Little Skeleton broke through to the Epic level, its power naturally reached the Epic level as well.

While Little Skeleton and the others took action, Indeks laid in wait. Now, seeing the Second Envoy trying to flee, it emerged and opened its mouth to unleash a breath.

“What? There’s another one!”

The Second Envoy’s face changed color.

His retreating steps halted as he easily blocked the black Dragon Breath with a flick of his hand.

After all, as an Epic 2 Star being, it was easy for him to ward off an attack from an Epic 1 Star.

But this defense slowed him down.

At that moment, Han and Little Golden Dragon opened their mouths to spray.

An extremely cold ray and a golden roar struck from left and right respectively, hitting the Second Envoy on his hind legs again.

Simultaneously, Little Skeleton raised the black scythe in its hand.

The King’s Will burst forth, the presence of an Undead Army exploded, and a powerful Domain formed, firmly imprisoning the Second Envoy.

The Second Envoy’s complexion changed dramatically.

At this moment, he was fully aware that he could not escape.

Even if he could break free from Little Skeleton’s Domain, he couldn’t evade Lu Wu’s sword.

The injuries he would receive then might be even deeper.

So, at this moment, he made his choice, stopped in his tracks, and retracted the Fear Demon into his body, looking indifferently and even disdainfully at the still-charging Lu Wu in front of him.

“I had intended to leave, but it seems you can’t bear to let me go, using such grand means to keep me here. In that case, it looks like I’ll have to engage with you after all.”

The charging Lu Wu did not respond.

The disdain on the Second Envoy’s face grew thicker, his body beginning to emit an aura of terror.

Dark terrifying Fog rose, entwining around him, making him look mysterious and terrifying.

“Do you know why I wanted to retreat just now?

It wasn’t because I was afraid of you, but because I didn’t want to accidentally kill you.

After all, it takes a lot of effort not to crush an ant.

However, since you’re so eager for death, I guess I have no choice but to oblige!”

As he spoke, the black Fog in front of the Second Envoy opened up, spreading an air of terror and despair.

Within the Fog, something seemed to be forming vaguely.

The Second Envoy, with a slight smile on his lips, directed a brief gesture at Lu Wu.

“Come on, let me show you what true power disparity is…”

“Slash!”

Before the Second Envoy could finish speaking, Lu Wu had completed his charge-up, and the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword cut through the air in a deceptively ordinary arc.

There was no radiant sword light, no terrifying Sword Intent, as plain as his previous Slaughter of Living Beings, as if he were cutting loneliness itself.

Yet as this sword came down, the Second Envoy found himself unable to articulate any more clever remarks.

His face turned pale as ash.

“Fear Demon!”

He began to unleash the Beast Soul of the Summoned Beast within him, desperately drawing its Energy, the powerful feedback causing his body to bleed profusely at that moment.

It was an extremely ragged sight for one so revered within the Zero Organization, second only to one.

But he no longer cared.

He didn’t have the luxury to care, because he knew that if he couldn’t withstand this sword, he would die.

Thus, he used almost every trick at his disposal.

Beast Soul Burst, Epic Power Burst, and various artifacts all detonated, all for the purpose of stopping Lu Wu’s sword.

But no matter what he unleashed, it all dissipated in Lu Wu’s sword strike.

Completely ineffective!

Lu Wu’s sword seemed to embody the principle of one blade to break all magic.

“How could this happen? How could his sword be so terrifying?

Impossible! There’s absolutely no reason!”

“Oh, I see now, it’s his doing. He’s concentrated all his power into this sword strike. Once he’s finished unleashing it, he will have no strength left to resist.

As long as I can withstand this sword, just as long as I can withstand it, I will…”

“Pff!”

The Second Envoy’s struggle and joy weren’t over yet, but his body had already been cleaved in two by Lu Wu’s strike.

At that moment, the Second Envoy’s world became serene.

All the panic, pain, and terror vanished, and the Second Envoy stared dully at his bisected torso, then at Lu Wu opposite him, pale-faced yet unnervingly calm.

The Second Envoy didn’t have time to say anything before sinking into utter darkness.

This Second Envoy of the Zero Organization died thus at the hands of Lu Wu.

However, unleashing this sword came at a cost for Lu Wu.

After the sword strike, his reserves were depleted, leaving him with only a tenth of his strength from his prime, and it would be half a month or even longer before his power could recover.

But regardless, Lu Wu had won this battle.

“Move it, empty out that base below!”

Having finished the battle, Lu Wu immediately gave his order.

The Gate of the Undead opened, and Little Skeleton started bustling about, beginning the Skeleton move under Lu Wu’s command.

With the assistance of the massive Undead Army and five Epic level Summoned Beasts, the moving process was quite easy.

All resources from the Second Envoy’s base were emptied in a few hours.

All related documents were sent over to area 72.

As for the remaining people in this base, Lu Wu repeated the operation he had performed at Feng Xiu’s base, gathering everyone to convert them into his people.

“Lu Wu, that should be about it, right? You don’t look too good. Shall we go back?”

Lin Jianying made the suggestion after Lu Wu took down the Second Envoy’s base.

Lu Wu shook his head.

“Go back? Why go back? We’ve hardly even started. Since we’ve made a move, we naturally have to go big!”

“What else do you want to do?” Lin Jianying, looking at Lu Wu whose state was clearly not right, was absolutely terrified.

Lu Wu, on his part, directly gave Lin Jianying an answer that almost caused his heart to stop.

Lu Wu looked at Lin Jianying in front of him.

Perhaps influenced by the despair of the Despair Abyss of the Second Envoy, or for some other reason, he spoke with utmost seriousness, word by word, “I want to uproot the entire Zero Organization!”

Lin Jianying almost choked upon hearing this.

He doubted if Lu Wu even knew what he was planning to do.

What Lu Wu intended to do, not even the Alliance dared to consider for more than a hundred years, let alone attempt.

Now, not only did Lu Wu dare to think it, but he also dared to say it aloud, even daring to do it.

This was nothing short of madness.

He clearly didn’t comprehend the terror of the Zeroer.

“Lu Wu, I understand that Dudu’s situation has upset you, but we can’t blindly rush into things. Dudu might still be revived. We need to plan this carefully…”

“Plan carefully? Can we ever be better planned than they are?

Since we cannot outdo them and the information is not symmetrical, what’s the use of thinking so much?

I’d rather choose something that really suits my preferences to do!”

Having spoken like he had nothing left to lose, Lu Wu then started taking action.

True to his words, in the following half a month, he began a frantic cleansing of the Zero Organization.

After consecutively taking down Feng Xiu and the Second Envoy, Lu Wu made another move, seizing the bases of both the first and the second Apostles.

Meanwhile, members of the Zero Organization who had been subjugated by him also took action during this period, launching a crazed cleansing against the Zero Organization throughout the Alliance.

Beginning with the takeover of Feng Xiu’s base, within a short half a month, Zero Organization’s branches in all regions of the Alliance had been cleansed by Lu Wu.

During the entire cleansing process, Lu Wu faced no significant resistance.

The enigmatic First Envoy, as well as the Third Messenger Tie Xiong, did not make a move.

They seemed to have vanished into thin air.

They didn’t question Lu Wu’s actions, letting him cleanse and conquer one Zero Organization base after another.

Half a month later, the Alliance no longer had a single Zero Organization base.

The original bases and members all switched allegiance, becoming part of the dark organization.

An organization that took hundreds of years to build dissipated like smoke in the wind.

Of course, this was just the appearance.

Everyone was well aware that what Lu Wu destroyed was merely the outer shell of the Zero Organization; its core essence remained untouched.

Even though Lu Wu had killed two Envoys and eradicated over a dozen Apostles, and his subordinates had taken control over several Apostles’ powers, he still had not shaken the foundations of the Zero Organization.

Because the truly terrifying foundation of the Zero Organization was not the organization itself but the creator, the Zeroer.

As long as he existed, the Zero Organization would too.

Therefore, to the other powers of the Alliance, Lu Wu’s actions over the half month were viewed merely as an irrational venting by a young man.

Lu Wu was allowed to vent only because the Zeroer permitted it.

If the Zeroer hadn’t allowed it, Lu Wu would have been annihilated the moment he set foot in Feng Xiu’s base.

As for Lu Wu’s actions, the Alliance didn’t offer any evaluation.

They treated the dark organization that Lu Wu had created as nothing more than a joke.

On Lu Wu’s part, after half a month of frenzied cleansing and resource plundering, he finally seemed to have vented his feelings and returned to the Undead Secret Realm.

Half a month of slaughter and venting left Lu Wu looking exceptionally weary.

He seemed totally devoid of strength, wrapped in a killing aura so thick it couldn’t be dispelled, making 72 nervous upon seeing him, fearing Lu Wu might casually end his life with a sword.

But at this moment, 72 needed to see Lu Wu.

As Lu Wu’s logistics manager, 72 had been handling the organized killing and resource plundering for the half month.

Lu Wu had been too busy before, but now that he was back, 72 needed to report on related matters.

“My lord, in this half month, you have taken down a total of 78 bases, large and small, and obtained resources…”

“Don’t tell me about all that; I’m not interested. I skipped over the resources you sent in. I’ve already taken whatever I wanted, so there’s no need to tell me about the resources.

What I want to know is, how did the investigation I asked you to do go?”

Lu Wu spoke, opening his eyes to look at 72.

His exhausted gaze tinged with anticipation made 72 shudder.

His mind worked furiously.

The main things Lu Wu wanted him to investigate were three things:

The whereabouts of Tie Xiong, news of the Gate Fragments, and news from Zhang Yunyi’s side.

“My lord, there’s no news on the whereabouts of Tie Xiong.

He has almost no connection to the Zero Organization, based on the documents you sent over. There’s barely anything related to him.

The only certainty is that, for the past twenty years, he seems to have lived in Zone 1, Beijing.”

“As for the Gate Fragments, there’s plenty of inaccurate news, and as of now, there are two pieces of the most credible news.

One is the treasure vault of the Zeroer.

According to the intelligence of the Zero Organization, the Zeroer has a vault where he has stored the Gate Fragments collected over the past hundred years, with a conservative estimate of more than ten pieces.

But we don’t know exactly where it is.”

72 glanced at Lu Wu, not daring to say more.

Even if they knew where it was, it would be useless because that’s the Zeroer’s treasure vault, said to be the most powerful in the Alliance, closest to divine. To act on his vault would be like digging the earth on top of Tai Sui’s head.

Lu Wu frowned slightly, “And the other?”

72 paused; the alternative didn’t seem reliable either, but he still spoke up.

“The other is the treasure vault of Elder Mountain.

According to intelligence, Elder Mountain has also collected some Gate Fragments over the past hundred years. Because of the difficulty in distribution, they stored all the fragments in the treasure vault of Elder Mountain.

A conservative estimate would be three to five pieces.

Additionally, the Technology Alliance, the Holy Sect Alliance, and the Dark Conference might also have similar vaults with possible fragments in hand, but it’s hard to tell if they do.”

Lu Wu’s eyebrows creased slightly upon hearing this.

His fingers lightly tapped, as if he were considering something.

72, watching Lu Wu contemplate, couldn’t help but have a sense of foreboding.

Surely his boss wasn’t considering making a move on those places?

As expected, Lu Wu soon opened his eyes and issued an order.

“Have all our bases prepare; we’re going to make a big move!”

“My lord, which power are you going to strike against? The Technology Alliance? Or perhaps the Holy Sect Alliance…”

“Take down Elder Mountain!”

“Pfft!”

72 almost spat out a mouthful of old blood.

# Chapter 426: The current situation of elder number 423

Chapter 426: The current situation of elder number 423

Region 1, Elder Mountain.

More than a month had passed, and the group of elders on Elder Mountain had once again convened in the meeting room.

This time, nearly half as many people had come compared to the last time, but of course, no one was absent.

Those who remained all bore injuries.

Impatience was written on everyone’s face.

“Why did we enter into seclusion if we’re being summoned again? What’s the matter this time?”

“Let’s get one thing straight. I came here, but my wounds haven’t healed, and I really don’t want to deal with that mess outside.”

“And another thing, if this is about Lu Wu again, spare me your words. I’ll turn around and leave immediately!”

Several elders expressed their current attitude as soon as they entered the scene.

Their demeanor made Zhao Xue’en, who had called the meeting, look displeased, but Fei Yinghao’s face was even more unsightly than Zhao’s.

“Do you old fools have any sense of crisis at all?

Do you not realize what Lu Wu has done in the past month?”

The remaining few elders shook their heads: “Really? You summoned us here just for Lu Wu?

Are you guys that bored?

Can you not focus on him and make things uncomfortable for yourself?”

“Don’t you know he’s a pawn of the Zeroers and Lu Haikong’s son, with a power possibly formed to resist Return to Zero behind him?

With such a complex background, why bother with him?”

“Besides, didn’t he just destroy the Zero Organization and create a Dark Organization?

These are minor issues; as long as he doesn’t stir up trouble on our alliance’s side and tear the sky apart, we shouldn’t bother with him!”

At this point, only six elders remained in the Elder Council.

And yet, even among these six, there were still three different opinions regarding Lu Wu.

One faction, led by Fei Yinghao alone, steadfastly believed that Lu Wu was a disaster and needed to be dealt with as soon as possible.

The second faction was the laissez-faire group headed by Zhang Mingge.

They thought Lu Wu was the root of all the trouble, with the madman Return to Zero watching behind him.

Touching Lu Wu was equivalent to touching endless trouble, so it was better to completely ignore him.

The last view belonged to Zhao Xue’en, the second of the Elder Council, who believed that Lu Wu still needed to be watched. Killing him wasn’t possible, but Lu Wu’s actions had to be restrained.

At this moment, three different opinions clashed in the meeting room.

And because Dudu had once made an appearance and caused trouble on Elder Mountain, there was now a sense of “once bitten, twice shy” among the group of old men.

Most stood with Zhang Mingge.

“Doing nothing is indeed the easiest, but have you thought about what stance Lu Wu currently holds towards our Elder Council, towards the Alliance?

You’ve read his file and have a certain understanding of him.

You must know he’s the type to repay an eye for an eye.

Pang Duddu died on Elder Mountain. Do you think he can swallow that down?

He will seek revenge!

That’s for sure! Just look at what happened to the Zero Organization!

If we don’t handle him soon, the day he turns against the Alliance will come.

By then, the price we’ll have to pay to deal with him will be completely different from today!”

Fei Yinghao pounded the table, looking down at Zhang Mingge and the others.

Zhang Mingge shook his head and sneered, “You’re being alarmist!

First off, Lu Wu isn’t a fool; from how he dealt with the Zero Organization, it’s clear he now understands the fate that’s being controlled.

Right now, all his effort is focused on resisting the Zeroer.

In the short term, he won’t have the resources to cause trouble for the Alliance.

So, the more we ignore him now, the less likely he will turn his attention to us. If we do engage him, that’s when real trouble will start.

I still suggest we do nothing and just watch.

Time will drive him crazy, and it will also be his undoing. The Zeroer won’t let him wreak havoc for too long.”

“This is inaction!

You’re basing the safety of the Alliance entirely on one man; what if one day Lu Wu goes mad and decides to take on the Alliance?”

“Doing nothing is better than acting blindly.

The possibility you’re talking about is practically zero.

Besides, even if such a scenario does emerge, we aren’t without ways to respond!

We’re well aware of what Lu Wu did to the Zero Organization. In the end, it was all because the Zeroer let him be.

Should he turn against the Alliance, when necessary, I have a hundred ways to deal with him!”

Zhang Mingge pounded the table, confidently looking at Fei Yinghao and Zhao Xue’en.

His words effectively silenced both Fei Yinghao and Zhao Xue’en.

The two were stunned. Just as Fei Yinghao was about to speak, Zhao Xue’en’s phone rang, interrupting him.

Zhao Xue’en glanced at the incoming number and answered the call.

The moment he took the call, his face darkened instantly.

A minute later, Zhao Xue’en ended the call with a “I understand.”

Then, he looked up at Zhang Mingge across from him, his gaze and expression oddly peculiar, causing Zhang to feel somewhat uneasy.

“What is it? Whose call was that? What’s making you have that look?”

Zhao Xue’en paused for a moment before saying, “It was a call from the Alliance, concerning Lu Wu.”

“Lu Wu? What now? Could it be he found the First Envoy of the Zero Organization?

No, that can’t be right; the First Envoy is not weak, even if he did find him, he shouldn’t be able to take him down.

Or did he take over another base?”

“It’s not about the Zeroes!”

“It’s not about the Zeroes?”

Zhang Mingge’s uneasy premonition grew: “Don’t tell me…”

Zhao Xue’en didn’t bother to beat around the bush anymore and said directly, “Lu Wu just called the Alliance and gave us three days to hand over the Gate Fragment from the treasury, or else he’ll annihilate the entire Alliance!”

Zhao spoke with helplessness, but at his words, Fei Yinghao immediately became excited.

“Didn’t I say so? I told you that kid was a disaster waiting to happen. Keeping him around would eventually bring harm to us. You didn’t believe me, and now, see what has happened?

He barely got rid of the Zero Organization, and now he’s turned towards us!

He even dared to say he would annihilate the Alliance, surely you can’t keep tolerating this anymore?

Zhang Mingge, you said you had a hundred ways to deal with him, right? Now’s your chance to prove it!”

But at this moment, Zhang Mingge, after a brief shock, also began to show a chilling expression.

“Ungrateful brat!”

# Chapter 427: 424 Absorb Fragment

Chapter 427: 424 Absorb Fragment

No matter what the Elder Council’s attitude towards Lu Wu had been before,

or rather, no matter how the elders of the Elder Council had felt about Lu Wu, that was all on the condition that he did not touch their interests.

Once their core interests were touched, they could only have one attitude.

Therefore, from the moment Lu Wu made that phone call, the way the Elder Council treated him began to develop in the direction Fei Yinghao most wanted.

The Elder Council began to show Lu Wu some color.

They wanted to let Lu Wu know that they were still able to wield the knife and to warn him not to get carried away!

After Lu Wu’s phone call, the Alliance immediately issued several orders.

In Jiangnan, Zhao Kai Ming, Zhang Wentao, and a series of people closely related to Lu Wu were taken down.

On the other hand, in Jiangbei, Zhang Yuechu, who temporarily sat in the position of Governor of Jiangbei with the help of Lu Wu, was directly stripped of his role.

At the same time, the Alliance’s Demon Suppression Bureau made its move.

Within one day, they swept through all the Dark Organization’s strongholds within District 1.

With these actions, they responded to Lu Wu.

The serial movements of the Alliance naturally drew the attention of other organizations.

Without any intelligence support, they could all guess that there was likely to be trouble between Lu Wu and the Alliance.

And soon, the news of Lu Wu’s phone call to the Alliance leaked.

Everyone knew the cause of the issue.

Upon understanding the situation, everyone’s first reaction was that Lu Wu had gotten arrogant.

He really was too arrogant!

He thought that by taking down a Zero Organization, he could reach the heavens, and dared to provoke the Elder Council directly.

Did he not know that the Elder Council had been tolerating him before?

With what Lu Wu was doing now, he was practically forcing the Elder Council to hit him.

“It seems that this youngster is about to take a big fall again!”

This was the consensus of various powers.

In the confrontation between Lu Wu and the Elder Council, or rather, with the entire Alliance, no one was optimistic about Lu Wu!

After all, the Alliance was not the Zero Organization, and the Elder Council was not a Zeroer; they wouldn’t let Lu Wu mess around.

And while everyone’s eyes were focused on the Elder Council and Lu Wu,

while paying attention to their collision,

at the center of it all, stirring up this storm, Lu Wu’s attention was not on the Elder Council.

He was currently in District 2.

Beside him, a trembling young man followed.

“Big bro, are you sure you want to do this? It’s not too late to go back now!”

Pismi trembled incessantly, repeatedly confirming with Lu Wu.

However, Lu Wu didn’t care about him at all and walked straight towards the base “New World” that the Science Alliance had taken decades, if not hundreds of years, to build.

As soon as Lu Wu stepped into the “New World,” a piercing alarm sounded.

[Alert! Alert! Epic invader entering, epic invader entering!

New World entering highest state of alert!]

As the alarm sounded, the entire “New World” sprang into action.

The research portion was hidden in the deepest part, the source of danger where Lu Wu was located was isolated, and countless combat equipment was moved towards the edge of Lu Wu’s area.

The bigwigs in the New World woke up one after another, everyone rushing to the scene as fast as possible.

Everyone was highly vigilant,

ready to respond to any situation.

But against the series of reactions from the New World, Lu Wu remained particularly calm. He didn’t make any moves and just stood there, quietly watching the changes in the New World.

Waiting for the arrival of the bigwigs of the Science Alliance.

Soon

Less than a minute after the alarm sounded, the bigwigs of the Science Alliance arrived.

Although they weren’t in the same area as Lu Wu, he sensed that they were nearby.

As these people arrived, they couldn’t help but feel their scalps tingle as they looked toward the source of danger.

On their way there, they were wondering who would be foolish enough to come to their place, only to find that it was him.

This left the bigwigs of the Science Alliance at a loss for words, unsure of what to say for a moment.

At that time, as Lu Wu sensed the arrival of the bigwigs of the Science Alliance, the corners of his mouth lifted, and he raised his head.

“You all should be here now, so I’ll get straight to the point.

I came here today because there’s something I’d like to ask you for.

I want to borrow a few Gate Fragments!

This thing, I believe you should have it, even if it’s not yet refined, you definitely have unrefined ones.

I’m not asking for much, just give me one, and I’ll turn around and leave!”

Lu Wu spoke up, his request straightforward and to the point,

so direct it sent a shiver down the spines of the bigwigs of the Science Alliance.

This was the first time they had encountered someone who just opened their mouth to demand Gate Fragments.

They really didn’t know how to respond.

But Lu Wu didn’t mean to make them uncomfortable; after all, he was not an unreasonable person.

“Don’t be too troubled; asking you is my freedom, and whether to give it is your freedom.

It’s true that my asking this way is a bit shameless.

So, if it’s inconvenient for you, you don’t have to give it to me, really, you don’t need to indulge this bad habit of mine.

If you don’t give it to me, there’s nothing much I can do.

At most, I will just let the entire Dark Organization flood into District 2 and have a do or die battle with you.”

“Of course, you certainly won’t be afraid of that kind of thing.

What is a temporarily built organization, anyway? How powerful can it be?

You can annihilate it in minutes, it won’t take much, the only thing is the outburst of Evil Energy from members of the Dark Organization when they die might contaminate the entire District 2, and it will take only a hundred to two hundred years to clean up.

At most, there might be some terror attacks by the Evil, which you can easily deal with.

I believe that the Science Alliance’s centuries of foundation will definitely not be easily knocked down by a few words from me, Lu Wu, and just give in obediently.

I…”

“Whoosh!”

As Lu Wu was speaking, a meteor struck towards his head.

Lu Wu was startled for a moment, reached up with his hand, and captured an irregular Fragment in his grasp.

At the same time, the system issued a prompt.

[Energy sensed, absorb?]

Lu Wu temporarily ignored the system’s prompt, looking around somewhat incredulously; he had not expected the Science Alliance’s bigwigs to give in so easily.

He thought at least he would have to talk some more, or deploy some tactics, but they gave him the Fragment right at the beginning.

This made Lu Wu inevitably feel like he might be missing out.

However, Lu Wu was at least somewhat trustworthy.

“Thank you, I appreciate it!”

Lu Wu clenched the Fragment, turned, and left.

From beginning to end, none of the bigwigs of the Science Alliance showed up or responded, letting Lu Wu come and go as he pleased.

Lu Wu, after leaving the Science Alliance, immediately instructed the system to absorb the Gate Fragment!

# Chapter 428: 425 Surprise Attack

Chapter 428: 425 Surprise Attack

The absorption of the fragment required a certain amount of time.

However, Lu Wu did not wait.

After he began the absorption, he acted immediately, heading straight for the next destination.

Opening the “Gate of the Undead” to return to the Undead Base, he opened the “Gate of the Undead” again and found himself at the headquarters of the Dark Council in Zone 4.

It was the same formula, the same procedure.

Lu Wu directly entered the headquarters of the Dark Council.

His brazen appearance once again startled an organization.

Lu Wu looked at the organization dancing to his tune and said indifferently, “Come on, make a choice. Do you choose to hand over a gate fragment or do you want to go down together with me?”

The response to Lu Wu was still silence.

Even longer than the silence from the Technology Alliance.

But in the end, the Dark Council still gave Lu Wu a fragment, an unrefined, small piece.

Of course, Lu Wu did not care as long as he could absorb it.

Taking the fragment, he turned and left, rushing to the next scene.

The next location was the Holy Sect Alliance.

This was the organization with the greatest secular influence among the three.

Their tolerance towards Evil Summoners had always been the lowest.

Thus, Lu Wu was prepared for a battle when he headed towards the Holy Sect Alliance.

But to Lu Wu’s surprise,

the Holy Sect Alliance was the most cooperative among all the organizations he visited.

He had just arrived when they delivered the fragment to him.

Moreover, the fragment was noticeably larger than the others from the two organizations.

The core reason all three were so cooperative was that none wanted to be the first to stand out.

No one could be sure to what extent Lu Wu would go for the gate.

Should there be a showdown leaving both parties destroyed, none of them could withstand it.

So they all obediently handed over the fragments to Lu Wu.

Since they were all giving unrefined fragments, it was of no use to Lu Wu.

Temporarily handing them over to appease him wasn’t out of question, and if they really couldn’t bear it, they’d see how Lu Wu collided with Elder Mountain.

If there was a chance, they’d take them back.

Of course, this was their own calculation, something that definitely could not be voiced.

Those who understood, understood.

But regardless, since they were so cooperative, naturally Lu Wu couldn’t start a fight.

Once he collected the item, Lu Wu directly returned to the Undead Base.

And almost immediately after Lu Wu had arrived at the base, the system notified him that the first fragment had been completely absorbed.

“Ding, gate fragment absorption complete, obtained 3 points of Origin.”

Origin?

Lu Wu was startled and opened the attribute panel.

He discovered that his attribute panel showed an additional 2 points of Origin, and at the same time, Lu Wu noticed that some “enhancements” on his and his pets’ attributes were highlighted.

Lu Wu’s eyes brightened, “What does this mean? Is the system upgrading?”

He couldn’t help wanting to try it out.

However, just as Lu Wu was about to add the points,

A loud “boom” rang out.

At the same time, the Undead Secret Realm where Lu Wu was, trembled.

“What’s going on?”

Lu Wu furrowed his brows, stood up, and looked in the direction of the sound.

Almost at the same moment Lu Wu looked up, a golden beam of light pierced through the barriers of the Undead Secret Realm.

A voice with a sinister laugh sounded,

“I’ve finally found you!”

The next moment, a golden thunderbolt struck towards Lu Wu’s head.

Lu Wu squinted his eyes, his body releasing a blue silhouette, which appeared instantaneously, and countless Ice Condensation Shields blocked the golden thunderbolt.

“Crack!”

The golden thunder struck, instantly shattering numerous ice shields and hitting the icy blue silhouette.

The icy blue silhouette showed a shadow of thorns, reflecting some of the electricity back, but only a part; the remaining force of the thunder shattered the shadow of thorns and struck the body of the icy blue silhouette.

With one strike, the emerging silly creature was electrocuted into charred feathers, lying on the ground gasping for breath.

And this was just the beginning.

Just after the golden thunder was blocked, a purple flame descended.

With a ‘roar’,

the silhouette of Little Golden Dragon emerged to meet the purple flames.

Before the collision of Little Golden Dragon and the purple flames had concluded, another attack fell.

This time, a highly concentrated black bead fell.

Little Skeleton rolled with his scythe to meet it.

At the same time, the surroundings, originally dark and filled with the aura of death, began sprouting trees wildly.

In an instant, a huge green forest, or rather a green prison, formed, trapping Lu Wu within.

Almost at the same moment Lu Wu was trapped by this green prison,

Little Golden Dragon and Little Skeleton were successively suppressed by the purple flames and the black bead carrying endless gravity.

In a wave of attacks, in the blink of an eye,

Lu Wu’s three pets, including himself, were subdued.

Lu Wu was almost incapable of resisting.

Partly because this wave of attacks was somewhat sudden, and partly because of the attackers.

Lu Wu did not need to see anything else; just that one bolt of golden thunder let him recognize the identity of the attacker.

They were the elders of the Elder Council.

Claimed to be the most top-notch existence of the alliance.

Not only were their powers the most top-notch, but their combat experience was also incomparable to a 20-something-year-old like Lu Wu.

They did not make a move, but once they did, they made sure to give Lu Wu no chance to recover.

After crushing the three pets, another three attacks fell, ready for a wave to take away Lu Wu’s three Summoned Beasts.

If they were taken, Lu Wu would basically be finished.

So before the three attacks fell, Lu Wu quickly retrieved his three Summoned Beasts into his body.

This action by Lu Wu avoided his pets being killed, but it also meant that Lu Wu would have to face the attacks meant for these three pets.

Golden thunder, purple flames, and the black bead hit Lu Wu’s head at the same time.

At that moment, Lu Wu was covered by the forest prison, completely immobile; it was a certain death situation.

As an Epic One Star Lu Wu, even though his foundations could be compared to an Epic 2 Star, there was no way he could survive in such a situation.

After all, those surrounding him were four elders, all at least at the power level of Epic 2 Stars.

As they struck with full force, how could Lu Wu live?

Was he going to die without getting revenge?

A strong sense of unwillingness surged in his heart, and Lu Wu desperately burst forth.

But at this moment, the more desperately Lu Wu struggled, the more he felt a profound sense of powerlessness.

In the face of such absolute power, it wasn’t something that could be resolved by simply unleashing his inner cosmos.

“Finally, it’s time to kill this kid, and we really owe a lot to the people from the Holy Sect Alliance this time!”

At this moment, Fei Yinghao, standing above the Undead Secret Realm, was all smiles.

Killing Lu Wu would avenge his grandson’s great vendetta.

However, just as he was immersed in the thrill of revenge, Lu Wu suddenly lost consciousness and his head drooped.

The elders were startled, “What’s happening? Did he faint from fear?”

Fei Yinghao’s expression changed, “Not good, be careful!”

Almost simultaneously, Lu Wu, who had lowered his head, raised it again, his eyes now open.

But upon opening his eyes, his aura had completely changed.

It was not Lu Wu’s original aura, nor was it the aura of the “Zeroer” that had once appeared in Lu Wu’s body, but an extremely domineering aura.

“How dare you touch my son!”

“Lu Haikong?!!”

Fei Yinghao and the others recognized immediately who this sudden figure was.

Their faces paled!

No one had expected Lu Haikong to burst out at this moment.

But by now, they had already taken action; how could there be any turning back from a drawn bow?

Not to mention the distracted presence of Lu Haikong, even if Lu Haikong himself showed up, they would not hold back!

“Kill him, don’t fear him, he can’t withstand us four when he’s just a projection!”

Fei Yinghao roared as the four elders unleashed their full strength.

Indeed, as soon as Lu Haikong saw the four explode in power, his expression changed immediately, “Very well, remember this, I will settle this account with you later!”

While speaking, ‘Lu Haikong’ gestured with his hand, and the forests around him shattered bit by bit, and at the same time, a fissure cracked open in front of him.

“Not good, he’s trying to escape!”

“Don’t let him get away, stop him quickly!”

Fei Yinghao and the others made a concerted effort, but ultimately, they could not prevent ‘Lu Haikong’ from stepping into the fissure.

As Lu Haikong stepped into the fissure and it closed, he looked up at Fei Yinghao and the others and said word by word, “Wait for me!”

With those words, the fissure closed, and ‘Lu Haikong’ or rather Lu Wu had left.

Fei Yinghao and the others did not take Lu Haikong’s final threat seriously.

They were all over a hundred years old, and threats did not intimidate them.

Besides, they were aware of Lu Haikong’s current predicament.

Want them to wait? In the future?

They surely had a future, but whether Lu Haikong still had one was debatable.

Thus, compared to Lu Haikong’s threats, they were more concerned about the escaping Lu Wu.

“Quick, use a tool to sense him!”

Fei Yinghao immediately took out a tool to locate Lu Wu.

However, just as the tool started working, with a ‘crack’, it shattered directly.

“It’s no use, can’t sense him, the Holy Sect Alliance’s mark must have been erased!”

“What do we do now?”

“Immediately dispatch someone to search for Lu Wu, and inform those three organizations to also assist, especially the Holy Sect Alliance.

Tell them that Lu Wu knows they had tried to trap him by marking the fragments of the Gate on his door, and make sure they don’t slack off.

Then, there’s this!”

Fei Yinghao said, his eyes gazing coldly at the Undead Secret Realm below, a flash of cold light in his eyes, and with a backhand slap, he struck down.

A palm strike descended, and half of Lu Wu’s Undead Secret Realm base was destroyed.

After venting his anger with a strike, Fei Yinghao didn’t continue, but instead said, “Take control of this place and then start cleaning up what Lu Wu calls the Dark Organization.

“I want him dead, and I want to erase everything he has!”

The remaining members of the Elder Council didn’t pay attention to the increasingly twisted Fei Yinghao, but they did as he instructed anyway.

Firstly, they tasked the hunt for Lu Wu.

They contacted three organizations: Technology, Dark, and Holy Sect.

The news wasn’t particularly shocking at first, just another failed encirclement by Elder Mountain, right?

Quite normal, failures happen.

It wasn’t a big deal, so why search for Lu Wu?

Search if necessary, whether they find him or not is left to fate.

After all, they hadn’t provoked Lu Wu.

But it was different with the Holy Sect.

Their leaders were angry enough to curse.

They had marked the Gate Fragment for Lu Wu that the Elder Mountain had asked them to do, because the Elder Mountain knew about Lu Wu’s extortion of Technology and Dark.

So, they had preemptively contacted the Holy Sect Alliance to mark Lu Wu’s fragment.

The Holy Sect, not wanting to be extorted by Lu Wu and considering promises from Elder Mountain that they would receive fragments from Technology and Dark upon success, reluctantly agreed.

But they hadn’t expected Elder Mountain to be so unreliable.

Four elders, four Epic 2 Stars, and even Fei Yinghao, a being nearly at three stars, had failed to capture Lu Wu and allowed him to escape.

If it were only about letting Lu Wu escape, it wouldn’t be a big deal.

They had also exposed the Holy Sect Alliance, which really messed things up.

Now, the Holy Sect Alliance had to use all its power to search for Lu Wu, presuming that their hatred value with Lu Wu was already maxed out.

But hunting Lu Wu was no easy task.

The sudden strike from Elder Mountain had already alerted the prey.

Now that Lu Wu knew of Elder Mountain’s intent to annihilate him, as long as he wasn’t foolish, he would definitely find a place to hide away.

With the breadth of the Alliance, if Lu Wu truly wanted to hide, finding him would be extraordinarily difficult.

Everyone knew this.

Even Fei Yinghao was aware of this fact.

Therefore, after handling the Undead Secret Realm, he immediately came to the Holy Sect Alliance.

Claiming he wanted to exchange summoning experience.

At first, the Holy Sect Alliance was bewildered, but they quickly realized.

Fei Yinghao wasn’t here for any experience.

He was here because of Lu Wu!

The Holy Sect Alliance also realized that maybe their exposure wasn’t real, perhaps Lu Wu hadn’t actually noticed the collaboration between the Holy Sect and Elder Mountain, and it was Elder Mountain that intentionally exposed the Holy Sect.

It was to use the Holy Sect as bait.

Knowing Lu Wu’s temperament, having suffered this setback, he definitely wouldn’t endure.

He’d likely seek revenge, and since he wouldn’t dare go after Elder Mountain, the most likely target for his retaliation would be the Holy Sect Alliance.

Fei Yinghao had precisely calculated this, thus throwing the Holy Sect Alliance out, and then he personally came here to wait.

Waiting for Lu Wu, the silly rabbit, to come crashing in.

Realizing this, the Holy Sect Alliance was furious, but what could they do?

They dared not speak of their anger, still having to genuinely cooperate with Fei Yinghao.

And just as they cooperated quietly with Fei Yinghao in their sit-and-wait strategy, the Fei family in Beijing’s District 1 received an unexpected visitor.

# Chapter 429: 426 This is just the beginning

Chapter 429: 426 This is just the beginning

In the past couple of days, the Alliance has been extraordinarily busy.

Their busyness mainly stemmed from the operation led by Fei Yinghao.

A surprise attack, though it didn’t kill Lu Wu, managed to destroy Lu Wu’s base and capture ninety percent of the people in it.

After that, it was time for the Alliance to round up Lu Wu and the Dark Organization he had established.

For an elder like Fei Yinghao, this was merely a matter of issuing commands.

But to carry it out, almost the entire Alliance’s institutions had to work tirelessly day and night to achieve the results.

In these two days, the Alliance’s combat department deployed over a hundred thousand Summoners to strike fiercely and sweep through Lu Wu’s various strongholds.

On one hand, there was the Alliance’s strong initiative.

On the other hand, there was the Dark Organization that had lost its major leader and was practically a mess.

The result of the sweep was self-evident.

In two days’ time, the Dark Organization had dozens of strongholds large and small uprooted.

Countless resources and various criminals were continuously brought back to the Alliance, back to Beijing.

The delivered prisoners gave the Prison Chief so much worry that he turned white-haired.

He had no place to put them.

As for the resources, they almost made the logistics department crack a smile.

With this sweep, the Alliance gained nearly five years’ worth of resources.

This made the originally not-so-rich logistics department suddenly plump up, and the department head stood tall. With a protruding belly, he could now strut about beaming with joy.

One could say that Lu Wu’s downfall fattened up the logistics department.

And in Beijing, just as delighted as this chief was the Gu father and son.

Although the father and son pair had not gained any tangible rewards in this wave, they were still happy.

Or rather, for the father and son, they didn’t need any tangible rewards. Just hearing that Lu Wu was not faring well was enough to make them happy.

After all, Lu Wu was a lifelong shadow for the father and son.

“To see his skyscrapers rise, to see him feast his guests, to see his buildings collapse!

Just half a month ago, I watched as Lu Wu swept through the Zero Organization, single-handedly annihilated the Zero Organization that had been uncontrollable for a hundred years, and established a huge Dark Organization upon its carcass.

He even dared to directly challenge the Alliance.

I thought another big shot was rising and that the Alliance’s dynamics were about to change. That I would have to look up to him for the rest of my life.

But who would have thought, in just a few days? Everything vanished like smoke.

All his efforts turned into a dowry for someone else.

Ah, the ways of the world are indeed ever-changing!

However, a person like him deserved such an end!

It’s gratifying, deeply satisfying for the masses!”

Gutian, elated, even rare opened a bottle of wine to enjoy a small toast.

Fine wine combined with the tragic news of Lu Wu, the experience was indescribably delightful.

Meanwhile, as Gutian savored his wine, on the other side of Beijing, someone knocked on a door.

The door that was knocked on was a Chinese-style gate made of Legendary Quality redwood, antique and full of charm.

The door, purely a decorative piece, was something an Ordinary person could not afford in dozens of lifetimes of effort.

Even for a Summoner, it would take several lifetimes of striving to have a slight hope of affording it.

The entire door exuded luxury and grandiosity.

In the entire Alliance, there were only a few who could afford such a door without fearing it being stolen.

And there were even fewer that could use it so confidently without worrying about idle talk.

In present-day Beijing, there was only one family so high-profile, and that was the Fei Family where Fei Yinghao belonged.

Indeed, it was that Fei Yinghao who usually looked like an ordinary old farmer.

As one of the twelve elders, his home’s luxury wasn’t limited just to the front gate.

The whole place exuded an atmosphere that made one fearful to even touch, lest they accidentally incur a lifetime of debt.

Sure enough, as soon as someone knocked on the gate, someone from inside immediately came out, cursing and grumbling.

“Coming, coming, stop knocking! Why are you knocking so hard? Can you afford it if you break it?”

This person was the Fei Family’s gatekeeper.

Though merely a gatekeeper, as the elder’s gatekeeper, he carried himself with quite some presence and posture.

He hadn’t even opened the gate but started cursing without seeing who was behind the door.

Of course, he felt there was no need to look; no matter who it was, there was no one he couldn’t curse at as long as they were knocking.

After all, which true big shot would casually walk through the front entrance?

But as the gatekeeper opened the gate, he saw an unfamiliar young man standing there with a goofy smile, which immediately irritated him.

“Who are you? Do you know where you are? Just coming up and knocking on the door?”

“Isn’t this the Fei Family’s home? The home of Fei Yun and Fei Yinghao?”

The young man mentioned Fei Yun and Fei Yinghao, immediately silencing the arrogant gatekeeper.

After all, those who could and would openly address those two by name couldn’t possibly be ordinary, could they?

“Who are you?”

“Me? I’d say I’m a friend of theirs!”

The young man said and walked in by himself.

The gatekeeper watched, unsure whether to stop him or not.

Finally, he smartened up and decided not to stop him, just in case he was actually detaining some big shot. Instead, he remotely notified the bigwigs at home through a device, saying that a supposed young master’s friend had come in.

This message was delivered to Fei Yun’s father.

Elder Fei, upon hearing this, became furiously angry, “Who is this vile friend or scoundrel that has come over again?

Yun’er is dead; they dare to come over?”

As he was about to get up and check, a voice suddenly rang out.

“Stop, don’t go!”

At the same moment, a grave-faced Fei Yinghao appeared out of nowhere.

“Father!”

Elder Fei, startled, stood up to pay his respects, but Fei Yinghao ignored him completely, his eyes fastened tightly on the outside. “Very well, very well, a fine display, Lu Wu. I had originally thought that at best, he would avoid conflict for a while, or vent his anger on the Holy Sect Alliance. I did not expect he would be so bold as to come for me.

Fortunately, I was cautious, leaving behind an avatar. Otherwise, I fear today I might have lost my lineage!”

Hardly had Fei Yinghao finished speaking when a nonchalant voice suddenly sounded in his ear, “Actually, even with this avatar, you’re still bound to lose your lineage!”

Fei Yinghao’s face changed, his reaction swift as thunder and lightning burst forth beside him, striking an empty space; Lu Wu was nowhere near him.

Meanwhile, outside, Lu Wu patted the gatekeeper’s shoulder and slowly made his way into the Fei residence.

As soon as Lu Wu moved, Fei Yinghao’s avatar appeared in front of him, a very ugly expression on his face.

“That move just now was quite something!”

Lu Wu looked at the Fei Yinghao before him, teasingly said, “Seems like I scare you quite a bit, huh?”

“You jest. The very idea that I would be scared by such trivial tricks.

However, your arrival indeed surprised me.

I’ll give you a chance; you can still leave now!”

“Afraid?” Lu Wu’s mouth curled in a tease, “Kneel down and beg me? Beg, and maybe if I’m in a good mood, I’ll spare your family.”

“Impudence!”

Fei Yinghao was enraged!

“Lu Wu, what do you think you are? I indeed do not want to fight you here, but that doesn’t mean you have me in your grasp.

Push me too far, and it’s your life you’ll lose!”

Lu Wu’s mouth curved upwards, “Oh? Is that so?”

The next moment, Lu Wu suddenly made his move.

“Boom!”

The instant Lu Wu’s hand struck, a thunderous explosion sounded like lightning from a clear sky, shaking the entire Beijing.

“What’s going on? Why such a commotion?”

Gutian, who was savoring his wine, was startled by the blast.

He set down his glass and listened carefully.

“Eh, that direction seems to be from the inner city, and it seems to be coming from the Fei Family’s direction. Could it be that Elder Fei has returned?

Hmm, this thunderous sound does resemble that of Elder Fei.

But this commotion seems a bit too excessive. Could someone be battling Elder Fei?”

After analyzing the situation, Gutian shook his head in disbelief.

“What am I thinking? Battling Elder Fei?

How many people in the Alliance could possibly be a match for Elder Fei?

Besides, this is Beijing; who would dare to take action against Elder Fei here?

It must be Elder Fei practicing his Skill…”

Gutian hadn’t finished his thought when a hysterical roar echoed throughout the Alliance: “Lu Wu, I shall have your life!”

This roar stunned Gutian and everyone else in the Alliance.

Everyone could hear the anger and murderous intent in that roar, as well as the deeper helplessness it conveyed.

“What’s happening? Has Lu Wu come to kill in Beijing? How is this possible? How dare he?”

This time Gutian could no longer sit idle and he leapt up into the sky.

As he rose, he saw countless powerful figures densely covering the sky above Beijing; all their gazes were directed towards the Fei Family.

At this moment, two figures appeared in the sky above the Fei Family.

One was a clone of Fei Yinghao, and the other was Lu Wu.

At this time, Fei Yinghao’s clone was wrapped in golden thunder, his face full of ferocity and anger.

Facing him, Lu Wu appeared calm and at ease, his face filled with kindness and tolerance.

“I know, I know your thoughts, so here I am giving you a chance.

Come on then, I’m right here; come and kill me!”

“Don’t think I wouldn’t dare, I—”

“Then show me your courage and take action!”

Lu Wu laughed, extending his hand as another Sword Qi appeared from thin air.

With a flick of his finger, the Sword Qi fell toward the Fei Family below.

Fei Yinghao’s face changed, the golden thunder on his body erupted with full force, desperately intercepting it before the Sword Qi hit!

Yet before he could even catch his breath, Lu Wu’s mocking voice rang out again.

“Not bad, but what if it were like this?”

Fei Yinghao looked up, only to see that in this short time, Lu Wu had already gathered a dozen Sword Qi by his side.

Some were as bone-chilling as Cold Ice, some exploded like Flames, some were as sinister as Evil, and some as pure as Light…

Each Sword Qi had a distinctive essence.

But each one possessed an Epic Level of power.

As Fei Yinghao watched, all the Sword Qi plummeted toward the Fei Family.

“Damn it!”

Fei Yinghao, filled with loathing, was at this time without a solution, forced to exert himself to the limit in an attempt to intercept all the Sword Qi.

He knew all too well that if any of the Sword Qi struck, his family would be finished.

They could not withstand this kind of Epic Level Sword Qi.

At this moment, Fei Yinghao deeply regretted only leaving a clone with 20% of his Power. If he had left more, Lu Wu wouldn’t have been so arrogant.

With just 50% of his Power, he could have easily suppressed Lu Wu.

However, it was too late for regrets; he could only expend all his effort to resist the dozen Sword Qi.

One, two, three…

With Fei Yinghao’s full-force explosion, Lu Wu’s Sword Qi were destroyed one by one, but soon Fei Yinghao himself also reached his limit.

At this moment, there were still three Sword Qi he hadn’t managed to destroy, and they were already about to fall on the Fei Family.

“No!”

At that moment, Fei Yinghao issued a hysterical roar.

A single Sword Qi could destroy the entire Fei Family, let alone three.

It was over. The Fei Family was done for, and Fei Yinghao truly faced the extinction of his lineage.

The deepest despair engulfed Fei Yinghao as Lu Wu watched the expressions on Fei Yinghao’s face with great satisfaction.

However, just as Lu Wu’s three Sword Qi were about to land, a green Light burst forth from the center of the Fei Family, and countless trees spontaneously grew to protect the family.

‘Puff’ ‘Puff’ ‘Puff’

The three Sword Qi fell, only causing three insignificant ripples but did not penetrate the green barrier.

“Mu Laogui?”

Fei Yinghao was stunned, then overjoyed and surprised.

An elderly voice sounded: “Old Man Fei, you now owe me a huge favor!”

At the same time, another voice rang out: “He doesn’t just owe you; he owes me as well!”

The next moment, a purple hued Flames erupted, forming a circle and trapping Lu Wu within the fire.

“Old Huo, you’re here too!

Good, good, good, I owe both of you a favor!

I’ll definitely repay you later, but for now, let’s deal with this youngster first!”

Fei Yinghao said, his eyes fixed on Lu Wu, who was subdued.

At that moment, his calm heart finally settled, panic and terror no longer present on his face, replaced by a cold sneer and ridicule.

“Kid, you’re getting too wild, show some more arrogance if you can!”

“Old Man Fei, stop bickering with him; finish him off to avoid further dreams at night!”

“Don’t let what happened before happen again.”

“Fine, let’s make this place this kid’s Land of Burial!”

Fei Yinghao’s two comrades were clearly aware of the fate awaiting talkative villains and urged action without further delay.

Together, the three elders made their move, the scene making the onlookers’ scalps tingle.

Gutian felt even more thrilled; he hadn’t expected Lu Wu to be so foolish, to have narrowly escaped only to come to Beijing to seek death. Now, Lu Wu must be thoroughly done for.

Yet, just as everyone thought Lu Wu was certain to fall, Lu Wu suddenly looked up at Fei Yinghao and chuckled, “Hey, do you know what despair is?”

Fei Yinghao was taken aback, about to respond when his complexion drastically changed, and he turned to look towards the Fei Family.

At that moment, an extremely dense, chilling Evil Energy erupted, completely enveloping the Fei Family.

It was finished, the Fei Family was utterly doomed, Fei Yinghao had indeed lost all his descendants.

In that instant, a distraught Fei Yinghao turned back, his features twisted in rage as he looked at Lu Wu: “Lu Wu, I will have you—”

“Stop shouting; this is just the beginning. We’ll meet again next time!”

Lu Wu gave a light smile, his body began to disintegrate and vanish.

Clearly, his body here was also just a clone…

# Chapter 430: 427 Create a diversion

Chapter 430: 427 Create a diversion

427

1st Zone, Beijing.

With the shattering of Lu Wu’s clones, so did Fei Yinghao’s heart shatter piece by piece.

At this moment, the entire Beijing plunged into a deathly silence.

Whether it was the two elders beside Fei Yinghao or the crowd that had been watching, at this moment, no one dared to even take a deep breath, let alone speak.

After all, no one had imagined that Lu Wu would dare to come to Beijing, and what was even more unexpected was that he managed to annihilate the Fei Family under the very noses of two elders’ true bodies, along with a clone of another elder, leaving Fei Yinghao childless.

The last thing Lu Wu said as he left, “This is just the beginning,” sent chills down everyone’s spine.

Especially for someone like Gutian, who had offended Lu Wu and was just celebrating Lu Wu’s tragic fate, his heart was pounding wildly now. He even felt that Lu Wu’s final words included a part meant for him.

Endless fear surged up, whitening Gutian’s face.

Of course, compared to Fei Yinghao, Gutian’s complexion at this time could be considered quite good-looking.

At this moment, the expression on Fei Yinghao’s face was twisted to the extreme.

He was someone who placed extreme importance on family, as could be seen from the way he doted on his grandson.

He had poured unimaginable emotion into his family, and now, right before his eyes, his home was destroyed by Lu Wu, when he thought he had saved it, when he thought he had everything in hand.

The feelings he had now, truly, were incomprehensible to anyone else.

“Old Fei, go down and take a look. Maybe someone is still alive!” Mu Laogui by his side suggested, which awoke Fei Yinghao from his stupor.

“Yeah, maybe someone is still alive, maybe someone is still alive!”

Fei Yinghao muttered, his figure flashing with a burst of golden lightning, violently breaking through Mu Laogui’s protection to arrive within the Fei Family residence.

The instant Fei Yinghao landed, his heart sank to the bottom.

All he could see was the endless dark evil energy before his eyes. This evil energy was so dense that the entire Fei Family had turned black; how could anyone have survived this…

“No, someone really is alive!”

In the midst of despair, Fei Yinghao’s eyes suddenly lit up. He sensed the breath of living people, and not just a few, causing him to be shocked and overjoyed.

He quickly sensed the direction of the living, and the surprise and joy on his face turned into ecstatic joy.

“They’re in the secret chamber!

Thank goodness, thank goodness, they’re not dead! They’re all alive!”

That secret chamber had been built by Fei Yun, and at the time, Fei Yinghao had dismissed it as something useless. Little did he think that now, this “useless” thing had saved his family members.

Thinking of Fei Yun, Fei Yinghao’s hatred for Lu Wu surged once again.

“So this is just the beginning, huh? Your beginning hasn’t even started. But old man will wait for you, sooner or later I will cut you into a thousand pieces!”

While issuing a fierce threat, Fei Yinghao headed towards the secret chamber.

He was still very cautious, dispersing the evil energy around before he opened the secret chamber.

“Okay, everyone come out, it’s safe now…”

Fei Yinghao did not finish his words when his face suddenly changed dramatically, and he rushed into the secret chamber.

Inside the secret chamber, around a dozen people were hiding—direct relatives of Fei Yinghao, and also the living people he had sensed. Well, they had been alive just a moment ago.

Just before Fei Yinghao opened the secret chamber, they were still alive.

But now, they were dead.

The cause of death was Fei Yinghao’s isolation of the evil energy.

This group had all been affected by the explosion of Lu Wu’s evil energy, their bodies showing various degrees of evil transformation. This transformation was deliberate on Lu Wu’s part; it was an irreversible process.

This process required evil energy to sustain life.

Once the evil energy was gone, they would die instantly!

And Fei Yinghao was unaware of this. He had deliberately isolated the evil energy before opening the secret chamber, a move that directly caused the death of his family members.

In other words, Fei Yinghao’s family members met their end by his hands.

Such was the method of Lu Wu’s revenge, letting Fei Yinghao personally destroy what he cherished most.

“Pfft!”

Fei Yinghao, realizing what had happened, spat out a mouthful of blood, and subsequently his avatar dissipated.

At the same time, Fei Yinghao’s true body in Zone 3 of the Holy Sect Alliance abruptly opened his eyes, his powerless fury echoing throughout the entire Holy Sect Alliance.

“Lu Wu, I will make you pay with your life!”

This roaring caused the whole Holy Sect Alliance to tremble.

At the same time, back in Beijing.

As Fei Yinghao’s emotions and his clone collapsed together, the other two elders also descended.

After briefly inspecting the Fei residence, they could more or less deduce what had happened.

The complexions of the two elders could not help but change.

“To kill a man and even crush his heart, this lad has some cruel methods!”

“He might have been vile before, but he wouldn’t have done something like this. It seems we’ve released an evil ghost indeed!”

“What do you mean ‘we released’? If there wasn’t an evil ghost in his heart, we couldn’t have let anything loose. And we are victims too, you know? The real releaser of his inner evil ghost was that Zeroer!”

“But he’s targeting us now, first Old Man Fei, and who among us will be next remains uncertain!

Huh!”

While Mu Laogui was speaking, his brow raised, and with a flick of his finger, a black fragment appeared in his hand.

“What’s this?”

Fire Laogui approached as Mu Laogui raised an eyebrow and the corner of his mouth: “This is the lad’s oversight, but it could be the very thing that costs him his life!”

…

Zone 3, Holy Sect Alliance.

At this time, the leaders of the Holy Sect Alliance were left buzzing in their heads by Fei Yinghao’s sudden outburst.

All were confused, not knowing what had suddenly enraged Fei Yinghao.

But they soon found out.

“What? Lu Wu assaulted Beijing, wiped out the Fei Family in front of Fei Yinghao, and then just walked away boldly?”

Upon hearing this news, the upper echelons of the Holy Sect Alliance were all agape and tongue-tied.

No one dared to believe it was true.

“He… he’s gone even more insane!”

Logically speaking, having just been taught a lesson, Lu Wu should have tucked his tail and laid low; no one expected that not only did he not hide, he went straight to Beijing and exterminated the Fei Family.

Such an eye-for-an-eye, this kind of madness chills the spine.

Especially since the Holy Sect Alliance was directly involved in the ambush on Lu Wu.

Some started to regret, “I told you, the Elder Mountain can’t be relied on, we shouldn’t have joined their actions, but you didn’t believe it and wanted those few fragments. Now good, trouble has arisen, hasn’t it?

This time it was the Fei Family, next time it could very well be our Holy Sect Alliance!”

Yet, some were unconcerned, “What’s the use of saying these things now? What’s done is done, what can be done? When the soldiers come, the general will block, and I really don’t believe that Lu Wu could make it over here.

Not to mention our own power here is not weak, you all should not forget that he is still around.

Now that his Fei Family has been wiped out by Lu Wu, it’s even less likely he will leave this place. He will surely wait for Lu Wu to come over; with him and our own power combined, a single Lu Wu won’t be able to make any waves here!”

This unconcerned individual was one of the Holy Sect Alliance’s Three Great Bishops, named Kane, who had insisted on taking action from the start.

At this moment, regardless of the reason, he had to defend his position and uphold the correctness of his decision.

However, just as his words landed, Fei Yinghao, who had just roared and was now gasping for air inside the Holy Sect Alliance, suddenly received a communication from Beijing.

“What? Found him? Well done! Wait for me, I’ll be right there!”

After finishing his words, Fei Yinghao hung up the communication, his face twisted as he roared again, “Lu Wu, this time I will surely have you flayed and dismembered!”

In the midst of his roaring, Fei Yinghao soared into the sky, leaving the Holy Sect Alliance accompanied by golden lightning.

This departure was somewhat abrupt, causing Bishop Kane’s face to show a bit of pain.

He had just said that Fei Yinghao wouldn’t leave, and in the blink of an eye, he was gone without even saying goodbye.

However, after all, Fei Yinghao was one of the Holy Sect Alliance’s Three Great Bishops, a big shot, and his face was quite thick, not showing any flush; his adaptability was also quick.

With his hands clasped behind his back, watching Fei Yinghao disappearing into the distance, he displayed a composed and even somewhat lonesome posture.

“I told you, that group of people from Elder Mountain are the top beings from the previous era, they’ve eaten more salt than that greenhorn Lu Wu has had hot meals, how could they repeatedly fall into Lu Wu’s hands?

It seems, Elder Mountain has already tracked down Lu Wu’s trail, and without a doubt, Lu Wu will soon be paying the price for his reckless actions.”

The other senior members of the Holy Sect Alliance also roughly figured out the reason for Fei Yinghao’s departure, their hearts eased slightly, but some were still not reassured.

“Do you think they might let Lu Wu escape again this time?”

“That’s absolutely impossible!” Kane shook his head and spoke calmly, “As far as I know, both the Zeroer and Lu Haikong’s Divine Split have erupted within Lu Wu.

The Divine Split Explosion requires pre-injection, and during this time with both Lu Haikong, the Zeroer, and Old Li there, Lu Wu won’t have a chance to see Lu Haikong and the Zeroer.

That is to say, Lu Wu now has no cards left to play!

Do you think that a newly-ascended Epic, without any cards left, could survive being hunted down by the enraged Elder Council?”

With Kane’s comments, the heavyweights present finally set their hearts at ease, ready to wait for news of the Elder Council wiping out Lu Wu.

Yet at this moment, there were still some who were not reassured and asked weakly,

“What if they haven’t found Lu Wu, or what if they’ve received false information?”

This person’s incessant questioning was starting to annoy Kane.

“What’s with all these ‘what ifs’? Why don’t you say that Elder Mountain fell for Lu Wu’s diversion, and his real target is our Holy Sect Alliance?”

As soon as Kane said this, all the big shots present laughed.

At that moment, the curious baby who had been bombarding questions was a bit confused, “Eh, how did you know?”

In that instant, including Kane, laughter from all the big shots froze; they turned their heads to look at the curious baby.

As they looked over, the silly yet endearing face of the curious baby slowly began to change.

From the original serious and somewhat silly middle-aged man, he transformed into the cold-faced Lu Wu.

“Yo, everyone, I’m delighted to see you. I came especially to thank you for what happened the other day!”

“Lu… Lu Wu!”

“How is that possible, how can you be here? How did you deceive Fei Yinghao, how did you deceive us!”

“You really don’t need to ask that; alright, alright, time is of the essence, and we have bigger things to attend to. Shall we agree that you guys commit suicide one by one? Considering the outrageous things you’ve done to me, I’ll let you take yourself out. That’s not too much to ask, is it?”

Lu Wu amiably proposed this to the people of the Holy Sect Alliance.

However, this group had no morals and had no intention of negotiating with Lu Wu. Upon hearing this, they immediately turned against Lu Wu.

Subsequently, the big shots of the Holy Sect Alliance quickly reacted. Led by Kane, the Three Great Bishops, and eight other bishops, they immediately surrounded Lu Wu and all simultaneously summoned their Summoned Beasts.

Two to three dozen Summoned Beasts, each at least Epic 0 Star, filled the Holy Sect Alliance’s hall to the brim!

At the same time, all kinds of gadgets, buildings, and equipment that were usable by the Holy Sword Alliance were put into action.

Suddenly, the place where Lu Wu stood was bathed in Holy Light.

Under the envelopment of the Holy Light, the big shots of the Holy Sect Alliance felt slightly relieved, especially Kane, whose face went from its initial embarrassment and panic upon seeing Lu Wu to a calm one and even displayed a touch of excitement.

“Although I’m not sure how you deceived us to get here, it seems you’re a little confused about the situation now!

Asking us to commit suicide? With what mindset did you utter such words?

Do you really think that you are in control?”

“Is that not the case?”

Lu Wu, while curiously observing the Holy Light surrounding him, casually responded.

Hearing this, Kane was almost amused by Lu Wu.

“Is that not the case? How can you be so confident? You are simply an Epic One Star Summoned Beast. Even with four Epic One Star Summoned Beasts and the inheritance from Yukawa Ryuzo, it still doesn’t change the fact that you are an Epic One Star Summoner.

And now, you are facing my Epic Two Star Summoned Beast, plus two Epic One Stars and eight Epic Zero Stars behind me, along with more than two dozen Summoned Beasts above Epic Zero Stars, and the century-old foundation of our entire Holy Sect Alliance.

Facing such a lineup, even Fei Yinghao wouldn’t dare to say such things. How do you, an Epic One Star, have the courage to say them?

Perhaps in just these two short days, your power has broken through to Epic Two Stars? Are you now more powerful than Fei Yinghao?”

After Kane finished speaking, Lu Wu was stunned and couldn’t help but clap his hands.

“You’re quite smart; you guessed it!”

“Eh?”

Kane was taken aback, and before he could react, Lu Wu drew the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword and slashed with an unremarkable strike…

# Chapter 431: 428 Holy Light Angel

Chapter 431: 428 Holy Light Angel

Zone 3, Holy Sect Alliance.

In that region cloaked by Holy Light, as Lu Wuyi struck with his sword, a darkness ignited.

In a world of pure color, any abnormal hue was extremely glaring.

Not to mention the most stark contrast, as Lu Wuyi summoned, from the Second Envoy’s “Despair Abyss,” a sword Qi imbued with an intense richness of death and despair.

This swing of his sword caused the entire Holy Light to begin boiling.

The Holy Light Domain, as if sentient, gave a powerful, unmatched reaction, strenuously repelling Lu Wuyi’s sword Qi.

However, the response from the Holy Light seemed utterly ineffective on the dark sword Qi, having no impact whatsoever.

At this time, Kane, targeted by this dark sword Qi, was directly plunged into the Despair Abyss.

The expression on his face, which had previously controlled everything, even slightly mocking and teasing, froze.

At this moment, he finally realized, he had truly prophesied correctly.

In just two short days, Lu Wu’s power had indeed reached Epic 2 Star, and the strength unleashed by this sword really was nearly on par with Fei Yinghao.

He would die. Under this sword, he would truly die.

Endless despair and fear struck. Kane began a frenzied struggle, but his efforts were utterly futile.

Under this stroke from Lu Wuyi, he was thrust directly into the Despair Abyss that Lu Wuyi had experienced once before.

Kane’s deepest, most desperate fears were evoked, trapping him within where he could not extricate himself, falling into a hell where each day felt like a year, into an endlessly chilling abyss.

After what felt like an eternity, close to dying in the Despair Abyss, on the brink of drowning in the frigid pool, Kane was suddenly pulled out.

“Still alive? I’m still alive? I’m still alive!”

Shocked awake, Kane’s first reaction was one of bewilderment, followed by boundless ecstasy, even bursting into laughter.

Laughing, Kane suddenly coughed up a mouthful of blood.

It was then he noticed something had been sliced in front of him, and it seemed something had been erased from his mind.

He felt like he had lost something, but what it was, he couldn’t remember.

“What could it be? What exactly is it? What have I really lost?

Why does my head hurt when I think about it?

It hurts!

Forget it, if I can’t remember, then it must not be anything important!”

The people nearby affirmed Kane.

“Right, it really isn’t anything important, just your two Summoned Beasts after all!”

“Oh, it was just two Summoned Beasts!”

Confused, Kane responded, then overwhelming pain hit him, and he spat out large mouthfuls of blood; this person, just rescued from the Despair Abyss, fell directly into a coma.

Seeing Kane collapse into a coma immediately after waking up, Lu Wu slowly lowered the longsword in his hand, his emotions growing tender: “Forget it, I will not kill him. After all, I am not some demon!

His two Summoned Beasts sacrificed themselves to save him, I can’t let their sacrifice be in vain!”

However, at this moment, Lu Wu’s empathy sent a chill through the members of the present Holy Sect Alliance.

They all knew very well that Lu Wu was neither moved nor showing mercy.

He was aiming to crush the soul.

For Kane, a Summoner, having his two core Summoned Beasts—nurtured for decades—annihilated, the backlash was enough to ruin his life.

For someone who had been high above others, there was nothing more painful than losing everything and watching oneself inch towards death.

This realization made one shudder.

It also made one sympathize with Kane’s plight.

But they seemed to forget the situation at hand, and while they sympathized with Kane, Lu Wu’s gaze had already fallen on them.

Seeing their gazes, Lu Wu could not help but frown.

“Why are you all looking at me like this? Is what I’m doing not good?

Do you think it would be better if I had killed him?

Isn’t that so? Aren’t you guys companions? Why are you being so cruel?

It seems I have to stand up for this Mr. Kane!”

As soon as Lu Wu spoke, the big shots of the Holy Sect Alliance shivered.

At this moment, no one hesitated.

The strike Lu Wu had just launched and his treatment of Kane had shown them that the current Lu Wu was not someone they could negotiate or converse with.

He was now a madman, and speaking was useless.

“Everyone, together, block him!”

“Initiate the Holy Angel summoning!”

“Contact Elder Fei and tell him to hurry back!”

The members of the Holy Sect Alliance burst forth first, concentrating in the Holy Light Domain.

Ten epic warriors and more than twenty summoned beasts erupted at once, forming a massive Holy Light Cross above Lu Wu’s head.

The intense Holy Light, carrying the will of God, didn’t fall; its mere appearance had a power that could sway hearts.

Even Lu Wu, who was enveloped by the Holy Light and targeted by this Holy Light Cross, couldn’t help but exclaim,

“Deserving of the Holy Light Alliance, this Holy Light Skill is indeed quite terrifying!

But, you people are really despicable.

Having such a powerful skill, you didn’t use it when poor Kane was being hacked at, and now after the hacking is done, you use your skill. You’re really bullying an honest person too much!”

The big shots of the Holy Light Alliance darkened their faces upon hearing this.

They had seen shameless, but this level of shamelessness was rare indeed.

They were bullying Kane?

It was you, Lu Wu, whose sword was too swift and fierce; they couldn’t react at all.

But now, it was Lu Wu who had turned things around on them.

However, they couldn’t be bothered to argue with Lu Wu. Talking was useless; nothing was as effective as simply killing Lu Wu.

“Fall!”

Under the all-out eruption of power by the Elders of the Holy Sect Alliance, the massive Holy Light Cross crushed down mightily.

Lu Wu, who had just raised his longsword, was enveloped by the endless Holy Light.

The next moment, an even purer Holy Light burst forth, vaguely as if angels were chanting, and at the center of the Holy Light, the gates of Heaven seemingly appeared.

The big shots of the Holy Sect Alliance couldn’t help but smile upon seeing this.

This was the most perfect manifestation of the “Holy Light Cross” they had ever achieved.

Until now, they had never unleashed such a perfect “Holy Light Cross.”

This time, the pressure from Lu Wu had unified their will, enabling them to deliver such a perfect strike.

All the big shots were certain that under such a perfect strike of the “Holy Light Cross,” Lu Wu would lose a significant portion of his life, if not all.

After all, the Holy Light had an extremely strong damage bonus against beings as deeply steeped in darkness as Lu Wu.

However, just as they were relishing their victory, a light laughter rang out.

“You people, it’s obvious you haven’t watched dramas or anime. Don’t you know the concept of smokeless damage that exists in anime?

Well, just to clarify, light counts as a type of smoke!”

Lu Wu wasn’t dead!

He’s still full of energy!

The big shots of the Holy Sect Alliance changed their expressions and increased their energy output, making the Holy Light even more pure and brilliant.

They hoped that this method would purify Lu Wu, the sinister being.

However, Lu Wu, who was within the Holy Light, was not hurt at all and even felt comfortable enough to groan.

Bathed in the Holy Light, Lu Wu said with a smile, “Know why I can blend in with you, why I dared to come to you so boldly?

The reason is simple—I can also use the Holy Light!”

As he spoke, Lu Wu, amidst the Holy Sect Alliance leaders’ stunned silence, raised his longsword.

Although in the intense Holy Light, these leaders could not see Lu Wu, as he raised his “Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword,” his body burst out with a pure and holy aura as pure as the light around him.

Next, a shocking event occurred.

The Holy Light Cross, intended to annihilate Lu Wu, started being absorbed by him.

“Is he… is he absorbing the Holy Light?”

“How is that possible!!!”

“He just used a sword so evil, how could he possibly merge with the Holy Light!”

Realizing what was happening, the leaders of the Holy Sect Alliance were on the verge of collapse and unconsciously stopped supplying energy. With no supply from them, the Holy Light Cross lost its energy and was quickly absorbed by Lu Wu, fully exposing his figure.

At this moment, Lu Wu, holding the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword, emitted a holy glow all over his body, and even had nine pairs of Holy Light Wings fluttering behind him.

With this appearance, Lu Wu looked more like a member of the Holy Light Alliance than anyone present.

Seeing him, some leaders of the Holy Light Alliance even couldn’t help but become mesmerized, feeling the urge to kneel before Lu Wu.

How was this a demon?

This was simply the Son of God!

However, in the next moment, Lu Wu snapped them back to reality.

Bathed in the Holy Light and fluttering his wings, Lu Wu raised his hand and struck them with his sword.

“No!”

The leaders of the Holy Light Alliance quickly reacted, rushing to defend as their first response.

Although Lu Wu’s sword was filled with holy light, they were not Lu Wu; once hit by this sword, they would die.

So, they joined forces immediately and raised a Shield of Holy Light to block the sword.

At this moment, the hearts of the leaders of the Holy Sect Alliance were filled with sorrow and indignation.

They finally understood what gave Lu Wu the confidence to confront the entire Holy Sect Alliance.

Both used the Holy Light,

Their attacks, Lu Wu was not afraid of at all and could even absorb them, while they had to defend with all their might against Lu Wu’s attacks.

It was too unfair to fight like this; he was literally using their own power against them!

But what could the Holy Sect Alliance do about it?

They could only hope for the Holy Light Angel soon to be summoned, and for Fei Yinghao to come back in time.

“Hold on, you must hold on, I am summoning right now, I will be able to summon the Holy Light Angel soon!”

“I have also informed Fei Yinghao about the situation here; he will be back soon!”

“As long as we can hold on, we will definitely be able to slay this demon here!”

“Demon, you call someone like me a demon?

Is there such a holy demon?”

At the center of the Holy Light, Lu Wu’s lips curled slightly, and his longsword chopped down repeatedly.

Each strike was an attack that forced the leaders of the Holy Sect Alliance to use all their strength to defend.

Holy Light Sword Qi struck the Light Shield again and again, causing the big shots to flush red, with veins popping and looking like they were about to spit blood.

They were almost unable to hold on.

After all, Lu Wu was now not only an Epic 2 Star entity but had also absorbed the energy they had just unleashed; his power was now off the charts.

They could withstand these rounds of attacks only because they used all their might, backed by their own substantial reserves.

But even with their own capabilities, they couldn’t hold on much longer.

A few more strikes from Lu Wu, and they were going to collapse.

Fortunately, they didn’t need to hold on much longer.

Their trump card was almost ready.

Soon, a voice rang out as if a great burden had been lifted.

“Done! The Holy Light Angel has been summoned!”

With that proclamation, the entire base of the Holy Sect Alliance sprang into action, with decades of energy converging.

The so-called summoning of the Holy Light Angel was, in fact, one of the Sacred Sect Alliance’s trump cards over the last few decades.

Simply put, it involved harnessing the energy of the Sacred Sect Alliance to summon a Holy Light Angel living in the heavenly Secret Realm to aid them in battle.

According to their theories, the Holy Light Angel they summoned would have at least the power of an Epic 2 Star.

An Epic 2 Star Holy Light Angel generally possessed greater power than an Epic 2 Star Summoner; even if they couldn’t defeat Lu Wu, they could at least fend him off for a while.

As long as they could hold Lu Wu back, as long as they could hold him back for a bit longer, Elder Mountain would soon receive the message.

Then, Lu Wu would only have two options, to flee or to die!

And if the Holy Sect Alliance was a bit luckier and summoned an Epic 3 stars Holy Light Angel, then Lu Wu would be utterly doomed.

In the current Alliance, Epic 3 stars was the absolute upper limit.

Such a being appearing would be like squashing Lu Wu as if he were just an ant.

In any case, as long as a Holy Light Angel could be summoned, regardless of their level, the Sacred Sect Alliance would be safe.

Of course, if possible, they naturally hoped the summoned Holy Light Angel would be even more powerful.

Within the expectation of the Holy Sect Alliance, their energy converged swiftly.

Very soon, the energy converged to the critical point, and then a chorus of angelic hymns sounded; soon after, the Heavenly Gate slowly appeared and gradually opened.

At that moment, all eyes of the Sacred Sect Alliance were fixed on Angel Gate, anxiously anticipating the angel that would emerge.

Amid their expectant gazes, an angelic girl with eighteen wings, silver-white long hair, and a golden halo, appearing to be about fifteen or sixteen years old, emerged.

Seeing this girl angel, the people of the Sacred Sect Alliance were struck by immense surprise.

“Epic 2 Star pinnacle, infinitely close to a 3 Star entity!”

“Lu Wu is definitely going to die!”

Amid their boundless joy, the girl angel darted towards Lu Ben.

She was so fast; Lu Wu didn’t even react before the girl angel had reached him!

“Kill him, kill him quickly!”

They saw the girl angel arrive instantly in front of Lu Wu.

At that moment, the Sacred Sect Alliance was thrilled, unable to refrain from shouting out loud.

Finally, the demon who had stormed their headquarters, slain Archbishop Kain’s two summoned beasts with a single sword strike, and absorbed the power of their Holy Light Cross was about to die.

How could the big shots of the Sacred Sect Alliance not be excited?

However, their excitement seemed a bit premature.

Next, a scene that shattered their expectations occurred—the girl angel hugged Lu Wu.

“Are you my Marsda?”

# Chapter 432: 429 Demigod

Chapter 432: 429 Demigod

“Are you my Marsda?”

In the surprised and slightly silly voice, amidst the utterly bewildered expressions of the big shots of the Holy Sect Alliance, the holy angel girl threw herself into Lu Wu’s embrace!

At that moment, the elders of the Holy Sect Alliance felt like they were struck by the Five Thunders Bombarding.

It was as if the world was about to end.

What’s going on here? This was the Holy Light Angel they summoned, which took the Holy Sect Alliance decades of heritage. Why did she just throw herself into the enemy’s arms once she appeared?

Could this angel be blind? This Lu Wu doesn’t look like… well, okay, he does look kind of, you know, remarkably like a good person, but that’s just on the surface, right?

The Holy Angel must not be fooled by Lu Wu’s appearance!

The big shots of the Holy Sect Alliance hurriedly shouted, “Holy Angel, he’s not your master, he is a Demon!

Stay away from him, kill him at once…”

But before they could finish speaking, a terrifying Holy Light descended.

This was the angry Holy Angel girl smiting with Holy Light!

“Nonsense! Marsda is so beautiful and pure, how could he possibly be a Demon!

If you say Marsda is a Demon, I’ll purify you!”

The fuming Holy Light Angel clenched her fists and menacingly roared at the Holy Sect Alliance elders below before turning back to continue hugging the bewildered Lu Wu, rubbing her little face against his.

“Father God truly didn’t lie to me, Ilya would have the best Marsda in the whole world!”

Well, this silly Holy Angel girl, Ilya, came from the Holy Angel Secret Realm.

The Holy Angel Secret Realm is a special place controlled by the Summoned Beasts of the Holy Angels.

It is a kind of Mortal World heaven, but to this day, no one knows the entrance to that Secret Realm, let alone entering the Holy Angel Secret Realm.

However, this does not mean the Holy Angel Secret Realm and humanity have no interaction.

In fact, there is some, at least with the Holy Sect Alliance.

This Secret Realm signed a Contract with the heads of the Holy Sect Alliance, who happened to summon a Holy Angel several decades ago, allowing them to summon some of the lower-quality and lower-status Holy Angels from their Secret Realm.

From that time on, there has been interaction and communication between the Holy Angel Secret Realm and humanity.

Continually, Holy Angels are being summoned from the Secret Realm.

These summoned Holy Angels can freely travel back and forth to the Holy Angel Secret Realm, and inevitably, they bring in some things. Thanks to them, the Holy Angel Secret Realm has gradually taken on some characteristics of the human world in recent decades.

This has made some of the unsanctioned Holy Angels of the Secret Realm curious about the human world.

Especially the one now clinging to Lu Wu.

She has taken a liking to human books, computers, even television, particularly novels.

Yes, the kind of novels that involve sweet romances.

This girl especially adores them.

The angel girl who had no contact with real human society began to believe that every girl in the Mortal World has sweet romances after reading too many of those novels.

This made the girl eagerly anticipate being summoned by a Marsda as perfect as those in the novels, embarking on a sweet romance.

But her status was high; she belonged to the very top echelon within the Holy Angel Secret Realm.

In terms of quality and status, it was impossible for her to be summoned, let alone to contract.

But she was unaware of this, so she waited and waited with great anticipation, until her wings could have been used to support a barbecue, and yet the summoning never came.

All her friends had already been summoned once, all except for her.

Moreover, recently for some reason, her treasured books kept being stolen, and the books that the Holy Angels brought for her were also stolen. She had not received any new reading material for a long time, which made Ilya feel very resentful; she secretly cried several times.

Several times she even thought of trying to smuggle out with the contracted Holy Angels.

But she never succeeded; the last time her mother, who is also the master of the Holy Light Secret Realm, caught her and taught her a harsh lesson, making her cry miserably.

In the end, her father, unable to bear seeing her cry so pitifully, secretly promised to arrange a trip to the Mortal World for her.

Just at that time, the Holy Sect Alliance initiated the summoning ritual, and her father shoved her into it. He didn’t think too much of it; it was just a temporary summoning, merely to humor his daughter.

As she was leaving, Ilya was extremely excited and asked her father if she could have a Marsda.

Her dad, not being versed in otaku culture, had no idea what a Marsda was and thought it was some kind of small toy, so he carelessly agreed. He even indulged her, saying that Ilya would have the best Marsda in the whole world.

Then Ilya arrived.

The moment Ilya laid eyes on Lu Wu, it seemed like fate.

At that time, Lu Wu was enveloped in holy light, wielding the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword, with nine pairs of light wings on his back.

His entire being radiated light, so pure and dazzling even to an angel like myself.

At that moment, he surpassed all the male protagonists Ilya had read about in novels; he was unmistakably the best Marsda in the world that her divine father had spoken of!

So, she rushed over and hugged Lu Wu tightly, refusing to let go.

“I’m so happy, Ilya finally has a Marsda, and Ilya’s Marsda is the best in the world!

Marsda, let’s sign the contract right now!”

Ilya said as she eagerly reached out her hand to Lu Wu.

Then a pure stream of holy light burst forth from the palm of her hand.

As that touch of holy light shone, Lu Wu saw the attributes of Ilya and the light itself.

…

Name: Pure Holy Angel (Ilya)

Power: 2 Star (Epic)

Quality: Demigod

Epic Power: Holy Light

Description: This girl’s quality is surprisingly high, but her brain obviously isn’t quite up to speed.

…

Name: Holy Angel Contract

Description: This is for the contract, yeah, meaning, this silly angel seems to have taken a liking to you, um, any beast would take advantage of this moment to claim her!

ps: Of course, you can also choose to be an even worse creature!

…

Looking at these two attributes, Lu Wu was stunned, while the bigwigs of the Holy Sect Alliance below were scared silly.

“No, they can’t sign the contract!”

They were already struggling to deal with just Lu Wu; giving him an angel nearly as powerful as a 3-star Epic would be the end of them. Wouldn’t it be better just to slit their own throats?

The one responsible for summoning Ilya took action immediately.

“Holy Eye, open!”

A skill was cast upon Ilya.

This skill was not for enhancing Ilya’s power, but to aid her in seeing the truth.

Under the effect of this skill, the image of Lu Wu changed in Ilya’s eyes; he was no longer the holy Lu Wu butbore deeper despair and darkness within him, as well as a strong scent of blood and brutality.

Seeing Lu Wu like this, Ilya’s expression changed.

The bigwigs of the Holy Sect Alliance finally breathed a sigh of relief.

It seemed clear that Ilya had seen through to Lu Wu’s true nature, so she shouldn’t be duped by him now, right?

Indeed, Ilya’s face now bore expressions of anger and hatred.

Were things about to explode, was she about to kill Lu Wu?

“Hmm, even Lu Wu felt that this girl, no matter how silly, should have been frightened by now.”

But unexpectedly, the tears fell from her eyes immediately, and she turned, like an angry little lioness, roaring at the big shots of the Holy Sect Alliance below.

“You, what did you do to my Marsda?

Why did you make my Marsda suffer so much?

You must be the bad guys from the legends, right? This is what they call bullying, isn’t it?

You’re so mean, I will never allow you to bully my Marsda like this!”

Saying this, Ilya turned her head, tenderly cradling Lu Wu’s face with concern.

“Marsda, from now on, Ilya will protect you!

Ilya won’t let the bad guys bully you anymore, please don’t cry, okay?”

At this moment, everyone was dumbfounded.

Lu Wu and the people of the Holy Sect Alliance were both dumbfounded.

Lu Wu was because he sensed that this girl had picked up on his emotions.

The Holy Sect Alliance below was completely confused by Ilya’s words and actions.

What’s the situation? Bullying? Were they bullying Lu Wu?

Doesn’t this girl have eyes?

Couldn’t she see who was bullying whom?

Well, the big shots of the Holy Sect Alliance realized this time that the girl indeed did not have eyes.

She had been completely enchanted by Lu Wu’s appearance; this kind of angel should be sent back sooner rather than later. Keeping her here was useless and could even end up aiding Lu Wu.

They were already unable to deal with Lu Wu alone, let alone with the addition of the Holy Angel Ilya; they would probably lose on the spot.

So, while Lu Wu was still in shock, the big shots of the Holy Sect Alliance initiated the expulsion mode.

“Return!”

“Ah!”

With the expulsion mode activated, Ilya’s delicate body shuddered while holding Lu Wu’s face, feeling her body uncontrollably controlled, and behind her, a sacred gate appeared.

“No, I don’t want to go back like this, I want to protect Marsda!”

Sensing that she was being sent back, Ilya mustered all her strength, desperately trying to shine the Contract Light before being expelled.

At this moment, an old man’s voice came through from the other side of the gate.

“Eh, so soon? Didn’t she just go down? Why is she coming back already?”

With that, the old man opened the door and took a look, and that one glance nearly shocked him to death on the spot.

On the other side of the door, his darling daughter was opening her arms and releasing the contract towards a man with a fierce face, clearly up to no good.

“No!”

The father let out an anguished cry and reached out to pull his darling daughter back.

He managed to grab her, but it was just a step too late. As the father grabbed Ilya, the girl still clenched her teeth and sent her contract to the still bewildered Lu Wu, forcing him onto the path of a beast.

At this moment, the father was beside himself with shock!

He never imagined that his trick to coax his daughter would result in the loss of his darling.

And she was whisked away right before his eyes.

One could only imagine the father’s feelings at this moment.

“I’m going to kill you…”

The father’s sorrowful and angry shout passed through the gate and reached the Mortal World, making everyone within a hundred miles of the Holy Sect Alliance feel the desolation in the father’s heart.

Underneath that cry, Lu Wu felt the immense power of the father.

It was a power that could probably crush him with a flick of a finger!

Luckily, the door closed quickly; otherwise, Lu Wu felt he might have met his end right there.

With a “boom,” the Holy Angel Gate closed.

The father turned to look at his daughter, who since sending out the contract, had maintained a silly smile, as if she also had a Marsda.

Looking at his daughter’s foolish grin, the father felt a fire that he couldn’t let out.

He could only think bitterly about opening the door to kill that boy and perhaps cool off a bit.

However, just as he was about to open the door, a series of footsteps came closer, along with a voice filled with barely repressed fury.

“Where do you think you’re hiding?”

…

On the other side, among the humans.

With the Angel Gate closed.

The Holy Sect Alliance and Lu Wu were both in a brief state of bemusement.

Especially on Lu Wu’s side, he truly didn’t expect that in seeking revenge on the Holy Sect Alliance, he would end up gaining an extra Summoned Beast.

And it was an Epic 2 Star, with what seemed to be a powerful background.

The screaming of her old father still caused Lu Wu to shudder.

Lu Wu was unclear about the true power of Zeroer and Lu Haikong, but he felt that the person behind the door could easily wipe out the Elder Council.

Was this what it looked like to destroy an organization, get a wife and a ferocious father-in-law in return?

Sort of, except the father-in-law seemed a bit scary.

If this were before, Lu Wu’s emotions would probably be more agitated.

But now, while this event caused some emotional turbulence for Lu Wu, it was not much, and Lu Wu soon controlled his emotions.

After regaining control, Lu Wu checked the time.

About 3 minutes had passed since he had made his appearance.

“Judging by the time, there should be two minutes left; you must have notified Fei Yinghao by now, right?

Well then, sorry, but I need to disable your ability to cause me trouble within two minutes!”

Lu Wu’s sudden statement caused a change in the expressions of the big shots present.

Everyone realized that Lu Wu was about to erupt.

But realizing was one thing; being useful was another.

In an instant, before they even became aware or before Lu Wu finished speaking, his outburst had already begun.

A slash, too fast for the big shots of the Holy Sect Alliance to perceive, was unleashed as he spoke.

Without sword light or Sword Intent, a single strike was made.

The Light Shield sustained by a big shot of the Holy Sect Alliance instantly collapsed, and 10 big shots were accurately hit, all grievously injured and cleaved in two.

With one strike, all of the Holy Sect Alliance’s big shots were annihilated.

Their Summoned Beasts also lost their ability to resist in this moment, severely wounded by the backlash due to their masters’ deaths.

At this time, Lu Wu had no intention to further harm these Summoned Beasts.

After executing the strike, Lu Wu stood up and left the Holy Sect Alliance’s hall towards the treasury.

Having infiltrated the Holy Sect Alliance for a while, Lu Wu knew the lay of the land quite well, including the location of the treasury.

He quickly found the treasury…

# Chapter 433: 430 Is it a clone or the original?

Chapter 433: 430 Is it a clone or the original?

Alliance.

At the same time that Lu Wu took down the Holy Sect Alliance.

On the other side, Fei Yinghao finally received news.

However, the news he received did not come from the Holy Sect Alliance.

Since he left the Holy Sect Alliance, he had not paid any attention to the information from there.

He was not in the mood.

Because he had never thought that the Holy Sect Alliance was seeking his help; in his view, if they were contacting him at such a time, there was only one possibility: they wanted to inquire about the reason for his sudden departure.

So he completely ignored the contact from the Holy Sect Alliance.

What a joke, what were they to him?

If their leader had been there, Fei Yinghao might have had some reservations, but without the leader, a bunch of nobodies also wanted an explanation from him, Fei Yinghao?

See if he cared about dealing with them at all!

He didn’t even look at the contacts and messages sent from the Holy Sect Alliance, solely focusing on traveling swiftly.

He just wanted to reach Lu Wu’s hiding place as soon as possible and shred him into a thousand pieces.

However, reality quickly slapped him in the face. Almost at the same time as the destruction of the Holy Sect Alliance, Mu Laogui communicated with him.

He could ignore the message from the Holy Sect Alliance, but he had to answer Mu Laogui, whether it was because of past favors or to hunt down Lu Wu together.

Upon answering, Fei Yinghao’s mood plummeted.

Mu Laogui got straight to the point, apologetically saying, “Old Fei, I’m sorry, we were tricked by him. The clue was intentionally left by him; Lu Wu is not at the location we had pinpointed!”

“Damn it!”

Losing hope of revenge in an instant, Fei Yinghao’s mood was understandably foul.

The device he was using to communicate with Mu Laogui almost got crushed, and right then, the Holy Sect Alliance tried to contact him again.

In his raging fury, Fei Yinghao answered sharply, yelling, “What, does an old man have to notify you bunch of weasels when he steps out?

What are you to meddle in my business?”

Fei Yinghao’s furious response left Wang Yase on the other end completely baffled.

But Wang Yase quickly recovered and retorted, “Lu Wu is on our side!”

“What did you say?” Fei Yinghao was taken aback.

Wang Yase confirmed, “Lu Wu is on our side, he arrived just after you left!”

Fei Yinghao didn’t need Wang Yase to say much more; he understood what had happened, his face twisting gruesomely.

“Fine, fine, fine, luring the snake out of its hole, feinting one way and striking another, right?

What a Lu Wu!”

As he spoke, gold and thunder flickered around Fei Yinghao, and he turned around and hurried back to the Holy Sect Alliance, his actions also heard by Mu Laogui, who was still on the line.

“Old Fei, what are you planning to do?”

“What do you mean, what am I going to do? It’s obvious, isn’t it? I’m going to kill that kid!”

“Don’t go over there; things aren’t as simple as they seem. He wouldn’t show up now without a solid plan. Just hold on, we are almost there!”

“Me hold on? If I wait, he will run away!

Don’t worry, there’s no problem on my end. His elaborate plan is clearly because he fears me, is wary of me.

If he truly had something up his sleeve, he would have killed me already, instead of going through all this trouble.

”

“Alright, I won’t talk anymore, I’ll hurry on my way, you guys come over quickly too!”

Fei Yinghao said and then hung up the communication and dashed crazily towards the Holy Sect Alliance.

Rushing madly, he didn’t hold back the thunder lights emitting from him, which exploded and spread from high in the sky. Everywhere he passed, whether humans or Summoned Beasts, were left dead or injured.

Of course, Fei Yinghao didn’t take these casualties into consideration at all.

The joys and sorrows of humans are incomprehensible, especially for an existence like Fei Yinghao, who wouldn’t care about the lives of ordinary people unless he deemed it necessary.

So, from a certain perspective, for ordinary people.

Epic Level powerhouses could no longer be considered human, but rather uncontrollable, disastrous natural calamities.

On the scorched ground, countless victims looked up at the sky at the flash of golden lightning whizzing past, then down at the chaotic surroundings, feeling an endless desolation within.

Fei Yinghao had returned to the Holy Sect Alliance in just two or three minutes, using the lives of ordinary people and Summoned Beasts as the cost.

And by that time, only ten minutes had passed since he had left the Holy Sect Alliance.

In just ten minutes, returning gave Fei Yinghao a sense of how everything had changed.

The originally majestic and grand hall of the Holy Sect Alliance had collapsed.

The energy that had been accumulated over decades by the Holy Sect Alliance, once towering above the great hall, had also vanished.

Within the hall, including Kane, eleven big shots had died, ten of them, and Kane, although alive, was in a state worse than death.

Beside Kane, there were also about twenty severely injured Epic Level Summoned Beasts.

“This, was all Lu Wu’s doing?”

Seeing this scene with his own eyes, Fei Yinghao could hardly believe it!

Although he did not regard the Holy Sect Alliance highly, he admitted that he wouldn’t have been able to achieve this level of destruction in ten minutes.

Thus, the scene in front of him forced Fei Yinghao to retract the confidence he had earlier, in thinking that Lu Wu was afraid of him and had lured him away.

“No, that’s not right, I almost got tricked!

Everything might indeed be his doing, but the price he paid couldn’t have been slight.

Otherwise, he would be waiting right now for me to come over and face death!”

Realizing this point and seeing the ‘truth’ made Fei Yinghao’s eyes light up, and yes, his eyes really did shine.

His eyes emitted a golden light and countless thunders brewed within them, illuminating not to show special effects but to find traces of Lu Wu.

“He must have just left not long ago, there must still be his scent lingering here.

I must find him!

He just unleashed such a powerful attack, he must be incredibly weak now, if I find him, I definitely can…”

Before he could finish, Fei Yinghao’s speech suddenly stopped.

At that moment, his ferocious face also froze, and large beads of sweat rolled down his forehead.

Simultaneously, a mocking voice resounded.

“Find me? What exactly could you do?”

Lu Wu’s words, like flipping a switch, triggered Fei Yinghao who suddenly went berserk, emitting a hysterical roar: “Kill you!”

At the same time, golden thunder erupted from Fei Yinghao’s body.

A materialized golden lightning gun thrust towards Lu Wu.

Lu Wu’s expression was calm as he reached out and effortlessly caught the lightning gun.

The moment Lu Wu grasped the lightning gun, it exploded.

At the same time, Fei Yinghao opened his own domain, enclosing both him and Lu Wu within a realm filled with golden lightning.

The moment the two entered the domain, Fei Yinghao’s outburst officially began.

Endless golden thunder rained down, instantly engulfing Lu Wu, who had just recovered from the explosion of the Lightning Gun.

This was the domain imbued with the Epic Power by Fei Yinghao.

He had named this domain the Endless Thunder Prison.

Within this domain, Fei Yinghao could unleash nearly unrestricted thunder attacks.

Just like now, every strike of thunder he hurled at Lu Wu was an Epic 2 Star level attack.

If it were a single strike, its lethality might not be considered strong among Epic 2 Stars, but Fei Yinghao was not attacking Lu Wu with just one strike or even ten, but with countless endless attacks.

On average, Lu Wu had to endure about a hundred strikes every second.

This hundred strikes, or rather this second’s worth of attacks, was tremendously terrifying, almost equaling a third or even more of the energy of an Epic 2 Star warrior.

And this attack lasted for several minutes.

The reason his attack could last so long was not because Fei Yinghao was perpetual.

But because his domain had the function of energy absorption and conversion.

Every burst of force within the domain would not dissipate, instead, the domain would collect the energy and return it to Fei Yinghao, allowing him to recycle his energy in an environmentally friendly manner.

Of course, that was only one part; another was that Fei Yinghao was truly fighting desperately.

The activation of his domain consumed five years of his life force per minute, and those few minutes had already cost Fei Yinghao 25 years of his life.

He was genuinely fighting desperately.

Even for warriors of their epic level, a loss of 25 years of life was not to be underestimated.

But to bring down Lu Wu, Fei Yinghao was genuinely ready to risk everything today.

“No matter what, I must hold this kid down, he must die today!”

For epic-level warriors like Fei Yinghao, the Alliance wasn’t actually big, and if they didn’t care about the lives of ordinary people and rushed, they could circle it in half an hour to an hour.

These elders usually were somewhat cautious in Zone 1, not rushing at full speed.

But outside Zone 1, their concerns were relatively minor.

While they usually wouldn’t rush at full speed, if necessary, they didn’t mind causing some ordinary people to die in their haste.

And now was obviously such a crucial moment.

While Fei Yinghao was using his life to suppress Lu Wu, those old farts of Elder Mountain had already hurried over.

Fei Yinghao had even received a message from Mu Laogui, saying they would arrive in no more than three minutes.

This gave Fei Yinghao great confidence.

“Hold on, just two to three more minutes, and Mu Laogui and the others should be here!

Just three minutes and this kid is dead for sure!”

While Fei Yinghao was self-motivating, muttering to himself, a light laugh emerged.

“Dead for sure? Three minutes?”

Inside the domain, with only Fei Yinghao and Lu Wu, this light laughter could only belong to Lu Wu, and indeed it was from him.

Lu Wu, engulfed in endless thunder, opened his eyes and said lightly across the thunder to Fei Yinghao, “Are you sure you can last three more minutes?”

Fei Yinghao sneered, “Whether I can last or not, you’ll see if you try!”

“Alright then, let’s give it a try!”

Lu Wu, amidst the thunder, turned up the corners of his mouth and then gently tapped, causing Fei Yinghao’s expression to change.

This tap from Lu Wu was not for attack but for consolidation!

As he tapped out, the thunder striking Lu Wu no longer dissipated back into Fei Yinghao’s domain but began to gather in the palm of Lu Wu’s hand!

“How is this possible!

How can you possibly absorb my energy inside my domain?”

Fei Yinghao’s face changed drastically, while Lu Wu simply ignored him and continued to absorb Fei Yinghao’s thunder relentlessly.

This absorption put Fei Yinghao in a highly passive state.

He now had two options, either to give up suppression and release the domain, or to increase the intensity of his attacks.

The former would completely ease Fei Yinghao’s side, not needing any further life force consumption, but the cost would be letting Lu Wu escape.

And the latter, the cost would be extremely heavy.

If he endured it, his life force would deplete at a rate unimaginable to himself, and he might even end up perishing alongside Lu Wu.

Letting Lu Wu stay, or perishing together.

That was a tough choice.

At this moment, various images flashed across Fei Yinghao’s mind.

There were recent ones, of him personally killing his own family members, and his grandson Fei Yun dying in front of him, then his thoughts stretched back further, hundreds of years ago to when he led during the era of great disasters.

The journey of hundreds of years flashed by, making the old man seem as though he had washed away his superficial appearance; his originally ferocious expression gradually faded, replaced by a calmness, a calmness of sacrificing life for a greater cause.

“For the Alliance, for humanity, and also for my family, today, you, Lu Wu, must die here!

I will absolutely not allow a demon like you to continue roaming freely.”

Hearing this, Lu Wu in the midst of the thunder was stunned.

“You can even say such things, truly shameless!

What, knowing you’re bound to die, trying to earn a good name for posterity?

I can understand the thought, but don’t those words make you feel disgusted?”

To Lu Wu’s scornful response, Fei Yinghao acted as if he hadn’t heard it.

At this moment, regardless of whether Lu Wu believed it or not, he seemed to genuinely believe in his own words, so he began to increase his output.

His life force began to deplete at a terrifying speed, 10 years, 20 years, 30 years…

As Fei Yinghao’s life force continued to drain, his domain began to change.

The domain continuously shrank, the golden radiance becoming denser.

Eventually, the domain shrank into a small sphere just big enough for two people, and the color of the domain turned to dark gold.

Now, Lu Wu and Fei Yinghao stood face to face.

Lu Wu was heavily restrained, while Fei Yinghao’s life force had already dwindled to an extreme point, at this moment he seemed so aged that even a decaying aura appeared on his body.

But at this moment, he smiled.

He had won!

He had finally won, despite the cost of his life, he still won.

Lu Wu couldn’t leave this sphere, and the people from Elder Mountain had already arrived, several figures were already standing outside.

Lu Wu was certainly doomed!

However, just when Fei Yinghao showed a relieved smile, Lu Wu in front of him suddenly spoke.

“Do you think you’ve won? Haven’t you ever considered whether I standing before you am a clone or the real thing?”

A single sentence directly plummeted Fei Yinghao’s mood from heaven to the abyss…

# Chapter 434: Treasury 431

Chapter 434: Treasury 431

3rd District, Holy Sect Alliance.

Outside that dark golden Thunder Energy Ball Domain.

Elder Zhao, Zhang Mingrui, Mu Laogui, and Old Huo, these four elders had successively arrived. The quickest to the scene was Mu Laogui, who had maintained contact with Fei Yinghao; he arrived a minute before the others successively did.

The Elder Council, save for leaving two guardians behind at Elder Mountain, had mobilized all those who could be deployed, including Epic 3 stars like Elder Zhao and Zhang Mingrui. This highlighted their sheer determination to eliminate Lu Wu.

But upon reaching their destination, their murderous intent dissipated.

Because it was gone.

Lu Wu was gone!

To be exact, it was Lu Wu’s Doppelganger that was missing.

It seemed deliberate; right under their watchful eyes, it faded away bit by bit.

Watching Lu Wu’s Doppelganger disappear, not only did the four heavyweights lose their urge to kill, their whole demeanor fell apart.

After all this rush, they realized they had come all this way just for one of Lu Wu’s Doppelgangers—who wouldn’t be upset?

However, compared to Fei Yinghao, they were still in better shape.

They had merely expended effort, while on Fei Yinghao’s side, it was his Life Force that had been consumed.

And more severe than the draining of Life Force was the mental and emotional torment he suffered.

By now, Fei Yinghao had fully realized that Lu Wu had left that Doppelganger behind specifically to calculate against him.

Once again, he’d been played and manipulated by Lu Wu.

Lu Wu had correctly guessed his deep-seated hatred and fear of Lu Wu’s rapid advancement, knowing that Fei Yinghao would not let him go, even if it meant paying with his life to stop him.

It was a struggle between life and death, a fight to the bitter end.

Having anticipated this, Lu Wu took control of the situation, easily trading his Doppelganger for ninety-nine percent of Fei Yinghao’s Life Force.

Fei Yinghao was indeed foolishly deceived, such that now he had fallen into an indescribably dire state.

Although Fei Yinghao was still alive, he felt worse than dead.

His family was all deceased, a large portion by his own hand.

He’d exhausted all efforts to seek vengeance, but in the end, he became a joke.

A joke with barely any strength left, and who could only watch as he steadily edged closer to his demise.

One could only imagine what Fei Yinghao’s current state of mind was.

The term “utter despair” was enough to describe it!

As Lu Wu vanished, Fei Yinghao, too, lost any desire to control the Domain.

With Fei Yinghao letting go, the dark golden Energy Ball vanished, and he fell from the sky, not even attempting to move as if ready to embrace death and put an end to his suffering.

Watching him like this, even the elders who normally clashed with him could not help but sigh and shiver with dread!

“Killing the man and the spirit, such a ruthless tactic!” they lamented.

As the elders, like Zhang Mingrui, softly sighed, Mu Laogui reached out and caught Fei Yinghao, who was about to fall, preventing a fatal crash.

Yet, despite Mu Laogui saving him, Fei Yinghao showed no gratitude, not even lifting his eyelids.

Whether it was empathy for a comrade’s anguish or something else, Mu Laogui, who did not usually get along with Fei Yinghao, spoke up to comfort him.

“Old Fei, don’t be like this. You need to pull yourself together!”

Fei Yinghao ignored him.

There’s nothing worse than a broken heart.

With a heart thoroughly dead, how could Fei Yinghao respond?

But Mu Laogui didn’t intend to give up.

“Old Fei, you haven’t lost yet, you still have a chance!”

That statement made Fei Yinghao react.

“Chance?”

From Fei Yinghao’s hoarse throat, a voice of profound misery emerged: “What chance do I have?

With this body of mine, I can’t live for half a year even lying still, and I won’t survive to see tomorrow’s sun if I move a bit. What chance could there be?

Even if I were in my prime, so what?

Could I fight against him?”

At the mention of Lu Wu, Fei Yinghao’s expression became extremely complex.

There was boundless hatred, but deeper than that, fear.

He was frightened, truly terrified. Now, even if he were in perfect condition, he might not have the courage to face Lu Wu.

“Mu Laogui, Old Huo, Old Zhao, Old Zhang, we’ve had a century’s worth of friendship. Please help me, give me a quick end.”

“You can die at any time, but Old Fei, are you really content to give up like this?

Think of your family, think of how he treated you.

Don’t you truly want vengeance…”

“Enough, shut up. I’m done for, how can I seek vengeance!

Not even the gods can grant me my vengeance!”

“The gods may not grant you revenge, but the Gate can!” With these words, Mu Laogui made the delirious Fei Yinghao freeze in his tracks.

Right, the Gate could indeed grant him the power to avenge himself upon Lu Wu.

That Pang Duddu, a nobody with just a Fragment, had wiped out half of the Elder Council. If he, Fei Yinghao, could master the power of the Gate, then perhaps he could gain the power for revenge.

Of course, Fei Yinghao knew the power of the Gate was not easily mastered.

If not thoroughly researched, even just entry-level mastery was extremely dangerous, and the slightest carelessness could be fatal.

This was the reason why, despite the Elder Council and the Holy Sect Alliance having Gate Fragments, no one had mastered their power.

It wasn’t that they didn’t want to—it was too difficult, too risky, and they dared not.

Fei Yinghao had previously dared not as well, but now he felt he could take the risk.

“Fine, I’ll gamble with my life!”

Watching Fei Yinghao nod, Mu Laogui showed a relieved smile, yet behind that smile lurked a meaningful agenda.

Mu Laogui’s reassurance to Fei Yinghao wasn’t simply for Fei Yinghao’s sake, but also to create a test subject for themselves.

In fact, since the Dudu incident at Elder Mountain, a dark cloud had loomed in the hearts of the elders there.

For the first time, they came to realize how fragile their lives and authority were, that a mere Pang Duddu could decimate half of their Elder Council.

Then, Lu Wu’s rise further fueled their fear.

They began trying to change the status quo, and the best way to do that was through the Fragments.

If they could master the power of a Fragment, they could change the status quo.

But mastering a Fragment’s power was not easy, especially for high-level fighters like themselves; it was even more difficult. They needed a test subject to gather experience, and currently, Fei Yinghao was the perfect candidate.

Fei Yinghao was aware of this as well.

But he didn’t care; he was a dying man, so why would he mind being used by others?

On the contrary, as someone on the brink of death still being used, it at least showed he still had hope, still had value.

So at this moment, the atmosphere between the two sides was still quite harmonious, until Zhang Mingrui sighed, “I never expected that in just two short days, Lu Wu would set up such a grand chess game.”

This statement made everyone pause.

They glanced at Fei Yinghao, who was expressionless, and seeing that he had no extreme reaction, they started discussing the topic.

“Indeed, starting from Beijing, he calculated against the Holy Sect Alliance, then against Old Fei. His game of chess is truly vast.

What do you think his next move will be?”

“Hard to say,” Zhang Mingrui shook his head, fell silent for a moment, then added, “If I were him, I might take advantage of our departure and strike directly at Elder Mountain!”

As soon as these words came out, the complexions of the five people stiffened once more.

“Well, that’s Old Zhang’s thought. Lu Wu probably wouldn’t do that, right?”

“Yeah, Lu Wu has already used two avatars in succession. It takes a huge toll to condense avatars of Epic level, suffering the agony of mental tearing. How long has he been at the Epic level?

Having two avatars should be his limit, right? Losing two avatars in succession, the cost isn’t small either?

He should be out of strength to make another move!”

Although they said this, the elders were still somewhat panicked.

After all, no one knew whether Lu Wu really had run out of strength or not.

“Ask about their situation over there!”

They contacted Elder Mountain immediately to check on the situation, and the reply they received was that everything was normal.

Zhao Xue’en and the others had just let out a sigh of relief at this answer when the face of an elder over there suddenly changed.

“Something’s not right, it seems someone has infiltrated!”

Upon hearing this, the faces of Zhao Xue’en and the others changed!

“Let’s go back! We’ll talk after we get back!”

Despite their confidence in Elder Mountain’s defenses, feeling that Lu Wu should not be capable of breaking through…

Better safe than sorry!

Moreover, the unexpected moves from Lu Wu were not few and far between.

Who could have imagined that Lu Wu, who just two days ago was a down-and-out fugitive, would suddenly make a move today? Not only did he directly annihilate the Fei Family, but he also crossed regions to wipe out the Holy Sect Alliance, and in the process, he reduced Fei Yinghao, one of the twelve elders and one of the most top-tier figures among them, to his current state.

Every move he made was beyond the predictions of the Elder Council.

If they returned to Elder Mountain too late, it wasn’t absolutely impossible for Lu Wu to take down Elder Mountain directly.

Carrying this concern, the people from Elder Mountain rushed back to Elder Mountain with all their might.

However, because their speed dropped after entering Zone 1, it took them slightly longer to return, about 15 minutes or so.

Fortunately, when they returned to Elder Mountain, there were no accidents.

The two elders who were the guardians of Elder Mountain also figured out what the previous commotion was about.

“It seems to be Lin Jianying. It was as if he deliberately made his presence known!”

Upon hearing this, the expressions on the faces of Zhao Xue’en and Zhang Mingrui changed.

“We’ve been tricked!”

With their intelligence, they saw at a glance that Lin Jianying’s appearance was clearly designed by Lu Wu.

The purpose was to attract their attention and draw them back from the Holy Sect Alliance.

“It seems that when we returned, that kid should still have been at the Holy Sect Alliance.”

“Right, at least he was nearby, or he left behind information that could expose him, which is why he used this tactic to draw us back!”

“If we go back now…”

“Is it still possible at this point? If we go back now, there will be nothing left!”

Realizing they had been outmaneuvered by Lu Wu again, Zhao Xue’en and the others looked terrible, but they were helpless.

After a silence, Mu Laogui was the first to break the silence.

“Forget it. If he’s escaped, let him escape. Dealing with Old Fei’s matter is more urgent!”

This diverted everyone’s attention back to Fei Yinghao, including Zhao Xue’en and Zhang Mingrui.

“Old Fei, are you really willing to take this gamble?”

Zhang Mingrui stepped forward and put a hand on Fei Yinghao’s shoulder, his tone complex but sincere. Fei Yinghao did not buy it at all.

“Enough with the pretense. Isn’t this what you wanted to see?

I am not going to live anyway, might as well do you this favor!”

Perhaps struck hard by Lu Wu, or perhaps facing death, Fei Yinghao was particularly unrestrained at this moment.

Zhang Mingrui didn’t care about Fei Yinghao’s attitude. After all, he was a pragmatist; as long as it benefited him, Fei Yinghao’s attitude was irrelevant.

“Since Old Fei has decided, then open the treasury for him to choose a Gate Fragment, and also select a set of Refinement…”

“No need to choose, just give me the largest fragment!

As for the Refinement plan, use the most dangerous one.

Either it will work, or I’ll go mad with rage!”

In the midst of Fei Yinghao’s hysterical voice, Zhao Xue’en and the others fell into a brief silence, seemingly with some concerns.

Fei Yinghao frowned at this, his voice cold, “What, I’m throwing away my life to pave the way for you?

And you can’t even part with one fragment?”

“Old Fei, you misunderstand us; that’s not what we mean, we are…”

Zhang Mingrui’s face changed, and he started to mediate, but before he could finish, he was interrupted by Zhao Xue’en.

“Fine, let’s do as you wish!”

“Old Zhao, you…” Zhang Mingrui was startled, exchanged looks with Zhao Xue’en, hesitated for a moment, and finally nodded, “Alright, we’ll do it this way!”

In the absence of the Chairman, Elder Mountain was ruled by Zhao Xue’en and Zhang Mingrui, the two Epic 3 stars, along with Fei Yinghao, who was very close to 3 stars.

Now that Fei Yinghao was done for, these two big shots nodded, and the rest of the elders naturally had no reason to refuse and could only agree by nodding their heads in unity.

“Since everyone agrees, then let’s open the treasury!”

Zhao Xue’en spoke, stretching out his hand to produce a seal, and the other significant figures took out their seals promptly as well, although Mu Laogui was a bit delayed.

Nobody minded that.

After all, it was quite normal for him to be slower as he was supporting Fei Yinghao and fumbling for things at the same time.

Soon, the seals of the elders were ready, and even the seals of those elders killed by Pang Duddu were taken out.

Elder Mountain’s treasury was different from the usual treasuries.

The usual treasury contained equipment, buildings, and props, but the Elder Mountain’s treasury was a Secret Realm.

Opening this Secret Realm required gathering the seals of at least ten elders simultaneously, and that was just the prerequisite. Once the seals were gathered, various procedures were required, and the elders needed to perform numerous operations, so it was quite complicated.

Due to several elders having trouble with the operations, especially with Fei Yinghao needing Mu Laogui to handle things, the group of elders finally managed to open the treasury.

However, opening this treasury was just the first step. It wasn’t as simple as being able to go right in once the treasury was opened. After opening it, they needed to communicate with the creatures guarding the treasury, and it was quite troublesome to obtain what they wanted.

Following this series of tasks, Mu Laogui’s complexion looked somewhat unwell.

# Chapter 435: 432 Refinement

Chapter 435: 432 Refinement

In the Holy Angel Secret Realm, within the central building of Angel City.

An angel, atop whose head surged a radiant halo, sat solemnly on the throne.

Below the throne, a frantic old father and an angelic girl who alternately giggled senselessly, pondered deeply, and stood resolute—her mind clearly swirling with a chaotic mix of thoughts—were present.

Observing her daughter’s adorably foolish demeanor, Angel Queen Kasha could hardly suppress her annoyance as her gaze shifted toward the old father beside her.

That look alone was enough to send shivers through the already panicked father.

“Listen, my dear, let me explain!

This matter has nothing to do with me…”

The old father opened his mouth to argue, but he couldn’t quite muster a defense, at which point his darling little girl snapped out of her reverie.

“Don’t be harsh on my Father God!

My Father God is the best Father God in the whole world!

He not only allowed Ilya to visit the Mortal World, but he also gave her the best Marsda in the entire world, and I absolutely adore my Marsda.”

Ilya tilted her head, thinking for a moment, then hugged her old dad, “Mmm, and I super love my Father God too!”

Normally, such a hug would have delighted the old father for half a day, but now, he felt as if his precious cotton-padded jacket had sprung a leak, leaving him feeling cold.

“Oh really? The Mortal World, Marsda?

You’ve done very well!”

Kasha’s glance at the old father made him very uncomfortable.

Viewing this out-of-tune father and daughter, Kasha truly had a headache.

She could never have imagined that in an unguarded moment, her daughter, whom she had nurtured for decades, could give herself away so cheerfully, making her now extremely eager to hit someone.

But what good would hitting someone do?

The problem was how to resolve this issue.

“Where is the guy’s information?” Kasha massaged her temple, trying to remain patient.

Since the matter had turned into a fait accompli, she could only accept it, hoping the fool her daughter had found wasn’t just any oddball.

However, her query ignited her anger.

Below her, both individuals looked utterly confused.

Information? What information?

Kasha felt her heart racing and blood boiling!

“What’s his name, how old is he? What power does he have? How many pets does he own? Most importantly, what’s his character like?”

Kasha was desperate to dig up everything about Lu Wu’s ancestry for investigation.

After all, the person in the contract with Ilya was tied to her for a lifetime. If they didn’t vet him thoroughly, what if he turned out to be a loser?

She’d shatter if Ilya secretly met him alone and came back with children; Kasha couldn’t handle that.

Whether that dreadful scenario would unfold was unclear, but the reaction of the duo before her was already enough to frustrate her.

Angel Ilya’s old father wore a clueless expression, admitting he knew nothing.

Ilya, however, was keen to share, “Ilya knows, Ilya’s Marsda is super handsome and attractive.

He has the same golden halo as Ilya on his head, nine pairs of Light Wings on his back, and he’s holding a mighty sword.

Behind him lies the black abyss of Hell, where endless black flames burn fiercely, terrifying chains stretch towards him, and countless skeleton and Evil Ghosts worship him.

Isn’t he super cool, super handsome, and super powerful?”

The girl recounted the scene she had witnessed, completely and vividly.

She swore she hadn’t embellished a bit, but her mom didn’t believe her.

From the first sentence, she wondered if the girl had secretly been reading human novels again. Was she borrowing the character setting of that lousy protagonist from a human novel?

Just the appearance settings.

Listening to her description and seeing her excited demeanor, it reeked of the Old Appearance Association!

Kasha helplessly covered her forehead and pointed at the one playing dead in her house.

“You, go investigate that person thoroughly. If their character and all aspects are acceptable, bring them to me for a look.”

Then she pointed at her own daughter, “And you, don’t you dare leave without my permission!”

Alliance, Zone 1, Elder Mountain.

Not long ago, a fragment taken from the treasury was delivered to Fei Yinghao’s hands.

Along with it came the plan for refining the fragment.

Refinement of fragments was something the Alliance had learned about through the Zero Organization and the tools used by Zeroers like Yukawa Ryuzo.

The Alliance actually did not know much about refinement itself.

There was a time when someone at Elder Mountain secretly started human trials.

They tried to develop a method for refinement using human lives, but it resulted in the deaths of thousands without yielding any results, and the chairman eventually found out and put a stop to it.

Since then, the Elder Council’s stance on refining fragments remained theoretical.

Although they produced many theoretical plans, no one had ever implemented them. Even if there were secret experiments, they were conducted by low-level summoners. It was the first time someone of Fei Yinghao’s level was personally involved in such an experiment.

Thus, the elders were very focused on this experiment.

It was an experiment that could accumulate precious wealth for them.

To ensure the smooth progress of the experiment and that Fei Yinghao would not perish before it began, the Elder Council quickly prepared everything needed.

Once everything was ready, they sent Fei Yinghao, the Gate Fragment, and Mu Laogui to the laboratory, and the experiment officially began.

Well, the reason for including Mu Laogui was at his own suggestion.

He said he could provide life force to Fei Yinghao since Fei Yinghao was taking the risk for everyone, and he must do his utmost to ensure Fei Yinghao’s safety.

This moved Fei Yinghao somewhat.

But everyone knew that Mu Laogui wanted to take this opportunity to further observe and study.

However, considering that Mu Laogui’s supply of life force could enhance the experiment, Zhao Xue’en and the others agreed.

“Let’s start!”

As soon as he entered the laboratory, Fei Yinghao, eager to begin, immediately grabbed the Gate Fragment.

“Wait a moment!”

At that moment, Mu Laogui, holding the refinement plan, seemed to be studying it, which made Fei Yinghao very impatient, “Mu Laogui, what are you looking at? You don’t even understand this; why are you dawdling!”

Mu Laogui solemnly said, “After all, you are risking your life; I need to familiarize myself with the entire process in case something goes wrong. We only lose an opportunity, but you could lose your life!”

Perhaps sensing Mu Laogui’s sincerity, Fei Yinghao paused and then waved his hand.

“Suit yourself, as long as you’re happy!”

Without further disturbance from Fei Yinghao, Mu Laogui took ten minutes to study the plan thoroughly and then nodded.

“Alright, it’s ready!”

“Finally, I never realized how slow you were, old man.”

Mu Laogui pursed his lips, set aside the plan, and formally started Fei Yinghao’s refinement.

Mu Laogui had limited knowledge about the refinement fragment plan, but the one before him was particularly unique.

It was a plan primarily reliant on spiritual cleansing.

The specific operation involved stimulating Fei Yinghao’s spirit with various items, bringing his spirit to a special state.

Then, Fei Yinghao’s energy would be inputted into the fragment, linking his spirit with the fragment to refine it.

It sounded simple.

But the process was still quite complex.

Mu Laogui found many challenges, all revolving around the core of the refinement fragment, which was Fei Yinghao himself.

He needed to ensure that the spirit was in that particular state, making sure he wouldn’t succumb.

The difficulty was not small, but Mu Laogui felt there was still hope to try.

“The process will probably be painful, just bear with it!”

“You go ahead, I, Fei Yinghao have roamed for over a century, what kind of suffering haven’t I endured?

I can definitely withstand it… Ah!”

Fei Yinghao hadn’t finished speaking when Mu Laogui, following the procedure, administered the first spirit-stimulating potion, instantly causing the bold-talking Fei Yinghao’s face to change, and he cried out in pain.

But Fei Yinghao was indeed not ordinary.

His loud cry was largely because Mu Laogui’s application was so sudden he hadn’t had time to react.

After getting through it, he regained his tough demeanor,

“Continue, I can still take it!”

“Okay!”

Mu Laogui didn’t bother being polite, continuing to inject all kinds of potions into his body.

As various potions were administered, Fei Yinghao’s state became weirder and weirder.

His eyes turned blood-red, his expression fierce, and hysterical roars escaped his mouth.

It was a roar filled with wildness, filled with madness.

“Not good!”

Mu Laogui furrowed his brow, this wasn’t a good state, Fei Yinghao’s current condition was not suitable for refinement; he needed to properly guide his spirit.

“Lu Wu! Old Man Fei, don’t you want to seek revenge against Lu Wu?”

Mu Laogui’s words instantly redirected Fei Yinghao’s attention.

The previously meaningless roar was now imbued with new significance.

The words ‘Lu Wu’ escaped through Fei Yinghao’s clenched teeth.

The voice was chilling to the bone, like it had transmitted from Hell itself.

At the same time these chilling words emerged, Mu Laogui saw the machine behind Old Man Fei light up with a red light, his face brightening—this was the standard for refinement.

Mu Laogui quickly got to work, a surge of green wood attribute energy flowed into Old Man Fei’s body.

“Quick, input the energy into the fragment, imagine the fragment as Lu Wu’s head, you give me your all, furiously squeeze until it shatters!”

Under Mu Laogui’s guidance, the sobbing Fei Yinghao started moving, grabbing the fragment and inputting energy, and more importantly his spirit into it.

“Boom!”

With Fei Yinghao’s spirit and energy inputted into the fragment, his brain felt like it exploded, his whole being buzzing.

When he came to, Fei Yinghao realized he felt none of the prior pain, his entire body incredibly comfortable as if he had arrived in heaven.

This caused Fei Yinghao to completely relax.

However, just as he had begun to relax, a face suddenly appeared before him.

This sudden face was neither gruesome nor ugly, but it filled Fei Yinghao with more terror than any evil ghost he had ever seen because it was the face of Lu Wu.

The appearance of this face plunged Fei Yinghao into an endless purgatory.

Although he had resolved to refine the Gate Fragment and master its power to seek revenge on Lu Wu, he currently had not refined the fragment, let alone mastered its power. In such a situation, he couldn’t even think about revenge.

He didn’t even dare to see Lu Wu.

As soon as he saw Lu Wu, endless fear surged, and Fei Yinghao began to flee in panic.

But at this moment, Lu Wu was like a ghost that couldn’t be shaken off, no matter how he ran, Lu Wu was always right behind him, hitting Fei Yinghao repeatedly with a small spoon.

The attacks from the spoon weren’t strong, and the physical damage was minor, but the damage to his spirit was enormous.

Pursued by such a Lu Wu, Fei Yinghao felt his spirit was about to collapse.

He could do nothing but run frantically.

No matter how he ran, the Lu Wu behind him was still shadowing him closely.

Fear and pain were like the wind, merely following behind Fei Yinghao, pushing him into collapse and despair.

Just as Fei Yinghao fell into despair, the angry voice of Mu Laogui rang out.

“Old Fei, is this all you’ve got? Can’t you be a bit more capable?

You think with this you can seek revenge on Lu Wu?

What kind of foolish dream are you having?”

The roar of Mu Laogui that traveled from the external world to the spirit jolted Fei Yinghao’s spirit, and during his daze, Lu Wu came over and hit him on the forehead with a spoon again.

However, this time, Fei Yinghao didn’t move or panic.

Amid Lu Wu’s tapping, he raised his head and looked at Lu Wu, his mouth curling into a smirk.

“So this is all you can do?”

With cold determination, Fei Yinghao launched a counterattack, furiously pouncing forward, snatching the spoon from Lu Wu’s hand, and pinning Lu Wu down. He swung the spoon ferociously in an attack.

Unlike Lu Wu’s tapping, he used stabbing.

He stabbed frantically, hysterically.

While stabbing, Fei Yinghao also roared, seemingly wanting to vent all the pain Lu Wu had caused him.

Indeed, he did vent, the Lu Wu before him was stabbed bloody and beyond recognition, looking utterly dead.

Looking at the Lu Wu before him, Fei Yinghao wept from extreme joy.

“I did it, I’ve succeeded, I’ve successfully avenged myself!”

At the same time, outside Fei Yinghao’s body, his Gate Fragment also lit up faintly, bringing joy to the faces of Mu Laogui and others because they knew that this signified the beginning of Fei Yinghao’s refinement.

It also meant the official start of Fei Yinghao’s hell.

This point, Mu Laogui and the others knew as well.

Thus, at this very moment, they were extremely concerned about Fei Yinghao, a concern they hadn’t shown in hundreds of years.

“Old Fei must hold on. Even if he is to die, he must complete the refinement of the fragment as much as possible.”

…

In the laboratory, Mu Laogui looked at Fei Yinghao enshrouded in his energy, his mouth curling slightly: “Yes, you must hold on, I’m indeed looking forward to it!”

Meanwhile, in Fei Yinghao’s spiritual space.

Having just vented fiercely, Fei Yinghao got up from Lu Wu’s corpse, wiped the sweat on his forehead with his bloodstained hands, and turned to look at this spiritual world that he had just ignored.

However, as he turned around, the ‘Lu Wu’ who had just become a corpse behind him slowly got up again, raising the spoon in his hand and ‘thunk’—it struck down…

# Chapter 436: 433 Mu Laogui

Chapter 436: 433 Mu Laogui

Fei Yinghao’s spiritual world.

“Thud”

A light sound rang out as a spoon struck Fei Yinghao’s head once again.

Fei Yinghao, who had just taken a deep breath, trembled suddenly and stiffly turned around to see Lu Wu, a bloody and indistinct form, healing rapidly as he attacked him.

At the moment Fei Yinghao turned, Lu Wu had already fully healed.

At this moment, Fei Yinghao’s eyes turned red.

“Die for me!”

With a roar, he pounced again, once more knocking Lu Wu to the ground and launching an even more frenzied attack.

He used every means at his disposal, spoons, rocks, hands, and even his teeth to quickly kill Lu Wu.

His movements in killing Lu Wu were fast and efficient.

And Lu Wu’s healing was even more efficient.

No sooner had he killed Lu Wu than the wounds healed instantly and Lu Wu was again striking him with a spoon.

This drove Fei Yinghao even crazier, causing him to burst out in another round of killing, and to prevent Lu Wu’s resurrection, he even dismembered Lu Wu, but it was still pointless; Lu Wu still revived in an incredibly short time.

Fei Yinghao was now beginning to break down, starting to attack and kill and vent in madness.

But no matter his attacks, his venting, his slaughter, it all ended the same; Lu Wu would still come back to life.

Lu Wu was utterly unkillable!

Moreover, Fei Yinghao also realized that this kind of killing, after the first few times, no longer brought him any satisfaction.

On the contrary, each kill of Lu Wu piled up a sense of fear and despair within his heart, and as these feelings accumulated, eventually Fei Yinghao collapsed.

No matter how much Mu Laogui outside tried to persuade him, he would no longer attack or kill Lu Wu.

He began to give up, to flee.

It all returned to the beginning, but he simply couldn’t escape.

Lu Wu was always right there behind him, like a shadow.

No matter where he fled, he couldn’t shake off Lu Wu.

He tried completely giving up resistance, letting Lu Wu attack him. But every attack from Lu Wu, while faint, was firm. Each one was a pain he couldn’t bear.

He couldn’t stand it, so Fei Yinghao once again tackled Lu Wu to the ground.

This time, he didn’t choose to kill Lu Wu but to control him.

He knew Lu Wu was immortal, so he needed to hold onto him; he was too tired and needed a rest.

Holding onto Lu Wu and controlling his hands did bring Fei Yinghao a brief moment of peace, but soon he found attacks landing on him once more.

Fei Yinghao was stunned for a moment, looking down to see Lu Wu had broken his own arms, hitting him in unimaginable ways.

The peace was gone for Fei Yinghao once again.

In his despair, Fei Yinghao completely erupted; he realized that in this spiritual world, it was impossible for him to have peace.

Only slaughter was the correct path.

He had to kill his way through this relentless purgatory.

With that resolution, Fei Yinghao started to erupt, he began the slaughter anew.

One Lu Wu, two Lu Wus…

Fei Yinghao didn’t know how long he had been killing for, or how many Lu Wus he had killed.

The mechanical slaughter left him completely numb.

And this numbness had to continue, with no end in sight.

One year, two years, three years…

In Fei Yinghao’s spiritual world, he had lost track of how many years had passed.

This endless slaughter, endless fear, and despair had nearly driven Fei Yinghao to complete madness several times.

Luckily, Mu Laogui was still there.

Over these years, Fei Yinghao would occasionally hear Mu Laogui’s voice.

Although Fei Yinghao hadn’t gotten along with Mu Laogui previously, in recent times, Mu Laogui’s voice had become almost the only pillar that Fei Yinghao could rely on to keep going.

If it weren’t for Mu Laogui’s voice, Fei Yinghao felt he might not have made it even one more year.

But even with Mu Laogui’s voice, Fei Yinghao felt he was nearly reaching his limit.

This was a point on which those outside of his spiritual world, including Mu Laogui himself, were most qualified to speak.

Countless years might have passed in Fei Yinghao’s spiritual world, but outside in Mu Laogui and the others’ perception, only a few hours had elapsed.

In these few hours, the fragment in Fei Yinghao’s hands was being refined at an incredible speed.

Previously, the Zeroers had schemed for decades to obtain a single fragment of refinement from Yukawa Ryuzo, enduring various hardships before finally securing one.

Yet here at Elder Mountain, they were close to obtaining a fragment in just a few hours’ time.

This rate of progress, this level of achievement had once filled the people of Elder Mountain with pride.

But their pride didn’t last long as they saw Fei Yinghao hit a critical point of stagnation.

In the first three hours, Fei Yinghao had already refined the fragment to ninety-nine percent.

But that final one percent, Fei Yinghao had been refining for two to three hours without success.

What was worse, Fei Yinghao’s body was also having issues; despite being enveloped in Mu Laogui’s energy, his life force continued to fade.

If this situation continued, Fei Yinghao’s current attempt at refinement was likely to fail.

This left the people of Elder Mountain deeply disappointed, but they were helpless to do anything.

After several moments of silence, Zhang Mingrui spoke up, “Shall we wake him up and have him stop the refinement?”

He made this suggestion not out of concern for Fei Yinghao, but to preserve as much as possible from this attempt at refinement.

By having Fei Yinghao stop refining, they would be able to extract some details about the process from him, making his death more valuable.

Zhang Mingrui’s suggestion was swiftly approved.

But just as they unanimously decided to stop Fei Yinghao’s refining, Mu Laogui disagreed.

“No, we’re just one step away, we can’t give up now.

I have an immature idea, let me try it!”

Mu Laogui spoke and didn’t wait for Zhang Mingrui and the others’ agreement before he started his work, which annoyed them.

Since when had this old ghost become so resolute?

But Mu Laogui had already started, and they had no choice but to let him be, although his first sentence threw them all for a loop.

“Old Man Fei, I have a secret to tell you, I am not Mu Laogui, I am actually Lu Wu!”

What?

When Mu Laogui spoke those words, all the elders of Elder Mountain were astounded.

Zhao Xue’en and Zhang Mingrui both exploded with rage, locking their energy onto Mu Laogui, and as they discerned Mu Laogui’s energy, they shouted, “Mu Laogui, you better explain yourself clearly!

Otherwise, don’t blame us for being merciless.”

Mu Laogui gestured them to wait with a hand and then pointed at Fei Yinghao.

With a point from Mu Laogui, they noticed that Fei Yinghao’s aura had undergone an extremely intense change.

The fragment in his hand started to flicker with light.

Such a scene made Zhao Xue’en instantly understand the so-called method by Mu Laogui.

But he was still a bit nervous, carefully probing Mu Laogui several times and didn’t find any problems with the old ghost.

Zhao Xue’en and Zhang Mingrui exchanged glances, confirming that neither of them had noticed any issue, and only then did they relax.

Then they felt that they might be a bit too nervous.

How could Mu Laogui possibly be Lu Wu?

If Mu Laogui were Lu Wu, then Lin Jianying’s appearance at Elder Mountain previously would have been meaningless.

If he could disguise himself like this, why would he need Lin Jianying to lead them away?

Moreover, they also felt that Lu Wu wouldn’t be so crazy.

After all, Lu Wu isn’t Pang Duddu, he doesn’t have a Fragment, isn’t him barging into Elder Mountain just like sending himself to his doom?

Could he possibly still have confidence in facing the centuries of heritage of Elder Mountain as a brave warrior?

However, although they were thinking this way, Zhao Xue’en and Zhang Mingrui still decided that after everything was over, they had to confirm again. They absolutely couldn’t take this lightly. As for now, they naturally watched Mu Laogui’s performance.

Whether Fei Yinghao could succeed this time depended on Mu Laogui’s performance.

Indeed, Mu Laogui didn’t disappoint them; after ‘blowing his cover’ as Lu Wu, he was whispering in Fei Yinghao’s ear about how he had switched places without being detected, explaining it in a very convincing way.

As Mu Laogui continued to speak, the Fragment in Fei Yinghao’s hand flickered with light.

Those outside of Fei Yinghao’s mental world could only judge Fei Yinghao’s emotions and state by the flickering light.

As for what exactly was happening inside Fei Yinghao’s mental world, they had no clue whatsoever.

In the mental world, Fei Yinghao, who had been tormented for who knows how many years, was finally about to give up when Mu Laogui’s voice rang out again.

Hearing the voice that had supported him through the ordeal, Fei Yinghao at first had a glimmer of hope on his face, but the light quickly vanished.

Because he clearly heard what Mu Laogui said.

“Old Fei, you’re dying, so I might as well be upfront with you.

Actually, I’m not Mu Laogui, I am Lu Wu!”

“I know you think it’s impossible, that it’s false, but unfortunately, it’s true.

When you were rushing to the Holy Sect Alliance, I left a part of myself there and then my true self quickly went to find Mu Laogui.

He had the bait on him, marked clearly for me to find him without difficulty.

After finding him, the rest was easy. Killing an Epic 2 Star elder is as easy as slaughtering a chicken; with one swing of the sword, he was done for.

Then I used a prop to change into his likeness, and with his identity, I came to the Holy Sect Alliance.”

“You know why I came back?

Of course, it’s for you!

Although I’ve already made you kill your own family, deceived you out of ninety-nine percent of your life force, leaving you nothing but a powerless, dying old dog writhing in pain.

But how could I be satisfied with just that?

You are one of the sinners who caused Dudu’s death, I must make you suffer even more.

So I came back, I returned when you were desperate for death, saved you, and in your despair gave you a brand new hope, yes, the new hope named Gate.”

“Do you know why I cooperated with your experiment?

I wanted to be up close to witness your pain and despair. How should I put it, it’s quite a spectacular visual feast.

Alright, seeing you so pitiful and miserable has finally dissipated some of the malice in my heart.

Also, thank you for your cooperation, helping me accumulate valuable experience in the Refinement of the Gate.

Next up, you’re tired, aren’t you? You can’t go on, right?

Well, you can die now. Have a good journey, no, it should be complete annihilation!”

Old Man Mu’s onslaught of words had exploded Fei Yinghao’s mind on the spot.

A single statement completely demolished the mental pillar that had been Fei Yinghao’s support.

At the same time, it also ignited the survival instinct that had been drained from him.

Boundless murderous intent surged forth.

And when this murderous intent erupted, Fei Yinghao was somewhat unclear whether it was directed at Lu Wu or at Old Man Mu, who had sustained him for so long.

He couldn’t distinguish, and he refused to try.

Right now, he just wanted to do one thing—he wanted to escape this endless purgatory.

He wanted to successfully refine the fragment.

He wanted to go out and question Old Man Mu, to find out if what he had said was true or false.

He wanted to find Lu Wu and heap all the misery he had experienced in this endless purgatory back onto him.

“Ah!”

Amidst a hysterical roar, Fei Yinghao rose once more, turned around to face Lu Wu again.

But the moment he turned, he discovered that the Lu Wu in front of him was shattering into bits.

“What?”

Fei Yinghao hadn’t had a chance to react before another cracking sound rang out; he froze, turned his head to look, and saw his fragmented mental world falling apart.

The mental world that had trapped him for untold years had finally collapsed, and a brand-new mental world appeared before him.

And with this new mental world, there appeared a gate flickering with mysterious light.

The moment Fei Yinghao saw that gate, endless strength filled his entire body.

At that moment, the onlookers on Elder Mountain saw the fragment in Fei Yinghao’s hand lighting up, slowly melting into his heart, and strength poured into his body—the once skeletal Fei Yinghao recovered at a terrifying speed.

In the blink of an eye, Fei Yinghao not only returned to his prime, but even reverted to his youth.

Fei Yinghao, having completed the refinement, opened his eyes to the sounds of the Elders’ admiration.

“Not bad, Mu Laogui, your method really worked.”

“We all thought Old Man Fei was a goner this time, but you brought him back from death’s door with just a few words; impressive!”

“This success is all thanks to you, Mu Laogui!”

…

Hearing these words, Fei Yinghao was taken aback.

Then a relieved smile appeared on his face.

It turned out that everything Old Man Mu had just said was to save him—undoubtedly terrific news for Fei Yinghao.

No one could comprehend how important Old Man Mu was to him after experiencing that purgatory.

If Fei Yinghao had opened his eyes only to confirm that Old Man Mu was, in fact, Lu Wu, he feared he might have collapsed.

Thankfully, it was all false.

Fei Yinghao took a deep breath, reached over, and put his hand on Old Man Mu’s shoulder.

“Old Mu, thanks!”

Old Man Mu gave Fei Yinghao a brilliant smile: “No, I should be thanking you!”

The next moment.

“Thunk.”

Fei Yinghao’s heart was directly excavated by Old Man Mu—or rather, by Lu Wu…

# Chapter 437: 434 All Things

Chapter 437: 434 All Things

Section 1, Elder Mountain.

“Pu-chi!”

With a smile on his face, Lu Wu just mutilated Fei Yinghao’s heart, which had just regained vitality and vigor, along with that fragment.

“Thank you, you worked very hard, the Refinement was perfect, I’m delighted!”

Looking at the heart and fragment in front of him, Lu Wu couldn’t help patting the frozen Fei Yinghao before him with admiration on his face.

At this moment, Fei Yinghao had completely rigidified.

The joy that used to be on his face, the moved feelings, the sense of pride – all had vanished.

What replaced them was unimaginable despair and fear.

Fei Yinghao thought that after the baptism and tempering in the Spiritual Space, he wouldn’t fear Lu Wu anymore, but when he actually faced Lu Wu, he was immediately enveloped in unimaginable despair.

“You… you… what you just said, is it true…”

“Look at what you’re saying, am I, Lu Wu, the kind of person who lies?” Lu Wu frowned but quickly relaxed and smiled, “However, I didn’t tell the whole truth, that’s true. After all, I didn’t come entirely for your sake.

After all, I, Lu Wu, am not a devil. Having put you through all this, torturing you a second time feels a bit too cruel, even to myself.

So initially, my goal was directed at your Elder Mountain’s treasure trove.

Who would have thought your Elder Mountain’s vault would be so elaborate, layer upon layer, I couldn’t plunder it. So, having no other choice, I had to resort to tormenting you once more.”

Pausing, Lu Wu then asked Fei Yinghao, “I was compelled to act, you wouldn’t blame me, would you?”

This wasn’t a matter of blame at all.

On hearing this, Fei Yinghao erupted.

He desperately tried to trigger the power of the fragment.

It could kill Lu Wu!

Fei Yinghao remembered, he had refined the Gate Fragment, as long as he activated the powers of the Gate Fragment, he could kill Lu Wu.

With his outburst, the Gate Fragment in Lu Wu’s hand flickered like a strobe light, bright to the eye, but utterly devoid of power.

Fei Yinghao was dumbfounded: “How can this be? Why can’t I activate the Gate’s power?

I clearly refined it, why can’t I trigger its power…”

“Are you really sure it was you who refined it?”

With that single question from Lu Wu, Fei Yinghao realized.

“It was you!”

“Of course, it was me. What do you think I was doing looking at that proposal?

Just taking a look? Do you think I have such idle time? When such a proposal comes into my hands, wouldn’t I help you improve it?

Besides, do you really think you could refine that fragment without my improvements?

Please, at least half of the credit for refining that fragment belongs to me, if not more.

I even provided the Energy needed for the refinement; you were merely responsible for going through the challenges of the Refinement process.”

Upon hearing this, Fei Yinghao understood completely.

It turned out that after all his efforts, all the hardships he endured, he was merely a pawn in Lu Wu’s hands.

“Looking at you, it seems you’ve understood. So, I won’t say much more.

You must be tired; rest well.”

Lu Wu said gently, casually snapping his fingers, the Gate Fragment in his hand withdrew all the Power imparted to Fei Yinghao.

As the Power of the Gate Fragment was retracted, this elder who had been tormented over and over again by Lu Wu today, his body rapidly aged and dried up, eventually turning into a withered skeleton and passed away completely.

It was an exceedingly painful and desperate process.

But throughout it, Fei Yinghao didn’t utter a word or make a sound of suffering.

Even an expression akin to relief, as if a burden had been lifted, showed on his face.

Clearly, for Fei Yinghao, who had been broken by Lu Wu, this was the best and most desired ending he could hope for at the moment.

As Fei Yinghao died like that, chills ran through the spines of the other elders of Elder Mountain.

Their gazes towards Lu Wu filled with a deeper dread, as if looking at a venomous snake, a demon.

They had witnessed with their own eyes how Fei Yinghao had been toyed with by Lu Wu in just one day.

As they watched Lu Wu, Lu Wu also turned his gaze upon them.

“How is it? You’ve had so much time, surely you’ve discussed or prepared how to deal with me by now?”

Lu Wu toyed with the heart in his hand, and when they didn’t respond, he continued, “What are your plans for me? Will the two Epic 3-star beings burst forth and take me down in one fell swoop, or will you activate some sort of Elder Mountain mechanism to trap me?”

The elders of Elder Mountain remained silent.

Honestly, they were confused.

They hadn’t expected Lu Wu to infiltrate their ranks, let alone to this extent.

How to deal with Lu Wu was a real headache for them.

If possible, naturally they wanted to take down Lu Wu, to seize the refined fragment.

That was the best outcome they wanted, but they dared not make their move, because Lu Wu’s performance today was too terrifying; they didn’t dare to act recklessly.

The most important point was that they could not confirm whether the one before them was Lu Wu’s true self or a clone.

“What’s the matter? Does the decision to act or not cause you such a headache?

Or have you grown old and your hearts have become timider, afraid to take a gamble?

Since you’re afraid to gamble, let me analyze for you the possible outcomes if you decide to make your move.

Well, first let me start with a fact about myself.

I believe you can guess what my Epic Power is by now, but I think it might be a bit one-sided, so I’d better explain to you the full scope of my Epic Power myself.”

“My Epic Power is called “All Things”. It allows me to simulate and transform into various Skills, Energy, and even character auras.

As long as I have come into contact with it, if I’m willing, I can take on any form.

I can become Fei Yinghao, I can become Mu Laogui, I can even make my clone have the same aura as my true self.”

With those words, it finally dawned on those at Elder Mountain.

Having been toyed with by Lu Wu for the entire day and having witnessed him kill Fei Yinghao right before them, they were acutely aware of the terrifying extent of the Epic Power called “All Things”.

At the same time, it cast further doubt on whether the Lu Wu before them was a clone or the real deal.

Of course, that wasn’t the most important thing.

For Elder Mountain, what mattered most was the Gate Fragment in Lu Wu’s hands and the methods he used today.

If the former were to erupt, the consequences would be unthinkable.

As for the latter, if Lu Wu was a clone, they truly lacked the confidence to withstand Lu Wu’s retaliation later on.

Looking back at Fei Yinghao’s fate,

These elders were really caught in a bind.

Whether to act or not to act.

“But this matter can’t be left hanging indefinitely. It’s something that definitely needs to be dealt with.”

So several big shots exchanged glances, trembling with trepidation, and after kicking the ball around with their eyes, they all turned their gazes to Zhao Xue’en.

He was the second-in-command of the twelve elders, and in the absence of Chairman Li, he was the one in charge.

Now, even if he was reluctant, he had to step up.

So, with great reluctance, Zhao Xue’en stepped forward.

“Xiao Lu, ah…”

“Either call me by my full name, or don’t bother—we’re not close!”

Lu Wu slapped the smiling Zhao Xue’en as he approached, leaving Zhao slightly startled, but he quickly acted as if nothing had happened.

“Alright, alright, Lu Wu it is. You might not know, but I actually had a relationship with your father…”

Zhao Xue’en obviously was trying to pull some strings, but the moment he mentioned Lu Haikong, Lu Wu exploded on the spot, “Don’t mention that old bastard to me. The suffering I’m going through right now, ninety-nine percent of it is still because of that old scumbag!

Damn it, if it weren’t for that old scumbag, I wouldn’t be in such a miserable state right now.

And another thing, if you’re really that close to that old bastard, why didn’t I see you hold back when you attacked my wife?”

“I…”

Zhao Xue’en was left dizzy from Lu Wu’s sudden outburst.

“Enough, don’t bother with the superfluous talk. Tell me, I’m here in your territory right now, holding onto the Gate Fragment you want, and I’ve just killed one of your elders.

This act must be somewhat malicious in nature.

So, what’s your plan to deal with it?

Are you going to take direct action and kill me now? Or are you going to be magnanimous and let me go?”

“Of course, I would advise you to be more forgiving, after all, I’m not afraid of being struck by Thunder!

And another thing, you know what I’m like; I’m quite forgiving.

The person who just lay down is on the first page of my notebook, and I haven’t thought about the next phase yet. I’d advise you to think it over carefully!”

With this barrage from Lu Wu, the faces of the elders present all darkened.

For someone to barge into Elder Mountain and be so arrogant, Lu Wu was the… oh, his wife is one, his dad is another, and the Zeroer is yet another one.

Alright, it seems there are quite a few who act arrogantly in Elder Mountain, but unfortunately, they’re all people Elder Mountain can’t afford to provoke.

Among those people, the only one who had paid the price was Lu Wu’s wife, Dudu. But when Dudu paid the price, hadn’t Elder Mountain also suffered?

Half the elders were gone.

No one could be sure, if they angered Lu Wu and he set off the Gate Fragment, how many of the remaining four elders could survive.

If it ever came to that, what Lu Wu would lose might just be an avatar, but what they would lose would definitely be their lives!

“How about this, you leave the Fragment behind?”

Zhao Xue’en tentatively suggested a deal with Lu Wu, who seemed quite agreeable.

“Sure!”

As Lu Wu spoke, he lightly tapped his forehead. Just as Zhao Xue’en and the rest of the elders were getting excited and hopeful that Lu Wu was easy to talk to, the Fragment in Lu Wu’s hand started to shine.

The shine Lu Wu wielded was completely different from the struggling flicker Fei Yinghao had just triggered.

Fei Yinghao’s was a desperate flickering, while the Fragment in Lu Wu’s hand was a continuous burst of brightness.

Moreover, as the Fragment brightened, its power was activated, and Zhao Xue’en and the others could clearly sense a terrifyingly formidable Energy brewing.

This caused their faces to instantly lose all color.

They realized that if this force were to brew or, to say, erupt, the Power would surely be no less than the one Dudu had previously unleashed.

“Stop, stop, stop, let’s talk this over nicely, alright?”

“Isn’t this what you proposed? Leave the Fragment behind, and I’m doing just as you said! Why don’t you people keep your word?”

Zhao Xue’en and the others went pale.

Was this what they meant by leaving the Fragment behind?

But they were out of options, with Lu Wu clearly not willing to reason with them, and he had made his stance clear.

Even if he detonated the Fragment, he would not leave it behind.

This was utterly frustrating and they were back to square one.

And while they were tangled in their thoughts, Lu Wu chillingly added, “This piece of Fragment, I plan to use it to resurrect Dudu—it’s what I most want to do with it.”

His message was crystal clear.

He was only carrying the Fragment to save someone; he wouldn’t misuse its power.

This purpose should have been what the Elder Council preferred to see, giving them a way out, and Lu Wu hoped they would take it.

Of course, if they refused to take it, Lu Wu would not rule out triggering the Fragment and blowing up both the person and the way out.

Having had his say, the Elder Mountain side was left utterly without options.

After another round of hot potato, Zhao Xue’en could only stand out again.

Taking the floor once more, he didn’t talk about keeping the Fragment; instead, he repeatedly discussed Dudu’s matter with Lu Wu, tirelessly explaining that all of this was the Zeroer’s doing and had nothing to do with Elder Mountain—they were also victims.

If possible, Elder Mountain would like to help Lu Wu against the Zeroer.

Whatever Lu Wu needed, they would support, determined to eradicate this world’s cancer once and for all.

“Enough, no more beating around the bush. You just tell me straight, are you going to let me go or not?

As for cooperation, let’s talk about that after you’ve let me go!”

Zhao Xue’en and the others exchanged looks and nodded, “Alright, you can think it over regarding the cooperation!”

Subsequently, the elders of Elder Mountain carefully made way for Lu Wu.

And they served and escorted Lu Wu respectfully, even obsequiously, out of the door.

It was an extremely ironic scene.

Just a few days ago, these big shots had reduced Lu Wu to dust and made him flee in disgrace.

And now, just a few days later, they were this humble in front of Lu Wu.

In their own den, beneath their watchful eyes, Lu Wu had killed one of their comrades, and rather than retaliating, they were serving him with such caution, fearing they might anger Lu Wu.

Such a scene shattered the worldview of the staff members along the way in Elder Mountain.

But they didn’t care.

Under their servitude, Lu Wu exited Elder Mountain unobstructed.

“That’s enough, we don’t need to go any further, you don’t have to see me off!”

Once out of Elder Mountain, Lu Wu pocketed the Gate Fragment, waved his hand, and prepared to take off into the air.

However, just then, the four elders who had been so careful and gentle suddenly erupted, tearing off their disguise and attacking brazenly!

Striking at the moment they thought best, when Lu Wu was most relaxed and off guard…

# Chapter 438: 435 Infinite Clones

Chapter 438: 435 Infinite Clones

Outside Elder Mountain, Area 1.

As Lu Wuyi took a step forward,

the elders, who had just been cowering and respectful, suddenly attacked.

Their attack was not an impulsive burst but a well-thought-out, meticulously planned fatal blow.

Zhao Xue’en and Zhang Mingrui, two Epic 3 stars, one sealed the space, the other controlled Lu Wu’s energy.

Either of these Epic 3 star beings alone was enough to suppress the Epic 2 Star Lu Wu, let alone both attacking together.

Their timing caught Lu Wu at his most relaxed moment; he did not even have time to react before he was suppressed.

At that same moment, the remaining two elders struck.

One chopped off Lu Wu’s arm, dislodging the refined “Gate Fragment” from him, the other blew Lu Wu apart directly.

This series of actions, though described slowly here, happened in an instant.

Lu Wu, who had just been in control, vanished in the blink of an eye.

Such were the tactics of these four elders.

After all, they were members of the Twelve Elders, standing at the pinnacle of the Alliance for centuries.

They had seen and experienced more schemes and events than Lu Wu had had meals.

Such beings were not so easily manipulated by Lu Wu.

Their prior submission was merely to lull Lu Wu, to shift the battlefield, avoiding conflict near the lab and aiming to preserve Fei Yinghao’s experience in refining the gate fragments to the greatest extent.

Once they lured Lu Wu out, they handled him in minutes.

It was swift and decisive.

However, after the deed, the elders couldn’t help frowning as they watched Lu Wu’s body dissipate inch by inch.

“Is it still a clone?”

This wasn’t the result they truly wanted, but it was somewhat expected.

“If it’s a clone, let it be. At least the fragment remains. If he had taken it, the consequences would have been unimaginable.”

The elders shifted their gaze to the fragment left by Lu Wu,

Specifically, Zhao Xue’en and Zhang Mingrui, the two Epic 3 stars.

A gleam appeared in their eyes.

It was a covetous glimmer for that particular fragment.

This wasn’t just any fragment; it had been newly refined and could grant a wish.

Possessing such an item could bring unimaginable benefits, hence both Zhao Xue’en and Zhang Mingrui desired it for themselves.

But this was a delicate matter.

So the two of them looked at each other and hesitated to speak.

However, a tense atmosphere began to emerge between them.

Just as they seemed on the verge of turning on each other for the fragment, the other two elders couldn’t sit by silently.

“I suggest we use this fragment to track down Lu Wu. He’s a major trouble, and if we don’t deal with him quickly, we might end up following in Old Fei’s footsteps,” Old Huo suggested.

“I agree!”

Zhao Xue’en and Zhang Mingrui both nodded.

Their straightforward answers relieved Old Huo. However, just as he relaxed, he suddenly saw Zhao Xue’en and Zhang Mingrui both reaching for the Gate Fragment.

“I knew it, Old Zhao, playing the saint!”

“You were the first to make a move, don’t accuse me of theft!”

As they saw each other’s actions, they cursed and counterattacked, continuing to reach for the fragment.

Just as these allied elders who had smoothly subdued Lu Wu were about to turn on each other, a “crack” sound rang out.

Subsequently, a mysterious power erupted.

“Not good!”

The four elders’ faces changed, and even Zhang Mingrui and Zhao Xue’en, disregarding the fragment, stepped back cautiously to observe the “Gate Fragment.”

As they watched, the fragment began to violently pulsate,

making it feel like an erupting volcano, utterly terrifying!

The elders’ tension and anxiety skyrocketed, and just as their stress peaked, another “crack” sounded, and the “Gate Fragment” shattered, vanishing with all traces.

“What happened?”

Zhao Xue’en and the elders were baffled and rushed over to see. Upon closer inspection, their expressions changed.

They confirmed once again that the piece they had intercepted wasn’t a Gate Fragment but just a worthless rock.

“How could this happen?

How could the Gate Fragment turn into this?”

Old Huo was utterly confused.

While Zhao Xue’en and Zhang Mingrui both frowned and pondered.

They tried to figure out where the problem occurred.

When had Lu Wu swapped the Gate Fragment?

Suddenly, a realization dawned on the elders.

“There!”

Immediately, they rushed towards Elder Mountain, precisely towards the lab.

“Old Zhao, Old Zhang, why the rush? Did you figure out where something went wrong?” Old Huo, puzzled, followed them.

“The problem is at the lab!” Zhao Xue’en said, squinting his eyes.

“Do you remember how many people were there at the lab?” Zhang Mingrui asked.

Old Huo recalled, “Besides Lu Wu and Old Man Fei, there were a bunch of almost unnoticeable Cultivation Masters!”

“Exactly, those Cultivation Masters. If Lu Wu could disguise himself as Mu Laogui to infiltrate, disguising as a Cultivation Master wouldn’t be difficult.”

“But wasn’t he already disguised as Mu Laogui…”

“Who told you he could only disguise as one?” Zhao Xue’en said coldly.

Old Huo suddenly understood, “You mean, Lu Wu sent two clones into Elder Mountain, one disguised as Mu Laogui and the other as an ordinary researcher.”

“Right, he took the opportunity while explaining his abilities to us, secretly passed the ‘Gate Fragment’ to another clone, used ‘All Things’ to simulate the fragment’s aura, and while the Mu Laogui clone distracted us, the other took the chance to escape.”

“One more thing, this last one, is very likely not a clone!

With three clones already deployed in such a short time, even he has limits.

This wave of clones cost him a lot, and it would take him years to recover, so I am sure the one inside is eighty percent the real body,” Zhang Mingrui asserted.

The elders, upon hearing this, suddenly perked up.

They all knew what this meant—it meant they had a chance to resolve the issue of Lu Wu once and for all.

Thus, they rushed forward with even greater urgency.

As they rushed, their orders were also issued: the entire Elder Mountain was sealed off. Without their command, not even a fly could escape. Today, they intended to ensure that Lu Wu remained within Elder Mountain.

They thought this would be a challenging endeavor.

At the very least, finding Lu Wu’s original body wouldn’t be easy.

But they were wrong. When they returned to the laboratory, they saw the trembling researchers and Cultivation Masters, and Lu Wu in the center of the lab, reviewing various data reports.

The moment they saw Lu Wu, the group of old men was stunned, but they quickly recovered and looked at Lu Wu with wariness in their eyes.

Conversely, Lu Wu appeared quite calm; he even checked the time.

“Three and a half minutes, about what I expected. I must say, that was somewhat slow.”

Zhao Xue’en and the others had a change of expression, about to say something, when Lu Wu put down the documents in his hand and turned to look at them.

“By the way, I think I only introduced my ‘Epic Power’ to you guys; I forgot to introduce the ‘Epic Power’ of my pet, silly Han.

Hmm, you should be familiar with the cloning process, right?”

Lu Wu’s topic shifted abruptly, leaving the old men confused. They couldn’t grasp how Lu Wu could discuss his pet’s ‘Epic Power’ in such a situation, let alone how he jumped from the topic of ‘Epic Power’ to cloning.

Regardless of whether they understood or not, Lu Wu directly said, “Cloning essentially boils down to two key points: energy and spiritual power.

Theoretically, given infinite energy and spiritual power, one could endlessly create clones.

Of course, that’s just theory, and realizing this theory is quite challenging.

After all, finding materials that match the energy is hard, and the agony of mental divide is too torturous and damaging.

Thus, typically, those of Epic Level might have just one or two clones, which they might have spent years, or even decades, to obtain.

If slightly more, usually they would not exceed five, and that too would risk reducing their strength.

But I am different!”

Lu Wu said, looking up with a grin at the elderly men before him, and under their partially guessed assumptions, he stated clearly, “My ‘Epic Power’, All Things, allows me to create clones from any material, however trashy, it only affects the usage time.

The ‘Epic Power’ of my silly Han allows me the liberty to squander spiritual power.

That means, the precious clones for you are quite cheap for me.

Those above Epic Level still require some effort to create, but those below Epic Level, if I wish to make them—it’s simply very easy and effortless…”

As he spoke, this very body of Lu Wu suddenly collapsed.

Then, Lu Wu’s voice appeared from another corner.

“I can make as many as I want.”

This sudden shift dramatically changed the expressions of Zhao Xue’en and others.

However, this was just the beginning; before they could recover, Lu Wu’s figure changed again.

“You know what this means, right?”

“It means,”

“If I wish,”

“I can appear beside you at any time, in any guise you cannot imagine.”

“It also means that I am an entity you cannot capture.”

“Lastly, let me say this, gentlemen, congratulations, you’ve made it onto my little list,”

“Until we meet again!”

With each sentence, a new clone appeared.

In the duration of this conversation, Lu Wu had used nearly ten clones, an act that thoroughly bewildered the elders at Elder Council.

Especially Lu Wu’s last statement.

The chilling words caused even Zhao Xue’en and Zhang Mingrui, both Epic 3-star entities, to feel a visceral sense of fear.

At this point, they clearly understood why Lu Wu suddenly pulled such a stunt.

His purpose was simply to keep this group living in fear and suspicion.

Countless indistinct clones, the ability to disguise reality with illusion, meant that every person they encountered daily might actually be Lu Wu himself.

Just the thought of this was enough to cause a breakdown, let alone experiencing it directly.

“Seal the mountain! Seal the mountain for me!”

“Issue the order, from now on, nobody enters or leaves Elder Mountain without our direct command!”

From Zhao Xue’en’s final tone, it was clear that this group of elders was completely panicked.

……

Elsewhere, within the Land of Burial in the Changping Secret Realm,

Lu Wu’s original body slowly opened his eyes, rubbed his throbbing temples, and could not help but emit a suppressed groan of pain.

Evidently, manipulating Elder Mountain so easily was not as simple as he had made it appear.

Especially the last move of switching clones continuously had drained Lu Wu significantly; he didn’t think he could casually use clones like that for some time.

Fortunately, Lu Wu had mostly accomplished what he had intended to.

“After experiencing that final move, those old ghosts at Elder Mountain are likely too scared to step outside for the time being.

Next, without surprises, they should be focusing on researching the Gate Fragment Refinement method I left them.”

Hmm, Lu Wu did not eliminate the refinement method when he returned.

He could have—it would have been a simple task.

But that was unnecessary.

Why remove it? Isn’t it better to leave it for Elder Mountain? Lu Wu was still counting on them to help him refine the Fragment.

Given the current state of Elder Mountain, as long as he wished, he could keep track of their refinement progress.

Hence, Lu Wu decided to be more generous.

He not only decided to leave the plans behind but even planned to assist them in optimizing periodically, to help them better refine the Gate Fragment.

Whenever Elder Mountain achieved results, he would go and congratulate them.

Of course, if they were sensible and insisted on giving him the Gate Fragment when he arrived, Lu Wu would reluctantly accept it, wouldn’t he?

But that was a matter for the future.

Compared to that Gate Fragment, what currently concerned Lu Wu more, or rather what he was more eager about, was that piece.

He had already obtained the Fragment from Fei Yinghao; he could have it in his hands within a day at most, and then he would be able to revive Dudu.

Thinking of reviving Dudu excited Lu Wu!

If he weren’t genuinely unwell right now, he would really like to go retrieve the Fragment himself…

# Chapter 439: 436 Epic 2 Star

Chapter 439: 436 Epic 2 Star

Zone 3, Holy Sect Alliance ruins.

A middle-aged man in his thirties or forties, dressed in hemp clothes, squinted his eyes at the ruins before him.

How does that saying go?

Seeing the mountain as not a mountain!

Yes, seeing the mountain as not a mountain!

The scene in this middle-aged man’s eyes was somewhat along those lines.

Where others saw ruins, he saw how these ruins came into being.

From when Fei Yinghao left, to when Lu Wu himself appeared, to his foolish daughter being summoned, sold off in a matter of minutes, then dragged back, and finally to Fei Yinghao’s return.

And how Lu Wu used his clone to scheme against and finally kill Fei Yinghao, even seeing the vision of Lu Wu himself going after Mu Laogui and morphing into him.

After seeing all of that clearly, the old father couldn’t help but inhale a sharp breath of cold air.

He suddenly felt that the mortal world was so complex, the path through society so slippery; he wanted to return to the Holy Angel Secret Realm.

Truly, he was completely stunned by Lu Wu’s tactics.

Although everything was hard to slip past his eyes, having such vision had come at no small cost.

He couldn’t possibly keep it active at all times.

If he were really targeted by Lu Wu, calculated against by Lu Wu, this old father felt it would be quite unbearable.

“Wait, he’s my daughter’s contractor, so we’re basically family, right?”

Upon thinking this, the old father felt a lot warmer towards Lu Wu.

“Smart and methodical, and quite powerful too. Most importantly, he’s fairly good-looking, possesses half of my past charm. I just wonder how he treats his Contracted Beasts.”

Although initially, this old father wished he could smack Lu Wu, the scoundrel who dared to take away his precious daughter.

But now, having come to the scene himself, he realized it wasn’t the other party who acted first. In fact, it was quite passive; it was his daughter who crazily desired the other’s body and actively made the contract.

This slightly elevated Lu Wu in the old father’s perception.

Of course, all this was based on the premise that this incident had occurred and his wife knew about it.

And it was his fault, most importantly, the contract was already established, which was irreversible. Under these circumstances, this old father could only hope Lu Wu was a good person.

Yes, in the truest sense of the word—a genuinely good person.

He didn’t expect much, just that Lu Wu would unreservedly treat his daughter well, cherish her like a treasure, just as they did.

Of course, if Lu Wu turned out to be something like a eunuch, that would be even better in old father’s view.

The old father stroked his chin, pondering.

“Maybe, find a chance to secretly castrate him?”

…

Zone 1, Changping Secret Realm, Land of Burial.

Lu Wu shivered as he was forcefully pulled over and pressed onto Little Skeleton’s bony structure, ‘enjoying’ the massage from Little Skeleton.

Little Skeleton (What’s wrong? Is Little Skeleton’s massage very comfortable?)

“Yes, extremely comfortable, you’re practically popping my skull open!

Really, Little Skeleton, my head doesn’t hurt anymore, you don’t need to massage it anymore!”

(Can’t do, Little Skeleton must take good care of Lu Wu, Little Skeleton must massage Lu Wu!)

The little guy’s eyes sparkled with light, firmly stating that Little Skeleton would never give up.

At the same time, it pressed down Lu Wu, who was trying to get up, firmly onto its thigh bone, dazing Lu Wu with each tap on his head.

Lu Wu felt a bit distressed by this.

But in the end, he didn’t struggle.

He offered only symbolic resistance before letting the little guy do as it pleased.

This made Little Skeleton very happy.

Mimicking massage techniques seen on TV, it carefully massaged Lu Wu while constantly asking.

Does it feel good?

Would you like to sign up for a membership card?

Strong vibes of a bath center.

Lu Wu almost couldn’t help asking if there was any ‘big treasure sword’ available.

Little Skeleton turning out this way was actually a recent development.

It had noticed the emotional changes in Lu Wu lately, and although it couldn’t pinpoint exactly what was wrong with Lu Wu,

it felt that Lu Wu was unhappy, very sad.

So, whenever Lu Wu had time recently, Little Skeleton would stick by his side, trying every means to cheer him up.

The little guy’s methods were quite clumsy.

But it had indeed managed to relax Lu Wu, playing a comforting role.

Not because it was talented, but because, for Lu Wu, it was the best antidote.

After all, it had been the little guy by Lu Wu’s side since he started his journey through this world.

It had also been raised by Lu Wu every step of the way, his pet.

If Dudu was the human Lu Wu valued the most, then Little Skeleton was the existence he valued just as much.

Especially after experiencing the loss of Dudu, Lu Wu became even more indulgent towards Little Skeleton.

Because this little guy was now all he had left.

If it wasn’t for putting it behind, where would Lu Wu have the patience before? Kneeling with Little Skeleton? Was his brain broken? Kneeling with Indeks wouldn’t do? Must it be Little Skeleton?

But now, Lu Wu unexpectedly felt at ease beside Little Skeleton.

While enjoying Little Skeleton’s massage, Lu Wu opened his current attribute panel.

…

Name: Lu Wu

Power: Epic 2 Stars

Summoned Beasts: Little Skeleton (Epic 2 Stars), Silly (Epic 2 Stars), Little Golden Dragon (Epic 2 Stars), Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword (Epic 2 Stars), Holy Angel (Gray)

Origin: 0

Epic Power: All Things

Description: With your bushy eyebrows and big eyes, you’ve finally started upgrade mode.

…

That was the current power of Lu Wu.

He himself was at Epic 2 Stars, and all his pets had also reached the Epic 2 Stars level.

And to think, just a few days ago, when he was attacked by Elder Mountain, his power was merely at Epic 1 Star.

His pets were also at Epic 2 Stars. In just a short span of two days, everyone in Lu Wu’s command had upgraded by 1 Star.

Though it was just a small 1 Star, the difference that one star made could be described as heaven and earth.

After all, it had reached the Epic Level now, and the gap between each star was as wide as the heavens and the earth.

This interval separated not just power but also time.

In this regard, Ibaraki Gangyan had the most say.

He had once advanced to Epic 1 Star during an unexpected encounter, and afterward, he fell into a stagnation of power that lasted for hundreds of years.

Not making any progress for hundreds of years was also why he initially witnessed why “Divine Wrath” was maddening.

Well, if Ibaraki Gangyan knew that the barrier that troubled him for hundreds of years had been broken by Lu Wu in just two days, and moreover, broken while taking his family along, he probably would have been jealous to the point of deformation.

Of course, Lu Wu’s breakthrough to Epic 2 Stars within two days seemed simple.

But it was merely seeming.

They had no idea that this matter was even simpler than the momentum they saw.

While others were tirelessly battling, collecting materials, venturing into the Secret Realm, risking their lives for a chance to progress further, Lu Wu simply absorbed three Gate Fragments, and then his system obtained Origin points, and after that, it became even simpler.

Adding points, naturally, was touching where it wasn’t bright, casually adding points would increase his power.

Three fragments, precisely allowing Lu Wu’s four pets to all reach Epic 2 Stars.

They all advanced, and Lu Wu’s power naturally increased as well.

The whole process was so relaxed it was a mess, and it was the first time Lu Wu tasted what it was like to truly cheat.

This kind of point-adding cheat, once started, felt much better than the previous broken system.

What need for learning? What need for effort?

Wasn’t this simple point-adding great?

Indeed, cheating, just like cross-dressing, only happens zero or countless times, and Lu Wu had become addicted after just one time.

He was even pondering, after getting the fragment from Fei Yinghao, once he revived Dudu, he would absorb the fragment, and that refined fragment should be enough to elevate his power to Epic 3 Stars, right?

Once he reached Epic 3 Stars, Lu Wu would be considered at the pinnacle of the Alliance, and he could then start planning his next steps.

What kind of magnanimity did Lu Wu have? He wouldn’t let go of the related individuals just because Dudu revived.

The elders at Elder Mountain, the Zeroers, and Tie Xiong— he wouldn’t let any of them go.

Looking at the attribute panel, pondering slightly about the future, Lu Wu’s head tilted.

He had surprisingly fallen asleep during Little Skeleton’s massage.

During the massage, Little Skeleton looked at Lu Wu, who had deeply fallen asleep, its Pupil Fire flickered, and then a skull head shook left and right, checking the surroundings like a thief.

Once confirmed that there was no one around and no beasts either, this little guy’s Pupil Fire brightened, and immediately took out a blanket from Little Skeleton’s phone to cover Lu Wu, then this little guy’s Pupil Fire took on a shape of satisfaction.

Looking at how skilled it was, it was obviously a habitual offender.

It must have often stealthily done things while Lu Wu was asleep.

Indeed, the spirit of covering one with a blanket wasn’t something a mere Lu Wu could suppress.

…

While Lu Wu entered a sweet dreamland.

On the other side, the Little Golden Dragon was busy.

What it was busy with was a courier task, and what it was delivering was precisely the fragment that Lu Wu had procured from Elder Mountain.

Lu Wu had prepared early in the morning, with Little Golden Dragon waiting in command near the lake by Elder Mountain, and once Lu Wu was successful, the fragment was sent to it for it to take the water route to deliver it into Lu Wu’s hands.

Lu Wu’s plan was quite smooth.

The Little Golden Dragon’s courier task was relatively smooth as well.

It mostly went unnoticed on its way, smoothly leaving the range of Elder Mountain, taking the water route, and entering the Immortal River to continue downstream.

The so-called Immortal River was the river from Lu Wu’s previous life.

However, the Immortal River of today was much wider, deeper, and more dangerous than the river from Lu Wu’s previous life.

Moreover, countless Summoned Beast tribes inhabited the Immortal River, stirring up some trouble annually. Unlike Lu Wu’s past, the banks of the Immortal River were unsuitable for human habitation.

There were no cities nearby, and human activity was rarely seen, apart from a few Alliance institutions along the way, established to suppress the Summoned Beasts of Immortal River.

It could be said that, within District 1, the Alliance’s influence was weakest here.

By taking this route, Little Golden Dragon could avoid detection by the Alliance to the greatest extent and safely deliver the “Gate Fragment” into Lu Wu’s hands.

But there is no absolutely safe path in this world.

Even the safest path can become dangerous due to human factors, just like now.

Descending from Elder Mountain, Little Golden Dragon, who was unhindered in the midstream of the Immortal River, suddenly stopped.

Its sensitive senses detected something amiss, so it halted.

Almost at the moment it stopped, a voice resounded.

“Yo, noticed, eh? You’re quite a remarkable little loach!”

Simultaneously, a figure appeared behind Little Golden Dragon, garbed in a black robe.

Matching the black robe was the overwhelming Evil Energy emanating from him.

This intensity of Evil Energy was certainly among the top two of all people Lu Wu had encountered.

Given such Evil Energy, the identity of the person calmly standing before the Epic 2 Star Little Golden Dragon wasn’t hard to guess.

Of course, it wasn’t hard for Lu Wu.

For Little Golden Dragon, however, it was still a challenging task.

Fortunately, Little Golden Dragon had no intention of guessing who this person was.

Upon seeing the robed figure, it immediately opened its mouth and sprayed.

A stream of golden Dragon Breath shot directly at the opponent.

“Very pure Dragon Breath, powerful Dragon Power, even carrying a hint of an era’s essence. It seems you’ve had quite the adventure. Lu Wu must have reached Epic 2 Star thanks to you, right?

I heard you were left to him by Lu Haikong. For his son, Lu Haikong really took great care!”

As the robed figure spoke, he raised his hand and directly blocked the Dragon Breath from Little Golden Dragon.

Seeing this, Little Golden Dragon, after spewing a breath of Dragon Breath, turned and ran straight toward the most dangerous location it sensed, prompting the robed figure to raise his eyebrows.

With a snap of his fingers, endless black chains emerged at the spot Little Golden Dragon rushed into. It seemed Little Golden Dragon would be trapped; however, it opened its mouth and sprayed once more.

But this time, it wasn’t Dragon Breath—it was a fragment.

The expression of the robed figure changed.

He immediately abandoned the attempt to trap Little Golden Dragon and dashed toward the fragment, grabbing it in his hands.

Holding the fragment, the robed figure frowned.

“Fake?”

Simultaneously, Little Golden Dragon spat out another breath of Dragon Breath.

“Mischievous!”

The robed figure chuckled lightly, clenched his fist, and endless chains trapped Little Golden Dragon. A black fist struck Little Golden Dragon’s body, dealing a severe injury and forcing the real fragment out of its body.

The robed figure grasped the fragment, his face lighting up with joy, knowing it was genuine.

Just as he was about to strike at Little Flood Dragon, another presence approached, causing the robed figure to hesitate and then, holding the fragment, he turned and left.

At the same time that the robed figure departed with the fragment, Lu Wu, who had been sleeping in the Changping Secret Realm, opened his eyes, clearly sensing something but showed no anger, rather a cold smirk crossed his face.

“Throwing out bait randomly, I didn’t expect to really catch a fish!”

# Chapter 440: 437 transactions

Chapter 440: 437 transactions

“The mantis stalks the cicada, unaware of the oriole behind.

Indeed, compared to those who show themselves openly, we who watch from behind are certainly more prudent.”

The man in the black robe, or should I say, the First Envoy of the Zero Organization, Zhang Chen, was fiddling with the fragment in his hand, squinting his eyes and smiling with pleasure.

At this moment, he once again felt that his decision to avoid the direct conflict when Lu Wu previously targeted the Zero Organization was absolutely correct.

Although with his power, he could have easily killed Lu Wu with a slap.

But if it weren’t for that decision, he wouldn’t have been able to acquire this freshly refined, soft-looking Gate Fragment.

While Zhang Chen was pleased with himself, an old voice came from nearby, “But you’ve exposed yourself now, haven’t you?”

If Lu Wu were here, he would have recognized that the old voice belonged to Tie Xiong, who had once freeloaded at his place and was the very person Lu Wu was most urgently searching for at the moment.

Tie Xiong, looking at Zhang Chen who was fondling the fragment and shaking his head, said, “I think your previous decision was indeed correct, but this time you were a bit impulsive!

Even somewhat risky!”

“For such a fragment, it’s worth the risk and worth exposing myself,” Zhang Chen replied, narrowing his eyes.

“Lu Wu has been acting very strangely lately, and you didn’t see how he played around with the elders from Elder Mountain.

Listen to my advice, return the fragment and keep hiding for now; just avoid making waves for a while.”

Isn’t it said that avarice leads to peril.

Faced with Tie Xiong’s suggestion, Zhang Chen decisively chose to refuse!

“That’s really unnecessary. The Elder Council is the Elder Council; I am myself.

Their being manipulated by Lu Wu is their own problem. Whatever tricks Lu Wu has are useless against me.

No tricks are a match for absolute power!”

“Besides, I might have exposed myself, but as long as Lu Wu doesn’t know that I’m the one who acted and can’t trace it back to me, I’m essentially still hidden. As long as I don’t stir up any trouble next, he can’t do anything to me!”

Seeing this, Tie Xiong realized that Zhang Chen had firmly decided not to hand over the Gate Fragment and didn’t bother to say more, simply getting up to leave.

“Old Tie, where are you planning to go?”

“I feel it’s not safe here anymore, and I’m planning to relocate somewhere else to avoid Lu Wu finding me,” Tie Xiong replied candidly.

“That’s really unnecessary!”

Zhang Chen frowned, pocketed the Gate Fragment, and walked a few steps, “Old Tie, just rest assured and stay here; he is not going to find this place!”

Tie Xiong glanced at Zhang Chen’s movement and showed a sneer, “What? You’re not planning to let me leave?”

The chilly tone made Zhang Chen pause.

Zhang Chen had to admit that he indeed harbored the thought of stopping Tie Xiong from leaving, to be more precise, he was coveting the Gate Fragment in Tie Xiong’s possession.

But at that moment, hearing Tie Xiong’s words and seeing his expression, Zhang Chen ultimately chickened out.

“Where did that come from? If you could say such a thing, I can only respectfully see you off, Brother Tie.”

Tie Xiong couldn’t care less.

He snorted as a response and then quickly stood up and left.

He had a premonition that this “Old Tie” would likely be in trouble soon and that this place would likely be exposed.

Meanwhile, on Zhang Chen’s part, after seeing off Tie Xiong, his expression became solemn.

It was clear that he wasn’t as calm or confident as he appeared.

After this move, he was somewhat nervous, especially after Tie Xiong’s departure; he felt even more that this place might not be safe.

“Although I am not afraid of that young brat Lu Wu, trouble is still something to be avoided as much as possible!”

Zhang Chen said and then also left.

His departure covered tens of thousands of miles.

Leaving the base, he crossed several Secret Realms and finally stopped in a Secret Realm that Zhang Chen felt was the most concealed, even a place only known to him.

After settling down, Zhang Chen was still busy.

He busied himself for most of the day and only then felt completely at ease.

Looking at all his preparations, Zhang Chen proudly said, “I’ve hidden so far and made so many preparations; not even Lu Wu, perhaps not even the Zeroer could find me easily, right?”

“Yeah, that does seem a bit difficult!”

Suddenly, Lu Wu’s voice rang out, causing Zhang Chen to shudder, his face showing an incredulous expression.

He stiffly turned his head around.

As he turned, Zhang Chen saw a young man standing behind him, a handsome young man with a bright smile, who, at the moment Zhang Chen turned, also reached out to wave at him, “Hey, hello there!”

Hello my ass!

Seeing Lu Wu in that instant, Zhang Chen split in shock.

He couldn’t comprehend how, despite his efforts to hide so far away, Lu Wu managed to track him down.

Zhang Chen snapped back to reality, “The fragment? Is there something wrong with the fragment?”

“Isn’t that obviously the case?” Lu Wu replied with a light chuckle.

“But I thoroughly checked it; I didn’t find any tricks on the fragment!”

“All the energy in the fragment is mine; what tricks do I need to play?”

Ah, that was why Lu Wu dared to use the fragment as bait.

During the refinement of the fragment, Lu Wu had been providing energy, while Fei Yinghao was merely a substitute performing spiritual refinement for Lu Wu.

After the refinement, all the energy within the entire fragment belonged to Lu Wu.

Lu Wu’s control over the fragment reached over ninety-five percent.

That was also the reason why Lu Wu didn’t bring the fragment back himself.

With such control, whoever possessed the fragment, without eliminating Lu Wu’s energy, wouldn’t be able to use it and would instead be continually located by Lu Wu.

Thus, Lu Wu wasn’t in a hurry to retrieve the fragment but let Little Golden Dragon leisurely carry it around.

Lu Wu wanted to see if he could use this fragment to lure out those hidden in the background, specifically Tie Xiong.

As the one who had given the Gate Fragment to Dudu, Tie Xiong had always been the primary target in Lu Wu’s notebook.

He wouldn’t miss any opportunity to capture Tie Xiong, not only to avenge Dudu and uncover the truth but also to obtain the fragment that Dudu had used previously.

Because Lu Wu couldn’t guarantee that the fragment he had refined would be able to revive Dudu, he set his sights on that very fragment after refining this one.

Ultimately, he did manage to lure someone, but it turned out not to be Tie Xiong, which somewhat disappointed Lu Wu.

“Looking at you enveloped in evil energy, you must be from the Zero Organization, and if I’m not mistaken, you’re the First Envoy, right?

So let me ask you, do you know where Tie Xiong is?”

Lu Wu merely asked casually, not expecting the other party to nod resolutely: “Yes, I do!”

This straightforward response left Lu Wu somewhat unresponsive.

What made Lu Wu even more unresponsive was Zhang Chen’s subsequent behavior.

As soon as he uttered ‘I do,’ Zhang Chen, who had just looked incredulous and somewhat panicked, cracked a smile.

“How about we make a deal?”

Lu Wu was startled, then his lips curled into a smile.

“It seems things are getting interesting, alright, tell me, what kind of deal?”

“It’s simple, you give me the fragment, and I’ll give you Tie Xiong’s location.”

With that, Zhang Chen took out a device: “I’ve already tampered with him earlier, and now you can track him down with this device in your hand, you can confirm it first if you don’t believe me.”

As he spoke, Zhang Chen tossed the device in his hand toward Lu Wu.

Lu Wu’s eyes lit up, and he caught the device thrown at him, playing with it in his hand while a mocking smile appeared on his lips: “It seems you’ve been prepared to betray your teammates from the start, huh?”

“Let me correct that, we’re not exactly teammates, more like acquaintances.

Besides, selling him out is something you wanted to see, isn’t it?”

“That’s also true!”

“Alright, no more nonsense, you better check the device now, and if there’s no problem, let’s start the deal!”

“How do I check it?”

“Input energy into it, you don’t need me to teach you that, do you?”

“Oh, got it!”

Lu Wu nodded his head and injected energy into the device immediately.

Once Lu Wu input his energy, Zhang Chen’s eyes lit up, seizing the opportunity to initiate his prepared setup.

“Whoosh!”

The opponent moved quickly, and before Lu Wu could even react, Zhang Chen’s preparation had already been activated.

The device in Lu Wu’s hand sprouted black vines that tightly bound him, and at the same time, Zhang Chen grabbed a Gate Fragment at his feet and pressed it against the ground.

As the Gate Fragment was pressed onto the ground, energy from the fragment began flowing into Lu Wu’s body.

“Done!”

Zhang Chen’s face lit up with joy.

By this time, Lu Wu had also seemed to realize.

“It looks like you knew about the Gate Fragment from the start, you staying so far away wasn’t to avoid me, but to buy time to set up this trap, right?”

Zhang Chen grinned: “After all, I’ve lived for over a century, seen plenty of plotting and scheming, especially surviving under the Zero Organization, my living environment is much harsher than the Elder Mountain with those old guys.

They’ve been comfortable for decades not knowing the dangers of machinations, I survived by relying on them.”

“So, I saw through your little fishing trick at a glance.”

Lu Wu shook his head: “Since you saw through it, why did you still fall for it?”

“Of course, because I was confident I could swallow the bait you threw!

Just look, hasn’t everything gone according to my plan?”

Zhang Chen smirked, a smile of masterful control on his face: “The moment I got the fragment, I knew, the fragment in your possession, you could not only know my location but even possibly my actions.”

“So from the moment you got the fragment, you’ve been acting all along, right?

Pretending to be blinded by self-interest, overconfident and foolish, all to lower my guard to the fullest and carry out this operation?”

Zhang Chen nodded his head: “The self-interest wasn’t feigned, it was real greed, but the rest was pretty accurate.”

Lu Wu smirked: “So what’s your plan next? To kill me?”

“No no no, I don’t have the time for that, nor the courage, after all, I’m not sure whether the one before me is a clone or the real you, and I don’t want to offend you.”

“You’ve done all this, and you still don’t want to offend me?”

“I just wanted to ensure the maximum safety of the deal, the device I gave you is real, it can indeed track down Tie Xiong, as for my actions, it was just to clear your energy from the fragment.

Might be a bit drastic, but you agreed to our deal earlier, didn’t you?”

Lu Wu just smirked and said nothing, and Zhang Chen didn’t waste more words but focused fully on the task.

Three minutes later, Zhang Chen successfully extracted the energy belonging to Lu Wu from the fragment.

“Done! Mr. Lu, our deal is considered complete now, the binds on your body will release automatically in five minutes, I’ll take my leave first.”

Having said that, Zhang Chen collected the fragment, and without waiting for Lu Wu’s response, he turned and ran.

Lu Wu, however, remained bound in place, silently watching Zhang Chen departing.

What Lu Wu didn’t know was that this scene had been observed by an individual, well, more precisely, an angel.

Unquestionably, that angel was Ilya’s old father.

He had just come over from the Holy Sect Alliance, relying on forbidden power to track down Lu Wu and witnessing this scene.

Watching Lu Wu bound and immobile.

Watching the bait Lu Wu threw easily swallowed by someone else, even spitting out the hook, the old father suddenly felt this young man was perhaps not so formidable after all.

The tricks played by others were much sharper than Lu Wu’s.

Additionally, as an observer with a God’s view, the old father thought he was much smarter than Lu Wu, he knew from the start there was something off about that Zhang Chen, and if he were in Lu Wu’s place, he would have certainly slapped Zhang Chen down right from the start, and everything would be settled, what a scene that would be.

Thinking this way, the old father suddenly felt superior.

“My wife always says our father and daughter are not very smart, she’s defaming us.

Ilya might have been a bit foolish, but I think I do alright!

Certainly better than that lad below.”

Thinking again about Lu Wu’s maneuvers in the Holy Sect Alliance, the old father suddenly thought maybe he could do it too.

While the old father was feeling somewhat smug in his God’s view, the bindings on Lu Wu’s hands suddenly released, and a smile appeared on Lu Wu’s previously silent face, the device he was holding “cracked” and shattered.

“These old foxes are indeed a bit tougher to deal with than the Elder Mountain, to catch a big fish, one needs to up the stakes continuously, hope this time the stakes I’ve raised are enough to lure that one in as well!”

As he spoke, Lu Wu’s figure disappeared from the somewhat puzzled old father’s eyes…

# Chapter 441: 438 Resurrection

Chapter 441: 438 Resurrection

Leaving from Lu Wu’s side, Zhang Chen held that one fragment and returned to District 1, returning to this place he had not visited for decades.

No one is born destined to be someone, and neither was Zhang Chen born destined to be the First Envoy of the Zero Organization.

Before becoming the First Envoy of the Zero Organization, he was an ordinary person who wasn’t even a summoner.

Living in a small city in District 1, he ran a fruit shop and managed a small family of three.

If his life trajectory hadn’t deviated, he might have spent his entire life in that fruit shop, tending to his wife and children.

Such a life, for the current Zhang Chen, was something desirable but unattainable.

However, for the Zhang Chen of that time, it might have been slightly mundane.

He occasionally thought it would be great if he could become a summoner, if he could become powerful, if he could have thrilling adventures and a magnificent life.

Indeed, living in that era, which man could genuinely content himself with watching others lead exciting lives while resigning himself to mediocrity?

Even if resigned to his fate, he still had his fantasies.

Like those adults who loved sports esports, knowing they couldn’t compete but still finding ways to indulge themselves.

Zhang Chen’s way of indulging himself was through collecting.

Well, to be precise, collecting summoner items.

He used to save some money each month to go to specific markets in the city to collect various items.

Those so-called specific markets were actually black markets.

Markets tailored for ordinary people.

The items sold there were remnants from summoner battles.

Special personnel would collect them through specific channels, such as logistical support from secret realm agencies, competition agencies, even from battle sites or law enforcement logistics.

Through various channels, items that were useless to summoners were collected and sold at these black markets.

These markets held no value in the eyes of summoners but were relatively high-end and filled with dreams and miracles for ordinary people.

People often found treasures in these markets and made a fortune overnight.

Zhang Chen used to frequent these markets daily, partly due to his longing for the world of summoners and partly harboring the fantasy of becoming rich overnight.

Perhaps the earnest are rewarded by fate.

Or maybe it was the onset of misfortune.

Zhang Chen, who frequented these markets, indeed stumbled upon his own rare encounter.

While browsing the market, an object inadvertently entered his body, and he could clearly feel its presence.

He could even feel power surging within his body.

Caught up in ecstasy at the time, he didn’t think much further and hurried back home, fearing others might notice his abnormality.

Once home, Zhang Chen began to research the strange encounter he had gained.

This research irreversibly thrust him into a profound abyss.

To this day, he had completely forgotten what had occurred that day.

Partly because the time was too distant, and partly because his brain deliberately blocked that painful memory, he only remembered that his house had been stained red with blood that day.

It was also on that day that he lost his family, and he himself became a wanted person by the Alliance.

From that day, he began his flight, and he embarked on the adventurous, impressive life he had initially longed for.

In just a few decades,

he went from being an ordinary fruit shop owner to becoming the First Envoy of the Zero Organization, a figure of absolute prominence within the entire Alliance.

One could say he had fulfilled all his initial fantasies.

But having achieved all this, he was not happy.

Especially in recent years, with the disappearance of the Zeroers and as he reached the pinnacle of the Zero Organization,

Zhang Chen felt not the thrill of absolute power but an indescribable loneliness.

On the other hand, there were matters he had to face as an Evil Summoner.

As Evil Summoners, their power grows extremely quickly, easily reaching heights in a short time that others couldn’t reach in a lifetime.

But there lies a problem.

As Evil Summoners grow, evil energy continuously erodes them.

This erosion accumulates over time, becoming increasingly terrifying later on.

As time progresses, Evil Summoners need to find ways to maintain their sense of self amidst the evil energy.

This is an exceedingly difficult task, which is why for over a hundred years, the Zero Organization has had only five powerful individuals at the Envoy level.

Indeed, over a hundred years, the Zero Organization has created at least a hundred epic-level powerhouses.

But these powerhouses either end up killed by their own kind, the Zeroers, or die amidst the evil energy, with only a few still surviving.

The reason Zhang Chen survived was because he had a talisman against the evil energy.

His talisman was his inner sanctuary.

That was his family.

That broken family from decades ago.

That warm little family was the sanctuary of his spirit, his last line of defense against the invasion of evil energy.

With this sanctuary, Zhang Chen resisted the invasion of evil energy again and again.

One could say, without this sanctuary, he wouldn’t have survived to this day.

But even so, that sanctuary couldn’t last much longer.

The erosion by evil energy was getting more severe.

Now, the only way for him to survive was the Gate Fragment he had obtained from Lu Wu.

Now, holding that fragment in his hand, he was essentially gripping his hope for survival.

At this moment, he had two choices.

One was to make a direct wish to resolve the problem of evil energy erosion from his body.

This was the most direct and effective method.

But when Zhang Chen wanted to do so, something inside him was stirred.

He suddenly had the idea of using the Gate Fragment to bring his wife and child back to life.

This was not a rational decision.

But once this idea emerged, Zhang Chen couldn’t suppress this thought.

This was the aftermath of relying on his inner sanctuary to resist evil energy for decades.

Deep inside his heart, there seemed to be a voice telling him that this was almost his only chance to save his wife and child.

If he gave up this chance, not only would he have no opportunity to save them in the future,

he might even gradually forget about them as the threat of evil energy dissipated.

Once forgotten, they would truly die from this world.

Torn between himself and his family, Zhang Chen wavered for a while but eventually, he resolutely and irrevocably chose his family.

Thus, he returned to District 1 with the Gate Fragment.

He returned to this place he had not seen in decades.

He found it—the grave of his wife and children, which he hadn’t visited in decades.

…

In a cemetery in a small northern town of Area 1.

Zhang Chen stood excitedly in front of two tombstones, one large and one small.

“It’s been decades, and I have finally returned.

Wife, son, have you been waiting long? I am going to bring you back to my side.”

As he spoke, Zhang Chen took out a Gate Fragment with trembling hands.

The refined fragment emitted a captivating light.

Holding it, Zhang Chen’s expression shifted from rapture to determination, and he finally pushed the fragment forward, uttering each word with resolve, “Gate, I make a wish, I want you to resurrect my wife and children!”

Following Zhang Chen’s wish, the Gate Fragment in his hand lit up.

Mysterious light spread out, and an indescribable power burst forth during this process.

At the same time, the two tombstones in front of him started to tremble.

Something seemed to be struggling to break free below.

Seeing this, Zhang Chen hurried forward, carefully clearing the tombstones and opening the graves.

As he removed all unnecessary shackles, two figures, one large and one small, stood up from the graves.

At first, they were just two vague shadows, unrecognizable.

But quickly, under the influence of the mysterious power, the ashes beneath the shadows began to coalesce.

In less than a few minutes, two skeletons, one large and one small, appeared.

After the skeletons formed, an indescribable power erupted once again, and Zhang Chen’s face revealed wild joy; he could already sense the life force of his wife and son in those energies.

They were about to be alive.

Indeed, what followed was an even more astounding transformation from skeletal remains to flesh and blood.

The two skeletons rapidly filled out.

Soon, two figures, one large and one small, appeared before Zhang Chen.

This was the moment Zhang Chen had dreamt of for decades.

Seeing this dream turn into reality, Zhang Chen’s face showed wild joy, and he lunged forward, about to embrace his wife and son.

This should have been a beautiful moment.

The people he had yearned for, for decades, had returned, a family once broken now reunited.

Such a scene was just like a fairy tale.

But the more beautiful something is, the more some people want to shatter it.

Like now.

Just as Zhang Chen was about to embrace his wife and child, a figure suddenly appeared, snatched the fragment, and struck Zhang Chen with a backhand blow.

The attacker was both abruptly appearing and striking; Zhang Chen couldn’t react at all.

Faced with this situation, Zhang Chen only had one choice—to save the fragment or save his wife and children.

He hesitated for a moment, and in that moment of hesitation, Zhang Chen once again watched his newly resurrected wife and child die before him.

“No!”

A hysterical scream burst forth.

Zhang Chen’s eyes instantly turned blood red as he stared intently at the fleeting silhouette of the person who had appeared and then vanished.

Despite the fact that the opponent was fleeting and chanted with all his might, Zhang Chen still recognized a familiar aura on him.

“Is it him? Tie Xiong, I want you dead!”

Amidst the roar, Zhang Chen leaped into the air and chose a direction to chase after.

Not long after Zhang Chen had given chase, a figure appeared where he had originally been, clutching a fragment in his hand.

On closer inspection, who was this person if not Lu Wu?

Clearly, it was he who was driving everything from behind.

In fact, from the moment Zhang Chen first saw Lu Wu, he had already fallen into Lu Wu’s control.

Although Zhang Chen was an Epic 3-star fighter, his type of Epic 3-star differed from Zhao Xue’en’s, as he was piled up with evil energy, with his body and mind constantly eroded by it.

This type of Epic 3-star posed no threat to Lu Wu.

If he wished, he could at any time trigger the evil energy within Zhang Chen’s body and then kill him.

But Lu Wu did not do so.

Instead, he followed Zhang Chen’s plan.

Lu Wu had only one goal in doing that: to guide Zhang Chen step by step into a state of spiritual collapse and direct his hatred towards Tie Xiong.

Everything went very smoothly.

From the moment Zhang Chen received that fragment, his mind had been controlled by Lu Wu, and the medium of that control was the fragment itself.

Zhang Chen thought he had really cleared the energy Lu Wu placed on the fragment, truly mastered the fragment, and even used the fragment to really resurrect his wife and child, but all of it was just an illusion.

With Lu Wu’s current power, along with the power of the fragment in his hand,

controlling a Zhang Chen, who was constantly eroded by evil energy, was an extremely easy task.

“This way, a pawn has been successfully cultivated. Now, there’s no need for me to look for Tie Xiong myself; he will do everything he can to help me find him!”

Watching Zhang Chen disappear into the distance, Lu Wu nodded to himself.

Overall, Lu Wu was very pleased with his own maneuvers.

But while Lu Wu was satisfied, the old father who followed him was not.

Although Lu Wu eventually proved that his methods were beyond his imagination, the old father was very dissatisfied with the means Lu Wu used.

This playing with people’s hopes, breaking families, and treating people as pawns was something the old father could not accept.

After all, he did not come from a world that grew through various manipulations and intrigues.

He had lived in a relatively closed, relatively happy world.

So he could not accept Lu Wu’s methods, nor could he accept allowing his precious daughter to follow someone like Lu Wu.

In the eyes of the old father, such a person was utterly deplorable.

“Let’s go back, go back and tell your wife not to let Ilya go out!”

Saying this, the old father stood up to leave but noticed some activity near Lu Wu.

Lu Wu walked to the two graves Zhang Chen had disturbed, fixed the graves properly, and then stood between them for a moment before slowly saying, “Sorry, I thwarted your chance of resurrection.

But I think, for you, being resurrected might not have been a good thing.

He was only using you as a means to resist the invasion of evil energy and wanted to save you because of my influence. If he truly saved you, he wouldn’t live peacefully with you after that.

He would only blame himself, feeling you robbed him of a chance for release.

Besides, death and loss are inevitable parts of life; you have to learn to accept!”

Hearing this, the old father somewhat changed his view of Lu Wu, thinking this young man still had some substance.

After saying this, Lu Wu turned, looking at the fragment in his hand, his lips curving into a smile: “Now, Dudu is one step closer to resurrection!”

# Chapter 442: 439 Tuantuan

Chapter 442: 439 Tuantuan

Zone 1, Lu Wu’s side.

After dealing with Zhang Chen’s matter, turning him into a tool, and recovering the fragment, Lu Wu couldn’t hold back any longer.

He began to attempt to resurrect Dudu.

According to the feedback from the fragment, there were several conditions needed to resurrect Dudu.

Either Dudu’s corpse was required, or items related to Dudu.

The former would allow for a direct resurrection using the corpse; for the latter, Lu Wu needed to prepare a body for Dudu.

Dudu’s corpse had already been lost during the time at Elder Mountain, making the former option virtually impossible, so Lu Wu had no choice but to opt for the latter.

To choose the latter, Lu Wu needed a key item, which was the research facility he originally placed in the Undead Secret Realm.

There, deeply imprinted with Dudu’s presence, was the most suitable medium for reviving Dudu.

Thus, after seeing Zhang Chen off, Lu Wu immediately headed to the Undead Secret Realm.

Only a few days had passed since Lu Wu’s last visit to the Undead Secret Realm, and the place had changed beyond recognition.

The base that Lu Wu had put considerable effort into building had now been practically dismantled.

Looking at the shattered base before him, Lu Wu’s gaze was icy cold, and with a cold snort, everyone still in the base perished without exception.

This sudden massacre, this extreme disregard for life, caused his father’s impression of Lu Wu to plummet sharply.

Although he wouldn’t interfere with Lu Wu’s matters or hinder him, he also wasn’t willing to have his daughter follow such a person.

That was far too worrying.

Of course, Lu Wu was completely unaware of this.

After nonchalantly disposing of the people in the base, he started searching for the research facility, only to find nothing after a complete search.

“What’s the situation? Has the research facility been moved by the Alliance?”

Lu Wu was stunned, about to ask someone what had happened when he realized that there was almost no one left here.

This was somewhat awkward, but luckily, Lu Wu quickly sensed an aura from where the research facility used to be.

“This is the aura of the Gate of the Undead. Did someone use the Gate of the Undead to move the research facility?”

Lu Wu’s eyes brightened.

He thought he should know who did this.

Then, Lu Wu took out the Gate of the Undead, opened the gate, and stepped through.

As soon as Lu Wu stepped in, he found himself in a place so dark he couldn’t see his hand in front of his face.

Of course, with Lu Wu’s current power, this darkness had no impact on his vision.

He clearly saw that he was in a dark valley, and not far in front of him was the research facility he was searching for.

At the same time, Lu Wu saw a few people near the facility.

As Lu Wu noticed them, they too saw Lu Wu and hurriedly came to greet him.

“Lea… leader!”

“Lu Wu, are you alright?”

These few, one was Angel Envoy 72, one was Jiang Yuexing, with the rest being core members of the Dark Organization.

They had evacuated when Lu Wu was besieged, which is why they survived the catastrophe.

“You did well!”

Lu Wu was quite pleased with this, specifically with Angel Envoy 72’s effort in preserving the research facility, and patted his shoulder in appreciation.

After exchanging a few pleasantries with Jiang Yuexing, and with his mind fixated on resurrecting Dudu, Lu Wu couldn’t wait to lead Angel Envoy 72 and the others out of there.

No sooner had the Gate of the Undead opened and closed than they emerged from the dark valley, appearing in Jiangnan Fucheng.

Bursting out from the darkness and appearing right in the center of Fucheng caught Angel Envoy 72 and Jiang Yuexing by surprise.

It had only been a few days, hadn’t it?

Jiang Yuexing hadn’t forgotten the scene when Elder Mountain had forcefully intervened a few days ago.

If it hadn’t been for a villain stepping in at the crucial moment, Lu Wu would’ve been blown apart, and Lu Wu’s base would’ve been gone too.

As Jiang Yuexing saw it, though they were lucky to have survived, they were probably still being watched by the Alliance. With Lu Wu making such a brazen appearance in Fucheng, isn’t it just a matter of minutes before Elder Mountain besieges them again?

“Lu Wu, is the location wrong? We should hurry…”

“No!”

“Huh?” Jiang Yuexing was taken aback, looking at Lu Wu with confusion.

“My location is not wrong. I have some matters to attend to in Fucheng!”

Jiang Yuexing was completely baffled; she wondered if Lu Wu was feverish?

Did he know what he was doing? Was he seeking another encirclement by Elder Mountain?

“Don’t worry, Aunt Jiang, it’s okay. That bunch of old fogies at Elder Mountain wouldn’t dare to come! I’ve just killed Fei Yinghao and Mu Laogui today—there are only four elders left at Elder Mountain, and I scared them good. Now they wouldn’t dare to make a move against me, not just hearing my news, but even if I were to stand right in front of them, they likely wouldn’t have the courage to lay a hand on me!”

Lu Wu explained patiently and seriously to Jiang Yuexing.

But the more patient and serious Lu Wu was, the more Jiang Yuexing felt the urge to place her hand on Lu Wu’s forehead to check if he was feverish or if he knew what he was talking about.

After all, what Lu Wu said was too incredible to believe.

A couple of days ago, Lu Wu had been blasted by the people of Elder Mountain, and it was only thanks to Lu Haikong that he narrowly escaped.

And now he suddenly claimed that he had almost brought down Elder Mountain, words no one would dare to take at face value.

But what followed shocked Jiang Yuexing even more, as it appeared that what Lu Wu said was indeed true.

Because Lu Wu then led them straight to the Governor Mansion.

Lu Wu’s arrival caused a stir in the Governor Mansion of Jiangnan Province, and the new Governor came before Lu Wu with utmost respect.

That kind of reverence, that kind of obsequiousness, had reached an unbelievable level.

It was not at all the attitude one would have towards an Alliance fugitive; it was more like the way one would treat a boss, or even a member of the Elder Council.

For the other party to display such a posture, there was a good chance that what Lu Wu had said was indeed true.

To confirm, Jiang Yuexing inquired with the Governor.

And the Governor of Jiangnan clung to Lu Wu’s leg and went on an enthusiastic spiel.

He was quite detailed and legendary in his account.

From Lu Wu’s appearance in Beijing, scheming in front of the elders to have Fei Yinghao wipe out the Fei Family, to his presence at the Holy Sect Alliance destroying it single-handedly and nearly killing Fei Yinghao afterward.

Finally, how the Dao Elders Council respectfully escorted Lu Wu out of Elder Mountain and then promptly announced a lockdown of the mountain as soon as he left—all of it was laid out.

The Governor’s account matched what Lu Wu had previously mentioned.

But when Lu Wu spoke, he merely hinted at things without giving any details. Another reason was that Lu Wu didn’t have the time to boast about himself or provide any particulars, so Jiang Yuexing and the others listened with only a vague understanding.

Now, the Governor of Jiangnan, in his narration, fully embodied Lu Wu’s perspective and exerted all his effort to legendize Lu Wu’s actions.

Describing Lu Wu’s day with such dramatic ups and downs, Jiang Yuexing and the 72 others listened with wide-eyed amazement and eager hearts.

What’s more critical was the Governor’s attitude, which further convinced Jiang Yuexing and her companions that what he said was true.

If it weren’t true, this Governor wouldn’t dare to be so obsequiously flattering to Lu Wu.

His actions signified that the authority of Elder Mountain had begun to waver.

And undeniably, it was the incident Lu Wu had just mentioned that caused this shake in authority.

“I’m done on my end; are you almost ready? If so, it’s time for us to leave!”

Lu Wu took advantage of the time Jiang Yuexing and the rest were engrossed in the story to attend to his own important tasks. Once he finished, he came over and promptly led the astounded listeners away from Fucheng.

Leaving Fucheng, Lu Wu returned to his new stronghold, the Changping Secret Realm.

Once back in Changping, Jiang Yuexing hesitated and then spoke up, “Lu Wu, there are some things I want to discuss with you…”

“Sorry, Aunt Jiang, I have some very important matters to attend to, so…”

“Alright then, you go ahead!”

“Okay!”

Lu Wu nodded and turned away.

Jiang Yuexing watched as Lu Wu busied himself, her face and eyes shimmering with thought.

After learning of Lu Wu’s deeds, she had an idea she really wanted to discuss with Lu Wu. Lu Wu could probably guess what she wanted to talk about, but he wasn’t interested.

Before the resurrection of Dudu, nothing else interested Lu Wu.

“Little Skeleton, time to get to work!”

Parting with Jiang Yuexing, Lu Wu summoned Little Skeleton, holding onto the research lab and the first home he had when he arrived in Fucheng.

Little Skeleton, who was cuddling a phone watching television, heard Lu Wu’s call, threw the phone aside, and bounced over excitedly.

(Lu Wu, do you need Little Skeleton’s help? That’s fine? Little Skeleton is super powerful now!)

“Bring me two skeletons; one female and one pig’s skeleton! Remember, they must be the most beautiful, most stunning skeletons!”

(Leave it to Little Skeleton!)

Feeling capable, Little Skeleton sensed Lu Wu’s excitement and happiness and couldn’t help but share in the joy. Upon receiving his orders, it scurried off to work.

Soon after, Little Skeleton brought Lu Wu a pig and a human skeleton – well, let’s just say, they were pretty in every sense of the word.

And the little guy even adorned them with various decorations, dressed them up, and tied butterfly knots on them, making them look incredibly flashy.

Lu Wu looked on with a mix of laughter and tears.

“I didn’t mean ‘beautiful’ in this sense?”

(Then what do you mean?)

Little Skeleton tilted its head, then placed its bony hands on its waist: (Are you saying Little Skeleton didn’t make them beautiful? Can’t I do a good job?)

“Beautiful, beautiful, Little Skeleton is the most capable!”

Lu Wu surrendered with a raised hand, gave the little one’s head a rub, and then set about removing the unnecessary decorations.

They had just begun when a golden figure darted out, and the golden dragon’s tail started lashing about, crazily rubbing Lu Wu into the ground.

The very Lu Wu who had just now casually rendered others helpless outside turned into lowly Xiao Lu at this moment, not daring to resist and kept apologizing nonstop.

“I was wrong, I was wrong, I was wrong, I didn’t mean to use you as bait, I didn’t know he was so fierce, I promise I won’t dare do it again!”

This scene was also witnessed by an old father who was still sneaking a peek.

The scene stunned the old father so much that he doubted his own eyes and couldn’t help but rub them.

Because the Lu Wu in front of him was completely different from the Lu Wu he had seen before.

Before returning to the Changping Secret Realm and seeing Little Skeleton, Lu Wu was an extremely cold and indifferent being who had even gone a bit mad.

Lu Wu’s body was filled with energy from negative attributes, but after he returned to the Changping Secret Realm and reunited with Little Skeleton, Lu Wu changed.

The gloom around him seemed to be swept away, and sunlight seemed to shine on him, making Lu Wu beam with warmth.

The old father couldn’t dare to equate this Lu Wu in front of him with the one he had seen before.

If this had been outside, wouldn’t this little golden dragon have been stewed by Lu Wu within minutes?

Lu Wu, on his part, had spent a great deal of effort just to obtain the little golden dragon’s forgiveness to return to work.

He removed the decorative items that the little skeletons had painstakingly attached to the two skeletons, which Little Skeleton found very distressing and was slightly upset, but as soon as Lu Wu stroked its skull, it became happy again and eagerly came to help.

With the help of the little skeletons, Lu Wu quickly completed the preparation work.

After finishing the preparations, Lu Wu picked up the fragment in his hand and began his first ever ritual.

“Gate, I want you to help me resurrect Dudu and Tuantuan!”

With his simple and direct words, the Gate Fragment in Lu Wu’s hand emanated a glow.

With the light shining, a mysterious power began to act.

Just like when Zhang Chen previously used it, albeit under the mental influence of Lu Wu—a mere illusion without actual occurrence—Lu Wu’s usage at this moment was truly happening.

The mysterious power emerged, and the two skeletal remains in front of Lu Wu were enveloped by this mysterious energy.

Within that power, the pig was the first to transform.

The original skeleton began the process of growing flesh and skin over its bones, and in less than three minutes, a pig appeared before them.

Looking at the pig’s resurrection, Little Skeleton beside Lu Wu was first stunned, then its eyes lit up with Pupil Fire.

(Tuantuan, oh, Lu Wu, look, it’s Tuantuan, the bones turned into Tuantuan!)

It was clear that Little Skeleton was overjoyed.

After all, even though the pig had always bullied it, they had grown up together from a young age and shared a deep bond.

Little Skeleton had been quite lonely without the pig by its side.

Now seeing Tuantuan again, especially when Little Skeleton realized that the newly resurrected Tuantuan’s power was only at the King-level, far inferior to its own, Little Skeleton was even happier.

Now it was finally Little Skeleton’s turn to bully Tuantuan.

However, while Little Skeleton was happy, Lu Wu couldn’t quite smile.

Although Tuantuan was resurrected, there was no sign of movement from Dudu, which was very concerning.

Lu Wu didn’t know what was happening, and he started to worry something had gone wrong.

Soon, his worries became reality.

The skeletal frame that was ready suddenly shattered, and at the same moment, a surge of information rushed from the Gate Fragment into Lu Wu’s mind…

# Chapter 443: 440 Wish Level

Chapter 443: 440 Wish Level

Changping Secret Realm.

A massive influx of information poured into Lu Wu’s brain, causing him to collapse to the ground with a ‘snap’.

The sudden fall frightened Little Skeleton, who hurriedly ran over to check on Lu Wu.

After poking Lu Wu with a finger, Little Skeleton relaxed, assured that its owner, Lu Wu, was fine, and then quickly pulled out a blanket to cover him.

After covering him, Little Skeleton didn’t forget to wave its fist at the bystanders nearby.

This gesture meant, if anyone dared reveal that Little Skeleton had covered someone with a blanket, Little Skeleton would teach them why flowers are red.

While the little creature was brandishing its power, a pig slammed into it, knocking Little Skeleton to the ground.

…

Meanwhile, on Lu Wu’s end.

His fall was not really dangerous; he was just purely receiving the information feedback from the fragment.

Having used and made a wish before, Lu Wu was entitled to know more about the fragments.

Then, regardless of whether Lu Wu was willing or not, the fragment just dumped the information onto him in one go.

The information given to Lu Wu by the fragment was mainly divided into two parts.

One part was about the fragment itself.

Through the information provided by the fragment, Lu Wu learned that the fragment was divided into two parts.

One part was the frame of the gate, and the other was the gate panel.

The powers of the two parts of the fragments differed, with the gate frame’s power leaning towards building seals and the gate panel’s power leaning towards granting wishes.

The piece Lu Wu held was part of the gate panel.

The fragment was not big, and the power after refinement wasn’t very strong; at most, it could only fulfill wishes up to Level 1.

A so-called Level 1 wish is the lowest level of gate wishes, only affecting a small region or a few people, roughly enough to resurrect someone, but whether resurrection could happen still depended on personal power and various other factors.

Above that were Level 2 wishes, which could change the entire world’s environmental patterns, akin to making secret realms appear, that was about the level of this wish.

To achieve this wish, one needed to combine larger gate fragments, at least five to ten of the type Lu Wu held, and they had to be refined.

The last was a Level 3 wish.

The prerequisite conditions for this kind of wish were brutal; one needed to collect all the gate fragments and refine them all.

The prerequisites were challenging, but once completed, the benefits were terrifying; if one could manage it, it was nearly omnipotent.

Additionally, the gate fragment also let Lu Wu experience the power levels of different wishes.

How should one put it, Level 2 and Level 3 wishes were really something to long for.

Unfortunately, Lu Wu wasn’t very interested or concerned.

He just wanted to know why Dudu wasn’t revived yet, apart from this, Lu Wu was more interested in another piece of information vaguely conveyed by the fragment.

It seemed to be a set of coordinates.

Beyond the coordinates, there seemed to be another world.

Intuition told Lu Wu that this world was probably where their so-called cheap dad and the Zeroer were currently located.

It was also the world the gate fragment wanted him to go to.

But Lu Wu didn’t want to go.

Dudu hadn’t been revived yet, and he didn’t want to leave.

He analyzed the situation of Dudu not being revived based on the information given by the gate, and came up with two conclusions: either the power level of the gate fragment was too low, or Dudu was still alive.

These were the only two possibilities why his wish hadn’t been fulfilled.

Among these possibilities, Lu Wu preferred to believe the second one.

But he knew that such matters were not simply about what he chose to believe.

“However, verifying this matter should be quite easy.”

Lu Wu said and opened his eyes.

As soon as Lu Wu opened his eyes, he saw a thick blanket covering his body.

Even using just his toes to think, Lu Wu knew who had covered him with the blanket.

Little Skeleton would sneak over regularly, and Lu Wu had always known, he just never mentioned it.

Little Skeleton thought Lu Wu was unaware, and every time it thought Lu Wu was about to wake, it would hurry over to take the blanket away.

It never considered how it managed to be so timely with its actions every time, wasn’t there someone cooperating with it?

For instance, now, seeing the blanket on his body, Lu Wu closed his eyes, moaned, stretched lazily, and made a little noise.

Once Lu Wu made that noise, Little Skeleton, who was being chased around by Tuantuan, hurried over, quickly gathered the blanket from Lu Wu before he got up, and then wiped the non-existent sweat from its bony forehead.

Only then did Lu Wu “wake up” and grabbed the pig that was chasing after him.

After examining the pig for a while, he finally confirmed it, this resurrected pig was indeed the one that had died before.

Everything could be fake, but the eyes could not lie.

Even more importantly, Lu Wu vaguely saw the contract between it and Dudu inside this pig.

This was precisely what Lu Wu was searching for and what he wanted.

The existence of that contract proved one thing, that is, Dudu from Lu Wu’s house was not dead.

Learning this, a brief joy appeared on Lu Wu’s face, but he quickly plunged back into worry.

“If Dudu isn’t dead, then where is she now? What is her state?”

Lu Wu couldn’t help but feel anxious and worried.

“Silly pig, do you know how to contact your master?”

In his desperation, Lu Wu couldn’t resist pinning his hopes on the pig in his hands.

The reply from the pig was a confused gaze, and with that look, Lu Wu understood.

“It seems there’s no hope of finding her directly. Then do you know who your master was in contact with during that time, or if she had any secrets?”

Tuantuan was startled, and the dazed expression and look came back online.

At this moment, veins were almost bursting on Lu Wu’s forehead.

He then asked a few more questions.

After several questions, Lu Wu almost turned the pig into a roast suckling pig.

He realized that this pig was of no use at all.

After Little Skeleton and Little Golden Dragon left, it just kept eating and sleeping, knowing nothing but to continue this cycle until it, along with Dudu, got blown up as Elder Mountain.

Knowing this, Lu Wu trembled with anger.

A piece of Gate Fragment saved just a pig, a pig without any intelligence, making him unable to help but roar, holding the pig, “You damn eat all day, sleep all full, are you a pig?”

This time, Tuantuan wasn’t confused. It solemnly nodded its head.

Indeed, it was a pig, as it had just affirmed.

Lu Wu nearly spat out a mouthful of old blood, and he just threw the pig aside, out of sight, out of mind.

After throwing the pig aside, Lu Wu’s gaze returned to that piece of fragment.

This used fragment had returned to its unrefined original state, and if he wanted to make a wish again, Lu Wu would need to refine it anew.

Lu Wu tentatively tried, and he found that the fragment, having been refined once, did not reduce the difficulty of the refining process; in fact, it even seemed to have increased significantly.

If previously refining it had been hard mode, now trying to refine it probably required entering hell mode.

This situation led Lu Wu to give up on refining it and directly absorb it instead.

[Ding, you have successfully absorbed 1 Gate Fragment, you have gained 5 Origin points!]

This fragment was larger than the ones Lu Wu had absorbed before, and it provided relatively more Origin.

“5 Origin points, that should be enough to upgrade an Epic 3 stars, right?”

Lu Wu pondered this while he gathered all his Summoned Beasts, and tried one by one.

“Little Skeleton won’t work; it needs 10 points.

Little Golden Dragon also won’t do; it needs 9 points, Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword needs 8 points, even the least, Han, needs 6 points, still a bit short!”

This was somewhat of a pitfall, getting stuck right there.

“I can’t do anything about this, I’ll have to seek help from an old friend again.”

As Lu Wu spoke, his true body fell into a deep sleep.

At the same time, far away in Zone 2 of the Science Alliance.

A group of bigwigs from the Science Alliance was gathering.

The reason for their gathering was simple: Lu Wu’s matters.

Today was particularly long for many people.

Especially for the bigwigs of the Science Alliance.

One heavy news after another was dropped: first Lu Wu reappeared, then the Fei Family was wiped out, followed by the destruction of the Holy Sect Alliance, and finally, Elder Mountain.

Each of these events struck directly at their fragile hearts.

Especially when the Holy Sect Alliance was destroyed, the bigwigs of the Science Alliance were dazed for a long time, even unwilling to accept this reality.

Although the relationship between the Science Alliance and the Holy Sect Alliance wasn’t very harmonious, after decades of interaction, they were accustomed to each other’s existence and had acknowledged each other’s strength.

Now such an organization was gone just like that, naturally, the Science Alliance would tremble.

Not to mention that after dealing with the Holy Sect Alliance, Lu Wu also took action against Elder Mountain, and now Elder Mountain was completely sealed by Lu Wu.

The situation within the Alliance now had all the signs of Lu Wu sweeping across the world.

Under such circumstances, how could the bigwigs of the Science Alliance sleep?

The moment the Holy Sect Alliance fell, they convened a meeting which lasted till now without any resolution, each feeling cold inside.

Everyone was extremely confused.

What should the Alliance do next, and what should they do?

No one knew, and no one dared to speak.

The group just sat there, for hours on end.

Eventually, even the Great Sage of the Science Alliance couldn’t stand it any longer.

“Speak up, what are your thoughts? Speak them out!

You’re all quite talkative normally, aren’t you? How come you’ve all turned mute now?

Come on, Ford, get up and speak, what should we do next?”

Even though the Great Sage addressed him directly, his subordinates still dared not speak.

Mainly because Elder Mountain had already shared intelligence about Lu Wu.

Now that the Science Alliance knew about Lu Wu’s ability to infinitely clone himself, who would dare to speak?

If they said the wrong thing, with the character Lu Wu had shown, wouldn’t their heads be at risk?

The Great Sage watched as his subordinates trembled in fear.

“What are you afraid of?

This is the Science Alliance, the highest temple of technology skills in the whole Alliance.

Here we have the most advanced technology of the entire Alliance…

You speak freely, tell me your thoughts.

I really don’t believe that Lu Wu could infiltrate—”

“Um, excuse me!”

The Great Sage hadn’t finished speaking when one of the bigwigs timidly raised his hand.

The Great Sage was pleased: “You want to speak, right? Come on, share your views.”

“Shh,” went the room.

Now, all eyes fell on this bigwig, their gazes filled with admiration.

It seemed they were admiring the bravery of this fearless bigwig.

Under such intense scrutiny, this bigwig appeared particularly reserved.

“No, it’s not that I have something to say, it’s just that I’ve recently arrived and don’t quite understand the situation.

But this bigwig doesn’t seem very eager for me to infiltrate here.

Then I thought, my abrupt appearance might have disrupted your meeting?”

The bigwig’s words initially confused the other bigwigs, but they soon realized what was happening, and their expressions changed.

“Sorry sorry, we intruded uninvited, how about we leave you to your meeting, and I’ll come back in after you’ve finished?”

As he spoke, this bigwig, no, Lu Wu himself stood up, ready to leave courteously to let them continue their meeting, which completely terrified the bigwigs of the Science Alliance.

“Not at all, not at all, Mr. Lu Wu was just joking.”

“Your presence is an honor for our Science Alliance, there’s no disruption!”

“Yes, yes, Mr. Lu Wu please take a seat, would you like some drinks or snacks? Really, you should have told us in advance, it’s our failure in hospitality!”

The bigwigs present got up one by one to persuade him, their faces full of obsequious smiles.

Even the Great Sage had an awkward smile of apology on his face.

Who would have thought, to speak behind someone’s back, only to find the person right there?

Meanwhile, the bigwigs of the Science Alliance were now completely overlooking the fact that Lu Wu had come uninvited, as well as the original circumstances of this body occupied by Lu Wu.

After all, they had just received reports of Lu Wu’s terrifying achievements, and no one dared to provoke him.

In contrast, Lu Wu appeared particularly amiable.

“You don’t need to be nervous, everyone knows, I’m Lu Wu, and I’m not a bad guy.

I just missed my old friends and came over for a visit.

As for this clone of mine, I’ll just borrow it for a while and return it afterwards, it won’t harm him.”

With Lu Wu’s words, the bigwigs of the Science Alliance breathed a sigh of relief, followed by a chorus of sycophantic praises.

“Mr. Lu Wu is truly noble!”

“Welcome, Mr. Lu Wu; your arrival brings glory to the Science Alliance.”

“Mr. Lu Wu’s presence illuminates the Science Alliance.”

…

A few minutes later, Lu Wu, satisfied, waved his hands: “Alright, alright, that’s enough, let’s not talk anymore, I’m getting embarrassed.

So, that’s settled then!

Alright, I have nothing else, I’ll be going now, you continue your meeting!”

With that, the body occupied by Lu Wu collapsed.

# Chapter 444: 441 Encirclement Again

Chapter 444: 441 Encirclement Again

Zone 2, Science Alliance.

Watching Lu Wu leave, all the bigwigs of the Science Alliance fell into silence.

They exchanged a glance.

The word “disgraceful” almost slipped out.

Clearly, they all felt each other’s behavior towards Lu Wu was nauseatingly obsequious and disgraceful.

But on second thought, they realized that they had probably not acted much better, so no one said anything.

And just as everyone in the Science Alliance was looking at each other, although Lu Wu had left, they still didn’t dare to speak any superfluous words and fell into an awkward situation with each other.

Meanwhile, Lu Wu’s clone had already made its way to the Dark Council.

As before with the Science Alliance, there was only one reason for Lu Wu’s clone’s visit to the Dark Council, and that was for the Gate Fragment.

The situation at the Dark Council was pretty much the same as at the Science Alliance.

Before Lu Wu arrived, they were all worried about their upcoming situations.

After Lu Wu showed up, they also made a complete 180-degree turn in their attitude, although it was not as extreme as the complete fawning seen at the Science Alliance, it was still bad.

After Lu Wu requested the Gate Fragment, the Dark Council, just like the Science Alliance, stated that there were no fragments left within the alliance, even offering to let Lu Wu explore their treasury.

This didn’t surprise nor did it seem dishonest to Lu Wu.

His previous dealings with the Holy Sect Alliance had been similar, and he only ended up with the original fragment.

Therefore, Lu Wu didn’t persist or have any intent to destroy the Dark Council since he wasn’t a bad person.

He merely requested that the Dark Council focus its resources on helping him gather such minor things.

In this regard, regardless of their real sentiments, the Dark Council at least agreed readily on the surface.

They all intended to stabilize Lu Wu first, keeping him deceived before doing anything else.

It seemed that Lu Wu was particularly easy to deceive, as once they agreed, he didn’t speak further and immediately dispersed his clone to leave.

Watching Lu Wu depart, the Dark Council also plunged into the same kind of silence as the Science Alliance.

The difference at the Dark Council, however, was that shortly after their silence began, a sinister voice echoed in the leader of the Dark Council’s ear.

“Are you willing to just let it go?”

As the voice sounded, the leader of the Dark Council, Domok, raised his eyebrows.

He then waved his hand as if he heard nothing, dispersing the bigwigs.

Soon, only Domok was left in the vast conference room.

“You might as well come out now.”

Following Domok’s indifferent statement, a figure emerged from a shady corner of the room.

He was an old man in coarse clothes, with white hair and beard, but his skin was remarkably ruddy.

If Lu Wu were here, he would have recognized this man as the Third Messenger of the Zero Organization, Tie Xiong.

When Domok saw Tie Xiong, his expression didn’t show much surprise, clearly expecting him to be the one to emerge.

“Speak, what do you want?”

Domok didn’t beat around the bush and went straight to the point as soon as Tie Xiong appeared.

Tie Xiong’s response was equally straightforward: “Kill Lu Wu!”

Domok laughed, “Just you?”

“And you!”

“What makes you think I would get involved?”

“If you didn’t want to get involved, you wouldn’t have let me out.”

Both men knew each other well; in just a few words, they fell into silence.

It wasn’t that they had nothing to say, rather they were contemplating what to say next, and how to say it.

After a long silence, Domok finally looked up at Tie Xiong: “Just the two of us isn’t enough, and I don’t trust it!”

“Then call for more, those from Elder Mountain, that group from Science Alliance, the remnants of the Holy Sect Alliance.

If they have a chance to kill Lu Wu, they definitely won’t let it slip.”

“The problem is, there might not be a chance to kill him.

Elder Mountain has already made Lu Wu’s abilities public, that almost infinite cloning is too buggy, and there’s no way to distinguish…”

“Who says there’s no way to distinguish?”

Tie Xiong’s mouth quirked up, and something appeared in his hand with a gesture.

Domok’s eyes narrowed, recognizing the piece Dudu had brought to Elder Mountain before.

“Human efforts can’t distinguish, but the Gate Fragment can!”

Domok’s eyes narrowed slightly, pondering for a moment!

“Let’s do it!

But it can’t be just the two of us doing it!”

…

Half an hour later, Domok left the headquarters of the Dark Conference.

Soon, he could be seen all over the place.

In the Science Alliance in Zone 2, the ruins of the Holy Sect Alliance in Zone 3, and Elder Mountain in Zone 1, even some forces hidden in the dark.

To these people, Lu Wu was like a shark that kept multiplying in the Alliance World.

If they let him continue, the original rules of the Alliance would soon be destroyed.

These beneficiaries, living off the original rules, would lose their vested interests if not killed by Lu Wu, this shark.

This could be seen from the pitiful state of Elder Mountain now.

So, if they had a chance to kill Lu Wu, they definitely wouldn’t give up.

But the premise is, they must be able to kill Lu Wu.

Without full confidence, many are afraid to act, including the elders from Elder Mountain.

They were the ones bullied worst by Lu Wu.

He came right under their noses, killing, setting fires, and stealing fragments right in front of them, and they were powerless to stop him, beaten down to the dust.

They hated Lu Wu intensely, but they were also extremely wary of him.

To get them to fully commit, there was only one possibility, which was proving that they really had the power to kill Lu Wu thoroughly.

And how to thoroughly prove that?

That’s simple, just set a trap for Lu Wu.

…

The day after Lu Wu took down the Holy Sect Alliance.

He was resting when a message came from the Dark Conference, they had acquired a fragment of the Gate.

Listening to this, Lu Wu was no longer sleepy.

After all, he was only one fragment away—precisely, just a bit of origin—and his power could level up to Epic 3 stars; with the Gate Fragment in play, there’s no way Lu Wu could sleep.

Immediately, Lu Wu’s clone arrived again at the Dark Conference.

Lu Wu chose to arrive in the same clone he had possessed before.

This was also a form of courtesy. The one he had possessed before was under surveillance by the Dark Conference; they would know immediately once Lu Wu arrived on site.

Lu Wu was essentially knocking on the door before he entered.

Well, looking at it this way, Lu Wu was actually quite polite.

As soon as he arrived, the people from the Dark Conference were quick to attend.

The leader of the Dark Conference, Domok, personally brought a fragment to Lu Wu.

“Mr. Lu Wu, I truly apologize for making you come all this way personally.

“If only I had known that we could find the fragment so quickly, I should have kept your address yesterday and delivered it to you personally.”

Listen, listen, listen.

Such words, such a posture, so sensible.

Even more thoughtful than a courier service.

Does it look like they are about to stab Lu Wu in the back and kill him? More obedient than a dog, right?

Lu Wu greatly appreciated this performance, but he still declined Domok’s offer to deliver it to his door.

Lu Wu would be foolish to let someone deliver to his door.

“Let’s not, you guys are also busy, and I’d better take it back myself.”

After checking the goods and making sure there were no problems, Lu Wu didn’t waste more words and left with the fragment.

Domok and others wanted to see him off but were sternly stopped by Lu Wu.

“You guys seeing me off would be inconvenient for me to operate, and you probably don’t want me to be inconvenienced, right?

Or are you trying to track down where my true self is?”

Lu Wu said this with a smile, but those who heard it turned pale as their minds raced.

“Not at all, Mr. Lu Wu is joking.”

“Take care, we won’t see you out, we hope you won’t take offense at our rudeness.”

“If you have a Gate Fragment, I hope you’re this ‘rude’ every day. Enough said, I’m leaving!”

Holding the fragment in one hand, Lu Wu waved and left.

Watching Lu Wu leave, the top brass from the Dark Conference didn’t utter any superfluous words, all displaying excessive respect and flattery.

This scene particularly disgusted the Science Alliance and other onlookers.

“Such a spineless lot, not a shred of backbone!”

When the Science Alliance spoke, they were bold without reason, completely forgetting their own demeanor previously in front of Lu Wu.

But at this moment, no one cared about these trivial matters.

Their attention was all on Lu Wu.

Clearly, the fragment was bait for Lu Wu, which served two purposes.

One was to further confirm whether the Gate Fragment could see through Lu Wu’s doppelgänger.

On this matter, the prominent figures present were very satisfied.

With the aid of the Gate Fragment, they immediately spotted the flaw in Lu Wu’s doppelgänger.

It was confirmed that the Gate Fragment indeed could expose Lu Wu’s doppelgänger.

With the power of the Gate Fragment, they could not only discern Lu Wu’s doppelgänger but even lock onto it.

They closely observed as Lu Wu’s next move under their watch involved a series of very flashy maneuvers.

From the moment Lu Wu turned around.

The fragment in his hand had already turned into an ordinary pearl, and an ordinary pearl had turned into the fragment.

This was clearly a use of “All Things.”

Then, Lu Wu’s doppelgänger placed the fragment in a corner and left with the pearl.

After that, another doppelgänger appeared and took the fragment.

The whole process was smooth and flowing.

If it weren’t for the power of the Gate on their side, they wouldn’t have noticed any flaws whatsoever.

This also vividly showed the Elder Council how Lu Wu had escaped at Elder Mountain previously.

This tactic was truly superb, but unfortunately, Lu Wu had met his match this time.

His tricks were utterly exposed under the Gate Fragment.

Not only could they see Lu Wu’s doppelgänger, but they could also trace it and find where the real Lu Wu was!

This was excellent news, and the onlookers quickly relayed the information.

Receiving this news, those who had been hesitant made up their minds.

Because everyone was very clear that this might be their last opportunity to capture Lu Wu.

Thus, they did not want to miss this chance.

Suddenly, the entire Alliance was shaken.

More precisely, the top echelons of the Alliance were stirred.

At Elder Mountain, those who had already sealed off the mountain once again secretly mobilized.

No matter what, they had to capture Lu Wu this time.

Meanwhile, Lu Wu seemed completely unaware.

He had performed several maneuvers at the Dark Conference, switching between several doppelgängers and mediums. Despite the efforts to track him using the fragment, which allowed them to see through his true form, it still created confusion, and they almost lost him several times.

Finally, Lu Wu let his doppelgänger leave the Dark Conference with the fragment and headed straight for Sector 1.

At this, those following the doppelgänger of Lu Wu became alert.

A group of people clung tightly to the tail of Lu Wu’s doppelgänger.

Within a few hours, crossing several sectors, they finally tracked him to Changping Secret Realm.

“Found him!”

Upon arriving at Changping, this temporary task force built to crucify Lu Wu was invigorated.

They clearly realized that they had found where Lu Wu’s true self was.

This was a crucial moment in their mission to crucify Lu Wu.

But the more crucial the moment, the more cautious the task force became.

Everyone was aware of Lu Wu’s tricks, especially those from Elder Mountain.

Before completely capturing Lu Wu, no one dared to relax.

They even refrained from striking directly.

This troop stayed outside Changping Secret Realm.

They needed to set up an elaborate plan to maximize the chances of preventing Lu Wu from escaping.

“Space must be locked down to prevent him from using space tools or abilities to escape.”

“The Divine Soul link must be severed to avoid another Return to Zero or possession by Lu Haikong’s Divine Soul.”

“All exits from Changping Secret Realm must be locked down, all doppelgängers must be cleared.”

“Everyone must be ready.

Once we strike, we should aim to destroy Lu Wu outright, and if necessary, destroy the entire Changping Secret Realm along with him!”

Command after command was issued by Zhao Xue’en.

One by one, everyone got busy; the entire Changping Secret Realm was immediately sealed off.

Two hours later, all preparations were complete.

This group officially began the strangling offensive against Lu Wu.

They didn’t enter Changping Secret Realm but summoned their pets right outside of it.

All of their strengths burst forth.

It should be noted that those present included Elder Zhao Xue’en from Elder Mountain, two other elders, a remaining Epic 2 Star warrior from the Holy Sect Alliance, the entire strength of the Dark Conference, the Great Sage from the Science Alliance who had been forced to participate,

plus Tie Xiong, and Zhang Chen, the First Envoy who was originally under Lu Wu’s scheme to pursue him.

This force was regarded as the pinnacle presence in the Alliance.

Together they struck, and in an instant, the Changping Secret Realm where Lu Wu was located was completely shattered…

# Chapter 445: 442 Untitled

Chapter 445: 442 Untitled

Zone 1, outside the Changping Secret Realm.

Led by Tie Xiong, Zhang Chen, and Zhao Xue’en, three Epic 3-star powerhouses.

Followed by about ten Epic 2-star powerhouses from the Domok Science Alliance of the Dark Conference.

A total of fifteen people, 35 Epic Level Summoned Beasts.

Such a group of people, such a force, their full-strength power would be equivalent to at least tens of thousands of nuclear bombs that had once exploded in Neon before Lu Wu’s travel.

And now, this force was blasted into the Changping Secret Realm.

So the question arises, what would the condition of the Changping Secret Realm be after enduring tens of thousands of nuclear bombs?

Well first off, outside the Changping Secret Realm, the Secret Realm Camp, and all human settlements within a hundred miles were completely obliterated.

Everyone in the Secret Realm Camp was gone, and the survival rate of the people within a hundred miles was less than ten percent.

And this was just the impact of the aftershocks.

The real damage was still inside the Changping Secret Realm.

If you were inside the Changping Secret Realm at the same time as this force descended,

You would see, in the gray skies above,

A supremely bright meteor falling from the horizon, finally landing within the Changping Secret Realm.

Following the descent of this meteor, a pentagram covering half of the Changping Secret Realm flickered with light.

Then there were waves of shaking, waves of light that spread out and covered the entire Changping Secret Realm.

Under those shaking lights and waves,

Virtually every entity within the Changping Secret Realm was wiped out.

Whether they were Summoned Beasts or Summoners, all were extinguished in an instant.

At this moment, within and outside the Secret Realm, the number of creatures that died reached into the millions.

Ilya’s elderly father, witnessing this scene, felt very conflicted.

As a being that had opened the “God’s Eye”,

He clearly knew that Lu Wu had been set up this time.

Lu Wu in the Changping Secret Realm had truly not anticipated that he would be ambushed.

At the time of their attack, Lu Wu inside the Changping Secret Realm was busy leveling up.

That wave of attacks truly hit Lu Wu himself.

But this was not what made the elderly father feel conflicted.

What troubled him was the millions of lives that were destroyed in that instant.

He originally thought that Lu Wu was bad enough.

Full of schemes and tricks, and utterly ruthless.

Playing repeatedly with someone named Fei Yinghao, and not even sparing the wife and child of someone named Zhang Chen.

Manipulating Zhang Chen’s innermost tender feelings, turning Zhang Chen into a tool.

The elderly father couldn’t stand this point, so he couldn’t help but quietly influence Zhang Chen, allowing him to regain his senses.

The elderly father initially thought that he hadn’t done something good, but at least it wasn’t something evil.

What he hadn’t expected was

After Zhang Chen regained his senses under his influence, he teamed up with Tie Xiong and organized an ambush specifically targeting Lu Wu.

If it was just an ambush against Lu Wu, the elderly father wouldn’t have cared too much.

He might have just secretly saved Lu Wu when he was in danger.

What he hadn’t expected was that they started with such a massive action.

Millions of lives dissipated before him, and he could do nothing but quietly protect Lu Wu from afar.

At this moment, the elderly father’s heart was incredibly conflicted.

He began to regret, regretting that he shouldn’t have recklessly helped Zhang Chen.

However, no one knew of the elderly father’s regret, and no one even knew he existed.

At this moment, the focus of Tie Xiong and the others was inside the Changping Secret Realm.

They were even a bit panicked, worried, “Is Lu Wu really inside?”

“Rest assured, he’s inside. I’ve been by his side for some time, and I understand him quite well.”

Tie Xiong stepped forward, overlooking the gradually condensing Changping Secret Realm under their attack, he continued, “This guy has a strong sense of belonging.

You could even say he’s quite a homebody.

He likes places where he feels warm and comfortable. If possible, he would stay in one place for decades without moving.

Unfortunately, fate isn’t something one can control…”

“Mr. Tie, you’re going off-topic!”

“Sorry, sorry, where was I?

Right, I was saying Lu Wu is a homebody.

He likes warm places, which you’ve mostly destroyed by now. Now only this Changping Secret Realm remains.

He had stayed here for over a month and even made friends with a Summoned Beast.

Sadly, just after making friends, it was killed by Feng Xiu.

Now even this place has been destroyed by us. Looking at it, this poor kid really seems quite pitiful!”

Tie Xiong said, sighing, seemingly forgetting that he was the fiercest one when they had attacked.

This feigned posture infuriated Zhang Chen on the side.

“Pitiful? You pity him? Who will pity my wife and children?

Is Lu Wu dead yet? He must die today, no matter what!”

“Who knows if he has any other tricks up his sleeve?”

Zhao Xue’en, truly once bitten, twice shy, couldn’t feel at ease not seeing Lu Wu completely dead.

“Calm down, he definitely can’t escape today.

Although his actions yesterday surprised me and changed your views about him, at the end of the day, he is still just him.

This guy is human, not a god.

Even if he has ‘All Things,’ an inexhaustible supply of energy and avatars, the preparations he made in two days are already quite astounding.

Right now, he basically has no tricks left.

You all just relax!”

Although Tie Xiong said this.

Still, very few could actually feel relieved.

Soon, Zhao Xue’en and the others organized a second round of attack.

They sealed off the Changping Secret Realm, turning it into something like a pocket.

Then one round after another, they kept bombarding it relentlessly.

Every round of attack caused incessant trembling both inside and outside the Changping Secret Realm, creating a terrifying environmental impact.

Meanwhile, deep in Changping Secret Realm, Lu Wu was in a terrible state.

Earlier, his mood was still quite good, having finally gathered enough Origin to upgrade Han to an Epic 3 stars.

It was supposed to be a celebratory occasion.

Yet someone just had to turn it into a funeral.

They surrounded Changping Secret Realm and launched a fierce attack, including an Epic 3-star powerhouse, five Epic 3-star Summoned Beasts, and dozens of Epic 2-star powerhouses.

This force was frightening to an extreme.

Even if Lu Wu could fight beyond his level, he couldn’t withstand such a lineup.

He was directly bombarded haphazardly.

The powerful attacks tore at something on his body time after time.

Relying on Han’s power, Lu Wu repeatedly repaired his body, only to be torn apart again.

Lu Wu fell into a painful cycle.

And this painful state of Lu Wu was quickly sensed by those outside.

As they locked onto Lu Wu, everyone breathed a sigh of relief.

At the same time, a twisted desire to completely crush Lu Wu emerged at the bottom of their hearts.

Especially those from Elder Mountain, as well as Zhang Chen.

The former had just been humiliated by Lu Wu yesterday, losing two comrades, while the latter had watched his wife and children die before him, nearly becoming Lu Wu’s pawn.

Their hatred for Lu Wu was indescribable.

The moment Zhang Chen sensed Lu Wu, he immediately contacted him.

Then, a voice, deep and crazed, sprang from the bottom of Lu Wu’s heart.

“Bet you didn’t see this coming, did you?”

“Zhang Chen?”

Zhang Chen’s voice made Lu Wu’s eyebrows raise.

Now, Lu Wu finally understood where the problem lay.

But he became puzzled again, as by all logic, Zhang Chen shouldn’t have been able to escape his control—even with the power of another fragment, he shouldn’t have.

At least not at this speed.

Zhang Chen’s bafflement only fueled his frenzy.

“Yes, it’s me!

You never expected this, did you? I arranged all of this.

It was me who contacted Tie Xiong, using his fragment to call the Dark Conference, the Science Alliance, and Elder Mountain to oppose you.

How about that? Not a bad lineup, right?

To convene such a grand assembly just to deal with you, Lu Wu, you really do carry some weight.”

Lu Wu didn’t respond to Zhang Chen’s somewhat hysterical words.

Lu Wu’s silence only made Zhang Chen more deranged.

“Say something! Why aren’t you talking now? Where is that spirit you had yesterday?

That scheming in the shadows, using my soft heart against me, treating me like a pawn?

When you did that, you surely didn’t expect to end up like this, did you?

Today, you’re definitely dead, I’m telling you, you’re dead!!!”

Zhang Chen’s roar also made Zhao Xue’en push up his glasses.

“Lu Wu, you’ve done many evils, killed two elders, destroyed the Holy Sect Alliance, disrupted the alliance’s order, today you have no chance of survival by any means.”

…

In Changping Secret Realm, on Lu Wu’s side.

Whether it was Zhang Chen’s hysterical roar or Zhao Xue’en’s righteous words, Lu Wu gave no response.

Lu Wu, as of now, wouldn’t be swayed by ordinary trash talk, from trash people.

But soon, a voice caused a stir in Lu Wu’s emotions.

“Boss Lu, long time no see!

I never thought our next meeting would be under these circumstances!”

Lu Wu’s eyebrows shot up, his eyes widened: “Tie Xiong!”

“Right, right, right, it’s me, by the way, boss, you still owe me a lot of wages…”

“Was that fragment you gave to Dudu?”

Lu Wu had no time for this trash talk, directly addressing his main concern.

This topic was also of interest to those from Elder Mountain.

Zhao Xue’en and others subtly raised their eyebrows, their expressions changing slightly.

Their glances towards Tie Xiong became dangerous, hearing this claim for the first time, Tie Xiong quickly waved his hands: “Don’t look at me like that, can’t you see this is just his attempt to sow discord?”

Tie Xiong’s words immediately made Zhao Xue’en and the others turn their heads back.

They weren’t fooled by Tie Xiong’s tricks, but they clearly understood that now was not the time to pursue these issues; the most critical task was to kill Lu Wu.

And their momentary reaction presented Lu Wu with an opening.

“Tie Xiong, do you believe what you’re saying yourself? Isn’t that fragment in your hand the same one Dudu had?

You have quite the method, using the fragment to kill half of the elders of Elder Council.

Afterwards, still managing to fool the Council members to come against me.

Impressive, really impressive, Elder Council is more obedient than dogs in your hands…”

“Shut up!”

Zhao Xue’en’s face darkened.

“Lu Wu, you don’t need to make excuses or struggle, no matter what, you must die today!”

“Yes, you definitely won’t survive today!”

Setting aside their disputes, their first priority was to kill Lu Wu.

This was the thought of everyone present.

Future grievances could be avenged later; if they couldn’t kill Lu Wu today, they would have no hope in the future.

In Changping Secret Realm, facing rounds of attacks, Lu Wu laughed.

“You Elder Council truly have great magnanimity!

But have you considered what his purpose was in having Dudu carry the fragment to blow up your Elder Mountain?

Is his true target really me?

If it were for me, he had countless opportunities to kill me before I grew stronger, and he didn’t; there must be a purpose, and has his purpose been achieved now?

Obviously not!

Why would he join hands with you under these circumstances?

You better think this through well!”

“And about the Dark Council and Science Alliance, I remember we had quite a pleasant interaction before, how come you suddenly backstab me like this?

Isn’t this a bit too much?

Ever thought about the consequences?

I, Lu Wu, am not very magnanimous; if you manage to kill me today, great, but what if you don’t?

Do you really want to end up like the Holy Sect Alliance?”

Lu Wu’s words caused Zhao Xue’en and others to change their expressions several times, and just as Lu Wu was pushing harder, Tie Xiong said in a somber tone: “Alright boss, no use struggling, it’s useless, nothing you say will make a difference.

They are experienced, they know exactly what to do and what not to do.

You surely don’t think they haven’t considered the consequences before acting?

They’re prepared.

No matter what!

Even if the sky falls, they’re determined to kill you today.”

“The more you say that, the more you prove you are fearful, unsettled, out of options.

It proves you’ve reached a dead end, only able to rely on these measures to survive.”

With Tie Xiong’s words, everyone present rallied.

They temporarily set aside other thoughts, deciding to kill Lu Wu first.

“No matter what, Lu Wu must die today!”

This was the collective belief of the group, regardless of their identities or backgrounds, at this moment, their conviction was highly focused.

No matter what, they had to kill Lu Wu.

And with their conviction, their power also converged.

This time, they gathered almost all of their power.

The mere convergence of this power caused the entire space to tremble violently.

The terrifying energy fluctuations even caused cracks to appear in the vibrating space, indicating the immense power.

The group emitting a roar, “Die!”

The terrifying energy smashed down toward the already crumbling Changping Secret Realm…

# Chapter 446: 443 Escape from Death

Chapter 446: 443 Escape from Death

Zone 1, within the Changping Secret Realm.

As Tie Xiong and the others delivered their strongest strike,

Lu Wu, standing at the Land of Burial, atop the Old Bone’s Great Tomb, lifted his head to look up at the sky.

The sky of the Changping Secret Realm was usually dark and oppressive,

especially looking up from the Land of Burial, it was blood-colored.

But now, the sky over Changping Land was shattered.

It was bright, twinkling to the extreme.

The moment Lu Wu looked up, he saw a meteor falling straight toward him.

The meteor was so huge that there was absolutely no way to dodge it.

And at this moment, Lu Wu didn’t want to dodge.

He knew he couldn’t avoid it; to survive, he only had to give it his all.

Before acting, Lu Wu gently touched the tombstone of Old Bone: “Old Bone, I originally wanted to stay here by your side, as only you in the entire Alliance could give me peace of mind. But I didn’t expect such an incident to occur.

I’m sorry for disturbing your peace even in death.

But I promise you, if I say if, if I survive this, I’ll definitely make it up to you!”

Having said that, Lu Wu stood up and faced the meteor falling from the sky.

As he stood, a force burst forth within his body.

It was the power of “Little Skeleton,” “Little Golden Dragon,” “Han,” and the “Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword.”

Lu Wu did not invoke the Beast Soul Burst; they burst forth of their own accord.

Because they could feel that Lu Wu needed their power!

He needed their power to oppose that terrifying meteor overhead.

“You’ve all given your all, right? Then here I go!”

As he spoke, Lu Wu, holding the longsword, assumed a stance.

This was a posture to draw his sword.

It was also the first time Lu Wu was about to draw his sword since advancing to Epic level.

It implied that he was truly going all out.

When he advanced to Epic level influenced by Yukawa Ryuzo,

he gathered all his strength into one force, condensing a power he seldom unleashed.

This force, which began gathering from Epic 1 Star all the way to his current Epic 3 Star, had been continually honed, the strength of which even Lu Wu did not fully know.

Now, the time for this force to burst forth had arrived.

At the moment that the unimaginably huge meteor fell, Lu Wu drew his sword like a mantis trying to stop a chariot.

All those outside the Changping Secret Realm watched his movement.

And the most frantic and violent reaction was from Zhang Chen.

He saw Lu Wu’s stance and couldn’t help but say, “What do you think you’re doing? Trying to slice through our attack with one sword?”

“No!”

Inside the Changping Secret Realm, Lu Wu was utterly calm, eyeing the meteor and gave Zhang Chen the unexpected answer: “I just simply want to kill you!”

Zhang Chen fell into a brief silence.

Then, Zhang Chen began to laugh uncontrollably.

“Kill me? Now?

Can’t you see the situation you’re in? You aren’t just as you were yesterday.

You can hardly save yourself now, do you think you could possibly kill me?”

Lu Wu nodded firmly: “Possible!”

At this, Zhang Chen’s expression changed.

He could hear from Lu Wu’s tone that Lu Wu was serious.

But regardless of Lu Wu’s seriousness, this should still be impossible!

While Zhang Chen was comforting himself with this thought, Lu Wu in the Changping Secret Realm drew the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword and also struck out.

In an instant, a sword strike, concentrating all of Lu Wu’s power, Sword Intent and insights, was unleashed.

Accompanied by this sword strike, a magnificent sword light that seemed not to belong in this era was born and slashed toward the giant meteor.

In that moment, Zhang Chen’s heart began to race.

He vaguely sensed the aura of death, but kept reassuring himself.

“Don’t worry, it won’t hurt me!”

“That meteor has the combined full-force strikes of nearly ten Epic 3 Stars and dozens of Epic 2 Stars, Lu Wu can’t possibly contend with it!”

“It’s okay; this is just Lu Wu’s death throes, I’ll be fine!”

“Yes, the only one who’s going to die is Lu Wu! It should only be Lu…”

“Pfft!”

Zhang Chen hadn’t finished speaking when the sword light Lu Wu slashed out split the meteor and resolutely swept past the boundaries of the Changping Secret Realm.

That moment, Zhang Chen’s scalp went numb.

Although he still didn’t believe that Lu Wu’s sword light could directly kill him,

he was frightened and subconsciously retreated.

But this subconscious retreat immediately made Zhang Chen come to his senses, and endless shame and anger surged in his heart.

“I was scared back?

Scared back by a dying beast?

How absurd is that!”

“Why should I retreat? Why should I be afraid?

He couldn’t possibly do anything to me…”

“Pfft!”

Before Zhang Chen could finish, that supreme sword light, at an unimaginable speed, pierced through the huge meteor.

In that instant, Zhang Chen was rendered speechless.

He could only stand up, his body’s energy bursting forth, trying his utmost to block Lu Wu’s sword.

Logically speaking, Zhang Chen was supposed to be able to block Lu Wu’s sword.

After all, although Lu Wu’s sword was strong, having split the meteor, most of its power had already been spent; what was left should not have been much, considering Zhang Chen’s power, he should have been able to defend against it.

At least, that’s what Zhang Chen thought.

But when Zhang Chen’s defense came into contact with the sword light, he was stunned.

The defense he exerted his full strength on was as thin as paper before Lu Wu’s Sword Qi.

Lu Wu’s Sword Qi lightly sliced through, cutting Zhang Chen’s defense open, and with one sword, split Zhang Chen into two.

This terrifying blow stunned everyone present.

Nobody had expected Lu Wu’s sword to be monstrously powerful to this extent.

Not only did it cut through all their attacks, but it also killed an Epic 3 Star powerhouse right in front of them.

“Don’t panic, Zhang Chen won’t die!

At most, he’s just heavily injured.”

“And Lu Wu can only strike this one sword; after this, he’s definitely spent!”

Tie Xiong’s statement instantly rallied everyone.

Of course, this was more due to the latter sentence, as basically nobody present cared about Zhang Chen’s well-being; what concerned them was whether they could kill Lu Wu.

Everyone’s attention returned to Lu Wu.

They saw Lu Wu, who had just unleashed a massive burst.

When they realized that Lu Wu was in a nearly spent state after his outburst, everyone’s excitement soared.

“Charge!”

“Kill him!”

Lu Wu, the Undead, none of the people present could feel at ease.

Everyone was actively preparing for the next round of attack, wanting to thoroughly resolve Lu Wu.

But it seemed they no longer needed to prepare.

At this moment, the meteor that Lu Wu had just split fell into the Changping Secret Realm.

Yes, the meteor unleashed by Lu Wu.

Although that meteor had indeed been split by Lu Wu, it did not mean it was dissipated.

Lu Wu’s Sword Qi had merely passed through the meteor, and the meteor’s intrinsic power had not diminished by much.

The meteor, split in two, crashed into the Changping Secret Realm, releasing unimaginable energy in a full burst.

Terrifying waves came forth in an instant, and the entire Changping Secret Realm began to shatter, inch by inch.

Meanwhile, Lu Wu was right at the center of the meteor he had cleaved, with energy erupting on both sides and completely engulfing him in an instant, destroying most of his body.

If that were all, it would be fine, as Lu Wu could actually withstand it.

After all, his Han had reached Epic 3 stars, and recovering from this injury wouldn’t be difficult, effortlessly restoring Lu Wu completely.

But this was just the beginning.

Next, explosions continued to occur, wave after wave, round after round.

In these explosions, rings of waves continued to spread, each more terrifying than the last.

In the center of it all, Lu Wu was like a tiny boat in a tempest.

In an instant, he was about to be completely torn apart by the storm.

He couldn’t hold on any longer!

In the storm of energy, Lu Wu, though reluctant, had to accept this reality.

This time, he truly might not make it through.

“Alas!”

Just as Lu Wu faced this dire situation.

Ilya’s elderly father sighed softly and reached out to point into the void, hmm, he finally took action.

He simply could not stand idly by.

After all, Lu Wu’s current predicament was largely his own doing; if he didn’t intervene, Lu Wu’s death would be on his hands.

Thus, he finally made his move.

With his gentle tap, right beside Lu Wu in the Changping Secret Realm.

The huge tomb that he had prepared for Old Bone was opened, and Lu Wu’s figure was enveloped by the tombstone.

Ilya’s elderly father opened up a deeper layer of the Secret Realm, hidden within the Changping Secret Realm, and sent Lu Wu deep inside.

This action was very swift, especially as the ‘meteor’s’ power was erupting.

People outside the Changping Secret Realm simply didn’t notice.

They were unaware that Lu Wu had disappeared; they only saw the Secret Realm shattering bit by bit amidst the explosion of the meteor.

The fracturing of the Changping Secret Realm quickly triggered a chain reaction.

Huge chunks of fragments fell.

The core of the Secret Realm itself also began to collapse.

Clearly, this secret realm, which had been messed with for quite some time by Zhao Xue’en and the others, could not withstand it anymore.

Then, as the core of the Changping Secret Realm collapsed to a certain extent, countless energies began to burst outwards.

Hmm, this led to a massive explosion.

With a huge “Boom.”

The powerful energy wave slapped outward, directly blowing Zhao Xue’en and other powerful beings several miles away.

Immediately afterward, the core of the Changping Secret Realm began to suck back all the energy.

Almost instantly, the energies that had just exploded and erupted were all pulled back in a flash.

In the blink of an eye, the Changping Secret Realm was reduced to a tiny, tiny dot.

“It’s done!”

“Lu Wu is dead!”

Seeing this scene, the big shots present couldn’t help but rejoice.

The most surprised, or perhaps the happiest, was none other than Zhang Chen.

Hmm, Zhang Chen, who had just been sliced in half by a single strike from Lu Wuyi, was not dead.

After all, as an Epic 3-Star combatant, how could it be so easy for him to simply perish?

Not to mention being sliced in half, even if he was torn to shreds, there would still be a chance for him to survive.

Having survived, he looked at the tiny dot that the Changping Secret Realm had become and laughed heartily.

“Good, good, good, this bastard is finally…”

“Pfft!”

Zhang Chen’s laughter lasted only a second before it was cut off.

Of course, it wasn’t Lu Wu who interrupted him; Lu Wu didn’t have the capability at this moment.

It was Zhao Xue’en who interrupted him. While Zhang Chen was laughing wildly, Zhao Xue’en decapitated him with a single sword strike.

What’s the phrase again?

Birds gone, bow hidden, crossing the river and tearing down the bridge.

The group present had united merely for the purpose of killing Lu Wu.

Their relationships were not harmonious, and there were even considerable conflicts and hatred among them.

While Lu Wu was alive, they still had a common goal that could unite them.

But now with Lu Wu’s death, this alliance crumbled immediately, and Zhao Xue’en decisively made his move.

With one strike, he decapitated Zhang Chen and then turned to make a move on Tie Xiong.

But Tie Xiong was not Zhang Chen; he wasn’t foolish. As soon as the dust had settled, he fled.

At this moment, Zhao Xue’en wanted to strike but couldn’t find his target.

“He runs fast!”

Zhao Xue’en scoffed, turned back, and continued dealing with Zhang Chen.

Poor Zhang Chen, already mentally affected by Lu Wu the day before, and just now bisected by a single strike from Lu Wu, his body, mind, and power were all severely damaged—he simply wasn’t a match for Zhao Xue’en.

Facing Zhao Xue’en and wanting to survive, his only hope was Tie Xiong.

However, at this moment, Tie Xiong had simply left, skillfully betraying him.

The betrayed Zhang Chen only lasted a few minutes before being taken down by Zhao Xue’en.

Zhao Xue’en originally intended to directly kill Zhang Chen.

But on second thought, considering the Gate Fragment’s refinement experiment needed materials, he ultimately spared him, opting not to kill.

“I’ll spare your life; consider it recycling trash.”

Holding the sealed Zhang Chen in one hand and clutching the condensed dot from the collapse of Changping Secret Realm in the other, Zhao Xue’en’s mood was extremely buoyant.

Of course, ninety percent of his good mood came from the death of Lu Wu.

After all, they had been terribly tormented by Lu Wu yesterday.

Zhao Xue’en and the others from Elder Mountain had even prepared to tuck their tails between their legs, seal the mountain until their leaders returned.

Unexpectedly, in just one day everything changed.

Yesterday, Lu Wu forced them to seal the mountain, to tuck their tails like dogs and hide; today, they killed him as if he was just a stray dog.

“Indeed, life is really full of surprises, full of delights.”

“People like Lu Wu who don’t abide by martial ethics, may be rampant for a moment but can’t be rampant for a lifetime, let him be proud for a while, when the time comes, he still has to die!”

“With his death, people can finally sleep well tonight.”

Zhao Xue’en said, laughing heartily, leading the people of Elder Mountain back to Elder Mountain, and at the same time declaring the day-long seclusion of Elder Mountain lifted…

# Chapter 447: 444 Blood-colored Space

Chapter 447: 444 Blood-colored Space

In the indescribable space, Lu Wu opened his eyes.

All over his body, unspeakable severe pain and a feeling of weakness he had never experienced before assaulted him, making his state extraordinarily miserable.

However, at this moment, Lu Wu was not focused on his own state, nor the indescribable space before him, but rather on something else.

“Am I not dead?”

This was a point Lu Wu himself could hardly believe.

Amid the attack at that time, no one knew better than him the predicament he was in.

His energy had been almost entirely depleted, and in that environment, it was almost impossible for him to be alive.

“Did someone save me, or?”

Regarding this, Lu Wu himself couldn’t be sure.

Another thing was that, at the moment, this didn’t seem to be the point he should focus on.

“No, where am I now?”

“This environment, is it Hell, or…?”

Lu Wu’s gaze drifted aimlessly around him.

It was only then that he realized just how peculiar the environment he was in was.

This space was completely blood-colored with no ground, making it impossible to distinguish up from down.

Within the entire space, countless corpses floated around.

These bodies, all dressed in ancient soldier’s attire, were tied up and floated in the air in bizarre poses.

Lu Wu was somewhat baffled.

While Lu Wu was utterly confused, he suddenly felt a somewhat familiar aura in this space.

“Is this?”

First puzzled, Lu Wu’s eyes then brightened with recognition: “Old Bone!

Is this Old Bone’s aura?

Could it be Old Bone who saved me?”

Lu Wu began to move, struggling in this blood-colored space to move his body.

It was not an easy task, at least for Lu Wu at this moment.

His state was extraordinarily miserable, and coupled with the peculiarities of this space, it took considerable effort just to get himself moving.

He struggled for a long time and managed to move less than half a meter.

At this rate, Lu Wu feared it would take eons to approach the aura of Old Bone.

Feeling helpless, Lu Wu had no choice but to give up.

Of course, what he gave up on was going to find Old Bone himself.

He couldn’t go himself, but he could try having Old Bone come to him.

“Old Bone!”

Lying in this blood-colored space, after brewing for a moment, Lu Wu uttered a cry that was not very loud.

In the external space, Lu Wu’s shout of “Old Bone” might not have carried ten meters.

But in this blood-colored space, Lu Wu’s cry carried far and wide.

If sound had a viewpoint, at this moment, it would see itself exiting Lu Wu’s throat, passing through his mouth, leaving his body.

Then, at an unbelievable speed, it passed through the corpses one by one, traversing an unknown distance, finally arriving in the central area of this blood-colored space.

Here lay a different corpse.

Its difference lay not only in the fact that it was not bound, showing no traces of injury, but also in its attire.

The clothing it wore was unlike that of the countless floating corpses around.

Clearly, it was not from the same camp as this group of corpses.

Of course, the sound did not distinguish these details; it went directly into the ears of this particular corpse.

Subsequently, this corpse, which had been in deep thought for who knows how long, suddenly opened its eyes.

The instant its eyes opened, the aura that Lu Wu recognized as belonging to Old Bone completely dissipated, replaced by a completely different, more pure aura—one that only death and slaughter could manifest.

At the instant this aura appeared,

the entire blood-colored space began to tremor, and the countless, uncountable bodies floating within began to tremble and wail.

Everything happened in a flash, almost right after Lu Wu had called out.

“What’s going on?”

Lu Wu was completely bewildered by everything.

Before he could react, a strange figure appeared before him.

“You are…”

Lu Wu stared at the man before him, dressed in black armor, holding a longsword, looking quite ordinary, a feeling both familiar and strange spreading through his heart.

Lu Wu came to a somewhat unbelievable conclusion.

“Old… Old Bone? Are you Old Bone?”

The figure looked at Lu Wu without speaking, just staring at him.

From an initially blank look, clarity gradually emerged, as if recalling something.

Lu Wu also gradually felt the familiar aura on him.

This let Lu Wu know clearly that the unbelievable thing he had thought was the truth.

The guy in front of him, although completely transformed, was indeed Old Bone.

Lu Wu recognized the look in Old Bone’s eyes (though Old Bone didn’t have eyes when they were together before).

Lu Wu was absolutely sure that this was Old Bone.

Old Bone hadn’t died; he was still alive, and he had saved him.

For Lu Wu during this recent period, this was almost the best news, and he couldn’t help but become excited.

And as Lu Wu’s emotions reached their peak,

the Old Bone standing before Lu Wu finally broke his silence, opening his mouth as though wanting to speak, but the sounds he made were strange, as if he had forgotten how to talk after a long silence.

After stammering for a good while, the Old Bone before Lu Wu finally spoke two words.

“Lu… Lu… Wu”

With these stammered words spoken, Lu Wu couldn’t contain himself anymore and burst into tears, hugging the Old Bone before him.

“It’s great, really great that you aren’t dead!”

No one could understand Lu Wu’s emotions at that moment.

Including the Old Bone being hugged by him, who also didn’t understand.

Just at the moment of being hugged by Lu Wu, he felt an odd sensation.

He couldn’t quite tell what it was, but it was a bit misplaced, a bit blank, and moreover, he felt like he was melting.

No, he was melting.

As Old Bone stood there bewildered, it directly melted, turning into a blood-colored substance that fused into Lu Wu’s body.

This sudden change completely baffled Lu Wu.

“Old Bone!”

Lu Wu cried out in alarm, frantically wondering what to do, as the blood-colored space before him began to crack, a force surging into his body.

Lu Wu’s head felt like it had been struck by something, and he passed out in an instant.

While Lu Wu was out, the energy did not fade.

The energy of the blood-colored space began to pour into Lu Wu’s body.

This surge of energy, like a clear spring, replenished the energy space Lu Wu had exhausted after unleashing that sword strike.

It began to repair the energy space, which had already started cracking, bit by bit.

Seeing this, Ilya’s old father heaved a sigh of relief.

“Thank goodness, thank goodness he didn’t die!”

Joy appeared on his face, but it swiftly faded away.

Given another chance, he swore he would never be careless again.

Just one careless act had led to such a major incident.

A secret realm was destroyed, the environment within hundreds of miles was ruined, and millions of lives were taken.

He felt as though he were the killer which deeply disturbed him.

At this moment, the fear he experienced on Earth was indescribable; he neither dared nor wished to stay any longer.

After glancing at Lu Wu and confirming he was alright, he turned and left the Human World.

…

Here, Lu Wu encountered Old Bone in the mysterious Blood-colored Space.

After absorbing Old Bone, he gradually recovered in the space.

Meanwhile, the Lu Wu expedition team from Elder Mountain had victoriously returned.

Zhao Xue’en held the point that had transformed from the Changping Secret Realm in one hand, and Zhang Chen in the other as they returned to Elder Mountain.

Upon his return, Elder Mountain had already begun its preparations.

Elder Mountain, which initially seemed slightly shabby, was now more festive than the New Year.

Of course, for the people of Elder Mountain, today was indeed a day more celebratory than the New Year.

After all, Lu Wu was dead!

For the people of Elder Mountain, nothing was worth celebrating more than the death of Lu Wu.

Just yesterday, Lu Wu’s actions had utterly humiliated Elder Mountain, trampling their dignity underfoot.

Two elders were killed, and the remaining ones had to respectfully send Lu Wu away, then were forced to seal the mountain.

Following that ordeal, Elder Mountain, already unstable from Dudu’s previous attacks, had completely fallen from grace, and the entire Alliance seemed on the verge of collapse.

The attitude of the new Governor of Jiangnan Province towards Lu Wu clearly showed how much Elder Mountain’s status had declined within the Alliance.

The residents of Elder Mountain depended on it for their livelihood.

When Elder Mountain was revered, even a janitor from there was treated with high regard once they stepped outside.

Now that Elder Mountain had declined, their interests were severely affected.

This made the people of Elder Mountain despise Lu Wu.

Now, just when Lu Wu had been arrogant for one day, he died, and everyone’s interests in Elder Mountain had been secured. How could they not be thrilled?

They were even more excited than on New Year’s Day.

“Old Zhao, well done!”

Zhang Mingrui, who was in charge of holding the fort and had been on bad terms with his colleague for decades, was the first to give him a big hug.

Zhao Xue’en, who normally wouldn’t dare slow down for Zhang Mingrui, accepted his hug this time.

Happy, because Lu Wu was dead—a hug was just a hug.

A little dirtiness didn’t matter.

After embracing, the two old men quickly separated, each nauseated for a moment, then proceeded to issue commands.

“Notify the Alliance, the mountain seal of Elder Mountain is lifted,

set today as the Demon Extermination Festival.

Celebrate a little, and also commemorate the demise of Lu Wu, this demon!”

“Also, send someone to grab the Governor of Jiangnan Province and anyone who had relations with Lu Wu!”

…

Clearly, Elder Mountain didn’t plan to let such a significant event as Lu Wu’s death pass quietly.

How could it be understated?

They had been deeply humiliated by Lu Wu.

They had been treated so miserably, and now that they had finally killed Lu Wu, shouldn’t they flaunt it?

This wasn’t about small-minded triumph.

This was about restoring the image of Elder Mountain and reestablishing its dignity.

Thus, this ‘festive’ atmosphere spread out from Elder Mountain and quickly enveloped the entire Alliance.

With the current state of communications, it didn’t take hours for the entire Alliance to learn of Lu Wu’s death.

Of course, along with the news of Lu Wu’s death, there were also numerous details about his life.

Countless media delved deep into Lu Wu’s biography.

Soon, everyone in the Alliance knew that Lu Wu was a baby who snatched bottles from others.

At one year old, he was already teasing girls, and by three, he was killing people. Recently, he was responsible for the deaths of millions around Elder Mountain and within the Changping Secret Realm.

Clearly, the media were influenced by Elder Mountain.

Elder Mountain pinned every possible blame on Lu Wu.

They even fabricated conditions to push more onto him.

They quickly turned Lu Wu into a figure despised by thousands.

This not only further obliterated Lu Wu but also magnified the merits of Elder Mountain.

Their action of eliminating Lu Wu added a legendary, even heroic, shade to their story.

Indeed, of twelve elders, only four remained after killing Lu Wu, which sounded utterly heroic.

Lu Wu was thus nailed to the Alliance’s pillar of shame and to Elder Mountain’s medal of honor.

He became a demon, etched into the hearts of the ordinary people of the Alliance.

And this day truly became the Demon Extermination Day of the Alliance, with the entire Alliance celebrating.

Some, particularly happy and capable ones, not only celebrated themselves but also spread the joy.

Take Gutian, for example.

He was particularly generous.

Upon learning of Lu Wu’s death, he immediately made a grand gesture.

He spent all his money.

In Beijing, at Lu Wu’s originating place, he booked dozens of hotels to host continuous banquets, celebrating Lu Wu’s demise and honoring the big shots of Elder Mountain.

Look at this move; it kept him happy and curried favor with Elder Mountain—how clever!

Inspired by Gutian, many others followed suit.

In no time, all the high-end hotels across the Alliance were providing free-flowing banquets.

The common people received benefits, making Lu Wu’s demonic identity all the more firmly established.

Many crazed individuals even demolished Lu Wu’s family home in Quan City—not just one house, but the entire neighborhood.

Every school Lu Wu attended, including Jiangnan University, was forcibly demolished; those who had worked for or been underlings of Lu Wu were persecuted.

The whole Alliance, the entire world, denied Lu Wu.

He was thoroughly dealt with as a demon.

And as Lu Wu’s antagonists, Elder Mountain regained its dignity, and its members glowed with renewed splendor.

Beneath this halo of Holy Light, they could once again engage in dirty, despicable deeds.

Sometimes, demons and angels are just that clear-cut!

# Chapter 448: 445 Kill the donkey when the grinding is done

Chapter 448: 445 Kill the donkey when the grinding is done

Elder Mountain.

A grand celebration was taking place.

Celebrating the eradication of Lu Wu.

Lu Wu likely never imagined that one day, he would impact the entire world.

Although the manner in which he influenced the world was unexpected, he had indeed influenced it.

At Elder Mountain’s celebration, Mr. Zhao, leading a few elders, wasn’t completely immersed in festivity.

While Lu Wu’s death was indeed a cause for their happiness, as elders, they maintained a level of self-discipline.

They were also well aware that Lu Wu was just one of the threats they faced.

Eliminating Lu Wu was indeed a cause for happiness, but it did not mean they could rest easy.

After all, in this troublesome world, no one could predict when another Pang Duddu might appear, wailing and wielding a fragment, charging toward Elder Mountain.

Thus, Lu Wu’s death had not made Elder Mountain feel any safer.

They still absolutely recognized the vulnerabilities in their security.

And the method to resolve this vulnerability was something Lu Wu had left them from the beginning.

Previously, when dealing with Fei Yinghao, Lu Wu had modified the refinement procedure for the Gate Fragment and had demonstrated it to them.

The result was excellent, and the refinement was successful.

This, for both Lu Wu and Elder Mountain, was excellent news.

The experimental data that Lu Wu had not altered or destroyed was even more precious to Elder Mountain.

Now that Lu Wu was finally dealt with, they also had Zhang Chen, an Epic 3 Star powerhouse, in their hands.

They had the plans and the materials.

Without delay, amidst the celebratory atmosphere, they started a new round of refining for the Gate Fragment.

Zhang Chen was placed in the lab.

Various contraptions to limit his movements were applied to him.

Zhang Chen was bound in a cruciform, and one hundred and eight Legendary Quality steel needles were driven into his body, securing him firmly.

These needles not only served to hold Zhang Chen in place but also stimulated his mind.

Under these needles, Zhang Chen’s mind was clearer than ever before, even much more so than usual.

Of course, this was not a good thing; it made Zhang Chen acutely aware of the pain he was enduring, which was indescribable.

But no one cared.

To Mr. Zhao and the others, Zhang Chen was just a tool.

They only cared whether this tool could function well, not whether it suffered.

Who would care?

“Let’s begin!”

With those words from Mr. Zhao, the experiment officially commenced.

Elder Mountain had summed up Lu Wu’s previous experiments involving Fei Yinghao.

They concluded that Lu Wu’s experimental approach was broadly divided into three parts.

A plan, a Refiner, and a Guide.

The plan and the Refiner were self-explanatory, referring to Zhang Chen and the set-up left by Lu Wu. As for the so-called Guide, it basically was the role Lu Wu had played during the refinement.

Elder Mountain believed that the role Lu Wu played was crucial for the successful refinement of the fragment.

Thus, in this experiment, they also prepared someone to play this role.

However, they didn’t start with this character.

Instead, they commenced the refinement first.

Only when Zhang Chen’s spirit was nearly broken did the Guide appear.

And this so-called Guide was someone found by Elder Mountain who closely resembled Zhang Chen’s wife.

Using Zhang Chen’s deepest vulnerability as leverage was their inspiration taken from Lu Wu’s last refinement process.

It couldn’t be denied; Elder Mountain’s group were indeed apt students.

Setting everything else aside, they were truly capable and earnest in their learning.

They had almost perfectly replicated the experiment previously conducted by Lu Wu.

In less than a day, Zhang Chen had successfully refined a piece of the Gate Fragment.

Although this fragment was much smaller than the one Lu Wu had refined.

But when it was successfully refined, the eyes of Mr. Zhao and a few other elders lit up.

“It’s done, it’s really done!”

“Not only have we refined the fragment, but, most importantly, we have mastered the technique of fragment refinement!”

…

Immense joy overwhelmed these elders.

This joy was even more intense than the joy they felt from killing Lu Wu.

After all, dealing with Lu Wu had merely eliminated a nuisance, but the successful refinement of the fragment could completely secure their safety and even offer them a future.

The four elders carefully passed around the successfully refined fragment.

The mysterious power flowing through the fragment, along with its mysterious allure, intoxicated everyone present.

“What a mysterious, what a mighty power this is!”

“You know, we really must thank Lu Wu. If it wasn’t for him, we might not have been able to refine this fragment!”

“The point is not just the refinement of this fragment, which is quite small and its power isn’t great; it doesn’t fully ensure our safety since Tie Xiong still holds another fragment!”

“For our safety, we need more fragments!”

“That should not be a problem now that we have mastered the technique of fragment refinement. We can refine as many of these fragments as we want now!”

Old Huo and Elder Shui, two elders, couldn’t suppress their smiles.

However, they didn’t notice that Mr. Zhao and Zhang Mingrui didn’t share much of their joy.

“No!”

“You are mistaken; we can’t refine as many fragments as we want.” Zhang Mingrui shook his head.

“Hmm?”

As Mr. Zhao looked toward Zhang Chen, who was now nearly lifeless on the cross, he said, “Because fragment refinement requires material.

Zhang Chen, as a material, has already been used once; although he can be used again, he would need a long time to recover.

Relying solely on him, refining the next fragment would take at least one to two years, or even longer.”

Old Huo and Elder Shui were taken aback: “Then what do we do?”

Zhang Mingrui and Mr. Zhao exchanged looks, seeing what they needed in each other’s eyes. Their lips curled slightly, and the atmosphere suddenly grew tense.

This tension also affected Old Huo and Elder Shui.

Taking aback, they tensed up and quickly moved to stand behind their respective leaders.

One stood by Zhang Mingrui, the other by Zhao Xue’en.

As the sides were set and the atmosphere tensely charged, Zhang Mingrui and Zhao Xue’en suddenly turned and struck simultaneously.

“Thud”

“Thud”

Two crisp sounds echoed as Old Huo and Elder Shui widened their eyes in disbelief almost simultaneously.

They had always thought their opponents would be each other; never had they imagined that their own leaders, whom they had followed for decades and even centuries, would turn on them at such a moment.

Two loyal subordinates were thus taken down by their own leaders.

Elder Shui was heartbroken and silent.

Old Huo, on the other hand, was not yet ready to give up. He asked Zhao Xue’en, who was usually the most upfront at Elder Mountain, “Why… why…”

He wanted to know why.

Why his trusted leader would suddenly strike him down.

“Because we needed materials!”

After Zhao Xue’en stated this indifferently, he knocked Old Huo unconscious with a single move, while Zhang Mingrui likewise took care of Elder Shui completely.

After dealing with their two subordinates, the two leaders exchanged glances and smiled.

Their smiles, the similar way their lips parted, made it hard to believe these were old adversaries who’d been at odds for centuries. If someone said they were old friends, no one would doubt it; in fact, they really were.

From the very beginning, they were the best friends.

Their opposition was merely because they needed to appear so.

They needed to give the president an impression that they were not aligned, could not come together.

If not, one of them might have been killed by the president, as the Elder Council needed balance. Even though together they posed no threat to the president, they wouldn’t want to see their powerful subordinates colluding.

Thus, they fought each other all these years.

Sometimes, they almost forgot that they were best friends.

“We have two more materials.”

“These are not as good as Zhang Chen, but since they are not evil cultivators and are in good mental state, using them for refining fragments should be as effective as using Zhang Chen.”

“That means, unless something unexpected happens, we should be able to reclaim two more fragments.”

“But it is still too few.”

“Then let’s get more materials!”

“Great minds think alike!”

The two centenarians said this and shared another laugh.

The scene was, how should I say it? Somewhat painful to watch.

…

Area 4, the Dark Conference.

While the whole of Area 1 was celebrating, the festive atmosphere in Area 4 had faded a bit, but was still there.

After all, they had killed Lu Wu.

Moreover, Lu Wu was killed under their orchestrated plan, so naturally, the Dark Conference needed to celebrate.

The Dark Conference organized an event.

The event went on for a full day before it looked set to conclude.

However, just as the event was about to end, a distinguished guest suddenly arrived at the Dark Conference, bringing a new climax to the proceedings that were about to close.

This guest was Zhao Xue’en, the vice president of Elder Mountain.

Despite being in a sorry state in front of Lu Wu earlier, Zhao was still the vice president of Elder Mountain, an Epic 3-star powerhouse, ranked just below the top in the entire Alliance.

Even including the Zeroers, he was definitely a strong figure.

Such a strong figure’s presence naturally required absolute attention from the Dark Conference.

Domok personally welcomed him.

Seeing Domok approaching, Zhao’s eyes lit up. He approached and firmly grasped Domok’s cold arm, saying earnestly, “This time, being able to take down Lu Wu, thanks to your efforts, I have come on behalf of Elder Mountain to express our gratitude.

Additionally, to give you the thing we promised before!”

Hearing this, the corners of Domok’s mouth could not help but lift.

Honestly, Domok was an old man too, with a wealth of experience, having accomplished many notable deeds in his life.

But now, if asked what he was most proud of, it would undoubtedly be taking down Lu Wu.

He even felt that, a hundred years later, if there was anything that could be remembered about him, it would definitely include the killing of Lu Wu.

Especially after creating Demon Extermination Day in Area 1, Domok felt that his name would be remembered for ages.

For him, a top figure in Area 1, nothing else mattered more than this.

Not to mention, this operation not only brought him fame but also tremendous benefits.

Both Elder Mountain and Tie Xiong had promised him benefits.

Leaving Tie Xiong aside for now, as he was still on the run, Domok had almost no hope that Tie Xiong would fulfill his promise.

But Elder Mountain gave Domok a pleasant surprise; just look at how generous Elder Mountain was.

As soon as the job was done, Zhao Xue’en came over, and things started being delivered his way.

Domok’s mood couldn’t be better.

Of course, though he was eager to see the benefits, he was, after all, a high-ranking figure, needing to maintain decorum, so he had to show some courtesy.

“Mr. Zhao, you shouldn’t have come all the way for such a trifle, I feel bad…”

“It’s necessary, I wouldn’t be at peace otherwise!”

Zhao Xue’en smiled warmly, shook Domok’s hand firmly, and a surge of power shot directly towards Domok.

Domok’s face changed, wanting to pull away, but it was too late.

As an Epic 2 Star, he had no chance of resisting against Zhao Xue’en, an Epic 3 Star, especially since he shook hands with Zhao to show closeness.

What did that mean? It was like putting his head on the muzzle of Zhao’s gun.

Under such circumstances, how could he react when Zhao suddenly attacked?

Naturally, he was taken down by Zhao right then and there.

Domok, up until he was subdued, was still confused; he racked his brain but couldn’t understand why Zhao would attack him.

“Mr. Zhao, is there some misunderstanding?”

Meanwhile, other heavyweights of the Dark Conference also noticed the situation, all with bewildered faces.

Amid their bewilderment, Zhao Xue’en smiled faintly.

“Misunderstanding? There is no misunderstanding. I simply wanted to invite you all to Elder Mountain to give each of you a Gate Fragment.”

As he spoke, Zhao Xue’en expanded his domain.

His powerful domain instantly enveloped the entire Dark Conference.

Almost simultaneously as the Dark Council was subdued, a similar scene was unfolding in Area 2.

The only difference was that Zhao Xue’en was replaced by Zhang Mingrui, and the Dark Conference by the Science Alliance.

# Chapter 449: 446 Refinement

Chapter 449: 446 Refinement

Elder Mountain, District 1.

The day after Lu Wu was captured.

In the laboratory on Elder Mountain, there stood one cross after another, each cross binding one person.

The Dark Conference’s chairman Domok, along with his Five Elders,

the Grand sage of the Science Alliance, along with his Four Deans,

together with the two elders of fire and water from Elder Mountain,

it could be said that except for Tie Xiong, everyone who participated in capturing Lu Wu the day before was present, neatly assembled.

At this moment, all the bound people felt incredibly conflicted.

They had never imagined that after going through so much trouble to capture Lu Wu, such a fate would await them.

While doubting life itself, the ones who had captured them, Zhao Xue’en and Zhang Mingrui, stepped forward.

Looking at the row of spoils before them, they seemed to see one after another Gate Fragment successfully refined; they couldn’t contain their smiles.

Zhang Mingrui even couldn’t help but spread his arms wide: “Gentlemen, as you all basically know the situation, our simple and pure reason for inviting everyone here is to hope you could contribute and help us brothers refine some more Gate Fragments.”

The words directly startled the people on the crosses.

They struggled and responded.

“Zhao Xue’en, Zhang Mingrui, you are inhuman, may you find no peace in death!”

“Speaking of Lu Wu’s demons, you are hardly better than him!”

“No, you are even more ruthless and inhuman than he is!”

This was the response of Old Huo and Elder Shui, who clearly understood the true nature of these two men.

They knew even more clearly that there was no hope of survival for them, as despair and fear made them scream hysterically.

But some still hadn’t given up hope of living.

“Lord Zhao, Lord Zhang, I beg you to show mercy, please let us go, refining the Gate Fragments is not an easy task, forcing it won’t work!”

“Yes, let me go, I am the Grand Sage of the Science Alliance, I have mastered the highest knowledge of the Alliance, I can help you perfect the plan.”

“Lords, I think we can talk…”

Compared to the two fire and water elders, the others still harbored some hope, wanting desperately to survive, but soon a cold splash dashed their hopes.

“Enough, no need to say more, whatever you say is useless!

The fragments to be refined, as for perfecting the plan or whatever, there’s really no need since Lu Wu has already perfected it for us, so you might as well just cooperate nicely!”

“Of course, rest assured, we brothers are not good people.

If you do not cooperate, we still have ways to make you beg for life and crave death.”

Zhang Mingrui looked down at these fearsome figures before him.

The two Elder ghosts of fire and water were provoked again.

“Come on then, if you dare, just bring it on, it’s all the same death anyway, I am not afraid of you at all!”

Hearing their defiance, Zhang Mingrui laughed, a very gentle laugh.

While laughing, he came up to the defiant Old Huo, looking at the eerily smiling man before him, Old Huo suddenly felt a bit scared, but considering his situation, he squared his shoulders and glared back at Zhang Mingrui, about to challenge him again.

Just then, Zhang Mingrui touched his forehead and leaned in close, whispering something into his ear.

Everyone just saw that after Zhang Mingrui had spoken, Old Huo, who had just been clamoring, was suddenly stunned.

Then, he could not utter another word.

He honestly lowered his head.

Watching Old Huo, whom he had dealt with in just a few words, Zhang Mingrui smiled, reaching out to stroke Old Huo’s head as if he were patting his own dog, “That’s right, be good, strive to refine the Gate Fragment soon. If I’m in a good mood, I might even spare your life; after all, keeping an elder as a dog is quite prestigious!”

While speaking, he turned his head to look at the other pinned-down individuals.

He did not speak, but the eerily gentle smile on his face and the pair of eyes, deep with hellish malice, made everyone present shiver and feel a chill.

Upon seeing this, Zhao Xue’en stood up, “Alright, that’s enough; we can begin now!”

“Why wait any longer? Let’s start!”

Following the nod from these two big shots, a group of people flooded into the laboratory.

Simultaneously, another Gate Fragment was brought out.

It must be said, as the supreme existence of the Alliance, Elder Mountain’s heritage was indeed shocking.

Organizations like the “Dark Conference,” “Holy Sect Alliance,” and “Science Alliance” only had one or two fragments, but at Elder Mountain, they easily brought out three fragments that had previously been used for refinement and to bait Lu Wu.

And now, they effortlessly produced five more fragments.

The depth of Elder Mountain’s heritage was evident.

However, this heritage had previously been just that—a kept heritage.

But now, it was different.

Thanks to Lu Wu’s kind-heartedness, they were now fully able to transform their heritage into power.

If they could refine these five fragments, they could fuse them into a single fragment larger and stronger than the one Tie Xiong held.

At that time, they could not only ensure their own safety but also use the fragments to overpower Tie Xiong and seize his fragment.

Having two fragments of that caliber would significantly enhance the power of Zhao Xue’en and Zhang Mingrui.

They would possess the power to surpass President Lu Haikong and even the Zeroers.

If they could take a step further, they could even collect all the Gate Fragments to assemble the complete Gate and become the supreme existence.

Although that last step was a bit far off, the thought alone was quite thrilling.

Setting aside the former, as long as they could refine these five fragments, they would also see a significant enhancement.

As for refining these five fragments, they figured there probably wouldn’t be a big problem, right?

Hmm, under the anticipation of these two, the refinement of the Gate Fragments began swiftly.

Initially, the process was indeed as fast and stable as they had hoped.

From the beginning of refinement to reaching ten percent completion took only about thirty minutes.

From ten percent to ninety-nine percent completion took only about five hours.

This efficiency was quite terrifying.

Watching fragment after fragment gradually light up, Zhao Xue’en and Zhang Mingrui were incredibly excited.

However, their excitement was soon braked, as the refinement of the Gate Fragments also hit a snag.

For some unknown reason, the process was stuck at ninety-nine percent for four to five hours, with no progress at all; the last bit simply wouldn’t complete.

This made Zhao Xue’en and Zhang Mingrui very uncomfortable.

“What’s going on here? Is it a problem with the fragments? Or is it because this group isn’t cooperating?

Should we kill one to set an example?”

Zhang Mingrui suggested sternly.

Meanwhile, Zhao Xue’en focused his gaze on one person.

This person was in charge of the Gate Fragment Refinement project and was also someone Lu Wu knew fairly well—Gutian from the Cultivation Profession Center.

Although he was severely outclassed by Lu Wu.

Regardless, he was part of the higher management of the Profession Center and a cultivation master, almost stepping into the Grandmaster level.

He indeed possessed some capabilities.

However, that was not the main reason he was responsible for this project.

The main reason was that he was obedient, had the lowest standard, and was the most suitable as a pawn!

Zhao Xue’en and Zhang Mingrui were not planning anything pleasant, and such matters definitely required cooperative individuals to avoid additional troubles; after all, the core techniques were already handled by Lu Wu’s side, they just lacked an executor, making Gutian the perfect candidate.

As the project manager, Gutian also had his own understanding of the project.

At least, in the current problematic situation, he could stand out immediately and pinpoint where the problem originated.

“Both lords, after studying the last refinement, as well as the refinement personally overseen by Lu Wu, I believe I have identified the direction of the problem.

The reason the refinement wasn’t completely successful lies in the soul power!”

“Soul power?”

“Yes, the first time when Lu Wu personally oversaw it, Elder Fei reached the peak of Epic 2 Star, and his soul had already touched the level of Epic 3 Star, plus with Lu Wu’s assistance, it’s normal that the refinement was successful.

The second refinement succeeded because Zhang Chen himself was an Epic 3 Star powerhouse, and his soul power was strong enough to complete the refinement on his own.

But this time it’s different!”

Gutian explained this, and Zhao Xue’en and Zhang Mingrui basically understood.

“Are you saying this batch of people for the refinement are too low level, not reaching Epic 3 Star, so the refinement couldn’t succeed?”

“Both lords are wise, indeed—”

Zhao Xue’en waved his hand, cutting off Gutian’s flattery: “Alright, save the boring chatter; just tell us the solution.”

“I have two immature ideas.”

Gutian took a deep breath: “The first one requires both lords to lend them a hand.”

“How would we assist?”

“Would it consume a lot?”

Zhao Xue’en and Zhang Mingrui went straight to the point, and Gutian dared not beat around the bush before the two big bosses.

“It would require a certain amount of soul power, and conservatively estimated, both of you might need to use up a third of your soul power or even more.”

“That’s not acceptable!”

Upon hearing this, Zhang Mingrui and Zhao Xue’en decisively rejected it.

After all, it involved a third of their soul power; though it posed no lethal risks, their abilities would significantly decline in the short term.

That was something they absolutely could not allow.

Who knew what they might encounter after their power declined?

Whether it would be Tie Xiong or something else, both were unsure and unwilling to take such a gamble, so they firmly rejected this approach.

“What’s the second solution?”

“To solve this kind of problem, there are only two methods: either increase the quality or the quantity…”

When it came to quantity, even Gutian, who was not a good person, hesitated somewhat.

Because he was well aware that once Zhao Xue’en and Zhang Mingrui chose the second solution, it would definitely involve deaths, and not just a few.

“Just spit out the solution without dawdling!”

“Yes, the second approach requires sacrificing some people to aid in the completion of the refinement.”

“Sacrificing some people? How many?”

“For Ordinary individuals, about a million for each fragment, and for Summoners, nearly a hundred thousand.”

Gutian stated this with a somewhat heavy heart.

However, what he did not expect was that after he finished speaking, Zhao Xue’en and Zhang Mingrui visibly relaxed.

“Five to six million for five fragments isn’t too bad; it’s not very damaging to the Alliance!

Let’s proceed quickly then—pull all the criminals from the Alliance Prison, and from districts 11 or 12 bring over five to six million people…”

Zhang Mingrui immediately began planning how to handle this matter.

Upon hearing this, Gutian felt a chill passing through him.

Though he himself wasn’t a good person either and had trampled on others’ lives, he still had some respect for life.

Therefore, he truly found it hard to believe—hard to believe that the Alliance’s big shots would treat life with such disregard.

Listening to what Zhang Mingrui was saying, life in his mouth seemed no longer to be life, but just a string of cold numbers.

How could this not frighten and scare Gutian?

He instinctively looked towards Zhao Xue’en, hoping that Zhao Xue’en would differ from Zhang Mingrui.

Indeed, almost as soon as he turned to look at Zhao Xue’en, Zhao shook his head: “This won’t do! We can’t go about it this way!”

Hearing this, Gutian perked up.

“That’s right, we shouldn’t—”

Before Gutian could agree further, Zhao Xue’en had already spoken the latter half: “Going about it this way would take too long to prepare; by estimation, it wouldn’t be resolved without one or two weeks.

Delays in such matters can lead to complications; we don’t have that much time to waste.

Additionally, if we really do this, it will be tough to whitewash later.

After all, there would be too many traces, and it would be hard to justify to the public.

So, I suggest we just find a city with five to six million people near Elder Mountain and sacrifice it directly.

It would be quick, and after the sacrifice, it would be easy to deal with the aftermath, just like the situation at Changping Secret Realm last time—just shift the responsibility to Lu Wu, oh wait, Lu Wu is already dead, so just shift it to the Zero Organization, it’s all the same.”

“Alright, your method is good; let’s go with it!

I’ll handle the sacrifice; Gutian, you assist me. By the way, Gutian, weren’t you about to say something?”

Both big shots’ gazes simultaneously fell on Gutian.

At this moment, the two big shots’ faces wore gentle smiles as they looked at Gutian in approval, yet that gentle demeanor could not offer Gutian any warmth. Facing their gazes and smiles, Gutian felt a chill running down his spine…

# Chapter 422 422: 419 Strong

Feng Xiu's Base, District 8.

With an incredibly violent punch, Lin Jianying, who had amputated his own limbs to reach Feng Xiu, was smashed to the ground.

It was an epic-level attack, and surprisingly, it didn't cause any damage to the surrounding buildings.

This wasn't because the combatants controlled their strength.

Rather, it was because this space had long been linked with the domain of Feng Xiu.

As long as Feng Xiu's domain remained intact, the base would not suffer any damage.

Of course, Lin Jianying was in no state to notice that now.

First, he was tricked by Feng Xiu, forced to sever his limbs to escape.

He had activated the power of the Fragment and desperately fought his way to Feng Xiu, thinking he could defeat him, only to be interrupted by a sudden 'Cheng Yaojin'.

And this 'Cheng Yaojin' was someone Lin Jianying recognized.

It was none other than the 13th Apostle, who had just died.

However, the 13th Apostle now was entirely different from before.

Previously, he'd been obsequious, but now he was overwhelmingly dominant in both appearance and demeanor, his actions exuding an imposing air.

His power had inexplicably reached the epic 1-star level.

He slammed down Lin Jianying with a punch. He quickly caught up again, grabbed Lin Jianying's head, and smashed it violently against the ground.

The power of the 13th Apostle collided with Feng Xiu's domain, nearly knocking the breath out of Lin Jianying.

The 13th Apostle, seizing the advantage, was relentless. He grabbed again, breaking Lin Jianying's remaining limbs, skillfully extracted the Fragment from Lin Jianying's body with a pat, and then casually threw Lin Jianying aside.

At this moment, Feng Xiu took over and snapped his fingers.

Black chains attacked again, firmly trapping Lin Jianying, whose limbs were all severed.

"Settled down now?"

With Lin Jianying captured, Feng Xiu's mouth curled up, and he sighed in relief.

He was clearly in a good mood, even leisurely walking up to Lin Jianying.

"Should I call you Lao Wu? Or should I address you as Lin Jianying?"

Lin Jianying glared back in silence, his stubborn and enraged expression causing Feng Xiu to slap him uncontrollably.

"You're just as foolish as the intelligence reports suggested, but even an idiot should recognize the situation now."

"Kill or maim me, just do it. I'm not afraid!"

Lin Jianying had grown somewhat over the years.

Facing adversity, he had become a lot braver and tougher, no longer trembling as before. But to Feng Xiu, this just seemed even more foolish.

"Killing and maiming will definitely happen, but before that, there's something else I need to do."

Feng Xiu said as he moved closer and began searching Lin Jianying's body.

"What are you doing?"

Lin Jianying's face changed, and he struggled mightily, but to no avail.

"Stop struggling; you won't break free. I don't plan to kill you yet. I'm looking for something.

Ah, it seems I've found it. This must be it."

Feng Xiu said, pulling an item from Lin Jianying.

Lin Jianying's face changed upon seeing the item, but recalling something, he tried to stabilize his feelings, attempting to keep his expression as neutral as possible.

"What do you want with that trinket?"

"No more ridiculous attempts or schemes now; since I've taken it out, I know what it's for."

Feng Xiu said as he turned the evil energy in his hand, and the jade-like item he had taken from Lin Jianying lit up.

At this, Lin Jianying completely lost his composure.

What unsettled him even more was that soon, Lu Wu's voice came through the prop.

"Hey! How's it going?"

Lin Jianying's eyes bulged, about to shout loudly, but the black chains tightened, causing intense pain that made Lin Jianying open his mouth.

Then, the black chains were stuffed directly into it, rendering Lin Jianying unable to speak.

At the same time, Feng Xiu spoke, but it was in Lin Jianying's voice,

"I have successfully arrived at Feng Xiu's base. He's preparing the restoration ceremony, and I've received a message that Tie Xiong has just visited this base!

You need to be careful."

Lin Jianying's face changed, and what terrified him even more was that Lu Wu seemed to have no suspicion.

"I understand. It will take me about two more hours to get there. Prepare yourself, and once I arrive, we will attack together and take down Feng Xiu's lair, eliminating Feng Xiu!"

Feng Xiu's mouth curved up, his face full of mockery, "Good, I'll wait for you!"

Having said that, Feng Xiu abruptly ended the communication, looked up at Lin Jianying with a mocking face, "Guess if he caught onto the trick just now?"

Lin Jianying struggled, but couldn't speak.

"Oh, I forgot you can't talk now, but that's okay. You keeping your mouth shut is pretty good.

As for him, I guess he must have sensed something fishy.

After all, while I can mimic your voice, I can't imitate your tone and attitude. With that kid's cunning, he must have guessed that something's wrong on your end.

Now let's speculate further, do you think he will come knowing something might be wrong here?"

Feng Xiu looked at Lin Jianying, seemingly anticipating his response.

However, he had no intention of freeing Lin Jianying.

Seeing the helpless fury on the other side, but unable to utter a word, Feng Xiu felt particularly delighted, slapped Lin Jianying's face, and continued, "Don't worry, he will definitely come.

He thinks he holds the winning card!

Even if you are captured by me, he still has moves to play because you are actually a useless card in his hand."

"Do you really think that the last time he caused trouble here went smoothly because you were helping him from behind?

If so, you are vastly underestimating him.

Even without you, he could stir up some trouble. The guy does have some tricks."

At this point, Feng Xiu's face grew colder.

"However, the same trick, once used here, won't work on me again."

After saying this, Feng Xiu stayed quiet, silently waiting for Lu Wu's arrival.

On Lu Wu's end.

He was extremely punctual. When he said two hours, it meant exactly two hours.

As soon as the two hours were up, the prop in Feng Xiu's hand lit up again.

"I'm here!"

"I am with Feng Xiu at the center of the base, come on in."

As he said this, Feng Xiu paused, a mocking and playful smile appearing on his lips.

"Do you need me to come and get you?"

The prop fell silent for a moment, then a calm voice came through.

"No need, I'm already here!"

This time, the voice didn't come from the prop, but from behind Feng Xiu.

Accompanying the voice was also a surge of sword qi.

The fierce sword qi surged forward; Feng Xiu remained unmoved, while the 13th Apostle beside him moved, blocking the sword with both hands.

After blocking the sword, Feng Xiu turned around and looked at Lu Wu, who had appeared behind him at some unknown moment, the corner of his mouth lifted.

"Yo, it's been a while. We finally meet face-to-face again!"

"You shouldn't be smiling; you should be crying because this isn't a meeting that should make you happy."

Lu Wu cast a dismissive glance at him and said faintly.

As those words were uttered, a more rampant smile spread across Feng Xiu's face.

"So confident?

No wonder, after all, you have a ace up your sleeve.

Look, is this your ace!"

As Feng Xiu spoke, he lightly snapped his fingers.

The next moment, a series of footsteps sounded, and Lu Wu's eyebrows raised, only to see a group of people being escorted out from Feng Xiu's base.

This scene left Lin Jianying utterly confused.

Lu Wu glanced briefly, his face showing little emotion, while Feng Xiu's smile brightened even more, "I have to say, you do have quite some tactics. In such a short time, with so many incidents, and so busy as you are, you still managed to establish a dark organization.

Moreover, you've planted so many spies in my base, I must admit, these tactics are truly astonishing.

Though these spies might not be much use in actual combat, they can influence my base's facilities and ceremonies, providing you unimaginable help at crucial moments.

This card is indeed good, too bad it's gone!"

With that, Feng Xiu waved his hand.

His men immediately took action, and those captured were beheaded right in front of Lu Wu.

In an instant, a dozen or so heads fell, yet Lu Wu didn't even raise his eyebrows, prompting a sigh from Feng Xiu.

"I must say, you've grown a lot.

So many pawns dead, and yet you don't even frown, you didn't have this state of mind a year ago.

Indeed, only a woman can make a man grow quickly.

Once Pang Duddu died..."

As Feng Xiu mentioned Pang Duddu, Lu Wu, who had been expressionless, suddenly frowned, "Shut up!"

This was the first time his emotions fluctuated.

This pleased Feng Xiu.

He was about to say something when a sudden indescribable fear erupted, causing Feng Xiu's complexion to change.

"How could..."

Before he could finish his sentence, Feng Xiu stiffened, unable to move a muscle.

The 13th Apostle besides him also froze.

"You were right, I do indeed have confidence and an ace, but my ace and confidence are not hiding in the shadows, but in my own power.

There's something you might not be aware of, now let me make you understand."

As Lu Wu spoke, he walked toward Feng Xiu.

With each step he took, a stronger, deeper pressure bore down on Feng Xiu, hammering at his soul and striking his domain.

With each trembling step, Lu Wu appeared to Feng Xiu like a god or demon.

Finally, Lu Wu stood in front of Feng Xiu.

"Now you should have realized, you don't even have the qualification to stand before me.

Kneel!"

Lu Wu's plain words unleashed unimaginable pressure, turning Feng Xiu's face pale as blood slowly dripped from his mouth.

Clearly, he was severely injured.

But more than the physical injuries, it was the psychological blow that was severe for Feng Xiu.

He couldn't imagine, nor accept the scene before him.

Lu Wu had advanced to the Epic 1 Star level, which he knew.

He even knew that Lu Wu had once fought a clone of Fei Yinghao in Jiangnan.

He also knew how Lu Wu managed to escape from Fei Yinghao's clone.

His intelligence gathering was meticulous.

Thus, he confidently believed that by himself, using the power of the Second Envoy's 13 Apostles and his modified base, he could capture Lu Wu.

However, now, just a few steps from Lu Wu, Feng Xiu felt Lu Wu's power.

But he still could not believe it.

"How can you be so strong? It's impossible!

You've just advanced to the Epic level.

Moreover, if you were this strong, how could you have struggled so much against Fei Yinghao's clone with only a layer of strength?"

"Who told you that Fei Yinghao's clone only had one layer of strength?"

Feng Xiu's face changed.

Normally, a clone should only possess a strength close to that of the original.

Additionally, considering Lu Wu had just advanced, and that Fei Yinghao had said during their battle that Lu Wu was not as strong as Pang Duddu,

Feng Xiu based his estimation of Lu Wu's ability on this.

He thought Lu Wu was at most just at the threshold of the Epic 1-star level, and in a situation like 'springing the trap', it should be easy.

But now, the strength displayed by Lu Wu, no longer just at the threshold of the Epic 1-star, was vaguely nearing the Epic 2-star level.

This terrifying power was already sufficient to break Feng Xiu's trap.

After all, Feng Xiu, due to severe injuries, was barely at the Epic 1-star level, and his 13 Apostles, though they borrowed power from the Second Envoy, were barely as strong as Feng Xiu.

They managed to capture Lin Jianying solely because of his lack of experience.

Even then they wasted many tricks, and to think they could tackle Lu Wu was quite overestimating their capability.

In the face of absolute power, all his previous preparations and calculations turned into a joke.

The once arrogant Feng Xiu now faced being pressed into the dust, kneeling before Lu Wu.

"Any more tricks left? Or any last words you wish to say?"

Lu Wu looked down at Feng Xiu, who he was gradually pressing down, "I'm quite humane, I can allow you a chance to wail before you die."

These words enraged the shocked Feng Xiu.

"Lu Wu, don't get too proud, Lin Jianying is still in my..."

"Spurt!"

Feng Xiu hadn't finished speaking when Lu Wu's hand twitched, a flash of sword light, and one of Feng Xiu's arms was forever severed.

"Was it this one?" Lu Wu mocked.

"You..."

"Then it seems it was this one!"

Before Feng Xiu could finish, another flash of sword light passed, severing his other arm.

With both arms cut off, Feng Xiu's face turned deathly pale.

Lu Wu then looked toward Lin Jianying, his eyebrows raised, "He hasn't been let down yet? Then it must not have been in those two arms.

Let's try chopping the legs!"

Feng Xiu's face changed greatly, he struggled to dodge, but it was too late.

Two flashes of sword light passed, and his two legs were also ruined.

Lin Jianying remained bound there.

"This is making me very troubled, all limbs cut off and still haven't rescued the person, then we shall sever the fifth limb!"

As he spoke, another flash of sword light from Lu Wu thrust directly at Feng Xiu's fifth limb.

Just as Feng Xiu's 'bird nest' was about to be destroyed, a hand stretched out grabbing the sword light.

Simultaneously, a deep voice rang out.

"Kid, leave a line in life, it's good to meet in the future!"

# Chapter 450: 447 Sacrifice

Chapter 450: 447 Sacrifice

Beijing, within a certain manor.

Two people met.

The one on the left shared the news he had just received.

After hearing everything, the one on the right was utterly stunned.

“Are you telling the truth? Are they really going to do this?”

“Absolutely certain, they are really planning to sacrifice Jingcheng!”

Upon receiving a confirmed response, the one on the right exploded in fury, “How could they do this? How could they think of doing this? How dare they do this?”

“What wouldn’t they dare? I’ve got word that the people over in Changping, weren’t killed by Lu Wu at all, but by their own hands!

To kill a Lu Wu, they massacred millions in Changping, what’s sacrificing one Jingcheng in order to refine a few Gate Fragments?

In their eyes, ordinary people are no different from ants, they already consider themselves as gods who can manipulate life and death at will.

In other words, they’ve lost their humanity!”

The speech from the one on the left struck the one on the right dumb, leaving him speechless.

“Alright, that’s all I can say.

Whatever you plan to do, do it quickly, get whatever friends and family out of Jingcheng that you can.

I still have a mission and must get back, I’ll be noticed if I’m late.

Also, one piece of advice, it’s best not to harbor any impractical thoughts, you can’t do anything, you can’t save anything!”

With those words, the one on the left disappeared after a short while.

And the one on the right, not long after the other had left, also departed from the manor, with a worried face, heading back to the Cultivation Master Professional Center in Beijing.

If Lu Wu were here, he would recognize that this person was none other than the deputy dean of Jingcheng Cultivation Professional Center, Sun Kongkong.

At this moment, full of concern, he returned to the Cultivation Master Professional Center and delivered the intelligence he had just received to Yuan Hua.

After listening, Yuan Hua also fell silent.

After a while, he lifted his head, “Is this information really accurate?”

“Almost certainly!”

“Old Yuan, what should we do?

Are we really just going to evacuate our friends and family from Jingcheng and then do nothing else, as he said?”

Sun Kongkong looked anxiously and expectantly at Yuan Hua, truly feeling helpless himself, he could only hope for Yuan Hua’s guidance.

But faced with such a situation, what could Yuan Hua do?

“It’s useless, anything we do will be in vain!”

At this moment, Yuan Hua had to admit that the situation they faced was nearly insurmountable: “Even if we could save Jingcheng, it wouldn’t mean much, they could easily target another city.

To them, it doesn’t matter which city it is, as long as there are sacrifices.

So, to resolve this issue, the simplest, most effective, and only way is to kill those two elders.”

Yes, this was their only option, but it was also an impossible task.

Two beings at Epic 3 stars, already standing at the peak within the Alliance.

Not to mention them, even the Science Alliance and the Dark Conference had become tools in their hands; what could Yuan Hua and Sun Kongkong do?

All efforts would be in vain.

“But even if it’s fruitless, I don’t want to do nothing!”

Sun Kongkong knew this, but he couldn’t persuade himself to act as if he hadn’t seen anything.

So he decided to do something.

Even though he knew very well the price of his action.

Watching Sun Kongkong leave, Yuan Hua was silent.

…

The fifth day since the destruction of the Changping Secret Realm, and also the fourth day since the destruction of the Dark Conference and the Science Alliance.

No one noticed that in Jingcheng District 1, a ritual that engulfed the entire city had silently taken shape over just four days.

Just as Sun Kongkong had gathered from the intelligence, the two elders from the Elder Council were preparing to sacrifice the city.

Everything was ready.

Next, they just needed to initiate the sacrifice ritual.

Soon, this sprawling city with a population of five to six million would be sacrificed, erased from the Alliance, from this world, and Elder Mountain would obtain five refined Fragments.

Above Jingcheng, Zhang Mingrui looked down upon the city beneath him.

His eyes were indifferent and coldly clear, without a flicker of emotion, much less any sense of guilt for destroying a city.

“Is the preparation almost complete?”

“Almost, almost ready!”

Compared to Zhang Mingrui, Gutian at his side, responsible for assisting, was not quite so composed.

Though not a good person, Gutian was still human.

He still had humanity.

The thought of personally destroying a city was something he found hard to accept.

“Relax, this is not as severe as you imagine, neither is it so formal. Life, especially the lives of ordinary people, is actually that fragile.

If it wasn’t for our protection, they would have no right to live in this world.

We protected them, fabricated the beautiful lie of world peace. In exchange, we gained the right to control their lives, which is quite fair!

Now that they can sacrifice for us, for them, it’s truly an honor.”

Zhang Mingrui patted Gutian on the shoulder, uttering words that rocked Gutian’s world view.

At the same time, he snapped his fingers lightly.

At the moment the snap sounded, Gutian, still stunned by Zhang Mingrui’s words, shivered.

His eyes bulged, staring fixedly at the city below.

However, when he looked at the city, Gutian froze. The scene he had anticipated did not occur; the city beneath his feet was not sacrificed, it was still there, intact.

“What’s going on? Did the ritual go wrong?”

Zhang Mingrui at his side shook his head: “No, we just have some unwelcome guests.”

Almost as soon as Zhang Mingrui spoke, several figures emerged in the city below them, and Gutian recognized the leaders among them.

One was Sun Kongkong from the Cultivation Master Professional Center, one was the former Xing Zhanlong of the Summoner Professional Center, and the other was the President of Jingcheng University.

Each of these three individuals was a peak figure within the Alliance.

They all possessed terrifying levels of power, with the formerly weakest Xing Zhanlong achieving a Half-step Epic Level after returning from Zone 11. The remaining Sun Kongkong and the President of Jingcheng University had even reached the standard of Epic 1 Star.

These three could be said to have such influence that a single stomp from them would send tremors throughout the entire Alliance.

But at this moment, Gutian looked at these three as if he were looking at three idiots.

Indeed, they were being idiots, for if they were not, they would not have chosen to stand out at this time.

“Elder Zhang, we ask that you please spare the people of Jing City.

If you truly require a sacrifice, please give us some time, and we promise to gather the necessary offerings you need.”

“Elder Zhang, as an elder of Elder Mountain, I believe you understand that for the Alliance, these ordinary people are its foundation. Your casual destruction of millions of these foundations could deal a huge blow to the Alliance.

With the matter in Changping Secret Realm yet to settle, if the incident in Jing City were to arise now, the entire Alliance might just collapse.

I’m sure you wouldn’t want to witness the fall of the Alliance, right?

After all, it’s the culmination of your centuries of hard work.”

Sun Kongkong and the President of Jingcheng University, Zhou An, were more eloquent. Despite their immense anger and even hatred toward Zhang Mingrui, they still managed to speak with restraint.

As for Xing Zhanlong, he had regained his reason.

Knowing that he was not good with words and that his words might be unkind, he simply chose to remain silent, standing there with a cold demeanor.

But through his actions, he conveyed his stance.

He was telling Zhang Mingrui that if he wanted to sacrifice this city, he would have to get past him first.

At that moment, Zhang Mingrui, looking down at the four below him, Sun Kongkong among them, always wore a smile on his face.

But his smile was not gentle, not benevolent; it was one of mockery.

He first directed his gaze at Sun Kongkong, “Let’s say, hypothetically, I agreed to let you help me collect the offerings. How long would you need, and what kind of offerings could you provide me?

Would you bring a few million ordinary people from other zones?

Or would you bring back some summoners you deem extremely evil? Hmm, if it’s Summoned Beasts or something, don’t bother mentioning it, as that doesn’t meet my criteria for sacrifice.”

Sun Kongkong had thought through many possible reactions from Zhang Mingrui but had not expected him to discuss the matter in such a calm and collected manner, which slightly startled him. However, he quickly composed himself and voiced his decision.

“On one hand, I will help you transfer people from other zones. On the other hand, I will help you apprehend some summoners who are extremely evil.”

“Do I really need you to do such a thing?”

“It will all be done by me. I will take the responsibility for this, and if necessary, I can even offer myself up as a sacrifice.”

Sun Kongkong’s resolve to save the people of Jing City was straightforward.

But Zhang Mingrui laughed after hearing his words.

“That’s very noble, quite good, but have you considered, what’s the difference between you doing this and what I’m doing?

Are lives from Zone 1 lives while lives from other zones are not?

How exactly are you going to determine that the summoners you capture are all extremely evil?

What criteria will you use to define someone’s evil deeds? One more thing, why do you disregard the lives of ordinary people from other zones, but for summoners, you consider good and evil? Do you inherently distinguish between summoners and ordinary people?

If so, how are you any different from me when you come to talk to me?”

“What difference does it make if we use District 1 or people from another area?”

Zhang Mingrui’s remark left Sun Kongkong at a loss for words.

When responding to Zhang Mingrui, Sun Kongkong hadn’t considered all these aspects. He simply wanted to pacify Zhang Mingrui, so he blurted out his answer without thinking and didn’t expect Zhang Mingrui’s sharp retort.

Sun Kongkong was now helplessly frustrated, unable to voice a response.

At this moment, Zhang Mingrui turned his gaze toward Zhou An.

“What did you just say? You mentioned that the death of several million people would cause the Alliance to collapse? You said this Alliance is the culmination of my century’s effort?

Well, I agree with half of your statement, which is that the Alliance is indeed my life’s work.

So, how I choose to treat my life’s work is my business, and as for the notion that the collapse of the Alliance hinges on the death of a mere few million people?

You’re being overly anxious. Their resilience is quite strong. The Alliance won’t collapse so easily!”

“So, you’re saying that you’re definitely going to sacrifice this city?”

Zhou An and the others’ expressions darkened as they stared coldly at Zhang Mingrui, who seemed utterly indifferent, “You can try to stop me. If you succeed, I might not sacrifice this city.

But the question is, can you achieve that?”

With a slight chuckle, Zhang Mingrui lightly tapped his finger, and a wave of pressure immediately arose.

Sun Kongkong and his two companions couldn’t help but tremble.

It wasn’t that they were cowards, but rather due to the vast gulf in power between them.

Sun Kongkong and his companions knew very well at that moment, that if Zhang Mingrui wished, he could snuff out their lives in an instant; yet, they didn’t back down a single step.

Sun Kongkong lifted his head to look at Zhang Mingrui, “We may not be able to stop you, but we can expose your actions for the entire Alliance to see.

That’s something you wouldn’t want to happen, right?

The death of a few million might not collapse the Alliance, but if they were killed by you, how could the Alliance continue to stand united?”

Truly, in a situation of utter helplessness, Sun Kongkong finally played his trump card.

He had reasoned that this was the only way. The only thing Zhang Mingrui seemed to fear was this.

Indeed, when Sun Kongkong made this point, Zhang Mingrui was momentarily taken aback, and a trace of disturbance could be seen in his presence, giving Sun Kongkong a glimmer of hope.

However, while he was still rejoicing at the hope that appeared before him, Zhang Mingrui’s lips suddenly curled into a smirk.

“Then, go ahead and do just that. It’s not that important of a matter. To me, it’s not serious at all. At worst, it will just cause some disorder for a while and lead to the deaths of some ordinary people, that’s all.”

“What?”

Sun Kongkong’s face changed, and at that moment, Zhang Mingrui seemed to have lost patience as well.

“Enough, I’m done talking with you all. Since you’ve come, you might as well stay. I was worried that the sacrifice of these millions of ordinary people wouldn’t be secure enough, but with several of you, it’s much more certain.”

With these words, a strong sense of danger surged in the hearts of the three companions. As they were about to react, Zhang Mingrui pointed his finger at them.

“Thud,” “thud,” “thud.”

With three light taps, three sounds echoed, and the three Epic Level powerhouses, Sun Kongkong and his companions, were directly impaled by Zhang Mingrui and nailed in place.

While controlling them, Zhang Mingrui’s lips turned upward, and he snapped his fingers again.

This time, the snap elicited a response, lighting up the entire city below. The sacrifice had officially begun.

Yet, this time the sacrifice did not last long. With a ‘swoosh,’ the city that had lit up dimmed once more, and the sacrifice was halted again…

# Chapter 451: 448 Lu Wu returns

Chapter 451: 448 Lu Wu returns

“What’s going on?”

The repeated failure of the sacrifice caught Zhang Mingrui off guard.

“Is there someone else causing trouble?”

A flash of inspiration suddenly came to Zhang Mingrui, and his eyes narrowed, “Could it be Tie Xiong?”

Realizing it might be that old adversary, Zhang Mingrui became immediately tense.

He spread out his consciousness, covering the entire city thoroughly.

He began to check the situation inch by inch and, after completing the inspection, found that everything here was normal.

“It’s not a problem here?”

Zhang Mingrui breathed a sigh of relief, then his expression changed again—if it wasn’t a problem on his side, where could it be? It must be Elder Mountain that had issues.

Realizing this, he didn’t even take the time to deal with Sun Kongkong and the others and rushed back to Elder Mountain.

And at this very moment on Elder Mountain.

Almost at the same time that Zhang Mingrui was rushing back, a figure was slammed heavily against a wall.

Before he could recover, the one who had slammed him acted again, grabbing him and pinning him to the wall.

The figures of the slammed and the slammer were thus clearly exposed.

The one being slammed was Yuan Hua, who had previously told Sun Kongkong he had no means left, and the one doing the slamming was Zhao Xue’en, who was stationed on Elder Mountain.

At this moment, Zhao Xue’en was consumed with fury, wishing he could tear Yuan Hua to pieces.

The reason was the very thing Yuan Hua had just done.

Yuan Hua obviously understood the core issue better than Sun Kongkong, choosing to infiltrate Elder Mountain rather than going to Jing City, seizing the opportunity to strike the lab when the time was right.

As an Epic level powerhouse, his strike brought the sacrificial ritual and the refinement of the Fragments to a halt.

The loss this brought to Zhao Xue’en and the others was unimaginable, as was Zhao Xue’en’s rage.

Furious, Zhao Xue’en grabbed Yuan Hua by the throat, word by word he said, “Have you thought about how you want to die?”

The other party just gave a contemptuous smile.

“This, I already figured out before I came, prepared to not return!”

With that, Yuan Hua erupted.

Several Summoned Beasts inside him howled as the burst of Beast Soul energy caused Yuan Hua’s strength to surge. He clenched his fist and smashed the swelling power towards Zhao Xue’en’s face.

“Obstinate fool!”

Zhao Xue’en scoffed coldly, extending a hand and easily deflecting Yuan Hua’s punch with a light touch.

But the moment his finger touched Yuan Hua’s fist, Zhao Xue’en’s expression dramatically changed. Something was wrong, the feel was off, the energy in Yuan Hua’s punch was all wrong; it had no damage in it.

“What’s going on?”

Zhao Xue’en was stunned, and before he could figure out the situation, the Yuan Hua in front of him gave a tragic smile.

“Old Zhao, say goodbye to your Gate Fragment!”

With these words, Yuan Hua resolutely detonated his internal power.

He intended to explode himself and all the energy of the Summoned Beasts within him, turning himself into a bomb-like blast.

Such an explosion might not hurt Zhao Xue’en, but it could damage Elder Mountain and the lab.

Further damage to the lab might mean Zhao Xue’en and their Fragment Refinement could be completely ruined.

Zhao Xue’en was clearly aware of this, so the moment he saw Yuan Hua erupt, he immediately went mad trying to prevent Yuan Hua’s outburst.

But that was easily said than done.

After all, Yuan Hua was an Epic 2 Star strongman. In a one-on-one fight, Zhao Xue’en could easily suppress him, but to restrain Yuan Hua’s life-risking outburst with only Zhao Xue’en, an Epic 3 Stars presence, was somewhat insufficient.

So, Yuan Hua was determined to explode, at least, that’s what he thought.

However, just as Yuan Hua thought he himself was doomed and the laboratory was bound for destruction, a slightly tense voice rang out.

“Good, good, thank goodness I got back in time.”

With that voice, another figure appeared out of thin air behind Yuan Hua, flanking Yuan Hua’s front where Zhao Xue’en stood, they exerted force simultaneously.

For one Epic 3 Stars to suppress Yuan Hua’s self-detonation was difficult, but with two acting together, it wasn’t much of a challenge.

Yuan Hua’s self-explosion was easily suppressed.

The two of them restrained Yuan Hua’s outburst and threw him on the ground. Zhang Mingrui bent down and looked at the motionless Yuan Hua: “You’ve got some nerve, kid. Elder Mountain is under martial law and yet you still managed to infiltrate, almost destroyed our experiment. You certainly have some tricks up your sleeve, pity you don’t use them for the right cause.”

“The right cause?” Yuan Hua sneered. “In your eyes, what is the right cause?”

“Of course it’s to do as we say, to be our dogs, to be our tools!” Zhao Xue’en and Zhang Mingrui had now completely dropped their facades, unabashedly spouting their views while dragging Yuan Hua by the hair into the laboratory.

Once inside the laboratory, Zhao Xue’en and Zhang Mingrui tossed Yuan Hua aside and began various checks.

Repairing all the facilities that needed repair.

It took close to three hours to fix the destruction caused by Yuan Hua’s recent outburst.

“Luckily, we’re fortunate. You struck a non-critical spot, although it gave us a bit more work, it didn’t ruin our grand plans.”

Once everything was set, the two men grinned at Yuan Hua.

Their luck was the greatest misfortune for Yuan Hua and the millions of Jing City’s people. Yuan Hua’s face was exceedingly grim as he coldly regarded the two men before him.

At this moment, his heart was ashen.

The refining of the Gate Fragment hadn’t been destroyed, which meant everything he had done was for naught.

The people in Jing City, who had only been granted a few hours’ reprieve, were still doomed to die.

What was most terrifying was not just the fate of the millions in Jing City, but the prospect of these two individuals possessing five Gate Fragments.

Then, they would wield an even more frightening and formidable power, entirely mastering the whole Alliance, with the lives of everyone in the Alliance in their hands.

That was a scene Yuan Hua dared not even imagine.

Therefore, at this very moment, Yuan Hua, who had never believed in a savior, urgently wished for someone to come and defeat these two men, to save the world and to save him.

“Anyone, please, come out and save us!”

In his despair, Yuan Hua cried out a laughable plea.

Zhao Xue’en and Zhang Mingrui shook their heads.

“No one can come to your rescue. Nobody can save you…”

“Boom!”

Amidst Zhang Mingrui’s malicious words, a blasting noise erupted.

This sound, particularly jarring in this environment, made Zhao Xue’en and Zhang Mingrui frown and turn their heads, to see Elder Mountain split open by a controlled breach, with three wounded individuals charging in.

These three individuals were none other than the ones Zhang Mingrui had recently nailed down in Jing City.

Seeing these three, Zhang Mingrui’s mouth curled with disdain: “What now, you want to be the savior? Have you forgotten how you were just pinned down in Jing City?”

“I don’t have time to deal with you bastards, and I let you escape. You don’t flee for your lives but instead come here to deliver your deaths, huh?”

“We did not come to die; we came to wipe you two ‘Undead’ out!”

Xing Zhanlong stepped forward, his eyes full of hatred as he glared at Zhang Mingrui and Zhao Xue’en, “You two old ghosts, to satisfy your own desires, you murdered the elders and destroyed both the Dark and Science Alliances, even using the lives of Alliance members to achieve your goals.

You people are unworthy of being elders, so today we are here to eradicate you two ‘Undead’!”

Zhang and Zhao were amused by Xing Zhanlong’s words, “Eradicate us? Just with you few misfits?”

Sun Kongkong stepped out, his voice cold in response, “Who said it’s just us?”

Almost at the same time as Sun Kongkong’s words were uttered, a trembling figure stepped out.

This person was none other than Gutian, the overall commander of Zhang and Zhao’s refinement operation.

Seeing Gutian stand on the opposing side, Zhang and Zhao were stunned, then a sneer appeared on their faces, “Well, well, young Gutian, having pangs of conscience, are you?”

“My lords, I truly cannot stand by and watch millions die; I am sorry…”

Zhang and Zhao, with arms folded across their chests, sneered like they were watching a clown perform, “Enough, shut it. Anyone else, come out now!

Even this kid has turned to your side, you must be able to call out more people, right?

Just call all of them out!”

Sun Kongkong did not dally, and immediately used a device.

With the use of that device, the sounds of footsteps and whooshing grew louder.

A large group quickly surrounded them.

This surrounding crowd had all sorts of identities.

There were the Governor of Jiangnan who was recently taken down for kissing up to Lu Wu, workers from inside Elder Mountain,

people from major universities,

even, vaguely, members of the Zero Organization or the Dark Organization.

This group, originally of different identities, stances, and classes, came together for a common goal.

Yet, the expressions on the faces of Zhang Mingrui and Zhao Xue’en were eerily calm.

“Good, very nice; quite a turnout.”

“Some rats from Zero Organization and some of our lapdogs, all gathered here at this moment, it looks like we two old things are rather abandoned.”

Before them, Yuan Hua coldly said, “You two are devoid of conscience, devoid of any humanity, that you have come to this end is no surprise at all.”

Hearing this, Zhang Mingrui and Zhao Xue’en laughed.

“Devoid of conscience? Devoid of humanity? These, we acknowledge.

After all, there’s a difference in level.

To exist at our level, one can no longer be constrained by mere human morality.

We stand at a higher level.

We should be like laws, like nature.

For beings at our level, controlling life is an ordinary matter, so don’t bind us with human ethics and morals, and as for laws,

the laws of humans are for humans, while we have already transcended human existence.

To some extent, we are gods!

So, to us, being without humanity is not a derogatory term.”

The words of Zhang and Zhao completely upturned everyone present’s values.

They felt that these two old things had completely lost their minds.

Yet they didn’t care at all, and looking at the furious Sun Kongkong and the rest, the two old things continued, “Another thing, what do you mean by ‘this end we’ve come to’? Do we look miserable now?

You all seem to be the miserable ones, don’t you?”

“Have you thought about what you are doing? You’re challenging the gods!

Have you thought about how you’re going to bear the consequences?”

Listening to the two ‘Undead’ who completely fancied themselves as gods, Sun Kongkong and the others couldn’t stand it anymore.

“No more nonsense, let’s go, prioritize destroying the laboratory!”

At Sun Kongkong’s command, this makeshift assembled group erupted.

Their strength was indeed quite formidable.

Nearly ten Epic Level powerhouses and countless others of different ranks surged forward, an imposing force indeed.

However, facing such a crowd, Zhang Mingrui and Zhao Xue’en’s faces showed clear disdain.

“Ants, daring to compete with gods.”

“Let you experience the power of gods!”

In their arrogant voices, the two ‘Undead’ took out a refinement fragment they had earlier.

Then, they activated the power of the Gate Fragment.

The next moment, an indescribable force burst forth, a mysterious and powerful force that drove people to despair.

Under this force, all those who rushed at them were nailed to the spot, unable to move.

This was the power of two Epic 3 stars and a Gate Fragment.

Watching Sun Kongkong and the others pinned and unable to move, the corners of Zhang and Zhao’s mouths twitched upward.

Zhang Mingrui turned to Yuan Hua, “See, this is your savior.”

“There are no saviors in this world, nor is there any need for one. If there must be one, we can play that role.

As for you, become the dust of this world, become the steps for our ascent.”

The two old men spoke, then commenced the next round of sacrifice.

The power of sacrifice wrapped around Sun Kongkong and the others, seeking to drain their strength, to transform them into nourishment for those who received the refined fragments.

This group of Summoners, including some ten Epic Level beings, the power they could offer through sacrifice was terrifying.

Immediately, one fragment was fully refined.

Seeing the fragment shine brightly, the eyes of Zhang and Zhao lit up, while Sun Kongkong and the others plunged into utter despair.

They had not expected that their final struggle would end this way.

Under this power, they had no chance to resist; they could only watch as their strength was drained, as the fragments, one by one, were lit.

Soon, five fragments were fully illuminated.

The dazzling lights were mesmerizing.

“We’ve succeeded, we have succeeded with these five fragments, even Tie Xiong and the chairman we can slay!”

The two elated old men rushed crazily towards those five fragments.

Just as they were about to grasp the five fragments, a sharp sound of shattering rang out, and a figure appeared out of nowhere…

# Chapter 452: 449 Altar

Chapter 452: 449 Altar

Elder Mountain, Zone 1.

“Crack.”

With a crisp sound,

something instantly split apart, and a figure appeared out of thin air.

His appearance was quite coincidental, right next to Zhang and Zhao. They were arguably the first to witness this figure materialize.

The moment they saw clearly, their hearts skipped a beat.

“Lu Wu? How can it be Lu Wu? Isn’t he already dead?”

“It’s impossible; I saw him die with my own eyes. How can he still be alive? How can he appear here?”

These two, who had just considered themselves divine beings, were now pale with fright due to Lu Wu’s sudden appearance.

As they were frightened, their reactions were equally swift.

“Fragment!”

“No matter the reason, the fragment must not fall into his hands!”

“As long as we have the fragment, what does it matter if Lu Wu isn’t dead? Crushing him would be like crushing an ant!”

Recovering quickly, Zhang and Zhao immediately rushed toward the five Gate Fragments.

No matter what, they had to get the fragments before Lu Wu.

To epic-level warriors, a distance of ten meters was really nothing.

If they wished, they could traverse multiple zones in ten or twenty minutes and circle the Alliance in an hour or two. To Zhang and Zhao, two Epic 3-stars, a distance of ten meters was nothing—they could claim it before even blinking.

In an instant, they reached the Gate Fragments and grabbed them.

“We did it!”

“We have the five fragments; we are invincible now!”

Joy erupted on their faces, but just as their smiles began to form, a calm voice sounded by their ears.

“Although I don’t know what happened, I still appreciate your contributions. ”

Appreciation? Contributions?

Zhang and Zhao were stunned, not understanding where Lu Wu’s words were coming from when suddenly, a force struck them.

This unexpected force was exceedingly strange.

They couldn’t discern where this force was coming from; it just appeared mysteriously and acted on them.

What made it even more unbearable was that this force was mysteriously strong.

“Pfft!”

They couldn’t defend against this attack at all and could only suffer passive hits. Blood spurted from their mouths as Zhang and Zhao were thrown backward.

A single strike had thrown both Zhang and Zhao.

Lu Wu then turned to glance at Yuan Hua, Sun Kongkong, and others being sacrificed.

He had initially planned to just take a glance, but among that group, he recognized several familiar faces:

Yuan Hua’s younger sister Yuan Qingqing, Liu Qingyuan from Jingcheng University, and the Ninth Apostle from the original Zero Organization…

Hmm, these were all people related to that scumbag father of Lu Wu.

Seeing them, Lu Wu let his gaze linger a bit longer, and he took a little time to help free them from the sacrifice, saving their lives.

For Lu Wu, this was merely a casual deed.

For them, it was definitely a lifesaving grace.

However, those who felt saved weren’t just Sun Kongkong and his group; Zhang and Zhao also felt they had escaped death.

They had been severely hit by Lu Wu’s defense-ignoring attacks.

At that moment, if Lu Wu had pushed a bit harder, he could have taken them both down and seized the Gate Fragments from their hands.

Lu Wu could have solved everything by doing so.

But Lu Wu, ridiculously, chose to save others first, providing Zhang and Zhao an opportunity.

Taking advantage of Lu Wu’s distraction while saving others, they focused their time and energy on the Gate Fragments in their hands.

Five refined fragments, along with the original one they already had, fused into one piece.

The six fragments combined into one super fragment.

The moment the fusion was complete, a powerful force surged from the fragment and entered the bodies of Zhang and Zhao.

It was the power of the fragments, the power of divinity.

As the force filled their entire bodies, an unprecedented strength and confidence burst forth.

Initially terrified by Lu Wu’s sudden appearance and his two bizarre, defense-ignoring attacks, Zhang Mingrui’s and Zhao Xue’en’s hearts now calmed, feeling invincible.

“Kid, you really have some skills, managing to survive even that situation last time; you have a big life!”

“Unfortunately, you’re a bit unlucky. Why did you have to appear right now? Your life, barely reclaimed, is about to be lost again!”

As Zhang and Zhao spoke, they drew Lu Wu’s attention.

Lu Wu sized up these two men, his eyes narrowing: “The power of the Gate Fragment, huh?”

“Yes, and we should thank you,”

“If it wasn’t for your plan, we couldn’t have refined these fragments.

If it wasn’t for the time you gave us, we couldn’t have completed this plan.

You really are our benefactors!”

“So, how should we properly thank you?”

Their eyes narrowed, the corners of their mouths lifting slightly: “Right, let’s start by returning the big gift you just gave us!”

As they spoke, two forces hit Lu Wu.

The attributes of this force were exactly the same as what Lu Wu had just deployed: undetectable in direction, characteristics, and indefensible.

It was a direct, defense-ignoring attack.

This was also an attack from the power of the fragments.

This fact, Zhang and Zhao only discovered after fusing the six fragments into one.

They had just realized what they had experienced and now understood even more clearly how foolish Lu Wu had been.

Having gained such power, he should have taken them down in one go but had instead given them breathing space. And now, Lu Wu had trapped himself…

“Crack!” “Crack!”

Before Zhang and Zhao could finish their thoughts, Lu Wu flicked his hand, and two crisp sounds, like glass shattering, echoed.

The two invisible, undefendable, directionless forces shattered immediately.

“Impossible!”

“This is the power of the fragments, the power of the fusion of six fragments. How could you shatter it so easily?”

Zhang and Zhao were utterly dumbfounded.

This was not how they had imagined the scenario.

At that moment, Lu Wu’s deep voice tinged with mocking rang in their ears: “Why do you think, I didn’t care about your little actions?”

Hearing this, Zhang and Zhao’s scalps tingled, and they instinctively started to flee.

They didn’t know if Lu Wu was bluffing or really that terrifying, but now they were genuinely afraid, truly panicked.

Although they already possessed the power of six fragments, they still lacked the courage to face Lu Wu at this moment.

However, the moment they turned to leave, they found they couldn’t move.

A force was restraining them.

This was already terrifying enough for them.

What horrified them even more was when they tried to activate the power of the fragments to counteract the force that held them, they were shocked to discover that it was the power of the fragments that was restraining them.

Specifically, it was the power of the super fragment they held in their hands.

In other words, their fragment was restraining them.

“How is this possible!”

These were the fragments they had refined themselves; how could they not be under their control?

“Did you really think I gave you the method to refine the fragments out of kindness?”

Lu Wu squinted his eyes and approached.

Seeing Lu Wu approach step by step, a sense of fear erupted in the hearts of Zhang and Zhao.

At this moment, where was their previous god-like composure and confidence when they were in front of Sun Kongkong and the others?

They were incredibly embarrassed now, to put it mildly.

They frantically activated the fragments, trying to unleash even greater power, to break free from their bonds, to disappear from in front of Lu Wu.

But the more frantic they became, the more they found their control over the fragments slipping.

Their confinement became ever more secure.

If this situation continued, they could only watch as Lu Wu step by step approached them, took their fragments, and erased them.

Zhang and Zhao were both desperate.

At this moment, a power suddenly erupted, and Zhang and Zhao’s control over the Gate Fragment unexpectedly reached one hundred percent.

This situation arose suddenly.

Caught off guard, Zhang and Zhao took control of the fragments, they were bewildered for a moment, but more so overwhelmed by surprise.

They seized this opportunity and unleashed the full power of the fragments.

This time, their eruption was not to kill Lu Wu but to escape.

The power of the Unified Gate Fragment erupted, and in an instant, it sent Zhang and Zhao thousands of kilometers away.

The powerful aftermath of the explosion occurred on Elder Mountain and blew up a large portion of it.

However, Lu Wu, who faced it head-on, remained unharmed.

He watched Zhang and Zhao disappear into the distance, squinting his eyes, scanning the surroundings.

Despite no trace of the person who had just acted, Lu Wu could still sense that it was Tie Xiong.

“I was just worrying about finding you, and you showed up on your own.”

Lu Wu squinted his eyes and muttered.

Then, in a flash, he disappeared from Elder Mountain, leaving Yuan Hua and the others bewildered.

At the same place.

On the other hand, Zhang and Zhao, who had just erupted the Gate Fragment to escape, landed thousands of kilometers away and temporarily avoided Lu Wu. They were faced with a choice.

They were well aware that Lu Wu controlled the fragments in their hands.

And possibly someone else could control them too.

For them, it was an extremely uncomfortable situation; it was like finally chasing down a goddess, only to discover she was still in touch with two backups, who might step up at any moment.

In this situation, the most rational choice seemed to be to abandon the fragments and escape.

But they really couldn’t bear to part with them.

Between their lives and the fragments, they hesitated for a moment.

And countless people have paid with their lives to prove to the world that hesitation spells doom.

While Zhang and Zhao were still making their choice, the Gate Fragment, which was originally fully under their control, suddenly rebelled, and they instantly lost all control over the fragment.

A powerful force bound them, directly restraining Zhang and Zhao.

At the same moment, an aged figure appeared out of nowhere.

“Tie…”

Upon seeing the newcomer, Zhang and Zhao’s faces drastically changed. They opened their mouths to speak a word as a powerful force acted upon them.

In the next moment, the two remaining elders of Elder Mountain were directly torn to pieces on the spot.

Just like those ordinary people they disregarded, meaninglessly erased.

After killing the two, Tie Xiong picked up the fragment and vanished instantly.

Almost at the same moment Tie Xiong disappeared, Lu Wu appeared out of nowhere.

The first sight Lu Wu saw upon arriving was Zhang Mingrui and Zhao Xue’en lying dead. His eyes immediately narrowed.

“Am I a step too late?”

Saying so, Lu Wu stretched out his hand and exerted a force on the bodies of Zhang Mingrui and Zhao Xue’en.

Under the influence of this force, the two, who had been nearly torn to shreds and almost dead, slowly healed and were quickly pulled back from death.

This scene was utterly eerie.

And the resurrected Zhang Mingrui and Zhao Xue’en were utterly bewildered.

It took them a while to understand what had happened.

Tie Xiong had appeared and killed them, and now Lu Wu had appeared and resurrected them.

Although they did not understand why Lu Wu resurrected them or how he did it.

But they knew that Lu Wu seemed to be their hope for survival.

The two old men couldn’t help but look at Lu Wu with flattering appreciation, ready to say some words of thanks.

“Enough; I just thought your deaths were not tragic enough, and wanted you to die once more!”

Lu Wu said, snapped his fingers.

Then, the faces of the just resurrected Zhang and Zhao turned incredibly pale, their despair and pain immediately engulfed them, as a decaying aura wrapped around their bodies.

Zhang and Zhao could only watch themselves slowly decay until death.

After finishing this, Lu Wu then turned and left unhurriedly.

On the other hand, where Tie Xiong was.

After taking the Fragment, he arrived at a mysterious Underground Palace.

Upon entering, his pace slowed, moving slowly on foot, taking half an hour to reach the depths of the Underground Palace from the outside.

In the depths of the Underground Palace, there stood a massive altar.

Tie Xiong placed the fragment he had just obtained on it.

Besides, the altar was covered with at least thirty fragments.

Each of these fragments was of Six-in-One Level size.

Seeing this, Lu Wu was completely stunned.

He hadn’t expected that pursuing just one Tie Xiong would lead him to such a treasure trove.

Lu Wu even suspected that all the Gate Fragments were here!

# Chapter 453: 450 Truth

Chapter 453: 450 Truth

Underground Palace, in front of the Mysterious Altar.

Tie Xiong retrieved the fragments from Zhang and Zhao and placed them on the altar, his eyes narrowing slightly.

“That should be about it; now only the pieces on Lu Wu should be left.”

“Is that so? Well, I’m about to deliver them to you now!”

As soon as Lu Wu’s voice fell, Tie Xiong’s expression changed. He subconsciously wanted to do something but was a step too late as a terrifying power hit him.

Tie Xiong was sent flying.

And just as his body was lifted into the air, several forces struck him simultaneously.

One after another, longswords appeared, easily piercing through his body and nailing Tie Xiong to the altar.

An ambush, executed beautifully, a must-kill strike.

However, just as Lu Wu had pierced and nailed Tie Xiong onto the altar, he immediately sensed that something was off.

Too weak!

The power Tie Xiong displayed was just too weak.

Not to mention the fragment that Tie Xiong had mastered, his power at Epic 3 stars alone should not have made him as weak as he appeared.

After all, at this moment, Lu Wu had only unleashed power equivalent to that of Epic 3 stars.

So, Lu Wu instinctively felt that there was a problem.

And in the moment Lu Wu’s eyebrows furrowed, Tie Xiong in front of him lifted his head and gave him a faint smile, “You don’t need to wonder, there is a problem.”

The next moment, Lu Wu felt a power within him beginning to awaken.

It was as if someone was about to wake up from inside his body.

Lu Wu’s face immediately darkened.

How many times had this happened?

Including this time, this should be the third time someone was trying to awaken from within his body, right?

Why, one after another, did they all wish to come out from his body?

What did this mean?

Did his body seem like a place anyone could just come and go as they pleased?

What angered Lu Wu even more was that he already had a vague guess about who was appearing in his body this time.

If nothing unexpected, it should be that leader of the Zero Organization, the one who was said to master everything, the Zeroer.

Lu Wu did not want, nor would he allow, his body to be handed over to him.

So, as that power began to awaken, Lu Wu started to struggle, to suppress that power.

No matter what, he did not want to become a puppet.

At this moment, Lu Wu mobilized almost all the power he could use.

Little Skeleton, Little Golden Dragon, Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword…

The power of the four Summoned Beasts, the Epic Power of All Things, the power from Old Bone that he had obtained not long ago, and the power of the fragments.

Lu Wu mobilized all the power he could.

But the effect of suppressing that power was still unsatisfactory.

Meanwhile, Tie Xiong, who was nailed to the altar like a specimen, looked at the struggling Lu Wu and shook his head, “It’s impossible, don’t struggle, your fate was decided the moment you spoke.

The great lord of Return to Zero spent centuries setting up a grand game, and you are the final piece he needs in this game; you cannot imagine what kind of painstaking efforts the great lord of Return to Zero has made on you.

Your achievements today are one hundred percent attributable to the great lord of Return to Zero, so you absolutely cannot resist him.”

“To hell with ‘impossible’!

I am going to resist just to show you; just you wait, I will definitely twist off that old bastard’s head.”

Lu Wu was furious, further mobilizing his power, gritting his teeth and erupting with all his might, but to no avail.

And while Lu Wu desperately struggled without success, Tie Xiong suddenly asked another question that baffled Lu Wu, “Do you know the real identity of the Zeroer? Do you know your own true identity?”

At this time, all of Lu Wu’s attention was focused on resisting that power; where would he find the time to care about such a nonsensically bizarre question?

Clearly, Tie Xiong knew as well, so after asking, he provided Lu Wu with the answer.

“The Zeroer is your dad!”

“Boom!”

With that calm statement from Tie Xiong, Lu Wu’s mind buzzed, and he involuntarily lifted his head to look at Tie Xiong, “What did you say?”

“I said, the Zeroer is your father, your father is the Zeroer!”

“Impossible!” Lu Wu could hardly imagine this, but Tie Xiong’s words left him at a loss for words.

“Why is it impossible? Be honest, do you really understand your father?”

Yes, does Lu Wu truly understand his father? Understand Lu Haikong?

He had to admit, his knowledge about Lu Haikong was truly limited.

And obviously, Tie Xiong knew much more about Lu Haikong than Lu Wu did.

“Your father is the Zeroer; there’s no doubt about it.

Your life has been arranged from the moment you were born.

Your talents, your friends, the people you love, these were all set from the start.

Even including your pets.

From the first Little Skeleton you summoned, to the Little Golden Dragon given to you by the great lord of Return to Zero, that bird you met at the Sea Suppression Tower, and the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword you obtained in District 11.

All of this has been pre-arranged.”

“Not only were they pre-arranged, but even Cimu Qingzi, Li Kai, Old Bone, and so on.

Do you feel that your life is full of freedom?

In reality, all of that is a sham; every step you take, every deed you do, every person you meet, every moment of emotion and outrage have all been meticulously orchestrated.”

“Everything, simply because the great lord of Return to Zero needs a suitable medium to fuse so many Gate Fragments.

Do you know why you were sent to that Blood-colored Space before?

Because fusing so many Gate Fragments requires two forces, one is the power from Old Bone you just obtained, and the other is from the Holy Angel with whom you have a half-Contract.

You have now completed the life that has been set for you, and it’s time for you to reach your end.”

Having calmly finished, Tie Xiong watched as Lu Wu’s emotions neared the brink of collapse.

Indeed, who wouldn’t fall apart after facing such a situation, finding out that everything experienced was orchestrated by someone?

Naturally, Lu Wu couldn’t take it.

He was thinking.

Desperately thinking of how to refute Tie Xiong’s point of view.

Normally, Lu Wu had an eidetic memory; his mind should have been agile, recalling anything swiftly; finding a reason to refute should have been plausible.

But at this moment, as Lu Wu’s mind started racing, he found he could hardly find any grounds to argue.

The more he thought about it, the more desperate he became, feeling as if it all might actually be true.

He was a character set in place; his life seemed scripted.

However, just when Lu Wu was on the brink of complete despair, he suddenly noticed a blind spot.

“No, how could I forget this? Perhaps Lu Wu’s life was predefined, but I am not the original Lu Wu; I’m a transmigrator, merely an inheritor of Lu Wu’s identity.

His life is false, but I am real!

Yes, and I have my system!”

At that moment, Lu Wu’s eyes lit up.

He sprang into action, no longer restricting that emerging power but throwing himself onto the altar.

More precisely, he dove into the multitude of Gate Fragments.

Harnessing the power of Golden Finger, Lu Wu frantically absorbed all the Gate Fragments atop the altar.

This was the only method Lu Wu could think of, his sole reliance.

At this time, the system proved extraordinarily cooperative, accelerating the absorption of the Gate Fragments.

It took only about ten seconds for the most contact with a Fragment before it was fully absorbed by him.

As Gate Fragment after Gate Fragment was absorbed, Lu Wu felt his power skyrocketing without limit. Terrifying energy surged, and soon his power reached an epic zenith.

Here, besides feeling an unprecedented strength, Lu Wu also sensed the world around him to be incredibly fragile—a fragility that seemed to suggest he could tear it open with just a little effort.

Both intuition and the world’s oppressive forces told Lu Wu to stop getting stronger, warning that something undesirable would happen if he continued.

But at this point, Lu Wu simply couldn’t stop.

The power within him persisted. He hadn’t suppressed it entirely yet; he needed to keep growing stronger.

So Lu Wu continued to devour the Gate Fragments.

As he absorbed the Fragments, the surrounding environment began to sway as if the heavens and earth could no longer contain him.

Just then, the massive Underground Palace started to operate.

The altar started functioning as well.

As the altar whirred, the space around Lu Wu gradually stabilized.

But this was evidently not a good sign; it all appeared to be part of someone else’s plan.

And that plan seemed to include Lu Wu’s ascension in power.

Sure enough, when Lu Wu absorbed the last Fragment, his body underwent a startling transformation.

His hair, his skin, his blood, began to change bit by bit, turning jade-like, shifting toward the unknown.

Simultaneously, an explosive power burst forth from the depths of Lu Wu’s heart. The next moment, his mind went blank, and he stood there motionless, devoid of all consciousness.

Right as Lu Wu stood immobilized, the altar suddenly became active, and numerous chains emerged to fully bind and constrain him.

At this moment, Tie Xiong finally breathed a sigh of relief.

“Not easy, but it’s finally done!

My task is completed too; now all that’s left is to wait for the Zeroer to return.”

Meanwhile, in another mysterious world.

Lu Haikong opened his eyes, revealing two vastly different expressions and emotions in each.

If Lu Wu were there, he could probably distinguish two different people just by those eyes.

The one on the left belonged to his cheap adoptive father, while the one on the right was the Zeroer whom Lu Wu had never met but heard of countless times.

Tie Xiong’s words to Lu Wu were a mixture of truth and lies.

The reality concerning Lu Wu and Lu Haikong was the same.

In fact, Lu Wu wasn’t targeted from birth; initially, it was Lu Haikong.

Although Lu Haikong was not exactly the Zeroer, the two were somewhat one entity.

Twenty-some years ago, the Zeroer made an attempt.

He tried to combine the Gate.

That attempt nearly cost him his life; in the end, he had to fuse with Lu Haikong to survive.

Subsequently, Lu Haikong embarked on a journey of cheating and began a life entangled with the Zeroer.

The Zeroer, parasitizing Lu Haikong, continued to grow stronger as Lu Haikong did, and by now, he had fully recovered to his peak from two decades ago.

At this time, the very essence of Lu Haikong’s consciousness was being eroded.

Even the last bit of his resistance was extinguished the moment Lu Wu was captured.

Now, by looking into Lu Haikong’s eyes, it was evident that the one on the left, which belonged to Lu Haikong, was slowly being assimilated by the Zeroer.

In fact, this assimilation had started months ago.

It merely accelerated after what had happened with Lu Wu when Lu Haikong’s last hope vanished.

At this rate, within two or three days, Lu Haikong would be completely assimilated by the Zeroer, becoming a part of him.

Then, the Zeroer could return to the Alliance, to the Underground Palace, to meet Lu Wu.

The actual moment Lu Wu became a target was after his transmigration.

For a being of the Zeroer’s caliber, Lu Wu’s transmigration was glaringly obvious.

He keenly sensed the peculiar aura on Lu Wu and even noticed the system in his possession.

The focus was on Lu Wu’s system.

After a few probes, the Zeroer was ecstatic to find that Lu Wu’s system contained the energy he had been longing for—the power to merge the Gate.

So, he began to set his sights on Lu Wu, starting to manipulate him like a chess piece.

Then, as Tie Xiong partially revealed, he guided Lu Wu towards power, creating fortuitous opportunities for him, until he reached a certain level. Then he pushed Pang Duddu into the fray to ignite Lu Wu’s emotions.

His goal was to catalyze Lu Wu’s growth.

Subsequent events unfolded just as he controlled, Lu Wu, after Dudu’s death, began to grow explosively in strength.

Within just over a month, the fruit he had been anticipating ripened.

At this point, the Zeroer began his harvest.

Then there was the issue of Tie Xiong bringing people to siege Changping Secret Realm, pushing Lu Wu deep into the Secret Realm.

After Lu Wu emerged, Tie Xiong appeared promptly, leading Lu Wu to the Underground Palace, all to entice him into absorbing the Gate Fragments.

These Gate Fragments had been tampered with, making them especially easy for Lu Wu to absorb.

From start to finish, it took just a few minutes to resolve the issue.

But while absorption was easy, digestion was not so straightforward; the full force of the power burst forth, turning Lu Wu into jade.

At this time, Lu Wu was practically the Gate.

This was the Zeroer’s grand scheme for Lu Wu—transforming him into a vessel for the Gate, and he had now achieved this goal.

Up next, the Zeroer’s centuries-long plan was on the cusp of becoming reality.

# Chapter 454: 451 Besieging the Zeroer

Chapter 454: 451 Besieging the Zeroer

In a chaotic Secret Realm world.

Lu Haikong sat cross-legged on a massive boulder.

At this moment, two powers within him clashed fiercely.

To be precise, it was more appropriate to call it an encirclement and suppression.

Li Haikong’s own power was quickly cornered by this encirclement and fought desperately in the corner.

But that resistance was exceedingly weak.

Lu Haikong’s strength stemmed from the Zeroer, and everything he had came from their side. Now they wanted to take it back, and it was really difficult for Lu Haikong to resist.

But no matter how difficult, he still didn’t want to give up.

He still didn’t want to lose to the Zeroer like that.

If he lost, what would happen to his wife?

For his wife’s sake, he would fight with the last bit of strength and never give up.

“How ridiculous!

Is this really what you are struggling against me for?”

As an existence unified with Lu Haikong, the Zeroer knew his thoughts very well.

The clearer the Zeroer understood what Lu Haikong was thinking, the more disdain he had for him.

“You should know what my efforts over the past hundred years have been for, right?

I made that foolish mistake back then, turning the world that was in good shape into the fragmented mess it is now.

All my efforts over these hundred years have been to collect the Fragments and then restart the world, to restore the world to its original state!”

“As long as the world returns to its original state, my sins can be redeemed, and people won’t have to live in a world where the strong can erase them at any moment.

They can live with dignity.

They can sleep in spacious and bright classrooms, play games on the couch, and do anything they want to do.

They don’t have to worry about a Summoned Beast suddenly charging out to kill them nor fear that looking at a Summoner one extra time could get their whole family killed.

Isn’t that kind of world better than this one?

Aren’t they happier than now?

Am I wrong in what I’m doing?

I’m trying so hard to bring everyone back to that beautiful world, tell me, what did I do wrong?

Why are you hindering me? And for such a laughable reason too!

From the very beginning, you were nothing more than my substitute. You, this thing, just go…”

The Zeroer’s words were cut off as Lu Haikong calmly delivered a sentence that struck at his soul, “Aren’t you desperately trying to return to the past for the same laughable reason?”

This statement completely bewildered the Zeroer and plunged him into brief silence.

Then the Zeroer erupted completely, and a final assault broke through Lu Haikong’s last defense.

With a “boom.”

A sound like the evening drum and morning bell rang deep within Lu Haikong’s soul, causing him to close his eyes.

The next moment, Lu Haikong’s eyes opened.

But at this moment, Lu Haikong was no longer Lu Haikong; the Zeroer had taken his place and became the new Lu Haikong.

“The final trouble is gone, and now, no one can hinder me!”

Lu Haikong, or it should be said, the Zeroer, got up from that black stone at this moment.

As he rose, the chaotic aura around him dissipated, and the true form of the stone beneath him was revealed.

That was a block of ice, within which two figures could be seen—one was Li Ruyu, the other was Lu Wu’s sister.

The Zeroer’s brow furrowed, and with a backward sweep of his hand, he reduced the block of ice to powder.

By destroying Li Ruyu, he simultaneously erased his past as Lu Haikong. With this problem resolved, the Zeroer turned and left the mysterious Secret Realm, returning to the Alliance.

Keen to restore the world to its former state, the Zeroer headed straight for the Underground Palace upon his return to the Alliance.

“Lord Zeroer!”

Tie Xiong caught a glimpse of Lu Haikong’s figure and subconsciously rose to his feet, respectfully bowing.

Without even acknowledging the gesture, the Zeroer strode toward the center of the ritual altar.

To be precise, he approached the center of the altar where Lu Wu had turned to jade.

“For over a century, for over a century, I finally get to see you again!”

The Zeroer gently caressed Lu Wu’s cheek as one might cherish a rare treasure.

No, not as one might—it really was so.

Having absorbed all the fragments of the Gate, Lu Wu was to some extent the Gate itself; he was the most precious of rarities.

With Lu Wu, the Zeroer had obtained the Gate, and now he was on the verge of fulfilling his centuries-old wish.

“No, no, not yet; there’s still something missing. I need to make some preparations first.

Lu Wu, as he stands, is of no use to me. I must take one final step!”

So saying, the Zeroer grabbed Lu Wu and, with a swing of his hand, tore open a crack.

Countless beams of Holy Light seeped through the fissure.

Indeed, on the other side of this crack lay the homeland of Lu Wu’s last Summoned Beast, the previously unexplored Holy Angel Secret Realm.

The final condition needed to activate Lu Wu as a Gate lay within.

The Zeroer forcibly ripped the fissure wide open, violently breaking through the gates of the Holy Angel Secret Realm.

The moment the Gate was breached, the angels inside the Holy Angel Secret Realm immediately detected the existence of the crack, with the surrounding Holy Angels quickly gathering to investigate.

Yes, to investigate.

The Holy Angels at that moment simply came to see what was amiss, curious about the unfamiliar disturbance in their world.

The approaching angels, one by one, wore looks of curiosity, as naive as simpleton deer.

But, no sooner had they arrived than an indescribably terrifying power erupted.

This force obliterated them, turning these simple-minded angels into droplets of golden liquid which the Zeroer funneled into Lu Wu’s body.

At the same time, inside the Holy Angel Secret Realm.

Ilya, her father, and her mother’s expressions changed drastically.

Sensing the intrusion, the two rushed to the location of the crack at once.

They were urgently fast, but still a step too late.

When they arrived, the multitude of Holy Angels surrounding the crack had already been slaughtered.

Witnessing this scene, Ilya’s father and mother flew into a towering rage.

“I sensed from the start there were powerful beings on your side, yet I didn’t expect two near-Divine Level demigods? Quite impressive. Killing you should about fulfill the conditions,” the Zeroer said, extending his hand toward the angry father and the Angel Queen, closing his hand in the air.

A phantom of a hand emerged from nothingness, enveloping the two angels.

In the moment the hand encased them, the Zeroer’s full Power was revealed.

His Power was essentially on par with that of Ilya’s father and mother, both at the Demigod Level.

However, among demigods, the disparity in their Power was vast.

The former two had just barely reached this level, while the Zeroer had already peaked at this stage.

A single grip exerted immense pressure on Ilya’s parents.

They burst forth with Holy Light, creating a golden light barrier around them, attempting to resist the crushing force.

But despite their desperate efforts, they were no match for the Zeroer.

With a mere increase of strength from him, a crisp shattering noise rang out.

They couldn’t withstand it!

In that moment, the two Demigod Level powerhouses clearly understood.

They could not endure the onslaught of the Zeroer.

If this continued, the two of them were done for.

At the height of their panic and despair, suddenly, a crisp ‘crack’ sounded.

Following that, the giant hand that had been reaching for them fractured into pieces.

“What’s going on?”

The two angels were stunned, then quickly turned to look towards the Zeroer.

At that moment, behind the Zeroer, Tie Xiong, who should have been obediently standing still like an ornament, now clenched a longsword in his hand, piercing directly through the body of the Zeroer.

Clearly, it was that strike that had saved the two Holy Angels.

The Zeroer, impaled by the sword, stood fixed in place, bewildered for a lengthy moment.

Coming to his senses and realizing what had happened, the Zeroer’s reaction was completely different from that of a normal person being attacked.

He wasn’t in a rush to escape the reach of Tie Xiong’s attack, nor did he retort with a slap aimed to kill Tie Xiong. Instead, he turned his head slightly to look at Tie Xiong, squinting his eyes.

“You have surprised me!

Actually knowing to use the power of the Gate Fragment to conceal your aura and strike silently, targeting directly at my energy point with speed and accuracy.

Interrupting my attack with one blow, very good. However, I am curious.

Who gave you the courage to strike at me?”

Behind him, the color drained from Tie Xiong’s face, and his gaze flickered evasively as he held the longsword, his entire body beginning to tremble slightly.

He was unable to respond to the Zeroer’s words, but someone else did for him.

“I did!”

With those simple three words spoken.

A figure slowly emerged from the rift torn open by the Zeroer.

Seeing this person, a hint of surprise appeared on the Zeroer’s face.

In his memory, this person should have been dead, especially since it was by his very own hand.

To his astonishment, not only was she alive, but she had turned his own person against him, and now even dared to stand before him.

This left the Zeroer all the more surprised and perplexed.

“How did you manage to turn him against me? And who gave you the courage?”

From the other side of the rift, Zhang Yunyi smiled brightly: “Rather than saying I turned him against you, it’s more accurate to say you forced his hand.

You never gave him a chance to survive.

Once you Reset the world, you would be the only one left living.

Everyone, including him, was to die. Under the clear consciousness of impending doom, how far do you think he was from betraying you?

All he needed was courage!

As for where my courage comes from?”

At this, Zhang Yunyi paused slightly, narrowing her eyes.

The next second, an aged figure appeared out of nowhere behind the Zeroer, sending a backhanded slap that sent the Zeroer, pinned by the longsword, flying away.

As the Zeroer was propelled away, countless pillars of Light sprung from nowhere.

These pillars of Light formed a prison, pinning the Zeroer down.

Simultaneously, a pure black longsword appeared, piercing directly into the prison of Light and locking him inside.

In addition to the action of the Light pillars.

One by one, drone-like objects materialized.

Aiming their cannon-like lenses at the Zeroer, a barrage of Antimatter Cannon shots bombarded him in the next moment.

In an instant, three Demigod Level powerhouses appeared, unleashing an assault on the Zeroer.

Recognizing them at the same time, the Zeroer realized who they were.

These three were the founders of the Holy Sect Alliance, Dark Conference, and Science Alliance.

All previously cared for by him, presumably already dead. Yet unexpectedly making an appearance now.

This caused a slight change of expression on the Zeroer’s face.

He started to take the situation more seriously. What truly concerned him wasn’t the three before him, but the one who had to be present.

That one was the hardest to deal with.

Sure enough, just as the Zeroer felt this tension, a force of destruction erupted around him.

The three Demigods’ barrage had caused little damage to the Zeroer, but this force of destruction tore both of his arms to shreds straight away.

At the same moment, an elder appeared.

This one was Lu Wu, the highest leader of Elder Mountain.

With this, the entire Alliance’s highest-level individuals were all assembled.

In this moment, the Zeroer also came to realize that everything before him was a conspiracy aimed at him.

This group had sat back and watched him plot and lead, all for this moment, to take this opportunity to strike a fatal blow at him.

And unsurprisingly, the woman named Zhang Yunyi likely played an unusual role in this conspiracy.

“Zeroer, you have ravaged the Alliance for over a century.

Countless have lost their families because of you, countless cities have been destroyed by your hand.

Your Zero Organization is filled with evil deeds, and now you even wish to destroy the world. You deserve to die!”

“You’ve been causing chaos for over a century, today, it’s time for you to finally settle down here!”

“No matter what, you won’t leave this Secret Realm today.

To the two Holy Angels over there, please join us, lend us your strength, and extinguish this Demon!”

Seeing this turn of events, Ilya’s parents exchanged a look, hesitated for a moment, but ultimately stepped forward to join Lu Wu and the others in a united front.

This immediately put the Zeroer in a very dangerous position.

Surrounded by six Demigod Level powerhouses and with both arms disabled, he was afraid he might actually die here.

However, in this dangerous situation, the Zeroer remained eerily calm: “It seems you’ve been wanting to kill me for quite some time, huh!

Well then, come and try, if you can!”

Lu Wu and the other three exchanged glances, no time for idle words, they struck out immediately.

In an instant, six Demigod Level powerhouses exerted their strength together, raining down a terrifying assault upon the Zeroer…

# Chapter 455: The true purpose

Chapter 455: The true purpose

Demigod Level, a rank above the Epic Level.

At the same time, it is a level that cannot exist in the Alliance World.

The Alliance World was created by gates, and although it has been growing, it currently cannot accommodate an existence of this level.

Should this group of Demigod Level beings appear in the Alliance World, let alone engage in battle, even a slight unleashing of their power would be a huge disaster for the Alliance World.

But the situation in the Holy Angel World is entirely different.

Although the world of the Holy Angel Secret Realm is smaller than that of the Alliance, its level is much higher and much more robust.

It is so robust that it could withstand the full force of six or seven Demigod Level powerhouses.

“It’s been a long time since I’ve exerted my full strength. This feeling is just exhilarating!”

The founder of the Holy Sect Alliance said, while simultaneously unleashing his Demigod power to strike at the Zeroer.

By his side, Ilya’s parents, who were acquaintances of his, also followed suit.

The three had the same attributes, and the attacks they released at the same time were equally terrifying.

With one strike, the tremendous Holy Light brightened the entire Holy Light Secret Realm by a few shades, which caught the attention of that group of silly roe deer inside, including Ilya.

She was craving Lu Wu at the central high tower of the Holy Light Secret Realm when she suddenly saw the Holy Light, hurried to the window, and looked in the direction of the Holy Light.

The building she was in was high enough, and her own Power was strong enough.

Therefore, she could see far enough to clearly witness the situation at the site of the battle and to feel the power that had erupted from there.

“So powerful!”

The combined power of those three Holy Lights was almost the strongest power Ilya had ever seen in her life.

While this power exploded, another three powers followed up.

One was the ultimate Dark, another was the scientific power that was very unfamiliar to Ilya, and the last was the ultimate power of destruction.

Each of these powers, if placed in the Alliance World, would likely easily destroy an area.

Now, these forces were concentrated and aimed at only one target—that was the Zeroer, whose arms had already been destroyed.

Under such an attack, no one should be left alive.

Hmm, should be!

Or, theoretically speaking.

But some things just can’t be explained theoretically.

Just when everyone thought the Zeroer was certain to die, he suddenly shook his head as if stretching his muscles.

As his head turned, a pair of arms that had been severed grew back out.

Simultaneously, a mysterious giant beast appeared behind him.

The moment the giant beast materialized, it directly opened its mouth and bit down on the attack from the three Holy Light forces combined into a cross.

“Crack,” the Holy Light Cross was directly bitten to pieces.

The giant beast crunched it up in just a few bites.

“How is this possible?”

The founder of the Holy Sect Alliance changed his expression.

“Why not possible?”

At that moment, a light chuckling sound emerged beside his ear, and the founder of the Holy Sect Alliance completely panicked. He wanted to flee, but it was too late—a hand rested on his body.

In the next instant, all that was left of this Demigod Level powerhouse was a Divine Fire.

In a blink of an eye, a Demigod Level existence was annihilated, and the strength displayed was beyond the mere use of the word ‘terrifying’ to describe.

The faces of everyone involved in the ambush against the Zeroer changed.

They realized that the Zeroer’s power might far surpass their imagination.

But now that they had already engaged in combat, there was no turning back – they could only grit their teeth and continue to besiege the Zeroer.

However, they soon realized that it was not they who were besieging the Zeroer, but the Zeroer who was counter-slaying them.

Having just killed one, the Zeroer’s figure soon appeared in front of the founder of the Dark Conference, lifting a hand to point again.

The founder of the Dark Conference thought he had evaded the Zeroer’s point due to all his preparations, but it merely postponed the inevitable. The Zeroer landed another blow, taking him away once more.

As a result, less than a minute into the battle, Li Wuji’s side had lost two members.

It was safe to say that Li Wuji and his allies’ resolve to siege the Zeroer crumbled in an instant.

“Retreat!”

Their first thought was to retreat.

But when they looked towards the rift, they realized that the fissure that the Zeroer had just torn open had already healed.

“How can it be this fast…”

“Thud!”

The founder of the Science Alliance was killed once again, and a smile appeared on the Zeroer’s face, “Of course, it’s because you’ve been betrayed!”

Li Wuji was stunned, turning his head to look at Zhang Yunyi’s direction.

In that moment, the other side responded with a coquettish smile.

That smile blew Li Wuji’s mind.

He could never have imagined that it was Zhang Yunyi who had betrayed them.

Because today’s trap was organized by Zhang Yunyi, who had come to them after being killed by the Zeroer and had proposed this plan of siege.

Li Wuji could never have guessed that the person who proposed this plan ultimately intended to besiege them.

He couldn’t figure it out, and fortunately for him, he didn’t need to anymore.

As he stood perplexed, the Zeroer had already appeared behind him, a gentle tap and Li Wuji’s body shattered apart, and another Divine Fire appeared.

This scared the Holy Angel couple out of their wits.

They never expected that the Alliance they had joined would be reduced to just the two of them so quickly.

“Honey, you go, I’ll…”

“Thud!”

The old father stepped forward to resist the Zeroer, trying to buy time for his wife to escape.

But as soon as he began to speak, his wife charged forward, acting to buy time for her husband, but it was all so futile – another Divine Fire appeared the next moment.

The old father was left dumbstruck.

Before he could react or his hatred ferment, the Zeroer appeared before him, a gentle tap and the last Demigod fell, a Divine Fire igniting from nowhere.

Ilya, who was dozens of kilometers away on a high tower, was stupefied.

In her wildest dreams, she had never imagined she would witness this scene.

One day, a demon would suddenly emerge and dispatch her parents with a few blows.

This intense shock left Ilya feeling as if the sky had collapsed and the earth was caving in.

Endless anger and panic surged over her, leaving Ilya to collapse in a heap.

Was there no one, no one who could save her?

What was her Marsda doing? Could he come to rescue her?

Meanwhile, as Ilya succumbed to total despair,

On the other side, after killing the last Demigod, the Zeroer’s spirit began to plummet like a cliff.

Standing there gasping for breath, he looked like he was almost done for.

Clearly, that powerful display of abilities had required a significant expenditure of his energy.

At this moment, he was not exactly exhausted, but he was certainly out of strength.

Fortunately, all enemies had been dealt with.

And he had nutritional supplements to replenish himself.

Being able to wipe out that annoying swarm of flies all at once, preventing them from causing trouble at a crucial moment, was quite a joy for the Zeroer.

However, the Zeroer did not forget that his smooth handling of that group was due to a significant contributor.

With this thought, the Zeroer turned to look at Zhang Yunyi.

But his gaze was not that of looking at a contributor, but rather a tool.

“Thanks to you, these flies have been dealt with.

Then, should I say thank you and offer you some benefits?”

The Zeroer said, his face revealing a meaningful expression.

Zhang Yunyi gently stroked the hair on her forehead and earnestly said, “If you wish, when you restart the world, I hope you can leave a few people behind, that’s my only request.”

Hearing her words, the Zeroer’s mouth curled slightly.

“Your only request? Is that really all you are asking for?”

The expression on Zhang Yunyi’s face faltered for a moment but quickly returned to calm.

“What do you mean by that?”

At this time, the Zeroer wasn’t looking at her, but rather, he turned his head to gaze at the Divine Fire in his hand, his lips curving up slightly.

“Shouldn’t what you are asking for… be these?

Or rather, to be precise, isn’t what you are asking for… for me to consume these?”

As soon as the Zeroer said this, Zhang Yunyi’s hand, which had been stroking her hair, stiffened, and her form moved in that instant.

She realized that her goals had been exposed, and now all she could do was to steal away Lu Wu.

Thus, she dashed straight for Lu Wu in that instant.

The Zeroer, perhaps because of the recent outburst of energy, now seemed completely drained.

He watched Zhang Yunyi pounce towards Lu Wu and did nothing. Instead, he toyed with the Divine Fire in his hand and continued, “From the very beginning, you’ve been treating Li Wuji and the others as your pawns.

You knew they were no match for me. Using them against me would at most only make me expend some energy.

No, that’s not quite right, they are not just simple pawns.

At least Li Wuji wasn’t so easily exploited by you.

He must have been aware of your plan, voluntarily joining despite knowing he would surely die.

His goal was to make me deplete more energy.

When my energy was largely spent, I would undoubtedly need to replenish it quickly, and the thing available here that could replenish my energy quickly was this Divine Fire.

That’s also the real purpose of you and Li Wuji.”

“You want me to swallow these Divine Fires because they possess the power to resurrect Lu Haikong.

Once I swallow the Divine Fires, Lu Haikong might have the chance to come back to life when I am at my weakest, and that’s when I will truly be in trouble.”

The Zeroer squinted, speaking Zhang Yunyi and Li Wuji’s plan word for word, his eyes narrowing at that moment.

At this time, Zhang Yunyi could no longer afford to listen to all this.

She had already reached Lu Wu and grabbed him, preparing to leave.

But could she really succeed that easily?

Did they think the Zeroer was dead?

“Putsh!”

The moment Zhang Yunyi approached Lu Wu, the same sword that had just gone through the Zeroer pierced through her heart, nailing her in front of Lu Wu.

The one who made the move was Tie Xiong, who had just pierced the heart of the Zeroer.

This was not arranged by the Zeroer.

Tie Xiong had indeed been turned by Zhang Yunyi and the others, he truly wasn’t one of the Zeroer’s people.

But now, as the Zeroer emerged as the final victor, what he should do, what actions he should take, Tie Xiong was naturally clear.

Wasn’t it just betrayal?

If he could betray the Zeroer, what couldn’t he betray about Zhang Yunyi?

Even in Tie Xiong’s view, the Zeroer’s lack of action was precisely to give him this chance to make amends, and he certainly intended to grasp it.

With one stab, he pierced through Zhang Yunyi’s heart. Yet, Tie Xiong felt it wasn’t enough; he pulled out his longsword and repeatedly thrust it two more times.

“You dare to attack Lord Zeroer, you are truly seeking death.

From the very beginning, I knew you would have no good end, deliberately cooperating with your act, but in fact, my heart…”

“Pfft!”

Tie Xiong had only just begun to sycophantically pledge allegiance to the Zeroer when a terrifying power burst forth within his body.

Under this force, Tie Xiong died with a face filled with shock, despair, and unwillingness.

“What a clumsy performance that’s truly nauseating.”

After giving his bland evaluation, the Zeroer slowly walked toward Zhang Yunyi, looking at the man in front of him whose body had been pierced, his whole body spurting out blood, a hint of appreciation showing on the Zeroer’s face.

“To be fair, your struggle to this extent is indeed a presence that is unparalleled in hundreds of years.

You should die with no regrets!”

Upon hearing this, Zhang Yunyi before him managed a smile with his last bit of strength, “Indeed… I should indeed die without any regrets…

Let me say lastly, it is I who have won!”

The Zeroer was startled.

Just as he was unclear about where Zhang Yunyi’s words were coming from, he suddenly noticed that Lu Wu, standing behind Zhang Yunyi, seemed to be splattered with blood.

The blood-red and the pure white Lu Wu contrasted starkly, creating an impactful scene.

What shocked the Zeroer was not the scene itself, but when he saw the blood on Lu Wu, the Zhang Yunyi in front of him began to crack like porcelain.

At the same time, the figure within the ‘porcelain’ also revealed itself.

To his horror, the Zeroer realized that the person inside wasn’t Zhang Yunyi at all, but a breathtakingly beautiful girl.

And he recognized this girl; she was none other than Pang Duddu, who should have died not too long ago.

“No good!”

The Zeroer instinctively sensed something was amiss.

He subconsciously struck at Pang Duddu standing before him, shattering her with a casual blow.

However, this very action caused the Lu Wu before him to tremble.

Now, the Zeroer was completely panicked, only now realizing that Zhang Yunyi’s true objective had been this all along.

At this moment, he could not care about anything else, hurriedly swallowing the six Divine Fires into his stomach.

He needed to recover his power as quickly as possible, for only with regained strength could he suppress Lu Wu, who had not truly awakened yet.

Even if swallowing these six Divine Fires might bring Lu Haikong back to life, he had to take the risk; it was the only choice he could make in the moment.

Yet just as he swallowed the Divine Fire into his belly, his power beginning to return,

An ecstatic voice emerged from the endless Despair Abyss.

“Marsda, it’s you Marsda, have you come to save Ilya?”

As this voice resounded, the contract between Lu Wu and Ilya was fully activated; the once slightly trembling Lu Wu gained the power to break free from the restraints, and in the next second, the jade-like Lu Wu opened her eyes…

# Chapter 456: 453 Grand Finale

Chapter 456: 453 Grand Finale

As Lu Wu’s eyes opened at that instant, a strong sense of crisis surged into the heart of the Zeroer.

“I’m doomed!”

He instinctively swallowed all six Divine Fires.

Frantically refining the six Divine Fires.

With the six Divine Fires entering his stomach, a powerful force burst forth from his body, and the Zeroer almost instantly returned to his peak condition.

He seized this opportunity and reached out toward Lu Wu.

This hand was the same one that had just annihilated six Demigods.

Contained within his hand was the Zeroer’s tactic, “Return to Zero,” which would reset Lu Wu to his original state if touched.

Of course, the premise was that it needed to make contact.

The moment the Zeroer reached out his hand, a sword light appeared out of nowhere, and his arm was severed directly.

However, the Zeroer didn’t care, his other hand once again reached out, directly grabbing at Lu Wu’s face; he had to seize this chance, only by seizing this chance could he take down Lu Wu.

Once Lu Wu fully absorbed the power of the Gate Fragment, it wouldn’t be so simple to take him down.

But his reaching hand was still blocked by the sword light when it contacted Lu Wu.

At the same time, Lu Wu also fully recovered.

The first thing he did upon waking up was to look toward Dudu in front.

By now, Dudu had been dissipated into smoke and clouds from the attack of the Zeroer, the only thing Lu Wu could see was the lingering essence of Dudu.

“You deserve to die!”

Feeling the residual essence of Dudu, Lu Wu completely lost control, stretching out his hand, the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword appeared out of nowhere.

The current Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword was completely different from before.

Now, the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword had reached the Demigod Level, exuding an indescribable nobility and mystique all over.

Lu Wu held it, thrust out a sword, and the Sword Qi directly tore the Zeroer into two halves.

Ordinary people would die if cut in half, but Epic Level powerhouses might not necessarily die, and for an existence like the Zeroer, it was even harder to kill.

In just one second, despite being cut into two halves and losing his arms, he had returned to his normal form.

“It’s quite tricky, I didn’t expect to be played like this by that lass at the end.

In this case, I can only use this move.”

The Zeroer said, as a giant beast’s silhouette reappeared behind him.

This was the giant beast he had just used to swallow the attack of the founder of the Holy Sect Alliance, simultaneously it was his Summoned Beast.

The moment this giant beast appeared, Lu Wu saw its data in his eyes.

…

Name: Zeroing Beast

Level: Divine Level

Description: A Summoned Beast created by the Zeroer using the Gate Fragments, possessing extremely terrifying power.

…

“Don’t assume, just because you’ve absorbed those Gate Fragments, that you are invincible.

The Gate Fragments you absorbed are actually just the dregs I’ve used.

The origin energy of it all lies within this Zeroing Beast.

In terms of power, it’s even stronger than you!

Originally, I wasn’t planning to use it, as activating it consumes a lot of energy, including the origin energy, but now I have no choice but to proceed like this.”

The Zeroer spoke as his figure gradually melted and merged into one with the Zeroing Beast.

At the moment of their unification, Lu Wu felt the entire space of the Holy Angel Secret Realm trembling, a strong sense of crisis surging into Lu Wu’s heart.

Lu Wu subconsciously summoned his own pets.

In addition to the Heavenly Cluster Cloud Sword he held in his hand, Little Skeleton, Little Golden Dragon, and Han also emerged.

Even Ilya, who had just shouted “Marsda,” was undergoing a transformation.

Little Skeleton turned into a Grim Reaper holding a scythe.

Little Golden Dragon transformed into a Nine-clawed Golden Dragon, Han turned into an Ice Phoenix emitting frosty air, and Ilya sprouted 72 wings, topped off with Lu Wu and the sword in his hand.

Lu Wu’s side had once again assembled a group of six demigods.

However, though both groups were six demigods, Lu Wu’s was clearly more formidable.

The previous group had lasted less than a minute before being annihilated, but Lu Wu’s group was the first to initiate the attack.

Lu Wu alone, with his longsword, charged directly toward the Zeroing Beast, his blade cleaving downward.

The long-unused “Divine Judgment” erupted, a bolt of golden lightning piercing straight through the Zeroing Beast.

Simultaneously, Little Skeleton appeared beside the Zeroing Beast, his black scythe slashing a massive gash across the creature’s body.

Little Golden Dragon roared at the wound opened by Little Skeleton, while Han sprayed bitterly cold air, freezing the Zeroing Beast’s body.

Finally, a Holy Light Cross descended.

Ilya, who had just joined Lu Wu’s group, landed the final blow, shattering the Zeroing Beast into pieces.

“Is that all?”

Looking at the effortlessly subdued Zeroing Beast, Lu Wu felt that it seemed somewhat lacking.

However, just as Lu Wu had this thought, the Zeroing Beast returned to its original prime form, and the voice of the Zeroer rang out again.

“Surprised?

Let me tell you the truth, this summoned beast of mine is undead. No matter what damage you deal, it can restore itself.

You’ll never be able to kill it!”

Lu Wu raised an eyebrow, his longsword swinging out again with the same attack.

The Zeroing Beast was shattered once more.

But after being shattered, it wasn’t long before it regenerated.

“I told you, it can’t die. After enduring two rounds of your attacks, now it’s my turn.”

As the Zeroer spoke, the Zeroing Beast burst forth, its body opening up.

This monstrous beast opened its body and, in an instant, enveloped nearly half of the Holy Angel Secret Realm, trapping Lu Wu and his companions.

Encasing Lu Wu beneath it, the Zeroing Beast’s body started to contract, instantly trapping Lu Wu and his pets.

Lu Wu’s expression changed; as he attempted to struggle, he realized that his power was somewhat out of control.

To be precise, it was the power of the Gate Fragment within him that hadn’t been completely absorbed.

This rebellious surge of power plunged Lu Wu into a dire situation.

“I must admit, that woman had her methods, but I am no vegetarian either.

I am also prepared.

After all, I intend to use you as a Gate, so how could I not leave some countermeasures in you?

The energy of the Gate Fragment you absorbed is in this summoned beast of mine; while you absorbed only the surface, I have mastered the origin.

So, in reality, you are merely a tool for me.

As a tool, how can you rebel against your master?”

At this moment, the Zeroer was extremely excited, continually contracting its body, compressing Lu Wu and his pets together.

Gradually, Lu Wu’s pets were being pressed into his body.

Lu Wu also began to feel more and more out of control of his body—he even felt like he was turning into a Gate.

On the Zeroer’s side, a look of joy appeared on his face.

He had successfully gained control over Lu Wu; refining Lu Wu was imminent and the Gate was within his grasp.

His lifelong wish was about to be realized.

He was about to restart the world, to return to the original world.

And just as he was overjoyed, a playful voice sounded from the depths of his heart.

“Do you really think you can return to the original world?”

The Zeroer’s face changed.

It was Lu Haikong, Lu Haikong!

“Impossible, I’ve already erased him, even those six Divine Fires can’t possibly bring him back under this state…”

“Why would I need to be revived? I never died at all.

Because you and I are one, as long as you live, I can’t possibly die.”

“No, it’s not like that, you’re just a substitute…”

“Are you really sure I’m just a substitute?”

Lu Haikong’s voice rang out again from deep within the Zeroer’s soul, pulling him back twenty years.

Back then, his synthesis of the gate was somewhat successful, he could restart the world, but during the restart, he realized that only the world could return to the past, he couldn’t return himself.

This directly shattered the Zeroer at that time.

His centuries of effort weren’t for the world to go back to what it was.

He just wanted to return to the world before it became what it was, to find someone.

If he couldn’t go back, what was the point of restarting the world?

It was precisely because of that moment of collapse that the Zeroer failed, his body was destroyed, and only a shred of his soul took over Lu Haikong’s body, and thus Lu Haikong was born.

Thus, Lu Haikong and the Zeroer were originally the same person.

It was a personality that emerged from the Zeroer after losing his memory, which embodied all the love the Zeroer had for his first love, while Lu Haikong focused his love on Li Ruyu.

Originally, this was fine, just as time passed, the Zeroer’s memory kept recovering.

The lover in his memory clashed with Li Ruyu, causing Lu Haikong to fall into conflict and subsequently give birth to the personality that had been seeking to restart the world for centuries.

Then came the opposition between these two personalities.

The Zeroer’s personality, with a century’s memories, gradually took dominance and even directly devoured Lu Haikong.

But although he devoured Lu Haikong, he couldn’t completely destroy him.

Because he and Lu Haikong were one.

He just wasn’t willing to admit it.

And now, the Zeroer recalled all the memories and knew this fact.

But sometimes knowing too much isn’t a good thing, the Zeroer was completely overwhelmed by this sudden truth.

“So you see, you won’t be able to go back to the past, you won’t be able to restart the world, and you won’t be able to find her. Give me your body, and let me live for you.”

The Lu Haikong of the spiritual world seized the opportunity and reached out his hand.

But he was repelled by the Zeroer.

“Who says I can’t go back? Just because I couldn’t restart it and return before doesn’t mean I can’t now, don’t forget you gave me a good son, and with him as the medium, I might be able to return.”

After the Zeroer said this, the face of Lu Haikong in his spiritual world darkened.

“So, you’re saying there’s no room for negotiation?”

“There isn’t, you must die, this world must be restarted.”

Hearing these words, Lu Haikong smirked.

He then slowly walked towards the Zeroer.

“What are you going to do?”

“You messed with my wife and daughter, and now you want to mess with my son, I can’t just stand by and watch, can I?”

…

At the same time, Lu Wu, who was surrounded by the Zeroer, suddenly felt a power beyond his control slowly restoring.

He began to regain control of his body, and his system accelerated the refining process.

In less than a few minutes, Lu Wu’s system had completely absorbed the power of the gate, and Lu Wu’s power soared to a new peak.

At the same time, the body of the Zeroer shuddered.

The struggle between two personalities inside seemed to have reached a conclusion.

“A substitute is just a substitute, no matter how you struggle, only one can win…”

“Pfft!”

The Zeroer had just finished the mental struggle when a sword qi directly shredded him.

However, this kind of attack was virtually ineffective against the Zeroer, he could recover in minutes if he wished, just like now.

However, as the Zeroer was about to restore himself,

A hand stretched out, pulling a force from the recovering body of the Zeroing Beast.

“Impossible, how could you…”

The Zeroer’s face drastically changed.

“Don’t…”

During his shout, Lu Wuyi bit into this force, and the overwhelming power began to flood into Lu Wu’s body, the system voraciously absorbing it.

As the system continuously absorbed, the body of the Zeroing Beast kept shrinking.

In less than half an hour, Lu Wu had completely consumed the huge beast, and the Zeroer integrated with it also fell out, revealing his form.

At this moment, Lu Wu fell into a deep sleep, absorbing the power of the gate, and if everything went as expected, by the time he awoke, he would have completely mastered the gate’s power.

Then, he would be able to modify the world, to bring the dead back to life.

The end of the book.

…

Well, another book has been completed.

Let me share some thoughts, how should I put it, first off, thank you for accompanying me this far.

I know many of you really struggled to keep up to this point.

After all, this last part wasn’t really scenic, many of the initial elements were gone.

The training of pets, the warm daily storylines, all gone.

There was only the mad push of the main plot, several of the storylines were even a mess.

I myself couldn’t stand it, I can imagine how tiring it must have been for you.

Sigh, it’s my incompetence, bowing in apology.

Unable to provide you with a proper ending.

I guess many of you are already cursing ‘trash Nu Xiao’.

But I can’t help it, too much has been happening recently, I didn’t even expect to find a partner, might even get married, with all sorts of things coming at once, it’s a bit overwhelming.

Then various problems appeared.

Not just Little Skeleton, but even the book next door ran into problems, I don’t even know if it can go on to the end.

Sigh, it’s giving me a headache.

If that book can’t go on to the end, I might leave Qidian, maybe even leave the online literature scene, after writing for so many years, still in such a sorry state, maybe I’m really not suited for this industry.

Plus, with the various issues in online literature lately, I don’t know how long I can keep at this.

Sigh, forget it, enough said, I’m leaving, you can check out my workshop account (search Nu Xiao), when I have time I’ll post some extra stories or small videos there, if that book tanks, you may only be able to see me there in the future…